

SHSBC TAPES 301-400

Black/White Version (suitable for print) (BW, Black/White)
Compiled 4. February 2015

a) Table of Contents, in Checksheet order:

1.	63-06-12	ARC STRAIGHTWIRE	1
2.	63-06-13	LEVELS OF CASE	21
3.	63-06-18	BEINGNESS	37
4.	63-06-19	SUMMARY OF MODERN AUDITING	53
5.	63-06-20	HISTORY OF PSYCHOTHERAPY	69
6.	63-06-25	MODERN PROCESSES (ORIGINAL TITLE: ROUTINE 2-H)	87
7.	63-06-26	TV DEMO: LISTING ASSESSMENT FOR ENGRAM RUNNING PART I	105
8.	63-06-27	TV DEMO: LISTING ASSESSMENT FOR ENGRAM RUNNING PART II	119
9.	63-07-09	THE FREE BEING	135
10.	63-07-10	AUDITING SKILLS FOR R3R	153
11.	63-07-10	AUDITING SESSION: PRELIMINARY STEPS OF R3R PART I	169
12.	63-07-10	AUDITING SESSION: PRELIMINARY STEPS OF R3R PART II	193
13.	63-07-11	ARC BREAKS	216
14.	63-07-16	TIPS ON RUNNING R3R	234
15.	63-07-17	DATING	252
16.	63-07-18	ERRORS IN TIME	270
17.	63-07-23	BETWEEN LIVES IMPLANTS	290
18.	63-07-24	ARC BREAKS AND THE COMM CYCLE	308
19.	63-07-25	COMM CYCLES IN AUDITING	330
20.	63-08-06	AUDITING COMM CYCLES	350
21.	63-08-07	R2H FUNDAMENTALS	370
22.	63-08-08	R2H ASSESSMENT	390
23.	63-08-14	AUDITING TIPS	408
24.	63-08-15	THE TONE ARM	428
25.	63-08-20	THE ITSA LINE	446
26.	63-08-21	THE ITSA LINE (CONTINUED)	466
27.	63-08-22	PROJECT 80	484
28.	63-08-27	RIGHTNESS AND WRONGNESS	502
29.	63-08-28	THE TONE ARM AND THE SERVICE FACSIMILE	522
30.	63-08-29	THE SERVICE FACSIMILE	542
31.	63-09-03	R3SC	562
32.	63-09-04	HOW TO FIND A SERVICE FACSIMILE	582
33.	63-09-05	SERVICE FAC ASSESSMENT	602
34.	63-09-10	DESTIMULATION OF A CASE	624
35.	63-09-11	SERVICE FACS AND GPMS	644
36.	63-09-12	SERVICE FACSIMILES	663
37.	63-09-17	WHAT YOU ARE AUDITING	687
38.	63-09-18	SAINT HILL SERVICE FACSIMILE HANDLING	709
39.	63-09-19	ROUTINE 4MTA	731

40.	63-09-24	SUMMARY I.....	750
41.	63-09-25	SUMMARY II: SCIENTOLOGY 0.....	772
42.	63-09-26	SUMMARY III: ABOUT LEVEL IV AUDITING.....	794
43.	63-10-15	ESSENTIALS OF AUDITING.....	816
44.	63-10-16	THE ITSA MAKER LINE.....	836
45.	63-10-17	LEVEL IV AUDITING.....	857
46.	63-10-21	ATTACK AND GPMS.....	879
47.	63-10-22	THE INTEGRATION OF AUDITING.....	899
48.	63-10-23	AUDITING THE GPM.....	921
49.	63-10-29	ROUTINE 4.....	941
50.	63-10-30	R4 CASE ASSEMBLY.....	965
51.	63-10-31	R4M2 PROGRAMING.....	985
52.	63-11-05	THREE ZONES OF AUDITING.....	1008
53.	63-11-07	RELATIONSHIP OF TRAINING TO OT.....	1029
54.	63-11-26	R4 AUDITING.....	1053
55.	63-11-28	TV DEMO: AUDITING DEMO WITH COMMENTS BY LRH.....	1077
56.	63-11-28	SEVEN CLASSIFICATIONS.....	1099
57.	63-12-03	CERTIFICATIONS AND CLASSIFICATIONS.....	1123
58.	63-12-04	TV DEMO: BASIC AUDITING LECTURE AND DEMO.....	1145
59.	63-12-05	BASIC AUDITING.....	1169
60.	63-12-10	SCIENTOLOGY ZERO.....	1189
61.	63-12-12	SUMMARY OF OT PROCESSES.....	1209
62.	63-12-31	INDICATORS.....	1231
63.	64-01-07	GOOD INDICATORS AT LOWER LEVELS.....	1253
64.	64-01-09	BAD INDICATORS.....	1277
65.	64-02-04	AUDITOR SELF-CRITICISM.....	1297
66.	64-02-06	THE COMMUNICATION CYCLE IN AUDITING.....	1317
67.	64-02-25	A LECTURE GIVEN ON 25 FEBRUARY 1964.....	1338
68.	64-03-03	AUDITING AND ASSESSMENT.....	1360
69.	64-03-05	CASE ANALYSIS – HEALING.....	1380
70.	64-03-10	SUMMARY OF LOWER LEVELS – CLEARING AT LEVEL IV.....	1398
71.	64-03-17	LOWER LEVELS OF AUDITING (ORIGINALLY: THE ROAD TO PERFECTION).....	1417
72.	64-03-19	FLATTENING A PROCESS.....	1435
73.	64-03-24	INTERNATIONAL CITY.....	1457
74.	64-04-10	HOW TO MANAGE A COURSE.....	1477
75.	64-04-14	THE CLASSIFICATION AND GRADATION PROGRAM.....	1487
76.	64-04-16	AUDITING BY LISTS.....	1507
77.	64-04-21	PROBLEMS AND SOLUTIONS.....	1526
78.	64-04-28	WISDOM AS AN AUDITOR.....	1548
79.	64-04-30	EFFECTIVENESS OF PROCESSING.....	1570
80.	64-05-19	THE PRECLEAR AND GETTING AUDITING TO WORK.....	1592

81.	64-06-09	THE CYCLE OF ACTION: ITS INTERPRETATION ON THE E-METER	1610
82.	64-06-16	COMMUNICATION, OVERTS AND RESPONSIBILITY	1632
83.	64-06-18	STUDYING: INTRODUCTION	1654
84.	64-06-30	CAUSE LEVEL, OT AND THE PUBLIC	1676
85.	64-07-02	O/W MODERNIZED AND REVIEWED	1696
86.	64-07-07	DISSEMINATION.....	1720
87.	64-07-09	STUDYING: DATA ASSIMILATION	1742
88.	64-07-14	BANK ANATOMY.....	1762
89.	64-07-15	ORGANIZATIONAL OPERATION	1782
90.	64-07-28	CAMPAIGN TO HANDLE PSYCHOSOMATIC ILLS.....	1806
91.	64-07-30	PSYCHOSOMATIC: ITS MEANING IN SCIENTOLOGY	1826
92.	64-08-04	A SUMMARY OF STUDY	1846
93.	64-08-06	STUDY: GRADIENTS AND NOMENCLATURE.....	1868
94.	64-08-11	STUDY: EVALUATION OF INFORMATION	1890
95.	64-08-13	STUDY AND EDUCATION	1912
96.	64-09-01	THE PE COURSE.....	1934

b) Table of Contents, in chronological order:

1.	63-06-12	ARC STRAIGHTWIRE	1
2.	63-06-13	LEVELS OF CASE	21
3.	63-06-18	BEINGNESS	37
4.	63-06-19	SUMMARY OF MODERN AUDITING	53
5.	63-06-20	HISTORY OF PSYCHOTHERAPY	69
6.	63-06-25	MODERN PROCESSES (ORIGINAL TITLE: ROUTINE 2-H)	87
7.	63-06-26	TV DEMO: LISTING ASSESSMENT FOR ENGRAM RUNNING PART I	105
8.	63-06-27	TV DEMO: LISTING ASSESSMENT FOR ENGRAM RUNNING PART II	119
9.	63-07-09	THE FREE BEING	135
10.	63-07-10	AUDITING SESSION: PRELIMINARY STEPS OF R3R PART I	169
11.	63-07-10	AUDITING SESSION: PRELIMINARY STEPS OF R3R PART II	193
12.	63-07-10	AUDITING SKILLS FOR R3R	153
13.	63-07-11	ARC BREAKS	216
14.	63-07-16	TIPS ON RUNNING R3R	234
15.	63-07-17	DATING	252
16.	63-07-18	ERRORS IN TIME	270
17.	63-07-23	BETWEEN LIVES IMPLANTS	290
18.	63-07-24	ARC BREAKS AND THE COMM CYCLE	308
19.	63-07-25	COMM CYCLES IN AUDITING	330
20.	63-08-06	AUDITING COMM CYCLES	350
21.	63-08-07	R2H FUNDAMENTALS	370
22.	63-08-08	R2H ASSESSMENT	390
23.	63-08-14	AUDITING TIPS	408
24.	63-08-15	THE TONE ARM	428
25.	63-08-20	THE ITSA LINE	446
26.	63-08-21	THE ITSA LINE (CONTINUED)	466
27.	63-08-22	PROJECT 80	484
28.	63-08-27	RIGHTNESS AND WRONGNESS	502
29.	63-08-28	THE TONE ARM AND THE SERVICE FACSIMILE	522
30.	63-08-29	THE SERVICE FACSIMILE	542
31.	63-09-03	R3SC	562
32.	63-09-04	HOW TO FIND A SERVICE FACSIMILE	582
33.	63-09-05	SERVICE FAC ASSESSMENT	602
34.	63-09-10	DESTIMULATION OF A CASE	624
35.	63-09-11	SERVICE FACS AND GPMS	644
36.	63-09-12	SERVICE FACSIMILES	663
37.	63-09-17	WHAT YOU ARE AUDITING	687
38.	63-09-18	SAINT HILL SERVICE FACSIMILE HANDLING	709
39.	63-09-19	ROUTINE 4MTA	731

40.	63-09-24	SUMMARY I.....	750
41.	63-09-25	SUMMARY II: SCIENTOLOGY 0.....	772
42.	63-09-26	SUMMARY III: ABOUT LEVEL IV AUDITING.....	794
43.	63-10-15	ESSENTIALS OF AUDITING.....	816
44.	63-10-16	THE ITSA MAKER LINE.....	836
45.	63-10-17	LEVEL IV AUDITING.....	857
46.	63-10-21	ATTACK AND GPMS.....	879
47.	63-10-22	THE INTEGRATION OF AUDITING.....	899
48.	63-10-23	AUDITING THE GPM.....	921
49.	63-10-29	ROUTINE 4.....	941
50.	63-10-30	R4 CASE ASSEMBLY.....	965
51.	63-10-31	R4M2 PROGRAMING.....	985
52.	63-11-05	THREE ZONES OF AUDITING.....	1008
53.	63-11-07	RELATIONSHIP OF TRAINING TO OT.....	1029
54.	63-11-26	R4 AUDITING.....	1053
55.	63-11-28	SEVEN CLASSIFICATIONS.....	1099
56.	63-11-28	TV DEMO: AUDITING DEMO WITH COMMENTS BY LRH.....	1077
57.	63-12-03	CERTIFICATIONS AND CLASSIFICATIONS.....	1123
58.	63-12-04	TV DEMO: BASIC AUDITING LECTURE AND DEMO.....	1145
59.	63-12-05	BASIC AUDITING.....	1169
60.	63-12-10	SCIENTOLOGY ZERO.....	1189
61.	63-12-12	SUMMARY OF OT PROCESSES.....	1209
62.	63-12-31	INDICATORS.....	1231
63.	64-01-07	GOOD INDICATORS AT LOWER LEVELS.....	1253
64.	64-01-09	BAD INDICATORS.....	1277
65.	64-02-04	AUDITOR SELF-CRITICISM.....	1297
66.	64-02-06	THE COMMUNICATION CYCLE IN AUDITING.....	1317
67.	64-02-25	A LECTURE GIVEN ON 25 FEBRUARY 1964.....	1338
68.	64-03-03	AUDITING AND ASSESSMENT.....	1360
69.	64-03-05	CASE ANALYSIS – HEALING.....	1380
70.	64-03-10	SUMMARY OF LOWER LEVELS – CLEARING AT LEVEL IV.....	1398
71.	64-03-17	LOWER LEVELS OF AUDITING (ORIGINALLY: THE ROAD TO PERFECTION).....	1417
72.	64-03-19	FLATTENING A PROCESS.....	1435
73.	64-03-24	INTERNATIONAL CITY.....	1457
74.	64-04-10	HOW TO MANAGE A COURSE.....	1477
75.	64-04-14	THE CLASSIFICATION AND GRADATION PROGRAM.....	1487
76.	64-04-16	AUDITING BY LISTS.....	1507
77.	64-04-21	PROBLEMS AND SOLUTIONS.....	1526
78.	64-04-28	WISDOM AS AN AUDITOR.....	1548
79.	64-04-30	EFFECTIVENESS OF PROCESSING.....	1570
80.	64-05-19	THE PRECLEAR AND GETTING AUDITING TO WORK.....	1592

81.	64-06-09	THE CYCLE OF ACTION: ITS INTERPRETATION ON THE E-METER	1610
82.	64-06-16	COMMUNICATION, OVERTS AND RESPONSIBILITY	1632
83.	64-06-18	STUDYING: INTRODUCTION	1654
84.	64-06-30	CAUSE LEVEL, OT AND THE PUBLIC	1676
85.	64-07-02	O/W MODERNIZED AND REVIEWED	1696
86.	64-07-07	DISSEMINATION.....	1720
87.	64-07-09	STUDYING: DATA ASSIMILATION	1742
88.	64-07-14	BANK ANATOMY.....	1762
89.	64-07-15	ORGANIZATIONAL OPERATION	1782
90.	64-07-28	CAMPAIGN TO HANDLE PSYCHOSOMATIC ILLS.....	1806
91.	64-07-30	PSYCHOSOMATIC: ITS MEANING IN SCIENTOLOGY	1826
92.	64-08-04	A SUMMARY OF STUDY	1846
93.	64-08-06	STUDY: GRADIENTS AND NOMENCLATURE.....	1868
94.	64-08-11	STUDY: EVALUATION OF INFORMATION	1890
95.	64-08-13	STUDY AND EDUCATION	1912
96.	64-09-01	THE PE COURSE.....	1934

c) Table of Contents, in alphabetical order:

1.	64-02-25	A LECTURE GIVEN ON 25 FEBRUARY 1964	1338
2.	64-08-04	A SUMMARY OF STUDY	1846
3.	63-07-24	ARC BREAKS AND THE COMM CYCLE	308
4.	63-07-11	ARC BREAKS	216
5.	63-06-12	ARC STRAIGHTWIRE	1
6.	63-10-21	ATTACK AND GPMS	879
7.	64-03-03	AUDITING AND ASSESSMENT	1360
8.	64-04-16	AUDITING BY LISTS	1507
9.	63-08-06	AUDITING COMM CYCLES	350
10.	63-07-10	AUDITING SESSION: PRELIMINARY STEPS OF R3R PART I	169
11.	63-07-10	AUDITING SESSION: PRELIMINARY STEPS OF R3R PART II	193
12.	63-07-10	AUDITING SKILLS FOR R3R	153
13.	63-10-23	AUDITING THE GPM	921
14.	63-08-14	AUDITING TIPS	408
15.	64-02-04	AUDITOR SELF-CRITICISM	1297
16.	64-01-09	BAD INDICATORS	1277
17.	64-07-14	BANK ANATOMY	1762
18.	63-12-05	BASIC AUDITING	1169
19.	63-06-18	BEINGNESS	37
20.	63-07-23	BETWEEN LIVES IMPLANTS	290
21.	64-07-28	CAMPAIGN TO HANDLE PSYCHOSOMATIC ILLS	1806
22.	64-03-05	CASE ANALYSIS – HEALING	1380
23.	64-06-30	CAUSE LEVEL, OT AND THE PUBLIC	1676
24.	63-12-03	CERTIFICATIONS AND CLASSIFICATIONS	1123
25.	63-07-25	COMM CYCLES IN AUDITING	330
26.	64-06-16	COMMUNICATION, OVERTS AND RESPONSIBILITY	1632
27.	63-07-17	DATING	252
28.	63-09-10	DESTIMULATION OF A CASE	624
29.	64-07-07	DISSEMINATION	1720
30.	64-04-30	EFFECTIVENESS OF PROCESSING	1570
31.	63-07-18	ERRORS IN TIME	270
32.	63-10-15	ESSENTIALS OF AUDITING	816
33.	64-03-19	FLATTENING A PROCESS	1435
34.	64-01-07	GOOD INDICATORS AT LOWER LEVELS	1253
35.	63-06-20	HISTORY OF PSYCHOTHERAPY	69
36.	63-09-04	HOW TO FIND A SERVICE FACSIMILE	582
37.	64-04-10	HOW TO MANAGE A COURSE	1477
38.	63-12-31	INDICATORS	1231
39.	64-03-24	INTERNATIONAL CITY	1457

40.	63-10-17	LEVEL IV AUDITING	857
41.	63-06-13	LEVELS OF CASE.....	21
42.	64-03-17	LOWER LEVELS OF AUDITING (ORIGINALLY: THE ROAD TO PERFECTION).....	1417
43.	63-06-25	MODERN PROCESSES (ORIGINAL TITLE: ROUTINE 2-H).....	87
44.	64-07-02	O/W MODERNIZED AND REVIEWED	1696
45.	64-07-15	ORGANIZATIONAL OPERATION	1782
46.	64-04-21	PROBLEMS AND SOLUTIONS.....	1526
47.	63-08-22	PROJECT 80	484
48.	64-07-30	PSYCHOSOMATIC: ITS MEANING IN SCIENTOLOGY	1826
49.	63-08-08	R2H ASSESSMENT	390
50.	63-08-07	R2H FUNDAMENTALS.....	370
51.	63-09-03	R3SC	562
52.	63-11-26	R4 AUDITING	1053
53.	63-10-30	R4 CASE ASSEMBLY	965
54.	63-10-31	R4M2 PROGRAMING.....	985
55.	63-11-07	RELATIONSHIP OF TRAINING TO OT	1029
56.	63-08-27	RIGHTNESS AND WRONGNESS.....	502
57.	63-10-29	ROUTINE 4.....	941
58.	63-09-19	ROUTINE 4MTA	731
59.	63-09-18	SAINT HILL SERVICE FACSIMILE HANDLING.....	709
60.	63-12-10	SCIENTOLOGY ZERO	1189
61.	63-09-05	SERVICE FAC ASSESSMENT.....	602
62.	63-09-11	SERVICE FACS AND GPMS.....	644
63.	63-09-12	SERVICE FACSIMILES	663
64.	63-11-28	SEVEN CLASSIFICATIONS	1099
65.	64-08-13	STUDY AND EDUCATION	1912
66.	64-08-11	STUDY: EVALUATION OF INFORMATION	1890
67.	64-08-06	STUDY: GRADIENTS AND NOMENCLATURE.....	1868
68.	64-07-09	STUDYING: DATA ASSIMILATION	1742
69.	64-06-18	STUDYING: INTRODUCTION	1654
70.	63-09-24	SUMMARY I.....	750
71.	63-09-25	SUMMARY II: SCIENTOLOGY 0.....	772
72.	63-09-26	SUMMARY III: ABOUT LEVEL IV AUDITING.....	794
73.	63-06-19	SUMMARY OF MODERN AUDITING.....	53
74.	63-12-12	SUMMARY OF OT PROCESSES.....	1209
75.	64-03-10	SUMMARY OF LOWER LEVELS – CLEARING AT LEVEL IV.....	1398
76.	64-04-14	THE CLASSIFICATION AND GRADATION PROGRAM	1487
77.	64-02-06	THE COMMUNICATION CYCLE IN AUDITING	1317
78.	64-06-09	THE CYCLE OF ACTION: ITS INTERPRETATION ON THE E-METER.....	1610
79.	63-07-09	THE FREE BEING	135
80.	63-10-22	THE INTEGRATION OF AUDITING	899

81.	63-08-21	THE ITSA LINE (CONTINUED)	466
82.	63-08-20	THE ITSA LINE	446
83.	63-10-16	THE ITSA MAKER LINE	836
84.	64-09-01	THE PE COURSE.....	1934
85.	64-05-19	THE PRECLEAR AND GETTING AUDITING TO WORK.....	1592
86.	63-08-29	THE SERVICE FACSIMILE	542
87.	63-08-28	THE TONE ARM AND THE SERVICE FACSIMILE.....	522
88.	63-08-15	THE TONE ARM.....	428
89.	63-11-05	THREE ZONES OF AUDITING	1008
90.	63-07-16	TIPS ON RUNNING R3R.....	234
91.	63-06-27	TV DEMO: LISTING ASSESSMENT FOR ENGRAM RUNNING PART II.....	119
92.	63-11-28	TV DEMO: AUDITING DEMO WITH COMMENTS BY LRH.....	1077
93.	63-12-04	TV DEMO: BASIC AUDITING LECTURE AND DEMO.....	1145
94.	63-06-26	TV DEMO: LISTING ASSESSMENT FOR ENGRAM RUNNING PART I.....	105
95.	63-09-17	WHAT YOU ARE AUDITING	687
96.	64-04-28	WISDOM AS AN AUDITOR.....	1548

ARC STRAIGHTWIRE

A lecture given on 12 June 1963

Thank you. Now, let's see, this is the what? 12th of June?

Audience: 12th of June.

You get an extra lecture this week. That's because I just didn't feel like doing anything with blocking out engrams on somebody for an hour and then leaving them to some other auditor. It seemed unkind. I'll give you a demonstration on that next week probably.

But well, Saint Hill Special Briefing Course, just so you'll know where you are. [laughter] And I want to talk to you now about a fundamental subject which I haven't discussed at length with you, and that is ARC Straightwire. This is very needful material, and it may seem very old to some of you because I'm sure that your earliest introduction to processing in any Academy was sitting down and struggling with ARC Straightwire and having it pointed out that the pc had not cycled to present time but had been left in the middle of the soup. And that was why the pc was cross or some such things. ARC Straightwire is the oldest broad process of a repetitive nature. It is the most ancient. And in actual fact, although I may be in error on this, I think is the first repetitive process.

You'll find the remains of the first version in modern publications of *Self Analysis*. That's the remains of the first version. But this process was based on the ARC triangle, and the ARC triangle was originated in July of 1950 in Elizabeth, New Jersey, and was expanded in its understanding that September or November in Los Angeles at the HDRF there. Now, this was a very important breakthrough on the field of the mind. A very important thing. To this day, there is no other single tool of the auditor that invites quite as much use or understanding and so forth as the ARC triangle.

Now, the best dissertation on the ARC triangle itself is to be found in *Notes on Lectures*. And that is the very best dissertation on that. It was rewritten from a series of lectures given in Los Angeles in 1950, and frankly has not been bettered as a statement.

Now, you should realize that the ARC triangle comprises in actual fact the most fundamental statement of significance. Although it apparently is addressed to the subject of matter, energy, space, time and significance and embraces all those things, it actually is the most fundamental basis of significance itself. It forms, you might say, a bridge between the pure postulate and the significance of MEST. You can make a pure postulate, and it doesn't have to have any relationship to the ARC triangle. But the moment that a pure postulate becomes impinged upon matter, energy, space and time, it is immediately involved with this thing called ARC and ARC is the connecting link between the postulate and matter, energy, space and time.

Now, that matter, energy, space and time may... could be contained in the time track, or it may be contained in the physical universe. It doesn't matter what its location is. You understand, that a time track is actually a picture record of the physical universe and so in itself contains matter, energy, space and time.

Now, ARC of course means affinity, reality and communication. The first thing we run into a cropper on in trying to translate this, is the word affinity. Affinity is so much itself and is so relative, that we get into a considerable, to use a Texas word, hassle, in trying to interpret it in an auditing command generally.

Now, affinity has been very technically defined, and so has reality and so has communication. This is not a discussion of the ARC triangle. But for your information, the word affinity embraces everything from the Know to Mystery Scale. See, it embraces the lot and... as far as these aspects are concerned. But it means – it means the feeling for or the feeling with or the lack of the feeling for or the lack of the feeling with, don't you see, and it definitely contains this connotation of *feeling about*, you see. And it's not enough to say emotional response, because a fellow who feels effortful about effort is still experiencing affinity about effort, see, his affinity about effort.

Now, sympathy, empathy, all of these things come into this, and it becomes one of these very broad subjects. And the word affinity is not an adequate word to discuss these things because the word has not existed in actual fact in any language. Because this concept has not been well embraced by any language. We're up against the semantics of the situation.

But if you take the Know to Mystery Scale and substitute it for the word affinity, and you use emotion and misemotion and such things as that, you're going to find the pc responding to it. Now, some people are only going to respond to the idea of love. They don't respond to emotion at all. Emotion isn't there, you see, and so forth. But nevertheless, love, this expresses affinity for them, you see.

And now when we say the emotional Tone Scale, we're talking about just a fraction of the Know to Mystery Scale. So everything on the emotional scale is under this head of affinity, clear from "hide" all the way on up. And there is your expression.

Now, how many words then can be used in any command containing the word affinity? That's a lot of them, isn't it? So, when we clear this command, we have to clear it in an understanding of what we mean by affinity. And we have this, this is all graphed. I mean, we've got it. That's broadly the Know to Mystery Scale and then part of the Know to Mystery Scale, the middle section, of course, is the whole Tone Scale. So we've got a lot of words there that we can clear.

And we'll find the pc chronically resident at one or another of these levels, and that of course is the level he will respond to in processing.

Now, on the word reality, reality could obtain in significance alone, you know – his reality is poor and so forth – to actual chunks of matter. You see, reality refers to all of these conditions but reality is normally considered to be considerations about something. It'll... considerations about something, or somebody, moving on up into the more solid concepts of just matter, energy, space and time. You see, space is a reality and energy is reality and matter is a

reality and time is a reality. And so on. So, in clearing this word you will have less trouble. This word tends to clear itself with the pc more or less. He can get a grip on this word. He sort of knows what you're talking about. But if you had to vary it and the pc couldn't get a grip on this thing, it would be – it would be much harder to do. Much harder to do.

You would have to clear it something on the basis of whether it was matter, energy, space or time, you were talking about, or considerations about things, if he was totally in a thought response level, don't you see; or evaluations about things, or something of that sort. A harder word to clear, but you understand what you would be clearing.

You could ask somebody, you know, "What space have you rejected," see? I mean... and you're still asking this question of – number two question of the ARC triangle. You should recognize that that is its flexibility.

Now let's take communication. And we have the communication formula. And we mean any interchange, whether it's a bullet or a kiss. See, we have any interchange, with its consequent duplications and so forth. It's anything that fits under the communication formula. So in clearing that you also could move off of the idea of communication to the degree of a type or kind of communication. This is again less necessary. Communication is easy to understand.

But that could also contain the word duplication as well as communication. It could contain the word cause as well as communication, it could contain the word effect as well as communication, you see. What you're doing there is substituting various parts of the communication formula into that third auditing command in ARC.

When I speak then of clearing commands, it is a matter of substituting words in these three ARC commands so that the pc level of reality is met by the auditing command. And when we say clearing the command, we don't mean just does he understand this particular word that we keep hurling at him, but what word communicates what we're trying to communicate to him where we want to communicate at to, you got it?

So you can do a considerable amount of shifting around as long as you continue to hold to the ARC formula. And don't go shifting the thing around so that you ask the first question twice and the third question once and the first qu... you see? So that you say – you say for instance, you ask in actual fact two reality questions and one communication question and two reality questions and one communication question, because this thing is going to become unbalanced very fast.

Now, the fundamental understanding of the ARC process was contained in this: that those three things together equate to understanding – Affinity, reality and communication combined in their three selves, make understanding. And this, by the way, is something I never committed to paper, but I worked it out quite laboriously, mathematically and otherwise, in the autumn of 1950, and they actually do convert mathematically to understanding. It's quite interesting. There is no facet of understanding which falls outside of affinity, reality and communication.

And it takes all three of these things to bring about an understanding. When your pc has cognited, you possibly are not totally aware of the fact that he has reached a point of

ARC. It's just as easy as that, you see. He's reached a point of ARC and this has expressed by a cognition. Well, of course, what is a cognition but an understanding? And the pc suddenly understands something. Well, you have established ARC here. And having established ARC you get a cognition. That tells you then that you're driving straight at it.

Now, oddly enough you won't get a cognition if you omit one of the legs. You just – just omit the A and run nothing but R and C and R and C and R and C and R and C, you'll find your pc, after a little while, no longer comes up with, "Well, what do you know..." That's the whole case there. You've unbalanced his understanding. That is what tends to make this such a powerful process, because it brings up one understanding on top of another understanding on top of another understanding, you see. And ARC should also have preserved with it – any statement about it – this very, very fundamental fact: That if you wish to raise C, which is stuck in the mud, you hit the A and the R. And if you wish to raise the R, which is stuck in the mud, you hit the A and the C. And if you wish to raise the A, you had better work on the R and C.

Now, that is terribly valuable. That is terribly valuable and must be preserved in any use of ARC processes. And the reason I give you this is already the mistake is being made: he can't answer the communication question so therefore we will run it session after session after session. Now, what is the error? The fellow can't grasp the communication side of it, why?

Well, he does the R easily, you see, and he does the other one easily, but this one is stuck. So you'd better do the other two points. So any point which is overrun or more difficult will give trouble, providing you don't preserve the balance of the three questions.

Now, this gives us immediate trouble. It says "How do you know which one is flat?" Well, actually, please look at this: None – not one of those questions will ever flatten. You get that now? Only the three questions flatten, if anything is ever going to flatten, and it's very doubtful if you could even flatten the three. But if you've got three questions, you must flatten the three questions. It's the three questions you are trying to flatten. You are not trying to flatten one question. So then don't make too many problems on when do we come off of this. When do we come off of this leg? Don't make too many problems there.

There are three ways to come off of a process. Three responses of equal length, you know, of equal comm lag, he gives you three responses; he replies to it three times at the same interval, even if it's half an hour each, see. Now, that's enough. That's enough. You can change a process on that shady reasoning. Now, that's the most crude method of changing a process, three responses. Equal length. Usually it's interpreted to mean "He answered it glibly three times, so we're away," see, that's usually interpreted to mean that.

All right, your next method... I remember in 17th ACC, I beat this home in a lecture, and the following day did the unforgivable thing of coming into class and asking the students one after the other what were the three signals which permitted you to leave a process. And not one of them knew. That was a terrible loss for me. I immediately invented the educational processes, which have... we haven't had much to do with.

But these three methods of ending a process become important to you in running ARC because you see you're flattening the triangle, you're flattening three questions, you're not flattening one. The next one is, of course, by cognition. Pc has a cognition, bail out.

I just saw an auditor get in their mid ruds at the end of session, and because there was one more to ask, didn't treat the mid ruds as a process. Pc cognited like mad on the session on the next to the last button, and the auditor got in the last button. The auditor unflattened the process. Get the idea?

This is a – this is a very interesting auditing tool, if it's sensibly used. In other words, pc has a cognition, to all intents and purposes you can consider the thing flat. But you have to leave it right then. You have to hit the silk with a loud "Geronimo," right at that point. Don't hang around monkeying with the ring. Right then, bail out.

"Well, how did you do on this process?"

You've had it, see. Pc says, "What do you know. You know..." You're running a communication process on him. "I hate people. Well, what do you know. I've often wondered about this. And I really basically hate people. I – I – that's what I've suddenly realized."

You say, "I'll give you this question two more times and end this process if that's all..." cut your throat, man.

So when you have to use that cognition process end, it's hit the silk, see? You say, "All right," as he's going on cogniting and talking about it you say, "that was the last command of that process."

See, handle it like Havingness. But when you bail out on a cognition, you really bail out and don't return the pc to the session, because the fastest thing you ever did in your life was unflatten one of these processes. You can flatten them and you just took one breath too many on the next command, you see. You said, "Well, all right, now, we're going to ask this question one more time and due to the fact that you've had a cognition. And are going to ask this question one more..." And that's it. You now have an unflat process.

See, so that one's very delicate. That's slippy. If you're going to use this one to end a process with, you end the process with it right now. You don't wait around. "That was the last command. All right, now we're going to take up the first leg of this which is 'What attitude has been rejected'," see. Pc will be perfectly fine. Just smooth, man, he won't even notice anything is happening.

Your next one of course is tone arm action. Now, this in running the ARC triangle is the least reliable for any leg. The least reliable. It's the most desirable and the least attainable. It'd be marvelous if the pc would promptly come down at the end of forty-five minutes of run on one question, would come down to exactly, the last ten minutes, .25 TA division. And then you would bail it out and you would do forty-five minutes on the next leg and it would come down, sweetly, precisely and obediently to .25 in ten minutes. I – you're saying the rule is twenty minutes. Well, in this one you can't afford twenty minutes to hang around and test, so you'd shorten it down to that much. And you're never going to find this condition.

This is an unrealizable perfection. So you say, well, he's had a blowdown. So running by blowdown is a little more reliable. But you can't count on him blowing down at exactly forty-five minutes either. So your TA motion is your least reliable bail-out although you would look at it mechanically as your most reliable. No, your TA is *terribly* valuable because

you can't come off the process until it's not producing tone arm reaction. But the process is three questions.

Now, you're running "In auditing," and the... running the three questions "In auditing." And one of these legs, oh, man, it goes on up to 4.2, and it comes down and so forth, and the other two don't seem to be producing much action, but this reality, boy, that goes up and it comes down, and you just better continue your process. You've got two that are apparently flat, but the third is not flat. You can't come off of that. Or actually alter the amount of time given to each leg until you get that process flat.

The way to flatten that process on reality is to continue to equally run with reality, affinity and communication. See your trick? Just because he wasn't flat on reality don't go beating reality to death. Because what's going to raise it is going to be affinity and communication legs.

All of this is – seems rather elementary for me to be talking this way. I started out with a very good academic approach, and all of a sudden come off to very fast and factual processing tips. But these are the things which are going to give you the trouble with the process, these little adjudications. "Wha – what – what, uh, what – what – huh uh huh...? What do I do now?" He says he absolutely hates this communication leg; he runs this reality leg like hot butter. Inevitably it would seem to mean that you had to flatten the communication leg when as a matter of fact the thing that'll get him out of it is running the reality and the affinity and the communication leg equally. So therefore, we have a process which can be handled in numerous ways, but which has very firm beginnings and has never really departed from our roster.

The first thing I ever found – to get back to an historical dissertation on this – first thing I ever found this process doing was breaking neurosis. And that's the old one that's registered in *Self Analysis*. I think that's quite interesting. You can take somebody who is strictly fruitcake, you could pour champagne on him or brandy on him and light him up for Christmas, you know, and he'd do all right. And run that process for a relatively short space of time. If it's going to produce this type of reaction that process is going to produce it right now. It's going to produce it fast. And you run it for a short space of time on him and all of a sudden, why he's bright and smiling and quite sane and not worried about something.

Now, I've seen it do that. And therefore the process has very firm grounding, as far as I'm concerned. And the only cases I have ever had trouble with the old process on, were cases that just got the same answers over and over and over and never made a breakthrough. They never broke through into anything else. They apparently just go on getting the same answers.

Now, that's the liability of the positive process of 1950, that on many cases it simply grinds down to a finite number of answers and that is it. Now, what's the matter? Why does it do that? Well, you're not heading in the direction that that case heads. You're heading toward positive ARC and their moments of positive ARC are so few as to be countable on the commands of one auditor. See, very brief period of time. And they quickly run out of these things because you're in actual fact running, if you want to know the truth of it, pleasure moments of some kind or another. And they won't flatten. So you just run the same ones over and over and over. So you have to run the reverse side of it.

I've paid attention to this process and have revived it and done things with it and fooled about with it from time to time, and now and then you'll see records of it as it goes along over the years. But about 1958 we ran into a period there when I was suddenly colliding with some implants and didn't know quite what to do about it, were running a great deal of reach and withdraw type of thing and so forth, and raising IQ of people rather easily, and so forth.

All... you want to raise somebody's IQ, you know, there's a standard process for it, just as a little interjection here. Just say, "What could you withhold? Thank you. What could you withhold? What could you withhold?" Give them another IQ test, and their IQ will have gone up about twenty-five, fifty points. They won't be any better, but their IQ will be higher. Quite interesting. That's a funny phenomenon for you.

Also, plunge them into an engram, run it halfway through and give them another IQ test and they'll be smarter. That works. I'm not kidding you. That... it works. Why? Well, apparently it has something to do with mass. And people who think only on the mass which they have to think with, see, can get mechanical responses required in IQ tests. You understand, I said it was an IQ test that you were trying to raise. You're not trying to make him any smarter. See? And they always get a better IQ test. It's, it's quite interesting.

Now the upsets that you run into, however, on a case, are not the case's pleasure moments. You run up in the upsets on a case of times when they were knocked away from being part of things. The separateness or individuation. Or were forced to be part of things they wanted nothing to do with. In other words, you had a power of choice or of connect and disconnect. And that power of choice is overthrown. And when that power of choice is overthrown you get what you call an ARC break.

He was there but didn't want to be there. He wanted to be there but couldn't be there. Now, those are causes of ARC breaks in their most fundamental form. It actually is an overwhelm of the person's power of choice. Pc wants – you can get an ARC break: pc wants to go earlier on the track and you send him later on the track. Well, that in itself causes an ARC break, regardless of any charge or mechanics or anything else. You've overwhelmed his power of choice. So you have an ARC break.

This is the most fundamental of ARC breaks. And I wondered in 1958 whether or not you couldn't just run Straightwire on (quote) "ARC breaks." Well, the Scientologist knows what an ARC break is, he sort of feels it in his bones, doesn't have to have it designed or described to him any other way than that, and you just ask the question, "Recall an ARC break. Recall an ARC break. Recall an ARC break. Recall an ARC break."

Now, if you were to move on down the line with that process on anybody that could run it, you would find him sitting – and I did on my experiments at that time – find him sitting square in the middle of implants. So an implant was the biggest ARC break. He was being held in a place where he didn't want to be, being told things and, you see, that he didn't want to hear. So this overthrew his power of choice and for numerous other reasons it went against

his grain. But this was the most fundamental overthrow of the power of choice. And this 1958 process – "Recall an ARC break" is the exact process – does some rather interesting things.

So when we got into the Helatrobis Implants here recently, I did a hasty review of all ARC processes and – it wasn't very hasty, I fooled around with it for a couple of weeks, looking over this material, and so forth – and finally exhumed the original version, reversed, and worked it out mechanically and mathematically to fit up to the exact situation of what I knew about these things. And I got quite a bit of information about these things, which isn't only confined to that which works, don't you see? I know lots of things that don't work. And that's very valuable, too. So I knew these had always worked, so I decided to throw together these processes in some sort of form where they would clip directly into and saw out of... saw out pieces of an implant. We needed a process which was senior to any other process we were doing, which was a repetitive process. That was our demand.

We also needed a process to cut through those cases which were at the lower levels of the Reality Scale, and therefore couldn't be directly run on RIs and things of this particular character. What are you going to do, just abandon these people? What are you going to do with somebody who is terribly misrun and mishandled?

And I made an interesting discovery at this time, that the big mid ruds or the 18-button prepcheck, but mainly the big mid ruds, run on an engram, mushed it. It turned it into so much porridge. Messed it up. It tended to spoil the record, not eradicate it. That's interesting, isn't it? An engram frays around the edges and starts turning into pure energy, and that sort of thing. But without returning to the pc, as far as I could tell – although I could revise my opinion of this – without returning to the pc any memory of what did happen. Quite interesting.

In other words, this demonstrated that if you were going to use to a great extent big mid ruds and big Prepchecks on – big lists of buttons on pcs who are stuck in engrams, you weren't going to unstick him out of engrams. You're going to brighten them up and polish it off and straighten up sessions and doing a lot, but this tool is a light tool. It's a light tool. It's the – it's the kid's sand shovel. See? And what we had to have there was that great big Caterpillar tractor-tread steam shovel. And it had to be powerful enough so that it wouldn't buck just because you shoved it into a rocky ledge. That thing had to go on through.

Well, the most there to go through is an implant, and the only thing I knew that would cut through implants is the ARC type process. And so I re-evolved these processes and we came up with the negative ARC processes. That's what these really are. And they call for moments when there wasn't any, or there was minimal, affinity, reality and communication.

Then I made a further discovery about these things. And I found out that a pc was operating on entanglements with the physical universe and all that, and considerations and postulates and all that sort of thing, and it was one thing to bail him out of his intricate entanglements with matter, energy, space and time and considerations, but that there was something else operating which was his consideration of his entanglement, see. And that was the other factor.

Well, I'll give you some reality on that. We walk out here and we find a porter. And this porter's working in this windy, miserable, dust-ridden, soot-drenched station, see. Oh, my God, I mean, it's a mess, you see. And gusts of London breeze are blowing through the places

and throwing the coal dust into everybody's eyes and the tips are very poor and the station-master is a bum that's always coming down on the porters and you know, it's all – it's all very bad. And we find this bird there, and he's happily picking up people's valises and throwing them on trains and walking around and he doesn't seem to have much of a care in the world about it.

And then we turn around and we find another guy right alongside of him, and my God, anybody asks him to pick up one corner of a trunk, *Hwaa!* Majesty has been insulted. If you gave him a ten-pound tip he still would have been undertipped, you see. He is what you might characterize as unhappy with where he is.

Well, here are two fellows in the same environment, same pay, same situation, same everything, don't you see, and they have two different attitudes about what they're doing. All right, we go over to the Ritz Biltmore and we find two bellboys. And actually labor relations in that place are so smooth, they have been taken care of by the union delegates so well and so forth, that even the – even the assistant night clerk who is the most important man in the place as everybody knows, has to say "sir" to the bellhops. You see? The tips, my God – nobody walks into this place, you see, without dropping a fiver in somebody's paw, you see. And it's nothing, nothing there, they get all the chow they want, they get everything they want, they have beautiful uniforms, girls whistle at them, everything is fine, you see.

You get two blokes there and one of these fellows, why, he's just happy as a clam to be there. And the other fellow, every time you hand him a five-pound note he goes back of a pillar or something like that and practically spits his teeth out with rage. Well, you know that these conditions exist.

And you know that people... you may have... you may believe at first glance that if the surroundings are bad, the people are unhappy. And if the surroundings are good, people are happy. There's many people get caught in this. And the most people who get caught in it are by the way your – your sociologists. They have never apparently learned this.

The United States – the United States is having an awful happy time right now pouring billions into foreign aid, so these dirty, filthy, fly-ridden grass huts in Balooga-uga-uga-stan can all be torn down and they can put in nice seven-bedroom ranch houses with hot and cold running politicians throughout. [laughter] And they're just having a ball. And nobody is more surprised or will be more surprised than the United States government at the end of a period of time to find out that the exact proportion of "hate the United States government" and "love the United States government" exists as before. They might even have gone over toward "hate it" before, to the degree that they actually enforced people to live in these seven-bedroom ranch houses, see.

Because you talk to a boy in Balooga-uga-uga-uga-stan and he's liable to tell you something on this order: "Ah, nice house, yeah, nice house. Yeah, reeds, reeds, nice reeds, side of a river, nice reeds. Wife there raise some yams and so forth, and nice reeds, very thin walls." So you say, "What do you mean, very thin walls?" He's kept crooning over this idea of these thin reeds, you know. And you – it doesn't sound like this guy's very smart. And he looks at you like you're crazy.

And he says, "Well, of course, very thin reeds."

"Yeah, but what about these reeds?"

Oh, man! He says, "You can go out that wall, that wall or that wall!" [laughter, laughs] That's his idea of a house. [laughs, laughter]

Now, that factor, that wild, weird factor that keeps rattling around all over the place, gets into the machinery and cogwheels of more social planning and messes up more great schemes and so forth, than any other single factor. In fact it is the only factor that does mess up these things. And that's just power of choice.

Now, you could call it preference, or you could call it this or call it that, but it just happens to be the fellow's attitude toward where he is and what's happening. It's his preference. I use the word "attitude" carelessly there.

It's either all right or it isn't all right, and to that degree it's whether he understands it or doesn't understand it. Don't you see? It's... also could go under the heading of whether he wants it or doesn't want it, and so forth. But in actual fact all of these factors, however you express it, are incomplete statements until you express it completely as affinity, reality and communication.

Now, that's a complete statement of this. And the pc has had all those things present with regard to all these circumstances all up and down the track. And that's an adequate statement of power of choice, and it's not a packaged statement that can be stated in one brief word. That has to be stated in terms of affinity, reality and communication. And if you try to overstate it on one of those corners of the triangle, you're going to mess up the other two corners and you're going to overthrow power of choice, don't you see?

It's quite interesting. It brings up this: is there such a thing as an ideal state? I don't mean an ideal nation, I mean an ideal condition of beingness. Is there such a thing as an ideal state? Well, I was quite amazed. I was quite amazed in looking over the whole track to find out that there was some awful unhappy big thetans on the backtrack. They were bored, they didn't have anything to do. That sort of thing, you'd say, "Well, that fellow was in an ideal state."

No, he wasn't in an ideal state. And neither was anybody else. And the faintest possibility of anybody ever achieving an ideal state exists in Scientology and has never before existed in this universe. That's an interestingly broad and fantastically exclamatory statement but yet is true. What will we mean by an ideal state? A state somebody wanted to be in over which he had full power of choice. See, that would be an ideal state. Well, of course, unless an individual's power of choice is adjustable and his control of his environment is considerable, he could therefore never reach it. Wouldn't matter what his fundamental basic condition was, if this other condition was out, why, it'd be terrible.

So it's all right to erase the thetan's whole time track so he can live in a palace and so forth, but if you leave untouched the idea that his ideal state is to exist as some sort of being who can just wreck the works, you know, this is ideal state. He must be in some kind of a condition where he can wreck the works at any given moment. Why – no matter how you've adjusted his MEST, you haven't touched on this one factor. And he will be unhappy.

So the attainment of happiness for a pc is a parallel road to attaining Clear. I know that sounds very, very odd, but if you recognize that we have two factors at work here, all will become very plain to you about a lot of things in life. It's the environment and situation and conditions of the individual as they exist, the real conditions of the individual. That's one channel. That's one channel. And nobody can get away from that channel. That is the channel. Only trouble is your sociologist and other people trying to adjust that channel do not achieve at the same time any alteration in this other channel. And this other channel has remained unknown in this universe. It has merely been growled about, suspected and reviled and chewed at, but nobody has ever been able to do anything with it, because nobody's ever really made a fundamental statement concerning it.

And that is quite new to this universe. Although you could state all these things and everybody knows them, it happens that it's not a simple statement. It happens to be a complex statement. It's his affinity, reality and his communication with regard to the matter, energy, space, time and postulates of his conditions.

Now, you say, "Well, isn't this ARC? Aren't these things borne out of his postulates?" Not necessarily. These are borne out of an interplay between his postulates and the experiences netted. We're still on an interactive basis between postulates, you see, and conditions and experiences. We still have this other thing. This other nebulous thing, this power of choice. Only if you say power of choice, of course that makes a dictator very right. He says, "Well, I know what right is. It's what I say is right." See? This is the total logic back of the Napoleons and Hitlers of history. He knows what right is, he knows what's wrong. See, he didn't say it so it's wrong. Elementary, my dear Watson.

And so this whole subject has become perverted. In actual fact, it's the person's affinity, reality and communication with regard to a set of circumstances, existences or environments. So you've got this second channel you're walking up all the time. And it's not been hidden from us as Scientologists, but we, frankly, don't pay quite enough attention to it in processing.

But we needed some big, beefy process to match up... and you remember, your reality programming, your programming matters, also depended on the auditor, didn't it? There was one of those scales had the auditor as one of the factors in programming a case. Well, we needed a process that somebody could just sit there and grind out. They could just do it by the hour, and something fantastic would happen with the case.

Now, it unfortunately is not an end-all. It's not an end-all. It won't go the whole line. It won't go the whole route. Well, why? Because it's not actually directly handling the conditions of the pc. It's handling the pc's attitudes toward those conditions, or his – his – pardon me, his attitudes, realities and communication powers with regard to those conditions is what it's handling. But it handles them enough so that it can cut away these lower levels of case – at levels 4 of some use, levels 5 very useful – that's the dub-in. Dub-in of dub – invaluable. And evaluation starting to get a bit questionable, but still of some use, and unconscious, of no use at all. A person who is totally unaware has no use for them at all. But he will have as soon as you bring him up to where he can consult his own evaluations. See, then there's – that minimal use sets in. And he can be moved on up.

Pretty weird that a case can be booted up by shifting that. But you're going to run into a point of no return on almost any case sooner or later, if you don't eventually – I mean, you won't get him to OT because this is not powerful enough to kick up through the last two strata. It only kicks it through the lower strata. You could put up a case with this and some other little touches and polishings-up and so forth, you can put a case up to a point where he's got his time track and is running it. And you can't then use the process to finish off the whole case on up to OT because there's always that upper strata. And now we aren't so much worried about power of choice because the fellow believes now that his power of choice is alterable and that he can do something about it and about his conditions. No, you've got to put him into handling the actual stuff which has aberrated him. Sooner or later he's got to handle this stuff, see. But right up to that point you can put him into a situation where he can get close enough to it to handle it, don't you see? And that's the use of this particular process.

Now, just because I said it's a process can be ground out endlessly, don't get the idea that it's a process... don't go overboard and decide that it requires no skill to use it. Because you will be, any one of you will be setting up some auditor to run this, regardless of your own auditing of it, and setting up one or more auditors under you to run this. You're going to discover to your horror that they can dream up more wrong ways to do this than you could easily count up in a single morning. They can dream up more questions that don't mean anything and you'll have a hard time catching up with it. So there is a right way to do it. Fortunately that right way is easily stated.

Now, I told you about the ARC triangle has to be kept in balance. Well, that's about the first error they will make. I've already covered that. Preclear's having an awful time with the communication leg, therefore you should run it three sessions and run the other two, two sessions, you see. Ow! No, you've got to keep these legs in balance.

Next thing you're going to learn is although cases at level 3 on that programing scale are quite capable of running three questions, *bop-bop-bop*, *bop-bop-bop*, *bop-bop-bop*, see. Question one, question two, question three, you know. Three questions. Three types of question. Although they're quite capable of doing that, you actually produce more tone arm action if you do them one at a time. One, to a place where we can change, and then two, to a place where we can change, then three, three, three, three to a place where we can change.

Now, that's a happy thing, because it only runs that way on the lower cases. So there is no reason to preserve the one-two-three, one-two-three, one-two-three sequence, at all. There is no reason to run it that way at all. It can be run that way, but there's no reason to run it that way. Because the case that could run it that way – first place he doesn't need the process – runs better if you run it one, one, one, one, one, one, two, two, two, two, two, two, three, three, three, three, three, see? He runs better if you run it that way.

So the better way to run it is *always* one leg at a time until it is flat. What's flat? Already covered it. How long? Well, let me give you some kind of an idea of the mistakes you could use by laying down an arbitrary: We say, "Well, one hour for each leg." That's fine, divide it up by time by all means, because that's the easiest way to divide it up. The easiest

way to take it off an auditor's report. But you've got – you've got something standing in your road. The pc takes half an hour per answer on leg one and answers rapidly on the other two legs. All right, so somebody asks you for an adjudication. Well, run it equal numbers of questions. Run each one seventy-five questions. That seems like a pretty good idea.

Mark my words, somebody's going to defeat you on that one, too. They'll find some way to defeat you on that particular thing. I'm an old hand at this. They will get the pc up to four just before the blowdown and leave the process, inevitably. Something like that, you see. The pc's just drawing a breath, just gets a misty look in his eye. Oh, he's about to cognite and that's the seventy-fifth question, don't you see? So you go back to one on the next one.

I'm afraid that you will develop far greater cynicism on this subject than I have. It's better to understand what you are trying to achieve. You're trying to achieve a similar amount of run for each one of these legs and not favor the one that is hardest but handle it by getting the other two.

Now, I noticed on an auditor's report just a short time ago that somebody had made a mistake on this. Co-audit folders that are just done just a few minutes ago. Somebody had found out that reality was not producing much tone arm action and so had run a very short period of reality. Very, very short period of reality compared to the next period of communication which was producing tone arm action. And then gave it practically the rest of the session.

Now, that defeats the purpose of it. And you'll find the pc is going to get wildly out of balance. How often do you change the process? Well, that's how often. There is no answer, don't you see? How often do you shift a process? It's the same answer, how long does it take to flatten the process on each leg? This is one you play by ear, man, it changes from pc to pc.

This pc – this pc grinds away just splendidly as long as you don't leave them more than about fifteen minutes on each leg. That pc just does fine.

And this other one, a real grind-type case, just doesn't do well that way at all. They're just beginning to find out what process it is at the end of fifteen minutes, so again, this idea of cognition monitored against an equivalency of time, you see.

Now, he's having lots of cognitions, but you know that you're going to run this on this particular pc, you know you're going to try to get through all three questions in the one session. That is your hope, see. So when you're coming up toward the end of the period you've allocated for that first one to be finished off, your ear just comes up like a rabbit's, you see, listening for that communication that is a cognition.

Pc says, "Well, I think I'm getting pretty well along with..."

"Oh, you are! Well, thank you very much, that was the last command of the process. It was jus – huh, huh, huh."

That's cutting it awfully thin, isn't it? [laughs] But you'll find out your pc will be happy there.

Now, an arbitrary run exactly against the stopwatch will not find your pc happy. The pc does live, does think, is a living, breathing being.

All right, how many variations are there to the process? Well, I've given you clearing the command of the process, but you would just be fascinated at how many variations there could be of this process. The best stunt is to get the person to run the most fundamental that you can get them to run. Always try to get them to run the most fundamental statement of the question you can get them to run that they will run. Don't go out on the order of get the fanciest variation in the question that they can run, try to get the simplest thing. Try to argue them through. "Attitude" seems to communicate all right on the subject of affinity, see. "Affinity" doesn't communicate, "attitude" seems to. See? That's fine, so you got "attitude" and they seem to respond all right to "rejected." So that's "What attitude has been rejected?" That's a good fundamental statement.

"Now, when or what haven't you really cared to love somebody?" That's about as fancy as you could get, see. Well, if you had to choose between those two, you would take "What attitude has been rejected?" See, and that would bring you through. Because the less you change the auditing command the happier your pc is going to be. And that's another rule.

Because when you change the auditing command too much you run into the old rule of too many processes. Each one is a slightly different process, therefore you never really get a chance to flatten any of the processes. So constant shifts of this process are very poor. So try to settle it down for the long run. Try to settle it down for the long run very early. And if you find the pc is making – is having difficulty trying to wrap his or her wits around one of the legs as a question, if you're going to change it, change it early. Change it soon. And then keep it. You want this one set up for the long haul. So therefore, get it changed early if you're going to change it at all. Preferably in the first session that it's run. Don't let it drift for four sessions and then change it.

It's better to run a wrong question pretty near, that has been run for a long time, than to change it then, don't you see? Pc eventually will get so he can live with it.

Now, there's – there are some of the rules of guidance on this process. And what's the next one?

The keynote of it is muzzled. It is always a muzzled process. Someone shouldn't be feeling that he is being treated as an amateur because he is told to run it muzzled. It's almost the same statement as – "Run the ARC break process" and "Run the process muzzled" are practically synonymous statements. Because you don't run it any other way. There is nothing to pick up, there is nothing to straighten out, there is nothing to do anything with or about once you've got it in the run. The auditor's sole concern is understanding and acknowledging what the pc has said. Sole concern.

The pc comes up with and says, "You know, I've got an incident here that's 8,765 trillion, billion, squillion years ago, and I'm lying here and so forth and so on," well, the answer to that is "Okay." Now, the only variation comes on this is the pc going to blow his brains out when he asks you, or requests you to please date it; find out where he is. Now, there's where the question takes place. Do you refuse to date it and ARC break the pc, or date it and ARC break the pc by eventually messing up his ARC process? See?

Well, that's the little questions that you the auditor have to live with. There are so many of these questions – there's so many of these questions, that to attempt to give you a

solution to every existing condition which exists at that order of magnitude in the session is not only impossible, but it'd be idiotable.

Now, your situation, then, with this process is that it *is* a muzzled process, it is definitely a muzzled process, but sometimes if you don't talk with the pc, a pc will ARC break. But you start offering the pc any Auditor Code break type evaluations and invalidations and that sort of thing, and you'll wish to God you never had. Pc comes up with a still picture. This is one of the traps. Some auditors – still picture, *pssww!* The devil with the routine, see. We don't care what routine we're running.

Pc says, "I've got a picture here, and it's still." The auditor – bang! He's right in there, man, he can't stay out of it, for some reason or other. It acts just like a pole trap to him. [laughter] I actually have seen some auditor – tried and tried to break them of this habit. Because of course you can't audit a still picture. Death and dynamite to touch one of the things. But for some reason or other they would.

Pc comes up and he's just answered this, and by God, he says, "You know, for the last half hour I've had this picture. And it's just a wide plain, and there's nothing happening at all." Well, of course your basic impulse is to help him out. Blow your brains out, man, if you open your yEEP and bust the routine then, because you're asking to plow him straight into the track on a light process. You see, you're not running engrams. And this process, if you really restimulated an engram, you know, by handling it, and then fell off back to this process again, you've had it. Because this process won't handle the engram that's been otherwise handled, see.

So you say, just to be agreeable, "Oh, a wide, still plain, now? All right, okay, yeah. Okay. All right, now here's the next question." But if the process didn't do something to move him on the track, I'd start to get suspicious as to what he was doing with the process. I wouldn't wrack him around, I'd bring him up to some halting point and then as though it's the most natural thing in the world I would put in the big mid ruds on the ARC process. It's very interesting that we can rehabilitate a process with the big mid ruds. We could actually prepcheck this process and get some interesting ways.

Now, this process does not mush an engram. It'll actually push an engram around, it'll open it up. It won't run it. But it'll shotgun engrams. It hits one part of a chain and another part of a chain and another part of a chain, and starts taking selective chunks out of various portions of the engram chain. This doesn't do any harm because it's only picking up those pieces of it that belong to other chains anyhow. Perfectly all right. Nothing disastrous can happen with this process, providing you don't think yourself too much.

Now, if you tried to run this process as a cyclic process until the pc is on present time – in present time on every leg, you have set yourself up a problem that I don't think anybody could ever solve anyhow. And what's this passion for getting the pc in present time? He hasn't been in present time for trillennia. [laughter]

Probably the best way to handle this sort of a situation – you've been chewing away at it, and you've run him this and run him that and he wasn't in PT on this leg and he wasn't in PT on that leg and he doesn't get into PT on another leg and the three legs are parked at different portions of the track. This sounds very complicated, but it isn't going to hurt him any.

And you decide that the best thing you could possibly do is get him to present time and make him a little more comfortable. Why, you get him to present time. But, how do you do that? You just tell him to move to the date of the session. Month, date and year. Or "Move to June 12th, 1963. Thank you." You don't say, "Are you there? Did you move? Did the somatic strip work? Well, what do you know? I didn't think it would." That's not done.

That's the best way to say, "Come to present time" these days, by the way. You can move him to present time at the end of the session, it doesn't matter.

Now, the next time you pick it up you're going to find him parked exactly where you left him on each leg anyhow, so who cares? Theoretically, he would only get to present time on this process when the process was flat. Well, when is this process flat? When it's flat. Actually, now your meter means something. The process is flat when, all rudiments being in on the process, the process run produces no tone arm departure from the Clear read of the pc. That's how flat. That's on any leg. That process is flat. No tone arm departure – mid ruds being in on the process, the tone arm does not depart from Clear read on any one of its legs. Now, when I said "does not depart," I meant "does not depart." It doesn't go to 3.5 to 3 – that's all over.

Now, the one other thing that you probably have to know about this – that is actually as far as you can state "when is the process flat," and "when is the... should the pc be in present time?" Well, the pc should have the process flat and be in present time at that point. You actually are not really trying to achieve this by running the ARC process. You're trying to get some part of this achieved. You're trying to get the best part of it achieved that you can. You're trying to do the most you can with the ARC process in the time of auditing which you have. And all that's – that's... you've gone as far as you could go.

But remember, that because the tone arm isn't operating early in running the process is no signal that the process is flat. Because tone arm action on a pc, particularly who can't be run on any other process, and particularly a pc who has to be carefully grooved in and they're very particular about this meaning and that meaning, oh, watch it man. Because that pc's going to start in, maybe the pc's chronic tone arm position might be 3. See?

And you grind away on leg one and that takes you, well, I don't know, half a session to get it anyplace, still sitting there at 3. Your next leg, still sitting here at 3. Your next leg, moves to 3. ... You can see sometimes auditors in desperation start to decimalize tone arm reads, you see, out to the third or fourth place, you know? [laughter] 3.147, you know? [laughs] It looks good, you know? 3.147. And then it moved back. Then you go another couple of sessions on the thing, and you'll find it's going to 3.5 and back.

A few sessions later this pc will be winding the thing all the way around the dial. Now, the greatest tone arm action I've seen is produced by engram running on a case that can run engrams. That's the greatest tone arm action. But don't think this ARC process won't produce tone arm action. But that action has to be run in to the process and then out of it, on cases that really have to have it.

Oh, it's sticky, you know, it runs up here at 4.25. All you have to do is get to reality and it goes to 4.25. Or get to communication it goes to... the other two are running flat, see, no action to amount to anything. The second you get to this one of the legs, maybe it's aff-

ity, you see, it will be one of the legs, all of a sudden, *bzzzzzz!* And there it stays, for that third of a session you're going to run this, see. There it goes, there it is. And it varies around it, it goes from 4.28 to 4.193. That's the variation of it, see.

And the second you get back on in the next leg, *phhh-boump!* It'll be running from 2.78 to 2.79. You'll watch them. And that will be one of the phenomena, one of the manifestations you'll see on your auditor's report. And, one leg is making it going up and stick it. Well, then a second leg all of a sudden will start sticking it. Then that... starts to look like this case is getting in lots of trouble. This is the time an auditor who doesn't... hasn't been through the jumps on this starts sweating. "One made it go up and stick, one leg, you see, now two of the legs make it go up and stick; I hope the third one won't take off, see." And you realize unless you've got all three of them up and stuck, it doesn't free to an ARC. And all of a sudden the third one goes up and sticks, and the one that was up originally goes to 6. [laughter, laughs]

Well, your main questions are, is the pc answering the auditing command? That's your main – your main worry. Now, does he understand the auditing command? And that has to all be done very early on, and after that, can we keep it smoothly enough balanced up that we can get him plowed through and bring him out the other end?

Now, all of those questions are in that order of importance. Is he answering the auditing command? Now, it doesn't do to hound the pc too much, but you can add a rudiment that takes care of this; it's the old rudiment, but specialize it, "Has any command been not answered?" you see. "In this session have you failed to answer any question or command?" you know? And you should think that is pretty good – pretty good thing to throw in there. So you want to make sure that he stays clean on those answers. Because if he starts omitting answering auditing commands he'll wreck the process. And that's the only thing that can wreck the process.

He starts lying to you about having answered it. And he starts hedging, he starts squirming off on you and that sort of thing. Well, there's something has gone wrong here that you'll have to put right early, and is frankly about all the trouble you have with the process. And you see, that's fairly rare. But if you do have any real trouble with a process, the pc isn't answering the auditing command.

The other phenomena which show up are just meaningless. They're just the phenomena of processing. If you don't expect change on the TA, what you processing him for? See? TA will do all kinds of wild things. You can take these low tone arm cases, and this will crack a low tone arm case up. And it'll also back the low tone arm case clear through 7. This process will do some remarkable things.

The process itself should be run however, very nicely, very neatly, in good balance and so forth. About the only other thing I can tell you about this ARC process that might prove valuable to you, is that it can be prefixed by any combination of words. Prefixed by anything. You can say, "In marriage," "In auditing," "On your job." Some person – you're running "In auditing" and all of a sudden you find out this person's been a D of P and that sort of thing a lot, and they had a lot to do with cases and so forth. Or an Instructor, and it's not "In auditing," it's "On auditing." Your variation of your statement, don't you see, then brings this

out to tremendous, broad usages. And it is much more powerful than a Problems Intensive ever dreamed of being, when used selectively that way.

Now, to do it that way, you don't necessarily have to do an assessment, but you could do an assessment of the various sections of a person's life if you wanted to use this very finitely on a sort of an assist basis. What's he do? He has a job and he has this and he does that and so forth and we finally get it narrowed down to what really worries him. We kind of do an analysis on the case, you see. And we say, what really worries this bird is transportation. Really worries him, see. Look at it fall here. We tell him – we ask him, "What's you – what's your life consist of?"

And he says, "Oh, driving to work, and eating, and well, there's being married, and there's my children, and there's – and well, my job, and there's this and there's that..." And we assess this long list, see. Driving to work. *Psssw!* Well, let's make a statement of this driving to work that we can use. And probably the statement that embraces it is "On transportation," something like that. But that statement has to read, see, transportation has to read as well as "driving to work" or we don't use it, see.

Now, we could cut into this thing and we'd say, "On transportation" and each question is preceded by that. You can cut yourself right straight back right into the Helatrobis Implants or something like that, this guy's hair would be standing on end in no time. But you'd get away with it. There's the general permissive use of it is what you will have most use for. The greatest uses of this thing will be "In auditing," and just the general question, "What... ?"

Now, let me call to your attention the fact that the Helatrobis Implants do contain words such as "remember," and therefore you do very well to avoid those in your auditing commands. Just like you wouldn't ask anybody, "Have you ever absolutely gotten drunk?" See, you just wouldn't use an auditing command that repeated this confounded word, see, because you know you'll practically spin in the pc after a while.

So, you don't even bring anything that's close to that goal "to remember" which is present on every case, which is "recall" or something. Now, there's probably goals about "think" and so forth, because I've run into tremendous numbers of pcs who didn't dare think. "Think" is the great antipathy over here in the UK on putting processes together. You say, "Think of a..." or something, you have to change it to "Get the idea of..." Well, it's odd that you'd change it, so there must be some type of implant sitting around that has the word "think" in it. Otherwise pcs would be able to answer this auditing command. So keep that type of word out of these ARC break Straightwire. See, just keep that type of word out.

You say, "Recall something you have gone out of affinity with." No, no... Let's always make a simpler statement out of it. "What have you gone out of affinity with," see? See, omit those words that refer to the mind and think and so forth from your auditing commands and you'll be away.

Now, this process, as simple as it is, in your hands, actually delivers the rougher cases that you have been worrying about. Because they're always very happy to run it. They don't have to know anything. They don't have to have any evaluations. You don't have to do anything with the case. The case will just sit there and run it. They'll be quite happy to run it.

Now, with little children, and that sort of thing, you've really got to bend these questions around the corner. They've got to get awful simple. In fact, they've got to get so simple that they're liable to become meaningless. You know, you can't quite make them simple enough so the kid can get them and so forth. But this all comes under the heading of clearing questions, and you just remember that you've got to clear the question much more carefully with a child if you're going to run this type of process.

And when you start a case running on this sort of thing give him enough of a run on it so he gets some benefit out of it and he will be very happy about it.

Now, there are those cases which cannot recall, cannot remember, cannot do this, cannot do that, to whom the track is totally blocked off. Recognize that you are dealing with a 7 or 8 level case. And what they need is reach and withdraw on the awareness... the unaware case. And on evaluation they undoubtedly will need some CCHs. Because it just won't bite. Won't bite. Well, there's just nothing there to bite. See?

Now, you can use, however, the same principles of this on discussing whether they want to be here or not. You get the idea? Discussing whether or not they like you, or not. Discussing whether or not they wish to talk to you or not. You're running a present time version of it, aren't you? So don't avoid the fact that you can make a discussing two-way comm out of these processes right in present time without asking the case to recall at all. And that might prove to you a valuable weapon at one time or another. You can talk about present time and you're not asking the person to remember or to think or to go backtrack, and they very often will gradually and gracefully curve into being able to go backtrack, see. Case [Process] has tremendous value for altering case state. State of case alters very rapidly with this.

All right, well, I didn't want to beat the process to death, but I did want to give you a good review of the process because you will be using it and because it's a very valuable process. There'll be bulletins out on this subject but I doubt they will contain much more than what I've given you in this lecture.

Thank you very much.

LEVELS OF CASE

A lecture given on 13 June 1963

And what is this?

Audience: Thirteenth of June.

Oh, unlucky for you! Unlucky for you. The 13th. Pretty grim. June 13th, AD 13, Saint Hill Special Briefing Course and you don't need any information, you got all the information. Getting along very well, getting along just swell, just tied in knots! You know which way you're going, as long as you don't have to go in any direction. Time track is as straight as a ball of yarn that a cat's been at. Got the cases on the scale absolutely pegged – there somewhere. [laughter] I'm being sarcastic, now. Shouldn't be in one of these sarcastic moods. No, actually, we've got it licked. We've got it licked. We even have your case licked, you know? That's fantastic, see.

But, having it licked is a problem in a good rendition as far as technical is concerned. And I ought to give you a direct rundown right now of where we are at, technically. I think that'd be a very good idea.

The operative processes are exactly six in number. There are six types of processes. That's the ruddy lot. If there are any more kinds of processes, I haven't run into them in a quarter of a century of very hard inspection of it all. And if there are any, I've probably found them and thrown them in an ashcan as unworkable or unlearnable.

There have been all kinds of developments of various sorts. I read one the other day from the California Association of Dianetic Auditors, that gave an auditing session, and the way you audit someone. And the auditor puts on the teakettle and says to the preclear, so on... Well, I personally wouldn't think that was very workable. It... they evidently wander about and they don't talk about cases or anything nasty like that and that's an auditing session. So there have been lots of developments of one kind or another. [laughs] You think I'm joking, you know, I really ought to dig out the paper and show it to you. I read it, and I said, is this a gag? You know, no, it wasn't any gag, it was very serious.

Now the... how far people can go to keep from confronting anything that resembles a case or a bank is how many developments there can be under the heading of mental activity or research. And this is almost limitless. Almost limitless. But in the years that have gone along there have been certain things that worked and certain things that didn't work. And the direct processing of postulates is not included in this particular rundown. But remember that you sometimes very spottily can produce some rather interesting results with old Rising Scale Processing.

So there are lots of subdivisions of processes, there are lots of processes that we have had, but what it's actually boiled down to for the working kit of an auditor, and which gives the auditor direct and positive results, and which gives an auditor an invaluable alignment, is the scale of case levels which you received under programming, there are eight levels there, which I won't take up at the present moment. But this six processes happens to cover those levels. And they're the only things I know of, over a long period of time, which make a dent in these levels, and carry them forward to an upper level.

All of these processes are known, their technology is known, how you do them is known, and so on. So it actually doesn't pose a very great problem. But how well they are known, and how reliably they are executed, does pose a problem.

Now, we will work up and develop... Reg's been going around today shoving pieces of paper and questions at people, and we're actually working up here, how do you tell where the pc is, in order to run what on him? In other words we have developing... we're developing old Dianometry, now, forward to a point where you can get an immediate adjudication of what you ought to do with a case, by just giving the case a series of tests. Now, that's getting very fancy indeed. Now, lacking – lacking this data, you still can simply go up or fall back to the pc's level. You see, just with a hit-or-miss process or error, so long as you know case level, and so long as you know the processes that measure them. So exactly how we judge whether or not the case should have this process or not, is only briefly a part of this lecture. The run-down of processes is a very definite part of it.

Now, I'll give you a rundown of this – of this scale, so that you'll have it by numbers, and you'll be getting it in a bulletin if you haven't got it already.

But, what you call Level 1 is OT and that's no time track. Nothing. He's just got potential and action and doingness and capability. And he isn't carrying a mental record of any kind whatsoever.

And 2, has a total time track with nothing aberrative on it, which is a highly theoretical state. If anybody could maintain it or achieve it, I would like to know about it. But that's a theoretical state, you see. Frankly, you will get in actual fact, at Level 2, parts of the time track missing, and those parts that are there still under handling. That's really – it's not an absolute level.

No level is absolute on this whole thing because you can even raise Level 1. Now, quite interesting, yes, you can raise the level of an OT. Guy hasn't got enough sense to stay out of theta traps. You can say, "Well, it's this way, bud. This is the way you handle a theta trap." And he'll say, "All right, that's good. That's a good idea." Get the idea?

All right. He also doesn't know how to maintain a game, so that he actually will deteriorate himself down to a level of where he can have a game, see. He tries not to remain in a state where he can't have any game or communication or association, see. So in absence of knowing how to put together a game, he also is remiss. See, so the only thing you really – that you've got, is just practice and education, at Level 1. That's your process. But that isn't one of the processes which is measured up here.

Two, as I say, well, that's theoretically a perfect time track, and of course that's unobtainable. That time track, long before it becomes perfect, will fold up. But we still have a theoretical level there and once more – once more we're already working on it to separate the time track from the person, and get him over the idea of doing this, and that all comes under the handling of engrams or facsimiles. And you've got the process for that in just blocking out facsimiles, see, he'll discover all if you just continue to run that process. So that's covered, with no special process.

And now you've got 3, which is visible time track but quite aberrated, lots of engrams on it, and so forth. In other words it's not dub, but he can see his time track when it is there to be seen, and you've got that in engram running by chains, and blocking that sort of thing out.

Now, that process, engram running by chains, is a precise activity. The only thing I would improve in it is spotting duration. I'm having just a little bit of trouble getting pcs to sit still long enough to get the duration of the incident spotted, because the incident starts running off, and I've been trying various – various places to try to get the duration of the incident. I've tried to get it before I send him to the beginning of it and tried to get him at the... once I've run it through once, and so forth, and I don't know quite the perfect place to get that at this particular time. Rather than badger the pc, why, with it, and cause the pc to suppress the whole incident all the time, I'd omit it. Rather than do that, or maybe it'll turn up as a flash answer. Or maybe you send him through it once, and say, "How long was it?" But that little point is the only point I know of that isn't settled in that rundown. The rest of it's working well, extremely well.

All right. That's Level 3, and of course that's somebody who can see the time track as it is and who can run it and who can run engrams.

And then you have Level 4, and your Level 4 is for any reason whatsoever, it's just an occluded time track. That's your – the famous black five case. It's the – also the case with an invisible field. It's also the case with a little *wirk-wuks* and *wuk-wuks*.

Now cases below this level on harmonic, down at 7 and 8, also have invisible fields and black fields, so you can be fooled at this. Just because somebody's got a black field is no reason he really is a Level 4, don't you see. Now, it's whether or not you can run an engram on this person. And oddly enough you can do just that. We had somebody here the other day, he's been black five, never seen a picture, never had sonic – never had visio – never had anything – all gone, missing – went. Threw him into the middle of the Helatrobus Implants, the goal "to forget," he's run with full sonic, visio and everything else. See, bang. In other words, there is – there is a real Level 4, see.

Now, what process do you have for this? Well actually, just engram blocking out and 3N. And they overlap at that point. See, you could run either on these. Now you can also run 3N on Level 3. So now, let's drop a little bit lower here, and let's get Level 5 and a dub-in. Well now, dub-in is running... you start running 3N on a dub-in case, in one minute why they're – one minute why they're rocket reading, and the next minute they're not, and you're fumbling around, and they're getting restimulated, and you can't keep your fingers on it and, *aaaaaaaahh* – the next thing you know, the case is all tying up in knots, and you would be much better off to have done a repetitive process in the first place.

Now, the repetitive processes are – the leading repetitive processes are three in number. And you haven't heard of one of them. But just call them repetitive processes. The one that you are using, and is the best and most powerful of these, is the three-question process, ARC Break Straightwire, given one question at a time. That as a repetitive process is – carries all before it. Now, there's two other repetitive processes, though, which are very interesting. And one of those is Duplication, all by itself, "What would you be unwilling to duplicate," and there's another one, Power of Choice, just per se, which also has considerable power. "In auditing, when has your power of choice been overthrown?" Interesting type process.

Now, that's a whole basket load there. Now, if you are going to do – going to throw in Rising Scale Processing, it probably would belong there, but in actual fact – in actual fact it's a Level 1 process, or most any process, if it works, and if it doesn't work, and there's a lot of stuff connected with it, because what are you doing? You're actually flipping the postulate out of the mass consistently with this thing, and although you can achieve considerable changes in the pc by doing this you actually don't achieve case gain. So let's take a look at the difference between a process that produces a change in the pc or produces an effect on the pc and one which advances the case level. See, let's differentiate between these two things right here and now.

I know a lot of processes which will produce a change in the pc. Engram running is one of them. It'll produce a change in the pc. But will not upgrade the pc's case level. Now, that sounds like an interesting thing. Well in actual fact what you're doing is using the power of the process to rather overwhelm the resistances of the pc. And you can change the pc. You can alter the pc around. You can get rid of various things the pc doesn't want, and that sort of thing. But does the pc ever find out you've gotten rid of them? Now, you've heard me speak of this type of case in response before. The old lady has arthritis and you run a bunch of stuff on the old lady, and she all of a sudden doesn't have arthritis anymore and she doesn't mention this at all, she just natters at you about her migraine headaches.

Now, you haven't really produced a change in this person's attitude toward life. You haven't improved this person's reality or confront. You haven't. But you've changed the case. And an auditor should realize that it's within his power to do that. And that only happens when you run a process for a higher-level case on a lower-level case. You can change the case without improving the level of the case. Now, you must know that that can happen. In other words, your object is to move a person up this reality scale, toward OT, that's your object. Not just to make this person more comfortable or with less somatics or something. So they hurt. So what?

It's the most weird thing in the world to have the – I don't know, I'd... there are some ladies present, I'm sure some of these gentlemen have been ladies in the past – and I really can't call the name of this government department in printable English, you see. But it actually is assaulting us for doing something, which, I've been saying, and we've been agreeing, for a very long time, we shouldn't do, which is treat people and heal people you know, and make a big thing out of sickness and health and all of this sort of thing. And they're all upset with us because we say we're doing this. But we've never said so. For years I've been saying what the good of making somebody – you know, getting rid of somebody's wheeze? What's wrong with him is him, not his wheeze. See, I've been carrying on about this for some time,

and all of a sudden they're about to say, "*Whoaa*, let's pull off this here ban, because they're getting in the road of the doctors. And we've got to keep the doctors going, otherwise we won't get our bribes." I'm sorry, I... a little run away with myself there. They've got to live. But we don't know why. [laughter, laughs]

Because frankly it's pure idiocy to cure somebody of an illness. This is idiocy. They just go and get sick again. You talk about a thankless task! It's actually thankless, endless, does nothing for the society, gains nothing for the individual or anything else to amount to anything. This guy's got an earache. So you work like mad to get this guy to recover from this earache, see. And so you cure him from his earache. Well, great day in the morning, he has now not got an earache. Great. How to raise society heroically onward and forward!

Now, if you cure his earache, if you're foolish enough to cure his earache, and work in just – in no direction but to cure his earache, you're working exactly against his hidden standard. And, you aren't really trying to remove the causes of having a hidden standard. So what's he going to do? Well, next day he's got ulcers. See? Well now, if you're just looking for employment, I mean if you've got a medical school certificate or something and don't know what to do with it, and you want to go on forever collecting those – I don't know, it used to be – it used to be two bucks, and then it got to be five bucks, and then the trade union got to work and it got to be ten bucks, and five bucks extra for each shot. You go in now, you know, that five bucks extra for each shot, the nurse just sits there, see, and she writes down, you see, and "Shots, shots, shots, pills, pills, pills, shots, pills, pills, pills. Two hundred and fifty-five dollars, yes, that's the bill." Well, if you're going to... if this is a commercial activity and solely and completely just to provide work for the Works Progress fellows so they can lean on their shovels, yes, by all means, by all means, overwhelm the pc with an upper-level process and cure his earache. But don't expect him or anybody else ever to thank you.

And you see, your object is to advance the pc up this scale. Now, therefore this puts a severe limit on the number of processes that you can run on anybody. See, this tells you that you had better process the pc at his level on the Reality Scale with the process that belongs there, and if you are not doing so you will know it at once, because the pc is not making any signal progress as a person.

Now that progress is very steep today. That progress used to be barely detectable from week to week, see. Well, it's not now. That – it's a steep grade. And you don't see that steep grade happening, you know at once what you're doing. Yes, the pc is making a gain. Now, fortunately for us, that gain is expressed by your tone arm. You're not getting tone arm motion on the pc, the usual thing that is wrong is is you're running a pc at one level of the scale, at a higher level for the process. That's it. And you'll notice you'll be tricked by seeing that the pc gets well and does various other things, but they're not upgrading as a pc. See, their general attitude toward existence, and their communication level and that sort of thing, this isn't improving. See what the difference is here? It takes that – it takes that knowledge right there to know how to apply the processes I am giving you.

All right, now let's take this Level 5, which is your dub-in level, he really never gets a picture of anything that is really there. The picture is always a picture of a picture. Well all right, now that case – that case starts to get very, very, very critically run on your, well, en-

grams, so... They make a copy of the time track as fast as you run it off, don't you see. This is like running on a treadmill constantly. Because you're never erasing anything that is on the case, you're only erasing copies of what is on the case. And it won't give you any tone arm action, but you're liable to do some interesting things by accident. Accidentally clip a somatic out or something like that. And that leaves you your repetitive processes. And these repetitive processes are just tailor-made for that case.

Now oddly enough, the repetitive processes also overlap into Level 4, just above it. So your processes then, that are indicated for that particular case, and so forth, are very simple. You've got your ARC Process or any other of these repetitive processes that are laid down, they're all the same band, and you've got your Level 5 and your Level 4. All right, that's fine.

Now, your ARC Process also handles Level 3 cases that have been monkeyed up in auditing, these repetitive processes, you see, cases that have been butchered up in auditing, cases that are having a bad run of it, or cases which have turned on a sudden chronic somatic of some kind or another that nobody can quite explain, and we're not getting to easily by the techniques we are using. Well you can – the guy's case level isn't down chronically, but has done a skid. And so we can build it back up with the repetitive processes which we have. So they're good.

It doesn't mean that because somebody is run – we have trouble with this – because somebody is run on a repetitive process that he's automatically a dub-in case, see. That'll get around, and so forth, and it is not true.

Now let's go one level down from that. Let's go to Level 6, God help us all. And that level is the dub-in of dub-in and there's nothing distinguishes this case from the dub-in case, except the degree of franticness which the case goes into and the amount of delusion which can turn on. You see, that's just more anaten. So you're running a long way away. Now, what characterizes this case is the terrible automaticity of the bank. This case has got a fluttery bank. You can never get that time track to stay still. Now, this is not a very numerous type of case. But you'll run into enough of them, and they'll just drive you around the bend. Nothing bites to amount to anything because they've got a time track that is in constant motion. That time track – flutter, flutter, flutter. You try to say, "Have you had breakfast?" and they get their last ten breakfasts, only they aren't their last ten breakfasts, they're copies of copies of their last ten breakfasts and, duh!

They can't stay still. The time track doesn't stay still. They no longer have the power of remaining motionless. That's one thing that characterizes this case. And if you called it not the dub-in of dub-in, which is going, but the case of the automatically moving time track, the – or the – grouped automatic time track or something like that, you'd probably have a better diagnosis of the symptoms. Now the – yeah, you try to put them – try to put them in yesterday, and they go into yesterday, the day before, next week. You say, "All right, what's happening here? All right, did you ever fall out of a baby carriage?" This is an actual experience I had with one.

"Well, yes." Trying to run Straightwire on this person. This is Straightwire, I mean just direct Straightwire, see.

"Did you ever fall out of a baby carriage?"

"Yes – yes, I'm sure I must have."

And, "All right, you can recall that?"

Case instantly has ten fallings out of baby carriages at ten different times, maybe to ten different babies. Try to run that case through any lineal line of engram, like say now, "Pick up the moment you walked in the door." And they instantly pick up the last two or three months' worth of doors. And then a few past life doors thrown in. They give you a copy of those things, and so forth, and they walk to a plethora of chairs. Actually, they'd have to come up through blackness before they actually saw their own time track. But that automaticity of track is something that you sooner or later will run into. Don't let it break your heart, you can't even run ARC straightwire on the person, actually. See, you can't ask them to recall anything.

Now the probability is that ARC Break Straightwire would function on this case one way or the other, and cure him of an illness and all that sort of thing. Well, you could be fooled. What actually is this case doing. This case is into an instability of bank, an instability of beingness, a terror which amounts to constant motion, expressed in the time track and so forth. Now that constant motion may express itself in other ways physically. You... it's got a goal, you know. They can't sit down in the chair. I mean, they can't live there. They live in five different hotels in two weeks, you see, I mean, it's terrible. It... just this awful urge to get out, to not be there. Various other expressions and manifestations occur at this case level.

But the only way I've made it a case level is not because it is terribly numerous, but because it's utterly baffling when you finally hit it. You say, "Recall breakfast." And the person can't remember breakfast. Well, that's all right, but on a higher-level case you could keep plugging at them and they would finally remember breakfast, see? Not on this case, man. If you push him at all, they've got all the breakfasts that anybody ate in London, see. They've got everything, I mean – *brrrr-braww-bzzzzz*. It looks like fifteen or twenty different projectors shining on the same screen. That case is nervous.

And that is a CCH case. That is a CCH case. Remember that some processes of a repetitive nature can reach down into this case, and so forth, but he's actually a repetitive process too – too far forward or too far from.

Now, there's something else that works on this case that would be quite interesting to you and that is Sec Checking works on this case. Prepchecking, to a lesser degree works on the case. But Sec Checking does. General O/W works like a ball on that case. Every time they answer the question they get *r-r-r-r-r-r-r-r* of pictures, and so forth. And they gradually will come out of it under General O/W. And you get beautiful tone arm motion with such a case with General O/W. That's another type of process. Of course General O/W is an excuse for Prepchecking. Don't consider it a repetitive process, it's just a – it's a shotgun method of Sec Checking somebody.

Now the overts you get off these people, the overts you get off of them may be very feathery overts. They give you on a silver platter – they give you on a silver platter the fact that they murdered their husband, or something. This doesn't mean anything; this is nothing. But you can find an overt. You can find an overt. And their level of overt is liable to be very feathery. But it means a great deal when you get it off. They remember thinking a hostile thought about their mother. And gee, it produces quite a change on the case. Sec Checking

does work at this level. You have to sweat like mad over it but they will sec check. They ordinarily are sitting in a guilt complex anyhow.

O/W works. And therefore you could say the only repetitive process which is at all successful on this particular case level is O/W, but that is a Sec Check process. And the CCHs work on this case. So that a combination of those two – probably get you there.

Now you're getting down into easy stuff. Getting down into the easier stuff, and you get your next level of case which is they can confront their own evaluations. You would just be amazed how much interest and absorption and so forth they would get in a mildly run CCHs. The mildly run CCHs, you know, they do the process three times and it's flat, you see. And you just coax them along with the CCHs and you'd be surprised, man, they can talk for hours about that book, you know? I mean they – somebody held up that book and they didn't really know whether or not it was... They just go on with terrific absorption on the thing. That doesn't mean that people who get absorbed in the CCHs are all at this level of case. But it does mean that this case can get interested in this. Because that stuff is awful dangerous, see.

And the fact they can come that close to confronting something in present time... you've passed, you see – at the bottom rung of Level 6 you have passed out of the case level that can run the bank. They can no longer run the bank. The bank is not there to be run. It's unhandleable.

So, you've got your – you've got your CCHs there, and you run down to your unawareness, you don't have the CCHs complete at Level 8, you have only Reach and Withdraw. Now oddly enough, the CCHs, Reach and Withdraw, and so forth, will also produce action on case levels above this. They'll produce levels of action up to 6. Or they'll produce levels of action up to Level 5. All of these things. But what I'm talking about is the narrow shot. This would be about the only thing that can produce a reaction on these lower levels. Quite interesting.

For instance, you can run some CCHs – let me give you a difference of case levels. You can run some CCHs on a Level 3. And boy, they're just about as flat, you see, they're just about as flat as an unrepaired road. And they just got chuckholes all over them, you know, the guy never did really flatten "Give me that hand." He still had some cognitions on it, and he was still comm lagging on the wall, and he was still this and that, and you drop him, you see. It never halts the progress of this case. You could even go that far on a Level 5, and although it would be a little more critical never to have flattened the CCHs, you see, it still wouldn't destroy the case, or the ability to run on repetitive processes. But you leave the CCHs unflat on a Level 7, and you have just parked them there to the end of time. That's the only thing that can be flattened on them.

Now, a Level 8, as I say, Reach and Withdraw is simply a specialized mechanism – any specialized mechanism. If you want this case, say – what... let's go into significance. We say to this Level 8, we say, if we can say anything to them, we say, "If – is it all right if I audit you?" And they'll say always yes, because they're usually very mannerly. But boy, that's as far as it went. That's a social conversation, see. Now, you say, "All right, touch my right knee,

touch my left knee. Touch my right shoulder, touch my left shoulder. All right, touch the end of my nose." And they all of a sudden draw back from you, you know.

"*Hu-aah, hu-aah.* What are you doing? Who are you?"

All they would say, you see, "Is it all right if I audit you?"

"Oh, yes."

"You're sure there's nothing you dislike about me?"

"No, no, don't dislike anything about you."

You go on like this for hours, see. Produce no reaction on this case at all, see. But just a few touches there. "This is an E-Meter. All right, reach it. Withdraw from it." They do this quite complacently. All of a sudden they begin to regard it with great caution. And they begin to regard it with considerable hostility and they run the whole emotional Tone Scale on reaching and withdrawing from the back of an E-Meter.

Now, that case you'll also find in a coma in a hospital. And you take their hand and touch the sheet, and take their hand and touch the blanket, and take their hand and touch the sheet, give them the commands each time and acknowledging, and so forth, they come out of their coma. You can take some bird down here who has been concussed in an automobile accident for quite a while, and he's been into... unconscious for eighteen days, or something like that, he'll eventually pass in his checks. You go in, and you start that process of just touch and untouch, reach and withdraw, and if you keep this up, it's so – it's long, and it's arduous, and so forth, and remember that the same laws apply with the CCHs. The person gets the process flat, they start to feeling they've been punished if they continue to run the process. So you have to take their other hand, and flatten that, don't you see?

And that case will come up to a point where they can communicate with you. And it's quite spooky at first – your hand, something like this... have to be very careful what you promise them or say to them because they're in quite an hypnotic state. But you say, "All right now..." They're dead out, see. They haven't expressed anything to anybody for a long time. And you say, "All right, now for 'yes,' squeeze my hand once. And for 'no,' squeeze it twice." And put their hand around your fingers and ask them, "Are you getting good treatment?" or "Do you feel all right?" or something like that and you'll be startled, you'll get a squeeze. See, they haven't expressed themselves to anybody for days, weeks maybe.

They – you put them into rather easy communication. And then they can go on to this signal, they'll start coming out of that – that, by the way, is just two-way comm, it doesn't particularly do them any good except it puts them into communication with their environment to that degree. You can go on running Reach and Withdraw and get some two-way comm this way with them. Next thing you know, they come out of it.

Well, you say, well, that's very spectacular, that's a case in a hospital and anybody can recognize a case in a hospital. Can you recognize somebody that you can never get out of a boil-off? I mean, this case just boils off, that's all, see. They're quite rare in Scientology but they're not rare around in the world. And if you sat them down and asked them a question, they would go into a boil-off. Well you – you pull your missed withholds and they'll come out

of it. And you ask them another question and they go into a boil-off. And you pull your missed withholds and they come out of it. And so forth, and actually the process is working, but the case is not coming up scale. That case will only come up scale on Reach and Withdraw. That case is just as much anaten sitting in that auditing chair as the guy in a coma in a hospital.

And you recognize some of these things about cases and you won't overestimate a case in spite of the case's pride or something. And get yourself a hatful of loses.

Well now, this gives you a rundown of the number of processes which we have. With one exception. And that's Route 1 for Level 1. And you've got old Route 1 with some ramifications of one type or another, and that's Level 1. And that gives you six classes or types of processes which are valid over all these years.

I'll run them off rapidly now for you. They are the... running them from the bottom up – let's run them from the bottom up – is your Reach and Withdraw, is your lowest level. CCH is your next level. Sec Checking is your next level. Repetitive processes is your next level, meaning ARC break and all that. Your next level up from that is 3N – implants. Next level up from that's engram running – by chains. And your next level up from that's Route 1. And that gives you your six – six types of process which are capable of improving a case level.

Now, please understand that you're looking for something very special when you're looking for something that improves a person's case level. Please understand that. "Improves a case level" has nothing to do with healing, has nothing to do with an assist, has nothing to do with any of these other things. Now, almost any case reacts – almost any case reacts to almost any of those processes. Quite remarkable but you can get reaction from a case. So therefore whether or not the case simply does the process, or appears to do the process, has nothing whatsoever to do with whether that case will advance the case level.

You're trying to promote this case from a higher number to a lower number on this case-level scale. That's what you're trying to do. And if you're – if you're using Scientology for some other purpose, such as get rid of people's bunions, or – or something like that, recognize at once that almost any usage of it follows through – well, what is an assist but reach and withdraw? See, that's under – that's the class of it. Reach and withdraw. You could take the guy out to where he fell off the roof and make him reach and withdraw from the point where he landed. And he'll get over having fallen off the roof. I don't care what his case level is, don't you see. You can take almost anybody and increase their perception and so forth, by running some CCHs. You can do things for almost anybody, make them feel better and so forth, by running some Sec Checking on them. Almost anybody will respond to ARC Break Straightwire or these repetitive processes we are using. And you could do something with engram running on almost anybody. Pretty close.

Now, what do you mean, then, by what process applies to whom? See, it's that process which raises the person's level on this case-level scale. That's the process. That is suited for that pc, monitored and moderated by one thing – one thing only: "Fastest." Economy of time enters into this. What would raise his case level fastest. You've got – you've got several choices, and you might be able to get a Level 3 case with just a sporadic track but actual

track, you might be able to get him an awful long ways with ARC Break Straightwire, see. You might get him an awful long ways with that process. At what speed? See, that's your difference.

Well, what are you doing running a Level 3 on ARC Break Straightwire? Well, it's always a good thing to clean up auditing, that's about all you'd use it for, don't you see? And that'd be a bad economy of time. Now let's take – let's take 3N – the usages of 3N. You run too many implants, you run a dozen, fifteen GPMs without ever going on the earlier track or picking up any more basic or fundamental material and you're actually wasting time from that point thereon. But finding earlier material before you've run some GPMs, you're actually wasting time. See, there's two ways of looking at this thing.

It's all right to go hell and back on the backtrack, but remember, why is this guy's time so loused up? You can follow out an awful lot of implants, and you can plot out a lot of implants, and it's very, very nice to find the basic implants, yes. But let's run some GPMs and then let's find the basic implants. And let's get these basics out of the road and then let's finish up running the Helatrobos Implants. Because that's where his time got loused up and that's where his track's wrapped around the corner, or that type of implant. Because, let me tell you something: The implants from forty-three trillion years ago or from that period of time area, start to speed up in number as we approach on into present time. And we take the last billion years, and boy, we're getting one about every seventy years or less. There's Gates of Mars, and so forth. Implants? You want implants?

If you're just looking for numbers of implants, don't – don't go early. See, stick up around present time. Let's take the last few thousand years. Let's get industrious. Because of course everybody's gone practically potty on the subject of implants. See. And there's implants, implants, implants of all shapes, sizes and general descriptions. It'll louse up the time track, and give you multiple pictures, and do this and do that, and the whole Darwinian theory is taken out of one single implant. It's fantastic. So there's lots of implants.

Now the earliest attainable implant from most cases – area that is aberrative, and furnishes the fundamentals for later is the Helatrobos area. Now, there are a few implants of the Helatrobos type of implant that go back as far as three hundred and five trillion. In fact I know of some that don't look too different, but aren't very complete, that go back seven hundred trillion. They're very scrappy, they're very minor. But, nevertheless they form a fundamental – they form a basic. But the only really, thorough, workmanlike job that was ever done on the implant line, was the Helatrobos Implants.

Now, it's all right to strip implant engrams out, it's all right to kick everything out the window, it's all right to run those chains, it's all right to straighten them up. When you come back up you'll find the Helatrobos Implants will run very easily. If you don't get those out of the road, what's going to happen to all those implants between then and present time? Well, you've got to get the pc in such a shape as that this stuff just starts to blow by sight. And if you don't get the pc into that kind of condition, again, his case level won't improve.

Now case level improves to the degree that charge is removed. And if you are running a pc on process Zed and the tone arm just sits there gorgeously – nice, stable case, see – tone arm sits at 4.5. The blowdowns – case really blows down. Case goes down to 4.495. You can

anything like that. It went *pssww*, *pssww*, *pssww*. That's charge going. That's leaving, man. That's never going to come back. [laughter]

Another thing, you get these fuzzy-tailed RRs, dial-wide fuzzy-tailed RR. That's discharge. It doesn't come back at a beautiful RR at all, it starts out like a mad thing, and turns into a fall. Disintegrating RR. And you'll see that and you'll also see that tone arm start working when you're getting disintegrating RRs like that, see. All right, that's... you're running the Helatrobus Implant and you're getting that kind of thing, see. Well, you're blowing charge. What more do you want?

All right, pc says – pc's running implants very successfully. Pc's running implant – two implants, three implants, that's fine. That's fine. The pc says, "I think there's an earlier implant." All right, the rule is you can't stop the pc from running the earlier implant. "You know, I think I've been on a pole trap before," and so forth. Ah, go run it down. Perfectly all right. Go ahead, run down his basic. Go on, run it back as far as he can go. Perfectly all right. Block it out. Watch that tone arm! You're not getting any tone arm action. What's this? Well, you're running engrams on somebody who shouldn't be running engrams. They're not be... they're not getting there. They could run the Helatrobus Implants and get release charge but they can't block out engrams and release charge.

Now, how do you break this news to the pc? Well that's your problem, you're the auditor, the pc's auditor, you don't expect me to audit your pc, don't you? Yeah, that's a hell of a problem. Pc wants to go back early and back early and back early. I'd say I'd be perfectly happy to take the pc back early, and take the pc back early and pick up various things, and so forth. But I would say I would run them minimally through things, and as far as trying to find the basic is concerned, you better have a very specific thing that you're looking for, or you'll just go back onto the endless grind. And watch this running engrams, when you're not getting tone arm actions and blowdowns, man. Watch it! Because all you're doing is stirring up the bank – stirring up the bank – stirring up the bank. Pc's going to get unhappier and unhappier with you. How do you break this to the pc? I'm afraid you have to have a heart-to-heart talk with the pc. Say, "Now look, we'll go back now and we're going to run some more implants where we were getting tone arm action, and we're going to finish off some of those so that we can get this earlier material blown out and discharged. How about that?" Well, pc will be very agreeable to do so.

You haven't told him, "You must never go on the backtrack again because you don't have tone arm action on the backtrack." I don't think this would be diplomatic. I don't think this would be well received. In fact, I dare say the pc would ARC break all over the ceiling.

Now, you depart from the Helatrobus Implants onto the backtrack, you know, you're blocking out engrams, you're finding earlier implants, so forth, you're getting big blowy tone arm action, you're getting tone arm action of one kind or another as you do this. You're seeing these things every once in a while go *psswww*! And that sort of thing. Eh! Go ahead. You'll actually take so much charge off the backtrack that the Helatrobus Implants will start blowing out up to front. See?

But the Helatrobus Implants – and none of these modern implants will blow out unless you're blowing charge off. Another thing: You're going to run some ARC Break Straightwire

on a pc, and you're going to run this on the pc, that's dandy, you're going to run this. No tone arm action? We assume you've already tried 3N, couldn't find the goal. No tone arm action? Well, give it a chance. Tone arm action has to run in on a case. Sometimes takes a couple of sessions to run some tone arm into the case. On ARC Break Straightwire, remember that. You sometimes will sit there with great disappointment, seeing no tone arm action on ARC Break Straightwire at the first run on a pc you'd think should have it. Then all of a sudden, wonderful news, the tone arm action starts moving in on the case. And you run the tone arm action into it and you run the tone arm action back out of it again.

But let's say you got no tone arm action even after a good test of this. Pc's happy with the process, you understand, apparently changing the pc and giving him somatics or something. But you're not getting any tone arm action on this thing. Well, you can drop back can't you? You can drop back to Sec Checking, CCHs, that sort of thing. Because sure as the devil, you're going to find enough engrams relating to Scientology to find no case gain on the pc. It's that kind of thing that's holding up the parade. If they are that bad off you can always go on down scale and run Reach and Withdraw on something. Well, let's not say that you've been so stupid as to make an adjudication of starting out to run engrams on somebody who did nothing but sleep in the auditing chair.

Now, it's better to start low and run high, that is to say, to underestimate the pc's ability than overestimate it. Always better. Because you start a pc going on running engrams and then drop them back into running Helatrobis RIs and then drop them back into running ARC Break Straightwire and then, drop them back to Sec Checking and then drop them back to the CCHs and then sort of start them in on Reach and Withdraw. I think along that line they would have had a few loses. I think their confidence, their confidence would have been interrupted. So it's always better to start them low, and push them higher.

Now, if you can get tone arm action on the Helatrobis Implants, boy, you better run some implants. Now, the pc says, "I'm going early," by all means, by all means, he's spotted something early, by all means, let him go early. And you get no tone arm actions blocking out engrams earlier, then you sure better acquaint the pc with this fact.

Now, there's six types of processes and their uses on various cases. Has to do with programming. The variable that you're confronting here is the ability of the case. That's the variable from the auditor's viewpoint. Ability of case to rise up the scale. That's that ability. Not necessarily just the ability to run the process. So you have got to estimate that one and that to you is a variable. Well, when I tell you that the person has to blow charge on any process he runs, has to feel better on any process he runs, of course the lower the process the slower he'll blow charge – you recognize that, too. It will help you a great deal. And until we produce a machine which you insert the pc's thetan in, press three buttons and it says, "Four, four, four, four" you see, why, until we do that you'll make errors with this. You will make errors with this. Inevitably you will make errors. So don't try to be perfect, just try to be effective.

Okay? Now, whenever – whenever your case is being run in the direction of up, the case will forgive almost anything you have done anyhow, so don't even worry about the consequences of it. Your job is to remove charge which immediately raises the pc's level on that

scale. You can do that and if you aren't doing that you're just turning in a lot of no-auditing and a lot of hard work which all amounts to nothing.

And that is the way to produce fast results on a case.

Now, there's many a case will contest with you, particularly Level 5 cases, Level 6 cases will go into violent rows with the auditor on the subject of being underrun. Quite interesting. We just had one leave the hall a moment ago. On the... because he realized he was being underrun by his own estimation. Let me tell you this, they get into violent upsets on this. Because the lower the case, the more they estimate their ability. They take social pride. It's not as though they're there to be audited at all. It – they apparently have an entirely different mission, which is to show off to the auditor. There seems to be something social about what a person is audited on, which is quite interesting. And that is status. Status-seeking has come to auditing.

Now, let's let tone arm action come to auditing and I think we'll all have won in the long run.

Thank you very much.

BEINGNESS

A lecture given on 18 June 1963

Well, this is the what?

Audience: Eighteenth, June 18th.

June 18th. Good. You made it to June 18th, 1963. I want you to know this. You made it to this date. [laughter] Isn't that good news?

Audience: Yes.

Yeah, yeah.

All right. Well, I haven't anything to talk to you about today. But, the main thing is that the subject is so vast, that I'm just defeated by trying to know where to start in to give you the bad news about it. It's too bad, the time track is long. [laughter, laughs] Now I've... the exact date has momentarily slipped my mind, but apparently the overt-motivator sequence – what is it Suzie?

Female voice: A trillion trillion trillion.

Yeah. The overt-motivator sequence is a trillion trillion trillion years ago, less about a hundred thousand trillion.

Female voice: Less one hundred thousand.

Yeah, less one-hundred thousand trillion. You figure out the date. I sat in session last night trying to figure this date out and I couldn't get it anyway. It's a long track, isn't it? A lot of track. And we got just the process necessary to take it apart. I hate to have to tell you that, but you've been holding on to this track, you know, for a long time, nursing it, caressing it, hiding it, missing it, not-confronting it, and being unwilling to be it. For a very long time.

And, until we could get a basic kick-off for cases that couldn't confront a time track, until I got that unsnarled, I hadn't really been paying too much attention to the time track at large. And the main difficulty with the time track and its use in auditing is the fact that you have so many cases that can't confront a time track or any part of it. So this gives you auditor loses – if the only technique you had was engram running.

So it has taken many, many years, about eleven years, to get an orientation on what we were about. And like all very simple problems, it absolutely exceeds the complexity of one's own wits. By its simplicity. And what we've been doing has been accumulating processes, which brought somebody up scale to a point where they could view the time track.

Now, that's the only thing we've been doing. Now, it's quite amusing when you get down to it that this is a terribly simple statement, isn't it? Well actually, if all we'd done in

eleven years was just be able to make that statement, why, they would have been eleven years well spent. But more than that has been done. A tremendous number of processes have been developed, and accumulated, and only recently were these processes codified. And our biggest breakthroughs, whatever these things appear to be as breakthroughs, have been on a more fundamental front. They – here's the fundamental of what are we trying to do with the case.

Now, here's your ultimate procedure – it's rote – engram running. It's an ultimate procedure, as far as *Homo sapiens* is concerned. But the problem with it was that not everybody could do it. Therefore, the subject itself has had to be very rapidly, but by no means hastily, wrapped up, and we have today rote engram running. It's quite remarkable, and you must understand that this engram running is superior to anything we have ever done in this particular direction. And listen to me now, bears no relationship whatsoever to any engram running we have ever done. You understand that?

Audience: Yes.

Because you will have to make that point stick here, there and everyplace, because you're going to run into an old-timer sitting down in Phoenix, and he knows how to run engrams. You fill somebody up full of peyote and the guy daydreams for a half an hour while you snap your fingers at him, you know. He knows how to run engrams. He's never going to run engrams that way, you see?

Because we're not running engrams, we're running engrams by chain, just to open up and smooth out the time track. And... but the only reason we're doing anything about engrams at all, is because those are the parts of the time track which are least confrontable. And if you get rid of those stretches, then the pc's got a time track. See, that's all. You're just picking the worst parts of the time track to get rid of. But here's the horror of it, is the worst part of the time track denies anyone the best part of the time track. So you see, you have no choice but to do the worst part of the time track, that's the – which is of course, the engram – moments of pain and unconsciousness.

That's the only thing you can address on the time track, because as long as they exist, no time track exists. See, it's one of these things that you don't have any walnuts unless you have some walnuts, you know, I mean, it's one of those idiotic statements. See. If you don't get rid of the engrams, you haven't got any time track. See, because the confrontability of the time track is denied to the pc by the engrams. Unless you get those engrams out of the way, why, he can't confront his track. There you are.

Now, this sets up innumerable problems. Sets up innumerable problems. Because the more heavily charged the track is, the less the pc can confront it. And there is a point when the pc moves out from any confrontability of the engram, and of course, there's nothing now to confront at all. Nothing.

You, therefore have this scale of cases. The 1 to 8 case levels. And you've got your Operating Thetan, and then you've got number two, your – a person with a cleaned up time track, got a clean time track. Then you've got a person with sporadic visio, is number three, and you've got what we call a black five, is number four. See, we're getting further and further now from a – from confrontability of mental image pictures and events. And you've got number five, this guy can't confront it to the degree that if he tries to confront it he makes a picture

of it so that he can confront the picture of it. He's got a picture of a picture. And you've got six, who's got a picture of a picture of a picture. And then you've got another harmonic of no time track at all at Level 7, which is of course evaluation of own opinions. The fellow never confronts really anything.

Now, you noticed that the visio of the physical universe is diminishing. See, all the time you go down that scale, and you get this oddity that people have noticed, is – an automobile accident occurs, and you've got three witnesses, and they all give three slightly different stories. Well now, if these characters were all at Level 7, why, each one would have only a confrontation of what he thought should have happened, see, and you would get... you wouldn't even find out what color the cars were, man. You wouldn't find out what street corner it was on. You'd get a dissertation on laws that should be passed about careful driving, or... don't you see? It's a confrontation of own opinion only.

Now, everybody confronts his own opinion to some degree. These levels are up along the line, as you run engrams on some character, it... somewhere along the line he's going to dub-in. You know, for a moment or two he's going to see *luaaaaaah*, and he's also going to, sometimes, on a very deep anaten proposition have a dub-in of dub. You know, he confronts this thing, he thinks, and after you've run it for a while, and you get some charge off, and he kind of boils off, in for a moment, and *woag* and so forth, and oh, *now* he knows. It was different than what he first thought. Now he knows what it is. And he runs that, and he goes *rruuuh*, and he gets some charge off, and his ears sort of fry for a little while, and he – and then he suddenly wakes up, and it's an entirely different incident. It's got some of the plot characteristics he had before, but now it's a different incident entirely, don't you see. And now this is the time track. See, he's come through two layers of suppositions.

That'll happen quite ordinarily, and that does not make your pc a chronic level. That's one of the characteristics of the engram. But the engram can be so whole-heartedly high and mighty on this, that the whole case, you see, takes on this manifestation, see. Layers of unconsciousness, he's moving further and further off.

Now, if you had anything dividing these various levels – but of course you get your eighth level, which is simply unaware. But if each one of these levels of case states was to be divided from any other level, it would be divided by a layer of anaten. See? So that you get between Level 1 and Level 2, you're going to have a slab of anaten – unawareness, boil-off, unconsciousness – you know, anaten. And between Level 2, and Level 3, you're going to have a layer of anaten. And between Level 3 and Level 4 you're going to have another layer of anaten. You're actually... compartmentations of anaten.

And if you saw this scale, not as a vertical scale, but as a horizontal scale, anybody who is sitting at Level 8, as a chronic fact, as a chronicness, you see, as a... this is – this is not particularities happening in the session. Let's supposing he wasn't going to get any auditing at all, but in life somehow or another he's going to recover by livingness, see. He would have to walk from unaware, to own evaluation, and in order to get from unaware to own evaluation he walks through layers of anaten. He'll go *woag*, and *sluurrrrt*, and he goes real creaky. And then he'd have to get from 7, walking straight ahead, you see, from 7 up to 6 he'd have to go through another curtain of anaten – totally undisclosed, anything beyond that. And then to get

from 6 to 5 he would walk through another curtain of anaten. And 5 to 4 another curtain of anaten. When he got to 4 he'd go through another curtain of anaten before he got to 3, and from 3 to get to 2, he'd go through a curtain of anaten, and then to get to 1 he'd go through yet another curtain of anaten.

Now, these layers are thinner and thinner. Now the reason why they're thinner and thinner is dual. They actually are thinner and they also seem thinner. Because the greater awareness the individual has, why, the greater tolerance he has for unawareness. So therefore, there are two reasons why these seem thinner as you go higher on the scale. Two reasons. One, that they are thinner, and the other, that the person doesn't mind a layer of anaten that much.

Now you're going to see some case in cataleptis. This is a – this is a chronic state. Cataleptis – using a dirty word out of an old and forgotten piece of antiquity. And the guy is just a rigid blank. Or he is just a blank. Or let's take amnesia. Amnesia. He knows nothing. He can remember nothing. Now understand, absolutes are unobtainable. But not only are they unobtainable, but there are lesser and lesser levels of absolute. So that we get down to this sort of a state. What do you think a *Homo sapiens* is doing when he's walking around, thinking he only lived but once? Look at the amount of automatic unawareness there is of time track. So you consider him a pretty unaware character. See, just like that.

Now, what is he going to do when he first goes into this? If you took somebody averagely, that didn't have any perception of anything particularly, and you just wanted to walk him through this first level of anaten, you'll be rather amused to find out that the second you throw into his lap the idea of having lived before, that you'll get a confrontation of his own opinions about it. And this will make him pretty groggy. You got a reality on that? And if you push him up the line, then his suppositional actions will also occur, you know, he'll have a – he'll have a suppositional... And as he goes through from 7 to 6, he'll have some of the wildest ideas of what it is all about, that you ever cared to listen to. See, you haven't run him on anything, you see. You just sold him on the idea he's lived before, see. And he... then he's had lots of opinions of the consequences this would have on the world.

One of the things they do – it's quite interesting. You say, well, supposing everybody really lived forever, and they'd just forgotten that they'd lived before – his first thing is, "Well now, I don't know what this would do to old age pensions." [laughter] A confrontation of his own evaluation, you see. That's the only thing that he can confront about it. He can't collide with the reality of it at all.

So as you walk through it, however, you got him to earnestly discuss the fact that he had lived before, and he'll go through a level of being knocked out cold, almost, and then he'll manage to grapple with this thing – he's going to get dub-in of dub. He'll suppose, you see – this or that, and that is the result of this or that, and you're going to get some very wild ideas.

That's how everybody was Tutankhamen. See, that's how everybody... we... these characters mesh up, and you get everybody having been Julius Caesar or something like this, you see. Because they're just taking a suppositional look at it, and they think "wouldn't it be nice..." and so forth. And they might have been there, don't you see. They probably were somebody that used to serve him wine or something like that, you know, and one day spills

some on him or something like that, and they never quite got over the engram since, you know. There's probably been some kind of a contact with the thing, but their identity will be off, the locale might have some germ of truth in it, don't you see. But the... they're reaching there through a dub-in of dub.

Now, you – if you could force him to look over this thing a little more intimately, you might get him – you might get him, possibly this is all on a discussional basis, not on the basis of running him on the time track, don't you see. You'd get him with some pictures of pictures. He – his next thing he'd collide with – "I think maybe I was an executioner because I've got a picture here of – no, that's out of a movie, I think." "No, I must have read that in a book," you see, and a... there he is, wallowing through this next level, see. And then, horror of horrors – having had some fairly bright pictures, everything goes black. He hasn't got any pictures.

Well now, of course, blackness can be an harmonic lower down, but just pure blackness, he doesn't know what it's all about or anything like that, is about as good as an invisibility. But this is an invisibility of a – of a blackness which is – and that's how you denote a Level 4 – that blackness or invisibility is, you see, *is* part of the time track.

He's looking at blackness, and he were to turn around slightly, he'd see a planet over on his left. Get the idea? Or, if you got him to go through the incident rapidly, skitter-scat one more time, all of a sudden it would cease to be invisible. And it would take – he would realize that he was simply looking through air or something like this. See, the – it's an actual invisibility contained in. He's parked himself, because the details are too terrible to confront, he's parked himself at those comfortable parts of the engram, which are nice and blank, see. Here he is, and there's nothing but black. *Tsk*. Nothing but black, you see, nothing but black. That's all.

And you run him through it one more time, you see, or run him earlier, *aaarrrrrh*, it's good and black – in the direction he's looking. But that's toward the tail of the aircraft. The aircraft is going into the sun. And he can't confront that, so he confronts the tail end. And see what I mean, so he gets very *zzzzzyuuh* in the incident, you know, he goes *guuuuhhh*. Well, that he thought was a good solution. He's in this ship, space ship, something like that, and he's falling into the sun. So it's a fine idea at that moment to go good and anaten, because it's going to take him – it's going to take him the better part of the next year or so to finally reach the sun anyway, and the most confrontable part of the incident when he recontacts it is the point where he went anaten, you see, and went blank, and looked at nothing.

In other words, you're getting now – what are you getting? You're getting a gradient scale of confront, aren't you, as we go up the line here. So he's – the 4 is simply selecting the blankest parts of actual incidents. When he gets to 3, he's getting sporadic visio and he's looking at the more confrontable parts of actual scenery. And when you get to 2, which is more or less theoretical case state, the fellow could look at any or all of his time track. It'd just be where he happened to be in time, mentally, that told him whether or not he could see or he was looking at. This sort of thing.

In actual fact, the Level 2, as we go up to Level 1, the time track disappears. Now why does it disappear? Now there's many reasons why it could disappear, and there are several theories that could still be thought up as to why it should. But amongst these is that the time

track itself – this is a theory, you understand, don't write this down with exclamation points as a great truth, because it's merely something that I suspect. The time track itself is a method of not confronting. Do you see what I mean? Now it sounds – it sounds weird when you first collide with this thing. But it itself is a method of not confronting.

Now, yeah. The guy's got it in his head, and he's just mocking it up, it's good and safe. Because you observe these other harmonics, and you see which way they are tending to go, then you could extrapolate the probability that the time track itself was just a method of not confronting something. Why does he have to have a picture of it? Well, you get then an inversion of confronting it. See, he doesn't want to confront it, and this overwhelms him to the point where, without power of choice, he makes a picture of it. And you have the involuntary picture-making apparatus which is the time track, and how the time track appears and behaves. It's an involuntary create, is what it is.

Now, so the individual, if it's an involuntary create, must have been overwhelmed on the subject of creation, and so therefore to be overwhelmed it must have been by something he wasn't confronting. And although the time track is a very accurate record, it itself is probably the product of a non-confront.

Now as we look this over, then, we see we are doing a confronting scale, from top to bottom, on this state of case, and as we see ourselves involved with a confronting thing, it is then very, very simple for us to bring a wrong conclusion to bear: That confronting will resolve the time track. And although we've tried this, and although confronting has considerable success, and confronting itself is a very interesting idea, as a process, and does produce lots of results and that sort of thing, it is not the common denominator. It is not the common denominator of processes. It is simply the common denominator of reaction.

The common denominator of processes is duplicate. The time track is a duplication of an actual event. And each one of those levels on the case levels is a willingness or unwillingness to duplicate. And Level 2 is probably an unwillingness to duplicate. Which brings about an overwhelming automaticity of making a time track. So your breakdown from OT toward Clear is simply an individual's lack of desire to duplicate what he has to duplicate in order to be an OT. Lack of a desire to do so. And duplication is married hand in glove to the idea of beingness. And as we study beingness, we will see this with great clarity.

"To be or not to be," said the immortal, Stratford-on-Avon's tourist attraction. The old boy – I always thought that was good Scientology. But I began to examine it recently, and I found something very interesting about it. That is not the question. It is not the question! Why isn't it the question? Well, it might be the question for life at large, outside and inside this universe, but once you are in this universe, it is no longer the question. You're damn well going to be something, whether you like it or not. Beingness is no longer part of one's power of choice. You cannot be or not be. You can be or not be something, but only to become something else. Any time you not be A, you will be B. You see that?

All right. Therefore, as the individual enters this universe, he has a specialized problem from there on. And there is a point on the time track... the age of the universe may be infinite. This may be an infinite universe. We don't care about that, because there was a time you entered it. See, we don't care that – whether or not the universe is timeless, that is not the

question. In the first place, as you examine people's time tracks, you find out some very interesting things about these time tracks. You find their tolerance of time is improving as you go back. And time is the single source of aberration. And if tolerance of time improves as you go back, then you must be getting into periods, not only where they're less and less aberrated, but you must be drawing toward the beginning of the time track. And it's easier and easier to run, oddly enough, the further back you go, which is contrary to what we used to think. Easier and easier to run. So... and there's less and less event per unit of time.

So, you're looking directly at – by extrapolation – the fact that the time track has a beginning, and is not infinite. The time track is not infinite; (1) because at one time or another you entered this universe, and (2) because all indications indicate that the time track, the earlier you get on it, is less and less a constant, continual and infinite thing.

The universe, on the other hand, continues at its own rate of vibration. I mean, it's just been here, it's been vibrating for a long time, it's going on and it's going to be vibrating for a long time, and it was, and it is, and it will be, and God help you. Who dreamed it up? But this is the little handy jim-dandy perpetual motion machine from way back.

But the point we're making here is that it doesn't matter if the universe is infinite. (1) you've got a finite period, back on the track, where the pc did enter the place, and (2) you have every indication that there was a point where his time track began. You've got these two things. So therefore, cases are resolvable. You recognize, don't you, that a case would be unresolvable, if the time track were of infinite duration. So that's an important point to us. I've been examining it rather closely.

Now let's get back to this beingness proposition. Once the bloke is in the universe, there is not any such thing as not being. You cannot absolutely "not be" in this universe. You can un-be something, but only to become something else. You always will become something else. The question is *what* to be. That's the question! And that's the only question there is in this universe that really bothers somebody. You want to drive a little kid mad? Say, "Whatcha gonna be when you grow up, Johnny?. Are you gonna be a fireman? Nearly all kids your age wanna be a fireman. Are you gonna be a fireman?" He says, "No, I'm not gonna be a fireman."

"What are you gonna be, Johnny? You gonna go to school and study something in order to be something" Kid will start going *bluuuh*.

You sometimes see some girl who has been very adored by her parents, who had great ambitions for her. And you will try to read into her as a case, the fact she went into a decline because she disappointed her parents. You'll try to read into her as a case that she went into a decline because she couldn't keep up with their ambitions. Or because it crossed with her goals and all this sort of thing, and you can examine it from all different sides, and you still will not resolve her case completely. No, it's just that somebody was after her to be something. And if they were after her to be (blank) – whatever it was, it wouldn't be at all aberrative to her unless she knew that being "blank" was very dangerous indeed. And you're looking now at the hook-up of a postulate-counter-postulate, which makes a continuing problem, in terms of beingness.

Now postulate-counter-postulate is the anatomy of a problem, it's what hangs things up in time, and moves things forward in time, and so forth, and there are many things which can become a problem, as well as this one. But we're looking at something which is fairly basic, and very germane to this state of case scale. And germane state of case scale is what? Well it's just less and less things to be, that are safe things to be. There's a dwindling spiral of beingness. A dwindling spiral of beingness has been entered onto the moment the individual steps into this universe. And it will eventually be proven to him that everything he can be is too dangerous to be. That would be the eventual lesson taught by the universe. Everything you can be is too dangerous to be.

Well, look at us. The characters that laughingly conduct what anybody who knew the subject would hilariously treat as a big joke – government. These characters – newspaper proprietors and such lice as this – these characters – these characters, you see, start in a campaign on us that you mustn't be Scientologists. That it's very dangerous to be a Scientologist. Actually, they just dramatize the game. The Food and Drug Nonsense over there is trying to teach American Scientologists this lesson, that if they succeed in saying that the meter has been mislabeled; it says, "For use in Scientology processing," I don't know how this is a mislabel – if this meter has been mislabeled, then they can go around and arrest every individual Scientologist in the whole of the United States. This is the propaganda line. Pardon my yawn!

These characters have about as much authority as Kennedy. I meant Robert, ¹ of course! Look – it's going to take them upwards to two years just to get their lousy case in court. This – these wheels are going to turn, are they? And this is going to be the eventual lot of it all? No, no, they'd never make the grade. They're the only ones asserting the meter's ever healed anything. See? They're the only ones that are lying about the case. They're confronting their own evaluation. These are characters, man. There's nothing going to emerge out of this thing. Except, they can put out a propaganda line that said it's very dangerous to be, see. It's a lie.

Let me tell you, it's very dangerous not to be a Scientologist in this universe. It's very dangerous, in numerous ways to be a member of the US government. The United States attorney that's handling the Scientology case has just been stricken with aneurysm and is not expected to get well until late autumn, which puts our case off many months. As I was saying, it's very dangerous not to be a Scientologist.

Now let's look at this. Let's look at this. Did that shock you a little bit? [laughter] But man will inevitably try to teach, and beings will try to teach, the danger of beingness. But in actual fact there is nothing to do but be, in this universe. You see, because you are located in a universe which has finite space, which appears infinite, even if you're just a spirit without a body, you still have the beingness of a disembodied spirit.

This gives you the terrific workability of listing in 2-12s. All you were doing is writing out endless beingnesses. And you are giving the individual catalogs of beingnesses, and so forth. So therefore, you had terrific – terrific resurgences, you see. An RI is a potential beingness, a real RI. You can do lots of things with beingnesses. But the basic lesson is that it's

too dangerous. Anything you want to be, the ultimate lesson – pardon me – is that anything you would ever want to be, will eventually be realized by you as being too dangerous to be or as being too discreditable to be – one or the other – discreditable beingnesses, and so forth. There are characters around who actually just work day and night to make certain beingnesses discreditable. You don't for a moment think that Profumo or somebody like that didn't have something in mind? See, I mean this – they get to be something so they can become discreditable while being it.

Now there's all kinds of wild ramifications you could sit and philosophize by the hour. You could philosophize by the hour as to the ramifications of beingnesses, upgrading, downgrading beingnesses, making problems about beingnesses, and so forth. The state's effort to dominate the individual, of course, is simply a jealousy of beingness, of some kind or another.

But the question is not, "To be or not – to be or not to be." That is not the question. The question is *what* to be. That is the question. So if you want a guy to start sorting out his time track at almost any level – well of course, those levels would probably have to be above 7 – you can – you can start in on this question almost at once, and you'll run him into some very interesting categories. Now the time track itself is to duplicate or not to duplicate. But any duplication winds up in a beingness. They're united to a marked degree or they're at least gradients of each other.

So what do – what do we see here? Do you realize that you will have cases which will not become OT until the beingness of OT is demonstrated to them to be not quite as dangerous as it has been. Been very dangerous to be an OT. Very, very dangerous indeed. It's been very dangerous to be a man. It's also very dangerous to be an ant. These... we're getting into various problems and beingnesses. And how about a bloke, how about a fellow who has assigned to all upper states dangerous or discreditable beingness, and all lower states dangerous and discreditable beingness, and to his own state impossibility to be. What case state would he be in? Well, that happens to be the state of any case.

Now for instance, I can promise you very faithfully that if no program exists for the security of this planet, on which we could work with mutual cheerfulness, you'd find people very loath to advance their states of case or do anything or anything else. They'd just start – stay parked in an inertia. Because there's no desirable future, don't you see. This is why hope also works as the most rudimentary therapy. Now you're at the level of hope. You say, "All right, if we do steps one, two, three, four and five, and wind up with this state of society, on this planet, why, this would probably be a good thing." All right. And people look at this, and they say, "Well, yes, and that's feasible," and "Yes, this could be done," and "Mm-hmm, yeah, that would work." Actually it would take quite an idea. I'm boxing around now, such an idea exists, it's sitting on my desk, it's all written up, I just haven't released it for some weeks.

No, you'd have to promise to some degree that an advanced state of case would not then bring about further problems complicated by the political or sociological situation on this planet. You follow that? In other words, the person's case wouldn't advance, you see, if he didn't think that he could fit in to some framework of case advance. Right now you once in a

1 Editor's note: Robert Kennedy, American politician, 1925-1968. He was the brother of John

while find somebody with an advanced state of case and then he gets lonely, there's nobody to talk to, so he downgrades himself somehow or another so he has somebody to talk to. That's the way he explains it. That isn't the exact mechanism, it's the way he thinks of it. He's just advanced to a state of beingness that he considers precarious and dangerous. Unappreciated, he thinks.

Now if there's nothing to do with an advanced state of beingness, it's doubtful if people will try to attain it. So you've got on the one side, you've got the mechanics and technology of processing, and a case, and what's wrong with it, and what forms the ideas and so forth, and you have on the other side, "What's this future going to be like? Look at all the trouble I got into – in yesteryear as a free thetan." Now, is there anything can resolve that problem? Such planning and organization alone would bring about a case advance. In the absence of such planning or promise in the future or coordination in the future, you're not going to get as fast a case advance, you see? This is on the basis of beingness.

All right. Let us suppose I advanced to a state of being able to do this, that and the other thing, let us suppose I advanced to that state. That's all very well. But how will I fit into this thing, and how dangerous will it be? Well, you say, "Well, it won't be dangerous. All I have to do is crack a few heads together and make things snap and pop, and it'll all be well," and so forth. And a little alarm bell goes in the back of your head, and you turn on a little bit of a headache, and you wonder what – what was that?

Well that was the fact that the last time you did this, some other ingenious bloke dreamed up a new kind of theta trap. And somebody else dreamed up a new kind of an implant. And somebody else tried to reassert a mean. In other words, there are people who are on prevented beingness. You can test these people rather easily, just throw them any kind of a beingness, and they will not be it. You know, they'll not-is it. You say, "Well, it'd be a pretty good thing if we had a wise prime minister."

"Oh, I don't know, that would make the government more powerful," you see, just – almost a Helatrobus 1-2, 1-2, 1-2. You furnish the plus, he'll furnish the nix. [laughs] Now, there's certain ideas you could advance that you'd always find people negating them. You just take any of the common Helatrobus goals, and advance this as a good thing to do, and you'll have a lot of people go onto an automatic nix. Quite – quite amusing.

Similarly, you've got people who just negate beingness. Anything you wanted them to be or any beingness which was advanced, they would degrade. Because they know it's dangerous. And they might even think they were doing people a favor by doing this. No matter how it was rationalized.

What have we got here then? Well, we have the idea that if we cannot process and have success with a certain number of cases, we haven't got enough people to form any strata of a civilization. Well, it's perfectly all right to say, "Well, all right, you're making an officer cadre for an army, all right, and you only have to have that many, and the rest of them can be as they are and so forth," that's all very well. But the minute you say that, then you're presupposing that there's a future plan to take care of all this. In the absence of a future plan, of

F. Kennedy and his closest consultant and served from 1961-1964 as Attorney General.

course, then people would not know how they fit in to any part of this, and sometimes Scientists are very puzzled as to how he fits into Scientology, and how he fits in with all this organization and so forth. And I could give you quite a talk on that.

But, we've been, to a marked degree, organizationally marking time. Well, there exists right now a plan for what you would do with this planet in order to produce this kind of a condition on this planet, and so forth, and you'd see that was highly workable. You say, "That's fine, we take care of this planet, that's an afternoon's work, and we get that all straightened out, and we get that game running, and that's all fine, but that doesn't prevent the boys from the next planet coming over here, and suddenly going into a resurgence, and so forth. So all right, the second you advance out on this line at all, you advance into the organizational future. You inevitably advance into the organizational future. Because you've got to continue to solve the problem of beingness because we are in this universe.

So it's not just enough to solve the problem of beingness with regard to a case, and case level. If you don't want a derogation of case, then you've got to continue to solve the problem of beingness. And you've got to make it possible, one way or the other, for certain beingnesses to be safe out into the future. I don't – somebody will say, "Well, perhaps Ron's just making a pitch for – going to have a big organization and so forth, and..." I'm not, actually, because they're usually very hard to run. Right now we're just keeping things burning very, very well, Central Organization wise, and field auditor wise, and so forth, and we're not doing too badly, and we're keeping the sparks lit, and so on. And that form is all very excellent, but of course, that isn't the forward progress. That isn't the point of forward pressure. That is simply the nucleus points for the forward pressure. And we're just carefully preserving those units, and keeping them whizzing, and getting our own house in order, and then when it comes down to presenting any kind of a plan by which this planet is suddenly – be safe from atomic fission, and that sort of thing, we take off from our captured territory. Don't you see? We have occupied a spot. We do exist, in certain areas, then we can take off from these spots and straighten things out.

Now, when you think of the power of an OT, you'll see that there is nothing very much to straightening out these things. But unless you plan to straighten them out, you're not going to have any OTs. It'll be very rare indeed that you would get anybody who would break through to that strata of beingness again. Because he's already been punished down to the ground, man – for hitting that level, don't you see. Well, how could he maintain that level? Well, in the past, he's had a very blind spot, the OT has had a very blind spot. He's been not too bright. Because his own – concept of his own power was so great that he thought he could stand alone. And any time he went up against an organized body, he lost. Because it could furnish more viewpoints than he could. And that's the whole reason.

The individual can furnish only a limited number of viewpoints, to which he can pay attention and coordinate. As long as he's an individual. The individual usually loses to the organization, so you see communism advancing across the world today. It's the plurality of viewpoints. And that plurality of viewpoints makes it possible to confuse the singleness of viewpoint. It's a simple problem of confusion. You can always confuse the individual because there's an organized number of viewpoints which can voice different opinions and he can't quite isolate where these things are, and he's pulled down eventually. And I could say much

more on the subject, but all I wish to give you is some kind of a – of a relationship to these cases.

Now the individual, therefore, the individual OT, does have his problems. And that's because he is an individual. And that's because he has never worked on up the line. He's always – has this conviction that he could do it all himself. That's what's wrong with him. That's one of his biggest Achilles' heels. He could do it all himself, all by himself, and the funny part of it is, he could. He could actually stand off, and take this planet, and go *pow!* And that would be the end of the planet, man. He'd solved it. But let me tell you, the little boys with the airplanes always show up sometime in the future.

May not realize it, but about three hundred and, oh, maybe four hundred – I guess close to five hundred trillion years ago, there wasn't a sun burning in this universe. Do you want to know where these Magellanic clouds come from? You'll strike the period in your processing. Where do the Magellanic clouds come from? Huh? How – what's all this radioactive material that's floating around in space? How has that never been rounded up? Actually it's only been partially assembled – only partially. Universe was ended, absolutely ended – less than five hundred trillion years ago. Finished. What these scientists are doing these days with their carbon-atom deterioration, and I don't know what the devil they're computing. They're pretty wild, man. Matter doesn't go to pieces like that. There wasn't any universe. There was nothing but rubble. But the space was left. Didn't do anything to collapse the space. And that's where you get your planet builders. A lot of you have been planet builders. And a lot of thetans had to flex their muscles and get up there and put some suns together, and so forth. This is actual fact. The whole... everything had to be put back together again.

One of the reasons it all had to be put back together again is in spite of the destruction of this universe, the little men with the airplanes showed up. Where'd they come from? Who made them? Who was out there putting out theta traps, while everybody was trying to put the universe back together again? Where would the space ships come from? Where – what happened? Well, there's no telling what happened. But this has happened repeatedly in this universe. Repeatedly. Make it absolutely impossible for humanoids or doll bodies to exist, wipe out any base or platform of any kind whatsoever – this is making life safe for the OT, you see, [laughter] put this whole thing into some kind of a condition where an OT could be safe, and then one day there are a couple of airplanes with loudspeakers, tying him up in knots. Then one day he steps over toward this funny looking mountain that's floating in the sky, and there's a pole on it. And it goes *tssupp!* – and he says, "Damn, here we go again!" [laughter]

Well the blind spot is that this universe, having space, and being formed in this particular way, surrenders to cooperative action, and doesn't surrender to individual action. And that's the terrible lesson that's taught by the MEST universe. And the OT of yesteryear has never learned it.

Now, you're turning out a different breed of cat today, when he gets back up the line, you're turning out an experienced being. He hasn't learned from his experience that it's all too dangerous to be – which is what his experience has taught him previously – but he has learned now that no matter how powerful you are, you still have some blind spots. No matter how big

and tough you think you are, you can still get on a pole trap. And you've got technology that can straighten somebody out.

Now somebody that's gone around, clanking around in space, in the last few hundred trillion, with pieces and scraps of pole traps hanging to him, and that sort of thing, and no other thetan will have anything to do with him whatsoever, nobody would pull it off of him – see, tolerance of being an Operating Thetan has just deteriorated to nothing. So, what would you do today? Well, you'd say to the guy, "All right, do you remember the first moment that you saw that trap?" And after you run him through it a couple of times there'd be a dull clank and the piece of the trap that's there would go, you see. There's no trick pulling a thetan off a trap. But patching him up after he's been mixed up to this degree is difficult.

Well, that technology exists, but there's greater technology than this to exist. And that is, unless a fairly powerful, beefy being doesn't learn his own inadequacy, but learns that this is a universe of organization and coordination – unless he learns this lesson – he's just going to be back on the pole trap again. And any body of beings that is operating with a coordinated program, can beat him. The Department of Justice, in the United States, could probably beat him. You know, I mean, it's that corny. You've got a situation then where the individual is trying to operate in a universe of cooperation. And of course, that degrades the beingness of the individual, to that degree. And his beingness goes downhill. And the more he fights to be an individual, the less he cooperates, the less he's willing to cooperate, the more enforced is his cooperation, the more he fights against this sort of thing, and the less freedom he has. And the dwindling – that is a description of the dwindling spiral that an individual goes through.

So anybody who has drifted down this scale, has drifted down it on the basis of no confront. That's for sure, that's the mechanical fact. But the healingness of this is going down scale on the basis of discreditable or dangerous beingnesses discarded. He has a facsimile of having been an acrobat. And he knows it's damn dangerous to be an acrobat. His facsimile tells him so. People don't like acrobats. It's not a cooperative action. Nothing to it. He doesn't want to have anything to do with an acrobat. And it winds up that he didn't want to have anything to do with a facsimile of an acrobat. He didn't want anything to do with the beingness of an acrobat to such a degree, that with great surprise he's sitting in the auditing chair – with great surprise he suddenly looks at you, having answered an auditing question, and says, "You know, there's an awful lot of track here that has to do with stages. I never thought of myself as having anything to do with the theater. I think I must have been an acrobat," he'll eventually say. But that's the last thing he'll realize.

Usually in a facsimile, the hardest problem the pc has is trying to isolate is who's him, and what's he. What is he, now that he has located him, what is he? And it's usually the biggest lie in the facsimile. One thing that hangs it up. He's been running this thing through, you see, industriously, as the executioner. You know, he's happy, you know, to run off this overt. He doesn't plainly come out as the victim, he's the victim's wife. And he... they'll say – they finally get this straight, now, "Oh, that's what this is all about." The one thing that rattles around and gets him very upset, is what beingness is he, when? In what? You see, this is what gets him all tangled up. And that's because beingness is a deteriorated subject.

We have something in Scientology – it's dangerous not to be a Scientologist. That's the only honest statement that I could have been able to make for a very long time in this universe on the subject of beingness. You know, I mean, not honest, but factual, you know? That I know, it's very dangerous not to be a Scientologist. But the rest of the beingnesses are mostly a matter of opinion. And the coordination of beingness, and the coordination of beingnesses, and so forth, is one of the better solutions.

Oh, I can see the nearby planet with a Central Organization. The nearby planet, rehabilitation center functioning, but also politically and sociologically under control. You don't put it politically and sociologically under control and if those solutions are not good solutions, once more you've rendered an unsafe-beingness situation. The problem has to continue to be solved. It isn't enough just to audit somebody up and say, "Okay, you're flying." And you wonder why three days later he's back not flying. Well, he found out it was unsafe to be a Clear, he – a thetan exterior – this is one of the lessons they learn consistently. It's not safe to be a Theta Clear. This is not safe.

You go and you park your car and you're wandering off someplace looking at the tops of buildings. And there you are driving your car down there, you see, in a body, and you park your car at the stoplight, and you happen to get interested in this building that you're next to. You know, you're looking at the roof and a girl's sunbathing on it or something, and you get very interested at this point, and you forget to move the car on. You not only forget to move the car on – this is an actual incident – but go follow the girls off. Get dreaming about something, you know, and wander off, and get very interested, and say isn't it nice to be free, and that sort of thing. And then three days later have the embarrassment of coming back and picking up the body in a hospital where it's been dragged because it's in a coma. And of course it's got traffic tickets plastered all over it. [laughter] And doctor's bills. Well that'll teach you. And actually the case came downscale again, you see, to being humanoid, so forth. You couldn't have gotten him out of his head with a crowbar.

You understand why?

Well, there wasn't any conditions arranged by which he could be a Theta Clear. See, he was just going at it in a very haphazard fashion. Well, it's very doubtful if you'll ever be skyscraper-tall again, unless there was some guarantee to you that that beingness will not immediately turn around and wind you up in the soup. See what I mean?

This, by the way, is all allowed for in processing, and I've been working on it for some time. You say, "I'm processing people in order to do this," actually you've got it backwards. If you process people you have to do this, see. So anybody who wants to be the Association Secretary of the nearest planet to Arcturus, apply here. How about – how about somebody who's plowing around, and he gets on a trap, something like that, with a *bingo-bango*. Who's ever going to pull him out? What's he going to do, stay there for the next hundred billennia – hundred billion years? Hundred thousand years, something like that? Or is somebody going to look him up, and say, "Hey! Where's Joe? Haven't had any reports. Where's Joe? Hmm! Bill, you better go find out where the hell's Joe." You see what I mean?

Then of course, there'd be no point in having this unless they had purpose to function, and of course, your purpose is quite fundamental. You've probably had lost crews and won-

dered where this and that went, and that sort of thing, you had undoubted interest in locating that, you've got an expanding game. Unless the game itself is not an expanding game, then processing cannot produce a stability.

Now, the individual who has gone down the Reality Scale all the way through the bottom, he's gone down through the Scale of Beingness, and to get him to be anything at the bottom is impossible – except an unaware being. He goes into a coma. See, he takes no responsibility for any beingness of any kind whatsoever. You've got a dropping beingness all the way down. Now, to move him up the line, he'd have to have some security in being able to be something at an upper level. So your future livingness, always, to some degree, ties in to the rise up the scale. Always to some degree. And the problems that you run into in processing will very often hinge on this interesting thing. That there is no future beingness.

Now, this all resolves itself in processing, and people can think more flexibly along in this line. But the actual fact is that the problem stays unique and isolated outside the field of the time track. Because it has existed. This is the way this universe is. So that's the way the problem has existed, so therefore, you have to do something about the problem. But as cases go down the scale, further and further from reality, they're going further and further from responsibility. Why the further and further from responsibility? Well, you don't dare be responsible for anything because you get in the soup. And it's this continuous repetition of this lesson, and this lesson only, that puts the individual gradually down that scale in livingness. He doesn't want to remember what he's been, he doesn't want to have anything to do with any part of his own past, and so forth. And yet the hideous part of it is that this scale just keeps on going south. Because there are deeper and deeper channels of unawareness. But a thetan cannot become totally, always, unaware. If he could achieve that, he probably would have some time since.

What to be? To be an A or to be a B? That is the question. Can't be an A, can't be a B. There aren't any other things to be. Answer? Anaten.

This is the anatomy of life, and its coordination with case levels, and livingness, and you'll see this sort of thing show up in nearly every case you have anything to do with. Well, in any case you have anything to do with, I said nearly because some cases are insufficiently aware to answer any question to inform you of anything. It's very fascinating what you can do in simply using the technology of secure beingnesses. Using that alone, as a weapon, you can sometimes bring about sanity.

Marital counseling, which we don't do particularly, but we – you always run into some section of this, is simply a husband who cannot be a husband; a wife who cannot be a wife. A wife who will not let a husband be a husband and a husband who will not let a wife be a wife. The average marriage. [laughs] You say therefore marriage is very unhappy. No, marriage is not unhappy, marriage is a difficult beingness. That's all that you could say about it. But you could use beingness processing, oddly enough, to handle it all, providing you introduced bypassed charge. All you'd have to do, is the bypassed charge of the marital partner that causes jealousy, is the bypassed charge in the other person. Not knowing about the other person's past – not knowing about the other person's past adequately brings about bypassed charge on the part of the individual who doesn't know. It's a very funny manifestation. It's bypassed

charge in the other person, don't you see. He gets upset about the fact that that charge is – threatens him to some degree, but he doesn't know what it is. And so you get a criss-cross of bypassed charge. And by that analysis, because we are not bypassing the other fellow's charge, not only the probability, but the certainty exists, that Scientologists will be the first people who can ever be friends with each other in this universe. Because time alone will add up bypassed charge to people who know nothing about the time track or anything else.

So the whole problem of beingness, and the whole problem of case state, all ties up with the problem of hope; all ties up with the problem of expectations; ties up with the problems of confront and all of these various things. And you're looking here on this scale of cases at a crossroads of everything we know as far as processing is concerned. If we want to add up all of these things that we know, and address these various levels, why, we raise the person's scale up the line, increase his confrontability up the line, and raise his level, and we eventually get up to a point where we can run engrams on him. And when we can run engrams on him we can take him all the way. What we lacked were positive techniques applied very directly which graduated the person up to the ability to run engrams.

We had the technology, but hadn't applied it in the exact order, because we didn't know quite what we were applying it to the exact end of since none of these lower technologies will clear. Only engram running will do that. You take the tremendous barrier of the Helatrobis Implants – bars out the whole track. Wildest Confusion anybody has ever walked into. It's all backwards, upside-down, has no beginning and end, and ties up time and rides forward to present time as a result. All right. Why do you have to do anything about it? Not because of the person's conduct, but because it louses up his time track and debars the easy route to running engrams.

Final thing that you're trying to do is run engrams. Why are you trying to run engrams? Reaccustom the individual to various levels of beingness. And after you've got all the engrams run out, you got an OT. And then you've got to have an organization to handle the problems between the OT and this universe. Otherwise he will just slop again.

Okay? Thank you.

SUMMARY OF MODERN AUDITING

A lecture given on 19 June 1963

All right.

This is what?

Audience: Nineteenth of June.

Nineteenth June, 1963. Thank you for putting me on the time track. I'd gotten off of it. Good thing, too. Saint Hill Special Briefing Course. I haven't anything much to talk to you about except modern techniques. And I think I'd better give you a summary of modern auditing as it looks. Might be valuable to you.

There are innumerable processes. There have been processes of all different shapes and kinds up and down the last twenty-five years, and recorded during that period, why, is more or less the work of about fourteen of these years. And these processes fall into very specific categories, of which you have a record in your State of Case Scale. Now, the categories they fall into, however, are processes that handle certain conditions, or... of a case. And if we look this over very carefully, we'll see that cases deteriorate as they go on down along the time track. And they deteriorate against two factors, and the primary factor that they deteriorate against is confront. And the other factor is duplication.

As they become unwilling to confront they become less capable of duplication. Now you should look on confront as a willingness, and duplication as an ability. Now, it doesn't matter that you run "What are you willing to duplicate" or "unwilling to duplicate" – it doesn't matter that you use that in a process too much, but it is not – it's not exactly right. It's not quite right. It's something like the officer of the change of the guards at Buckingham Palace wearing his sword on the wrong side, really. If you were to ask somebody, "What are you able to duplicate?" and, "What do you feel you are unable to duplicate?" you would have a very exact sort of process. And remembering our process rules, and the famous brackets, and so forth, to keep it from damming up a flow, why, you have to get the other fellow in there at least. You know, "What would another – what would – what would you be willing..." – you see, there are a lot of combinations to it, "What would you be – what do you believe another is able to duplicate?" don't you see, and, "is unable to duplicate?" That's your second leg, you see.

Of course you can add up these legs, ad infinitum. And the reason why these legs get added up ad infinitum is the degree of complexity necessary to undercut the case. That's the

purpose of legs. Some case could run practically all the way – he'd have to be a very high-scale case – he'd practically run all the way on a – just one leg, you see. Well, that would be a case not troubled too much by flows. And another case, well you run just what is he unable, and what does he believe another is unable, you see. All right, that's all right. That's fine. Because you've got two-way flows with both viewed from the same viewpoint. Now, what does another believe he is unable to duplicate? Now, that's the other flow from another viewpoint. You get the idea? And the whole thing about flows is how much do you need them, for this particular case, you see. And flows are interesting at this point, because you could always doctor up the flows of a situation, get TA action, when you might not otherwise have it. See, that's quite important.

There... you see, TA action is not totally outside the auditor's control, if he remembers flows and brackets. See, all he has to do is study up on brackets, and you add enough brackets to get TA action, that's the way you handle brackets. And it actually... you see, there is no perfect method of running brackets. There is no absolutely perfect method. If you ran all of the available flows, do you realize that any given instant on this planet alone, there are two-and-a-half billion, or maybe it's three-and-a-half billion today – it was two-and-a-half billion yesterday, the population explosion – there are two-and-a-half billion other viewpoints simultaneously operating at that exact instant.

So that would make something on the order of two-and-a-half billion legs. Plus all the legs which take care of all the intermediate groups and dynamics present at that particular moment, you see. And it just becomes completely ridiculous. I'm giving you an idea that you can become very ridiculous in the numbers of legs that you use in a process.

Now, the idea of flows is something that monitors all case levels, and for some peculiar reason breaks its back at about level 4. In other words, you can get as complicated or as simple as you like above level 4, but below level 4 it goes in harmonics – so that you get down to the person who is almost – almost at the bottom, and you only have one viewpoint, which is self. You see, so it becomes impossible for this person who is well downscale to run more than one viewpoint. You see, even though it's vitally necessary that he run two, he can only run one.

Now, this is a problem of the dynamics at work, in actual fact. It's how many dynamics can a person function on. Now that however... and this I'm trying to give you a look at here, it sounds rather complicated to you – that there are many facets of processing wherein you could match up to an ideal. You could match up to an ideal. What is the ideal process or the perfect process, you see. The one that absolutely matches every single condition extant on a case, you see. Well, I'm trying to make this point with these brackets and legs, you see. The absolute ideal, totally perfect process from the standpoint of... see, I defined "science" today. What was that? Science is a – modern science is a method of precisely determining overwhelming nonsense. [laughter, laughs]

Well, the point I'm trying to make here is that you could go ahead mathematically, you see, and you could figure out some of the wildest combinations that would be absolutely vital to a process. And see, there's two-and-a-half billion people on Earth, so that in any given instant, to run the pc, why, you have to have the viewpoint of each one of these people taken

into account, one way or the other. And then there are various other factors such as their cases, so their case viewpoints and modifications thereof would have to be taken into effect. And what we are trying to do, we completely lose sight of. We're trying to cure the pc's burned finger.

So you have this thing called the ideal and you have this other thing called the workable. Now the workability of a process is what determines its complexity. How complex or uncomplex does it have to be to be workable? And that's how you determine what process to use, that's how you determine how many legs there should be in running out brackets and so forth. In other words, how many do you have to have for it to work?

Now, that factor goes on in to the number of processes you have. Now, there could probably be an infinite number of processes. And sometimes I feel that I have developed an infinite number of processes and you in studying bulletins undoubtedly feel sometimes that you've had to study an infinite number. Well, let me assure you that many more types of processing have been dropped, by a factor of thousands times, of oh, thousands of times more processes have been dropped and discarded than have been retained. Why? They are pretty, but do they work? You see, that's the criterion. They're pretty, but do they work?

All right, so that limits then the number of processes which have survived. And the number of processes which have survived are those processes which have not just workability, but which have very broad workability. And now we come up against this factor: that there are types of cases. Cases aren't GI issue X case, see. It's not always an issue case. So we have to determine the common denominators present in all cases. See, what are the common denominators present in all cases? Well, they happen to be ARC, they oddly enough are the mid-rud buttons, and certain types of incidents common to everyone's time track. Which is to say, the general history of all cases is quite similar.

The reaction of the case, though, to this history, is quite different, because the combinations of history make differences of cases. And when we study differences of cases, we again could get out into the most overpowering library of textbooks you ever heard of. We could have Kraepelin's chart, multiplied by five or six thousand – you know, everybody thinks that's a phoney gag of mine, but you know, it isn't, you know, that chart really exists and it's really called that, and... [laughter, laughs] But this vast number of cases. He had a vast number, and they took it over to America and they added a vaster number. And this became one of the – one of the finest lists of gobbledygook anybody ever had anything to do with. It's totally meaningless. Because they got up – they were getting up to two idiocies. Either there was one case that was supposed to represent a – one case type, that included all cases, see, that's one type of idiocy. You know, everybody is a schizophrenic, you see. That's the way they establish cases these days, is what institute he was sent to. That's actually what they use for case classification. And if he went to Walnut Lodge and they treat schizophrenics, then the guy's a schizophrenic, you see. Simple. This... so that everybody is a schizophrenic. Or, there is a case type for every case. See, these are two idiocies. One case type for every case. There's five thousand patients, so there's five thousand case types in one institution, see.

Well, this type of approach to the problem is completely unreal, because it's not workable – it's not useful. An auditor has no use for it at all. You might as well say, "My pc's name is Betty, so therefore I am auditing a Betty case type." Well, funny part of it is, it has some truth. See? There is no other case that is exactly like this case. But there are other denominators. There are other denominators which are similar. This case has in common certain things with every other case.

Now, you can divide case types up, but again, just for use. You can divide case types up into a few case types. But what is the meaning of this? It would simply be for the purpose of matching them up to processes. That would be the only reason you would get different types of cases today. So you can match them up to the processes. Well, a great deal more work could be done on this than has been done, even. But we would get again probably an excess of what we needed. We'd be getting too complex for what we were trying to do.

So you can go in two directions and err in two directions in trying to classify types of processes. You can get so many case types that nobody under the sun would ever be able to use that scale or chart in handling any case. And the other one is to have one case type without any variation whatsoever.

Now, the first way would lose quite a few cases, because you couldn't find their case type on it, or something. You see, it was not quite a Beta, and was really not an Alpha, so it's a Beta-sub-Alpha case type, but there is no process which has been aligned for this particular type, because it doesn't belong on the chart, or something, and nobody would get processed, you see. And on the other side of the picture, we just sit somebody down, and we say, thud! "This is what you are going to run," and every so often the auditor has a horrendous loss. Because he's got a case type that just doesn't quite fit that process. It's a little bit too grossly out. We can't fit this case type into that exact process. But we have to do something else.

So what we need is a finite number of case types, based on behavior in an auditing session, not behavior in life. See, make it quite real. And then match up processes which do handle and raise the case up that scale. And that is what is needful here, for our purposes.

Now, you can't expect auditors to memorize and perform more than a few auditing types perfectly. If you expect them to, you get a slop over, quite rapidly, whereby they mix auditing types and styles and it gets to be pretty much hash. So you try to keep these things separate. Not because of the limitations of the auditor, but it takes quite a little while to get experienced and grooved in on a type of auditing. Takes quite a little while to do this.

Now, probably repetitive command auditing is so familiar to you that you don't look on it as something that is very difficult to handle. It's pretty easy. There it is and that's all there is to it. Ah, do you remember the first day you ever started to do a repetitive process on somebody? Well, the reason why you look on that easy is you're so familiar with it. For instance, it bears no great qualms to the vast majority of auditors to sit there and give the same auditing command over and over and over and simply acknowledge it, on and on. They look on that as very easy auditing. That's a long sleep. And that's all there is to it, is bang, bang, bang, bang, bang, bang, bang, you see.

So this particular thing is that it is a lesson in common to all types. You have learned it, so you don't regard it with any great horror. Now the CCHs – you take somebody who has

never done the CCHs, and you give him CCH 1, 2, 3, 4. And they can get further afield with this than you could easily imagine. In fact the whole of auditors have gotten completely afield. Over a period of years, it had gradually drifted down to a grind, and there was no such thing as a flat point in the CCH, you see, and regardless of whether the fellow was doing an auditing command or not, you just kept on running the auditing command, don't you see? Actually, repetitive processes has slopped over into the CCHs. When did you end these CCHs? Well, it's much more important to end the CCH properly than a repetitive command properly.

Now, the CCHs have also the frailty of auditing people who are lower on the Tone Scale, that is those who are really going to require nothing but CCHs, something like that. These people are lower on the Effect Scale and therefore are much more easily boxed about than... you know, knocked about. Bad auditing has a much worse effect on them, than it has on somebody else who is upscale. So therefore, it's a type of process which at once looks brutal on cases that react brutally, but is a kid-glove type of process. Well, by the time you've absorbed all these factors and time you've gotten used to all this and time that you can successfully and adequately run the CCHs, why, you've learned quite a bit!

I remember I had to study very hard to learn how to run the CCHs. And I eventually got quite good at it, and went ahead and became quite comfortable running the CCHs. And after a period of about five years – I hadn't done any CCHs – I uncorked the original CCHs as they were done, and as they were getting case results here at Saint Hill, and put on a television demonstration with regard to it and everybody thought that I was running something else, and they had never heard of these CCHs. Vast revelation to me. That they weren't getting results with the CCHs, they were overlooking. But these were the original CCHs. And they were quite calm, and quite delicate, and everybody had gone into the effort band, you know? Boom! You know, and you *grind* it out, you know, and that sort of thing.

Well, these things can slip. These things can slip. Well, how many – how many types of auditing do you care to keep in line? Let's say you're an Instructor, D of T, or something like that, in some district area – how many – how many types of processing do you think you can keep in line? Keep policed and keep well done, if principal types go out? In other words, it's a small number. It's a small number. And by the time you got one of these things all boxed up and written up and delivered and being done, every now and then you have to unpeel the thing and get it reviewed, because it shifted and is no longer producing results. It's variation which knocks out process types.

We stopped accumulating process types when I learned that. People shifting from the original type of process would then apparently bring about a need for a new process type. And that has plagued you more than you'd believe. Because all I would see, that auditors were no longer getting results with the CCHs and I would tend to drop them. But then I got very, very eager beaver on this, and I went into it, because of this experience here at Saint Hill, and I found out that a process type shifts very badly and it shifts out of workability over a period of years. So it has to be put back in again. And you'll find out you don't need a new process, you need the original process type, again. Refurbished. Polish up the old teapot, and get cracking, and you're making tea again, see. Tends to go to pieces.

Now that, by the way, is more of a limiting factor than you would believe. The – how to keep processes in line, how to keep them working, and so forth. It's an important factor. You say, "Well, they used to say that they got results with this process, but we don't see any results in it now. It's called Duplication Processing. Don't see any results with this processing these days. Well, get clever! And go dig up a bulletin from the year zud, see. And you'll find out that the auditing command is not as it is modernly – you'll find out the auditing command is modernly – is, "Duplicate nothing. Thank you. Duplicate nothing. Thank you. Duplicate nothing." You'll find out that wasn't the original auditing command. And as an auditing form, you don't always interrupt the pc when the pc answers the question. The thing is to get the pc to answer the question, not to prevent the pc from answering the question. These little variations will creep in. You mark my words, man!

Now, I don't mean to be sarcastic. You'd be surprised, how technology can vary over a period of years. For instance, we haven't a clue what Buddhism was all about. We really don't have a clue! There might have been some very good processing in there, you know? And just now, I'm almost certain that the planet builders, a couple, three hundred trillion years ago, had some technology. They must have had some mental technology of some kind or another, see. And one of these days when I've got some time casewise, I'm going to get run over that area very carefully, so I can winnow out any technology they might have had, in its original state. And it might have been the planet builders – if they had technology – went downhill, only because the technology got varied out of existence.

So in other words, process types are then also limited by how many you can keep in line, see. So therefore, the simpler process types tend to survive better than the more complicated process types. Now, but even the simpler ones will drift out of line.

So that's a class of processes – the CCHs. The CCHs are sufficiently marvelous that old 8-C was elected as the best case booster by the field auditors in the United States, on a query by me in 1958. It won hands down over anything under the sun. I don't even know how they were doing it today. But it must have been fairly correct, because it was only about a – it was only a few years from its inception. Must have been fairly correctly run during those days.

Well, there's a case type. What is this – what is this case type? Well, it's this case type where you get a duplication going with another person, and a duplicative physical order followed by another person. Another person has a great deal to do with this. You're following the instructions from another person and you're directing your attention at the physical universe and so forth, and this is all quite important to it.

Funny part of it is that as you drop one level, you tend to drop that out. And you get the reach and withdraw processes. Now these are still duplicative processes. These are still following the orders of a person. But you should look on those as limitation. That's a limitation of the process. That is no longer a benefit of the process. The process works on the lowest-level cases in spite of these things.

Now, there's a whole band of processes, which are so simple and so idiotic that everybody would tend to overlook those processes entirely. And here's another reason. Nobody could possibly see that the process would have very much use. So the process dies. And with

it dies the lowest-level cases that you attack, and so you get loses. You need that process. So here's another way a process can go out – is because it is seldom used. Seldom used. Actually, it's the only known way to process a cat or a monkey – and you'd be surprised what happened to Don Breeding's dog one day, when he started to run a sort of a reach and withdraw. He was trying to run 8-C, which was too high upscale, and the dog passed out. That's right, the dog passed out! It was too high upscale. What he needed was the reach and withdraw processes. And you can do remarkable things with the reach and withdraw processes. It's probable that you would not really carry one forward far enough to flatten it. Because it's – another thing is the process works so slowly, even though it works positively, that it tends to be neglected.

Now, I think you could probably get a cat to talk with the reach and withdraw band of processes. I mean it. I mean it. I think you could get a cat to talk. But how would you go about processing a cat, you see? Well, the same way you tend to process children. Sloppily, hunt and punch, no regular sessions, not treating it with the dignity that auditing demands. Don't you see?

You know, a lot of Scientologists' kids are going to be practically unprocessable in a few more years, if people keep hunting and punching processing on them, you know. Grabbing them off as they pass by, and running an assist, don't you see, and never flattening the auditing command and so forth. I'm surprised, every once in a while, one of my kids will yelp when I say I'm going to give them an assist, you know. They yelp! They're usually very pleased, but once in a while I will propose something like this, and I'll get a protest. And I don't know, something's going on, has something to do with it. And they just don't happen to want anything to do with this thing called processing just now. Well, what is it? It's some hunt and punch processing they've had without the dignity of an auditing session or anything like that and that's practically all they get. Well, that's all a cat would get either. See, you wouldn't say to the cat, "All right, all right with you if I begin this session now?" [laughter] "Any goals you'd like to set for this session?" [laughter]

And yet in actual fact you'd have to put the session in some kind of a frame, and you'd be surprised, after you gave the cat about four or five sessions that the cat would know the frame, see. "Start of session," "End of session," you know. They know during that period between those two commands they were supposed to stand there and do whatever you were saying.

Another thing is the idea of power of choice, overwhelming power of choice and that sort of thing. Probably be mishandled. Cat starts to walk off and you say to hell with that, you know, and you herd him back into session again. But in actual fact, if you observed – if you observed these very straightforward rules of auditing, that a session had to have a frame, had to begin and had to end, and if you weren't trying to overwhelm the pc and so forth, and if you were willing to give the cat as much time as you would give a human being – give the cat a fifty-hour intensive, don't you see. [laughter] It's very hard to do, because the attention span of the cat's probably ten minutes. Have to be fifty hours' worth of ten-minute sessions, don't you see? Wow! And then remember that that cat, as a cat, is going to come up Tone Scale. That's another thing that auditors neglect. Oddly enough, a properly processed cat will not claw up his auditor. He just starts clawing up everybody else. [laughter]

So you get – you get a situation here, what will reach and withdraw processes do? Well, actually, you don't know and I don't know. Our experience with them is something like: Joe has been sick for a long time. So we take his hand, and we say, "Touch the pillow," and "Touch the pillow," and say, "Thank you." And we say, "Touch the sheet," and he touches the sheet, and we say "Thank you." You know, we take his hand and make him touch the sheet. And we do between two objects here, back and forth and around, make him touch various things, more randomly than that probably. That is to say, "Touch your forehead. Touch the sheet. Touch the pillow. Touch the shoe" (that you put up on the edge of the bed or something). And the end product of it is, is his eyelids flutter, and he comes to. And then we decide we'd better give him some processing.

So we have another source of the disappearance of processes, which you can put under the head of "disrespect." We don't respect the process and so it tends to vanish from ken. See, it's a process which we use diffidently, in certain ways. Actually, old ARC processing disappeared on that route.

Now – so we really don't know what the reach and withdraw band amounts to because we have almost never carried through a reach and withdraw process. When you were doing Book and Bottle – which is a reach and withdraw process with duplication, it's a band process; it hangs right between Reach and Withdraw and the CCHs. When you were doing that, did you ever flatten it? I almost have no Scientologist I've ever run into, has ever flattened this. They say they've done eight hours of it or ten hours of it or eighteen hours of it or twenty-five hours of it, and I've heard thirty hours of it being done or something of this nature. But I never heard of it being flattened.

And yet, do you know that nearly everybody exteriorizes under that process when it's run over about ten hours? That's something to think about. Now, have any of you ever had the sudden illusion that you forgot to raise your arm from the side in touching the book, but put your theta beam arm up, or wondered what was happening here? You got a confusion between your body and any, quote – excuse me for using the word – "astral body?" Now, what – what's this all about? Looks to me like that's neglected sphere of processing – not respected. It's to make an auditor capable of doing a repetitive process, and that's what we believe it is.

There are enormous numbers of processes in that particular band. Lots of them. One of the most fruitful bands of processing there is, is reach and withdraw. Practically unexplored. And some respectable percentage of the cases which you try to push all the way up are not going to move until they're run on Reach and Withdraw. They won't move on the CCHs. Isn't that an interesting datum?

Now, as I've been winnowing out processes, then, I have come to the conclusion that we have the processes which undercut all cases, which you can lay your hands on, but as we have moved down the lower lines, because we are always pressuring at the top, we kept forgetting the bloke who was at the bottom. And through disrespect of the process, because of its limited use, had not much cared to develop it. All of this is very vital in a summary of modern processing, is to realize why processes disappear. And what processes are all about. Rather than process A, B, and C have survived, period.

You've got ahead of you times when you will practically be in tears over a case. For some reason or other the case has done an off the top of the springboard down to the bottom of the State of Case Scale, for some reason. They've had a catastrophe or something occur in their lives, the problems are too great for them or something has happened, and you just... tone arm action ceases, case stops moving. You say, "All right, we're going to get problems straight. This case obviously has got problems, you know – the case has problems. After all, anybody who marries three wives and so forth and burgles the banks is liable to have problems. So all right now, let's just cut right into this and let's get rid of these problems; we'll be able to get on with our engram running where we were before," – cheerily, cheerily.

Ah! You've overlooked something. Problems belong at repetitive processes. And the bottom of repetitive processes are at case level – at case level 6. That's the absolute bottom of repetitive processes. And this case of yours has done a temporary surge, you see, that your auditing (not your case but your auditing) has done a temporary surge, or a temporary collapse and is sitting squarely at 8. You can't run problems on the case. Yes, it's true that the case has problems. But the case does not respond to running problems.

So our next division in processing is what the auditor knows is wrong with the case and what can be done with the case. And these are entirely different things. So your common denominator of all cases is very well to know in theory, but paralleling this, is what can be done with these cases. What can be done with them.

Yeah, all right, so you say we got a thetan here, and he's got – he's in a body, and he's got a time track, which has got lots of engrams on it. It's got the Helatrobis Implants on it, and goals of that particular character, and it's got – and he's got certain types of things that he's refusing to duplicate, and we've got all these things. His ARC is low, he's been ARC broken. We can say all these things. Yes, that's what's wrong with the case. Yeah, absolutely right, there's nothing wrong with anything we have said. But let's get over to the other side of the thing. What can we do about it? So we get over into the category of what I'm referring to as modern processes.

Modern processes have nothing to do with what is wrong with the case. Unlike therapeutic or curative procedures or something like that, you have nothing to do with these things. They're sort of hand in glove ingrained, because of the Aesculapean school and other schools of medicine as they come up the line, you see. The case has lumbosis. Therefore we give him some trumbosis powder, see. See? See, that is a level of thinking. That is a certain thinkingness and it's a very, very easy method of thinking, it's very comfortable, it's very lazy and very ineffective. We're not in the business of curing things. But we nevertheless tend to, because thinkingness tends to go along the line of "what is wrong with a case has to be righted." And that's not true in Scientology.

You see how idiotic it is – you say, "This case keeps saying 'Vomica, nix vomica. Vomica, nix vomica.' That's all the case says." We say, "Very good, stuck in the Helatrobis Implants. Good. He's got a goal 'to vomica.'" [laughter] Well now, let me assure you of something: If this case is dramatizing something, that something is not real to the case. And you can put that down as one of the guiding rules of running processes. Yes, sir! If the case is dramatizing something, it's not real to the case. And right away, he's got lumbosis, so we give

him some antilumbosis powder, instantly folds up. You've got to bypass that type of thinking-ness entirely. The only observation you have to do of a case is, does it respond to the process which is being run on the case? You can put that down, that's the other guiding rule. Very simple. Does it respond to the process that is being run on the case? That is everything there is to it. Does it respond to the process that's being run on the case?

What do we mean by respond? Well, we're getting tone arm action. Now there can be one thing wrong with this thing called tone arm action. Tone arm action can cease because session rudiments aren't in. Very definitely. Tone arm action can cease because session rudiments are out, so therefore we have to assume in auditing that something like session rudiments are in, or that we run a process which undercuts session rudiments, such as the Reach and Withdraw or CCHs. And to some slight degree Sec Checking undercuts session rudiments. And also: are flows getting out of line?

Now let me give you an example. The Helatrobis Implants, and most of the engrams you dig up are motivators. I don't care how else you look at it, they are motivators. There are some overts running down the line, the nasty things you think or the pc thinks while he's running these motivators. But they are motivators.

TA action will probably cease, sooner or later, on the case. Oh, you run out six or eight goals and you run out fifteen, twenty engrams, and you all of a sudden are looking at no TA action. Where's the TA action gone? It was there, the case was getting TA action on this type of processing, so this really applies to *ceased* TA action – those processes on whom, on which, TA action had been observed. This only then applies to processes on which TA action has been observed.

If TA action has been observed on a process, then TA action will cease only for three reasons: The session rudiments are out, the rule of flows (under which we include the overt-motivator sequence) and the situation is not in accord with the case's forward progress. The case has not got – has not any ability to move on forward because the process is flat. So they're just your three conditions there: Session rudiments are out, flows (under which we include also overt-motivator) has been upset, or the process is flat. And it's for one of these reasons TA actions ceases, but that's for TA action which has existed – TA action has existed.

Now, you can recover TA action on something that has had TA action one way or the other, unless – by remedying one and two of what I just gave you, or the third one is true – process is flat. Now all this is very well, but when you're taking a case apart, putting it back together again, if your goal is to cure a malady – if you're idiotic enough to use Scientology to cure somebody of something – you are going to have probably the easiest run of it you ever heard of. Modern processes result in dropping somatics and that sort of thing with great rapidity. You're running a fellow over his head, he'll have a new sickness every day. A new set of somatics, if they were to be medically adjudicated and diagnosed, would wind up in some of the most horrendous Latinizing you ever heard of. Teeth hurt one day and his skull hurts the next day and he's got spears in his stomach the day after and his bones feel like they're falling apart and terrible exhaustion exceeds the next day. Well of course, for each one of these things – under terrible exhaustion, well he's obviously short of iron. And you get more mel-

ody... maladies than you could easily keep catalog of, just in the line of processing; if you processed somebody very badly over his head, these maladies would be quite acute.

This is not important then. Health has nothing to do with the situation, if you mean by health "care of the body, care of the body," and that's just a bunch of balderdash. The only thing we're interested in – the only thing we're interested in is the continuing forward progress of the case. Is the case more and more capable? And if you want to look at the reduction, and not worry about what – not worry about the capabilities of OTs or anything else, but just look at it – well, is he more and more capable of being audited? That's the shortest look. That's a very unreal look, but it's, you know, more and more capable of being audited.

If you just count case advance on the fact the case is easier and easier to audit, why you'll have it. Because why? Well, that means the case is more and more responsive to exterior orders, which is one of the things he's most allergic to. The case is more and more capable of viewing his track and pictures. The case is getting into less and less trouble; the case is more and more capable of locating bypassed charge. All of these various capabilities show up in auditing sessions. So if you wanted a good yardstick that didn't strain your brains any on case advance, well, it's just – is the case more capable of being audited? I mean, that is not your end view, but it's certainly a good yardstick for the auditor. Because if the case became more and more capable of being audited, and responded better and better and better to auditing and was easier and easier and easier to audit, you'd find out they're making faster and faster changes per session and you're getting more and more and more done per session, you're having less and less and less trouble and that's a good index.

And one of the ways of looking at it, on a case that's on a long haul... Auditors get very dull to the progress of the case by the way. They do. This is one of the short-sightedness of auditors and one of the things that monitors processes and so forth. You can't ever believe an auditor that a process isn't working. It's not that he's being villainous or anything of the sort. But he's looking at a slow gradient and it's just he's there, he's auditing, and the gradient is a slow gradient.

I'll give you a trick for this. This is – it's – there's nothing wrong with an auditor, I'm not being critical of auditors at all. It's just something I've noticed as a frailty that auditors have. They don't notice that a case is winning and gaining. And they sometimes get impatient and want to do something more heroic or something of the sort. They get to pushing and shoving. And the case is already going along just gorgeously. I have a basic rule, by the way, I never change anything on a case's auditing unless the pc squawks. I find out I always squawk before the pc does. I always get more impatient than the pc does.

So I'll just give you – just a short one, to counter this particular fault in other auditors, or in yourself. How was this case a month ago? See? And you can just say that in a snide tone of voice and if a guy says, "Well, I – well, you look at it like that, he couldn't get up the front steps." Something like this. They remember that this case used to have fifteen ARC breaks per session, now only has one or sometimes goes a whole session with none. See, case gains. That's case gains in the direction of auditing. And by the way, that shortcuts a lot of very fancy mental tests and case tests and all that sort of thing. It just puts a complete shortcut on the lot. Case auditing better? All right. There it is.

So much so that regardless of any other rule of auditing, if a case is proceeding satisfactorily and is very interested in what he's doing, I won't disturb the case. I won't do anything else. See, case is happy, so on. And the only objection I'll have to this is sometimes I see a process, particularly a newly started process, and it hasn't produced any result for a whole session and so forth and the pc seems to be happy with it, I come off of it. Or, the pc got some tone arm action on a process and ran it quite successfully for a session, that in the very next session, in spite of session ruds, nothing – I can't get that process to produce tone arm action again. The pc is fairly happy with the process, but I'm not.

But that, of course, is actions that you take in establishing processes. How long does it take to establish a process? Well, that's quite interesting. That's an interesting question. How long is a piece of string?. Sometimes you won't establish the pc's level of processes for several sessions. You keep hunting and punching around on a case and all of a sudden, why, the case starts winning, you get TA action, everything is running. You sit down for the long haul. And you wait for that condition to cease to be ideal before you do anything else. Just keep on with it. Actually, don't even pay too much attention to tone arm action. So it's – so for a series of five sessions the tone arm action's been minimal. It was good, it was good for quite a while, and then now it's minimal for that many sessions and so forth.

I wouldn't do anything desperate with the case, I wouldn't start tearing the case to pieces because he wasn't getting tone arm action. I wouldn't pull a case off a single engram, for instance. Let me show you the *reductio ad absurdum*. Pc doesn't get tone arm action in the last half of the engram. Well, so – you better not let him run that chain any more. See. That would be the most absurd type of thing, you see, that you could do. Pc got two divisions of tone arm action, during the first half of the engram, but didn't get any tone arm action during the last half of the engram, so it must be the wrong engram. See, it could become idiotic with this, you see – TA action.

How long should you sit around and suffer with no TA action? Well, it's an interesting question. Depends on the level of pc, depends on what you're auditing and everything of the sort. But if the pc is happy and you're running a fairly high-level process on the pc and you're getting no tone arm action, the worst I would suspect, that you probably weren't clipping the overt side of it, or your brackets were out in some particular way. See, I'd blame it on flows. And if after a while I... several sessions I just didn't... wasn't anyplace with this and there wasn't any tone arm action but there had been, and there should be tone arm action on the process – I'd start adding, in the ARC process, for instance, I'd start adding another leg. See? Just to make sure.

The pc for instance is answering it, you know, as "What communication has not been acknowledged?" or something like this, see. Well, he apparently is always auditing it as his own communication that hasn't been acknowledged. And he's stuck himself with a flow here somehow or another. Well, I'd just open up the... this is... the auditor's always at liberty to add legs on process, you see, so I'd just open up my kit, and I'd figure out how to word this process, so "What communication of *yours* has not been acknowledged?" and "What communication of *another's* has not been acknowledged?" you see. Something of that sort. I'd open it up. I'd have a six command process, not a three, you see. And you can make that, by the way, into a fifteen-command process. But this would be rather unusual, and you're getting rather ornate

by doing so. But I'd blame that. Pc seems to be happy, pc seems to be getting results, pc seems to be cogniting – just we don't have tone arm action.

And running engrams, I wouldn't bust the pc out of an engram because they weren't getting tone arm action in an engram; that's nonsense. I'd start worrying if the pc didn't get any tone arm action for a couple of sessions. And then the way I would worry is to park the chain that I was running and I'd find the overt of the same chain. You see, because that's another way of introducing flows. Overts flow outward, motivators flow inward. So good. Well, let's run up a – let's run up an overt chain on this. We don't care if it's in the same date periods. You might have a... The overt chain might be back there *myaf-splaff-sprillion-million-brod-quadrillion, hywang-von-zillion-zeeum-zeeumzzmm* years, see. And the chain you've been running is when they were in kindergarten in this life, see. We don't care about the disparity of dates.

But whether we are running overts or motivators, whether we are running overts or motivators, we of course are running with the same severe system of blocking out the engrams by chains. Don't you start departing from that system – I had too much trouble getting that system together. You've got notes on what that system is and I intend to give you a demonstration on it. But I've been working out the exact commands. I've got it down to the exact commands. How do you like that, you know? Exact commands. Interesting. You've got this thing worked out to a point where the pc can predict what the auditor's going to say, he feels more comfortable, too. The only thing you can get in trouble with is you're finding minor incidents inside a major incident. That's what you normally run into when the pc can't see.

Well, there's a set of commands go with that, too. Pc doesn't arrive at the beginning of the incident when told to do so. Use commands A, B, C. You say, "Is the incident we have a small part of a major incident?" You get a read on the meter, see. Date the major incident by saying... And so forth. It's a very precise operation, this engram running today. And is only effective if it is precise. And I'm finding out the precision of the running engrams by chains is adding to the pc's recall and precision on the track. It's quite interesting. So when you start to run overts, you run them exactly the same way, except you ask for overt incidents, which are the same type of thing. And your chain is always characterized. And you have a tendency to jump that characterization if you don't watch yourself. You're running the chain of "sticking to mest." See, that's the chain you're running. That's a good, long, hefty one.

Somebody around here the other day was asking for "the first electronic." They were running the chain of electronic incidents. Oh, blow your brains out, man! The first electronic incident, I don't think you could express it on this wall up here with a microscopic set of zeros following a 1, following from the top of the wall, straight across, next line one millimeter down from the last line, clear on down to the bottom. A thetan *is* an electronic incident! [laughter, laughs] You have to be fairly careful what you ask for.

Pc says, "Well, I don't know, I seem to go into apathy, every time I try to do anything to these people." Well, let's see. Now, you go start running the chain, "doing things to people," – there were people in this universe when you arrived at some vast date back. The mest body, the physical meat body, is one of the standard phenomena of this universe. And so there

you are. You're going to run down the first time they ever did that? Well, that's too much of a bite for the pc, that's all. Let's be more finite. Let's be more finite about it.

"What are these people doing to you?"

"Well, they're shooting at me."

All right, test it on the meter, let's run back a chain of shooting at people. See, Q and A. There are uses to Q and A, and that's one of them. He isn't going to go back very far shooting at people, thetans don't shoot at people. He'll run along a bunch of wars, or something like that. But you take something that he's worried about, and can reach, and sometimes your TA action on running engrams is suddenly – it's you've just bitten off more than you can chew. You're running a chain on "holding still." Or you're running a chain on "being held still." That would be even worse, see. Well of course you're asking for a bunch of still incidents. Well, that in itself will give you a stuck TA. That's rather elementary.

If you were very, very clever, you could make engram running – if the pc could run engrams – produce almost any TA action you wanted. You run stills, you get no TA action. You run masses, you get a rising tone arm. You get how you could throw the question?

"All right, let's run back to the first time you were afraid of mass," see. You're going to get a nice rising tone arm, so forth. I don't know quite what causes a low tone arm, to tell you the truth, because I've scouted it over a few times, but it's some kind of a negative avoidance type of mechanism of some kind or another, but it's something peculiar, that you probably could throw a TA negative, you could probably throw it positive, and you could probably run a chain of pleasure moments as all the times you were Clear. You'd probably produce a Clear, you see, just by running incidents when they were Clear. Get this validated.

What you validate, you produce – to a very marked degree, you see. With this exception: You get them to confront what they don't want to confront, and therefore the production of that then ceases to go on automatic, don't you see. But if you were giving a limited run, and weren't trying really to run anything out, but just giving everything a limited run, you could throw the case anyway you wanted to throw the case. You could run the type of incident that would throw the case that way. Don't you see? I know it sounds weird, but you could. That would be an improper way to run engrams because you're trying to run the chain that will make the pc snap and pop and make him into good shape.

So therefore, you run what he can confront – almost. You're running – you're upgraded his confront. It's just a "not quite." He doesn't know about this, and you find it for him on the meter, but it's real to him because it reads on the meter. Your best test of "is it real to the pc" is: Does it read on the meter? I mean, that's elementary.

Now, the combination of all these processes are based on the factors which I've given you in this lecture. I don't know whether or not this data has any vast value to you or not in putting together processes. I'm trying to give you some kind of an idea of the woof and warp of what makes up a chart or a scale or a recommendation of, "You run Reach and Withdraw on this pc." See, the various things that go into this. And how much you're expected to vary from that or not vary from that or something of the sort. All these things go into action.

So it boils down to the fact that modern processes are built against the degree of withdrawal of the individual into himself and what process will lead the pc out from himself so that he no longer feels so restricted about the thing. Now, that's the most basic action, and that of course is found in Reach and Withdraw. And I told Fred the other day I'd run some of you on Reach and Withdraw from bulletins – been about knocking some of your heads off – not from the significance of the bulletin, just from the bulletin, see. Reach and Withdraw from the bulletin. In one case, why, just wrote the word "Scientology" on a card. Reach and Withdraw from the word "Scientology." Just about knocked the student's head off.

Now that, of course, is literal, see. Reach and Withdraw, see, from something like this. Well, the pervasiveness of these lower-scale processes is something which you as an auditor should have cognizance of. You shouldn't go on expecting somebody to keep putting your foot in footprints all the time, see. Somebody's walked this way and there it is. You could have some knowledge of what makes a process a process, see, and why we have these processes, and which way they tend to go, and so forth. We have just a few basic classes of processes. There's a very few of these. But each one matches its own levels of case. And the total criteria of it is the case will respond under auditing to the process – and that's the only criteria.

Now of course, you can always undercut a case too seriously. You take some bird that's perfectly capable of running engrams and you run Reach and Withdraw, see. Oh, I'm sure you can run Reach and Withdraw for a long time, this character can run Reach and Withdraw, he's perfectly capable along this line. He might even get change, he might even get tone arm action. But that isn't a good enough reason. So the one other factor that enters into it – and this is where the art of the auditor is involved, and it's an art – is getting some estimation of where the case must lie and upgrading the case from that point. And that requires some skill. Because you could run a case too low and give him a lose, see.

And the way to do that is to always run a case a little steep, see. Always run the case just a little steeper than the case thinks it should be run. The reaction of the case to auditing, as to whether or not the case ARC breaks or protests or something like that has practically nothing to do with what you run on the case. You'll find some cases – now here's where you make your mistake on this – the case will go "*Yow, yow, yow, yow, yow,*" you see. Look amongst that "*yow, yow, yow,*" and find out if the case is executing the auditing command. That's what's important. It isn't whether the case is going *yow, yow, yow*.

You told the case to go to streens-skrillion trillion-kajillion years, see, and the case said, "God damn it, you bypassed about eighty thousand incidents all in one bunch," and so forth. That's all he said. And you as a – you look at this protest and you say immediately, well, the case hasn't done it. And you'll be surprised. If you carry out your routine on almost a muzzled basis, you say, "What are you looking at?" You acknowledge what he said, "Yes," and "Now, what are you looking at?" You'll find out that he's at eighty squillion-krintrillion sprinion years, looking at this confounded, cotton-picking camel. Who wants anything to do with this camel, see? And you get the – you get the whole notion on it.

Because protest is the common denominator of the whole track in this universe. And your case goes through phases of protest. Protest is probably more vital to a case than dupli-

cate. It's how he makes his pictures in the first place and there's a terrific amount of technology mixed up in this thing called protest.

Now, the only level of processing which remains as a wide-open level of processing is Level 2. And I'm working very industriously at Level 2. And making very good progress at Level 2. How you amputate total time track, you know. I've made some good progress.

I've already found a theoretical method – haven't tested it out – but I found a theoretical method, where you locate one point at the beginning of the incident – this is very theoretical, see – if you locate one point at the beginning of the incident, you have the pc – you pass the pc through the incident once or twice so he knows what it is, and you locate one point at the beginning of the incident, have him pick up one consideration toward the beginning of the incident, and the engram vanishes. Isn't that interesting? I found it so.

But that's the subject of another lecture. Benefit by this one.

Thank you very much.

HISTORY OF PSYCHOTHERAPY

A lecture given on 20 June 1963

[laughter]

Meat bodies cook! [laughter, laughs]

What's the date?

Audience: 20th of June.

Okay. Twenty June AD 13, Saint Hill Special Briefing Course. I was thinking what I could tell you, that might make auditing easier. I'm not in the position at the present moment to give you a history of auditing on the whole track, that would be a complete history. But I know quite a bit about it and it's pretty stinking.

It all goes along the traditional psychiatric lines, of evaluate, invalidate – you know, the psychiatric code – evaluate, invalidate and so forth.

Now, it might strike you as peculiar that if this universe has been sitting here this long, that nobody ever got very practical about digging anybody out of it. And that's because – that's because – there's a very good reason for this – is the guys who consistently remain in charge are usually in sufficiently good shape that they are not terribly worried about their own condition. You see that?

Audience: Mm-hm. Mmm.

So it makes a continuous authoritative level of not interested. That's quite interesting.

Because new blood comes into this universe, I suppose even today and these boys haven't gone the route and so on. By the time they have, they've usually lost out and so they're no longer in a position of authority. But there have been spells of auditing, of sorts, but you wouldn't call it auditing. But as much as I've been around in this universe, I have never encountered an effective therapy.

That's quite interesting, because it goes contrary to the fondest hopes of the religionists. It rather plows in the legend of the Kahoona Kapuna Kapunas, who... all they had to do was go "Kahoona kapuna," and something – *thaaah!* See? This is an unworkable level. See, there haven't been workable therapies. There've been by-the-bootstraps recoveries which are rather spectacular.

And as you look back over the whole track, you'll find that you've been going on a rolly-coaster. You've spent some time in a meat body and then the next thing you know, why, there you were, Operating Thetan, see. And then for a while, why, you're pushing a doll body around or something like that and then boom – why, you're Operating Thetan. And then you push a meat body around for a while, and then spend a few million or trillion years in a trap or something like that and then you come out the other end of it. And suddenly and mysteriously, why, there you are chucking planets around, or something like this, you see.

This is all – this is all very difficult for a person to reconcile. And it's "What am I doing? What am I doing" Being up, being down, being up, being down. There isn't one of you who hasn't been in meat bodies on the whole track many many times. Many times and places, you see. And, who succeeded this act – who didn't succeed this action by being an OT, you see. Quite interesting. And vitally necessary to your understanding of the situation because it gives you false hope. You say, well, "What – what must have turned? What must have turned the dials on my life like this? What mysterious thing happened that would suddenly make me nine Empire State Buildings tall? And what – what turn of the road did I hit that brought me into a state where I could, well, cut Earth in half and serve it up as watermelon? See, what did I suddenly do that brought this about? And then, also, what did I do that made me suddenly feel so weak? And how come a few trillennia later, why, here I am a professor of medicine in the college of fine arts, or something, in Hoosgow University or something. How – what?" Dizzy. Very dizzying. Up one minute, down the next.

And you go along the track looking for a miracle, because it must have been a miracle; you didn't know anything about it. Very peculiar things went on; you're on a stake trap of some kind or another, and some bird out of the goodness of his heart grabs you by the scruff of the neck and threw you up into the sky or somebody else fortuitously put a charge in the planet and blew it to flinders that you happened to be trapped on, and you fortuitously went flying out into space. And next thing you know, there you are tromping around in your bare feet a light-year tall, see. And you say, "Well, it must have been that I just felt that way when I was on the stake and when I was off the stake, why, then I felt okay. And can't happen to me again." And then the next thing you know, why, there you are pushing a broom at Hoosgow University, feeling very apathetic.

Well, I'd like to point out something to you. The cycle is getting shorter. See, that's the trick. You stay up less long. You go down quicker. And what is this mysterious thing that suddenly brings you into prominence where you're flexing the biceps in all directions and so on? What is this mysterious thing. Well, I can't even now give you a full answer that I would guarantee to stay solid for the next some trillennia – years. But it's the opportunity, more than anything else. And a necessity level. And then you find out you can and there you are and so you can go along for a while. Because you see, you aren't naturally a matchbox tall. You see, that's probably 90 percent of the answer. You aren't naturally only two inches high, see.

You look at it as the ordinary condition of life, now, to be in a meat body and be quite small, you see. Actually, that's not the ordinary condition of life. That's an extraordinary condition of life. Very extraordinary. Takes quite a bit to get a person into that state.

Every once in a while you'll run into somebody and they're allergic to boot polish or something like this, you see. You ask them to recall a time when they swiped or ate their mother's boot polish or something, you see, and bang, they do, and bang, they're no longer allergic to boot polish. And you say, "Well isn't this wonderful, isn't this remarkable, here I have achieved a near miracle."

Oh, yes, you have, there's no doubt about that. But what you haven't looked at is the unnaturalness to have an allergy to boot polish. That's terribly unnatural.

Now it takes a great deal of publicity, takes a great deal of working at to keep everybody down. The enthusiasm that this has to be worked at is rather phenomenal. It does take sixteen-billion-dollar-per-annum appropriations on the part of the US so-called government – with psychiatric treatments for one and all and Siberia slated for anybody who doesn't agree with them politically. It takes that much money, it takes that much effort. It takes that many TV screens, see. It takes that many – it takes that many misguided mothers who said, "Johnny, you must not get your feet wet." See?

It takes this whole operation, has to be *worked at*. You've never looked at it as a worked-at operation. You've looked at it as a rather natural operation. Well not to introduce memoirs into the thing particularly, but you occasionally have not wanted to be pushed around. You've just wanted to go and sit on a cloud for nine thousand years and recover. I almost tore up a valley one time on just this one basic fact. They wanted to give me some treatment. Well, their treatment was no damn good. It was perfectly friendly treatment. Friendly. You know, you – you got knocked out in a crash, see. Well, let's fix him up, you know? Whole attitude is why the hell don't you go off someplace and get lost? I just want to sit here on this rock till my head stops spinning, see? Total ambition.

No, no, they had to hand out treatment. "Oh, ho-ho yeah, ho, we've got to fix him up, see." Ah, well, it's very interesting. Because the funny part of it is, if I just sat on a rock for another thousand years or something like that and admired the sunsets and sunrises, why, I would have probably come out of almost anything I would have gotten into, don't you see? Because I wasn't being trapped there, nothing bad was happening to me. But you never have these opportunities.

The struggle a person has right now trying to get a vacation. And the glee with which some other people [laughter, laughs] say they've just been on one. Now this is a – this is an interesting thing. How come everybody wants a vacation? Well actually, life is a very interesting activity. And if you were going at it hammer and tongs and were not being degraded in the process, why, you really wouldn't feel like you wanted a vacation.

But that vacation is a token payment on the possible opportunity of having a hundred thousand years to sit on Mount Everest and admire the snowfall. Because you know you'd be better. The universe itself, if you delete incident from it, is therapeutic. Although you can look on this universe as a big basic trap, it's mostly a trap 'cause it lets people get at people. It itself is not very operative in that direction.

Now, you could probably turn out, well, let's go way down scale, and let's take the spinbins. Look how busy they are in a spinbin. Have you ever been in a hospital? Ever been in a hospital? You're lying there, six o'clock in the morning, crash, on goes the lights, bang,

the door opens, somebody's standing there – thermometer. Konk! [laughter] Here we go, man! Gotta do, gotta do, gotta do, gotta do, gotta do, you know? I think there's a hospital someplace, they were understaffed and they produced some remarkable cures! [laughter]

At the same time, it isn't true that if you just went on sitting still for any God's quantity of years, that you would necessarily get well. That isn't necessarily true either. It would all depend on what condition you were sitting still in. If you were sitting still in the head of an idol someplace in an abandoned temple for a few trillennia, you might not deteriorate, but you certainly wouldn't improve either. No, a power of choice has got to be there to sit still. And that's what gets upset entirely. The entire economic system that we have now is completely rigged to overthrow the power of choice to sit still. You can't do it, you see. Games are lots of fun, but here are enforced games and well, there's the game of overdraft. Overdraft at the bank. That's quite a game. There's – it's no accident that money keeps inflating and people keep fooling with money because the impulse is there to make the economic noose tighter and tighter and tighter and tighter. Where could you go right now and simply sit down in a meat body on this planet, and be free of the economic clutches? Well, not too many.

Years ago you could go up to the backwoods of Alaska or something like that, or I even know places in Montana. Little Kootenay country, something like that. You'd probably disappear in there, and years, decades would go by and nobody would even know you were around. You know, throw a sod hut or a log cabin together. Ah, these places are disappearing.

And there are no desert islands now where you can go sit under the Pago Pago tree and make love to the local wahines and have nothing to do, see. They've all been atom-bombed or taken over by the Food and Drug Administration. [laughter]

It's quite remarkable – it's quite remarkable, if you come right down to it, how all the progress level is directed toward, at this particular time, tightening the economic noose. And which of course shortens up the amount of available time you have, which of course gives you more problems and which once more overthrows your power of choice. And so there's no chance to rest.

Well now, of course if you're in good shape, you don't want to rest. But bad shape has to be maintained. People have to work at it to keep people in bad condition. That's something that you should take into your considerations as an auditor. You've got the pc – now let me show you how far this goes – you've got a pc, and you audit them up all week, inch by inch, and over the weekend they fall foot by foot. Well, that's an interesting thing. Hardly any of us haven't run into this. Here we go. Somebody is working all weekend to make sure that enough problems are mounted up here and enough time is denied and enough this and that and the other thing is denied and enough arguments and trouble are thrown in the air to continue this type of status quo.

You say, "Well, this person must be crazy to be trying to hold this other person down to this degree." No, they're just dramatizing. They're just – not even dramatizing anything on the back track, they're just dramatizing current trend. "Well now, John, you go off all week getting audited like that," you see, "and what do you think is happening to me here? And the kiddies and so forth – and do you realize that the rent is overdue and the meatballs are overdue and everything is overdue and then, of course, there's installments on the furniture and

there's the – and who – and who do you think has to put out the cat every night and so forth – and you can't go on like this, you realize that and so forth – it's all just your introversion after all, and what are you doing putting out all that money for getting audited?" You know, you've probably had this happen to your pc, see.

Well, you say, "What's going on? This person's keeping this other person down." Well, actually not trying to keep the person down, they're just dramatizing the extant confusion. Then there has to be some feeling that if you leave some guy alone, why, he'll resurge. But it isn't true that if you leave him alone in a trap he'll resurge, because his power of choice is missing.

Now, how long can a person stay in a trap and not get any better? Even though he's not being hurt? Well, I can tell you on very good authority – 13.94 trillion trillion years. Didn't get any better. Why? Well, sitting in a mass. Didn't want to be there. See, the beingness factor is all knocked out. Power of choice knocked out, that sort of thing. You're sooner or later going to find the pc you're going to have incidents on that run up into trillions of trillions – maybe the thousands of trillions of trillions. You see? Maybe they've been sitting – they've been sitting inside this volcano or something. Volcanoes don't last that long; something more permanent. They've been stuck on this sun for trillions of trillions of trillions of years, you see. Big time periods. But all that time they are being harassed by the fact that they are not there by choice. They're harassed also by the engram of their original arrival. How they got into that state. They're protesting, in other words, their situation. And as long as a thetan protests, he is not free. And he won't get any better. That's why you can't enforce auditing on somebody.

Well, you see some guy walking down the street and you say, "Hey, you! You're going to be audited." He says, "What's that?" You say, "You'll find out." Funny part of it is you get away with it with some. They say, "Hey, what's this stuff? Hey, this is all right, you know," on some of them. But the bulk of them, just the fact that you had forced them to get audited on something they didn't even know what it was, eliminates power of choice from the auditing so completely that auditing is just a kind of a trap, you see. Power of choice factor is what has been overthrown there. They don't get better.

Of course, it's a testimony to auditing that even – auditing will even take care of that factor. You got a guy sitting there who's protesting the process all the way along the line – he's protesting the process all the way along the line. Well, unfortunately, he isn't going to get any better – he's going to stick himself in that protest. That protest against the process. That's all; he's going to stick himself. It'd be better to run him on something that was too upgraded for him that he wasn't protesting that was just killing him – try it, see – than to run him up against this continuous protest. You take a pc who's trying to go earlier on the track while you're running a later-on-the-track incident, the pc gradually mounts up to a higher and higher protest against not going earlier, he finally locks himself later on the track. See, it's as simple as that. This mechanic you should take into effect, in auditing.

Now, what you know and what you have in your possession as an auditor is actually data which has not been extant in this universe. And the longer I go, why, the surer I am of that fact. Now, there's been data about engrams in this universe, there's been data about men-

tal image pictures, there's been data about all kinds of things, but there's not been data about auditing.

Now, auditing perforce does not evaluate or invalidate and when you audit a person against a person's wishes – well, momentarily in a session you sometimes push a guy through a CCH command and so forth, and you... that is protesting, so forth – that's not what I mean. I mean he didn't want to be audited, he is being audited, you see. Nothing's going to happen. Or if it does happen, you've got to be pretty heroic in the way you're making a gain. You've got to completely alter his idea that he wants to be there. Old Failed Help was one of the most effective mechanisms by which you did that. He knew he couldn't be helped because all help failed.

Now, if you have this weapon, this tool called auditing, and so forth, what is the limit of its use? Well, I've just given you the reason why its use is limited. You can, to some degree, overthrow a person's protest by reorienting him on his power of choice. He finally, through habit and otherwise, familiarity, recognizes that you are not trying to do him in and therefore comes to want to be audited. Not because he's overwhelmed; because you've changed his ideas on the subject. This is also very possible.

So that really can't be considered a terrific limiter on the subject of auditing. No, auditing is limited only by communication. It's the only thing auditing really limits.

You could imagine yourself going on a horrendous sales talk that everybody on planet Zug is worshipping the god Baal, see, and their idea of really doing their family a good favor is make them feed their babies oftener to this idol, see? And why, you say, it would take a long time to bring them around to any particular way of thinking. Oh, I don't know that it would. You wouldn't do it by suddenly overwhelming the lot of them, and say, "Now look, that's the god Baal, but I happen to be the god Mug, and you're going to get mugged any minute if you just don't sit down and go into a co-audit here and straighten yourselves out."

Well, oddly enough, that might even work, too. But you mustn't get overwhelmed completely cancelled out of your catalog of tricks. Remember that. Don't cancel that out completely. But look on it as an administrative or a political tool, not as an auditing tool. Don't mix up these tools, you see.

Well, one of the ways to do it would just be to say, "Well, if you guys don't stop worshipping Baal and get on the ball and kick its head off and get busy and set up a proper temple here to me, Mug, why, I'm going to scare-ify and scorchify the lot of you. In fact, there goes an acre of wheat right now." And they'd all say, "*Gaw! Coo! Yessir!*" And after you've pulled them along a while, why, you might get them into communication and then you could alter this overwhelm, don't you see.

Force does have its role. Force does have a role. The only trouble is, force has never been a total answer, see. Force is not a total answer. People try to make it a total answer. Right now most of the governments of Earth are conducting themselves on the basis of force. If you don't believe it, look at the appropriation that is given to weapons. See, that's their great belief in force. And yet, none of them can fall back on force and force has become absolutely useless in the field of government. It doesn't settle anything.

One thing I've learned on the whole track has been that force is never the whole answer. But I've also learned, reverse way to, that a total absence of force is not the whole answer. You just try and build a mountain sometime, ignoring force. Heh-heh! I'm afraid you're not going to get much mountain built. But that is constructive force.

So the way force is *used* has an awful lot to do with the value of force. And destructive uses of force has been the basic downfall of one and all. But you've got this whole planet that's feeding its babies to this fire god, and that sort of thing, and you can't get them into communication – well, you can't totally rule out destructive force; at least tip a couple of lightning bolts over there to the temple of Baal and blow his silly head off. And you say, "Oh. You see what happens to the worshipers of Baal, you see." You might get them in communication.

But driving people toward auditing, that's a very difficult thing. But they are driven toward auditing. People are driven toward auditing by their somatics, by their illnesses, by their unhappiness, by their unwillingness to be what they are, where they are – and those things drive them toward auditing. So they are driven toward auditing so you almost never get a pc on his own power of choice just to be audited, see. Very, very seldom. He's driven there, at the best, by his goals, don't you see?

Now, all of these things, then, sort out, well, what is power of choice? Well, power of choice could be many things, but if you're auditing a person in the direction of consenting to be audited, and then follow this by pushing him – auditing him in the direction where he isn't driven to be audited by his own condition and then audit him in the direction, finally, of putting himself in the condition so he can help you smooth things out – this, of course, is a very usable pattern. And I don't care whether your pattern of auditing is preordained to be only on the pc's power of choice or not. Remember there's always something driving the pc.

To restore him to any condition where he's any... feels any freedom or anything else, or is any value to himself or anybody else – to put him back into such a condition you do have to, however, consult his power of choice. You can always make a person well, oddly enough, with auditing, without consulting his power of choice. Isn't that interesting? And it is just to that height only that previous mental therapy has reached. And that's physical therapy, too. That's the height that it reached. It got no further than that. It was all done more or less by force and this thing called "power of choice" was never consulted. Interesting, isn't it?

But in your hands, why, you have weapons which improve a person's power of choice and he finally elects to be audited. You've seen that happen, time after time. Well, that's a very safe route.

So you never, then, find a pure power of choice to be audited. See, it's always monitored by little tiny factors and these factors are more and more other-determined the worse off a person is. See? So there is no absolute power of choice with regard to whether a person gets audited or doesn't get audited.

And he has this horrible feeling that if he just would go sit someplace and be quiet or something like that, he might get well anyway. Well, that's an interesting feeling. I appreciate that feeling. I feel a great empathy with that feeling. It's fine – it's a nice feeling. Even though it's totally, completely impossible. Such a program – such a program, in this universe, will

always be interfered with. Just as today you're not going to find many wilds in which you could go and sit down comfortably in a log cabin of your own construction and get away from it all and remain away from it all from here on out. Just as you could not do that now – I imagine there are a few places you could do that, there are a few bits and pieces left of the world, rapidly being overwhelmed – so this universe, big, broad as it is, actually offers opportunities which are almost as few. Sounds incredible.

Say, well there's a deserted planet up there, and all you've got to do is go up and sit on one of its mountain tops and it hasn't any population for a long time because it had an atomic war a long time ago. Or there's an asteroid spinning around, and if I could just go and sit on this asteroid for a while, why, I'd be cheerful about the whole thing and take a rest and so forth. Well, I can tell you from personal experience, here, you're really betting on one, man! That's very close to the impossible. I'm not going into any detailed private history – old soldiers are always talking about the war that the younger generation has hardly even heard of. And I'm afraid old thetans are always talking about the universes, planets and organizations which have long since gone to dust, but I'll be forgiven by talking about an extant organization, and in the last eighty trillion years, with no change of identity, I've played hooky a number of times. Eighty trillion years, see. I'm playing hooky right now, as a matter of fact. And all during that period of time – of course that's not – that's not any, any great quantity of time. But remember it is the *last* eighty trillion years, ending up with right now, see. I've taken off a hundred thousand here and two hundred and fifty thousand there and five or six million someplace else, and one time even a billion. I always got caught up with – always did! It wasn't that anybody was sending for me. But it just wasn't that quiet!

I remember the last time, I almost gave up on this one. I almost gave up on this one. Found a valley where there wasn't a blessed living thing anyplace in any direction anywhere, period. And the sun was quite distant from that planet. Who the devil would ever want anything to do with that planet, see? It wasn't even very hospitable; there wasn't any living things on it. I sat down and decided to grow some plants. And I thought that would be a nice, peaceful occupation. Just sit in this valley, you know, nothing to worry about with anybody or anything of the sort.

And I finally managed to coax into existence a few vines and that sort of thing, and flowers, and it was getting quite nice around there. I fixed up a lake and it was getting better and better, you see. Rather hard to do because there wasn't much sunshine, you see. And I was just getting on my way pretty well and all of a sudden, zoom-boom, and there was a spaceship. And I got pretty mad about the whole thing, as a matter of fact. It wasn't so much that their blast knocked down plants. I remember bringing a thunderstorm, moved it over the ship, moved it over a range of mountains, and then moved it back over the ship just to show them it was under control. And then let them have it! Well, they were back a couple of years later, we had a conversation and I reported back to base.

I mean, you give up on these things, you know? Apathetic. Apathetic about having a vacation.

But there's – there's a typical sequence, I'd figured I'd had a rough beef about it, for the whole billion years before that, and I figured I ought to go someplace and sit still and just be

quiet for a while; and that was all the good it did me. It's a noble ambition. I commend you for it. But I've never been able to make it work out.

It works out to the degree that you flex your muscles a little bit better, but you're running up against a shortening cycle in this universe. The cumulative fact of the time track is the defeating fact. There is no other defeating fact than that – the cumulative effect of the time track. The more you live, the more pictures you've got. And the more misadventures you have, the more engrams you've got. And the more engrams you've got, the more engrams can be keyed in. And the more engrams can be keyed in, the less events you can associate yourself with, with a free mind. And that is the dwindling spiral. I've just given it to you right there. That is it. There is nothing complicated about it. It's just no more complicated than that.

A thetan is his own trap, and time itself carrying forward adds a cumulative effect. I remember we had a press agent here for a while, I had to think up all of his press for him, and I got tired of having him tell me you couldn't get any publicity, so I finally had to let him go. But I remember one time, his attitude toward "our ideas" in Scientology was, "But," he said, "that just says that it..." – I hadn't told him anything to amount to anything, I just told him that when you had an accident or something like that, you collected an engram – and he said, rather disgustedly, "Well, that's the theory that the more things that happen to you, why, the more cumulative disaster you have." And he said, "That couldn't be true," and that made a total departure between him and Scientology. You see, he couldn't confront that fact. But that's the truth. That's the truth.

So one period you might be able to stay forty, fifty trillion years, sailing around, doing beautiful ballet on the planets, you know? And then all of a sudden this whizzle-bum goes by. And it causes you to feel strange. You go back, you're not feeling so good. And you decide you're not dancing so well. And the next thing you know there would be a whole chain of disastrous event, and bang, there you are, pushing a broom at Hoosegow University.

Only the next time, it only lasts thirty trillion years, see, and the next time it only lasts ten trillion years. There it goes, you see. That's – that is the basic difficulty that you are up against, that any being is up against.

Now, there is another difficulty that you might become very interested in. And that is the difficulty called organization, and the way things should be run. Because Scientology is, at first glance, as any self-idiotic government agency would be the first to scent, death on organization – if organization contains seniorities. Let's look this over. Let's see why Scientology is not looked down on, but "*oooouw-eh-huh!*" – the fear in the chest when somebody looks at this. He recognizes that if Scientology, as little as he could understand of it, was let loose, unlimitedly in this universe, it would end all caste-type organizations of whatever kind.

I was eating breakfast this morning, I was wondering, "How would I go about selling my compatriots in the – in the Galactic Confederation on the idea of kicking out the meat-body psychiatrists and putting nothing but Scientologists in, in that particular line of activity?" It was an interesting mental exercise. Interesting mental exercise.

I could imagine the problems which would be thrown in my lap as a result. There's the hewers of wood and the drawers of water, don't you see – and there's the people who direct the hewers of wood and the drawers of water, and then there's the people – and the beings

who direct the people who direct the hewers of wood and the drawers of water. It never quite occurs to anybody to ask, "What you doing hewing wood and drawing water?" But that's beside the point.

Well, the Galactic Confederation is one of the most successful organizations that this universe has ever had. Basically because it is based on an intermixture. It's composed of meat bodies, doll bodies and free thetans. And it's one of the very few that ever attempted this odd mixture. Of course, you get back on the whole track, you get back – well, I can tell you from personal experience – as short time ago as thirty-three trillion trillion years, practically present time, only it doesn't seem like present time to me – my mind starts creaking a little bit on time when I start adding all that up – but from personal experience, at even that recent date they were quite accustomed to having free thetans wandering around in towns. This was not an unaccustomed action. What kind of a town? Well, oddly enough, about thirty-three trillion trillion years ago there was a society that was not too different from, I'd say, about 1920 – sort of 1920 with the Rococo of the 19th century, see. The potted palm sort of motif, you know, the Fedora hat, same clothes, the razzle-dazzle gent wore a striped shirt, see, a wide striped shirt, see. The various – various signs and so forth, it looked quite odd. The buildings, like modern Gamages or something like that, you know. These things, no matter how much they seem to change...

Ages after that, by the way, in the same locale there was an Arabian civilization that didn't even know anything about automobiles or machinery or anything like that but had lots of minarets and big turbans and baggy pants, you know? And horses.

The universe goes backwards and forwards and upside down, but I'm beginning to wonder, because I'm looking almost in vain for a different type of society.

You say, well, of course you couldn't find a different type of society because the type of society you've been living in at the present time has keyed in the types of society which are similar to it on the whole track, so therefore you aren't going to find any different types of soc... I don't know. I didn't ask for any of these engrams to get keyed in, particularly. I've been getting them keyed in all over this universe. I only find a half a dozen different society types. They're quite the same. And I find no bogies to amount to anything. In some stuff doing last night, I was looking at a Bentley – about a 1916 Bentley. Funny hood, mixed up with a western stagecoach. This was road traffic. And a Greyhound bus. Seven-hundred billion years ago, very modern, you know, all mixed up, all mixed up. Guy looking at this will think he's running dub if he doesn't watch it very carefully, because he gets the repetitive type of society, you see.

So on a couple of implants – and in one of them there was nothing but West Point cadets and in the other one there was nothing but Annapolis cadets. No, it isn't that anybody was doing any dub, it's just that – the fact that that is what a cadet for the army is supposed to dress like. Simple. Where do you suppose man – how does man get this terrific agreement without having experienced it? And that's how he has experienced it.

Well anyway, thetans used to wander around towns – like Gamages, you know? And they had traps and implants and so forth sitting in the town for the unwary thetan to get blundered into. Like, you look into this box and you'll see all your life again, you know? Implant.

Shoplifting, I think, was prevented by wire nets spread across goods on counters. If you could imagine London up here being with nice rigs so that free thetans wouldn't carry off all the hardware and so forth, and you... pretty mad. But no thetan at that time had been so antagonized that he had to consider himself three times as high as the Empire State Building. He'd just as soon be small peanuts along with anybody else. Funny. Funny admixtures of societies. And you'll find a society where there is no such thing as a spirit – all is scientific, you see. There is no soul, man came from mud, the only cure and treatment is a biochemical shot in the gluteus maximus. You find such a society, you even find them that depraved, such as Earth, 1963. Weird beliefs. They shift all over the place, in other words.

But an admixture of social strata – and I do mean social strata, because it falls immediately into the ability and power stratas – that who can – that one who can throw the biggest lightning bolt, of course, is normally considered to be chief, mostly because he'd argue if he weren't. And you get down scale, and you get the more active character, such as dolls, and then you go down scale, and you get the meat body, and then you go down scale and you get the politician. And the situation – the situation which develops is that Scientology injected in any mixed-up society where you have free thetans, doll bodies, meat bodies or any other downgraded – there's also other downgrades that have thetans in them. Some robots have thetans in them. And horses, dogs, cats, game animals, birds, insects: these are social strata.

I don't care if they're not sentient social strata totally, because a guy's pretty far out by the time he's running an ant. But the situation is that you're looking at a scale of social castes. These are castes. And the caste system shatters the moment that you can take a human being and process him up to a level of doll body. Well, what about the self-respecting doll? The self-respecting doll at that moment would be the first one to protest processing a meat body up to the level of dolls. Interesting.

All right, so you take the dolls and you process the dolls and you move them up toward a category of free thetan. Who's going to protest there? Well, the free thetan's going to protest, that's for sure. He's going to say, "Well, who's going to hew the wood and push the spaceship?" See? You know? "Who's going to stand there and rivet this stuff? And how are we going to establish seniority, man?" And one of the first things the Galactic Confederation would ask, "Well, what are you going to do? I mean, what's your seniority rating?" so on.

Well, actually, you could work it out. You'd say, "Well, you've got everybody's records." And they have. So all right, so this character – this character's been a doll body, he's been a sergeant at arms on Planet Zed for quite some time as a doll, and by the time we get him processed we're not going to penalize him or something or other, so we've made a free thetan out of him.

Well, I'm afraid that he would have seniority over somebody who had only been his corporal. In other words, you'd have to leave the status quo. And carefully record the status quo. Unfortunately, this leaves a free thetan pushing a broom someplace or another. But who said that a free thetan shouldn't or couldn't push a broom?

Now the whole argument explodes in the face of this: Well, who says that people have got to be at that level to do those things? See, that's the lie that is introduced in the situation. For instance, in the last few hundred billion, why, the quality of motor or engine being turned

out in space vessels in the Galactic Confederation have been very poor. Why? They blow up every now and then. One of the first questions you ask after you've had an ARC break with a couple of blowups of this particular character is, "What the hell are we doing using spaceships?" "Well, spaceships are necessary to carry the troops." Well, you say, "Well, what are you carrying troops for? Because a free thetan in the first place could go in and swamp up the lot – and usually does, to open up the gates or something like that and let the troops into the citadel." So it looks like a now-I'm-supposed-to chain which is going on here, see. Kind of weird, isn't it?

And after a crash, why, you always have to pick the dolls out of their heads because dolls can't get out of their heads. Human beings can, but dolls can't. Kind of grim thought, isn't it? And a free thetan, to pick one up and salvage him out of a wreck – and here we get back to auditing again – oh, there's lots of patterned auditings. Doll has a head inside a head, oh, about the size of your fist. You know these puppet – these puppet things they turn out, you know, that you put on your hand, like a glove, you know, wiggle the fingers and... Well, a doll without the little hands on the thing and without the head is what the thetan looks like. See, it's just that little skirt. So you take him, take a ball sort of like a trap with a couple of holes in it so he can see out of it, and shove him up into this metal trap thing, see? Then you pick up the head of the doll body and you put him in there, into a cradle inside the head, and he extends into a helical arrangement down into the body by which he can then manipulate, and so forth, the body. They get pretty good at it. But a doll body is actually a trap to end all traps. Because the body's light and because he isn't always being beaten around – they last for a long time and so forth. But a doll is in a trap.

Now a free thetan, to take a doll out of a wreck pulls his – pulls the doll body's head off – you know, like lifting off a diver's helmet – picks this ball out of the dome, pulls the thetan out of the ball, you see, and goes... [blows out air] In other words, throws out a beam that as-ises or erases, eats up actually, burns up, his facsimiles of shock. And says, "Go on home," tells him where the wreck is, and the doll says "Aye-aye," and he's away. As a free thetan. Tiny one. Interesting. Interesting.

But look at that. That's very interesting because that's a therapy, See. That's an outside, exterior therapy where somebody else is doing it, but it gives you an open sesame to what do you do about ants, what do you do about ducks and what do you do about cats? Funny part of it is that a free thetan could pick up a duck and go *fssssss*. There'd be no residue left. The thetan that was occupying that duck would at that moment be free and be Clear. Albeit, cleared by somebody else! What about the facsimile? Well, he'd go on for a short time and start mocking them up again, of course. Because it's not on his own power of choice. But it leaves him momentarily free, do you see that? Interesting, from a standpoint.

There is a wave, then, that can be projected at an individual that would erase his engrams. Quite interesting, isn't it? But would they stay erased for very long? Well, not until the guy kind of himself got restimulated and keyed them in, and so forth. It would just be what was in restimulation at that moment would get wiped out.

Now this was psychotherapy and you'll see some residues of this called picturology. And it consisted of putting a guy to sleep with a ray or a beam – which is simply energy mov-

ing at a certain vibration – nothing very mysterious about that, which induces hypnosis or sleep. You take one of these clapsticks like they have in the front of the Hollywood cameras. They put this guy to sleep, and you know what he's been looking at, see – he's been in an accident or something like that. So you know the scenery he must have in the incident, see. You talk about – this is why some auditors write script, they're probably familiar with the method. They take a picture, see, of what he's been looking at, and hold it up in front of his face, take one of these clapsticks and go *snap!* Like that. Take another copy of it with a different view, hold it up, let him see it, take this big stick and go *snap!* See, he's sitting there, comatose. Hold up another picture of it, another slightly different view, take this clapstick, *snap!* After a while the thetan all of a sudden groggily starts to get the idea, so he takes the pictures that he himself has been looking at and he goes *snap!* and smashes them. By mimicry.

"We want you to smash up this picture," and so the thetan in a groggy state goes ahead and smashes up the picture. Auditing. The most modern and advanced auditing that the universe ever developed is right there. Never developed anything any better than that. You have to select the picture. You select it one hundred percent, down to the scene and viewpoint. Well what if the guy isn't sitting in the picture? What if that isn't the picture he's sitting in? "Well, forget about that." What if – what if you bypass some charge in it? *Ahkahhh!* "Well, we don't know why he's cross." And what happens after this has been done? Well, a Scientist could run the whole incident un... the whole incident from beginning to end untouched, and have the additional bonus of having to run out the erasure of a picture sequence, too. All it actually did was operate as a key-in.

I think this is quite interesting. I'm very interested – now there's other data and... of that character, but look at the evaluation. You choose the picture for the pc one hundred percent. It's all right to say, "All right, we want you to go to a certain part of the track and let's see if we can find anything." Oh, no, no, this is total evaluation: We've got to have a picture of a pine tree over on the right, and there's got to be a rock over on the left. Now you find the picture with the pine tree and the rock. There it is.

Idiotic. Because it might not even be engramic. You talk about a hit-or-miss proposition, man. Well, how did they know, if they were working this on a free thetan – how did they know that he was even sitting in the chair, if this was a meat body psychiatrist doing this? That's an interesting point, but they used to have meters. Some of you are allergic to meters, because you realize that meters are normally used by meat-bodies' societies to detect the presence of a thetan. And in such a therapy room, there'll be a great big dial, not unlike an E-Meter dial – this part of the dial, black dial, and as long as the thetan is in the chair it of course is registering because the chair is hooked up to the meter. There's an aura registering – but somebody's in connection with this thing, and therefore he is detectable. Now in the Helatrobos Implants and so forth, if you're ever unlucky enough to get derailed and so forth in the Helatrobos Implants, you would have seen a workman come up, walking forward with a box pointed toward the pole. You know? Kind of ducked, and scared stiff, but – because you might be a big thetan, you see; you might not have been that little thetan they thought. And walking up toward the pole, see, to find out if you're – if there's somebody on the pole or not. Bad visio. That's what's the matter – their eyes are shot. It isn't that thetans are invisible at all. As a matter of fact they aren't invisible. They are very visible. And – however, if you've cut

that whole top stratum off of your perception, why, you probably couldn't see pink or green traffic lights either. See, I mean, there's people colorblind. Well, people in meat bodies through fear and otherwise, go waveblind, at the wave.

Actually, thetans are very visible. Particularly if you condense one or freeze one. Then he looks like an old, black glove, without any fingers in it.

Now, talking about therapy at large, then, you are actually being asked to grapple then, with something for which you have no historic background. You haven't any track background for this. I've probably given you a sample of possibly the only track background you might have connected with in this particular line, you see? The ideas of being big and little and how did you go over this cycle; the idea of somebody standing up and, perfectly beneficially, without being angry at you at all trying to get you to get rid of a picture by slapping a clapstick in front of your face or something like that. The idea that if you could just sit still long enough and breathe under your own power of choice why, you would somehow or another go free. These are the background music, and as far as a person being a pc is concerned – does he want to be audited, doesn't he want to be audited, how much is he driven to be audited, what is causing him to be audited – all of these various other factors add up into the thing. His power of choice has to be consulted to this degree. And that is, in a nutshell, practically all the background anybody's got pre-Dianetics and -Scientology on this whole subject.

Sometimes people have Freudian background or psychological background, but not to be sarcastic at all because I'd never slap at ol' Papa Freud – but your... the basis is, wow, this is a long way from home, man. Yeah, that's – I don't know, you start counting witch doctor stuff if you count that in, don't you see? That's about the same level of operation.

So there's very little preconception here. Now, you get somebody who's been a psychoanalytic patient and you try to audit them, it shows up at once.

He'll start telling you that he has traumas caused by fixations and he keeps trying to run engrams of having made a pass at his little sister or something like this, you see. And it shows up almost at once what he is looking for, and the thing to do with that rather cruelly is just take him to his first psychoanalytic session, and scan him rapidly through to his last one. Do that two or three times and you won't have any more trouble.

You sometimes also pick up data that the analyst picked up that you can use in running engrams. We've also done that. It of course makes him recover the ulcers and things like that that he's been cured of. That's the cruelest thing I ever did. I was – this poor devil had been five years or something like that, maybe seven, he was the assistant editor of *Collier's* magazine. The poor devil! And he'd been going to that analyst you know, and been eating humble pie and being careful, and digging up these times when he thought lascivious thoughts about the wrong thing, and he'd just been having an awful time, and he'd been... vast amount of money – I think he must have spent ten, fifteen, twenty thousand dollars doing all this, and so forth.

And I got so tired of him trying to pick up his Eudipitus Lipupsis or something of the sort that I finally said in disgust to him – this is many, many years ago – I said, "All right, let's pick up your first Freudian treatment." And we did. Had a little trouble, but we finally got it.

"Scan rapidly through to the last treatment. That's fine. All right, let's do that again. Do that again."

Then I found out the poor guy had been treated for ulcers, his stomach was just – his stomach looked like Swiss cheese, you know, full of holes. And by the time I finished this, he just doubled up in the auditing chair and then doubled up on the floor and I thought he was going into a prenatal. He wasn't; his ulcers had just come on, full bloom. In other words, the only – the only thing that had happened is they'd put him on some kind of a suppress ridge so great that they had managed to suppress the pain of the ulcers. And of course the second you scanned him through all these years of travail, why, there he was with a complete, full-blown set of ulcers.

I'd like to finish the story and go on and tell you that I audited him on up then so that he didn't have to worry about ulcers. But as a matter of fact, he wouldn't publish a favorable article and I never did. Anyway... [laughter, laughs]

But the essence of the thing is, is you have, as a student of Dianetics and Scientology, my sympathy to this degree: is you're going in against a no-background action. I've given you just about the totality of the background of this particular subject.

Now the people who are, and beings who are in the universe that are still communicating and still alive have, however, arrived at a point where they can reverse very easily and start up again. And you'll get more vectors starting them up than you will pressing them down. Governments are forgetting more and more how to govern and that sort of thing. They will be less and less argument posed against processing and so forth.

But in actual fact, what do you have? You have a brand-new trend. And a brand-new trend – it's not necessary they catch on slowly; they don't necessarily catch on slowly at all. Brand-new trends sometimes go faster than old trends. But certainly, to this degree, it gives you no benefit from your own past track, except as a pc you get reality on this and that and so forth – but you haven't got a large quantity of data.

Now, if you were a sergeant in the army trying to teach a private how to shoot on a rifle range, you would be bounteously assisted and... or disastrously held up by the person's past skill. Either a guy can shoot or he can't shoot, and that's just about what sergeants do. They pick out a few guys that can shoot and these guys are, well, we'll keep them in the lines. And these guys over here, they're hopeless, *don't* let them near a rifle and so forth. Well what are they doing? They're just cashing in directly on the training they had before the battle of Bunker Hill and before that the training they had so on and so on and backtrack and when they were a doll. And guy *can't* shoot left-handed because dolls carry their weapons on the left-hand side and he's committed too many overts on that, but he shoots all right as long as you give him a right-hand holster. These things change, but you're cashing in all the time on the person's background. And you're practically training an automaticity.

You take some guy, send him to university and say he's going to be an atomic scientist. "But why do you want to be an atomic scientist?" Well, he doesn't know. He just has a feeling. Wears his hair in the exact design of an atom bomb, you know? [laughter] And there he is. There he is. You're training an atomic scientist whose aggregate training on the subject

of atomic science, put together, would make an IBM computer awful sick in its gears, the figure would be so tremendous.

You take some pilot, you teach this guy to be a pilot, what have you got? You've got somebody there, my God, he's been flying airplanes and flying airplanes and – he either can fly or can't fly. And you'll find most instructors have just come on down to that. What are you doing. You're picking up the whole guy's background, and teaching is then simply a method of restimulation! That's all. We've got a brand-new subject here, there's no – nothing. The more you restimulate, the less the guy's going to learn. I mean, it's quite reverse. Because there's nothing there to restimulate. There is no past training on Dianetics or Scientology.

As far as your pc is concerned, the contrary is true though, as I was telling you about the editor-assistant editor of *Collier's*, you do get a conflict. Because you'll get somebody into picturology. Practically anybody who's been on the whole track has some time or another had somebody smashing a clapstick in front of his face, see. Maybe not often, maybe some of you will find a pc whose Helatrobis Implant series and so forth has been very nicely erased by this particular method. It's all there, you see, and it's totally aberrative on the pc, but after you've finished up running the whole Helatrobis Implant then you've got to take care of the treatment. And it's twice as bad as the implant.

Anyhow – this pc, however, can mistake the auditor for past schools and past actions. He can make a bad mistake that way. Pc's sitting across the auditing table holding... he sees the auditor as somebody maybe who's sitting there holding up a picture, don't you see? Or an implanter or a hypnotist, or something like this. He can get himself screwed up on this particular subject. That's why an auditor has to act more like an auditor than an auditor. Because you can key in, awfully easily, past therapy on somebody that was therapy that wasn't therapy, don't you see?

Now, you tell a guy to go into an incident and he's liable to get the idea that you're implanting him, and, you know, all kinds of weird things, because a pc isn't too bright. He's down there amongst the – amongst the energy waves and the anaten and he isn't thinking too easily, so he gets confusions much more easily. You just remember that all past therapies overthrew his power of choice exclusively as an operation and an action. They were dedicated to this.

The one factor you can alter is not overthrow his power of choice, but rehabilitate his power of choice, if he's very, very difficult as a pc. You've always got that one in your locker.

Now, it's one thing to say, "Never take a pc's orders," but remember that "never" means when a pc is confused, upset, in the middle of an ARC break, he'll tell you silly things. Well, that means don't take those silly things. But sometimes a pc, even though he's pretty ARC breaky can tell you exactly what is wrong. Well, if you don't take those things, knowing yourself that that is what is wrong, why, you're overthrowing his and your power of choice at the same time.

So there is nothing wrong at all with taking a pc's – taking a pc's hints and his – well, his orders, as far as that's concerned. But taking his orders only occurs after you've ARC broken him very hard. He won't give you orders up to that time, he'll just give you data. You ARC break him hard, he starts giving orders. And then the next thing you know these orders

start coming out of the middle of implants, they come out of engramic phrases, they do this and that, and you can just ruin him. That's why you say never take a pc's orders. But that means when he's ARC broken, upset. He'll just give you a confusing bunch of junk.

I know, I myself giving an auditor orders have wound myself around the meter about three wraps, you know? "What you ought to do is go back to..." you know? The auditor didn't realize that I must be pretty confused at that particular point and go back to it. Oh, no! It was... The reason you shouldn't, of course, is what's wrong is totally unknown to the pc or it wouldn't be wrong.

Now, you get different ARC break assessments for different levels – there are different assessments – there's a different assessment for each level on that State of Case Scale. And the engram running one only has a couple. That's just bypassed an engram, earlier engram, an earlier beginning, or have I got the date or duration wrong? That's two questions – got the duration wrong, or the date wrong. And you'll find most ARC breaks in engram running stem from getting the wrong duration for the engram. Nothing more elementary than that. It isn't the earlier incident, it's the wrong duration. That's the bypassed charge.

But that wasn't what I set out to tell you. I just say, well, these are the various problems and this is the history of psychotherapy in this particular universe, given to you on a very limited scale. There could be a much fancier bunch of data connected with it, there could be a lot of ramifications, we could take in the witch doctors, we could take in all kinds of people, we could take in psychiatrists in general. We could give you, probably billions of words of description of the various practices of the Ug-bug tribe along the Moscow River – methods of psychotherapy, see. We could get very, very catalogic – but that is not psychotherapy, that's just dramatization. They weren't trying to do anything for anybody.

The point I'm making is, is you yourself – you yourself have a few points that you can put together and remember in handling pcs and in learning auditing. And they depend to some degree on history, and I think maybe some of the data I've given you might be of some assistance.

Thank you.

MODERN PROCESSES

(Original Title: Routine 2-H)

A lecture given on

25 June 1963

Thank you.

Well, I see we are increasing in size. We are increasing in size and those few of you who are about to go home are ill-advised – very ill-advised for various reasons.

What's the date?

Audience: 25th.

Twenty-fifth, 25 June AD 13, Saint Hill Special Briefing Course.

Now, there's a very happy note today in processing – a very happy note indeed. The differences of processes as they have come out one way or the other have been regulated by two things – the name of this lecture is Modern Processes – two things. One has been the ability of the auditor to do them and the other is efficacy on various levels of cases – in other words, ability of the auditor – efficacy in advancing the state of case.

Now, that is what monitors, by and large, a process. It's not monitored by how bright I am; but sometimes I'm amazed at how I can overlook some few things, you know? But trying to fit the jigsaw puzzle together requires that these two factors be joined. In other words, these two factors have got to mesh. That's very important. Very important.

If we solely went on the basis of efficacy of processes, on that alone and we went on nothing else, we would very soon find ourselves with no auditors. That's very interesting, because they wouldn't apply this material broadly or generally or uniformly enough to give them wins. And I've meant for several lectures to give you the definition of wins and loses; and this you'll find of some value. What is a win, and what is a lose in terms of thetan behavior?

Now, these are very, very diffident type words, these are – these win, lose – this is terrific *thaah!* Wonderful significance, you know. One of these empty-headed significances, you know, that everybody knows. Well, beware of these everybody knows things because they don't open up to an achievement. So you have to get an action definition to these things before you know exactly what is a win, what is a lose, and then you could get wins or know when you hadn't had them.

It's very funny, but it's odd how you have to take some of these things apart – the *reductio ad absurdum* of an idiocy, you know? And if we don't know the anatomy of these

things, what do we mean when we say an auditor has to have a win or the auditor got a lose or the pc got a lose or the pc got a win?

Well, if you don't know the anatomy of a win or lose, how would you know how to give a pc a win or a lose? You might want to give a pc a lose sometime, you might be – find some – you might find the thetan that started the Helatrobis Implants or something like that, you know, and... [laughs]

Now, in these two things, win and lose, we find, in actual fact, a very fundamental fundamental on the subject of entrapment, degradation, all the rest of these things, add up into these definitions. But they're idiot... idiotically simple definitions. Took me a very, very long time to find out what they were. And right away, the second I tell you these, you see, you'll say, "Oh yes, of course," and that will be the end of that. So, of course, I have to give it a buildup. [laughs, laughter]

But a win is intending to do something and doing it or intending not to do something and not doing it. And that is a win. And a lose is intending to do something and not doing it and intending not to do something and doing it.

Now, you notice that a lose gives you a disagreement. You see, there's a ridge forms between those two things – nice ridge, sitting right there. You intend to do something, and what is the consequence of this? Not doing it. Well therefore, intending to do it and not doing it are a statement in disagreement, one with the other, and so you get a ridge. That is a bit of entrapped energy, don't you see, and so that will read on an E-Meter. See, an E-Meter registers disagreements, basically.

All right, there are those four conditions. And they are covered even though you intend not to do nothing and do nothing, don't you see. That – you're adding significance, you see, to the basic definition. All that's included in there, see. Intending to do something and doing it, that's a win. Intending not to do something and not doing it, that's a win.

All right, how do these apply in processing? You intend to improve this case and you don't improve it. That gives you a lose. I notice a sad, little black shadow floats across some of the people present. You intended not to ARC break the pc and you did it. You intended not to make the pc worse and you feel you made him worse. That's a big lose.

Now let's look at it from the pc's side. The pc intends to do something and doesn't do it. The pc doesn't intend to do something and does it. Now therefore, those would be pc loses. Pc loses – bang, bang. Let's say the pc sets goals for the session, "In this session I wish to become an OT," and he doesn't do it. Unreal though that may be, that is still a lose, see? Unreal though it may be.

Now, the question of reality and achievability don't happen to be included in the basic definition of win and lose. There's no effort to modify them to that degree. But when you apply them to auditing you get some additional factors which are quite interesting.

This auditor's idea of a win is not to ARC break the pc. And the auditor ARC breaks the pc. And then that – he realizes then that he's had an auditing lose. Maybe that was all he intended to do was to not do something. All right, so there's auditor attitude or auditor view-

point of the situation, you see? Get through this session without any ARC breaks or blowups, see, that's an auditor intention, you see. Auditor doesn't make it, gets a lose.

You'd be surprised how often that is the auditor's single intention. The basic most quivering intention is to somehow or another get this pc smoothly through this session and out the other side – not to do anything to the pc or anything, but just not to do anything damaging to the pc, see. "Just somehow or another in spite of this stuff get the pc to the other side of the session – *uhhhh*. Made it! Pc didn't have an ARC break. Whew! What a win."

Well, actually, that's kind of unreal. But nevertheless it's within an auditor's frame of action. All right, that's in the auditor's frame of action, see. Short of processing you're not going to do anything for this auditor. Well, this makes a demand of a process that it works regardless of that intention. Well, that's a heck of a thing to have to demand of a process, isn't it? But these are factors which I work with all the time, factors as oblique as this. The process has to work regardless of the intention.

Well, that's sure putting a strain on an automaticity, if you want my candid statement. And you would be very, very surprised how often that is true – how often that is true. And I have eventually begun to carry that as one of the crosses my mock-up has to bear, see. Process has got to work regardless. Now, that's an awful strain to put on a process, isn't it? If the auditor will just do certain actions and not exceed those actions, then certain results will occur. And that is just about the safest base on which you can lay a process. And any process you have today is based and constructed on that base.

Now, that's interesting, isn't it? In the first place, that might seem at first glance to be a downgrade of you as an auditor. But it actually is not a downgrade as you as an auditor. Your skill is in completing an auditing cycle. Your skill is sitting there handling and keeping the form and running the session. You actually do have somebody sitting across from you who has oblique and crisscrossed ideas. Well, I figure it's just about enough for you to do that without inventing a process as you go along. I find that's too much.

Now I myself auditing many, many, many years ago used to actually dream up the process and handle the pc all at the same time. Now this is feasible. This is feasible but is only necessary if you don't have the answers. And I found out that the moment I had the answers, I laid that aside – dreaming up the process while auditing the pc. I laid it aside because it was unnecessary to approach the problem. It put an awful strain on the session and it basically gave me too many loses. See, I ran too many sessions in which there was no vast gain on the part of the pc.

So therefore, I started reducing, even from my own auditing viewpoint, the number of factors of cases and the number of difficulties of cases down to a near-irreducible minimum. And having reduced them, then, adhered to them. Don't you find me today working out a process carefully and then, when I have some confidence in it, using it in an auditing session? There's a great deal of test goes into processes.

Now, the way to get around this problem is to know the fundamentals of cases and to have processes adapted to those fundamentals. Now, there are differences of cases just as there are differences of auditors and what we expect of an auditor is to be able to complete an auditing cycle – you know, with the question and the acknowledgment and so forth – hold the

session form together and take care of this particular pc's session uniformness. See, all pcs are trying to bolt out of a session one way or the other. You know, they do something else besides the auditing command and they fail to do the auditing command and you've got to have the good sense to know when to straighten out a session that is running badly and leave a session alone that is running fairly well, see. This is all in the field of an auditor's skill.

And that happens to be the irreducible minimum for an auditor. You can't go any lower than that – can't go any lower than that. You get any lower than that and you haven't got an auditor.

More, then, of randomness will be introduced into the session and into the pc than order. There's a tremendous importance to this thing called the auditing cycle. It is too often overlooked. If an auditor, (quote) (unquote) "auditor," cannot perform the auditing cycle but absolutely must Q and A – must do this, must do that, gets all scattered and dispersed, gives the auditing command in seven different versions, in seven different commands, you see: "Have... What affinity has been rejected? What affinity's been refused? Has any affinity been refused? Would an affinity be refused? Well, would emotion be refused, then? Well, what would be rejected anyway?" That's an inability to duplicate.

All right, that's perfectly obvious to you, that a person who could never master a repetitive statement of the command couldn't ever classify as an auditor.

Now, that doesn't mean you – when you're upset and tired, something like that, and busy auditing like mad – you suddenly flub, you skid, you skid on the bank, you know? You're supposed to be saying, "What affinity has been rejected?" and you suddenly say, "What affinity has been refused?" See, correct it and so forth. But you notice that the mistakes you make in that department are absolutely minimal. They're very, very few.

We've mastered that in auditing so that you think it's even ridiculous to be touching on that. Well, run a co-audit someday!

Now, your next action of the auditing cycle is to be able to acknowledge. And some auditors get on a very thin edge on this line and they think all you have to do is say, "Thank you" no matter what the pc says. They don't bother to understand what the pc says. They think if they interrupt the pc and make the pc say it again because they didn't understand it, it will upset the pc. They get a lot of considerations of this particular character and vary this, or when the pc says something they're startled out of their wits and justify what they just did, you know? The pc's saying, "Well, I thought you were awf – you looked awfully bad today." And the auditor says, "Well I-I really don't look bad, I-I just didn't have much sleep last night." You see?

Now, he's actually broken down the auditing cycle at that point and the session will suffer to that degree. Again, that isn't very serious and again, every now and then, you make that break. No auditor, including me, is proof against being startled – not absolutely proof against being startled. Because a pc says, "Well, this is why I tried to commit suicide last night," see, something like that. You say, "What?!" [laughter, laughs] Outside of your zone of reality at once, you see, you didn't know anything about this and you've been running half a session and didn't find it out, you know? Blow your brains out, see. Something like that.

And sometimes you're auditing somebody and something awfully personal comes up, or something like this, and you hear yourself – with some horror – suddenly justifying it or something like this, you know, grab yourself tight and... Well, these things happen. We can continue to seek for perfection in these things and we know how it should go, but it doesn't disqualify an auditor as an auditor. That sort of thing will go along.

But if an auditor can't cure himself of Qing and Aing, it gets pretty serious because this is very damaging. The pc volunteers – pc... well, I'll give you the most common action. Meter echoing. The pc volunteers a suppress. "You know, I just realized I just suppressed this engram." And the auditor says, "In this session, has anything been suppressed? Has anything else been suppressed on the engram?" Well, blow your brains out, man. That was an origin: TR 4. Flunk, flunk, flunk, flunk, see? Nothing drives a pc round the bend faster than this echo metering, see. Works in dating. The pc says, "You know, I think the incident was five minutes long." "Oh? Oh, was the incident five minutes long?" That's a Q and A, man. It's an invalidation. The pc says, "I think the incident's five minutes long." You say, "Okay, the incident's five minutes long." That's that. That's the end of your dating. The most precious thing your pc's got is the ability to estimate time. And you'll find out that a pc who's smoothly audited on engrams after a while gets out of dating entirely. Give him a lot of hours of very good auditing on the new running engrams by chains, and he all of a sudden will be – he'll be saying, "Well," and he'll say, "well, the incident's at 84,964,643,972 and one minute – at..." and look at his watch. And you've got to be quick on the ball, see, write it down. Sometimes it takes you by storm. You don't really – you say, "What'd you say again?" Too bad – too bad – that pc might not be able to repeat it in exactly that order and he'll start questioning it. So you have to be on the ball.

You're here – you're over here on your meter, see, you're over here on your meter. "Now, is it more than a hundred trillion or less than..." "Well, it's eighty-four trillion, nine hundred sixty-five billion..." and you've got to be right there, man. [laughter, laughs] The pc – that's one of his most precious abilities. The other one is the ability to go earlier and to return.

Now, that's very interesting, but any echo metering is a Q and A. Pc says, "The duration is – duration's about 725 years. I think it's around 725 years." Well, now you get to the borderline question. Do you now verify it on the meter? No, you don't. It is around 725 years, that is – that is a period. See, it is *around* 725 years. Makes a difficulty. And you say, "Move through the incident to a point around 725 years later," is very imprecise.

So you get around this by saying, "Move through the incident to a point 750 years later," which puts him well beyond the end of the incident. You get the idea? Or you could even say 725. Doesn't matter, as long as you don't Q-and-A.

That's all under the heading of the auditing cycle. That's how far the auditing cycle goes.

You've asked the pc, even though you were dating on the meter, how long ago was this incident. If the pc says how long ago it was, no matter what you're doing with the machinery, the pc has answered the auditing question. So that all you have left at this point is a

record and an acknowledge. That's all you've got left. Otherwise you're Qing-and-Aing and you'll be injuring the pc's ability to date and you mustn't injure that.

It's like in mid ruds, pc says – you're running, you're running protest on the big mid ruds, see. You're clear on out to Protest and the pc all of a sudden says, "You know, I just suppressed – I just realized I just suppressed the whole thing a while ago." Ah! Interesting question. You'll find the auditor who cannot do an auditing cycle asking, "Is there anything else you suppressed?" That is a Q and A. The auditor's action is TR 4 only and go on with his protest. See, origin.

Now, we're getting down to some of the weakest points of auditing. What is a Q and A? It's to question the pc's answer. I'll show you how marvelous a Q and A can be; how adroit it can be; how far afield it can be and still be a Q and A.

You've run the engram on the pc – you've run the engram. The pc didn't get anything so you realize there's an earlier beginning. So you say to the pc, "Is there an earlier beginning on this incident?" It's very interesting because you earlier told him to return to the beginning of the incident – you told the somatic strip to – and the fact that five, ten, fifteen minutes later you say, "Is there an earlier beginning on this incident?" questions the action of the somatic strip ten or fifteen minutes before. Now, we're really getting down to fine points of auditing. We're getting very nice. But it still fits within that same framework.

Even a thing like, "Are you sure you answered the auditing question?" see, an invalidation. It's also a Q and A. The basis of this is you've done something about what the pc has done. You said to the pc, "Spit," the pc spat, you say, "Did you spit?" You've done something, don't you see? The essence of all Q and A is doing something because the pc has done something – departing from the auditing cycle with new doingness because the pc has added new doingness. You then, if you understand that completely, you can break yourself of it. But sometimes an auditor doesn't recognize what he is doing in this and he doesn't realize he's breaking down his auditing cycle.

Now, these are very neat points. These are getting very, very neat. And any auditor goofs on one of these every once in a while. The worst one is the pc is trying to originate something and the auditor continues to answer it. "I said, how long is it going to be to the end of the session?" And the auditor says, "Another fifteen minutes." The pc has alr... – this is something that has gone on before, see. And the pc says, "But I said, I only said, how long would it be to the end of the session." And the auditor says, "Well, another fifteen minutes." Eventually it gets through the auditor's head that he's not acknowledged an origin because it sounded like a question. And he stacks up four, five, six, seven, eight, nine, ten origins right in a row, none of which are acknowledged.

"I said the engram was a long time ago. That's what I said."

"Yes, well, I know. I-I know, I know that's what you said. And we're still trying to get it."

"Yeah, but – but I said – I said – I said that the engram was – I just – that's all I said, was the engram was a long time ago."

"I know, I'm still trying to find it."

"No, no, no. No, you don't understand. I said..."

You get the idea? All of a sudden the auditor says, "Oh, my God! I've missed a withhold here, on the basis that he simply meant it as a comment. And he wasn't questioning the dating or anything, he just – and I ever since that time have never acknowledged it yet."

Boy, you talk about something wrapping itself around the telegraph pole, when that one gets going it has many horrible, cunning covert versions that can crawl out of some edge of the session some place and just drop ink all over everything. And you can really get one of these things going. It's wild. And sometimes they are so adroit. They're so incomprehensible that you don't wake up to what's going on and that applies to any auditor. There's always one so adroit that you won't catch it – always.

You're trying to get some items or something out of a pc and the pc makes some remark that sounds exactly like something else and the auditor takes it up and here we go. Just caught off guard, don't you see? It's – that's only unforgivable if you never catch it. You know, you can miss a withhold on a pc... now to show you how important the auditing cycle is, just about the worst situation you can get into is the immediate bypassed charge in the session. Immediate bypassed charge. The immediate. And that's the same example that I've just been giving you. Pc originated something and you bypassed it as charge by taking it up and doing something else – or do it. You do something about what the pc said. There's only one actual way to clarify this – if you think you're understand... misunderstanding it in some way, ask the pc to clarify it, you know, and in some cases it's enough to say, "Is that a request? Is that a request that you're making?" and so forth. That takes it out of the same... of the category, you see, and you get a clarification of it. Because very often the pc isn't making a request. Pc says, "It's chilly," and the auditor obligingly says, "I'll close the door," or "We'll shut the windows," or something. Well, oddly enough the pc didn't mean that. See, that's then basically a Q and A.

Now, remember there's always a certain misunderstanding can occur between an auditor and a pc. The question is: can the auditor put it right? And that is the final demand of an auditor and that's why you're there. If it goes wrong, can you put it right?

It isn't so much as "are you perfect" as an auditor. We can attempt to achieve that. But it's an absolute which is unobtainable. I can get pretty good on practicing a process of some kind or another. I can get pretty good at it. But I would never strain my brains to the point of trying to get perfect. I can get just as good as you can get and then not go to bed and cry all night because I wasn't perfect, you see.

The question is – is can you straighten it out? Or are you going to sit there in a miserable flub unable to make the thing come out right at session end? And that I should say is the final test of an auditor: Can he make it all come out right anyway?

You know, session wrapped itself around the telegraph pole. Well, can the auditor bring the session off anyway? Well, that comes under the heading of technical skill and observance of the auditing cycle. Now, modern auditing has paid a great deal of attention to this, so that today we have a process known as Routine 2H. Now, this is brand-new – at the moment it's mentioned here. But it very shortly will not be brand-new with you. The main difficulty in the handling of engrams, the main difficulty, is the complexity of the action. It's been

reduced now to a very rote procedure. As you see, particularly when you study the steps one by one, you will see that they don't depart into a lot of "Well, there's always a lot of something else you've also got to do," see, as far as the procedure is concerned. It just isn't in that category. It is a rote procedure. It's as rote a procedure as repetitive processes, practically.

Now, that's pretty much something to demand of processes, and yet there it is. Now, it runs engrams better than I've ever run engrams. So that's all I'm demanding of it and that's plenty because I was never able... I would think there's only been a couple of cases that I've ever had my hands on and couldn't run an engram on; or get him through or straighten him out by reason of running an engram. Sounds pretty wild but this runs engrams better than that. Runs them smoother. It's what I'm using with no variations right now. I've been testing it and testing it and testing it. And this is very george indeed.

And that's quite a triumph. That's been some, thirteen-some years in manufacture. Longer than that, actually. But lots of failures. Tremendous, tremendous numbers of failures in getting auditors to do it. And that became so great, as far as I was concerned at one time, that I abandoned it and it stayed abandoned for many years. The failure there was intending auditors to run engrams and not achieving it. And you go give me another failure like that and I'll turn in your thetan to the local headquarters.

A great deal had to be known data to move the thing into this particular category of a rote engram procedure, which is R3R. That is R3R. That is not running engrams, Book One.

Now, one of the things that is necessary is: running engrams on a pc is no place to learn how to run engrams on a pc. Of all processes, that is the one that is not learned by doing it on the pc. If you have no command of the time track, of knowledge of the time track – doesn't mean your own time track, that's just the basics of a time track; what are these things – you're going to tangle foot inevitably even though you're given a rote procedure. You won't have even a hazy notion of knowing where you are.

But more important than that, dating is an interestingly exact skill. And in engram running dating is combined with – as another dating, a meter action, with time in it – duration. The hardest step is duration. And that is the only one that is left in actual engram running to learn while you are running engrams, if you've got dating down first. Duration is hard to get. It is tough to get duration. You will succeed in getting the proper duration for an engram time after time and then all of a sudden you will hit a bearcat. You will lay yourself a gorgeous ostrich egg and get all tangled up and not know whether you're coming or going. And on that rote procedure, duration is everything.

So I should think any nervousness that you have in running engrams should be relegated just to this one department of duration. And your skill should already be very great in the other departments before you tackle it. Some of you are learning this the hard way right now.

Well, I'll give you some problems of duration. Had one the other night – almost knocked me own head off. The duration of the engram was a split second. Please note that that is not covered by the question, "Is the duration seconds, minutes, hours, days, weeks, months, years?" Please note: nothing reaches a split second. The auditor was working on it for

an hour. Meantime the pc skidded into another engram. See? Fantastic problems can occur under the heading of duration.

If your pc doesn't know what the incident is all about, you've got the duration wrong and that's how – that's all there is to that. There are no, no, no variations to that. Why? Now you're right here in present time. Let me call to your attention that you cannot at this moment tell me the total length of your time track. But you can tell me the length of this life. Notice that? All right, very good. You can always see the back end of the incident, then. In other words, you can get the duration of the part of the incident that is pointed toward PT. In other words, the later part of the incident is always durationable. You see that? So, you've got this fellow and you've got this fantastic situation where he's sitting there in the dark and he can see the light coming in from a window. And you run the engram again, by rote, and he's sitting there in the dark with the light coming in the window. And you run it again and he's sitting there in the dark with the light coming in at the window.

Well, fortunately for you, we don't have to depart from rote engram running. I finally got this – I just got this cracked. In all such cases the duration is wrong. He could reach, in terms of reality on meter reading, the last fifteen minutes of the ten-hour engram, which was sitting in the dark with the impression of a window. And this is quite interesting because, you see, that's the part that's closest to present time. So he can see the back end of it. So you get the duration of the back end of it. You get the minor incident inside the major incident which was sitting in the dark looking at the window.

So every time you find the pc sitting in the dark, and having been run through it once, cannot tell you about it, the duration is wrong and you simply redo the duration step. Isn't that easy? You don't vary from rote procedure at all. You don't have to do anything at all. You just redate your duration. You tell the pc, "Go to the beginning of the incident," all by rote, see. All right, "Move through the incident to the point – whatever it was – fifteen minutes later." Bang, that's all. Pc comes up at the other end and he says, "What happens?" – and you say, "What happened?"

And the pc says, "I don't know. I was sitting in the dark and I see this impression of the window."

And you say, "All right, thank you very much." And you say, "All right, we're going to see if we can't get a better duration on this incident now." Get another duration.

All right, you've got a duration now of five hours. Had a duration of fifteen minutes before. Got a duration now of five hours. Don't consider that your first duration was wrong, you've just got more incident now. So, you say, "All right, return to the beginning of the incident," he goes to five hours. He goes five hours from the end. "Move through the incident to a point five hours later."

"Ynnnaaa – some trees and then there was this window and that's all I know about it."

"All right, thank you very much." So much for that. Going to redo the duration of the incident, see?

"Seems like it's about a thousand years." And you say that's fine. Don't nag the pc; don't introduce any other commands; you don't have to do anything else. You just say, "All

right. Move to the beginning of the incident. All right." The pc's there – bang, you'll see your meter go when the pc arrives at the beginning of the incident – it always goes bang. Your meter flicks. He doesn't have to say he's there.

And you say, "All right. Move through this incident to a point one thousand years later." Zoom he goes. "Oh, well, you see, it's like this. It's like this: I was an aeronaut and I got tangled up with these astronauts, you see? And they were trying to plant ostriches on this planet." And you finally find out the end of it, he – telling you the end of it – he was sitting in a dentist's chair, he was saying, at the end of it. No, he wasn't sitting in a dentist's chair at the end of the thing. That was a ship spinning quietly down into a very hot sun, you see. That sort of flash that he kept reporting on the end was the crash. Didn't have anything to do with anything he thought it had anything to do with until you finally get the beginning of it. You got it?

All you're... you just redo the duration step. If the pc doesn't know about the incident, you redo the duration step. That's – it's just simple. It's very easy for you and a very good thing for you that it worked out that way, so I can now, of course, release the procedure. And it was... not – wasn't that so much I was waiting for, but I thought we'd have to doctor this up, you know, minor incident inside of a major incident and all this sort of thing. Well, that's too much. Fortunately it works out mechanically to be the pc will always go to the beginning of that part of the incident which he can now reach and he always goes to that. Always. And he always goes to the beginning of the duration from some point at the end. So you don't have to worry about it at all. You just repeat the duration step.

Very lucky for you, says I, says I; and you will say so, too. Very uncomplicated. Of course he's gotten charge off the end of it by moving through it once. See, every time he moves through the end section, just that little end section one more time, he's unburdened some charge. Whether he likes it or not. You could stay there and grind and put him through it about nine times, and you could turn it all bright and he'd have visio on it. Engram running no longer is barred out by the black case. Not at all, not at all.

Now, that's quite interesting. That's quite interesting because it opens the doors. It opens the doors to a lot of things. Been a long and arduous task trying to get pcs to... up the line because the only thing there is there to run is engrams. Whatever else they think there's there, there's only engrams and the machinery and so forth connected with them.

Even a GPM is just an engram of a peculiar type which needs a form to run it with, but it's still just an engram. So all this is very interesting.

The main trouble an auditor is going to have then is dating and curing ARC breaks. Because ARC breaks occur in engram handling and if you don't handle them and if you continue to give the pc orders after the pc has expressed an ARC breaky action, you are going to mess up the case. And that's the only way you can mess up a case running engrams.

I found one other thing that may be of some importance to you, before I tell you some more about that. You know most people think the mind is a very confused affair. Well, IBM does not build a computer of the same reliability or comparable accuracy of the reactive mind. It just doesn't build one that good. And far from being a confused affair, when addressed by the proper technology, the mind is an automatic card-file system of incidents all stretched out

on the track beautifully, which has no comparable counterpart in the physical universe. It is not a confused mess at all. If there's anything, it is too idiotically orderly. You *always* get the engram you ask for. The pc *always* moves to the point. There's nothing confused about it. That may be a brand-new point of view for you. You've looked at the mind as being a mass of confusion. No. Confusion isn't in the mind. The pc looking at this file system and unable to grab onto the proper file catalog thinks it looks *very* confused.

But how would you like to go into the archives of some space opera society, all of which is delivered to your hand – and these, by the way, are quite interesting as archives. Operated one about 612 million years ago, something like that, which was quite interesting. Card-file systems were all stored in a basement. And I think the basement of that computer room was about the size of Chicago. And the machines which read that occupied an area – just the machines which read it – that's, you know, the final results appeared on and so forth – looked like seven or eight Grand Central Stations. You know, just the banks of machines. And the reanalysis machines on that were all composed in a little hut that was about a thousand feet long by about four hundred feet wide.

And everything was all done on automatic card shuttles, and pneumatic tubes and comparisons. And these IBM machines down here look something like a child's hurdy-gurdy or something, compared to one of these other machines. These machines could get the finest, tiniest difference between a umph and a umph. And then they could get all things that had the tiniest association with umph and umph. You talk about your smallest and your largest magnitude of comparison – tremendous, see.

If you'd wandered into that without knowing how it worked, seeing these tremendous rows of varied-colored machines and buttons and tapes, and the wastebaskets around there just used to flood. And you would have said the devil himself can't operate this thing. Actually, all the operation it required was one single machine on a little platform and you simply asked what you wanted to know on that machine, and then it mastered the master machines which mastered the master machines which mastered the files. It's very simple.

You wanted to know how many stripes does a zebra have on the planet Xnu in the year Brfrumph of Wuf. Zoom! "How do you make a zebra?" "What is the name of the OT who originally designed zebras for this particular consolidation coordination and what were the basic faults of the design? How many zebras survived after 10,000 years in the environment of the planet Path? Are lions actually the best answer to zebra overpopulation?" All of this is statistical information, don't you see? All statistical.

Well, if you tried to build machinery that would answer up, you've got it in *Dianetics: Evolution of a Science*. The size of the machinery – something like that – it'd take Niagara Falls to cool the vacuum tubes. It would. It'd burn up enough fuel to light a city if the mind was on a computer basis. Fortunately it isn't. It achieves this fantastic and marvelous accuracy because you are quite fantastic and quite marvelous and so is the pc. That's about all there is to that. It's simply the – it's the recorded protests of time. And this stuff all wheels off and it's all timed beautifully and so forth.

And you're looking not at necessarily complicated arrangement. You're looking with the procedure, you're just looking at the master keyboard. And all you've got to do is punch

the master keyboard, it always delivers the answer. The most things wrong with engram running is auditors don't think it's delivered the answer. How many auditors say, "Go to the beginning of the incident." [pronounced very childishly:] "Are you there?" [laughing] What the hell's the matter with him? Doesn't he think he's in charge of the machine – I'd hate to have that guy driving me, you know? He gives the wheel a big yank, you see, and gives the wheel a big yank, and then he says to the automobile, "Did you turn the corner?" I don't know why he's asking the automobile if it turned the corner! The automobile can't tell him if it turned the corner. The automobile can only turn a corner.

Some people try to treat the reactive bank like an Ouija board. And you'll find some of the darnedest Ouija board questions being addressed. "Will you be clear after I've run another 300 engrams?" [laughter, laughs] See, it's a misapprehension of the device you're operating. It's not an Ouija board. You tell it to move – well, you can get your dates quite grossly, you can say, "Move to the incident at approximately 84.9 trillion trillion years ago." And the pc says to himself – says, "Eighty-nine point four? Jesus!" You know? "What a laugh," you know? "Gosh, that's a terrific date, though" and so forth.

And you say, "All right." It doesn't matter what the pc did, see, and you say, "All right. What's the duration of the incident?" And you finally get it on the meter and it says eighteen trillion years, and the pc says, [in a shocked voice:] "Eighteen trillion years!"

And you say, "All right. Move to the beginning of the incident." Clank, the meter goes. And you say, "Okay, now move through the incident to a point eighteen trillion years later," and sit back and quietly make your notes and so forth. [laughter]

Pc says, "Jesus Christ! Eighteen trillion years! God almighty! *Yaaww!*"

You don't do anything else and you're not excited about it, and so forth. Pc finally says, "Oh, well, hell, I might as well look at it!" and shuts his eyes. [laughter] "There it is, going by, man! There it is, going by!" It's only when you say, "Go to the beginning of the incident," which is at the end of the incident because the incident is eighteen trillion years long, "Move through the incident now to a point two seconds later," at the "end" of the incident. And the machine goes... [lot of laughter from audience in that paragraph]

I had one the other evening: "Move – move thirty seconds before the incident begins. Move through the incident to a point thirty seconds later." [laughter] You can't do it, you know! You can't do it. It's not possible! Wouldn't have mattered if the incident was a thousandth of a second long, you still couldn't have executed that auditing command. And the somatic strip will not execute that auditing command. It'll lock up at that point. Now you're in real trouble. You've done something extraordinary.

No, this is a very, very orderly machine you're operating – very orderly – idiotically so. Only the pc gets in your road. The pc very often says, "Eighteen trillion years long! In this goddamn thing? No!" See, you know, and the pc says, "Oh, no, that's – that's terrible."

"Well, close your eyes and watch it go by." You don't even have to say that. He will, inevitably. It's almost beyond his power to stop a properly managed somatic strip. He couldn't stop it. He sometimes keeps on chattering at you. The incident is running right on off.

No, you're actually handling a very easily handleable thing, providing you don't get incomprehensible about it, you know? Like, "Move" – double command – "Move twenty years later to the end of the incident." Pc, you'd be surprised, very often does this – tries to do it. Imagine your embarrassment a short time later when you redate this thing, reduration it, and find out that it's eighty-two years long. So you see, he just can't manage that – double orders – that sort of thing.

Well, this is all taken care of in your rote handling of engrams. The biggest problem that an auditor has – the biggest problem that an auditor has is one, dating, including duration, and the other one is ARC breaks.

Now, most auditors are afraid of ARC breaks, to some degree. And if he tries to learn dating on a pc or handle ARC breaks of a pc who is in the middle of the living lightning, you know, these two worlds – and because the pc has made a mistake and pushed the wrong button – these two worlds are now at war and he's just now being shot, having been court-martialed while the whole place is being bombed at the same time, this is not – he's in the middle of all this, you see – this is not the time, definitely, to learn how to assess an ARC break if he ARC breaks. "Let me see, how do you assess an ARC break? You say you're in the middle of this and guns are going – "Yes, I know. Let's see, how – where's that bulletin? Let's see, it says here, it says here – I don't know, I don't seem to have the assessment sheet and so forth. Where's the assessment sheet?" I'm afraid that's not the time to learn that.

No, you'll get loses. You'll get loses. Your loses will be so catastrophic that you, next thing you know, won't run engrams anymore. That's what I've got to watch, you see? Dating is difficult – finding the times of things and dating – and if you can't pick up the ARC break quickly, why, you're just licked. If you can't do an ARC break assessment for engram running you're just licked right there.

And the violence of the ARC break while the pc is running engrams is catastrophic as far as the auditor's concerned – if the auditor is at all allergic to ARC breaks – because he is now being taught that he has had a lose. He meant to have a session with no ARC breaks and here he's got an ARC break or he intended to get the pc through two more engrams and the pc isn't going through two more engrams – here's the pc with a horrendous ARC break. See the difficulties? The auditor loses.

And there's where Routine – now understand, it's designated Routine 2H – comes in and it's ARC breaks by assessment. And you're going to consider this a training process until you've run it or had it run successfully on you and then you all of a sudden won't consider it a training process anymore. You will realize that it is superior to ARC Break Straightwire. Quite interesting. And you will have that bulletin tomorrow.

Now, I'm not going to try to give you an outline of that process because the bulletin is coming right out. But what it does is just ask the pc for an ARC break – you take the ARC break and you find the bypassed charge. And then you ask the pc for an ARC break and you find the ARC break and you assess for the bypassed charge – locate it and indicate it and give it to the pc. And you'll find all of a sudden this pc starts to fly. Very complex auditing but it's very simple in its result line. And you very rapidly discover then that finding ARC breaks is very, very easy and puts you as a master of ARC breaks and so you no longer need to be

scared of them. And it gives you dating, lots of dating practice on stuff that the pc isn't necessarily very nervy about.

You know, the postman scolded them. He said, "You always are asking why I don't bring you mail." See, that's the totality of the incident. Well, the pc can hang around that for a long time without having anything happen to him. And yet you can find its date and you can find the bypassed charge by assessment. And there is a special assessment for that type of ARC break which I dreamed up and run. I've tested and gotten this thing organized and gotten the bulletin written before I'm telling you about it.

Because there's the best – the best news you've had in some time. There's practiced skill and you'll all of a sudden get very, very cocky on the subject of ARC breaks.

Now, the action of handling an ARC break during engram running is just another assessment. It's simply got other questions connected with it. And if you've already got this dusted off then the biggest liability to engram running is shut right off, right there, right now. In other words, ten minutes later you haven't got any situation at all. The pc's happy and carrying forward and you know exactly what went wrong. There isn't any dragging the heels on this. The pc isn't left in the middle of an ARC break and your sessions don't end in a debacle. That is the most damaging thing. Not being able to handle an ARC break, not being able to date and not being able to handle the time track, nobody can handle engrams; nobody can run engrams.

Now, who can engrams be run on? Well, we have our scale of cases that I've been telling you about. And then, of course, a case that has level 6 type bank – pretty difficult to run any engrams. But you can run ARC breaks on that pc. And you can boost them up and stabilize the bank one way or the other. You can do various things with this pc, and so forth, but factually engram running goes a long way if you don't necessarily call it engram running but call it R3R. Don't keep specializing in engrams because a couple of you, unbeknownst to you – to my shame I'm sure you don't know what it is – are running secondary chains on your pcs. You're not running engrams on your pcs; you're running secondaries. You assessed for secondaries and you're running secondaries. Perfectly all right, perfectly feasible. Nothing wrong. Except please don't think you're running engrams when you're running secondaries, see.

Because that's the misemotional moment that depends on the engram for its charge. So here's the engram chain and you're running the chain right up here. Perfectly fine. Wonderful. Your pc's getting off a bunch of misemotion and that sort of thing, marvelous. Set the pc up most remarkably well. Great. Nothing wrong with that. Except if you think you're running engrams you're, of course, making a basic technical error which is going to make you very puzzled sooner or later about all this.

Some others are running chains that haven't been assessed properly. At least one other. And of course the thing they're being running, not being assessed, is now branching, trying to get over to the proper chain. You know, you've taken an arbitrary chain – you're running an arbitrary chain on the pc. And this thing is trying to go around the corner and get over to the right chain. So you're not really running a chain of engrams at all. You started out on one chain and the meter is pushing it over to the chain you should be running.

Well, that's perfectly all right, but don't think you're running one chain. You're running... two chains happening, don't you see?

So to prevent this sort of thing, and to make – to put engram running into the hands of far more pcs, you shouldn't, in the first place, believe you can run engrams until you can run engrams. Just because it's awful simple, and so forth. Got a training process for it now – you'd better master some of these points and get cocky about the thing before you tackle this, because you're going the whole hill and there's no process beyond this. And you don't want to tie somebody's time track up.

So running of engrams, however, has a great deal more flexibility because you can also run secondaries; you can also run locks and they all run on the same procedure. So this gives us very shallow – shallow looks at cases. You can take a case, then, that can't stand up to an engram and you can still use R3R. And you can get marvelously forward with the whole thing providing you do your assessment properly.

Now, a proper assessment, of course, is a list, a completed list under the rules of listing of 2-12 and 2-12A. Those rules of listing are observed in that first list. Don't get an incomplete list. Not a forever list, but just list it until you've got a clean needle.

And you can dip further by assessing the eighteen buttons of the old Prepcheck. You assess the eighteen buttons and you'll be able to get people who are not-ising – who are far beyond being able to protest, they can't protest – and you'll get such things as suppress. And then you'll get a list of what they've suppressed and your list is in this lifetime. And you make a complete list out of what they've suppressed in this lifetime. And you will get a chain of something – whether locks, secondaries or engrams, we know not which – but you will get a chain that you can go down and it will release charge and will give you tone arm action. And then it reaches a lot further south than you might suspect.

Of course, when you run into the Helatrobis Implants with a dull crash, you've got to shift off R3H and go on to R3N. And if you run into some other type of GPM goal that nobody ever heard of, you've got to shift over to R3N2, see? So you've got the types of processes that handle those. And you're all of a sudden dimly aware of the fact this pc is saying, "Let's see, there's something here that says, 'Nix-nix vomica.' Yes, 'vomica, nix vomica.' I think there's some poles; they go crack. A funny engram. My head's getting very hot."

You say, "Oh, well, yes, that's very fine. That's – that's good." That was a near one, because you're going to have to run that engram with your specialized procedures which run GPMs. Get your difference? Thing for you about it is to be smart about the dates of those. The dates go from 38 to 52 trillion years ago. The earliest one I know of like that is at 315 trillion. There were some little early gags, some of the early eager beavers were in there trying to do – not the same pattern, but a positive-negative type of GPM. You don't find many of them, but you'll find that as basic on the chain on some pcs; some earlier positive-negative thing. You know, create-not create.

That seemed to get into fashion some time about then – about 315 trillion years ago. Anyway, to make up what I'm telling you here, your modern process depends to a very marked degree on the auditor and the pc both getting a win and if the auditor and the pc both can't get a win with the process, then the process is not with us long. So I've been working

very hard to make these two points mesh with one another and I think I've got it in there pretty close and I think that you will have some good runs on this sort of thing.

And I want to make this point very strongly. Processing has not necessarily done a tremendous change or shift on its know-how. But it's being rearranged because of its target area. I want to make sure you understand that. The approach of processing – the approach to processing – has been upgraded because its target has been upgraded. We're shooting the moon. We're shooting the moon, to use a colloquial expression. We are not interested in clearing anybody; we're only interested in OTs, and that's what you had been watching here for some months. My problem was simply this: The United States government – ha! – and the government of Australia – huh – decided to cut up rough. And you have some crazy lunk-heads in the Kremlin and some other birds on the other side of the world who are trying to form a dichotomy expressed with atomic fission. The time is narrowing down rapidly. The ability of governments to govern is degenerating at a great rate of speed. You're going to see nothing but chaos here in a very short period of time. I'm an old hand at watching these things go to pieces and I start to watch the square of the deterioration, *thah!*

So when *das* federal fascist state jumped us for E-Meters, I jumped them with OT. And I said the only thing we could do was hold the ground legally, which we are doing very successfully – even winning a bit. Hold that line and then upgrade the processing target. And I've been working since January to do that and this has been a very rough period. It's particularly rough on you students because it's given you a shifting quicksand of checksheets, stuff – the ink is dry on it so it must be out of fashion, you see? [laughter] But I've been moving you up very, very rapidly, and I've been holding on to you more or less for the good reason I did not want your training to be antiquated as rapidly, you see – you just no more than get trained, you go home and your training is out-of-date.

So I've been holding on to you on a stable plateau basis, and this has been a bit of touch and go. What I needed was something that could run engrams very successfully and include all of these GPMs; and a training procedure that could do that – could lead a person up to being able to run engrams, that was still a therapeutic process – and then processes which got to cases which weren't making advance on the upper-level things, but which would move those cases up to those. And what I'm announcing here is I've achieved this definite goal of mine with regard to this, and it's – the only target, the only target that I accept as an auditing target now is OT, and it's right within your grasp. It's coming straight up the line, and our campaigns for planet Earth I'm afraid has had to be speeded up considerably. And although some of you may shudder under that consideration, others will probably say, "Well, thank God, Ron finally woke up," you know? That sort of thing. We'd probably get a mixture of answers about the whole thing, but the shells and shellfire that's been coming our way is not just coming our way, it's coming in the way of this civilization. Its lights are going out very rapidly.

And sitting back and reading the newspapers, which tell you very little, you might not recognize this quite as clearly. So as far as I'm concerned we've beat the run. A lot of this now is up to you. So don't fool around with it and don't be lackadaisical about it. Let's press on, let's get the job done.

Thank you.

TV DEMO: LISTING ASSESSMENT FOR ENGRAM RUNNING PART I

An auditing demonstration given on 26 June 1963

Here we are in the upstairs studio here. This is the 26th of June, 1963 and I'm going to give you an auditing demonstration of an assessment for engram chain and will give you several of these demonstrations as we go along here in the coming weeks.

But what I want you to pay attention to, basically, is simply the simplicity of the auditing, the uncomplex nature of auditing. And you've been given so many rules in auditing about all the things you must do and so forth – of course, one must do all of these things but they're in their right place and one does these things only in their right place.

Now, the difficulties which you run into in doing this are absolutely minimal. And if you'll notice the exact auditing skills of 2-12 are used here in this assessment for engram running. The rules of listing apply and so on.

The keynote of any fairly high level case of what makes an incident an incident is protest. And to that degree we're not on terribly solid ground because I don't know that these other buttons will uniformly produce the type of engram that protest will. You see, by protesting the individual shoves his face toward something and resists it, which of course makes a very heavy mass of energy and it makes a heavy enough mass of an engram to cause that engram to be very plain and to persist. So therefore, you get a much better engram under protest than otherwise. Nevertheless, a lot of people are not up to protest, so we're going to do an 18-button assessment and use the standard 18 buttons. And then we're going to do a list – a short list – to see if on that list we find anything – we will of course – to assess for the type of engram the pc should be running.

LRH: Okay. All right. Your chair's all right there. Pick up the cans. And your chair's all right?

PC: Yes.

LRH: Is it all right if we audit in this room?

PC: Yes.

LRH: All right. Very good. All right. Squeeze the cans. All right. Your havingness is a bit down here, isn't it? Huh? Very good. All right. Thank you. Now, what we're going to do in this session is I'm going to do an assessment of these buttons, omitting Create...

PC: Uh-huh.

LRH: ...because that'll land somebody in the middle of a GPM.

PC: Right.

LRH: If we don't get anything that is banging enormously, why, we will take protest just as a matter of course. And then I'll go on and I will do a short list and assess that list and we'll see what is your proper engram chain.

PC: Right.

LRH: I've been wanting to do this with you anyway.

PC: Thank you.

LRH: All right. Is it all right with you if I begin this session now?

PC: Yes.

LRH: Very good. Start of session. Has the session started for you?

PC: Yes.

LRH: Very good. What goals would you like to set for this session?

PC: To work well.

LRH: Right.

PC: And feel the benefit of the session at the end of it. To find out what it is on this chain, what the assessment is. That's it.

LRH: That it? All right. Thank you. All right. We're going to go into this immediately here and find out what we've got. And we're just going to assess these 18 buttons, less created. Okay?

PC: Right.

LRH: I'm just going to read these off to you rapidly and see what we have here. All right. Okay?

PC: Yes.

LRH: All right. In this lifetime, have you mainly suppressed things?

In this lifetime, have you mainly invalidated things?

In this lifetime, have you been careful of things?

In this lifetime, have you mainly suggested things?

In this lifetime, have you mainly withheld things?

In this lifetime, have you mainly protested things?

In this lifetime, have you mainly protested things? All right.

In this lifetime, have you mainly hidden things? Have you mainly hidden things?

In this lifetime, have you mainly revealed things?

In this lifetime, have you made mistakes? All right.

In this lifetime, have you mainly asserted things? In this lifetime, have you mainly asserted things? All right.

In this lifetime, have you mainly changed things?

In this lifetime, have you mainly damaged things? In this lifetime, have you mainly damaged things? All right.

In this lifetime, have you mainly withdrawn from things? All right.

In this lifetime, have you mainly destroyed things?

In this lifetime, have you mainly agreed with things?

In this lifetime, have you mainly ignored things?

In this lifetime, have you mainly decided things? Have you mainly decided things? All right.

Now we have a few left in here. I'll go over this rapidly.

Now, anything you'd care to say or have you thought of anything with regard to this you'd like to tell me?

PC: I just thought when you were going... started, I was thinking blimey, I've done all these things.

LRH: Oh, I see.

PC: But...

LRH: Yes.

PC: ... nothing else.

LRH: All right. Now let's go over this list again. In this lifetime, have you mainly suppressed things?

In this lifetime, have you mainly invalidated things?

In this lifetime, have you mainly been careful of things?

In this lifetime, have you mainly suggested things? All right.

In this lifetime, have you mainly hidden things?

In this lifetime, have you mainly damaged things?

In this lifetime, have you mainly decided things?

All right. We have two left in here. In this lifetime, have you mainly invalidated things?

In this lifetime, have you mainly decided things?

All right. I have to ask those two again. Any thoughts with regard to them?

PC: No, I know you've always said um – you once said to me, "Decide" is your button, rather heavily. I do – I'm inclined to decide. This seems more real than the other one, anyway, to me.

LRH: All right. Very good. Any protest on the other one? Little bit.

PC: Well, what I thought of, I just wondered whether there's any protest on it; and, of course, there would be. But then in that case I would have thought the protest button would have stayed in as well, that was the thought I had.

LRH: Oh, all right. Very good. Thank you. All right. In this lifetime, have you mainly invalidated things? Have you mainly invalidated things? Still there a tiny bit.

In this lifetime, have you mainly decided things? Well, Decided is really – really staying with us a bit here.

PC: Uh-huh.

LRH: Now let me sort these out, again. In this lifetime, have you mainly invalidated things? Latent.

In this lifetime, have you mainly decided things? All right. In this lifetime, have you mainly decided things? Yes sir, that's your button. Very good. All right?

PC: Yes, well, your adjudication must have been very good.

LRH: [laughs] Well, is it just because of my adjudication?

PC: No, no, no.

LRH: Doesn't read. All right.

PC: It's very good.

LRH: I just didn't want anybody to think that I had simply evaluated you into that position.

All right. Decided. Now we're going to do a little list here.

PC: Uh-huh.

LRH: You're accustomed to these. [LRH is writing down some notes for around 35 seconds.]

All right. We've got a question here. Let's see if it reads. In this lifetime, what have you decided? Doesn't read very good. In this lifetime, what have you decided? That's got a little tick. Anything wrong with that question?

PC: Just the things I have decided – um – I think this goes back to when – on the boat, when you said something about decisions, that there was no... I was asking you... self-determined changes that you – and, you know, we sort of came up with you wouldn't – you couldn't really decide these things, you know. There's very little we decided. I think I'm on the right button here; I may have got it mixed up.

LRH: Oh, well, all right.

PC: Something like that.

LRH: All right. Very good. In this lifetime, what have you decided? All right. Let's see if we can't get a slightly better question here.

PC: Can I just say one thing here. It's possible – I'm just wondering whether I use the word "decided" as "emphasized." "It's a decided change," you know? People use this word "decided" in that way, or I – in my circle, it's been used quite a lot.

LRH: Oh, I see.

PC: Instead of to make a decision. It's used, you know...

LRH: Hm.

PC: ... it would be an emphatic or quite distinct change.

LRH: All right. All right. Okay. Well, we're going to use this question anyway.

PC: Uh-huh.

LRH: In this lifetime, what have you decided?

PC: All right.

LRH: All right. So just answer the question. In this lifetime, what have you decided?

PC: I decided to get married.

I decided to change a job.

I decided to join the scouts.

I decided to leave school.

I decided to go into business.

Um – I decided to – um – leave home – I meant my childhood home as it were, parents home.

LRH: Uh-huh.

PC: Just a little cognition here, that a lot of my decisions are made as a result of a – of an ARC break of some sort. Um – you know, there's been an upset and then I'll decide to do something. Normally I just go along placidly. But then when I'm stirred up then I'll make these decisions.

LRH: Uh-huh.

PC: Um – decided to go to camp once, that came up, with the scouts. Um – decided to gamble on occasion. Decided to invest money. Decided to buy a car. Here's a big decision: decided to – uh – get a commission in the army. Decided to join the army.

LRH: All right.

PC: Well, there's the old goal come up: decided to leave my wife.

LRH: Uh-huh.

PC: Um – decided to have – um – children.

Decided to go into business on my own account.

Decided to come into Scientology.

Um – decided on people's characters.

I've decided people's motives.

I realize I use intuition a lot for decisions, what I call intuition.

LRH: Uh-huh.

PC: Um – conclusions and so on. Yes, that's another meaning of the word "decision" is a – is a conclusion, rather than something to do – an action.

LRH: All right.

PC: Um – oh – decided – this was quite a big decision – decided never to have a dog again. That was following the loss of a dog.

I decided I was capable, but that wasn't a decision – I don't get the decision to be capable, if you see what I mean.

LRH: Uh-huh. Uh-huh.

PC: Um – decided to leave the scouts.

I've decided to eat.

LRH: Right.

PC: Decided not to drink. I might have tried not to drink much or not do it ever – but there were decisions on that.

Um – I decided to be honest.

I decided to be truthful.

I decided to be generous, I remember.

LRH: Uh-huh.

PC: And then – then on occasion I've decided to be mean.

Decided to grow sweet peas.

Decided I'd have an electric organ.
[laughs]

LRH: Very good.

PC: Decided to have – um – um – good clothes.

Decided to have a good appearance.

Decided to go to America – to visit.

LRH: Uh-huh.

PC: Decided to play tennis.

Decided to try to – to try my hand at golf.

Decided not to play cricket. That's not in the colloquial phrase.

Uh – um – decided not to play team games – that's interesting.

Decided to play cards.

Decided never to keep chickens.

LRH: Never to keep chickens.

PC: Yes.

LRH: All right. Thank you.

PC: My mother used to keep them in the First World War and I used to have to feed these blasted things, and in the cold of the morning go down in the garden with flocks and flocks of the crazy hens. Ah, I decided...

Decided never to be poor. Um...

Oh, many a time as a boy I decided to give up masturbation.

LRH: All right. Got it.

PC: I used to think I was the only boy who did it, you see. Nobody ever else – nobody ever told me.

Um... well, I decided to pull strings, particularly when I was in the army I used to do this.

LRH: Uh-huh.

PC: And with some success.

LRH: Uh-huh.

PC: Um – then there's a decision somewhere that I would not like to – not to go to a tropical country.

And a decision not to go to a very cold country. It flashes across here – I must have been very careful where I landed on this planet because the climate of England suits me very well. I must have, you know.

LRH: Uh-huh.

PC: Other people seem to be able to move around quite happily. But I like the English climate. Uh...

At one stage I decided to take up politics. That's a decision I didn't carry out.

LRH: Uh-huh.

PC: I realize that many of my decisions I've – most of my decisions I've achieved. Whatever I've decided, I've carried out.

LRH: Uh-huh.

PC: And I was just looking through to see, well, there must be some, you know, that I haven't. Probably suppressed them or something. But...

LRH: Uh-huh.

PC: ...there don't seem to be many.

LRH: All right. In this lifetime, what have you decided?

PC: Well, I decided to go to – I think you used to call it the clinic at – for auditing.

LRH: Uh-huh.

PC: Then I decided to go with Pearson privately afterwards.

I've decided to audit, on many occasions.

LRH: Uh-huh.

PC: Decided to be a preclear on many occasions.

Um – I've decided to drive a car carefully.

I've decided to sell a house.

I've decided to buy a new house.

I've decided to treat myself – um – to – um – well, luxury on occasions.

LRH: All right.

PC: Uh – this is possibly the one – decided not to bother on occasion. Decided, decided it wasn't worthwhile. Decided it was no use.

An early decision not to get angry.

Somebody dislocated me arm on the one time I did get angry; that taught me.

LRH: Okay.

PC: Um – well, there was a decision early in life to make a lot of money. I – I remember making it. Um – there was a decision to be apathetic – I think I may have given you that already.

LRH: Hm?

PC: I think I gave you that one.

LRH: Uh-huh.

PC: Um – decided to tolerate things.

Uh – decided to look at things.

Oh – um – decided to know where to find out.

LRH: Okay.

PC: Um – decided never to be hasty – a point of judgment there. Decided to "look before I leap" is the saying to cover that. I've decided not to bother with detail. Decided to have many things. Must be a decision knocking around not to sell – um – things I've used. Um – well, there's – a very big decision was – to deci... I decided to disobey an army order. Which I did, too – got away with it. Um – I suppose, really, that was in contradiction to the decision to obey in the army, there was – there would be a decision to obey that I've made. To be disciplined, in other words – decided to be disciplined. Uh – I decided to discipline. Uh – decided to control and decided to be controlled. Um – decided to laugh. Decided to cry. Uh – decided to ride a bike. Uh – and I think there was a decision not to ride a motorbike. I never got on with a motorbike. Uh – decided not to work – not to be a manual worker. Decided at one time to be a chemist, but it never came to anything. Oh, yes, and decided to be a policeman. Decided to get up early. Oh, yes, there's a decision to be punctual. Just thinking I was writing a goals list, but it's not a – it's not the – it's not quite the same as a goals list because this is something you can think about to do immediately rather than a goal is something that's for the future.

LRH: Mm.

PC: There are goals – there is an element of goals mixed up with this.

LRH: Mm.

PC: Oh, decided to make batteries at one stage in my life.

Um – decided to print a magazine.

Uh – decided to build a brick wall once.

Well, I've decided to go for a walk.

Decided to go to bed.

Decided to sleep.

Decided to write.

Decided to write a book.

Decided to organize things.

Decided to manage things.

Decided to be clean.

Oh, I decided to take a drink – first alcoholic drink – quite a decision on that.

LRH: Okay.

PC: Oh, I've decided to do cross-word puzzles.

Decided to read the paper.

Decided to live.

Decided not to die.

Let me just blow my nose.

LRH: You betcha. [Pc blows his nose.]

PC: Well...

LRH: Hm? Go ahead.

PC: I was – must have decided to – uh – sell, uh – um – hm, I forget the name – the sphinxes – they weren't actually sph... big idols.

LRH: Yeah. All right.

PC: Um – decided to be obstinate.

LRH: Okay. In this lifetime, what have you decided?

PC: Oh, sorry. I'd forgotten the question.

LRH: That's quite all right.

PC: There's only one – one that I'd missed out on there.

LRH: Yes, I got it.

PC: Well, I decided to sell insurance.

LRH: All right.

PC: Um – I decided to fly, I mean travel by airplane.

Um – oh, decided to be good.

Decided to be loyal.

Decided to be unselfish. That decision was for a selfish point of view because I realized that, even this – at a very early age, that if you're unselfish you're being very selfish, really.

LRH: Oh, yes.

PC: But I made that decision.

Decided to go and have me head examined; I once went to a phrenologist.

Um – oh, yes, decided to play the drums. Oh, you never heard of that. I once had a set of drums I used to play.

LRH: Is that so?

PC: I never got very good.

Um – decided to play the piano.

Decided to try to write a decent hand.

I say, this is very therapeutic. I feel very bright and pleased with myself. I mean, I realized what a busy bee I've been. Um – I can well see this is my button, too. I was just – just looking this over, what

would life be without, you know, decide things! That's life, man, you go around – you go around deciding things, that's what you're supposed to do.

Um – I decided to buy a new tennis racket.

I decided to open a bank account.

I decided to close a bank account.

I decided to have a checkbook.

Uh – decided to have a blazer.

Decided to have a telephone.

Oh, I decided to be extravagant.

Decided to forgive... people.

Decided I hate people, some people.

Um – decided to be a teetotaler or a total abstainer.

Decided to be thorough.

Just remember running a preclear on decide and – uh – with this preclear, decision always – always carried with it a choice. You decided either to go home by bus or you decided to go home by car. You see? This was a decision, there was always a decision of that nature. There was always a choice, as we say. I found this rather strange. Well, didn't you just decide to go home, was the decision that I thought was right. And – uh – I just had a quick look at that – I was wondering was I screwy on this or was it a choice?

Um – I decided to put up a building. Started to make another building – add another building to it.

Decided to have – um – account-card equipment.

Decided to have a car. This was a specific car, it was quite a thing.

Oh, and on one occasion – this was after this phrenologist had worked me over a bit – decided to buy a book.

Decided to have a holiday.

Decided to go on a holiday.

Decided to come home from the holiday.

Decided to have glasses.

Decided to have teeth out.

Decided to have false teeth.

Decided to have drip-dry shirts.

LRH: All right.

PC: Um – decided to be – to pretend to be ill once.

Decided to talk to people.

Now, at one time, I dec... no, that was a realization, it wasn't a decision.

Well, I've decided to talk in public.

LRH: All right.

PC: Now there is a decision that comes on that has to do with the last one: it's a decision not to talk in public. And this comes on just when I started to talk in public.

LRH: Oh.

PC: Now, let's get out of there.

LRH: All right. In this lifetime, what have you decided?

PC: Decided not to go bathing.

I suppose I've decided to get cross with people on occasion.

Decided to be persuasive on occasion.

Decided to have a nice office.

Decided to have a good looking secretary.

LRH: Okay.

PC: Um – well, I decided to sell a building.

I decided to buy and sell some land.

Decided *not* to sell some land immediately – not to immediately sell, some land.

Decided to be active.

Oh, decided to have a nice garden.

LRH: Okay.

PC: Um – there was a decision as a boy to be a very competent pianist. That was too hard work – that was a decision that I didn't achieve.

Hah! I once decided to learn to play the cello.

LRH: Uh-huh.

PC: Forgotten about that one – I used to sit with the old cello between me legs, scraping away! Um...

You – you see, all – the whole of your lifetime there you decide. You decide to go out to the car, you decide to open the door. And it's just – life is just one – one damn decision after another.

LRH: All right.

PC: So it goes on. Um – decided to dig up the garden.

Um – there's a decision not to be beaten – I don't mean beaten physically – not to be beaten in a contest or anything, not to give way to adversity, in other words.

A decision to persist or be – no, not – to be persistent is the...

A decision to try to understand people.

Oh, I decide to take a bath. Um – to not take a bath. To stay at a hotel. To live in – on the Saint Hill Green. To be uh – good mannered on the road.

Some of these decisions sound, um – I want to say, goody-goody. I'm not apologizing for them. They – um – some are very selfish ones. I mean, you don't get far by being angry when you're driving on the road. I mean, you get much farther by being polite.

LRH: Uh-huh.

PC: At least I've found so. Ought to be polite.

This one will amuse you: to be a gentleman.

LRH: Well, okay.

PC: I think I've decided on occasions to be eccentric, but not very much or often.

Um – to run an efficient business.

To be efficient.

LRH: Okay.

PC: Hm. I know Je... Anne's running me on a chain of "to be critical." But I can't – I would have said the decision of this life was not to be critical.

LRH: All right.

PC: I – I probably am critical – I think the decision would be – sort of found meself that way – um – on occasions.

Um – to observe – could be I decided to observe.

To win. And I've decided to lose on occasions.

LRH: Okay.

PC: To be a man of integrity, I think, was one of my childhood decisions.

LRH: Okay.

PC: I once – I once – once, long – long – long while ago, I decided to put on weight and I was even drinking milk by the gallon for a long while. It had no effect. Uh – Decided to have a camera. Decided to take photographs. Golly, what a list.

LRH: All right. All right. Want me to check this off?

PC: If you'd like to.

LRH: All right. In this lifetime, what have you decided? Well, that seems awfully clean.

PC: It ought to be.

LRH: Well, it's just gone clean in the last couple of minutes.

PC: Uh-huh. Good.

LRH: And it looks like the list is nullable. All right. Okay. Now we have completed the list, which is all we have any time for. How do you feel – how do you feel about all of this?

PC: Well, it's fascinating. It's – uh – I never thought I'd have got so many. It's uh...

LRH: All right.

PC: I feel very – I – I don't know why, but I feel quite clean. It seems this is quite a cleansing operation.

LRH: All right.

PC: Uh – there you are.

LRH: All right. Well, we'll nil – null this list or get it nulled.

PC: Uh-huh.

LRH: And everything will be fine. Okay?

PC: Right.

LRH: Anything you want to say here before we end the body of the session?

PC: No.

LRH: All right. Well, that's the end of the body of the session. Okay.

Have you made any part of your goals for this session?

PC: What were they?

LRH: To work well.

PC: Yes. It worked very well.

LRH: All right. And feel the benefit of the session at the end of it.

PC: Certainly.

LRH: Yes. All right. And find out what is on this chain.

PC: Well, something I haven't – we haven't made a lot – we found out a whole – the whole list is on the chain of course, yes. All right.

LRH: All right.

PC: Yes, we completed that.

LRH: All right. Very good. Now, thank you for making your goals for this session.

PC: All right.

LRH: All right.

PC: Very good.

LRH: Any gains you'd care to mention?

PC: Well, as I say, I feel a lot brighter. It's uh – an excellent scan over one's lifetime and several cognitions, as

you know, en route, which I told you about. And I've enjoyed doing it.

LRH: All right. Is that it?

PC: That's it.

LRH: All right. Well, thank you for gains in this session.

PC: Right.

LRH: All right.

PC: Thank you.

LRH: Okay. We had a rather clear fall on havingness a little bit earlier. Let's see what we've got here now. All right. Squeeze the cans. Ah, you're having a time here on havingness. We'll have to run a moment's Havingness now. What is your Havingness Process these days?

PC: Touch.

LRH: All right. Thank you. All right. Put down your cans. Okay. Touch that sign.

Thank you. Touch the tablecloth.

Thank you. Touch that can.

Thank you. Touch that can.

Thank you. Touch the top of the telephone.

Thank you. Touch the table.

All right. Very good. Pick up the cans. Let's see how we're doing with this. All right. Squeeze the cans. Ah, yes, well, that's increasing a bit. Squeeze them again. Yes, that's increasing it a bit. All right. Put your cans down and let us run some more of it. All right. Touch that ashtray.

Thank you. Touch that telephone.

PC: This one?

LRH: That's right. Thank you. Uh – touch the cord to the cans.

Thank you. All right. Touch that gold inky.

Thank you. Touch that ashtray.

Thank you. Touch your necktie.

Thank you. With your right hand, touch your left hand.

Thank you. With your left hand, touch your right hand.

Thank you. All right. Pick up the cans. All right. Squeeze the cans. Oh, that's fine. That opened it up and your havingness is now more than it was at the beginning of the session. Okay?

PC: Good.

LRH: You all right?

PC: Yes. Feel fine.

LRH: All right. Is there anything you'd care to ask or say before I end this session?

All right. Now, you've seen a listing demonstration. I wish to call to your attention that I just kept listing until I got something like a clean needle.

Now, some of you can exaggerate this and get your rudiments out or get an argument going with the pc and keep your needle dirty. But in actual fact, the needle ought to clean up in relatively few pages of listing. And as you saw it, this one did. Now, that might possibly require a few more items listed there, just to make sure – something like that. It all depended on how easy that list is to null. If that list is very easy to null, why, of course, you do – just go on and null it right on down. And it should null down rather easily.

Of course, when you get that list item, when you get the item on the list, well, you ask for engrams which decide so-and-so, or cause of such a decision and you run the chain and you find the pc would be able to run these things.

If you noticed, some of these items were fairly hot. You noticed also I was not looking for rocket reads. I wasn't looking for rock slams. I wasn't looking for any peculiar needle phenomena. You'd find most of that would pass away. These things will not continue to rocket read just because they are goals.

You also noticed the pc gave several goals out of the GPMs. Well, that's all right, because if they did read as the final item on the list, I would simply do Routine 3N and clean it up. And it's as simple as that.

PC: Yes, thank you very much.

LRH: All right. Is it all right with you if I end this session now?

PC: Yes. Thank you.

LRH: Okay. End of session.

PC: Right.

LRH: Right. Has the session ended for you?

PC: Yes.

LRH: All right. Tell me I'm no longer auditing you.

PC: You're no longer auditing me.

LRH: Very good.

PC: Thank you very much.

LRH: Okay.

All right. I want you to notice in particular the general lack of strain on the Model Session, the simplicity of it more than anything else. And notice the addition of the fact – this may be new to you – that the pc was carefully acknowledged when he made his goals – that was, after each goal was acknowledged, and then after he'd given me the gains, which were all acknowledged, why, he was then acknowledged for having made gains in the session.

Well, what if he hadn't made his goals at all?

Well, I would have said, of course, I'm sorry you did not make your goals in this session and if he hadn't given me any gains – I'm sorry you have no – had no gains in this session. That's still an acknowledgment and you'd found... would have brightened the pc up in either case.

Well, what if he made some of his goals and didn't make some others of his goals?

Well, I'd just say, thank you for making some of your goals for this session. I'm sorry you didn't make the others. Similarly with gains if you have a mixed bag.

All right. Well there – there you have a demonstration of finding an engram chain on a pc using the 18-button Prepcheck list with "Created" omitted, naturally, because it goes straight back to a goal and – possibly, you'd even get away with it, you know – what would you find? You'd just find the goal and you'd have to run 3N. And there we have a Model Session. And this, of course, is the first step of Routine 3R.

All right. Thank you very much.

Good night.

TV DEMO: LISTING ASSESSMENT FOR ENGRAM RUNNING PART II

An auditing demonstration given on 27 June 1963

Okay. Here we are on 27th of June, 1963. Almost didn't remember it without you to tell me. And surprise here today – I'm going to finish up this demonstration on the preliminary step of R3R. And as you know, we already had a list and we listed this list more or less to a clean needle. May have to add to it, but maybe not. And we will carry on from that point.

Now, the listing step, as you can see, is not dissimilar to any of the other listings that we have been doing. My only fear is that somebody will get a big protest or the rudiments madly out on the pc through very complicated sessioning and do one of these eighty-nine-page lists, down to God help us. But in some cases it may be necessary to do rather a long list. All right. So there it is.

LRH: Okay. Move ahead a little bit there. Good. Thank you. All right. Is it all right if we audit in this room?

PC: Yes, yes.

LRH: Very good. Pick up the cans. All right. Tone arm seems to be up here higher than we had yesterday.

PC: I think I was a bit harassed yesterday getting the TV room ready by the time...

LRH: Hm?

PC: I was quite a bit harassed yesterday getting the TV room ready and chasing around on it. I had to do that so...

LRH: All right.

PC: ... without any comfort.

LRH: Okay. All right. Squeeze the cans. Thank you. Your havingness is up. All right. Now, what we're going to do here is complete this assessment on R3R, which we did yesterday. Okay?

PC: All right.

LRH: All right. So is it all right with you if I begin this session now?

PC: Yes.

LRH: Okay. Start of session! All right. Session started for you?

PC: Yes.

LRH: Okay. What goals would you like to set for this session?

PC: Well, to complete the list quickly, if necessary. To work well. Not get in the way of the assessment.

LRH: Yes?

PC: And feel the benefit of the session at the end of it.

LRH: Okay. Very good. Got those. All right. Now I'm going to do my missed withhold step here because we're going to be assessing.

PC: Mm-hm.

LRH: All right. Have I missed a withhold on you? All right. May have.

PC: Oh, yes. Um – yeah, it was in the – oh, yes, it was to do with an auditing folder you looked at today. And you said that the instructions hadn't been carried out carefully.

LRH: Oh, yes.

PC: But I was responsible for the instructions not being carried out carefully because I misled the auditor slightly by suggesting this was what he should do.

LRH: I see.

PC: And I didn't say anything to you at the time.

LRH: Oh, all right. Very good.

PC: I just let it go.

LRH: Okay. All right. Have I missed a withhold on you? Well, there seems to be some disturbance on this.

PC: This is to do with uh – what I thought of then was um – the man you were talking about downstairs at work. Um – I just wondered whether – wondered what you thought about my using him.

LRH: Hm.

PC: As you know, didn't know whether you were really pleased about that or not.

LRH: All right. Okay. All right. Have I missed a withhold on you? Well, it bangs on missed withhold. What about missed withhold, just in general, just the idea of missed withhold? Protest?

PC: Possibly that um – uhm – I think this is a situation that I'm in – peculiar situ... auditing situation that I'm in, inasmuch as being an instructor out on the course that there are certain withholds one has from the students and uh – that one, you know – don't want to bring them up. And I think that is possibly – might be a bit concerned and why I'm protesting and worrying about that.

LRH: All right. Very good. Very good. All right. Missed withholds. Missed withholds. Yes, there's something about missed withholds. I'm talking now not about what missed withholds you've got...

PC: Uh-huh.

LRH: ...but some upset, perhaps, connected with just missed withholds. Any upset connected with them? Not that you have, particularly, but just...

PC: Well, I know it might be that on sessions that I've had before that I've known missed withholds have been around and I didn't want to spill them on the – on the air.

LRH: Uh-huh.

PC: Not so much that I wouldn't tell you about them, but that uh – possibly committing overts in the session in doing it, you see.

LRH: I see. I see. All right. I got that now. Now let me check this question here again. It'll probably be all right. Have I missed a withhold on you? Well, I do have a tick here. You get what the question is, it's have I missed a withhold on you?

PC: Yes, I do. I'm looking, too. Um...

LRH: There. There.

PC: Well, that I was thinking of the um – track map that I – you know, the track map I showed you today...

LRH: Uh-huh.

PC: The only thing I thought of was I suggested doing this on a continuous roll of paper and you suggested doing it on a cylinder. Do you...

LRH: Um-hm.

PC: And I didn't know whether you had thought that I'd thought of the cylinder or whether you hadn't really understood that I'd suggested it on a continuous roll of paper.

LRH: Uh-huh.

PC: The cylinder was the better idea. And uh – that's all I thought of there.

LRH: All right. Very good. Have I missed a withhold on you? Oh this is getting into heavy wire here. The thing is ticking there.

PC: Hm.

LRH: There. There.

PC: Well, I've only seen you a little since our last session. I mean it was clean – presume it was clean last night.

LRH: Yeah.

PC: So, um – I only saw you for...

LRH: There. There.

PC: Well, I was thinking of when I came in just now and uh – you and Nick had had a Coke and I hadn't and uh – I don't think that there's – I wasn't upset about it, I just thought – and...

LRH: All right.

PC: I don't know what the missed withhold – what you missed there, actually. I was wondering – I know, I was wondering whether you were going to offer me one and uh – I thought, well I don't really want one just now before I go up for session. And uh – I just wondered whether you'd noticed it, I suppose. That's the only thing I could think of there.

LRH: All right.

PC: If that would make the meter bang, I don't know.

LRH: All right. Okay. All right. Very good. We'll get you one after the session. [pc and auditor laugh]

PC: Thank you.

LRH: Okay. Now let me ask you this question again and make sure it's clean. Have I missed a withhold on you? Well, it dirties up the needle. Is there some fear or anxiety here? There's an anxiety.

PC: Hm.

LRH: All right. On this question, is there anything you've been anxious about?

PC: Well, I'm anxious that it doesn't hold up the session. And, uh – so on.

LRH: Uh-hm.

PC: Actually what I thought of was that, uh – well, I came up to get the session ready...

LRH: Uh-huh.

PC: ...and uh – I checked over it and I thought you got everything you want – wanted. And then – blow me down – you want some paper, you see, at the end, and I wondered whether you thought I'd been lax in not seeing you'd got some paper to write on. I did go and get you some auditor's reports that I noticed you hadn't got.

LRH: All right. All right. Very good. All right. Have I missed a withhold on you? Bang.

PC: Well, it's these cans again then. I brought these cans up, they're different from the ones I had last night.

LRH: Yes.

PC: And when you said the uh – um – when you said the uh – meter was – reading was different, I thought perhaps the cans had made it different. You know, that they'd been...

LRH: Oh, I see.

PC: ... different cans.

LRH: I get you. I get you. All right. Okay. Have I missed a withhold on you? Still bangs.

PC: Well, I feel...

LRH: Is this question being protested? Yes.

PC: I feel particularly clean. I don't – I'm sure you're...

LRH: When did you start protesting the question?

PC: I think I started at the beginning of the session. When you said you were go-

ing to start pulling the missed withhold. My thought then was, well, perhaps it's the list that is make – roughing up the needle and not – not uh – the missed withhold.

LRH: Oh, all right. Very good. All right. Does the missed withhold have to do with the list? Seems to be. All right. Have I missed a withhold on you? I've still got a bang. There. There.

PC: Well, that is that I – in the session yesterday I was saying that I didn't get many withhold – many decisions that I didn't carry out. Since... just our – in between sessions I've thought about this and there have – and I have realized there's quite a number of decisions that I haven't carried out.

LRH: Oh?

PC: And just before the session began – I think I was sitting here – and these came to mind. You see? And it's the sort of thing I was going to tell you was that – that I thought would probably come up. Well, I've often downstairs – something's happened, you see, on the course, "I'm going to see Ron about it, I'll do this that and the other and I'll decide to do all this," you see, mock up everything I'm going to do and then, of course, the next time, a few hours has elapsed, the thing is all sorted out and there's nothing to it anyway and I don't. So I sort of decide – there's another decision not to do that.

LRH: I see.

PC: But it was a bit of a withhold inasmuch as you would not know I sort of get into this state sometimes and try not to take you by storm.

LRH: All right. Very good. Okay. Let me check this question again. Have I missed a

withhold on you? All right, that's clean.
Okay?

PC: Good.

LRH: All right. Very good. Now, we have this list here. And I'm going to go into this now.

PC: Uh-huh.

LRH: And what we had here was a question "In this lifetime, what have you decided?" All right. And I thought this list was probably complete. And I see now that the question bangs.

PC: Uh-huh.

LRH: So why don't you give me just a few more items here. In this lifetime what have you decided?

PC: Well, here's one that I – that was complained to me. That I hadn't decided – that I deci... I decided to live with Jenny in the Saints. This was complained about. It's probably the missed withhold as well. Probably a missed withhold.

LRH: All right.

PC: Um, well, I've decided not to row with people.

LRH: Yes.

PC: To um – decided um – to take things in their stride.

LRH: All right.

PC: Um – to accept things as they are.

Decided to um – handle problems.

Decided not to solve every problem that – not to solve every problem that came along.

Uh – decided not to overfinance my children.

LRH: Not to...

PC: Overfinance my children.

LRH: Good.

PC: Um...

LRH: Good.

PC: Oh, yes. Decided to – yeah – see, decided to use a – to use smiles. That's right.

LRH: Good.

PC: Uh – this is one I made in the first job: was decided to have a clean collar and a clean pair of shoes, always. This was um – a bit of advice that a manager gave me. It was quite good, actually, because you do that and the rest of you seems to get tidied up.

Decided to audit.

To run.

To play table tennis.

[laughs] To take my organ to a party. [LRH laughs] Perhaps somebody will ask me to play it.

LRH: Oh, dear.

PC: Oh, dear.

LRH: All right.

PC: Um – decided – I don't know if this counts really – but decided that I was a bad handwriter.

No, these seem to be real, they don't seem to be dreams, but, anyway, decided that I was shy.

LRH: All right.

PC: Decided I couldn't uh – talk in public.

And decided I could talk in public.

Decided I was more able than most (conceited pup).

Um – decided that I was right um – more often than I was wrong in business.

And then earlier on – this makes it sound silly with what I've just given you – decided not to be conceited.

LRH: Okay.

PC: Want some more?

LRH: Well, yeah. In this lifetime what have you decided?

PC: Yes. Uh – decided uh – that when I had nothing to say, to say it.

Decided to go camping.

Decided to be an analytical chemist once.

Decided um – that um – on the whole people are honest.

Decided I didn't like bathing – swimming, in that sense.

Decided to play golf.

At an early age, I decided to do something about making the world a better place to live in.

Decided I was a good teacher.

And also decided to teach.

Decided to um – go on a B.Sc. Course. And Scientology courses, anyway, would cover that.

I once decided to build a radio set.

LRH: Okay. How are you doing.

PC: All right.

LRH: Let me get the brief mid ruds in there on this question.

PC: All right.

LRH: All right. On this question, has anything been suppressed? Yes?

PC: Well, what I suppressed was, I said – I gave you, decided to audit and uh – there was a decision before that not to audit a particular individual. And then decided to audit. I suppressed that.

LRH: Mm-hm.

PC: Um – I don't get anything else in the way of suppressing anything in the session.

LRH: All right. I'll check the question. On this question, has anything been suppressed? It's equivocal. On this question, has anything been suppressed? No, apparently not. On this question, is there anything you've been careful of? Yes?

PC: I've been very careful to give everything that came up. And sometimes I suppose I've given unnecessary ones, but anything that's come up I've given you.

LRH: All right. Very good. On this question, is there anything you've been careful of? All right. That's clean.

On this question, is there anything you've failed to reveal? Yes?

PC: I've failed to reveal people's names sometimes.

LRH: All right. On this question, is there anything you've failed to reveal? All right. Latent. Is there anything you'd care to say about it?

PC: Just wondered whether it was clean.

LRH: All right. Very good. On this question, has anything been invalidated? Yes?

PC: Probably invalidated Jenny by bringing that one up, the first – uh – the first question I – first decision I gave you today.

LRH: All right. Very good. On this question, has anything been invalidated? All right. It's latent.

PC: I was just thinking then about uh – I was saying I was conc... I gave you one and said I was conceited. That was invalidating myself to some extent.

LRH: Oh, all right. On this question, has anything been invalidated? All right. That's clean.

On this question, has anything been suggested? Yes?

PC: Well, that answer – the first answer was suggested to me out of session by Jenny.

LRH: Oh, all right. All right. On this question, has anything been suggested? All right. That seems clean.

On this question, has a mistake been made? Yes?

PC: Uh – I wondered where the – I'm not quite sure what the um – actual meaning of the word decide is. I was trying – I did come across this when I was giving you "decided thats" instead of "decided to."

LRH: Mm-mm.

PC: Looking at it, I thought well, in both cases it's sort of making up one's mind – either about something or to do something.

LRH: Hm-mm.

PC: But I was just wondering whether I was mistaken in doing the – answering the question on the – rather "about," rather than "to do."

LRH: Very good. All right. On this question, has a mistake been made? Yes? Another one.

PC: I made a mistake yesterday by uh – going – getting something off – outside of this lifetime.

LRH: All right. Okay. On this question, has a mistake been made? Another one?

PC: I can't think of one.

LRH: Question being protested? Yes.

PC: Is it? I hadn't realized. I hadn't realized I was protesting the question.

LRH: All right. Let me check this again. On this question, has a mistake been made? There is a mistake.

PC: The only thing I can say is that one answer I've given you must have been a mistake, but I can't recall the actual question or the actual answer.

LRH: All right. Very good. On this question, has a mistake been made? We've roughed it up here. Am I cleaning a clean? In some way? Do you think there must have been a mistake?

PC: Well, it's the only thing – I'm groping there. I can't – I can't see how a mistake could be made. I'm find – having difficulty finding out how a mistake could be made on this question. It could only be in my answer. I don't think you'd have given me the question wrong or made a mistake.

LRH: Oh, all right. Very good. Let me check the question again. On this question, has a mistake been made? Is this question being protested?

PC: It's being puzzled about.

LRH: Being puzzled about. All right.

PC: New rudiment for you.

LRH: Okay. On this question, has a mistake been made? We're going to leave that. It uh – was much cleaner that time.

PC: Mm-hm.

LRH: We're just going to leave that. Not worry you to death with it. I'll recover it if necessary.

On this question, has anything been protested? Yes?

PC: Possibly protesting the length it's going on. It seems to be going on – there's a lot more items coming out. And uh – I decided there shouldn't be many more items.

LRH: All right.

PC: That was a decision that was...

LRH: All right. On this question, has anything been protested? All right, that's clean.

On this question, is there anything you've been anxious about? Apparently.

PC: Anxious about the number of items – answers I'm giving and whether I'm – I was answering correctly.

LRH: All right. On this question, is there anything you've been anxious about? All right, I didn't get a read then.

Now, on this question, has anything been decided? Yes. Like mad.

PC: Well, it's been deciding – well, I decided to give you some of these other form of – form of answer to the question.

LRH: Oh, I see. All right. On this question, has anything been decided? Looks clean. All right.

Now, let's check the two that we messed up on here. On this question, is there anything you've failed to reveal? Yes.

PC: Oh, I did s...

LRH: There.

PC: Well, I didn't go into detail on uh – some of – some of the answers I gave you. I didn't go into detail on what sort of thing I was coming to storm into your office protesting vigorously.

LRH: All right. Okay. On this question, is there anything you've failed to reveal? All right.

I didn't get a read that time. This thing seems to still be hot.

PC: Uh-huh.

LRH: "Question" seems to be hammering here. Is there something wrong with this question? "Question" reads, just the word question all by itself. Not taking up interim, minor thoughts.

PC: Mmm.

LRH: But that's what's dirtying up these rudiments here. What about question? There it is.

PC: Well, the only thing I thought of then is – perhaps I'm not sure exactly what the question means. Um – does the question mean... The question on the question is, uh – is it decisions to do or decisions about, is it a case – a case of what opinions has one formed or what has one decided to do?

LRH: Mm-hm.

PC: That's the only thing that I could question on the question as it were.

LRH: All right. All right. Question. Question. Still a little bing here. Now we won't worry about that: I have no business doing this. I could... bad form.

PC: All right.

LRH: I'm trying to get this clean if I can. All right. On this question, is there anything you've failed to reveal? There is a failed to reveal.

PC: Well, um...

LRH: There.

PC: Well, there must be lots of decisions that I haven't revealed to you.

LRH: Uh-huh.

PC: To answer the question. Some possibly – I don't think I've monitored my answers very much – but possibly some minor things that I've done, some of them seem ridiculous things to put on the list, anyway, that I haven't given you.

LRH: Ahhh!

PC: And uh – so on. And I was just wondering, you know...

LRH: That cleaned it.

PC: All right.

LRH: All right. On this question, is there anything you've failed to reveal? All right. Equivocal. On this question, is there anything you've failed to reveal? And now I roughed it up by saying it was equivocal.

PC: Oh? Is it?

LRH: It was tiny latent. Were you worrying about whether it read or not?

PC: No, I was just stuck – just looking at uh... I was sorting – I was figuring, I apologize, I was looking to see what – how I'd given you a failed to reveal and then I realized that I had given you a failed to reveal and I hadn't revealed that in the session.

LRH: All right. Very good.

PC: The fact that I'd given you some apparently unimportant or insignificant decisions.

LRH: Mm. Mm. All right. Very good. Clear the question again – I mean – I'll ask

the question. On this question is there anything you've failed to reveal? There is a bang now.

PC: Hm-mm.

LRH: What does this mean: an incomplete list? Is this list incomplete? All right. In this lifetime, what have you decided? Actually, it isn't the question that is reading.

Now, while you were listing here, did you at any time say, oh well, no need to put that on the list? Oh no, no need to put that on the list? Is there any of that?

PC: I possibly did it. I can't recall doing it.

LRH: You don't recall doing this. Well, there's no sense in harassing you to this degree.

PC: Some of them that I gave them to – when I gave them to you I – no, I gave them to you – that's silly putting that on the list.

LRH: Oh, all right.

PC: It wouldn't have been – I didn't know – giving you things that I didn't think need be on the list.

LRH: All right.

PC: Not that way.

LRH: Okay. In this lifetime what has been decided? All right. Good. We are going to try to null this list. If we get into trouble we can always add to it. Okay?

PC: Right.

LRH: All right. We're just going down the line here, one right after the other, see what we've got. Okay?

PC: All right.

LRH: To get married. Change a job. Join the scouts. To leave school. To leave school. To go into business.

All right. This list is not complete. Okay.

PC: All right.

LRH: Sorry. Gave you all that trouble and the list simply wasn't complete. Okay?

PC: All right.

LRH: In this lifetime what have you decided?

PC: To be uh – to do well at school.

LRH: Okay.

PC: To cross the road.

LRH: All right.

PC: To ride a bike.

LRH: Okay.

PC: Uh – to look after my dog. Um – to get my dog better.

To earn some money.

To have sex. To masturbate. To stop masturbating.

Oh, not to swear in front of my parents.

To obey the scout law.

Oh, to be a chauffeur.

To be a teacher.

To win a scholarship.

To have fun.

To go to school.

To be independent.

To help others.

To be gentle.

Uh – to bluff.

LRH: Okay.

PC: To get up early. To gather conkers.

LRH: All right.

PC: To gather horse chestnuts, which is a terminal that was run on me for ages on an ACC.

Um – to see my father regularly.

LRH: Okay.

PC: And to stop seeing my father regularly.

To paint pictures.

To draw a church.

LRH: To what?

PC: Draw a church.

LRH: Okay.

PC: Oh, to kill a chicken. Poor chicken. I did it on one.

Um, oh, to um... Something's happened. This room's gone very much brighter all of a sudden.

LRH: Hm.

PC: To uh – hm, oh, to foster spiders.

LRH: To foster?

PC: Yes.

LRH: Good.

PC: Or to let them thrive. Rather – let them run alive, that's right.

LRH: All right.

PC: Foster describes it.

Um – to act.

To learn to play the piano.

To join the air force.

To listen to music.

Um – not to read too much.

To be entertained.

LRH: To what?

PC: To be entertained.

LRH: Got it.

PC: And to entertain.

LRH: Right.

PC: To be a good host.

That people make themselves unnecessarily ill.

LRH: I didn't quite get that.

PC: This is...

LRH: Oh, that people.

PC: That people make themselves...

LRH: Got it.

PC: ...unnecessarily ill. One of these "that" decisions.

To have a nice office.

Um – to have a nice flat in Telesurance building.

To live in nice surroundings.

To have a good garden.

To make a carpet.

To make a cupboard.

To build a terrace.

To plant some trees.

To grow roses.

To have a nice car.

Not to have a Bentley.

Not to go fishing.

Not to hunt.

Not to ride a horse.

To go to church.

To join a choir.

To have this session.

LRH: All right.

PC: To answer your questions.

LRH: All right. How are you doing?

PC: All right.

LRH: All right. Let me take a crack at this now. And see what we've got here. Okay?

PC: All right.

LRH: I'll ask this question.

In this lifetime what have you decided? Yes, clean as a wolf's tooth. Okay. Now, let's see if we can't get a bit of this nullled here, shall we?

PC: Mm-hm.

LRH: All right. We'll go over it from the beginning again. To get married. Okay. Change a job. All right. It's jumping on each one: Is there anything you've thought about this nulling or listing?

PC: Well, on the – it came up last time that on "to get married," you know? Which is – I've got strong views on marriage now. And uh – I just thought that was a damn silly decision, you know.

LRH: Oh, all right. All right. Very good. Okay. Change a job. To change a job. All right. Join the scouts. All right. You had another thought regarding this list?

PC: I saw you move the tone arm right around and I wondered what on earth had happened: had I gone right round off the meter or something?

LRH: Yes, you've done it twice, if not three times.

PC: Have I!

LRH: You've cut the pie all the way around.

PC: All right.

LRH: All right. Join the scouts. To leave school. Any other thoughts?

PC: Well, I'm still – sorry – um, I'm still on this one, "to get married," for some reason or other.

LRH: Yeah, that's right.

PC: That's very interesting, because this was the goal when I arrived on this course originally, was to leave my wife and so on. It's a terrific thing on this marriage thing.

LRH: Hmm.

PC: Hm. All right. I'm sorry, I'm sort of uh...

LRH: No, that's quite all right.

PC: ... dwelling on it a bit.

LRH: No, that's quite all right.

PC: Uh-huh.

LRH: It's okay. To leave school. To leave school. All right. We'll still – banging on everything here. You still got the marriage or are you suppressing that? No.

PC: No, I was – looked at "leave" on that time.

LRH: All right. To go into business. All right. To leave home. To leave home. All right. To leave home. To go to camp. To go to camp. To gamble. To gamble.

PC: I had a bit of a cognition that may be fouling things...

LRH: All right.

PC: Uh – on "to leave," again, the – a decision to leave is always very difficult...

LRH: Hm.

PC: ... for me. I just realized that when you were going through.

LRH: All right. Very good.

To gamble. To invest money. To buy a car. To buy a car. To get a commission in the army. To join the army. To join the army. To leave my wife. To leave my wife. To have children. To have children. To go into business on my own account. To come into Scientology. On people's characters. People's motives. Never to have a dog again. Never to have a dog again. I was capable. I was capable. To leave the scouts. To eat. To eat. To eat. Not to drink. To be honest. To be truthful. To be generous. To be mean. To grow sweet peas. To have an electric organ. To have good clothes.

All right. Well, this list is incomplete.

PC: Uh-huh.

LRH: This list has to be added to some more. That's quite all right. There's nothing wrong with that. Except that everything is banging. I thought I might possibly pass through a period when it wasn't banging.

PC: Yes.

LRH: But we have got an incomplete list here, which is perfectly all right. And although the question tested clean, that doesn't always make it so. Okay?

PC: Uh-huh.

LRH: All right. Now we'll have to get that list completed.

PC: Uh-huh.

LRH: All right. But it is not complete yet.

PC: Understood.

LRH: But you've done a total twice, if not three times.

PC: Uh-huh.

LRH: All right. Is it all right with you if that's the end of the body of the session today?

PC: All right.

LRH: Okay.

Now, have we made any part of our goals for this session? To complete list quickly.

PC: Well, we tried hard. We didn't make it completely. Because it's incomplete.

LRH: All right. Work well.

PC: Oh, yes.

LRH: All right. Not get in the way of the assessment.

PC: Yes.

LRH: All right. And feel the benefit of the session at the end of it.

PC: Well, I certainly – I feel very bright. And I told you, the room – place suddenly – everything's gone – something's gone. I mean...

LRH: All right.

PC: ... something's shed.

LRH: Very good. Very good. We went through it again. All right. Nothing wrong with that at all. All right.

Thank you for making your goals for this session. I'm sorry you didn't make the first one. Okay?

PC: Okay.

LRH: All right. Are there any gains you'd care to mention?

PC: Well, it's this feeling some – so bright and – well, it's extraordinary – I just can't really get it over to you – over in words. It's...

LRH: Hm.

PC: Certainly mass has gone. That's uh...

LRH: Ah!

PC: That's what's happened.

LRH: All right. Very good. All right. Thank you for your gains in this session.

PC: Thank you.

LRH: Okay. All right. Now let's see if we can get a can squeeze here. Squeeze the cans.

All right. Your havingness is down. Put your cans down please. We'll run a little bit of Havingness.

PC: Right.

LRH: Okay. Your Havingness Process is "Touch that." Okay?

PC: Yes.

LRH: All right. Touch that sign.

Thank you. Touch that ashtray.

Thank you. Touch that can.

Thank you. Touch the other can.

Thank you. Touch the top of the telephone.

Thank you. Touch this neck of the lamp.

Thank you. Touch the table cloth.

Thank you. Touch the table underneath the table cloth.

Thank you. All right. Touch the gold lettering.

Thank you. Pick up the cans.

All right. Squeeze the cans. Okay. Let's do that again, squeeze the cans. Very good. Your havingness is well up. That's fine. All right. That was the last command.

Okay. Now, is there anything you'd care to ask or say before we end this session?

PC: Yes. Thank you very much.

LRH: All right. Good enough. Is it all right with you if I end this session now?

PC: Yes.

LRH: Okay. End of session.

PC: Thank you.

LRH: All right. Tell me I'm no longer auditing you.

PC: You're no longer auditing me.

LRH: Very good.

All right. There we have that session demonstration. And – finish up my auditor's report here – and you saw a pc go through seven, approximately four or five times. Very interesting. I call that to your attention. The TV set was jumping there for a little bit: I had to hold it still. Now, sorry.

But the trouble here is simply routine. Of course, with these very short sessions it's very unfair to the pc. It very often requires more than one two-an-a-half-hour session to finish a list. And this list is not complete. And you saw me – and I did this for your benefit more than the necessity to do it – but you saw me put in all the mid rud buttons, you saw me chivvy around with the question – with the word "question," which, by the way, you would not ordinarily do in a session. But I wanted to show you the source of the reads. All right.

We cleaned all that up, didn't we? That was all clean, everything was fine and this pc was still going tick-tick here a little bit. But we went back; we tried to null and everything was in and so we added to the list and we got to another clean period. And then we once more tried to null and I nulled further than I ordinarily would have, just to show you how extreme it is. Actually, a list ought to be in a condition – it ought to be in such a condition that everything just goes out, out, out, out, out, out, out, out, out, until you leave one in.

Now, there is the demonstration. And I tried to show you the – that if you haven't got a complete list, it doesn't matter how many mid ruds you put in, how much you harass the pc, you won't get yourself a clean needle by which to null. And you don't go on with this kind of nonsense of harassing the pc because everything is staying in and nulling everything down, you see, leaving everything in and then going over it again and going over it again. Well, the list is not complete.

Now, actually that means, essentially, that the item is not on the list. And as far as speed of nulling is concerned, you could almost finish up this list and then just take the last pages after this session that were done – I'm telling you an extreme step now – and just null those and you would find that it's on it. In other words, he hasn't put on the key word yet. And that's what this is all about.

So, anyway, you saw a dirty needle and that dirty needle was caused, as I demonstrated to you, purely, totally and only by just the one thing of a incomplete list.

Now, if you fail to complete a list on a pc, don't be surprised if your pc ARC breaks and so forth. Now, the reason the pc doesn't ARC break between sessions when you have an incomplete list on the pc is very elementary, because the pc expects the list to be completed. So the charge has not yet been missed. But if you tell a pc that the list is complete and you

start nulling endlessly without completing the list, of course you get the ARC break right in the teeth.

Now this is – this list is, as I said, incomplete. It needs completing. And when it is complete, why, it'll null very, very easily. I don't know how far this list will go. We do happen to be treating a button which is peculiarly susceptible to a long list.

All right. Now, there is your demonstration. And you are still watching a preliminary step for engram running. Okay?

And our thanks to the pc. Give him a hand. Thank you. And thank you very much. And good night.

THE FREE BEING

A lecture given on 9 July 1963

Thank you.

Well, I'm glad to see you, too. The horizon is looking wider open; all you've got to get is good. Well, let me – let me put it a little more mildly, I'm afraid I might have frightened you there. All you've got to get is perfect. [laughter] That's all.

This is what? This is the 9th of July?

Audience: The 9th.

All right, 9 July AD 13, Saint Hill Special Briefing Course.

Now, this is the place you've been coming to, the last few trillion trillion years. [laughter] That's right. That's right – been heading down the track, right for the Saint Hill Special Briefing Course.

Last time you were on that pole you said, "There must be someplace." [laughter, laughs] And here you are – here you are.

And it's my job to make something vaguely resembling a successful auditor and make it possible for that auditor to do a good job of clearing – clearing up the track and straightening up. And if we hadn't waited so long, we'd find it much easier – quantitative proposition. If we just hadn't waited quite so long, we'd find it much easier.

But the state of civilizations, and the general combat that has occurred here and there and every place, has rather put things in abeyance. I can't imagine us doing anything practical in the middle of the Roman civilization, can you? And about the only psychotherapy they had in medieval times was the rack or the lead boot. And general attitudes have been pretty poor.

Furthermore, I don't think any of us have been brought to a point that we realized we had failed and that there had been a failure. That's sometimes necessary for somebody to do something about something.

And what we're doing, actually, so you won't be in the dark, is we're closing out a very long cycle, of – a long, losing cycle, tremendous length – of the OT. The cycle of loss, of the OT. And a being, now, had come to a point where he believed – and couldn't do otherwise – the only safe place to be was in one of these meat-body civilizations, complete with airplanes, and that that was the more or less winning side of the ledger, and there was no real possibility of being free of that economic duress, be these two-bit games, these accelerated aberrative conditions, as they march forward. There was no going and sitting on a mountaintop quietly

for a few thousand years and catching your breath. The fight had been lost, in other words. In other words, a strata and quality and character of life had been lost. That is a defeat.

You don't see any OTs walking around right now. Well, it's very peculiar that they reach almost to modern times – almost to modern times. As you audit pcs, you'll be quite surprised now and then to find one that was OT, five hundred years ago.

You look on this normally as something that occurred on the very, very far backtrack, something that occurred in the dimmest beginnings of history, but in actual fact, this is not true at all. These reach right up practically to present time, but losing all the way.

There was no method of retaining and maintaining a stability.

The condition of OT in this universe became looked upon as highly dangerous and highly unstable. You could stand around an airfield batting the airplanes down as fast as they rose, you know, and so they couldn't serve as theta traps and all this sort of thing – and walking all over the buildings and that sort of thing. And the next thing you know, a sleep light was going and somebody was saying, "Sleep. Sleep. Sleep. Create. Be solid." And it was a losing war. And a very interestingly losing war, because it was lost by the most powerful. That's what's peculiar about this war.

Any one of you within a relatively few hundred trillion years, probably could have taken this planet and touched the north pole lightly and that would have been that. You'd probably even show me the proper stance you would use to slow a planet down, as well as to take one, throw it out into the freezing dark and put it back on its orbit again without any meat bodies to clutter it up. Interesting study: How do you knock off all life on a planet but trees and plants? Just how do you pull an air cover?

Well, these are studies of the greatest magnitude – the greatest magnitude possible of *force*. There has not been any force wanting at all.

And eventually here you sit, and what are you doing here? Well, what you are doing here is you're in a meat body, and you see the airplanes flying around overhead, and you realize that the continuous association with a meat body is just a continuous concatenation of collecting engrams like mad and keying in things like crazy and it is the downward spiral with accelerated jets behind it.

What made that condition? How come this took place?

Well, all battles are won by a combination of two elements, and these are force and intelligence. And given enough force, of course, there is no opposing side – everybody hopes. The United States, in World War II eventually got up to the idea of a small task force had to practically raise the level of water of the Pacific Ocean before they would make an attack. Tremendous – tremendous force. Tremendous force.

And, of course, you take something like an atomic bomb that can obliterate an entire country, that is tremendous, tremendous force. And it succeeds in short-term wins – short-term wins. And that is all you ever get from tremendous force, is a short-term win, never a long-term win. Never.

The long-term win is achieved by a balance between force and intelligence. Now, intelligence alone in active action is not enough. The wise men of Tibet, were just a few years

ago driven out of their mountain fortresses by the dumbest infantrymen the world has known for some time. Isn't that interesting They were infinitely wise, and their infinite wisdom brought them total defeat.

So, when you take these two elements, if you are sometime trying to solve the problem of whether you did right or whether you did wrong, take these two elements and look them over in relationship to what you did, and you'll find out that there is an imbalance in any defeat. There was an imbalance of intelligence and force, and these two things were out of gear. You're either using all force and practically grasshopper-intelligence or you're using monumental intelligence and saying "God will protect me," forgetting at the same time that you were the only god around to do any protecting.

It is sort of pathetic, this OT sitting down on the Vatican steps saying, "God will protect me," when he may very well have started the whole myth. Where does he think he still is?

Now, all of your losses were contributed to by these two elements out of balance. And any coordinated civilization plowing forward, using technology, combining that technology with force, keeping some sort of balance between these two things, can make a monkey out of an OT, literally: There was an implant four galaxies over that taught you you came from apes. Darwin – that's the whole of the Darwinian theory is implanted there in the course of about a day, and everybody bought it. You know, you come up through the mollusk and sloth and ape and all this sort of thing, and there's not a damn word of truth in it, see. It has nothing to do with it.

You want to know what happened to these intermediate forms? Well, thetans have different tastes and there are fads of one kind or another. And some OT, he sort of liked this idea of cave-men society, and you get these *huge jaws*, you see, and *hairy bodies*, and women being hauled around by the hair of their head, and all that sort of thing. It's rather barbaric taste, but exotic, you know. [laughter] Exotic. They get a whole civilization moving forward like this, you want to call it a civilization, you know.

You want to know about the evolution of man from treetop to cave. Well, there was a... there's one form of that civilization in treetops and there's another form in caves. There's no evolution between the two, although you can draw these things very carefully. It all depends who was here and who was putting the bodies in the place. That's your evolution. Therefore, these things would baffle an archaeologist if he suddenly started comparing it all and if the carbon-atom deterioration factor had anything to do with time, which it doesn't.

I'm watching this with the greatest – with the greatest of interest, how they have made up some kind of an artificial winging gimmick by which they can measure a nonexistent time. And this planet, you see, is brand-new and it's only a few million years old, and you know that ain't old. That's a lie, you know, that's a lie. Used to run the biological survey in here 612 million years ago and, you know, get reports on this place. But that was the style then, see. And they start digging these things up and looking for this and that.

The deterioration of matter is not as fast as they think it is, nowhere near as fast as they think it is. You can sit for a trillion trillion years and watch the ebb and flow of seas and geological formations and various things happening, one kind or another. And when you scan through it very rapidly, why, there's a sea, there's a desert, there's a sea, there's a desert; there's

a mountain range, you see; there's a canyon that goes through the mountain range, now there's no canyon going through the mountain range. See, get the idea? *Flick-flick-flick-flick-flick-flick-flick-flick!* But that matter is still there and it is still the same sand.

We haven't got a deterioration of matter and the vanishments of suns. And the... these suns up here have been burning since – wow! I know they have been burning to my own personal knowledge, they've been burning for the last two hundred trillion, the existing collection of suns in this immediate vicinity; two hundred trillion years is looked upon as a fantastic length of time.

But I remember in grade school, in this lifetime, they used to teach us that the sun was full of hydrogen and sooner or later the hydrogen would burn out and the sun would go out, you see. Well, this thing about the sun going out is just a way to scare kids to get them to go to sleep, see. It's a lot of nonsense.

They say, "Well, look over there, there's a sun that did go out." No, it was never lit! [laughter, laughs] Or whoever made it got distracted that day or was working on union hours or something; he just never finished it. He went off – he went off to pick up a new bank of Magellanic radioactive particles to throw at it and ignite it and got distracted by a butterfly or something, you know, and never came back and turned it on. These things don't go out.

In other words, we're looking at a – we're looking at a tremendous number of misconceptions and we're looking at a vast number of unintelligences, see. These are pure stupidities. But these stupidities themselves form a kind of trap, and they're intelligent in their application in cohesing a society. If everybody remains ignorant in the society, nobody can get out of it, can they? So there's nothing left for them but to cooperate somehow or another, or keep that society going one way or the other. So, ignorance itself is used as an intelligent mechanism of entrapment, and to this is added force, and you get all sorts of odd combinations.

So, we have a sort of a medium structure floating along through this particular universe. And that medium structure is a balance of intelligence – if very warped intelligence – and a balance of mediocre forces. And these two are a sort of a mean level, and they make these meat-body societies and the automobile and the airplane, and they get up as high as the spaceship, and they don't progress any further than that; they go right to there and that's it. If they progress much further than that, they disintegrate, and if they fail to progress at all, they disintegrate. And you've got various factors influencing it.

But the societies repeat themselves over and over continuously. You have Roman societies and medieval societies and Elizabethan-England societies. And these pattern societies thetans get on a kick of, one way or the other, and they build these things up.

There's Arabian societies – I was on a kick on Arabian societies one time or another. Never build anything without minarets and turbans, you know. You got to have the minarets, turbans and harems. Then you got it all set, you see. Oh, marvelous.

And those things – those things appear in sequence or they – just one sits there and it lasts for a long time.

But beware of a planet in which there is as much progress as you find this particular planet. This planet has gone through the phase of the prop aircraft in something like twenty-

five or thirty years, see. It's gone all the way through the era of locomotives until they are now in a terrible decline. Various forces are at work on this particular planet which are unusual, in the extreme. They are very unusual and that makes this planet very restive.

One of the reasons for this – and I won't say it's the only reason for this, but the only reason I can lay my hands on at the moment – is this planet is being used as a dumping ground. If – you'll find this Sun 12 is very distant. It's way out on the rim of a galaxy. And it's very handy to other galaxies, and it's very handy to the center of this galaxy. Nothing against anyone's character and it's nothing really that anybody did; he just happened to get picked up in that scoop that day and that was it. And it's been used as a dumping ground – a rather consistent, continual dumping ground – and it's being used as a dumping ground right up to this minute.

Now, this of course gives you a very heterogeneous type of society; you have enormous elements of one kind or another – all of them running relatively uncontrolled. There is no master hand guiding all this, but everybody feels that there must be a master hand guiding all this because there's so much trouble. No. When a master hand is guiding things, there isn't any trouble; things are calm. It's only when the master hand doesn't guide things that there is trouble.

And, for instance, a society normally has some thetan around someplace, and he's kicking some mock-ups together one way or the other, and he's kind of figuring on things, and he's playing a game one way or the other, and it keeps going for a long time. And he gives it some indifferent attention and it never changes; he doesn't see any reason to change it particularly. Some other thetan comes along and he says, "Well, we'll have a fight." So he makes up some mock-ups and he makes up some diseases to feed to the mock-ups that the thetan has already mocked up, and so on. And they get these two in collision one way or the other, and they have some wars and battles and so forth. It's rather mildly interesting and they don't pay too much attention to it. Eventually, they both go off and forget about it, and the whole thing goes to pieces.

That's the normal, crudest look. You could say they're very dedicated, earnest, severe looks, but I am afraid the attitude has been quite comparable to a child's making up a little play town – the attitude quite similar to that: meat bodies and mock-ups.

Well, when you take bodies which have been mocked up and thetans who have been indoctrinated in very definite lines – to fight, to do this, to have certain types of societies; to do this, to do that, to do the other thing – and then they get scooped up from this galaxy and that system and this star and here and there and the other place and are dumped in on one system as unwanted merchandise, you have these tremendous impulses which are at work, one against another. And it works up a lot of heat of friction. You have such a society here at this particular time.

This society belongs nominally to the Espinol United Stars. This is Sun 12, and it is one little tiny pinpoint. Their whole title is Espinol United Stars, pardon me, Espinol United Moons, Planets and Asteroids, this part of the Universe is ours, Hup!

But this, yeah, "This quarter of the Universe is ours," it translates better. "This quarter of the Universe is ours." And it's so much quarter of the universe, and this is so lost in the

middle of it that there's been no command post occupied for this system now since 1150 A.D., at the time when a group on Mars was finally abolished and vanished, and so forth, and nobody took any interest in this system. This system has been running wild since that time.

You notice at that time we had a sudden resurgence in (quote) "science," we had a sudden resurgence in this, that or the other thing. It became an uncontrolled civilization. And since that time has been used (and was used before this, of course) consistently as a dumping ground because nobody pays any attention to it. You don't have scout ships coming out to meet your transport that is dumping ice cubes in the Pacific Ocean, you see. There... it's a very handy place – it's like the city garbage dump with no cop to tell you, you can't dump there, see? And there's nobody alert, there's nobody doing anything on this planet to debar this sort of thing. And it's quite interesting that you have represented here samples of many societies in many times and places and impulses which are quite fantastic.

Probably the most basic impulse on the planet is simply the basic impulse of thetans, who have been reduced to more or less a meat-body level, which is total cooperation – total cooperation with one another. Total, as you see in the communist thing, as you see in democracy. "We are all equal," you see. "We are all equal: there must be no personalities of any kind, the cult of the personality must be banished, what we really are is equal." And they've sort of come back to this because that is a common denominator of their indoctrination. They are indoctrinated to the idea that they have teammates, and from this, you see, you get this other equality factor. You might not agree with that particularly, but I'm just giving you some kind of a sketch here of the things as they are.

Now, why did you arrive in the condition you are in? This is all this leads up to. It wasn't actually that... anything specific that you did. Yes, you have overts; yes, these overts combined into certain motivators being more forceful upon you than otherwise. But even if you hadn't had overts, you still would have gotten the motivators. You would have dreamed up something as an overt, don't you see?

The oddity here is simply that if all this has happened to you and you've been punished, then you must have had – been punished for some reason. See, you're still trying to be reasonable and intelligent about it, and this doesn't happen to be true at all. The only reasons you were ever punished was for being you, for being powerful and for not being quite intelligent enough. And that's – that's the only reasons you were ever done...

The exact crimes were to be there and to communicate. Those were the two crimes.

Now, what happens – what happens? You can look way back on the backtrack and you can find that some OT came along and decided that he'd put together a civilization of some kind or another, figured it all out to the last notch, you know, and had total curbstones and the hairdo and everything else. He had this perfect, you see. And, some other thetan came along and started chipping away at him, or something like this, or started talking to him, or started putting up mock-ups on the other side of the planet, see?

So this would go on. And to get even – to get even with the other thetan who was attacking his pet society, something like this, he would indoctrinate his pet society in how to trap a big thetan. So this became the most accomplished skill that a meat-body society has, is how to trap a spirit.

No OT was so ever out of his mind as to depend upon any of his men or troops to trap him. He never indoctrinated them to do that, because at the time he was doing this he never thought he would be caught. I consider this as – huh! singularly unintelligent.

For instance, Frankie the Limper, over there, during the 30s, he wrote out a big check. He wrote out a big check. He only thought in terms of billions and things, and he wrote out this three billion dollar check and he handed it over and he says, "Build an atom bomb, and there you are, wipe out cities and so on."

Well, the knucklehead, he had Congress under his thumb, he had everything under his thumb, it was all set and roaring to go. He could have written out another check for three billion dollars and given it to another group and said, "Build a defense for an atom bomb." But you notice he didn't do that. See what I mean?

He said, "Build an atom bomb. Here's three billion dollars." He didn't say at the same time, "Here's three billion dollars, build a defense for an atom bomb." So, you lay into a meat-body society the skill to trap a thetan. Why don't you teach him how to free one, see?

It isn't this universe, it isn't that you have atoms, it isn't that this has happened and that happened and the other happened, or that you weren't right thinking and didn't join the OTs' YMCA when you had a chance. That's all irresponsible thinking. You were just knuckle-headed. I mean, let's face it. You had unlimited force but there was not as much intelligence invested as there was force invested.

Now, you say it's a very intelligent thing to be able to put together an atom, be able to make matter, being able to make almost ever-burning radioactive fire for suns and all this sort of thing; to be able to erect tremendous space, to be able to figure out the biological cell perpetuation on the second dynamic – all of this – seeds, how do you make them? All that. See, this is terribly complex.

You had to figure out how to make the various things, the various enzymes and things like that, that cells convert to become this and... very complicated. Very! Well, then you say, all right, that's a fantastic amount of intelligence – the intelligence of doing things that is usually assigned on this planet to God.

There's a film. The film shows you the vastness of the universe and the miraculous works of God and the greatest things and the smallest things, and that sort of thing. Simply a tribute to the workings of an OT, nothing else. Not sacrilegious: fact.

Now, yeah, you say, "Well, that was very intelligent, very intelligent." Completely knuckleheaded. You never worked out how to unbuild anything. Do you get the – get the unbalanced action.

How do you pull the plug on this complicated made atom? How do you pull the plug on it, see. How do you say, "Proton negatron nuncus," see, and it goes boom. It ceases to exist. Well, the whole thing was an insistence on enduring matter – enduring matter that was to endure forever. Well, that's not smart. Eventually some of that stuff was made into a theta pole; that's the pole you've been on. Confounded things last forever.

You know, it's possible, I can tell you that it's possible to be trapped for over thirteen and a half trillion trillion years. That's interesting, isn't it?

Well, all the technology of entrapment – my God, the technology of entrapment is just, oh, a vast catalog! I could tell you ways of trapping thetans and oh, and so on – just taken off the track, you know. Technology. Oo-ooh! You run into it running the whole track; it's quite a technology. How do you fool a thetan? How do you make him curious? How do you do this? How do you do that? You know? How do you soften him up? How do you do all these things? A vast amount of work put in on this subject. And no work – no work put in at all on how do you free one, see.

Total technology of freeing one: You reach over on the trap and pull the guy off of it and throw him out in space to cool off. That requires a what? That requires an OT. What if there isn't any? That's an interesting question, isn't it?

So, here you had the atom bomb with no defense for the atom bomb, which was continuous matter, and continuous technology of entrapment and teaching civilizations to entrap and so forth, on and on and on endlessly, teach-teach-teach; force-force-force; more matter made, more endurance to the matter, more lasting qualities to the matter. Some space opera societies make any metal that appears here on this planet look pale. Even the society has worked on the refinement of elements to a point where... Well, a spaceship – trying to dent a spaceship, it might have an almost paper-thin looking hull, and the stuff sheds asteroids and so forth – little meteorites and space dust, and so forth, it just sheds them.

A space wagon travels in the terms of the trillions of light-years in a day. Einstein's nonsense is just some more of the ignorance by which you get trapped: You can't go faster than the speed of light. I don't know, I'm never in contest with a photon myself.

The teleportation is a pipe dream, too. It's usually... it's the way you mock something up here and then make it disappear there and then mock it up over there and say, "See, I've teleported it from here to here, see, without going through the air." And it's marvelous, you see. Very clever, except it never happened.

The reassembly of atoms at some distant place and that sort of thing, that's an OT skill. It can be done rather easily, but it's not the same atoms. So, aside from vanishments of that particular character, to carry out a stunt for teleportation and baffle everybody, the skill of making matter disappear, and so forth, has been grievously neglected. The technology of how do you free a thetan has been grievously neglected. These are all neglected technologies.

The failure to teach a meat-body society equally to be able to free or to trap, that was just unintelligent, it was stupid – leave out half of the equation.

Now, if you ever want to see a society get into rich trouble, trouble that is just blooming in all directions and so forth, go on one of these all flows, see. Don't ever run the other side, see. Don't ever touch the other side.

You see it in processing. You can make the guy flow, flow, flow, flow. Actually you run motivators just so long on somebody, he'll give you an overt, unless you prevent him actively from giving you an overt. You keep – you keep running outflow-outflow-outflow on somebody and he eventually will jam and he won't run any further. You've got to run some inflow for a while, that's all. You've got to balance up these flows. Now, that's quite important to you. That's quite important to you, because it says where you sit, both as a being at this

exact moment, and why your interest in the technology which is before you, and why, strangely enough, this technology is appearing really for the first time in this universe.

It's impossible that – everybody will tell you the technology is impossible. No, it isn't impossible, it's just totally neglected. They think it's impossible because they've outflowed the reverse technology.

Now, it's very embarrassing. It isn't that it didn't cause societies trouble, it caused them lots of trouble. The Galactic Confederation right now is in trouble because of this. It has this problem on its front platter all the time.

The Galactic Confederation operates on a limited OT basis; its hierarchy of command is that of a limited level of OT, and it goes down to the doll body as the ship captain and the post captain, and that sort of thing; and that goes down to the meat body. And it's one of the few civilizations which has ever endured over any great span of time – just for the reason that it uses a limited OT, a doll body and a meat body, and works out the hierarchies of cooperation in that.

And their space wagons are very stylized, I don't think they've changed in – oh, they haven't changed in fifty trillion years. They haven't moved a bolt. They... every time you say, "You ought to increase your firepower or do something intelligent about it," and "These things blow back every once in a while and wreck the ship. Why don't you increase the thickness on those jets a little bit?"

"Oh, well, we've done that before." They'll prove it, too. They'll take out an ancient file cabinet, you know, and here will be plans that were submitted, you know, trillions of years before by the most learned architects. And they built this at vast expense, and they tested it, and it crashed, you know.

The weariness with which they defend their no-change is quite remarkable, but they do have change. They cannot maintain a no-change. A society either goes up, even if only slowly, or goes down; it never stays completely static. That's something for you to remember when you've got this society. And you say, "Well, we've reached a state of perfection now. We're not going to change anything. We're not going to change a thing from here on out." Oh, how dangerous can you get, because if you don't improve, you decline. There is no staying exactly that way.

That's quite interesting, because the Galactic Confederation is up against a problem of great magnitude. It's run out of OTs. Their basic technology says that the problem of conquest – the problem of conquest; the problem of maintaining our position; the problem of maintaining our commitments; the problem of power and the cohesion of the Galactic Confederation does not depend on ships; does not depend on fuel; does not depend on size of armies; does not depend on organization; technical know-how, doesn't depend on any of these things. It's the availability of OTs to command units. And that is the limiting factor of how much and how broad and how big the Galactic Confederation can be. And this is taught, taught, taught; this is pounded into everybody's head. And not once in eighty trillion years, has anybody ever said, "Well, if that is the case, why don't you repair some of your limited OTs and keep them patched up and up to snuff? Why don't you know *something* about it?" See, they know this is

a pressing problem, but they have no such technology. It doesn't exist; there's no technology like that.

OTs get peculiar. They get fitful. They get moody. I remember one time about twelve trillion years ago. It was, some comedian on a stage, vast theater, pulled a gag about create and that sort of thing, and made a wisecrack of one kind or another. An OT had to be subdued – he was up in the box, alongside the royal box, and he had to be subdued, one way or the other, but not till after he had torn down all the curtains and knocked down a four or five hundred-ton chandelier on the assembled meat-body multitude. Why? It just keyed him in. What could they do about it? Turn a sleep light on him and tell him to get solid and take him down to the hospital. That was their total – total ability to put this boy back together again. I consider it fascinating; I know – I was there. I was the guy they did it to. [laughter, laughs]

But the crux of the situation here – I'm not talking through my hat on this material, although it might sound very strange to some people. I think it would sound hauntingly horrifying to a great many people if they were to listen to it. They'd feel quite overwhelmed; they wouldn't understand it. They would be trying to say, "Well, it probably isn't true. He seems to be making sense, but we're not quite sure, and this..." Or, "My reality on this is very bad, but it fills me full of slight chills... What's this somatic in the back of my neck?" you know.

All right, if the technology is that vital, of how do you untrap somebody, how do you push somebody back to battery after a horrifying experience – if it's that vital, why hasn't somebody worked on it? Basically, they're afraid of the technology.

For instance, if I were to go back to the Galactic Confederation in any kind of a mood of a punitive sneer, and they would listen raptly as I talked to them about gunnery. "You know, you've got to improve the ability of a gun to penetrate the hide of a spaceship," you see. "Got some new data on this," you know. "Listen, man, that..." All ears, see. They would just listen with their tongues out where it came to anything that had to do with this strata of action. They would listen probably to means of preventing blowbacks; I'd probably even shatter them and move them over on that particular point. Tips on political interference learned out amongst the colonies, you know, that kind of thing. Listen, man.

And I'd say, "Well, also got a way to put OTs back together again." Brother, I would meet probably the greatest silence – you could drop a space fleet into and it would just vanish. And it wouldn't be fear, and it wouldn't be ridicule, me being me – it'd be horror, because they'd instantly think, "How are we going to hold the society together? How do you maintain the strata of the society? How do you maintain this fixed organization which we have, if every janitor can be an OT? You realize that you say this is just going to be applied to OTs. That's all right if you kept it buttoned up. Ah, but the next thing you know, you are going to take sergeants amongst the doll-body class. I can see it now. And those guys are going to start hauling people out of meat bodies. They are going to destroy this social organization which we have built up here with such care and which has gone so long." And they would say to me, "Oh, you've gone too far. We know you took a course in scientific improvisation some years ago, but we never thought you would put it to this use." [laughter]

And then would ensue a minor revolution of one kind or another where some were all for it and some were all against it and that sort of thing, but there wouldn't be much of a fuss about it, but everybody would still be saying, "Keep it reasonable. Take it easy."

You'd have to give them a political solution which was as great as the political threat. You cannot give them a technology without taking responsibility for the technology, or nobody would listen to it.

The people on Earth here don't think that Scientology doesn't work. They've been trained, however, against the vectors of it. They've been trained to destroy, to set something up – a fixed status of something – and then work a destructive means with it and to work out techniques of entrapment so people cannot leave certain social strata and economic strata of the society. This is the whole level of training. And you're not up against Pavlov, Freud or any mental technology. You're up against the social structure of the organization in which we exist at this moment.

And you pose a tremendous threat to that social structure. You could tear it to *pieces!* In two different ways, one by the rehabilitation of tremendous power and force. That's one way. That's pretty easy. You make somebody OT and he's good and mad on account of what they did to him in Chicago, and he pulls the air cover and that's the end of this planet.

Don't think it hasn't happened. Those mammoths that are up in the frozen tundra, with quick-frozen vegetables in their stomachs, must have been reduced down to about two hundred degrees minus, in a split second, because to freeze vegetables they have to be frozen in something like sixty seconds for them to preserve it. And here these millions of years later, the Explorers Club serves those things with fresh mammoth steak at its annual dinners! They serve them as vegetables-deep-freeze-quick-freeze; they've been packed up there in the ice ever since. They're tropical! What are they doing under all that ice, man!

It must have been done in sixty seconds. Can you think of any natural cataclysm that could take place in sixty seconds? They couldn't have been transported from point A to point B. [laughter]

Somebody was good and mad and they pulled the air cover and gave the planet a reverse spin. They changed its axis just like that – bang! Bang! There was just... somebody got mad. That's all.

So, that is the most direct force that is posed to this civilization by any technology such as we have. See, that is a *real factor*. People don't even have to get mad. We just get together and say, "Well, I guess it's best for the greatest good for the greatest number of dynamics that this planet be de-aircovered." *Pfsst*. That's it. Frozen vegetables.

Well now, then there must be a great... a factor involved here in intelligence; that's just the use of total force, isn't it? All right. Now, if we admix intelligence into this total force, what do we get? We get some other solution. We get a solution like the greatest good of the greatest number of dynamics, and that is an optimum solution always: The greatest good for the greatest number of dynamics.

In fact, that is the definition of an overt act.

Most of you think an overt is harming something. Brother, that is the most unlimited piece of nonsense ever. Doing something damaging, destroying something; you think that is an overt act?

No, that is not an overt act. It is sometimes an overt act, but that is just an unintelligent look at what an overt act is.

Let me give you a much... a very, very low-level thing. Baby keeps going over, turning on the gas jets, you see, on the stove. All right. What is the damage? They blow themselves up and kill themselves dead, and knock themselves out and mess up the whole house and spoil that. That's the end of that, if they are permitted to do this. So, if persuasion doesn't work, you paddle their britches. Well, that is "damaging a child." You can't reason with the child and you paddle his britches just hard enough to make him realize that he mustn't turn on those gas jets. Now, that of course can unintelligently be carried too far. But you immediately have departed from the greatest good of the greatest number of dynamics. It is actually an overt not to spank the child in that particular characteristic.

An overt act is flaunting "The greatest good for the greatest number of dynamics." And if you start working on the equation of the greatest bad for the greatest number of dynamics, you've got a real series of overt acts.

Now, it's very hard to adjudicate something like this. It'd take a Solomon, then, to figure out what an overt act is. Well, that's why you're so puzzled. You never can quite figure out what an overt act is. Well, you'd have to look on it from the various angles and you'd have to have, usually, more data than you have.

But you'll find the real overt acts – was maliciously and viciously setting out to damage, for no good reason, some beings or people, or start a trend or something of the sort. It was a lie or a piece of nonsense; you knew very well it was a lie and a piece of nonsense and keep going anyhow.

Sometimes you get an unintentional overt. I'll give you an overt that works out this way – the greatest good for the greatest number of dynamics. There was a very shabby thetan hanging around and there were some new theta traps that had been built in the neighborhood. Well, they wouldn't trigger, you know. I mean, they just weren't running all the time; they had to have a thetan in them. So, I took this guy and threw him in, intending to reach over and pull him out. Yeah, well, we got... That was quite something.

He sure made me guilty on this thing, and so on. But that wouldn't really have amounted to much as an overt act. When I pulled him off the pole, the fact that I put a beam into the place activated the trap. It wasn't necessary to throw him in. All I had to do was kind of stick my finger down there and it would have gone off automatically and fired itself straight on through, see.

Now, he says, you're guilty, and you shouldn't have done this and look how you've ruined me, and all of this sort of thing – which wasn't the case. I could agree with him. Yes, it was an overt act. It was an omission on my part not to be able to predict the fact. I was stupid. See, I didn't realize that it wasn't necessary to kick him off into that particular glade to activate the trap so we could find out what it was. Why, it wasn't necessary at all. In fact, that was a mean thing to do, and we never would have done that if he hadn't gotten on everybody's

nerves. But it was a mean thing to do. But then to find out that it was quite unnecessary – that made it an overt act.

So, overt act – an overt act can occur almost unintentionally by the realization that you haven't been very smart about it. An overt act is often realized after the fact by the realization that you could have done it some entirely different way that would have been much smarter, and then you get regret and so forth, and then you get a hung-up overt act.

But somebody who sets out to do things which are definitely against the greatest good for the greatest number of dynamics, wind up committing a lot of overts. And somebody who simply goes out here in battle and shoots somebody through the coco or throws a doll out the window, as commander of the ship, because the doll is starting to mutiny or something like this – those are not overt acts; they don't even classify, you see. Yet they come under the heading of damaging something. They're not overt acts.

The... it's not any specious figuring. It's... you'll find out it works out. And when you hit a real overt on the track – that the pc is going "Oh, my God, why did I do it?" – you'll find these other elements are present. A lot of elements.

Now, it has a lot to do with Sec Checking. Your lack of success in Sec Checking is a misdefinition of the overt act. You're looking for something he did that was irresponsible or damaging or something like this. No, you're not looking for the *very harmful* action to the greatest number of dynamics. Somebody took a very completely wrong course on something, and, do you know, you almost never find one in this lifetime. People haven't been big enough or tough enough in this lifetime to have committed one.

Sometimes you see some thetan bragging. See, some pc is bragging about all the overt acts he's committed. And you assess them out and you find out he stepped on an ant, and he spanked a baby, and he betrayed a girl, and – that was asking to be betrayed – and you assess this whole thing out and you can't find any overt acts, you see. He just wasn't tough enough, but he's sort of bragging about these tremendous overt acts he has committed, and you'll find this combination. Actually, he hasn't committed an overt for probably a long time.

You run off a long chain of engrams in three hours and all of a sudden one of these overt acts will suddenly show up – bang! in a very strategic locale that meant a great deal to one and all in all directions. And you'll see that thing all grouped up and that thing followed by a chain of motivators like mad. And if that overt hadn't been present, those motivators might never have followed at all. And then you'll know what an overt act is, and you can analyze it, and you'll find out – it was "The greatest good for the greatest number of dynamics," was violated – wittingly or unwittingly – was violated, either because the guy was a complete knucklehead at the time or just because he had gone clean vicious.

This is somebody that is an American citizen, has been an American for a long time, and he hasn't got anything else. And all of a sudden hands everything out lock, stock and barrel – the code books and so forth – to the Russians, well knowing that the Russians will also be destroyed when they destroy America. Well, you say, "Well, that's very interesting."

And you'll once in a while get a thetan smelling around the edges in processing, thinking he has committed something like this, and he'll take upon his shoulders far more than he did commit. He was the – he was the unwitting cause of a whole concatenation of destruction

somehow or another, and sometimes his feeling for that will cause a dub, and he will hold himself responsible for the confoundedest things. And you say, "Well, it's a dub..." but he'll hold himself responsible. Oh God, he's the fellow who did this and did that, and so forth, but you notice as you run these, his case doesn't get any better. You haven't got the real overt, but there is one there. There is one there, see. There's a real rough one lying back there someplace. He's just trying to run it out, but he can't confront it or come up to it, see. And running out a bunch of false ones isn't going to get the real one.

Now, what's this all amount to? The intelligent use of intelligence and force. You've got to have force and you've got to have intelligence. If you don't have these two things you haven't got anything. And imbalances along that line have occurred over such a long period of time that we find ourselves reduced to a rather static civilization, and the free powerful being, at war with the organized society as an adventure and an action, can be looked upon as a lost war. You've lost. You're here, aren't you? You've got a meat body, haven't you?

So, you might say with this point that a phase – not of us, but a phase of this universe – has taken place and has ended: the phase of the free being. And the free being lost, and he lost to solid, unintelligent but mediumly lying, not totally forceful but not unforceful, mean-level societies; he lost.

Just a few trillion years ago the whole confounded place was all blown up, the suns were disorganized, planets all thrown to hell and everything else. Well, the little guys with the airplanes showed up again, and they still could put up theta traps for this boy.

Well, that was because war had occurred – war of magnitude. And you could work out how this has been occurring, and over the long period of time that it has been occurring, but here you are – here you are. Your fight as a free being of total force and power, and so forth, has finally ended. And that fight in this universe is ended, it's no more, it's over, done. And that cycle is lost.

But another cycle opens up. An old mystic friend of mine would say, "When a wooden door closes an iron door opens." It's been a very unlovely and to a large degree very unpleasant phase, over this vast and long period of time, the free being losing more and more to guile and treachery, losing more and more to medium force and organization in spite of his ability to knock everything kicking – he's nevertheless lost.

What sort of a society opens up toward the future? Well, in the first place, you won't have that kind of free being again. You will never be – never be the same as you were; you can't be the same as you were because you are now an experienced you. Oh, yes, you can be as strong as you ever were, but I don't think you could ever be that stupid again.

You see, you come out at the other end of the cornucopia knowing what the score is. Furthermore, you probably never before had any political or social contact internally to many of these meat-body societies. You've been in and out of them from time to time, but you've never taken a look at them with a worm's-eye view in one of these things to amount to anything.

You realize that they have sociological frailties, they have political frailties of one kind or another. And, that the total destruction of them amounts to nothing, because guys totally dedicated to starting up another one, and so forth, appear elsewhere and do start up an-

other one; you always get this phenomenon occurring. They cannot be obliterated. And I don't think you'll ever again just try to just obliterate, because we've learned it can't be done.

But they can be managed; they can be handled. It takes intelligence and force. They can be managed, they can be handled, they can be helped and they can be thrown on a reverse vector.

Now, you say, what does this mean for the future? Does this mean that there will be no more free beings? Oh, I'd hate to think of that, man. I reserve my right to go sit on a mountaintop for a few trillennia and take a long breath, you understand? Particularly after these last thirteen years. Anyway... [laughs]

The point I am making here – the point I am making here is the use of intelligence with force can maintain a freedom of action, and so on, without racking up a new bank, without racking up new overts, without the war again turning entirely against one.

There's never been a lasting or intelligent society of free beings. You say, how could you have a society of free beings? Well, in the first place, you can't do without a society of free beings. That is to say, it's all very well for everybody to be totally on his own, but look where this gets everybody. It gets everybody downscale in the long run so that it doesn't work. And if you mean a totally irresponsible freedom – if that's the definition of freedom, see, total irresponsibility all up and down the line – well, you're not talking about freedom, you're talking about catastrophe.

What it takes – what it takes is know-how and force – not know-how in how to play the force. You probably know how to mock up a body, you probably know how to do this, that, the other thing; these tricks are pretty easy. That isn't the missing intelligence. The missing intelligence is: a balanced technology. If you know how to enslave people, everybody knows how to enslave people, then they equally should know how to free people. If they are going to make up matter, matter, matter, and so forth, well, fine, let's not be quite so insistent on the matter being totally indestructible. And let's also specialize in being able to as-is matter as easily as we make it. In other words, let's bring the thing back into a little bit better balance.

When these meat-body societies start whizzing along, well, don't just disorganize the whole thing like stirring into an anthill. That's a silly thing to do. Why? Why is it silly? Well, the laws of life are against it. These ants kicking the bucket go over and make a society over there. Look, while they're there in the anthill, you can – you still got them, you can do something with them, you understand? But every time you just totally disperse them, boom! you see. Oh, they're just going to make another anthill, and it's going to be mad as hell at anything like you, you see. So the war is begun, right there.

No, it... the universe can do a lot of growing up. It can do a lot of growing up.

At this end of the line we have technology; we have technology that can make an OT. The technology has to be very skillfully applied. That's mostly because everybody has skidded so low, they are rough to handle as cases. We needn't have let it go this long, but it had to go this long because no opportunity offered itself.

Now, the war of everybody on his own, everybody responsible, everybody total force and everybody with the brains of a peanut: that cycle has ended, that cycle's got to be ended. It's not because I say it'll be ended, but because you'll think twice before you start it rolling again.

No, I think we – I think – as free beings, that any freedom, to be maintained, has to be maintained. Freedom is something you work at, and freedom is something you work at intelligently. If you think you are going to stay Clear or OT simply by never destroying anything again, you're nuts. You're going to destroy lots of things from time to time, and so forth.

How do you build up a building unless you take down the building that is sitting in the place where you're going to put up the building'.? You can't do it, you see. Well, there's always inevitably a bit of destruction.

And let me assure you that total mental treatment of criminals in a society doesn't work. The only way to handle a criminal is to give him mental treatment – you never do anything but give him mental treatment. Well, you needn't hang him or burn him or do other things of this particular character, but just turn him over to the psychiatrists as his total punishment, who turn him loose in three days – gives you nothing but a criminal society. You got your hands on the boy, why don't you use it? There are limited technologies for straightening the kinks out on somebody without making an OT out of him. There's a lot of technology lying around one way or the other. But for sure, if somebody robbed a store, I'd be very likely to tell him, "Well, as soon as you can pay the storekeeper for his loss of goods and trouble, why, you can go free, boy." You know, there's compensation.

You see, freedom without barriers of any kind whatsoever is an insupportable freedom. In the first place, there's nothing for you to push against, nothing to be free of. So it makes a very interesting problem. It's an interesting philosophic problem which I'm not in this lecture, in any way, intending to solve for you. I am just pointing out that a long cycle of this universe has come to an end, not because you're here, particularly – it happens to be at an end all *over*.

The free, ferocious being versus the meat-body society. That's over. And the battle was lost and that free being doesn't exist anymore. All right.

So, at this point of the line we're shifting gears on the whole game of the universe. That's an adventurous thing to do. This is a noteworthy time, and the only way we're doing it is, quite simply, we're just putting some intelligence along with the force. We've got the know-how and the technology necessary to handle the problem which has never before been handled: Indoctrination in how to make things that always last forever inevitably and never go away, and no indoctrination in making things disappear, painlessly and without chaos. These two points are singularly unintelligent. And I just thought I had better say something about them, point them out and so on, with regard to this.

From here on out you will find that your attitude toward a being who is getting up in power and who's acting loopy as the devil will very definitely be different than it was before. You normally would say to that bird, "Well, just get away from here and don't bother us anymore." I rather think sometime in the future you'll say, "Hey, you..." Huh-huh!

Well, I'm reminded of an engram I ran out of my pc. She saw this black thetan sitting there and she decided to do something for him and help him. So she poured him all over with white energy to wash off all the black energy, and that didn't work and he wouldn't get white, and she got very mad and stamped him into the ground. Now, that's – [laughs] – that's a processing lose, and that wasn't my engram to give you but I think my pc will forgive me. But that's an exasperation, isn't it? A thetan has always had the impulse to help but not the technology to do so.

This is all highly esoteric and theoretical. But the composition of what is an overt act contains omission – seldom looked at. It's omission not to do things for the greatest good of the greatest number of dynamics; that becomes an overt act. And one cannot maintain his freedom in the face of an overt act of that magnitude.

All intelligence and force are not good by a long ways, but it requires a combination of force and intelligence to continue any position or status in this universe. It requires both of them. Unbalanced, why, it all goes to pieces.

Total force without intelligence, total intelligence without force, are equally myths. They do not make for anything but disaster.

When you're getting up along the line, you will ask yourself these things and you will say, "Well, now, does this person deserve to be free? Do I dare push this person – he's been a bad boy – do I dare push him any closer to OT? " You'll find out, oddly enough, that you can't push him any closer to OT than he can accept the definition of an overt and his responsibility. It's a very limiting factor.

Now, technologically, aside from your skill in doing a very few things and doing them very well, I know now of no other barrier to OT, I don't know of any barrier. Hence, I'm talking about this subject to you not on the basis of, "Well, what you ought to do is get yourself all freed up and take the top off the Empire State Building or pick your teeth with the Chrysler Building." This... I'm not talking to you along that line whatsoever. I'm talking to you quite in another way now. The goal is quite assured – the goal is quite assured, on the exact technology which you are using at this moment, and your skilled application and intelligent application of it will make you arrive there. Some be quite a time on the way, and some will be a shorter time on the way, and so forth. That's all taken for granted. Some are worse off than others, and so forth, that's taken for granted.

When you finally get down to the final action of OT, well, just what are you making? This will occupy your minds in the very near future, just what is the end product of all this?

And if I could tell you – if I could tell you that, yes, each person, just irresponsibly by all of us, is just let free to go and wander and do anything he pleases anyplace – not that we would discipline him particularly – but just let free to go anyplace and do anything he wants, and it's all up to him and that sort of thing... I'm telling you that this is a shortsighted irresponsibility, which will again almost immediately wind us up in the soup.

We have to continue to take our responsibility for our fellows, we have to go on with that. And we can't continue to exist on an irresponsible line of just forgetting and abandoning everybody and anybody and "leave them on the theta pole, so what," you know, this kind of

an attitude. Because that kind of an attitude breeds for each one of us entrapment in the long run.

We have to learn to take care of our own because we will have made that own with our own lily-white E-Meters.

Thank you very much.

AUDITING SKILLS FOR R3R

A lecture given on 10 July 1963

Thank you. Well, this is what?

Audience: The 10th, the 9th.

The 10th?

This is the 10th of July AD 13, Saint Hill Special Briefing Course. I have a lecture today on R3R and 3N.

But before we get onto these – these technical matters, it's a remarkable world we're living in. Very remarkable world. How can anything be as idiotic at some lines and places as they can be is quite marvelous. I have a banker today who is arguing with me and the only thing I could make out of it – he's just arguing with me vociferously not to reduce any loans I have with the bank or reduce overdrafts and he's trying to make me realize that he's – I don't need any overdraft account, since he's perfectly willing to extend me all the overdrafts that I possibly want anyplace, and not – please not reduce my loan account, you see. [laughter] It was quite remarkable. This is – Scientology credit-wise apparently has arrived. [laughs] Marvelous. Never had it happen to me before! [laughter] "Please owe us money, Dr. Hubbard." [laughs, laughter]

It's very funny, you know, at the times when you need this money, they're never in that frame of mind. You know, never in that frame of mind. But when you get to a point where you don't need any money, you see, you've got everything taped in all directions and so forth, they couldn't be so liberal. Marvelous, isn't it? It's the law of supply and no demand – demand and no supply.

Anyway, you are confronting some horrible facts today, talking about R3R, you're confronting some horrible facts. I have some very bad news for you. Very difficult for me to impart this to you and so on, but we have the exact number of skills necessary to make an OT. That's – I'm sorry to have to tell you that – this, because they are not simple skills. And that is the bad news. That is the bad news. They are not simple skills and they are numerous.

Now, I brought the bulletin out yesterday which is being run off today in order to talk to you from my notes. But following in my tradition of having no notes and so forth – I brought the bulletins I don't need today, and the ones that I had yesterday which I should have today, you see – that's being run off, so I don't have it today.

The number of skills – the number of skills which you have to master in order to make an OT are numerous. And I'm not going to go into a list of these because you'll shortly have it in HCOB, I think, 8 July or 9 July. But these skills are going to make you gasp a little bit when you first look at them, unless I give you a good piece of news. And that is that they

break down to about five skills which you have been taught for a long time and which unfortunately you have to have perfect. And those skills are: the ability to follow an auditing cycle – can you give an auditing cycle? That auditing cycle is quite important.

And the next one is: can you give it repetitively? Can you repeat yourself? That's quite important, too. That's a special skill. You see, you could sit down and give one auditing cycle, but can you give the next auditing cycle and the next auditing cycle and the next auditing cycle? Now, you say that isn't very hard. Years ago we had to master that one, so we've got that one taped. Got that one taped.

And the next one is: to read a meter. And I do mean read a meter. You have to be able to read a meter – and do very well with a meter.

Next one is: you have to be able to read, understand and follow the procedure of a bulletin. That is a training skill all by itself.

The last one is somewhat debatable and I don't know what I said in the bulletin on the last one, but it's something on the order of: Keep a pc in-session. Handle a Model Session.

And those, actually, are the basic skills – those are the basic skills that we go down to. And any time – now hear me, hear me now – any time that you find an auditor unable to handle one of these upper procedures, you look back at those five I just gave you and there is something wrong with those five. This character just can't seem to run something like R3R or 3N – just can't seem to handle it. Can't seem to handle 2H, can't seem to cut it, you know? Just can't seem to do anything with the pc in CCHs, just can't seem to – and you look back at that small list I have just given you and you will find that the fault lies *there*. The fault does not lie in the complexity of the skill.

Now I give you this with great – a great margin of warning on this because this is whether you can train people or not train people. This is whether you personally as an auditing supervisor can get auditing done or not get it done – completely aside from getting result on the case that you are doing.

When you see an auditor who is getting no results and you've told him to run technique Z and he just can't seem to cut it, you're just going to break your heart if you then get ahold of technique Z and wrap it around his head and expostulate and scream and pound the desk and shove technique Z at him and technique Z at him and technique Z at him and then send him back into an auditing room to audit technique Z and you're going to get hash. And then you're going to conclude that technique Z doesn't work. But you have followed the wrong procedure.

I don't say don't teach him technique Z – but if you have to get very extreme in teaching him technique Z or if there's anything hard about teaching him technique Z, it isn't technique Z that you are up against. You are up against the five I just gave you. One or more of those is as wrong as Khrushchev. That's awry! It is awry, man.

Now, do you understand what I mean when I tell you that no amount of persuasion is going to take an auditor who can't do these basic skills and make him do a complicated skill?

Now, no amount of persuasion on an upper level or complex technology – no amount of persuasion, is going to overcome these basic technologies. The difficulties which you're up against are the difficulties of basic skills.

Now, you like to think sometime that you're up against case level. To some degree that is true. But all case level does is make it harder for you to teach the basic skills. It does not make it impossible for you to teach the basic skills. And if you ever proceed on the basis that case level makes it impossible for you to teach the basic skills, then you are going to lose. You're not going to lose on just one person, you're going to start losing on pc after pc after pc after pc.

I've had the most remarkable people audit. My belief in their ability to audit amounted to more than their case level. I've had a girl who was mostly throbbing away at the lower lip as she gazed out the windowpane fixedly most of her life, headed at a pc, and, "Now, you can do this," see, and so on.

"Oh, can I? ... Maybe I can."

And they go ahead, and I've had her go ahead and turn in a job. Oh, yeah, you had to keep your eye on it. That gives you a slightly different look at training.

You see, you get so involved with a Q and A on training that you can't train. And the Q and A is this: The guy is saying, "I can't," and so you Q-and-A and say, "Okay, you can't." That's Q and A on the part of an Instructor.

Look, if he can't, he's awful wrong. If you make him do it, you make him right. And this is one of the few instances where that is the case. He becomes right if he can do this. And it's only his aberration that you're Qing-and-Aing with, if you say he can't.

I know this is a very extreme view. But I have recently begun to look on it, not as an extreme view of "just because we couldn't do otherwise," which is what I've said before – I've become to look at it as fact. It's a fact. I don't care what the case level is. Discount it as far as the auditor is concerned. The lower the case level, the more horrible time he'll have. All right. But he can get auditing done. The more brutal it'll be to face up to a session, the more horrible it is to face up to the ARC breaks, the more worry there is between sessions – "Oh, my God, what am I doing? I've already ruined him. Look at there, he's got a cold, and – and he's all caved – oh, oh ho! *And – oh oh!*"

All right, that's... aspect of auditing multiplies – but it doesn't forbid it. Now, the moment you let the door open on "aberration forbids it," you've let the door open on "no auditing must occur." Oh, yes, because look at the *reductio ad absurdum* of all this. "Only OTs can audit." Where does that leave you? It leaves you with no OTs to audit. Every once in a while you get it going in an Academy. Do you know that you daren't – you daren't let a D of P or a D of T, either one – D of P of course can say, "We can't audit this person because the person has an insane history, or is illegal" or something like that. But we can't let them get too extreme on who they accept for processing or training. But particularly the D of T. The D of T, honest, must never be permitted to refuse a student.

Aw, that lets some awful things occur in Academies. It makes the job an awful headache. But immediately that you say, "This student can't be admitted to the Academy," then we

upgrade our classification of who can study Scientology and then we upgrade our classification – casewise, see – and only this case level, and then only this case level can study, and *wuuuhh!* And there's all of a sudden nobody in the Academy and nobody learning how to do anything. And look, I've seen it happen. I've sat right there and watched it happen.

And I've taken the very people that they said couldn't audit – sometimes with malice aforethought – and made them turn in an auditing session. Oh, brother, it takes some doing! As your Instructors can sometimes tell you here; they probably could expound on this at some rate. But the truth of the matter is it's a Q and A. This guy's aberrations are saying, "You can't." So the moment that the Instructor says, "All right, you can't," the Instructor is then Qing-and-Aing with the reactive bank of the student. And the student's ability deteriorates at a square the like of which I'd hate to see.

It's quite remarkable how fast this will occur. Now, one time I remember, one memorable ACC – in the last week and a half I decided that no results had taken place in this ACC to amount to anything, so I just went around and all the auditors sitting there and auditing pcs and so forth – each unit as they flip-flopped and so on – and I said do so-and-so and so-and-so and I said, "You can do it all right," and gave them a very complex technology to go ahead and do, but I told them they could do it. I didn't tell them they couldn't do it. And they brought off some remarkable results and all the auditing results that occurred in that ACC occurred in the last week and a half. It was on the basis of "You can do it." And the guy said, "Oh, I can't do it, it worries me so much," and so forth.

"But you're standing here, you're not auditing. Now go on back and audit." It's quite remarkable.

You see, I myself know all about your qualms and horrors and jitters on the subject of taking apart somebody's head. I know all about these things. I've held my breath more often than you ever will. And I can sympathize with you. But it's something you can get over. And I have seen auditors who couldn't audit at all, couldn't follow an auditing cycle, just had to Q and A and so forth – took a while, but they eventually got to a point, said, you know, "Hey! I mustn't Q and A this way. Nearly all of my trouble is in this auditing cycle. Nearly all of my trouble is right here in this auditing cycle. Every time the pc opens his face, why, I do what he says in some particular fashion or I question his answer or something like this. And I'm just going from bad to worse. I never stick to procedure." You know, crash! A great big exclamation point occurs in the sky like they do over comic strip characters, you know? You know, "Hey!" you know. "No, I shouldn't do that." And he wakes up to it and he starts right on the situation.

Therefore, it takes some a little longer to get these basics down than others. Now, all the training that has been given in recent years is pointed toward those basics. So no training is lost. And it takes you a while to learn to shift gears with shifting technology and that sort of thing, but you will find good news in this. Nearly all of the things which you have learned how to do now have their place in Scientology. And if you've learned how to do these things – if under some different procedure name and so forth – well, you're that much further ahead.

When we get down to a complex technology such as Routine 3R, it's a complex technology. Now you join 3R up to 3N and run them all on the same team all with the same

reins... And my God, a one-armed paperhanger with the hives – isn't going to [laughs] – couldn't be in any worse shape than this.

No, you'll only get into bad shape if while you're trying to do this complex technology you haven't learned which side of you the E-Meter goes on. Don't you see? While you're doing this complex technology, all of your weaknesses in the other five show up. If you're still busy Qing-and-Aing, 3R3 can get you into – I mean, R3R can get you into more difficulty in less time... A Q and A isn't just an innocent accident that can be passed over and cleaned up in 3R; it can be a catastrophe! It won't kill the pc, you can recover the session, but boy, it's that whole session is gone.

Now, why? Because he's particularly vulnerable? No, it's what you Q-and-A on. You say, "All right..." Let me give you an actual instance – actual instance. You say, "All right. Now we're going to date this implant."

Pc says, "Well, I've got the picture right here, why don't you take the date of the picture."

"All right, what is the date of the picture? Is it less than, greater than _____?"

An hour later the whole bank goes into a grouper, reality goes by the boards, the pc explodes and his skull flies in pieces through the ceiling. Well, that was an innocent Q and A, wasn't it? The pc just offered up the engram in a muddy sort of a way and thought it was the implant. But the auditor said that he'd been looking for an implant there and he never dated the implant. And some four-thousand trillion trillion years intervened between the picture the pc had and the implant the auditor wanted to date. So he was running the implant with a date error of four-thousand trillion trillion years. Quite an interesting date error, isn't it? Don't you suppose that wouldn't tend to group up some bank? Well, I think that's very interesting.

And yet that isn't much of a Q and A, don't you see? See, I'm not even berating that particular accident. You have to be very slippy about this sort of thing, you see. Well, the auditor just doesn't make his own intention stick in the session, which is the basic reas... how things happen in Q and A. He's trying to locate the date of an implant and the pc gives him an engram which is on an entirely different chain, but which he thinks, muddily, is the implant and then the auditor says, "Well, to make the pc happy, why, we'll just say, 'Well, that's the engram.'" Pc says he has it, so we just Q-and-A about the whole thing.

In other words, the auditor doesn't carry out his intention originally of dating the implant he was looking for in the first place. All he had to do was simply carry out the intention he started with in the first place and he would have been all right. Don't you see? But his tendency to become the effect of the pc slips his gears, see, and he just gets into a cross-eyed situation where he has no business being.

Now, carry out an auditing cycle – carry out a repetitive auditing cycle let's look at how this influences it. The auditor says, "I'm going to date this implant." You see? This is carrying out an auditing cycle. You might not look at this as being an auditing cycle, but it is. "I'm going to date this implant now." And the pc says, "I have an engram here which I have been looking at which is the implant." And the auditor never gets his question answered,

which understood, the question is, "When is this implant?" No, no, he gets, "When is this engram?" Do you see how that is?

In other words, he intends something and he never gets it answered. He wants to know when is the implant, see. No matter if he has to go over the meter and do a lot of things in order to determine this thing, this is still his auditing question. And the pc says, "It's a picture," so he dates the picture and he never finishes off his auditing cycle. And then a couple of hours later you're still picking up the pieces scattered around the room and you wonder, "What the hell happened?" Well, frankly, nothing happened to R3R at all. The error was not R3R error. The error is that the auditor wanted, and knew he had to get, the date of a certain implant. And he didn't get it. Ha! Elementary, my dear Watson, isn't it? You want to know what happened to the auditing session.

Well, whatever else might have occurred as an error in the auditing session – you could be very technical about all this – the auditor's question, "When is this implant?" is answered by "Here is an engram, get its date." And these things can slide by so innocently that you can't even recognize them as a Q and A. Too delicate. You say, "Well, I've got to take the pc's data," you can say, muttonheadedly. Well, you've got to take the pc's data.

All right, the pc says, "This was the engram in which the implant occurred." Well, he didn't actually, in this case, say that. But even if the pc said that, the auditor has to choose between invalidating the pc and getting his data straight and all this sort of thing, you get into judgment, you get into an involvement of one kind or another. You say, "Well, all that's very complicated." No, it is not very complicated because never at any time did the auditor ask if it was the date of the implant.

In other words, you just derail the whole procedure. He started running Routine 3R.

Now, here's what's amusing about this anecdote: is the auditor wasn't running R3R, but 3N. And mysteriously found himself running – or found it in progress – R3R. And did the ARC break assessment on 3N. But was in actual fact doing R3R. Now, look at that as a further complication.

Now, you wonder where we are here. I notice you all looking very puzzled. Well, an implant is an engram. And the auditor in this case went to the lengths of getting the date and duration of an engram, which had nothing whatsoever to do with the implant. You don't get durations of implants. Ninety percent of the time you don't even have to bother getting their dates. And if the auditor had just omitted dating this implant, everything would have run off like a well-oiled dream. Because they knew what chain of implants they were looking for and the session – to be very factual with you – was actually a 3N session. And they found themselves doing R3R. Now, how involved do you think that can get?

Well, how do you possibly differentiate between these two things? It's horrible. Well, I might have added to the five, "To run the process they're running." But I consider that inherent in the auditing cycle.

You get the level of error? This is the only thing I'm trying to get across to you – the level of error is all very, very stupidly elementary. Always! You're really not getting into errors which have anything whatsoever to do with R3R or 3N. This auditor apparently has diffi-

culty running the process which is started on and has a tendency to weasel off into other processes. That tendency existing, then doesn't hold the line on a very precise process. This is not meant in a spirit of criticism; I'm just showing you something, see. Start in running CCHs, see, and then just kind of weasel off into Reach and Withdraw. Be the same thing, wouldn't it? All right, well, that's a gross tendency that any of you could notice. But how about the tendency of – carried out... no matter how faint this tendency is – it still expresses itself in not adhering to a procedure. Not starting and finishing an auditing cycle. Because an auditing cycle also includes completing the process you are running. Part of the auditing cycle; that's the major auditing cycle. You flatten the process you're running.

I want to make these points with you, not in a spirit of criticism or any derogation. And I want to make these points with you for just this reason: You're colliding with something which on the surface looks very complicated. 3N and R3R look very complicated. Got all kinds of steps and has all about time track and... Have to list, assess, find right levels, watch the TA like a hawk. And you're not going to have any trouble with those at all if you can do the basics of auditing. Actually, it really isn't complicated. If anything is wrong with R3R, it's too idiotically simple.

We have here a process which after all these years runs engrams by rote. Well, that's fantastic! But you can't run an engram by rote if you can't read and execute a bulletin. You say, "Well, oh, yeah, yeah, well, that's Book One and so forth, and I think there was something about implants in Book One. Aw, yeah, well, I understand implants all right, I – di – implants... And so forth. We had a technique one time, we had a pc sit down and he flowed the energy from the top of his head down around his shoulders and that must have been 3... Oh, yeah, I guess that's 3N. Yeah. Very easy. All right. All right, sit there and have the energy flow from both of your temples down over your shoulders. Yes, well, all right. What's the matter? You say there's kind of – something going on? Well, it's all right, just" – and so on.

Pc says, "Well, it's – this is absolutely terrible." [laughter]

"Dear Ron, I was running 3N the other day, and it doesn't work."

Aw, your level of error – your level of error is fantastic. It's never slight. I never find these gross audit... that's why you call them "gross auditing errors," because they're never slight – never slight.

All right, so somebody comes along and he does 3R3 and he dates these engrams and he gets these engrams all dated and so forth and the pc keeps getting groups of engrams and thinks he's running dub-in, and you say, "Well, study your 3R3 and do those steps better and learn how to move the pc on the time track better and don't get things confused the way you're confusing and moving the pc on the time track."

And the pc gets his engrams further grouped and he's ARC breaking more often and you say, "Now, confound it, study that bulletin! Study that bulletin! Learn to say 'move to the beginning of the incident,' and 'move through the incident to a point so forth years later.' Learn how to do that!" Pc is getting worse and worse. Eyes getting black, you see, getting to look haggard, crunched over, you know, starts withdrawing from life. And you say, "Well, this 3R3 is a pretty dangerous process. Look what it can do to somebody."

Ah, but if... now here's what I'm telling – telling you to do. This you might not do – is look into these basics with regard to this auditor. Look into the basics. You may find something like can't read a meter; never has been able to read a meter. Well, let me tell you, the greatest crimes that you can pull and the only thing that'll give you any *real* trouble in R3R, the only *real* trouble you will have, will come from wrong date and wrong duration. And that trouble is so far in advance and so high above any other trouble that you can have in doing R3R, that it looks like the sun looking down upon some space fragments. I mean, the order of magnitude is absolutely fantastic.

Meter reading. The guy wasn't having any trouble with R3R, he was having trouble with his meter. He had some misconception with regard to a meter; his practice with regard to meters was bad. Or, better than that, he just didn't understand dating. He couldn't ever use a meter, really, on dating, and he couldn't get his durations and so forth.

Now look, it's very difficult for an expert meter reader to get the dates and durations of engrams or incidents or anything else. You understand? That's tough; that's hard to do. Let's now add to that difficulty an inability to read a meter! Now you see what I mean. Pc will never chop at you for moving him all over the time track unless you've already laid in the bypassed charge of a wrong date or a wrong duration, because time is the single source of aberration. Wrong date, wrong duration.

Now, when I say a wrong date, you've got this incident at 9.5 trillion years ago. And it's actually 9.49 trillion years ago. That's not a wrong date. Look for your gross errors – *gross* errors! Well, this incident is 900 years ago. And it's really 9.45 trillion. Ah, boy! You start running errors in dates like that into R3R and boy, that time track looks like an accordion after a hot night in the – in the polka parlor. *Zzzzzzzzzzzz*. You say, "What's this?" Used to be a time track. The bypassed charge is fantastic! You've missed the whole incident, put it in the wrong place; and then you'll say, "Well, this pc is actually a dub-in pc because they – here he's got this picture of going down to the growler – or rushing down to the – to the local corner saloon and getting a growler for his old man, see – this is – this is the – the whole incident. Next thing you know, halfway down to the saloon he meets this dragon and finds himself mounted on a horse and the pc will say, "Well, the old man must have had DTs, and I must have gotten some of his engrams and so forth." And you run a little bit further and you say, "Well – well, let's see, what's the scenery look like around there?"

"Well, I don't know, like the 1890s or something like that."

And you say, "Well, 1890s. Let's redate this thing. Oh, 1890, all right." Pc just said it so it ticks, see.

You ever notice that you can pick a date off the coach that the coach is thinking of? Well, a dating always will. It'll always – all the guy has got to do is said the date and you'll get some tick on it. He'll say a date and it – for an instant it flicks. Or you can't get a date. You don't have to do anything about it, but he says, "1890" and so on.

Now, this actually is true that a pc does have the date, and the right date does read. But then he told you the date of the incident, don't you see? I'm saying, well, he just said the figure's 1890. 1890 will get a faint, vesperish tick. It'll only do one tick. It won't do two ticks, three ticks.

Say, "All right, it's in 1890." Well, he gets – he doesn't get the dragon anymore, but he gets going up in this airplane, you see, to deliver the beer in an airplane and so forth, but he says there's something wrong about this because there were no airplanes in 1890. Orville and Wilbur didn't commit their crime until a few years later, so therefore there's something wrong with this – and the auditor's in perfect agreement; he says, "Well, this pc's running dub."

No, he's not running dub. The auditor is running "can't read a meter." That's what's the matter. Now, you eventually get this all tangled – untangled and you do an assessment and you find out you have a wrong date or something and you find that this is 9.45 trillion years, and he did go down to the saloon to get his old man some beer, but halfway there the atom bomb hit. And you get a complete incident and it all unrolls and it's all fine, pc's happy with it and it reduces and so forth.

You might say that a dub-in case is only somebody that's got his dates mixed up. You could probably cure a case of dub-in just by accurately dating. Start into this lifetime and keep going back and just date, date, date and you probably could close up a case that was doing dub, because the only time you get time track closure and other things happening and so forth is when you have wrong dates.

Now, that's very important, then, isn't it? Let's take a look at this wrong duration. Nothing drives a pc battier than to have a wrong duration. You say, "All right, this incident is two days long." It's actually a trillion years long. He tries in vain to find the beginning of the incident. He can't. Because he's looking at something that happens two days before. So it stays all black and gruesome and he can't make sense out of it and he's all anaten and that sort of thing.

Well, after a while – because whenever you get this phenomenon you re-duration – that is the rule – if you have any trouble and you can't find the beginning of an incident – this is what made R3R. I haven't released this, by the way, before this moment. But what made R3R workable is this datum: That a pc has perception on any incident that is properly dated and durationed. That's the most important factor we've learned in many a year. There's where perceptics lie.

Now, there's only three reasons why he doesn't have perception on the incident that you're trying to run. There are only three reasons. You have the wrong date or the wrong duration or it's got a GPM in it. And those are the only three things that can close an engram out so the pc can't run it.

Now, you can add another thing to it – and actually that doesn't close out his perceptions and it becomes very junior. But you can add this other thing to it, just for fun, and you could say it's a wrong assessment, but all that does is give you TA action. Or the chain you're running has vanished; you've flattened the chain you are running. Once more, you won't be able to assess – pardon me, you've got a wrong assessment. And you're now running him on the wrong chain. The chain he was running is flat.

But that all represents itself in tone arm action and actually doesn't really always express itself in nonperception. The whole secret of perception – the secret of perception in an engram is: *right chain, right date, right duration equals perception. Period.* Every time, man!

And the only thing that can get in the road of that thing is a GPM, and you pass the pc through it once – and because he resisted all the way through it – he had a lot of black energy in there, you see. The black energy goes up, *bzzzz!* – and of course obscures the incident.

I found the other day an engram that had a GPM in it. I didn't know it had a GPM in it before I ran the pc through it a couple of times. It registered and then didn't register that it had a GPM in it – so I said, "Well, we'll just run the pc through it." And I didn't really know that the thing had a GPM into it until the lights in a tunnel went out. A moment before there had been lights in this tunnel. But now this time through there's no lights in the tunnel. So the old maestro knew at once that we had rekindled those items and made the black energy off of the items go *bzzzzt* and of course it put out the lights. So I got the incidents – I got the... took the pc to the first pair of items, and it was a wildcat GPM and you've got to learn how to run those. That's another skill you have to learn – ha-ha – sorry! [laughter] But the basic ones and the real tough ones, we've got them clear back to the beginning of time. We know their patterns all the way back. I haven't released them completely, but actually the April 17th bulletin covers some vast period of time. That's the Gorilla Implants and the Bear Implants, and they cover a vast, vast period of time – trillions of trillions of years. And that only changed just once. They dropped a couple of items out of it in the middle of all of this.

Otherwise we've got all that. We got the – an earlier implant, the Glade Implants, we've got those; we've got the earlier Fairgrounds or Circus Implants before that; we – we've got the lot, see. And that's all very helpful. And you'll say, "Thank God, Ron got these things." But every now and then you'll be running an engram in R3R and one of the things which you have to watch out for is, does it have an implant in it? Before you scoot the pc through it, be a good thing to find this out about it. So, did it have an implant in it, see, while you're durationing it.

And heh-heh! It has an implant in it. *Augghh*. Well, the proper procedure is not to throw the pc through the incident, but to take him through the first pair of items in the implant, if there are any. And finally fool with it until you finally find out what it's all about, discharge the items out of it. Sometimes there are only a half a dozen items. And get those, you'll see them fire, rocket read, you clean it up and then just handle it as an engram and you'll get the rest of it. You get motion and that sort of thing out of it, get some of the emotion out of it and so on. Pick up two more items that you missed and clean it up. It's a wildcat implant, see, and they're never very long – they are never very, very difficult. The pc, if it's on his chain, can reach them for sure.

But there's a point in running where 3N and R3R cross. And frankly, as far as programming is concerned, I would always start a case on R3R and pick up those implants which turned up in the normal progress of running R3R. I found myself going heigh-ho down the Helatrobis Implants, get the lot! Don't just pick his chain up, you know, just get everything you can lay your paws on in that series of implants. Heigh-ho. Clean them up, man. Got your paws on them. Then go on and handle it as an engram. You've got it clean now.

Now – then you'd always find the engrams that are on the pc's chain that are obscuring the implants. Of course, we're asking you to drive the 20-mule team Borax mules, you know, out there, with reins wrapped around both hands and, you know, and around your shoulders

and driving with your toes – because at any minute, you check up this thing, got an implant in it. Well yeah, it's an implant, and what... You'll have a table of dates eventually to tell you when all these implants occur. And you say, "What's..." And you – suddenly dawns on you, "43 trillion, 980 billion, 706 – that's Helatrobos. Zzz!" "You know, I've been betrayed." We have the level "Failed to die," and you've got the goal "Failed" in the Helatrobos Implants. You're sitting right on it, see. Which is preceded slightly by "To die." Ha-ha.

Now, you have to know how to shift that transmission, that – with a smooth shifting of gears right over to 3N. And you just go ahead and handle the whole thing, right there. And forbear tracing back up the track and not handling any more engrams and scattering everything around. Just finish what you're doing. It landed you there, you found the engram, you found the computation in the engram, you just got whatever you could get your hands on, cleaned up as much of it as you could and then you jolly well went back to running what you were running, of course, because you've never stopped running it. You have just used 3N as an adjunct to R3R, which is all it is anyway.

That's all 3N is; it's just an adjunct to R3R. It gives you how to run implants – implant engrams the easy way, by pattern. And when you get onto a wildcat one, you've got a few more headaches but it's just because you haven't got a pattern; you've got to take the pattern.

Now, when we go into this and study this over, we find out that there are a lot of technical details you have to know. Such as, how do you assess for an ARC break. "We did a half-a-page list on the pc and the tone arm went from 3 to 5.5 to 4 – and the moment it got back to 4 we had a sort of a blowdown so we ended the list. And I – I null the list and pc just seems to be awfully ARC broke and we just don't seem to get anyplace on R3R after this." Well, you have to know such things as pcs ARC break if you do not run the tone arm action out of the list the pc is doing.

You're going to do a list, you got to do a list. A list is a list! I don't care what it's for – and if you leave a list half-finished you not only won't find any item on it that is any good to the pc, but your pc's going to ARC break. The most frequent source of ARC breaks in the old days was incomplete lists. The guy never finished the list. Or overcompleted lists. You know, the list was complete at fifteen pages and they're just now passing page 75 and the – and the pc hasn't been able to think of any new items since page 20. But they've still been grinding on, the auditor keeps getting in the mid ruds and asking him, "In this lifetime, what have you failed about?" On and on and on and on until you get – list's been complete forever.

Most frequent source of ARC breaks is – around any listing action – is simply an incomplete list, that's all. You could take any arbitrary list and assess the pc on it. Because the pc didn't do it, it is therefore not incomplete because he never started it. You know, it's like your Prehav levels and the preliminary step list of items – I mean levels to be to run. Well, you can do all of those that you want to and you're not going to ARC break the pc unless you get a completely incorrect level.

And that can be very embarrassing to the pc. And I've given the source of this list so that if you ever run into it and you just can't find anything on this list – or if you're – the auditor doing it can't find any level on this list at all, I've given you where these lists came from so you can get ahold of some of the old lines and put a "failed" to it; put it and a "failed" to it and

a "not" to it and you can go on and extend this list considerably. I've given you the sources for this list and you have all those. They're about every thought or combination of anything that man and life has. But this is adequate for most pcs and it doesn't matter whether the level list is complete or not, because it's an arbitrary list. Pc didn't do it, so therefore it doesn't stand as an incomplete list. Ah, but the other list – now you – you're up against all the rules of Listing. And that's quite a skill; Listing and Nulling is quite a skill. And what does it do? It goes back to meter reading. Get your auditing cycle completed.

When you confront these complex processes, make sure that your nerviness does not stem from an inability to place the pc's chair. You get the idea? See? You're saying, "I'm having all kinds of trouble with R3R." Well, before you conclude anything about R3R – oh yeah, go on and study it and learn it and so forth – but you just can't seem to make it work. Before you conclude anything catastrophic with regard to this whatsoever, let's take a look at what you are doing that makes up R3R that makes you nervous. And you'll probably find out that listing makes you very nervous, or something, and you find out, "Well, why does listing make me very nervous? Oh, well, I..." It'll be something like this: "I've just never mastered the art of writing things while I was looking at a meter to see if they read. Yeah, something like that." And you say, "Oh – Oh well, no wonder we're having such a hell of a time in this assessment."

In other words, go back to basic things like your meter, your session, auditing the pc. Auditing cycle. Q and A. Pc keeps getting ARC broke – you can't figure out why he's getting ARC broke and every time you try to find it out – well, you didn't accept something the pc said. You had better conclude sooner or later that you must be doing a Q and A of some kind or another. There must be something wrong with your auditing cycle. Otherwise your pc wouldn't continue to get ARC broke. Look it over and patch it up.

Now, therefore, learn to play this game called auditing on its fundamentals. And when you feel very competent with its fundamentals, why, then I don't think that you will have much awe of a procedure which is simply a complex application of these fundamentals. There really isn't very much to R3R. Guy has got a time track and you're going to run him through these things and you're going to come a cropper sometimes – going to come a cropper sometimes with it. Why? Well, it isn't because you didn't tell him to move to the beginning of the incident – it isn't anything elementary like that – or you didn't follow your procedure – it isn't anything involved. You'll find out, well, you had something like a wrong duration. You just continued to get wrong durations. And eventually, running this pc, you finally get it through your knucklehead that this pc just won't date on this chain that you are running.

And you finally say... trace this thing back. "Well, let's see. Let's trace this thing back here. Now, what did I do? So-and-so and so on and so on and so on and so on. Oh, we must – he – he doesn't have any tone arm action either. Oh, we must not have the right assessment. Something is wrong with the assessment. Well, how could there be anything wrong with the assessment?" And it suddenly dawns on you that you have absolutely no confidence whatsoever in being able to clean up a pc's needle so you can assess. Nothing wrong with R3R, see. You're having trouble – you're having trouble handling a session and handling a meter.

So on this pc, without going back and putting yourself through a course or something like that – on this pc right then, you decide, "Well, all right, to hell with it, this thing has got no tone arm action so I must have a wrong assessment. That's it. So there's something wrong with the item or there's something wrong with the level. That's all. All right, now what could be wrong with those? Well, I just must not have done what I was supposed to do to find the item – or to find the level from which I got the item. Now something is wrong in that department.

"Well, how come I could – would get a wrong assessment on this pc? Well, I've – let's see. Let's see, his needle was awful dirty. As a matter of fact, his needle is still dirty. As a matter of fact I've never seen a clean needle on this pc! Ahh! Hey, hey – I think I've got it. I think I got it. I think this pc – I've never had this pc in-session. Ha-ha-ha-ha-ha. Excuse me!" [laughter]

"Ah," so you say, "Well, now let's – let's put this pc in-session. This pc has been roughed up a few times and so forth; let's just run 'in auditing,' eighteen-button Prepcheck." Something elementary. Only in this particular case, why, we're just going to run them until we've got a bit of a clean needle and we're not going to bother the pc and so forth because that seems to be a weak spot, here. So let's just kind of – let's run a sort of an eighteen-button Prepcheck on auditing and let the pc answer it any way he wants to, and we'll say it's clean when it's clean and we'll just kind of ease this thing out and so forth. Boy, we find out all kinds of things. This pc has been withholding, and he's been suppressing and he's been upset with this and he's been in disagreement with that and so forth, and you know? You thought you couldn't run R3R. Well, no, you just didn't have the pc in-session. See, elementary, my dear Watson. How can you do an assessment on somebody who isn't in-session?

So you trace this – always trace this back to these stupid fundamentals. And your main danger as an auditor is – the main danger that you run into – is that you're too complicated. You're not – you're insufficiently idiotable. See, if you would just – if you would just recognize that the simplicities of the game make it hang together and work – if you'll just recognize that, why, you'll have some fantastic wins here and there. Look it over. And eventually you'll get very cocky about these things and it'll all fall into line with you and so forth.

But the reason you're not achieving a result here or there on a complex technology goes back to these early ones. You either aren't doing it, you aren't doing it in an auditing session because you haven't got a session, or you suddenly discover that there's something wrong between you and the pc and this meter. This pc does not register well on this meter. Why? Well, I'll let you in on something. The greatest errors that you can make in R3R – the greatest errors that you can make – are wrong date and wrong duration. Those outshine any other error. You can even make progress with a wrong assessment, you understand? Those are just enormous. They ride up there at the umpteen skillion light-year level, see? And way down below these things is wrong assessment.

Well, there's two ways we can get a wrong assessment. We can have had a wrong assessment in the first place, and we could actually have run it out so that we are now running on a wrong assessment, because you see, we flattened the first assessment. In which case – both cases, the TA will remain without motion. You won't have adequate motion in the TA.

Now, the only other thing that can kill TA motion, as far as R3R is concerned, is this astronomic fact of wrong date, wrong duration – they'll kill TA motion. Wrong date, wrong duration, bang! No TA motion; that's it.

I've been studying TA motion here, lately – what makes it and that sort of thing, and I finally found these facts out. And so there's this enormously important fact – just cannot be overstressed. Wrong date, wrong duration. Those are crash. Anytime you're really having any trouble with it you've got wrong dates and wrong durations. I mean, that's all. You understand? I mean, that's *waaay* up there.

The other point here, wrong assessment, well, the only thing that leads to is just no TA action and not much pc interest and you're not getting much done on the case and so forth and so on. It's not going to ruin the case, don't you see?

And flatten the chain – you flatten the chain, and you said, "Well, a chain couldn't flatten in one engram." Yet you did. You flattened it in one engram. What you found was basic on that chain. You know, it flattens in a hundred or it flattens in one or... it's no point – has nothing to do with where the engram is on the time track. The engram can be yesterday; just yesterday. And it's basic. Well, you ran – run this engram that you date as yesterday. And you clean it all up and the pc's fine, and the somatics reduce and everything's gorgeous about the thing and you look for an earlier one, you can't get any date, you can't get any...

"Let's see. Is the earlier incident we want gr-gr-greater-greater than 10 days ago? Less than – I don't get any read. Just a minute, get some better light on this..." [laughter] "Now is – is the engram – is the engram, the earlier engram which reduces to absurdum that chain – is the earlier engram earlier than 20 days ago? Is it later than – I mean no, no. No. I mean is it *more* – more than 20 days ago? Le-le-less than 20 days ago? I don't get any read here at all." [fumbles with meter, clears his throat] "Now, maybe it's the wrong order of magnitude. Ah! Is the earlier engram we are looking for on the re – to re-fail to reduce to absurdity, is this more than a hundred trillion years ago? Is it less than a – that doesn't read. More than a hundred? They're both reading. Did you think of something?" [laughter] "All right, let's have another crack at this. Is it more than a hundred trillion years ago? Less – I got a dirty needle here. You thinking of something?" [laughter]

Four sessions later: "Say, I wonder something." Lights dawn, you know? "To fail to reduce to absurdity... fail to reduce to absurdity – it doesn't read." [laughter] "We flattened the chain. Oh, excuse me!" [laughs]

Pc says self-righteously, "Well, I told you I thought that was all there was to it." Pc didn't say a word about it! [laughs]

Well, that's some of the troubles you run into, when you get a wrong assessment. Man, the devil himself with telepathy! The Russians have heard that the Americans are now using telepathy to communicate to the atomic subs – so they now have a Professor of Telepathy who is studying telepathy and he wants to telepath to a group at Oxford University. Only he won't do it because he doesn't think telepathy works. I mean... Our scientific world marches on.

But the point I'm making here is wrong assessment is contributive to wrong date and wrong duration. Because even if you have the right chain, getting a date to read and getting a duration to read is hell. It's horrible! It's very hard to do. With the pc in-session, needle clean, right level, right item, next engram coming up dead-easy, it's difficult. It's not easy to get the right date and the right duration.

Why? Because you've got the date, which is usually the last moment of the engram toward present time. So your duration extends that earlier, see? And if you don't get – and the pc has no reality on how early this thing went because he's only got the last tail of it, which is the part toward present time, so duration doesn't read worth a nickel – dating is easier to do than duration. And brother, I have dated something twice and re-durated it ten times trying to find the beginning of it. When I finally did find the beginning of it, *zing!* Of course, I had to redate it by that time. Because it had now become unreal.

See, its end was so much further away that it made about a – well, it made about a hundred years of error in the date when we finally found the beginning of it. And it was dark and it was terrible and the pc couldn't run it and nothing could be done about it and nobody could find anything in it and it was all a mess and all a mess and all a mess and all a mess, and re-duration, re-duration, re-duration – and then finally got a more proper date, and then duration, and then durated it, and then all of a sudden had the right duration, and bang, pc got to the beginning of the thing, went through it zip-zip-zip, all of the somatics reduced, everything was fine, fine, fine, fine, fine. That pc was running all right, on the right chain. How many re-durationings? Ten.

God help you someday, when you get somebody who has an engram fifteen trillion trillion years long. Try to find the beginning of that! Before you've gone halfway through, of course, your date is so wrong that it's jamming the track anyway. And just time after time, you find the earlier part of it and you find the earlier part of it and you find an earlier part of it – and finally, you finally get it all worked out and you find out that this thing which first registered as one and one-half hours long was actually 15 trillion trillion years in length. Somebody stuck in a mountain that long; couldn't get out.

That's rough. That's hard to do. It's hard to do when everything else is correct. So you've got to have everything else correct and then it can be done. But it is not easy to do when all signs and portents are favorable. Got that?

Now you get a wrong assessment and add it to this. Oh-ho, you've had it. Or you over-run a chain. You've run five engrams on this chain and they don't – no TA action on the last two. The thing was sitting at 5 on the TA and you're getting no TA action, so you just say, "Well, maybe the TA action will pick up. Maybe I've got wrong dates and durations on this thing, maybe the TA I..." Actually pick it up and you say, "Now, is it more than..." You know, "Is the next incident..." You know, "What's the date of the next earlier incident?" See? Get your head back on. TA's up there, hasn't moved for two incidents; 3R3 says that you're supposed to find the basic on the chain. Maybe you did. Maybe you've run two more incidents than you needed to run to flatten it. Maybe the thing's been flat.

But you can't go into esoterics as to whether something is flattened or not flattened or anything else, if you can't even put a pc in-session. How can you run an ARC break when all

your sessioning on the pc is an ARC break? When you won't answer anything the pc tells you, how can you do an ARC break assessment – because you're laying in ARC breaks faster than, of course, you're picking them up by assessment. That's something like the frog that crawls up two inches and falls back three, and he never gets to the top of the well that way. What's in error then? Just your auditing cycle – nothing more elementary than that.

So I'm saying it's not terribly good news that taking somebody all the way to OT requires a number of complicated procedures; this is not very good news. But it is good news that all the errors of these procedures, when they really get erroneous, fall immediately back down to just a very few basics. You can learn how to do those basics, get confidence in that line, recognize that your disabilities in handling other things fall back to those simple basics. Therefore you can always improve those basics so you'll be able to do it, and you've got a clear road ahead of you.

I'm not at all dismayed as far as you're concerned in being able to do these procedures, but I'm looking at what difficulty you are having here or there, and I recognize they're all elementary difficulties; they're not complex difficulties at all. You can do these things – you can do them easily and you can bring off the show. Because, I'm telling you, you're right – you're right here within handshaking distance of making OTs. OT is on the sunny side of a thousand hours right this minute for any pc.

The length of time it'll take him to go OT has intimately to do, much more intimately to do with the auditor's command of basics than it does the state of his case. Because I have made a new discovery which will hearten you a great deal. And that is that case levels VII, VI, V – all of them – have a channel which, if properly assessed, give them clear-running, TA-moving engrams, with no dub. There's always a little channel lies through the bank which is straight, that the pc has a reality on. And that doesn't matter if you're running "brushing teeth." See? He's still got that one. Win on that one, flatten that chain, reassess, get another chain, and he goes up, up, further, further, ability, better, better, better, better. The next thing you know, you've got it made.

You're not up against difficult cases. You're up against rather difficult procedures. And all that your difficult procedures are up against are your ability to handle the basics I've been talking about.

Okay? Thank you.

AUDITING SESSION: PRELIMINARY STEPS OF R3R PART I

An auditing demonstration given on 10 July 1963

LRH: Okay, July 10, 1963. All right, honey. Okay. Your chair's a little aslope – bring that arm up a little bit, would you? Thank you. Now, the room all right?

PC: *Mm-hm.*

LRH: Okay. Is it all right with you if I have a recorder running here?

PC: *Yeah.*

LRH: Is it?

PC: *Mm.*

LRH: Doesn't bother you?

PC: *No.*

LRH: Not making any electrical squeak or anything?

PC: *No.*

LRH: You can hear it?

PC: *It's making a hiss, but it isn't squeaking.*

LRH: That upsetting to you?

PC: *No.*

LRH: Sure?

PC: *Yeah, it's all right!*

LRH: Huh?

PC: *It's all right.*

LRH: All right. All right, put your hands in your lap. Squeeze the cans. Thank you. Havingness is up pretty good.

Tone arm's here at 4.75.

Now, what we're going to do in this session is the preliminary assessment, R3R, and we're going to find a level here, if we can.

PC: *Mm-hm.*

LRH: And start to list if we find a level. Okay?

PC: *Mm. All right.*

LRH: Anything wrong with that?

PC: *No that's all right. It's all right!*

LRH: Not upsetting you in any way?

PC: *No!*

LRH: All right, very good. I have the listing ARC break sheet here, so forth.

PC: *All right.*

LRH: All right, let's hope we find an interesting level. Okay. Is it all right with you if I begin this session now?

PC: *Yes.*

LRH: Okay. Start of session. Has the session started for you?

PC: *Yes.*

LRH: Very good. What goals would you like to set for this session?

PC: *To have a good session.*

LRH: All right.

PC: *To find an interesting level. To have the nulling go easily. Get over this ARC break uh – sore throat!*

LRH: To get over this ARC break?

PC: *Yes, I just said it. I meant sore throat.*

LRH: You got a sore throat?

PC: *Yes.*

LRH: I'm sorry – to get over this sore throat.

PC: *Mm-hm. It's interesting. I don't have any ARC break.*

LRH: All right. All right, how is that?

PC: *That's all right.*

LRH: Okay. Now, we'll put in our "since" mid ruds.

PC: *Mm-hm.*

LRH: All right. Now, when was the last time I audited you?

PC: *Monday night.*

LRH: All right. Since the last time I audited you, has anything been suppressed?

PC: *Concern about um – Janie.*

LRH: Okay.

PC: *That's about all – um, the sore throat.*

LRH: All right.

PC: *Um – that's about all.*

LRH: All right. I'll check that on the meter. Since the last time I audited you, has anything been suppressed? All right, I didn't get a specific read there. All right. Since the last time I audited you, is there anything you've been careful of?

PC: *No.*

LRH: All right, I'll check that on the meter. Since the last time I audited you, is there anything you've been careful of? All right. Doesn't read. Since the last time I audited you, is there anything you've failed to reveal?

PC: *No. I don't think so.*

LRH: All right. I'll check that on the meter. Since the last time I audited you, is there anything you've failed to reveal? I've got a disturbed needle here. Yeah, what's that?

PC: *Well, I thought um – I failed to reveal that I didn't want the children taking Cokes from the front refrigerator.*

LRH: Front? You mean Winter Garden?

PC: *Winter Garden refrigerator, mm-hm.*

LRH: All right. Very good. All right. Since the last time I audited you, is there anything you've failed to reveal? All right, I didn't get a specific read on that. Okay?

PC: *Mm-hm.*

LRH: All right. Put this on the meter now. Since the last time I audited you, has anything been invalidated? All right, I didn't get a read. Since the last time I audited you, has anything been suggested? Yes, there's a suggestion.

PC: *Well I suggested that – um, that – um, 3N, at – you know – an implant run,*

gets more gain and benefit to a pc than an engram run.

LRH: Hm-mm.

PC: *Hm.*

LRH: All right. Since the last time I audited you, has anything been suggested? Seems to be still something here.

PC: *Oh, that we, uh – put a new lineup in the X Unit. Yeah.*

LRH: All right. Don't quite see how...

PC: *Well, the new lineup of procedure – of auditing – in the X Unit. You sent it on through on a note for them, you know, saying this sounded good for XI. It was the suggestion that uh – that all the missed withholds be listed down and then cleaned up one by one. This was from – this was suggested by Pesco to you and you said this sounded like a good thing for XI, it was...*

LRH: Uh-huh.

PC: *... you sent it on to Reg and then Reg sent it on to Herbie and then Herbie sent it on to me.*

LRH: Oh, I see! All right, very good. I remember now.

PC: *Hm.*

LRH: Sorry. All right, since the last time I audited you, has anything been suggested. You protesting the question?

PC: *Hm!*

LRH: Hm?

PC: *Yes.*

LRH: All right. Since the last time I audited you, has anything been suggested? There seems to be another suggestion here.

PC: *Oh, I've suggested that I would like to find an interesting level and I thought*

about different levels that I thought might be interesting.

LRH: Oh!

PC: *Hm.*

LRH: All right, thank you!

PC: *Hm.*

LRH: All right! Okay. Since the last time I audited you, has anything been suggested?

PC: *I think I'm protesting the question. It never reads. I don't know why it's reading.*

LRH: All right. Okay, very good. Since the last time I audited you, has anything been suggested? I'm afraid there is a suggestion here. There. There.

PC: *I just was wondering, is it something I suggested or something someone else suggested? You know?*

LRH: Hm! What's that? That.

PC: *I suggested that – um – that – um – that I get off that withhold to you prior to the session, because it didn't sort of involve me, except my reaction to someone else.*

LRH: All right, very good. That's what had your TA high here. That's what had this high. Okay. All right. Since the last time I audited you, has anything been suggested? And that's smooth. Very good. And your needle cleaned up and you dropped half a tone on the tone arm. Okay?

PC: *Good.*

LRH: Since the last time I audited you, has a mistake been made? Did you think of a mistake?

PC: *No.*

LRH: Let me check that again. Since the last time I audited you, has a mistake been made? All right, that's clean. Since the last time I audited you, has anything been protested? Did you think of something? It was a latent read.

PC: *No, I didn't think of anything.*

LRH: All right, very good. Check it again. Since the last time I audited you, has anything been protested? And that is clean. Do you agree that's clean?

PC: *Mm-hm.*

LRH: All right, very good. Since the last time I audited you, is there anything you've been anxious about? I got a bit of a slow.

PC: *We'll about that – trying to get that date, last night, in the session...*

LRH: All right.

PC: *...I gave you.*

LRH: All right. Since the last time I audited you, is there anything you've been anxious about? All right, that seemed okay. And since the last time I audited you, has anything been decided? Yes.

PC: *Well, I decided to – um – get some of the paperwork done before the session tonight.*

LRH: All right. Very good. Since the last time I audited you, has anything been decided? I'm – see another read here.

PC: *I decided to get Janie and Mrs. Milchert some auditing.*

LRH: All right. Since the last time I audited you, has anything been decided? All right, that didn't read. Okay, very good. Do you agree that's clean?

PC: *Mm-hm.*

LRH: All right. Now let's check something here. All right. Have I missed a withhold on you? What did you think of?

PC: *Well – uh – the only thing I thought of there is that it wasn't the children taking Coca-Colas from the Winter Garden, it was the children taking Coca-Colas out to other people from the Winter Garden, you see, that I didn't – that I was objecting to.*

LRH: Oh, I see. All right. Okay. Have I missed a withhold on you?

PC: *Well, I'd like to – certainly like to get this head and throat cleaned up. You know? I don't like the – um – aches around in my head and my sore throat, you know.*

LRH: Hm.

PC: *Fixed up. That's about all I can think of.*

LRH: All right, very good. Have I missed a withhold on you? I don't get anything reading. Tone arm went up kind of high here. You upset about anything?

PC: *No, just sort of waiting, till the body of the session.*

LRH: Well, all right. Very good. Now, uh – okay. Now, we abandoned a chain on you. What about that chain? Is that what your sore throat is?

PC: *I don't know.*

LRH: Any consequences here on this?

PC: *I don't think so.*

LRH: You don't think so? All right, we had a nice clean needle for a while and then it roughed up. Have I asked you questions that you protested?

PC: *No, just was surprised that you asked a withhold question after the rudi-*

ments, you know. That's understandable, but I just was a bit surprised.

the Routine R3R assessment, shall we?

LRH: Okay. All right, thank you. Anything else? Uh, your needle's nice and clean now. Okay. Now, let's carry on with

PC: *Mm-hm.*

LRH: Let's see what we can do about this and see if we can get you a level.

[Editor's note: the following was obviously later inserted into the tape recording of the session.]

This is an interjected note to whoever is listening to this tape. This, of course, was just an ordinary, run-of-the-mill session. This session is not done for demonstration purposes. A few small errors creep into it one way or the other. It's a rather tough session. It's pretty tough and go – touch-and-go, and the – you cannot, of course, see the pc's meter, as you're listening to this on just a tape. But the facts of the case are that you can follow this fairly closely, as to what the meter is doing.

The reads throughout this right down to the end, and just before the end, continue as very, very small reads – rather hard to follow, which you'll see, that the rudiments are gotten in every time the thing dirtied up. Every time the needle dirtied up, why, it was cleaned up. In other words, the assessment was done on a thoroughly clean needle. The needle was throughout very nice, smooth, sweeping clean. And no attempt was made at any time here to do it on a dirty needle.

And occasionally you can hear paper rattle there, as the assessment sheet is handed over to the pc on two or three occasions, to see if she's had any thoughts about these levels, as the sheet given to her, of course, might refresh her mind.

The breath which you hear in this is due to the quality of the microphone more than anything else. It just happens to be well tuned to breath and it's a pretty breathy recording.

This note is interjected just for your interest. You can follow this assessment fairly closely. The TA was high most of the assessment, right up to the point where something interesting happened.

LRH: Have you mainly suppressed? That's correct.

PC: *Not particularly, I thought.*

PC: *Hm.*

LRH: All right, thank you.

LRH: In this lifetime – in this lifetime, have you mainly failed to suppress? In this lifetime, have you mainly not suppressed? Okay. In this lifetime, have you mainly invalidated? All right. In this lifetime, have you mainly failed to invalidate? Okay. In this lifetime, have you mainly not invalidated? Okay. In this lifetime, have you mainly been careful? You had a thought there, what was it?

In this lifetime, have you mainly failed to be careful? Okay. In this lifetime, have you mainly not been careful? All right. In this lifetime, have you mainly not been careful? What did you think there?

PC: *Perhaps I could have been more cautious, I thought, or more careful, in this lifetime.*

LRH: All right. Good. In this lifetime, have you mainly not been careful? All right.

In this lifetime, have you mainly suggested? All right, what thoughts did you have on that?

PC: *No, I thought.*

LRH: All right. In this lifetime, have you mainly failed to suggest? Okay. In this lifetime, have you mainly not suggested?

Okay. In this lifetime, have you mainly not – have you mainly withheld? Okay. Sorry for the stumble. In this lifetime, have you mainly failed to withhold? Okay. In this lifetime, have you mainly not withheld? Okay.

In this lifetime, have you mainly protested? All right, what was your thought there?

PC: *I thought that that was someone else's level. I always think of these levels as someone else's, you know. That's the first one you've hit that I've known was someone else's level, you know. Like...*

LRH: Oh!

PC: *... that's Joe's level or Pete's level or something like that.*

LRH: Oh! Oh, all right. Okay. Okay. In this lifetime, have you mainly protested? In this lifetime, have you mainly protested? Anything else on that?

PC: *No.*

LRH: All right, it's in. In this lifetime, have you mainly failed to protest? Okay. In this lifetime, have you mainly not protested? Okay.

In this lifetime, have you mainly hidden? Okay. In this lifetime, have you

mainly failed to hide? Okay. In this lifetime, have you mainly not hidden? All right. Well, any thought on that?

PC: *Just thought those were all amusing.*

LRH: All right. Any other thoughts that you've got there?

PC: *No, just – like "In this lifetime have you mainly hidden," you know. Oh, dear!*

LRH: All right. Okay. All right.

In this lifetime, have you mainly revealed? Okay. In this lifetime, have you mainly failed to reveal? You got another thought here, what was it?

PC: *Well, I thought, why yes, some people would react on hidden, you know. Take a criminal or something like that, he would be hiding from the police, and so forth.*

LRH: Hm. Yeah, all right. In this lifetime, have you mainly failed to reveal? Something about that?

PC: *No.*

LRH: All right. In this lifetime, have you mainly not revealed? Have you mainly not revealed? Okay. In this lifetime, have you mainly made mistakes?

[PC laughs]

LRH: Accusative, that wouldn't... See many a pc taking umbrage at that!

PC: *Yeah.*

LRH: All right. In this lifetime, have you mainly failed to mistake? I don't get that at all! Failed to mistake.

PC: *Failed to make mistakes, hm?*

LRH: Hey, that's – that's probably right! Maybe that was a typo, huh?

PC: *Hm!*

LRH: All right. In this lifetime, have you mainly failed to make mistakes? All right. In this lifetime, have you mainly not made mistakes? All right, you had a thought a moment ago, what was it?

PC: *Uh, I thought it would be very interesting – somebody you know.*

LRH: That's real...

PC: *That was – I don't know...*

LRH: All right. In this lifetime, have you mainly asserted? Flying needle here. In this lifetime, have you mainly asserted? All right. In this lifetime, have you mainly failed to assert? Okay. In this lifetime, have you mainly not asserted? In this lifetime, have you mainly not asserted? All right.

In this lifetime, have you mainly changed? Okay. In this lifetime, have you mainly failed to change? Okay. In this lifetime, have you mainly not changed? Okay.

In this lifetime, have you mainly damaged? Okay. In this lifetime, have you – that's an awful accusative one, too, isn't it...

PC: *Hm, yes.*

LRH: ... when you get right down to it? All right. Any thought on that you didn't utter?

PC: *No.*

LRH: All right. In this lifetime, have you mainly failed to damage? Okay. In this lifetime, have you mainly not damaged? Have you mainly not damaged? All right. Well, we've only had a couple in so far.

PC: *Hm!*

LRH: All right. In this lifetime, have you mainly withdrawn? All right, that banged. What did you have to think about that?

PC: *That this is one of the students' levels. One student had that level assessed.*

LRH: All right.

PC: *It was the wrong level.*

LRH: Hm?

PC: *It was the wrong level.*

LRH: Oh, all right. Check it again. In this lifetime, have you mainly withdrawn? Okay, it's still in. In this lifetime, have you mainly failed to withdraw? In this lifetime, have you mainly not withdrawn? All right. In this lifetime, have you mainly not withdrawn? All right, any thought on that? All right. In this lifetime, have you mainly not withdrawn? All right, not in.

In this lifetime, have you mainly convinced? Okay. In this lifetime, have you mainly failed to convince? You have had a thought now.

PC: *Had a thought. I noticed that we were in on the – uh – on some of the Pre-hav level levels, now. You know?*

LRH: Hm, hm! In this lifetime, have you mainly failed to convince? Okay. In this lifetime, have you mainly not convinced? Okay. Anything else? All right.

In this lifetime, have you mainly proven? Okay. In this lifetime, have you mainly failed to prove? All right. In this lifetime, have you mainly not proven? Any thought there?

PC: *No. There's not much I haven't not proven. The only thing I have not proven are all the scientific experi-*

ments. I never could get them to work out in the laboratory.

LRH: Uh-huh.

PC: So you might say I – I failed to prove conclusively all the principles of physics and chemistry.

LRH: All right.

PC: That's about all I've not proved.

LRH: Okay. All right. Let me ask you that again. In this lifetime, have you mainly not proven? Have you mainly not proven? Have you mainly not proven? Nope. Out.

In this lifetime, have you mainly been right? In this lifetime, have you mainly failed to be right? Okay. In this lifetime, have you mainly not been right? What did you think about all that? That's in.

PC: That's in? Hm!

LRH: Hm?

PC: Well, I just remembered, along back there, that one of the students has "failed to be right" as their level. You know? And so I sort of perked up my ears on it. That's all.

LRH: Oh, all right. Very good, thank you. In this lifetime, have you mainly not... What's that?

PC: I don't know. I didn't think of anything.

LRH: All right. In this lifetime, have you mainly not been right? All right. In this lifetime, have you mainly not been right? All right. Anything more to say about that?

PC: Uh-uh.

LRH: That's out. Not been right? Not been right? No, that's out. Okay. Thank you.

PC: Mm-hm.

LRH: In this lifetime, have you mainly been wrong?

[PC laughs]

LRH: Accusative, isn't it?

PC: Oh, dear!

LRH: All right.

PC: Hm.

LRH: All right. In this lifetime... I can see it now – some HGC pc really cutting and running on that!

PC: Yeah, ha.

LRH: ...have you mainly been wrong. All right. In this lifetime, have you mainly failed to be wrong? Okay. In this lifetime, have you not been wrong? Okay.

In this lifetime, have you mainly won? Okay. In this lifetime, have you mainly failed to win? Okay. Failed to win? Okay. In this lifetime, have you mainly not won? Okay.

In this lifetime, have you mainly lost? Okay. In this lifetime, have you mainly failed to lose? Okay. In this lifetime, have you mainly not lost? All right.

In this lifetime, have you mainly agreed? Okay. In this lifetime, have you mainly failed to agree? Okay. In this lifetime, have you mainly not agreed? All right.

In this lifetime, have you mainly disagreed? In this lifetime, have you mainly disagreed? In this lifetime, have you mainly failed to disagree? You had a thought here of one kind or another.

PC: I'm suppressing a sneeze a little bit.

LRH: Hm?

PC: *I was suppressing a sneeze, but it didn't. . .*

LRH: Well, go on and sneeze.

PC: *No, it won't sneeze.*

LRH: All right. Okay. In this lifetime, have you mainly not disagreed? Have you mainly not disagreed? Something wrong with "mainly"? You keep binging a little bit on "mainly." There it is. There.

PC: *Oh, isn't that part of the saying right there, the plains, and the something or other and you know, the saying, you know, and mostly on the plains, mainly on the plains, the...*

LRH: Oh! All right. All right, very good. In this lifetime, have you mainly not disagreed? Not disagreed? In this lifetime, have you mainly not disagreed?

In this lifetime, have you mainly ignored? All right. In this lifetime, have you mainly failed to ignore? Okay. In this lifetime, have you mainly not ignored? Okay.

In this lifetime, have you mainly decided? Okay. In this lifetime, have you mainly failed to decide? Okay. In this lifetime, have you mainly not decided? All right. Any thought on this?

PC: *Uh-uh.*

LRH: All right, in this lifetime, have you mainly propitiated? Okay. In this lifetime, have you mainly failed to propitiate? Okay. In this lifetime, have you mainly not propitiated? Okay.

In this lifetime, have you mainly held off? All right. In this lifetime, have you mainly failed to hold off? All right. In this lifetime, have you mainly not held off? Okay.

In this lifetime, have you mainly pulled in? Okay. In this lifetime, have you mainly failed to pull in? All right, what was that?

PC: *I thought – it sounded like getting into a bit of physical exercise type of business here, you know, pull in, push out...*

LRH: Ha – all right.

PC: *... push up and...*

LRH: All right. In this lifetime, have you mainly failed to pull in? Failed to pull in? Any more thoughts on that? That seems to...

PC: *No, you know, about the only thing I could think of, you know, like failing to pull in the anchor, or something, only I haven't had any anchors to fail to pull in. But uh...*

LRH: All right.

PC: *It doesn't make sense to me, frankly.*

LRH: Oh, it doesn't?

PC: *No.*

LRH: All right. In this lifetime, have you mainly failed to pull in? All right. In this lifetime, have you mainly failed to pull in? All right. In this lifetime – in this lifetime, have you mainly not pulled in? Okay.

That's better. A few more to go here, we're doing fine. Well, we've got three more columns of them, to be precise.

PC: *Hm-hm.*

LRH: In this lifetime, have you mainly remained? Okay. In this lifetime, have you mainly failed to remain? All right. In this lifetime, have you mainly failed to remain? Okay. In this

lifetime, have you mainly not remained? Okay.

In this lifetime, have you mainly prevented? In this lifetime, have you mainly prevented? Okay. In this lifetime, have you mainly failed to prevent? Oh, what are you thinking about there?

PC: *I got a bit of the thought, that "endure" is on this list, you know.*

LRH: Oh, "failed to endure"?

PC: *That's right. After having been run for hours and hours and hours on the terminal, on that "endure," you know, I thought, oh, dear! That might be coming up soon!*

LRH: All right, very good. All right. In this lifetime, have you mainly failed to prevent? Okay. In this lifetime, have you mainly not prevented? Okay.

In this lifetime, have you mainly pressed on? Okay. In this lifetime, have you mainly failed to press on? Okay. In this lifetime, have you mainly not pressed on? All right.

In this lifetime, have you mainly avoided? Okay. In this lifetime, have you mainly failed to avoid? Okay. In this lifetime, have you mainly not avoided? All right. You're having a big think here, of some kind or another.

PC: *Oh, I was thinking that, yes, I suppose those levels – you know, I was trying to think of what people might answer to these sort of things. I found myself thinking about it. You know, a level like that...*

LRH: Oh, all right. All right, very good. In this lifetime, have you mainly blocked? In this lifetime, have you

mainly blocked? All right. Some thought about that level? That's in.

PC: *No, I thought of Arthur's blocks and children's blocks, and that sort of thing.*

LRH: All right. Okay. In this lifetime, have you mainly failed to block? There's something here.

PC: *Ah [laughs] – it just seems like an – a funny level to me. You know, I suppose it means putting barriers up. But, uh – every time you say blocked, you know, I think of blocking out incidents.*

LRH: Mm-hm.

PC: *And I think of – uh – blocks. And I think of failed to block.*

LRH: All right, very good. In this lifetime, have you mainly blocked? In this lifetime, have you mainly blocked? Okay. In this lifetime, have you mainly failed to block? All right. Those are not in. In this lifetime, have you mainly not blocked? Okay.

In this lifetime, have you mainly retreated? In this lifetime, have you mainly retreated? In this lifetime, have you mainly failed to retreat? All right. In this lifetime, have you mainly failed to retreat? In this lifetime, have you mainly not retreated? All right.

In this lifetime, have you mainly reached? Okay. In this lifetime, have you mainly failed to reach? Okay. In this lifetime, have you mainly not reached? Okay. In this lifetime, have you mainly not reached? Okay.

In this lifetime, have you mainly attacked? In this lifetime, have you mainly attacked? Big thought on this someplace?

PC: *Attacked stayed in one time before. And then went out. I just remembered that.*

LRH: All right. In this lifetime, have you mainly attacked? All right. It's – it's staying in this time. In this lifetime, have you mainly failed to attack? In this lifetime, have you mainly failed to attack? That's not in. In this lifetime, have you mainly not attacked? All right, there's a read on that. Anything else you care to say about it?

PC: *No.*

LRH: All right. Those two stayed in. All right.

In this lifetime... You got a thought going here.

PC: *Well, I thought it was interesting, that one could attack, it would – both attack and not attacked are in, you know?*

LRH: Hm.

PC: *I suppose one can get a ridge built up on attacking and failing – not – not attacking, you know.*

LRH: Hm.

PC: *And that's why both levels could read.*

LRH: All right.

PC: *Otherwise it sounds rather paradoxical.*

LRH: You what?

PC: *Otherwise it sounds rather paradoxical, you see.*

LRH: All right. Okay. Anything else on that?

PC: *No.*

LRH: This needle's gone mad.

PC: *Oh, I suppose, yes, I was thinking, I wonder if "to attack" was part of the Helatrobis goals.*

LRH: Ah! All right. Thank you. Sorry to pester you about it. In this lifetime, have you mainly stopped? All right. In this lifetime, have you mainly stopped? Okay. In this lifetime, have you mainly failed to stop? All right. It's not now in.

PC: *Mm-hm.*

LRH: In this lifetime, have you mainly failed to stop? Well, what happened?

PC: *I don't know! I ha... I just – oh, I thought, that people would probably wonder why you said "That's not in – failed to stop" because they won't know that – that was uh – a lower level.*

LRH: I'm not particularly making this for anybody else.

PC: *Oh, I see. All right.*

LRH: All right. In this lifetime, have you mainly failed to stop? It's not in.

PC: *Hm-hm.*

LRH: In this lifetime, have you mainly not stopped? All right. We've picked up a hell of a dirty needle here, all of a sudden.

PC: *It's getting sort of long, wondering when we're going to – sort of get through. I know we got two more columns.*

LRH: Well, it'll be over in just...

PC: *Hm.*

LRH: ... just a moment. Thank you.

PC: *Hm.*

LRH: In this lifetime, have you mainly confronted? Well, you've got something more than that worrying you, lady.

PC: *Oh, I suppose I'm wondering what level it would be... All I can think of.*

LRH: All right, very good. That cleaned it up quite a bit. All right, in this lifetime, have you mainly confronted? In this lifetime, have you mainly confronted? In this lifetime, have you mainly failed to confront? In this lifetime, have you mainly not confronted?

In this lifetime, have you mainly communicated? Have you mainly communicated? In this lifetime, have you mainly failed to communicate? In this lifetime, have you mainly not communicated? All right. Thought here?

PC: *I thought – possibly. Mm.*

LRH: Hm. All right. In this lifetime, have you mainly not communicated? Not communicated? Not communicated? In this lifetime, have you mainly not communicated? No, that's in with a touch here. All right, we've got about five levels in, now.

All right. In this lifetime, have you mainly been prideful? Okay. In this lifetime, have you mainly failed to be proud? Any thought here?

PC: *I thought then – that's the first time I've heard of that one. You know, and what's that? Mm-hm.*

LRH: All right. In this lifetime, have you mainly failed to be proud? Some more challenge on this of some kind?

PC: *I had a – was my itch.*

LRH: All right. In this lifetime, have you mainly failed to be proud? Boy, that reads! Nothing else about it?

PC: *Uh-uh.*

LRH: All right. That's in. In this lifetime, have you mainly not been prideful? Mainly not been prideful? You mainly not been prideful? You've got something going here, man. Look at the number in all of a sudden.

PC: *Mm. Well, it sort of began with "attack." And how could it be attack and not attacked, I thought. And then I was surprised when you said "been prideful," I thought, you know, prideful. I've never heard of prideful! I suppose it's proud. You – you mean you've been proud!*

LRH: All right.

PC: *You know? And it started with some of these staying in, and I just didn't understand, or dig, you know, like "failed to pull in," and "blocked" – blocked! You know, the instant thing I thought of there was the children's blocks.*

LRH: Hm.

PC: *You know? And um – that's about all!*

LRH: All right, thank you. I'm sure that cleaned up the needle quite a bit here.

PC: *Hm.*

LRH: All right. In this lifetime, have you mainly not been prideful? In this lifetime, have you mainly failed to be proud? All right. In this lifetime, have you mainly not been prideful? Okay.

In this lifetime, have you mainly sympathized? In this lifetime, have you mainly sympathized? In this lifetime, have you mainly failed to sympathize? In this lifetime, have you

mainly failed to sympathize? In this lifetime, have you mainly not sympathized?

In this lifetime, have you mainly recovered? In this lifetime, have you mainly failed to recover? In this lifetime, have you mainly not recovered? All right. Two columns to go!

PC: *Good!*

LRH: We'll be over this – very few...

PC: *Very good!*

LRH: ... moments. Okay?

PC: *Hm!*

LRH: In this lifetime, have you mainly helped? In this lifetime, have you mainly helped? In this lifetime, have you mainly failed to help? In this lifetime, have you mainly not helped? All right.

In this lifetime, have you mainly known? In this lifetime, have you mainly failed to know? In this lifetime, have you mainly not known? Okay.

In this lifetime, have you mainly caused? Have you mainly caused? All right. In this lifetime, have you mainly failed to cause? All right. In this lifetime, have you mainly not caused? All right.

In this lifetime, have you mainly believed? In this lifetime, have you mainly failed to believe? In this lifetime, have you mainly not believed? Okay.

In this lifetime, have you mainly cured? Cured? In this lifetime, have you mainly failed to cure? All right. In this lifetime, have you mainly not cured? All right.

In this lifetime, have you mainly liked? In this lifetime, have you mainly failed to like? In this lifetime, have you mainly not liked? All right. Have you mainly failed to like? Have you mainly not liked? Have a thought there?

PC: *No.*

LRH: All right. What's the matter?

PC: *I just was thinking, that was amusing.*

LRH: What's that?

PC: *That – that was amusing, I thought.*

LRH: All right. Very good. In this lifetime, have you mainly endured? In this lifetime, have you mainly endured? In this lifetime, have you mainly failed to endure? In this lifetime, have you mainly failed to endure? In this lifetime, have you mainly not endured?

PC: *Only thing I can think of is who's that and what have you endured? I've endured, endured and failed to endure in this lifetime. What have you failed to endure? "Endure!" You know?*

LRH: All right.

PC: *Aw!*

LRH: Okay. In this lifetime, have you mainly failed to endure? In this lifetime, have you mainly failed to endure? In this lifetime, have you mainly not endured? Okay. They're not in.

PC: *Good.*

LRH: In this lifetime, have you mainly abandoned? Okay. In this lifetime, have you mainly failed to abandon? In this lifetime, have you mainly not abandoned?

In this lifetime, have you mainly given up? In this lifetime, have you

mainly failed to give up? In this lifetime, have you mainly not given up? Okay.

In this lifetime, have you mainly been sane? In this lifetime, have you mainly failed to be sane?

PC: *[laughs] Oh dear!*

LRH: All right. In this lifetime, have you mainly not been sane? Okay.

In this lifetime, have you mainly been curious? In this lifetime, have you mainly failed to be curious? All right. In this lifetime, have you mainly not been curious? Okay.

In this lifetime, have you mainly desired? All right. In this lifetime, have you mainly desired? In this lifetime have you mainly failed to desire? Failed to desire? In this lifetime, have you mainly not desired? All right, anything you care to say now?

PC: *Uh-uh.*

LRH: All right. In this lifetime – in this lifetime, have you mainly enforced? Okay. In this lifetime, have you mainly failed to enforce? In this lifetime, have you mainly not enforced?

In this lifetime, have you mainly inhibited? In this lifetime, have you mainly failed to inhibit? In this lifetime, have you mainly not inhibited? Okay. One column left to go.

PC: *Hm.*

LRH: Okay? Hm?

PC: *Good.*

LRH: All right. Any comments you care to make here?

PC: *Have a terrific somatic on an – on my arm. I don't know where it turned on. But...*

LRH: Yeah?

PC: *Uh...*

LRH: Is that so?

PC: *Yeah. It's been on for some time.*

LRH: All right. Anything else about it?

PC: *Uh-uh.*

LRH: All right. In this lifetime, have you mainly had? In this lifetime, have you mainly failed to have? In this lifetime, have you mainly failed to have? In this lifetime, have you mainly not had?

In this lifetime, have you mainly looked? Give me a little rundown.

PC: *Mainly I was suppressing moving my arm. It's quite...*

LRH: Hm?

PC: *...it hurts quite bad.*

LRH: Is that so?

PC: *Badly. Yes. Hm. Oh, "looked!" That's an interesting level – I thought about being in Spain and...*

LRH: Hm?

PC: *... doing what the Spaniards do. And oh, how the look!*

LRH: Yes. All right. In this lifetime, have you mainly looked? In this lifetime, have you mainly looked? In this lifetime, have you mainly failed to look? In this lifetime, have you mainly not looked?

In this lifetime, have you mainly been serene? In this lifetime, have you mainly failed to be serene? Okay.

In this lifetime, have you mainly been enthusiastic? All right. In this lifetime, have you failed to be enthusiastic? All right.

In this lifetime, have you mainly been conservative? Okay. In this lifetime, have you mainly failed to be conservative? All right.

In this lifetime, have you mainly been bored? All right. In this lifetime, have you mainly not been bored? Okay.

In this lifetime, have you mainly been antagonistic? Okay. In this lifetime, have you mainly not been antagonistic? Okay.

In this lifetime, have you mainly been angry? Have you mainly been angry? Okay. In this lifetime, have you mainly failed to be angry? Okay.

In this lifetime, have you mainly resented? Okay. In this lifetime, have you failed to resent? All right. Failed to resent? In this lifetime, have you mainly not resented? Any thoughts here? No thoughts at all?

PC: Just trying to hold still...

LRH: All right.

PC: ...in spite of my arm...

LRH: Still hurting you?

PC: Still hurts! Hm!

LRH: All right. In this lifetime, have you mainly not resented? I roughed up your needle now. Why is that? [*PC moves*] How's that?

PC: That's better.

LRH: All right. In this lifetime, have you mainly not resented? Mainly not resented? Okay. In this lifetime, have you mainly feared? All right. Have you mainly feared? What's the thought on that?

PC: I thought that that – I know two people who've had that as their level. Hm!

LRH: In this lifetime, have you mainly failed to fear? In this lifetime, have you mainly failed to fear? What's the big thought here? Failed to fear?

PC: I don't know!

LRH: All right. In this lifetime, have you mainly failed to fear? Reads. All right. In this lifetime, have you mainly feared? In this lifetime, have you mainly feared? In this lifetime, have you mainly not feared? Oh come on, what do you got here?

PC: I haven't really been thinking of a thing, except I know that "feared" is two other people's level. One level, I know, it didn't run on them, and another level on another pc, I know, it didn't run on this pc, another pc I know is being currently run on it.

LRH: Well, all right. Anything else about that?

PC: No, I just puzzled over "failed to fear." I haven't failed to fear.

LRH: All right.

PC: I haven't feared much either, but I certainly haven't failed to fear!

LRH: Okay. All right. In this lifetime, have you mainly failed to fear? Failed to fear? Okay. In this lifetime, have you mainly not feared? In this lifetime, have you mainly not feared? All right. They're both out.

In this lifetime, have you mainly been in grief? Okay. In this lifetime, have you mainly failed to cry? All right.

In this lifetime, have you mainly been apathetic? Okay. In this lifetime, have you mainly failed to be apathetic? All right.

In this lifetime, have you mainly in-flowed? All right. In this lifetime,

have you mainly failed to inflow? Okay. In this lifetime, have you mainly stopped inflow? All right.

In this lifetime, have you mainly outflowed? In this lifetime, have you mainly failed to outflow? In this lifetime, have you mainly stopped outflow? Okay.

In this lifetime, have you mainly...

PC: *Sorry.*

LRH: What?

PC: *My foot was itching.*

LRH: All right. In this lifetime, have you mainly stopped outflow? Some...?

PC: *No, I just noticed we're down near the bottom, and I'll be glad to get through with the list.*

LRH: All right, very good. In this lifetime have you mainly stopped outflow? All right.

In this lifetime, have you mainly thought? There must be something else, everything is reading.

PC: *No, I just would like to get on through, you know, and that's a few more.*

LRH: Oh, you're on your "press on."

PC: *Yes, I'm on my "press on," you know.*

LRH: All right, very good. Well, you've only got another half a dozen.

PC: *Hm.*

LRH: All right. In this lifetime, have you mainly thought? In this lifetime, have you mainly thought? In this lifetime, have you mainly thought? All right. In this lifetime, have you mainly failed to think? In this lifetime have you mainly not thought? All right. In

this lifetime, have you mainly thought? Okay.

In this lifetime, have you mainly evaluated? All right. ... In this lifetime, have you mainly evaluated? Something going on here?

PC: *No, just wondering what the pause was. What the pause was all about.*

LRH: Hm. All right. In this lifetime, have you mainly evaluated? In this lifetime, have you mainly evaluated? All right. In this lifetime, have you mainly failed to evaluate? Something's going on here.

PC: *Hm. I'm – just can't understand why we suddenly started going so slow! I said that I'm getting near the end of the list and I want to complete, you see.*

LRH: All right. I don't care if you are – that needle suddenly – you've pressed your needle into a complete...

PC: *Yes!*

LRH: ... crash.

PC: *I was just wanting – come on! You know? We're almost through.*

LRH: Why?

PC: *Because I just would like to get a level, that's why! You know? We're almost through with the list!*

LRH: All right. We bypass some charge here?

PC: *No. Except it seems like an awful long wait!*

LRH: All right. Have I gone across your level? Have I abandoned the right level?

Mm-hm. All right. In this lifetime, have you mainly evaluated? All right. In this lifetime, have you mainly

- failed to evaluate? All right. In this lifetime, have you mainly not evaluated? All right.
- In this lifetime, have you mainly had opinions about? All right. In this lifetime, have you mainly failed to have opinions about? Okay. In this lifetime, have you mainly not had opinions about? All right. That's it. Take a break!
- LRH: All right. This session is resumed and we have about – oh, a very few of these levels in – only three or four. Four or five. Six, maybe. All right.
- Anything you care to say before I start doing this? All right. Well, let me give you a fast one here. On this list has anything been suppressed? Yes? Hm?
- PC: *I suppressed – uh – impatience in getting through the list.*
- LRH: All right. On this list has anything been suppressed? Seen the read again.
- PC: *Some eagerness to get the level now.*
- LRH: Hm?
- PC: *Eagerness to get the level now, you know?*
- LRH: All right, very good. On this list, has anything been invalidated?
- PC: *Well, some of the ones I didn't quite understand, you know, like "blocked" and pulled in – "pull in," and uh – you know, like those.*
- LRH: All right, very good. Okay. List. A little something left on it.
- PC: *I've got some, you know, feel, got – feel somaticity, you know.*
- LRH: We ran across something here, didn't we?
- PC: *Yes, and my head hurts, and, ooh! So...*
- LRH: A rough go.
- PC: *Hm!*
- LRH: All right, let's see what we've got here, okay?
- PC: *Hm-hm.*
- LRH: Your ears sensitive?
- PC: *No, bit chilly. The room got a bit chilly. It's warming up, I've turned the burner on.*
- LRH: You'll be all right?
- PC: *Hm! Be okay.*
- LRH: Want to put a bathrobe over your legs?
- PC: *No, that's fine.*
- LRH: You sure?
- PC: *Hm!*
- LRH: All right, anything else you care to say here? Yes?
- PC: *No.*
- LRH: All right.
- PC: *Felt like I was going to sneeze.*
- LRH: Hm?
- PC: *Felt like I was going to sneeze again, but I didn't.*
- LRH: All right. Something else?
- PC: *Just my head hurts and I really don't... Well, that's all.*
- LRH: All right. Okay, let's take up these levels now. And the first level we have – I've got a very dirty needle here.
- PC: *Well, I thought of, in the break, Panorama, the South African information...*
- LRH: Ah!

PC: ... book, and I thought that the government put out a very nice, interesting magazine, there, you see.

LRH: Hm-hm.

PC: And um – I thought that – uh – and also they show pictures of the – of the 1948 German – uh – war orphans, who arrived and were adopted by South Africans, you know? And I thought that that was – um – you know ...

LRH: Mm-hm.

PC: ... an interesting gesture.

LRH: Hm! All right, good. Anything else happen in the break? A little something. You jumped a half a tone arm high.

PC: Can't think of anything else that happened in the break.

LRH: All right. Anything else upsetting you here? Is it trying to get on? Yes.

PC: Hm!

LRH: Press-on type.

PC: Press on! Charge!

LRH: All right.

All right. Now, in this lifetime, have you mainly protested? Protested? In this lifetime, have you mainly protested? All right. Anything you care to say about that level?

PC: Hm, that's one of the students' level.

LRH: Hm?

PC: I know it's one of the students' level.

LRH: Yeah. All right. All right, good enough, it's in. In this lifetime, have you mainly failed to reveal? In this lifetime, have you mainly failed to reveal? In this lifetime, have you mainly failed to reveal? In this lifetime, have you mainly failed to reveal? In this life-

time, have you mainly failed to reveal? In this lifetime, have you mainly failed to reveal? All right, on this level has anything been suppressed? Yes – very badly.

PC: Well, it's a button in the rudiments and, you know.

LRH: Hm-mm.

PC: I have – I know I failed to reveal. Whether that's mainly what I've done in this lifetime, I don't know.

LRH: All right, very good. In this lifetime, have you mainly failed to reveal? All right, that's in. Okay.

All right. Your needle's pretty awful dirty.

PC: Well, I don't...

LRH: And your tone arm went up – way up during the break.

PC: Uh! Yeah, that's all I did, I saw that South African magazine, and I thought that and I – and I thought about the blankets, and I thought... I didn't even wonder about the levels, I didn't even think about them. I just noticed that somatics had turned on, and I was feeling a bit, you know, bad.

LRH: Hm, hm-mm.

PC: And – um – that's all. I hoped it came out to an interesting level – that's about the only thing I'm worried about.

LRH: All right. In this lifetime, have you mainly withdrawn? Have you mainly withdrawn? That's in.

In this lifetime, have you mainly attacked? In this lifetime, have you mainly attacked? They're all in!

PC: *Hm! I'm not thinking about them or saying well, that – you know, I'm not doing anything like that.*

LRH: In this lifetime, have you mainly not attacked?

PC: *The only thing I can think about is I am anxious, and – uh – you know – and hope I can get an interesting level, and hope that – uh – it'll run all right, and hope that it'll get a chain that will produce tone arm action and, you know, sort of getting down toward the bitter end, I would like to come up with something that is the level, you know?*

LRH: All right. In this lifetime, have you mainly not attacked? In this lifetime, have you mainly not communicated? Have you mainly not communicated? Oh. Whoa, man – just whoa!

PC: *Well, what do you want me to do?*

LRH: I will take care of it.

PC: *All right.*

LRH: All right. In this session – in this session has anything been suppressed? Yes?

PC: *I've suppressed impatience, on getting on with it and getting my level.*

LRH: All right, very good. In this session, has anything been suppressed?

PC: *I suppose I suppressed levels that I didn't – was – wasn't particularly interested in or didn't think I had anything on them, or something like that. I can't really say that. I suppressed thinking about other things, during the session, and I suppressed my horror of waiting in the session.*

LRH: Waiting?

PC: *Waiting. Yes.*

LRH: All right. We're going to assess three things here. Felt bad. In this lifetime, have you mainly felt bad? In this lifetime, have you mainly felt bad? In this lifetime, have you mainly felt bad?

In this lifetime, have you mainly waited? Have you mainly waited? All right. In this lifetime, have you mainly failed to wait? Have you mainly failed to wait? All right.

Now, all right. Let me finish these rudiments. All right. In this session, including the break, has anything been suppressed? All right, I'll check it on the meter. In this session, including the break, has anything been suppressed? Yessum?

PC: *My hand moved. I suppose I suppressed somatics.*

LRH: All right. In this session, including the break, has anything been suppressed? All right, did you think of anything else? In this session, including the break, is there anything you have been careful of? Yes?

PC: *To hold still.*

LRH: All right. In this session, including the break, is there anything you have been careful of? Yes?

PC: *Not to ARC break.*

LRH: All right, very good. In this session, including the break, is there anything you've been careful of? All right, in this session, including the break, is there anything you've failed to reveal? Yes?

PC: *My level.*

LRH: All right. In this session, including the break, is there anything you've

failed to reveal? I got another one. What was that?

PC: *I don't know – I suppose I thought that maybe South Africa, in accepting the German war orphans, they liked – liked Germanic stock of people, you know, that kind of people.*

LRH: Hm-hm. All right, very good. In this session, including the break, is there anything you failed to reveal? Yes ma'am?

PC: *Well, if it is, I don't know what it is, I failed to reveal it to myself.*

LRH: All right. In this session, including the break, is there anything you've failed to reveal? All right. What – what's the rest of the gen on these war orphans? That's what's had your tone arm up.

PC: *Nothing. It's just I saw a picture in the magazine of war orphans who came to South Africa in 1948. And I thought that was a very nice gesture, you know, because the rest of the Western world, and the rest of the world were putting them practically in concentration and DP camps, you see. And I thought that was a jolly decent thing; and I thought that they'd probably thought that – uh – German racially were a good stock to bring to the country, you know, as – uh – and then I also thought that they, with the scarcity of white population, naturally they would want a greater proportion of white population. And that's all I thought about it!*

LRH: All right, thank you.

PC: *Hm.*

LRH: All right. In this session – in this session, including the break, is there anything you've failed to reveal? All

right. Is there anything you've failed to reveal? Something?

PC: *Well, "failed to reveal" is one of the levels that we have in that's reading.*

LRH: All right, thank you. In this session, including the break, is there anything you've failed to reveal? Good, that appears to be clean. In this session, including the break, has anything been invalidated? Has anything been suggested? All right, has a mistake been made? All right, what's the mistake?

PC: *Well, waiting, now, will always dirty my needle up. So sort of when I get the f... when I see you sort of looking at the needle, you know – and I'm waiting for something to happen in the session, I think, oh dear, my needle is going to get dirty.*

LRH: Well, all right, very good. In this session, including the break, has a mistake been made? All right. In this session, including the break, has anything been protested? In this session, including the break, is there anything you've been anxious about? In this session, including the break, has anything been decided? All right. I don't get any reads. How's that?

PC: *All right.*

LRH: Your needle's now clean. And you've lost your half-a-tone gain.

All right, let's do these things again, huh?

PC: *All right.*

LRH: All right. You still haven't got an ARC break?

PC: *No.*

LRH: Got an ARC break? A bit?

PC: *No, I just was hoping let's – let's get on, you know? Before the needle dirties up again. If you've got a clean needle, make the most of it, you know?*

LRH: All right.

All right, in this lifetime, have you mainly protested? In this lifetime, have you mainly protested? All right, that's out.

In this lifetime, have you mainly failed to reveal? All right, that's out.

In this lifetime, have you mainly withdrawn? In this lifetime, have you mainly withdrawn? All right. In this lifetime, have you mainly withdrawn? All right.

In this lifetime, have you mainly attacked? In this lifetime, have you mainly attacked? Okay. It's out.

In this lifetime, have you mainly not attacked? Have you mainly not attacked? In this lifetime, have you mainly not attacked? All right.

In this lifetime, have you mainly not communicated? In this lifetime, have you mainly not communicated? In this lifetime, have you mainly not communicated?

All right, there's something else going on here, now.

PC: *It's mostly facial pressure and somatics.*

LRH: Hm?

PC: *Around my face.*

LRH: Something about your face?

PC: *Noticing facial pressure and somatics.*

LRH: All right. In this lifetime – in this lifetime, have you mainly felt bad? In

this lifetime, have you mainly felt bad? Anything about that level?

PC: *Hm.*

LRH: In this lifetime, have you mainly felt bad? All right.

In this lifetime, have you mainly waited? In this lifetime, have you mainly waited? In this lifetime, have you mainly waited? All right.

In this lifetime, have you mainly not liked? In this lifetime, have you mainly stopped outflow? Well, what thoughts have you had there?

PC: *"Waited" – I thought, well, yes I certainly have waited around a lot. Well, I just noticed them going out and then I hoped they weren't going out because I – because of suppress, or anything like that.*

LRH: All right. Good enough. In this lifetime, have you mainly stopped outflow? All right. In this lifetime, have you mainly stopped outflow? Have you mainly stopped outflow? Stopped outflow? Stopped. Stopped.

Now, all right. In this lifetime, have you mainly felt bad? In this lifetime, have you mainly felt bad? Have you mainly felt bad? All right.

In this lifetime, have you mainly not communicated? Have you mainly not communicated? All right. In this lifetime, have you mainly not liked? In this lifetime, have you mainly not liked? In this lifetime, have you mainly not liked? Yes – all right.

PC: *That reminds me of a Prehav – hav – uh – level that we used to run on 3D Criss Cross. That was dislike and, you know, what have you disliked? And I think we came up with so-*

mething, I forget what it was we came up with.

LRH: We did what?

PC: A 3D Criss Cross line on that. It was disliked. What have you disliked?

LRH: Hm.

PC: You know?

LRH: You listed this at one time...

PC: Yeah.

LRH: ... or another? Similar.

PC: Hm.

LRH: All right. Very good. In this lifetime, have you mainly not liked? In this lifetime, have you mainly not liked? Still with us.

All right. In this lifetime, have you mainly not communicated? All right. Now, on that level has anything been suppressed?

PC: I suppose communication.

LRH: Hm?

PC: It was communication and I know we've had that in reading, sometimes, you know, before.

LRH: All right. On not communicated has anything been suppressed? Yes, a tiny bit.

PC: Oh, I think it would be easy to list, I suppose, I suppress thinking that.

LRH: All right. On this level, has anything been suppressed? Yeah, another suppression?

PC: Listing on it.

LRH: All right. On this level has anything been suppressed? I got another suppression. You don't think so?

PC: I don't think so.

LRH: The level itself kind of is a suppress.

PC: Yeah.

LRH: All right. On not communicated has anything been suppressed? All right, that seems clean. On not communicated, has anything been invalidated? Apparently a bit of invalidation.

PC: Well, I suppose the other level being in invalidates it.

LRH: All right, what level?

PC: The other level that we have that's in, on the list. Because there are two level – two levels in, or something like that, so each one invalidates the other. Um, um, also when we got to that point before and it was in, you said, "Ah, there's something wrong here." And you got in all the rudiments. So that tended to invalidate the read that was on that.

LRH: Oh, all right. Now, okay. Now, on this level has anything been invalidated? Another invalidation?

PC: It seems like it almost came out on the list before on the Prehav Scale. I'm not sure whether it is or not. It got invalidated in favor of something else.

LRH: All right. On this level has anything been invalidated? I got another read here.

PC: Well, I'm protesting the question now, I really don't have...

LRH: Are you protesting.

PC: Yes...

LRH: All right.

PC: ... I am.

LRH: Very good. On this level has anything been invalidated?

PC: The rudiments! And invalidate!

LRH: All right, very good. On this level, has anything been invalidated? Anything been invalidated? All right. In this lifetime, have you mainly not communicated? Have you mainly not communicated? In this lifetime, have you mainly not communicated?

Are you suppressing this now, or anything? In this lifetime, have you mainly not communicated? Have you mainly not communicated? All right. Now, on this level, has anything been suppressed? On this level, has anything been suppressed? All right. What did you think of?

PC: *Oh, the buttons tend to suppress it because they're going on and on and on and on and sort of a protest on the – on mid ruds.*

LRH: All right. On this level has anything been suppressed? Okay. In this lifetime, have you mainly not communicated? Mainly not communicated? All right. That is to some degree still with us. Not communicated? All right. Anything been invalidated here? Mistake been made?

All right, here's the other level that's in. In this lifetime have you mainly not liked? In this lifetime, have you mainly not liked? That level is out. On this level has anything been suppressed? Yes?

PC: *Yes, I realized I was alter-ising it every time you said it. Not liked, I would think disliked.*

LRH: Oh, all right. On this level, has anything been suppressed? Another tick.

PC: *I couldn't think of what it was we got assessed out on the 3D Criss Cross line, on disliked.*

LRH: Hm-hm. All right. On not liked, has anything been suppressed? All right, on not liked, has anything been invalidated? Okay. In this lifetime, have you mainly not liked? What have you got – what are you thinking about?

PC: *I keep thinking that – I keep objecting to "not liked." You know? It's disliked. You know?*

LRH: You're trying to alter-is this thing?

PC: *Trying to alter-is it. But I suppose I can accept it as "not liked," and let it be "not liked," instead of trying to change it to disliked. But I would never say I not-liked something, you know.*

LRH: I see, there's a continuous protest on this level.

PC: *Hm!*

LRH: Is that right?

PC: *Hm!*

LRH: All right. In this lifetime, have you mainly not liked? In this lifetime, have you mainly not liked? Not liked? In this lifetime, have you mainly disliked? In this lifetime, have you mainly disliked? In this lifetime, have you mainly disliked? There's a slight stick on disliked.

PC: *I keep thinking, well, if it does assess out then I've already done a list on it, and I won't have to do any listing.*

LRH: Oh? Oh – yeah? All right. Good. In this lifetime, have you mainly disliked? In this lifetime, have you mainly not liked? Not liked? Not liked? All right. What gives with this level?

PC: *I don't know.*

LRH: All right. In this lifetime, have you mainly not liked? In this lifetime, have you mainly disliked? In this lifetime,

me, have you mainly disliked? On this has anything been suppressed? I didn't get a read. In this lifetime, have you mainly not liked? Not liked?

All right, on this level has anything been suppressed? On this level, has anything been protested? On this level, has anything been decided? All right.

In this lifetime, have you mainly not liked? Not liked? In this lifetime, have you mainly disliked? In this lifetime, have you mainly not liked? Got any thoughts about this level?

PC: No, just seems a bit derogatory – like in this lifetime, have you mainly not liked. It's like I've been going around mainly not liking. You know?

LRH: Oh, you think it is critical?

PC: I think it's a bit critical. Yes. You know?

LRH: All right. Very good. Thank you.

In this lifetime, have you mainly not liked? Have you mainly not liked? All right. In this lifetime, have you mainly not liked?

All right. We'll try the other level. In this lifetime, have you mainly not communicated? In this lifetime, have you mainly not communicated?

All right. In this lifetime, have you mainly not communicated? All right. Not communicated is out and not liked is in.

All right. Just a minute. I'll straighten this out. Why? You protesting the assessment?

PC: No. I just – I – I had a feeling like it would come out to be something that I wasn't particularly interested in. You know. I could see myself getting a

chain on when's the last time you disliked or not liked – you know – cabbage or something like that.

LRH: I see. You've been thinking about this since we...

PC: No, I just thought of that.

LRH: All right.

AUDITING SESSION: PRELIMINARY STEPS OF R3R PART II

An auditing demonstration given on 10 July 1963

LRH: Okay, the session is resumed. All right.

PC: *Hm-mm.*

LRH: Anything you care to say about these levels or this situation?

PC: *No. Uh-uh. Not at the moment.*

LRH: You're protesting this, you told me.

PC: *Yes, I think it's staying in because I can't remember what it was we assessed out on "dislike" on the 3D Criss Cross line. I keep racking my brains and I can't think of it. I remember the list...*

LRH: Did you ever null it?

PC: *Yes, I think we did. We got something off of it.*

LRH: Hm. All right. Now let's check these two levels, again, huh?

PC: *Mm-hm.*

LRH: All right, in this lifetime, have you mainly not communicated? All right. Now, on not communicated, has anything been suppressed?

PC: *Yes, I thought when we were on it, I thought well, this one will probably go out. And uh – that will be that. I'm not plugging for it, either way, you know.*

LRH: Hm-mm.

PC: *But I thought, well that will probably go out, you know. [laughs] I always end up protesting the level.*

LRH: All right. On not communicated, anything been suppressed? All right. On not communicated, has anything been invalidated? All right. On this assessment, has anything been invalidated? All right, has anything been protested? Yes?

PC: *The level.*

LRH: All right. On this assessment, has anything been protested?

PC: *Just protested having to do mid ruds when the needle was dirty and when some of the items were staying in. And I hope that some of the items just didn't go out because I sort of*

went on a suppress to get a clean needle.

LRH: All right. On this assessment, has anything been protested? All right, on this assessment, has anything been invalidated? On this assessment, is there anything you have been anxious about? All right. On this assessment, has a mistake been made? On this assessment, has anything been decided? All right.

All right. In this lifetime, have you mainly not communicated? In this lifetime, have you mainly not communicated? All right. Didn't read. In this lifetime, have you mainly not liked? In this lifetime, have you mainly not liked? All right. In this lifetime, have you mainly not liked? All right. In this lifetime, have you mainly disliked? Disliked? What's that dislike tick?

PC: *It always restimulates – well – well, what was that thing that we assessed out? You know? I've done a "dislike" list and I already have it, you know?*

LRH: Hm-mm. All right.

PC: *I remember I had all sorts of murderers and criminals and thieves and crooks and you know?*

LRH: Hm.

PC: *Soldiers...*

LRH: All right. In this lifetime, have you – what have you mainly disliked? Just as a question. Well, it would list, because the question reads!

PC: *Oh!*

LRH: But you told me you were out of luck. You haven't mentioned that and that you were out of luck, that you

always get a level that you don't care anything about, so forth.

PC: *Hm.*

LRH: You still feel that way? You still feel apathetic about this?

PC: *Uh...*

LRH: Yes, what's that?

PC: *Well, I must say, dislike is a sort of a mild, pasty emotion. You know. I mean, it sort of just – my antipathies are not strong, so I can't sort of – you know, it's sort of a bland distaste, more or less.*

LRH: Hm.

PC: *And so, I sort of can imagine something – some very weak watered chain – being run on this. Except perhaps on the track, I might have expressed my dislike more violently. But uh – just thinking of the chain, that's all, you know.*

LRH: Mm. All right. In this lifetime – lifetime, reading an awful lot – in this lifetime, what have you mainly disliked?

What have you mainly disliked? All right. In this lifetime, what have you mainly not liked? What have you mainly not liked? In this lifetime, what have you mainly disliked? All right, there are neither of them reading now, anything wrong? What's the matter?

PC: *Nothing.*

LRH: All right. In this lifetime, what have you mainly disliked? All right. In this lifetime, what have you mainly not liked? All right. In this lifetime, have you mainly not liked? In this lifetime, have you mainly disliked?

All right. Neither of them reading. In this lifetime, have you mainly not communicated? In this lifetime, have you mainly not communicated? All right. On not communicated, has anything been suppressed? Yes?

PC: *Oh, I was wondering a little bit what the question would be, in this lifetime, what have you not communicated, I guess.*

LRH: Mm. Mm. In this lifetime – on this level, not communicated, has anything been suppressed? Yes? There.

PC: *Rudiments.*

LRH: All right. On this level has anything been suppressed? Yes?

PC: *I always have the fear that when the mid ruds are dragged out, that's going to knock out a level, you know.*

LRH: Hm.

PC: *A bit.*

LRH: All right. In this lifetime, have you mainly not communicated? All right. On this level, has anything been suppressed? Yes?

PC: *Communication, I suppose.*

LRH: All right. In this lifetime, have you mainly not communicated? All right, on this level has anything been suppressed? Yes? We've left suppressed hot on it before, so we might as well clean it up.

PC: *Hm.*

LRH: I told you it was a kind of a suppressed if you...

PC: *Communicating. [yawns] Communication tends to run one's havingness down. Knowing that is a factor, and I do know that times when I have*

communicated, sometimes I will feel, you know, exhausted from having done so.

LRH: Mm-hm.

PC: *Um, I don't particularly like writing letters, I've suppressed writing letters...*

LRH: Mm-hm.

PC: *And I'm always in a continual state of feeling guilty because I haven't written my mother or my family or my – you know.*

LRH: Mm.

PC: *Or my friends, for that matter!*

LRH: All right. On this level, has anything been suppressed? Yes?

PC: *Well, I just was thinking, I've lost contact with a lot of my – a lot of friends I – I knew, you know, at the university, and around and about. Mainly through my own noncommunication.*

LRH: Yeah, all right.

PC: *And they simply got tired of writing, or something, and getting no – no answer.*

LRH: All right. On this level, has anything been suppressed? Tick.

PC: *Well, sometimes in an auditing session, I suppress, uh – communicating, trying to find out what's happening. I don't understand what's going on. But I feel that uh – if I do, simply say well, you know, look, um – I don't dig this, I'll put the – take the pc's attention off of his case and put it on the auditor, you see. So I'll sort of – won't step in when I myself get confused about something, you know?*

LRH: Mm-hm.

PC: *As long as the pc is not confused, you see, I won't sort of step in and unconfuse myself.*

LRH: All right, very good. Now on the level "not communicated," has anything been suppressed? Oh, yes. This thing has now dev... it's now developed tone arm action and read.

PC: *It has? [yawns]*

LRH: There.

PC: *Well, I don't communicate about things that I feel are – are possibly embarrassing to other people.*

LRH: Mm-hm.

PC: *In other words like um – you know, sort of chiefly on the basis of the fact as the – uh – you know, like you have a box of candy and you walk into the room and the maid has just finished stuffing two of your pieces of candy down her throat, you see. Well, I prefer not to notice or communicate about the fact that she has, you know, has my candy box in her hands and sort of chocolate dribbling out of the corners of her mouth. I sort of, well, totally not-is it, because I – I feel that she will feel dreadfully embarrassed if I say, you know...*

LRH: Mm-hm.

PC: *... you know, if you want some of – some candy, why don't you ask for it, or something like that. You know it's sort of – sort of like uh – I think uh – I can walk into a room where someone has just stabbed someone, you see, and the knife is dripping blood, and I will sort of, in order not to embarrass the murderer, I'll sort of – I will just sort of not-is the whole thing*

and ask him the – the time of day, you know.

LRH: Well, all right, very good.

PC: *I sort of don't like to make people guilty.*

LRH: All right. On the level "not communicated", has anything been suppressed? Seems to be clean now. All right. On this level, has anything been protested?

PC: *No. [yawns] That it went out.*

LRH: All right. On the level "not communicated," has anything been protested? Seems to be another protest.

PC: *That the other level was in.*

LRH: All right. On the level "not communicated," has anything been protested? All right. Has anything been decided? All right. Very good. Is there anything you have been anxious about? All right, very good. Let me ask the question now. In this lifetime, have you mainly not communicated? All right. In this lifetime, have you mainly not communicated? In this lifetime, have you mainly not communicated? All right, any question about this? You wondering if it's in?

PC: *Yeah, I'm wondering if it's in or out, or what.*

LRH: All right, in this lifetime, have you mainly not communicated? Well, that's in. We didn't clean all the suppress off of it.

PC: *Oh. [yawns]*

LRH: I noticed that. But I wasn't going to harass you – early. Now, let's take a look at this other level.

PC: *Mm-hm.*

LRH: In this lifetime, have you mainly not liked? All right. On this level, has anything been suppressed? All right, no reaction. In this lifetime, have you mainly not liked? Have you mainly not liked? All right. Now on this level has anything been protested?

PC: *I suppose I've protested things I haven't liked. You know. Uh, I don't like the behavior – I don't really not like people, but I don't like sometimes their behavior. And there's a lot of food as a child I didn't like. And I protested things I haven't liked. I haven't particularly liked the government or governments. And I've protested things I've disliked about them. [yawns] And I dislike some peoples reality – hum!*

LRH: All right. On this level "not liked," has anything been protested?

PC: *Oh, I suddenly remembered another thing is I dislike some kind of certain beingnesses, you know, you know – that people assume, like murderers and criminals and thieves and – and robbers and that sort of thing.*

LRH: Mm. All right. On this level has anything been protested? Think of anything else?

PC: *Mm-mm.*

LRH: On this level, is there anything you've been anxious about? On this level, has there anything been invalidated? On this level has anything been suggested? On this level is there anything you've failed to reveal? All right. On this level is there anything you have been careful of? Okay. In this lifetime, have you mainly not liked? In this lifetime, have you mainly not liked? All right.

On this level, has anything been suppressed? Yes?

PC: *Oh, I am suppressing sort of thinking of things I'm not – I've not liked, in order to sort of clean the – the rudiments on it, you know. Um... [yawns]*

LRH: What's that?

PC: *Well, I suddenly thought of another sort of thing is, that uh – certain types of books and literature and things I've not liked. And I've not liked certain causes, you know.*

LRH: Mm-hm.

PC: *And at times I've deliberately decided to not like some things so that I could sort of – um – you know, have something to not like! [laughs] I sort of decided well, simply gotten up in the morning and suddenly decided, well, today I'm going to um – not like um – something or another, you know.*

LRH: Hm.

PC: *Hm! And um – particularly on the subject of food. I used to, uh – I used to – to go into, certain, sort of fits and starts on that. At one time I had the – all – practically all of the food, various kinds of food were all in the category of "not liked," and we were – I was totally down to ice cream. Then I ate nothing but ice cream for about – you know, half a year or something and didn't eat anything else but ice cream.*

LRH: Well, all right. On this level "not liked," has anything been suppressed? Think of anything else? I haven't got a read here.

PC: *Uh-uh.*

LRH: All right. In this lifetime, have you mainly not liked? In this lifetime, have you mainly not liked? In this lifetime, have you mainly not liked? All right, that level's not now reading. On "not liked," has anything been suppressed? All right, I've got no reads there. In this lifetime, have you mainly not communicated? All right, on this level – on this level, has anything been suppressed? Yes?

PC: *Yes, well, while I was doing this level I sort of got interested in not liked. I sort of felt, oh! You know? I guess there are a lot of interesting things I've not liked, you know? And uh – I had decided – deliberately decided to not like. And I sort of found myself getting interested in it. You know, I sort of get interested in one and then the other. It's sort of a – you know.*

LRH: All right, very good.

PC: *I'm afraid the E-Meter will have to make the choice! You start getting the rudiments in, you've persuaded me of the interesting qualities of both of them!*

LRH: All right. On "not communicated," has anything been suppressed? All right. In this lifetime, have you mainly not communicated? In this lifetime, have you mainly not communicated? In this lifetime, have you mainly not communicated? All right. On this level, has anything been protested? Yes?

PC: *Well, I have protested – uh – I remember this, I've protested, um – communication being forced upon me when I did not personally want to communicate with someone. You know. And uh – of course, communi-*

cation being such an important factor in Scientology, why, quite a few Scientologists forget this – what the Code of Honor is, you know – one can communicate with whom one wishes to communicate. And so they go into a factor of, well, you've got to communicate, you know. And uh – sort of overwhelming one's power of choice.

LRH: Yeah, all right. Very good. On this item, has anything been protested? All right, in this lifetime, have you mainly not communicated? All right. On this item, has anything been suppressed? All right, think of a trifle? Something been suppressed?

PC: *I just had the thought that I – sometimes I failed to not communicate. You see? You know?*

LRH: All right.

PC: *Like I've decided that I'm going to – I used to decide that I was going to uh – go home and study you see. And I was going to – I was going to the library or something like that and – uh – to do my work or something like that, and on the way to the library, why, I would meet some friends and that would be the end of that and I never would arrive at the library and never would get my homework done or something like that, you see?*

LRH: Hm.

PC: *Hm.*

LRH: Well, all right. In this lifetime, have you mainly not communicated? In this lifetime, have you mainly not communicated? All right. On this item, has anything been suppressed? Yes, this is another suppression.

PC: *Oh, I'm getting worried, we – well, my two items both going out on me.*

LRH: Hm.

PC: *You know? And I thought, oh dear, it's all like – like, you know, you get a bit of understanding of the le... of the level and you begin to sort of look at it and it goes! Which is unfortunate.*

LRH: Well, all right.

PC: *I don't want them to disappear, you see.*

LRH: Oh!

PC: *I want something to read, so I can get a chain on something, so I can be run on engrams.*

LRH: All right. On "not communicated," has anything been suppressed? Okay. Didn't read. In this lifetime, have you mainly not communicated? In this lifetime, have you mainly not communicated? In this lifetime, have you mainly not communicated? All right. On this level, has anything been suppressed? In this session, has anything been suppressed? You're suppressing something on it. Has anything *not* been suppressed? What's the matter?

PC: *Nothing. I can't think of anything that's not been suppressed.*

LRH: All right. In this lifetime, have you mainly not communicated? All right. On this level, has anything been suppressed? On this level, has anything been suppressed? All right. That's out. In this lifetime, what have you mainly not liked? What have you mainly not liked?

PC: *I had a thought – uh – I had a thought about um – "felt bad." I felt*

bad on "felt bad," and suppressed telling you I felt bad on "felt bad," and just the thought came up.

LRH: Is that so?

PC: *Hm!*

LRH: All right. All right. Let me read this again. In this lifetime, have you mainly not liked? Have you mainly not liked? All right. On this level, has anything been suppressed? On this level, has anything been protested? On this level, is there anything you have failed to reveal? All right. In this lifetime, have you mainly not liked? Well that is ghostily in.

PC: *Hm!*

LRH: What's the matter? It's had an alter-is, and it's had a this and it's had a that and it's had a lot of other things.

PC: *Hm!*

LRH: In this lifetime, have you mainly not liked? Now you've got something else going here, what?

PC: *I was just thinking about "felt bad" a bit.*

LRH: All right. Good. In this lifetime, have you mainly not liked? No, it's more than that. All of a sudden this is reading like crazy and it wasn't before. Did it upset you when "not communicated" went out?

PC: *Originally it did.*

LRH: What?

PC: *Originally it did. Doesn't anymore.*

LRH: All right. In this lifetime, have you mainly not liked? It's reading.

PC: *I'm suppressing "felt bad," you know.*

LRH: Hm?

PC: *I'm – keep suppressing "felt bad."*

LRH: Yeah. As you were going down this column, you know, you had an arm somatic.

PC: *Hm.*

LRH: Remember? Right in this area.

PC: *No, it was much earlier when my arm somatic turned on.*

LRH: Huh?

PC: *It was much earlier when my arm somatic turned on.*

LRH: Much earlier?

PC: *It was earlier than this.*

LRH: Well, I marked this column when you told me.

PC: *Hm.*

LRH: All right. Felt bad. Felt bad. Well, that sure bangs! Felt bad. Felt bad. On this item has anything been suppressed?

PC: *Yes! When the – when you first hit it. You know, I was just suddenly thinking, you know, what I – what came up there is the pc sort of, you know, uh – has an emotional reaction or something like that, you know, mark it carefully and go back over those. And I suddenly reali... remembered that on "felt bad" I felt tremendously bad! And I forgot to say anything about it. But I had a sort of a gloominess come over me, you know?*

LRH: Hm-hm.

PC: *On "Felt bad."*

LRH: Well, it was one of the last ones out, and I'm going to have to shake all of this down here, in a minute.

PC: *Hm.*

LRH: All right, very good. On "felt bad," has anything been suppressed? Yes? There. There. There.

PC: *Well, I feel bad, right now, in the auditing session you know, sore throat, ohhhh, somatics, and so forth.*

LRH: All right. Felt bad. All right, well our favorites went out. Both of them. They're gone.

PC: *Oh!*

LRH: And uh – we will now rapidly review the remaining ones that was – stayed in, last out...

PC: *Hm, hm.*

LRH: All right, and the one that stayed in quite a while here... We only had about four that stayed in quite a while.

PC: *Oh yes, okay.*

LRH: So, let's check these rapidly, shall we?

PC: *Mm-hm.*

LRH: I must have missed something here. In this lifetime – in this lifetime, have you mainly protested? Have you mainly protested? Have you mainly protested? All right, on that level, has anything been suppressed? I didn't get a read. All right, in this lifetime, have you mainly protested? That's still out. In this lifetime, have you mainly failed to reveal? Failed to reveal? In this lifetime, have you mainly failed to reveal? All right, on this level, has anything been sup-

pressed? Anything been suppressed?
Yes, something has been suppressed.

PC: *Yes, I thought about uh – Jenny's goal, you know, "to not be found out."*

LRH: All right. On this level "failed to reveal," has anything been suppressed? I think there's another suppression on it.

PC: *Well, it certainly would be one way to clean up all of one's missed withholds or something or another, or withholds as just the list – that! You know?*

LRH: Hm!

PC: *And list it and list it and list it. [yawns] That's all.*

LRH: Very good. In this lifetime, have you mainly failed to reveal? On this level has anything been suppressed? In this lifetime, is there anything you have failed to reveal? That is now reading. Or is it "failed" reading? In this lifetime, is there anything you have failed to reveal? All right. On this level, has anything been suppressed? On this level, has anything been protested? On this level, has anything been decided? All right. Thought of any answers to that?

PC: *No, but I felt a bit sort of uh – [yawns] of a very dreadful monotony, of some of the things people fail to reveal. Having – uh – and uh – it gets a bit monotonous. They're mostly only interesting to the person who's failed to reveal them. And very rarely interesting to someone else.*

LRH: All right. On this level – on this level has anything been suppressed? All right. In this lifetime, have you

mainly failed to reveal? All right, that's out. I'm taking notice of the last ones out, here.

PC: *Hm.*

LRH: All right, in this lifetime – in this lifetime, have you mainly withdrawn? Now on this level, has anything been suppressed? Do you think of anything?

PC: *Well, it's uh – at the moment we are using it for my havingness command. Yeah.*

LRH: Hm. Yeah. All right. On this level, has anything been suppressed? Yes? It's just dancing around like mad!

PC: *I thought you were going to ask the one at the top. And I was surprised that you asked that one.*

LRH: Oh, I see. On this level, has anything been suppressed? Yes?

PC: *Well, it would have limited answers, I thought.*

LRH: Hm?

PC: *I would have a limited number of answers.*

LRH: All right. On this item – on this item, has anything been suppressed? Yes-sum? Withdrawn? Suppressed?

PC: *Oh, I was just thinking that uh – a person would have to be sort of um – a joiner, you know, in order to be a withdrawer. You know? And the person who is withdrawn, they wouldn't be – that level wouldn't read on the person because they – they're – it would be – they're so completely withdrawn, they aren't withdrawn. You know what I mean?*

LRH: Well, all right. All right. Very good. All right. On the level withdrawn,

has anything been suppressed? I didn't get a read that time. In this lifetime, have you mainly withdrawn? All right. On this item, has anything been invalidated? On this level, has anything been invalidated? On this level, is there anything you have failed to reveal? All right. On this level "withdrawn," has anything been suppressed? You got a suppression?

PC: Yes, it was – as I told you it was found on a student. And they listed on it. And they got "spending money." And I told the auditor, said, "All right, now we want the first incident – um – involving your withdrawing from spending money." And that sort of was the end of that chain. The pc up and had an ARC break. And that was that. So I sort of view that level with sort of a – a cold eye.

LRH: All right. On this level, has anything been suppressed? All right. In this lifetime, have you mainly withdrawn? All right. In this lifetime, have you mainly withdrawn? In this lifetime, have you mainly withdrawn? On this level, has anything been suppressed? All right. That is out.

I'm sorry, I've missed this one up here. Let me get these two lower ones.

PC: Mm-hm.

LRH: In this lifetime – this lifetime, have you mainly attacked? On this level, has anything been suppressed? Okay. Out. In this lifetime, have you mainly not attacked? On this level, has anything been suppressed?

PC: No, not that I can think of.

LRH: All right. In this lifetime, have you mainly not attacked? On this level, has anything been suppressed? Have you mainly not attacked? Some disagreement with this level?

PC: Uh...

LRH: What's that?

PC: Well, that's just sort of just thinking there, thinking about attack and not – not attack. And uh – sort of my tendency has been not to attack, you know, until provoked to the extreme, and then attack, you see. But um – I wouldn't say it's sort of a particular characteristic, but...

LRH: All right. Very good. In this lifetime, have you mainly not attacked? What – what else – what's the matter now?

PC: I was just sort of thinking about – um – that sort of reminds me of – sort of passive resisters and – um – and – um, you know, what are those fellows that won't fight? Who won't fight, you know – conscientious objectors, yes.

LRH: Hm!

PC: I've hardly been one of those! That's all I thought of.

LRH: All right, very good. In this lifetime, have you mainly not attacked? All right.

In this lifetime, have you mainly not attacked? In this lifetime, have you mainly not attacked? On this level, has anything been suppressed? All right, that's out.

Okay, now let's take a look at this top one up here. In this lifetime, have

you mainly felt bad? On this level has anything been suppressed?

PC: *I come into it. I may be selling it. Just so I can have a level.*

LRH: All right. On this level, has anything been suppressed?

PC: *I felt bad on it. When you said "felt bad."*

LRH: All right. On this level has anything been suppressed? Okay. In this lifetime, have you mainly felt bad? In this lifetime, have you mainly felt bad? All right. In this lifetime, have you mainly felt bad? I had a read on one out of three there.

PC: *Mm-hm.*

LRH: All right. This been invalidated in some way? Yes.

PC: *Um. I feel that I might have suppressed a wee bit of grief on it. You know?*

LRH: Well, yeah. Reads here.

PC: *Not that I particularly felt grievous, but I think I might have suppressed feeling that way. Not – not crying, but grief, you know what I mean?*

LRH: Mm-hm.

PC: *Hm.*

LRH: All right. In this lifetime, have you mainly felt bad? In this lifetime, have you mainly felt bad? In this lifetime, have you mainly felt bad? All right. Two reads out of three. On this level, has anything been suppressed? Got a read here.

PC: *Well, feel bad, and – or felt bad, and it sort of goes into two characteristics – to me means physically to feel bad and it means uh – to be some-*

what morose or gloomy about something, you know.

LRH: Hm, hm.

PC: *Hm.*

LRH: All right, very good. On this level, has anything been suppressed? On this level, has anything been invalidated? Yes?

PC: *Oh, I suppose when it went out...*

LRH: Hm?

PC: *...invalidate – it was vali... invalidated. It went out and so was invalidated.*

LRH: All right. On this level, has anything been invalidated? All right. On this level, has anything been suppressed? Yes, there's a suppress.

PC: *Somatics.*

LRH: You got a somatic on this level?

PC: *Hm.*

LRH: All right. On this level, has anything been suppressed? Yessum?

PC: *The body feels worser and worser and worser, as we do it.*

LRH: Mm-hm. All right. On this level, has anything been suppressed? Did you think of anything? All right. You got a dirty needle now, you thinking about something?

PC: *No, just noticing my somatics, feeling them.*

LRH: Oh yeah?

PC: *Hm.*

LRH: All right. In this lifetime, have you mainly felt bad? All right. On this level, has anything been suppressed? In this lifetime, have you mainly felt

bad? What's going on here? I got a real rackety needle here, suddenly.

PC: *Wondering if it was reading or what. Wondering about it.*

LRH: All right. In this lifetime, have you mainly felt bad? Yeah. But I got a dirty needle going along with it. All right. Anything been suppressed here, in the session? Anything you're upset about in the session?

PC: *I sort of feel I have a dizziness coming on from this, you see? I'm a little bit suppressing that. It's in the back of my head and it's sort of...*

LRH: Does this match any of the somatics which you had there, at the beginning of session?

PC: *Yes.*

LRH: Hm?

PC: *Mm-hm, yeah. Yes.*

LRH: All right. In this session, has anything been invalidated? Is there anything you've failed to reveal? Yes, what have you failed to reveal?

PC: *I suppose I'm getting a bit tired.*

LRH: All right. Very good. In this session, is there anything you've failed to reveal? All right. Has anything been protested? Yes, something's been protested.

PC: *Well, I'd like to get a level.*

LRH: All right. In this session, has anything been protested? In this session is there anything you suppressed? Perhaps.

PC: *Somatics.*

LRH: All right. In this session, has anything been suppressed? Yes ma'am!

PC: *Uh, I want to get a level. You know, I'm suppressing – goodness! You know.*

LRH: All right. Very good. In this lifetime, have you mainly felt bad? In this lifetime, have you mainly felt bad? All right. On this level, has anything been suppressed? Yes?

PC: *Feeling bad!*

LRH: All right. Very good. In this lifetime, has anything been suppressed? Yes? I'm sorry!

PC: *I'm – Yes. Thaaah!*

LRH: Hitting me, too! All right. On this level – on this level, has anything been suppressed? Yes'm!

PC: *I just had the thought that – uh – since when we used to do, you know, uh – Problems Intensives and this sort of thing, and uh – you know, and Prepchecks on auditing and so forth, but no one ever sort of did an eighteen-button Prepcheck "in this lifetime," you know...*

LRH: Hm!

PC: *I thought that was interesting.*

LRH: All right. On this level felt bad, has anything been suppressed? All right, I didn't get anything. In this lifetime, have you mainly felt bad? In this lifetime, have you mainly felt bad? In this lifetime, have you mainly felt bad? Now, you sure suppressed something between the moment that I started – huh?

PC: *Wondering if it was reading. Wonder if it was reading and what was happening on the meter.*

LRH: All right. In this lifetime, have you mainly felt bad? There it is! In this

lifetime, you mainly felt bad? There it is. In this lifetime, you mainly felt bad? All right, you got somatics on this?

PC: *Hm!*

LRH: All these...

PC: *Do we have any other levels that stayed in? That's it?*

LRH: No. On all these levels tonight do you – this is the only one you've had somatics on, correct?

PC: *"Dislike" I had a bit on; "not like" I had a bit on.*

LRH: What?

PC: *"Not like" I had a bit of a somatic on.*

LRH: All right, what – what was the somatic?

PC: *Oh sort of um – not really somatic, sort of a bit of dizziness, um...*

LRH: It wasn't somatics?

PC: *No, oh, I'm sorry. [yawns]*

LRH: All right. Then – what – what somatic, too, but what's going on with this one, "felt bad"?

PC: *Well, it's been my head and it's been my throat.*

LRH: And you've had somatics off of this thing.

PC: *Hm.*

LRH: Well, you've had some tone arm action with this level. You probably wonder where this level had come from.

PC: *I said it and you wrote it down.*

LRH: Yes. Did you know that – and so on?

PC: *Hm.*

LRH: Doesn't make any difference about it – as a level?

PC: *No.*

LRH: All right. Let me try something else here. In this lifetime, what have you mainly felt bad about? In this lifetime, what has felt bad? In this lifetime, how have you felt bad? How have you felt bad? Hm?

PC: *That's unanswerable to me.*

LRH: Hm?

PC: *That's unanswerable. If I knew how, I certainly wouldn't!*

LRH: All right, I'm just kicking it around here, to see what it is, because that isn't what we have to have anyhow.

PC: *Hm.*

LRH: All right. That was just balderdash. Okay. Felt bad. Felt bad. Now on this level has anything been suppressed? In this session, has anything been suppressed? All right, something suppressed in the session?

PC: *Hm. How I felt bad. Hm.*

LRH: Oh, all right. That's kind of – gave you a heavy suppression?

PC: *I suppressed that. I thought, goodness, if I knew, I wouldn't feel bad!*

LRH: Oh, all right. Okay. In this session, has anything been suppressed? Think of something? All right. In this lifetime, have you mainly felt bad? In this lifetime, have you mainly felt bad? All right. On "felt bad," has anything been suppressed? All right. Anything been protested? Anything you've failed to reveal? All right. Something you've failed to reveal? There.

PC: *Getting all exhausted.*

LRH: Hm?

PC: *Getting exhausted.*

LRH: All right. In this session, is there anything you failed to reveal? All right. In this lifetime, have you mainly felt bad? In this lifetime, have you mainly felt bad? On this level, is there anything you have been careful of? Anything been suppressed? Got anything else to say about it? We had it reading!

PC: *Hm?*

LRH: Why would it stop reading? Because I alter-ised it?

PC: *I don't know.*

LRH: Felt bad about? Asked you a question? Wrong question?

PC: *Could be.*

LRH: Hm?

PC: *Could be.*

LRH: Anything like that? All right. In this lifetime, have you mainly felt bad? All right. In this lifetime, have you mainly felt bad? Felt bad? Felt bad? Something has happened here. When I varied that question around, you must have done something, you must have protested my asking that question – yes! There it is. There it is. There it is!

PC: *What I thought then, is I had one of the students who listed "In this lifetime, how..." rather than "In this lifetime, what..." you see? And "how" goes into doingnesses, and uh – so one gets a level which is a doingness...*

LRH: Mm-hm.

PC: *And one gets a doingness of a doingness, and it's impossible to get a chain, you see, with, and – and there was a bit of a confusion with regard to what he had done. And anyway, I told, you know, Herbie about this and then – to watch it, you see. And I thought he had changed from "what" to "how," and instead he had changed from "how" to "what." You know? He'd started out with "how." And some... so I told him, gave him an infraction for having changed, you see, when I thought he'd changed from "what" to "how". "And he'd changed really from "how" to "what." So this made a terrible confusion. But I told Herbie that now he'd done this, you see, and the "how" wouldn't run and he'd better stand over him and see that he got this... Anyway, Herbie read my directions and because the auditor writes very tiny and I didn't see what he'd done, which he'd listed first. But he had a real terrific long list there, you see, of "how." And I thought that he had tried the first one, "what," and then changed to the second, you see.*

LRH: Mm.

PC: *So anyway, it made a dreadful mess-up. And then – then Herbie read my directions and then he followed the written directions and not my spoken directions, were – which were "how won't run." You know?*

LRH: Mm. Hm. Very good. Let's take a look at this now. In this lifetime, have you mainly felt bad? On this level, has anything been suppressed? In this lifetime, what have you felt bad about? In this lifetime, what

have you felt bad about? How is this dizziness which you had a moment ago?

PC: *It's eased off, I don't have it at the moment.*

LRH: You don't have it? Did you suppress it?

PC: *No.*

LRH: All right. In this lifetime, what have you felt bad about? In this lifetime, have you mainly felt bad? Felt bad? And that is the end of that level.

PC: *Wasn't there some on another page that stayed in?*

LRH: Hm?

PC: *Wasn't there some on the other...*

LRH: Well, we did a tremendous one on you on the early Prehav, and I happened to remember the level. Ordinarily I would simply cook up a – from the other scales I would cook up an extended list here, because...

PC: *Hm.*

LRH: ...we haven't got where you live. But I'm going to take one that we had on another level that we never really ran.

PC: *Mm-hm.*

LRH: And that was "prevent knowing."

PC: *I knew you'd drag that cat out! [laughs] I've said to myself, "I bet you he brings up..." We did run that and it didn't go anywhere.*

LRH: Didn't, huh?

PC: *Mm-hm.*

LRH: All right. Let's see how that combines. In this lifetime, have you mainly prevented knowing? In this

lifetime, have you mainly prevented knowing? All right, we only had one in here, that would have done a duck-out of any kind of thing. And that might have been suppressed, by reason of your similarity of level on dislike.

So, in this lifetime, have you mainly disliked? In this lifetime, have you mainly disliked? Have you mainly disliked? All right. On disliked, has anything been suppressed? Yes.

PC: *Not communicate.*

LRH: All right. On dislike has anything been suppressed? All right. Check it again, on the meter. What did you think of?

PC: *I thought noncommunic... not communicate being a suppressive type of thing, would be the one that would suppress.*

LRH: All right. In this lifetime, have you mainly not liked? All right. What did you think of?

PC: *Get tired.*

LRH: All right. In this lifetime, have you mainly not liked? All right. On this level, has anything been suppressed? All right. Disliked. Crash! What's that? I had a half-a-dial fall!

PC: *I thought of tired. Maybe my level is "In this lifetime, what have you been tired of" Ooch! Aach! That's what I thought of.*

LRH: All right. In this lifetime, have you mainly disliked? All right. On "disliked," has anything been suppressed? In this lifetime, have you mainly disliked? All right. In this lifetime, have you mainly not liked? All right.

Now, we'll try this "communicate."
In this lifetime, what have you
mainly – have you mainly not com-
municated? In this lifetime, have you
mainly not communicated? On that
level, has anything been suppressed?
Nothing.

PC: *Try tired! In this lifetime, have you
mainly been tired – of things? I keep
getting this saying, sort of, you know.
It used to be sort of an old – sort of –
I don't know – saying, it used to be
sort of a joke, you know. When you
were tired of something you'd say,
"Get down, Albert, Ma's tired!" you
see. And uh...*

LRH: All right. [PC yawns] In this lifetime,
what have you mainly been tired of?
In this lifetime, have you mainly
been tired? Doesn't read.

Well, I am very sorry, madam.

PC: *Hm!*

LRH: I am very sorry, but that is the scoop.
Okay?

PC: *Hm!*

LRH: Give me a Prehav level. I'll do a
short list here.

PC: *Mm-hm.*

LRH: Give me a Prehav level.

PC: *Angry.*

LRH: Angry?

PC: *Mm-hm.*

LRH: All right. Good. Give me a Prehav
level.

PC: *When you ask me to give you a Pre-
hav level, I can't think of any! Uh.
Fault. Fault.*

LRH: I'll change my question, give me a
potential Prehav level.

PC: *Potential Prehav level.*

LRH: What Prehav level should there be?

PC: *Oh, I see.*

LRH: Put it that way. What should be a
Prehav level? Otherwise you, you
educated person, will simply start
quoting.

PC: *Um – Retired. Distrusted. Smashed.*

LRH: Hm?

PC: *Smashed.*

LRH: I beg your pardon?

PC: *Smashed.*

LRH: Okay. Give me another potential
Prehav level.

PC: *Done, done.*

LRH: D-o-n-e?

PC: *Mm-hm.*

LRH: All right. Something that really
should be on the Prehav Scale, now.
That you think should be.

PC: *Mm-hm. Done nothing. [laughs]*

LRH: All right, very good.

PC: *Eaten.*

LRH: Eating?

PC: *Eaten. Eaten, e-a-t-e-n.*

LRH: e-n?

PC: *E-a-t-e-n! eaten!*

LRH: Oh! All right, good, good. Okay.
Sorry.

PC: *Worshipped. Repulsed. Frightened
of. Hasn't existed. Hasn't existed.*

LRH: All right, very good.

PC: *Considered.*

LRH: Okay.

PC: *Had opinions about.*

LRH: Okay.

PC: *Forced.*

LRH: F-o-r-c-e?

PC: *Hm!*

LRH: Right.

PC: *F-o-r-c-e-d. Worked.*

LRH: W-o-r-k-e-d?

PC: *Mm-hm.*

LRH: Good.

PC: *Struggled – Struggled with.*

LRH: Okay.

PC: *Given up.*

LRH: All right.

PC: *Made guilty. Mistreated. Hurt. Rejected. Lied about. Refused. I'm trying to think of a word of "Dug your heels in on," you know, like in just "Got plain stubborn," you know? Been obstinate. Defended. Protected. That's already on.*

LRH: That's all right.

PC: *Was that on the list we did today?*

LRH: Hm?

PC: *Was that on the list we did today?*

LRH: Mm-hm.

PC: *Oh.*

LRH: It read, too.

PC: *Broken agreement with. Been selfish.*

LRH: Been?

PC: *Selfish about. Taken away. Is that all?*

LRH: All right, how is that?

PC: *Mm-hm.*

LRH: How are you doing now?

PC: *All right.*

LRH: Okay. Let's take a rapid fire over these things, all right?

PC: *Hm.*

LRH: Anything you care to say before I assess these things?

PC: *No.*

LRH: Okay. Angry. In this lifetime, have you mainly been angry? All right, we've got a needle reacting on "angry."

PC: *Hm.*

LRH: A bit dirty.

PC: *Mm-hm.*

LRH: Suppose this list is complete? This list incomplete? You thought of something else to put on this list?

PC: *I thought, oh, how horrible! How could I pick them – I could never complete the list!*

LRH: All right. Okay. In this lifetime, have you mainly thought? In this lifetime, have you mainly retired? Have you mainly retired? You had another thought going here, now. Have you mainly retired? You know, "mainly" reads, reads, reads, reads.

PC: *Is that right?*

LRH: What is the matter with "mainly"?

PC: *I don't know.*

LRH: That's...

PC: *The main, you know. That's the only thing I can say, you know, "mainly speaking," or "the Main, the Spanish Main," and all those "mains." And "Maine" in the United States, the state of Maine.*

LRH: Very good. In this lifetime, have you mainly distrusted? "Mainly" is kicking something, I'm going to change this to "chiefly."

PC: *All right. Or "mostly"?*

LRH: Hm?

PC: *"Mostly."*

LRH: All right.

PC: *Either one.*

LRH: Mind if I use "chiefly"?

PC: *Fine.*

LRH: It's all right?

PC: *Mm-hm.*

LRH: In this lifetime, have you chiefly distrusted? In this lifetime, have you chiefly distrusted? In this lifetime, have you chiefly smashed? In this lifetime, have you chiefly done? Have you chiefly done? All right. We've got a slow halting, periodic needle, here. You don't suppose you've had an objection or anything here?

PC: *Uh-uh.*

LRH: You got an objection to something?

PC: *I was thinking of "chiefly," you know. Hope I didn't start having thoughts about fire chiefs and police chiefs and...*

LRH: Oh God!

PC: *Petty chiefs and chiefs and Indian chiefs and, you know? And chief chefs. Oh!*

LRH: How about "mostly"? As you suggested?

PC: *It's all right! I mean "chiefly" is okay. I just had thought when you said "chiefly," I had a little bit of an*

automaticity started popping off on it, that's all.

LRH: All right, let's use "mostly." Okay?

PC: *Hm-hm.*

LRH: Mostly. All right. In this lifetime, have you mostly thought? In this lifetime, have you mostly retired? In this lifetime, have you mostly retired? In this lifetime, have you mostly retired? Okay. In this lifetime, have you mostly distrusted? Okay. In this lifetime, have you mostly smashed? All right. In this lifetime, have you mostly done? Okay. In this lifetime, have you mostly done nothing. All right. In this lifetime, have you mostly eaten? Okay. In this lifetime, have you mostly worshipped? Okay. In this lifetime, have you mostly repulsed? Okay. In this lifetime, have you mostly been frightened of? Have you mostly been frightened of? All right. In this... Anything you've got to say?

PC: *Mm-hm.*

LRH: In this lifetime, have you mostly "haven't existed"? Have you mostly "haven't existed"? The level is "hasn't existed." Hasn't existed. Isn't in anyway. Got anything to say about that?

PC: *Mm-hm.*

LRH: All right. Anything been suppressed on this list? This list?

PC: *Well, the thought that if something came out, one would be hoisted by his own petard, you know, that sort of thought occurred. I thought, well, if I come out with a level I don't like, I put it on the list! [laughs]*

LRH: Oh, I see! All right. All right. In this lifetime, have you mostly considered? All right. In this lifetime, have you mostly had opinions about things? In this lifetime, have you mostly had opinions about things? All right. Have you most – had opinions about? All right. In this lifetime, have you mostly forced? All right. In this lifetime, have you mostly worked? All right. In this lifetime, have you mostly struggled with? Okay. In this lifetime, have you mostly given up? Okay. In this lifetime, have you mostly made guilty? In this lifetime, have you mostly made guilty? Okay. In this lifetime, have you mostly mistreated? You had a thought a moment ago, what was it?

PC: *A sigh.*

LRH: All right. In this lifetime, have you mostly hurt? Okay. In this lifetime, have you mostly rejected? Okay. In this lifetime, have you mostly lied about? Have you mostly lied about? In this lifetime, have you mostly refused? In this lifetime, have you mostly been obstinate? In this lifetime, have you mostly been obstinate? Have you mostly been obstinate? In this lifetime, have you mostly defended? Have you mostly defended? Had another thought?

PC: *No, I wondered if it read.*

LRH: All right. In this lifetime, have you mostly protested? Have you mostly protested?

PC: *That's "protected."*

LRH: Oh, protected. I beg your pardon. In this lifetime, have you mostly pro-

tested? Have you mostly protected? Now I've roughed it up. What...

PC: *Well, I thought when – when you said before that – that it was on the other list, and you didn't – you almost didn't write that down, you see. And I thought, well I'm su... thought sure it wasn't on the other – the other list we just did. And then I thought, well, I guess I just didn't notice it, you know, when you said it went out. You see? So, now I see what you wrote down there. You wrote "protested," you see.*

LRH: Oh, I see.

PC: *And I meant protected.*

LRH: Oh, all right. Good enough. Any other thoughts here? Yes'm, yes'm, yes'm?

PC: *Well, that was the one I couldn't ever remember out of the old Prehav Scale. Protect.*

LRH: Oh, yes! That's so, isn't it?

PC: *Hm.*

LRH: All right. Any other thought here on this? Perhaps?

PC: *Well, I notice everything's going out, you know? And I thought, dear! You know? Even my own little list is going. You know?*

LRH: All right. Very good. Okay. Anything else about it? Anxiety setting in here? Anxious about? Protesting? What are you anxious about?

PC: *Just getting the level.*

LRH: All right. In this lifetime. In this lifetime. In this lifetime, have you mainly protected? In this lifetime, have you mainly protected? In this lifetime, have you mainly broken

agreement with? Ow. Mainly broken agreement with? In this lifetime, have you mainly been selfish about? Have you mainly been selfish about? In this lifetime, have you mainly taken away? Have you mainly taken away? Well, that's "mainly" I'm using again, I'm very sorry.

PC: *Oh.*

LRH: It fires. In this lifetime, have you mostly broken agreement with? In this lifetime, have you mostly taken away? Mostly taken away? Mostly taken away?

PC: *I'm puzzled about what I meant by it! Mostly taken away? [laughs]*

LRH: All right. In this lifetime, have you mostly taken away? All right. In this lifetime, have you mainly taken away? All right. On this item has anything been suppressed?

PC: *I don't think so, no.*

LRH: Go ahead!

PC: *Well, just things that I have taken away. You know. Interest, concern, that sort of thing.*

LRH: All right. On this level, has anything been suppressed? Yes?

PC: *I don't think so. [laughs]*

LRH: What's the matter?

PC: *There's nothing I've suppressed on it. I can't think of anything.*

LRH: All right. On this level, has anything been suppressed? I see a suppress here.

PC: *Oh.*

LRH: A bad one.

PC: *Noncomprehension, for a while. And then the fact that I don't think it can be a very long list. But uh – I could – I could list on it.*

LRH: All right. You got an ARC break here? A little bit of an ARC break? Now what might it be?

PC: *No. Just, uh...*

LRH: You don't have to suppress anything. Honey, you don't have to... Say what you please! I don't care!

PC: *No! I don't – I'm not just – suppressing anything! It's just that it – it's a bit weird. I'm suppressing that.*

LRH: Oh! All right. On this level, has anything been suppressed? That's clean. All right, on "taken away," has anything been suppressed? All right. In this lifetime – in this lifetime, have you mostly taken away? All right. On this level, has anything been invalidated? Okay. All right. Do you have an ARC break?

PC: *Uh-um.*

LRH: You upset about anything?

PC: *No.*

LRH: Are you suppressing anything.

PC: *No.*

LRH: All right. In this session has anything been suppressed? All right, are you upset about anything?

PC: *Mm-hm.*

LRH: Okay. Now what are you upset about?

PC: *I'm not. I just want a level.*

LRH: All right. Well, we'll have to get your level in the next – well, let me check one thing. You told me, during the

break, that you had suppressed "not communicated." Right?

PC: *Mm-hm.*

LRH: All right. And I checked it, and we've got a... Have we missed your item? Have we gone over the top of your item? Have we...?

PC: *Does that read?*

LRH: Have we bypassed your item?

PC: *Does that read?*

LRH: Hm?

PC: *Does that read?*

LRH: Well it has read. Have we bypassed your item? Have we bypassed your level? Have we bypassed the proper level here? Have we bypassed the level? That reads. Now, what uh...

PC: *What was "taken away"? In or out?*

LRH: Let's see if it did: Taken away. Taken away. Taken away – that has not gone out. In this lifetime, have you mostly taken away? That reads.

PC: *Hm!*

LRH: That reads very heavily.

PC: *Hm!*

LRH: Okay?

PC: *Hm!*

LRH: All right?

PC: *Hm! I think that's my level.*

LRH: All right. Very good. That is your level. Okay, now let me check the question again. All right. In this session – in this session, have we missed your level? In this session, have we gotten a wrong level? In this session, have we missed your level? All right. In this session, have we

missed your level? I don't get a read on it now.

PC: *Hm!*

LRH: All right, very good. Do you feel better suddenly?

PC: *Mm-hm!*

LRH: Hm?

PC: *Hm!*

LRH: All right, that is your level. And you also have a large speed drop of your tone arm, on getting that as your level.

PC: *Hm.*

LRH: Very good?

PC: *Hm-hm.*

LRH: All right, that's the end of the body of the session.

PC: *Mm-hm. All right.*

LRH: Okay. Now, have you made any part of your goals for this session? Have a good session?

PC: *Yes.*

LRH: Yes, all right. Uh, to find an interesting level?

PC: *Yes.*

LRH: All right. Uh, to have nulling go easily.

PC: *Yes, it went all right.*

LRH: All right. And to get over this sore throat?

PC: *It's much, much, much, much, much less!*

LRH: Is that so?

PC: *Hm-hm.*

LRH: All right, very good. All right, any gains you care to mention?

PC: *Well, got rid of some somatics.*

LRH: Hm.

PC: *Got a level.*

LRH: Mm-hm.

PC: *I feel I have a level I can uh – run a chain on.*

LRH: Mm-hm.

PC: *Had some cognitions.*

LRH: Mm-hm.

PC: *And in general feel...*

LRH: Hm?

PC: *And in general feel I'm on my way to another run down the bank.*

LRH: All right. Anything else you care to mention in the way of gains.

PC: *Uh-um.*

LRH: All right. Thank you very much for making your goals in this session.

PC: *Mm-hm.*

LRH: And thank you very much for these gains in this session.

PC: *Right.*

LRH: Okay. All right. Put your cans in your lap. Squeeze your cans. All right. Once more, squeeze your cans. All right. How do you feel – your havingness?

PC: *I feel fine.*

LRH: Do you feel it's okay?

PC: *Yeah.*

LRH: Squeeze the cans again. All right. I'm going to have to run a little bit of havingness.

PC: *Mm-hm.*

LRH: All right. Withdraw from the desk. That's the first command – withdraw from the desk.

PC: *Hm.*

LRH: Okay. Withdraw from that post.

PC: *Mm-hm.*

LRH: Very good. Withdraw from the window.

PC: *Mm-hm.*

LRH: Very good. Pick up your cans. All right. Squeeze your cans. Once more – squeeze your cans. Squeeze your cans. All right. That's loosened it up a little bit – I'll have to give you a few more. Okay. Withdraw from the ceiling.

PC: *Um-hm.*

LRH: Very good. Withdraw from the bed-spread.

PC: *Uh-huh.*

LRH: Very good. Withdraw from this table.

PC: *Yes.*

LRH: Good. Withdraw from the desk.

PC: *Mm-hm.*

LRH: Very good, pick up your cans.

PC: *All right.*

LRH: All right. Squeeze the cans. All right. Once more – squeeze the cans. Squeeze the cans.

Do you feel your havingness is dropping?

PC: *Maybe, why?*

LRH: Because I don't think it's doing anything.

PC: *Oh.*

LRH: All right.

PC: *Can tr... can we try, oh, "feel that?"*

LRH: Hm?

PC: *Can we try "feel that?"*

LRH: Yeah, put your cans down. All right, feel that bedspread. Okay. Feel that post. All right. Feel that desk. All right. Feel the arms of your chair. Okay. Feel your cans. All right. Put your cans in your lap. Squeeze the cans. Hey, your havingness came up. All right, that was the last command.

PC: *Right.*

LRH: Okay, is there anything you care to ask or say before I end this session?

PC: *Thank you very much.*

LRH: All right. Is it all right with you if I end this session now?

PC: *Yes.*

LRH: Okay. End of session.

PC: *Thank you.*

LRH: All right, tell me I'm no longer auditing you. Hm?

PC: *You're not now auditing me.*

LRH: All right, very good.

Meter notes on this session: The session, as you noticed right there at the end, was spliced. Actually I ended the body of the session, the pc looked ARC broke, and I opened the body of the session again and for lack of tape, ran it back over the point where the session had been ended.

Now, the final test on the pc's level was longer than it was actually shown on the tape – two-three minutes longer. But the significant fact is that the meter read practically not at all on any level anywhere, and they all went out, and the needle had to be cleaned up several times. And they would all go out, eventually, when the big mid ruds were put in on the levels. And "no communicate" did produce some tone arm action, but this disappeared when the mid ruds were put in.

The clue to the level "taken away" came with the tremendous reads which were being given... which were gotten there on the mid rud questions. Mid rud questions were reading very tremendously. And when I finally checked it out and told the pc that it was her level, I got an immediate steep tone arm fall and a considerable look of relief on the pc and the level was reading very nicely. Read very, very well. But the clue was that it was reading extremely well on the big mid rud buttons. And so I knew it would eventually clean up and read, and so it did. The pc immediately began self-listing very happily on this level and considerably improved in state of mind, so this is obviously the level.

I'm glad that I recorded this particular session because it exemplifies a problem which many auditors are going to run into. Never be dishonest and give the pc a level which doesn't read very well and which doesn't give a tone arm drop.

[The tape ends abruptly as did the original master recording]

ARC BREAKS

A lecture given on 11 July 1963

All right, this is 11 July, and AD 13, Saint Hill Special Briefing Course. Haven't a thing to talk to you about, you know everything there is to know. And that would be all right except you know some things also that aren't true! [laughs, laughter] My mission is trying to point out the essentials.

All right. A lot of things I could talk to you about. But the thing you're going to have the most trouble with is ARC breaks. So I better start telling you something about ARC breaks.

You have just received an HCOB concerning assessment for ARC break and, frankly, that's a rather marvelous piece of stuff. You get so you can wheel and deal with those ARC break lists, why, you're right in there kicking. The only difficulties with these ARC break lists – the only real difficulties with them – is the fact they're always assessed on a dirty needle. And although you want a clean needle for all listing and assessment, the auditor should be banished to Siberia, or the American Psychiatric Association, who tries to clean up the needle before he gets the ARC break straightened out.

I can see it now. Somebody's going to do this! I just know somebody's going to do this! They're going to – they're going to see that the needle is dirty, and they're going to have their ARC break assessment list in front of them and they're going to say, "How in the name of common sense can I possibly assess this because the needle is dirty," and then spend the next ten or fifteen minutes trying to clean up the needle so they can do the ARC break assessment. Now, I know that is very sarcastic of me and very unbelieving of me and all that sort of thing, but the truth of the matter is they would be missing this interesting point: All dirty needles are ARC breaks and the only thing that will clean up an ARC break is the list.

So, what you're doing there, you're faced with the problem – you're faced with the problem of having to shoot down this bird in flight, this ARC break, this black crow, with a gun that's got four ripples in the barrel. You see, it's difficult. And that's what is difficult about ARC break assessments. There really isn't anything else is difficult about it.

But even this isn't difficult if you very, very sharply and definitely follow the rule of instant read. And that will save you a lot of eyestrain and myopia and worry. Now, this makes an auditor who can do an ARC break assessment accurately, every time, a paragon amongst auditors. And that is why it's the most marvelous training process there could possibly be.

We say – we got a – I'll give you – I'll give you an idea, see. We got a nice clean needle, there it is, flowing cleanly, flowing cleanly. We say, "Recall an ARC break" and it goes *bzzzt-bzzz-bzzz-dzzt-dzzt-bzz-bbzz-bzz*. It starts to fall the other way, *bzzz, bzzz-bbzzzz*. See,

we've said, in essence, "Turn on a dirty needle." There is no reason for you to worry about it, because that's in essence what you've said. Let's put it this way. This is metaphorical, but nevertheless, might stay in your minds a little bit better. It's, "What makes life rough?" See? It's ARC breaks! If you didn't have any ARC breaks anyplace, why, life would be very smooth, wouldn't it? Well, the way to not have ARC breaks, by the way, is to be in a total coma [laughter] or be able to handle the environment! Now, therefore, the whole idea of running ARC breaks is smoothing out rough needles. Got the idea? If you got rid of somebody's ARC breaks, you would have a smooth needle. Let me put it this way – you understand it much better.

Now, if there were no ARC breaks on the person's track, then a button going out would not cause a dirty needle. So, there is another echelon, shallower, on the subject of lists, than lists, and that's buttons. Let's take a look at Suppress. How come you can get a kick out of the button "Suppress"? Well, it is sitting on a series of ARC breaks. A chain of engrams is actually a chain of ARC breaks. See, there's the combinations of matter, energy, space, time and thought. The combinations of these and a thetan's reaction to them in their combinations. His reaction to one or another combination of matter, energy, space, time and significance, see? And then you have the matter, energy, space, time and significance.

Let's divide that up very sharply. There are two things at work here, one which we'll carelessly call the thetan's reaction, and the other which we will group as a whole class of its own: matter, energy, space, time and significance. Now, you see, you could have matter, energy, space – I think ... Who was it – I don't know – Delacroix, he's a painter; Deschamps, he's a prize fighter. Who – who was it that invented that... Descartes! Yes! Yes, yes! I can remember some of the people on this planet, heh-heh! Yeah, he – he had a bunch of junk going – excuse me! It was some philosophical rendition – [laughter, laughs] where if a tree fell in the forest, and there was nobody there – maybe this was Locke or Hume – the tree fell in the forest and nobody heard it, would it have made a sound?

Well, this – this is a bunch of nonsense, you see? In other words, this is an entirely different school of thought. This is a school of thought of, "Is existence?" see? "Is existence? And if you're not there, does it exist?" I wrote a story one time, maybe you read it, named *Fear*. And as the guy walks down the street, he knows they're taking the scenery down behind him and putting it up in front of him. And he knows there is no other scenery except the scenery which exists for him. Well, I'm afraid that's – that philosophy is the same order of magnitude, see. If a tree falls in the forest and nobody is there, does it make a sound?

Well, in other words, something has to be observed in order to be. Well, that isn't true at all. Nothing has to be observed in order to be – you can just forget about that. For all practical purposes, if you ever get entangled in on it – I probably shouldn't ever have mentioned it! I might now have tangled you in something you might not otherwise have ever confronted! But it's a basis of this: If there's some matter, energy, space and time lying out on the lawn out there, then it is simply there, isn't it? And you're here and it's there! All right, that's fine, that's fine, that's two different orders of action. You're not looking on it, or otherwise.

Now, for a reaction to exist, you have to look at it, know about it, hear about it, confront or not confront it in some gradient of some kind or another, see. Now, that's what I mean

when I say, "Your reaction to matter, energy, space, time." A thetan's reaction to matter, energy, space, time and significance, see. So you've got the reaction here and you've got the matter, energy, space, time and significance over here. And we don't – we're not even slightly involved with the question of whether or not it doesn't exist if we don't look at it and all of this sort of stuff. You get into the goal "To experience"; "In order to experience it, it has to be there." The truth of the matter is, do you know that you can't – it can be that you just don't know about something and it goes to pieces and you still don't know about it and you see, you've never seen it, never had any experience with it, never confronted it or anything else, and you then don't have any reaction to it. You neither have a not-knowing reaction or a knowing reaction to it. You don't have any reaction to it at all. Because as far as you were concerned it didn't exist. So, the relationship between the thetan's reaction and matter, energy, space, time and significance as a package, you see, is communication.

And to be affected by something, one must communicate with it or not communicate with it, knowingly. You can actually shed a tremendous amount of philosophic balderdash if you just lay it out along those crude lines. There's an automobile accident taking place four miles from here, let us say, at this moment. If we don't communicate with it, we don't see the remains of the accident, we don't know the people involved in it, we don't know that it has occurred, we don't even read about it in the paper, see, there is no interaction. We are not in some esoteric fashion influenced by this automobile accident. It requires a communication to be influenced by the automobile accident.

But! But! Remember, if we knew the automobile accident was going to take place and we carefully didn't know it was going to take place, that, no matter how obliquely or how well forgotten, is still a communication. It's this type of communication that gets a thetan in trouble. You see, he's been there and he didn't communicate, and – carefully! And he made a picture of it, or put up a wall against it or protested it or something like that, and he's got this picture and then doesn't want to confront the picture either because it's – the significance in the picture now has been added to by his reaction. And his reaction was that he didn't want to communicate with it.

So, a thetan's reaction becomes part of all observed or carefully not-observed matter, energy, space, time and significance. In other words, the reaction factor adds to the matter, energy, space, time and significance; and this, then, with the new significance of the thetan's reaction time, made into a mental image picture, becomes the time track. So the matter, energy, space, time and significance has added into it the thetan's reaction. See? So, past is different than present, in that the picture of the past has had added into it the thetan's reaction to it. You follow that?

So you see, past is different than present time. Now, in the future, we add hope or hopelessness. So, therefore, the future also has in it a reaction to it. But in view of the fact that it's not often made up into pictures – although sometimes it is. They're just whole-cloth dream-ups, you see, they're not pressures against the physical universe, or actual pictures. But, you know, you can – you can cause somebody to run future track. You want to horrify some pc sometime, scatter him out of a GPM. See, GPMs tend to remain as present time, you know; that's their best forte. They get you all mixed up because they seem to be in present time and you see, the dichotomy has destroyed their time factor and made an instantaneous-

ness and made them drift on the time track instead of staying anchored down where they should be on the time track, you see. And of course, a thetan thinks it's right there. And you can't get a date on something. I don't advise you to do this, because it's upsetting to the pc, but I'm just telling you a phenomenon. This is not a practical or a workable thing, perhaps, but you might like to do something with it, just to give you an interesting thing.

You can't get a read on this facsimile and you know doggone well it's there, ask if it was tomorrow or yesterday. It shakes it out of present time and you all of a sudden get a read on it. In spite of the fact the pc usually ARC breaks. [laughter]

Now, that, of course, is a past which seems to be the present and requires a reaction to it in the present, but has already got a reaction in it. So a thetan takes his reaction out of this and wears it in present time and you have the factor of restimulation of reaction. You got a restimulation, then, of what he has already reacted to. So his reactions of the past become his reactions of the present.

If you want to have a time, sometime... I won't take up your time right now, but maybe – and box this thing around one way or the other, because of course it becomes very complicated. When you have audited an engram, the reaction to the engram in the session becomes part of the session time track, even though the facsimile itself has been erased off the main time track and you still have a little, tiny cross-reaction. It hasn't got any teeth in it to amount to anything, but you've got this little, tiny shadow of an incident, riding in PT, at that session moment. And I use this occasionally, by trying to find out what was the needle reaction at a certain period of an auditing session. All I have to do is momentarily return the pc to that exact instant of the auditing session and there's just enough needle reaction left to give me one kick. It will give me one small kick.

It doesn't really represent charge. All it represents is the action pattern of the observed present. You might even be able to get another rocket read out of a Helatrobus Implant series, out of PT; but boy, would you have to sweat at it. And it wouldn't have the force or power, you see, of the original rocket read at all, but you could actually get it to react on the meter if you really worked it over and got the pc at that exact moment when the meter is reacting. In other words, at any given instant of the time track, you can rekindle any given instant – or any given reaction. The time track has reaction added to it, as making it different, then, than present time.

Present time really doesn't have reaction in it, except as it borrows it off the time track, or it is added to present time by the thetan. Let's take the luckless fellow who is looking for happiness. And never puts any happiness into his reaction to present time. Heh! Look that one over for a moment, see! Now, the only reactions to matter, energy, space, time and significance that exists on the whole track is the thetan's reaction to, added to the matter, energy, space, time and significance as a mental image picture. So now he goes back on the track, trying to be happy about something, but if he, of course, did not have the reaction of happiness to the matter, energy, space, time and significance at the time it occurred, he will then have only an unhappy reaction. This is quite – this is quite horrible!

You could actually... very funny – very funny experiment with the mind, see? You could lay out twenty-four hours, or twelve hours, or eight hours or something, in which you

are going to put a happy reaction into everything. And you go out and see the garbage pail and you say, "Oh, how happy I am," you see, "about the garbage pail!" [laughter] Rain's coming down, "Oh, beautiful rain!" I mean just – just with malice aforethought, you know. Bark your shins, "Oh, wonderful pain!" you know. Just rack yourself up a few hours of this, see? And then, as the few days go by, why get somebody to audit you through it, you see. And you'll have the most idiotic feeling of happiness, you see. How happy! "I was certainly happy that day!" Quite remarkable.

Now, we've agreed that certain things should be reacted to in certain ways. There's certain things we are *supposed* to be horrified about, we're *supposed* to be happy about, and one of the things that almost breaks your back sometimes, trying to live and exist and be cheerful in present time, is – ah – "things you're supposed to be happy about" is pushed in your lap, see, by your fellows or life, only you don't happen to be happy about these things and you never have been happy about this, but you're *supposed* to be happy about this thing, you see? And actually your reaction is quite horrible, do you see. And, you know, a birthday present, or something like this, when you're – something, and... "Oh, thank you!" You know? [laughter, laughs] You're building up a ridge between your past reaction to the clown that they gave you for your birthday present, you see, or birthdays in general, or the fact that you're really getting on and you don't like to think about it; various things of that character, you see. And you build up a ridge between your present, forced reaction, for social purposes, you see, and your past reaction to such things, and it makes you feel wog, grog, what-what's-what's going on?

So, this can become very involved. The thetan's reaction to matter, energy, space, time and significance then enters into upper-echelon complications which are simply the back and forth interplay of favorable and unfavorable reactions, don't you see. All complicated by the "now-I'm-supposed-to" reactions. This gets quite confusing after a while. And the reality of the situation goes by the boards. It just gets to be too strenuous to get this many reactions through your noggin, so you just say, "Well, it's all unreal." And you put it behind you and you want nothing more to do with it and then it can chew on the back of your neck without any interruption from there on.

Well you say, "Well, I would feel all right if we just didn't keep stirring up these en-grams." And so forth. Well, I don't know that you would or wouldn't. Because they're all there, ready to be stirred up, and if you're not going to stir them up, life's going to. And what do you want to do, leave it on total automatic? So you can square away these things and take care of them and you can handle this various situation. But sometimes these reactions rather get in your hair. And the only errors that can be made in an auditing session which are upsetting at all, actually, are wrong date, wrong duration. Those are very upsetting, very upsetting.

They tend to louse a case up. I don't know anything else that louses a case up. Well, now let's talk about this smooth needle. None of – none of the immediate past is in restimulation, see. Needle's smooth, so forth. Talking about 2H now, see. Nothing – nothing's in restimulation, there's no miscommunication going on here, there's no reaction to the reality, you see, of the matter, energy, space, time and significance contained and recorded in the bank, you see, and this needle's sweeping, beautifully, everything's going along, and you say, "Recall an ARC break." Well, you're asking for a moment of miscommunication of some kind or

another. By definition, an ARC break is affinity, reality and communication gone wog. So of course, that expresses itself in a dirty needle.

Well, it normally became an ARC break because it bypassed some charge which was restimulated. It restimulated some charge and this became unknown to the individual and he attributed the reasons for the ARC break to something else and introduced a lie into the situation and then went on feeling bad about it because the lie gave it persistence. The only way you get persistence is with a lie. Unless you just postulate "It will persist."

All right. Let's look at this phenomena again here, now. The reaction of the thetan can be phrased as his concept of affinity, with regard to something, whether his I'm-supposed-to-be or natively postulated right on the spot; his reaction – his reaction on the subject of reality; and his reaction is, of course, a form of communication. And the reaction is *about*, you see, is *about* reality, and results in a feeling of affinity or misaffinity of some kind or another. There's how you get the bridge between thetan at point A and matter, energy, space, time and significance over here at point B. And the reaction which takes place between these two things is expressed in terms of affinity, reality and communication concerning the matter, energy, space, time and significance which he is confronting, monitored by past affinity, reality and communication concerning similar matter, energy, space, time and significances of the past. You got that? Complex!

Actually very simple. It's simple as long as you can retain a somewhat detached outlook. You get involved in the middle of the battle and there's so many swords clashing against so many shields and helmets, there's so many hoofs belonging to so many different horses involved in all this, and arrows intended for elsewhere landing nowheres, or in you and so forth, you don't have time to retain a detached attitude. You tend to put it on a total reaction. Total reaction.

But that is caused by a condensation of time. So that what we really get the brunt of, in this universe, is an insufficiency of time. Now, you get an insufficiency of time by staying on the time track. You think that's an idiotic statement; it's just very, very factual. You start protesting time. Somebody incarcerates you, and gives you a couple of hundred years in the jug. And you're sitting there, jog, jog; and instead of using it to clean up your engrams or something like this, why, there you are with too much time on your hands. Oooh! That's your consideration! Your reaction to the time in the jug is actually unwanted location. You don't want that location. And you blame it on time. And you confuse location and time and blame time. So the basic lie on the track is, of course, to confuse time and location. And curse location because of time or time because of location. And you get these two things mixed up, and you've had it.

Now, the truth of the matter is, very few years ago, actually, practically yesterday – a few trillion trillion years ago, in actual fact – you probably didn't stick on the time track. Now, the further back you go, the less accurate you were with positioning yourself in present time. Now, I shouldn't use the word "accurate." The less – the less you *were* fixed into present time. You were slippery on the subject. You would slide around, without thinking about it. And you could, at will, go yesterday and go tomorrow. See, time is a very artificial consideration. We see this sometimes in science fiction where somebody has mastered a time machine.

There aren't any time machines, except an OT. He's a time machine. And he actually can't carry stuff back into the past or restore it in the future without simply creating it again in the past and creating it in the future. Of course, I don't know that the past isn't there, in some instances, if it's been fixed to stay there. But this is a very interesting consideration. You didn't necessarily find yourself totally surrounded by the environment of present time! You could go yesterday; and that of course was a very short jump. More likely it was a hundred years. You go back a hundred years for a short nap.

This was very useful. This was very useful. You could slip around all over the place. You wouldn't necessarily find MEST there; but you began to be cursed and to curse this proposition, because nobody was sufficiently fixed and you couldn't stay in communication with people very easily, who kept sliding a hundred years ago! And a certain impatience would generate one way or the other. But that impatience was not destructive and ordinary living was not destructive; it had to be quite cataclysmic. Somebody had to louse up time and louse up location before living became unbearable. You know, there had to be such things as jails and protested time and couldn't-get-out-of's, and miserable circumstances and all of this sort of thing, before you started getting wound up in a circle. And the only thing that was capable of doing this, by the way, was implants. GPM implants – about the only thing that could louse this thing up. You would probably be like that today if you didn't have a few of these implants. All right.

Now, the point... I mean you would have lasted through, processing or no processing. This can get into disrepute very easily. You go yesterday, you see. You see them building a new courthouse, see. So you throw yourself back down the time track one way or the other and choose the location where they're going to build a courthouse, dig a hole in the ground and roof it over with a very thin coat of shale. They build so much weight in the future, on this spot – you see, they build just so much weight in that courthouse and it eventually falls in. You're not even there the day it falls in. You got an alibi.

Well, nonsense of this sort of thing proposes itself, but in actual fact – in actual fact, you didn't have too much trouble with time. And you could slip around on the subject of time very easily. If you have fixed time, you get a fixed reaction. You get a presence of self and the matter, energy, space and time which necessitates a reaction. You've got to have a reaction, now. This is an enforced reaction. You – there is no way of escaping a reaction. You can't drift back a thousand years. Just sit this one out.

Now, you slip back a thousand years because you dare not confront something, you find yourself popping up those thousand years in a hurry, because you got a reason why. You got a no-confront going, of some kind or another. But anyway, to be very uninvolved about the situation, here you are with a very thin, fixed present time. And of course you have very little time. And it is the absence of time, or the presence of time – that's the unwanted absence, unwanted presence of time – which gives problems. The source of all problems is time. If you want to take apart somebody's problems on a very esoteric level, you just start scouting time down. You start taking his time apart on the subject of his problems. This is quite amusing. You say, "Tell me a problem you have had," see?

"Well, so and so and so and so and so and so."

And you say, "All right. Now, what time was awry there? Where was there too much time? Where was there too little time?" And – now, don't mistake me – this is not a one-way road to glory, because it has a tendency to become a little bit limited and is slightly esoteric. And it's the quality of reaction, you see, is ARC. But I'm just showing you here that you could just choose one of these points, the most important one of matter, energy, space and time and significance and you can just change that time. Reactions to that time, as a point – which you normally wouldn't – wouldn't explore at all. On the single subject of problems, you know, "Tell me a problem you've had."

"So and so."

"All right, how was the time awry? What was the matter with time at that point?"

"Well, I didn't have enough time," or "I had too much time."

This is the normal reaction. You could do some shredding of the bank. You could knock the guy around in the bank. You would tend to move him on the time track. You could do some interesting things and he sure wouldn't have the problems that he had, you see? And one of the problems you have with study, for instance, is insufficient time. One of the problems I have with teaching you is insufficient time. Time is made insufficient by the economic status of the thing or the dear loved ones who keep pestering you. And you – we wouldn't have any problem at all with any student, you see, if it just weren't for these two factors. They're very simple factors, the factors of economics and the factor of familial or organizational relationships, you see.

These factors kicked out would only then be monitored by the factor, well, you can get old! You know, sitting around in a body. I didn't mean any particular student! [laughs] But the point – the point I'm making here, is that problems, the peculiar thing called a problem, is quite different than a reaction. And the peculiar thing called a problem is adjusted by simply an adjustment of just this one little part of matter, energy, space, time and significance. Just adjust the time and you do something. Now, oddly enough, you can also adjust problems by location. Less effectively, but you can still adjust them by location. Location is a part of matter, energy, space and time, because by space and energy or mass, we, of course have it understood that it is someplace, or is going through a certain location in space. So we say you could adjust that by that. Well, spotting spots in space – just that, all by itself, produces some remarkable reactions because it's handling just this one little thing called location. And that, of course, will handle some of these problems.

Now, if somebody goes out here and runs into a tree with a car, about your fastest process – not necessarily the best process, but the process which would go all the way down and fit his case level at the moment, which could be quite low – would just run Reach and Withdraw on the tree. Go out and find the actual tree! See, that spot in space, see? And go Reach and Withdraw on the tree and then go find the car, wherever it is, and run Reach and Withdraw on the car, and Reach and Withdraw on the tree, and Reach and Withdraw on the car. I don't care if the car is up in the garage someplace. Flatten it with the car, you see, flatten it with the tree, touch all the ground around there and so forth, and then you say, "Well, what's the time factors involved?"

"Well, if we hadn't been going so fast, we wouldn't have hit so hard!"

That's the obvious factor. All impact is based on a scarcity of time. There's too much happening in too little time. Now, every time you as a thetan have rendered some horrendous and damaging impact, you of course have scrunched these things up. That's not necessarily aberrative, in ist... there's nothing you do, by the way, that is very aberrative over a period of time. You've committed overts and damaged people and you'll commit overts against the greater good of the greater number of dynamics and then you will consider that you don't deserve to go anyplace or be up, but that's holding yourself in the own – in your own trap. In just the normal course of, well, there's a war, and you shot some soldiers and you got shot at, you lost a couple of buddies, and your wife turned into a barfly. Something like this, you know; normal course of existence of the war. And so forth. That's about as aberrative as blowing your nose, see.

That's nothing, see. Nothing. You lose three or four boyfriends and that sort of thing, that's nothing, see. Not on the long line of aberration. Because none of that is sufficient to stand forever in space, or completely shut off the whole line, you see.

You have to get some very interestingly complicated mechanisms making these facsimiles of people stay in present time, bothering them all the time, with them reacting against them all the time, to build up a tremendous lot of reactions, which then becomes the personality of the individual. See, that trick had to be introduced to it. There's only that trick, by the way. That's why you can run engrams today and why you suddenly got engrams today, because that's the chief engram. That's what makes engrams unrunnable. That's why we couldn't run engrams, you see. Well, we can handle that, why, we can run engrams and we can clear up the track.

All right. Now, let's get back to this thing called a reaction. Your reaction to matter, energy, space and time is couched in numerous ways. But where those reactions tend to not communicate or tend to obsessively communicate, you rough up energy. Energy gets roughed up and then it stays in the picture and so forth. In other words, the energy is flowing at one foot per second and you get in a hurry and you make it flow at three feet per second, but it isn't really flowing that way; or you prevent it from flowing at one foot per second and make it flow one inch per second. In other words, the normal course of flows is interrupted because of the existence of a problem or an obsession to be at it or a feeling you've got to get away from it or, you know, it's bad or it's this or it's that. And all of these things result in the fact that you bypass charge.

Charge is there, so you go into this thing, crunch! And you restimulate some charge. Or you try to get away from – *zzrrmmm!* And so forth. Well, what's dictating this? It's former reactions. What gets kindled there is a former reaction of some kind or another. And that former reaction throws into restimulation some earlier engrams, some earlier ARC breaks, some earlier this, some earlier that, see? You get how this – how this works? In other words, you confront matter, energy, space, time and significance in a certain way and there will be a picture of similar matter, energy, space, time and significance confronted in a certain way, which is reactivated by your reaction to the present matter, energy, space, time and significance.

In other words, you take package B and you react to... well, you – one of you girls sees a mouse on the floor, see? Here's one of the things drives women mad! That's because it's an

I'm-supposed-to, see? And you see a mouse on the floor and reaction to the mouse is, "Yaaoww!" See? All right. Now, the last mouse you saw before this, you see, your reaction was duplicate. You went, "Yaaoww!" And with the mouse before that, that you saw, see, your reaction to that was, "Yaaoww!" So, you've got three "Yaaowws." Now, those former ones – those former ones, you understand, are in picture form and the present one is in matter, energy, space and time form. See? But the others are copies of this same thing, so your reaction here rekindles the reaction then, so you get that picture pulled in; now that reaction intensifies this reaction.

It's like hooking two locomotives up, to where one was only pulling before, see? Now, because you never scented the second locomotive, you wonder, "Why did I 'Yaaoww' so hard here?" Becomes inexplicable. It's a missed charge. See that?

Now, the auditor comes along and he says, "The reason why you went 'Yaaoww' here is because formerly you went, 'Yaaoww'." "

And the person says, "Oh. Oh, yes! Yes, of course!"

We – we don't even really have to spot when we formerly went "Yaaoww," because what we've done is just kick off not the facsimile, we handled the reaction factor of the facsimile. Got it?

We just handled one little piece of this. We handled that piece most intimate to the thetan, which was his reaction, his ARC. So, when we handle that, that as-ises fast, so the other charge drops out and you cease to have bypassed charge. Follow this? You be – you better get a good grip on this, I can see some of you a little floundering on this. I've given you a lot of data here, all of a sudden.

Now, the only thing – the only thing that caused a restimulation of yesterday's charge was the fact that you reacted the same way today that you reacted yesterday. The devil with the situation. The *reaction* was the same. So when the reaction was the same, you pulled in yesterday's situation; unwittingly pulled in yesterday's situation and didn't even know it. It's because the *reaction* was the same. You're not even vaguely interested in running out yesterday's association as a facsimile. You're just interested in clipping out of it, *tsk*, this one little piece of it which is *reaction*. You just want to do a reaction-ectomy. Because your reaction today restimulated your reaction in the yesterday incident, see?

Now you say to the guy, "Well, the reason you reacted to a mouse today was because you reacted to a mouse same way yesterday."

"Oh, similar incident yesterday. Oh, yes! Of course!"

He doesn't even know about it. All of a sudden he feels all right. It's a very strange phenomenon, unless you understand what you're kicking out. All you're doing is you're saying, "Reaction today – reaction yesterday." You've actually matched terminals, two things, and they go *bzzt!* See, you're handling reactions.

Now, this is quite different than handling the facsimile. Now, let's go back and go all over this thing again. Very short, sweet, simple. You got a thetan at point A, and you got matter, energy, space, time and significance at point B. And the *reaction*, or the *interaction* be-

tween these two things, I should say, is the thetan's reaction to the matter, energy, space, time and significance at point B. See? You understand? The reaction *to it*. And that reaction to it is expressed, in our language, in ARC. His ARC with regard to it.

Eighty-nine cars pile up in a horrendous pier on the freeway. See? I think it's the real reason they have freeways – they can pile up more cars on them more suddenly! And here you have a facsimile of eighty-nine cars piled up on each other. Now boy, there is – there's matter, energy, space, time and significance! Eighty-nine cars piled up on the freeway, crunch! See? Now, there's another thing here, and that is a thetan's reaction to this. Didn't matter whether he was part of it or observed it or read it in the paper or something like this, you understand. His reaction is a different thing. Now, your – your quarrel with many things that are wrong in the world, and my quarrel with many things that are wrong with the world, is because our reactions are quite different to the other peoples' reactions to the same thing. Now, you understand, it's just eighty-nine cars piled up on the freeway! Now that, in present time, is. And as it becomes yesterday, is a facsimile of what had been, you see? Now, that is a thing. That's a facsimile.

Now, we're not talking about taking apart – this is running engrams, see – we're not talking about taking apart these eighty-nine cars piled up on the freeway. That's not what we're talking about. See, we're just talking about the guy's reaction to it. And that's all you handle on an ARC break. You get yourself so involved with these eighty-nine cars piled up on the freeway as matter, energy, space, time and significance, that you never can sort out the guy's reaction to it. You say, "Oh, well, you've got an ARC break because you were driving down the street, and you saw two cars almost hit. And you started cursing the police department or the highway department or drivers. Oh, yes, now, is that – did that restimulate an earlier, similar incident?" And he says, "Don't know..." But your meter says, "Tsk!" Earlier, similar incident. You say, "It restimulated an earlier, similar incident." And he says, "Oh?" All of a sudden he doesn't have an ARC break. He doesn't quite understand why or how or anything else. See, pure magic!

All right, now, if you didn't understand that you were just supposed to handle his reaction, you're liable to be doing this: "Well, let's see, similar incident, huh? Earlier, similar incident – when was this earlier, similar incident?" Let's handle the time of the earlier, similar incident. Ohhhh! "All right, when was this earlier, similar incident, huh?"

"Nineteen forty-eight."

"Oh! In 1948. Well, what was it that happened in 1948?"

"Oh, eighty-nine cars on the freeway piled up."

"Which car were you in?" [laughter]

You're running R3R, man. It isn't that you can't run it, but, you're now in for a long, arduous job, because this is basic on automobile accidents for this thetan? Nineteen forty-eight? Ohah-ha-ha-ha! I can see it now, on that monocycle, eighty-nine trillion years ago, engaged on his eight-billionth personal, private accident! You got a long chain, see? And you're going to cut into it at the end and cure an ARC break? No, you're not going to do anything at all. What you want to handle is his reaction!

Here's the way to handle it, see: You say, "Oh, you're down the street, and you had an ARC break with other drivers and you had an awful argument. Is that right? All right, was it a this? Was it a that? Was it a this? Was it a that? Was..." You know, you're trying to sort out, "In the incident itself, was anything missed?" You see. "Was it – any affinity in the incident missed? Any reality? Communication?" So on and so on. And, "Earlier communication break? An earlier incident restimulated?" *Pang!* You say, "Well, it's always an earlier incident restimulated." Well, it doesn't always show up that way, see? And you say, "Well, it was an earlier incident restimulated. You had an earlier incident of a similar kind restimulated there on the street when you had that upset."

"Huh! Huh! Oh, what do you know!"

It's all right with him. The needle quiets out.

Sometimes the eager beaver says, "What was it? What was it?" Perfectly all right. Let him do it. "What was it? What was it?" Let him do it! Don't help him out!

He says, "Oh, let's see, earlier incident, earlier incident, earlier..." "Oh!" he says, "it's that eighty-nine-car pileup on the freeway! Yeeass! Oh, yeah, I was upset the same way!"

And you say, "Thank you very much. Recall an ARC break." Because if you do another thing, you're walking – not on eggs – much thinner and crisper than that! All you have to do is direct his attention, direct his interest, and he passes over from point A, and now, straight over to B and jumps in without the benefit of swimming trunks or anything else. He's just in and gone! You understand?

The way to get somebody in an incident – you don't use this technique anymore – is just ask him for the largest object in the incident. Pc's mentioned a house recently. You say, "All right, the house. What kind of a house was it?" There he is! He's right in the incident. You can push him over there, using matter, energy, space, time and significance. Well, actually, you can peel these things off by doing a reaction-ectomy with ARC.

You understand those mechanics, you'll see them work out. You'll see them work out in yourself. You'll recognize eventually that the only time you fail to put your finger on it is when you didn't have the requisite item on your ARC break list. Your ARC break list is insufficiently complete.

Let's do some ARC breaks in auditing. "All right. Recall an auditing ARC break, in the last month." All right, you've got what? How many processes? How many process might have been done? Let's look them over. How many lists would you have to run on this ARC break? Or you'd have to say, "All right, what process were you doing? In that ARC break you just recalled, what process were you doing? What was being done on you as a process? All right, very good. Your item – or the reason for the ARC break – is on that list." See, because you've got a listing ARC break, you got a session ARC break, listing ARC breaks, engram running ARC breaks, you see, and implant ARC break lists; you've got all these lists! Because there's a number of combinations that can cause – and these are empirically worked out, not just intellectually, see? And you normally will find these things. The only thing I would add to both 3N and R3R because auditors are switching between them unintelligibly some day – times, is on each one, "Wrong date, wrong duration, earlier wrong date, earlier wrong dura-

tion." And I put those four questions on both the 3N and the R3R ARC break lists. That's a correction of the lists. I put those on just to make awful sure! Because people do an awful lot of illegal dating, I'm beginning to find out, and durationing and so forth, while running 3N. They do an awful lot of it, see. It isn't necessary at all and yet they do it, and so they make a mistake in it, and then everything goes blooey on it, and then they do a 3N ARC break assessment form, and of course, the wrong date, wrong duration are on the R3R assessment form, so they don't find the cause for the ARC break.

Now, all ARC breaks become because of – I've left you adrift here, some way or another. You recognize that any pat procedure would have its ARC break list, which would give all types of charge that might get bypassed. Because these are just lists of charge, that might get bypassed. Possibly it's bypassable charge. And that's all an ARC break list is. And when you go and make one up, as you may well do, one fine day, you make up an ARC break list, all you'll have to do – you find yourself sitting someplace without any materials, you see. You haven't got any lists with you and so forth. You can sit down and make them up, by just figuring out, "Well, what's all the kinds of charge I might bypass in this particular procedure?" Or, "What are all the types of charge I might bypass in a session?" And then, of course, we remember that it's the – it's current in the session, or earlier in some other session, or earlier someplace else, so we always say... we've got the item that might get bypassed. And then we've got the same item with "earlier" in front of it, see? See, it's always double. See? The wrong date. We always, of course, then follow it up by saying, "Was an earlier wrong date found?" You see? Because we might have just kicked in yesterday's session and unwittingly had a wrong date in yesterday's session – not suspected it until today.

Now, the trouble with ARC breaks is they never rekindle until they're keyed in. And an ARC break is always a key-in. It is never the fact. It is always the follow-up from the fact. So, you would almost always get missed withhold to read on an ARC break list. Inevitably, missed withhold is going to read. Because that's, of course, the common denominator of all ARC breaks and it requires a missed withhold to key in the ARC break. So you sometimes find, grandly and gorgeously, missed withhold, and tell the pc it's a missed withhold, and the ARC break doesn't diminish.

No, the missed withhold, you see, just keyed in the thing. And if I had my way about it, in actual fact, I would omit "missed withhold," because it might be a trap. It requires a missed withhold, and you're liable to find the "missed withhold," and tell the pc it's it, while having a date a trillion years wrong in an incident.

See, the missed withhold keyed it. Therefore, he's so fixated on the key-in that he does... you don't get the other on the list. And you say, "Well, is there a wrong date in this session?" And it's null. Everything's null. "Do you have a missed withhold?" See? Bang! "Yes, oh yes, I so on and so on – you said so-and-so and you did me in, you dog!" See? And that's a funny reaction to an ARC break. That isn't the curative reaction. You'll very often say, "Well, we found a wrong goal." You'll say very innocently, solving your ARC break, you see, "We found a wrong goal."

"Goddammit, I told you that goal was ...

No, you didn't find it! *Tsk, tsk, tsk!* Not the right bypassed charge! You found the key-in, and you very often find the key-in, which just simply keys the bypassed charge in again. You sometimes will see this happen. You give this list, right on out, down the line, and you say, "Well, I've got a – we found a wrong goal on you, see? Found a wrong goal."

"Ohhh yes!! I said that goal was wrong!! Goddamn *yaaayaaayaa!*"

Don't be upset. You didn't do a wrong assessment, you've just found the key-in. Now let's go back and do another assessment and find the bypassed charge. First thing you do with something like that is to find out, let's see, am I assessing the right list? That's an awful good thing to ask yourself, because you're liable to get kind of rattled in the middle of an ARC break as an auditor, see? You all of a sudden find with horror, no you're not. You thought you were doing 3N but you just remembered that early in the session you dated and durationed an engram. You dated and durationed something early in the session. Oh, that's – you've run some R3R. Ah, let's get that R3R list out. Don't do the 3N one again and work yourself to death, you already did that. Have some confidence in your own assessing! Nothing read, so it isn't on it. Get another list! Get another list, and you go down the line.

"Well, we restimulated finding a wrong goal, in an earlier session, on you."

"Oh? Hmmm. No kidding! That's why I was so ARC broke last month! Yeah, that's why I was mad at Charlie! Yeah, that – that's the wrong goal! 'To be a titwillow,' that's the wrong goal!"

You didn't even tell him what one it is, and he brightens up all the way along the line and he goes along just fine, you see, everything is fine now! Get the idea?

You understand the mechanics of the thing, you can handle it. There are various types of charge that you can bypass. What do you mean by bypass a charge? Well, kick it without revealing it. Set up a reaction between point A and B without disclosing it to the PC or yourself! And when a violent reaction exists between point A and point B, in a session, which is totally unknown to both the auditor and the PC, it will continue to be a violent reaction until the reaction is spotted. You don't have to spot the incident, you have to spot the reaction.

Now, what you want to do is get rid of that reaction just by assessing it out and indicating it. You don't have to be fancy about it.

Now, one of the things which you make a mistake on, on ARC breaks, is this. It's very short and very simple. And something I hope you'll remember. It only requires that you locate and indicate the bypassed charge. And if you are called upon, because the ARC break didn't clear up, to go further into it and date the incident and get the PC to remember it and some Straightwire and get it all patched up and get it all glued together somehow or another and go to a lot of work after that assessment, you didn't find the bypassed charge. You got that? And any time you're sitting there and say, "Well," the PC said, "well, I didn't see it – did you say it's the wrong goal – do you suppose it's this goal we're working on right now? I don't think it's this goal we're working on right now. Doesn't seem to be this goal we're working on. I just suppose – suppose – well, it may – may be an earlier goal and so forth. Well what-wha-what's the – what's the date of this bypassed goal? Wha-what's-what's the date of this goal that we've

missed? What's – what's the – what's the date – wha-wha-what's the *date* of this goal we've missed?"

You say, "Well, aaa – *wuuwawuuuwa* – all right, I try to find the – find the goal I mean – uh-hh – to find the date of the..." Knock it off, man! The PC – that the PC has to do something else now means you didn't find the bypassed charge! Maybe it isn't on the list you're using. Ever think of that?

You see, you'll be doing 3N and you get a session ARC break. And you do a 3N assessment, thinking the error is totally in 3N – as it usually is – but you say, "Well, there's a little tick here on, uh, missed withhold. You had a missed withhold. Well, wh-wha-what was the missed withhold? When did we miss this with – withhold?"

"What – what – what – where – where? Say wait – what – whoa. Uh, what what *missed withhold*? Well, why didn't you catch it earlier in the session, I don't have any mis... ! You keep nagging me, nagging me and nagging me with these mid ruds but – wha – why and so... "

Well, why spend any time on it? Let's get – let's get another sheet and assess it. Let's add to our list. Let's do something. Because this is *invariably* wrong in the presence of that reaction: is you have not identified the bypassed charge! That's all. If you don't know that, you'll discard this system, because you'll get loses. You'll say, "Well, it cures up most ARC breaks." No, it cures all ARC breaks, providing you can identify the bypassed charge.

If it didn't cure the ARC break, either it isn't comprehensibly on the list – see, the PC didn't understand it when it was read – or it isn't on the list which you are using. Now, I've seen two instances of this, very recently, very skilled auditing, and the ARC break was not cured, but was totally available, simply because it was forgotten, the little piece of another thing was run in this session, besides what was being run in this session, but the ARC break assessment was made on the main thing being run in the session. But the ARC break bypassed charge was on those three minutes of other process, which both auditor and PC had completely forgotten.

You feel like a perfect jackass sometimes on this, because three or four days after you've had – rough three or four days, and you accidentally pick up the right sheet or you add something to your list, and you're doing another assessment on the same pc, and you all of a sudden find ever since Tuesday, we have had a wrong goal. But we're not running goals. How could we have had a wrong goal since Tuesday? We're not running anything but engrams. How could it be? Yet, there it is. Go into it sometime. Session goal.

I know it doesn't sound very strenuous. But he set a session goal "to not be afraid." That was all it took. Heh-heh! Yet you haven't been running 3N. But there was a goal. These things are sometimes very wild. You're not running R3R, you're running 3N. And you're not dating anything, and you're not – you can date, but you weren't dating anything, and you'd just been going on and everything's been perfectly happy, and... Pc nattery and nothing getting done and the RR disappearing and accidentally you trigger something and you decide that you better do this 3R3 [R3R] assessment form. And you find out you've had a wrong duration! You've had a wrong duration. And the wrong duration has been sitting right there. But what's the wrong duration? Oh, well, the week before – the week before, in the very area you're run-

ning, you tried to find how long this implant series had required. And you'd gotten four hundred and sixty-seven trillion trillion years. And it was a wrong duration. Since it only happened particularly forty-three trillion years ago! [laughs] No. You see? And you said, "Well, we just kind of can't make it out," you said to yourself, but you kind of never bothered to tell the pc and so forth. Well, this might lay doggo. For a whole week the pc felt fine and everything was going along fine! And then all of a sudden, *browww*! See? Some session ARC break, a missed withhold in the session keyed this other one. And there that other one was, lying around your neck like a casket, see?

You feel like a perfect blithering idiot sometimes on these things. Sessions later you suddenly collide with one, you know, and it's been there all the time. Pc's been hard to audit, you've industriously assessed everything you could think of, you did your very, very best. And it'll have some weird little curve on it of some kind or another, that really isn't a curve at all, it's staring you right in the face. And it should have been right there all the time, you should have recognized it, the pc should have recognized it, everybody should have seen it, but you didn't. They're sneakers, some of these things, real sneakers. And it cuts right down to the wrong date, wrong duration, wrong incident. You find out, much to your horror, that you've been running five implant serieses, simultaneously. Five implant serieses, simultaneously.

The poor pc has been going, the first two items out of implant three series, you see, and the next two items out of implant five. And the next two items out of implant one. And of course, this makes the other items restimulated in each one of the other implants. Makes you feel kind of green, sometimes, you look at it. And yet it was apparently all running all right, and you said, "All right, is this just one series?" And he coughed at the moment, or something, you know. And you never worried about it when you went over it. And then all of a sudden you're – or you're running a series which is misdated by God knows how long. You've got a whole GPM and it took place a hundred years ago. And you say, "How the hell did it get up this close to present time? What the hell's this all about?" Well, some wildcat area someplace or another, and they just never got the word that it's passé, you use psychiatry now. And they're still at it, eager beaver, and they're putting in "to be dead," do you know? "To be dead, to be dead, to be dead," you know. And so forth – and you said, "Oh, look at this! Look at this, boy! 'To be dead.' Pow! Man, man! He's right there at the beginning of the Helatrobis Implants." Says, "All right, let's get this, let's get this, all right. To be dead all right, that's fine. Now let's get dead! Nix dead! Well, nix dead doesn't fire. Well, let's random list on this. Let's random list. No dead, not dead – fires! Oh, well, all right. Nix dead – doesn't fire. Oh..."

You sweat yourself green. Try to get in there, you see. All right, well you finally manage to persuade him to get nix dead to fire, you've said it often enough or some such. [laughter] And you say, "All right, now let's get absolutably dead. Absolutably dead. There's your line plot right there, there it is, there it is. Absolutably dead – doesn't fire, doesn't fire. Nix absolutably dead, that doesn't fire. Aw, I guess he can't run GPMs."

"Well, let's come off of this goal, let's get onto some other things here, let's try you out on assessment R3R."

Halfway through your assessment on R3R, all of a sudden puts "death" down on the line or something like that. And blows his head off! See? A volcano never erupted as fast or as furiously or as inexplicably. And you say, "What the hell happened?" And you get out a listing – because you're listing, see – and you get out a listing ARC break list, and you say, "All right. All right. I chopped a communication of yours in the session."

"All right! All right! But you shouldn't do it!" he says.

"I guess ARC break assessing doesn't work!" No. No, the ARC break was when you were doing 3N. It's on another list. Heh! And like, one day, you're plowing along, you suddenly have occasion to do a 3N assessment, and you find a wrong goal. Find a wrong date! 3N. Wrong date! What the hell could it be? Wrong date? – You just keep missing, and all of a sudden he says, "I get the idea it's had something to do with 'Death'." And you said, "'To be dead?' Well, what – is it the wrong date of that? Is that it?" You're trying to follow through and understand this thing. "Well, what is the date of that?"

"Eighteen sixty-two!" [laughter, laughs]

Wasn't a GPM, it was a doctor and a hospital corpsman in the Civil War arguing over the top of the corpse! And you thought you were running a GPM! [laughs] They rocket read! So that was it!

That gives you some idea. Now there's where you tangle up. You just don't use the right list for the right action. But if you do find the bypassed charge, you've got it and it's on – the bulk of them are on lists. And you can locate them, and so forth. And if they don't take care of the whole ARC break right now, you haven't found what it is. Now, that's the one thing I want to impress you with, because otherwise, you're just going to tear yourselves wrong side out trying – because the pc now will want to remember, and the pc will want this and the pc will want that and the pc will want it dated and so forth. Well, what's all this reaction? It's just you haven't found the bypassed charge, that's all. And you've found some cousin to it someplace or another, and you've just keyed in something else. Follow it?

No, ARC breaks consist of bypassed charge, they always go out of line the moment you get the reaction, which the reaction, of course, is the pc's regard toward an incident, or his reaction to an incident. When you get that spotted, when you get what kind of a reaction it was, in a general classification to what, your ARC break blows up. If your ARC break doesn't blow up, you haven't found the bypassed charge. And the reaction between A and B therefore is not explained.

Okay? Well, I wish you lots of luck with it.

Thank you.

TIPS ON RUNNING R3R

A lecture given on 16 July 1963

Okay. This is Saint Hill Special Briefing Course, 16 July, 18 – AD 13. Thank you.

All right. Now, I really ought to – I really ought to give you some good dope here today on the subject of auditing engrams and GPMs. And although I haven't particularly organized this material or separated them out, there are a few things that you could profit by knowing in these two departments. This is a strange new world to a lot of people and actually is a stranger world to some old-time auditors than they think it is yet.

Some people haven't realized that we've made a tremendous forward start in the running of engrams, and they're still staying with the idea of this, that and the other thing, and are doing strange and unexpected things in the middles of sessions and so forth, you know. And I know the impulse, because I myself can run into a block of some kind or another in the thing, and not be able to sort something out, and say, "All right, when I snap my fingers the item will flash!" See. Sometimes it works. But it's very upsetting to the pc.

Now, auditing here has stretched out into a very fine, neat package, where the whole track is concerned. You must realize that this doesn't invalidate the auditing you know how to do, doesn't invalidate yesterday's auditing and so forth. Those techniques are themselves, they stay themselves and they're still useful. As a matter of fact, in very short order you and other auditors in the world will be receiving a questionnaire from me on research. Not for testimonials, but research, to put together the whole field of healing. Anything that you have ever healed, with what. Or anything you've ever had cured on yourself, with what. Because the AMA has raised its ugly head, and the only way that you can really get in trouble in this universe is neglect an area of responsibility – and we've neglected that area of responsibility too long, and sure enough, it's the only avenue through which we're being attacked.

There's a comedy team called Keaton – you remember Buster Keaton and Fields – you remember W.C. Fields, you know? Well this isn't the same pair of comedians but this fellow Keaton at the AMA, and this fellow Field at the AMA are the sole authors of bad publicity for Scientology in the world. We have finally walked them carefully down, and we're looking right down the throats of a couple of mangy polecats. [laughter]

Now, I know I could be sued for this because I have inferred they were human beings. [laughter] And I could be sued for it by the human race. But the point – the point I'm making is we've neglected that zone of responsibility and we can heal things and so forth. And without immediately stating that all auditors are in the field of healing, I think it would be a very good idea to gather all the materials of healing and publish them in a popular book as *A Process a Day Keeps the Doctor Away*. [laughter]

So we have a tremendous amount of valid material in the past and this is not discounted. As a matter of fact, if you wanted to make somebody very, very happy that you grabbed in off the streets, totally raw meat, why, just do some of the old 2-12, 2-12A, something like that. And they get fantastic results. "What is this stuff?" you know, and so forth. On the other hand, it does not particularly land them on the high road to running GPMs, finding goals and doing other things, that it should do. And on the other hand, if you carry it forward and do too much of it on a pc without departing on to the whole track, you can get the fellow in the soup.

It has to be classified as a limited process. And as long as you remember that it's a limited process and you don't do more than four oppositions on one item or something like this – get one RI and do two or three oppositions on it, see, anything you get. And be happy, you see. Be happy. Leave it alone after that, you see. You've shot your bolt as far as this pc is concerned on 2-12. But you've done some remarkable things to him. You might very well have brought him out of a great deal of insanity and upset and worries of one kind or another. And remember, he doesn't have – you're different than he is – he doesn't have your breadth of comprehension of the situation. He doesn't have any forward look to attainable states. He doesn't have a lot of things. And he thinks that if he could just get this pain in his rib shifted – it doesn't even have to be gone, see – but if it would just shift a little bit, why, he's made remarkable progress. Or it isn't any longer in his rib, then that's fine, see. That's marvelous. That's marvelous. You're a wizard.

Well now, when you – when you deal with these low-level attainments and apply Scientology to obtain these low-level attainments, you see, such as, "Well, I'm not so mad at my daughter now." You know, that's fine. He's worried about the fact that he gets angry at the child and so forth, and you've done something about that. Why, he becomes very happy with auditing. And you're dealing – you're dealing definitely in a humanoid level of expectancy. A character is beaten down by his experience on the whole track and he realizes that nothing good can possibly happen in the universe. And when a tiny, little goodness occurs, and so forth, it's almost too good to be true, don't you see, and he can hardly have it at all and it's very miraculous that this occurred.

Now let's take a look at that as a very low level of expectancy. Very low level of attainment. Now let's move over into an entirely different zone and area. And let's move over into the zone of clearing, Clears and OTs, see.

Ah, well, now here's an entirely different zone of expectancy. And this is so tremendously beyond the humanoid reach that if you were to just talk to – well, if you were to talk to people about OTs and try to hand this out to them and so forth, they wouldn't think you were mad because they would they would try to do something about it. They would try to tell you this was awfully dangerous, they would try to sort of try to key you in. They would go into a *nyaaah* state. And they would try to ridicule you, while believing you, you see. And all kinds of weird mental currents would set up. Because you've struck at the very core of their own basic unrest and you have stimulated bypassed charge, see? Promptly.

And they can be very cross with you. Now, these are your approaches.

And in all auditing – now there is a rule – there is a rule, now, in all auditing – is don't stir up more charge than you can handle. Now that's a rule in auditing. Now, if you apply that rule to any process you run or any programming you do on a case, you will always have happy pcs. And that is the monitoring factor in programming which says which process you run. But you can take the processes which lead to OT and you can misuse these things by disobeying that rule.

Now, the worse off a case is, the more you walk on eggs. In other words the less you stir up. The worse off the case, the less you want to stir up. You got it? See, this is subsidiary to this other rule. Don't stir up any more charge than you can handle. And the subsidiary rule to that, that fits right below it is, the worse off the case, why, the more careful you have to be.

Now, this goes directly in the teeth of a Q and A. Here is a homicidal maniac, screaming around and walking on the walls, you see. So the Q and A of past – ha! – torture sciences, mental sciences of yesteryear, the kind that really get the appropriation, are a Q and A. A desperate cure for a desperate state. Now, the Effect Scale goes directly in reverse. The more desperate the state, the more featherweight the cure. Got that? Now that's dictated sensibly by the Effect Scale, because the person cannot have much of an effect. See, they cannot receive much of an effect. So you have to featherweight the effect. And the more desperate condition the person is in, why, the more featherweight your approach should be. You yourself should get a good reality on this. You've got this boy who's *tough*, you know, he's *tough!* Going to chew you to pieces, you know? And yeah, he's going to – *row!* And so on and so on. You better not talk to him that way, you know, this kind of a character. And I'm talking now practically institutional type action, you see. And you say, [whispers] "Hello."

God, you might have shot him with a bullet, you know? And he'll look at you, he'll puzzle this out, he'll consider that. Whereas actually, you probably could take a megaphone and scream at – at uncounted numbers of decibels and he'd never receive it. He might spin in, but he'd never receive it. You get this? Now, that old Effect Scale is terribly important when applied to processing. If you want to get an effect on a pc, then the worse off the pc, the lighter the process.

Now, we've already turned loose some technology now in the preliminary assessment step, which takes R3R and lowers the level on which it will be effective. Now, that bypasses the ordinary defenses of the mind. And that means that when you do an assessment, the rule I've just given you of don't kick up more charge than you can handle, flagrantly and definitely applies when you are using R3R on a case at level 7, 6 or 5. This person does not easily run engrams. You have actually forced this person into the only tiny, little channel, by an assessment, that the person can find some reality on the time track on. Oh, yes, they can run engrams on that little, tiny, narrow channel. That's quite remarkable. The development of the process has been on this basis: that in all cases there is some little, tiny channel that can be approached and on which you will not find dub-in. Understand?

Now, you take a case level 3 – you can enter the case on almost any assessment that you dream up. You'll find sonic, visio; you can run any engram you think of, anyplace on any chain. Now, on that case also you could misdate, you could misduration, you could abandon

chains, you could skip around like a cat on a stove and you're not going to damage the case any.

Now, let's compare this to a case level 6. Dub-in of dub. Now, instead of looking at the wide Atlantic, which you can travel across at any direction you care to, you are now looking at a barge canal, which is one-sixteenth of an inch wider than the barge you're trying to get through it. And which is very curvaceous, and which is full of roots, mud, sandbanks and old stoves. And somehow or another you can navigate it with R3R.

Now, it's a good thing that channel exists. On that channel there is no dub-in of dub, there is no dub-in and actually, if you've got the correct date and the correct duration, you will have visio and you will have perception. Now, do you see this as a narrowing aspect of case? Level 3, oh! Take any kind of a motorboat, ship, sailing ship, head it in any direction and you will be able to make the other side. Down to this narrow, tortuous, difficult passage. And that's quite remarkable. But because you can do this gives you a certain responsibility. If you've got a barge-canal case and you're just able to push things through, boy, that case really has to be carefully handled. Really carefully, carefully handled on this rule – don't stir up more charge than you can handle. Because remember, you won't be able to handle any of the charge you stir up off that barge canal. You won't be able to handle any of it at all, with anything. There will be no process which knocks it back into place. Now, do you get the idea?

So, man, you navigate that one on tiptoe, carefully. You don't suddenly go crashing back there. Bang, bang, bang. You don't expect this chain is going to survive, either. Now, the lower the level of the case, the less incidents you will find per preliminary step. One, two, three and that's about it. Or one. One incident. That's your chain. And after that – after that, your level and your item don't read.

Now, if your level and item – you've run one engram, and that was yesterday, and you ran it with full sonic and visio, and it was dropping a fork at breakfast. And with tremendous relief and case gain and tone arm motion, you erased it. And the name of the chain was, "frightened of having trouble at the table."

Now, you mock it up in your head – you're going to go back there to childhood. You're going to go back there to the days of cannibalism. You're going to go back there to the sacrificial altars of the Aztec civilization. You're going to have a ball, see. No, no. It's an incident of dropping a fork at the table and feeling embarrassed. And you ran it and you erased it.

Now, you can almost diagnose this on the basis of the wilder they sound on the assessment – the weirder they sound on the assessment, the more offbeat on the assessment, the narrower the channel and the less incidents will be on it. Perfectly all right to have, "not wanting to be upset about my Aunt Mary." And the chain is two engrams long. Being spanked by Aunt Mary and hiding Aunt Mary's pills. That's that. Now, after you've got this chain, after you've run an incident – now this is part of your R3R, see – after you've run an incident, test your level. Does it read? Pc had any cognition about it? If it doesn't read and pc's had some kind of a cognition about it, you can't get any response out of this level, this is not the time to go back and find an incident eight hundred trillion trillion trillion trillion trillion years ago, of destroying the physical universe – because Aunt Mary might be in it. [laughter] Because, listen: Having stirred up that charge, you won't be able to handle it.

It doesn't necessarily mean that these charges are all close up to PT. You'll be very surprised sometime to take a case that's got one incident to run, there's one incident and that finishes the chain you have assessed so painfully; and that incident lies at eighty-five trillion trillion years ago. And the incident is two and a half days in duration, and you ran it and flattened it, and the pc had a bit of a cognition, and the level won't read anymore and the item level question doesn't read – that's it! You ask for any more incidents on this chain, you get no read. Well, this is not the time to roll up your sleeve and start sweating to find an imaginary incident by ARC breaking the pc so that he will read on protest when you say "incident." See, that's no time to be a knucklehead. See, pc's real happy they've run this incident – doesn't matter where it was, you understand – they've run this incident, maybe two incidents, maybe three incidents, something like that. The tone arm action suddenly ceases. Your tone arm goes up there at five. Now what? Now what do we do?

Well, we had better find, if we flattened the incident, if there was a GPM in the incident, if we had the right date, and the right duration. If our assessment was right. And if all of those things, squared around, still don't remedy this TA at four and a half or whatever it is, you've got another assessment coming up, right now. You've had your chain.

Now, of course you're thinking basically on the theoretical. Of course, the theoretical as aimed at a 4 or a 3 case level. That theoretical is very simple. The chain ought to run back to basic, and basic ought to be quite a ways back and when you run basic then the later incidents vanish and so forth. All these mechanics are true of the lower case levels.

Now, a misassessment, even on a higher case level is liable to give you a dead end or cul-de-sac; it behaves in the same way. And you straighten it out, consider that you've run the basic on it and unload. Get out of there. You're trying to flatten the chain. And the clue to it is tone arm action. It's not number of incidents, it's not how basic-basic looks, it's not this, it's not that, it's not the other thing. None of these things. None of these things at all. It's, did you run the tone arm action out of it, and to find out if you've run the tone arm action out of something, you then have to find out, make sure, that the tone arm action didn't cease because of one of three things: Wrong date, wrong duration, had a GPM in it. Tone arm action ceased, all right. If the date's right, if the duration's right, there's no GPM in it or if there was it was flattened, and the tone arm is still high and your tone arm action has ceased, then that chain's flat. No other criteria.

You don't have to think yourself to death, trying to figure out is a chain flat. Now let's say you've had five incidents. The way to verify a flattened chain is to make sure that all of the dates you have found were the correct dates, all the durations you've found are the correct durations, the level no longer reads and there's no tone arm action; and one other thing is, you don't get any reaction on asking for another type of incident. Which of course is the same thing as checking your level item. And that's a flattened chain. And that's the only criteria there is to a flattened chain. There is no other criteria at all. I consider that elementary. That's very elementary. And it happens to be very sweepingly true!

If you go into this more positively and more analytically, you can say, "Tone arm action ceased," as opposed to "No tone arm action." Well, "Tone arm action ceased" implies there has been some tone arm action. Well, if you haven't had anything that you could call

tone arm action – you know, you only had an eighth of a division or something like that of shift; when the pc threw the cans down you got an eighth of a division shift, something like this – then you assume these things. That tone arm action wasn't present. Wrong assessment, which consists of wrong level or wrong item; wrong date or wrong duration. Or you collided head-on with a GPM and were too knuckleheaded to ask if it was one. And you've been trying to scan this poor pc through double-firing items. And that will make a tone arm go up and stick every time.

And that's the extent of it. You frankly can't ARC break a pc hard enough to cause a cessation of tone arm action. Isn't that interesting? Actually, an auditor auditing a pc – you know, the auditor as a pc, then becoming a pc – cannot have become sufficiently keyed-in or ARC broke enough to have stopped tone arm action. I think that's an interesting thing to know. I've seen a lot of this. In other words, tone arm action doesn't stop for other reasons. Tone arm action won't even stop because of an ARC break.

Now, I have seen tone arm action stop by trying to run the pattern of the Helatrobus Implants in the Gorilla Implants. But what is that? That breaks down to a wrong date, doesn't it? And I've seen tone arm action come to a sudden and horrendous halt at 5.

You get down to the level of where the goal appears as an oppterm in the Helatrobus Implant pattern and I've seen the tone arm go straight up to 5 – bang. From very good tone arm action. Just stop, right there. Up to that time, why, there was enough charge on the GPM to actually run that wrong a line plot. Your 17 April 63 bulletin, the line plot it gives goes waaaaay back. And a lot of those goals reappear in the Helatrobus Implants. And if you've got a wrong date and you've actually got an earlier goals series, you've got a different pattern.

Well, you mistake the date. You mistake the date. You say, well, you get there, you're so sure it's a Helatrobus Implant – it's "to be alone," you see, or something like that. You're sure it's a Helatrobus Implant, so you date it, cross-eyed fashion, and you get forty-three trillion years ago. You say, "Ha, obviously it's a Helatrobus Implant," so you get this, "'To be alone,' all right, let's get the top oppterm..." Funny enough, the thing will run. It'll run pair after pair. You get some little fire off of them, some kind of fire, the pc is kind of nattery and ARC breaky, you have to scream at the pc every once in a while to get them to random list, or something like this, to get something. You can work at it awfully hard, you know. And you're getting down the line here, and you may not find it out until you get the goal as an oppterm. All of a sudden your tone arm will go *zzzzuuu – clank!* You can almost hear it settle on 5 or something like that. There's now going to be no RR, there's not going to be anything.

And you say, "What do I do?" Well, this is not the time to turn in your thetan. This is a time to look for wrong date, wrong duration, whether or not GPM existed in the incident, see. Now if – if during this entire month, I could only beat, persuade, whisper, cajole these two data – I mean, this – these two data at you, and get you to accept them, I would consider it a very well-spent month. Very well spent. And that is the worse off the case is, the easier you take it. And a high tone arm in running the track results from wrong assessment, wrong date, wrong duration or a GPM present where you suspected none. I've actually said the lot, you understand? Any other data that I can now give you is actually so junior to these screaming truths, you see, that it's something like, "There is the sun," don't you see. And now somebody

brings out a small flashlight, which you get at the dime store and turns it on, and says, "Now, do you see the difference? You see that this light is the same as sunlight, and it is as bright as sunlight." This would be an outright lie, don't you see? This is big stuff that I'm giving you. These two departments are the only departments that are going to get you into any real trouble. And they're going to get you into plenty of trouble if you don't know these things.

Let me give you an idea: You're running this person, and so help me Pete, they've had an enormous win. They've run this engram out at eight trillion years ago. And it's an engram of being executed in some weird way. It'll – pardon me, that's too simple. It'll be, if it's this kind of a case – you can tell the kind of a case because the more – the worse off a case is, the more outrageous the assessments look to you. The weirder the assessments look. This guy – this guy for instance, has – he is – you can't find him on the Prehav Scale, you see, you have to do your own. And so on, and you finally get "leery," see, l-e-e-r-y, as the level. And then you get the item, "Leery of chocolate served at 2 o'clock in the morning in Sweden." You can absolutely count on the fact that you've got a case level 7.

Well, look at the finite time, subject matter, see? It's even got the location in it – it must spot it down on time track so there can't be more than one or two incidents on this subject, you understand? But it doesn't mean that they're necessarily present time. Don't get the idea fixed in your head that because a pc's having a hard time to run, or is having a hard time running, that they only run in modern time, see. Now comes the dangerous part of it.

You do your ordinary magnitude of how long ago this incident is and you turn up something that has horrendous magnitude. See, it's long time ago; and you find this incident and you run this incident and that's it. The incident flattens and so forth. And it has some esoteric aspect, see, like, "Leery of stepping on cat's tails." And the incident took place a hundred billion trillion years ago. And we find some witchcraft society or something, as we would suspect, don't you see? And it's something involved and fantastic – or very ordinary, but there it is, and we clean it up and we have some tone arm action while we're cleaning it up, see. And we don't have any tone arm action, tone arm isn't free or anything, see. But we just don't have any more tone arm action and we can't – bang – find another incident just like that, don't you see. The dating on it, oh, man! – If you did find another incident it would just be, "Is it more than a trillion years ago? I have to repeat that, that was equivocal. More than a trillion years ago? Sorry. Turn this thing up to 128. Is it *more* than a trillion years ago? Yeah. Is it *less* – *less* than a hundred trillion years ago? Well, I didn't get any read there." [laughs] When you find yourself doing that kind of dating, you're mixed up with GPMs, which of course are timeless; that's one of the things, but you're also off the heavy reading chain of the individual. And that you're goi... you could get tone arm action going on with this, don't you see. But it's a hard fight all the way. You've already gone by a lot of charge and so forth. In running a case level 3, you can do this very easily. You can get – you can get a tremendous quantity of charge bypassed.

Case is still making progress, see, case is still sweating it out. You're having ARC breaks and that sort of thing, but the case is still pressing on and so forth and your dating just becomes very microscopic. It's *huuh*. So there's tremendous opportunity to make wrong dates. Well, you've just gone too far up chains without cutting any of the unburdening charge off, see. You've gone by and by and by. And it won't be a secret that you've gone by things. Don't

interpret that, that it's a secret. It's neither unknown to you or the pc. You have just passed by eighteen series trying to get to the first series of these GPMs, see. Well, don't blame yourself if you find your meter very difficult to read at that point. Why is it so difficult to read? One, you're handling GPMs and they are timeless and so are very hard to date anyway, and the other is you've left so much charge on the confounded thing, you've bypassed so much in the interest of economy of auditing time, that you've actually built yourself up a big problem.

And that problem is, is the pc can probably get to it, the pc can probably run it, but the pc is staying in it just about the way a marble would do if put down on the top of a sphere. He just feels that way. He "*Vauh! Heuh!*" Don't – nobody breathe in the session and he'll be able to hold his position on the time track, see. If you breathe out of the wrong nostril, bang! You'll bypass some charge, don't you see. And this is queasy stuff, see. Well, you're already running somebody that is – is being pressed too hard. Well, there's no particular reason why you shouldn't, on a case level 3 or somebody that doesn't have too much trouble. I'm not saying you mustn't do it, on your upper-level cases, but by God, you do it on your lower-level cases and you will be in trouble you will never get the pc out of. You understand me?

So you see, if it can happen in cases that run well and easily – and a good test of the case, does it run easily, does he RR all over the place? Do you get three or four RRs, nice, great big crashing RRs, bang, bang, bang, bang, off a GPM item, see? That case is running like a flying bird, see. Next item, bang, bang, bang, bang, bang, see. Next item, *bong, bong*, see. Case is running poorly, or off-chain, or misassessed or something like that – "All right, give me the next item."

"Absolutably implanted."

"Well, let's see, give me some variations on the item. All right. Anything there been suppressed? Well, let's random list this for a little while. Ah, there's the RR! Ha, ha. Half a dial. Whew. Made it. All right, repeat the item. All right, give me the next item."

Case is running implants that way, boy, watch out. That's all I've got to say. You watch out what charge you stir up on that case without doing anything about it. You watch it! First place, you haven't got the case running in the area of the track the case can run, there's a lot of things wrong with this.

Now, of course, you say to somebody arbitrarily, run the goal "to forget" out of the Helatrobis Implants and to hell with the assessment or anything else, all right. So he can run it and they make it by the skin of their teeth and so forth, and it isn't RRing well and they have an awful time getting the next goal and so forth. Case is still making progress. Case is still making progress.

Now, you assess the case, you're liable to find it's another area that is hot on this case, see. There is a case running badly by gross assessment. See why? Heavy gross assessment. You've seen all this. All right. Now that you've got a preliminary step, there's another way to find GPMs. Did you know that most of your preliminary steps, on a case that's at all advanced, on a case level 4 or 3, your preliminary steps lead inevitably to a GPM. In fact, the preliminary step is about the fastest way to find a goal you ever heard of. Marvelous method of finding a goal. You get "afraid of" or something like that as your level, you see. "Afraid of other people." And, something like that. And everything that this guy – everything this guy's

saying the next session is rocket reading. He says, "Well I had lunch," – rocket read. You'll see this occasionally.

You just do it, just routinely – you're not looking for a GPM and you just date this thing back and you all of a sudden find yourself with the goal "to be alone." What else? And there it is and you say, "Does this thing contain a GPM?" I don't know why you'd say that, but you do – and... All right, let's talk about the way of running these later, the interchangeability of this – I'll mention this in a moment. But you get the items out of the thing and so forth, and that level is flatter than a flounder. Gone. Doesn't read now. Get the idea? It'll take it back to the goal, which is ready to be run. All too many times. See, that's in a case that isn't running badly at all. They go back to it; and some cases that are running rather difficulty. They go sailing right straight back to a certain series of implants and run a specific goal out of a chain. When you get back there, you've got your choice. Are you going to do that whole series, or are you just going to kick out there? It'll very greatly depend on the kind of – the difficulty you had running the case.

If the case was running very easily, you'd amputate the whole series right there. The devil with it. So, it was "to be alone," well, the adjacent ones are probably just as important. And so, just run it all the way through and back. Get the first goal of the series to the last goal of the series and just cut that section of time track, right there – bang. But if this case was having a very hard time in running, I'm afraid we would just stay with the assessment.

And we now test it. We say, "All right, 'fear of being together with other people,'" you know. No read. That's it. Tone arm action has disappeared, everything else. Do a new assessment. You're liable to find yourself with another goal somewhere. Handiest little goal finder you ever heard of in your life happens to be that. If a goal is ready to be run, and if it is a goal necessary to resolve the case, the preliminary step of R3R will find that goal without you doing anything about it at all. All you do is do the ordinary preliminary step. You get the assessment, ask for the first incident to be run on it. Well, maybe you find the first incident and you run that and that's all fine and you ask the next incident to be run and bang, you're sitting right in the middle of a GPM. That was it. That's the one. And you run it and you maybe can find another one. That's an earlier GPM. Same GPM. Repeated earlier. Run it out again. Find out if there's another one. You can't get anything to read, let's get a new assessment. See how you tackle the thing.

You can be far more complicated. Far, far, far more complicated, in auditing, on these upper-level processes. You can just work yourself into a fit. And then you'll drop it back to some idiotic simplicity.

The reason you're having trouble running a case and the reason a case ARC breaks and all of that sort of thing all comes down to wrong assessment, wrong date, wrong duration, or a GPM in the incident you're trying to run. And it's as simple as that. Simple as that. And you can catalog the case out.

Now, you understand that wrong assessment includes something – running something that hasn't been assessed, see. So that makes a wrong assessment. Now, let's say you were able to run out two incidents – you were able to run out a couple of incidents; that's fine. The level no longer reads particularly, so forth. And then you go chasing down the track to some-

where else. Just for the hell of it, one way or the other, you decide to see if there's an earlier incident. And the pc protests – you're trying to find an earlier incident or something, so you start getting reads. In other words, you're being awful complicated. You weren't happy to have flattened the chain, now you're going to find some more on this chain. In other words, you're now, from that point on, running on a wrong assessment. Because you flattened the assessment you've got. And they sometimes flatten with the most fantastic rapidity. Sometimes they run a long time, session after session after session after session after session. If the case is doing pretty well, they will. The case that isn't doing well, they run very briefly.

You almost spend twice as much time assessing in the early stages of a case as you do auditing engrams. Doesn't take any time to run the engram after you've got it assessed. Pc ran it like a startled bird. There was nothing to it. It assessed back to a goal in the Bear Implants, of all places. That's where you landed: "To postulate." And you ran it and boy, you just never saw such RRs. Flying tone arm, and everything is going down, you finish up with that, and complete the thing, and that's it. Level is flat, tone arm action rather tamed down, nothing left on the thing.

Now you decide to see if you can't find an earlier mention of "postulate." Oh, blow your brains out, man, it's much less painful. In other words, you've exceeded – you've exceeded your assessment. So you're now running on a wrong assessment. And the worse off a case is, the more *deadly* this action is.

You run a case level 3, you wouldn't even think there's any deadliness to it at all. You can run all over the confounded track, don't you see. But you take somebody that you *very, very* carefully had to run and you flattened the level the pc was on and you got rid of the GPM and you got everything all squared around and everything was fine and all was well... You shouldn't repeat that goal "to postulate" – it's pretty early. Anyway, you got all the way back to whatever you got and that was the end of the chain.

Now, it never occurs to you to test the level. Look at your TA to find out if it's going to run. And you run two engrams further with no TA action, no gain of case, tremendous difficulty in dating, fantastic difficulty in getting the right duration. Well, my God, you have enough trouble getting the right duration, without trying to get the duration of a chain that isn't available to be run. From there on, you see, you're just manufacturing trouble for yourself. And there's more and more and more trouble.

Now, you see in the first place you're trying to shoot the moon. Well, the moon, the devil – you're trying to shoot this universe with the pc, as far as this. Of course you know, you can – you can do other things with these routines on a run-of-the-mill pc. In fact, that's very fine. This pc's got sciatica, and you want to do something about their sciatica or something like that, you run these processes. You'll see something very interesting. You'll see their sciatica disappear one chain later or something like that. Then have enough sense to get out of it, because his level was sciatica. He doesn't have any desire of attainment beyond this particular point. And although he will swing around into it, he can get awfully drowned trying to read-just his sights.

Maybe he's trying awfully hard to be normal. And you tell him you're going to make superman out of him, see. I'm afraid this is not very agreeable. He knows that's dangerous. Well, you're just running bypassed charge like crazy, you see?

So that doesn't say that you shouldn't run GPMs and R3R on cases that want only limited gains, but it's saying you can use them to attain limited gains. Remember there, particularly it applies when you flatten the chain, consider you flattened the chain. Don't go ramming on around all over the place and *boomity-bang*, up one side and down the other, tearing all over the track and getting the chain going, and it's still hotter than a pistol and abandoning it, and going on to something else.

Well, all this is all nonsense to handle a case in that particular fashion. But the worse off a case is, why, the more it moves from nonsense to murder. Case is in real rough shape. Can't run very much. Why, man, you're muddying up that one little, tiny, silver thread that you could get through the mess. And it has to be done accordingly. And the pc says, "Oh, I think there's a bunch of stuff here, at a hundred skillion billion quadrillion years. Yes, I heard this date; it's times ten to the nth is the proper date and so forth, and we really ought to run that, because that's very interesting, I'm sure. Because I was God then, and I..."

There's one question you should ask. Is it on your assessed chain? It's perfectly all right for you to indicate it, or date it for the pc or something like that, but even that gets very queasy. Because they don't date or duration well. And you just added an ample opportunity to make a wrong date and wrong duration, haven't you? So I'm afraid I'd sit and listen to all that, and give him a cheery aye, aye. And I'd follow it carefully. And when I wasn't getting tone arm action on the chain, when I wasn't easily able to ask the question and get a response: "All right, is there another incident on this chain?" and we get no reaction, and so forth, well, I'm afraid that I would not run the risk.

Oh, if this pc could run everything like – from one end of the track to the other, with only a mild level of agony or something like that, but your meter was reading; you had no trouble getting TA action and so forth and he said, "There's an incident sitting back here at eighty skrillion skrillion billion years," and so forth, "and I'm looking straight at it and it has something to do with the chain that we were running, but I don't think it has very much. And I'd like to run this." I'm afraid I might be very guilty of Q and Aing with him and let him run it. I might not do anything more than that, you understand, because I know it isn't going to damage him. It isn't going to spoil his case; it isn't going to upset anything.

But little girl I'm auditing, trying to get over her blind staggers that she gets every once in a while, and she has an awful lot of trouble sitting in session or holding the cans or has an awful lot of trouble concentrating, and difficult – doesn't answer auditing questions well, tone arm action's sort of minimal – and probably ought to be on the CCHs anyway. I'm running an engram on this character and I've got a chain and I've flattened this chain; I can't get any response from the level or the item now. Person starts giving me a big sales talk about being the princess Zazu, in the lower Archipelagian peninsula eight lives ago, I'm afraid I would give them an awful cheery aye, aye and assess a new chain. I just would not take the chance. I just wouldn't take the chance, that's all.

And when I can't find an incident easily and I can't find a duration easily, then I'm very careful to get the proper date of what I am looking for, even though it's impossible, you understand? And I'm awfully careful to get the right duration to what I'm looking for, all the time cursing to myself that I ever *asked* the ruddy question in the first place. See, I've got an incident half-found, and I can't really date it, can't really duration. I know now what's happened. I haven't departed from the chain. No, there's no esoteric, weird or strange or exotic reasons. The chain is flat. I am looking in a completely clean ballpark for a nonexistent baseball. There's none there. And that's why I'm having a lot of trouble.

I can get vaguely associated things, see? Vaguely connected things. Very tiny connections. Yeah, I can get them to read, I can make a meter talk, I can get the pc interested, and I can get him restimulated, I can run something of the sort. But inevitably, after I've gone to all this work and so forth, my tone arm continues to sit there at four and a half and doesn't move and I shouldn't have been there in the first place.

The way you create work for yourself as an auditor is doing things you shouldn't be doing. And if you persist in this course, you will be a very hard-worked, worried auditor. I can guarantee that the labor that you will go to is utter slavery. You're always doing things that you shouldn't have been doing in the first place, then you will always have things to do that nobody can do. And you just cut yourself out the most cluttered-up career you ever heard of.

Now, when you're shooting anything like R3R, 3N, you're shooting the whole track. And brother, that is the whole track. Now, there's good news on this: I actually was able to attain a period on the whole track for a half an hour or something like this, where there was a total cutout of all mass of all GPMs which followed after. In other words, I did a complete thing. I was sitting there for about half an hour or something like that, with no GPM mass of any kind whatsoever. That's rather fantastic in that there's several thousand GPMs, see.

We had a wrong date and a wrong duration and I skidded on the track shortly after that. We got a wrong date and a wrong duration on something or other, accidentally, by mixing 3N and R3R. Now, in the middle of 3N, you give an R3R command, I can tell you that it is dynamite. These are two separate processes. And the commands of 3N are quite different from the commands of R3R, but the two processes mix. They mix. This isn't – it sounds to me like I ran into a catastrophe. I didn't run into any catastrophe, I'm just saying I slid back down the track after a while. But it was a rather remarkable feeling to have no GPM mass of any kind whatsoever, you know, and all you had to do was put your foot against the back of your head, and if you gave a push you'd probably not only knock your body through the wall in front of you, you – see, but you'd probably knock down the wall back of you. I've had some interesting experiences recently as a pc exterior, or cleared up along certain channels. These are quite interesting experiences. Rather rough on this body, but I'm not worried about that. Mock myself up another one shortly.

Anyway, the point I'm making here is that there is a point on the track, unbelievable though it may seem, where you can actually get back of and find the basic of all GPMs. I've hit that point. I haven't got it so I can hold it steady, because there's too many GPMs following it. But by discharging those GPMs which have been bypassed and straightened up and so

forth and getting those things shucked off... Got there, by the way, by keying out. I found a little trick method of keying out whole GPMs. When I approached the area and I could hear the distant firing of items, why, I just ran those distant firing of items and it keyed off that, see, so therefore I had the earlier GPM. And then I'd pick out of it the distant firing of items, the moment when I would first approach the area and could hear those items firing, I'd say, "Oh, it's this again." And the very fact that I was saying, "again" keyed me up to the point that I already had an incident on it. So, you see, I'd find in that incident the distant firing of items.

All of a sudden found myself sitting at the beginning of all GPMs. And then, of course, having reached it in that illegal fashion, don't consider it strange that about half an hour later with a slight – just a slight auditing error, why, the roof fell in. But it's easy to get back there again; there's nothing to that. All we got to do is discharge some of those things that I carefully keyed out. Very trick method. I've had an awful time recently working out the most vicious series of GPMs on the track. And they're way back. And they've got an invisible picture – they've got five pictures, but one of the pictures is – the first one is invisible. So that you get twenty items firing at you; there are four different items, they fire twenty times. The group of four fires five times as a group which gives you twenty RIs. And then you get twenty RIs with picture one, twenty RIs – same ones – with picture two, twenty RIs with picture three, twenty RIs with picture four, twenty RIs with picture five, you see. Very simple. There's no goal connected with them. Back earlier than when somebody dreamed up the idea of goal, see. And just – they're just opposing items in dichotomy. Positive, negative and a dichotomy, see, like "wake" and "sleep," see. "Wake – never wake, sleep – never sleep." That makes you a dichotomy, don't you see, but also makes you a positive-negative. Nice package.

Well, that fires five times in a row for each picture. This thing was driving me batty; I just couldn't figure this thing out. And I had – ran into myself on the track trying to figure this out. And I had given up. Ages and ages ago I had given up trying to figure this thing out. I just finally went smack, smacked them all together and hoped I wouldn't be bothered with it, you know? [laughter] And then got caught in the mass of the smack.

Anyway, this took us two sessions to get these things unwound. And we had to run enough of them and get them enough discharged and so forth. And I finally got the thing unwound. And the first picture's invisible! It's a picture, but it's a picture of invisibility. So of course, you always afterwards tried to put a picture there. And there are twenty firing items that could never be run. And you could think you could run it out, don't you see, but you can't run it out because the first picture is always missing. And that's the basic on it, so the rest of the fires are therefore reinforced by the presence of the basic and they won't discharge either, they'll just charge up again. It makes a vacuum. You try to put pictures there and your whole bank starts pouring into this and this is why a GPM afterwards tends to accumulate pictures. Even a simple GPM tries to accumulate pictures after that. Because you get in the habit of it.

You've got this missing picture. "What's there," see? "What's there?" And you just get pictures, pictures, pictures, pictures. *Bah!* Went through about two sessions trying to unsnarl this thing. Finally, oh, my God, of course! It's an invisible picture! That was it. Followed by four very nice pictures, you see. And the trick is – and the reason the GPMs wouldn't discharge fully – is because of those twenty RIs sitting in front of that invisible picture, right up to the front of the parade, see. If you can't get the basic off the items, why, what can you do?

And I finally couldn't figure out which is the first pair. How do you get the first two firings? Because all the rest of them are supported on these two firings. On each new goal c... or each new GPM combination, see.

And I finally found that there was a click in the floor occurred as they stopped you to get the business. In other words, there was a little dog on the track, so when they moved you into position for the first picture, you got that click. See? And I could perceive the click, and I'd get the instant of the click, and then of course, give the first two and then the next two, very rapidly. And move myself back and move up to the click, see, and then get the first and second two. All of a sudden the whole lot fell apart. Got basic off of it by reason of the fact that there was an additional different sound, invisible picture or no invisible picture. There was just that tiny difference outstanding. So you could find the first two items. Very rough. Very rough.

You've heard about vacuums, well, this is the vacuum. That was the vacuum. And that's – holds the whole bank together, and I could see my bank shred way out, a light-year or two, you see, just start going off in shreds. Pieces of it could suddenly no longer support themselves – you know, just going. Just disappearing. Because this is fundamental on the install-type GPMs, you see. Even though I hadn't run the first of the chain it was falling apart. When I ran this one last night, I could hear the items releasing all the way toward present time, see. I could hear these items going on and GPMs coming apart, you see. Every place I had found a basic pair, why, through the GPM series you could hear these things go off, see – no longer supporting, I mean everything's getting sort of – well you know, like Kleenex. It's all tearing apart. Up to that time, it's the difference between Kleenex and solid steel. Nothing could dent it, up to then. Rather remarkable experience.

Well now, of course, I'm actually to some degree running over my head doing this sort of thing, by skipping a series of sixty – a series of sixty – not sixty GPMs but sixty serieses of GPMs, you see – without touching any part of them. And then cutting in ahead of this and then just cutting enough off of that, you see, to make it possible to go a little bit earlier. And of course the moment that – moment a pin dropped, why you can expect that bypassed charge to hit you with a thud. But it's all right, I can take it.

You do this thing to somebody that you don't get any tone arm action on, something like that, you don't clean up where you were going, you don't straighten up what you've got, you're not very thorough and very workmanlike on the thing, he'd just spin, man, he'd just spin right where he sits.

Take this little girl and she's totally capable of running a time when she stuck her tongue out at her teacher. And you say, "Well, we've gone that far, let's run out her past death." Oh, well, yes, you can get the past death on the meter, but you haven't assessed for it. You can get a little, vague tick and you follow this down, you very, very carefully date it. You can't read the meter, but you date it somehow or another. The next thing you know, why you've got her right in the middle of roaring brimstone. Your technology has been able totally to overthrow or overwhelm the pc. You're good enough so that you can turn his bank loose on him, or turn her bank loose on her. She'll just practically spin. *Baww!* Key out in four or five days, we hope.

What have you done, you see? Here was a case that couldn't run – couldn't run anything. A little Straightwire or something like that, about all the case can stand. And you slammed him in on a big charge. Well, because the case – such a case is always in desperate condition, some auditors, unfortunately, will Q-and-A and get the idea that you'd better find a desperate engram. These desperate conditions are very hard to remain as desperate conditions. Sometimes you can straightwire them right out of existence. Desperate conditions are very easy to handle. I know, we've got a couple of boys in class here that have been in mental hospitals handling people and that sort of thing. And they've always seen this Q and A. Patient is being desperate, so you do something desperate, see?

Well, there's no wins along that line; the only thing you can do is knock the guy down into apathy, see. It's a therapy comparable to hitting somebody in the jaw because they are too excited, see. If it were only that light, that would be all right. But they cut out their prefrontal lobes and do other interesting things to these people.

But the point – the point I'm making here is, is if you could get one of those desperate people to get just one origin on your part, like "Hello," and they really heard it and really saw you, or if you could get them to find one real object in the room, that desperate condition tends to evaporate. It's very hard to maintain this desperate condition. And it's little feather touches that knocks it apart. Similarly, in handling R3R and 3N, you have got to pay attention to the fact that you're using tools that are capable of just jack hammering their way through solid concrete forty feet thick, don't you see. Take it easy – take it easy.

Now, you see that your pc is ARC breaking heavily and hard and that sort of thing, always assume that you've gone just a little bit too steep. Regardless of the fact that you can find the ARC break. You've run your R3R too steep or you've run your 3N too steep. You've bypassed too many goals, don't you see. You knew you were bypassing some, but you've just bypassed too many. You haven't unburdened the track. You know that you've got several half-discharged GPMs scattered up and down the track that you just left or something like this. Well take it easy, man, go back and finish those things up.

See, pc is just going "*Ylaahh*." You know, you've stretched it too thin. It's always all right to push a pc a little bit heavier than they can go, you understand? But you can also push them at acceleration of the speed of light, don't you see? It's just a little bit faster than anything could go. And the worse off a case is, the more they can be pushed in over their heads. You've got to be careful about this. ARC break is a marvelous method of handling this. ARC break is a marvelous test. Pc is ARC breaking, consistently and continually, in spite of careful auditing, so don't blame yourself as an auditor all the time. You know you're not all that bad. The only thing that you're bad about is you don't – you don't make a careful appreciation of your cases. The only other thing that's been poor is not all the technology has been in your hands so that you could.

But the point I'm making here is the ARC break is a wonderful test. Not if the pc ARC breaks once or the pc ARC breaks twice or something like that. So that doesn't mean anything. Carry on, see. There's a lot of time being spent on ARC breaks and there's a lot of upset because of ARC breaks and that sort of thing. It doesn't necessarily mean you're running too high a process. Don't always translate it into that. But it means you're running the process

you're running too doggone steep. That's all that means. You're trying to run Helatrobus Implants on this person. And they're ARC breaking all over the place. Well, obviously there must be a chain there of not-unburdened GPMs or incidents of some kind or another that lead to the Helatrobus Implants. You must be running Helatrobus Implants at a point they can't be run. Not necessarily that you've got to run stuff later on the track, or earlier on the track, you understand, but there is material there that should be unburdened before you come near the Helatrobus Implants. So you're obviously going past charge. Different than bypassing charge. You're leaving known charge someplace else. You're not finishing up something. Or charge exists someplace else. Because otherwise, look: It wouldn't go into restimulation if it didn't exist. And if the pc wasn't to some degree trying to run it, it wouldn't go into restimulation, right? And if the pc's bonging around on the time track like a Ping-Pong ball and so forth, something's pushing him. Well, what's pushing him? Too much charge, of course.

So the thing to do – the thing to do if you're running a pc on arbitrary actions like 3N, Helatrobus, Implants, pc ARC breaking heavily, RR very hard to get – the thing to do is to do a preliminary step assessment. It may lead you to an entirely different GPM; or it might lead you to a specific GPM in the Helatrobus Implants that you've missed. Or it might lead you much earlier on the track or it might lead you much later on the track or it might lead you to a dental operation in this life that looked just like the Helatrobus, Implants. You're not quite sure what it'll lead you to, but it will for sure give you what should be unburdened so the pc will run well.

And there is really no excuse for running a pc not well. Let me interpret that again: There is no excuse for running a pc poorly or having an awful hard time running a pc. See, there's no real excuse for this. I let you do it; it's good for you. You run a pc the hard way, you'll sure be able to run one the easy way!

But you set a pc into a channel for which the pc has tolerance, and the pc'll run like a doll buggy. Any pc will run well, providing you run the pc on the available channel. But the worse off a pc is, is the less available channels they are, and the trickier it is to find the available channel, you got that? And then the less careless you can be in running that channel.

It's actually quite a joy to run R3R and 3N. There is no real difficulty running them, right up to the moment when you're handling somebody just a little bit too far. A little bit too rough. It's just a little bit beyond them. All right, the way to compensate for that thing is by careful and continuous assessment. And watch it, when you've got – the TA suddenly goes motionless – you ran one engram, TA went motionless, all right, that's good. Let's make sure that you *had* the right assessment. Well, that's beyond the point now, it's too late, isn't it? You've already run an engram. Did you have the right date? Is the final duration correct? This is all all right. Was there a GPM in it? No, there's no GPM in it. Well, what have you got left? You've got a new assessment.

Now, also – also, pcs who peel off into special categories or aren't easy to assess on the standard scale and so forth, well, you can always get them to do a scale, don't you see, and assess them on that scale. In other words, you complete the Prehav Scale and you'll get the pc's level. Very often it isn't just necessarily a low case you have to do this with; you sometimes have to do it with other cases, too.

Pc wouldn't think of these levels, by the way, is why you have that scale at all. But if they don't obviously live at some level on that scale, no sweat to find it, don't you see? If they don't obviously live somewhere on that. For instance, the tape you heard last week was, in actual fact, a research tape, to establish this point. How hard could you work to make a level stay in, don't you see? And they don't stay in, that's all. They're gone. So you'll have to do yourself another – another list, because you didn't have any level the pc could be found on. So if the level isn't obvious, if the pc doesn't cognite, if the tone arm doesn't blow down, if this isn't a God-awful wonderful level, why are you straining at it? Get the pc to add to the Prehav Scale and assess him on that level. Got the notion on the thing?

And you'll get these things. You'll see a level there, pc says, "Oh!" you know, "My God, how did I ever miss that, man?" You'll see the tone arm go down, you'll also see a very successful chain come off of it and so forth. All of these things add up to the fact that auditing is as easy – type of auditing you are doing is as easy as you assess, as easy as you prepare a case. Auditing is as easy to do as it is real to the pc. And you run types of auditing which is unreal to the pc, you're going to be in trouble all the way. All the way.

Okay, I've talked to you for a long time, but I considered the subject was fairly important.

Thank you very much.

DATING

A lecture given on 17 July 1963

Thank you.

Well, you had your demonstration last week, so I thought I'd better give you a talk this week on the subject of meters, and so forth. This is what?

Audience: 1 7th.

Thank you! Thank you. All right, 17th of July, AD 13, Saint Hill Special Briefing Course. The subject of this lecture happens to be dating.

We haven't had any material on dating for some time. And the situation is a lot grimmer than it looks, on the subject of dating and the need for accuracy in dating. Accuracy in dating is the single most important function of the auditor. Period. Single most important function of the auditor. And I'll tell you why and you might be very intrigued with this.

Since October, last year, I've been engaged in a study of unusual intensity. We took a new departure on the subject of auditing when we went into Routine 3 on the subject of goals. Took a very long time to sort that out – took a couple of years, actually – and to find out that all of these mental phenomena and so on come down to the time track and engrams. Now, we had already been over this in 1950 – the difficulties of running time track, and so on, consisted of the number of cases, mostly, the number of cases who could not do it. We had lots of cases who couldn't run on the time track and run through engrams and erase engrams and that sort of thing.

So therefore, a vast number of years were spent in accumulating evidence and data on the subject of, well, case improvement without running the time track, and so on. But a great many years were spent in that and they were not ill-spent. We have tremendous numbers of processes of one kind or another which accomplish these things.

In October it became apparent that something else was at work here on the subject of the time track, that the time track – well, the time track started to swing in with greater and greater importance right up to the time when it was discovered that the GPM was an implant and that its items were all implanted.

Now, at that point – at that point, whatever the date of that was – a great decision had to be made here – a big find-out. We had to discover whether or not an individual could go clear and get out of the mud, again, without running the time track and engrams. And recently I saw a perception on the subject and it made it possible for people to run engrams and etc., on the time track.

Now, all this boils down to is this: The problem is very serious when you realize this one little point here. Already had a great deal of experience of failure on trying to run people

on the time track. Great deal of failure attends this, you see. Nineteen fifty, I never ran into cases that couldn't run engrams up till the time I started to teach people to audit, and that sort of thing. And then cases started showing up that couldn't run engrams and they amounted to a considerable percentage of the number of cases presented themselves.

I've always gone on an "all" basis. There's no particular reason to leave – to leave Pete behind, you see, just because of some peculiarity that Pete has that Joe and Bill don't have, don't you see? So therefore, you'll realize the seriousness of the situation when I tell you that a few weeks ago I sat down and had to consider this, this one point: Was it possible that only about 50 percent of the people around could be moved through to OT? I actually had to consider this point. I'd never considered it before. I had just gone ahead on the basis of, well, we just will do it, don't you see? But I had gotten down to a point where I had me doubts! And I would say, since October, we have been through very harrying, harassing and upsetting re-search channels. These have been very rough, very rough.

And they've been made very rough by the fact that I had to catalyze research and do it far more rapidly per unit of time than it had been done before because of the – a review of the situation demonstrated that we didn't have much time left. This was quite obvious to me. We just didn't have much time left. That was proven, by the way, in January when the attack was made on Scientology in the United States; and we've gone ahead on that.

But my answer to that situation was (1) hold the line legally and impede the progress, and even win if possible, but not go into a complete spin on the subject and just fight that battle on that line, you see? And (2) make OTs and get this job wrapped up in an awful hurry. You understand? Bypass the state of Clear and move into the state of OT. You see, Clear is a comfortable, human end product. I must tell you why this is that way. A Clear has no difficulty living around or society has no difficulty accepting this state of Clear. He has no difficulty living around human beings. You get the idea.

He's still carrying along. He simply is not aberrated in the state he is in at the human level. You understand?

Well, OT: that is something else. That is something else. That's probably the difference between making a playground supervisor and a commando – if you want to go at it militarily, see? And if – it isn't that we needed this desperately, but it was the only possible answer for two reasons. We had to wrap the whole thing up all the way. There wouldn't be any comfortable margin of after we'd wrapped up Clear nicely then go ahead and wrap up OT. See, we didn't have that comfortable margin – had suddenly been cost us – and we had to go straight ahead and wrap up the problems of OT just like that.

Well, this is an awful steep hill to climb. If you listen to lectures and read papers and that sort of thing of mine, of ten years ago, you'll find me saying, "Well, we don't know much about the ways to OT," and occasionally I'd release a little process, probably an OT process, you know. This – little comments. I'd reply to letters, "How do you make an OT" "Well, we'll find out in due time," you see. It's a comfortable state of mind.

That comfortable state of mind shifted. It had to shift. The two bases on which I was basing the future survival of Scientology, and your personal future, was just this: We'll hold the line legally and do all we can along that line, but put all of our strength and action and so

forth over into the technical line. And push it forward on research right up to the point of Operating Thetan with no way stops of any kind. We'll just wipe them out. We won't talk about them any more particularly. We'll say – well, if somebody's running a goal out, we'll just call him, courteously, he's a one-goal Clear, see, ten-goal Clear – we don't care, see?

Now, you can apply that to R3R. You can run a chain out of somebody he's a one-chain Clear, see? Different kind of Clear. You'll find out that'll hold good. But the point I'm making here is all that got bypassed. I've had to accelerate this up to a tremendous level.

Now, when you start accelerating research to this degree, you're going to make problems because you've taken time out of the places where you need time. And right away you get lots of problems. So I had to wrap this up in a hurry. And I believe in the last few months, the work which I've done in the last few months, per unit of time, exceeds anything I've ever attempted. And I've slowed down you, as far as that's concerned. I haven't let some of you out of here, and so forth, until I felt that there was – that you would have something to operate with stably, and so forth. It wasn't that I needed your case for research. It was that I needed you out there with a fairly stable attitude of what you were going to do, you see?

I let some go because they could run GPMs and they had an idea of how to do this, and so forth, and they could audit basically and they could handle meters and stuff of this character, and so that was all right with me, knowing they could catch up with it. Remember there were a couple of problems that weren't solved.

And one of those problems was the most basic problem: Do we sit still and say, "All right, some people can go to OT and some can't?" Is that the way we handle this? No, I'm afraid the psychologist, the psychiatrist, the Pavlovist, I'm afraid they'd handle it this way, with all too much glee. But I didn't care to handle the problem like that. But I was almost beaten to my knees on this particular line because this horrible fact had emerged – I'd suspected it but it had emerged in all of its grisly visage: If you can't run the time track, you'll never get to OT. That's it.

Well, that's pretty grim. Now, I'd already found out that all you had to do with R3R – which is what makes R3R R3R – all you have to do is get the right chain, get the right date, get the right duration and the person will have visio and even sonic, and so forth, on the chain. Now, this was a fabulous discovery. But I'd already made that discovery when I'd gone into the blues on the subject and wondered if 50 percent wouldn't be left behind anyway. So that discovery didn't make all that difference.

You can run an engram on almost anybody if you've got the right chain and the right date and the right duration, as far as sonic and visio is concerned. Ah, but there was one more impeding factor: Could you run it with tone arm action?

Now, let's go back and look this over. If an individual – if an individual is going to make case progress – this has already been established, you see – this individual's going to make case progress that is real to the individual, it will be in the presence of tone arm action. Tone arm action is the key to all of this. That's very important. He maybe can run an engram, you understand, but if he can't run an engram with tone arm action he's not blowing any charge and his reality will not improve. If his reality doesn't improve he can't go any earlier on the track. He isn't making any case gains. No tone arm action – no case gain.

So the bug in running engrams was not just forcing people along a certain chain where they had sonic and visio if they had the right duration – and you'll always get it, I don't care if the guy has a black field or anything else, you get the right duration of something, he's got pictures. I mean, we've got that whipped. But can he do it with tone arm action? There was this one other bug which I, of course, knew nothing about in 1950 – one other bug: Could he do it and blow charge or were you just going to go on endlessly stirring up the muck?

No tone arm action – you're just going on endlessly stirring up the muck. Oh, you can release some somatics and you can do some various things. It doesn't look terribly grim, except the case isn't really making any progress. You want to know the test? You look through a case that is running engrams, and we have some on record, and they setting – they're setting the same goals for every consecutive session. They never change their goals for the session. You look at the gains. They're just lukewarm gains. There's how you'd sniff 'em out, and there they go. Watch the pc – we know this of old – who sets the same goals every session. You get no change of goals; you get no change of case. I don't care what you're doing with a case. I don't care how much time track the fellow is running; and that coordinates with no tone arm action. No tone arm action – no change of goals. Case isn't blowing charge. No tone arm action.

So it comes down to not does the person have sonic and visio, but does the person have tone arm action? He must also, of course, have sonic or visio or something, you see, in running the engram... I give you... to improve – they nearly always had visio. Sonic is not very vital to run an engram with. They must be able to move through it. But if they're moving through these engrams, with no tone arm action, you are not getting a case improvement. And that was what caused me to sit down and say, "Well, are we going to leave 50 of – 50 percent of them behind?" No tone arm action. Couldn't produce tone arm action. Yes, we could go back – go back on the case to a lower level process; to reach and withdraw, to this and that, and hope that it got enough tone arm action and blew enough stuff off so that sooner or later the fellow could run an engram with tone arm action, see? Well, let me tell you something; that is just a thin hope. You understand that? That's a thin hope. Oh, you can improve him as a being. But that's the route to Clear, not the route to OT.

You can key out a Clear this way. He'll go free needle and everything else. It's quite interesting. We abandoned these Keyed-Out Clears, and so forth. They postulate themselves into the soup anywhere between one and three, four, five years afterwards. So the devil with it. That wasn't doing us any good. Made them feel fine, and all that, and they'd never be so bad off again, and all this sort of thing. But these are human goals. See? Guy now doesn't have lumbosis. So what? Do you think not having lumbosis or being able to cure lumbosis is going to put you any place into a position where the United States government won't be able to spit on you every twenty-four hours? Let me tell you, no.

A government that is so minded as to produce an appropriation of sixteen billion dollars for men who can do nothing except butcher their fellow man, is not going to be held off with feathers. That's not going to be held off by being good little boys and girls. You understand. That's not the way to fight that battle. You understand? If you say, "Well, all right, all right, other organizations have done it." No. This world is going into a very interesting rolly coaster slide. It's going down, man. It's going fast.

The ethical level of government, these various other factors that you see, the preponderance of weapons, the little sense being used – look for a new solution. Look for a new solution in international affairs. Just to give you an idea of it – I kept an apartment up in London for some time and I hadn't been up there for about a year. It's closed now. But I hadn't been up there for about a year and a man taking care of it had laid out some magazines: *Time*, *Life*, junk like this. And I went up there – I hadn't been up there for about a year. I'm trying to get myself in condition, you know, to stand the smog, smoke and fire, carbon monoxide, you know. And I got myself in condition and went up for a visit to London.

Anyway, I sat down in this apartment and I was waiting for somebody. I picked up a magazine to see what was going on in the world. And I read the magazine. It was all about Red China and about atomic conferences and Geneva, and all this. And I said, well, same things are going on, and then with great shock I suddenly realized I was reading a magazine which was about eighteen months old. There hadn't been any change in international affairs in eighteen months – same news. I don't know why they publish new editions.

That's an interesting thing. You're looking for new solutions, you won't get a change in international situation unless you get some new solutions around some place. They're still discussing the same things. The only new news you're getting is a few more riots, a few more conference failures, don't you see? And when you're used to reading the time track to predict, such as I am, you read that kind of thing with a "Oh?" and you can draw a pretty accurate estimate of about how long it's going to go. And there's no new factor in the world but us.

Now, that's a very interesting, maybe a self-centered or maybe a stupid adjudication or maybe it's this. You could criticize it from a number of lines but it still holds true. It still holds true and I see no slightest chance of the Scientologist in the United States going on the way he is going. I see no slightest chance at all unless some other factor is entered into the situation which reverses the tide. He'd either have to be able to get very spectacular case results or he will be able – have to be able to – and even that isn't good enough – produce a spectacular being. One or the other in order for the situation to imbalance and be resolved.

Now that's a pretty sobering estimate of the situation. And yet it's a coldblooded estimate of the situation. It isn't a hopeful, propagandist estimate of the situation. If I wanted to propagandize you I certainly would be able to do so, never doubt that. But I don't. I usually tell you the truth. Sometimes it's very unpalatable. But as far as I could tell, this was about the only way we could meet the situation.

Now, all that background music I'm giving you right there is – just shows you that we were at a serious crisis. Because without tone arm action, even though the person could run the track, he would never make the grade.

Well, this is pretty heroic to get it sorted down that well. I got it sorted out to where he could run the track with perception. And then got it sorted out to the fact that you – if you didn't get tone arm action it didn't do any good to run the track, even with perception. See, this is getting more and more interesting because it's an isolated point. Now, give this point, tone arm action, the stress that it deserves. Without tone arm action you do not make any case progress, period! Give that – give that the stress that it deserves. You wake up to that and don't you go around looking hopeful.

The reason I haven't lowered the boom on this, particularly, because I didn't want to throw you into the doldrums because I thought I'd probably lick – be able to lick the problem and wrap it up. And I have. So I can lower the boom on this other fact. And that fact is you process somebody without tone arm action and you might as well take him for a walk in the park! It'd probably be more therapeutic. See, it's that important to have that old tone arm waggling!

I won't go into what is tone arm action; there's a bulletin on it. It still holds good. Good tone arm action, poor tone arm action, no tone arm action; these things have all been classified. That tone arm there tells you how much mass you are discharging off the reactive bank. And when that thing isn't wiggling, you're not discharging any mass off the reactive bank. And that is all there is to it.

So my problem then became, and has been with me now for many weeks, horribly – a haunting nightmare of a problem: What is tone arm action when it's absent? Not what is tone arm action. We know that. But what is *no* tone arm action? What is no tone arm action? Now, my God, if it's assumed, the importance of the fact that you've got to drop 50 percent of the people you process just because they don't get tone arm action – regardless of what else they do while running engrams – that becomes a very important question. What is no tone arm action? Wow! And boy, if that hasn't been a conundrum!

Well, I've been able to sort it out. I've been able to sort it out to this degree – it's sorted out. I won't – it isn't a modified sort-out, it has been sorted out: The tone arm action disappears off a case to the degree that time is in error. And there is the answer. This is very important and this wraps up an awful lot of packages for you.

Tone arm action does not cease because you've run a wrong goal. That's quite interesting. It'll slow down and monk up because you fail to run out a GPM, because of this, because of that, because of something else. No, it doesn't cease because of these things. Oddly enough it doesn't cease because of ARC breaks. You may think it might cease because of ARC breaks – only because it accidentally falls over also into the other time consideration. ARC breaks are mostly caused by wrong time, you see, so you could have read that reversewise.

The old Dianetic Axiom, "time is the single source of human aberration" could have stood a lot more punch-up. I knew it was true, but I knew a lot of other things were true. That's the truth! You get the difference between, you know "We know it was true." "*That's the truth!*" See? Time is the single source of aberration. The GPM is totally devoted to scrambling somebody's time. The double-firing items. So if you can't get the GPMs off the case, if you can't get those particular engrams off the case, the guy will never make it. They are geared 100 percent to be aberrative.

By the way, they're very hard to date. And you want to know where dating is in this, I'm going – I'm talking to you about dating right now – time. Now, one of the things that your pc who is – hasn't got any sonic and very little visio – one of the reasons he can't get a rocket read, and probably the chief one, is because he never contacts the speed of the item or the fire. He never contacts it and so he gets very poor rocket reads on the thing. You know how one of those things sound? I won't use one here that is very aberrative. Because, it'll stir you up.

Let me think of something. We'll use "spat" as the goal and we'll use "nonsensically" as the part of it. So with "nonsensically spat" as the RI, we actually get something like this: "Ppppppffffffsssssss!! Crack! Nonsensically spat." [the last two words are spoken extremely slowly and in a dull voice]

That's the way a GPM sounds all the way up the track. That's a hissing type on the earlier track from the Helatrobus. The Helatrobus goes: "Crack! Nonsensically spat. Clang!" ["nonsensically spat" are spoken in the same way as before] They put a clang in after it to make you think that a pellet has hit the other pole and you've been shot at.

A lot of you have been run on these things and didn't know that, did you? Running them without sonic. Now how does a pc normally react to this? How did a thetan normally react to this – particularly the hissing type which is earlier and more germane to a thetan – the "pppppffffffsssssss! Nonsensically spat." And he'd just go, "Geek! Why doesn't it get over with?" See? So part of your aberrative factor is he's rushing it. Have you ever had a pc get very, very, very speedy on the GPMs, you know? Speedy? You know? Trying to get it off in a hurry! Get another one off in a hurry! Give him four items at once! You know? Did you ever have anybody doing this? Well, that person is just dramatizing the natural reaction to this, man! It feels – in the incident it felt like he was walking under water at enormous restraint, see? And he's just going mad! Why can't this thing get over with? Because he's a fast – he's a fast cookie, see?

The double-firing principle of item one versus item two – this double-firing principle again messed it all up. It hung him up in time, don't you see, because it gave a positive-negative charge to two opposing sentiments. It hit him from the right and it hit him from the left. And made him feel like he couldn't move, but that he had to move to get out of the way of it. And he'd get into all kinds of time scrambles. The total purpose of the GPM was to scramble time. This is represented by the fact that they're the hardest engrams to date. They float. They float in time, and they're based on the problems activities I was talking to you about. All the rationale of the GPM, as given in early lectures on the subject, and so on, is all valid. These things are all the laws of life. They're not the laws of GPMs. I had to figure them out and synthesize them, then I found out somebody else had taken a shadow of this thing, and they'd made false ones all over the track. And that was one of the reasons why. That was one of the reasons why people couldn't run engrams because you can't run through them. You have to run them out with repeater technique, because of the opposing items. A pc cannot go through them, just scan, scan, and that's out. Don't you see? You scan somebody through a GPM and it all goes black. Why does it go black? Well, he protested it all the way through. And what you do is rekindle his protest when he got it. And of course that turns the engram black, and then you can't see anything in it. And then he can't move on the track, and he's all frozen up in the thing, and so forth. So it's remarkable that we can run these things. Now do you get the idea?

The important truth was that time *is* the single source of aberration. Now, all that is very interesting; all that's very interesting – the GPM and its aberrative character on time. But actually we don't care so much about its aberrative character on time, we can neglect it because we can resolve it. It isn't that that keeps the tone arm from moving. We can louse one of these things up and we still – we still don't cure – I mean, don't stop that tone arm.

You can run a person through a wrong goal with a flock of wrong items and still have tone arm action. It'll mess it up a bit because he's not moving as fast, and that sort of thing, but it won't stop it. So what is this thing called stopped tone arm action? What is it?

All right. It is simply wrong dates. That is all it is. Wrong time. That's all. Now, you go and forget this – that I've just given you as a datum – and I won't wish you any bad luck like getting on a pole trap, but you'll have a hard time. You'll have a hard time with pcs if you forget those two data. The two data are, of course, that a person cannot run track successfully – even with sonic, visio and everything else – unless he also has tone arm action, see. Don't lay that one aside, and get that under the – don't get that one parked, because that's a very important datum. Terribly important, technically. No tone arm action; come off of it, man!

I don't care how pretty it's running. Finish the cycle so the pc won't be upset, don't you see, and then unload – hit the silk. No tone arm action.

Now, the source of no tone arm action – well, there are other contributive sources because they all contain in them this other factor. And you could say that there are an awful lot of them, but you isolate what factor it is in each one of those and you'll find out it all comes back to the same thing: wrong time. No tone arm action equals wrong time. Reverse it now – wrong time equals no tone arm action. Now I'll go over these again. If you're running a person with no tone arm action, you won't make it. I don't care what you're running and how promising it looks. You'll see and you'll do it someday and you'll notice the pc setting the same goals, every session, and the same gains, and so on. They're doing all right. Well, they lost a somatic, and they had a little bit of this... And you say, "My God. How long can this go on?" Oh, it could go on for the next three or four thousand hours. You're not getting the job done, see? No tone arm action equals no processing. Fascinating but true!

And the other one is, is no tone arm action equals wrong time; and the solution is – to that is – wrong time equals no tone arm action. Now, if you can just get those things straightened out, why you've got it made. These are terribly important data. I fought for these, as I've been telling you, since last October. And particularly in the last few months. And these have been giving me a bad time. I haven't worried about anything for a long time but when you figure the number of factors that could have gone into this problem, I've been throwing them away in avalanches. You know, stripping the problem down to essentials and working it back, and so forth. And finally made it and there is the result of that work. Very important. Very important. Because there's – there's the cases that wouldn't have gone to OT, see? And there's an occasional case that was running all right but suddenly isn't running all right. How do you put that case back together again? Here's the answer to 90 percent of your auditing problems – 90 percent.

What about the other 10 percent? Well, that depends on you. If you never follow an auditing cycle, and so forth, why, you're going to have a lot of trouble. You can still get auditing done. You're just going to have trouble. It isn't, by the way, going to stop the tone arm from moving. A no moving tone arm is – cannot be cured by being a perfect auditor. That's an interesting fact. That's how important this datum is, see. It looms, man, it looms!

All right. Let's – let's get now, hammer pound, right to the whole business of dating. If wrong time equals no tone arm action and if no tone arm action equals wrong time, then we

have a lot of data that we can figure out, zing-zing-zing, with regard to any case we're auditing. This tells us that if we don't know how to date accurately, we are soon going to have a case which isn't producing any tone arm action. Well, there's the importance of dating. The greatest importance of dating is accuracy.

Now, this doesn't mean accuracy down to the last microsecond. You can still do approximate dating. Of course, it makes my brains creek a little bit when somebody says 10.5 trillion trillion years to me.

I can see this enormous span, don't you see, of – Lord – the life term of this planet, according to modern science, can be dropped into that date at random! Approximately 10.5 trillion trillion years ago. You could just drop this solar system's whole history, you see, into that date several times and never miss it! Well, is it 10.51? 10.52? Oh, my God. Do you know what you've got there? 10.52, and the difference between 10.51 trillion trillion years ago, and 10.52 trillion trillion years ago – trillion trillion years ago? You go figure it out some time, and you see what I mean. That's a lot of years. Vast panorama. And your brain will go "creak" underneath this sort of thing.

Nevertheless, even that crude a dating pattern is successful in auditing. You can date that crudely and that grossly and still make it without lousing up the tone arm action. So your errors are usually gross, not minor – gross errors. You dated this thing at 545 years ago and it's actually at 91/2 trillion. I mean that's what we're talking about errors, you get the idea? We've dated it at 15.9 trillion trillion years ago and it's actually 115,000 trillion trillion ago. You get the idea?

When I mean a wrong date, I'm talking about a wrong date! The slight error of a decimal place, or something like that, is not going to cause the cataclysm ordinarily. But that should be guarded against, too. No, we mean when we say, "All right, is it later than 115,000 trillion years ago? Earlier than 115,000 trillion years ago?" and we get earlier than because the pc thought it was later than and therefore protests earlier than. And then we don't clear up the needle or the reaction and we go to, "Well, is it more than 100,000 trillion years ago? Less than 100,000 trillion years ago?" And again he says, "But I'm sure it is later," to himself; and we get a protest of earlier, so we get a bigger read on earlier. So we say, "Well, is it more than 50,000 trillion trillion – I mean 50,000 trillion years ago, or less than 50,000 trillion years ago? And he says, "Good God, it's much later on the track than that!" He isn't talking, don't you understand, he's just thinking all this. And you say, "All right, well, is it greater than one trillion years ago or is it less... more than one trillion years ago or less than one trillion years..." getting quite a read now. So you say, "Well, is it – we get a tremendous read now at... Is it greater than 100 billion years ago? Is it less than 100 billion years ago? 100 billion years ago?" And by this time his protest is so great and he's so enturbulated that you get steep drops, falls and skyrockets and smoke coming out of the meter. So you say, "All right! That's – that's – that's 100 thousand – that's 100 billion years ago! Yes! That's – that's the date!"

Well, he doesn't know anything about it, he says, "Well, that's what the auditor said so that's all right." Now we're going to go to the beginning of the incident. Now, we're going to get its duration, and that sort of thing – it's very hard to get its duration. But we manage to get something, you know, and so on. We run the pc through all this muck and the next thing you

know – you had a good running needle. And the needle was all right before you started all this and then the state of the needle sort of tightens up. The next thing you know, why, your tone arm gets up here to about 4.75, 4.5 and you run through the incident, the pc talks about the incident and the odd part of it is he'll get something there, you know.

And you go through it, and so on, and your tone arm's – well, well, you didn't get much tone arm action out of it. Well, this next one we're going to get good tone arm action on, so let's date this next one. All right, now we're looking for the earlier incident, the earlier incident of that. So naturally we're going to look at 500 billion years ago, or something like this, and he – by George, he finds something there that has very little to do with any part of a chain or anything of this sort. But suddenly he says, "You know, I've been thinking," he said, "the incident you've got now, it is much later. I think it's in the trillions of trillions, actually."

Oh, you accommodatingly date it in the trillions of trillions, so it finally comes out that this incident that you have just now found, you see, this incident is at 50 trillion trillion years ago. That's the way it dates. Well, actually, it was at 500 billion years ago. You get the idea? So you've got the late one that should be early, and the early one that should be late and this tone arm now starts looking like something that's cast in concrete. It isn't just still, it has a stillness in perpetuity about it! It's quite intriguing.

All right, so much for that. So much for that. How do we straighten out this case? How do we straighten it out? We clean the question: wrong times in auditing; wrong time; wrong dates. And if you want to clean up a case all the way on it, you give dating, "On dating, has anything been....," you know. And a girl comes up with the fact that she doesn't like dating very much with certain boys and you clean that, too, you understand? See? Anything dating means to them, give it a big 18-button Prepcheck on the subject of dating and then come around and say, "Wrong times and wrong dates," any way you want to phrase it: "You had any wrong dates?" Well, we don't care whether this person answers it in auditing or not in auditing or in your auditing or somebody else's auditing or anything else; as long as that thing ticks, we clean it. As long as we – that needle is rough on this subject, we clean it.

And what – how do we do it? We date the wrong dates. No, no, you-you-you – you got that wrong, see, I mean, I – you don't redate the wrong dates; you date when the wrong dates happened. You understand? Was it in last week's auditing session that you got some wrong dates? Do you understand? This becomes very involved, you see, because you're getting times when things were wrongly dated – not correcting the wrong dates.

And now when you've got the time when it was wrongly dated, then you run down what was wrongly dated and clean it up with the pc even if you have to redate it. You say, "Well, that's quite an activity. You could go on like that for some time." Ha-ha, yes, I guess you could! I guess you're going to! [laughter] And you will mysteriously see tone arm action restore to the case. Quite an activity. It might take you a session or two to accomplish the whole thing.

You want wrong dates that the pc guessed at or assumed in 1950, while running an engram. You want the – all the time the pc assumed that the time track was only 185 trillion years long. That's a wrong date. Wrong time, isn't it? You want the times when the pc assumed almost anything on the subject of dating, particularly dating on the meter and – thing –

but you just clean up anything you can find until, talking about wrong dates, asking about wrong dates, asking about wrong times, or anything like that, you get a perfectly smooth needle. And you keep on going on it until you've got a smooth needle. Not because that needle's suppressed but because there aren't any more uncorrected on this case which are now in resimulation. Okay? And after that your dating is a ball.

You get reads! Marvelous, you get reads! I mean, your dating reads easily because you're not reading it through the fog of a bunch of wrong dates. You're not reading it through upset about wrong dates, don't you see? On some pcs all you have to do is ask – just say, "We're going to date this," and you've got a dirty needle. See? Well, what's that dirty needle from? That dirty needle is exclusively from a bunch of wrong dates.

Now, the funny part of an auditor is, is you also will find his finding wrong dates on the pcs will produce a reaction, so you clean that off, too. You just clean anything off that – it is nowhere near the reaction of what's been found on him as a pc – wrong dates found on him as a pc. But you may find it in there ticking and kicking – worries about datings, upsets about this. I'm not giving you a process now, I'm telling you: clean it up! See? Just clean it up. I don't care how you clean it up. Just get all the wrong dates off of this thing, see? Get all the anxiety off on the subject of dating. Now you'll be able to go back and pick up some of the things that tone arm action ceased on and all of a sudden have tone arm action.

It may change the programming of the case. You may find the goal, "to be alone" in the Helatrobus Implants wasn't. It's in the Gorilla goals. A small error of about 10 trillion trillion years. It isn't that it had a different line plot, which it did – [laughter] that wouldn't have stopped your meter cold. It's just in the wrong place. Oh, the line plot – wrong line plot will of course jam up and slow down and raise hell, you understand. But it really won't do a good job of it unless the date's wrong.

Now, you find a Helatrobus Implant item at 10 trillion trillion years ago, Gorilla goals, and you've got what for that item? You've got a gorgeously wrong date, haven't you? The goal "to be alone" is in both of them. That's what stops the needle. That's what stops the TA, rather. That's what kills your rocket read. It's not the mechanics of the fact there's a wrong pattern. It's that the pattern is being used at the wrong date, you understand?

This is marvelous – because you'll find everything starts running – it's as almost as though you had a totally motionless world and somebody pushed a button on and all the clockwork dolls all of a sudden start moving, see? How did that happen?

Your barrier to OT, on 50 percent of the cases you'll ever come near, was they couldn't run the time track with tone arm action. Not that they couldn't run the time track with perception, but that they couldn't run the – because you give us tone arm action, we can run the time track with perception, that's not even a problem. You get the right date and right duration, you get perception – bang! That's all there is to that. And you do 3 – R3R right according to the book with the right date and the right duration – you get perception. If you haven't got perception, you haven't got the right date or you haven't got the right duration. And sometimes you haven't got either the right date or the right duration. So you find the right date and you find the right duration and you send the PC to the beginning of the incident and a new world opens. He's now got perception.

If it's got a GPM in it and you scan it through him, you no longer got the perception. The lights go out. Why? Because you brushed past the items, and restimulated the black protest of the PC and you – that's that. But as soon as you pick up the items out of it, the lights turn on again. This is all very remarkable. Right date, right duration equals perception. Wrong duration or wrong date equals no perception. Now there's some other thing that happens. Dub-in itself is simply a phenomenon of wrong dates. Marvelous. It's just a phenomenon of wrong dates. That's all it is. Nothing else. Prove it: Get loud and clear on your meter – get loud and clear on your meter that the incident is 500 years ago. Tell the pc – this is a good running pc – tell the PC that it is 100 trillion years ago. Get on the meter that the duration is 2 ½ days, tell the PC that it is 9 ½ years. Tell the PC to go to the beginning of the incident. And you will have a collection of pictures from all over the track which appear to be dubbed.

And he won't be able to move – he won't be able to move on the time track. He'll just have pictures and it's all kind of *blaa*, and he's not going anyplace and he doesn't get through anything. In that way you could take a very good case that was running well and produce this phenomenon we have called dub-in.

Now correctly date the incident at 500 years ago, say, "I gave you a wrong – wrong date. The date now is 500 years ago. Got a wrong duration here," You have to do this in such a way that he isn't betrayed, "This incident is not years long, it's actually 2 ½ days long. Now move to approximately 500 years ago. Good. Move to the beginning of the incident at approximately 500 years ago. Very good. Move through the incident to a point 2 ½ days later." [snaps fingers] Visio, [snaps] sonic, [snaps] no dub-in, *and* tone arm action. Got it?

This is remarkable. You'll see this happen before your eyes. Remember that you can make some corny errors that will include time in them like use the wrong pattern, get a lot of wrong items, start crumpling up facsimiles. You'll see normally that these don't interrupt tone arm action. They upset the pc but they don't interrupt tone arm action. Pc's still getting something like tone arm action.

But don't go diving overboard when you see that tone arm action cease on the basis of straightening out items and getting in – getting in a bunch of Prepcheck buttons on wrong goals and all kinds of other rationale. Na-ha. You go to the basis of wrong dates and figure out how it made a wrong date and then correct that and all of a sudden your tone arm action is restored. And until you do that, you won't get any tone arm action! You run the Helatrobus Implant plot on a Gorilla goal. It's obviously a wrong date. It's not the wrong plot. It's the wrong date. You'll find that the same goal also occurs in the Helatrobus Implants or some similarly worded goal. Well, you've got to straighten that out, otherwise your pc will be upset.

It's wrong time, however, that will restore your tone arm motion. You got it? Straighten out wrong items, don't let me downgrade those things because they're very tough on a pc and they leave a lot of mass all over the thing, and so forth. When that tone arm stops moving, there it is.

Now, one of the things that you will run up against, you'll occasionally flatten a chain and your tone arm action will go up. This has something to do with wrong dates more deeply seated in the case than you have power to overcome without reassessment. The guy's got stuff

all wrongly dated himself. He had a bunch of stuff wrongly dated. What he did was exceed his level of reality.

Now, let's look a little bit further at this whole subject of wrong time. Now let's use wrong time to get a case that cannot run engrams. Let's get the subject of wrong time here and let's get this case into shape to run engrams. In other words, let's reverse the whole magic and let's take the guy who is dragging bottom and let's use the subject of wrong time to give him tone arm action and put him on the time track. How would you go about that?

Joe Blow: He can't run engrams because they're unreal. Goes into any past life – they're unreal. He'll tell you this right away. Everything is unreal and he can't believe it and he doesn't believe in that sort of stuff anyway. What's his wrong date? Life began at birth. So let's just strip off of his case every consideration that life began at birth. And all of a sudden up will go his reality and he can move onto the backtrack. Or whatever else wrong time you can find associated with that subject, don't you see?

His error on wrong time is the length of the time track. He thinks the length of his time track is his age, 32 years. Well, that's a hell of an error! Look at it, though, as a trap mechanism. "We have only lived but once." Look at that as a trap mechanism! Isn't that fascinating? You wonder why is this so popular with the savants of science. Oooh! Why do they insist on this? Why do they raise so much fuss with somebody saying he's lived before? Well, they wouldn't raise that much fuss unless they had some idea of entrapment in mind. Nobody ever protests against truth unless he has a vested interest in falsehood. Yeah, I'm afraid this one-life proposition is a method of tying everybody down to the ground. It's much more important than you'd think!

Let's take this case: he can get back fifteen or twenty, thirty lifetimes; he can get back to the Roman Empire let's say. Now that – beyond that it gets pretty unreal. He just got a wrong time someplace. But remember, you can run him within the span of what he considers right time. You can run him in that span. So you've got to clean the dates out of what he considers right time and you will find that you're gradually extending his time track backwards.

Now, this happens to any case, it isn't just one lifetime. I'll confide in you that the first time an incident was spotted on me, in the four trillion bracket, four trillions, you see, trillion trillion trillion trillion bracket, my immediate thought was, "I'll never get back there! If that exists, and I did get back there, there's – would be nothing there anyway." It just – just was too big. I was running with great happiness at the time, I was running hundreds of trillions. This was – this was a ball, I mean, this was – I was getting so I was running this with better reality than I used to have on this lifetime, you see.

And when I found myself one time at, I think, about eight trillion trillion, the incident I was in seemed awfully long ago and very, very unreal. It was just an awful long time ago. I didn't have any reality on it. There was somebody pulling some caper of putting horrible looking hands in the sky in order to intimidate people, you see, with the coming of God, or something. And I didn't know, I said I must be back at the beginning of the time track, or I – something or other. I just couldn't make head nor tail out of the thing.

And then we found the beginning of the incident. We found we'd had a wrong date all the way along the line. And all of a sudden this all brightened up and the reality factor came up.

So any case is going to hit a ceiling of reality on the subject of dating. Some people can go back trillions and some people can go back minutes, some can go back years, some can go back this lifetime, some can go back a lot of lifetimes. Some can go back millions, some can go back trillions, hundreds of trillions. When you get up into trillions of trillions, why, you could expect almost anybody to creak one place or another. But they only creak to the degree that there's wrongnesses on time – time wrongnesses. That's the keynote, and that's the key to that situation.

Now, you're not working particularly to increase the person's reality. You just go along in the general course of running R3R or R3R plus 3N or just 3N or anything that you're running – whatever you're doing – date correctly, duration correctly. If you're running into trouble, you're not getting tone arm action, pc's ARC breaking and so forth, the first thing you suspect is not a beautiful significance but a wrong date, a wrong duration, see? 3N, you're not using durations, but you'll have a wrong date.

Now, a wrong date can sneak in on you without doing any dating. You just supposed the engram – the GPM you were running, you see – you just supposed that this thing must be in the Helatrobis Implants because you've heard of the goal in the Helatrobis Implants, and that sort of thing, and all of a sudden your pc's tone arm is up there at 5 and he isn't RRing. Well, you say, "Well, how can I have a wrong date because I've never assigned any wrong – any dates at all to this?" Oh, no, you never assigned any dates at all, don't you see? And, oh, no, you never assigned any dates at all. The goal takes place much closer to PT than the Helatrobis Implants. By saying even the Helatrobis Implants and give him that pattern, you wrongly dated the goal, didn't you? The second you straighten out where it is, whether you run the goal or not, you'll suddenly have restored your tone arm action.

So there is the boulder on which the bark flounders. First you have to know what a foundering bark is. That is cessation of tone arm action. When you see tone arm action seceded, from the session, you know that the bow of the vessel has run on a large jagged boulder and is going to sink from here on. It'll sink slowly! It'll sink for sessions before you suddenly find there's water around your feet. Your pc isn't talking to you now. You wonder how this ever happened. And then the pc is not only not talking to you in session but also is not talking to you out of session.

And you want to know what happened. "I must have had an ARC break" – figure, figure, figure, figure, see. Oh yeah, he probably had an ARC break, but that won't do it very permanently. When the bark really went up on the rock was when the tone arm ceased. And you can go back and look for the last session in which you had tone arm action and look for the wrong dates in that session and the next one.

Now, never leave a wrong date on a case. Just don't leave one on a case, that's all. There's several things that you don't audit a case with. One of them is a wrong goal. You've got a wrong goal on a case, you clean it up – first order of action. But this takes seniority even to that, now, we found a more important level. Don't pick up a case that has had a bunch of

R3R, or something like that, and is now not getting tone arm action without cleaning up the whole subject of wrong dates. Just straightaway clean it all up. Whole subject of dating – let's get that all cleaned up and then proceed. Because the cessation of tone arm action on the case came from wrong dates.

Now, I wouldn't pester a case that had good tone arm action unless the case started to ARC break more often. I would tend to assume – I would tend to assume that we were running the case on a wrong assessment or we're pushing the case too hard or going uphill. I would also assume these things, you see.

But I would make sure that all this wasn't happening because of a wrong date. No matter what else I was doing, I would throw this in, you see. It was like the fellow – the fellow who repairs the airplane, you see. He repairs the airplane, he fixes up the motor and does everything else to it, you know, and then throws a – and then puts a rabbit's foot in his pocket, you know. Same type of action. See, you've done everything that you can do, that you can see on the surface of it, well, also do this one, don't you see? Just throw it in. I don't care where you throw it in. You see that it's quite important.

Now, a case which is getting tone arm action from 3 to 4, if you got all the wrong dates off would probably get tone arm action from 2.5 to 4.5. So it isn't something you just use on stopped TA action. You can also speed up your TA action by cleaning up this thing, see?

Now, some cases are so unreal on the subject of time that they almost stop if you misdate a little something – it isn't even an important date. You say, "All right, I see here that you have an engram," or he's got a lock or something of this sort, "in 1952," and it's actually 1953. You try to run the pc through it and the tone arm will go clank and stick. Redate. "Oh! 19 – heh-heh – 1953." All right, we straighten that point of dating out. All of a sudden your tone arm action is restored. That's because the case has got built-in wrong time. In other words, this case has been so overwhumped with wrong times, one way or the other, so many GPMs, so much this, so much that, and so on, they're pretty woggy. And you start auditing them, they can hardly take it.

So that gives you a point of approach as far as processes which can be audited on the meter, which is a dating point of approach. Now, how much good could you do a case that otherwise couldn't run engrams and had no track just by sitting down and doing a good accurate job of dating anything under the sun, moon and stars on the case? Interesting! Because it would produce a real time track at least in this lifetime. Just find the date of everything. Don't run anything, see. Don't run anything, just find the date of everything. See, "When did you go to school?"

"Well, I think it was about 1943."

"Well, all right. Good, good, we're glad of that." And so forth. "Let's see, let – let me check that now." We have to have a certain reservation on the amount of invalidation we do of rechecking the wrong date, don't you see? The best way to do it is just to check periodically in the session for a wrong date. Minimal invalidation, don't you see? Normally, on such a case we say, "When did you go to school?"

"Well, I don't know, I thought... if that was 1932, no it was 1951, no it was..."

You know? Say, "Well, let's date that."

Well, let's get very fancy. Let's get very fancy and nearly always date in "years ago" because you can be too often thrown for a loop by dating on Earth time. Pc hasn't been here but about two lifetimes, see, and you're trying to date 1776 – A.D. 1776. Where did that come from? A pc will be falling all over A.D. 1776, whereas he responded on years ago. And then you finally find out if you're running engrams, that, why, he hasn't been here on Earth, he's been in some other planetary system. They had another time.

Now, in the – in the final analysis here, as a final word on this subject, this has been an interesting sprint. And it's toward OT and it's been an interesting thing, which has closed the door – has kept the door closed. It's just been wrong time – wrong time – that's kept the door closed and that is what will basically close the door on anybody.

Now, let's take a reach and withdraw process and I'll show you what I mean. A reach and withdraw process – I'll give you another talk about this, all about reach and withdraw some other occasion – but we've got this person walking from point A to point B in the room and they're walking through facsimiles. Now do you see that as a wrong date proposition? Matter of a wrong date!

They're walking through the room and they're stepping between maypoles and eventually the experience of walking through the room brings them to a realization that this is this date. You don't necessarily find what's the date of the maypoles, you understand? But it brings them the accuracy of this date which cures some wrong dating to that degree.

Now supposing – now let's get fancy, this is not necessarily a recommended process or anything, because that other process I'm just giving you is very successful. Let's take a look at this. We walk them through the room and they keep running into ship capstans. And the second we find they're running into ship capstans as they walk through the room, we grab our meter and date the ship capstans accurately. Got that? We don't run the incident. Let's just date the ship capstans and then let's return them to walking back and forth across the room until they run into something else. And there's some beautiful black-eyed maidens, all of a sudden, that they're walking through and trying to avoid. You know they're aberrated if they're trying to avoid them! [laughter] Let's just date these beautiful black-eyed maidens. Got the idea? That hasn't even been tested – I'm just, you know, that's just off the cuff. I'm just showing you how can you use this principle called wrong dating.

Now, I've taken the lowest level process we have that produces results, you see, how you could apply it to that? One, it applies to that naturally because it shows present time is present time, but you also could use dating in the thing and square that around.

You could probably take a case that couldn't remember half of this lifetime and cook up some means of dating this lifetime and making it accurate. Accurately dating this lifetime and getting it in line and getting things in sequence, and that sort of thing, and all of a sudden you'd find mysteriously that he had a tremendous reality on all of this lifetime. There are many other ways of producing this, but this is very direct – very direct method of doing so.

This data I've given you in this, is the make-or-break point on about 50 percent of the cases that you will ever audit – it'll be the make-or-break point. You'll get a lot of people through by the skin of their teeth and panting and huffing and – but you'll make it, you understand, it's rough. But this is the other 50 percent that wouldn't make it at all.

To that we must add, however – we must add, however – good auditing and all the technology. Okay?

Thank you very much!

ERRORS IN TIME

A lecture given on 18 July 1963

Well, glad to see you all here, dry. Summer – summer's gone now, you know? I find out when summer is gone by watching the banyan tree. It's on the other side of the house there. And when its leaves start to turn brown, why, we know autumn is amongst us. So break out your boots and dogsleds. [laughs]

This is what?

Audience: Eighteen July.

Eighteen July AD 13. Saint Hill Special Briefing Course, and another lecture on dating.

Now, I've already told you – I've already told you that dating is a very high-caliber activity, very important in auditing, and that the tone arm sticks only because of wrong dates. Got that? That's really the real reason tone arms stick. Frankly, it's the only reason tone arms stick.

And you might have asked yourself, some time or another, "If you do have this much track, why does everybody around believe so implicitly that they have lived only once?" See, it might seem rather odd to you that the insistence on this fact that people have lived only once; the near-psychotic frenzy with which people go into, insisting they have lived only once. It must really take something to shut off somebody's memory to that degree. It really must take something. Actually a GPM doesn't account for it. The goal "to be dead" in the GPMs is not enough. Because that doesn't say you've lived only once, that just tells you to be dead.

So you might ask yourself, why is it that man is so wrong-dated? Now, when I was able to run down the common denominator of people who can't run on the time track, I found out that the common denominator was not whether or not they got sonic and visio, but whether or not they got tone arm motion. Very good, we've just covered that in a lecture. And the reason they don't get tone arm motion is wrong time – wrong dates. All right, so much for that.

Behind all aberration there must be a lie. And you can mark that down in letters of fire. Aberration cannot exist in the presence of truth. Aberration can only exist in the presence of a lie. If somebody is hung with lumbosis, you can make very sure that there is a lie connected with the lumbosis. Elementary, my dear Watson. That is one of the common denominators of Scientology.

That is one of the truisms, one of the maxims, something that weaves through everything. There are others of similar nature. For instance, don't talk to a pc or a person, or talk

around a person, who is unconscious. You know, and it's that sort of thing. And want to know something about aberration, that's a better contribution than anything "Wuff Wuff" Pavlov ever dreamed up. Didn't you know that was his name? Later part of his life, you know. His papers, as far as I'm concerned, go "Bark-bark-bark-bark comma, bark-bark-bark comma, bark-bark-bark semicolon."

Reg was kind enough to dig me up some Pavlov. I wanted some Pavlov. I was studying how not to write up technical data. I didn't know that was why I wanted Pavlov; I just knew it must be important to do some study on this, and that's what I found. I didn't find that dogs were very informative; I know more about dogs than he does. But – I mean just as dogs. Dogs are friends of mine, and he didn't like them. But, "Wuff Wuff" Pavlov gives us a marvelous example of how not to write up technical information. It's heroic, man. Try it sometime. He wanders all over the pastures and the fields and dales, and so forth, and he finally gets down to his something-or-other.

It's much more important to him that he used "surgery comparable to that applied to human beings" when operating on dogs. And he goes on at great length about the surgery precautions taken on his dogs. And he was taking perfectly healthy, happy dogs, and cutting out half their bladder or half their esophagus or half of something. He never could go all the way, you know? He... And he admitted that this more or less damaged his laboratory animals, and therefore he had to take surgical precautions. And it isn't a textbook on surgery. He's giving, of course, the conditions of his experiment. He never gets around to the experiment.

But anyway, "Wuff Wuff" Pavlov is a marvelous example of a lot of things. He is a man who is totally dedicated to the dramatization of one engram: the Darwinian Theory – man from mud. He's a physiologist turned psychologist. And he's in wild protest against the psychologists. Because remember, the psychologists of his day believed in the soul. Some of them were still around who did. After all, psychologist means "psyche"-"-ologist." And he's the great physiologist. And you want to look at how you get aberrated because your neurons have turned into morons. [laughter]

I was there trying to ask a question – I'm not wandering afield from what I'm talking about here – I was trying to ask – I was asking a question. Why is it that the Russians know nothing about some of the basic laws of social behavior? Why is it that they overlook these laws? And I thought, they have Pavlov, and Pavlov stresses the salivation of the dog – not his salvation, his salivation; that's all he was interested in – the salivation of the dog when stimulated by beefsteak, and the whining of the dog when beaten with clubs. So they would – he would mix these two stimulus-response mechanisms up, and so on.

And I wanted to know if Pavlov had ever drawn the conclusion – I haven't found this out yet; I can't wade through the stuff – but if he'd ever drawn the conclusion that a reward was also part of existence. That was what I was trying to draw. Do the Russians know this? Is this part of the Russian mental technology? And apparently it is not. And apparently that fact reads through Pavlov without being punched up, as near as I can tell. He doesn't say "existence consists of reward and punishment." See? That is not the thesis.

Now, thee and me, knowing more about this, would immediately conceive that if somebody had a dog salivating or whining under punishment or reward that he would con-

clude that there were two stimuli, and one was reward and one was punishment. But this is far too simple, and Pavlov never made these comparisons, apparently, as far as I can tell, wading through the stuff. Isn't that interesting?

I consider that extremely fascinating, because the whole Russian system is caving in because they haven't got this little factor of reward. That is what is wrong with the Russian communist system. Frankly, thee and me could probably sit down and figure out a communist system that would be a gee-whizzer, that would probably work. The – probably the fault is not with communism; the fault is the lie which lies behind communism, which is the physiological nature of man.

Now, with that lie back of communism, communism becomes a scourge. See, it becomes an aberration. There are probably many things about communism that aren't aberrative. You could probably do lots of things with the idea of the communal activity of man. You could probably do a lot of things with collectivism. We do things with collectivism. We try to make it work. The Russians are not interested in making it work because they've misunderstood the nature of man. And this is not a lecture on Russia; I'm just showing you the lie back of aberration.

So communism becomes fought, and communism becomes very disastrous when practiced. And the poor sods that are walking around with communism wonder where their next *muzhik* is coming from. They don't know. And that's because when Pavlov did his work, he never said that life consisted of reward and punishment. He does a total anatomy of punishment. And here's this drifting factor, reward, which is apparently on automatic. The reason capitalism works is because nobody has analyzed it, and people want pay and they give them pay.

I almost started a riot amongst Bantus by telling them that if communism came to South Africa – this was real mean of me – why, they wouldn't – they wouldn't get paid, that communisms didn't pay you for your work. And they thought this was terrible. And they were spitting on the street and stamping and damning Khrushchev, see? I mean it was very upsetting to them. Because the one thing – the very, very commercial little culture the Bantu has... And boy, you talk about the importance of debts! Some guy owes some money, why, that debt will be passed down, and next generation – and next generation somebody's great-great-great-great-grandchildren are still worried about those two cows, you see, that Uncle Zidd, or something, is owed. They just – the idea of commerce and money and that sort of thing is very deeply ingrained in these people.

And to tell them that communism was a system of getting them to work so they didn't have to be – so they wouldn't be paid, that just about finished it.

Now, if capitalism was earnest about fighting communism, and so forth, it would dig up a few salient truths and let them have it, see? Because that is the lie back of communism. The lie back of communism is man is a physiological animal going forward on the basis of a punishment stimulus-response. And of course, man does not – does not – respond to punishment stimulus-response. Very un-uniform response.

You've had the experience yourself. You take somebody and you say, "If you don't so-and-so and so-and-so, I'm going to *raow-rrf-rrr-rrhh-rrrhhh!*"

And A, that you told this to, cringed and said, "Oh yes! All right, all right. Don't beat me." And B, C and D said, "Why you s... Knock your block off, see?" You'd knock their heads in, and they'd get back up and they still wouldn't do it. And you knock their heads in, and they get back up and they still wouldn't do it. And it's not a constant, don't you see?

In other words, not all living beings succumb to the stimulus of promised punishment. The whole Roman Empire caved in because a sect, called the Christians, moved in, who didn't stimuli or who didn't "respo" when they got the stimuli of punishment. The court said, "We're going to burn you at the stake." And they said "Burn away! We will become martyrs." And the Roman Empire couldn't handle them! [laughter] That was it! That was it. See, they'd met their – they'd met their match. Very important. Extremely important.

Now, stimulus-response, then, is half of the picture, don't you see? Man does not go as a total stimulus-response mechanism. Down in various homely locales I've heard "Ya kin ketch more flies with honey then ya kin with vinegar!" You've heard that sort of thing. Well, they're talking about the reward part of existence, see? That's very important, the reward part of existence.

Now, the Christian had a greater reward promised him than the punishment. In the first place he *had* to die in order to go to heaven. And he simply considered this very accommodating on the part of the Roman Empire and its courts. It got him there that much quicker. And so the Roman Empire could do nothing with the Christian, the Christian overthrew the Roman Empire, and it became the Holy Roman Empire. Literally, factually, yes, you see?

Well, there was a lie. There was a lie involved, then, in the Roman Empire. So it didn't – it didn't survive. And what was that lie? Well, they must have been subscribing to the same thing Pavlov was writing about: that man is a stimulus-response creature who responds to punishment and threat of punishment; and that to get something done, you threaten or you punish; and if you threaten and punish enough, you will get things done.

Well, I will – give it to the Roman Empire, they got quite a ways. They got further than anybody else. But there was a lie involved there, in that there wasn't a whole statement of the proposition. There was also reward. And the funny part of it is that men will do more things for reward than they will for punishment. So they had just cut out three-quarters of the pie, and then said that the remaining quarter of the pie was the totality of the pie, and tried to carry an empire along on that basis, and of course, it folded. And what do you know! After all these years – you think things change – actually, in this very finite period of time since the Roman Empire, and the equally religious fervor of the communist Russian Empire, you get the same fault cropping up.

So you have the philosophy which they adopt is the one which assures them that punishment is all. They adopt this philosophy, and they have immediately adopted something which gives them a commercial upset, economic upset. And although they're very clever people and have a great deal on the ball on the subject of economics – they say economics are nine-tenths of life; life is only one-tenth political. They've got a lot of things like this.

They have a terrific propaganda machine. They have practically every newspaper editor in the world working for them. Khrushchev has more press agents than any other single ruler in the world. And yet, in spite of all this, on one of their collective farms, they go around

and take a look at the tractor, and its wheels have fallen off. And they want to know where's the tractor driver, and they don't know where he is. Well, he's down in the woods. "Well, where's the woods? What's – who else is in the woods," this manager will be saying. And, "Well, he's down there, and they're picking berries." "Oh, they're picking berries. Well, all right." And he goes down and he says to the guys down in the woods, "What are you doing picking berries?" And all the old women and everybody down there says, "Well, got to do something to make a living!" And they found out that they can pick berries, and put them in boxes and sell them in the local town, and they can make a couple of quick rubles. See? To hell with the collective farm. See?

Half-a-ruble reward for sweating it out in the woods picking berries is much better than a no-ruble reward because they're going to get their heads blown off if they don't drive the tractors and plow the fields. See? You get the idea?

So they're running into this all the time. This causes them then to go into a terrific campaign of some kind or another, you know. They go into this terrific campaign, "What you want to be is the 'new man,' 'the total communist,' 'the this,' 'the that,' 'the...'" Those guys are just sweating themselves to pieces all the time. And they're trying to compensate for this lie.

They think capitalism produces, in some peculiar and mysterious way, more goods than a communism. And they don't know why this is. They've never analyzed why this is because Pavlov didn't tell them. Capitalism has many – many things wrong with it. But it hasn't clipped off totally – not until they invented internal revenue, anyway – the total, the totality of award. So you can still – you can still – if you're very, very clever and so on, you can still keep some of your pay, if you're careful. But it's still a reward system.

Now, as that reward system dwindles, so dwindles the actual health of the society. And the more internal revenue and the less reward, and the more threat of punishment, and the more you can go to jail if you don't turn over all your pounds, shillings, dollars, francs or something, to the local income-tax people, you see – the more that works, why, the more difficulty their society gets into. See, you're not spending any time to work out how to – how do you go about making a healthy economic society? They never spend any time on that. They're just chipping away at this award and punishment. So actually they're starting to borrow Pavlov, too.

So, here is a lie. Here is a lie: The statement that man acts totally because of punishment and only because of punishment; that man is a driven animal. That lie, all by itself, is destroying the social structure of man. Because man doesn't go like that! You see? But we enter this lie upon the stage, and here we go. All you've got to do is have a great big lie floating around someplace and you have trouble.

Now, it is perfectly all right to have difficulty isolating the truth, as long as you are continuing to try to isolate the truth. That's the difference. You sit down hard on one lie, and say that now is the truth, and you've done the trick, you see? You say, "Pavlov has written all there is to know about the human mind," and at that moment you've had it. Because he hasn't. He hasn't even written about the human mind. And the reason I mentioned his prose is because it's obvious why nobody has ever read him; you can't. So a sort of a tradition has grown up as to what Pavlov's work is all about. See? And we have not even the work of Pavlov mo-

tivating this kind of thing. We've got a superstition about what the work of Pavlov is about. It's never been properly presented, you see?

We've got a lot of lies around, and so forth, but we're not betting on those lies to carry us through, see? That's perfectly all right. You can have a whole bunch of misconceptions and still not do your nut. But the second you settle completely on a lie, and say now that that is the truth, from that moment on you've had it. And you've had it to the degree that that truth can be pervasive in your life. You can say, "Joe is a good man" when you know – when really the truth is he's a bad man, and this may cause you some inconvenience, but it won't destroy your sanity. It'll cause you some worry. But you say, "I have lived but once," and then believe it, defend it and contest it, and of course, you're going to have trouble from there on out. It takes a lie of this magnitude to continue the aberration of man. It takes a magnitudinous one.

Now, to maintain such a lie must at the same time take a fantastic amount of duress. I mean you'd have to work at it to maintain that lie. And whenever you find a maintained lie, you'll find somebody is working at it. This guy has got a headache... Well, I don't know that you could do an all-therapy on this basis. This guy has got a headache; you find the lie connected with the headache, and you could probably resolve the headache. That very well might be an open sesame to all psychosomatic healing. You know, you could probably work a whole parade of stuff out: "Let's find the lie connected with..." See? "Recall a lie about a headache," see? Something like that. And bang, the guy's headache is gone. You see, you're working now with one of these first principles, when you're working with a lie. You got that?

Now let's carry this just a little bit further... I didn't mean to get off into communism. I thought you might be amused. Now, carrying this off a little bit further, let's find a lie about what. See, now that we've found out a lie is this pervasive, see, now, what would be the most disastrous type of lie? And the most disastrous type of lie as a common denominator – although there are many disastrous types of lies – would be about time.

So let's combine these two things, you see? You see what a lie can do, all by itself, that has nothing to do with time. All right, now let's combine it with something which has the power to freeze a tone arm on a pc, that no matter – a big mid ruds on what bad things you've done to him in the session, no matter what horrible this-a's and that-a's, and what processes you were to run – without paying any attention to lies or time, you see – no matter what you do to correct this tone arm, if you do not pay attention to wrong time it will not correct. You got that? See? This is the only one capable of putting a total freeze on a tone arm.

Well, a total freeze on a tone arm is a total freeze on a case. So this gets fantastic. This gets very, very, very, very dreary indeed. So we must be looking here at something like a pervasive common denominator of aberration when we say "a lie about time."

This immediately brings to view processes by the ton. You start thinking up processes, you can just string them out by the hour. "Recall a lie about time," you see, "Recall a lie about time. Recall a lie about time. Recall a lie about time," see? This kind of a – this kind of a process would just string on and on and on and on and on and on, don't you see?

Now, it's interesting that if you – if you – oh, you can think of others. You can think of others. Let's just date everything in somebody's life. That's an ordinary one. He believes he's lived but once, well, let's date everything in that life that has lived but once. Soon as we got

that thing kind of dated up you're liable to find out that he'll fall through.

Now, just think of – think of this approach, see? You might even apply this on an institutional level to just getting the whenness of things. The whenness of things, you know? For instance, "when is this E-Meter?" Guy would have to think for a long time. He'd finally decide it was now, see? Might be quite deaberrative; might straighten out his time track most interestingly. Of course, that's highly experimental – not advanced as something that is proven. But I'm just giving you an idea that you can extrapolate this idea of lie about time almost anyplace you want to look, and you will have some interesting results on a processing line.

See, because that combines then the single action that is the most aberrative action – which is an alter-ism of truth or a denial of truth – with the one thing which if aberrated brings about, then, the greatest mess-up from the viewpoint of a person. We won't call it anything technical, but it just messes him up most. Time messes him up the most. And we get these two things in combination, of course we get a lie about time, and we're off to the races.

Well, having recognized this situation, I looked it over very carefully. We have the GPMs, and we have things of this nature, and looked those over and then I said to myself, I said, "Well now," I said, "Ronnie, if you've gotten this far, this sort of thing, let's just take a look at this now. You suppose some peculiarly and particularly brilliant blankety-blank somewhere on the track has also discovered this and used it to aberrate? Ah well, if that's the case, then there must be such a thing as false time track, complete with times. Let's see if we can find some." And I found some.

Give somebody a false past. Implant him with a false past, complete with pictures, complete with times; and times in the order of magnitude of the thetan's actual existence – trillions and trillions of years. We could also give him some weird and incomprehensible dates. That'd be a little fillip on the thing, you know; that would be some way to throw a new curve into it. Give him one thousand and sixty-nine times trillion to the tenth. Let him chew on that for a while. And he never can find out what date that is.

And you would effectually have blocked out the past by making it so confusing to be entered, and so dreary and so terrible and so awful that nobody would want to have anything to do with it. Now, nobody ever would spend any time enhancing the powers of the thetan, unless he was more diabolical than is believable. But they'd certainly – tend to make them derogatory. They'd make the life as a thetan seem very, very dangerous, very unpleasant. Because look! Look at the horrible things that can happen to you. And therefore, if all these horrible things can happen to you, why, then of course, you don't want to have anything to do with it.

And you could get a guy fixed up with sufficient number of false pasts, that he'd even dramatize a false past. He'd become a fiction writer or something like that. He'd even – he'd even automatically give you a false story of his past, don't you see? He could get quite loopy on this subject, if he were driven in with enough explosion, enough bang, and so on. And if the incident itself were hung up with a double explosion, you know, left-right bang-bang, sort of a double-RI of the thing, you see? Plus and minus RI of the thing; hang it up on the track real good. And just give him a good, long time track. Let's give him – let's give him a few

trillion years to chew on, or a few trillion trillion years to chew on. And let's give him some incident on that track. Let's give him a nice history that goes along with that track. Let's give him pictures. Let's even give him some times when he's been implanted.

Of course, we couldn't give him much of an implant, but we could give him a clue that he might have been implanted at this point. You know, let a couple of the pictures leak out – looks like they're implant pictures. That'd sort of keep him tacking that point of the line, wouldn't it?

And by giving him enough false track, and maybe giving him four or five or six false tracks, he would rapidly get of the opinion that the one thing he shouldn't do is to return on the time track. Because if he does it is far too painful and confusing.

And you'd have him saying at last, in self-defense, "I've only lived but once." Yes, that is one of the tricks that has been pulled. Now, you say, "a false past." That's good terminology, by the way. Find some auditors may trip it around on their tongue, but you can learn how to say it. "A false past" is better than "phony pictures," or something like that. In discussing this with a pc, you say "a false past." Well, he understands this.

And R3R is good enough to be able to find a moment when a false past was installed, date it and get its duration. Really takes some doing. Now, having dated it and gotten its duration, to actually run it out. Now the incident pretends, let us say, to be many trillions of years long. And the actual duration of it is seldom more than three or four hours. So you get the appearance of enormous durations, and you get the appearance of tiny durations. You know, two or three hour duration, or eighty billion trillion squillion, to the nth *tex boonk*, see – years. You'll get two durations on the thing – some vast duration and some little duration. And the incident can be run out. But don't get mad at the pc if he keeps stepping in the mud, you know, and finding himself going to the beginning of the incident, and wondering whether or not he saw it.

Now, these incidents have as a common denominator – these incidents have as a common denominator – and the very few of them I have – the few I have seen. I expect there are other kinds. I have seen some of them and they are confused to this degree: The point where you approached and the moment when you approached is quite commonly repeated in the incident. So you walked up a set of steps to get there, so you now have a visio that looks like you're walking up a set of steps *in* the incident. Same set of steps. So you've got two walkings up the steps. One is in the incident, one is the actual one.

And there'll be two departures. There's the actual departure, in which one was usually anaten and didn't know whether he was going or coming, and the picture of his departure. And thetanwise, of course it'd be a picture of exteriorizing from the area; it's getting dim in the distance.

In other words, there are two beginnings and two endings on such an incident. Now, they also occasionally have a mechanism that shows troops marching away and troops marching to you. This is how they communicate the beginning and end of things. The beginning of things, of course, troops marching to you. The end of things, troops marching away from you. And these incidents usually start with the troops marching away from you and end with the troops marching to you. This was the common action – I mean, that set of pictures was ther-

apy, at one time, and is used consistently in therapy, so they copied this therapy device in this other action. Only in therapy they show you the beginning of something by, I think, the troops marching to you, and in the end, they show you the end of thing, about the troops marching away from you.

Sometimes they're sailors. Sometimes they're sailors in pompon hats. Sometimes they're people who look like West Point cadets. But, you'll see these two marchings connected with it sometimes in these incidents.

So knowing these things you actually can find beginnings and ends of it. But it's very confusing, of course, because the couple of hours there that *aren't* taken up give you a whole time track. They give you some catastrophic accident that happened to you, you see, and then you remained dormant for a long time, and things were very mean, and so forth.

Well, the way you can tell false track is it really doesn't move. You've got motion to such a limited degree that it doesn't make very much sense. Let me show you what I mean.

As you walk in this – that door back there, you see the front of this room, don't you? When you turn around you see some more of the room, don't you? And when you sit down, you see some more of the room in front of you, but from a different viewpoint and level, right? And then when you look down, you have a scanned area of passing your eyes down, toward a book or a meter or something like that, you see? And you have the continuous sound channel that goes all the way along that accompanies this; any sound in the room is continuous. Well, that is a proper sequence – very proper sequence.

Well, false track never looks like that. They've not got the time for it, don't you see? They're crowding all – this thing. So you get a picture – if the picture is in motion, and they can be – you get a picture of the front door, then you get a picture of the front of the room, then you get a picture of the book in front of you, see? And they seldom add the sound that goes with it. Many a pc who doesn't think he has any sonic is simply running false-track incidents where there is none. Diabolical, isn't it? Makes you go wog just to think about it.

Now, coupled with this is the fact that there is actual track. You have actual track. And this track, of course, is more sequitur, but again can be in segmental pictures if there's points of anaten. You'll get the pictures right up to the point where you knocked yourself out, see? And then you'll pick up pictures after this point. You don't have a complete series of pictures, but they don't go chop, chop, chop. Let me give you a – let me give you an actual one.

Thetan is lying on the ground. Airplane comes overhead. Thetan sees airplane come overhead. It just sort of moves into view. Airplane falls apart. We stand up and take a look. But that's simply a picture of the parts of the airplane falling, you see? And then airplane parts are all over the ground, only they're plastic parts. It's not a wrecked airplane, see? We just get jump-jump-jump-jump. See? It's something like the movie director would cut when he was making a documentary. You know, typical modern documentary.

Children starving in Armenia. Children starving in Egypt. Children starving in Washington. Children starving. See? You know, cut-cut-cut-cut-cut. This is typical of one of these false incidents.

Now, why does the thetan look at the false incident? Why is he more likely to be on

false incident than he is on true incident? Well, false incident is safe. There's no bite to the stuff. There's a hell of a bang – now, don't think it isn't aberrative to get one of these bangs, at the beginnings and ends and the somatics that went with it. But once you've got those somatics under control, it's much easier to look at false track than it is... just like you'd rather – a lot of people would rather look at a movie of life than live, see? See, it's safe, because one really never lived it.

They're usually a derogatory or unhappy state of affairs of some kind or another. And they're often quite – they're not well plotted. There isn't anything very good about it. It's messy. But in running the incident out, of course the false track is part of the incident you're running out, right? So the pc in running these two and a half hours gets the sensation of running several million trillion years of track, very often, except it doesn't take that long to do it.

Only he would gasp, if he thought he was having to scan through many trillions of years of track. This would just fill him with "*Uhhhhh!* Oh, no!" you see? The time factor is too great. When he really thinks of the number of pictures there could be on just one trillion years of track, you see? He'll say, "Well, am I going to be here the rest of the night?" You know? This is the idea he gets in session. Well, the longest it could take if it were one for one would be a couple of hours.

Anyway, the somatics being wrong, and the scenery being wrong, and the character of the scenery being wrong, the whole thing is therefore a lie. This is a lie about time. It tells him where he has been, when. When he wasn't there. It puts trillions of years into two hours. There couldn't be a fancier lie about time.

Now they very often have wheels running over to the side with numbers on them. So you can get all the dates you want on the side of the picture. Sound familiar? But a thetan also can do this. He also can visualize numbers to give himself – "years ago," and that sort of thing.

Now, the one thing you can be absolutely sure of – one thing you can be absolutely sure of, with false – with – on a question of false track and dates on false track, and that sort of thing, is that there are no GPMs that I know of – there might be signs of them implanted on the false track, but no actual, runnable GPM could possibly be on a false-track implant basis. That would just be totally pointless. In the first place, you can't, on a false-track gag, get a guy to go over the top of the Ferris wheel several times with the full kinesthesia and motion, don't you see, and have him struck from both sides with all kinds of firings and that sort of thing. So you know – you know that if you're running a GPM, that you're not on false track. Otherwise, beware.

Now, it would be adventurous to say that you know you are not on false track if you are running this lifetime. I'm afraid that'd be an adventurous statement, however, because I've seen some false track with brownstone houses on it that I could never account for in this lifetime.

Now, many a pc – many a pc starts to recover his sanity by just getting him to run, entering the room. See, he can verify that that is the picture. He walks in the room and sits down in the chair, and then you have him close his eyes, and he walk – he runs the incident of walking in the room and going and sitting down in the chair. Now he knows that's his picture, and

he knows that is present time, and he knows it isn't an implant; makes him feel pretty comfortable. Kind of a weird – a weird operation. But don't discount it as its value in this sort of thing. Because of course, a total swamp of a memory is the target of this, and a desire not to go back into the past – these are the immediate fruits of it.

Now, let's look at actual track. What about actual track? Can you also find actual track? Oh yeah, that's pretty easy to find. It's pretty easy to find. GPMs are very easy to find. The dates of GPMs, this sort of thing. That's all perfectly accurate, don't you see? But you're always walking there with the possibility that you've got some false track may turn up on this pc. So there's two things you want to know when you're – when you find an incident and date it. Two things you really want to know is one, does it contain opposite-firing items? Like – that is to say, is it a GPM? And the other thing you want to know about it, does it contain false track?

Not, does it contain any pictures? This very often will not register. When I say, "false track" I'm using a term that we would use but not necessarily on a pc. Better to say, "false past." Does it contain any false past? Because all these picture implants have the ambition of teaching somebody a false past.

Now, you need all this data. You need all this data, as discouraging and as upsetting and as miserable and as disheartening as it is. And I know you will go home tonight and lie down and say, "God, that's terrible. *Ooooo! Aaaaah!* Are my pictures real? Am I really real?" Remember the old lady that the robbers caught, and cut her clothes up, and when she finally got home her dog barked at her, and nobody knew her, and she finally decided when she sat down, "Can this really be me?" you know? She herself didn't know her after a while. Well, there's no particular reason to get in that state, and it's perfectly all right if you do, because it's simply a restimulated state. And the cure of the state is, when dating, just make sure that you don't have any GPMs in it, or if you do, maybe you're looking for GPMs.

That's – none of the – neither of these things debar you from running the engram. But let's just make sure we know what we're running. You scan somebody through a GPM, and you're going to go blang-bang-bang, and he's going to stir it all up, but he can't see the pictures, and you don't know what's going on. It's much easier to just – not move him to the beginning of the incident but move him to the first pair of items. And you don't move anybody anyhow. You just say, "Give me the first pair of items in that GPM," see, after you've – if you want to establish what it is, you haven't got a pattern, it's off-date, and that sort of thing, just what are the first pair of items? He'll give you something. Work it out. Muddle through.

When you've got it all straight, why, you can scan him through the whole incident. It's perfectly all right if you do that, also. But on false track, what it tells you is be very, very alert to getting a wrong date for the incident, and a wrong duration. Because any incident which contains false track is of very short duration.

How long does it take to give somebody a feature-length picture in 3-D, with complete somatics hitting him in the breadbasket, of several trillion years? If you only give him a few pictures of each? See? Doesn't take very long. Well, that's the criteria.

Now the Darwinian theory – now, I'll give you some idea of the influence of false track upon this society. The Darwinian theory, which probably influenced Pavlov to the

greatest degree, is just an implant. That is an implant from man to mud. And it starts out oddly enough with the goal, "to persist." Starts with the goal "to persist," which I consider very, very interesting, because there's not another item in it. There isn't even, "not persist." There, you see, they didn't have the word, you know? They didn't have a double-firing item.

And then they show you your arrival, which you... See, actually they have you in a cell for a while, so they show you being in the cell, and then show you arriving in the room to be implanted. Got that? So you've actually – if you were conscious when you went in the room, it – you've got now two arrivals in the same room, see? And then they show you – complete with pictures, not unlike a modern motion-picture screen – they show you all that has happened to you, very briefly; they give you background on how mean you are, and then they show you getting implanted.

And actually the implantation takes place – the picture never touches the pc – I mean, never touches the person being implanted, but simply stacks mass around his body. All the time he's looking at the picture he's having hell knocked out of him many feet away from the picture by electronic mass stacking around his body. See, he's being hit with waves around his body, you see? So he – this mass gets associated with the – you know, it holds it in the picture, and so forth. And there isn't another thing said. There's not one word said.

And one of the things you've got to be careful of in running false past is getting the pc all mixed up with giving you a fantastic number of items, or something like this. You understand? But in this particular Darwinian one, nothing is said. You occasionally do get something said in one of these things; you do sometimes get sonic in these false past lives, or you get conversation or you get this, or you get that.

But beware – beware of running things in incidents which aren't there. It's almost more deadly than missing things which are there. Don't overrun these incidents. You know, you can take a GPM and you could just pull conversation out of it by the hour. Did you know that? And every item is wrong.

Did you realize that? The guy is sitting there in the middle of the GPM and you don't know what the goal is, and you don't even know that it's this type of GPM – you might have landed by accident in the middle of the Helatrobis Implants, or something of the sort. Maybe the goal is "to leave." And he just gives you item after item of goodbye, farewell, adios, you know? And you know, he just gives you item after item of goodbyes and farewells – it's just the goal "to leave."

It's just "leave," "nix leave," "absolutably," see, "left," "not left" or "nix left," "absolutably."² You know? He's giving you wrong items. And you'll pay the penalty for getting wrong items sooner or later – the whole incident tends to fold up. If you want to see an incident get crunchy, get a wrong date, a wrong duration, or run things out of it that aren't in it. So this is a point that you have to watch.

Now, this incident – this incident, now with a wheel dating device which gives you a

² Editor's note: The Helatrobis line plot had an established pattern in which the goal appeared in different forms in the items. The above examples are based on such items from the known pattern. More about it can be found in the lectures and bulletins of May and June 1963.

series of numbers that gives you – gives you the time of these events, shows you being implanted, shows you finished implanting, shows you leaving – being pushed out of the implant room, even shows you a couple of your fellow crew members, or something like that, there, who are tied up ready to be put into the room, shows you being put aboard a spaceship, shows you being taken to another planet, shows you being dumped in the sea, and shows you start from the sea and become seaweed and become this – and to work up stage by stage – giving the millions of years which elapse on each step, see? And you go on and on up the line, each step – each step – each step on an evolutionary channel, and you run all the way through on these evolutionary channels. A lot of this stuff starts looking awfully 3-D after you've been looking at them for a while, and shows you eventually arriving at the state of being a man. See? Gives you a bit more louse-up in the way of pictures ending – pictures beginning, something of this sort.

And then they push you out through that exact corridor, past the exact two dummies that are tied up, to the exact spaceship, put you in the exact capsule, drop you into that exact sea, and expect you to make some seaweed and go on up the beach. We were fooled only to the degree of some of the incidents of *What to Audit* are actually out of that. Some of the incidents of *What to Audit* are actual, some are out of that Darwinian implant, see?

Now, that's very interesting, to recognize how they can make you live your life twice. Because that one pretends to go into the future, not into the past. Gorgeous louse-up, see? I know, I caught this with myself, but after they dumped me down at the bottom of the sea, I said "Ho-hum, skip it!" And went over and picked up a young fisherman's baby, and so forth, and hung around there for a while, catching my breath. Didn't bother to go through all this, seemed pointless. [laughs]

But, the idea... that's very finite. That's a very short time ago. That's only a couple of hundred million years ago. A lot of characters around here got this, most of them become scientists. That actually is the sole foundation of the Darwinian theory. That's the lot. Evolution: there's no such thing. Bodies don't evolve. They deteriorate, but they don't evolve. You can trace all kinds of reasons how they evolve, and why they evolve, and you can figure it all out, but the truth of the matter is when you get horses on a planet, somebody came along and mocked up some horses! Now, they also mocked up these horses with the capability of growing hair or not growing hair. You've got adjustment factors, but not evolution factors. So you confuse the adjustment factors and prove the whole theory of evolution. And now you know man came from mud, and you can write a book like Pavlov and get the whole world poisoned. You see how this one goes?

All of this is based on what? It's based on errors in time. Errors in time. Because an individual has this incident: It's a wrong time, wrong place, going wrong the whole way, and it took up two hours and actually looks like it takes up seven million, see? There are such incidents.

Just before the Helatrobis Implants they were practicing these. Just before the Helatrobis Implants, you're liable to pick one up on a pc, within the few hundred billion years earlier than the Helatrobis Implants, or perhaps even after the Helatrobis Implants, you're liable to pick up one of these false-track incidents. So they last – they're liable to be found

almost any place.

Now, if you know that these things exist you can whip it. See, it's all in what you – what you know exists. When you first collide with one, you're going to be "Gee-whiz!" you know, and you're going to be much more nervous than you need to be. If you know there is such a thing as a false-past incident and you check up for these things – at the risk of invalidating the pc's actual track – you get yourself sailing along there, and you got this incident, and it's at forty-four trillion years ago, perfectly valid date, you see?

The reason I'm talking to you so strenuously about this is you're just about to be correcting somebody's dates. As a matter of fact you were at it today. You start correcting the dates of incidents and you're going to run into this other phenomenon. It's going to drive you mad, man, if you don't know it exists. You can't correct dates on a case unless you know this other phenomena exists, because it's full of false dates, see?

Pc and you could work at it, correcting false dates – I don't know, another couple of hundred hours, all out of one two-and-a-half-hour incident. The thing to do is to, when you start correcting dates of incidents, the first thing you should look for is an incident that contains a false past. Not an incident contains false dates. Don't worry about false dates so much. You just want false past.

But, remember that it can also contain a false future. So that mustn't be totally dismissed as a possibility. Fortunetellers practice that to this day; it's very popular – false futures. They get you sitting over the crystal ball, you know, and they say, "I see a dark man coming into your life. And he'll be six feet tall if you give me two bucks, and he'll only be five foot eight, if you don't give me..." They're tailor making future. And most fortunes depend on the fact that pcs have future implants that they dramatize, and tend to dramatize. They want to always know about the future. They're really not nervous, they're just dramatizing an implant.

You must ask for false past. That'll give you the most loused-up, because future doesn't, too often, contain dates. But also check for false futures – an incident about false futures. And between the two of these things, why, you're all set. False present, well, everybody knows it's false anyway.

The task is not a very difficult one, providing you know this information. As far as GPMs are concerned, you go back on the track on GPMs, and you got GPMs at eighteen trillion, trillion years ago, and ha-ha, they start banging you in the head and firing left and right, and you're going over the rolly coaster, and you're doing this and you're doing that. Yes, there's always the possibility there could be an implant that also refers to this GPM, but that cannot be done.

What type of equipment is used now, in order to implant false dates, and so on? It's usually quite – it's quite varied, but it really never moves off the basis of something you look into or something you look at, attended by electronic blasts. And that's the common denominator of all such equipment.

In other words, you can have a room, and the person is put on a bed, and the screen and so on, is at a diagonal up in front of them or at the other end of the room, and it shows a

three-dimensional view of events or something like that. Meantime the person is being hit with this and that. It could be as simple as some kind of a scope that has a movie running in the back of it, you put your face or your face is put up to this scope and anchored there with some electric blasts, and at this close range, why, the thing runs off at a mad rate, and there it goes, with appropriate jolts in the right places.

It could also be – it could also be a full set which is lugubriously and... this is earlier track when they didn't mind mass so much. If you find any back there they probably have full sets connected with them. They move them like a stage set. One of the trick ways of building these things, you take these two crayons here, you notice that it – that they are not a consecutive line if I hold them like this. And if you pull them down like this, they look like they're a consecutive line, don't you see? But there's a hole between the two of them. So the set moves up and then goes this way around the person. You understand? If a person is anchored there on a stake, or something like this you see, when they – when the set moves then, why, they just jog the set. And he passes through this slit, which he can't see.

Looks very mysterious to him. He's in one environment, total 3-D environment, he's in the next environment, total 3-D environment. After his sonic and visio picks up a little bit, however, he can hear the scene shift. They really make a lot of noise. And that type of thing, by the way, is used in some very early implant serieses types of pictures of this kind.

The Helatrobos, the Bear and Gorilla and Glade Implants, none of them use pictures. They sometimes – there's only – the only picture I know of used in the Helatrobos Implants is on a railroad on which you travel sideways at a vast rate of speed. And when you meet the railroad, when you come down to the railroad, you'll see that there's a section house right at the point where you're put on the track. There's a house there, see? And then as you move down the track, just before you move down the track, a board goes up in front of you, and it's the same section house. So actually you're moved at sixty miles an hour sideways with the same section house sitting in front of you. And this is supposed to confuse you enormously. But almost any thetan, no matter how anaten he is, can see that it's just a board shoved up in front of him.

In the Gorilla and Bear GPMs, and so on, they do put a figure on the cart with the thetan. They've – there's a guy in a pink shirt with a monkey peeking out from behind him, put on the ride carts. A guy in a pink-striped shirt – very, very interesting. That's their – that was their badge, the hoi polloi. And you'll see this bird with a pink-striped shirt. Sometimes you have a gorilla in front of you. Sometimes it's the gorilla who is spitting things at you, and that sort of thing.

They use figures. But this is not the same thing I'm talking about. Don't think you're mixed up in one of these things just because in an implant, why, somebody jumps up with a picture, see, or something like that that's just a momentary picture. This is not the same intention. That's just to get you to make pictures, or louse up your pictures, or something like that. No, we're talking about another type of incident, another type of incident entirely, where you're hit with electronic blasts, at the same time you're hit with a series of pictures, which purport to be a past or a future for the individual.

And when you run into that one – when you run into that one, why, if you don't recog-

nize that these things can exist, why, you've had it. Now, this also gets in the road of running an actual incident. You've got an actual planet-builder incident, and it looks pretty wild to you. And it doesn't look like the pc could possibly have done it, and so forth. And you date it, and it's got a perfectly right date, and so on. And you've got no read of any kind on false pasts or anything of this character, and yet there's that picture and it seems very incredible to you that the pc could be running this at that particular level or line, and that sort of thing. You can get tangled up on this, but just don't forget to run the incident. Get tangled up all you please, but run the incident. If it's a right incident, it's a right incident. If it's a wrong incident, you'll never be able to find the beginning of it.

About the most maddening activity you can get into is get into one of these false-past things, and go whirring along at a mad rate trying to find the beginning of the incident. Of course, you never make it. You eventually will find a beginning of an incident, but it'll be an incident of such fantastic magnitude that you've got yourself... Aw! The hell with it! You know? It could take you four, five, six sessions, just to try to find the beginning of that sequence of events. Well, there's no sense in beating your brains out. If you can't find easily the beginning of an incident, you better get interested in whether or not this thing has got a false past or a false future in it.

That all depends of course on having your date right. Now, how do you clean up somebody – how do you clean up somebody with something like this? Your approved technology at the present moment is clean up his wrong dates.

I'm giving you this material because right now some of you are engaged in running a Prepcheck on wrong dates. And it's a very good thing you are. You're getting tremendous tone arm action, you're getting results on this sort of thing, and this is all a very happy thing. Remember this: When you start correcting dates, the first thing you're going to run into is any false-past or false-future incident that you have triggered on the pc. And you're going to run into it head-on. So you beware of redating. Don't redate incidents endlessly.

The first order of business is get in there and pitch on the subject of an incident containing a false past. And when you've got that found – because it'll be there – when you've got that found, and when you've got it run... Don't just find it and date it and walk off, because look, you're not going to date anything else from there on except the track that is in it! You can date endlessly. You could run a pc maybe thousands of hours, cleaning up this false track which didn't exist. They can see it and so forth.

So, look, if you got your hands on an incident, now, here's one of your rules of the game, when you've got your hands on an incident – even though it's hell to run and upsets the pc, and everything else, and so on – when you've got your hands on an incident which contains a false past or a false future, you finish that incident. You understand? Finish it from one end to the other. Do anything necessary to get it the hell off the track.

The best way to handle it, of course, is with R3R. You just do standard R3R on the thing. And remember that its pretended duration will be in the millions or billions or trillions or quadrillions. And its actual duration is probably in the matter of hours – at the most a day or two.

So I have to give you all this data now, and it's a good thing that it's turned-up, be-

cause you just start correcting dates on a pc and about the first thing you're going to trip into is the phenomena of false past with all its attendant false dates. And the moment you get collided with one of those things you've had it. You want to do a pc an awful lot of good, however, get rid of one of them. Don't mistake me, they're hell to get rid of. You take the pc to the beginning of the incident, and he goes to the beginning of the incident. Only the beginning of the incident is also inside the incident, as well as at the beginning of the incident. You get the idea?

He finishes up – he finishes up the incident, he leaves the incident at the point where it says he left the incident, but that's a picture of his leaving the incident, and you haven't run out his leaving the incident, you got the idea? These things usually have a minimum of two beginnings, identical, and two ends, identical. If you know that, why, you can sometimes pull the fat out of the fire. This thing – you don't do anything with it, unless it starts running badly. If it runs badly, why, re-duration the actual incident itself, and square it around, and just do a routine, workmanlike auditing job. It doesn't need anything extraordinary about this thing. The pc will eventually plow on through it. All you need is very standard auditing. Very standard R3R, just its usual steps.

You get into a fight with the pc about the thing, however, it's always perfectly kosher to tip him off and say, "Well, are there two beginnings?" Ask on the meter, "Are there two beginnings to this incident?" *Pang! Pang!* Well, you know you got a false past incident, see? "There are two endings? The reason you're having trouble with reaching the end of the incident, are there two endings to this incident?" *Pang! Pang!* "Yeah, you got your two endings on the end of the incident."

Pc says, "Huh! There are!" As well as another beginning and ending of the incident that merely says it begins and ends at this point, which is inside the point when it really begins and ends. Talk about confusion.

These things are confusing to handle. But standard processing, right as of this minute, handles them. And you're going to run into them head-on, the instant that you start correcting anybody's dates. It's one of the first things that'll raise its hand, and elect to fall in your lap as an auditor, is one of these incidents.

Well, what if you're – what if you're in X Unit, and you've been ordered to do a Prep-check on wrong dates on the pc, and so forth, and the pc starts sliding all over the track, and you're not supposed to do anything but correct that? Let me tell you the wrong thing to do. Let me tell you the wrong thing to do: Get your hands on one of these false-past or false-future incidents that's full of dates, get it dated precisely and then walk off and leave it and try to do something else. You're not going to get anything else done. I can tell you that's wrong. I won't tell you what else to do, because I'll probably contradict the orders your Instructors will be giving you. But I can tell you what not to do. Don't walk off and leave it.

Because you have run into, restimulated and excited thousands of dates. Hundreds or thousands of dates have been excited, just like that. And if somebody didn't have that pc's auditor's report, and that pc ceased to be audited in some way, somebody would be wading through that for a long time trying to find the actual incident again.

One of the rules of auditing, one of the little rules that goes along with: don't talk to

people who are unconscious, you know – around people who are unconscious, and don't – and all aberration is at the bottom of the aberration a lie; a lie causes aberration – along with that is the fact that when you got your paws on something, you handle it. That's a maxim that I go by in my own auditing. When I find that lying under the needle of my E-Meter is something that's bothering the living daylights out of the pc – not because he put it there, but because it arrived there in the course of auditing – I handle it.

I don't expect the pc to go on struggling with this thing as a PTP while I do something else because "I'm supposed to." When I get my hands on something in a case, I handle it. You understand? It makes for a little – much less trouble with a case. You get your hands on something, your – this thing is going crash! on wrong dates, crash! on wrong dates. Well, *rrrr!* What the hell! You got the pc right there on wrong dates; what are you going to do now? Are you going to skip that? You see? Walk off and leave it? Well, you know it's top-level stuff. How come wrong dates? What are these wrong dates all about? Let's deal up a few of these wrong dates. Let's find out what this wrong date thing is. You're unfortunately liable to find yourself in a process you're not permitted to run.

Just remember this. If you louse up your pc – well, I always make sure that you get two thousand words! And remember this: I never ask how it was done. That's good enough, see? Somebody loused up a pc, why, bang. I'm very interested at that point. He loused up the pc. I'm not interested if he loused up the pc because the Instructor said, or because he did, or because the bulletin said, or the this said or the that said, or something else said; I'm just interested in that he loused up the pc, see? I have a very short-circuited view of the whole thing. Because auditing is auditing. You're supposed to do auditing. I can lay you down thousands of rules on the subject of auditing. I can guide your footsteps very directly. I can give you information on the subject of auditing. I can do everything else. But I can't sit in that chair and audit your pc. You understand?

And auditing, from my point of view, is supposed to produce beneficial results on a pc. That's my narrow-minded attitude. You understand? So that here's the – here's the pc – here's the pc, and we're supposed to produce good results on the pc. Well, if you don't know how to do this or how to do that or something else, I can show you how to do this or how to do that. Well, you can't ever tell what is going to come up in this case. When it's going to come up. You're not – you can't tell.

Now, when you're auditing a pc – when you're auditing a pc, very often a pc comes into session in no fit shape to go on with what you're running on the pc. It's very heroic of you to try to keep on running what he's on, but remember that you can sometimes not accomplish anything by doing just this. You sometimes have to handle the pc, right there in front of you.

Now, similarly, you innocently set forward to do a fundamental action on a case, like straighten out his dates. And you suddenly see yourself staring down the barrel of the incident responsible for the wrong dates.

Now, remember, there's your big auditing cycle. Your big auditing cycle is to accomplish what you're trying to accomplish with the case. And you better figure out what you're trying to accomplish with the case that you're auditing. In this case you're trying to straighten out the pc's dates, right? All right, that's your big auditing cycle, right? All right. So, you're

trying to straighten out the pc's dates. Now, if you go ahead and handle his lumbosis, God help you, see. I mean that has nothing to do with it. You're trying to straighten out his dates. That's a Q and A or a mess-up, see?

You're trying to straighten out the big auditing cycle on this pc – we're going to get the wrong dates off this case – and suddenly you are presented with something which is outside the perimeter of the permitted process, or something like that. What do you do with it? I can tell you what not to do with it. Neglect it. Now that's what you must not do with it. Because you very often can't get your paws on it again. You've made a big problem for somebody else. You can't straight – when you've f... listen: When you've found the source of the pc's upset, what other source is there to find? See? You got that? So if you're supposed to be running, "Which ruddy rod have you stuck between your ears?" and you all of a sudden find yourself staring at the source of his upset about ruddy rods, I can tell you how not to help the pc: Ignore the fact that you have found the source of it. This results in an invalidation of the source, and nothing happens. You understand?

You have to ask yourself, why are you running this thing about ruddy rods between the ears? That's the big auditing cycle. Don't ever subordinate your big auditing cycle to the minor auditing cycle. You understand? See, there's your big auditing cycle, and then there's your process auditing cycle – you're supposed to flatten this process, see? But your big one is what you're trying to – intend with the pc. And then you're – what process you're running on the pc, and then you've got your other auditing cycle, which is your repetitive give and take of auditing commands, don't you see?

All right, the second that you... some auditors can just get on this give and take of auditing commands and neglect even the process they're trying to flatten, see? And some, running the process they're supposed to flatten, actually can run into the denouement of the big auditing cycle. That's the end, see? The big auditing cycle – they've collided with the thing.

This person has been terrified of ghosts. This person has been terrified of this particular subject. Every time they go to bed at night, why, they won't turn out the lights. You see? They've been this way since childhood, or something of this character. And all of a sudden, you're running this process of some kind or another, you're straightening out something, and the big auditing cycle turns up and drops into your paws. See? They say, "No! Not really! I'm a ghost! Ha-ha! Me! Ha-ha-ha! What do you know! I've always been afraid of myself." Now, what are you going to do from this on? What, are you going to be a complete knucklehead? Going to be a complete jackass? Having found the source, now you're going to try to do what? I'm just bringing it to your attention, what else is there left to do? There isn't anything else left to do.

Somebody cognites his chain level – his level item assessment³ out. "Say! What do you know! It's a so-and-so and it's a *th-lul*, and it's a *du-du-ddl*, and *fa-dt-d-d-dt!* And, ha, well, ha-ha! What do you know! That's in the bag! That's why that level operated!"

And you say, the level. You say the level, "be leery of cats." Tone arm is down. Now,

³ Editor's note: refers to the preliminary step of R3R where the chain to be run was assessed out. See HCOB 1 July AD13, Red Volume V, p.299 for further reference.

what are you going to do? Flatten the chain? You have to ask yourself this question. What chain? What chain are you going to flatten? Where? It now isn't! That is known as your big auditing cycle. That's what you're intending to do with the person.

If you don't know that, I can see you someday auditing a person up to OT, and they arrive at the point of OT. And you get very upset, because you haven't completed your auditing cycle! You understand? So that's present in all auditing. Having found the source of the aberration in wrong dates, what you going to do? Look for another source?

What you haven't got in your mind, then, is the big auditing cycle: What were you intending to do with the pc? What does this process intend to do with this pc? Wrong dates? Well, it's supposed to straighten out the pc's wrong dates, what else? And all of a sudden – you didn't even ask for it, and you possibly in a lot of cases won't get it right away, unless you're running R3R work – all of a sudden you've got your paws on the source of the pc's wrong dates! What you going to do? Run the process, of course. What nonsense.

You're going to go on and say, "Give me another source for wrong dates. Give me another source for wrong dates. Give me another..." He's just given you *the source* for a wrong date, see? What – the second that you say, "Give me another source for wrong dates," what are you looking at? You're looking at invalidation of *the source* for wrong dates and from that point on you have thereafter defeated your auditing. See that? So there's where it'd go. So all of a sudden this guy suddenly says, "Hey! Hey, hey, hey! There's a *bup-ut-ut-it* and a *zu-zuz-up* and all that track I thought I – *uh-mmmulp!*" You speak about wrong dates, well, there it is, see? What are you going to do?

Now, you make your peace with the Instructors, but remember I count on you to handle the pc.

Thank you very much!

BETWEEN LIVES IMPLANTS

A lecture given on 23 July 1963

All right? Okay. What's the date?

Audience: 23rd.

Twenty-third? Well, what do you know!

All right, 23rd July AD 13, Saint Hill Special Briefing Course.

I had two choices here. I'm working on an assembly line process for you. I'm trying to smooth out your dating problems and that sort of thing. I'm collecting a lot of information on that, all of it very important as far as tone arm action is concerned. I followed through that wrong date or bad dating or misconception of date is the reason the tone arm action is... and I found out that the pc's time sense is his basic aberration. And therefore I'm working like mad to get you processes that rehabilitate a pc's time sense.

Of course, the most exaggerated statement you could make is the time for a pc to run engrams is when he can call the date. And if you did that – if you did that, it'd be absolutely sure that the pc would be getting tone arm action on R3R, see. And discovered a new run-down of R2H. You're using an R2H in a training pattern right now. Well, R2H exists, of course, as a highly therapeutic process, too, prac... more or less the way you're doing it.

But I've been refining it. Refining it. Getting it down to about a ten-step action, which gives the maximum tone arm action. Aims straight... I looked around for something I could use, you see, to rehabilitate a pc's time sense, and there it was lying right in our laps. And so I'm refining that to just rehabilitate a pc's time sense. And it does wonders for a case. And finally found that I may be looking at a one-shot OT process. And simple as though it – as it is.

Actually, it becomes much simpler as a process to run than the one you're running right now as R2H. But that is not quite ready to release. There are a couple of questions that are being – still kicking around about it, such as what happens when the pc gets into an engram and you say, "When was that?" and he is very surprised indeed to be in this engram. And then you say, "Well, its bypassed charge is so-and-so and so-and-so." And he has to put that together for you while sitting in the middle of one engram – all very interesting. I've got to answer a couple of questions like that and then I'll release it.

The common denominator – which is what I've been looking for – of case levels is simply that and no more. It's just the time sense of the individual. That doesn't mean it's how well-timed he is, or this doesn't mean that Gene Krupa and so forth – that's rhythm sense. But just time sense. The whenness of things. And the deterioration of this sense is what gives you the case levels. And that is about the end of that.

There's tremendous ramifications to this. There are lots of other things that can make the pc unhappy or aberrated or significances by the ton. But a common denominator of case levels is time sense. And knowing that, then you could probably establish case levels, which we were trying to do by test a short time ago, by some kind of a test of time sense. The whenness of things. As simple as this: "What's your earliest memory in this lifetime?" you see?

And the pc says, "Well let's see, I can remember back to when I was twenty-nine," and so forth. You've probably got a case level – probably a case level 7 or something like that, you see. We got a case level 6, something like that.

And you say, "Well, what's the farthest back you can remember?" and so forth. And he's trying to puzzle around and he looks awful cloudy and you wonder what he's puzzling about so hard. And he's trying to find out if he can remember back to breakfast. Well, you've got a case level 8, don't you see? Or, if he can't grasp what you're asking him. No, but it is an indication here, of this type of thing. Your best – your best case programming, however, is a discussion with the pc about what process – because you're dealing mainly with long-time pcs – what process have they been most interested in. And you're liable to get a very interesting ramification out of the pc, is that they have never been interested in the higher-level process. They were really making gains when they were running – and they will give you some other process.

And that merely gives you the class of process, you know. That doesn't give you just – don't continue to run the process, necessarily, that they were running, that they were interested in. But it tells you where the interest of the pc is along the case levels and therefore you can run the pc and he will feel that he can do these processes. And you may be running a pc who is, uncomplainingly and actually unaware of it himself, running processes he doesn't feel he can do. You understand? You may be doing something like this, you see.

And the pc's sitting right there slugging and trying, and sweating at it and that sort of thing, and you just start being – just a discussion of interest, see. Interest discussion, that's all. And the pc says, "Well, they so-and-so and so-and-so" and they were really interested as they were doing some 8-C at one time or another and they found that was terribly interesting, and actually there's no process more interesting than that 8-C. Don't you see? You've got your answer right there. Now, they've done an objective – an objective type process is one that they feel they can do.

These are all on the lines of estimation of cases, don't you see? But right now I have a little assignment for you, is just have a discussion with your pc on this basis.

There's a bulletin will be out tomorrow on this subject that's scheduled to go to HGCs. But you will find it considerably interesting and it tells you more about this discussion, but actually more or less just what I've just told you. Just have a discussion with your pc as to what process has been the most interesting to him and what does he consider an interesting process and all that sort of thing, and put it down in your auditor's report. And don't necessarily shift his gears, but this is – might be very revelatory to you and also to the pc.

Now, I have a reality on doing a process that is too steep. I've never had this reality before and – this is the subject of today's lecture – and I got confused and – didn't much appeal to me. Process was just a bit too steep. That's a brand-new experience for me, but I can sym-

pathize with the guy who's wading along now and doing that sort of thing, running something that's a bit over 'is 'lead.

And I had some adventures recently that I'm going to tell you about in this lecture. And if any of you faint or anything like that, why fall straight back in the chair, not into the aisle and so forth. And if you start screaming or anything, why the – I think the pavilion speakers are on, aren't they? You can go out there and scream. Anyway, the difficulties – the difficulties of exploration are based on the fact that you can most easily go when you know.

And I think the British motorist deserves the gold medal amongst all gold medals for knowing before they go. I remember one time getting a routing from the Royal Automobile Club for an African trip and they gave me little cards. And everything was measured off in tenths of a mile. And I read these cards all over. You went over the top of a brow of a hill, you see, and there was a small cairn of stones to the right and that was 1.7 miles from the point you had just left, you see. And then down at the bottom there was a small bridge and it had a barn on the right, you see, and that was 1.85 miles you see. And that – going along and – I read all these cards and didn't bother to take the trip because it was ... [laughter, laughs]

But exploration has its disadvantages. Definitely has its disadvantages, because more than once, why, one finds himself out at the end of a ridge and there's no way back – he can't get up the sheer surfaces he's come down – and he looks in front of him and he finds there's no way down. And that is it. And so it can be too much of a good thing, not knowing before you go.

You actually can't know too much about where you're going before you go when you're doing anything like exploration of the time track. And I've been fronting up on this for some little while and I find very few times have I had any faint heart or upset along that until just recently. And I got the creeps, frankly.

And well, it starts like this – it starts like this: I was up in the Van Allen belt – this is factual, and I don't know why they're scared of the Van Allen belt, because it's simply hot. You'd be surprised how warm space is. Get down amongst the clouds and so forth, it can get pretty cold and damp. But you get well up and sunlight shining around and that sort of thing, it's quite hot. And the Van Allen belt was radioactively hot. A lot of photons get trapped in that area and so forth. And I was up there watching the sunrise.

Well, that was very interesting. And my perception was very good, and I was taking a look at Norway and Essex and the places around, you know, and getting myself sort of oriented. And then something happened to me that I didn't know quite what had happened to me. I thought some facsimiles must have appeared in front of me, but they didn't look like facsimiles. And some other things happened and I had a feeling like I might possibly go into the sun. And a few other little uncomfortablenesses there where... That wasn't what awed me. But I got confused. I got confused because the sun was suddenly larger and then it was smaller and somehow or another I was doing a change of space process that I myself was not familiar with. And it made me sort of bite off my thetan fingernails just a little bit, you know?

And I said, "Well, I'd better look this over a little more thoroughly." And proceeded to do so. And a bit later that day, why I did some reach and withdraw on the polar cap and so on – orientation. And we got quite a bit out of this because I was able to establish some reach

and withdraw process – I knew how the world must look to somebody who was in a body and had pictures appearing in front of them and that sort of thing. I knew they could get kind of queasy about this situation.

Well, that wasn't what overawed me. What overawed me was when I found out I hadn't been looking at pictures. That was upsetting, because... I was invalidating my own perception. It didn't look like pictures, don't you see. And I was busy invalidating my own perception and so on, and I wondered why I was nervous. That was what was really puzzling me. What was this all about? And I couldn't quite figure out what had happened and then I finally did find out what had happened. And I had actually appeared in a dispatcher's tower on Venus and had appeared back where I was above here. And had done it like that. With no volition on my own part at all. That was upsetting.

You start doing appear and disappear, you see, automatically and you say, "What's happening? What's happening? You mean to say I'm going to be prowling around in the stratosphere and all of a sudden find myself appearing and disappearing elsewhere without any volition on my own part?" Actually, I didn't think all this through until later.

But I thought, "Well, prowling around up here is a little bit over my head just now. And I'd better know a little bit more before I go."

So, that was some weeks ago, and since that time I've been exploring around and finally found out what I was looking at. And you talk about a fellow – he's brought home this nice pet, tame variety of snake, you see, and he's put it in a box. And then a snakeologist comes along and he says, "Good heavens, man! Where did you find that king cobra?" [laughs] That's the way I felt. I'd been looking at where you go every time you die, see? And I finally found out what this planet is and why life is so loopy.

Now, we've got some of this back in 52. Dishing it out intellectually; I had a good intellectual reality on it. We'd talk about between lives area and we'd dished all this off the cuff. This is not data which is unknown to us, don't you see? But that isn't the same as going there. That isn't the same as going there with your eyes wide open. And realizing that all you had to do was to be there at the exact point which you're supposed to appear at and willy-nilly you would have gone over Niagara Falls through the implant, you see? And that is what has happened to me last few weeks, and... So I've been studying this situation very hard and, as I say, I've come up with the data with regard to it.

Of all the nasty, mean and vicious implants that have ever been invented, this one is it. And has been going on for thousands of years. It's the most complete memory wipeout system and the biggest bunch of lies that anybody ever had anything to do with.

Now your understanding is that when you die, why somehow or another about fifteen minutes later you appear in another body. Let's look at this thing from a time disorientation basis. That is a lie. It takes sixty-nine days plus. More than sixty-nine days. And you very often go – see, this has upset some of our calculations. We've wondered what has happened to some of our people, why they didn't show up again immediately, that sort of thing. You've gone as long as eight or nine years between death and birth.

Now what happens – I'll just give you a fast rundown on this situation – what happens is, is you've got a compulsion to appear; this was why this yo-yo, see? You got a compulsion to appear at the between lives return-point.

And, of course, you just do a disappear at death and an appear there. You don't travel to there, see. It's all nicely implanted and you're supposed to arrive at this exact point. And having arrived at this point you go through the works. And the works consist of a false death given to you in pictures. You're caught there and beamed in, and you get a bunch of pictures which they have taken – these aren't your pictures – and it tells you all about the death you just died. Only that's not the death you just died. They give you a completely false death.

Now, this gives us a moment of pause, right at this point. This is alleged by the way, to be a fifteen-day time track. It isn't. It isn't. It's days, but it isn't fifteen days. And it says it's a fifteen-day time track, see, and this is fifteen days from where you last were. It starts with a repetitive picture which gets you good and lost. In other words they keep giving you this same picture and this same picture and this same picture so that when you try to back out of the incident you keep running into the same picture, and you keep thinking that you've got the beginning of the incident and you haven't. You've got a picture in the incident, see, and then you go to an earlier picture and you think you've got the picture now that starts the incident, and that's wrong, too. So the trick is to get ahead of it.

But that is – can be varied one way or the other, and I needn't go on about this, but usually you see an actual scene and then you see a picture of a scene. So then you can't really get outside the pictures in order to begin the incident, see, so you can't find basic on the incident. That's all that amounts to.

All right, well this whole series of pictures represented as happening in the space of fifteen days, counted off day after day, gives you your death which is a false death. And it's not the right death at all. Matter of fact, in scouting this in session, I found a death whereby I got me 'ead blown off about 1150. And they showed me a picture of a death by exploding bombards. It was very interesting, because they didn't have bombards in 1150. Get the idea? They didn't have them for another couple of hundred years, see. They weren't common. So they slip.

But these pictures they show of your death are all Earth pictures. I don't know how we explain this. It could be explained by them coming down and taking some pictures. I'd hate to explain it so esoterically as they pick up somebody's photograph and photograph his facsimiles, because in this particular character it wasn't possible. Either that or they, in some fashion, preordain the destination of the society at that point and expect your pictures will be concerned with that, don't you see? But they are Earth pictures, and they compare to the historical periods of Earth. For instance, a death at 750 – you get knocked off your horse, or something of the sort or die in bed with your boots off, and you go up there and find yourself having died in a battle amongst knights. And have a helmet sitting on a cross as your grave and so forth. That's not your grave, but it's a Norman helmet. Interesting, you see. Messed up like fire drill. In other words, they give you the wrong death. That's the way it begins.

Now, you move up to a point called the year zero. And thank God they've got a year zero, because you can always date the incident by dating the year zero, because there is no

year zero on your time track. So, when you want to look – take one of these incidents apart for dating, always look for a hole. Look for a hole in the incident, you see, and you'll find something like, well, there's a year zero there. Well, good – date the year zero. For God's sakes, don't date the incident! And I'll show you why in just a moment.

Because they give you a future history of your life: This is going to be *your* life. Television program "This Is Your Life" has no bearing on the thing at all, but I often wondered why I could never bear the stinking program. But this is "This Will Be Your Life." And they now give you from the year zero, which they communicate to you as the year zero – this is given in another room. This is given in a room alongside – another chamber. See, your first fifteen-day period, that all finishes up, see – alleged fifteen days, see?

Then you go to the year zero, and this is a great big room – great big room. And this screen is a whitish colored screen – surround – a whitish surround to a copper grid. This copper grid is many feet long. I wouldn't – haven't tape measured it; didn't have a tape measure! I'm not really up there very high yet, I can't carry things around with me. Anyway, it's – oh, I don't know – at a guess, seventy-five feet, hundred and twenty-five feet, hundred and fifty feet, something like that, copper grid. And it's very long and high, but it's much narrower than it is long, don't you see? Be on the order of about three feet high and seventy-five feet long, or five feet high and a hundred and fifty feet long, something of that sort, you see.

And this has some compulsive effect upon the thetan, and the whole thing is to make him make pictures. And they don't show you your future life at all. They show you your – what happened to you at the year zero, at the time you entered the universe. Now it so happens that there are a lot of incidents where people have told you you entered the universe, and some happened not so long ago and some happened a long time ago. And there can be such a thing as a guard room or something like that, and there's a bunch of angels sitting around in the guard room and you walk in in a doll body – at the beginning of the universe, you walk in in a doll body, you see? Slight discrepancy there. You're madly out of valence, you see. That's you over there. But it's a facsimile of some kind or another. And the year zero usually takes one of these facsimiles.

Now, there isn't really a picture in the whole sequence of the next section of this. There aren't any pictures, you understand, except yours. So what actually happens is from the year zero to the year one trillion trillion trillion trillion trillion years in the future, you're given a compulsion to mock up your own track on this screen. And date by date by date by date by date, from the year zero forward to one trillion trillion trillion trillion trillion years, you're given a compulsion to put your time track up there. And all that's very interesting.

You finally come to the second significant date, which is one trillion trillion trillion trillion trillion years in the future. This is the wrong date, the wrong date cake if there ever was any. But you actually have put your own facsimiles from your own year zero forward to that far from what you considered the year zero. Of course, this makes a scramble, too. But they're just your own pictures. Remember, there wasn't a single picture in the whole thing except what you put there. But what did you put up there? Man, you put up the early implants – you put up the Glade, the Bear, the Gorilla, the Helatrobis Implants. You put up the whole lousy lot; entrapments and everything else. And you just did that, and this was probably in the

course of the next sixty days. Not fifteen minutes – sixty days. Long time, isn't it? Sixty days of restimulation. And wrong dates.

Those are all your pictures. You scan somebody through that sequence and what are you scanning him through? You're scanning him through the misdated Helatrobus Implants. You're scanning him through anything and everything that you can think of, all misdated. So you'd say, "Well, all right, you can't scan through these things, so it's impossible to get through it." And this was about the time I started to feel queasy and felt that I was just being run just a little bit over my head. I was scanned through it twice and I felt that was a little bit over my head.

Because to take at a gulp a scan through all of the goals of the Helatrobus Implant in one single pass, it made me feel just a little bit odd. And I felt, "This is a little bit too steep for me. I'd better find some way to take this thing apart so it can be taken apart."

All right, so there's this middle period. That's in the main room, the middle period. And how a thetan is moved through there I don't know yet. I think he must be moved there – through there on a very slow endless belt proposition. Very slowly. Fantastic slow speed! Because he spends sixty days going past this cotton-picking screen, see? It's not that big. Putting his pictures on it.

Now we get to the third sequence. And this is far more interesting because they furnish all the pictures, which I think is very sweet of them. They don't now try to pick up any pictures. They throw you, usually – nearly always the same sequence. This is a very, very stable sequence. It's a bunch of pictures, and they have some – there's a... they use a wavelength communication system, by the way. Thought-concept wavelength communication system is all I can make out of it. Not words. But you do hear some sound, and part of it is a baby crying, and they show you picking up a body and so forth. And then they show you departing. And of course you depart and then you get another picture of departing and you get another picture of departing, so you really never get out of that one either, see.

And then they show you a picture of being sent directly down to Earth and channeled straight into the body of a newborn baby. I think it's awfully nice. And you even hear the baby cry. I think that's good. That's good, it's very clever. And part of this – and all through this thing, you've got a false emotion of "We're just good Joes and we're doing our best for you." And you get the feeling, "Well, we've..." I can imagine – there's one thought concept in there which is terribly interesting, which I imagine you girls have occasionally been startled at, which is "We've treated you like a gentleman. Remember, we've treated you like a gentleman."

Anyway – you want to know why the girls are always wearing men's sweaters and so on. But the whole idea and the whole emotional tone that's shot at you all during the rest of this duress, knock-about, restimulation, misdating, scramble-up washout is, "We're being nice." See? As a matter of fact you'll find that this – I'll bet that you'll occasionally get a pc who will say, "Well, they treated me well. I couldn't get along without this." You know, that sort of thing. Because that's the prevailing emotion. No anger, there's nothing there. The light touch, see. The most effective possible touch.

Anyway, you then see a picture of yourself separating from this planet. And how they explain that I don't know, but it's sort of – it's just thrown in for good measure because it said so on the blueprint, I suppose. You've already been sent to Earth, you see, in a... the thing is kind of mixed up. And you even get a picture of yourself being scooted across a desert on Earth with yucca trees down under you and that sort of thing. And there you are. You're on your way and you're going down to pick up this baby and everything is fine.

See, you couldn't pick up a kid without them, you know? Ha-ha-ha-ha! You couldn't do that, so on. Magic, you see, they have all these babies beamed, you know. And all they do is ride you down the beam and you pick up the baby and you're all set. And there you are and so forth. And this thing, then, with the multiple end so that you can't find the end of it easily (you know, the end and then the end and then the end and then the end – which is the end? and so forth) finally winds up with what actually happens to you: you're simply capsuled and dumped in the gulf of lower California. Splash! To hell with you. And you're on your own, man. And if you can get out of that and through that and wander around through the cities and find some girl who looks like she's going to get married or have a baby or something like that, you're all set. And if you can find a maternity ward to a hospital or something, you're okay. And you just eventually just pick up a baby. You're strictly on your own, man. In a state of total amnesia and *gahh!* Having been lied to to this degree with your track all scrambled, see.

Well, in this sequence you're given a compulsion that the next time you die you must appear on the landing stage. And that's it. That's the whole ruddy, lousy, cotton-picking lot. This is an interesting – an interesting thing, because this is the most vicious engram I have ever seen set up. To scan through that thing is asking you to scan through a restimulation of a trillion trillion trillion trillion trillion years of your own time track. Just asking you to do it like – just like that, see. "Oh, that's all right, just scan through it, you know. Ho-ho!" Can't do it, man.

And to find the beginning of it – well, there are other ones with false beginnings and false endings so that you can't get out of them easily, but the time lie: this is specifically fifteen days. This is your last fifteen days, you see, on Earth, you know? Only it isn't. And it's not even fifteen days. And then the last section tells you that it's a hundred days long. You get a hundred days counted off to you in there. But it isn't a hundred days, it's more like about nine days. And then having channeled you squarely into the head of your new body, they dump you in the gulf of lower California.

Very interesting. Because by the time you get out of that, this is a type of facsimile that can't be run. Nobody has ever been able to approach even looking at it, so it gives you enough queasiness so that you just tend to back right straight off from the thing – how the devil can you undo that.?

Now, because you've been given such a – such a compulsion to appear there... Here I am up in the Van Allen belt and I take a look around and I see the sun and I get myself oriented and I'm just spotting myself around, you know, getting ready to flex a bicep or something like this, and I just glance in the direction of Venus and I go – I'm on the landing stage. See, the compulsions shift me in space. I didn't stay on the landing stage. Still, I went up and around the airport, took a look around the airport. I found, oddly enough, that I'd gotten curi-

ous about this place before, some hundreds of years ago, and had simply hung around for a while and hadn't gone through the implant.

But this has been going on for as long as you've been on this planet. There's lots of these – they run somewhere in the neighborhood of two to three per century. If you've been on this planet ten thousand years you've got – what? Quite a few of them. Figure it out for yourself. That's how many of these confounded things you got. And as far as I know it hasn't changed an iota. I could... I'm saying a little bit more than I know now. But I think it – it apparently was simply set up and it's continued on. There's been no vast change of pattern, as far as I know. But I'm prepared to amend that when I start looking at a few early facsimiles on it, which I haven't yet.

The point is this: the Helatrobos Implants, the Gorilla Implants, the Bear Implants, way back thetan fights and all of this kind of thing – you got through all that. You got through all that and you were still OT. They used to say about me that I'd never been the same after the second Helatrobos, you know? I used to occasionally snarl at people more than I used to earlier. But before I hit this place I was on the same post for eighty trillion years, same post, same name. Give you some idea of stability of identity.

Mary Sue gave the cue on this thing. She said, "Look at how hard they have to work to keep you from being OT!" Hey, now, that's quite a thought! Isn't that quite a thought? Hm? Now you look at this. You look at this, now. The complete idiocy of it. Somebody sits up on Venus – there are probably some other stations around up in the system. This one's on Venus. I notice that we all believe that Venus has a methane atmosphere and is unlivable. I almost got run down by a freight locomotive the other day – didn't look very uncivilized to me. I'm allergic to freight locomotives, they're always running into you.

Now we notice that Mars doesn't have any atmosphere either and won't support life. In spite of the fact that it turns green and red and purple with the seasons, it doesn't support life. We understand – there's lots of things we understand about this system – heh-heh! Isn't it? [laughter, laughs] But this is a carefully maintained station. And a space-opera, meat-body type society maintains it very carefully. They have a hospital, there's space craft hanging around there, dispatcher stations, landing platforms, this type of thing. It's all highly civilized, but they carefully maintain this one. And it's very interesting, they maintain this one. They've maintained it for thousands of years without any change. Why, it's fascinating. Why are they maintaining this thing? Why? Why is it so important to them?

Don't be deluded by the atmosphere they pump into you – the emotion they pump into you during the implant, that it's all for the best in this best of all possible worlds, man. It might be that, "We've treated you like a gentleman," but the fact of the case is, I classify that as a dirty trick. Why is it so interesting whether or not somebody gets off this planet? Well frankly, your answer is practically as good as mine. I could make a few guesses on this, but that's about all.

But the rest of this universe isn't run this way. It's a question of where *are* we? Why? Well, I know this: that onto this planet there's a great deal of dumping has gone on. Stuff from the nearby galaxy – not this galaxy but from the next galaxy over and so forth, is going on here. I know they take political prisoners and guys who they don't want around, but it's less

personal than you think. They just have excess population so they start to get rid of their excess population, you see? They've got a revolt, or you're on the wrong side of a war, or something like that, and they pick you up in droves and ice-cube you and throw you into a sea someplace.

I know this planet has been subjected to that and several planets in this immediate end of this galaxy have been subjected to that – that I know. But somebody must have taken a great deal of interest in this fact. And somebody must be awfully afraid. Somebody must be awfully afraid. You could almost say it isn't so many – how many are here, but it might also be a question of who's here. Think of the cost – now let's think of it in terms of just a society, you see – think of the cost of maintaining a huge station or several stations – its maintenance, light, power, wages. Think of maintaining it on a basis of hard work, because it is. Look at the volume that station handles. How many people die on this planet in any given day? Well that's how many guys are started in on the beginning of that line in any day. That's a lot of people, man! That's something on the order of two and a half billion implants every half-century. That's quite a volume. Of course somebody may not say that's a great volume, but look at the length of the implant.

Now, if it were a two-second implant, I would say well, yeah, anybody could handle that. But it – I know that it's more than sixty-nine days. And I know the stuff is ferried back here. Why, I think that's all very interesting. That this is a – this looks to me like a very expensive proposition. And remember this has been going on since before the days of Egypt. Way back. Without any change. What industry! What enthusiasm!

So we ask these various questions: Who's here, and who are we? See, we can ask a lot of questions out of this. I don't pretend to have the answers to these questions. There's no interpretation I'm giving it particularly beyond the interpretation – same interpretation I'm telling you about the room you live in. I've seen the room. And you're just beginning to look at it.

Now, the amount of duress necessary to produce a continuous degraded state can be measured thereby. Look at the hard work to keep people aberrated. Now, a few months ago I was telling you about if you were just left alone for a while, you'd snap out of it. Remember? If you were just left alone for a while, you'd snap out of it. The universe itself is therapeutic. But look at how hard they have to look at it. I know that in any given situation somebody has to be awfully active to maintain the situation in a bad state. Situations have to be maintained in a bad state, they just don't naturally exist in a bad state. And that's very definitely true of people.

If you were left alone, even if you could put in two or three hundred years at it, you'd start to snap out of your hop. See, you have to pick up the next baby anyhow, all off your own bat. Well, supposing you just picked up the next baby without the between lives implant to slow you down? Well, I find that would be quite interesting – quite interesting thought, because right there you're looking at world clearing.

We got several ways that we can whip this situation. We're actually talking about an existing situation. We're talking about the situation that your pc is sitting in, in that pc chair in an auditing session. There is his PTP: How the hell is he going to get out of here?

Well, I know how to get out of here – I could have went as a matter of fact. Just don't appear in this immediate vicinity of the solar system. Go back and find your friends and bring some battle cruisers in. But the point I'm making here is: The key is, the second you find yourself free, to appear, don't you see? Well, I appeared and I said to hell with that and stepped back up above here again. Said now what the hell's happened here? What's this funny compulsion? And ran that on down, that's it.

Well actually, it doesn't take much to get rid of the compulsion. Now, in exteriorization, it is very easy for a thetan to exteriorize if you have him be in some place he's familiar with. Now, supposing Scientologists just elected a place to be when they kicked the bucket. And supposing, why, we simply ran out – and actually it's just a section of this implant, and even though it jams the case up, who cares – run out that compulsion, even by repeater technique, don't you see? We can do that, see. Run that compulsion to appear over there, you see. And then tell the guy very strong and hard, "Well now, where is a good place that you're very familiar with? Well, when you die, appear there. Now remember that. When you die, appear such-and-such a place." Different place.

Two or three hundred years, even with no processing, you'd be free. In other words you'd live it out. Look at the amount of time that's just been bought. Because frankly, it wouldn't take more than a couple of hours to do this job on anybody. If you simply told a thetan to be in a place where he was familiar with or liked to be, he would exteriorize. You can ask somebody what he's familiar with. He gets tangled up sometimes, thinks he's gone into a facsimile when he's actually gone into a locale, don't you see. As far as that's concerned, you see, you could use Saint Hill, providing you didn't – providing you ran out all your ARC breaks on the subject. [laughter, laughs]

But the point here is elementary. If a guy has got to pick up his own body on his – off his own bat anyway, well, he might as well just pick up a body off his own bat anyway. Nobody else is going to do anything for him. In fact if you're going to give him a – you know very well that if – what would happen to somebody if he had an engram and you gave him another engram on top of it and said that his engram didn't exist, you know how therapeutic that would be. And then you misdated everything he's got and then told him a bunch of lies and then pulled an emotional switch on him. You can imagine the state your pc would be in if you did these things, so supposing you just deleted that out of the subject of death. And somebody just was in a place they were familiar with and didn't go back through the between lives area. And I'm telling you true, that in two or three hundred years you would have lived it out. You'd be flexing your biceps anyhow, relieved from that situation – you'd be starting to take a long breath.

Because there must be considerable fear connected with this. Perhaps the fear of death is mainly the fear of the between lives area. May not be a fear of death at all. Certainly oblivion takes place during that period. Now economic chaos would ensue at once if people kept coming back and demanding their toys back. I'm sure that you'd get a lot of people who would argue against this and say this was not the best for this best of all possible worlds. They'd say, well – well, they could say a lot of things about this. I'm frankly not very interested in what they would say about this.

But now as Scientologists, supposing we just started tabbing people on the shoulder and giving them this two-hour treatment which deleted the compulsion to return to the between lives area – instead of that, appeared in Yankee Stadium or something, and took off and went and found a new body? You see the only service performed: it gives you a place to be when you're dying, see, and spares you some of the agony of death. See, it gives you a place to be as the only service performed. All the rest of them, cut your throat, see. Well you can easily perform that service. Next thing you know you start cutting down their customers.

Now, a couple of things stand in the road of all this. You should know this, a couple of questions are unanswered here. How close is the liaison between these jerks – I mean these nuts – I mean these fellows – and Earth. How close a liaison do they maintain? Do they care anything about Earth at all? They must have seen a space probe going by the other day – they must be aware of some interplanetary action taking place right here. What they going to say about it? When in the last two weeks I've seen a full armored spaceship sitting on a landing port, with mine own eyes. What they going to do? I don't think they'll do anything. I think they're hung with their own petard. The moment they appear, they blow the show. I don't think they'd do anything. I just think they get fixed on a wrongness, and they're continuously executing this wrongness. They continuously – so they insist on its rightness and they think that's going to solve everything.

I'm interested that jamming the track to this degree, and giving so little time period amongst incidents as they do to the person, is giving people a weird time-~~zzzzzzzzzz~~. So that you have fan-job airplanes only occupying a third of a century, where as a matter of fact in most societies they'll be happy and content with the fan-job airplane for anything up to a billion years. Somebody invented a fan-job airplane. Fine. That's good. Over here – over here, we've got jet planes. Now we've got supersonic planes. Now we've got spaceships. You see? Pocketa-pocketa-pocketa-pocketa. It's this acceleration. I've interest – been interested in that because I've seen it as quite different here than it is in any other place I've ever been. And this could be the primary factor. They give you your time track such a fast jam together that everybody gets an idea of more accelerated motion of the way progress has got to occur.

There could be other explanations. There could be an explanation such as a base is being created here for takeover of this particular galaxy, since this type of implant is not native to this galaxy – inspecting your own track you will see that is the case. It's the next galaxy. These could be an enemy to this galaxy, sitting there quietly, letting a manufacturing or production base build up for an attack into this galaxy. These could be simply prison guards. And with tacit consent from one and all, far and wide, why any of you agitators that cut up a fuss or didn't join the local AMA or something like this they capsulized you and threw you down here and they know very well that this is a prison.

Now, I know that this is known in some peculiar way, because bulletin board notices exist all over the place with regard to this planet. They say, "No landings on Earth." Why does everybody comply with this? I got here, why, accidentally landing here up in the Himalayas. But why does everybody comply with this? Why is this planet stayed away from? I don't know – how many visitors did Alcatraz have? See, this is about where we sit with regard to this situation.

Now, there's another factor. Another factor here that's quite interesting. If they have pictures of Earth in order to show you how you died, did they get them on Earth, or are they picking them up on some weird mind reading fact off of beings as they come up there? Have they – have they actually figured out how to photograph a facsimile? If they've figured that kind of thing out, why then that's explained. But how do they know what's going on here? That is not finally answered, don't you see?

Now, they haven't done anything about these space probes. The boys have been at it here, shooting stuff off into the heavens for the last several years and nothing has been done about this. Now, knowing very well, I suppose, that any time they exceeded a certain zone or area – they know very well that an armored cruiser could blow anything that this planet could build like a kid's toys out of the sky, so maybe they're not worried about it. Or maybe they're counting on a decimation of population, a destruction of industry in atomic war.

Another question is: How thoroughly do these people influence the affairs of Earth? We can understand that Earth is a very, very strange planet. I've never seen populations behave with the same hecticness and weirdness. And, of course, if people who were rather revolutionary or upset or nonconformist were picked up uniformly and concentrated on one planet, you'd get a – almost an ungovernable situation. Which I think rather tends to explain maybe what this is all about. I've seen other planets go nutty, but only when they were in external stress of great magnitude, otherwise they were rather peaceful. The days before the Helatrobust Implants on some of the planets attacked by those people, you couldn't maintain a government. It was everything going to pieces all the time. But that's an interesting question.

All right. What degree of influence is exerted against this planet then? Now, astrologists may have something – the astrologists may have something in their favor when you realize that these planets swinging closer to Earth would be easier to travel – would make it easier to travel to Earth, and further from Earth you'd have less traffic or less this or that, and so you'd have less things happening on Earth, don't you see. The proximity of planets, combinations of planets or that sort of thing, maybe just to the degree of the interspatial relationships of the thing and so on – maybe this has some influence on the situation, I wouldn't know. I'm just discussing here points.

Now, here's another point. Where do we sit? I think between thee and me, that's the point we're interested in. Yeah, well, they're maybe counting on an atomic war wiping out space opera and so forth. Space probes already may have excited their curiosity, there may be some purpose in this, but that they took no action when the first space probes passed them either says they're back of space probing or says some other explanation exists for that, so we can neglect all that. What is the – what is the role which we occupy in this? This is very, very, very interesting.

Now, that I release this might be a source of great worry to you. But remember, it's been in a book, one of the books carefully seized by the Fools and Druggists – the Fools and Drug Addicts. [laughter] That's the new name. Ah, that's a good name, isn't it? The Fools and Drug Addicts. Anyway – was *What to Audit*, and the between lives area are described in the book *What to Audit*. This is not unknown. *What to Audit* is many, many years old. It's been kicking around for a long time, been available to almost anybody and look, nothing's hap-

pened. In other words, the information has already been released when the publicity on the subject of Dianetics was at a much higher pitch than it is on the subject of Scientology. So, what is this? If we really started to run with the ball and so forth, we expect a couple of meat bodies in the usual white jumper that comes along with the space opera (except those guys by the way wear khaki – it's an odd-looking uniform), we expect them to appear on the front doorsteps and say, "Are you a Scientologist? Well, there's the spaceship," and they take you up and throw you in the can in – at Pluto, or something. Is this a kind of action here that we might expect?

Or is it a situation where we are no threat to them? It'll all sort of pass away? Or are they in a state where this covert action, going forward for so many years, would tolerate almost anything before they would disclose themselves? Or do they count absolutely on the exact camouflage which we have? We are ridiculed. That's our camouflage. I should think – I should think if anybody was in the know or any liaison line existed between these two systems... Maybe Kennedy and other presidents find this out the moment they step in the White House, you know, maybe that's what makes them look so old in two or three years, the way they cave in. Maybe they find out, "Well, you boys are slaves, you see and..."

No, I don't think anything like that happens. But supposing – supposing you did get a liaison line between this society and them, what would be their best reports on us? Oh, "fraudulent bunch of quacks," "the space opera science fictioneers," "bums." The very best authorities, the AMA, the Fools and Drug Addicts, the newspapers, which is where they get their news, radio broadcasts, television broadcasts, all forms of news, represent us as being totally unimportant, ridiculous and so forth. I think they could have all of our books sitting on a desk up there right this minute and laugh themselves silly, without a bit of worry about the whole thing. They'd certainly not blow the show for it. And they'd have to blow the show, you understand. They'd have to appear. Not covertly. You don't bring spaceships down in a DEW line-monitored society, privately. Must be getting very hard for these characters to deliver the goods these days. We're past the radar screens, and that sort of thing.

I think they could be sitting there with the whole library in front of them and they wouldn't have any impulse to do anything. They'd say, "Well, a few of them and so on, and it's not important and so forth and you wouldn't really want to do that, and after all we never have done anything like this and besides, the atomic war is coming right up. And there's no danger from these people because they're a bunch of frauds anyway. There's always some madman, you know, gets some kind of an idea like this, and it all passes away and so forth. Look at the Buddhist. We let him conquer three quarters of Asia, and he was trying to end this life-death cycle and keep from coming through our carefully maintained plant, and he never made it. Never did anything. So there's your precedent. Nothing happened. Nothing happened." No, nothing happened, but I was standing on their landing stage the other day. Nothing happened.

The funny part of it is, is a lot of us have friends. That's interesting, too. And if you have to work this hard to keep somebody aberrated, and working this hard you still aren't successful in preventing a breakthrough the way we have made in this society – in spite of all of the cockeyed, contrary propaganda lies and nonsense which are leveled at this society, we are making progress. And if this continues, we will make progress all the way. We're a polite

gathering, and it is no time to indulge in threats or violence or anything like that, so I won't describe any future plans with relationship to these people.

But I think the one thing they must be afraid of is having their planet rolled. Which of course is the one thing that will happen to them! Anyhow – [laughter] the situation – the situation is much more favorable to us. It shows that aberration is very difficult to maintain. It shows that it's being actively maintained. As far as the validity of this and the possession of one of these series of implants in your pc is concerned, I'll vouch for it. You may not be able to run it, but it's there. You can certainly cut a swath out of the back end of it, that stops the thing. But to run somebody through it before he's got the track neated up, is impossible.

So look at what we got here. We're going along our own way. The first thing we ought to do is give some attention to preventing further implantations of Scientologists. I've already given you a program by which this can be done.

Your next action on the thing is dispose of them. And I can see tomorrow, I can see tomorrow – the Chinee, he appear on landing stage to go through his false death and he hear words, thought-wave as follows: "Be on Earth. Support your local Scientologist." [laughter] "There is no further reason to upset you this time, you've been a good boy." And show him an "S" and double triangle, and there he goes. [laughter, laughs]

Actually you'd only have to do this for two or three hundred years, and Earth would start to go Clear on its own. Because it wasn't getting this continuous assistance. The only other source of action is the psychiatrist with his prefrontal lobotomy and his transorbital schizophrenia. And this bloke and his avidity for doing everybody in, if you just left – you know, if you just leave a psycho alone, why he'll come out of it. But you've got to leave him alone, got to let him have a rest. That's the best treatment for psychosis: don't do anything with a psychotic, you see.

Well, I think all of a sudden through finding the worst news, we also, not Pollyannishly find some good news, but actually find the answer to our problem. As far as the clearing of this planet is concerned, that is the easiest end of it. The hardest end of it is right now, right here and so forth.

Now, how can you run this incident? That must be burning through your wits right now. Well, what you do is get your GPMs out of the road – they're the only thing you can't scan through – and get your basics on this type of incident. If you run those two things, then the incident can be scanned. And we already have the tools by which the incident can be run. The only thing you've got to do is make sure that your pc gets lots of TA action in a session, and very shortly, no matter if you ran implants or didn't run implants or something like this, they will be jumping up there ready to be run. And the fact that they are – and this gave me a bad turn for a day or two – is I thought, "Are all the things I have run simply jammed into this and have I been running them at a wrong point in time?" No, because they've been properly dated, I've been running them at a right point in time, even though they were then jammed in this particular incident. I've been running them out of the right. And I found out that not all of them had been restimulated there. In fact, a very small portion of them had been restimulated there, just to make it impossible to scan through the thing.

But you run down GPMs, you date them on the time track – you're running them at that time on the time track, you're not running them out of the group, see. Don't worry about that. But sometimes a pc will give you a date. Now we're dating years ago, and their dating are years into the future. These two dates do not conflict. Their dates are wrong, our dates are right. So redating gives you – of any incident – strips it out of this, so any time you find an engram properly dated on the pc, you're away. See?

The amount of false track – at first I blanched. I thought the amount of false track I have must be fabulous. And I tried to get away – rid of all the discreditable incidents by saying they were simply false track. And then I had to run out all the invalidations because they were my own track. I thought, "Well, this is a wonderful way out of it, there's that time when I sat incapacitated for a long period of time and didn't feel strong anymore and so on – that was obviously just false track." No, no, it happened to be real. There's very little unreal incident on the track. Very little unreal incident. When you finally get something durationed exactly and right, you can tell whether or not it's one of these types of implants. But the track is not the same track. It's corny track. It's... there's something goofy with it. The pictures you run out of the pc by and large are the actual pictures of the pc.

And when you can't run pictures on the pc you've got a wrong date or a wrong duration. So if you get a right date and a right duration, you can run the picture, and the picture that can be run that way turns out to be what it is. It turns out to be a real picture or a bad picture. Only the pc can tell you if you've got the right date and the right duration.

So simply by carrying on with R3R without the slightest change, carrying on with R3N without the slightest change, you then get the time track into the kind of shape that a pc perforce could actually scan through one of these implants no matter what type or part of his time track had been. Takes a less number of hours than you would think. You've got the weapons with which to do it.

You get the basic series of implants off of any chain of implants, that is to say you get the basics on these things out, and you'll find very rapidly and very readily that the rest of them tend to fall away. And they desensitize. For instance, if you get the first two items – let's say we've got the same items firing twelve times in a row, and if you got the first two fires clean, the rest of them won't even click. Isn't that interesting? Whereas if you got the twelfth one, it takes you about fifteen minutes to get all the rocket reads of it off and then you get the eleventh one, you've got all the rocket reads to take off of it and so forth. In other words, we've got the mechanism which turns the time track right side to, and it takes the charge out of the place where it counts.

We've got these various mechanisms solved. In other words, what we know already can put somebody's time track in shape so that the person eventually can run straight through one of these incidents, and damn the torpedoes. In fact without having all of my time track beautifully cleaned up, I was playing tag with one of these things my last session, and I was terribly intrigued by the fact that I had become a bit contemptuous of it. I have moved around, I know what it is, it's been cross-dated – it suddenly occurred to me, "All right, so if I find I can't scan through something here, I'll just redate it." And, sure enough, it disappears on the back track the second you do so. So you could probably take it from the year zero, and redate

everything that appeared on the screen in front of the pc and throw his time track back, and the next thing you know the thing would be gone as an incident. Particularly if you were running basic on the incident.

You can run the beginning of it off selectively, you can run the end of it off selectively – the last (quote) hundred days (unquote), the first fifteen days (unquote) – without running the pc through any of his own time track restimulation. So there's many ways this thing can be handled. We're over the hump on this situation. But this thing must exist pretty well as a present time problem for every pc audited. He must be afraid of death; he must be trying to keep his body from getting sick and disappearing, simply and solely because he doesn't want an implant at the end of this life.

All right, if you were to solve that problem by stripping out his compulsion to appear in the implant stage and tell him to appear someplace else, you've probably solved a present time problem of great magnitude on the part of the pc. The truth never hurts. It's only lies that aberrate.

The very fact that this is a prison planet, that it is being monitored this carefully right this minute – right this instant, as I'm talking here, some Joe off this planet has appeared on that landing stage and is being told how he just got through an airplane crash, whereas the guy probably died of pneumonia. See? Right this minute, you see. And this instant, another guy did. In other words, this is a continuing situation that's going on and on and on and on and on. Gives you an understanding of what's happening.

We couldn't have run them in yesteryear; we can run them today. The best answer is to first put the pc in shape so that he can run engrams and GPMs by making sure you can get good tone arm action running those things on the pc. The next thing to do is to run engrams and run implants, GPMs on the pc, until he can go over his track rather comfortably and he can come on back on the backtrack and pick up this other type of time dislocation implant, scan through those things and knock them out. In other words, we've got it made.

They've been looking down the backs of our necks and we didn't know it, for thousands of years. Each one of us as a person and as a society as a whole. And I just want to point out to you that the other day, I was looking down the back of theirs.

Thank you very much.

ARC BREAKS AND THE COMM CYCLE

A lecture given on 24 July 1963

Thank you.

Well, you're going to get some demonstrations before we're much older. And I'm grooving in Model Session a little bit better. Couple little bugs these days in Model Session.

"Do you agree that's clean?" can cause an ARC break. What you want to communicate to the pc is that did the pc have anything to say about it? You, after all, have asked a question, and you inform him of the state of the needle and ask him if he's got anything he wants to say about it. But I haven't quite got the pat wording for that. But it's interesting that the two, three little changes that – they're just little refinements make it easier on the auditor.

We're using mostly the 3N Model Session and in actual fact have not used the old, original, long-drawn-out beginning ruds-end ruds Model Session for some time. And it's a good training ground, maybe, but in actual fact, the since mid ruds are enormously better. Since mid ruds and pull missed withholds are enormously better than any beginning rudiments we ever had. And an ARC break assessment at the end of session, just whether there's been an ARC break or not, is enormously superior to any end rudiments we ever had. Don't you see? So you just clean every line of it. You don't do an assessment by elimination. Just, if you got a tick, find out what it is. And just clean that up, and your pc comes up shining.

So it actually makes Model Session pretty easy to do, but it's still a very precise activity. We've now got the body of the session, we end the body of the session, you know? Goals and gains, all that sort of thing. Everything is there – you know, we adjust the pc's chair and ask if it's all right to audit in the room and get a can squeeze and put in the R-factor and start the session, you know? Same thing. Get the goals and roll right on through. Get the pc's goals, and... pc's needle's a bit agitated, your tone arm is higher than it was the last session, we put in our since mid ruds and see if there's any missed withholds, and carry right on through to the – into the body of the session, and do whatever we've got to do. Come right on up to the end of the body of the session and chatter with him a little bit before we tell him that's the end of the body of the session – that's very informal but still there. Then we get the pc's... ARC break assessment – usually omitted, if the session's quite happy and the pc has had a big win in the session; we certainly don't harass him with an ARC break assessment.

And then we take our goals, and we take up each goal. I notice some not quite doing that, maybe. And actually, those are written on the auditor's report, diagonally across the goal. See, we just write "yes," you know, or "maybe," see, across each goal. We don't write down

another section here that says whether or not he made his goals, see? "To have a good session": Well, we give him that goal, you know – did he make it? He says yes, we write "yes" diagonally across that top there, see? So we can see what his goals and gains were just by looking at that one block. And it's easy to review, see?

When he's got all that, we don't keep pestering him; we just read it to him, did he make them or didn't he make them? Then we thank him for making his goals in this session, or if he only made part of them, why, "Thank you for making some of your goals in this session; I'm sorry you didn't make all of them." Then we ask him for his gains, and we take down the gains. And we don't keep bleeding gains. We don't keep asking the question "Did you make any gains for the session?" We just take what he's got, see? We make sure that he's answered it to his satisfaction – and remember he's pretty foggy, so sometimes that's a little difficult to get closed out. You're still trying to end the session, he's still trying to give you gains, you know? Long time to answer the question or something like that. Well, let him answer it to his satisfaction, but don't you keep pounding with the question about gains for the session. You understand? You can over-ask him, see? And next thing you know, he's giving imaginary gains that he never heard of.

When he's got those you say, "Thank you for making these gains in this session," or, "Thank you for making some gains in this session; I'm sorry you didn't make all of them." And – "Sorry you didn't make more gains," rather – and close that out.

And then we just get a can squeeze test, run any Havingness that we have to run if the can squeeze test was less than the beginning of the session, and simply ask him, "Is there anything you want to say before we end the session?" Let him say it. Then we say, "Is it all right with you if I end the session now?" and get a yes on that and we just end the session. That's it. And "Tell me I'm no longer auditing you."

All of these various lines we've had before – those little courtesy lines are in there. The only additional ones: thanking him for his goals, then thanking him for his gains. And that is the form of a Model Session these days. But it still requires a precision, don't you see? It is still a Model Session and its wording is very fixed for each one of these points.

Before I gave you a demonstration of this Model Session brought up-to-date, however, I wanted to get that business of what do you say to a pc? What is exactly the best thing to say, you know? "That didn't read." "Do you agree that that is clean?" – that type of approach can cause ARC breaks.

I myself have felt like saying, "Well, I don't have to agree that it's clean. To hell with it!" you know? [laughs] "What are you trying to do, force me to say there are no more answers on this question, 'In the last trillion trillion years is there anything you have suppressed?' Hell, I know it can't be clean. It's clean for the purposes of the session, maybe, but sure isn't clean!" That's why, when you heard a demonstration I was giving on that tape a short time ago, I was slipping that. You saw I wasn't using it very much, and fumbling around with it. I was still trying to find a proper wording. Soon as I get that taped, why, I'll give you this new one. It's almost exactly the same one as you're using now; I'm just giving you these little refinements. All refinements these days are just in the direction of causing less ARC breaks and getting more auditing done.

The reason you have rough needles, however, has nothing to do with your Model Session or your rudiments or anything else. The reason you have rough needles is you miss on TR 2 or TR 4. You miss TR 2 and TR 4 and you got a rough needle. That's it – bang. Just like that. Comes back to auditing cycle.

If an auditor's pc has a clean needle consistently, you know that this pc is either phenomenal or this auditor has very, very good TR 2 and TR 4 – very good TR 2 and TR 4, see? And if pc has a rough needle, not all the rudiments in the world will put it together if the auditor's TR 2 and TR 4 are for the birds. See? That's a big point. That's a big point.

Now, I invite you sometime to just watch this. Any auditor will have this happen to him. It happens about once a session. Sometime in the session you got a clean needle, it's flowing along here very neatly and very nicely and smoothly – clean needle, everything going fine – and all of a sudden you got a dirty needle. You immediately assume pc has a missed withhold. If you were to take a tape of your auditing session, you would find out very rapidly that your TR 2 went out or the pc originated and you did something about it. Something happened there between TR 2 and TR 4, and immediately your needle was rough.

Be very revelatory to you if you had a tape of the needle – we're trying to accomplish this technically, a very hard problem – if you had a tape of your needle in your session and you could play it back sometime, you'd learn a lot. And it's quite intriguing. And you say, "What the hell gets into me?" you know?

Pc said, "I had an ache."

"Oh yes, where was it? Oh yeah, hm-mm? Have anything to do with the process we were running?" Dirty needle. Just like that. Bang-bang!

"Uh, well, I feel better now."

"Well, you don't have to worry about that. We'll get you into another..." [laughter]

But you watch the coordination between auditing cycle and dirty and clean needles, and you're going to be fascinated! And whenever you look around and you see an awful lot of pcs have dirty needles, you look around, you'll see an awful lot of auditors have dirty TR 2 and TR 4. You clean up the TR 2 and TR 4 and you'll clean up more needles than you can shake a stick at. It isn't the significance of it, you see; it's the calm flow of the auditing cycle.

Well, I didn't come in here to give you a lecture on this today. I'm going to give you a lecture on the subject of ARC breaks, so I might as well start this lecture.

This is what?

Audience: July 24th.

Twenty-four July, AD 13, Saint Hill Special Briefing Course. And here is a lecture on the subject of ARC break assessments – one which you need. You need. You need this worse than you think. ARC break assessments.

Now, I've just been rattling along here and talking about sessioning in general, which is of course a very applicable part of this lecture. But you normally consider a dirty needle,

you see, as a withhold or something that the pc has done. And you seldom look at it as something that the auditor has done.

Well, let me point out to you that there are two communication cycles in an auditing cycle – two communication cycles in an auditing cycle – and either one of those two communication cycles can be active.

Now, number one is auditor to pc. Number two is pc to auditor. Now, either of those can operate independently. And one of those cycles goes this way: "Do fish swim?" see, and the pc hears it and understands it, see? And that is simply cause, distance, effect. So that's a communication cycle, see? Cause, distance, effect.

Now, pc says, "Yes," and auditor hears it and understands it. Now, that's cause, distance, effect.

Now, you're used to all this, of course, but you probably haven't looked at it in the degree of separateness which it deserves, since either one of them can exist independent of the other one, and both of those communication cycles have to be perfect or very acceptable before you have an auditing cycle. An auditing cycle is not made up, then, of auditor command, pc's reply, auditor's acknowledgment, see? That is a very, very loose look at an auditing cycle.

An auditing cycle can exist, frankly, on either of these independently. The pc doesn't have to say a thing and yet be perfectly satisfied. Do you see – a communication can exist from the auditor to the pc.

What's your R-factor? That's a communication from the auditor to the pc, isn't it? Pc understands it. You ever hear a pc say very much to an R-factor? He doesn't even have to signify he's heard it. There's nothing in the books that says he did. But he has to understand it. He doesn't have to say anything. "Okay, all right. Well, I agree that is the R-factor" – you don't expect the pc to say that, see?

Similarly, you're going along in an auditing session, the pc suddenly says, "Hey! I just realized that dirigibles aren't airplanes, see? You know, it's a fact!" And you haven't even been auditing dirigibles or airplanes or anything else. This very often takes you by surprise. It can be close or far from the subject of the auditing session – that has nothing to do with it – but it's an independent communication cycle. An independent communication cycle.

Now, you're so cheerful on the subject of getting your TR 2 in, just right, in answer to the TR 4 that you don't sometimes look at the fact that TR 4 doesn't depend on TR 2, not even vaguely. That's why it's TR 4. It's up – up numbered. What is this?

Do you know that some of the most successful origin handling I've ever done had no acknowledgment connected with them. Although you can say the auditor is supposed to understand and acknowledge the thing – receive, understand and acknowledge the communication, all that sort of thing – you can go into that kind of thing and try to explain what this is; in actual fact, look at this in its most naked form. This is just simply a single communication cycle, originated by the pc and received and understood by the auditor. And if you look at that, not with any tricks or gimmicks around it, all will suddenly make sense. Just as the auditor is emanating and originating his auditing cycle as a one-way communication in its first step, and just as an auditor can originate things which the pc doesn't have to respond to at all,

so can you get the reverse thing going in a session – which is to say, the pc says something. And that's a communication cycle. And the only thing you're trying to do is signify that it exists. You're not trying to do TR 2 or anything else. I mean, the pc originates, he says, "Dirigibles are not airplanes." He's had a cognition of some kind or another. One of the ways to knock him off his base is to give him a very artificial TR 2. Did you ever have an origin knocked off its base by having the auditor say "Very good. Thank you?" – get a very artificial piece of stuff back in your teeth. You've just said something that was important to you.

Very often in auditing I'll handle an origin with a facial expression or a head nod, because it's a one-way cycle. And only a ghost of the thing the other way needs go, and actually needn't really go at all. If you're really good at projecting your think tank, you could sit there with the face of a wooden Indian and do a perfect TR 4.

I know that sounds utterly incredible. The way not to handle a TR 4 is to make it obvious that you haven't understood and that you have received the communication. "Thank-you." [speaks in a robotic manner]

"I suddenly – I suddenly realize," the pc says, "I suddenly realize – I suddenly realize my migraine headache's gone! I had it for years! Gone! Hey, what do you know! Ha! It's gone! Gone!"

[in a robotic manner:] "Thank you." [laughter]

What the auditor has done in that particular regard is make a mistake of thinking a pc runs a reverse auditing cycle. See, he thinks the pc is now going to audit him. [laughter] The point here is you audit any little kid on "Touch that table" or "Touch that chair" for a little while, and nearly all of them will suddenly start giving the command to you. They get their flow going so far, and you're a fool if you don't do them, too. And you touch the table and touch the chair, and the kid's all satisfied and so forth. And they're perfectly willing for your next command, see? It's quite a game they play. They go into a very complete duplication of the auditing session. A good auditor of children and so on is quite well aware of this and doesn't refuse to execute the auditing command. It throws a kid completely out of session. Kid is overwhelmed. That's the kid's effort to be right, don't you see?

All right. But in handling an origin, the pc has not started to audit the auditor. That's a different kettle of fish. The pc doesn't expect anything but a comprehension. That's all the pc expects.

Now, how do you signify a comprehension? Well, I know your telepathy is kind of busted; it's been busted for quite a while. I know mine has been, to the degree that it might be. I sometimes look back at what telepathy once was, and a guy is two thousand yards away and you hear all of his thoughts with a crash, don't you see? That's OT stuff. You can also have obsessive telepathy where you hear everybody all the time. This is sort of out of control. But we're not asking for anything that is that marvelous. We're asking for pure and simple, an ordinary response to a communication.

Now, how do you signify that you comprehended? Until you can answer that question well – till you can answer that question well and pleasantly – to yourself, see – I mean, not pleasantly but satisfactorily.

Well, you're sitting there right now. How are you "comprehending" to me that you heard what I said and understand it? Yeah, I look at your faces and you're all doing it beautifully. [laughter] See? Perfect.

Now, that is an origin; handling of. And that's all there is to handling an origin. Pc says something and you understand it. Now, we say "and acknowledge it," but we've gone too far because we're tending to put it in a thing. We let the pc know we've understood it. For instance, once in a while I'll just laugh like hell, see, you know? Pc has said something that's very funny to the pc, you know, and seems funny to me (I won't laugh if I don't think it's funny to me; I won't corn up the emotions on it), and I'll just laugh, you know. I'll say... Pc's perfectly satisfied. That's because there's no auditing cycle involved. That's just a communication cycle. That's all there is to it, see?

Now, there are a bunch of processes which require no answer from the pc but do require a response from the pc of some kind or another. But they are Concept Processes – the old Concept Processes: "Get the idea of..." Well, the pc can sit there and get the idea and never really say "Yes, I..." No, nothing to the auditor. You know he's done it. Well, how did you know he's done it? Oh, you look at his breathing and that sort of thing, you take a look at him and so on.

You get into this trouble in R3R. How do you know the pc has moved to the beginning of the incident? See, that's an interesting little hole. Because you didn't say "Move to the beginning of the incident at approximately... and tell me when you get there."

In the first place, that would be very sour, because it's two auditing commands, they're already complicated, he's in too much trouble already; and once in a while, any auditor will get dopey and have moved the pc to the beginning of the incident and then not move him through it. You know, forget. The pc will sit there for a while, finally look at you kind of hostilely and say, "Well, when are you going to move me through the rest of the incident, you knucklehead?" Any auditor is liable to do this, because he's all busy with his computation of where the beginning of the incident is and how many time it was and so forth. And the pc's been taking quite a while, let us say, to get to the beginning of the incident. And so he moves him to the beginning of the incident and then all of a sudden wakes up to realize at last that he hasn't moved him through the incident.

This can happen – not to you just once or twice because you're new at it; this will probably continue to happen to you, embarrassedly, now and then, from here on out. Because you've got an incident that's a trillion years long, or something stupid like this. And the pc's at the end of the thing and has had an awful time trying to find the beginning of it anyhow. And you say, "Move to the beginning of the incident at approximately wumpty-wump-bump trillion years ago." And you decide, "Well, while he's moving to the beginning of the incident I'll just catch up on my note of what he's just told me, because I didn't want to slow him down," you see? And you're busy writing and writing. You get interested in what you're writing, you know? [laughter, laughs]

Well, actually, the pc wouldn't be upset with you if he didn't notice that your attention was on something else rather than following through the auditing command. Pc usually for-

gives this; doesn't cause any ARC break. But ordinarily, you... pc says, "Well, I'm there. So what?"

And you say, "Oh! Uh-ho-hah-ho. Oh." [laughter, laughs] The exact auditing command that follows that, of course, is "Move through the incident to a point (duration time) later." That's the exact command that should be given him at that moment. And he'll go ahead and happily carry this out.

Well, this is a point where, if you're on the ball, you say, "Move to the beginning of the incident" and if you keep your eye on your meter it'll flick sooner or later. You don't have to ask him "Are you there?" That's terribly bad form. You want to ask him "What are you looking at?"

"Well, so-and-so and so-and-so." And I wouldn't spend much time asking him what he was looking at either. As soon as I had any inkling that he was at the beginning of the incident I'd move him on through, because you can't make any real mistakes there anyway.

But the point I'm making here is the pc doesn't have to tell you he's at the beginning of the incident; he simply executes the auditing command. Causes a little bit of embarrassment sometimes, when you don't realize that he's executed the auditing command. But it is a communication cycle. It has taken place. The auditor said something, the pc's done it. That's all you expect. That's it.

All right. Now, the pc says something. It's a communication cycle. He's, not auditing you. It must be, therefore, a communication cycle. He originates see? And he originates something to you, and you receive it and understand it: that is a communication cycle. Communication cycle complete, right there. Now, to make it an originated cycle, you should signify to him in some tiny fashion that you have received it and understood it.

Now, if you try to phony this up and he says, "*Eugulala blou-uboog*," and you say, "Hm-mm, hm-mm, hm-mm," and you don't know what the hell he's talking about, there is some mystic influence sets in at this point which you will see go on the meter. He knows damn well you didn't understand that – half the time because he didn't.

Now, the auditor who specializes in this phrase should be stonewalled: "I just don't understand what you said," see? "I didn't understand you." "I don't understand what you are saying." "Don't understand." In the first place, that's lousy – a lousy approach – from the basis that it uses a very, very powerful word. Understand is the crossroads of A, R and C. And you say "don't understand," you're just asking at once for a complete ARC break. But more importantly, you have said to the pc to communicate the same thing again.

If you'll notice, he said, "I have a pain in my back."

And you say, "I just don't understand what you said."

And the pc will only say, "I have a pain in my back."

And you say, "I don't understand that."

And he will say, "I have a pain in my back!" We're all of a sudden seeing the buildup of the ARC break, see?

And you say, "I just don't understand that."

"I have a pain in my back!!"

You can build this up. But do you notice that the pc is saying the same words over and over and over? It's a peculiarity of Homo sap. If you indicate that you don't understand what he's talking about, he says the same thing again. He says the exact same thing again. He never varies it. What you want him to do is vary the explanation. What you're asking him to do is to help you get this, if he's got to say something more. What you want to indicate to him is he should tell you a little more broadly what he is talking about so that you can get a very good grasp of it. And if you are very clever and there's no substitute for cleverness; you can't give anybody a pat phrase with it because they vary all the time – if you're very clever, he will explain it to you in a half a dozen different ways. And then he understands it and so do you. But it's mainly you that's got to understand it.

Now here, basically and elementarily, we get the basis of an ARC break. I don't care what kind of charge is bypassed, the thing is a bunged up communication cycle, whatever else it is, see? It's affinity, reality, communication – these things are all out. It's a bunged up communication cycle, but what in it is bunged up? Detected and understood – those are what's bunged up in it.

How can you have a communication cycle where the communication is not fully detected and is not understood? How can you have one? It isn't a communication cycle, because the communication cycle is cause, distance, effect, with duplication occurring at the effect-point of the cause-point. That's a very pure, accurate definition. Not over all the years has there been any shift of that.

But look at this. Are you going to call this a communication cycle: cause, distance, altered effect, no comprehension? You said, "Good morning," and she thought you insulted her. How did that come about? Well, it just came about by the nonexistence of a communication cycle. It was imperfectly detected and it was not understood.

Now, of course, it's not understood because it's imperfectly detected. I mean, how much more elementary can we get? Somebody rolls a lollipop in your direction, how can you detect what it is if you don't receive it? Oh yes, it can arrive within four feet of you, and you can look out there and see a lollipop. Then you could detect it without receiving it, which is another thing. This would also be an ARC breaky situation. It's detected, but you didn't receive it.

Usually you'll find TR 4 breaks down at this point. It's detected, but not received. Pc says, "I don't – I-I-I don't think you have to keep – keep the session going much longer; I feel fine."

You say, "Well, we're going – we're going to keep it going as long as is necessary to fill in this particular period." You detected he said something, but you didn't receive it. You've said you didn't receive it because you didn't do anything about it. You said it should be something else before it arrived at you, and you have therefore busted down the communication line between the pc and yourself

Now, that was a very pleasant origin, wasn't it? Do you know that you could so work on that origin that you would have that pc – I don't care what pc, or how calm this pc normally is or how splendid and pleasant this pc is – you could get that pc into an absolute screaming fit, just on that, by just continuing that. Just continue it and continue it, and if you ever want to see an ARC break, man, just rig one of these things so that you don't receive what the pc says. And that can be done to any pc. Some pcs are really a bit below spitting in your face, but they just – you can just see them go *blyaaahhh*. And they just sort of pass out right where they sit. But it produces a fantastic effect. A fantastic effect.

Now, an auditor must realize that that is a primary effect, and that is a primary cause of ARC break. That is not one of the causes of ARC break. That is your textbook, perfect example. From the pc's point of view, there is cause, and there's distance; the distance is not covered, and the communication cycle does not complete. And that's it. That's it.

I don't care what pc you've got, you can reduce a pc to a screaming fit, no matter what this pc has said. You can just get the pc gibbering. A pc will just be shaking and exhausted in a very short space of time. And that's an ARC break. Well, why is it an ARC break? That's because both A, R and C are out. The combination of A, R and C equals understanding, and the understanding is out.

The intention is cause, distance, effect, and the progress of that cycle is prevented so that the communication is actually not fully detected. See? Not fully detected. This is a very, very interesting point in ARC breaks. That forms a woof and a warp of all ARC breaks. Not fully detected – partially detected but not fully detected. Nobody's going to ARC break going out here and yelling at a rock. You could go out here and yell at a rock all morning. You can say, "Oh rock, I hate thee," or "Oh rock, whither dost thou comest?" – anything you want to say – and you will go out and yell at the rock and talk at the rock and speak at the rock and so forth, but your expectancy of what's going to happen at the rock never does get quite up to expecting the rock to give you a TR 2.

So therefore, your estimate of the detection is not at fault. The rock isn't going to detect the communication to it, so you then don't expect anything to happen in the communication cycle, so therefore you do not ARC break. See?

Ah, but the pc is under a very, very definite detection cycle. The pc expects the auditor to detect the communication from the pc and understand it. And when that is thrown sideways – because understanding has entered into it, because detection has entered into it, because only partial detection or no detection has entered into it, in spite of the expectancy of its being detected – you can reduce a pc to an absolute shaking mess of jelly.

I'm not kidding you now. I see from your silence that you're either accepting this as too grim to confront, or you think I may be exaggerating it. This is not so. This is not so.

You can take the most common statement, such as "I feel pretty good now," refuse to detect what the pc is saying, don't duplicate it (don't understand it, in other words), and keep giving the pc evidence that you haven't understood it, and have that pc – I don't care how calm, cool and collected that pc has always suspected himself – in utter amazement at having been a shuddering mess of jelly, because he eventually will start screaming. "But I was just trying to tell you I feel perfectly good now," see? And it goes up, up, up, up, up, scream,

scream, scream, and he'll then break downscale. You can see him go down the scale. "I was just trying to tell you...!" And he'll be crying, you know?

He gets on the same line – the stuck flow of his communication on the thing, and he can't get it through, he tries everything under God's green earth to get it through, and eventually he starts giving up and you can see his whole emotional tone scale follow this, then.

Well, that is a basic ARC break. That's fundamental. Now, you expect me to tell you there are many other kinds of ARC breaks, but there are no other kinds of ARC breaks. These mechanisms are all based on the communication cycle.

I don't care what the devil happens with the rest of the bank, the whole definition of bypassed charge is "partially detected." Now, it wouldn't become bypassed charge unless it were at least slightly detected. You understand? Somebody had to drag a magnet within a few feet of it. It had to be stirred up one way or the other for the thing. But that is a communication line which begins.

Going to restimulate an engram in the session. Let's take this as a bypassed charge source, see? The auditor does this, knuckleheadedly.

You want to be careful in R3R, in selecting incidents, using things like "the first incident," "the earliest incident." Cut your throat, man! What are you talking about? You want "an earlier" incident, "the next" incident, not "first" and "earliest."

Why? What are you trying to do? Life's so dull you have to have an ARC break? Well, how are you going to get this ARC break? The pc can't give you the earliest incident on the chain but could give you the earlier incident than the one you just had. But you ask him for the earliest incident and you will kick in some earlier incident which he then doesn't reach. So, he now partially detects. And you have partially detected. Both of you, now, are guilty of partial detection of a started communication. And somewhere down deep it follows the same cycle as a communication cycle, right there – bang-bang-bang. It'll go all to flinders, just like that – bang-bang-bang. The more you scrape it up and the less you detect it, the more ARC break you're going to have. And that's all there is to it.

If you considered the time track a series of mines – nah, I shouldn't do this; some of you girls are timid enough when it comes to approaching some of these things. But let me give you this anyway. Supposing we consider it a bunch of mines which were activated magnetically. All you had to do was drag a magnet somewhere near them and they'd explode, see? And you want mine number four, and you're all set to sit on it and pull its teeth and not let it explode, see? So you throw a magnet down to mine number eight and then start to prevent mine number four from exploding – and you wonder what that shattering roar is! Well, you see, you just miscalculated on what one you were going to explode.

Now, a time track isn't quite that dramatic, but it gives you an example, see? You want mine number four, so you activate mine number eight. Now, what in actual fact is that?

Well, it's a bum origin as far as the auditor is concerned, but actually, the communication cycle is reverse end to. Somebody has told mine number eight to speak, accidentally. And mine number eight speaks, and nobody detects it, quite. See, it's partially detected. But it is activated and being partially detected now, will follow that same incomplete communica-

tion cycle. Nobody understands it, see? It isn't that that has life in it which is capable of doing that at all. It's just that a communication cycle, once begun, must go through. And if there is any type of thing that you want...

A big truism – a big truism: A communication cycle once begun must go through. If that communication cycle isn't permitted to go through, there will be upset somewhere, sometime, someplace.

In fact, most of the difficulties of mankind, if you wanted to lay them out, are simply begun communication cycles which are not then detected. You know, they're only partially detected, let us say. There it is, see?

Let me give you an idea. The President of the United States says, "I want all of you bums and all of the indigent and the poor and the pauperized characters – I want all of you to write me a letter and tell me exactly what I can do to help you personally, individually and personally." Gluck! Nobody would see in this the eventual revolution. Do you see what's going to happen? The guy's got no technology for handling the communication cycle at all. To say something like that would be weird. And yet the politician in a democratic country has always got this as his stock in trade. He's a glad-hander tell-me Joe, you know – this kind of thing. Eventually it starts exploding in his face. We are very adventurous in that I go ahead and do something like that.

Remember, there's a slight difference here. Slight difference here: You know how to catch the ball. We can catch the ball, we know the mechanics of this sort of thing, and generally the communication cycle doesn't have that as a source. I mean, it isn't that communication cycle that's at fault. It will have been somebody audited somebody, and they got into an ARC break and they bypassed some charge, and then the person wouldn't admit that they had bypassed some charge, you see, on the pc, and then the pc gets more and more disturbed. And eventually they go to see somebody in the area, and eventually the HCO Sec. And then the HCO Sec tries to handle it one way or the other, but it misses there one way or the other. And it slides sideways and slips around and so forth, and eventually hear about it.

And once in a while I drop a ball on these, and I only know of one case extant right now where the ball has been dropped forever, as far as I'm concerned, because he got into the hands of a psychiatrist. Incomplete communication cycle was the immediate and direct cause of that particular action. He already, let us say – we know this – had a tremendous number of overts on the organization and everything was gone to hell, and he'd been in a mess for a long time, see? But a communication cycle – I didn't pay attention to it just as a communication cycle, just directly didn't. And the character sprung sideways, and there wasn't any way you could pick up the ball after that because there was a psychiatrist standing there. Haven't done anything to the guy – apparently some psychiatrist that doesn't use ice picks in the morning, only the afternoon. I only know one that's extant like that.

Well, that's a pretty good tribute to us, and it doesn't say, then, that the situation isn't dangerous merely because it's being handled. But look at this: It is a situation which is pretty doggone violent if it is not handled.

And if you're unaware of this... you realize that gunners and that sort of thing are always chucking around live ammunition, and they're not spooked about it at all. And you'll see

people that work in oil well districts blowing out oil wells and so forth: They're always walking around with a pint flask of nitroglycerin in their hip pocket. They just couldn't care less, don't you see? Well, why? Those guys don't die and get splattered all over the place all the time. They're handling very dangerous materials. They're just familiar with their material. They know what that material is, see?

Well, how would you like to be handling, on a totally unknowing basis, the way everybody else does in the community, see?

Have you heard any conversations amongst meat bodies lately? Have you? Have you? I'll give you an assignment some time: Go around to a tea break in a construction works and listen to them. That isn't so bad as a cocktail party. A cocktail party is armored, on this basis: They don't expect anybody to hear them, so it's never partially detected charge. But this becomes pretty idiotic, pretty idiotic. You just stand there and watch the number of dropped communication cycles. And you don't wonder at all after a while why these people tear each other's throats out all the time. They're always partially detecting that somebody has spoke. And of course they get a blowup.

You see that you can handle the dynamite of the reactive mind. This stuff, you know, is not very dangerous. I don't mean to minimize it, so on. Frankly not very dangerous. It requires understanding. It never has been very dangerous.

But look how desperate it has made practitioners of the past. Look how desperate it has made people. Look how desperate a problem it is and look how frightened people can get if the United States – whatever you call it – is appropriating sixteen billion bucks to let psychiatry figure out how to give quicker and faster prefrontal lobotomies to more people.

Oh, I tell you, man, they must be worried! That worry must be proportional – at least one third as much worry invested in that as they have invested in the Russian situation, because that's about the proportionate amounts of appropriation. I think that's fascinating. You mean, they're so worried about this problem, they're so worried about the mind, that they invest treasure to this extent? They must be frantic to put it in the hands of the people they put it in, too.

I don't exaggerate. If you'd talk to most psychiatrists yourself, or if you were to – if you were head of a committee or something like that and you called in two or three psychiatrists or something like that to get testimony from them as to how to handle the community mental health – if you were just an average citizen – you'd probably wind up with your eyes like saucers. Police listening to these fellows testify in courts, and that sort of thing, have become confirmed in the fact the psychiatrists are always crazier than the patients.

Well, look how desperate the situation must be if it's put into the hands of people who put up forward a mock-up of franticness to that degree, see? Let's just look up these coordinative factors, see?

Well, a psychiatrist, of course, is himself frantic. And if we didn't give him a hand to straighten out, he'll just never make it. And I don't think we'll ever help him.

Anyway, the point I'm making here is this factor of the ARC break. This factor of the explosive character of interpersonal relationship, this factor of explosive nature of social or

any other type of personal contact, is looked upon in quite another way by other people than yourselves. It's looked upon as just "*Huuhrh!* Everybody is dangerous," and "Everything is dangerous," and "Oh, my God," and it's all on an emergency basis, and "*Huuuhh!*" and figure-figure-figure, you know? It's fantastic.

Very few of you would say, "Well, you can't talk to him about that." Just show you that you've arrived someplace else, you see, than in that state of mind. Very few of you would be convinced you couldn't talk to anybody about anything. After you talk to them for a while you know you can handle the situation to some degree or another and so on.

Well, that's not the general state of mind with regard to this sort of thing in this society. "Talk to somebody about something? *Huuuhhh!*" See? "Impossible! *Hu-ooohh!* Dangerous!" What are these characters reacting to? They're reacting to a communication cycle. So the communication cycle is itself the most deadly thing, if mishandled, that interpersonal relationships has, and the most valuable if it can be handled. The reason you can't fish the ants out and straighten them up is because you can't talk to them.

Desperation enters in only when communication goes out. Just remember that. You only get desperate – you can look back on sessions you've given: the only times you've been worried and desperate and that sort of thing is when you actually had the communication cycle go out, one way or the other. You want to say to this pc, "What the hell is the matter with you?" See? "What's the matter with you? I mean, I'm asking you a perfectly simple question here, you know? And you poor sod! If you can't answer that question, get some tone arm action, you've just about had it, man!" You know? You know this, sitting there, you see, and you sit there and you get tied up in the situation.

After a while you find yourself kind of peeved with the pc. Pc isn't responding correctly. Then you get all right when you do get the pc at some level that the pc is responding all right with communication; you find out that, much to your red face, that you had eight wrong dates on the case and that's why the TA action wasn't moving – something like this. You get these things straightened out, you notice the situation evaporates.

In other words, your response to the pc ebbs and flows to the degree that you can put a communication between yourself and the aberration that's bothering him and straighten it out and see the evidence of its discharge. Don't ever think you worry about a case for any other reason. You don't. It's that basic thing. You're having an effect on the case, the case is responding and the case is coming along, and that is what you expect to have happen, and therefore that is happening and all is well. And when that ceases to happen, when your breakdown comes in, and you can't seem to reach this pc with an auditing command, you can't seem to reach this bank with a communication of any kind whatsoever, you can't seem to untangle this knot by speaking at it or into it, you start getting worried and you start getting upset. And that's when you as an auditor become upset, and that's when you as an auditor become worried about your pc. And it's off...

There's no reason for me to give you some pat answer, because there isn't a broad, pat answer to it, because cases have these various bugs and complications of which you're aware and which you get around eventually. But you look it over and try to find out what communication you're not getting home to the pc, and you as an auditor will feel better.

Now, if the pc is feeling like the devil, pc's feeling miserable about an auditing session or auditor, or something like that, you can just be sure that a – not *his* communication cycle; now, don't get this one awry. His... as an auditor, it's always your communication cycle that is awry, from your analysis of the thing. You want to improve something, you improve your communication cycle. But from a pc's point of view – a pc is very much the effect of very heavy and strong processes – and from the pc's point of view, a communication cycle is awry, but it can be awry in various ways.

It's awry. The communication cycle is awry. A communication has started, it hasn't been fully detected and it certainly hasn't been understood. And where a pc is going awry as a pc – you want happy pcs, you just listen to these little words and don't bother about anything else, and you just start figuring out exactly how you apply these to any case that you're auditing that you want to make a happier case one way or the other, and it'll work. And that is, some communication cycle has begun, it hasn't been detected – fully detected, you see; has to be slightly detected or it wouldn't be active – and it hasn't been understood. Now, if you put that in a nutshell as to the basis of low ARC or ARC breaks in pcs that you are auditing, you actually never need another line of anything. You need the mechanics of how to detect these things, you need a list of how many things these can be and so forth, but I give you that as a basic principle.

And you go at that as a basic principle, and you figure out the pc you're auditing has that as a basic principle, even when the pc doesn't have an ARC break. You know, there's no reason to figure this out. Now, get this: there's no reason to figure this out at all. Go ahead and figure it out and you all of a sudden will understand something about your pc that you haven't understood before. You're going to find a communication cycle out. I mean, it doesn't matter what pc, you see, where. You're always going to find a communication cycle out. What's the evidence? He's not OT.

For instance, he's always missing the telepathic communication cycle; see, he's always missing that one – that's always out.

Didn't go out in a session I was in last night. The auditor and pc practically blew each other's brains out by having exactly the same communication cycle on a telepathic wave hit midway and almost blow up in the middle of the session. It was an incomplete communication cycle had taken place in the session. Both auditor and pc thought of it simultaneously and almost went around the bend trying to figure out which one had thought of it first so as to unbalance – so as to unbalance this sudden ridge that had appeared in the middle of the auditing session. Quite an amusing situation.

Missed a goal, back in the session; you know, one of these skitter-scatter sorts of reviews of putting things back together again, redating and that sort of thing, and just up and missed a goal. Didn't realize any goal had been missed until the end of session, then all of a sudden thought of it. Either the auditor thought of it first or the pc thought of it first. The immediate result was a telepath on the subject, and it... [claps]! It was pretty weird. You watch some of this stuff you haven't seen for a long time, you know, you get tremendously intrigued. You say, "Huh! This stuff can exist," you know?

Anyway, we had quite a ball on that. But that's just a communication cycle of some kind or another which is completing. There are all kinds of communication cycles.

Now, what do you think of a pc who isn't receiving the auditing command? And what do you think of the auditor that goes ahead and gives auditing commands the pc is only partially detecting? Hm? Now, does this explain why you can run a "touch" process on an unconscious person, particularly if you're monitoring their hands? You say, "Touch the sheet. Touch the pillow." You say, "Touch the pillow," and then you have them touch the pillow, and now they know they've received the communication. You understand? You see that as a surety? So it even works at the level of unconsciousness. It's quite interesting.

What do you think an auditor is going to walk into who keeps saying, "Squizzle-wig the ruddy rods. Thank you. Squizzle-wig the ruddy rods. Thank you."

And the pc keeps saying, "Yes. Yes. Yes. Yes." What do you think the assessment at the end of session is going to look like? There's going to be a communication cycle missing. It happens to be the auditor's originated communication which is only partially detected by the pc and never understood. Now, what do you think's going to happen in that session? It's going to blow in some weird direction and there isn't going to be progress, and things are going to go to hell in a balloon one way or the other, and it's all going to be very hard to detect. You see that? All right. Now, let's look at another communication cycle. The pc is – I'm not trying to tell you all ARC breaks are based on the communication cycle. You understand, the communication cycle is primary but goes awry at the point of detection and understanding. Understanding throws it into A and R. You understand? There are the affinity factors and the reality factors are what tend to make it not understood. This is why it's ARC. But still you can analyze it head-on on the basis of communication, you see, and it'll fall into that category. It's the reasons why the communication cycle didn't complete and was only partially detected when it should have been really detected, see?

Well, let's say the auditor has never cleared the auditing command with the pc. The pc has gone on answering this endlessly. Well, of course, you're going to get into trouble. What's the primary source of trouble? The fact that a communication cycle existed and the communication cycle was only partially detected, only the communication cycle didn't cycle. It didn't get all the way through. It was partially detected and it was not understood. So of course you're going to get into trouble.

All right. Let's take another look at the situation. We try to get engram four and we trigger engram eight. Well, we've started a communication cycle, don't you see, of engram eight without knowing we started engram eight, and we suddenly hear an explosion someplace and we can't quite detect where it came from. We look it over, and we find out the communication cycle was that we accidentally got the response of engram eight, but then we abandoned that somehow or another and we got four. So actually the communication cycle was not completed. Was directed to eight, was not received at eight, don't you see? It was received at four instead, so therefore you've got a partial detection, and the pc didn't find it out, really, and the auditor didn't find it out, so there it remains as a sleeper, don't you see?

There was something that didn't go through. That's all you've got to figure on the thing, if you left all of your lists home. Something didn't go through. Well, it's only a question of how many things won't go through.

Well, the basic things that won't go through are affinity, reality and communication. And the basic things that those three things face are time. Time – matter, energy, space and time. It's ARC versus time. Don't you see that the livingness of the individual consists of ARC and he faces the material universe which consists of M-E-S-T. So you have the factors of M-E-S-T and you have the factors of ARC. And these confront each other. But this basically takes up the communication cycle. The individual communicating with time, or time communicating with the individual, goes awry. And as a result you get an incomplete and a partially detected communication cycle. All of these things end up in what you call an ARC break. This ARC break results in all sorts of violent emotions which actually could not be exaggerated in their violence. It's just an ARC break amongst nations that causes wars. And yet here's millions of people strewn out across the battlefields causing all kinds of work up here at the between-lives area. (Poor fellows – I bet they even have to work overtime. Let's hope they don't belong to the union or anything like that. The boys must have an awful time.) Well, that's an immediate, direct result of ARC break. Communication breakdown of some kind or another, with the affinity and reality attendant thereunto.

So don't think that because these factors are very simple and very easy to handle and very easy to detect that the results of not detecting them are not severe; and that the severe results that you see in life, interpersonally and in auditing sessions, too, as well, are not catastrophic, or think that these results do not stem from this very simple little factor. Because it always does. An incomplete communication cycle results in bypassed charge – always.

The common denominator of an ARC break is bypassed charge. There's charge someplace.

But what do we mean by charge? We mean – well, of course, ergs, dynes and all the rest of it. Well, we apply it to the communication cycle and we mean that a communication or a charge has been excited and was channeled to go in a certain direction, and then was not detected and not understood, and that charge then explodes in a dispersal of some sort or another. It goes *blooey*. Don't you see? This is elementary. Bypassed charge is something that originates as the beginning of a communication cycle, and then not having been wholly detected or understood, remains then as bypassed charge. And it's very often not detected by the auditor or the pc. And you have a session sort of running at a low gear.

Now, don't think these things are just explosive either. Pc just isn't feeling so well lately, so forth. Well, you've got some sleeping bypassed charge of some kind or another you didn't pick up, that's all. Bypassed charge, we mean we bypassed getting the completion of the communication cycle, or we carelessly started a communication cycle which didn't get completed. That's all.

Accidentally did so. It's very easy to do. We say, "Give me the earliest engram on this chain." Little while later, pc has an ARC break. We say, "Let's see, did I miss an origin, or what did I do? What happened?" Then you hit, finally, "an earlier incident was restimulated."

This usually settles it away one way or the other, particularly if the pc spots what was restimulated. Bang! There goes your ARC break.

Now, it's attended with great magic. But the magical look at it is the fact that we have the anatomy of this tremendously explosive stuff – the explosive stuff of interpersonal relations. We know the magic of that. We know how many different ways the thing can be – a communication can be begun and not be detected and therefore become bypassed charge. It's a lot of ways in which this thing can be done.

Well, knowing those things, you should be able to handle a session better. You should be able to handle a session better. Pc says, "Oh, I – I don't think we ought to go on too long."

And you say, "Very good." Just as your words fly out the window, at least have the grace to realize that you are adding something into the communication cycle, if this then bears bad fruit. Just realize how come it came about. It's a partially detected communication, wasn't understood, far as the pc is concerned. You say, well, obviously that leaves you in a position of always doing what the pc says. No, it doesn't.

"Well, good. I'm glad that's the way you feel. All right. All right. Yeah, okay. Okay. Don't want to carry on too long. All right. All right. Well, good thing that I'm perfectly fresh, and I hope you are the same, because I intended to go for another two hours." We find that one cycle isn't the other cycle, don't you see? You've originated a new series of communications on the subject; you haven't slapped the old one in the head. You only get into trouble by slapping the old one in the head, don't you see?

Pc said, "I think you ought to go all over the track and restimulate all these engrams, because actually the best thing to do is to get to basic-basic, which is tomorrow."

And you say, "All right."

You take a look at this, you understand what he said. You may not understand why he said it, but you sure understand what he said. And you say, "All right. Good enough," and go on and do what you're doing. He still isn't too upset about the situation. See, he only gets upset if you slap him in the face.

Therefore, you've got to be an expert in the detection of a communication that has begun. The better you are at detecting a begun communication – the better you are at this – the less ARC breaks you'll have. But actually you needn't worry about ARC breaks, because you can handle these things before they get catastrophic.

Now, that's an ARC break. That's handling the ARC break. These are the basic fundamentals stripped right down to rock bottom. Your ARC break assessment form is simply the number of types of communications which can be started and only partially detected by the auditor and the pc.

Now, some of you are prone to this (now, this can be done; so you are led astray by some wins): You can say, "Well, an earlier incident was restimulated in the session. That's what's wrong. That's what the ARC break was about," and the pc suddenly feels better. And if you go on that way, and you get wins, and you say, "Boy, this is the cat's. There's nothing to this. This is absolute magic," right up to the point when you get the ARC break that you didn't

assess the right line for or you assessed the wrong list for or the pc didn't quite know where to go to in order to look at and is still fumble-fubbed. You didn't find it, even though it read on an assessment.

So therefore, there are several actions undertaken in the detection of one of these things, and one is to assess it on the form where the ARC break reason lies. That sounds idiotic for me to say something like that, but if the ARC break is in the session and you do an R3R ARC break form, you're not going to find the ARC break, are you? And so forth.

So the right form, the right list – the right list comes as primary in this. And if you don't find it on the right list, why, you better get another list. In other words, if you don't find it, get another list. Your commonest error on these things is not now that the lists are not complete, but that the lists are in several pieces to save you time, so your commonest error is wrong list.* You actually didn't find the ARC break. You didn't find the communication cycle that began and so left bypassed charge.

Now, the main mistake you're making or could make in this, if you do make any mistake on it, is not making sure that it's all straightened out with the pc. That's the biggest common error. You say, "Well, that was an earlier incident restimulated. That's all right. Okay," and go on with the session. The pc's sitting there frying. It wasn't an earlier incident. Or he didn't know what incident it was, and he's totally baffled. The ARC break charge has not been spotted and laid to rest, see? It says right there in the bulletin on this that you better take it up with the pc and find out if that's right.

Well, you can go to the point of dating all of the things which you dated wrongly and finding and locating and dating all of the bypassed incidents. In fact, it could become a total production which will go on for sessions, trying to clean up one ARC break. You understand? A good stunt in this regard is to find the order of magnitude of the bypassed charge. That doesn't let you in for more trouble.

"An earlier incident was restimulated." Yeah, but what? Who? What? Where? What's? Which? Which? What's? Which? It's all you can find, is an earlier incident was restimulated. You don't know what earlier incident was restimulated, you don't know what the hell, and all of a sudden the pc says, "Oh, yes. And, yes, it must have been..." and so on. And, "I wonder when that was. Can you date that? Yeah, there it is," and so on. "Can you date it?"

Good trick is just give it order of magnitude: "Is it hundreds of years ago, thousands of years ago, millions of years ago, billions of years ago, trillions of years ago, trillions of trillions of year – ? It's trillions of trillions of years ago."

"No kidding? All right, that's fine." That's the end of it, see? That's a way of parking one without getting yourself all solidified in a dating. You know that the pc's attention is still stuck on this thing, and he's still trying to sort out what incident it was, and that sort of thing. Well, one of the ways to get rid of it is find its order of magnitude – not go ahead and date it and find its duration and run it by R3R when you, in the first place, were doing 3N. You understand? You can go that far.

* Editor's note: Refers to the lists in HCOB 5 July 1963 "ARC Break Assessments", Red Vol. V, p.306

But locating – locating it on the list – is where the semantic error turns up here. You don't locate it on the list. The list only locates the type – the type of charge bypassed. In other words, the type of communication cycle that began and was never completed, never detected, see? That's all. That just locates its type.

Now it's up to you to take the additional steps of locate and indicate to the pc the charge. In other words, doing the assessment is really not locating the charge. The charge is not on the list, it's in the pc. You get this? I'm not saying that just to be clever. The truth of the matter is, it's only the type; the list will only give you the type of charge. And you haven't accomplished the step of location. You've only found the type, see? People are saying "All right. Well, you locate and indicate. That means you do an assessment. Bang – that is located now, and we indicate it to the pc." Well, the funny part of it is, this is so good that even that works. See, there's where you get tripped up. You can short-circuit it to that degree and still make it work.

Well, recognize what you're doing. That's terribly short-circuited. You've only found the type of charge. You haven't done the location step at all. So in some ARC breaks you are totally baffled as to why the ARC break doesn't evaporate. You're totally baffled. You say, "Why doesn't it go away?"

Well, the primary reason is you haven't done it on the right list. That, oddly enough, is the most flagrant one. But you've never done the location step at all. The assessment is not the location. See? And an earlier incident was restimulated. You say, "All right, an earlier incident was restimulated." Well, the magic of it is so great that occasionally this works, and it gives you a bit of a win, so you say, "Well, this ARC break assessment stuff – pretty good. Ha-ha! That's it. Yeah, fine." And it'll work like that, and it'll always work if you've got the right list. And you've produced this minimal effect on the pc and pc isn't all coming apart now at his edges.

See, because that works, this whole system tends to get very short-circuited. You see, the assessment is not the location. That isn't the way you locate *the* charge. That is the way you find the type of charge that you now want to locate. You go down this – *pocketa-pocketa-pocketa-pocketa-pocketa* – and sometimes when you go over it you retrigger it, and your dirty needle turns off, and your next time down, why, it reads purely. See? You've had a dirty needle on the first assessment. Expect that as normal. Next time you go through and flick those off that were still in – bang – one is standing out there clean. Now you can say, well, it says so-and-so and so-and-so. "That's an earlier incident was restimulated. Earlier incident restimulated, that's what it says here. How do you feel about that?"

The pc says, "I feel lots better. Yeah, it's fine."

Well, let's not plow up the field after it's plowed, man. See, this is just handling ARC breaks as they occur in session. You know? No reason to go into this, stir it all up again, find some more bypassed charge, bypass... no, you had it handled – let sleeping dogs lie. Your assessment, location and indication all occurred in the same breath, see? Then you verified to find out whether or not it was okay, and obviously it all occurred in the same breath, so why are you going to go into any trouble from here on? Everybody's satisfied, why are you going to any trouble? You're just going to stir up more trouble.

But remember, you have done a very short-circuited, shorthand version of an ARC break rundown. That is very short-circuited. If you got the right charge, it can happen. But, "Earlier incident restimulated. Yeah, that's what it says here. An earlier incident was restimulated in this session."

Pc says, "Ah, well. Okay now, that's good," and starts getting interested in something else, see? Ah-ah-ah, that's all right. Nobody's going to quarrel with him doing that.

But you say, "Well now, how do you feel about this?"

"Ah, maybe so, but – uh – yeah, it was that earlier incident that was restimulated. *Aorrwr-rahr!* That earlier incident was restimulated!"

You haven't found the charge, man. And the first thing you should suspect is not your assessment but that you had the wrong list. Reach for another list. Do you know that you can do 3N and inadvertently do some 3R and be accidentally into 3R making ARC breaks of 3R? You can sometimes do R3R and get inadvertently into 3N, and your ARC break lies in 3N. Do you realize that? And sometimes if you have an ARC break on R3R and 3N, it is never the session ARC break list. But sometimes after you've cleared them up you then have to get the session ARC break that resulted from having had those out. You get the stunt here?

But remember that there is an assessment, a location and an indication, and it has to be all right with the pc. So there are four steps, always four. You could say five: Finding out that the pc has an ARC break would normally be the first one. But that is the score on your ARC break assessments. And recognize – recognize those steps, in handling the existing ARC break, actually exist to that number, and the assessment is not the location. The assessment is just finding out the type of charge. You might have to go quite a bit further to find the location.

You say, "Wrong date." You've done nothing the whole session but date, you see? The ARC break's caused by a wrong date. Well, it reads well and it is a wrong date, and that is the ARC break, but the pc says, "What date is wrong?"

Well, you think that you now have to redate everything in the session, and so forth. Well, just call off a few of the dates you found and ask if they're right, that's all. Bang, bang, bang, bang, bang, bang – do they read as wrong dates? That's one way of doing it. Another way of doing it is "first half of the session, last half of the session." There's a dozen ways of doing it. I'm not going to try to teach you that trick. But you can go ahead and locate it right on down. Well, what is the right date for that thing? One of the ways of doing it is simply get order of magnitude. That makes the pc very happy. That causes it all to go back into place very smoothly.

You ran the goal "to spit." You thought it was in the Helatrobis implants; you have a wrong date on the thing all the way along the line. And you find the goal "to spit" had the order of magnitude of trillions of trillions of years ago. It's good enough. Not to go on to run the goal "to spit," you understand, but to find out that you'd found the goal "to spit" and you want to get it out of your road so you can keep on with the goal "to spat," see? Well, you find the order of magnitude for the goal "to spit" and it'll move out of your road.

These are all just shorthand methods of handling the thing. But you are dealing with an assessment for type. You are dealing with a location. You are dealing, then, with indicating what that was, and then you are dealing with another factor here, is; was it all right with the pc, does he feel okay now? And that's what you were doing it for in the first place, so you're a ruddy fool not to find it out in the last place. Okay?

All right. Well, because you can get away with it on the basis of do an assessment – bang – you say, "That was it," and suddenly your location and indication take place just like that, see? You don't, then, break them down and realize that they are that additional steps.

If you wanted to know a complete list of all types of ARC breaks in this whole universe, you would have to find all types of communication that could be partially detected when originated and all the things, then, thereafter that could be misunderstood. And you would have a full list of all ARC breaks. Because we're dealing with the mind, we know the ones that are important, and we know what really causes the explosions and we include those. Otherwise, 150 million books printed, each one, to the size of the *Encyclopaedia Britannica*, could not give you a partial list of the number of communications that could leave bypassed charge by being incomplete.

Okay?

Audience: Yes.

That's the lot. Thank you.

COMM CYCLES IN AUDITING

A lecture given on 25 July 1963

All right. Beautiful, sunshiny day here; cherish it. Go out and make a facsimile of it.

This is what?

Audience: 25 July.

25 July. What do you know about that? A.D. 13, Saint Hill Special Briefing Course.

The auditing cycle. Once upon a time there was an auditor and he knew he could audit; he knew he could audit. But PCs, they just wouldn't PC worth a nickel. And the auditor said, "Well, I'll have to get out of Scientology because PCs are no good."

You'd be surprised how often this line of logic – ha – gets in the road. Most auditors, early on, have a definite idea that there's tremendous variation in PCs, and that some PCs can be audited and some PCs can't be audited, and that there are good PCs and bad PCs, and all different kinds of PCs.

Well, there are worrisome PCs, but just to the degree that you can't get them to get tone arm action. And some PCs are closer to aquiver on the subject of a communication breakdown than others; they're more nervy. Those things are true. But practically no PC can stand up against a good auditing cycle, you know, and say, "Well, I'm going on being aberrated for the rest of my days because that makes everybody wrong and makes me right."

The difficulty that an auditor gets into is normally found in his own auditing cycle and his own impatience. His disabilities in this particular line are last detected by himself. In other words, he's really the last to find this out.

If an auditor wants to polish up his auditing, I recommend putting a piece of session on a tape, at least a piece of a session, and then listening to that tape back, and not listening to the ramifications or the flubs. Anybody is liable to make a duplicative-type flub, you know. Like, you've had to change your auditing command – you heard me make one the other day on that tape. I had to change the command, because I was getting so much bang out of "mainly" that I had to put "mostly." And then I was grooved into saying "mainly," and my concentration, of course, was for the PC, and I was slipping up and I was occasionally saying "mainly" again when I was trying to say "mostly."

Well, you're liable to pick on that kind of thing as being a very important error. Actually, it isn't very important. What's important is: Did you complete your auditing cycle? See, it really isn't how gracefully you completed it, but did you complete it?

There are two communication cycles that make up the auditing cycles, and those are: cause-distance-effect with the auditor at cause and the PC at effect; and cause-distance-effect

with the PC at cause and the auditor at effect. Those are completely distinct, one from the other.

Now, the only place they impinge on each other at all – and this is the only thing that connects them and makes an auditing cycle – is the fact that the auditor, on his cycle, has calculatingly restimulated something in the PC, which is then discharged by the pc's auditing cycle.

So you see, you've kind of got a V lying on its side. You see, you've got the upper V here with the auditor at the top of the wing, you see, and he's cause, distance, effect; and here at the point of the V, you customarily think of that as just one turn. Actually, there's a complication right there: It's what the auditor has said has caused a restimulation at that point, and then the PC is honor bound to start an auditing cycle to get rid of the restimulation. Can you see that? And that is the game that is being played in an auditing cycle, and that's the entirety of the game. There's nothing else esoteric about it at all.

Don't think otherwise than that the auditor is restimulating the PC. Now, some auditing – some auditing – breaks down because the auditor is unwilling to restimulate the PC. Now, you'll see this on a gross level when somebody said, "I had to stop auditing him because the somatics were so great." You see? I've actually heard somebody say that – seriously.

And I think to myself, "The poor PC, man." At that point of the V where those two come together and where effect turns into cause, where the PC is there, at that point, you have a restimulation and then the necessity of answering the question to get rid of the restimulation.

Now, if the PC doesn't answer the question, the PC does not get rid of the restimulation. If he alter-ises at that point, then every restimulation is going to become an alter-is. And all PCs who are having any trouble alter-is at that point of the V.

Here, I'll draw you a picture.⁴ Here is your V. And this is cause and this is distance and this is effect. Now, here's your auditor, see? And here's the PC. Now, at this point here is where you get your restimulation factor. And this point is again, now, cause-distance-effect, see? So we get cause-distance-effect, see? And that's what an auditing cycle in actual fact looks like.

Now, there are some little inner cycles – there are some little inner cycles that throw you off and make you think that there are some other things to the auditing cycle. And these little inner cycles are when you get cause-distance-effect, and he has answered the question, the auditor then says, "Thank you." Well, actually, that's a shadow. And this now starts the shadow back, you see? You understand?

See, there's a little extra communication cycle on here; it's an extra cycle, see? And you have this as the acknowledgment – the acknowledgment cycle. So you have here an ack, and of course that goes this way, you understand, and is received over here; and that's all there is to it. That's a little fade-out, don't you see?

⁴ Editor's note: See Lecture Graphs published as HCOB 14 Aug 63, Red Vol. V, page 339

Well, I very often berate you for being not perceptive, and not auditing the PC and not seeing what's happening to the PC, or what's going on there, don't you see? So I get this kind of an action here: There is another one of these little shadow cycles. The PC has received the auditing command. And that is such a tiny cause that nearly all auditors who are having any trouble finding out what's going on with the PC are missing that one.

You say, "Do birds fly?" and then you fail to perceive that the PC received the auditing command. Now, that's because he doesn't say anything. See, here's your main cycle: cause-distance-effect; "Do birds fly?" See?

And the PC says, "No."

Well, actually, there's another cause in here; there's another little tiny one, and it's right here and it's a little c, see? And you're missing that one where you're not perceiving the PC. Does he receive it?

You say, "Do birds fly?"

And he says... That's all the cause that is emanated at this point, by the PC. See, he just... See, that would be exaggerating it.

But you can tell by looking at him that he didn't understand what you'd said, or that he was doing something peculiar with the command he was receiving, you see? Doing something peculiar with this command.

Well, it's actually whatever that message is that is in response here, whatever message that is, does ride on this line. And an auditor who isn't watching the PC at all then never notices a PC who isn't receiving or understanding the auditing command; and all of a sudden, somewhere along the line, there's an ARC break, and then we do assessments and then we patch up the session and all kinds of things go wrong. Well, they actually needn't ever have gone wrong in the first place.

What is the PC doing, completely aside from answering? Well, that what he is doing is this other little sub-cause-distance-effect line. So a complete auditing cycle consists of no less than six communication cycles, if you really want to get it down to the last ramifications. But the important ones are four. You've got four communication cycles.

Well, where are the other two? Where's the other two? They're so tiny that you wouldn't really notice them, but they are there. Cause-distance-effect of "Is the PC ready to receive an auditing command?" See, is he ready to receive an auditing command? He's going, "Oh, *rum-rum-rum-rum-rum*." Well, that action is actually PC causing, isn't it? And it has to ride up the line across distance and [be] received at the auditor; and the auditor perceives that the PC is doing something else.

You say, "That's not very important," you see? But it is; it is. You'll find auditors goof that one very often. And the PC is going... And the auditor says – he's nulling, let us say – and he says, "catfish," "cat fur," and so forth. And the PC is going like this, you see? See, he's not noticed this first one.

That causes this kind of trouble: You've got the item "fur" on a list that you're nulling, and you hit the item "fur" and it goes through, actually, a complete auditing cycle, one way or

the other, because you very often say thank you after you've done so. It's a very jammed-up auditing cycle, but it's there, you see?

And then you go on to "catfish" on the next one, without performing this top cycle: Is the PC ready to have "catfish" read to him? No, he's hung up on "fur," and the only time you ever get into real catastrophe is when the PC is really hung up on "fur." God, when you said "fur," the PC went, "Ew-w-w-w." *Dong!* and there he is, see?

"What's happened? Where is it? Ho! What's happened?" See? You ever have that happen to you? Somebody goes over a line – *bong!* it goes. And the next thing you know, in the far-off distance you hear "catfish, cat whiskers... "

And you say, "What's that? Where's this? Who's what?" This one becomes terribly important when you run into a situation like that. You don't really pay too much attention to it. But it exists. Got it? It exists.

And there's another one down here. There's another little one down here: Pc received the acknowledgment. And sometimes you violate that sixth one. You say, "Thank you!" and the PC goes like this. Or that you say, "Thank you," and the PC... If you were to do old-time Model Session end-of-session mid ruds at that point, you'd find out the PC asked you why you never acknowledged him. See? You have been acknowledging him, but you've never seen that he didn't receive the acknowledgment, don't you see? That perception has another little tiny one in it, is: Has the PC said everything? But that actually comes on this line here: Has the PC answered everything, see? And it becomes... the auditor is watching the PC, see? And the auditor sees that the PC has not said all he was going to say. Sometimes get in trouble with PCs that way.

Pc says, "Oh, yeah, it was sometime in the later days of the Roman Empire..." You know he's going to say something else, see? Well, this one isn't complete. So everything at cause hasn't moved down the line here to you, effect. And you haven't perceived all of the effect. So you go into the acknowledgment one before this line has completed itself, don't you see?

"Well, it was in the early days of the Roman Empire. Um..."

"Thank you! Now, we will..." *Duh-uh-uh-uh.* You've seen that happen. That's chopping a pc's comm, see?

They didn't let this line here, which is the fourth communication cycle, flow to its complete end. And then this one, the acknowledgment, takes place. And of course it can't go through because this, the fifth communication cycle, is sitting up here on the fourth communication cycle.

So you say, "Thank you," and of course you're right back against... and it's an inflowing line and they jam right there.

So there are six – if you really want to break it all down – there are six communication cycles that make up one auditing cycle. Six – not more than six, unless you start running into trouble. And when you violate that – one of those six, when you violate one of those six – you of course are going to get into trouble, then, which causes a mishmash of one kind or another.

Now, I'll go over these again. I think you would care to have me do that, wouldn't you?

Audience: Yes.

All right. Up here we have number one: the PC. His emanation at that point is simply his appearance and presence. That's number one. Is he ready to have an auditing command given to him? See, are we all set here for the auditing command? That's number one. That's a communication cycle consistence of cause, distance, effect.

Your next communication cycle on the thing – we had better go into number three – is your auditor's communication straight down to the PC. That is the auditing command and that you normally consider the communication cycle. Got it? That's what you normally say: "Do birds fly?" That's cause-distance-effect received at the pc's – here.

Now he has to take care of and handle the charge at this point (and I'll cover this in a minute), he'll have to handle the charge at this point which has been restimulated by the auditor. And now he originates (although we use another designation; I've used origination otherwise, and so forth): He has his answer, which is what you normally call it. His answer, however, is a cause. And that's a cause, a distance and an effect. You understand?

Now, your next one is an acknowledgment by the auditor which goes over cause, distance, effect, is received by the PC; and this is the perception of whether or not the PC receives the acknowledgment. Got that?

But you go over this, work this thing out, you'll find out that it's a very complicated arrangement. And you can count on anybody studying this, promptly and immediately afterwards not being able to audit at all. It's something like taking a golf pro and say, "How do you handle your club?"

But this is your main show.

Now, what you've considered ordinarily the auditing cycle has been this first V which I drew, which is cause-distance-effect – with the PC at effect, the auditor at cause. And then, at that V, the restimulation takes place and you get cause-distance-effect.

Now, I'm not going to go into the rest of the auditing cycle till I show you the center of this thing, okay?

There is another communication cycle inside the auditing cycle – another communication cycle. And that is at the point of the V. [starts to draw the second graph] Here's your PC and here's your auditor, and here was your cause, your distance, effect; here is your cause, your distance, effect and here was a C and here was an E. Don't you see? Cause-distance-effect at the PC. That's the auditing command. And then you've got cause-distance-effect which is the auditing response.

Well, we've opened up the point of the V. And here is your little additional one, and that's between the PC and himself. Here – see what this is. Now, this actually can be multiple, and it depends upon the complications of the mind. But because there has been an effect there, that causes a cause. See? Because you have an effect at this point of impact, you get a restimulation. Now, that stimulation brings about charge, which then causes the PC to emanate

to get rid of that charge. So you have an internal one, here, of cause-distance-effect inside the pc's skull.

Well, that gives us seven communication cycles.

Now, I said this could be multiple. This is him talking to him, see? And you say, "Do birds fly?" and this causes a picture of birds. He receives the effect of the picture of birds, and he causes a query of the picture. "Are they flying?" And as a result, the answer comes back of the flapping of the wings and he says, "Yes, they're flying." And so with his thought he transmits, then, the causative action to the auditor – now directed at the auditor – "Yes." You see how that can be multiple?

Now, you're listening to the inside of his skull when you're examining that V down there. Now, if you think that the inside of the skull is more important than the rest of the cycles, you're going to be very, very disabused. This happens to be the least important of all of the actions, except when it isn't being done. And of course it's the hardest to detect when it isn't being done. It's the hardest to detect.

Pc says, "Yes." Well now, what has the PC said yes to? And you sometimes are insufficiently incurious. You've said, "Do birds fly?" and the PC receives this, and he gets a picture of a dinosaur who is eating, and perceives that dinosaurs eat and says, "Yes." And carrying out the remaining part of the sentence, it would be, "Yes, dinosaurs eat."

So this is actually what it sounds like to the auditor: "Do birds fly?"

"Yes."

"Thank you."

See, that's what it sounds like to the auditor – that's the big V.

Actually, this is what happened: "Do birds fly?"

And the point of the V is haywire; we get a dub-in, see? Picture of a dinosaur flies up, because that's safer to look at than birds, for some reason, or more interesting or different. It's an alter-is of some kind or another – happens on an automaticity.

The PC thinks he understands the question now on the basis of "Do dinosaurs eat?" and says, "Yes."

And the auditor says, "Thank you."

Hey, wait a minute. What's going to happen to this PC? What's going to happen to the PC?

And that, in essence, is this internal perception of line, which I showed you on the other side. This cause-distance-effect backflash here, and so forth, happens to include "Is the PC answering the command I gave him?" Question.

Now, all of this is very complicated, isn't it? And it's sufficiently complicated that any auditor ought to sit down with a piece of paper and work it all out – and not expect me to tell them. I think there are very few auditors ever really inspected that to the degree that it's a multiple cycle. There are seven or more communication cycles involved in an auditing cycle.

Now, it's actually weighty enough that standing up here giving you a lecture on the subject, off the cuff, see, it's very easy to get mixed up on which cycle is which, because it requires a little bit of concentration. You have to actually mock up a complete session, see – complete auditing cycle – and pick out every communication cycle in the auditing cycle.

Now, a communication cycle consists of just cause, distance, effect, with intention and duplication. That's all – that's a communication cycle. How many of these are there in one auditing cycle? And that would include every nuance of the auditing session. So you have to answer with how many principal ones are there? Because some auditing cycles could contain a couple of more.

The PC says, "Huh?" You see, that's a cause. That goes over distance, effect.

And the auditor says, "Do birds fly?" He says, "I will repeat the auditing question. Do birds fly?" And that goes cause-distance-effect. But you immediately have added two more cycles and so you've got nine – because there was a flub, see? You got that?

So anything unusual that happens in the session adds to the number of communication cycles to the auditing cycle, but they're still all part of the auditing cycle.

Now, we've got repetitive commands as an auditing cycle, and that's doing this same cycle over and over and over.

Now, I'll give you some homework here; this is for your own good. You draw out all these communication cycles on a scrap of paper for yourself. Just take a look at all these things and mock up a session, like you do this and the PC does that, and so forth. And all of a sudden it'll come very straight in your skull how many of these things there are, and you won't have a couple of them jammed up. Because actually, what's mainly wrong with your auditing cycle is you have confused a couple of communication cycles to such a degree that you don't differentiate that they exist. That's why you sometimes chop a PC who is trying to answer the question, see?

You know whether he has answered the question or not.

Well, how did you know if he has answered the question or not? By esoterics? New subject matter: esoterics. If you're very skilled at esoterics, you could probably manage it. But there are no esoterics involved. Even if it's telepathy, it's cause, distance, effect. Doesn't matter how that communication took place; you know whether he's answered the auditing command by a communication cycle. I don't care if the distance was zero. It was permeation from same location in space; you were in the pc's head. I don't care how you sense this or if you know that ordinarily this PC is green when he answers an auditing command, and he turns pale white this particular time. You realize he's not answered the auditing command. Well, how did you know that? Well, obviously, it's a communication cycle inside the auditing cycle.

So, I'll give you a little assignment there. You work that thing out. How many of these things are there? And then expect to drop the mashie and the niblick and hook one into the woods for a day or two. So that's perfectly all right to do that, see?

I myself occasionally take apart a piece of auditing and find myself gaping briefly in a session, because I've been trying to put together a very flexible R2H, because R2H is a very –

the way it was originally released – is a very skilled activity. It's too much for me. That's right! It's just too confoundedly skilled. I know you can't do it. Impossible! It's too prone to error. Good training: Man, if you can do that, you can do anything! I mean it. If you can do that, you can do anything.

But, boy, by the time you get some PC who's got an insignificant ARC break that doesn't have the punch of an engram or anything like that behind it, and you're trying to date that confounded thing on a meter – it's just smooth as glass, and so forth – you practically have to ARC break the PC again to get the meter to read! [laughs] Terrific training.

But inherent in that process – inherent in that process – there are a great many processes which go pretty well south and which will, actually, practically go one shot to OT, see? It's masked, however, in the exact mechanics that you're handling.

I found out that you have to use ten – a minimum of ten – steps to get the terrific therapeutic result of which it's capable. At least ten steps. In fact, I got one version of it on the drawing table right now, which I've been working with: I don't know, I think it must have about eighteen separate steps. I'm just trying to milk this thing down for maximum tone arm action, minimal error and maximal ease of auditing. You're doing a training version now. It won't be changed. Go right ahead with it.

But this is really putting that process up to make it get its most results, see? And, by the way, there are only nine levels of assessment in this newest version I'm working out – just nine lines, takes care of the lot. But that's all progress.

But I'm running all this on a PC. You get the idea? It's all brand-new, and it's impossible to audit the original version of it anyway. And I'm handling something that has fifteen steps in it, all of which are strange and different, and the PC has done something incredible in the session that I haven't yet suspected. And boy! You talk about the mashie and the niblick, man! You know? That golf ball goes straight through the trees, hits a tree trunk, caroms off a rock, goes straight up into the sky and vanishes forever. [laughs, laughter]

All right. Well, if you're nervy on the subject of handling the basic tool of auditing, if that's giving you trouble and if you can get yourself into trouble by suddenly breaking it down and analyzing it, then it should be broken down and analyzed at the time you're auditing something nice and simple. That's the time it should be broken down – not until you have three woods in your right hand and four irons in your left hand and you're going to putt with the heel of your golf shoe, see? I mean, this is not the time to practice this auditing cycle.

So you go ahead and break it down. I've given you a general pattern for an auditing cycle. Maybe in working it over you can find a couple of extra communication cycles in the thing. But they're all there, and if you made somebody go through each one painstakingly and painfully, you would find out where his auditing cycle was jammed up. And it isn't necessarily jammed up on his ability to say "Thank you!" It may very well be jammed up in another quarter. Got that?

Now, there's a completely different auditing cycle inside the same pattern.

Just wanted to make you comfortable and make you feel relaxed. [starts to draw the third graph]

Let's work this one out. Here's the PC. This PC, he gonna originate. This has got nothing to do with the auditing cycle. Scrub that other one! This now has nothing to do with it. The only thing they have in common is that they both use communication cycles. That they have in common. But this is brand-new. This is the bolt from Mars. It comes out of the blue, and an auditor who is already concentrating... he's auditing, you know... There are people, they used to read – they'd move their lips while they read, you know? And everybody would make a lot of fun of them, you know, for... You know?

Well, an auditor who's handling his communication cycles and his main auditing cycle on a lip-moving level, see – he's brand-new at this sort of thing: the PC says something, see, that is not germane to what the auditor is saying or doing. And there is just – well, just trucks go over the cliff, jet ships crash, see? All goes to hell, man!

So you actually have to be alert for this thing happening at any time. And the way to prepare for it is just to realize that it can happen any time; and just go into the drill that handles it, and don't get it confused with the drill which you have as an auditing cycle; and consider it as its own drill. It's its own drill. You shift gears into this drill when the PC does something unexpected.

And by the way, this handles such a thing as the PC originates by throwing down the cans. That's still an origin, see? That had nothing to do with the auditing cycle. The auditing cycle went to pieces, maybe, and this cycle came in. Well, the other auditing cycle can't complete because this cycle is now here. Well, that doesn't mean that this cycle has precedence or dominance, but this cycle can start and take place and have to be finished off before the other one can resume.

So this is an interruptive cycle. And it is cause and distance and effect. And here's your auditor. The PC causes something. Now your auditor has to originate, and your V is inverted.

Now let's investigate here. Let's investigate that point. Let's expand the point, just as we did in the auditing cycle. [laughter] What's this going to be, a mad spate of question marks [laughter] or rockets flying off at oblique angles, or what's going to happen at this point?

Well, frankly, you can't put a machine at that point. You can't put a machine action at that point, because this thing has to be understood – has to be understood. So, to the degree that it is hard to understand, you have cause-distance-effect, cause-distance-effect. You understand? This is the auditor trying to clarify this thing. And every time he asks a question, he's got a new communication cycle.

Well, the trick that happens at the open V must not be such as to merely get the original line, cause-distance-effect, repeating itself. You mustn't have the PC continuing to repeat that line, because the PC is now going to go frantic. Because he can't get off of that line, he's stuck in time, and it really upsets him.

So the auditor, when this V is expanded here, has to be able to understand what the devil the PC is talking about. Now, there's really no substitute for simply trying to understand it.

The PC all of a sudden says, "But the Roman Empire didn't have any legs!"

"Tell me a little more about that, please." That's a good response.

And the PC immediately goes off into can gesticulations like mad and explains how – how because of North Africa being in its situation, you see, Egypt being in its situation, and that sort of thing, the Roman Empire didn't run on legs. It didn't run on legs at all; it ran on rivers. We're now getting in deeper.

"All right. Good enough; good enough. I hear what you're saying, now. Ah... " [laughter] "Give me a little more dope on this so I can get a good grasp of it."

Oh, and the PC will go on and he'll expostulate and understand it. And he'll understand it better through telling you. And all of a sudden, you'll find out that he's telling you it didn't have any legs, and it didn't have any legs to stand on – that is what he really meant, and so forth. And he's got it all doped out, and all of a sudden you see what the hell he's talking about. And at that point, you can resolve this point at the open V, you see? And "Oh, that's what the hell he's talking about" is the name of that expanded little V. "Oh, that's what the hell he's talking about" is the name of that cause-distance-effect, see? And then you say (cause-distance-effect), "Thank you."

How many more lines can you put in there? Well, you have to have another little line up here, which is another little cause-distance-effect, before that origination takes place so that you don't run into a jam and you don't give the auditing command. He's originated that he's going to say something. He says... see, whatever it is – and that's not the time for you to say "Do fish swim?" See? You suddenly notice there's a flicker across the table and the PC is saying... [breathes in] See, that's another little communication cycle. So it's cause-distance-effect. And effect at your point is to shut up. See?

And then, you actually can have another little one, here, that's a cause-distance-effect, of "I'm listening." Get the idea? And then, of course, there's your extra ones down here – when you've said "Thank you," then it's your perception of the fact that he has received the thank-you. And there's your origin.

Got it?

Audience: Yeah.

The building brick out of which all of these things are made are communication cycles. That's just cause, distance, effect, with intention and duplication, see? That's the lot, see?

But when you say "duplication" – when you say this – you are carrying, then, the communication cycle over into the A and the R, because there must be understanding.

Now, this is peculiar: There is a difference between an auditing cycle and a military communication cycle. "Theirs is not to question why; theirs is but to do and die" is definitely the military attitude toward the whole thing. And whereas this, too, can get into auditing... and actually is not disallowed and is sometimes used, and not without benefit. The guy is not going to touch that wall. "Thou shalt touch that wall," you see? This kind of an action very often takes place. He's not going to give up the withhold. "Well, you goddamn well are going to give up the withhold," you know? *Bow!* see? That sort of thing is very often better than not

doing anything about it. There are more adroit ways to do it – but this is real crude auditing. But that's the only time it gets over into the military cycle.

Now, the military cycle is simply cause, distance, effect, compliance. And the auditing cycle is cause, distance, effect, understand. So there is an A and an R at the effect point. And therefore, there has to be an A and an R at the cause point, so as to make "understand" acceptable at the effect point. There doesn't have to be, but there had better be. You see that?

So there's where A and R fit in on the communication cycle where auditing are concerned. They are very carefully designed.

Now, a very syrupy affinity is very often highly detrimental to auditing. But too snarly or abrupt an affinity is also detrimental to auditing.

We haven't completed talking about the auditing cycle by a long ways. The auditing cycle, you would say, then, is TR 0, 1, 2, 3, 4 and so forth. Well, the auditing cycle has very little to do with TR 0, 1, 2, 3, 4, just as such, and only as such. The TRs have to do with the communication cycle. And you have to put one all the way together at about TR 5 or TR 6 to take in all of these communication cycles. You understand?

What the lower TRs do is teach you to handle one communication cycle – see, from one side or the other – in varying degrees of complication. Now, of course you've got to have TR 0, because all of these things have to do with confront. All of them have to do with confront, so you'd say TR 0 is native to all of them. TR 1: Well, that's an emanation. And TR 2 is a receipt. So of course, those just handle what? They just handle nothing but the communication cycle. Do you see that?

Now, you can go on and build this up from this point on, but you will find that a complete auditing cycle would require a full-dress-parade TR that covered, maybe, at least six. And then you could have another TR that covered it up to nine, ten or twelve. And you could have another TR that handled an origin through all of its cycles – but that's supposed to be, right now, TR 4.

See, TR 4 – you've always had trouble with TR 4. Maybe I've shown you why today. Look at TR 4. See, that's a picture of TR 4. The V is the other way around. This thing is all upside down, you see?

But that isn't all there is to the A and the R in connection with the communication cycle. TR 1: How good is somebody's TR 1? Well, let me tell you that the ability to say "Do fish swim?" might serve, but how about being comprehensible? How about being comprehensible? Enunciatively comprehensible: you can understand the syllables. How about that? We can get over that point. But how about giving it an understandable communication? Now, let's look at this in its widest ramifications. The R-factor has to be present there so that it can be duplicatable.

You very often, when you leave some auditors loose on making up a command, or asking something, or there's a hole in the routine and it doesn't give them those words, will do a put-together of the statement to be said to the PC which, at the arrival at the PC, is incomprehensible. And yet an auditor is very often called upon to do this. I've noticed this. I'm not being condemnatory of auditors in general, but I've noticed here and there. When an auditor –

some auditors are left completely on their own... Well, something like this: "Well, get me a list. Get me a list of the stuff he's worried about." And you expect them to put together a question something like "What are you worried about?" see? And you get some entirely different, incomprehensible version, like "What are the worst part of your worries sometimes?" Something like this. Now, that's almost sensible compared to some of them I've seen. They're just absolutely incomprehensible. Absolutely incomprehensible.

I don't know how anybody – and I have actually seen somebody run a level fitted into one of these five-to-fifteen command brackets, which didn't make any sense at all, and suddenly found to my horror that some PC had actually been running on this for hours and hours and hours, and every time they arrive at it, says, "I don't have a clue what you're talking about at this point."

And the auditor just says, "I will repeat the auditing question."

So there's this factor in this communication cycle, that the TR 1 aspect must be (1) enunciated in such a way as to arrive in an understandable form, but very often, when the auditor is formulating something, has to be formulated so that it can be duplicated. So these two other factors are involved, besides simply being at cause – is the cause going out with any R? In other words, can you understand any part of this thing? Is this an understandable statement?

"Do fish someti... I'll repeat the auditing question: Do fish somet..." Naturally, no auditing can proceed.

You start dropping s's off of everything; or get somebody with a Japanese curve; you get somebody doing something that is a little bit offbeat in pronunciation – somebody from Boston. Let's go worse – somebody from Maine. You ever hear a "Maine-iac" talk? [laughter]

I was up there finding the Canadian border. The United States government lost it. (They'd lose their heads, you know, if you didn't watch them.) Anyway, they lost the Canadian border and went up and found it again. Found a tree had fallen on it and buried the marker. They have little pyramids that look like the Washington Monument that mark the border.

It was very necessary, because the prohibition agents didn't know where their authority started and ended, see? It caused terrible things. We took the problem off because what we were doing when we were surveying is we would stop the rum runners and tell them we were prohibition agents, relieve them of their cargo, and we always had a lot to drink! Anyway... [laughter] We solved this problem practically. The U.S. government could've taken a lot of leaves from, I think, most of us on practical solutions to these problems.

But I spent the most delighted summer trying to learn to speak "Maineiac." Gorgeous. And the French that had been living up along the St. Lawrence didn't speak French and they didn't speak English. They spoke something else. But it was sure interesting. Got so I could speak the thing, you know? I'd talk about "Baa-haaba" [Bar Harbor] with the best of them. But it wouldn't go in an auditing session.

And very often, some PC gets saddled with an auditor that he can't quite comprehend along some corner or another. Now, you should recognize what's out. The only thing that is

out is the R-factor in the TR 1. And an auditor should actually take great care to keep that one smoothed out. If he knows he's doing something weird that the PC can't comprehend, it doesn't matter how clumsily he sets it right so long as he sets it right.

Supposing you can't tell the difference between the way he pronounces five and the way he pronounces six. You can imagine these two getting jammed. The PC, for some reason or other, always thinks the auditor is saying five when he's saying six, and six when he's saying five. What do you think's going to happen in R3R, see?⁵

So therefore, it is up to the auditor to be comprehensible. That's where the R-factor comes in. Be comprehensible. Not only from standpoint of accent, but sense: the comprehensibility. Diction enters into this. I can see some university in the future teaching "Auditing English, " you see, or "Auditing Speech. " Actually, it'd be a big department, because you'd have to have the translation of all this stuff into German; you have a translation and then its enunciation in German – same factor would apply, don't you see? The same factor in Swedish, Japanese, Chinese, Russian, all of this stuff. How do you audit these guys, you see? Well, all right. So you're going to have auditors perhaps from that country, but remember, they will have the same frailties of pronunciation.

How about translation of line plots, what line plots actually sum up into. Some of these countries don't have good terminology to follow through on a line plot. And yet the line plot will only fire on the right terminology. Don't you see, there's a lot of stuff to be worked out on this particular factor. But there's stuff to be worked out on it right now.

An auditor who is not comprehended by the PC isn't doing his TR 1 right. And therefore the R-factor is very germane to whether the communication cycle can take place at all. And if you say "Do fish...?" You can't do that. Do you see that nothing happens and no communication cycle takes place at all? So the R-factor can do a complete wipeout. Interesting, isn't it?

Then you have the PC who doesn't want to be audited. He doesn't want to be audited at all. Well, how on earth can you start that one going? Because you've got to have a communication cycle before you can even put an R-factor in. See, that's worse end to. He just won't listen to any part of Scientology. This is not a speech defect, but actually requires a lower-level process which gets him to talk about Scientology anyhow.

We used to have one, "Well, tell me why you shouldn't be audited." Tricky kind of an approach of this particular character.

This is all very feasible. But this comes under the heading of getting a communication cycle started, and the auditor is very often confronted by that. So there is something which actually is prior to the communication cycle, see, and that you are very often happy to see exists. And when it goes out the window, you very often are sitting there with your eyes popped – you don't know quite what to do. Well, the thing is, you can't get the communication cycle going.

⁵ Editor's note: At that time, part of R3R was dating, what means the auditor had to call out numbers.

Now, very often the R-factor is out – wildly. Or the affinity factor is out. The affinity factor is out because the PC is being very misemotional. Well, oddly enough, you can do an ARC Break Assessment today, and find the bypassed charge and use that to complete the communication cycle which you started and which wouldn't complete, because it is the generated charge. And that was why I showed you, particularly, the expanded point of the V.

What has happened there is inadvertently, one way or the other, the point of the V has gone awry. The auditor somehow or another or the PC somehow or another has restimulated a charge which has then not been originated either to the auditor or the PC. See, an overstimulation has taken place there. It's quite easy to do. It's quite easy, though, to pick up these days. So, these ARC Break Assessments is [are] a pilot of completing the communication cycle and getting the auditing cycle going again. See how that fits in?

All right. Now, that's all very well to talk about the auditing cycle and say that's just all there is to the auditing cycle, but there's (I mentioned a moment ago) the repetitive auditing cycle. This cycle going over, and over, and over, and over, and over again, is a specialized activity. There's an auditing cycle of one cycle and then there is the auditing cycle of the next cycle and the next cycle and the next cycle and the next cycle, see? That's a different thing – doing it many times. You get your repetitive process, and this is where that gets you in trouble. There is a point where this over-and-over-again gets you in trouble.

You must, you absolutely must, complete a communication – all communication cycles of an auditing cycle. Therefore, you must complete an auditing cycle. But you must also differentiate the difference between one auditing cycle and the repetitive auditing cycle. And why must you generate this difference? It's because one auditing cycle must be completed, and a repetitive auditing cycles are very often overdone, and don't need to be completed in some cases. There's a difference.

Ooohh, where am I leading you now? You will say, "What's this? What's this? You mean you don't flatten a process?" Yes, you always flatten a process. But some auditor can get so eager-beaver with his series – which is flatten the process, see – that he forgets why he is flattening the process. And that is your dominant cycle – is ability regained.

Why are you auditing the person in the first place? To do an auditing cycle? To do a series of auditing cycles, known as repetitive cycles, so that you can get a flattened process?

Now, you say, "Well, you're doing that to flatten the tone arm action." No, that's right there with repetitive auditing cycle; that belongs right there with repetitive auditing cycle, don't you see? There is something that dominates all of this; there's a greater domination.

I'll show you what these points are. This will intrigue you; I don't think perhaps many of you have ever looked at this before. [begins to draw the fourth graph] Here's your big cycle, which is major cycle. See, that's a major auditing cycle. And its proper name is Ability Regained.

Ha. I can see some of you now. You're auditing engrams like mad and you hit this key engram and you hit the thing and you all of a sudden got an OT on your hands, and the fellow gets up and stretches and that sort of thing, and he's getting all ready to square away, and he's wondering what he should do with the body, and – you know? He's all set and you're going

on: "All right. What is the duration of this engram?" Well, that's just too much dedication to this next cycle, see?

And this you can call the Process Cycle – Process Auditing Cycle. This, of course, is just your single auditing cycle. Your progress of case is up, like this, see? Now, if you don't have your single cycle down, then of course you can't do a repetitive cycle. Can't do a repetitive auditing cycle, you can't flatten the process, in other words, you see?

Now, a process is flattened by tone arm action out, no comm lag left, or cognition – I'll draw you a picture of these things – or ability regained. [begins to draw fifth graph] Now, you understand, we're going here from the Process Cycle to this Ability Regained cycle, you understand? We're going just between those two. You understand here, that if you can't do a single cycle, then it's certain that you're not going to be very successful in completing any process auditing cycle – which is the repetitive cycles – and if you can't do this, then you certainly are not going to produce the upper one of ability regained. See? That's obvious.

But what is a flat process cycle? You sometimes come a cropper on this and don't realize what you're coming up against.

Now, three equal commands – this is the lousiest one, see? Three equal commands. That's smelly, but you say the process is flat, see? Safe to leave it. Well, you'd better leave it at the CCHs, otherwise your PC is going to start being unhappy. But remember that they must be confidently done, or something like that. You can't have "He screamed three times," you see?

You very often – you'd be surprised – you very often have this question asked of you. You have some HPA student sometime saying, "Well, but he was angry the same way for three different commands, so therefore the process was flat."

Now, your next level up here – your next level – is a more interesting level from a standpoint of that, but it's perfectly safe to flatten it on a cognition. Guy gets a cognition: "Oh, yes!" see? Even a minor cognition, do you understand? That's not a major cognition; that's, you know, minor cognition – he had a win. "Hey, well, what do you know! That's why elephants fly." You know, that's all set. Hasn't too much to do with the process, but you sort of stop the process at that point. The PC is not going to suffer.

You understand that these first two levels that I'm talking to you about, of "How do you flatten a process?" are just – oh, that's awful shabby sort of a way to look at the thing, but that's just the minimum. That's the minimum security.

Now let's get to the real one, which is TA Flat – flat by TA. That's your auditing cycles, repetitive auditing cycles, and you no longer have TA action on it here, don't you see?

And up above this – and there are two levels of this, to make it better – is a Major Cognition. You'll see that sometimes. You'll see that sometimes. That takes precedence. You haven't got the TA flat, but all of a sudden he cognites all of the level is flat you're running. You'll see him go *pow! pow! pow!* – off the meter. You've got – "failure to scream" was the level you were running, "about cats." And he says, "Oh! Oh, yeah! Yeah, yeah, yeah! We used to mock up these forty-mile-high cats and yeah – oh, well, what the hell! Yeah!" And you see the meter blow down and bang and everything goes to hell. You try to run this proc-

ess again. He hasn't got any level there left to run. In fact, continuing the process after one of those things is invalidation of the PC.

Now, this is Ability Regained and that takes precedence over all of these. This guy couldn't walk and you're halfway through this and you haven't got the TA flat and so forth and he hasn't had any cognition you're thinking about and your processing cycle's a repetitive cycle, and all of a sudden the PC says, "Hey, what do you know!" you know? And he throws the electrodes down sideways and he gets up and starts walking, you know? "Eh! Yeah, I can do it!" Good, are you going to flatten the process now? [laughter]

You may think I'm pointing out something ridiculous, but you do this quite often. You spoil it. You've got to know when to cut and run. See what I mean? What you got coming right up is you're all of a sudden going to make an OT – and continue to flatten the process.

Now, let's look at this, then. This single cycle – you got to have that one down cold, and there's no doubt about that! Got to be able to complete that. You got to be able to complete it repetitively, time after time again, and that's for flattening out a process. And the thing which takes dominance over that, of course, is you flatten out the process until you run into the ability regained.

Now, sometimes you don't run into an ability regained and you go on and flatten the process, and have to do another process before you regain the ability, don't you see? Sometimes you have to flatten a lot of these before you get up to that. Sometimes you halfway flatten one and you're suddenly up to it. You see, but I'm just talking about auditing cycles – repetitive auditing cycles – and where they're aiming toward. You're aiming toward always getting this one completed, but the only thing that interrupts it, in any single cycle, is a cognition. Similar to repetitive cycles, ability regained – a single auditing cycle that you are doing runs into a cognition. What do you do in a case like that? Well, you don't spoil the cognition by completing the auditing cycle. You can start another auditing cycle, if it is necessary to do so.

To that degree, to those modifications, these other things must be pushed through to the bitter end.

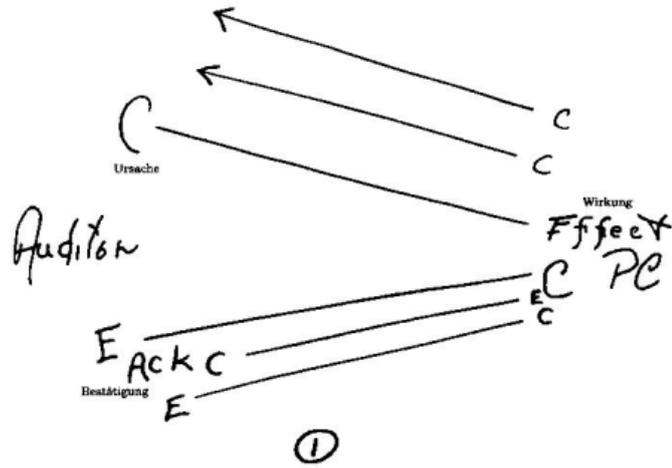
All right. Well, I've given you the dope on this. I imagine that you find this somewhat intriguing. It's a better look, perhaps, than we have had at it. I've been meaning to get around to it for some time, actually, and I've been breaking it down myself so that it could be talked about better. And you're seeing here a bit of gain; this isn't something which I've known all the time and so forth and so on. But I have been studying this ability regained in relationship to finishing a whole series of auditing cycles, and then I started breaking down the single auditing cycle in its communication cycles and got it into a more communicable form. And I think you'll find this very useful, both in teaching people and in auditing, yourself.

I wish you luck. Just go on and audit. Don't try to make me guilty by suddenly knocking the ball into the rough because you've lost the grip.

Okay. Thank you very much.

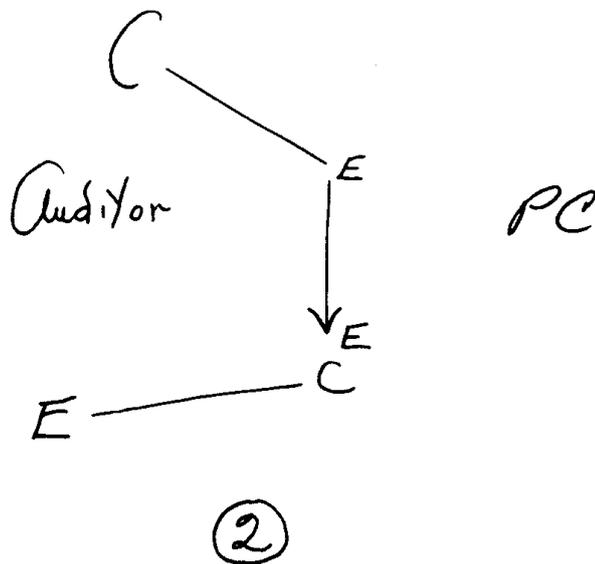
SHSBC L&H Lecture Ju/25, 63

SHSBC, LRH-Vortrag vom 25. Juli 1963



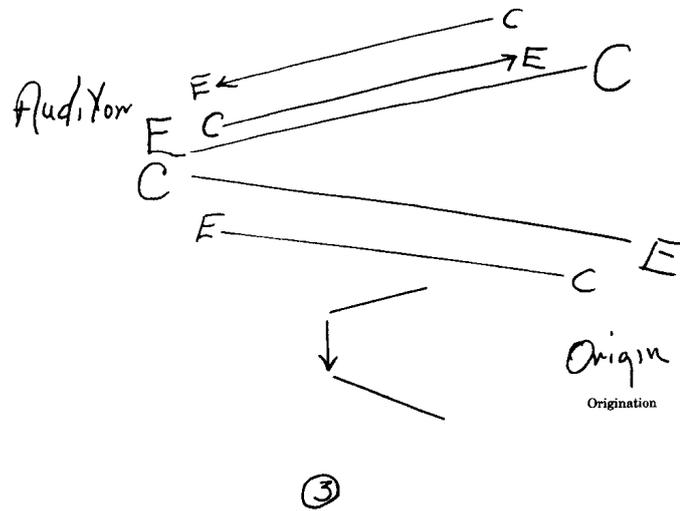
SHSBC L&H Lecture Ju/25, 63

SHSBC, LRH-Vortrag vom 25. Juli 1963



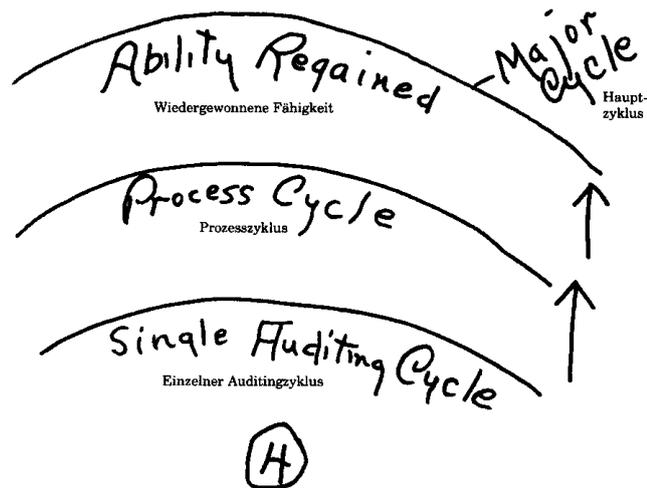
SHSBC LRH lecture Jul 25, 63

SHSBC, LRH-Vortrag vom 25. Juli 1963



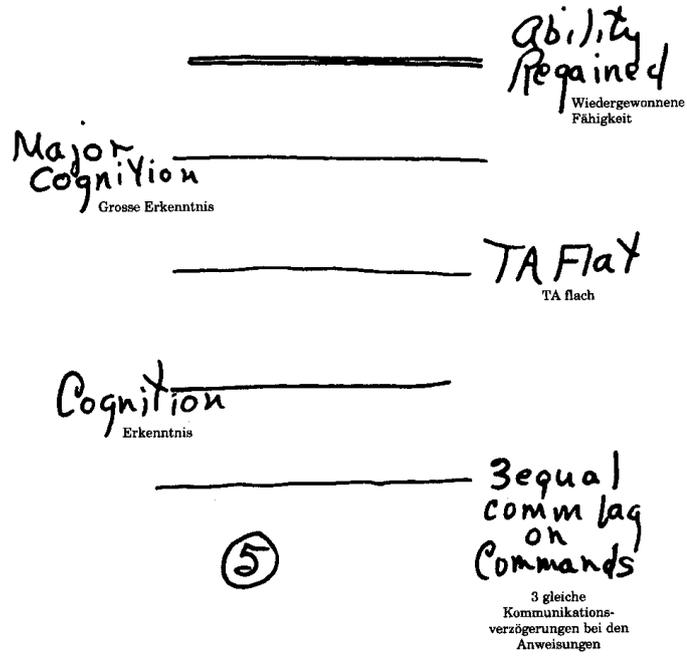
SHSBC LRH lecture Jul 25, 63

SHSBC, LRH-Vortrag vom 25. Juli 1963



SHSBC LRH lecture Jul 25, 63

SHSBC, LRH-Vortrag vom 25. Juli 1963



Auditing Comm Cycles

A lecture given on

6 August 1963

Well, how are you today?

Audience: Good. Fine.

Good. Well, this is what?

Audience: 6th of August.

Six August, AD 13.

[part missing]

We have three new Instructors today – three new Instructors.

[part missing]

No other vast changes are envisaged beyond the curriculum. Now that you've caught up all of your checksheets, you see, it's time to change the checksheets. [laughter] This is inevitable – inevitable. "That mixture which is not shaken stagnates." This is was probably the earliest Greek utterance, so we don't want you to get stagnated.

The only changes which you get in curriculum and so forth is the change in W, which has been in a state of flux anyway. And the definition of an auditor is being used in W – and I have found some new ways of milking down a tone arm, getting the bestest and mostest out of that tone arm; getting that tone arm to really wiggle and wobble. That's very important. And this piece of technology is hand in glove and it all goes back to very basic simplicities. Every once in a while somebody says... And this lecture does concern this definition of an auditor; I'm not going to talk to you too much about the auditing cycle in this. Well, I am going to talk to you about its particular aspects and how an auditor handles it.

Every once in a while somebody says, "Well, why don't you..." something or other, something or other, something or other – that's the crux of the situation – "Why don't you change all administrative actions? Why don't you alter all Central Organizational lines?" "Why don't you..." so forth. "Why don't we change everything in the course?" and so on. What they're dealing with is a problem they actually don't see the breadth and depth of.

And that problem is this: The character of this planet and the population hereon makes it practically impossible to do anything with this planet. Now, I'm not taking off from a failure point. The stress and thought and prevention and cure and this and that which you have to go into on this planet to get anything done and running is absolutely fantastic.

Now, you want to ask why this is? Well, we can go into that in a moment. But those of you who have on the backtrack an experience of you just get some guys together and you do something – you see? Well, that's been a common experience, and you still tend to operate in that zone and sphere of influence. In other words, you said, "Well, it was very easy. We just whistle up Joe, Bill and Pete, and the four of us will go down there and fix up the signboards, and that'll take care of that," see? And you're all set, see?

But that was yesteryear and elsewhere. And you apply that basic feeling to this planet and you're in trouble at once. Why? This planet is part of a larger federation – was part of an earlier federation and passed out of its control due to losses in war and other such things. Now, this larger confederacy – this isn't its right name, but we have often called it and referred to it in the past as the Marcab Confederacy. And it has been wrongly or rightly pointed to as one of the tail stars of the Big Dipper, which is the capital planet of which this planet is.

Now, all this sounds very space operaish and that sort of thing, and I'm sorry for it, but I am not one to quibble about the truth. This gets in people's hair every now and then, and I don't see any point in lying in order to be acceptable. It just doesn't seem to be a right way to go about things, particularly in the realm of science. I don't think a scientist should tell a bunch of scientific (quote, unquote) lies in order to be an acceptable scientist. It doesn't seem to me to be a sensible proceeding.

However, be that as it may, these various planets united into a very vast civilization which has come forward up through the last two hundred thousand years, is formed out of the fragments of earlier civilizations. Now, I can't tell you accurately, exactly what these blokes are up to or where they're from, but this isn't quite germane to this galaxy. That's the first thing you should know about it; it isn't quite native to your track. You find a type of mental implanting and that sort of thing going on here in the last couple of hundred thousand years which are not native to your earlier track.

Now, this is all very important; it's very important, because they have a terrible problem. They have the problem of people who are native to this galaxy and aren't used to this kind of thing, and they have the basic problem of "How do you kill a thetan?" And that's a terrible problem to men who have very, very guilty consciences and blood on their hands – great problem.

Probably the best way to hide your overts is to give somebody amnesia, you see (then they don't know what you've done to them), and then tell them something else has happened. Well, this is a dramatization of a very craven intelligence, and that is what is going on here.

Now, the fellow who conforms to that society is in no vast trouble. Perhaps some bloke who has a military record against them, and that sort of thing, might possibly (no matter what he did) find himself unable to satisfactorily conform. But the point is that their ideal is the conformist.

Now, these conformists are pretty weird, and the personnel of that particular society is pretty scummy, to say the least. Let's supposing you were in the last shambling wreckages of a red-light district: you'd have high-toned personnel, compared to the personnel which makes up the other planets I'm talking to you about. High-toned personnel, much higher toned than their average run. They practice cannibalism. The stuff you get on race tracks – once in a

while some pc will run into race tracks and race-track drivers – this Roman-circus-type entertainment, don't you see? All that kind of stuff – that's all out of this zone and area. We're still with that planetary system.

So, they specialize in the fellow who will conform. Now, he ordinarily is a "worker" who is content to draw wages and not do another single, blessed thing – you know, never really get up, improve his lot, you see, and keep on plugging along somehow, or even slump into indigence. He's still their choice of personnel. So this leaves, this leaves the brilliant artist, the brilliant engineer, the manager, the genius, the criminal, the pervert, non *persona grata*.

And they sentence these people – the upper class (that is to say, the brighter gent) because they can't control him and they're afraid of him, and the lower class because it's too vicious even for them – and they condemn these people to perpetual amnesia. "Dead forever," they call it – the problem of killing a thetan – and wrap them up in mothballs and ship them down here, and here we are. And that is the population of this planet.

All right. Here's a population, then, of minimal workers, maximal managers, artists, geniuses, criminals and perverts. What you going to make out of this lot, huh?

Now, those are the blokes you're talking to when you say "Add up the left-hand column of the ledger." Well, of course, the artist says he could add it up much more prettily. The guy who actually, in his own right, was a very skilled manager, he says he could devise a much better system – it's true, too; he probably could. If the bird is a criminal, he's just sitting there trying to figure out how he can add it up so he can short you. And there's your zone of operation; there is your response to 8-C in trying to get an organization running. It's all alter-is, because the basic crime was nonconforming. The basic crime wasn't being a criminal; the basic crime was not conforming.

Well, actually, this group has gone ahead and made up, up until recent times, a totally different civilization than the civilization which planted it here. In the last ten thousand years, they have gone on with a sort of a decadent, kicked-in-the-head civilization that contains automobiles, business suits, fedora hats, telephones, spaceships – quite interesting, but a civilization which looks an almost exact duplicate, but is worse off than the current US civilization.

Therefore, you find the current US and Western civilization rather restimulative, because it has moved up to look like the Marcabian civilization.

It's been moving up here rather rapidly. And now we're at a point, a very high level of restimulation, because the automobile design, the train design, ship design (why, they've got ships in those areas, look just like the *Queen Mary*, you see?), and the fire engines and the stuff you do with men's clothes particularly – all of these things are the same image. So you're going into a highly restimulative era, because we've not had this before. See? We've been moving up through strata of civilization, but we hadn't matched this one. And remember that this society at the present time looks dangerous; it looks very dangerous.

One of the highest crimes you could pull in that Marcabian society, probably even today, is income tax; you make one comma wrong and it's "dead forever." Sounds weird, does-

n't it? So, they got everybody paying income tax – awful restimulative. Probably nothing much wrong with income tax if it were administered as a tax, but it isn't; it's administered as a punishment, even on this planet today. Well, it's one of their prime punishments in the Marcabian civilization.

All of this adds up to what? An era, going on right now, of highly restimulative associations in the civilization, and therefore a high-felt level of danger. People feel like they are in danger. Scientologists, every once in a while, hearing me talk like this, feel even more in danger. They say, "Boy, those guys are liable to land here tomorrow," you know?

Of course, I pull this every once in a while. Diana suddenly appeared on my right side last night while eating dinner (and I didn't even know she was in the room, you see?), and just out of the corner of my eye, I saw a pair of white spots that looked like the spats a spaceman uses, you know? And for a split second I said, "Well, here they are," you know? [laughs, laughter]

But anyway, you should realize that the material on the between-lives area has been much more broadly circulated than any of our material is now, because it was laid down the line in all directions, to the most unlikely places (including Russia), and was contained in the book *What to Audit* and other materials, and that was 1951 and 52. I consider that's interesting, because let me point out to you, that's eleven or twelve years ago and there hasn't been a ripple. I just want to point that out to you as an interesting point.

No, gents of this character who have a system worked out this way would – the last thing in the world they'd do would be blow their own game, see? All they'd have to do is land one spaceship, and they feel like everybody would go into a convulsion of suddenly remembering everything. And they do, do you know? Any rumor of the men from Mars or something like that and this planet goes into a total convulsion.

They produced Orson Welles's broadcast down in Quito (I think it was), Ecuador, and – the radio station there, I think a seventeen-story building or large building, or whatever the figures were on it – and mobs tore that building to pieces and killed seventeen people in the process. They practically slaughtered the staff of that radio station. In other words, they went mad.

So they know that great riots are attended by this, but a landing in force without any equivocation that it had been a landing of some type, or like this, would be liable to restore everybody's memory. I think that's what they feel. Whether this is true or not, we couldn't worry less.

But here you are; that is the point. Here you are; that is this planet.

Every once in a while you get mad at government on this planet, when in actual fact you're mad at the Marcabian government. And there's a great deal of confusion. Every once in a while somebody will get awfully furious with an organization, very furious with an organization here on this planet, when they have actually identified the organization with the Marcabian civilization.

Now, you start hitting people here with restimulative materials of this particular type, and it restimulates a terrific unreality; it restimulates amnesia.

I have to ask you this: How hard do you have to hit somebody to bring about amnesia? Let's take Joe out here and let's just see how hard do we have to hit Joe in order to bring about amnesia on his part so he doesn't know who he is, where he is, or anything else. How hard would we have to hit him? Boy, that's pretty hard. It's almost unbelievable force is used to handle a thetan and put him into this kind of condition. I've been hit with some awful heavy force in this universe without losing my mind or forgetting who I am, see? So it's pretty heavy duress. And you restimulate that very easily by telling people things. It gets awful unreal.

But you would find, if you gave them the actual dope, that they would be far more in agreement with you than if you gave them just a touch of the dope, do you see? You won't find the citizens of this planet very far in disagreement with what you're doing. So, therefore, you've got some kind of an explosion going.

Well, these guys are not going to blow their own show. See? They're not going to do anything peculiar about it. They've probably got us all sized up, if they know anything about us at all. They probably have some dim idea of what we're doing, and saying, "Oh, yes. Ho-hum." And give the devil his due: They might even say, "Well, hey, what do you know? Those guys might be producing a type of technology which we ourselves desperately need." Look at that.

See, now, they know the problems exist. They couldn't have had any decent solution, or they wouldn't have taken the route to solution which they have. They are beings, too; remember that.

So when we look at all this: you are (1) organizationally handling people who are revolutionaries. They are nonconformists. Probably the common denominator of this planet is revolution. Probably the one thing you could always start on this planet would be a revolution, because it's a state of perpetual revolution. Trying to hold any organization together of any kind whatsoever becomes almost impossible, because everybody you're dealing with is a nonconformist.

All right. So far goes the civilization. There are just those few statements on the thing I thought you might find of interest.

We're dealing now with "What is an auditor?"

You are handling, therefore, the roughest case that you could find in the universe, because the rehabilitation of the individual demands that you rehabilitate his knowingness. If his knowingness does not increase independently, he himself does not get well. You see, electrical charge on the case is simply a symptom that measures his knowingness. If he's got too much charge, his knowingness is way down. See, that's an indirect measure of the amount of knowingness of the individual.

And as the case moves along up the line, you get an odd factor. You get an odd factor: This case continues progressively to remember more. Now, one of the things the case recovers is picture memory, remembering by pictures. "I have a picture of, so therefore I was." See, you can call that a picture memory and that goes from a terrific unreality on it down to a pretty good certainty on it. So a person at that stage of the game – an advanced stage of the game in inspecting his own pictures – can tell the difference between a false picture and an

actual picture that has something to do, really, with him on his track. And as his knowingness increases, he can tell you where it belongs and what date it has and so on. In other words, he can spot it, bang! That's an increased knowingness. It's knowingness that is increasing all the way along the line.

Now, from picture memory, the individual graduates up to simply knowing.

Now, right now, you don't have to get a picture of where you are living to know where you live. You see that? You don't have to get a picture of your name to know what your name is. In other words, you know this. Well, so does knowingness increase as the case improves, and that knowingness increases up the line to a point where you know who you have been and where you have been, independent of any created evidence or cross-proof. You simply know. And that factor is a very slow factor to rise; it's not a rapid factor. Under present auditing, yes, it is rapid, but that is all within a framework of hundreds of hours, don't you see?

Now, I'll give you an idea – an idea of this. For instance, I know – I know where I was and who I was – I know dimly – pardon me, I know with good certainty, who I was and where I was in the last eighty trillion years. See, I know that; that's not much of an argument with me. But the small details of that are liable to go fritter-fritter here and there. You know, what did I have for breakfast two trillion years ago? No. Nix, man. Nah. Did I even eat, you see? That sort of thing is getting pretty dim.

But now, over the top of that, which is an identity knowingness – which comes before a detail knowingness, you see; between your picture knowingness and your total knowingness is this stage of just knowing your identity – why, then, this detail knowingness starts to come up and follow in on this smaller basis. And one of your gains on it: you'll know why you were here. You'll have tangled with it in session and that sort of thing, and you'll have picked data out of pictures. And all at once, it will just get – more and more you *know* why you were here. You know how you got here. You know what you were doing ten thousand years ago, do you see? You know what was happening 11,025 years ago, don't you see? You – no pictures involved; you just know it.

And that is the restoration of the beingness of the person, and I have given you (in a very crude way here) a cycle of that restoration of beingness. His beingness returns to him gradually, bit by bit. Perhaps the lowest edge of it is something on the idea of "Maybe I possibly could know who I was," you know? "Possibly I could know what I am doing here, or I might even be able to know who I am." Just some sort of a feeling like one might be able to know. And that crawls up forward to a picture knowingness, and the unreality of those pictures at first is fabulous. So that anybody shows you any kind of a picture, man, any kind of a picture, that is – must be yours, and therefore you must have been there.

They could show you a picture of an airplane falling apart and you at once say, "Well, I must have been in that airplane falling apart." And later on you suddenly realize, "Hell, I'm looking at that airplane from two miles away. What am I doing looking at it from two miles away?" This dawns on you after a while. Your valence problem all of a sudden comes up; it hits you in the face, whether you're coaxed to do it by the auditor or not. "I'm in that airplane, see, over there, two miles away," see? "So, therefore, I must have had an awful fall."

And it turns out, eventually – you'd begin to see this thing – you say, "Hey, wait a minute. I couldn't have been in that airplane. It was somebody I shot down; maybe it's somebody I did this with." And then you'll finally say, "Well, shucks. That thing is just a false picture. That isn't my picture at all." And then whatever picture of yours is holding it in suspense, that picture suddenly peels off the front of it like a badly painted chromo, and *pshew!* and your own picture is right behind it. And you say, "Oh, *yerp!* there I was," and you're in valence. That various cycle of recognition takes place in this picture line.

But what does it take, then, to bring about such a total amnesia? Let's look at that: What does it take to bring about such a total amnesia? I was riding a spaceship down one day. Side gaskets of the tubes blew out on one side and wiped out the engine-room crew. I went in to drag them out just at the moment when the whole backblast of the rockets moved frontwards through the engine room, and got hit square in the face and managed to crawl out of the place. The ship went into the atmosphere, melted and crashed. And a couple of minutes or, oh, a couple of seconds after it hit, all of its fuel went up and hit me in the face. And I lost my memory; I lost my memory. It took me quite a while, sitting down very quietly, to remember where base was. And I sat there and figured and figured and figured. Actually, I'd sent some people back to come and pick up the wreckage and so forth, and I was pretty foggy. And very shortly, I snapped out of it. You know, "Of course!" you know?

But just – how much force is force? Well, this is the type of scout craft which has the engines of a battle cruiser all packed into a very tight spot, you see, and all of it red-hot fuel. Cape Canaveral has got nothing like the amount of force one of those things can deliver, don't you see? And to get all of that square in your thetan puss twice, and get confused about where base was. Got the idea?

And how much force has it taken to destroy somebody's memory? It's interesting. An interesting point, isn't it? Well, that's how much force you've been subjected to. Otherwise you wouldn't have a case. I'm not trying to make you afraid of force. You get up to a point after a while as a thetan – force-smorce, who cares?

I had a funny feeling the other day. I didn't quite feel up to diving into the sun. I just didn't feel up to it; I didn't feel it would be a healthy thing for me to do just now. I felt weak. And I felt the interactive forces of the sun, and I felt sort of drawn a little bit toward the sun, and I said, "No." I sort of did a suppress and looked the other way. I just didn't feel like taking a sun bath today. You get the idea, you know? You feel queasy. Too much force – too much force.

Well now, that force, of course, has to be combined with trickery, and the trickery is mostly scrambling somebody's dates and giving them opposite, opposing items that can suspend in time, so that the scrambled dates will suspend in time. You get the combinations; you know them in our various technologies.

But let's not move away from the point into the trickery of it; it does require the force. Force. How much force does it take to destroy the memory of a being? Well, that's how much force an auditor is getting off a case. And of course you'd much rather get off unknowingness and oddities and oddball things; you'd much rather, because they're easier to confront than raw force. And they're easier for the pc to confront, too.

Therefore, you say, "What have you done?"

And your pc said, "Well, I had a hostile thought about you the other day. I thought you really should do your hair up in back."

Oh, good – we've got a big withhold off. You get the gentle pat-a-cake that you will sometimes see in auditing sessions. The proper auditing response, of course, is "Well, thank you very much," and so forth. And O/W is a bit different than other brands of auditing. You say, "What have you done, done, done?" And if you work very, very hard, you can get a done in all these thinks. You see, behind all these critical thinks is a done, is an actual action. And you can listen to critical thinks till the cow comes home, and you will never get anybody raised up the line, until you've found an actual action. That is the secret of all Sec Checking, and that is where people fall down in Sec Checking.

Now, why do they fall down? Well, it's much easier to confront this random little think than it is the energy contained in a done. Do you see that?

Therefore, the mission of an auditor is the restoration of a person's awareness, which includes his memory, his knowingness of himself and so forth. Restoration of awareness. What is holding down that awareness? What is holding down this knowingness? What is sitting on this knowingness? Well, you can say trickery and force, but it is force used with trickery, so that an individual will get an ARC break with force and then become the effect of force.

So you're handling, in actual fact, somebody who has lots of ARC breaks with other beings, matter, energy, space, time and location and form. That is in direct definition: this person is out of comm, out of affinity and out of reality with matter, energy, space, time, location, other beings and form.

Now, that's the pc. So what's an auditor? So what's an auditor? Well, an auditor has to be somebody who can release this tremendously involved force, somebody who can release this force from the pc. Obviously, if it's a deranged force which is bringing about the amnesia of the pc, then the auditor, to get a return of memory of the pc, has to be capable of alleviating and removing that force. I mean, that's simple. Simple. Elementary, my dear Watson.

On your E-Meter you have a tone arm. Force is removing itself from the case as long as that tone arm is in motion. And the wiggle-waggle of the tone arm as the pc is being audited tells you that force is being relieved from the case.

When you start to remove force that is aberrated by some trickery, your tone arm hangs up until the trickery is resolved, you know, wrong date or something like that – and your tone arm action is restored. All of these things are all cared for in the processes and technologies of auditing. But if that TA isn't moving, you will never make an OT. That's just it.

Now, you oddly enough do not have to run a process, sometimes, to get the TA moving. Providing the TA is moving – providing the TA is moving and you get good motion out of your tone arm – a person will eventually go Operating Thetan. Providing you can keep the tone arm moving, the person will eventually go Operating Thetan. If the tone arm is not moving, the person will not go Operating Thetan and the case may even deteriorate.

Let's just run this case on and on. The case can run an engram, and so you keep running engrams, engrams, engrams, engrams, and the tone arm is stuck right up here at somewhere in the vicinity of 5. And there it sticks at 5, and you go on and audit and audit and audit; and there it is at 5, and there it is at 5, and there it is at 5, and there it is at 5. Uh-hah – you're never going to make an Operating Thetan.

Now, if you run the right significances off the case and produce tone arm action, you make an OT much quicker. But you can get tone arm action without running the right significances. Get this syllogism here? And you can run the right significances without getting tone arm action. Oh, well, you can run R3R on somebody who can't handle R3R, and you can run all the right significances and not get into tone arm action; you're not going to make an OT.

Now, let me go over this again now and you'll see where you sit with regard to a tone arm. If you just keep a tone arm moving on the pc long enough, regardless of how and what you're auditing on the case, the case will eventually make OT. But if you run the right significances – if you run the right significances – and don't get any tone arm action, you're not going to make an OT.

You got that now? This is terribly important.

Now, it might take thousands and thousands of hours just to randomly keep this tone arm moving on the pc. And lots of pcs can talk forever, you know, without getting any tone arm action. But if you could keep that TA moving, you'd eventually get OT. So you say, then, that a moving tone arm is slightly senior to the right significance.

Now, this is right down to bedrock on the subject of auditing. Your job is to keep the TA moving.

Now, what's this TA doing? The TA is indicating the blowing off of force. That is a measure of the amount of encysted force which is leaving the case – the amount of encysted force leaving the case. You've got a measure of it right there. It goes up and down, and it measures the amount of force which is going.

Now, of course, you don't do this arithmetically or mathematically. I imagine someday, one of these days, why, we will. We'll set up a project that measures some guy from scratch, right straight through to the end, shows the exact number of motions of the TA on every process or type of process that is run on the person, and these are all added together. And we say there's this many hundred million ergs of energy were released, and at the end of that line we had an OT. But that is in essence what you're doing; you're blowing the force, because the more force is blown off the case the less amnesia the case has.

Does it make sense to you now?

Audience: Yes.

Force created the amnesia and you got to blow it to get rid of the amnesia. Now, there's an interesting one-for-one.

Now, the amount of time in processing, the amount of time in processing is enormously speeded up if you run the right significances, because you're running the force off early track, and you start to get force release which you don't see on the meter. Now, let's not

say that if the tone arm isn't moving, it's all okay; the tone arm is *also* moving when this happens.

I was sitting down in session one day, and I could feel – I could feel energy masses disintegrating clear out to Arcturus. It sure wasn't registering on the meter. If it had, there wouldn't have been any more of an E-Meter here; there'd have just been charred wire. You get the idea? It was blowing off all over the place.

Every once in a while we'll get a blowdown phenomenon. Well, when you see that blowdown, *pshew, pshew, pshew, pshew, pshew* – I'm talking about a repetitive down, see? You can see that needle go *pshew, pshew, pshew, pshew, pshew*; it just keeps doing it, and your tone arm is drifting lower and lower and lower. You're watching a remote force area blow up.

Now, if all this force blew up against the pc's face and the pc's body, he wouldn't have any more body than a rabbit. It's pretty hard to do research auditing and keep a body over you. It is, because you make one little mistake here and another mistake there and chew into a GPM someplace else, the next thing you know, there goes this and there goes that, and your right ear looks like a pretzel. Anyhow, the point I'm making here is that your force measured through the E-Meter is only a part of the force which is blowing off the case. But if any force is blowing off the case, you have an additional movement of the tone arm. So if a tone arm is moving you're blowing force, and if a tone arm is not moving you're not blowing force. And that's all you have to know about it.

Now, there are several significances that can keep a tone arm from moving, such as wrong time and an ARC break situation where the pc is out of comm and a few things like this. But we're not now discussing the no-motion tone arm; we're discussing a motion tone arm.

Therefore it is of great interest to an auditor, then, to make that tone arm move. And to make it move all he can make it move. And your most fundamental method of making a tone arm move is not running a process. It is the basic definition of an auditor: a listener. The basic way to let a tone arm – get a tone arm move is to listen, and that is the fundamental of auditing.

Now, somebody could probably talk for a thousand years and never say the right things, and you wouldn't get any tone arm motion. But, similarly, how many pcs talk and get tone arm motion from doing so and are shut up or cut off by the auditor? Ha-ha-ho-ho-ho. Now, there is an inhibition of blowing clear. The auditor is not then doing his job; an auditor is setting up a barrier to blowing mass. And you'll find out the pc winds up at the end of the session stupider. At the end of session, he can remember less than he could remember at the beginning of session.

Why? Well, you've done something with the force. You have moved it out of the bank and dumped it on the thetan's head. Oh, it'll destimulate; it'll go out of restimulation and all that sort of thing.

The basic definition of an auditor is: to listen. He's a listener. His basic job is to listen, not to restimulate.

All right. Now, we stand around and we say, "Well, the Marcabians are gonna get you tomorrow, man, and the size of the between-lives-area screen is 180 feet by 9 feet," and so forth. And people sit there and they go *dzzzz*. That's doing what? That's charging them up, isn't it? That's charging them up. Well, actually, they talk it over, one with another, and usually blow the charge.

It's not a grave matter; it's not a difficult matter at all. Their knowingness increases, and they feel all right about it and so forth. Well, we get away with that.

Why? Because we can talk to one another about it, that's why. The only method of blowing reactive charge is by a communication line – there is no other method – by a communication line. I think that's very interesting.

Here's the auditor, and he's supposed to listen. And the only way the pc can possibly get rid of the charge is blow it by the communication line.

Now, this doesn't mean, oddly enough, that he's blowing it at the auditor. He isn't blowing it at the auditor. But that he can communicate it does cause it to dissipate, and it doesn't hit either the auditor or the pc. If the auditor wants to get hit by the charge, he should put up a barrier to prevent it from blowing, and the pc has an ARC break; and the next thing you know, the auditor is hit by the charge. You can set up a situation whereby the auditor is hit by the charge, but only if he stops the charge.

How do you get rid of charge? Now, get what I just said. How do you get rid of charge? I didn't say how do you handle charge, restimulate charge or anything like that: just how do you get rid of it? Listen. That's how you get rid of it. Listen. Elementary, my dear Watson.

Now, all therapies since time immemorial have consisted of listening – one way or the other. He is a sympathetic person, and people tell their troubles to him and very often feel a lot better. Well, all of that is very well, and you can add that up to a short-circuited look at auditing, but remember, this factor entered in: was the pc, or was the patient, talking with tone arm action? Oh, that's the difference. Or was the pc just nattering or was the pc lying or something? You let a pc sit there and lie, or a patient sit there and lie for a while, and you're going to have one of the stuckest tone arms you ever wanted to see.

So that is the essence of the thing. An auditor is somebody who listens with tone arm action. That's the difference. But remember, the fundamental of all mental activities was listening. Prayer is based on "God will hear me." And if there's no OTs around, who is going to hear him?

Actually, the lama got so disgusted with this that he put all of his praying on automatic; he puts them on a little wheel. He can turn the wheel and it goes *brrrrrrp* and a thousand prayers go up, and he's got that cared for. And I'll bet you his tone arm, it didn't move a bit. [laughter]

So an auditor has the job, and auditing consists, of restimulating a charge (that's the auditing command received by the pc) and then letting the pc blow the charge that is restimulated on the return communication line. Simple, isn't it? I'll draw you a picture of this thing. You needn't take a very accurate copy of this because this is an HCOB (I think 4 August), and

I'm having it squared around. But I'll draw you this thing. Here's cause-distance-effect. That is a communication cycle. And here is the auditor and here is the pc. The auditor utters an auditing command, and it goes across this distance and hits something. What's it hit? The pc? No, it hits the reactive bank, that accumulated mass of force which the pc is packing around that is always kicking his head in. And we get what is known as restimulation at this point. There we are; we get a restim. There's the living lightning.

Pow! goes the auditing command. We know this guy is very sensitive to snakes, so the auditor says, "Recall a snake." Pow! See? Bang! Well, now, of course if we're in some kind of a weird situation whereby we're fighting the pc, why, we're not restimulating the bank. We're just trying to get the pc to fight us or something like that; we're not – it hasn't anything to do with auditing. Just forget that. The auditor's address actually is to the reactive bank, and he says, "Recall a snake." *Bow!* Now we get a communication line: bank-distance-effect. And here we have the pc – thetan.

And the pc says, "Hey, what do you know! There is a snake in there." And he goes: cause-distance-effect, and that's the end of that. This line must follow in, to take care of the charge restimulated in your first line.

Cause-distance-effect: that's the auditing command. *Bow!* There's the charge. He recalls the snake. *Boom!* It starts to hit the thetan and the thetan recognizes it, knows what it is and imparts that information on his cause-distance-effect line, back to the auditor. And there goes auditing. Your cycle then occurs, and the charge is blown. And you see it reacting on the E-Meter as blown.

These are not all the communication cycles there are in an auditing cycle, but this doesn't happen to be a lecture on that. I'm showing the principal action of these basic lines.

Now, remember that life is always giving him commands that restimulates things – here at E, on the pc. This is our old PTP and other things of that character. If you don't believe that, put in your "since" mid ruds on the pc and see how superior your tone arm action is. Usually get marvelous tone arm action on "since" mid ruds unless the pc is protesting them and wants to get on with the session. And you get marvelous tone arm action.

Well, that's just the restimulated charge that's been slapped at him out of this mucked-up bank that he is gratuitously handed, in full restimulation with much added force, in every between-lives session he's had with the little boys elsewhere. He's trying to blow that charge. So he comes into session, and he sometimes will sit there and talk to you for quite a while; and the tone arm would just move and move and move and move. He's getting rid of the between-sessions charges. Interesting, isn't it?

You notice, after he's talked for fifteen, twenty minutes sometime – even somebody who has had a big upset on the thing, you've got in your "since" mid ruds (or you haven't gotten in your "since" mid ruds), you notice that your tone arm action dies down. And then suddenly, mysteriously, the pc is in-session.

What's happened? You've emptied this reservoir of restimulation which life has handed him, restimulated in him during the session – between sessions, you see? And you've

emptied that thing out. Now, you want to know why your pc doesn't go into session sometimes. Well, he's just – he's got a lot of restimulated charge that is all ready to fall back.

Now, you've got "Is it kinder to audit somebody one hour a week or twenty-five hours a week?" Well, of course there is no comparison, because in the one hour you can't even get rid of life's restimulative action in this reservoir here at all, so you spend that one hour indifferently getting rid of three days of the week which you're trying to cover, don't you see? And it's a losing proposition. There's a make-break point in auditing where a person has to be audited enough to get rid of this charge which is being consistently and continually restimulated. Got that?

Well now, this line here then – this lower line with the pc at cause answering this question back to the auditor, who in this case is at effect: then that line must have some seniority to the upper line. The auditor cause-distance-effect, then, is not quite as important as – they're both terribly important – but is not quite as important as the line, cause-distant-effect, to the pc. In other words, between the seniority of the two lines (both in the same order of magnitude), you'll find that the pc's line to the auditor is slightly more important than the auditor's line to the pc.

And in this line of cause-distance-effect to the pc – in that line and an inspection of that line – you will find all auditing failures, providing any process at all that we have has been run. In other words, if a case was loused up by auditing, we don't inspect the process run as the first consideration. We inspect the tone arm as the consideration, because if you got good tone arm motion running that process, then that bottom line – the C-distance-E of the pc – was in.

Now, we've had processes for years. It's true, our processes have to be very neat. They have to be very important. And they restimulate the exact amount of charge that then blows the outer bank charge and so forth, and it's all figured out very neatly. And on some pcs it's almost impossible to get tone arm action; and you have to know what stops tone arm action; you have to know all of these various things.

But I'm now just talking about the fundamentals of auditing; and we inspect on a failed case the C–E (the C-distance-E) of the pc, not the process run. That's the first thing we'd inspect: Was the auditor auditing?

Now, anybody could sit there and say, "Recall a snake, recall a snake."

And the pc says, "Well, I..."

"Well, that's all right. Just don't bother with that. Recall a snake, recall a snake," and all of a sudden the pc is *da-da, da-da-da*, you know? And he's swamped.

All right. What happens in a case like that? Well, this is very, very easy. This restimulation, when the pc puts it on this line, goes bang! straight back at the pc. Got it? When that line goes out, where else can it go? It's only got one place to go, and that's the pc. So whatever you restimulate in a pc comes home on the pc, unless it is picked up on the reverse communication line.

Now, the penalties of this: the first symptom of the pc's cause-distance-effect line – the first symptom of its disappearance is a *dirty needle*. You can go down any line of auditors who are busy auditing, right down any line of auditors, and watch their meters.

You don't even have to listen to them. You just see a dirty needle, bang! this line's out: the auditor isn't listening. The first definition of auditor is missing.

Pc is saying, "Well, that's a snake. I – snake – well, there was one in a zoo *urm-uh-uh-urm*. I think it was a zoo – there was one in a zoo..."

The auditor said, "Okay! Thank you! Good! Good! Thank you! Thank you! Good! Recall a snake."

And the pc said, "Well, *um-sfla-sflassle* hum. Yes, yes."

"Good! Good! Thank you!"

Got this nonsense? He's just backing up all the charge of the process on the pc.

Ah, I see some of you have seen this happen. What occurs then? Well, frankly – frankly, in time, the C with the pc at cause-distance-effect line, in terms of time (the one here from the pc over to the auditor) may take upwards to a hundred times as much time in the session as the line C–E from the auditor. Oh! It only took three seconds to ask that question "Recall a snake."

And the pc says, "Mmm" and "Mmm." He finally says, "Was it in a zoo? I don't know. Zoo?" and so on. What you're seeing is identification turning into differentiation. You're seeing force and charge blow off. The pc is inspecting this thing. And the tone arm moves, and it keeps moving, it keeps moving; and the pc says, well, he doesn't know and so on. Was it a green snake or a blue snake? He's not quite sure if it was a green snake or a blue snake and so on. He can't recall a snake and so forth and so on. "Snakes – nightmare about a snake – but was that recalling a snake? – if – I'm not quite sure on it. There was one down at the zoo when I was a little – yeah, yeah, I got one. Yeah. Yeah, it was a green snake. Oh, yeah. Yeah. There was one. Yeah. Houston Zoo. Yeah. Got it. Got one: a green snake at Houston Zoo, when I was eight. Ha-ha."

And you will see the cycle of the blowing force on your meter (tone arm) accompany returning knowingness on the part of the pc.

And the more you get that thing wobbling, the more positive the pc sounds. You just watch that, because that in itself is a little tiny proof of what I'm saying, is as you get the force off, the pc's knowingness comes back. And you can see it in one cycle.

One auditing cycle: the pc says, "Snake? My God. I'd never – oh, a snake, what snake? Where? What? Why? I'll – oh, *so-sss* – I'm – I guess there was. See, where do they keep – now, I just, why, yeah I was in a zoo at one time. Yeah, there are zoos. Let's see, now... so on and so on. Zoos, and I must have been in a zoo sometime or another. Zoos – when I was a little bo – well, they used to take me to a zoo when I was a little boy. The zoo – the snake house. Oh, yeah. There must have been one in the snake house and so forth. That – yeah, they had a glass, and so forth, see. Yeah. Yeah, I used to be fascinated by some cage in there. Let's

see, I can – I got – yeah. They – it was a glass-fronted ca – they had a green snake in there. Oh, I remember now. Yeah, I was eight. Yeah." *Bing, bang!* He knows!

You've pulled him up all the way through the force that tells him he doesn't know, up to a point where he knows. And you think it winds up with his simply seeing the picture clearly. No, no, he goes all the way through the picture stage which I have just given you. You understand?

Audience: Yes. Yeah.

Now, these two lines have names, regardless of what they will be called on your – the comm cycles of your auditing cycles; they have numbers on the auditing cycle – but they have nice, colloquial names that you can remember very easily. And this is the *whatsit* line, and this is the *itsa* line. Now, the *whatsit* line is from the auditor to the pc, and the auditor is saying, "What's it?" He says, "Recall a snake," you know? "What's it?"

And the pc says *fumble, fumble, fumble, fumble*. He's looking for an *itsa*, see?

"It's a green snake, Houston Zoo." That's the *itsa*. And you'll see the tone arm blow down when he hits it, too.

So your tone arm, then, follows this pattern; your tone arm follows this pattern. Here is your tone arm here – two tone arms. And here is (this is already in HCOB August 4) – here's your regular tone arm positions, and here is a nice solid arm, and here is a dotted arm; and here's an arrow showing the motion as up from 3 to 4, and that's a *whatsit*. You got that? We haven't quite determined the low-tone-arm case, but I think they run in reverse. But that's a *whatsit*; that's the upward throw of the tone arm. That's *whatsit*.

The pc says, "Let's see, snake, snake, wha-what-what-whatsa. Recall a snake. It's a – let's see – wha – ." He's saying *whatsa, whatsa, whatsa, whatsa, whatsa, whatsa, see?* And you'll see that tone arm go up. And then he'll get a little bit of an *itsa*, and you will see the tone arm go down. And your tone arm, dotted at 4, falling to solid at 3, and that's *itsa*.

And you, frankly, can monitor a pc's tone arm on one question like mad. He has an ARC break with somebody, and he sees that there's some difference... some similarity, or he thinks maybe he knows somebody who looked like the person he had an ARC break with. This would be a research test. See, he sees – he knows now already that there's some similar incident earlier, that he's got this person associated with somebody he shouldn't have it associated with – got an identification going. And you say, "Well, what reminded you" – well, you don't even know who that earlier person is, see? but "What reminded you (in the person you had the ARC break with), now, what reminded you of the person in the past?" See? *Whatsa*. And you see that pc's tone arm go right up. You say, "*Whatsa?*" Tone arm goes up.

The pc says *figure, figure, figure, figure, figure, figure, figure, figure* "Was it his – was it his tie, his shirt? His – it's a – tie, shirt. Yup. Or is it – there some way he held – I think it was the way he must've held his head." Then you'll get an *itsa*. And it'll go right down: "Yes, just think it was the way he held his head."

And you say, "Well, was there anything else?" *Whatsa?* And it'll go right up. It goes right into the *whatsit*.

And the pc says, "Well, it could've been – it could've been the way – way he – way – the – he'd stand there, the kind of clothes he was wearing – must've been the kind of clothes he was wearing." Itsa. And down comes the tone arm.

And you actually can sit there as an auditor and control the motion of the tone arm. You can control it. You can say "Whatsa?" and every time you give him a whatsa, you'll see it goes up. And make sure he gives you a full itsa. And then feed back in again another fragment of the whatsa, see? And up, up goes the tone arm again. And he gives you the itsa, and down comes the tone arm again. And you can just sit there and call your shots. (That's a research project; you normally wouldn't handle comm like that.)

But you'll see it in running almost any process. When you say whatsa, up she goes. And you – he says itsa, and down she comes. So, you say "What's it?" to the pc, and you get the up arm. That charge is restimulated and unresolved, and that high tone arm shows you restimulated but unresolved charge. It's sitting there in the bullpen; it's sitting there in the reservoir, and it's going to hit somebody or something. And the pc plows through this charge that's been restimulated here, and he puts it over on this line and he says itsa. And if he's permitted to give you the itsa line, then the charge channels right – doesn't hit the auditor; it just disintegrates, see? And there it goes. Boom! It's gone. You see that?

So auditing is a repetitive... the crudest auditing cycle is the whatsit – itsa; whatsit – itsa; whatsit – itsa. And of course it doesn't take any time to say whatsit, and sometimes takes quite a while to say itsa. So, consequently, this line is much more prone to be out than the upper line – than the whatsa line.

Definition of an auditor: to listen.

Now, you're handling a case: if you knew Scientology in the Galactic Confederation at this particular moment, man, they'd practically put you on a throne, see? Cases! Well, boo. You take some of the old Route 1, and you say, "All right. Be three feet back of your doll. All right. Be on planet A, planet B, planet A, planet E, planet A, planet B. Got it? You're getting along fine. Planet A, planet B. Good. OT. Thank you."

Guy would say, "Gosh. You know, this is terrific" – provided you listened. Guy'd say, "This is terrific. I feel much better now. I don't see why I have to be pinned in that doll's head. I'm going around getting my sergeant's stripes as an OT."

The situation would be very different from what you're operating with. The character of the pc you're operating with is operating under an enforced and continuously each life reinforced amnesia. And if the course of the case upward is to knowingness, think of what stands in your road auditing an Earth case. And if you were up around in some other locales, it would be about the same difference as right now auditing an Earth case; you would sort of feel odd as – how the hell do you audit an ant? Do you see? Well, it'd be that same gap between an Earth case and an ant, as a case of more or less a free thetan out there in space (who doesn't have your technology) and an Earth case. Do you see that?

So I can feel for you, trying to get wins on the cases you're trying to get wins on, but you should recognize what type of case you're trying to get wins on and should recognize where your line is breaking down. Now, I have never been able to describe this to you as suc-

cinctly as this. I myself wasn't making much of this mistake; it didn't call too much to my attention what it is, but it must have been there if the original word which identifies you, *auditor*, means listen – must have been there all the time, well understood.

Now, what's the course of having that line out? What's the source – course of it? Here's, first, (1) dirty needle; (2) stuck TA; (3) ARC break. One, two, three – as inevitable as nonsense from Washington. One, two, three – just like that. If your pc has a dirty needle, a stuck tone arm is incipient on that case. It's liable to happen any minute. Man, you're already three-quarters of the way over the cliff! In fact, the beginning of the piercing, dwindling scream is about to sound. And your ARC break will follow immediately afterwards: bypassed charge.

The most fruitful source of bypassed charge, then, is the itsa line – just it. And that's all – that line.

That is the most fruitful source of bypassed charge, then: Restimulate an engram, don't let the pc tell you about it; restimulate an engram, don't let the pc tell you about it; restimulate an engram, don't let the pc tell you about it; restimulate an engram, don't let the pc tell you about it. If you haven't got an ARC break by that time, the pc must have been dead to begin with!

Do you see that simply by filling up this reservoir full of charge and then not putting in the itsa line – not letting the pc tell you all about it – you're bypassing charge? This is elementary.

That gives you a change in your auditing training program at Level W. At Level W we're going to teach an auditor to be an auditor. We're going to teach them to listen before they restimulate anything. Life restimulates quite a bit of charge. The auditor should at least be able to handle that.

Level I – Scientology I auditing – will consist, then, mainly of listening. You see his TA stop moving, you must have seen earlier a DN and not noticed it. So therefore, if you see a DN, you know that your TA motion soon is going to cease. It may not be the exact next session; it may take two sessions for it to really stop. Two sessions of the same kind of treatment, see? And you know, that's going to wind up in an ARC break.

These people who are ARC breaky pcs are not ARC breaky pcs; there is no such thing. There are only auditors who don't listen. It's very simple. It's very elementary.

I don't wish to give you too much stress on this, because you're liable to go completely overboard and just sit there and let your pc do nothing but talk. But the only crime that you can commit on letting the pc talk – the only crime you can commit – is if the pc doesn't move his tone arm by talking. Pc is talking for a while, and you see that the tone arm isn't moving: Well, you go on letting him talk forever, you're foolish, because the case is getting no-place.

And this question will come up: The pc is motivatoring, motivatoring, motivatoring, nattering, nattering, nattering. First question that was thrown at me. We had a student here one time that only talked in motivators – didn't talk English, talked motivators. [laughter] And the question – question was asked of me, "Well, what if we just let that person talk?" Well, in the first place, she never would have gotten any TA as a result of all this talk. And the other

thing – she was already in an ARC break! Do you follow that? You don't let people talk when they're in an ARC break: you find what the bypassed charge is. Because your itsa line has already gone so far out that it won't put itself back in.

So you say "When shouldn't you let a pc talk?" No TA action or the pc already in an ARC break. The time to do, then, is act.

And the no TA action: Well, let's give them another auditing command or something like that, but that normally isn't what's wrong when you get stuck TA in that particular fashion. Normally the pc is – you're doing ARC breaks of some kind or another like "Recall ARC breaks," and the pc has had an ARC break in present time having recalled – with themselves having [re]called an ARC break in the past, that sort of thing can happen, see? Or they've suddenly bypassed and haven't answered fifteen or twenty ARC breaks. They haven't given them to you; they threw them all away, suppressed them. That sort of thing is happening. Something weird has gone on in the session, and you suddenly cease to get tone arm action. Now, the pc could sit there and talk forever, and – wouldn't get him out of it. No, it requires the auditor to locate what bypassed charge, what has happened here? He has two remedies for this: he has the ARC break assessments and he has his big mid ruds. He has ways of getting people out of this mess.

But that is your basic problem. We're not talking about the ramifications of it. Let the pc talk and let him talk with tone arm action. And let them talk as long as they want to talk and let them talk as long as you can get tone arm action by their talking. Where did you get so industrious? If I could sit there for two and a half hours with the pc telling me all about early track engrams and it's this way and that way, and I've got a TA that is banging here from 2.5 to 4.25, back and forth and back and forth, I'm afraid I would just sit there. And I know some of you sit and acknowledge. Oh, no.

I wouldn't shut that off. I'd just sit there and look intelligent. [laughter] I wouldn't acknowledge a thing – no interim acknowledgments. Once in a while they look up and they seem brighter about it, so I look brighter and nod. [laughter] What do you want to work so hard for? You realize that we're talking now about case level II auditing, because that is case level II auditing. But all you'd have to do is let the pc start talking about his backtrack and get tone arm action and never give an auditing command. Start and end sessions; that'd be all there was to the auditing session. See, it'd get that elementary. Well, of course, it can get that elementary all the way down. But the worse off they are, the more their attention has to be directed, the more particularized the process has to be. The way to bypass charge is not let the pc tell you.

Now, there's the basic anatomy of what you're doing, and it should make an awful lot of sense. And if you were to teach somebody just to listen (Scientology I, see) – you say, "Well, you should go listen to people's problems" they'll have some weird little wins. You're not even teaching them to run an E-Meter, see; just to let somebody talk to you. Then eventually, he'll find out that there's talk and talk. There's the talk that moves E-Meters and the talk that doesn't. By that time they'd be a pro. Learn to listen, and you've got it made.

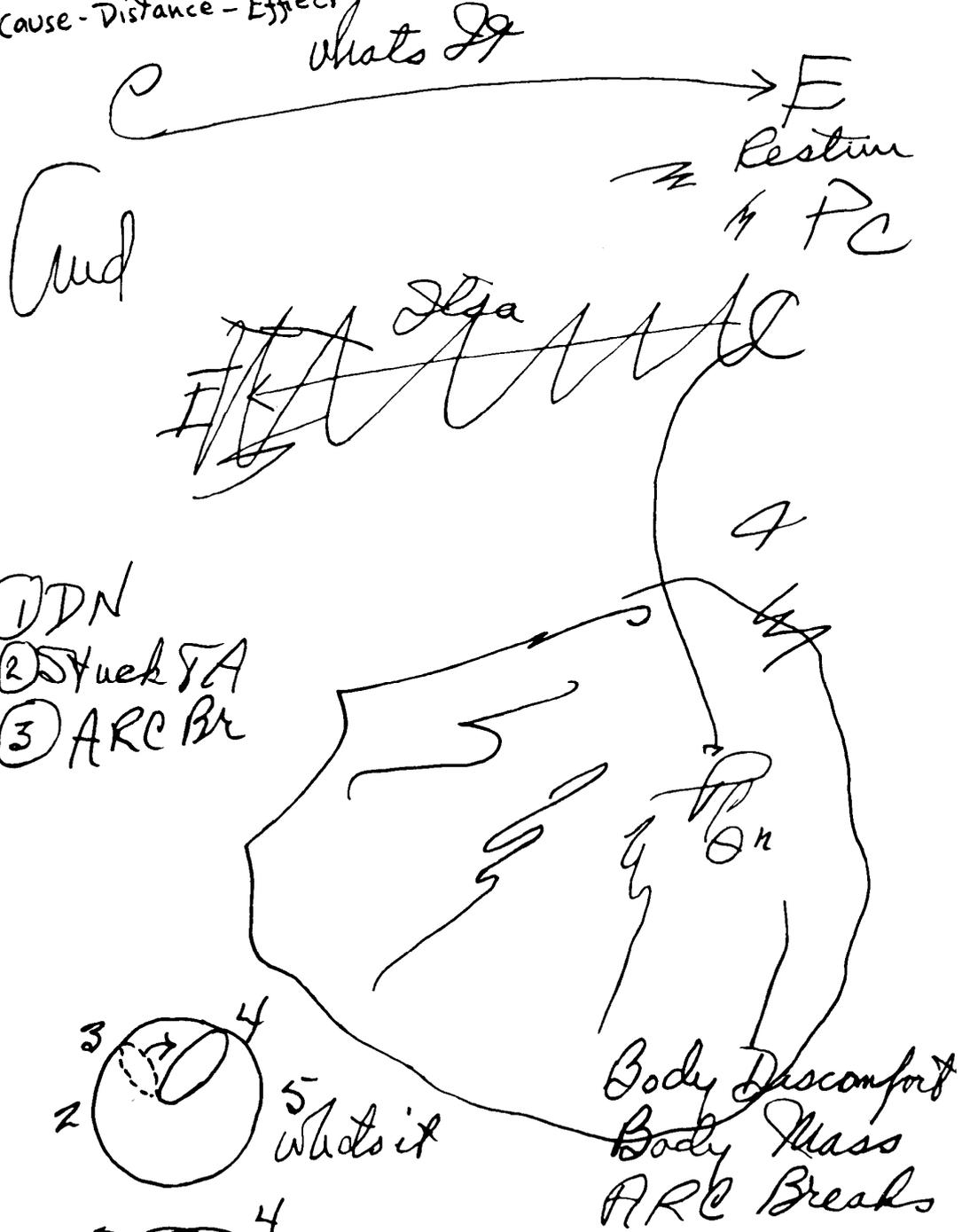
You got this all wrapped up and figured out and you see it and you got it taped now?

Audience: Yes. Yeah.

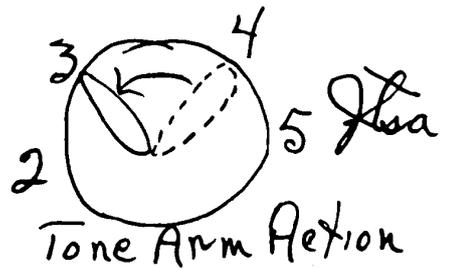
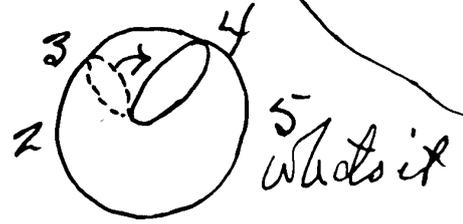
Well, watch those DNs and get that itsa line in.

Thank you very much.

Basic Error of The Auditing Cycle
 Comm Cycle
 Cause - Distance - Effect



- ① DN
- ② Yuek SA
- ③ ARC Br



When Its a line is cut, auditing ceases to work.

R2H FUNDAMENTALS

A lecture given on 7 August 1963

What's the date?

Audience: August 7th.

August the 7th, AD 13, Saint Hill Special Briefing Course.

I'm going to give you a talk today which isn't the official final rundown of R2H but which lays down the fundamentals of the process itself.

All right. R2H is one of the most satisfying processes that you ever cared to run. It is ARC breaks taken apart by assessment. It has a tendency to succumb to inexpert handling, and as long as you give a good thought to the fundamentals of the process, you won't run a cropper. But here is one of the more interesting processes. Contained in the... this process is different than any process we've ever had in Dianetics and Scientology. Don't think that you understand this process, because it's quite different.

This process will run engrams and secondaries. It has tremendous power. And therefore it very well may be senior to R3R, in spite of the fact that it's an R2. It very well may be senior. It may run more bank than these.

And the only thing it won't run is a GPM. And to run a GPM you have R3M and R3N.

Oh, you'd forgotten R3M, huh? You wait till one day you run into a wildcat GPM, man. And you'll thank your stars for R3M, if you know how to do it. Because that's how you got the patterns in the first place, was R3M. That's how you got 3N. That's the papa process.

Out of R3M can be borne patterns. 3N presupposes that you've got the pattern. You sit there and let the pc pattycake around and yap around and bark around and give you random items and you don't see them rocket read, and you don't know which end you're going – standing on, and you let him hunt and punch, and keep sitting there at the E-Meter. I think the fashion is to sit there at the E-Meter as the auditor and just keep shaking your head, "No, it didn't rocket read. No, it didn't rocket read," until the pc blows his brain out. Of course, he doesn't need a brain. That's – that's a good thing. [laughs]

But R3M will do a wildcat GPM – by which we mean a GPM for which you have no pattern. And they exist all over the track, and you'll eventually run into one, inevitably. Don't think you can just go on running the pattern GPMs, because that'd mean your pc was never caught in a bind that was an oddball bind, see? And, he never got out to Arcturus and fell in

that particular area that nobody else fell into, see? I mean – be very fortunate if he was normal and had only the normal implants, but that is never true. He's always got an oddball one.

So you've got R3M, and that takes care of your offbeat implants. And the only change that I would make in it today – I wouldn't ask the cross-question on oppose the way it's asked. I wouldn't ask, "Who or what would oppose...?" to get your next pair. I would say, "What does the next pair consist of? Give me the oppterm of the third pair." That's the one I would use. I would use something like that. And then "Who or what would oppose it?" Yeah. And I'd use that as phraseology.

Now 3N, that's a lead-pipe cinch. But 3N has this liability: On some pcs if you don't random list – I don't care if they had the item or not and if it rocket read or not – you don't get tone arm action. And if your tone arm action ceases, just up and random list. Just as easy as that. That gets all of your locks off. The RI with all of its locks – nothing has changed that, don't you see? Even though you've got the item "absolutably cantankerous," why, make him random list. "Who or what would oppose it?" And he gives you all kinds of things, and that blows the lock and your TA action may restore.

But the big – the big thing that keeps 3N TA action down, of course, is having the wrong date and the wrong pattern. There's nothing like having the wrong date for the GPM and the wrong pattern from the GPM to freeze the tone arm. That's almost certain.

Now, if you add to that session a wrong or out itsa line – return line from the pc to the auditor – you of course have got it made. The TA simply goes up to the moon and sticks, and won't go anyplace else. You understand that, don't you?

You'd be surprised how often you find a wrong date. And you're running the Helatrobust implants – so you think – and you go right into the next goal for which you've listed. And then you try to get "absolutably" and you can't get a rocket read, and you say, "What's happened? TA's up and stuck. I've got this next goal 'to be a goof.' It's obviously the next goal in line, only it isn't here." Shucks, man, you're probably running a Bear implant. It's probably shot back on the track Lord knows where, because the one thing a GPM won't do is properly time. You can duration a GPM and you can time a GPM and you can get the date of a GPM almost endlessly.

Why? Because its primary basis is lousing up time. Those two opposing items fire against each other – sound like time to the pc – produces a no-change situation. So the GPM floats on the track and so it's very difficult to time a GPM. So it's just nothing to get the (quote) "next GPM in line" to run, and find out that it isn't at forty-three trillion but at fifteen trillion trillion trillion trillion trillion trillion trillion. Embarrassing. Eventually you go back and start looking for wrong dates on the case, and you finally locate that "to be a goof" is not the next Helatrobust GPM but a GPM which exists in the early limbos of nowhere.

Now, what's very interesting is an exactly-the-same-looking hill with exactly-the-same-looking parking meters with exactly the same railroad track existed about trillions-four ago, which laid in an entirely different pattern which was far more aberrative than the Helatrobust implants, and which is basic on the Helatrobust implants. And I told you one day the Helatrobust implants are on the screens they show you in the between-lives. No, that isn't. I've been making that mistake for about ten thousand years. Every time I put this thing up on the

screen, why, it's the wrong implant. They're an early implant, and they had a hill there, unfortunately located in the same geographical area as the Helatrobus implants. And it looks to the pc just like the Helatrobus implants, only it isn't. You've got a date error, then, consisting of trillions-four – almost trillions-four, you see – trillion trillion trillion trillion. Your date error. Of course, your TA action will cease.

So there's a lot of tricks in running GPMs. GPMs are what require special techniques. They require special techniques.

Now, nothing else that I know of requires a special technique, and you might even do away with R3R (this is a very adventurous statement) if you had a perfect R2H. R2H has the potentiality of running engrams and secondaries on the whole track with greater avidity and speed than R3R because it takes apart the restimulated and bypassed charges which exist in the secondaries and engrams. It doesn't run the engram so much as it takes out of it all the bypassed charges and causes, of course, that particular segment to snap back onto track.

You probably have not looked at it this way, but you're actually not trying to erase somebody's time track. In the between-lives area they apparently are trying to wipe out your time track so you don't know who you are. Well, we're actually not doing that. You're not in actual fact working with the time track to knock out all the pictures everybody has. That is really not what you're doing. You're trying to take out of the time track the things which prevent a person from having his pictures. And after that, you can restore to him the right to have pictures or not to have pictures, as the case may be. You're trying to pull his knowingness high enough up to a point where the individual does not have to have pictures to tell him who he is. Now, you got that?

You really – your first target is not to erase somebody's time track. You're liable to think that, because that is what a between-lives screen specializes in. It allegedly is trying to invalidate a person's time track to a point where he doesn't have any, and therefore can't remember who he is because he has no picture reference. I spoke to you this way about it yesterday.

Well, you're really not, then, trying to erase the whole time track, but there are certain unwanted pictures that he couldn't handle and which he became the effect of. If you take the charge off of those pictures, then pictures become available to the person and he can have them or not have them as the case may be.

Now, the pictures which mostly louse up things are the GPMs. That's the real mess-up. But because a between-lives implant has a target of invalidating all of your pictures and therefore wiping out your identity and memory, because of this you might think – and I'm sure many people who are upset about auditing might think – that you're trying to do this. You realize a Scientologist may be looked at with... askance by certain areas and interests and so forth as though they were between-lives implanters, because they get some whiff of the idea that you're going to erase the whole time track. And they might think we're between-lives implanters.

I don't know what would happen if we... I was toying with this this morning – let me give you a little bit of a laugh out of the side of this – I was thinking of outer-space tactics and strategy. This is an interesting and vast subject, and I have come to the conclusion that the

missing factor in it is communication, and that lack of communication is what causes all the trouble. All right, that's beside the point – that makes, then, very intricate and complicated tactics and strategy, you see? I wondered if, impishly, you couldn't rise above this factor with a few curves of one kind or another by entering societies from within where you did have communication, you see? Well, how would you go about it then?

I was sitting there idly speculating about it over my scrambled eggs, and I suddenly realized – still eating, I mean, I'm decadent – [laughter] I suddenly realized that these between-lives blokes – the Marcabians – wouldn't know what to do if they came down here and saw that they had a Marcab headquarters here. We set up their headquarters for them, and you put up their flag, you see, and so forth.

And look at the news story. I must have brought this news story on us, or had telepathically realized that somebody was going to call on us. The Mirror group was calling on us today: "So many advances have happened in Dianetics and Scientology in the last three or four years that they had better be covered."

We agree with them perfectly, but how they will cover them, God knows. That's one of the biggest newspaper chains in England, but they also are the author of the "Death lesson" stories, and so we regard them with some suspicion.

But there is this pressure all the time of... We are, you see – were putting out fantastic – the stories involved here would make what's turned out in university labs and the psychiatric blokes and this sort of thing – would stagger them, man. You see? I mean, there's more story in any given week in Dianetics and Scientology, you see, than these birds... and the pressure – the pressure of this much data inevitably will produce some sort of a reaction on the surroundings, you see? And you'd find these guys sooner or later are going to realize they missed the boat. Instead of writing about "that cult," they might write about "those people" and you'll see them swinging around to this sooner or later.

But look at the Marcabian press: "Here in this prison, in spite of all that has been done to them, they're still loyal to their mother country." [laughter] God, you know, that's touching, you know? That's a tear-jerker. And I sort of sat back and I said, "Well, Ronnie, you're a dangerous man." [laughter, laughs]

But the reaction of Earth population, all of which has come down through that channel, to these symbols might be something approaching the most fabulous thing you ever saw. It might be utter frothing, see? Might produce widespread riot and chaos. I don't know. But it was an interesting thought, anyway, as I think you will agree. Not that we're going to do anything desperate like that – at least this afternoon.

The point I'm making here – the point I'm making here – is that if you tell the pc that you're going to erase his whole time track, why, he's liable to go into a sort of an anaten propitiate, because this happens to him every sixty or seventy years to such a degree, you see, that he doesn't quite know whether he's coming or going. But you tell him you're going to give him back his pictures and you might entirely change your identity, as far as he's concerned, as an auditor.

See, he's got certain pictures that make it impossible for him to get back his pictures. That's the condition he's in. And you're in actual fact trying to return him to Case Level 2. And oddly enough you have to move him to Case Level 2 before you can move him to Case Level 1. That's what's very interesting about it. And your pc – in spite of all your erasure of pictures – is going to wind up with pictures. Man, he's going to have pictures! He takes them all the time, they just aren't available. Some of these pictures aren't too pleasant, some of them aren't too unpleasant, but the point is there is no dearth of pictures. What's the matter with him is that he obsessively makes pictures of everything without discrimination. He's something like a garbage collector, see? Any old picture is good enough, you see?

But he gets some of these pictures, like GPMs and jails and things like this from between-lives implants, and they then hit him every time he tries to see his own pictures, you see? And he sees these, and of course they're his pictures, too, but he never realizes this. They're so hostile to his future and his mental health that he disowns them.

I've just gone through a phase of disowning my whole track – out of disgust, you know? Had a beautiful case resurgence for about – oh, I don't know, must have lasted for an hour or two. Then of course it collapsed. But what I did was go through the consideration of track, and track became artificially, you see – the artificiality of it became less and less real until the track itself disappeared. And now the track is appearing with total reality, you see, and good knowingness. It's an interesting, through-the-knothole experience. You know, "I wasn't. I don't know who the hell I am. I..." You at least got up to the point of where you didn't need a picture to tell you who you are – you got brave enough to say, "Well, I just don't know." And from that point on you start getting your own track back.

That's an interesting point, that this occurs. And perhaps, perhaps, you haven't given enough attention to this, as nobody's trying to wipe out your pictures – they're just trying to pick out those pictures which bar all other pictures and which the individual considers hostile. And when you've done that, why, the individual gets back all of his pictures. It's very simple. The hostile ones can no longer bite.

Now you've got a Case Level 2. Now you go after the mechanism which makes it automatic for him to make pictures, and you put this back on power of choice, and of course you've got an OT. And that's the whole scope of processing where it has to do with pictures and bank and knowingness and so forth – they're all wrapped up in that.

Well now, you see, instead of erasing pictures, you could go at this another way. You could bring up the individual's confront with regard to pictures to such an extent that he could even face the hostile ones. Ah, that's an interesting approach, too, isn't it?

Now, this is comparable to the old exteriorization approach. Instead of erasing the guy's bank, pull him out of it. That's the old exteriorization approach.

Well, this is a similar approach, but it's different than either of those approaches, you see, of erasing the pictures or pulling the guy out of the pictures. We're pushing the guy up so that he can disentangle and confront his pictures. In other words, were getting him so he can understand his pictures. And this one works, too, which actually gives you a third route to processing.

So R2H is not just a method of erasing pictures or getting the pc away from his pictures, it actually raises the individual's potential in recognizing and owning his pictures and making the pictures better.

Now, well-run R2H can make the pictures much better, much prettier, much solidier, without them being obsessively solid so that they intimidate the pc with their tremendous solidity. Now, that's the important point of it.

So, with R2H, you actually are embarked on another philosophy. If you understand this grip on it, it is its own philosophy. Doesn't make the other philosophies invalid, but it embarks on its own private, personal railroad car and says this is a whole philosophy in itself. Of course, it uses the elements and mechanics and other things, but the individualism of R2H is based on this. There have been some new discoveries about this, and they've been put to work in R2H. And let me show you what these things look like.⁶

Here is a thetan. Now, your first level of life and beingness – your first look at life and beingness – what life and beingness are, exist as potentials or abilities, not as things – and those potentials and abilities consist of A, R and C.

You know all about A, R and C: Affinity, Reality and Communication. But think of those things as potentials – not affinity for anything special but the potential of having affinity. In other words, you could say, "What is the potential of the A, R and C of an individual? What is his potential?" You'd be asking the same thing as "How alive is he?" The more alive he is, the more ARC he's capable of – the less alive he is the less ARC he's capable of. That's interesting, isn't it?

What do you think of a philosophy that thinks that man is mud? Well, let's take a look at this. ARC. ARC – and probably this could be drawn in different ways – ARC goes out to... and remember that communication with other beings is through matter, energy, space, time and so forth, see? This ARC potential, or ARC with what? What is this ARC with? Communication with, reality about, affinity for, see? What are these things connected up with?

Well, if there were just other beings, it'd be a telepathic ball and that would be that. But when you talk to Joe, you're actually talking through MEST to Joe – no matter how you're communicating with Joe – unless your ARC is so much on the ball that you can telepathically communicate.

And by the way, your ARC doesn't have to be very high to telepathically communicate. That is quite interesting, that man is, at large, below this level of telepathy, but it is paid attention to in some civilizations to the degree that – oh, they set up – you've got a three-way communication. You got a conference with other departments or ship commanders or something – it wouldn't matter whether it's a business or a unit of some kind or another – and you set up a box. You set up a box. And the thetan briefing them briefs them through a box which telepathically retranslates his thought onto an endless banner, and puts it out with sound also. In other words, telepathy sufficiently strong that it can be mechanically reconverted. A device

⁶ [Editor's note: Starting at this point in the lecture, Ron made diagrams of some of these points. These were issued in HCOB 14 Aug. 63, "Lecture Graphs," which can be found in Technical Bulletins Volume V, page 339.]

no more difficult than the vocotyper that the IBM keeps trying to make. You talk to the typewriter and it types, you know?

Well, this is telepathic vocotyper. I'm not talking to you out of *Popular Mechanics*. In other words, the telepathy factor is strong. It is something you have to deal with.

They have anti-noise campaigns in New York City. Well, I imagine in a boarding-house, a bunch of thetans would have an anti-telepathic campaign, you know? That you stop shouting telepathically all night, you know? Telepathy is a very heavy, hard-hitting force.

Some of you will be going through an implant, or something like that, and you'll pick up off the track what you think is your postulate and then suddenly realize it isn't your postulate, that somebody thought it in your vicinity. You sometimes can pick up the thoughts or fear of some thetan down the line who is also being implanted. This stuff will sometimes kick back into an implant. It's quite valid. There's nothing to worry about with that.

Now, this isn't any lecture about telepathy – it gives you an idea of how low ARC can go without disappearing and how high it can also go, because the birds I'm talking about that use telepathy for communication aren't even, by your chart estimates, in very good shape. See, they've had the Helatrobus implants, too, but they just aren't getting their lives wiped out every sixty or seventy years, see? That factor is missing – the only factor of difference between your case and theirs. See, that's the sole difference.

Every once in a while, why, their empire gets wiped out, and somebody implants the lot, but that's life.

So here's your ARC. And your ARC can go up, then, to pretty high levels.

And it depends below a certain level on matter, energy, space and time as its communication media.

ARC gets very important after you start dropping away from telepathic communication. Becomes very important – because, you see, it's so much present before then that nobody ever thinks of it. Nobody ever thinks of it at all. You're just not mad at people, and reality is terrific and you know all about it – and communication is good, and your understanding and knowingness are pretty well up, so it wouldn't be something that you worried about at all.

But the second you start introducing MEST into communication lines – living with great dependence upon this universe in this universe – then ARC become very important and become the measure of life.

Of course, they're there all the way up. But you don't measure them as going out. In fact, I believe nobody would believe they could. Livingness – degree of livingness is measured by ARC. How alive is somebody? It's how much ARC is he capable of. That is the test.

Now when you get over here... Let's just rule out telepathy.

I'm saying it exists, but it isn't necessary to our proposition at all, and it's a highly individual and odd bit of business, see, that transcends matter, energy, space and time and goes straight to other beings.

So, we would have thetans as a thing to be in ARC with, and then we would have matter, energy, space, time, form, location. Now, you could add to this, you could break these down further, but they are the principal things beyond which there is no breakdown. Possibly in importance it ought to be L and then F.

Now, the ARC that this individual has expresses the degree that he can be cause over these. The potential of ARC of the individual, gives you the degree that he can be at cause over thetans, matter, energy, space, time, form and location. The less life he has, the less he is.

Now, as a thetan gets more and more solid, he is less and less capable of ARC. That's fairly obvious, isn't it? Why? It isn't that his solidity prevents him from communicating or feeling affinity or that sort of thing – but it's simply an indicator that he must have broken ARC with matter, energy, space, time, form and location, or it wouldn't be piled on him without his choice. That's an interesting point, isn't it? He must have had ARC breaks, then, with matter, energy, space, time, form and location. Ah, but how could he have ARC breaks with matter, energy, space, time, form and location without having ARC breaks with other thetans? Well, I think it's probable, and very possible, that he could have. But the truth of the matter is, it was having ARC breaks with other thetans that caused him to start to ARC break with matter, energy, space, time, form and location. Doesn't necessarily follow that way, but normally that would be it.

So, as an individual rises up the line – as he rises up the line – he then rises back toward direct communication, direct affinity, direct reality on other beings. The less ARC he has, the more matter, energy, space, time, form and location he has to go through in order to communicate to other beings.

See you look a little bit dense on that one. Let me give you an idiot's line. Here you have Bill, and here you have space, and here you have Joe. Now, Joe, in order to hear Bill, has to register an air wave which is generated by Bill.

So Bill generates an air wave – vibrations – that are received by Joe and are reinterpreted into ARC. So ARC here are converted, and then are converted from matter, energy, space, time to ARC. And you in actual fact have done this cycle. This thetan here communicates to those thetans there by going up here, here, see? And actually, they communicate back similarly. See? Get the idea?

Once you drop away from telepathy, you enter MEST into the line, and ARC, then, becomes subordinate to MEST. And you eventually get a bunch of knuckleheads implanted up to their ears. Did you ever realize Einstein went through the between-lives area when he kicked the bucket? (Served him right. I wonder if he traveled faster than constant? These brutal, gruesome thoughts I have every once in a while.)

Now, look at this – man is not mud, but a fellow who isn't alive at all would think only "mudly." He'd have very muddy thinking. He'd come to mudlike conclusions. Therefore, his mental sciences are very mud-like.

There are no mental studies which admit – today, that are currently being taught – that admit of the existence of a being. They only admit of the existence of biological combinations of mud resulting in a very muddy result. Psychology textbooks today begin by very carefully

defining the fact they do not know what a psyche is, and they do not even know if one exists, and they're pretty sure it doesn't – "But we will now give you the parts of the brain." See?

What are you dealing with there? You're dealing with somebody who is so far away from other beings that he is no longer talking *through* MEST, he's talking *to* MEST. Ding, ding, ding, here comes the wagon!

Every once in a while you see some poor little kid that's been knocked in the dome too much, and he'll be out there beating his red wagon. And you yourself in your dippier moments will start talking to something on the mantelpiece. And when you're particularly foggy in the morning and haven't been awakened, you're very often prone to curse your shoes.

Well, you may be doing it on another harmonic, because a thetan is always capable of investing things with life. And you're probably doing it because you've "alived" the shoe. You see, you're perfectly capable of mocking up a living being and making it talk and walk totally independent of you. Perfectly, perfectly capable of doing that. Used to do it as OTs all the time. So you're capable of investing matter, energy, space and time, and so forth, with life. And then other-determining it, saying it is no longer I, and having it walk around and talk.

Now, those – that's a potential that's talked about in *Dianetics: Evolution of a Science*, that speaks of "Throghmagog." You can always invest something with life, such as a shoe. And you can always pretend that a shoe is alive. But how would you like to be in the kind of a condition where you thought another living being was no more capable of life than a shoe? Let's reverse that, see? Let's get a total reverse on the situation. Let's look at a living being and say that this living being has no life in it.

Now, you got some kind of an estimate of how far down scale you can go, and somebody can still sit there and eat breakfast. Got the idea? It's pretty far south.

Matter, energy, space, time, form and location – ARC breaks with – cause the dwindling spiral of. ARC breaks with other beings, matter, energy, space, time, form and location bring about a deterioration of one's ARC.

It never really deteriorates – one just believes it is deteriorated, you see?

In other words, you can have an ARC break with MEST, you can have an ARC break with form, you can have an ARC break with locations. It's very common for an animal to have ARC break with locations. A place where an animal has been hurt will be avoided by that animal, very carefully.

Now, what in essence does this forecast? That is the basic theory behind R2H. It forecasts that by clearing up a person's ARC breaks, one then returns to him his ARC potential. Clean up his ARC breaks with matter, he feels better about matter. Clean up his ARC breaks with energy, he'll feel better about energy. Clean up his ARC breaks with space, he feels better about space. Clean up his ARC breaks with time and he will feel better about time. Clean up his ARC breaks with form and he will feel better about form. Clean up his ARC breaks with location, he feels better about location. Clean up his ARC breaks with other beings and he feels better about other beings. And all the way up the line, of course, his bank – that reservoir of ARC breaks – is getting plainer and plainer to him and more and more confrontable to him. Because his – all of his ARC breaks in terms of pictures have responded as the reac-

tive mind ARC breaks. Because the reactive mind is made, after all, out of images of other beings, matter, energy, space, time, form and location. It's as easy as that. And that consists of the reactive mind.

So by cleaning up his ARC breaks with these things, you tend to clean up his ARC breaks with the things he's got pictures of in the reactive mind that he can't confront, and his reactive mind opens up and he can tolerate it and confront it.

So R2H considers and conceives that the reactive mind is a reservoir of ARC breaks. That is the basic assumption on which that process hops off. We know that the reactive mind contains images or beliefs in other beings, and with – certainly their images in terms of thought, don't you see? We might, by the way, have put a "T" under other beings for "thought," you see, because thought or significance could be included in that – but by just putting up other beings you also have the reflections of other beings, and so that you could omit that.

But you know that the reactive mind consists of images of other beings, thoughts of other beings, thoughts of oneself and so forth, plus matter – if you don't believe it's composed of matter, someday run into a ridge, energy – you hear and see the energy flutter-fluttering around in the reactive mind all the time and that's what registers on the tone arm, space – every once in a while a guy can't see a thing, and then he suddenly realizes he's looking across too much space to see it. In a picture, it always has space, and lack of space is the main thing that's upsetting in the reactive bank – you can't get away from the lousy thing, see? You can't put space between it and you. Space is the cure for no confront, see? And time – good heavens! The thing is not time. If there's any time in the bank, that is remarkable. What you have in the bank is an absence of time – an apparent absence in time in the presence of a totality of time. You've got a nothing where a something is and a something where a nothing is. And that's what makes it reactive.

Reactive – remember, that's what the thing is called. That means instantaneous response, regardless of what time the response is laid in. A=A=A also equals twenty-nine years ago equals a billion years ago equals eight trillion years ago. Before you start inspecting it, they're all the same time. So you got this terrific time identification – you also have space, energy and matter identifications.

Now, as far as form is concerned, that's not a terribly upgraded thing.

It comes into the field of aesthetics and arts more than anything else. Some people like Picasso, some people don't. Some people like blondes, some people like brunettes. Form, aesthetics, tastes, that sort of thing. And the reactive bank – the things least confronted in the reactive bank are those forms which one has disliked most. And so, of course, he's got a wonderful close-up stockpile of forms he detests. We're not talking now about income tax forms – we're talking about pleasanter things, like girls and things.

Anyhow, as far as location is concerned, if there's anything that is A = A = A in the reactive mind, it's location. When I first collided with this early Helatrobis, I was absolutely sure that it was in exactly the same location – that here, trillions of trillions of trillions of years before, some knucklehead had begun this thing and then somebody had walked back in the vicinity and said, "Well, this is what you do when you are here," and proceeded to give

the Helatrobis implants. I was sure that was the case. In fact, I only know now intellectually that it is not the same place, because it's the same type of scenery. Given a little similarity of form, and boy, those locations were identical. But what you're doing right now, packing around in your bank and your head and your ridges, planets which are light-years away? Looks to me like that's a very interesting identification of location.

In an auditing session this comes off all the time. It happens so often that you don't even think about it. This guy is sitting there, let us say he's running something, and it's something that happened in Australia. Doesn't seem either peculiar to the auditor or the pc that it is being run out in England. There's a 12,500-mile error in location. And you very often see this kind of an odd thing happen: You get the thing all run, and it goes *spang!* and stays there. It goes to its proper location. It seems to disappear or something.

Of course, by moving in time you can make the thing disappear, too. But I've had this odd experience of not being able to run certain engrams because they were too well fixed in their proper location. You practically have to go to Arizona to run it – that's where it happened! You can spot the facsimile, but it's over in Arizona. Well, it couldn't be very aberrative if it fixes its location that smartly, see, because that's the right location.

Well now, if everything was on its proper time span, you'd have to move all over time in order to connect with anything, wouldn't you? So the thing must be in its improper time span if you can reach it in present time without yourself moving back trillions of years in time. Well, there's something wrong in the reactive mind with other beingness and other thoughts, with matter, with energy, with space, with time, with form and location – and everything that is the matter is they're identified one with another. Two times are identified, two forms are identified, two locations are identified, two spaces are identified, two energies identified, two masses identified.

Can also go the other way into what you call a disassociate. And you as Scientologists run less into this thing of disassociation. Someday you may read some Sigmund Freud, and you'll hear all about disassociation because he specialized in this thing, disassociation. It's not anything we've ever talked about to amount to anything, but two things which are the same thing, approximately, look entirely different. In other words, two pictures of the same person at two different locations look like two different people, see? That is an inverse of identification. Things that should be seen to be similar, are seen to be madly different.

You don't pay much attention to this because after a person's done that he's more or less flipped his lid. But you're now going to run into disassociation – and that's why I'm making a little side comment on it here as we go – because you're going to run into it if you really put in the itsa line. And you're going to wonder what's happening. Because the pc doesn't at first answer the auditing question.

You say, "Have you had any gains in this session?" And he says, "The – well, so on – The floor dropped out, and then I had a couple of drinks. And three or four years ago, why, I knew a girl named Mabel."

And now, in putting in your itsa line, by the rules of the game you shouldn't interrupt him. He may sit there, but he's not finished with that communication. And he'll keep on going and going and going, and you'll see all these disassociates come up. And then all of a sudden,

if you let him go on, he will eventually come up and tell you a gain he has made for the session.

But you're running such violent stuff, you see, on the whole track, that as he passes through the stuff, he's actually going through the session trying to answer your question – and these things are getting in his road – so he says them to you, they tend to as-is, and after that he can finally reach the material necessary to answer your question. Got the idea?

But now, if you've put in an itsa line all the way across the line you're going to see disassociation, so you better know what it is. It's simply that two things which should be seen to be similar are seen to be madly different. It's the inverse of identification. It's you ought to see a similarity between the question and the answer.

"Have you had a gain for the session?"

"Yes, I've had a gain for the session. I can see better."

You get that? Now, that's a similarity, you see? There's the same communication line, and the answer compares to the question that was asked. You get a disassociation this way:

"Have you had a gain in the session?"

"I had a beer three years ago."

That's a disassociate. Well, it isn't that the pc isn't answering your question, he's getting around to it. And if you're very good at your itsa line, he will eventually wander torturously through and eventually will come up and say, "Yes, I don't feel like I'll be so thirsty all the time." Of course, that is almost a sequitur statement. He will have uttered other statements less sequitur. But as you search the thing out, you would see that he was coming closer and closer to answering your question as he talked.

Try that sometime on a full itsa line, and you will be very, very, very pleased with the result. The guy was answering your auditing question. If you let him go on talking, he eventually would have answered your auditing question. He only didn't answer your auditing question if you cut him off at the point he was disassociating. Then he didn't seem to answer your auditing question.

You'll notice his eye is no longer on you again, you'll notice he's still groping, you'll notice he's still fumbling with the bank, when he – as he tells you these things. You'll see this. Well, that's a disassociate.

All right. Guy comes up and slugs his mother, thinking that she is about to rob him. Well, he's associated his mother with a burglar. Well, you'd say he's nuts. Well, yeah, true enough. But there are people who are nuts. But that is what that is.

So identification isn't the only crime. There's one beyond identification. That's two things that you ought to recognize the similarity between, you see as vastly different.

So this whole thing here goes on to an inversion. What you get is a restimulator factor. We knew a girl who had pink hair, see? We knew a girl who had pink hair, so therefore girls who have pink hair aren't to be trusted – therefore nothing pink must be trusted. And we know

a fellow named "Pink," who brushes his teeth, so we'd better not brush our teeth anymore. Do you follow that torturous line of logic?

Well, that is ARC as it goes down scale doesn't just stay as ARC, it goes into an inverse, because it gets too many things identified, and then it gets things disassociated in some kind of an effort to see some separateness in existence, and eventually starts going into a twisteroo. So that you will have people who consider good communication shooting people. High level of communication.

I had a husky one time that knew what communication was – chewing people up and being bitten. There he was. He was quite a dog. It was very funny, I'll never forget that dog; he was the toughest dog I think I ever saw. I'd walk into the yard after being gone for a long time – you know, a year or two or something like that – and this dog would suddenly see this (quote) "stranger," and he would bare his teeth – he was one of these fantastic malamutes – and he'd bare his teeth, come tearing across the yard, fangs just shooting out of his face in all directions. And I'd pick him up on either side of his jowl and, using his lunge, throw him twenty-five feet. You practice up a little bit with police dogs and things, you can get so you do – it's like dog judo, you know? And he'd go through the air and he'd land. And he'd get up: "Oh, Ron!" [laughter, laughs] He knew what communication was! [laughter]

So, there's all kinds of wild levels of communication. You get people who tell you what pleasure is – they describe agony. It's very funny. So you get these various inversions. ARC, then, doesn't just decline, it goes and inverts and inverts again and inverts again. And you get a hodgepodge down at the end that nobody can make anything out of. Go down and listen to them in the spinbins and you'll see how far ARC can go, because those people are still alive. They're still alive.

How far can ARC go south? All the way – there is no bottom at which one dies, but there's some mighty peculiar things happen on the way down.

Beingnesses can die, but the individual – no. Forms can die, but the person actually – no. Memory can die, but not the person who is capable of remembering, you see? Not the person who – who is, you see? He can forget everything. And he's still in that kind of a state.

Now, ARC never ceases, so you have no bottom to the process. There are no bottom limits to the process. There is some method of communicating all the way down. It gets down into weird versions of reach and withdraw, as I just described one to you – with the dog. That's a kind of a reach and withdraw. Want to make him happy all day Sunday? Why, chew him up all Saturday night, you know? Big case gain.

This is your Tone Scale. As people go up scale, they go up through anger and so forth. It's very funny.

I remember one poor psycho in New York – auditors would process her, get her up to anger, and she'd scold her family, and they'd promptly put her in restraints and put her back in the hospital. And then she'd get out, and then the auditors would process her, and she'd get back up to a point where she'd scold her family, and they put her back. And this nonsense just kept going, see? They'd never let her get up through anger. Of course, they'd been knocking

her in for a long time, and she just never was able to say that she was mad about it. She was never able to do that, so she never recovered.

Now, here's a case, then, of a process which if you can get any C in at all and get an improvement of the C or an improvement of the R or an improvement of the A, you get an improvement of the C, an improvement of the R, an improvement of the A, an improvement of the C, an improvement of the R, an improvement of the A – you get the idea? And you just keep raising this triangle – all three corners of this triangle – up, up, up, by the process of running ARC breaks. Now, the basic limit of the process is the communication of the auditing command itself. And you'll be surprised how many interpretations there are of an ARC break. And one might make a criticism of the process by saying, "Well, look, it has such a specialized command, 'Recall an ARC break.' Only a Scientologist would know what that meant."

Well, actually, you're really not asking for an upset, you're not asking for a worry, you're not asking for a time he was concerned, you're not asking for this, you're not asking for that; you're asking for an ARC break. Now, I don't think it'd take you any time to describe to the pc what an ARC break was, and he'd eventually settle in his own head what an ARC break was. He'd be better off if he could understand the communication of this phrase "ARC break." But this is one of the weak spots of the process. But it's not a very weak spot.

It's very funny how fast this communicates. You say, "Life is composed of affinity, reality and communication. When one of these breaks down, a person doesn't feel so good about something. Now, an ARC break is a time when affinity, reality or communication have been cut down on a person, have been reduced. That's what an ARC break is."

It may take the individual three or four days to digest the definition. But the funny part of it is, having digested the definition, he will have made a case gain. I don't really consider it a liability.

Now, that process isn't going to be used very broadly, and shotgunish. You can't use it in a co-audit – it's too particularized.

So there's the anatomy, however, of what you are trying to do with the process. You are trying to increase the individual's affinity and reality and communication with other thetans and thought, matter, energy, space, time, form and location by picking up those points in time when the individual has suffered a cut or reduction of communication, has suffered from a lowering of reality, or from a reduction of affinity level – period. You don't know – care what he had an ARC break with, because he has to come up quite a ways to recognize ARC breaks with MEST. This is a long way north – good, clean-cut ARC breaks with MEST.

In that earlier GPM, about the only thing that was causing a great deal of difficulty in running it was a supreme ARC break with MEST, that it would obey people who would do things like this GPM implant – big ARC break with the fact that MEST obeyed that sort of thing – and an ARC break with the people for debasing and degrading MEST to such a usage and end. The items – to hell with it. See, that wasn't the important thing. The important thing was that anybody who would attempt something like this using MEST, that MEST would obey them, so on. Big ARC break. So there's one even wrapped up in a GPM.

The thought that you're trying to get across with your auditing command is you want a time when affinity, reality and communication have been reduced with other beings, matter, energy, space, time, form and locations. And you don't direct what you're going to get the ARC break about or with; that'll all work out more or less automatically. You simply ask for an ARC break. You don't ask "in this lifetime"; you don't limit him in time – you hope he'll give you something to at least let you get your teeth into the process and get the process grooved in before you're handling a God-'elp-us engram, but you want from the pc a time of that reduction. That is what you want. And that's all you want. And then you want to find out from the pc what it was.

This goes into your form, which is still being worked out – but which is more or less grooved in now. The formal steps of R2H done for good gain on the case are: What, Where, When, and then an assessment, and then cleaning up every line of the assessment when it reads – not going by it. That is a difference. And working the ARC break over until it no longer reads on the meter and the pc feels all right about it, and so forth.

Now, the exact way the assessment is done, I'll go over that again – I'd better go a little bit earlier. The exact way What is done, is you take what the pc is willing to tell you without probing. "What's this ARC break about?" and he'll give you a résumé of it, very brief usually. *Where?* Where – that's to help him get the time. See, these are all development of the ARC break so that he can more ably identify it. And then, *When?* Now, this When gets very important. He'll have trouble with the Where, but nothing compared to the trouble he may get into with the When.

Now, the rule is – you use your meter on these three steps only when the last dog has been hanged. And you don't date nothing with the meter unless the pc is in despair and on the verge of tears about the actual time. And then you chip in, at the last moment, and you say – so on. Something like this: This meter dating is terribly easy. You know, there's a training version – that's to train you to date on a meter. I'm giving you the therapeutic version – this is the way she really rolls. You've been sitting there with the meter in front of you, and the pc's been saying, "It's 1937 – no, it's 1936 – no, 1937; no, 1936; no, 1937; no, nineteen-thirty... 37, I think it was; 38, 38, maybe it was 38, 39. No, it could have been nineteen thir – [sighs] Oh, I just don't know, I just don't know, I just don't know where. I don't know when it was. 1937, 19 – "

He's already admitted he doesn't know and your TA action has slowed down to nothing, and so forth. And you've watched 1937 bang every time he said it. You say, "It's 1937, according to the meter." That's your dating step. Got that?

Pc may also get into a specialized case sometimes, when if it was in 1937, it would be a terrible ARC break – whereas if it was in 1938 it wouldn't have been a terrible ARC break because something else had happened. So they keep saying it's 1938 when it was 1937.

Here's the only other way you go about this: When your tone arm is hung up, you've got a wrong date – and you damn well better find it. Tone arm is hung up, you can't get it moving, everything is going to the devil, and so forth – well, you just better do a scout for wrong dates. "Did we have a wrong date?"

There is a number two that you scout for when the tone arm has stuck. (This is repairing it.) Number two is you get in your BMRs on the session or the process, because the pc has, recalled ARC breaks which he has then suppressed and has not given the auditor. That causes a tone arm hang-up. These are the three things that hang up a tone arm. And the pc ARC breaks in session because of an ARC break in the past. It isn't because you've bypassed charge in the session – he's recalled an ARC break in the past, which has given him an ARC break in the session. And when you find that – any one of those three (wrong date, suppressed ARC breaks or an ARC break in the session because of an ARC break in the past) – you've got to remedy the situation. Your tone arm will stick and the process becomes unworkable. But one of those three things exists if your tone arm ceases to move on this.

The other one that can stop your tone arm from moving is just too corny. You've missed an assessment, you've missed a meter read, and you haven't got the reason of the bypassed charge. That's just pretty corny. That's under the heading of meter reading, and so forth.

The ARC break is always cleaned up to the tremendous satisfaction of the pc, and you're looking on this as something whereby you do an assessment, you say, "Well, that was the bypassed charge. That's it, thank you. Recall another ARC break." That isn't the way it's done.

Now, let's go into the last end of this thing. You say to the pc... you're doing an assessment – you clear it line by line, just like you used to do old rudiments. If you get a read, you say, "That read." You've got your pat assessment sheet. "That read." You got a new one – there'll probably even be a different – newer ones developed from time to time. I haven't issued this latest sheet yet, but it's very comparable to the L1 which you've got – it's just a little better.

You see that "an attitude refused" does so. That ticks. You didn't go down the whole thing, see? You just said – right off the bat, you said, "All right. In that ARC break was an attitude refused?" Tick. You say, "All right. What attitude was refused?" And that's the end of your job. It's now up to the itsa. That's your whatsa. And the pc is going to stem and fuss and stew and try to figure out what attitude was refused where. And the only time it won't come off is when those three things I gave you are out – you've had a wrong date in the session; the pc has recalled some ARC breaks and suppressed them; or the pc has had an ARC break in the present time in the session. See? And this system doesn't work if those three are present. And if this system doesn't work, those three are present.

So you clean this line up, and it's all up to the pc. "An attitude refused? I don't think any attitude was refused – attitude was refused..." And so forth and so on. Says, "Well, I don't – I don't think there was one."

What do you know! At this point do you shove it down his throat. You say, "No? All right, thank you," and go to the next line. Well, he can't remember it, so obviously the thing needs shaking up some more.

But you leave that mark alongside of that thing, because you're going to come back to it. It was hot once – it's going to be hot again. In other words, it's – that just wasn't ready to be answered, that's the only thing you communicate on that. If he can't find it, and he says he

can't, that's it. Leave it marked. Don't even say, "We'll come back to it later." Say, "All right," and go on to the next line. Otherwise your needle's going to get so dirty you can't assess. Highly practical consideration.

And you say, "All right. Was that ARC break caused by a communication ignored?" – you get down to that line, see? – and it goes ping! And you say, "All right. I have here that a communication was ignored. What communication was ignored?"

"Oh, well, let's see. It was Bill and me and Pete, and there were three dogs. And a spaceship landed. And the dog barked, and we said to hell with it, but if we'd listened to the dog bark – Yeah. Yeah. We ignored the dog barking. Heh-heh! Yeah." Down comes your tone arm.

You run by blowdowns. Your whole meter action is by blowdowns – your whole determination is by blowdowns. You find an ARC break for which you get no blowdowns, then you haven't got the cause of the ARC break and the pc hasn't remembered anything about the ARC break. But just because you get one blowdown isn't – doesn't mean that the ARC break is gone. At this point you say to the pc, "How do you feel about that ARC break?" and watch it on the meter.

The question is asked of the pc and watched on the meter. If you get a rough-up of a needle – the slightest reaction of a needle – that ARC break isn't gone. But usually the pc will tell you, "Well, I don't feel as good about it as I want." Then keep on with your assessments. Do you understand? But every time you find one, and you clear one up, then you ask the pc how he feels about it. Pc feels all right and it doesn't bang on the meter – to hell with it, get off of it, man. That's it, that's it.

Don't get into a situation where the pc feels perfectly all right about it and you haven't done three-quarters of your assessment sheet, so you just go on doggedly doing the remaining three-quarters of your assessment sheet. You're now trying to find the bypassed charge for an ARC break that doesn't exist. And I can guarantee that you've got the withhold of nothing. The pc hasn't got anything to tell you, so he's going to ARC break.

So the other frailty of R2H, much more important than the communication of its auditing command, is that an inexpert handling of R2H can bring about an ARC break. Very interesting.

Every time you find a line, you go through the same song and dance. You find a line, you ask him the question, he answers the question, he's got it all to his satisfaction no matter how long the itsa line is. Don't expect to do many of these a session, man. You probably won't do more than three, four, five a session. But boy, the tone arm action you can milk out of that thing – wham, wham, wham, wham, wham. You can get lots of tone arm action.

Why recall ten and get the same tone arm action as you do get recalling four, and still leave the pc with some missed withholds? You get the idea? So you just want tone arm action out of it, not the number of ARC breaks handled. See, you're not interested in the number of ARC breaks handled – just handle those you get well. Every time you find a reason for it, you'll find a tick, and the pc will give you the answer, and you've now got that.

Now, you don't even necessarily test that line again. You can drive a pc berserk. He's now satisfied. He's found it, and so forth.

Now, you may suspect, from the doubtful nature and the fact you haven't got a blow-down, that there is another tick on the same line. Just say, "Well, I'll check this line now. In that ARC break was a communication ignored? You know, that still reads. Do you suppose you had – know any reason why that should still be reading?"

"Well – no, I don't see why it should be reading. Maybe I protested."

"All right. You protested it, that's all. That's all I wanted to know." Down to the next line – leave it. You're not going to get anyplace shoving it down the pc's throat.

But every now and then you say, "That line still reads."

"Oh, it does? Oh, well, wait a minute, wait a minute, wait a minute, wait a minute. The – ha-ha! – it wasn't really the dogs communication. I ignored their communication. They told me not to go anywhere near that place and I did and I ignored their c... Yeah, well, that caused the ARC break with them, because they should have told me more loudly." And you'll see your tone arm blow down.

You see how it's done? Treat them like end rudiments that you don't care whether they clean up or not, and don't leave an ARC break unless the thing is reading smooth as glass. An ARC break is going to give you blowdowns. Just regard it as a source of getting some blow-downs. And if an ARC break doesn't blow down, you're now going to run into trouble with later ARC breaks. That is the way to forecast trouble. We had ARC break, and then we had another ARC break, and we didn't get any blowdown on either of these ARC breaks. Ohhh! Now, our third ARC break – our chances of our getting a blowdown on that... The next thing you know, you're getting in the mid ruds and the pc's going into an automaticity of suppressing ARC breaks, and we've got a sort of a mess on our hands. Why? Because we excited some bypassed charge by asking for the ARC break and then didn't clean the bypassed charge.

Now, the whole basic mechanism on which you are operating here is that incidents will blow if the misaligned or bypassed charge is knocked out, and that an ARC break is caused by bypassed charge. There is no ARC break without bypassed charge. So therefore you must find the bypassed charge, and if you do, there won't be any ARC break. And it straightens the bank out, and the guy gets oriented in the middle of his bank, and there you are.

It's a terribly permissive process. It depends on the itsa line and for that accurate assessment, and then, having found what the thing assesses, let the guy run on.

And it also depends on not to keep slugging him with assessments for ARC breaks that have cleaned up. It has a frailty. You can get the whole ARC break cleaned up, it doesn't seem hardly worthwhile. And there was a reality rejected, and you got a ping on that – it wasn't a very big ping – and he answered this thing, and we asked for the ARC break, and he didn't have much of an ARC break – but now we went on and did the rest of the assessment. Oh, you've got an ARC break now. Why? You've invalidated the reason which he gave for the ARC break.

Takes rather delicate, slippery auditing. But with those reservations, it's absolutely terrific. It's a fabulous process. Terribly mild, terribly permissive.

I see I've left you hanging on the ropes a little bit – there's probably something you don't understand about the process. But if you just did it like end mid ruds, which you didn't bother to finish if your pc got bright, then you've got it made. You've got it made. And if you monitor its success by the number of blowdowns which you get, you've also got it made. And when it doesn't blow down, start worrying. And if it is blowing down and the TA is moving and so forth, don't worry. Just sit back and ride your luck. Look for trouble when it comes, not before it gets there, because it'll carry you through all the way.

Pc wants to talk to you the whole session about one ARC break which is giving you tone arm action from 2 to 6.5, you are an absolute nut not to let him. See? It's the amount of tone arm action you can get in the session, up and down – not the number of ARC breaks you cover. Because the pc you are auditing is in, after all, present time. He is here – all there is of him is here. He isn't barred out of existence by his bank. And if you discharge all of these crossed bypassed charges off of present time, theoretically you could run him all the way to OT without him ever going backtrack to amount to anyone. He just picks up this item and that item and that incident and that incident and this one and straightens them out, and his pictures are getting better and the track is straightening out.

And the next thing you know, he's eight feet back of his head saying, "What do you want done with these between-lives guys?"

Thank you very much.

R2H ASSESSMENT

A lecture given on 8 August 1963

Thank you.

This is the what?

Audience: 8th of August.

The 8th of August, AD 13.

The figure 8 is a symbol of money. Actually, its original derivation was two money-bags, one sitting on the other. And when Pythagoras came back, why, he gave us this datum and here we are in Greece, at the apex of the newest and the best: numerology.

Oh, it's the wrong lecture hall! [laughs, laughter]

You have to laugh when you consider what man has considered knowledge to be at periods in the past.

All right. Here we are, Saint Hill Special Briefing Course. And today I have some good news for you, and this is the evolution of List One for R2H. I'm going to show you how you can evolve a List One. No matter if you have landed in the middle of Pangopango, or something of this sort, and you don't have a textbook to your name, you can evolve List One.

Now, this has really taken some doing. I don't mean to exaggerate. It'd be impossible to exaggerate the difficulties which have been connected with this. R2H is a process which – told you yesterday, in yesterday's lecture – a process with a new rationale. There's a new rationale connected with that process. This actually is the Level II process, Case Level 2. And R2H really goes into both channels, but isn't just headed at OT – this gives you your Clear way stop. Because you can move up this process, and sooner or later you're going to start seeing free needles – and that kind of phenomena is very likely to occur in running this particular process. Not necessarily with every case. Some cases are going to run so head-on into a GPM that you're going to have to shift to 3N in order to carry out that particular GPM, and then shift back to 2H. Just as you can shift from R3R over to 3N and back again.

Well, given the fact that you could shift over to 3N, and back to R2H, you're dealing now with a Case Level 1 process. This will boot them all the way on up the line. But if you are dealing with just your normal course of human events and just avoid any ideas of GPMs – don't bother with trying to clear up track in that particular direction – undoubtedly the pc will come back off the track, and you'll start getting key-out phenomena. You see how that process might very well, theoretically, branch? In other words, you keep on running the process itself, you eventually make a track that looks pretty straight and pretty clean, and gives you an appearance of Case Level 2, which is Clear, see? And that would be with the benefit of key-out

and free needle, and you probably find the phenomena, and this is probably... Because you understand, this has not been done by this process, but we have done so many of these that it's pretty easy to predict on a process line. And you would get a phenomenon which looked very like – this is just pure R2H, see? You'd get a phenomenon that looked very like a Case Level 2. However, it's a keyed-out Case Level 2. The person's whole track really isn't available to them. But it would give you all the attributes of Clear, by all of its definitions.

All right. Now, if you introduce into it the factor that when you collide with a GPM you're going to shift over into 3N, then you've got one that goes to Case Level 1. In other words, you could take R2H, combine it with 3N when necessary, and wind up at Case Level 1. You understand that this process has this branch – fork in the roads.

Now, therefore, it unexpectedly joins up with what we're calling now – and you aren't – really haven't started calling it yet – but Scientology Three. Scientology Three was more or less suspended in favor of Scientology Four. The levels of Scientology: there's been a recent policy letter out which divided Scientology up into five levels.

And there was Scientology One, that's for the public. That's your PE-level Scientology. And we're putting out a plea to one and all to please contribute any data they think is vital and necessary to be in this.

And then there's Scientology Two, which is healing, which we haven't had too much to do with. That's care of the body, and so forth. And HPA/HCA levels probably get quite a bit of Scientology Two.

And then there's Scientology Three, and that's advanced auditing, advanced Academy courses, that sort of thing, leading up to the area of Clear – such phenomena as we've had in the past. Now, it doesn't happen to be a well wrapped up area, because we jumped off of that area to go into Scientology Four. And this occasioned even some of you quite a few headaches, because there was a necessary speed-up in research, and the place to research toward, of course, was OT. Now, that's Scientology Four. And the material which you're learning right now is Scientology Four.

And then there is Scientology Five. And Scientology Five is the social, political, organizational levels of Scientology. This is a takeoff from the level of OT. And that isn't just Scientology applied to political problems. That would be a misnomer although it would read like that in a textbook, and so forth. That isn't that at all. It's actually what does an OT do about it? That makes quite a different subject, doesn't it?

So anyway, it is of interest to have picked up some of the earlier work at Scientology Three, and carried it forward to something of a conclusion. Now, you're not really interested in Routine 2H – and it probably ought to be redesignated. You're probably not interested in Routine 2H, which is by the way also applicable at Scientology Two, don't you see – some other version of it, much easier to do, something like that. You're interested as R2H applies to Scientology Four, which is OT.

Now, I want to point out to you (and this is just a side note here) that these things fit with classifications as they exist today. See, so you have a *Class I Auditor*: he can listen. And you have a *Class II*: well, he could probably cure something up and run repetitive processes

and, you know, CCHs, something like this, Reach and Withdraw. You have *Scientology Three type auditor*: well, he could make a better human being; that's the level of the better human being. *Scientology Four, Class IV Auditor*: you're heading for OT. *And Five*: we're heading for a sane universe.

So this compares with your classifications, and I think you will find that it's very neat to have the subject organized like this. For instance, you can slap onto the covers of textbooks, one right after the other, *Scientology One*: Perfectly safe issue for general public, don't you see? For instance, we have a newspaper reporter prowling around right now, and we're feeding him *Scientology One*, which of course is about all he should have anything to do with. And he doesn't know even what he's looking at, see, right now. He thinks he came down here to investigate our marriages. Crazy, you know?

Anyway, he's got a copy of Reg's book⁷ and he probably looked at its title, I hope, and he probably read something of that. We're getting this thing in some kind of order, however. We're getting this thing squared away one way or the other. He's looking for sensationalism, so we'll give him sensationalism at Level I.

Do you see? It brings a little more order to the subject. Instead of just – it's all spattered out across these lines, why, we can subdivide it into its materials. And this only becomes possible because we are reaching up at a high level of attainment in each one of these levels. We have quite a bit of accomplishment in the lower levels and we need codifications and publications; and in republishing and codifying, and that sort of thing, we need designations.

Now, it's very baffling for you to have a process which moves on up through more than one of these levels, which attains different things at different levels, and so on. And it is phenomenal to have such a process at all. It moves around. It handles the thing called an ARC break.

Well, there are many ways you could handle the thing called an ARC break. There are probably many versions of processes which you could handle ARC breaks with. So you'll probably see this material splintering off into these various levels. ARC, just the explanation of what ARC is, is Level I, you see? Perhaps specific and directed ARCs at various body parts and that sort of thing, and perhaps O/W, and that sort of thing, would constitute healing applications of ARC. And at Clear level, of course, you're trying to raise somebody's ARC; you can do some remarkable things with picking up their ARC breaks in this lifetime. It would be quite phenomenal to do that.

Well, ARC has been with us for quite a while, and the push – or demands – of ARC this high – the theory of ARC, the triangle of affinity, reality and communication – to push that much stress onto it and say, "All right, let's try to push this into *Scientology Four, OT*," – well, that's really asking for a few blown gaskets. Because it's obvious that if this much stress is put on the theory of ARC, then any slightest frailty in any scale is going to show up. In other words, you're really going to have to have the stuff there.

⁷ Editor's note: "This is life – an introduction to *Scientology*" by Reg Sharpe, published 1961

We haven't been asking very much of this, but now we're asking everything of this. And boy, some of our – not very much of it, fortunately, but there were some holes – there were some holes in what we knew of ARC. It was, you might say, insufficiently embracive or insufficiently complete to do a totality of work.

It's all right to run a machine, let us say – you can run a machine just fine and it gets along fine. And then you put more load on it, you see, and it starts to heat up a little bit and its life seems to shorten, and that sort of thing. And you put a little bit more load on it, then any bad connection or any bit of weak metal in it is going to go *spling!* You see? And that's approximately what's happened to ARC and the CDEI Scale. Now, those two things together – those two things together – needed an overhaul. And I've been overhauling these things empirically.

Now, R2H has only one frailty. And that is the list you use for the assessment. It's the only frailty it has. Given an auditor who will listen, given a meter that will react, given any kind of decent goodwill in the auditing session at all – well, the machine is pretty tolerant in those parts. You see? R2H: it'll work just fine. I mean, you can even flub it and mess it up here and there, and make mistakes with it, and it doesn't break down.

No, the point where it just breaks down absolutely with a crash would be a wrong assessment list. And if that assessment list – it could have a lot of things that weren't necessary on it, but if it lacked one single ingredient, then the bypassed charge on the case would not be located, and you would succeed in restimulating the case at certain levels, and the case would eventually move up to a stuck tone arm, because the charge would be wrongly placed and encysted here and there, and the track wouldn't straighten out. You see the liability of this?

In other words, you could miss the charge on one ARC break or another ARC break without making the case crash. That's one or another ARC break. But if one specific, very important type of charge was missing from the list on all ARC breaks, eventually that charge would overwhelm the pc, and you'd result in a good, high stuck tone arm and an ARC broke pc, and so forth.

In other words, the limit of this particular process would be the embraciveness of the list which was used. So there is the weak point of this process: the list.

So I had to sweat and fume and fuss and fiddle and overhaul and try it again and – I've had some of the fanciest systems, you know? These things would make a whole psychotherapy up at London University, or wherever they teach the stuff here in England. They would, you know? It'd just be marvellous. Whole new systems of interlockings and all of this kind of thing. Beautiful. The logic in them, impeccable. See? But they didn't work. That was all that was wrong with them. Like modern psychiatry: it's terribly convincing but doesn't work.

Now, that list with its liability of bogging a case down if an important type of charge is missing... You understand that you can miss the charge on an ARC break and then get the next one well, and then miss the real charge on the next ARC break and get the next two well, you see, and you don't ruin anybody, you see? But if consistently that type of charge is missing on that list, sooner or later your pc has had it, see?

So what is the totality of the list? What formula is it that makes this list a completely embracive list? Well, you'll laugh when I eventually show you this thing, because it's always these simple things. It seems like anybody can discover anything that's complicated. I mean, that seems to be very easy. They go out and they discover the plutons running into the neurons, and these fantastic chemical formulas that run on for eight pages and give you better lipstick. [laughter] It's these simple things. It's these simple things wherein lies the genius of the situation, you see? They're the ones that you can just take and knock your head off on.

And you come back to it, what makes a good auditor an auditor? And we've eventually broken it back to five points. And they're all fundamental points. And where you don't get auditing done in some HGC or something like that where you're supervising auditing, you watch it; you go back over those points and you'll find out there's one or two of them are just madly out – not even slightly; they're just madly out. But the reduction of auditing to just five basics is pretty wild.

Now, the breakdown of a communication cycle, and the breakdown of the auditing cycle and that sort of thing – these things are terribly simple. But it takes some discovery like this itsa line. That's... I'm sure you sat there when you saw this itsa line, and you said, "Yeah. Yeah, yeah, of course, you know. Simple."

Well, frankly, when you discover these things, you feel like a complete idiot. Very self-invalidative, you know?

It's like you've been running into this rock all the time, and you finally come back and take a look at it; you say, "Hey, it's a rock," you know? And you've never noticed it, nobody else has noticed it. There it's been! See? These are the discoveries that are something. And it's this type of discovery that finally wrapped up this other list so that it just springs engrams, you know, bang, bang, bang.

And you could put any kind of significance you ever heard of and you might still miss it on this list, so I better give you the formula of derivation. And this is a derivation formula. I'm going to give you the full derivation formula. I'm not going to give you any little short-handing of it. You, by the way, don't use this full formula in making up List One. But I can show you a very trick system by which you could employ it without assessing forever, see?

Now, it works like this: The CDEI Scale has an upper and a lower band. And it was on this band that we all fell down. Now, here's your CDEI Scale: Curiosity, Desire, Enforce, Inhibit.⁸ You're very well aware of the CDEI Scale. But that's only a piece of the scale. Now, we only needed that piece to do everything we've been doing up to this time. And the missingness of the remainder of the scale was not something that destroyed empires. But when we run into something like R2H and ARC breaks, if we haven't got the whole scale here, we're in trouble.

Well, what is the whole scale here? K, U – Know, or Known, and Unknown. Well, look, let's look it over. Let's look it over. What about that Know? Well, Know is already – you had to postulate you didn't know up above it, but that isn't unknown yet. See, the Not Know

⁸ [Editor's note: Starting at this point in the lecture, Ron made diagrams of some of these points. These were issued in HCOB 14 Aug. 63, "Lecture Graphs," which can be found in Technical Bulletins Volume V.]

goes up above this. The basic four-postulate stuff is already in this stuff, and we don't happen to need that because that simply measures case gain. This we do need: Known, Unknown. Why does that fit in? How come?

It's elementary, my dear Watson. You never get curious about something you know about. [laughs] I mean, it's these damn fool, idiot things, see, that... So knowingness must have disintegrated, because we know as a case progresses its knowingness rises. So as the case progresses, its knowingness rises, and therefore we must be running out unknownnesses. And this tells us that things have to be unknown before you enter into the CDEI Scale at all. That gets to be very interesting.

And you'll find out a very, very interesting part of ARC breaks is the unknownness. You know, the unknown datum – we've even got it in our early Logics. An unknown can cause a confusion, and so forth. And there's obviously where that belongs. So that's part of your CDEI Scale, oddly enough, which is a scale of the way one looks at things.

But that isn't the complete scale. I'm sorry to have to get into this thing any further. But what's that? That's nothing. Nothing. That belongs on the CDEI Scale, believe it or not: nothing. It's neither known nor unknown. There's nothing there to inhibit, enforce, desire, to be curious about, to be unknown or to be known. There just isn't anything there. And that is pretty obvious, too, isn't it? In fact it's an idiotic obviousness. It's just an absence. That's all. You're not – you haven't got something now to inhibit.

That's the black panther mechanism. And you feel more idiotic about this thing appearing on this thing when you realize that it's in Book One. It's the black panther mechanism: ignore it; do nothing about it. It's just a no-action level. Pretty grisly. It doesn't mean no ARC. We're not into ARC yet. This is just, well, you can inhibit things – well, how about just doing nothing about them? Just nothing? Well, of course, that's one of these "of course" mechanisms, because man routinely does nothing about things. That is one of his best mechanisms. In fact, no government on Earth could be the way it is if they didn't specialize in this one. Do nothing about it until it's too late or something of the sort, which is again just doing nothing about it.

All right. Well, that's fine, but is there anything else on this scale? Well, unfortunately this is the one, man; this is the one that broke the camel's back. This is the one. We've talked about it. We know it exists. We've had it around. I mean, everybody knows about it. But we know all about it and so we've never defined it.

But the basic part of this one was designating it. Finding some word that designated it that would communicate – that would communicate. And it's F: falsify. And after you do nothing about it, there's nothing there, you can falsify. You're not inhibiting something, you can falsify it. You're not doing nothing about it, you're falsifying it. But of course that puts something else there. So it tends to turn the whole scale up here again in an inversion.

See, after you've gone down this whole scale, how do you start it all over again? Well, your K at the top, Known, becomes False. And then of course, you don't know about falseness, and then of course you're curious about, you see, the falsifications, and so forth. And this scale then turns round and round on that basis, but it's just the same scale now. It now hits

level after level after level after level all the way down by just running this one point. So that's what makes the scale invert.

So it's a probability in this universe that you almost never see the K. The whole scale probably lies below F. That part of the ARC scale, then, which most people are working with, and so forth, are below F. So you see, as you go downscale, it requires all of those primary designations to bring about lower harmonics. You see what I mean here?

Let me give you an example. Let me give you an example of a tremendously involved scale: K – we'll do this very small – K, U, C, D, E, I, O, F, U, C, D, E, I, O, F, U. See this? See what's happening here? See, there's your whole scale. Got it? It goes on south. Perversions of perversions. Falsifications of falsifications. Don't you see? You finally get modern science – you go far enough south – all based on a false premise that man is mud. You see, something like that, and then you can go all the way, see? You get this now? Well, that's how that thing inverts.

So, there is it. Top, K, U, C, D, E, I, O, F – Zero, F. It's not an 0; it's a zero. Probably better be spelled with a Z. And that is a complete band. And it takes each one of those levels to make a complete band. And as long as we only had the CDEI Scale, this was very pure and very upscale, but we couldn't deal with aberration. We couldn't deal with the raw aberration of an engram, because we didn't have enough lower inversions, because the scale wasn't complete, so we couldn't invert it.

There were more things in each band than we had, and the things that were missing was Known, Unknown at the top; and down at the bottom, Zero and False. And there we have a total cycle, you might say, of the scale. Now, again I show you, that cycle can turn over again. Instead of Known, now, you have False, so it goes down to – you unknow falseness, you see; you're curious about falseness; the desire of falseness; the enforcement of falseness. You see? And then you get down – the inhibition of falseness, and then no falseness, and then you get a falseness about falseness. You see that? And you just keep on adding this up and you will get more and more and more and more involved lower levels.

I see you're sitting there a bit stunned. Now, what don't you dig out of this? What do you see there that you don't understand? Seemed to me to be perfectly obvious. [laughter]

You're looking, by the way, at only one band – when you look at the full scale like that, you're looking at only one band of the old Tone Scale. That's shown up: You can take *Science of Survival*, the old Tone Scale of one kind or another, and let's take one band. Let's drop down just one band. Let's go from 1 to 2. Let's just take a look at that. Let's say 2 to 1. And you're going to find all those levels between 2 and 1, and they'll be at some harmonic or another of the upper levels, you see?

Now where a pure – a pure scale – call it the CDEI Scale just for lack of a better term at this particular time – is so unimaginably high that it's probably never envisioned. It's terrifically high. And most of the scales that we see, and so forth, are already with falseness at knowingness. See? It's a false, a false, a false, a false...

Look what they teach you in school. George Washington never cut down any cherry trees, because he was an Englishman and they are orchard men, or something. You wait.

You'll just see that legend go along far enough and it will become *blong*, see, and it'll go down another one, see? Very interesting.

So all truth or actions or data or almost anything else goes down this CDEI Scale in that fashion: Known, Unknown, Curious, Desire, Enforce, Inhibit, Do nothing, Falsify. Do you see that now? All right.

Here we have our old friends, A, R and C. Nothing to this. Here you have ARC for the incident, and here you have – that's for the incident itself (now we're getting into R2H) – and then we have earlier incident. Got it? And we have A, R and C for the earlier incident. We've got it for the incident we're working with, and we've got it for an earlier incident. See? And you just do this: And each one of those levels has six. We have them for the incident, we have them for the earlier incident. Got that? And then just for fun, in case they didn't get the word, and so forth, on each one we put – this is for the purposes of really getting the thing scatted into sight – we put a missed withhold. And over here, of course, it's an earlier missed withhold.

That's your List One. Let you digest that for a minute. That's List One. Now, that's actually all possible levels that will have any reaction on anybody about anything. That's an ARC break laid out, man. Each one – Known, Unknown, Curious, Desire, Enforce, Inhibit, Do nothing, Falsify – each one of those levels has eight questions. Each one of those levels has eight questions. And those eight questions are the incident attitude, communication, reality – see, the attitude, reality, communication and a missed withhold. And then, is there an earlier incident with a bypassed charge of the attitude, the reality and the communication and the missed withhold, see? Put the missed withhold in there just for kicks. You'll find out it's a bucketload of stuff.

Now, that's a full list. Now, you can add that up mathematically. There are eight questions. You can count them up: there's one, two, three, four, five, six, seven, eight. There are eight questions for each level, and there are eight levels (and that chimes into my gag about the figure 8, beginning of the lecture), and you have eight times eight and that gives you sixty-four questions. And that's all the questions there is. That's a total List One – would consist of sixty-four separate questions.

Do you see how to evolve this? I'm teaching you how to evolve it. I'm not trying to give you a list. There's somebody sitting back there saying, "Well, he's going to give us the list in a moment," and so on. That isn't what I'm going to teach you. I'm teaching you how to evolve this thing. I'm assuming that you're on Pangopango. You have collided one way or the other with the wrong asteroid or something, and you're trying to put Scientology back together again and run some R2H on somebody, and there you go. How do you put a List One together? And there is your List One. Very important thing.

Sixty-four questions. I actually, at this stage of the game, don't care what you do with the sixty-four questions, you see? It's just, there is the totality of all possible combinations of an ARC break charge. That's all the charge there can be on an ARC break.

Now, you can dream up a whole bunch of additional ones. Oh, you can dream up additional ones madly. I don't care if you do, maybe some of them will communicate, maybe some

of them won't. But they will actually come back to this one. And they will not be central charges that really are bypassed charges to amount to anything.

Now, this list, this list with its sixty-four questions, gives you very interesting application possibilities, so that you don't have to assess sixty-four questions. Well, let's assess the CDEI Scale first on the incident, and then take the biggest read on that, and then move that sideways onto its eight questions. So that leaves you with a totality for assessment of eight and eight – sixteen questions. I'm showing you there are trick systems by which you can break this thing down.

In other words, you figure out some communicating name, see, for each one of these things. Well, for instance, Enforce, you put "too much." Right now you're using the Inhibit Scale all the time, all the time. An attitude refused, you see, a communication ignored: that's really your Inhibit Scale – and an unknown this and an unknown that, and so forth.

But you can say, "Was there something known about the incident? Was something unknown about the incident? Was there some curiosity about the incident? Was there some desire in the incident? Was there an enforcement in the incident? Was there an inhibition in the incident?" Or you can – Enforcement, you say, "too much something in the incident?" "Was it a nothingness that upset you in the incident?" Or "Was it something that was falsified?"

Now, one of those things bangs, and you've then got your standard scale, which of course... You could put it on separate little cards, and it's written up specially worded for the level it comes from. See? "Did that incident have an unknown attitude? Did it have an unknown reality? Was there an unknown communication? In that incident, was that a restimulation of an earlier unknown attitude? Restimulation of an earlier unknown reality? Restimulation of an earlier unknown communication?" Restimulation of earlier missed withhold, of course. The missed withhold questions are always the same. Not "an unknown missed withhold," see? It's just "Was there a missed withhold?"

Now, that would be quite a remarkable system. And you'll find that system would work. That system would work very well. But it doesn't happen to be a vital system to what you're doing. It isn't vital that you do the system that way, because a whole bunch of these levels are null. That's interesting. They don't have significant charge on them. And under the heading of significant charge you can cross off K, U, C, D, E, leaving you with I. You can cross off Zero. And F – you can leave F.

Now, if you're just going to do a short list that'll serve you in good stead, then the only thing you're really going to leave on the list to amount to anything at all is I and F. Those are the most pregnant sources of ARC breaks.

They upset people! Which gives you a sixteen-question list.

I'm showing you different ways by which you can handle this situation. See, I'm not giving you that as a recommended action, I'm just giving you different ways by which you can put together this same scale, see. You can find out... And that's the truth: You'll find out that for this lifetime, certainly, I and F – they cause nearly all of your bypassed charge. It's because of the case level you're dealing with, don't you see, and it's monitored by other fac-

tors. That leaves you here with I and F and nothing else that's going to worry your pc, at least in the beginning stages.

Then after a little while you're going to find your list starts falling short. There is something going on here now. The list starts falling short and so forth. And you'll find out that you have to add "too much" – "too much attitude," see, "too much communication," "too much reality," "too real!" And you could expand it right back on out again, and you start processing somebody around Case Level 2, that has actually attained Case Level 2, you're going to find yourself with a greatly fanned-out list – greatly fanned-out.

I'm just showing you there are various ways by which you can put this thing together. Now, you can probably scratch your head and get into it and develop yourself quite a fancy system of identifying the type of charge and assessing that particular type of charge. Only thing I'm trying to put to you is the fact that if you've got something missing on List One, you've had it, because that tone arm is eventually going to go up and stick.

And I don't say yet that somebody three quarters of the way up the line isn't all of a sudden going to run into a type of charge which isn't there in his estimation. And as you go on down the line, of course, the lower a case is, the more complex the case tends to be, and so you're going to have to probably include "emotion" instead of just "attitude." That'd probably have to be on your scale.

Now, the only thing that varies the scale, however – this is your basic and fundamental scale – the only thing that varies this scale is the communication of it to the pc, this particular pc at his particular state of case. You say, "Was there a false communication?" The pc is very odd indeed, very low scale or very high scale, he may only interpret this as a lie. A lying communication, see? He immediately interprets it over. But it's good enough, ordinarily. False communication. A false reality. A false attitude.

If you don't think false attitudes aren't in the keeping, the most popular textbook on the handling of your fellow human being is Dale Carnegie. And that's a full textbook on how to create and maintain false attitudes and realities.

Psychology actually hasn't even come up to being able to maintain a false one. That gives you how... the prevalent popularity of some things, and gives you this.

Look at the newspapers people read. You don't think there's very much true in a newspaper, and so forth, and yet newspapers sell a lot of copies. Well, so where must they be on the ARC scale? Where must they be? False attitudes, false realities, false communications. But how false?

Newspaper goes even falser than false. The newspaper takes a false scientific fact and then falsifies it. And that's why I drew you that other picture there, so you could show the harmonics that that thing goes down on. You can get into the falsification of the falsification of the falsification. It's like trying to handle some of these trillions-ten that you run up on some cases.

I don't know how we're going to handle that. That's one of our big problems. Pc is sitting there trying to count the number of trillions you're saying so he knows whether or not it's

the right date, you know? You start holding your hand up, so that it's trillions-five. But look, you only got five fingers, you need the other one for the E-Meter.

Now, there's your full scale. There's your full scale. There isn't anything more, really, that can cause an ARC break, because this is the full lay-down of life. The communication of this to the pc may cause you to make some ramifications of it, but you can abstract these ramifications from this scale.

So you got a new CDEI Scale which had to be expanded for its usability. Now, that's empirical. That doesn't necessarily fit in with anything, it's just what is there. What is there that is significant to a case. And that's Known, Unknown, Curious about, Desire, Enforce, Inhibit, Do nothing about, and Falsify.

Now, there's some question as to whether it ought to be Zero and then F, you see, or F and then Zero. Because you say, "Well, even a lie is some communication." I think you're splitting hairs, because you'll find ordinarily that a falsification is worse than no communication, ordinarily.

Now, plotting that sideways – remember that your basic scale on all of your List Ones consists of affinity, reality and communication, and a missed withhold for the incident. And then for earlier – not even earlier incident, just earlier – restimulation of an earlier attitude, reality, communication, missed withhold. See, that's an earlier missed withhold. And missed withhold would actually only have to occur – if your big scale is out, it reduces the number of questions slightly.

Because you're simply repeating the thing if you break this down into separate cards. And that's there because – and you break it down into separate cards, for God's sakes, don't omit the missed withhold. Because this is a peculiar communication of the same thing. See, it's a didn't communicate, you know? And also could falsify a reality, and also change an attitude completely, don't you see? But it's a peculiar little mechanism; it's asking, in essence, "Was there a bypassed charge?" But it speaks normally, "Was there something you didn't say or something which you were consciously withholding?"

Now, if you went and expanded this out and out and out and out and out, you would get yourself into trouble. If you say you're going to put a missed withhold on there, then why don't you put an overt? Well, you don't put an overt because it mashes engrams. You start running O/W in the middle of an engram and you can get the pc in more energy soup than you've gotten him in for some time. There are too many GPMs, and there's too many this, too many that. And the effect of the bank is that if you run the eighteen buttons of a Prepcheck, or the handful of buttons that we constitute now the big mid ruds, or even the old little mid ruds, about and into an engram, specifically, you see, that thing will mush. It'll fold up. And you won't have a picture. See? An overt, and the big mid ruds particularly, run directly against an engram, can cause that engram to fold up into so much oatmeal. The energy structure of it breaks down and it no longer is able to hold its constituents, see, and who can tell what's in it.

So you don't do those things against engrams or secondaries. You say, "In that ARC break, has anything been suppressed?" Well, you might get away with that one, you see? "In that ARC break, is there anything you are careful of?" Uhhh, *du-du-da-da-da-oooh*. "Fail to

reveal" – perfectly all right. "In that ARC break, has anything been invalidated?" *Uh-uh-uh-uh-uh-uh-uh!*

"In that ARC break has anything been suggested?" *Oohhh!* Pc will be going "...What's happened?"

Because frankly, you're using 18-inch naval cannon to shoot rabbits. The buttons are just too fundamental. They're just too powerful. I did far, far too good a job in designing the big mid ruds and isolating those buttons. You could never say, "On the reactive mind has anything been..." Apparently it takes just so much aberration to hold a picture together so you can run it. Anyway. They go back too early, and they're too powerful.

But these, these buttons – they don't do anything to the picture but strip off and disconnect the charge and realign the thing. And it's a very smooth operation indeed, the way this happens.

You're essentially, in R2H, trying to make somebody's pictures better. That's what I'm trying to call to your attention. It's all right to say, "Since the last time I audited you..." you know, big mid ruds, and "In this session..." big mid ruds. Don't worry too much about that. But, "On that ARC break..." big mid ruds – oh, no. In other words, you can run against the physical universe in its near-up environment. Right now you can run all the big mid ruds you want to.

"On that plank," see, "has anything been suppressed?" This is the same thing as, "Since the last time I audited you has anything been suppressed?" Still got the whole physical universe around you, and you're not going to get this pc to knock the physical universe apart by running the big mid ruds buttons – at this state of his case. There probably gets a point in his processing as you get up the line where you'll no longer be able to do this safely. "In this auditing room has anything been suppressed?" *Cre-e-eak!* Ghosts, see?

Now, the point I'm stressing here is that the list has another importance rather than its significance, is we don't want the list to be too beefed up. See, the list, instead of missing some levels, could use some buttons we know about in Scientology that would be totally destructive of the goals of R2H. Boom! See? This guy all of a sudden is covered with white energy, or something of the sort, and mashing engrams, and everything is getting blah, and so on. So there are things you don't want on the list. It isn't really all right to just anything you dream up, put on the list, see? You can go quite a ways.

I've tested out nearly all of these various variations of the thing, and they're actually not necessary. "Was anything misunderstood?" Well, that's covered, of course, in your Unknown level. "Was any earlier misunderstanding?" and that sort of thing. And you know, I've had those on lists, and I've never seen them significantly be the cause of bypassed charge.

You'd think No Communication would be terribly important. Well, it isn't terribly important till you start walking up into engrams. The guy was in jail for a million years. What caused the ARC break? There was no communication. Shortly after he was locked up they had a war and he got killed – the jailer got killed, and they forgot to shut the power off and forgot to let him out. ARC break – no communication.

You'll find that this steeps up the line. But frankly, in usual running of cases and so forth, you'll find you won't need it.

Now, this is the woof and the warp of how you put together a List One. This is the formula by which you put together a List One. This doesn't necessarily give you a List One that you promptly and instantly should sit down and audit your pc with madly. There are too many ways you can put this thing together.

Now, the *preassessment* of List One probably itself could be done with a shortened number of CDEI points, see? Just take out those that ordinarily wouldn't fall, and leave about four in. See? Leave about four in. And preassess. "Was that ARC break caused by an unknown? Was it caused by too much of something? Was it caused by too little? Or was it caused by an absence? Or was ... ?" You know? Any way you want to chop it up, see? But you for sure get False in there, and you for sure get Inhibit in there, see, because that's where those ARC break live. And you start running heavy engrams, you'll find out, sooner or later you're going to need Zero.

Also, somebody can be found holding on to a death. Now we're starting to run heavy stuff, see? Somebody runs a death. What's wrong with this death? Why is it in restimulation all the time? Well, he never could find out who shot him. That was the ARC break. Never could find out who shot him. Bullet came out of nowhere. It was a beautiful day in spring, and he was sitting on the lawn of the Ladies' Aid Society building in Des Moines, Iowa. There he sat, and he was suddenly hit with a rocket blaster! Cause a fellow to think for quite a while!

He's liable to keep that engram in his hip pocket and look at it every once in a while, wondering if somewhere around the edges of it he hadn't gotten a picture of who shot him. Wrong place, wrong atmosphere, wrong mood, you see? And with an unknown in it. It's pretty certain.

You see how you can do this? Hm? All right, what don't you understand about that scale – why what is there? Is there anything in it that you don't understand why it's there? Hm? I see you all frowning, but I don't see you cogniting on anything. It's just too formidable; is that what's wrong with it? Or is it too – as I told you a little earlier – too nonsensically simple? It kind of strickens you with its simplicity, doesn't it?

Well, I've been overshooting this confounded scale and overshooting it. I've had some of the fanciest examples of this scale you ever saw, and assessed with them, you know, and so on, and just assessed with them, man, and gone clear on down to the end of the list, and TA remains high and the charge isn't on the list. That's how this scale was formulated. Total empiricism. What is it? What is it? What is the missing charge? What is the missing charge? And I knew it didn't have it. Well, I finally managed to get around and found out that we were not missing charge, and so forth, so we obviously had it. And the last one on the list was F, False. And that is what a thetan mostly objects to. That is one of his heaviest buttons: a false communication. He himself feels guiltiest about uttering a false communication, or abetting a false reality or a false attitude. Under this heading, you could say, "Well, we should have a line that says 'Was there a betrayal in this incident?'" you know? Obviously that'd read, but unfortunately it doesn't respond, because a betrayal is actually just a falsity.

Betrayal. There's a big sign says Ice Cream Cones Free Inside. And so you walk inside and there's this cage drops down and the machinery grinds. See? Well, what on earth is every theta trap on the track but a false representation? Falsity. It's the one thing that aberrates a person, because his level of trust with the physical universe drops, you see? He can't trust the very reality he's looking at; in some way it's been falsified. And so he begins to ARC break with the stuff.

So that was a key button. And the funny part of it is I expressed that one time as "twisted" or "perverted" and you know, it didn't assess. Didn't communicate. Didn't even vaguely communicate. "Perverted communication," "twisted communication," "altered communication" – these things just didn't communicate, till I finally got down to "a false communication." And man, you'll find out, I think, that communicates.

The pc you assess this on or the pc that you run this process on, naturally, here and there, has to get a reinterpretation. You say "missed withhold." Well, that communicates to thee and me, but does it communicate to the pc you're running, don't you see? You say, "Is there something you were holding back? *He-ho!* Was there a kept secret?" That kind of thing. "Was there a kept secret in the incident?"

But it's actually senseless to give you all possible wordings of all possible questions. See, that's senseless, because that you can't work with. All possible wordings of all possible questions is just a gobbledygook. One ARC break: you assess a dictionary. One of these Webster dictionaries, you know? Complete with obsolete words. [laughter]

So, therefore, therefore, I've given you the basic formula of assessment, and that formula of assessment is you take each level of the old CDEI Scale – now expanded to K, U, C, D, E, I, Zero, F – each element of that, and you move it over here into that.

Now actually, each level only has six, but if you put them on different cards, you have to add your missed withhold in the incident, missed withhold earlier, which gives you a basic list of eight. Your basic list of eight – you must never get less than eight. And by putting that over, you can do all sorts of things. You can preassess. You can bobtail the number of levels you're going to have. You can do this and that. But still, the least I can do is give you the absolute, complete list.

So for each one of the K, U, C, D, E, I, Zero and F, we have the possibility of affinity, reality, communication, and a missed withhold in the incident, and then an affinity, reality, communication and missed withhold in earlier incidents, or earlier charge, something like that. And you can make up one of the fanciest little wheels you ever wanted to see.

I imagine you can take this particular schema of some kind or another, and you can draw up dozens of different systems by which this can be used. And you can certainly draw up dozens of different wordings. For instance, right away you're up against at A, attitude. "Was there a Tone Scale...?" That doesn't communicate, see, but that's what we mean. Affinity. Person says affinity, well, it must mean love. You know, bang. You know? But those semantics are for your delivery to the pc, so one of your basic breakdowns is you say "attitude," and then you also say "emotion."

Now, you realize you could break that down further and put "effort" in there. You realize that the whole Know to Mystery Scale can go under A.

I hope you recognize that. See? The whole Know to Mystery Scale – and they're all part of that A. Or you could have symbols, and so forth. You could get mighty fancy. You just substitute it for that. And you start getting that fancy, however, you sure better develop a system of pre-assessment to get it all sorted out.

Now, I have one correction to make in R2H. I have led you to believe – I have led you to believe, erroneously perhaps, that the best system was to clean every level. That is in actual fact the easiest-to-audit system which gives you the least dirty needle and does not necessarily release the most charge from the case. And I thought I'd better give you a slight addendum to that. Because if you can skitter down a list rapidly and pick out the major charge, the biggest read off of that list, and bang that back at the pc, you're getting more tone arm action per minute of auditing time, you see? Which gives you then, if it can be done, the *best* system. That doesn't necessarily say that it is the most doable system. You got that?

Now, some pc who drags the bypassed charge through the remainder of the list every time you touch any charge at all – you get into endless difficulty, if you try to assess the whole list and take the biggest read and give him that, and have him explain that in full with the itsa line in full, see? That gives you the most tone arm action per minute of auditing time, see? Obviously, because you get the blowdown right now, and so forth. But if you run into too much difficulty doing that – and an auditor who is having difficulty at all with a pc, or a pc who is having difficulties coping, a needle that is hard to read, a meter that is hard to read, and all these things are quite usual in auditing, you see – you treat it like end rudiments. Treat it like end rudiments and clean it up all the way down.

But in any event, no matter what system you use, you have to be satisfied.

Now, there's a liability to treating it with end rudiments that I must inform you of. I say this is the easiest for the auditor to do, and is very often the most easy and comfortable on the pc because the pc is, after all, sitting there all during the rest of the assessment – by the time you've bypassed the bypassed charge the pc maybe – almost have steam coming out of his ears, you see?

As you go down this list, you can, by treating it like end rudiments (this has a liability) destroy the major read, because you've bled the charge of read already, and all you get is a slight hump of the needle as you go past this thing. You don't get the major charge that is going to give you the blowdown, reading with a good sharp *tsk*, see? You don't get that. Instead of that, it now, when you meet up with it, simply puts a hump on the needle.

See, because if you took it without bleeding the ARC break of any charge, the ARC break has got enough charge in it to give you a good sharp read. But if you bleed that ARC break down by taking every tick of it off, why, you're liable to get to a situation where the meter is very difficult to read, because it's just a slow or a speed will become the major charge.

So if you're going to do this rudiments system all the way down like rudiments, then you also have to take those slows and speeds. So it gives you a new problem in reading the meter in return for having solved your dirty needle. You get a new problem.

There are many ways by which to do this. The way that gives you the most tone arm action, that you can run, that the pc will sit still for, is the way to use – obvious. Obvious, that's the way to use.

Now, if you've got a preassessment on this particular list, and you could preassess, and move right in on the hard charge – see, that is the list, bang! – it's rather brief assessment, don't you see? And therefore it goes *powie!* see? You just go right on down the line and get your biggest read, *bow!*

And you say, "That's it. What is it?" And the pc has to figure it out and give you the itsa on it and be perfectly satisfied with it. And you'll see that tone arm go *pow!* and down she'll come, see? You're all satisfied with that one. That ARC break doesn't read on the meter. Up goes your next one. "Recall an ARC break"; your tone arm starts up with the whatsa – the whatsit line. And do your assessment. Get, of course, your "What was it? Where was it? When was it?" Get your assessment in on it. Get that charge. And you'll see that tone arm, *pow!* It'll come down again as soon as the pc picks it up. And you'll get a tone arm which is moving, moving, moving, moving, moving, getting looser and looser and looser, if you do it that particular way.

Too shortened a list, too abbreviated, so as to miss the principal charge, leaves you with a high TA. In actual fact what happens is charge moves the time wrong in an incident. The incident is all charged up because of something that happened in 1912. So the charge of the incident is in 1912, the incident is in 1920. Wrong date.

Now, if your List One does not specify that charge, you of course are going to miss the 1912 charge, and the incident will continue to look to the pc like 1912. It's very interesting. Your TA will get higher and higher and get stickier and stickier, and the thing will eventually go over the moon, and you'll have it riding up here at 5.25, and R2H is working less and less well, no matter what you dooo.

Well, actually, you're restimulating charge which you aren't picking up, and the inevitable fact when you do that is the pc will get harder and harder to audit and eventually he'll ARC break, just on the diagrams I gave you concerning the itsa – the whatsit and itsa line.

Want to make one little more remark to you. That's all there is about that. I hope you can evolve one of the things. Okay?

I want to make one other remark to you. I thought of a process. This is just research, see? I thought of a process by which you could possibly see a tone arm pump at your will. See? You could probably see it go. You say, "Recall a worry" – see, whatsit. Because a worry is obviously whatsit, like crazy! See? "Recall a worry. What was it about? Recall a worry. What was it about? Recall a worry. What was it about?" You'll be able to drill your tone arm up and down on a pc with that particular type of process. It's not particularly therapeutic. I'm just showing you, here's a way to make a tone arm actually work for you so you would see the whatsit – itsa line in complete operation, providing you let the pc tell you what it was about.

Now, I can show you how to get a tone arm high and keep it there: "Recall a worry; recall a worry; recall a worry; recall a worry. That's all right. Don't bother to tell me what it is. Recall a worry..."

The other thing you're going to worry about, and I already had some questions on it: You've probably audited a pc one time or another that got very good tone arm action but didn't get any better. This is a possibility that you may have run into. Let me call to your attention something in that bulletin that came out there, is tone arm action, if present, will take the pc eventually to OT. But let me point out the word eventually, and even later in that bulletin it says, "even if it takes thousands of years," you understand? You understand?

You're at least getting somewhere if you have tone arm action, is the only point I'm putting across. Well, what is the expectancy? Well, that's pretty long. You have to run the right significances. Very often you've got a pc who is getting tone arm action all right, tone arm pumping around. You may have changed the process right in the middle of the tone arm action. See? Well, now you've got a whole bunch of new charge without blowing the old charge, and the pc is going to go on feeling very uncomfortable while getting better. Charge is coming off, don't you see, but the specific thing that you were after didn't happen with the pc.

The way to analyze something like that is, what did you consider "better"? And how long did you just sit there and let the tone arm waggle, without chipping off new charge and throwing it into restimulation on the case? Of course the case was getting better, but a case can get better comfortably, and a case can get better very uncomfortably, and a case can get better insufferably bad off. That's right. You start running screen implants – stuff that's been restimulated on these screens in the between-life area, you see? You got a tremendous quantity of track back to the last date that has never been restimulated by the screens, see? More modern stuff is not screen-restimulated. You get back earlier, and you'll run into a span where you've got screen-restimulated engrams. And my God, they've been restimulated every sixty or seventy years, don't you see, for the last ten thousand or something like that. Every time you died, you got that particular set of engrams beautifully, gorgeously steamed up. And man, you get in and you start to run them today, you get tone arm action, but you just wish that you just hadn't started it in the first – why not just go up through the between-lives area again and get it all over with.

You're getting tone arm action, but getting better is not how the pc feels. See? It's whether he's making more progress to more knowingness and more ability. Also, his current state in auditing is not a measure of his getting better. He can have a beautiful memory, hit the between-lives area and his memory goes *blorp!* He's getting better. He can't remember a thing. But he is closer to being able to remember everything. You understand?

So you can put certain things into restimulation in a case that bring about temporary conditions on the case. And they're pretty ghastly sometimes. And sometimes they're not well taken care of, and they stay that way for quite a while, and then one day they all blow out.

You've got to review a case over a period of the thirty days. You've got to review a case at least over the period of an intensive, or the period of thirty days, or something like that. I had an example of that the other day. I was thinking about organizations and Dianetics and Scientology. Matter of fact I was giving an auditing session, and a bunch of data was

coming up that spanned that period. And you know, I was absolutely amazed. I had never taken a look between the improvement of 1951 and 1963 and its interim states. You know, I mean just – you know – what were we doing then? What were the organizations like then? What were our communications like then? Wow, you know? I thought, "Good heavens. At this rate of speed we're going to take this planet over practically tomorrow!" It's true, too. We are.

Thank you very much!

AUDITING TIPS

A lecture given on 14 August 1963

Okay, well, how are we today?

Audience: Fine. Great. Good.

I'm getting into the medical scene, I'm swapping terminals. How are we today? Nurse, get the bedpan. [laughter]

Well, you should be having a demonstration, of course, today. But, there's a lot to – of ground to cover one way or the other, and I'll try to give you some helpful hints in auditing which will make up for it.

First and foremost, this is what?

Audience: 14th.

Fourteenth August – you surely keep my time track nice and straight, thank you. 14 August, AD 13, Saint Hill Special Briefing Course.

We have a lecture on auditing – style, kind, type, how do. If you must audit, why, audit to a gain. The customer is always right. I mean, the preclear is always right. It's true. The significance – the significance is less important than the TA action. TA action on the right significance brings about faster clearing. The benefit is in the word "faster." The right significance and no TA action equals no case gain. Keep the itsa line in. Get TA action.

When training an auditor, get him to figure out how many ways you can cut an itsa line. And maybe dawn will break. The smoothest auditing is the auditing which least cuts the itsa line. "Auditor" means "listener."

It takes a lie to hold aberration in place. Serious aberration surrenders easily. It's the mediocre that takes the long haul – mediocre type aberration.

The primary difference between Scientology and psychiatry is that psychiatry is authoritarian and tells the person what's wrong with him – often introducing a new lie. Scientology finds out what's wrong with the person from the person. And then knows more about it than the person – but listens anyway. Listening is the badge of superior knowledge. He who has superior knowledge is privileged to listen. It's only he who has no superior knowledge that talks all the time – Confucius.

Now you got these maxims, and pearls of wisdom? In actual fact, with that data you could go straight out and evolve all of Scientology – just like that. It's remarkable, isn't it?

But, you mustn't in actual fact discount – just because it's discounted to the pc – you mustn't discount the backbone and body of knowledge of Scientology. Soon as you tell some-

body that he's lived for the last thirty trillion years – of course, thirty trillion years is a drop in the bucket – soon as you tell somebody he's lived the last thirty trillion years, and so on, he's liable to be hit with a feeling of unreality.

That unreality busily boils off. But he natters while it's being boiled off. How it's all unreal, and that sort of thing. Well, he's actually running off unreality and you shouldn't pay much attention to it. Remember, he's now talking about an unreality. And he never talked about that before. And in the process of talking about it he actually is raising his ARC with whatever it is. Even though he may do it very slowly.

Now, there are two kinds of talk that a pc indulges in – two kinds of talk. Talk one is theta talk, and talk two is entheta talk. It's theta talk that brings you out of the woods with a pc. And the entheta talk is the symptom of an ARC break. So auditing actually divides down into two actions. Is getting theta talk out of the pc, that's one action. And that's keeping your itsa line in, because it's the theta he's generating that's blowing his bank apart, you see?

And the entheta talk is handled by locating the impeded charge of theta which is barred in the bank. We call this bypassed charge. In other words there's two actions here. One, you can let him talk, and keep his attention directed indifferently, sometimes, but keep it directed in the direction of the right significances. Don't keep it directed to such a degree, however, that he ceases to get tone arm action and ceases to talk, see.

The other action is in actual fact putting in the itsa line for the pc. And that's how you cure an ARC break. You find out by assessment what trapped charge has been ticked and is trying to get loose. He'll just natter as long as that charge is trapped. And the auditor can then locate that trapped charge and free it. He'll desensitize it.

So there's two auditing actions in actual fact, you see. This first and foremost is listing [listening] with tone arm action. And then secondarily locating, by assessment or any other means, the trapped charge.

Now a pc who is – who is talking smoothly and on and on and on – even if the pc is crying about it – is not interfered with. See, don't interfere with that line – that's interfering with the itsa line. Just let the pc roll, see. But the pc is not talking about the bank, but is talking up out of the bank – natter, natter, natter, natter, natter, "It's all bad; they're – they're after me; they're caving me in; what you're doing to me; what everybody is doing to me; how bad they are" – you know, talks like a newspaper! Then you realize at that point that this talk is really not doing the pc any good at all.

This pc is in an ARC break. He's protesting cut communication lines, you see, in his environment usually, and so forth. He's protesting unrealities. He's protesting lack of affinity, or its absence. And what's happened there is that charge has been ticked and missed. And unless the auditor gets very, very busy and locates that charge and indicates it and lets the pc see it and figure it out, why, that pc is going to go on nattering and you're not then going to get an increase of case.

Now, in the old days we said that if – a pc could talk his havingness down... Remember that?

Audience: Mm-hm. Yes.

Well now, you've probably wondered how that sits today. That only applies to Case Two, which I have just given you. A pc only talks his havingness down when he's natter, natter, natter, natter, natter. And you'll find in Case One, where the pc is talking about his case, is talking about his bank, is talking about himself, his past and so forth, and you're getting tone arm action – you'll find out that the longer he talks, the better his havingness gets. Do you see that?

Of course, the whole phenomenon of havingness is raising his ARC with his environment. So if he is in a situation where he's – he himself is cutting his ARC with his environment, then of course his havingness will drop, because his ARC with the environment is what we call havingness. Havingness is simply – can be defined as ARC with the environment. That's all. That should be very elementary to you.

But now let's see, how many ways can you cut an itsa line? Now, the best way to do this is to get somebody the graph, of, – was it 2 August? The HCO Bulletin that has the big graph on the back of it that gives you the cut itsa line, shows you what the cut itsa line is?

Audience: Fourth August.

Fourth August – thank you.

Now that 4th August bulletin has a nice graph there and you should – in training an auditor – you're going to make – you're going to make marvelous strides if you do this. In training an auditor, if you'll just give him that graph and you'll say, "Now go ahead and list the number of ways you could cut this itsa line." When he's done that, why, "Give me an example of each one of these" – that's your practical aspect, you see? Give me an example of each one of these cut things. And then give me an example of each one of these things how that needn't have been cut, or you would overcome it if you did this inadvertently. In other words, get him thinking on this subject. Get him to comb his hair out on this subject so that he is not walking around in a fog.

Because it's one of the most complex things you ever heard of – if you want to make it complex. And everybody's going to have a different bug on it.

Now, I can draw you up the communication cycles which are contained in the auditing cycle. And these are all very neat and there'll be drills for each one of these things, eventually. But it all comes down to this. Initially getting the pc in-session, which is interested in his own case and talking to the auditor, and then keeping the itsa line in, in such a way as to give maximal tone arm action.

Now, when we state it that way, we're stating it the way a very skilled auditor would look at it. See, this is the hallmark of a very skilled auditor. And it's simply an expansion of a highly elementary definition which I gave you in the first place. Now that's – this, where the skill comes in. That's a skilled auditor.

In other words, he can get somebody interested in his own case and talking to the auditor about it – and then keep the itsa line in, directed in such a way as to give maximal tone arm action. And if you add to that: And knocking out the significances necessary to resolve the case fastest – now you have the super-super-super-skilled auditor! And there you

have actually delineated the various levels and grades of auditing. That's just to the degree that you expand to the last definition I give you.

Now, if you want to move an auditor downstairs, in terms of level – I mean, if you want to get an idea of the lower levels of auditing, then the upper levels – all you have to do is keep snipping pieces off of that definition, and you'll get lower and lower levels of auditing – till you even snip off "tone arm action" and "assessment" at the level of Book Auditor. You don't expect him to know anything about a tone arm. You don't expect him to be able to give an assessment, if he wasn't getting tone arm action. So you just define for him that you keep somebody talking about his own case and you continue to listen to him.

And the odd part of it is that he's going to get a lot more results than mucking up criss-crossed actions that he doesn't understand. You see, you've given him enough right there and you're going to give him an E-Meter now – and he doesn't know anything about an E-Meter, and you're going to give him an E-Meter – and he's going to wonder, "Let's see, the tone arm, is that this knob at the bottom that snaps? No, that – that's not it, uh... and tone arm action. Tone arm action, what does quite that mean?" And he's watching this tone arm action, he's putting down "3.001" – he's gotten so he can read verniers, you see – "3.002, 3.001." Pc is getting tone arm action, you see, obviously. Adequate tone arm action.

In other words, you get the idea – you've got to keep giving him these significances, and keep giving him these significances, and keep giving him these, and finally train him in on what a tone arm is. Well, you've been over that yourselves so often and so long that it appears absolutely ridiculous that nobody would know anything about it.

Well, just sometime, just hand an E-Meter to – well, a psychiatrist or somebody – and say, "How do you operate this thing, bud?" And – keeping his professional lingo, see, "How do you operate this thing, bud?" – and he comes up with the same thing he's told the Food and Drug Administration of the United States: "It cures things." Cures things. Thing is around for eighty years – measuring emotion, and so forth, in the world of psychology. And that's the best technical opinion that they can come up with – it cures things. I don't know, I think they – "Seven and a half volts through the thing, that put on the person you see – and if it runs through his hands for a little while, why then he ceases to get speckled fever or something. I don't know – I don't understand this!"

You see, you give a piece of equipment or something like that, or you give a complication to somebody, and they Q and A with the complication by making it far, far, far more complicated, to a point where it no longer means what it meant. See, you can just chase this thing over the far horizon. It ceases to have any value at all. So it is better to stay – now listen, because you'll be training a lot of auditors – now, listen here – remember – remember: *Pound one simplicity home*. Don't make it complicated, just pound one simplicity home at a time. And you've got it made.

You've got some people on a co-audit – just keep him talking and when you're absolutely sure he's shut up, and he's said everything that he's going to say on the subject, why, you just look at him intelligently and you just ask him for something else. And that's all we want. See. And that's all we want. We want you sitting there, and when he finally – see, you don't even have starts of sessions or anything else, see – and when he's finally finished up talking

and saying what he wants to say, then you say one of these questions to him, you see. And it's here. And we don't even care if it's the same question every time or another question or something – but your idea is to keep him talking about himself. You got the idea? And that's all we want. We just want you to keep him talking about himself. That's really what we want and let's not get off into your inability to duplicate the auditing command, or you're waiting there to get in a new auditing command. Let's not get in there about whether you acknowledge what he has said, let's not add any complication to it at all.

That appalls you suddenly, as you take a look at it. You take all those things in as automatic, don't you? How can you get along without them? Well, it's up to you to find out. Because at that level of auditing all you want to have happen – all you want to have happen – is somebody telling – B telling A about their troubles. We don't care what they say. He's not going to have a tone arm to look at. He's not going to have any complications like this. So he'll want to know how can you tell.

So you add then, the next step. The pc gets brighter and talks better. That's his index of success. You would express that as more ARC. And that's the most elementary basic of auditing there is. You could take some old-timer and you could take his own auditing trained patterns and you could say, "If you were auditing you – if you were auditing you, what part of your case would you start for?" Sit back, man, that's it! [laughter] Tone arm sit there and move beautifully. Clean up all his past auditing, everything else.

Now, I've given you there the various levels of auditing. See, if you'll only recognize it. See, those are the various levels of certification, that. That actually automatically establishes your zones and patterns of training. Now where we exceed those things, we lose. It would take quite a while to get administration wrapped around that much simplicity. But you eventually will get to a point where you'll see that simplicity achieved. And that's the ideal. That is your ideal.

Now, as you move along in auditing a case, you're going to be confounded with this basic problem. Soon as we move up and put the E-Meter in somebody's hands – of course we're confounded with this problem before. But because we haven't got that level of skill in the auditor, we don't pay any attention to the problem. And the second that we graduate somebody up to putting a meter in his lap, then we want to see that TA move. And when that TA moves, we've got charge coming off. And there's your basic problem, is how do you keep a TA moving? That's going to worry you, that worries Mary Sue on your cases, that worries me on her case, that worries people, people, people, that worries Mary Sue in auditing – anything. How are you going to keep that TA moving?

Now, that is the deepest problem in auditing at this moment. Not what to audit. That is not the deepest problem, that problem has been solved. The other problem is how do you keep the TA moving on that particular pc? That is the problem, man. And when you walk upstairs to the highest level of skill, you of course keep it moving by addressing the case to certain significances. How do you keep it moving. This gives you a *lot* of problems. I could delineate these problems by the hour. Now we're getting into *complexity*. So you're now going up to a supervisory level of auditing. Takes quite a lot of knowledge. How do you keep a TA moving?

Well, the basic stop of a TA is time. The reason they stop is time. And the biggest time stopper is the GPM. I beg your pardon, that's as far as a – that's as far as an incident – type of incident is concerned. That's a great time stopper. But a GPM never becomes a terrific time stopper until it has been grouped in one of these between-lives screens or some analogous type of incident where things are redated, or cross-dated or something like that and it gets stuck and at wrong times. The GPM is incipiently, then – if it didn't exist, you see, you probably would get no time stopping at all – probably nobody could group a bank. You – you got that? That – because that's perfectly true. I followed this out, painfully tagged it out bit by bit. The only time my tone arm has ever stopped moving is on GPMs. I've got good subjective reality on it, good objective reality on it and so forth. It's a GPM. If it weren't there, it couldn't get latched up on one of these screens or anything else, you see. It's a big time stopper because it gives the mechanism of instantaneousness in present time. And it floats in time, so therefore it can appear anyplace. And then it gets pinned down in these between-life area screens and there goes your TA action – thud! Stops. That's it.

So, that's all – that's all very interesting. It sounds terribly final. And it doesn't make it a simpler problem but if you know that, you can get this thing disentangled more easily. But that's – that's what that is. So then we assume then, that as far as significance of incidents are concerned, why, the GPM plus any grouping incident gives you billy-o as far as the tone arm is concerned. That is what is in the bank that will stop tone arm action. You got that?

Now, what auditing action stops tone arm action? See, now this is a different problem. This is a different problem. There is an auditing action – it's the same action. It's wrong dating. You get the wrong date on an incident and your tone arm action starts folding up. Pc can't even run, by the way – can't even run the incident you're trying to run – can't do anything with it. It's got a wrong date on it. You'll find that a wrong date tends to group incidents. It does all kinds of wild things. If somebody has got a 3-D visio of a facsimile, then I can tell you man, you've got the right date. And as he runs through it, it stays 3-D and stays in one place, boy, you've got the right date. Don't start worrying about dates.

But if he's running it, and a half a dozen others at the same time, then it's a lead-pipe cinch you've got the wrong date. This doesn't necessarily mean that you can find the right date, but it means you have *got* the wrong date. Got that?

Now, when you wrong-date a GPM, what do you think happens? Here is your greatest incipient wrong-dater anyway – it floats in time all over the place – and when you get the wrong date on a GPM, brother! That is a grim situation. It will stop the tone arm almost as though it ran into a truck. Wrong date.

Now, this is mixed up with the fact that the GPM is – *is* possible to date. Do you understand how faintly I make that statement? It is *possible* to date a GPM. That is a very faint statement. But the mere fact that it is a GPM gives you the tiniest possible reads on dates. It gives you the tiniest reads and the roughest job of dating of any incident. And after you've dated one, why, that date is as valid as it gets tone arm action. But that doesn't mean that a half an hour later, on a redating situation you're not going to find another date. How do you like that? Perhaps you didn't realize that this amount of sneakery was going on with regard to one of these confounded GPMs.

But I tell you this for this reason: The way you're dealing with GPMs, there's no sense as an auditor of going into tears back of your meter – because lord knows you will feel like it! You've just got this thing beautifully nailed down, at some incredible date you can't even keep in your head, see? Gorgeous, see? Trillions all over the place, and so on. Boy! You're sure glad to have that! Picture showed up. Fifteen minutes later pc is going into an ARC break or starting to natter about your hairdo or something. [laughter] You give him an assessment. And it says "wrong date." It assesses out to a wrong date! But how could it assess out to a wrong date? We just had the right date. So we very often would be foolish enough to back off. Be very foolish, you see – foolish enough to back off and say, "We got that one right-dated. Let's see if we can find something else that is wrong-dated."

No, you better take what's nearest and dearest to your dating, because that GPM probably has another date. You probably dated it onto a screen. In other words, this was the screen date. That's still a right date – but it's a screen date. And when you redate it again, that's – the pc has blown enough charge now to be aware of the wrongness of this date. That's all that's happened. So you redate the confounded thing and you get it off the screen and it moves someplace else. And you've now got a right date.

The difficulty with this – the reads are absolutely microscopic! Hundred and twenty-eight on a Mark V, you see? All rudiments in. All the pc has got to do, is you say, "Greater than," he thinks, "Less than" and immediately you get a read on something else and *bzzong!* Here we go, see? So you delicately, cat-footedly date this thing and you get a beautiful read and you get a blowdown and you say, *aaahhhhh!* You know. Meter is up there at five-and-a-half on the tone arm – you got a beautiful blowdown when you got this new date – and you're all set and all ready to go.

You run some more items out of the thing and fifteen minutes later the pc is finding fault with your necktie. So you do another ARC break assessment and so on – pc absolutely can't go on. The only time you do one is when the pc just can't – he's passed into such a stage two there that you can't get any auditing at all. And you do an assessment and by God, it comes up wrong date." Oh, but wait a minute! You had a blowdown on the thing! No, you moved it to another screen. Nice.

Completely aside from the perils of just plain "his rudiments go out" so you get a wrong date, you see. You've got the thing that the thing has got a lot of dates! So, you finally get it back and you finally – you say, "I heard Ron say something about that one time, and I'm really going to get in this thing real good. Is this an actual track date?" And it reads – actual track date. You didn't also ask, "On what screen?" [laughter]

So, you get your new date and after that it runs like a doll. But beware, you actually could start dating on a certain series of GPMs – now listen – and go seven sessions trying to find the date of the series. Be wonderful if you kept the pc's itsa line in the whole way. And don't turn off that itsa line. Because you've pulled a whole series of GPMs off screen after screen after screen – you're straightening out his track like crazy. But you could sit there and just chop him to ribbons by never letting him help you in any way, shape or form. Take all the data off the meter. Never let the pc volunteer anything. And if you then went seven sessions

with all this, your pc would be going downhill like mad, don't you see? You wouldn't be getting any tone arm action either.

You see the liabilities – you see the liabilities of this confounded thing called the GPM? False track actually is nothing because it is never false track. They might show you some pictures and say, "That is track," but they're usually still pictures, solid pictures and very brief pictures. When it comes to track – there are false pictures, yes – but when it comes to track, false track – actually you shouldn't use the word and I shouldn't have used the word false track – because I've since found out what it is.

When you invalidate somebody's time track hard enough and hit him hard enough, he puts dub-in over the top of the actual picture. And the dub-in looks quite like the actual picture but it's just a little – little film over the top of it, and as you start to audit it, that film comes off and he sees the actual picture. And actually, it isn't too different than his own track.

He won't find much variation in his time track by the reason of having had his track invalidated it to dub-in. I've now found this out, you see – he's still got his track. He's still got his – still when he was a big thetan, he was a big thetan, you see? And when that has happened to him, it happened to him. He might have oddly askew pictures on the subject and the thing was all grouped in one locale by a screen, but *that's his track*. When you've run it over, the pictures all of a sudden start going into 3-D and he sees these things as looking a bit better than they did and he's got a better sense of reality.

The reason most of you have – in pc's particularly – find unreality and the pc kicking back is because you haven't run across it enough to scrub off the false picture. See, that is unreal to the pc. Unreality is force and invalidation, don't you see? That's what unreality is. You ever run a car into a brick wall? Things momentarily looked awfully unreal! Well, that's the same phenomenon – unreality. You hit somebody hard, and things get unreal. They get unreal down to a point of unconsciousness. What is unconsciousness but a total unreality. Now, that's all unreality is.

Of course, unreality stems from the ARC pris... side of the situation – it's a sudden, steep drop in ARC. That really gives you some weird waves of this thing. At the same time he's being hit, he's also got, not only the ARC break with MEST, but he's got some other consideration on the subject of ARC break. And it gives him an ARC break that that particular thing would hit him.

See, it's compounded. That he runs the car into the brick wall and the impact and so forth renders him unconscious – but he's got another ARC break on the ARC, you see, side of the thing – this was the MEST side of it, his unconsciousness, you see. But his other ARC break, with magnitude, is the fact that that wall would do *that* to his car! See? And it's an ARC break with the circumstances of the situation. Shouldn't happen, you see. Protest, one way or the other.

Now, dealing with pictures then, you get a considerable unreality coming off, and when you deal with these pictures, you get into ARC breaks – which is the only point I'm making here about dating – and you'll notice that an ARC broke pc only reads on the exact subject of the ARC break. All other reads go out. A severely ARC broken pc, then, does not read on the meter, except on the bypassed charge which caused the ARC break. That's the one

hole in the E-Meter – because it won't read during an ARC break. Well – wait a minute! In a GPM you're always auditing an ARC break, aren't you? He's ARC broke like mad! Time is all askew and he's been captured and stuck in that thing and oh, you know, all this kind of stuff going on. And of course the E-Meter doesn't read well – he's ARC broken with himself for being such a fool as to be caught. You know, there's all kinds of crisscross ARC breaks. He has ARC breaks with matter, energy, space and time because somebody would – it would obey – to quote an exact ARC break I noticed myself at the beginning of a GPM – because it would obey such low-toned people! Perfectly logical ARC break.

Well, so the ARC broken condition of the pc in the area influences the meter read. Meter is reading very badly for that area anyway. This is the hill that a very skilled auditor climbs. But, now, listen to the good news back of it.

If you just keep trying and don't cut the itsa line, you will get tone arm action in your effort to date it. And the itsa line and blowing charge will increase the pc's reality on the incident to a point where the date is more and more real. And you will see bundles of facsimiles start to come apart.

For God's sakes, put this down in letters of fire because someday as an auditor this is – well, I can give you a lot of tips about auditing – but someday as an auditor you're going to be – sit there and you just – just feel the tears under your eyelids, it's just too desperate, you know? *Gawd!* You tried!

You don't dare say anything to the pc – you're out of communication with the world, you know, and you've *tried*.

"Is this GPM more than two trillion years ago? Less than two tr... what did you think of? Oh, all right. Is this GPM more than two trillion years ago? Is it less than two trillion years ago? Apparently less than two trillion years ago. All right. Is this GPM more than five hundred billion trillion years ago? Less... that's a wrong date, excuse me. One and one-half trillion years ago? Less than one and one-half – it doesn't read. It's all blank. Let's see. Have you been thinking of anything?" [laughter]

"Well, let's do another order of magnitude, huh?" [laughter] "Tens of years ago? Hundreds of years ago? Thousands of years ago? Tens of thousands of years ago? Hundreds – tens of thousands of years ago. Is this GPM tens of thousands of years ago? Ah, is it more than tens of thousands of years ago? Greater magnitude than tens of thousands of years ago? Less than? Is it tens of thousands – oh, that's good, huh! Nice read!" See? "All right. Is it more than fifty thousand years ago? Less than fifty thousand years ago? It's less than. Is it more than twenty-five thousand years ago? Less than twenty-five thousand years ago? Less than. Is it more than ten thousand years ago? Less than ten thousand years ago? Less than!" [laughter] "Is it more than five thousand years ago? Less than five thousand years ago?" [laughter] "Oh, you thought it was greater than fifty thousand years ago?" [laughter] "Oh! Oh, all right. All right. All right. All right. Was it more than seventy-five thousand years ago? Less than seventy-five thousand years ago? That didn't read, did you..."

You're very foolish if you don't interrupt that somewhere along the line. "Well now, what's been occurring to you while this has been going on?" And get yourself a little TA action, see? And bust it down. Because frankly, you can go on like that with a very, very tough

GPM. It's just like – just like trying to catch a slippery fish. One time it's trillions and the next time it's thousands and then all of a sudden, you... Why does it do that? You're slipping it off one screen and another screen, you see? And its restimulation factors are blowing, and so on. So, you've got to keep your itsa line in while you're dating.

That is probably one of the toughest things that a pro has to do – keep the itsa line in while dating. You get to sweating over this E-Meter and you forget about the pc to some degree – and if the pc is thinking about it and talking about it, why, there it is.

So much so, that I like to try to run the tone arm action out of it without dating it directly up. Get any idea the pc might have of the date. And just let him talk himself along the line until he either gets the date and gives it to me on a silver platter – or gives up completely, throws in the sponge so it squishes and then go ahead and date. And then try if I can't find the date, do it all over again and just keep arguing and talking about this, you know, back and forth and getting my tone arm action. Because get this, now: If you *just keep trying to find something* and keep the itsa line in while you're doing it, you will *eventually find it*. *Clang!* But this is one of those things that you wouldn't ordinarily discover in the run-of-the-mill activities of auditing. You just wouldn't ordinarily discover it!

Because how often are you going to be willing to put in seven separate sessions trying to get the date of one GPM? How often would you do this? You jolly well wouldn't! You know, you'd say, "Well, it's amounting to no auditing, pc every once in a while gets ARC breaks, this is a mess, I'm in tears half the time, this is – the whole thing is just sending me straight up the wall and so on."

Well, relax! Because this is a stable datum – and this is a stable datum that you can just put back of your left ear that isn't going to be cancelled by tomorrow's bulletin. Because I've seen this happen, now, and I've seen it done. I know it's true. You just keep chewing away at trying to date or locate or get the character of something or get the *pattern* of a GPM – you just keep the pc headed at it, keep that tone arm moving and keep trying to find it – and suddenly enough charge will have disappeared off the area so it'll all go – *sssthung!* And you say – there it is like a stage set. You wonder how in the name of God did anybody ever miss it?

As I say, that is something you ordinarily wouldn't *discover* because you probably wouldn't give seven consecutive sessions to the – just one lousy little subject of auditing. Like, what is the pattern of this wildcat GPM? And one minute you're running this – you're trying to date it, see, and your dating is kind of going haywire; but you're trying to get the pattern – that's what you really want. And the pc is down in the cellar. His morale is just zero. How in the name of common sense is he ever on God's green earth going to get the pattern for this GPM? *Uhhhhh!* Wildcat GPM, my God – the thing... you tried out any other kind of a pattern. You've asked him about it several times and you've asked him about this and you've asked him about that and it just – just *uhhh!* Just horrible!

"Well, maybe the first one is – maybe the first one is – is 'to be a spirit.' I think it's here. I think it's a goal. I – I *think* it's a goal. Maybe the first... I don't know that there is a goal in it, you understand, but there is certainly positive and negative items, or something in it."

Now, the more you put the itsa line in with the meter, the more you ask the meter for this data, the less you're going to win. And you've found that to be the case. Yeah. So, the pc just chews away, and he says, "I think it's 'spirited – never spirited'."

All right. Now, the wrong thing to do is to shake your head and say, "No, that didn't rocket read" and so on. Just, "Go on, tell me some more about the pattern." Don't keep him repeating anything. And he says, "Well, I think the next two items on it are, uh – are, uh, 'undoubtaditably to be a spirit' and 'doubtaditably to be a spirit'. That's what I think."

"All right, well, go on, go on, give me some more on the thing. Your tone arm's moving, but you're not getting RRs."

He's going to tumble to it suddenly. Hell say, "Well, hell, no! This thing has nothing to do with spirits, it's 'to be drunk!'" [laughter]

You just keep him chewing at it and you'll see TA action, TA action, TA action and all of a sudden hell come up with something. Well, all of a sudden he leans back – if you don't cut his itsa line and chop him up – all of a sudden, "Well, the pattern of this thing is very simple. It's just plus and minus and then a dichotomy. See? It just goes drunk – not drunk, sober – not sober – I think... then it says, 'to be drunk.' Yeah! Yeah, that's what it is! It's 'drunk – not drunk, sober – not sober, to be drunk.' Oh yes! And then it fires the other way to. Then it fires with the items reversed, to the left and right. Yes! That's the way the thing goes. And it goes – it goes, over here, it goes, you got – got – got 'drunk' over here on your – on your right, now, see? So it goes – no, now wait a minute, now wait a minute. The way this thing goes – the way this thing goes is 'drunk – never drunk.'" And boy, you see that meter all of sudden take off, see, getting this one. Rocket read. "It's 'drunk – never drunk, sober – never sober, to be drunk.' No, no. No, no. No, I got it now! I got it now! It's 'sober – never sober, drunk – never drunk , to be drunk. Yeah, I think this is pollibsy root of my alcoholism!" [laughter]

And you just keep him chewing at it, rather than sitting there trying to ride him into a hole. Now, the hell of it is, is you take anything as complex as the Helatrobis Implants, it takes you longer to get the charge off without the pattern than with the pattern. But the pc trying to understand this thing and trying to run this thing and so forth and trying to get a grip on it, sometimes will kill his own TA action if it's too evaluated. Why? The itsa line is being put in for him. The itsa lines are being put in for him. What is it?

Now, a meter is very, very didactic. It reads at a lower level of consciousness than the pc, but remember it's just a little bit lower. And you blow some charge and the pc will become conscious of what the meter becomes conscious on. All a meter does is become conscious of something before the pc becomes conscious of it. It just reaches the pc – it reaches him up just a little bit further along the line, and therefore gives you a preview of coming attractions.

Well, now do you understand, you could look at the graph – you can look at a graph of your itsa line – whatsit-itsa, see, and you see that you can say, "Whatsit?" and the pc can say, "Itsa" and you've got auditing happening. Ah! But what if the pc says, "Whatsit?" and the meter – you use the meter to say "Itsa." You want to see tone arm fold up? You've reversed all this now.

Now, pcs will do this if you create a meter dependency. And you should always keep your meter back. Don't do anything. "What do you think?" is a very good way, although a pc sometimes mildly ARC breaks on it.

He very often says, "Yeah, but I want to know!"

You say, "All right. Horse? Goat? It was a goat." "Reads on a goat" is the safer statement to make. "Is that right? Is it a goat?"

"Yeah, it's a goat."

Pc is demanding information. Well, this means he's given up. Now, when he's given up you can help him out, of course.

Well, let's take a look here – let's take a look at this whatsit-itsa line. And supposing the pc – you ask, "Whatsit" and then put the itsa in on the meter. And then you ask, "Whatsit" and put the itsa in on the meter. And when you ask "Whatsit" and put the itsa in on the meter. Don't be surprised if your tone arm action ceases to exist. I don't know, you must be doing some kind of an audit on something, but it doesn't have anything to do with the pc, don't you see? That's the way to get good and messed up.

You say, "All right, whatsit," and then, "Well, all right, I'll help you out here. Itsa." I don't know what the auditor's doing there, saying, "Whatsit, itsa. Whatsit, itsa. Whatsit, itsa. Whatsit, itsa. Whatsit, itsa?" Where's the session? See, it isn't anyplace! It isn't anyplace at all.

But your pc must not be pushed down into the depths of despair. You say, "Well, what do you think the date is?" It's a nice way of dating. The pc says, "*Uhhhhh, daaaaaooooo*. I just don't know. I just haven't got a clue." Date on the meter for a while. And you're starting to get near it, "Do you got any idea of the date now?"

"Oh, yeah! It's so-and-so and so-and-so and so-and-so." And you say, "All right." And that's it. That's quite common; but the reverse can also be true. You start dating, "You got any idea of what the date is?" And he says, "Well, that's a so-and-so, no, it's a so-and-so, what's it-so-and-so, and so-and-so. It might be more than billions, but it's less than trillions. Seems like it was just yesterday, you know, but it isn't really. And so on and so on and so on and so... It's pretty unreal. It all – and so on and ... Well, I just don't know, my God, I just don't know. I just haven't got a clue!"

Oh, well! By all means, now, in R2H it's very simple, he says it's 58, 57, 58, 57 – I don't know whether it was 58 or 57! You say, "Well, the meter flicks every time you say 58. All right. Good. Is 58 a wrong date? That doesn't read. Apparently 58."

That's more desirable, don't you see, than having him quit. But, look at this trick of using a meter. "Well," you say, "well, what – what do you think the date of this thing was?"

"Well, it might have been this, it might have been that, but on the other hand, it was some – tha... it might have been this and it might have been that and it might have been something or other and I – well – bu... I give up. I don't know. I don't know, I just don't have a clue."

You say, "All right, we'll do an order of magnitude on this. Was it tens of years ago? Hundreds of years ago? Thousands of years ago? Tens of thousands of years ago? Hundreds

of thousands of years ago? Was it millions of years ago? Tens of millions of years – that reads. Tens of millions of years ago? Tens of millions of years ago? Millions of years ago. Millions of years ago – that reads. Millions of years ago is the order of magnitude" and so on. "Have you got any idea what this date is?"

Now what are you doing? You're doing a different trick, aren't you? The trick you're doing now is using the meter to jog the whatsit line, see? Slippy, huh?

Audience: Mm!

Then the pc will sit there and say, "Millions of years ago! Let's see, was it five million years ago? Six million..."

They sometimes develop systems. The picture comes in clearly on six, but doesn't come in on five, you know? So they say five and a half. Got a clear picture, so they say it must be five and a half. Then they realize if they say five and a quarter it turns on heat. "Must be five and a quarter. Five and a third. Five and a quarter, five and a third – five and a quarter! Five and a quarter. Must be five and a quarter million years ago. Does it read on the meter? Five and a quarter million years ago?"

"Well, do you think it was?" See, because if you said, "Oh, yes, that reads on the meter!" You know, see? It's the acknowledgment of what they've just done, but at the same time they're still depending on the meter. And you sometimes have them say, rather satisfied, "Well, it's a five and a quarter million years ago!" See, they're saying, "Does it read on the meter? Does it... five and a quarter million years ago?"

"Well, do you think it is? Do you think that's the right date?" See, that's a way of snapping back your itsa line in, see? They tried to hand the itsa line to the meter. "Do you think that's a right date?"

"Yeah! Yeah, that's a right date – that's a right date."

"Okay," you say, "that reads." See, by doing it in reverse, you see, you get them certain – and then say, "Well, you should have been certain about it all the time because it also reads on the meter, see?"

Of course they have the feeling that you're sort of a spy hanging over their shoulder anyhow, because you've got the meter in front of you. So they're afraid to be right. And the more evaluative auditors have been to them, the more chopped they have been in their auditing, the less itsa line they have had in, why, the more queasy they are about being right. So they will tend to invalidate themselves. And you can just pick up pcs any day of the week, they just invalidate themselves like mad. All the time, all the time, all the time – invalidate themselves.

One of the ways they do this is to invalidate what they've just said and ask you if it reads on the meter in order to be validated by the meter. And the more an auditor can do this without being a nasty slob about it, see, "Well, I'm not going to tell you what it says on the meter – you think I want to create a meter dependence with you?" and so forth. [laughter] I'm afraid that wouldn't be very workable, you see.

But, if you can – if you can use that meter to boost the *whatsit* line and coax the *itsa* line in, why, you'll be very successful with the meter – very adroit. And only date when the guy just throws in the sponge. It goes *squash* all over the auditor's reports, you see. Because you can get up to a point of asking him for more than he can give and that's one of the ways of cutting an *itsa* line. See, every time the guy gives you something, ask him for some more.

I'll give you a way I've done this, see – pc very proudly says, "Ha! I got a picture here! A color picture. Got a – got a color picture of some mountains." He's very satisfied at this point, he's communicated the whole lousy lot, see? And you say, "Well, what kind of mountains are they?"

"Well, they're just mountains mountains."

"Any... anybody in it? Any people on..."

"No, there's no people in it!!" We can just hear their tone come right on down.

So after the guy has said, "I can't find this date. I don't know what this date is." After a guy has chucked in the sponge and you say, "Oh, come on, give me the date." Cut your throat! You see? Because what you've done is stretch an *itsa* line beyond its ability to stretch. What you need to do is plug in a little bit more restimulation. See? So you've actually bled off all the restimulation that is there. So you just use the meter to knock another block off the glacier and let the pc clean it up.

"Order of magnitude *bla-bla-bla-wow, bla-ba-ba-ba-bow, bla-blow-blow-blow, bla-bla-bla-blaw, bla, bow-bow-bow, bow*. All right, you ge... coming any closer to what the date is, now?"

"Oh," he'll say, "yeah, yeah, you say – you say the thing is – is millions of years ago, and it's – yeah, yeah! Yeah! It's so on and so on and so on and there it is and so on. It's five – five and a quarter million years ago. What's it say on the meter?"

"Oh, all right, well is that right? Is that five and a quarter million years ago? Is that okay?"

"Well, yeah, that's okay, what's it say on the meter?"

You say, "Well, it says you're right." Or "It isn't reading on the subject, at the moment." Slippy. Dangerous – awful dangerous territory to be haunting around very much.

"But I want to know what it says on the meter!"

"Well, at the moment it doesn't say anything on the meter."

"All right, then it must be some other date!" the guy says.

All right, now you don't ask him, "Well, what is that other date," see? Say, "You want me to do another order of magnitude?"

"No, no, that isn't necessary; I think the thing actually is trillions-three. Trillion-trillion-trillion. Not trillions-two. That must be what it is. That must be what it is."

"All right."

"Will you check it for me?"

See, you're on the spot now. You're on the spot. It's a very, very slippery little contest that you can run in this particular line. [laughter] It's perfectly all right to tell the pc what a meter is reading, what his tone arm is doing, that sort of thing. He'd be quite relaxed about this thing. The moment the pc starts relying on the meter instead of looking at it himself, why, you're in trouble. You get him in too much of... that's relying! Dependency. Let him create that dependency and you've spoiled some of his case. You've spoiled his sense of time and that sort of thing.

So it's a very nice point. It's a very nice point. And you have to solve that by being alert. And the basic rule is: is use your meter to get in the whatsit line and coax the itsa line.

And at last resorts, such as a howling ARC break, of course the only thing you've got left is your meter. The pc isn't talking or thinking. That's the last resort. So now you do ARC break assessments and that sort of thing – that applies to sessions, by the way. Doesn't apply to you giving an ARC break assessment. Down... oh, Peter landed with all four thuds down there in Australia and – and he got everything wheeling and dealing in a hurry. Things were going in all directions quickly. He had this congress laid out and he – he's fast, you know – he picks this thing practically up off of his bulletin line, you know, off his desk, and goes down to the congress and puts six auditors to work doing ARC break assessments on every congress attendee. He put them in a booth outside. So here were six auditors, you know, all during the congress, going *bangety-bangety-bangety-bangety-bangety*, doing ARC break assessments, you know? And they're just cleaning up ARC breaks all over the place and everybody's saying hurrah, wonderful, marvelous, you know? He's industrious. I'll bet he didn't even get a chance to read the bulletin himself. [laughter] He's quick.

Anyway, now, it doesn't matter whether somebody's ARC broke or not ARC broke, see? You can give them an ARC break assessment out of session or any place else or every Friday in a Central Organization or something like this and keep things wheeling and dealing. But you can cut an itsa line to ribbons with ARC break assessments, man. You can just cut them to ribbons. *Swish-swish, slash-slash!*

"Well, I don't know if I've got the right item here or not; let's see." "Oh, well, I'll do an ARC break assessment." Sounds incredible! "Well, I don't know. I don't know if this is quite the right goal or not, let's see, this, well, right goal or not. We might have bypassed something here. It might be something." "All right, I'll do an ARC break assessment."

Cut your throat, man! That's putting in the itsa line with an ARC break assessment! Don't do it! An ARC break assessment has its value after all else has failed – and that's almost the same with the meter. The meter needle has its greatest value when all else has failed. ARC break assessment has its greatest value when all else has failed. Because the most operating thing you've got anywhere around you, actually, is the pc! You can take data from this pc. You get surprising data from the pc. Pc will sit there and *barkety-barkety, bangety-bang*. He can give you more darn data.

Just because a pc says, "Oh, I don't know, is – I – doesn't look right to me, there's something wrong here. Something wrong. I don't..." That's no reason for you to do a thing! I know you have consciences – you want to get in there and earn your fee, earn your keep, pay for your own auditing, it's that sort of thing. I know you have an idea that if you just get busy

enough and you heave enough bricks through enough windows, why, everybody will pat you on the back for being so industrious. Well, you're not ever patted on the back for being industrious. You're only patted on the back for getting case advances, see?

Well, great day then, the pc says, "*Rrrr*, something wrong here, some, uh – *rmmmm-mmmmmmm-mmm*." I don't care how long he goes "*Mm-mm-mmmmm-mm*." Let him go on and "*Mm-mm-mm-mm-mm*." Just as long as that TA moves – that's all I'm interested in. And he can mutter and fumble and stumble and bumble all he wants to – as long as the TA moves. I'm not asking precise data from this pc. That's what's wrong with this pc – this pc has a lot of imprecise data. Very imprecise data. Let's take an ARC break assessment – also his confidence in his own bank is very, very poor.

Let's take an ARC break assessment. And you're going down the ARC break assessment. *Bark, bark, bark, bark, bark* – and the pc brightens up all of a sudden. And you – you've got two choices here. And one of them is *wrong!* The choice is to go on and complete the ARC break assessment. That's wrong! That's wrong – every time. The pc suddenly looked bright. See, he didn't even say he had anything to say. Oh, you know! You'll see it, actually, sometimes a flash on the meter while you're doing the assessment, if you're not looking at the pc. "You think of something – anything?"

"Yeah! Yeah, it's actually the unknownness of the whole thing. I didn't know anything about it. I didn't know the guy's name, you see. Everybody's trying to tell me his name was Joe, but in actual fact I didn't know his name. And that – that was what that ARC break is – was all about. Heh! That's it!"

And you didn't get a chance to earn your keep, man! You know what you're supposed to do – you're supposed to go down the whole list. Now, if you say to the pc, at this point, "Well, all right! Well, now how do you feel about that ARC break?" The meter goes tick. You say, "Is there something else about that, that you haven't told me yet?"

"Oh, well, yeah, maybe you didn't get that... See, the guy – the guy – I didn't know his name, but they said his name was Joe. And I had never found out what his name really was. They just said it was Joe, you understand? They just said it was Joe. And I don't know that his name was Joe, see. And I never did find out the guy's name. I don't know what his name is. And that's – that's what the ARC break assessment is, all the time. They were trying to put this – this was – I guess it's a false datum."

And you say, "All right, good. How do you feel about that ARC break assessment?" Clear as a bell. See, he thought he'd interrupted you and he didn't quite get it across to you and he had various explanations, don't you see, why maybe he didn't have his itsa line in on you because he had distracted you and kept you, you see, maybe from assessing and earning your keep, you know?

Pcs have lots of weird reasons like this. But you shouldn't automatically assume. I know, because I myself have had this happen in a session while I was auditing. And it's very embarrassing! You say, "Does that clear it all up?" *Clang!* See? You say, "All right, is it all right if I go on with the remainder of the assessment?" The pc – glummer, glummer, needle getting dirtier, dirtier, dirtier.

Look, it would be better to leave the charge on it than it would be to ARC break the pc about it! Do you follow that?

Audience: Yes.

That applies also to GPMs. You can sometimes ARC break the pc like mad on some wildcat GPM just because you were trying to be precise all the time and the pc is arguing with you. I myself ran into an ARC break as a pc one time on the subject of – I had "to listen." I saw "to listen" come out of the floorboards of one of these GPM rooms. I saw it come out! I couldn't understand why I'd *seen* these words come out! Because I ordinarily don't do that in a session, see? So I said, "I just saw 'to listen' come out of the middle of the floorboard. We must have some kind of a goal in here like that." And the – and the auditor looked at the meter and said, "It didn't RR." That, frankly, was the end of that facsimile. It was being held there by two frayed hairs, anyway! Very highly charged area, preceded by lord knows how many GPMs. The reason I got to the place, nobody will ever find out. But that's all it took, see? And the GPM folded up! Denial of the pc's perception of the GPM. Actually it took it a little bit longer than that to fold up. It took another slight blunder immediately afterwards, but that was the reason it folded up, see.

It was just – pc all of a sudden originated and said... The auditor knows he's trying to run the goal, let us say, "to catch" or something, you see. And the pc says, "Hey! You know, coming right out of the floorboards here is these words 'to listen.' And – never saw anything like this before."

"Oh, no, that doesn't rocket read."

Well, the pc didn't give a damn whether it rocket read or not! You get that? He didn't care – he didn't care for a minute whether this rocket read or not! Very often in putting together a GPM a pc will be going and giving you the items, *bang, bang, bang, bang, bang, bang* – giving you the items, repeating them a few times – and all of a sudden will get to the next pair! Get to the next pair. And the next pair dinning his ears in, and the auditor says, go back and clean up the old pair.

What do you do in a case like this? It's very interesting. Because if you leave partially charged items on the thing, the pc is going to ARC break and if you don't take the pc's next items, he's going to ARC break. What do you do? Well, you're an auditor. That's one of the perils of existence! [laughter, laughs]

There is a solution. You can hastily write them down so he won't forget them. You can say, "I've got a note of those," and go on and get your items clean. That's just one solution. Did you ever think of the solution of going through a GPM and then through it again? That's totally possible, too – but also dangerous because all sorts of weird things are liable to happen, don't you see?

So the contest of how you get a GPM discharged without cutting the itsa line is one of the more interesting things that an auditor can do. And it takes very, very skilled auditing in order to accomplish this fact. And the variations of it are so many that you couldn't possibly cover all possible cases. Your job is to get the GPM discharged and keep the pc in an enthusi-

astic state of mind so he will discharge the GPM. Because the pc in a lowered state of mind can't discharge the GPM.

Now, your *whatsit* – your *whatsit* line uniformly, completely, totally, thoroughly means just that – what's it. It's called "*whatsit*" because those exact words raise the tone arm. And the *itsa* line is called "*itsa*" because those exact words lower the TA. Or in a low TA case, I think, reverse it – although I myself haven't seen this as an auditor yet. Too new.

Now, if that is the case, then we would say that the solution of mystery was the resolution of a case and the restoration of TA action. And as I told you a little earlier, your cessation of TA action is your heaviest auditing problem. TA isn't moving. That's the case that drives you around the bend. A case will also drive you around the bend in numerous other ways. But when the TA stops moving, you've got a headache. That's a worry. Right now, right now, that's a worry.

So I'd like to give you a clue as to why this is. Whatever else you say about GPMs or a time or anything else, this is certainly true: That the pc is stuck on a *whatsit* for which he has no *itsa*. Elementary, my dear Watson. Doctor Watson, now, by the way – that was his gag – I took it from him.

Now, did you ever think of the possibility that the pc might have asked his own *whatsit*? Now, I'll give you an exact example. They do this all the time. It's not once in a while.

Now, this pc – pc sitting there, gives you the *itsa*, *itsa*, *itsa*. In the process of giving you the *itsa*, *itsa*, *itsa*, gets in two *whatsits*, on himself. All right. Now, they got clear as a bell, everything was fine and you went just a little bit further and all of a sudden the pc felt foggy. The pc felt foggy because of the two *whatsits*. These are two new auditing questions, if you please, but you didn't ask them! But the pc asked them and now you've got some charge in restimulation that's not been *itsa'd*! And so the pc feels foggy.

You'll sometimes get this toward the end of session. You were doing fine and you asked one question too many and then you can't get the TA down and you don't know what happens. Well, ordinarily it stems immediately back to a question the pc asked themselves. Now, the most common cause of a TA going up in a break is the pc asked themselves a *whatsit*.

Audience: Mmmm.

That break gives them a short period of time without the auditing question in which they can demand of themselves a *whatsit*.

Now you, of course, because they've forgotten the *whatsit*, they never give the *itsa* – and you've got a high TA and you sometimes will struggle around endlessly and fruitlessly and forever trying to get this TA to do anything – put in your since mid ruds and every other confounded thing to get it to come down. The one thing that you seldom ask for is what *whatsit* did they ask of themselves. Could be put in other numerous ways: "Did you speculate about anything in the break?"

Now, the funny part of it is, is as-ising *whatsits* does not give you auditing. I've tested this out. That's interesting, isn't it? You don't as-is *whatsits*. *Whatsit* – you cannot run a case

on solid mystery, in other words. It sounds impossible, but if you just, "Get the idea of questioning things. Thank you. Get the idea of questioning things. Thank you," you would just drive the tone arm up, and it wouldn't come down.

Why? Because the bank is composed of a cure to the problem. Or as Reg was saying a few minutes ago, the puzzle, see? And the reason the puzzle is hung up is because there's something in it which was a cure. Cures brought about problems. And to as-is problems you have to pick up the itsas. That itsa was always a cure to some problem which is now holding it in place. So it takes both the whatsit and the itsa to get the stable datum and the confusion off. The whatsit is the confusion, the itsa is the stable datum. So you announce the confusion and the pc gives you the stable datum, and of course you get restoration of balance. You get the thing blowing off.

Actually, in tiny vignette, this is the mechanism of a GPM. And it's just the common questions that you use, you see? You would have to ask somebody, "What have you been puzzled about? What was the answer to it?" That's a little bit blunt. "What answers might there have been to it?" Two-way comm is something that drives some auditors around the bend. They don't realize that two-way comm maybe won't run an engram, but it will blow off all the locks. So you could say, "When did you first become aware of this problem?" That "first" is a bad thing to use, but it nevertheless keeps somebody diving at it. "Give me a time you became aware of this problem." That starts a two-way comm cycle, don't you see?

Pc says, "I have a big present time problem about something or another," see. Big present time problem.

"All right, well, what solutions have you thought of? Have you ever had similar problems in the past? How do people ordinarily solve such a problem? When did you first become aware of a need to resolve this problem?"

Now you're drifting off back into the whatsit, don't you see? But you can get the itsas of almost anything. I think it's interesting, isn't it? Therefore auditing questions, to be valid, must balance between announcing the puzzle and getting the cure. But if you have him inventing cures, then the puzzle will get more puzzling. So you – the only way you really produce a gain – a gain in auditing – the only way you ever really produce a gain in auditing is having him become aware of the problems and the solutions which he has had for those problems. And then you get tone arm action.

That's a theoretical dissertation, but it's also quite empirical. Takes the whatsit and it takes the itsa. And if you never let the pc reach any of his own itsas, of course, you don't get TA action. There are many ramifications to this; there are different types of processes produce different potentials of TA action. There's a lot you can go into about this. It will continue to be a worry, but I'm giving you the exact fundamentals of what causes it to cease when a tone arm stops. Okay?

Audience: Mm.

We're way over time – thank you very much!

THE TONE ARM

A lecture given on 15 August 1963

Sorry for being late. What's the date?

Audience: The 15th.

Fifteenth?

Female voice: Fifteenth of August.

Of what?

Audience: Of August, 1963.

Female voice: Oh, I beg your pardon, 1913.

1913?

Female voice: AD 13.

AD 13! That's a wrong date. [laughter] All right. Thank you.

This is a lecture on the subject of the tone arm. I've been trying to figure out how to build a meter that just had a tone arm and I can't quite figure out how to keep it centered. You know? It'd be an extremely elementary meter – it'd be a very cheap meter, and we're coming down to a point now where we actually should build up something for a co-audit or for a Book Auditor, see – and we shouldn't worry him with the needle. We should build him a piece of a meter. If I could just figure out how to center a tone arm, you know, I'd be very happy about it. I'll probably get it licked in the next few days or...

Anyway, we need just a meter – just a meter, and it would have to give the equivalent sensitivity, here, it would have to give the equivalent sensitivity of 16 on its tone arm action. See, a Mark V, at sensitivity 16, for its tone arm action – and then just follow through its tone arm action. Now preferably it ought to be able to spin all the way.

Audience: Mm-mm.

Not have any stop at the bottom of it. Should have the same numbers on it exactly – should have probably a one-hand electrode – just a one-hand electrode. And it probably ought to have a belt clip of some kind or another, so you could hang it on the pc with a belt or something. You could run it on CCHs then, couldn't you? It ought to be very rugged, [laughter] and really shouldn't be any bigger than just the area of the tone arm there – a couple of batteries in the back of it or something like that. Have to be about the same voltage that goes through this Mark V. You get the idea?

Audience: Mm-mm.

Now, the reason I mention this meter to you, haven't quite figured out how you can center it. You need something to center so you know what the tone arm should be, see. You can't really have a light, it burns up too much juice. Maybe if you put a little – a little telltale at the bottom of it that was a very crude meter-movement of some kind or another and you kept that centered, and so forth, why, maybe that would be all right. Possibly over here a little bit to the right, maybe a little telltale there, that had a little white center there, maybe a little black something that you kept at the button – when it moved off the button, why that was that, and you could get your tone arm reads.

I'm trying to show you that this meter of yours can be subdivided to that remarkable degree, and can still be an extremely serviceable auditing machine. See, doesn't have to have any lie detection in connection with it or no healing adjunct or anything else – it's just whether or not discharge is occurring. You would see that.

And you realize that you could – it's impossible to run a GPM with no tone arm action – it's impossible, if you're getting dial-wide rocket reads, even though it returns every time, across the dial – because you are blowing one-dial width of tone.

Now this shows you how much tone arm action you are actually getting. Here, I'll show you on this very meter, here. This meter's not centered well, but let's get it down here very delicately. Now that is approximately – oh, let's be very, very something or other – it's about 2.85, on one end of this needle. Now let's take that needle the whole width of the dial, and get it balanced here – just about in the test area – and a dial-wide slash on the thing would apparently give us something like one-tenth of a tone arm division – up and down.

Now that's translating your needle action into tone arm action. Well, of course that is not enough. You'll still get tone arm action, don't you see, even though just the needle is moving, but as you've just seen, it's one-tenth of a division. And if that's all you were getting every twenty minutes, that is not enough. Your minimum is .25 – minimum .25 divisions. But if the pc were running that, with considerable élan and that sort of thing, and good perception and so on – you still would be blowing some charge. You got that? Actually it's enough charge to blow a somatic.

Now, what's interesting is – what's interesting is, is that is enough for healing. Isn't that interesting? That is enough for healing. Some guy has got a bad foot, and you actually find the engram – the accident where he hurt his foot, see – and you get needle blow-off – not tone arm – you get needle blow-off. You can't run this thing with any tone arm motion. You get needle blow-off through this thing, and you can erase the somatic in his foot and he will feel much better. You will get into this when you eventually get R3T, which I am putting together, which might become R2T. It's the itsa line combined with dating. And it's just the itsa line and dating, that is all really it is – but you get into some remarkable circumstances with that.

Now, that would be enough to make his foot feel all right. Just that tenth of a division – make his foot feel all right – but is actually not enough to make *him* feel better by reason of auditing. See, you've got that careful delineation. Because this was the puzzle of the Dianetics Auditor. This used to drive the old HDA around the bend. He'd heal Aunt Sally's arthritis, and Aunt Sally didn't believe in Dianetics. And used to make the old HDA about blow his brains

out, see. She didn't feel any better. Well, the hell she didn't – she used to sit there all crippled up. You – I see this – one or two of you are thinking of cases of this. You've had it happen, haven't you? And she isn't any longer going gimp every time she gumps – and yet she didn't think auditing did her any good. She had nothing much to say about it.

It's a terrible lose. You get some big win – you get some big win from your point of view, a physiological change on the pc – and then so help me Pete, the pc never finds out about it. You got that as an example?

All right, this is quite fascinating. I mean you have to – actually have to experience it to believe it. You can get rid of somebody's warts. It's "Oh, you, oh my God, warts, warts, warts, warts." It's all you ever heard about was his warts, you know, and you can get rid of his warts. Something like this happens. You see them go, man, you know. I saw a goiter one time, go. A girl was running up and down the Foundation hallway at Elizabeth, New Jersey, showing off her pc and doing it fast, because the goiter was diminishing so rapidly that it really didn't last off the display. You say this is weird auditing – but it was – but the goiter started to go down, and she took it around and showed it to various people and they could see it go down. In half an hour, a goiter there, which was the size of a cantaloupe, just disappeared into the person's throat – just like that. Really fascinating. It's too much to say that woman did not ever appreciate this, but I will say that afterwards she really didn't know about auditing. She still had an open mind on the subject.

It's quite marvelous to behold. You can do some of the most remarkable things. Now that, let me point it out, is what drove us out of healing – not the "*tsk, tsk, tsk, tsk, tsk, tsk, tsk, tsk,*" of the medical boys. We couldn't have cared less. But auditors in actual fact did not find it a very satisfactory area of action. They had too many loses, and actually we lost too many auditors. And looking back on it, it was fairly wise to keep them from attacking the healing profession all the time.

But we have just passed over, and we've told people that they mustn't heal and all that sort of thing these days for various reasons; it's kept them out of trouble and all that sort of thing. There's also a technical reason back of this – which I myself earlier was not aware of, but which I have become aware of now, just now – is the fact that without a complete understanding of the tone arm, it is doubtful if an auditor will ever be able to predict whether he wins or loses. And will therefore many times, get a tremendous shock with the pc saying they have lost when the auditor was sure they had won.

All these are very important data. They're very important to the morale of an auditor. You see that TA sitting there absolutely fixed, or with a tenth of a division running through a GPM, or something stupid like this going on. You sit there and watch that TA – absolutely fixed, sitting there – not necessarily high, but just absolutely fixed. There it is at 5, and you go on – and you audit, and you audit, and you audit, and you audit, and it's just fixed, right there. This is what you know. You might not know much else in that session, but this one for sure you know: That the pc's going to drop a curve on you at the end of the session one way or the other, and within twenty-four hours, is going to be subject to some sort of upset.

Now you really don't see this outside-the-session upset as often as it happens. They get a little bit upset. That's because you ordinarily pick up the person. Now, you know that if this

person is audited session after session, after session, after session with a stuck TA, they will eventually just start going to pieces. You maybe have seen that. They somehow or another have been able to hold their head up, but they're a little bit nattery. They're not really – it doesn't encourage ARC breaks particularly, it just is a *nyahnyah-nyah-nyah*. They're just not doing, you know, and so on, and they're not sure of whether they should be audited or not, and they don't know whether Scientology works or not...

This is the sort of a thing that you can expect from a no-tone-arm change, session after session after session. But perhaps you haven't followed through a session with no tone arm change, resulting in an upset of some kind or another in the pc's personal life within the next twenty-four hours. That's fascinating, see? You should take a little cognizance of this.

I don't say that this is inevitable, I don't say that the upset is catastrophic, I don't say that anything horrible will happen to the person – and actually they can have bad luck even when they had a little tone arm action. You know, case in bad shape may have a little tone arm action, nothing to amount to anything, and they still go on having bad luck. All that's, all that's part of the game. But I just want to show you that these data are tied together – the pc's personal life and the amount of tone arm action he gets in the session. They're tied together.

Now, this gives you then a prediction. You sit there and you watch that tone arm, no matter what you're saying, you watch that tone arm just sitting there or getting minimal motion, and the least you can expect is a sort of a cool, "I don't know" goals and gains. Well, you thought the person did pretty good, you were running through something you thought did them a lot of good, even though you weren't getting any tone arm action. And goals and gains – well, they made some gain – they made some gains. Minimal – minimal response – minimal action. If you follow that through, they're liable to be subjected to a little bit of upset – life, in life.

Well, I should base this on this one thing; that you've actually restimulated charge, because all auditing restimulates charge. Any auditing restimulates charge, that's for sure. That whatsit line, as it goes across there – I am sure somebody out in San Bernardino or someplace is going to misread this or – Bloemfontein or somebody – going to misread that August 4 HCOB, AD 13, August 4 and they're going to say, "You see? An auditor that gets in a whatsit line restimulates the pc, so you shouldn't get in a whatsit line because that results in restimulation which gives body discomfort," and I can just hear this all being explained in some lecture. "It gives body discomfort, ARC breaks – all the sins of auditing come from the whatsit line because obviously, it says right there, see, that it restimulates the pc, and we know that is bad." And they have it all explained. And therefore will refrain from ever getting in a whatsit line. The pcs go around the bend – sit there with nothing to answer, nothing to do and you think I'm being too snide, and cynical.

But don't... I know how these things backfire. I know I'll catch on to one sooner or later and 99 percent of everybody, why, they'll get it right down the groove, right down the groove. And can you imagine it, somebody a long time ago, who had been trained here for several months, eventually revealed why they could never complete a list – all lists had cyclic rock slams. Rock slams, rock slams, rock slams, rock slams – so therefore you couldn't complete the list, because it still had rock slamming items on it. It went on and on, and on and on,

and on – and everybody just took it for granted that this person was unable to complete a list on the person. The pc therefore was a very unusual and extraordinary pc and nobody ever bothered to look over the auditor's shoulder. Because a "rock slam" was any movement of the needle – a tick, a fall, anything. Oh, some of you were here! I see it – nodding. Perfectly sensible auditor. I don't know how the dickens this was ever gotten missed. I straightened her up in a hurry.

But you're going to find these things extant. No – any auditing inevitably must restimulate. Auditing must restimulate. In doing O/Ws on somebody, that's what makes that a tricky process. That's what makes that a process which is not now being pounded hard. It isn't that it doesn't work – it's that auditors don't seem to uniformly have good luck in restimulating the O/Ws necessary to pull off the case. So you'll get O/W being run this way – any Prepcheck of overts – "Well now, let's see, what have you done?"

"Well I thought a nasty thought the other day."

"All right, that's fine. Now what was that thought? Let's see – what – what was the nasty thought? Here's the What question: What was the nasty thought? Who was it about?"

"Joe."

"All right, what was the nasty thought about Joe? That's basic, all right that's fine. All right, let's get another nasty thought about Joe – is there any earlier nasty thought about that?"

"Well yesterday I thought a nasty thought about him, too – yesterday."

"All right. We got yesterday's, now we got today. Good. Tell me all about the nasty thought, now. All right, that's fine. You – you thought – you thought he wasn't as tall as he should be. All right, that's good."

See, we're really making headway on this pc, we're picking up all of his overts.

You say, "It's the pc's fault," you see – they blame it on the pc, and say, well, the pc just isn't coming up with his overts. No, no, no, no, no. The auditor – the auditor just is never restimulating his overts. One of the favourite methods of restimulating somebody's overts, if not the best one – it's still one that was very commonly used by somebody who has great success with that type of Prepchecking – is: "What have you done? No, not now what have you thought – what have you done to Joe? Done, you know? *Done, done, done.* What have you *done to Joe?* *Done,* you know? To Joe. Done." It's what is known as impingement, see. [laughter]

And the pc, "*Aaaahhhh!* Stole his lunch one day."

"Ah, good." [laughter]

That's in the realm of restimulation. So any type of auditing which requires extraordinary targeting and restimulation, becomes more difficult to do. The more difficult auditing is the significances of restimulation which the auditor must engage in with the pc. Now the degree of the restimulation restimulated in the significance, becomes even a greater level of skill. That's really smooth. How much GPM are you going to restimulate to get the GPM run? The very smooth auditor restimulates just exactly the items which he wants to restimulate in the GPM and gets them blown.

Now as the skill deteriorates, the greater the number of items are restimulated by the auditor, the greater the number of GPMs restimulated by the auditor to get one GPM – until you'll eventually get some auditor who has sixty or seventy GPMs restimulated with half the items in each one in high level of restimulation, in order to get one pair of items.

This sounds like an exaggeration, but it almost isn't. You get the amount of skill? Well, this is the regulation of restimulation. That's your whatsit line. And the only thing that's called for on the whatsit line is have a heart. See? Know what you're going for, know what you've got to get to and have a heart! Take it easy! See, that's the thing. Let's go for the engram necessary, you know, to be run at this particular time in R3R – let's go for this thing and let's run it. And let's restimulate and run as much of it as the pc can handle.

Let's don't restimulate the whole chain in order to get one engram slightly run, see. You could actually hunt and punch around. Q and A helps to mess it up, you see? "Well, no, I got this, I got this, this incident here. It's got a – it's got an airplane in it, and it seems to be diving – diving at the ground."

"Oh. Oh, all right. Okay. Any earlier incidents there of airplanes diving at the ground, and so on?"

"Well, yeah, yeah, here's another airplane diving..."

"Good, good. Any – well, give me the – give me the earliest – give me the earliest – the earliest incident of airplanes diving at the ground."

"Yeah, well here's a whole bunch of airplanes diving at the ground. Here's a lot of incidents of airplanes diving at the ground, uh – so on. Seems to be able to get to me – I feel very funny as a matter of fact, I'm not quite sure..."

It's the use of that word "earliest" and getting engram after engram after engram, without running any engrams. Get the idea? I mean when you finally – when you finally get through with this poor pc, you overrestimulated. You haven't permitted him yet, technically, by running things, or listening to his itsa line or anything else – haven't permitted any of the – of the charge to come off of the incidents he had available. Next thing you know, why he's got so many incidents available, that they're sitting in one place, and the bank's so charged up that it looks like a live bomb. So does the pc. He's getting very hard to handle, and so forth. Restimulation is inevitable. The very tools of the trade in the auditing session result in restimulation.

Now auditing works because of restimulation and the blowing of that charge. And it's a cycle. You restimulate and you get the charge off and you restimulate and you get the charge off and you restimulate and you get the charge off and you restimulate and get the charge off, you restimulate... That's all that auditing is – there's no more than that!

Now, of course the odd part of it is, that you don't have to personally sit on top of the charge which is being blown off, so therefore you can blow an early charge on any chain – blow an early charge on any chain of incidents, without the rest of it being particularly in restimulation – and you'll get the charge blowing off the rest of it out there a light-year away, and it all kind of starts shattering and going to pieces and dropping apart. And you don't see it particularly register on the meter. This is what marks faster auditing. See, it's getting the

charge, which triggers off charge. That is what regulates it. But, that's merely faster. That's the only thing that does.

But, whether it is charge restimulated in present time, or charge restimulated ten years ago, or charge restimulated ten umpty-bumpty trillions, it is nevertheless charge – and it's going to be restimulated on the whatsit line. Now, if you don't put in the itsa line, and let the charge come off that is restimulated, then the pc gets too much of it banked up – pardon the pun – and he just more or less drowns in this stuff. And he doesn't know whether he's coming or going after a while. He doesn't know who his auditor is, and so forth, he ARC... he's ARC broken with somebody on the track and he ARC breaks with the auditor and bypasses charge, and he dramatizes and all that sort of thing. This is strictly because he's overwhelmed.

It's: How much charge do you restimulate? Now, I've shown you two examples – restimulating too much charge and restimulating too little charge. And they're equally errors. Because in the first place, restimulating too much charge, eventually no auditing gets done – and restimulating too little charge, no auditing gets done and they're both sins. It's not necessarily true that the person who restimulates too little charge is more virtuous than the person who restimulates too much charge. In fact I would say, he's the real sinner. Because at least this pc sometime or another may be able to sit down with somebody who *will* listen to him, and get off the charge he has now become aware of. See, that possibility exists. So the real sin is not restimulating any charge.

And you'll find somebody who pulls off from running an engram because the pc hurt too much. Well, I don't think that has anything to do with auditing. I never heard that influence an auditing session before. So he hurt too much – what's that got to do with it? What auditing are we dealing with here? No auditing I ever heard of. Pc hurt too much. What's that got to do with it? I don't understand. You mean you ended the session because the pc hurt too much? You can kill more pcs that way. Pc's saying, "*Ow-ow-oh, it's terrible! Oh – it's terrible!*"

You say, "All right, well, it's too terrible, we won't finish running it."

And you want to see somebody in terrible condition, man! That pc is now in terrible condition! You just bypass the rest of the pain right there, you see. Lock it all up and boom! I'd go so far as to say that earlier on the track when they're in good shape, thetans enjoy pain. If you don't believe it, sometime tell somebody "Waste some pain, thank you. Waste some pain, thank you. Waste some pain, thank you. Waste some pain, thank you."

You'll see him all of a sudden get this haunting idea. "Go ahead. Get the idea of wasting some pain. Good. Waste some pain. Good. Waste some pain..." He looks at you, "You know, I like this stuff." It's very remarkable. Sadism is not peculiar. Sadism is a lower harmonic of an actual fact. Any sensation is better than no sensation and anything is better than nothing.

Now, that's different from only being able to enjoy pain. That speaks of a very low-scale character. But pain ordinarily didn't bother you at one time or another. I can see you now, putting your – putting a beam into power line insulators for kicks. You know, wondering how much *zing* you'll get out of it. "Hey, Joe, come over here. I think I found one that's a

couple of hundred thousand volts." [laughter] "That stuff over there, that's only ten thousand." [laughs]

Well, just look at your Effect Scale, you realize that as a thetan goes up scale he can stand more effect. He can feel in different ways about the same effect, too. This has nothing to do with it then. That's a particularity of sensation or a particularity of reaction. An auditor really doesn't have anything to do with the particularities of action. You can't say that actions are bad actions or good actions, as far as what the pc is going through. You can only say, is his mind on his case or not on his case? If he conceives all the bad actions taking place in his environment, he for sure has an ARC break, i.e., newspaper reporters, and so forth. They're ARC broken someplace or another – to such a degree, that they're practically psychotic. And they can only see the environment, you see. They can't get interested in their own case. Therefore, they violate the basic definition of auditing and they're therefore unauditible. Most newspaper reporters are unauditible.

Scientists have every once in a while tried – I'm not starting on the subject of news, but there just happens to be a breed of cat – and he has a hard time, because he's running up social overts all the time and he eventually gets a tremendous amount of missed withholds. "Now, Joe, I'd like to write this story about you, Joe, and we're really going to write a good story about you, Joe." And police think that Joe has murdered his wife, see, and he's just trying to get some hot dope. Joe sees the story on the headlines, "Murder Suspect in Love Nest Slaying." See, his overt is creating a fantastic ARC break, see. The guy told him something in confidence, and he went and wrote it in some other way, don't you see. He gets caught in this all the time and he eventually with this piled-up series of overts, he starts dramatizing it. So there he is – he's just caught and it... everybody talks to him, missed withhold, missed withhold, missed withhold, missed withhold, don't you see? Overt is create the ARC break – betrayal, betrayal, betrayal. Missed withhold – betrayal, missed withhold – betrayal. Next thing you know, there he is. See, total ARC break with the entire environment.

I'm just giving some – just that as an example of somebody who gets chronically in this condition. And you can put your pc in exactly that condition – not because of overts or withholds particularly – but by just taking a great big slug of restimulated charge, letting the pc not get hold of very much of it, restimulate it pretty well out of his sight, you see – and then drop a nice iron curtain down in front of the charge. And boy, that charge glances off that nonexistent itsa line, and goes right back on the pc – *kapow!* It's just like short-circuiting things.

You could even – you could even dream up an electrical circuit that would do this – it'd be quite factual. Dream up an electrical circuit so that this condenser over here, and so forth, could build and build and build, and then the line this condenser is supposed to bleed, over here and the charge dissipate. And then get a knife-edge or something that crosses that line, to block that dissipation line, don't you see, and get the charge so that it's rerouted back to a bulb we will call the pc – and boy, let me assure you that bulb will light up, see. Or you could even have a little neon circle around the pc called "restimulation," a red neon tube around this bulb, and boy, you would not see the pc light up, you would see the tube light up, and even that would be more graphic. The pc goes out and the tube lights up, don't you see? You could make all sorts of graphic representations of this that would demonstrate it, because

it's as crudely demonstrable as that. I'm not talking allegorically. There's no allegory mixed up in it at all, it's just fact.

Auditor says, "*Da-da, da-da. Da.*"

And pc says, "Hm-mmm..."

"Well, all right, thank you." In the multitudinous ways he can cut the line. And the auditor says, "*Da-da-da-da-da-da. Da.*"

And the pc says, "Well uhm – actually..."

"Well, sss – it's – doesn't read on the meter here. Don't bother to answer that. Very good. *Da-da-da-da-da-da-da. Da*" – *Bow!*

And you can practically hear the electrodes connect, finally, in the pc's skull. *Bzz-zzzz-zzzz!* Pc goes out of control and is no longer capable of self-control because all of his control mechanisms are shot – they're short-circuited with charge. After all, he controls his body, his voice, his thinkingness and so forth, with neuron-directed currents, as long as he's in a body. And the second these things get too charged up, why any action that is there to be duplicated in terms of a dramatization, will of course get duplicated. And he then cannot get through this charge in order to assert control of his voice, his limbs or otherwise. He sort of sits back himself in total amazement at watching himself in this ARC break, and also totally incapable of halting it until you finally identify, locate and indicate that charge. And the second you locate and indicate the charge, you have dissipated it to that degree, that the person all of a sudden says, "*Phewf!*" and you've given him back his controls.

It'd be the same as taking the pilot out of the cockpit of the airplane and throwing him back halfway down the fuselage. Meantime having thrown enough tanglefoot into the cockpit that it'd short-circuit all of the various instruments, controls and so forth. Naturally the plane will go into a spin. It's as elementary as that, it's not any graphical or allegorical or odd thing, I mean – it's sitting right there in front of you. You can look at it straight in the eye and see it happen.

Now reversely – reversely, we don't give the session any fuel to run on. Don't let any current run in the lines at all – no current at all. That'll be the end of that session. "Is it all right with you if I start this session now? All right. You sure there isn't something you want to say? Oh, you're not – not saying anything, all right. It is all right if I start the session now, isn't it? All right, well, here goes. Start of session. All right, very good, okay, we're going to run some sort of a process here, but you just feel free to tell me anything you want to tell me. Now what – what do you want to tell me? You haven't got anything to say much, huh? Well, I don't have much to say either. All right. Well, maybe we can put two-and-a-half hours in here without getting into trouble. Seen any pictures lately – no, that's a pretty dangerous subject. Let's talk about books, huh? Let's talk about books we haven't read. How's that?" [laughs]

Well of course – of course it's a no-auditing situation. Your pc by the way will get just as upset on a dry run. Why? Because he keeps trying to find something, he keeps trying to find something to talk about, and he hasn't got anything to talk about, and you're now however running an electrical circuit with no current at all.

Eventually, running it with no current at all, you run it dry and it sort of takes on a sponge-like characteristic. And the condenser will start picking up charge, whether you want it to or not. Simply out of the intention that auditing is going to occur. And this no-current circuit will gradually bleed some charge out of the bank, in spite of the auditor, in spite of the pc, it is still mis-charge and the pc will still explode. You can't win. The only thing you can do is to restimulate the amount of charge necessary to keep the session going. And that's how much charge you restimulate. See that? That's how much charge you restimulate. You make it as basic and as fundamental and as significant as possible – but you don't keep going for charge and charge and charge and charge, leaving charge unblown – because you're eventually going to swamp your pc, no matter how tough he seems, you still will swamp the pc.

Now, this tone arm is the instrument which measures the adequacy of restimulation. That shows you that an adequate amount of charge is being restimulated in the session and that it is being adequately dispelled on the itsa line. And this shows you that the cycle of whatsit-itsa is in progress, and the amount of restimulation is adequate to get auditing done.

Now the funny part of it is, that it's absolutely miles of margin. You would say – you look at some pcs that have a fragile, delicate tone arm, and you won't think there's this much margin – but in actual fact, on the usual pc there's just really miles of margin. You can over-restimulate and still get tone arm action, you actually underrestimulate and get some tone arm action. In other words this is a high level of tolerance. The tolerance is tremendously high. That's perhaps a happy thing, but it doesn't give you a split hairline estimation. You can have the pc pretty well swamped and still be getting tone arm action – you can be running the pc too shallowly and still be getting adequate tone arm action, see? So there's a lot of tolerance in this. It isn't anything that you have to measure very precisely. Most auditors, therefore, groove into the situation that they get tone arm action, then they don't worry about too much restimulation or too little restimulation.

Now if you get too much restimulation, you get an inevitable cessation of tone arm action. If you get too little restimulation, you get an inevitable cessation of tone arm action. The result is the same for both conditions. There is nothing in the meter that tells you you're getting too little or too much. But the mechanics of auditing, all by themselves; any valid auditing question, that gives tone arm action, is restimulating enough charge to cause auditing to occur. So auditing itself prevents to a marked degree the lower, too little restimulation from occurring, if it is done.

For instance, if you're doing anything and getting tone arm action, you probably are at the minimal. Now, that's also – you're told by the amount of significance which you are auditing. You're auditing, let us say, GPMs, man. And you're piling it on, hot and heavy. Well, let me tell you, at no time during that session are you going to have too little tone arm – too little charge. At no time are you going to have too little charge. You're fooling with stuff – you're fooling with stuff that obviously is going to give charge – heavy engrams, heavy GPMs, back-track stuff, all this sort of thing. That is all capable of furnishing Niagara's of charge – and just ticked will furnish a Niagara of charge.

So when you're using upper-level processes – when you're using upper level processes – the only error that you pay any attention at all to is too much charge being restimulated.

And that's the only area you pay any attention to. You're sitting there throwing the GPMs at him and that sort of thing. Well, you're sitting there pushing items at him. All right, you're running a chain of engrams. All right – fine, fine, fine. There's certainly available Niagara's of charge. So on higher-level processes you only have the "too much charge" error. On high-level processes you only have "too much charge" as an error – and that's the only thing that halts the tone arm action. You actually can't err in the direction of minimal charge. Because if you just stopped running the GPM the guy would start – and let the itsa line in – the guy would start drifting up through the locks, telling you about locks and that sort of thing. It'd be impossible for him to remain static in the bank, in the vicinity of this much living lightning, don't you see? You can't make the minimal TA error in running high artillery.

Build an atom bomb or build an atom bomb that doesn't explode enough. You see, it can't be done. That's the whole trouble. You take the Savannah – that atomic ship that they built and these submarines. They've done a pretty good job on the submarines, on that atomic ship, and so forth. Their trouble, all this atomic design – the trouble is just too much hate. There's too much horsepower. They can't get rid of it. There's enough there to run the ship and to warm all the water around the ship and cook all the fish for half-a-dozen fathoms down below the keel and they still can't get rid of the stuff, you see – there's just too much power. And that is your problem in auditing high level processes.

This is one thing for you to know, man – in spite of the fact that you don't think the pc is getting much contact with it, because you aren't getting tone arm action. You've got him running through any GPM, and you're not getting tone arm action – let me tell you that it is never *too little* charge. See? Now you get this pc going through the incident and you're not getting tone arm action and you're just getting a flash. In some Central Organization recently they were – no tone arm action – no tone arm action, and half-inch rocket reads choked, was considered adequate to run a GPM. And everybody was walking around looking like corpses. Fortunately the Assoc Sec landed in time. Grim!

All right, now what's this condition? What's this condition all about? Too much charge. Pc shuts it down. Tone arm locks up – no tone arm action. Can't be any such thing as minimal charge, you see? You say, well, it's beyond the reality of the pc. Well, you've explained it in a dozen different ways. I don't care how you explain it. It's just too much charge. Because unreality equals force and invalidation. If you want to know what unreality is, it's force and invalidation. You can add on the thought level, disagreement. Force, invalidation. Invalidation slightly on the thought level, too. Uncoordinated force – raw force. That sort of thing. That's unreality. So that person to whom things are the least real is that person swamped by the most charge. Your problem in such a case is how do you bleed it off – not how do you restimulate it. How can you open up a line to decondense the condenser – that's the problem, not how do you restimulate charge. Life's done that for you adequately and the pc has cooperated gorgeously – and the pcs got themselves in a charged up state that they're like living lightning. They're swamped all the time. Don't feel good, this, that, the other thing – all these various body conditions, sort of ARC breaky with life, and so forth. There's just too much charge.

The auditor – the auditor has to be a skilled wirelayer, to attach the discharge line, with sufficient delicacy that it won't blow all at once because the pc would simply explode

into an ARC break or something. So you've got to bleed it off very carefully. Now what do you – what do you put the lead to? What do you put the whatsit line to? How do you tap this thing? That's the big problem. Look, you could sit there and say, "Well, do you have any GPMs in restimulation? Well let's run a GPM." This person's tone arm was never known to move from 6.5, or from 1.0, see. "Oh, let's run a GPM." Oh, great. Oh, man. It's like emptying the Pacific Ocean into the Atlantic Ocean because the Atlantic Ocean doesn't have enough water in it or something. See? And after you've emptied the Pacific Ocean into the Atlantic Ocean, why, you're going to find the Atlantic Ocean is now too full. That's for sure. People are going to be wearing rubber boots in New York, that's for sure!

But let's look at this then. Then it is not a problem of emptying the Atlantic Ocean at all, to one of these fragile tone arms – pardon me, not throwing more charge in there at all. It's not even a problem of emptying it. It's a problem of how do you get a few drops out of it. You know? The few drops that the pc's knowingness and reality will carry as a channel. You'll find such people very often beg you for a one-shot Clear process, you know? They actually sell this so hard they probably create psychiatry. Create these heroic methods, see. The old Effect Scale is in process here, see. To these people, you say, [whispers:] "Did you ever solve any problems? You ever – you ever think about anything? Would you like to tell me about it?"

"Well, yes, yes..."

They don't know if it's safe, see, and you'll see them clam up a lot, and not talk a lot and go into large pauses and all of this kind of thing, don't you see. But gradually you'll all of a sudden see your tone arm move. See, you've opened up a safe charge-bleeding line. They're not suspicious of it; they're not worried about it. They know nobody can handle this stuff, see. They – that's what they know. That's the biggest knowingness there is. They got the idea they're, they're just delicate, that if they think the wrong thought they're going to go nuts. See, they're in a – they're careful. They're careful all the time. They must think pure thoughts. "If I walk this tightwire called life, exactly right, I don't know, maybe I – maybe I'd better not walk it today." [laughter] "Tomorrow – tomorrow, that'd be – that'd be best. We'll start tomorrow. *Whoooo!* I almost stepped on the thing," see. Everything is a live wire.

The Scientologist who's had quite a bit of auditing, particularly you guys, you'd make me laugh at you if you told me you felt like you were going mad, or something like this. I frankly would just laugh in your face. I wouldn't put the itsa line in at all. I'd laugh. Because frankly, you couldn't possibly make it. [laughter] Once in a while, after a session has blown your brains out or something of the sort, you might feel like sobbing and crying to yourself quietly, but you'd still know you're going to come out of it.

Well that isn't how this character who's never had any charge bled off at all feels, man. That is the carefulness created in psychotherapy of past ages. That is the general philosophy of such people's lives, if they're just cautious; if they – if they just aren't adventurous in any way, they somehow or another, will get through. Well, what are they – what are they doing? They're just – they know they're living on a bomb, and they're afraid to connect it up to anything, so they're afraid to say anything to anybody, or anything like that. I know one pc up in London – finally we found out he'd been collecting all the blackness in the universe – all the blackness in the universe, to keep other people from having to suffer from it. That was his

final act of kindness. And this guy – this guy looked like an animated corpse, complete with – complete with formaldehyde scar, you know? This was a bird, man! He was a gone dog.

Now you run any pc too high grade, pick up too little charge on the backtrack, you keep him looking bad while he's getting better. Let's get into another ramification of this. You might even deteriorate the condition of his body while he's getting better. There's no particular reason making him look pretty, but the point – the point I'm making here is that you actually can run him too steep by far for his body tolerance, and still get tone arm action. But when you exceed that – when you exceed that, your tone arm action will cease. This is all on the subject of charge and nothing else.

Well all of this is very, very interesting but what do you do? What do you do? And what actually has happened here? And how did somebody get that charged up? Somebody comes off the street, never had any auditing, never studied any books – no reason for all this charge to exist. You realize by cognition alone, they read books and get charge off one way or the other. We discharge a lot of things that we never see on an E-Meter – tremendous quantity of it.

Oh, there've been a lot of cases of birds lying in bed sick, they read something like *Dianetics: Evolution of a Science*, something like that – and been in the hospital for Lord knows when, the doctors are about to operate and they say "to hell with them," and get up and get on their clothes and go out and never been sick since, you know. Weird things like this have happened. Well, that was a showing that there was a link existed for the charge, and some must have blown at that particular moment and brought the case to an equilibrium. So it knocked out the psychosomatic illness. Anybody with psychosomatic illness is simply suffering from too much restimulated charge that he doesn't know what it is or how to get rid of it or anything else.

If you ever want to meet a nasty character, meet somebody – I mean a nasty-tempered character – meet somebody with cancer. They're uniformly nasty tempered. Well how much – they're in an almost total continuous ARC break. Just fabulous – ARC break going on all the time. Certain particular types of cancer are worse than others.

Arthritis – arthritis is a case in point. Arthritics, *raaooow!* See. Well, what is all that stuff gathered up on the bones and binging into the cells, and all of this sort of thing? Well, this isn't any esoteric charge, like poor old Wilhelm Reich's. What was it he had? – orazone or something. The FDA killed him you know, just as sure as they stood him up in the street and shot him down with a gun. And he was never arrested for anything he ever did. They faked him a contempt of court charge, you know, and threw him in prison, and the old man was already an escapee from Hitler and he just went into pure terror and died. The good old FDA.

Anyhow, poor old Wilhelm Reich, he was always talking about this stuff that was drifting all over everything. You understand – he was talking about charge. You find old Jung. He's always talking about some kind of mysterious influence in his vicinity. You know, stuff broke around him. You know he never attributed it to himself? It's very remarkable, but stuff – everything was breaking and snapping. He and Freud were in a room one day and a whole bookcase split down the back. [laughter] Just fantastic things going on around him. He never – he never said for a moment, or he never thought for a moment that it was himself, see.

These guys are actually dealing with force. Forces of one kind or another. Well I don't care whether we measure them like poor old Reich, and call them by an odd name or measure them and not know anything about them at all except note their effect as in Jung's case, or wherever we look we see the evidence of what we're talking about and calling charge.

This guy is going this way down the street, see, all the time. Well, what's holding his hand like that? He wouldn't be holding his hand like that, man. There's something holding his hand like that. All right, call that charge. He's – here's somebody else – here's somebody else and he's got himself a neck – hurts him, all the time, all the time, all the time, all the time. Well, we isolate it down; we find out after a while it's a pole trap, or it's something like that or somebody's stuck in a GPM, or something like this has happened to him – that's what gives him the somatic. But that's the particularity of the charge, giving its time and date location and so forth. It is simply just charge. And it is in restimulation, so it chews the devil out of him.

Sometimes you notice right after a session you've got somatics. And you walk away from a session and they vanish. Well, it's a case of momentary restimulation. Other times you walk out of a session, you have an awful somatic and it doesn't vanish. And the next day you're still feeling foggy. And two or three days later you're not foggy anymore. Well that is the period of destimulation of charge. Usually from three to ten days. Now of course if you continuously stimulate charge and continuously stimulate it, continuously stimulate it and never pick it up, give it no way to bleed off or anything like that, it becomes chronic charge. And that is what happens in life. You get a restimulation of charge and it becomes chronic.

Now actually, you have to enturbulate a thetan pretty badly to put him in a condition where he can get chronic charge. You have to give him an implant every twenty-five, thirty, forty, fifty, sixty, seventy years. You have to hit him hard – and sometimes even then you don't hit him hard enough. I know, they're probably being critical right now on the subject of, "They've got to step up the megatrons in the between-life area – those damn Scientologists coming through here, blowing out all the fuses. Rewire the place." Make you feel creepy? Well it shouldn't make you feel creepy, they wouldn't do anything for you. I don't think they're that energetic anymore.

They're dependent upon a system. So they've got to charge up your bank and charge you up, and so forth, so that you can get charged up and be uncomfortable enough to consider yourself entrapped. I just ran into – while they prepare you for the series of implants which you will get at the end of each lifetime – your preparation series. It's just a series of GPMs. The wildest most vicious GPMs I ever ran into. Practically everybody's got them at least twice. Carefully misdated. Carefully misdated. And every goal called a wrong goal.

Audience: Mm-mm.

There's at least thirty or forty wrong dates on every one of the GPMs. And that's how they get you to return. Because between the wrong dates, they tell you to get out and come back here, see. That's how they freeze that in. I wondered how they made you feel all the time you're being dragged around and everything. I'm on the – I'm on the trail of that now. But that was – it's very elementary how they get you to return every time – they sandwich the command to return, between a series of about eighty GPMs, and somebody is going to come up

with the idea that he ought to, whatever other idea he gets. But it makes you think more and more that they're not native to this galaxy, because this particular series does not carry the significances. The goals are opposite-terminated, yes. But the goals themselves are of a characteristic, as to make life the opposite terminal, so that livingness gives you the oppterm. This is very nice.

Goals are lovely: "To be wrong." "To get caught." You know, that sort of thing. All derogatory goals. So they make you of course be the opposite thing to this, see. So they naturally stay hung-up better. And then they're all misdated. So you could produce this on a laboratory basis. Research basis, see. You can produce too much charge as a research basis. You could have this PC, pc is running with tone arm action, pow-pow-pow-pow-pow-pow-pow-pow-pow-pow. Not let's – let me show you now the ceilings you could go into. They're not all wired for asbestos sound, and take unlimited amount of bang. They can't. They're not like you, either. Because they're still thinking that careful thought, man. See, and you're going to put a little bit more charge on it, they're not going to think that careful thought, they're just going to go – thud. You're running a person who is awful close to thud. Whether it's his individual tolerance or not we won't discuss.

But you can get TA action off this person, TA – you'll have this problem all the time as an auditor. I'm going to talk to – about – I'm talking about one of the commonest problems you'll have, see? You get this person, they got – getting TA action, goes *ping-ping-ping-ping-ping* and it goes from 3.4 and 3.4 and 3.4 and 3.5 and 4.25 and 3.4 and 2.75 and it just – nice tone arm action. You're – they're just sitting there talking. See, they're just sitting there talking. And nobody's running any process on them, so you say, "Well, that's fine, this person gets good tone arm action. So therefore, we're going to run the goal 'to forget.'" All right, so we run the goal "to forget," and the tone arm action is from 3.5 to 4, with wide strikes. Now this is perfectly all right. But watch it, man – watch it, man. All you've got to do is bypass some charge, leave an item charged, mess it up, give it an ARC break, be a little bit unskilled in auditing and, – pow! that discharges. Gone. There goes your TA action – gone! You aren't going to get it back, either. Not without an awful lot of work.

And now this person's jumpy. Person doesn't quite know what's going to happen to him. Something catastrophic has occurred. Don't you see? They're not getting results out of auditing. They don't think auditing is giving them the type of results, see. So your first indication that you are moving a case up to zenith on high-level processes, and if they're going to hit that point of tolerance and go right straight on through the sound barrier – bong! – the first point is a lessening TA action. Now watch it, man. Because when the TA action lessens, you are already running the case beyond tolerance. Now I'm talking now about your Routine 2, Routine 3, Routine 4 processes – which you haven't got yet – 4.

But, your – this is your skilled – this is your skilled auditing level, you understand. Those – those are the things. You watch that, you watch that diminishing tone arm. Ordinarily you won't see it, because you don't study it until after the session – or half the session goes by and you suddenly realize that you know, this character was moving from 3.0 to 4.25 yesterday and by George, this whole session so far, the pc has only moved from 4.75 to 4.5 and see what's happened here.

Now, you're not in trouble – you're not in trouble. You can go on. You see, your tolerance is pretty good. You can go on. Only, watch it. Start auditing more carefully. Start being very careful to keep that itsa line wide, wide, wide open. And be very careful that the charge you do restimulate is actually brought off the case. Start to audit that case more delicately, don't you see. And don't change to another type of auditing, don't restimulate another single item, until you've gotten what you're doing squared away.

Some cases are quite masochistic. They want to go earlier and tear up the whole track. You've got a case that has already had lessening tone arm action, and he wants to go back on the backtrack and restimulate a whole chain of goals. What do you do then? I'll just leave it up to you, because man, you've opened up a whole chain of goals on this character – you've opened up something new when you haven't got something old finished off and you are now in trouble. And many a pc will sit there on a very hard sell and try to persuade you to do exactly that. And you can just cut your throat, man! Understand, that that pc has had diminishing tone arm action. You've already seen diminishing tone arm action on the pc.

Now the pc's going to get ambitious and wants to tear up a lot more charge. Oh, boy! That's the way you get your tone arm stuck. Now, the way – the best way to keep from worrying about a stuck tone arm is not to stick it. Now, that's really the best way. Now, the next best way is notice it is diminishing. And the moment you see it diminish, haul out of there – as far as more restimulation is concerned. Let's start getting – let's start getting thorough. See, we've got a GPM. I'll show you one way to do this – we've got a GPM and all of a sudden during that whole session that tone arm has diminished.

I'll give you an example. We run the center goal out of the Bear Implants. One of the centers. We've assessed for it on 3 – on R3R, and we run the center goal out of the Bear Implants and we say, well, we've got that, we'll just run the rest of that series of goals. So at that level of the track, you assess. You list for the next goal to run. Yeah, but you had good TA action, see. And your TA action goes – gone. What happened? You restimulated the three or four adjacent goals in that series of five goals, and you now have four or five GPMs in restimulation and that amount of charge has caused a cessation of tone arm action. See this? So, that you can ordinarily trace back any ceased tone arm action that has been moving to some additional charge stirrer-upper – which then was in no way at all handled. You say, well, you couldn't handle it.

Well, then the real subject of this lecture, which I should have given you earlier, but can be told to you in a very few inches of tape, is simply this: The problem – the puzzle – the mystery is the high tone arm. That's the whatsit line, you understand? The whatsit line or restimulation in general gives you the high or very low tone arm. But the common denominator, the overcharged case, the overcharged case, is always the whatsit line – even if life is putting in this whatsit or even if the pc is putting in this whatsit.

And the wrong thing to do is to get more whatsits on the case. Let me show you a totally wrong process. I don't care if it was part of 2-12. I've just discovered this. This – to – absolutely completely bassackwards wrong process, completely *blyaww!* – is: "Tell me something you've been worried about." All you would have to do – all you would have to do is get one with a puzzle, a mystery, you know, a whatsit type item, you know, whatsit item. You

know, "What have you not understood in life?" That would be marvelous, see. That's a what-sit type item and have him just list whatsit type items. And the tone arm is going to go right on up there and it's eventually going to stick like crazy. Why? Because that's nothing but whatsites. Even though the pc is giving them, the pc is not given any opportunity to do anything but concentrate on whatsites. See, terribly elementary situation here.

If you wanted to cure that, you could have assessed it to a central or a reading whatsit or any of the whatsites on the list the pc seemed to be interested in, and just ask him "What solutions had he had for this." And that's your itsa. And watch the tone arm start moving into action again.

"How many problems does this solve?" would be a totally incorrect auditing question. That's absolutely backwards. That'll just park a tone arm. Now let's get it right way to. "How many solutions are there, have you had..." let's not dream them up or invent them – "How many solutions have you had to this problem?" That's totally correct. Because the pc is where he is, because everything has cured everything. I have an index someplace or another, done in 1958, I ought to bring this to you, I have to give you another lecture on it next week. But the cures are the cures are the cures are the cures. It even goes into matter, energy, space and time, how each one is the cure for the next one. Cure, cure, cure, cure, cure. That's what gives you the itsas. The itsa line then goes in. See?

"How have you tried to solve this problem?" Got a problem, see. "What solutions have you had for this problem?" I'm just trying to give you a graphic auditing working example, see, that puts the itsa line in and brings the tone arm down. So you ask for – you give the case new problems, new problems, new problems – you give him no chance to give any solutions to the problems, your line will go up, see. You give him itsas, itsas, itsas, itsas, itsas, eventually it'll come down, and eventually it won't go any lower because they haven't got any problems to give any itsas for. See? They haven't got any whatsites to give any itsas for. Now is the time to find out another whatsit already in restimulation, and get all the itsas for that whatsit that is already there. And then find another one on the case that was already in restimulation, and find all the itsa lines for it. And you could coax anybody's tone arm down, following through this. You got it? It's elementary once you start looking at the thing.

But it can be very baffling, and I know very well that you're still going to have some awful headaches, sitting there looking at some pc whose tone arm has suddenly ceased to act and ceased to move and trying to get the pc to answer the question, trying to pick the lock, trying to get that fantastic and horrible combination – that one little delicate point that the pc will release some charge on – that will start the tone arm acting again. Trying – trying to bleed that charge off. What is something small enough or tiny enough that the pc can let go of? And you'll get the tone arm acting again. Pc lets go of nothing so long as you have no tone arm action, so therefore tone arm action is necessary to get off any charge.

Oddly enough, knowingness and reality do not increase unless charge is released from the case. So then the case knows nothing has happened if you don't increase his knowingness. Okay?

All right.

That's all I have to tell you about it.

Thank you very much.

THE ITSA LINE

A lecture given on 20 August 1963

How are you today?

Audience: Good. Fine, thank you.

All right. This is what?

Audience: Twenty August.

Twenty August AD 13. Thank you.

Well, this is a lecture on the itsa line. About time. The itsa line. Why is it called the itsa line? The auditor says, "Whatsit?" and the pc says, "Itsa." It is the pc's communication line from pc to auditor. And it isn't necessarily pursuant to the auditor's whatsit; it is sometimes pursuant to the pc's whatsit – pc very often puts in his own whatsit.

Okay. There are numerous communication lines between the auditor and the pc and the aggregate of these make up the – what you call the auditing cycle. The auditing cycle is made up of several communication lines. A communication line is cause-distance-effect. I call your attention to *Dianetics 1955!* for the full definition of a communication line. What is a communication: intention, attention, duplication at the point of effect, and so forth.

All those are quite important and technically accurate, but what you're mainly interested in is cause-distance-effect. Cause-distance-effect is a communication line. A communication line is not cause-distance-effect, cause-distance-effect – that's two communication lines.

Now, a communication line can be very faint, and one of those that you'll find out routinely on an auditor is the attention line: line 1 minor; line 1 minor, the attention line. And that is just consistently out. But as I say, there are numbers of these and we're not particularly going into them. That's the first line. That's – get the pc's attention; how do you get the pc's attention to cause the pc to put his attention on the auditor? And that line is the one that is put in.

Now, that line itself can be complex and become two lines or three lines. Pc sitting there and he's saying, "*Gob-gob, walla-walla,*" something, and the auditor wants to get his attention on him. See, it has to have attention on the auditor. Now, the auditor can't really give an auditing command or do anything with his command unless he gets his attention line in.

Now, that can be done very crudely. You can drop the E-Meter, you can cough loudly in the pc's face, tip over your chair, get angry. There's, in essence, numbers of ways to get this line in very, very wrong. And the line has to be put in, however, and very often you find a pc fogging around at the beginning of session and his attention is not on the auditor, it's really not on his case, it's not on anything you're trying to do, and so forth. Well, how do you get it there? Well, one of the ways of getting it there is, having an attention line already extant, you then convert it to an itsa line.

Now, this is the whole trick, because there's another attention line. There is attention on what, see? And this looks like another attention line – it's actually 1 minor. It just isn't putting the attention on the auditor, it's putting attention on something else. And this is a little trick I used to do that used to baffle everybody in ACCs. They used to get baffled, and everybody would drop his jaw and look at me dully when I would try to get them to do this – and it's been wholly unsuccessful – but by dividing down the auditing cycle into these various communication lines and component parts, I will bravely take another crack at it.

It's slippy. I know if I give this to you, it'll become a repetitive-command process, which it isn't. It's slippy, that's all – is you just very adroitly, without really putting the pc's attention on anything except what his attention should be on, just flick the pc's attention over to what it should be on. I'll give you an idea.

Pc is saying, "Oh, I just – just – just can't stand – can't stand these – these wild parties. Just can't stand them. Had one last night and just can't stand them, and so forth. There's just too much – too much music and everything. And I've got an awful present time problem, because this guy's – this – this – this girl's b-b-boyfriend came over and wanted to pop me in the eye because I was getting too familiar... and it's terrible." And present time problem, present time problem, present time problem.

And you know you're running the GPM "to be sexual," see? This you know about the case. This is – this I'm giving you, also, is the itsa line.

[One can hear thunder in the background] Hey, we're getting a nice storm tape here too, Peter. We'll cut the storm off of it, and so forth, and sell it. They go great in the Middle West. They love storm tapes. It reminds them of home.

I had a green tornado one time in Kansas – never been back since. Twenty-five-pound blocks of ice were falling out of a pea-soup-green sky, and the visibility had dropped down to about fifteen feet – bright green. Never quite recovered. Was impossible. Couldn't have happened – but it did.

Now, your pc's attention being all over the confounded place, the auditor sits back and says he's going to put in the itsa line. Now, usually by this – unless he is well trained and has this data, and so forth – this means he's going to sit back and leave the pc's attention totally uncontrolled. The itsa line, when you first start giving it to people, is just never doing anything but listen. And that's because people think it is simply a communication line, and it isn't. But we will go on to this in a moment.

Now, therefore this pc is running on and on and on about this party – and this is slippy auditing. I can sit and do this by the hour. PC never finds out about it, and there's no com-

mand process being run and everything else, and tone arm moves like mad, and so forth. It requires a certain estimation of effort, you understand? And I actually, years and years ago, despaired of getting anybody to control attention that lightly. This is another effort to do so, see?

So, you say – he's going on and on, "And this guy came over and he almost bopped me, but this was a nice-looking girl, and so forth. And I had a terrible problem because of my wife, you know, and so on, and..." Here we go, see?

Now, the auditor who is not well informed and who is not well skilled just sits back and listens to this whole thing. Now, to do anything about it suddenly is to put line 1 minor in on the auditor. Clank! And boy, the pc will ARC break, see, because it's a sudden shift of attention. So the whole thing is the skill by which you can take line 1 minor and flick it over onto what you were doing or want to do in the session – the skill with which you can do this. And, believe me, this is a skill manoeuvre. And when you are really skilled at this, you could almost sit down and run a full auditing session, and even a casual observer would think you were simply listening to the pc, which you weren't at all; you were actually directing the pc's attention very closely. The pc was talking exactly about what you wanted that pc to talk about and nothing else, and the pc never realizes that their attention has been grooved on it.

Now, that would be the tremendous difference between psychoanalysis listening and Scientology auditing. You see, these things could look quite alike.

The psychoanalyst (1) did not really know what to direct anybody's attention to, see? He didn't know the anatomy of the bank. He thought if he could direct somebody's attention to sexual incidents in early childhood, he had it made. Well, now, a pc – a pc – actually follows in his case, at any given moment, the least-charged line. A pc will always follow the least-charged line. Get this. Get this good, because that's one of those remarks that goes by in the night and you wonder someday – you're sitting there auditing somebody and you don't know what to do, and so forth. And it's one of those things that if you knew that well, you'd know exactly what to do. He always follows the least-charged line with his tone arm action. If you're going to get tone arm action, it is on the least-charged aberrative line – not the least-charged thing he could talk about, but the least-charged aberrative line. The tone arm action exists on the least-charged aberrative line at any given moment in a case progress – always the least-charged aberrative line.

Now, give you what I mean by that. Let's take dynamics. You've got eight dynamics you could audit on the pc. The third dynamic is what the pc is always coming up with. Well, if you kept the pc on the third dynamic, you know, you would get tone arm action because this happens with the pc to be the least-charged line. You got it?

Now, the other lines do not give tone arm action, and this does not mean they are not charged; it means they are overcharged. There is too much charge on them. Got that? So you're always trying to snake through the minefield on the least-popping firecrackers to get your tone arm action. You got that? You want little ones that'll just tingle his feet; you don't want those that'll blow his legs off. You understand?

Well, the mind is so regulated and safety-valved that it will not release charges which the pc considers over his ability to tolerate. Now, an auditor can actually punch these charges

into view; he's got all the materials in his hand. And therefore he could actually throw the pc into areas which are overcharged areas to be run – the areas are overcharged.

The result of an overcharged area is a stuck tone arm. Stuck tone arms have many peculiarities and particularities. You can say that if you want to really get tone arms moving you have to get the GPMs on a case run; that's the most likely to give you tone arm action. Because it's the most aberrative in terms of time. You can say a lot of things about tone arm action. You say tone arm action sticks because of time – these things are all true. But with regard to charge, what you really want to know with regard to charge is that in the presence of too much charge, too much charge, the TA ceases to operate. TA action ceases when you have too much charge.

That doesn't say that you couldn't bleed it, that you couldn't work your way around it, that there aren't means of getting off the charge anyhow, and all that sort of thing. But when you see a TA ceasing to operate, and ceasing to act, then you have entered an area of too much charge – particularly on an extremely high or an extremely low TA. Do you follow that, now? Too much charge.

It's not because there's nothing there to run; it's because there's too cockeyed much there. See that? And if you don't get tone arm action, then the charge that holds the significances and ideas, postulates, cognitions, and that sort of thing, in place – just the corny electrical charge, you understand, no other significance connected with it – this thing packed up and held in facsimiles, masses, all of this sort of thing, won't then let the case advance. And you get no case advance in the absence of tone arm action. That is – that's it! I mean, there aren't any ands, ifs, ors or buts about it. No tone arm action: no case advance!

I don't care if you erased a somatic, I don't care if the pc has ceased to have lumbosis, I don't care about any of these things – because you're not auditing a body. As far as this pc is concerned – no tone arm action: no case advance.

Now, can you worsen no tone arm action? Yes. You can bring about no needle action on top of no tone arm action. *Hu-hu-hu-hu*. And if you insist on running a pc without tone arm action, you soon will begin to see it expressed over here in the needle, which will get tighter and tighter and tighter. And after a while everything locks up. And then if you use real desperate measures, why, you can just freeze the pc into something that'll feel to him like solid rock.

The longer you run a case without tone arm action, the more you will freeze the case into no tone arm action. And the more the case is frozen into no tone arm action, the less chance you have of getting charge off by any means. You see this? I mean, you're walking away from the point of resolution. The further you go with no tone arm action, the less likely you are to fortuitously produce some. So it's not just "Well, he's running without tone arm action," and brush it off, you see? It's "Oh, my God! He's running without tone arm action! *Whew. Huh*. Hey, hey, hey! *Bo-bo-bo-bo!* No tone arm action! Hey, hey, hey, hey! No tone arm action. Get some tone arm action. Ha-ha." You know? It gets that type of emotional response, you know? Not "Well, he's running without tone arm action, so he isn't getting any better," and so on, see?

Guy being run without tone arm action is somebody you're watching go down the big toboggan. And the longer this goes on, the harder it's going to get to get tone arm action.

Now, the most likely way to get tone arm action on any condition, any case or any anything, is getting in the itsa line. This has processes connected with it. These processes are designated Routine 1C (C for communication). Routine 1C: this is the soft-touch process. This is the process that will be given to Scientology One Auditors, and after you've studied it and used it a year or two, you'll find out that there's a lot more to know about it.

It is at once the clumsiest use – it's the workhorse, you see? You say, "Well, you've got two processes to make an OT. You've got 3N, you got R3R." No, you've always got three processes. See, if you've got two like that, then you've always got one more, and that'll always be the itsa line, or 1C, see? This is the workhorse. This is the workhorse.

And, yeah, somebody in a co-audit; yes, sure, somebody in a... doing a book-auditing job; yeah, somebody, some student in the Academy; yeah, these people, oh, yes, these guys will be able to make progress with this thing. But before he's gone very long in the Academy and before he's done very much auditing, he'll all of a sudden begin to believe – he'll do one of two things: either, "Well, I just get tired of just sitting there listening to him talk and talk and talk and talk, you know? I just get tired of this. So this itsa line isn't so good." See? He didn't even know what it was in the first place, see? Or he will all of a sudden begin to realize that there is a certain deftness required here or one will just continue to sit and listen and listen, and the pc goes on and talks and talks.

Well, look, they talked for five years in psychoanalysis without getting anyplace. See, we don't know that they had tone arm action, but we sure know they didn't get anyplace. They did. They did – pardon me, pardon me. That – I'm maligning the boys. I'm maligning them. They got careful. They did get someplace.

Well, look-a-here. You learn, then, that an overcharged case can most easily be bled down by the itsa line, and you'll restore tone arm action. So the best way to restore tone arm action to any case that has become overcharged through being run in the wrong departments is getting in the itsa line. Now, that's your base process. You can restore tone arm action, no matter how badly the case has been jammed up, if you are clever in handling the itsa line.

Now, when I say "itsa line," and when I say "clever," yes, they're very definitely joined together. Clever. It is not a process; it's a cleverness. And the biggest trouble you have anything with is (as we'll come back to this) line 1 minor. Why put the attention on the auditor when all you've got to do is shift it slightly in the pc?

This guy is saying, "Well, and so forth, and we had this big – big hassle at this party and I – this – my wife bawled me out, and everybody bawled me out and so forth. And I've got this terrible present time problem. I got this awful hangover and I'm having an awful time in this session," and so on and so on and so on. Yeah, under a long series of runs you could probably take apart this present time problem, but you were running on the pc the goal "to be sexual." The pc is having trouble with being sexual, that's for sure.

Well, that's where the cleverness is, is was there anything that happened – you know, is what the pc's talking about got anything to do with what you were doing, see? So, of

course, the adroit question practically walks up and hits you in the head. The adroit question is – pc takes a long breath and momentarily he isn't going on any further. Just momentarily, see? He actually hasn't run his communication line out terribly, but he's just been floundering, you're getting minimum tone arm action. And you say, "Did our last session have anything to do with this?"

"Oh. Let's see, what the hell were we doing in the last session?"

"Well, I don't know. Just review what we were doing."

"Well, let's see, so and so on, so on, then we had an ARC break and we were doing something or other and so on. We were running out some kind of items; there's this backtrack and there's this stairs or something there. Let me see, now. I – I'll – I'm gettin' it now," and so forth. "Oh, yeah. Yeah, yeah. Yeah, we were running – you see, I – I really can't get anywhere near this, I'm so worried about my present time problem – but we were – we were running some goal, some goal, some goal, some goal, something along this line and so on. Oh, yes, 'to be sex – ' say, what do you know! Yeah, I sure do have a lot of trouble with – with this thing 'to be sexual.' I ha... Yeah, I sure do. Yeah, I – I have a lot of trouble with that."

"Well" you say, "well, what items did we have there, right toward the last?"

"Well, I think we arrived at this point on the line plot, and I think it was – I think it was – 'absolutely' no, it was 'nix' – yeah. Well, all right. There we are." And you're starting to see your tone arm move and your needle start to twitch.

And he never knew what happened. Magic, man, magic! It's gently taking line 1 minor, without actually putting it on the auditor, and putting it back to the subject of the auditing. And, you see, there's no process that you could announce that will do this, because the auditing is tremendously variable and the pc's worries and concerns are fantastically agglomerate.

Now, sometimes, the pc has legitimately had a present time problem and something catastrophic has occurred between sessions, something like this – this is just using this factor for just a present time problem – and it's something *way* off. And the only thing you can do is to keep flicking that attention line. Flick. It's really not a whatsit line; your whatsit's already in, you see? And you just keep moving it around till the pc will ventilate the PTP that he's worrying about.

Now, the crudest, but still acceptable example of this is simply "Tell me about it." See, that's crude. See, that's something like we're going to build a house so we pile up some bricks. That's crude. That's about as adroit as the cow doing the twist, see? [laughter] But nevertheless, it's functional. You do get some motion. I couldn't forbear to milk that gag. [laughs, laughter]

Now, so there's the pc, see? And the pc can't get his mind on what you're doing because something else has happened. And this something else is real worried, and maybe it's worried down to the level of grief charge, or something like this, see? Well, all you can do is move the – move this little attention line around onto things that'll give him itsas. And you can cut it down from – well, actually, failing to relieve the situation, that's how bad it can be, see? You just didn't really relieve his problem, or you relieved it somewhat, or you – next

grade is you spent the session making him feel better about that present time problem. See, we're well into the acceptable band, if we've got to be. Or, we handled it in the first two hours of the session, or we handled it in the first hour of the session, or we handled it in the first fifteen minutes of the session. And that difference of time has very little to do with the seriousness of the problem; it has everything to do with the cleverness of the auditor – without putting the attention line on himself, without cutting the itsa line – adroitly shifting that little attention line there to this and that.

"Well," the person says, "but this – but I don't see – I don't see why we had to fight half the night after we got home. I told her I just was attracted by blondes, and so forth, and she just wouldn't listen," and so forth.

And the auditor says, "What have you found out about arguments like that with your wife?"

"Well, itsa, itsa, itsa, itsa, itsa, itsa, itsa."

"Well, that's – that's fine. All right. Now, how do you feel about this problem now?"

"Well, the problem is all right."

Well, he's still a little bit fluttery, so, "Well, let's review now what we were doing on something or other." Got the idea?

"Well, we were doing so-and-so and, well, you know what we were doing as well as I do."

"Well, all right, yeah, probably. But I may not have full records here of this. There might have been something that came up during the session, or something like this, or between sessions you might have thought of something else."

"Oh, yes! I did, as a matter of fact."

You're away, see? Got the idea?

Actually, it's just about as skilled as building a watch, but because there is no apparent skill there, don't you see, it gets slightly into disrepute. People can watch a session in which this is occurring, and they really never even hear the auditor say anything, see? And the pc never really hears the auditor say anything, because the attention line isn't "All right, now. All right. Okay. All right. Yeah, yeah. Yeah, I – I got all that you're talking about. Now, all right. Now we're going to give you – going to give you the next – the next – next auditing command – the next – the next – the – the next auditing command. You got that now? Got that now. All right. Here we are, now. All right. Do birds suffocate? Okay? Got that now? Do birds suffocate?"

Now, you've restimulated some charge. I won't say what charge you've restimulated.

See, now that can grade on down from just too much, you see. That can grade on down to "Do suffocating birds have anything to do with this?" "Were there any birds suffocating in that?" See? To "Well, do you think your processing has bettered this situation?" Now we're really getting feather-light, aren't we? Pc hardly heard you say it and neither would anybody else, you see?

"Well, let's see. Let's go over what we've covered so far in auditing. Well now, you had a couple of cognitions in the last session there that had something to do with this. Have you had any other cognitions with regard to goals, and so forth – these implanted goals?" This is getting awful adroit, see? You've actually got something he's already been talking about, and you put it in by the duplication factor. You duplicate what he has been talking about and you just pull his itsa line a little bit further and put it on something, see?

I'll give you an idea of doing this. He says, "Well, auditing, auditing. I get these awful headaches in auditing and that sort of thing."

"Well, have you particularly gotten them while we've been running goals?"

Few sessions later – he's forgotten all about these headaches, and so forth – we're having a hard time getting his itsa line handled: "How about these headaches? Are they troubling you as much now? When we run these goals and that sort of thing, how are these headaches?" Sounds merely solicitous. It isn't; it's a itsa line, see? See, you've taken a dead-ended communication line someplace back down the line and you've repeated its subject, so therefore you have made a duplication, so you've created a communication line. It's all very technical. And the person's attention goes back on to this and he has to make a comparison. He has to say his headaches are better or worse or there's no change, and while he's doing this he has to put his attention on GPMs, or whatever you're trying to run on it.

And you say, "Well, with this last one that we were running in the last session – the last one, 'to be nutty,' 'to be crazy in the head,'" so forth, something like that, "how were the somatics in the head getting along there? Were they turning on and off, and so forth, while we've been running that?"

"Oh, well, you shouldn't really remark on this, because I had them pretty well off."

"Well, what item did they go off on?" "Well, they went off on – Well, I really don't know. Someplace in the first part of it. Um – um – um – I had an item in there – is – 'idiotably...' I think it was 'idiotably nutty.' Yeah. Yeah, that was the one. Hey, I got that headache again, you know?"

You say, "Well, give me 'nix idiotably nutty.'" You're away, see? See? He doesn't know what hit him, see?

It's moving that attention line adroitly, adroitly, see? Adroit. With the little pinky – the little finger, you know – raised just right on the teacup, See?

Now, you'll see an auditor who really hasn't got much feeling for it, and no tools and so forth, why, he's got this teacup with both paws wrapped around it, you see? And you'll see somebody else has poured the tea into the saucer with both paws wrapped around the saucer and inhaling at a very large number of decibels. See? So, that you'll see this in all of its shades of gray, you see, down to outright black.

But before you understand anything much about the itsa line, you have to understand that there is such a thing as an attention line – line 1 minor – and unless you can handle that attention line slightly, adroitly, greatly, smoothly – you'll curse yourself sometimes. Even the best of an auditor will say, "Well, let's get to running this GPM now," or something like that.

Cut your throat, you see? You spend the next fifteen minutes getting out of this hole. See, it was just too much in the wrong place, see, and it just smashed everything up and the pc is busy explaining to you that he is eight thousand light-years from that GPM and his attention wasn't on it, you know?

You find yourself making these mistakes. Don't knock yourself in the head and say "Well, I'm terrible at this" and run a big make-guilty on self because you don't handle this well always. Just, those times you have been clever, pat yourself on the back. That's the one to pay attention to. I'm not kidding you, because... Well, I gave a session last night and I dropped – three times. Once I dropped a handful of anvils on the floor – shook up the session most interestingly – and another time I put off a whole chain of firecrackers in the middle of the auditing table, and another time practically ran the mains voltage through the cans, see? But that was three, see? That was three. But there was two hours' worth, and probably something on the order of 150 that were handled, you know, with such aplomb, man, that nobody ever found out anything about it, and it got the pc out of the woods gorgeously. See? Quantitatively, see? 'Course what you put your attention on are those three that had to be patched up, see?

"Oh, oh. Well, your attention wasn't on it. Well, I'm very sorry, and so on. Have I cut your communication?" You know, "Sorry," and so forth. "Well, what would you have said if I hadn't have interrupted that?" See? Good recovery, see, level, and so forth. Nevertheless, if you really were self-critical to a vast degree, you would have been practically kicking your brains out for having pulled any one of these three.

Pc is going on and saying, "Well, I think I have blown that last GPM. I think I have blown that."

"Well, all right. All right. Good. Let's check some of its items." Oh-oh, cut your throat, man, see? Just put the pc's attention on the wrong thing, the wrong place, it's all going crash, the pc's needle goes dirty. Get the idea?

You see, you're split between wanting the pc to think well of you, and getting your job done. And these two things are very often at... they're dipolar phenomena. You try and get your job done sometimes uphill against something and in the final analysis it just merely depends on, did you get your job done, see? That's what it really depends on in the final analysis. But in the process of getting your job done, you happen to have ARC broke the pc and cut the pc's communication line several times. Well, the difference between a good and a bad auditor is not whether the auditor always audits smoothly with never cutting an itsa line, but whether or not he attains his eventual objective without creating so many ARC breaks that the pc's case has not improved. That's the test!

If you go around training people on the basis of "You must never cut an itsa line; you must never create an ARC break; you must never upset the pc" – all of these things, you see – it's something like laying in a GPM, you know? Oh, in the first place, it's an impossible attainment. Always train them with "Be as clever and adroit as you can," and "You can be a little more adroit than that." He dropped his E-Meter in the pc's lap halfway through the session. Poor handling of the attention line. Why? Pc's attention went on meter, not on own case.

All right. Now, how many dozen ways are there to shift the pc's attention? I don't know – dozens, thousands. Thousands. I'll give you an idea. You got an alcoholic. You're trying to process this alcoholic, see? Alcoholic's drunk most sessions and you know you're not supposed to audit somebody who's drunk. All the alcoholic'd do is sit there and say, "Well, Alcoholics Anonymous will tell you you can't cure anybody of alcoholism." That's all he's going to say, see? He knows you can't help him. He's saying, well, it's impossible, see? And you say, "Well, the case is unauditabile."

Yes, the case is unauditabile to everybody except those who are surpassingly skilled with the attention line and the itsa line, see? The whatsit line is practically missing.

"Now, what have you learned about Alcoholics Anonymous?"

"Oh, well, that's something else. Well, I met this fella down the street, this fella, and so forth, and he gave me this book, see? And I read this book and I threw it in a garbage pail. Couldn't teach me anything. But I learned better after a while."

"When was that?"

"Oh, in about a few days later I learned better, see? I had this awful hangover, and I just got fired and I was being sued for divorce, and I found out they were your friends. That's what I found out then." You're going to see that tone arm starting to move, man.

He has just told you that you can't possibly audit him. He has just told you that you can't possibly help him. So you just – *hhh-hhh* – polish up the fingernails, audit him, help him, and somewhere up the line he finds out about it as a major cognition.

But all the way up the line he's improving. Because if you can get tone arm motion and get the guy with the session, see, by flicking that little old attention line right where it lives, parallel what the mind is doing, and it will do everything you want it to. Nothing new – that's the beginning lines, I think, of one of the first-book things. But nevertheless, this gives you the anatomy of how that's done. You just find out about what this guy's mind is on, see? And if you can produce tone arm action by having him locate things about it, then he will recover from any obsessive or compulsive tendencies about it or toward it. It's the tone arm motion that takes off the compulsion, not the significance of what he digs up. Given enough tone arm motion on any given subject, and that subject will right itself in the head of the pc. And man, I'm talking from hard-won experience. I'd say, if we've learned anything in the last thirteen years, man, we've learned that. 'Tisn't the significance alone.

It's the tone arm motion that can be obtained in relation to the significance that brings about the recovery.

Now, that's, the fastest recovery is, of course, the tone arm motion plus the right significance to be run. Now, that's your fastest recovery. But your recovery takes place somewhat and eventually if you just produce tone arm motion. That's all you have to do, is produce tone arm motion on the case, regardless of what's run, and eventually – at some vast distance – why, this pc is going to recover from these various targets and so forth in the case. He's going to recover from them. That's for sure. But if you audit the right significance and get no tone arm action, the pc will never recover. See, those are terribly important data.

Well now, the most overcharged areas of the case are the case's – parts of the case that give the high TA. The high TA and the overcharged area compare. The least-charged aberrative area gives tone arm action.

You very often will find some alcoholic that gets no tone arm action on the subject of alcoholism, but he's got corns. You can get tone arm action on the subject of corns, you see? In other words, he can't face that highly a charged approach. So that sometimes the absolute direct approach to a compulsion or obsession of some kind or another will get you nowhere at all, because it's such a highly charged area that it's over the pc's head, and you get no tone arm action on that.

Well, the answer to that is don't abandon it; just get tone arm action! See? That's the thing to do. Just get tone arm action! Very remarkable. Because the mind is stacked up the way it is, if you continue to get tone arm action, he'll all of a sudden walk up on that thing, do you see?

Now, undirectedly – that's just not directing him toward any specific target or goal or aberration or anything else, or any reason he's not able or anything at all, anything – you get tone arm action and he'll eventually collide with something. And he will know processing is helping him!

You'll be utterly flabbergasted sometime. You have this surprise in store for you, if you haven't collided it already. Knowing the idea about tone arm action, you sit there and this pc babbles on and on and on, and it doesn't have anything to do with anything you can see, but my God, that tone arm is moving. You're getting up and down motions on that thing – not a quarter division every twenty minutes, man. You're getting – it's got to be a bit healthier than that for a pc to know something about it – but it's certainly getting a whole tone arm division every ten minutes, and that's pretty fair tone arm motion, see? And that's acceptable. I wouldn't buy much less than that myself – tone arm division every ten minutes. And that would say only down, but you realize that it also has to rise in order to go back down again. So if you added the plus and minus, that'd be two tone arm divisions, you see – one up and one down – in ten minutes. Well, that's – that's just barely, marginally acceptable, see, to produce this phenomena.

You get that?

All right. Pc talking about his grandmother's jam making. Well, cripes, you know? This is about as aberrative, don't you see, as petting the pup. But, my heavens, you're getting tone arm motion on it, man. Well, you can't do anything else much. You've tried something else and gotten a stuck tone arm, so let's let him go on, see? And just completely neglect your attention line. If you were very skilled, you would be unable to totally neglect it. You would punch it around a little bit and increase your tone arm motion, see?

Pc leaves the session feeling fine – feeling fine, wonderful. Pc always makes gains if they have tone arm motion, see? If they have real tone arm motion, they always make gains. If they don't have tone arm motion, they don't make gains.

Now, I can tell you at the three-quarter point of a session whether or not the pc will have anything to say decent in the goals and gains. It's just how much tone arm motion has there been during that session. That's all; it's a direct monitoring factor, see?

So this becomes burningly necessary to produce tone arm motion. At any cost, produce tone arm motion. And now you come into your own about the itsa line, because tone arm motion only occurs when the itsa line is in, and tone arm motion does not occur with the itsa line out.

Now, a lot of you think the itsa line is a communication line. It's not. That's a surprise, isn't it? Just because it's labeled C-distance-E and because it *is* a communication line, well, why don't we just call it the preclear's line to auditor? That would make it a communication line. But we don't. We call it the itsa line. Why the itsa? Why? Why?.

Well, one of the ways to get this across is to give the student a drill. Just imagine a thetan in various circumstances, you know, like a guy in jail. All right, now how is his itsa line cut? See, it isn't just on the graph. That isn't the only way you can show how the itsa line is cut – in an auditing session. Let's just take it out in life. And we say, "All right, this guy is in jail. Give me a number of ways this fellow's itsa line is cut." And you may get some awful comm lags on the part of the student, but he'll eventually dig it up, see? How's his itsa line cut? Well, let me give you some notions, then, for definition of the itsa line. Well, he can't go anyplace else to see if "itsa." He can't go anyplace else to itsa. He's right there in jail, isn't he? Let's say he was up in London in jail. All right. Well, he couldn't go down and itsa the coast, could he? He couldn't say "Itsa water, and itsa beach, and itsa resort, and itsa Brighton," could he? He can't get there. How the hell can he itsa it?

Well, he can itsa it on a via, if somebody'd give him a map or a book or a novel that's about the coast, or something like that. That's itsa on a via – substitute. Itsa by substitutes. So it's a kind of an itsa. Well, itsa by facsimiles is an itsa by substitutes, too. So this is not ineffective. But his itsa line – direct itsa line – is sure cut.

Now, there are other ways his itsa line can be cut by reason of being in jail. I won't go into those particularly.

We have a fellow sitting at a table. We put a blindfold on him. How is his itsa line cut? Do you see how his itsa line is cut? He can't itsa! That's what an itsa line is.

What's a nightmare? What's a nightmare? A nightmare is the inability to itsa, followed by mocking up something that can be itsa'd that's wrong.

A thetan likes to be oriented. He orients himself. How does he orient himself? Itsa. "Itsa ceiling, itsa floor, itsa wall itsa ... Therefore, I'm a..."

You hide somebody. You hide somebody – The itsa line is cut on himself. Nobody else can say itsa. Nobody can say itsa. Do you see that?

Disassociate somebody from his identity. How's his itsa line cut? He can't say "Itsa me. Itsa me, Joe Jones," see? Can't be done. He hasn't got an identity now.

Well, we get into a whole tangled web of aberration and we find out that that's the basic aberration: inability to orient or declare or identify or recognize. Not just solve, you un-

derstand. It isn't cure versus cure versus cure. That's also itsas, but that's only part of the picture. How do you know you're here? Well, that's easy. That's easy. You say, "Itsa chapel, itsa chair, itsa notebook." Where you are, "Itsa body." Up here, "Itsa Ron," see? You know where you are. Your itsa line is in. You're oriented, so you feel happy about the whole thing, see? Fine. You know where you are.

It isn't necessarily how dangerous the environment is. You could be out in the jungle, and you'd be surprised how happy some hunter looked when he says "Itsa lion!" Hasn't really anything to do with safety, security, and – none of these. These are just extra considerations, see? So you just shred all these extra considerations off and itsa. See? "Itsa jungle, itsa me, itsa gun, itsa lion, itsa bearer up a tree. Well, at least I know I was killed by a lion. My itsa line is in on the subject of that death."

Well, look, if this is so important to power, and it is; and if this is so important to sanity, and it is; and if this is so important to memory, and it is; and if this is so important to ability, and it is – then we would expect the major tricks on the track to comprise of cutting itsa lines one way or the other.

So, you're standing up there loud and clear on the parapet, gripping dramatically the flag of the lilies of France, being shot at in shot and shell, and all of a sudden there's a snick, and you is disconnected. Well, you at least know how you died. You got some idea that it was a flying object, unfriendly directed. And by God, in the next half an hour or something like that, they're telling you you died some other way. Correct? Spoils your itsa line.

And then in the ensuing actions that take place on it, why, they give you a completely false position as far as you're concerned and a false situation and a false here and a false there and they throw your itsa out on time and they give you a little GPM to carry home with you very happily, give you some nice somatics to go along with it. You're an idiot to ever go back, you know?

I mean, you move right around the corner of the thing, and itsa where? If it's 70.6 trillion-seven years ago, which is right now, that itsa is certainly for the birds, isn't it? You understand, they've misdated a somatic on you, because they say, "Now we're going to give you your future," and somehow or another restimulate your facsimiles of the past and say they're in the future and...

What's happening here? Well, enough happened so that everybody on this planet believed they lived only once. And that's how serious the cutting of an itsa line can be. You combine this with plenty of force and you got it made, man!

I can see it now, the development of a new psychiatry. A new medical psychiatry can be developed out of this. You can get people so mixed up that they'd report back to the medical doctor every time. They do. Insane patients are always reporting back for their shocks, and so forth, see? Well-known fact. The report-back mechanism is just used and used and used and used and used by these nuts.

By the way, I thought of a difference between a Scientologist and the world at large on this particular planet. The people think that what we're doing is unreal, but we know the sub-

stance of their unreality, which of course makes us top dog every time. We know the substance of their unreality.

In other words, we know where their itsa line is out. See, they know what – they're not identifying. See? Their itsas are just for the birds, you know? "Man is an animal. He is a biochemical protoplasm which goes no place. At death there is a cessation of cellular commotion." That's a good itsa, isn't it? That just immediately makes nothing out of everybody.

Ah, so there's a formula. There's a formula involved here. And that is, your itsa line can be out on A, R, C and K, U, C, D, E, I, O and F. How many ways can an itsa line be? Well, it's that whole scale I gave you for R2H. Known, unknown, curious, desired, enforced, inhibited, none of it and false – absent and false. This is how many itsa aberrations there can be, see?

Well, false, that's the easiest one of all. You hold up somebody – you say, "Here, have a piece of candy, sonny." Give him a piece of chalk, see? He bites it. His itsa line is out, man. Got the idea?

You say, "There is nothing here, boys. There is nothing haunting this planet; there is nobody after you; there is... nothing happens. I mean, you're just here and just natural and there's nobody after you, see?" That itsa line is for the birds, see? "You're paranoid! You think people are pursuing you!" Of course, nobody is pursuing us – they don't have to. They got us, man! [laughs]

So they say something isn't, which is. Well, of course you can get the reverse of that. They say something is which isn't, such as the Darwinian theory, which is just an old implant.

Inhibited. Inhibited: Give a guy a pair of distorting glasses or make him look at things in a twisted mirror, like a fun-house mirror. His itsa line is inhibited. Tell him he must not examine such-and-so and so-and-so because it is very dangerous, and of course his itsa line is inhibited at once.

And of course, enforced itsa: "You better damn well know about this or you will be shot tomorrow morning without cigarette or blindfold." Enforced itsa.

Desired itsa – see, that's a "want to know" sort of itsa: Somebody is very happy to know that you're all right. You see? That's a desirable itsa.

And the itsa of curiosity is not just being curious about what is; it's an itsa which is curiosity. It's a curiosity itsa, don't you see?

Now, you go up higher than that and you get an unknown itsa. Hey, you know, there is an unknown itsa. I just gave you an example of one. You have a complete reality on the unreality of people on this planet. See, the itsa is their unknownness, see? You recognize they don't know! Well, that is an itsa. And it's pretty high-scale stuff for a thetan to be able to recognize that it is an unknown. This thing really boxes him around, because, of course, it mixes in with the actual desire to make something known which can be known. And amongst that, you get the accumulations of unknownnesses that are just unknown and will always be unknown, will never be anything else, because they're tailored to be unknown. And if you don't think that can't be, look at the word unknown. See, there's a perfect example. Yes, there is

such a thing as an unknown. There's a word, there's the concept that you back it up, u-n-k-n-o-w-n, unknown, and that is a something which is unknown, isn't it? I mean, this is getting idiotic.

There's many a religion, man, which is built 100 percent on a beautiful building which houses a non-existence. And they have created an unknown. That's what they have created! See, it is something that can be created. And a thetan's tolerance, as it rises, eventually gets up to a point where he can actually confront an unknown without doing a thing about it. He can recognize that it is unknown; it's a manufactured unknown.

Like x , in algebra. There's another example. Somebody writes x . All right, he can confront the fact that x is unknown. Of course, if he's nowhere near an algebra teacher he probably won't even be forced to find out a known for that unknown, either. He probably won't even do the equation $x + y - z = 0$. Of course, you don't even know what the equation applies to and neither does anybody else. A mathematician is somebody who's gone overboard on the subject of unknownnesses and he has to solve all of these unknownnesses.

Now, if you don't think that isn't prevalent – if you don't think that isn't prevalent – there is one of the things that holds up auditors in auditing, is they get so upset about the pc being in an unknown while he's trying to itsa that they eventually grab hold of the meter and they say, "Oh, well, let's see. Is it twenty years ago? thirty years ago? It's thirty years ago. Yeah, well, we know about that now." [breathes sighs of relief] They say they're just helping the pc. It's just they can't confront that "Well, and so, and so, za-za-za, za-za, za-za-za, I don't know. I just don't know. It couldn't have been so." And they think, "Oh, my God, if this goes on a minute longer," you know? And they get the itsa line in for themselves. [laughter]

And then, of course, an itsa line can be too known. Every once in a while some murder-mystery characters... The thing is out because it is known. Every once in a while, some murder-mystery writer has the postman do it, because nobody ever sees a postman. See? It's too known. I bet there's crime after crime on the books down here that remains unsolvable because it was committed in too known a fashion. See? It's a known itsa. Itsa of knownnesses.

Every once in a while you're doing an ARC break on some pc on R2H and can't quite find out what it is, and you eventually will hit "known communication," you know? Known. Well, of course he knows it. He thought it was something else. Why? Because he knew it. So you get how slippery that can be, see? That's this "everybody knows" that is talked about in *Dianetics: Evolution of a Science*, you see? Everybody knows these things – that's known itsas – so you never examine them. That's another way of having a known itsa.

But the pc's attention with his itsas rise up and down this whole new version of the CDEI Scale, see? – goes up and down, each one in those various stages. And he picks out this and he picks out that and he picks out something else, and all he's doing is saying "It is a..." He is identifying, in other words. He's identifying something. And when he cannot identify something, then he identifies by classification – identification by classification. "This is a type of..."

Psychiatry does this all the time. They say, "This is dementia praecox case..." They've gotten so idiotic with it now that if somebody goes to that Chestnut Lodge, where Graham – that publisher of *Newsweek* and the *Post* that was so against Scientology – where he went, and

went home on vacation and killed himself. He went home for a day; he was supposed to come back. Up there at Chestnut Lodge... I've told you about it before. That's actually the name of the joint; it's up around...

And it's very remarkable. But it's very remarkable up there. But if a person is transferred to Chestnut Lodge, regardless of their symptoms before, they now have schizophrenia. And I have asked this several times, trying to get the answer. And I finally did get the answer and understood it was the answer, and after that it didn't plague me. But it's a very interesting example of an interesting variation of itsa, see? And that is, they are a schizophrenic because they were transferred to Chestnut Lodge, because that's all there are at Chestnut Lodge!

Well now, that's by classification plus idiocy, see?

When you say "It is a cupboard," you have a pleasant sensation of familiarity and knowingness. You seldom stop to think that you have classified something. You know something because you know of a similar something, and so you get your gradients. Your gradients of classification establish familiarity in that particular direction.

Every once in a while this familiarity gets betrayed or something like that and you get an ARC break with it. You say, "It is a cupboard," and you open it up and find out that it's a mouse home, or something, see? Somebody's using it to breed white mice for something, or something. Or "It is an automobile," and you get into it and find out it's a stage prop. A little minor ARC break there of false itsa, don't you see?

That's quite common in GPMs. Pc goes halfway through the GPM and all of a sudden does the right itsa. "*Ha-ha, ha!* These are just railroad carriages with a painted backdrop of a train going off in the distance. They're not trains." See? Identified the character of the itsa.

This is all, then, on the subject of identification; it's all on the subject of familiarity; it's all on the subject of finding out; it's all on the subject of – of making oneself comfortable with what he is looking at; it's all on the subject of straightening out one's various grades of ARC with the universe. Now, what gives a thetan such a passion for this, this is something else and not the subject of this lecture, nor, actually, the subject of cases at the present moment. But it opens up a very interesting channel of research. What's this passion to itsa? See, that's an interesting question.

But, that you do get tone arm action when you itsa and the case does improve, this is well established. And this is germane to all cases. So getting the itsa line in has nothing to do with getting the pc's communication in. I say "nothing to do," that's another action. That's more apt to be the attention line – to you, or something of this sort. Don't you see? That's getting his communication in. That's not the itsa line. No, getting the itsa line in is getting the pc to identify, separate, compartment, differentiate, inspect, decide about, things in his bank – or, in an objective process, in the room.

You want to see a tone arm fall, you could probably produce it normally by saying "What's that? What's that? What's that? What's that?" and have the pc itsa.

You say, "What's that?" pointing at the fireplace.

Pc says, "It's a fireplace."

Actually, you run it for a very little while ... This is not a broad, general thing, because there are other factors involved here. Pc is so introverted that it's painful for him to extrovert his attention, and he can only extrovert his attention on a broad via. And other special conditions arise here that doesn't make this a pat process, you understand? It's a pat process, though, as far as his bank is concerned, always – not necessarily objectively. But I'm giving you the objective version here, which is a limited version of it.

And you say, "What's that? What's that? What's that? What's that?" See? Every time the pc says "Itsa." Normally, if a pc is not having too bad a time and he isn't fouled up and you haven't got him stuck on the track someplace and interested in something else, you'll see your tone arm fall.

You can also see a pc getting very interested. All of a sudden, he – "What is it? Yeah, it's a fireplace, but – but..." And he'll want to go over and take a closer look at the thing to make sure it's a fireplace built out of a certain kind of brick, see? His itsa's getting sharper. You will see his identification rise.

Now, this is so good that a Touch Assist works. Familiarization processes permit people to get driver's licenses who couldn't, by just touching cars – you know, "Itsa, itsa, itsa car" is all he's running, you know? He thought it was a buffalo for a while or something. Well, listen, if he couldn't drive the thing, he must have thought something weird – that I assure you.

So itsa, itsa, itsa, itsa – that's familiarization.

You want to teach some girl to type. Well, just have her familiarize herself with the tools of the trade. Very funny. She can get up to an itsa, itsa, itsa to a point, and her ability will rise, rise, rise along with it, which is very peculiar. But then this has something to do with charge. The change of case has to do with the release of charge because of the itsa. There's two things happen: The individual who is really itsaing things is also blowing off encysted charge caused by former confusions about them. And that charge is encysted, and that is a force aspect and a mass aspect with regard to this.

Here's the phenomenon, see? Here's this encysted little thing here, see? And you said, "What's in there?" see?

And he says, "Oh, *sfoo-uh-zoo, and zoo-oo, zoo-oo, zoo-oo.*" Tone arm is moving, see? Picking up those fingers one by one off the clasped hands, you see? And "Well, that's off. Well, that's off also. I don't know. Let's see, see what – what it is, what it is... Oh! Palms!" [laughs]

You didn't think anything was in there, did you? [laughter, laughs]

That's just charge. And you see that tone arm start moving; well, that's charge coming off of one of these bundles, and the guy is looking and it's just a method of as-ising.

Now, while he's doing this, what drives some auditors around the bend is he puts in a lot of additional itsas. Why, that's of no great harm, see?

He says, "Itsa house. No, itsa car. No, itsa..." See? "Itsa fingernail – no, oh, no. No, no. Oh, I know what this is! I – I know what this is. I know what this is. A watermelon!" And

then (as an auditor said to me last night) we get all set and we've both got a watermelon and then all of a sudden he says, "No, it isn't a watermelon, it's a diamond ring."

And the auditor starts feeling kind of confused, because, you see, his itsa line is being thrown around by the pc. But only, only if the auditor doesn't completely understand what he is doing. He's trying to find something and then be content with it. Well, that isn't auditing, man. An auditor's superior knowledge should be that if the guy says it's a watermelon, he for sure is going to call it a diamond ring shortly. And if it really is a diamond ring, he'll never mention it thereafter, because it's itsa'd.

But until it is itsa'd, he's going to call it all sorts of things. It's going to be at a billion years, and it's going to be 5 years into the future, and it's going to be back trillions-five years, and it's going to be 465 years ago, and it's going to be yesterday, and it's going to be now, and it's going to be fifteen minutes ago, and it's going to be trillions-ten ago, and it's going to be 18 trillion years ago, and then all of a sudden it settles down to 125 billion trillion years ago. Period. Bang – that's it.

You don't hear about it anymore than that, because he got it, see? It's itsa'd.

So, a lot of apparent itsas come off in the process of obtaining an itsa. And you almost could say that all the running of a case, from the first moment of its processing on through to the final cognition of the case, consists of conditional itsas. Conditional itsas. That's the way it is for that circumstance and that certain place, you see? An auditor should never have any thought that he's got to get nothing but permanent itsas. Naturally, you go through a GPM, you tear off the items according to a plot. Well, that's the itsa of it!

Reason I don't have any trouble running a GPM is I have no doubt about the itsa of a GPM, see? That's it. It just is what it is. There was nothing there to understand. It was put there to louse you up and immobilize you and cut down your power and ability, you see, and it's a bunch of electronic circuits which go into a couple of boxes, and they have a couple of things that fire on both sides of the thing, and they start you in the top, turn you upside down at the bottom, and that's all there is to it. And you go through and you *say*, "*Pow, pow, pow, pow, pow, pow, pow, pow, pow,*" and that's the end of the GPM. No false itsa, see? Actually, in most cases, not even much of a protest. You know, not saying "It should be some other way." Once in a while a spotted intention with a false idea of the intention will hang it up for a moment. But that's an itsa, see?

You don't have the immediate and direct itsa of "How come I got into a situation where I started getting these things in the first place?" you see? Well, that's one of these big itsas, see? This finally starts dawning on the pc. "What the hell was I doing delivering myself up to a comedy like this," you see, "every few trillion years?" You know? "What's the matter with me? What'd I do? What happened to me? Well, what's wrong with me 'ead? How come?"

And you'll find most pcs will start chewing on this after a while, and they chew on it and – they sometimes chew on it for two, three, four, five, six, seven, eight hundred hours, see? How come? There's no reason to blow your brains out about it or stretch your medulla oblongata all out of shape. It all of a sudden will rise up in your midst and there it will be: the itsa of "It is..." See? "Oh, that's why!" you see?

Now, the adroitness with which an auditor can use the little attention line to put the pc's attention into areas that can be explored, that are easy enough for the pc to see into, that will produce tone arm action – is a very skilled auditor. And that is what is known as getting in the itsa line. Getting in the itsa line does not consist of sitting back and letting the pc talk for hours about nothing. You understand, we do not frown on that if you can't do anything else. You understand? But there is a much more adroit level by which you put his attention on things that can be identified by him, and which he will therefore unsnarl the thing called a problem or the bank or that aberrated area.

And it's the degree that you can obtain tone arm action – that you can do that – that marks the skill of the auditor. That is the most skilled center and zone of auditing. It's almost so skilled that I hesitate to mention it again, because I've had loses along this line.

Now, if you can do that, there is its anatomy. If you can do that, you would be known as this fantastic thing called "the touch," "intuition" – all these other things would mount up back of this. It's quite awesome. So getting in the itsa line isn't just sitting there. It's actually doing something else.

Now, *letting the itsa line exist* is descriptive of the lowest level of auditing on this, you see – just letting the itsa line exist. We'll get somewhere, see? We'll get somewhere if we just do that. But don't go speaking carelessly of getting the itsa line in unless you're doing just that. You're taking the pc-to-auditor communication line, and you are putting it right into zones and areas where it will find itsas. You're putting the pc's attention in there to where that line will be "itsa a..." and a "itsa a..." and "*Rur-rurrrumdaummmmm*. Well, itsa a..." you see, and "*rrrrrr-ra-ra-ra-rm*, and so on, and so on, and so on. Well, I guess – I guess it was my complacence in college. That's what got – Yes, that's right. That's what really got me in trouble. I was complacent about everything. I was – that's it!" Bang! You will all of a sudden see your tone arm go right on down, see? You see the charge come off of the case in the bucket-loads.

This is actually so skilled that it's the production of cognitions. You can produce cognitions if you want to. You can be that skilled. This is something that takes some familiarization with yourself. You should know what the tools are: The tools is the line 1 minor, and that is used to produce a searching attention on the part of the pc; your whatsit line is left there more or less alone, to produce this kind of phenomena. Why? Because the universe is full of whatsit lines. The pc is suffering from too much whatsit and too little itsa. And the net result of this is of course to jam his itsa line. And you, the auditor, by letting it flow, pull him out of the soup.

Of course, the direction of significances as powerful as a GPM, as powerful as a super-duper engram, as powerful as this sort of thing on the way backtrack, God 'elp us, and so forth – man, that's putting in the itsa line on a significance with magnitude. And that thing actually requires considerable skill. You've got to have line plots and the idea of cross listing, and the doingness of the auditor is considerable. The skill is considerable, his drills are considerable, and so forth. Nevertheless, even those fail if you don't let the itsa line exist. You got to leave that itsa line alone and let it rove.

Now, it also consists of not cutting it, and there are numerous ways the itsa line can be cut in auditing. It's a good drill to get somebody to come around and show you that August 4 plot. Have him find the number of ways you can cut that pc's itsa line. Then make him pass the drill: How many ways could you aberrate somebody by cutting the itsa line? And then he has to find out what the itsa line is. That's an awfully good drill, and that drives it home with a thud.

All right?

Audience: Mm-hm.

I hope you get a good grip on this one, because it's a slippy one. And of course it's – trouble with it is, it's so known, see? It's an "everybody knows," you know? Itsa line – obviously it's the pc's communication line. Even though we went on saying "itsa" and calling it an itsa line – well, why is it called an itsa line, and so forth? And you'll see this one drift on through Scientology and always, forever, in some part of Scientology, this one will be too known. That I know, for sure.

But the very skilled auditor and the very well reputed auditor and the auditor who gets terrific results will be the auditor who has this one down cold. He knows an itsa line backwards and forwards. Pc sits down with a present time problem – it isn't necessarily a speed factor involved – but the pc talks to him for a while and mysteriously this present time problem blows up and the pc is sitting right exactly in the middle of exactly what the auditor wanted him to be in, and the pc is running on exactly what they ought to be running, *zippety-bop*. And the pc is happy and the auditor is happy and everything is going as smooth as glass.

Naturally, there will be some jolts on the line. Every once in a while you'll wish you had never opened your big mouth. And I hope you don't get into as many of those as I have in the last thirteen years. [laughter]

Thank you very much.

THE ITSA LINE (CONTINUED)

A lecture given on 21 August 1963

What's the date?

Audience: August 21st.

Twenty-first. Twenty-first August AD 13.

All right. We could cover an awful lot of stuff here. Be very easy to do.

The main things in which you are involved at the present moment probably look far more complicated to you than they are.

I'm going to talk to you some more about the tone arm and the itsa line, and forms of sessions. Things look to you a lot more involved than they actually are.

Sitting somewhere back of every thetan's bank is some tremendous insecurity in which he believes implicitly that the universe is dangerous, or that he himself is in danger or that he cannot live or survive as a powerful being. And whatever that state is, and however that state is created originally is not particularly germane to this lecture.

But the discovery of the itsa line may look to you to be a highly simple little thing, perhaps even a duplication of psychoanalysis. After all, they talked. And if you didn't know anything about the itsa line, you could draw all sorts of wild conclusions, you see? Make the mistake of saying, "Well, it's a communication line, and therefore any communication line is an itsa line, and therefore if you let anybody talk about anything, why, he will get better."

We already know if you let a fellow talk on an entheta line very long, he'll run his havingness out the bottom. So the complexities of the itsa line are really quite something. It sits on a tremendous amount of technology, but in itself is very simple to understand. There's nothing much to understanding it. If you understand it you'd see – you'd see actions like this very readily and immediately, and these actions would be something like this:

Pc said, "I-I don't know whether it was – let's see, now, it was – twenty, twenty, twenty – I guess about twenty years ago. And the fellow said uh – I don't know what he said, but I know what I think about it. I-I-I know that I-I know I think it was a big swindle of some kind or another. And – come to think about it, I don't know whether I said that or *he* said that."

Auditor: "It reads that he said it."

Oh, wait a minute. What happens at this point? What occurred there, exactly? Well, you know at once what occurred, if you know the itsa line. The auditor put in the itsa with the meter, leaving the pc in a zone and area of insecurity.

Now, we say, all right, the line plot. The line plot: that tells the pc what items are in the GPM. See, just like that, see? So obviously we say, well, this to some degree puts in the itsa line for the pc. Well, no, no. That could be said to, but we get across the proposition of the lesser of two evils. If you've ever seen a pc wrapped around a telephone pole with undisclosed charge from running a GPM he knew not what of, or did not know any of the elements of, you will use line plots.

If the thing is a known line plot, we will use it. Why? Because that was a predesigned plot in the first place. It was an other-determined design – you understand that somebody else determined the design. What's important about it is the charge that is on it, and what's important in the auditing is to get off the charge and get the pc to identify, to his own reality, that itsa.

See, if the line plot you handed him on a sheet of paper didn't agree with the thing he was running, you will very shortly hear about it. He can get wrapped around a telegraph pole with great speed. But that's a shadow of putting in an itsa line, isn't it? That's a shadow of putting in the itsa line with the pc – but a necessary action.

Now, I'll give you its similar borderline: Pc says, "Oh, it's twenty years ago, it was fifteen – no, it's eighteen – eighteen, four – twenty, twenty-two... It's twenty-two year... I think it was twenty-two year... No, no. It – it must have been twenty-five – thirty. No, twenty-one – I-I don't know. I don't know. I just don't know when it was." He quit, see? He quit cold.

What you going to do? Sit there with a pc who has quit cold? Or are you going to say, "All right, I'll give you a hand. Was it more than twenty years ago, less than twenty years ago? Was it twenty years ago? All right, it's more than twenty years ago. Is it more than twenty-five years ago? Less than twenty-five years ago? Less than twenty-five years ago. You got some idea of it now?"

"Yeah! It was twenty-three years ago."

Or, "Was it more than twenty-five? Less than twenty-five? It was less than twenty-five. Twenty-three? Twenty-three? I'm getting a read here on twenty-three."

"Yeah. It was twenty-three."

Get that? So you didn't totally put in the itsa line. See, you could start putting the itsa line in and the pc catches the ball, put it almost totally in and the pc catches it, see, and get right onto the hour and the minute, and the pc never caught it, but at least you don't have something wrong dated. And those are the gradients of putting in the itsa line. And the last one – it's a little bit of a lose to have to put it all the way in for the pc, see?

All right, now, look at the length of time you and other fellows around have been stumbling around on this planet. There's a number of thousands of years. And the number of thousands of years you've been in the Marcab Confederacy are quite numerous. They probably run up to two or three hundred thousand years that you've been inside this system. And let me call to your attention, never during that time could you put your foot on the first step of the road which led back to a better life and some happiness and freedom, see? You couldn't get a foot on that road at all.

All right. Right now you have technology. You have a map. The map has got all kinds of blank spots in it, but nevertheless, there's the type of map it is, don't you see? And those are persuasions toward an itsa line. And the only time you totally lose – the only time you totally lose – is when you have to put the whole itsa line in. Give somebody the pattern for a goal: All right, he has to list for the actual goal in that sequence and find it. And he has to list for and get the top oppterm, to make it, in order to fit the pattern, and then he's got to fit the pattern together. And this is an awful lot of itsa. See?

Well, all right, so you've got the preprinted pattern. Give him this, and he just reads it off. You understand? This is less desirable, but it's still feasible.

All right, now let's put it totally in. Let's put it totally in. Let's just hit him with a lightning bolt so that he can't contact any of the facsimiles in it, and we have medical psychiatry. See, the evil involved in this is putting in an itsa line in such a way as to have no self-determinism, no power of choice left in the pc at all. Total wipe-out of power of choice, don't you see?

Now, you can fall short of that in various degrees. Little kid is going around, see? He's real unhappy about the whole thing, he's real unhappy about life and he's walking around in circles and so forth. And you say to him, "That is your bed." Well, you haven't really done very much for him, but you have improved his state of mind or his peace, see? Just to that degree. You understand? You say, "That is your bed."

Nevertheless, you have put in the itsa line. He himself has not found out that it is his bed, you see? But look, he's still very happy to have the bed.

Now, when we get down into pure, unadulterated evil, we get a denial of the itsa line and we go into aberration, creation of. See, this whole thing inverts, and we get K, U, C, D, E, I, O, F – that whole scale of means of perverting the itsa line.

Now, those means, well, include an inability to ever find anything, an inability to reach anything, and so forth. Well now, medical psychiatry (to amend what I was saying a moment ago) is of the inclination that it is better, you see, for nobody to have anything to do with anything, see? See that? Now, look at that as an inversion. That's an inversion of the fact.

Now, the aberration of this line – perversion of this itsa line – has to be very direct in order to be very aberrative. You have to pervert the line, you see – just outrightly put in something false, or put nothing there, you see, or... so on, or inhibit very directly, and you have to work at it. It has to be worked at and so on. Given the slightest chance, why, the pc will start putting in his itsa line. But what does he put his itsa line in on?

All right, let's take Freudian analysis: he puts in his itsa line on childhood sexual incidents. They're not aberrative! Anybody get anyplace? Old Papa Freud did contribute something. He said there was a possibility. Great, let's applaud him for that.

But he was putting the itsa line in in directions that didn't wind up with anything, and then after he got through he put the line in, totally; the practitioner put the line in. See, he said, "The reason why you are aberrated now is we have finally found out that you had a fetish going. You had a fetishism. And actually, your little brother's right shoe has aberrated

your whole existence, and that is why – that is why you are always talking about the feet on chairs, you see? And now we've got this all explained, and you are better."

Now, that's all very fine, but he didn't look at the hypnotic character of the statement "You are better." That's putting in the itsa line.

All right. We got some guy walking around in circles out here. (Let's take a look at these various gradients of putting in the itsa line for somebody; you'll gradually see what I'm talking about and what I'm driving at here.) Got some guy walking around in circles and, man, he doesn't know which way to turn. He's got lumbosis and he's been aberrated by hearing of a psychiatrist when he was young and he's got all kinds of things, you see. He's having a hard time – having a hard time. And you say something can be done about it.

Well, you've put in some variety of itsa line, haven't you? And that's what you call a hope factor. And this guy very often responds to this, and he feels much happier about this, don't you see? You see that – that the hope factor, then, is to that slight degree putting in the itsa line, see? It's not really much of an itsa line. You're not saying... but you're saying, "It is not – it is not hopeless!" See? You're sort of putting in a negative line for him a little bit there, and you carry him along.

You see, as we look at this problem, we'll see that there are various degrees of putting in the itsa line for somebody. See, there are various degrees of this, and these things vary from the very, very evil – which is to say, hand a guy a pomegranate and say, "That's a bomb." See, that's putting in a false itsa line. They vary from that up to a – well, making it impossible for him to put it in. (That's a lower grade, making it impossible for the person to put in an itsa line.) Varies up to the little necessary actions necessary to begin the flow of the itsa line.

See, and these little necessary actions are such as "Start of session." And the basic intent is what makes the difference. That's the first fundamental difference, although this, too, can go too far.

But the basic intent is what makes the most fundamental difference. Do you intend to improve this person's itsaing ability, or do you intend to knock it into a cocked 'at? Which? So it begins right there with the intention. And that gives you the difference between the cowboys in the white hats and the cowboys in the black hats, see? And it's right there, man, bang!

Intention: decrease this person's ability to itsa – cowboys in the black hats. Intention: by some or any means, to improve this person's ability to itsa – cowboys in the white hats. That's good and evil, defined in terms of the itsa line. That's the difference between freedom and slavery, that's the difference between making freemen and making slaves. You make slaves by the intention to decrease the ability to put in the itsa line. That's how you make a slave. And that gives you the whole textbook of how to make slaves, right there, complete with gold letters and a chain-pattern cover.

And the other way is to improve the person's ability to itsa. In other words, to identify, to spot, to find out. And there we have that point from which we can separate the Scientologist from the medico, we can separate the decent civilizations from the lousy ones; we can go right on through there.

This quarter of the universe, by the way, is suffering from an overdose of lousy civilization. See? That's what it's suffering from. It apparently has been recently conquered in recent times (in the last few hundred thousand years), but those who were conquered had already been – their governmental actions – had already been set up for their own failure, see? They'd been set up to be conquered by using, themselves, mental technology which made slaves. They implanted their own troops. *Oh-ho-ho-ho-ho-ho-ho-ho, ah-ah-ah-ah-ah-ah-ah.*

"We're going to plant somebody up to be a loyal soldier, to fight bravely, to never give up his body so long as it is alive, to be true to the empire."

We're going to plant somebody, are we? Remember, every one of those items we put in, to stick, has to have a negative item! And that doesn't just cut it down 50 percent, that puts it in the betrayal line. It cuts it down enormously, because some empire that would do this to somebody gets their support like giving them the itch, see? "Yeah, we'll help the general out," you know? Help him into the car so that he goes through the other side and falls out the opposite door, you know? It's an accident, you know. When the planes take off, half their motors don't run, you know? Just – they're just running up against total sabotage, because they've already got a slave empire.

And you may be able to force a group by slavery and so forth into a semblance of a civilization, but it's only ever a semblance; there's never anything to which anybody freely, wholeheartedly contributes. It has no strength, it has no power. Because remember, 50 percent of the implant is "*Don't be a good soldier.*"

And then the fact that the implant occurred at all, of course, is enough to knock one's loyalty in a cocked hat.

Let's take an earlier and probably still extant organization, the Galactic Confederacy: eighty trillion years, smooth as glass. No implanting. Interesting? I don't know the exact length of the Espinol Confederacy, but it's probably something on the order of a few hundred thousand years. Implants – no empire.

The figures read themselves. Rome died at the hands of her slaves. That's for sure. She was never conquered by the barbarians. I know it looked very nice in the history books, but the truth of the matter is, who wanted to fight for Rome? You get through with a war, you come home, you find out the slave civilization has already taken over the farms. There's no need for your production; there's no need for a freeman; there was no pay to be a freeman. That was the reward and the pat on the back for having fought through the wars, you see?

And it started going into a civil-war situation. And half of the Roman Empire was always fighting half of the Roman Empire. I don't remember the exact name of the battle; it doesn't occur to me. I read it in Gibbon (and it's probably wrong in Gibbon) and got cluttered up on it – it's either Messana or something like that.

But the reason the first barbarians got to Rome was because – she didn't have very large numbers in her armies, but forty thousand of her first-line troops lay dead at Messala in a civil war caused by unrest caused by slavery. And they had no first-line troops. That was

practically the entire call-up of the empire. And historians today trace back to that battle as the reason the barbarian was able to conquer the thing.

Well, you trace back the battle, and you find the battle came because of civil war. And we find out why the civil war came and it came by slavery.

The American Civil War, that destroyed one of the better agricultural areas of America, and so forth, was again a battle about slavery, one way or the other. Every time you have slavery, you have trouble. See? You don't even have to be sentimental about it. You don't have to be sentimental. You can be terribly statistical. You don't have to say it's good or it's bad or anything else. You don't have to beat the drum for it, or be a person who wants to reform things or something like that. Just look at the statistics. Slavery never pays off. That's it. That's that. It's dangerous. If anything is dangerous, it's slavery.

You don't suppose America would be having very much trouble right now with its race riots and 250 thousand negroes about to converge on Washington, and so forth, if they hadn't kicked off this slavery. And it's very funny, but the most involved people in American slavery were the Bostonians. Used to have what they called the "triangle trade." They'd send ships loaded with rum down to Africa, use the rum to buy blacks (as they referred to them), use the whip and Christianity on them to bring them back over, and they traded in the blacks down around the West Indies, and so forth, for sugar cane, and they brought the sugar cane up to Boston and they made rum, and they shipped the rum to Africa, and they just had that worked out. And practically the first families of Boston are founded directly on slavery.

Kennedy missed that. He wasn't there at that – family wasn't in America at that particular time. His family got out from underneath another type of slavery: the landowner, the absentee landlord, the high rates – this type of economic slavery, and so forth. And these things go back to roots. In other words, we have catastrophes in all directions. We have the catastrophe of Boston, the catastrophe of Kennedy.

We've got a situation here whereby you trace world trouble, and you trace it straight back to slavery. I'm not trying to beat the drum for anything. Why do you think Russia can't get its feet under itself, and why is everybody having such a hard time with the Russians, and why are the Russians so silly as to evolve a slave economy such as communism, and so forth? What's all this fuss?

Well, this fuss goes back to the idea in early Russian history that a man belonged to the land, and when you sold the land you sold the man with it. Well, the European civilization got out from underneath that, two or three centuries before, and Russia has not yet got out from underneath that. She is still carrying the burden of her past chains. And therefore she can't think straight. She's like trying to get a pc to think in the middle of a session, you know? Can't do it. That's a little more touching picture than they actually are painting.

Actually, what I think is, is the White Russian prince and that sort of fellow, you see, he went back to the between-lives area and he came back and he picked up a body and became a commissar. I don't think they've really changed their faces very much.

But the trouble with world affairs today is slavery. The greatest empire Earth ever had went down in the dust with slavery. The British Empire right now is having a rough time and

is staggering around because of its efforts to colonise, and to do this and to do that and do something about this, and to free man and not to free man, and somehow or another to hold him in economic duress, don't you see, and not let him free but then to let him free, and... you know?

You got all this trouble down here in Africa running around in one way or the other. Well, that's the sort of trouble you get when you suddenly start taking the lid off something that has had the lid nailed down on for a very long time, you see? And without anybody around who really knows much about it, why, we get those boys going back into slavery, too. First action of a new African ruler is ordinarily to throw the whole opposition in jail because they are insufficiently enslaved by his regime, you see? This viewpoint. This viewpoint.

Now, I'm not discoursing on this just because I have a bee in my bonnet about it, because I frankly couldn't care less, as far as this planet is concerned. It'll never get out of any mess unless we get it out of that mess, and I'm just using the situation just to show you the liabilities of slavery. You always get a lash back – always. Because a thetan never gives up! That's it. He really never gives up. He's lying there. He might look awful quiet, he might look terribly dead, he might look like he doesn't interfere with anything, you see? But, in actual fact, he really never gives up!

He's got some trick: You can put him in jail, immobilize him, wrap him all up in adhesive tape and electric cord, and so forth, and he gets even with you: he sits there and thinks how he's right. He even goes down to that point, see? He can hold that postulate clear on down through the lowest levels of unconsciousness – that he was right. Well, I think that's very interesting. Because if he ever gets out of it, he'll go on being right, see? If he ever gets out of it, he'll go on being right about what he was being right about before he got put in that state.

In other words, the effort to dominate, the effort to dominate and deny power of choice is the road that this universe walked toward the hell it became. Fear – the unlovely specter of fear stands ahead of all of those.

Let's trace this out very carefully: To survive. All right, very good. This guy wants to survive. Whatever put him in the state of mind that he had to survive? Because this is your biggest piece of nonsense. A thetan can't possibly do anything but survive. In fact, it's probably the trouble with him. And that's certainly the trouble governments and things have with him. That's the trouble the Marcabians are having with him right now. How to kill a thetan is the biggest problem in this universe. See, it's just not solvable. They thought they had it all solved and we came along. See, they just never really are able to whip this problem. How do you kill a thetan? Well, it's not an elegant problem to whip.

Now, how can a being – who actually can't be struck at, who cannot do anything but survive and cannot die, who can pass through various lapses of memory and that sort of thing – how can this being get into a state of mind whereby he's concerned about survival? Well, it takes quite a lot of trickery to do that. Usually it's on the extension of self into a possession, like making a minion. You mock a mock-up up and then you endow it with some life, you see? And then somebody comes along and starts to kick its head off, so you protect it and you identify yourself with it. Or you construct a civilization and identify itself [yourself] with it,

and you're trying to get the civilization to survive, so that eventually you get worried about your own survival. You see the mistake which has to be made there? That mistake actually has to be made directly before a thetan gets worried about his own survival.

In other words, he has to extend some type of line onto something that he feels can't survive, and then identify himself with it to such an extent that he feels his own survival can be affected. And this is your first step into aberration.

All right. Your next step forward from this is an elementary step: Because one is now worried about survival, one resolves the problem of survival by domination. This is not any kind of a solution at all. It's a lousy solution, but it gets used and is probably... that which is not admired tends to persist. That very definitely applies in this particular line, because domination is probably the least admired thing in this universe, and yet, oddly enough, is continuously successful. But it's really not successful.

So, domination – domination comes in here. And we have thetan A and thetan B, and the way that thetan B is kept from destroying thetan A's construction or civilization, don't you see, is by thetan A dominating thetan B, you see? That is the formula by which this is arrived at. So thetan A, to protect something he wants to have survive, therefore seeks to dominate thetan B. And then being in a frame of mind where he feels he himself cannot survive, then he just obsessively goes on and dominates thetans B, C, D, E, F and G, see?

But he overlooks the fact that if he dominates thetans B, D, E, F and G, sooner or later, thetans B, D, E, F and G in their turn are going to dominate. Do you see? Because we've set up a cause-effect line, and the best thing you know about a cause-effect line – we may not know much about overt-motivator sequences; we know all about the cause-effect line from which the overt-motivator sequence comes. And the best thing about those things is that communication contains cause, distance, effect, with intention and duplication. And because of the duplication of the intention, then any communication line will reverse. That's the easiest thing a communication line does is reverse, because of course it has duplication on both ends. It's very easy for cause to become effect and effect to become cause, because there's a duplication in the communication line. All you have to do is make a slight mistake of which is cause and which is effect, and you have the waiters, which at one time through the last century served people in black tuxedos – you know, the guests all wore black tuxedos, and so forth – you have the waiters now wearing black tuxedos, you see?

And you look at any custom as it comes along in this universe, you are actually studying the cause-distance-effect-duplication aspect of a communication line. It's going to reverse. Well, there's lots of ramifications whereby we protest and we do this and we do that. But this fact of any custom you see on this planet at this time – you could absolutely count on its having been the reverse custom at an earlier date.

Now, this makes an awfully broad statement, but if you look into it, you'll see that's the case. You take the clothes today of women, and the clothes today of men, see? Well, you don't have to look back very far to where you see that that one flipped, you see? And you look into – into almost any custom you can follow down and you will find out it slipped. It went the other way to.

So the formula of communication, and communication itself, then, is the most important factor in looking for aberration. It's very elementary why: It's cause, distance, effect with intention, duplication. The duplication factor, then, makes the C very easily look like the E, and the E look like the C. So of course the line can reverse around the other way to. And we get all sorts of superstitions about overt-motivator sequences, and we get all kinds of things. Of course, that's factual, but it's simply based upon the nature of a communication line.

We beat somebody's head in and we beat somebody's head in and we beat somebody's head in and we beat somebody's head in. Of course, at cause you have the intention to beat somebody's head in, and at effect we have somebody's head being beaten in. That's pretty elementary. And then one fine day we wake up with a headache. Where did the headache come from? Well, one slipped. One slipped. One made a misidentification of the C and the E on the line, see? It was quite accidental. You're reading a book by Montaigne, or something, and it said, "And thy servant, he is a man, too," see, something like this, you know? Guy just, you know, just *blah*...

(I don't even know if Montaigne said that. But you have to add these erudite points when you don't have your quotation dictionary handy. Besides, I usually find out I can make up better quotations than they said anyhow. [laughs] I figure out their works were culled. I used to work on the basis that if you wrote enough words, you'd say something clever, and that saying things clever was usually solved in the field of philosophy by writing enough words. See, just by law of averages you would eventually be clever. Anyway ... Fifty thousand monkeys writing for fifty thousand years apparently by accident would write all the books of the world, and I think they did! [laughs, laughter]

Anyway, you see what happens here now? Do you see? There's a switcheroo on these lines, and you get what looks like an overt-motivator sequence. And almost any pc you audit at the level of *Homo sapiens*, and so on, has got this so switched that you can absolutely count on O/W working. But as I've often told you, it's not a high-level concept. See, it's limited. It only goes up so high because it depends upon this error of identification, you see?

But you can always get a case result by saying, "What have you done?" "What have you done?" because you've freed up now some vicious communication line. And it's certain that he made a misidentification from that point up, see, and so therefore we can free some somatics or something like that. We can practically count on the fact that if some guy has got a sore neck, that if we just find out what sore necks he has caused, we will eventually tear apart a couple of facsimiles of some kind or another, which will straighten it out, and he'll cease to have a sore neck. Because he obviously had given somebody else a sore neck, you see, if he has a sore neck. I mean, it's that elementary.

But what is this really based on? It's based on the misidentification of a communication line because of the duplication factor in communication. Can't communicate without some duplication. That duplication, of course, sneaks up. You can't communicate at all without duplication.

Well, all right, if communication is so dangerous, why is any thetan communicating at all? Well, he communicates because he wants to be oriented. And we're back to why he communicates. He wants to be oriented. Of course, I don't – then, of course, he takes his best tool,

getting oriented, and proceeds to aberrate it by using it to dominate, to do people in, and to mess up things that he tries to identify with, see? He messes up his own communication line. In other words, he misuses his communication line.

Now, the communication line is there because he's lost and feels the need of orientation. Hence his desire for communication. There's an insecurity back on along the line which causes him to use this communication line. As I say, we haven't got the full answer as to why that is. I'm just showing you what this comes from. And that gives us, directly, the itsa line. So don't regard the itsa line as a low-level concept, it's actually Scientology Five. It's not Scientology One, but it's used in Scientology One, and I'm sure will be used well for a long period of time, will also be used very blindly in many quarters.

But let's appreciate what we're using. We're using the obsession to identify, which lies back of the communication line. But we're using a principle higher than communication, coupled with communication, in order to orient and rehabilitate a thetan. You've made a full statement of processing at that moment, see, except for this one little fact: Is there anything else earlier that gave this guy an insecurity? The original one, in the absence of communication, is somewhat hard to understand – particularly at our states of case, see? A little bit hard to understand. What the devil was it?

This guy, you see, isn't communicating, he doesn't feel insecure, he is *not* protecting anything, he hasn't got any reaching going on, he had no real reason to reach, and so forth. How did anybody get to him?

You can figure out a lot of answers to the thing, and they all wind up with a communication line mixed up in them. And of course the moment a communication line is mixed up in them you haven't got the answer.

How did he originally feel the need of orientation and familiarization in order to be comfortable? See, how did he do this? How was this done to anybody, and how did he do it to anybody else? And if so, why? So, there is a riddle still sitting there, see? There is a riddle. But we have the walkway back to the answer to that riddle. And what you're walking, on the line of OT, is you're walking to the answer of that riddle. And the funny part of it is, when you put your foot on that which lies on the other side of all of the energy and all of the Confusion and all of the overts and all the misidentification and everything else – which you're handling right now as cases, and auditors, see – right on the other side of that, just as it took one step to get on the road, it only takes one step at the other end of that roadway to suddenly go OT. OT is a gradient process for a long period of time with a sudden fantastic upsurge.

You'll get shadows of that upsurge as you're processing somebody. You haven't made it yet, but he all of a sudden will do something peculiar. He'll do something very OTish – and the next forty-eight hours shake in his boots because, you know, ha-ha. *Blu-uh!* Guy starts to reach for the telephone and it leaps to his ear, you know? Scares hell out of him.

Next session you'll spend processing it having happened. [laughs] But that's processable, too. These are just the lines up.

But the realization at the other end, the solution to that riddle and any of its ramifications, determines more or less the state attained. In other words, processing is the cure of hav-

ing to be familiarized with things and having to itsa things, and so forth. The end product of processing is no further need to have to do these things. And as soon as one attains that no further need to have to do one of these things, one would find he would suddenly snap back to all of the power that he possibly could want. At which moment he probably turns around, and he's so mad at everybody because of that time he spent there being right that he rights the various wrongs that he was going to right, and he probably will take a dip at that point and then he'll come back up again. And there will be various curves and toboggans along on this road that will probably look very dizzy, but that's okay. So that's the way it is.

Now, we're undoing – we're undoing, then – this obsession to itsa by using it. And because the dependency on it is so great, you'll never get a bank taken apart, as far as I'm concerned, until it has been utilized to its full.

Now, self-determinism, pan-determinism, personal beingness, personal power, restored to the individual, is done on the road of minimal help, maximal recovery of self-determinism – or maximal recover of self-ability to itsa. See? That's up. Now, as the case goes along, its progress is measured directly and immediately by the degree that this is returned into the pc's hands. Therefore, you could get a fantastic number of engrams run – now let me show you how you can mess this up, see – you get a fantastic number of engrams run and a fantastic number of GPMs run, and the pc would be foggy and wouldn't be much alert, and so on.

Oh, you haven't really harmed him. You've slowed down the recovery in just this one way, by every time the pc says "Uh ... let me see, there's a picture here, and I think it's a..."

"Oh, all right, I'll date it for you. Is it greater than a hundred trillion years ago? Is it less than a hundred trillion years ago? Was it a hundred trillion years ago? It's less than. All right, is it greater than eighty trillion years ago? Less than eighty trillion? It's less than," so forth and so forth. "The date is so-and-so and so-and-so and so-and-so."

And the pc says, "Oh, all right. Hm-hm. Okay." See? See the nonsense involved in this thing?

And it just goes much more subtly, see, much more subtly: "You know, I think I must have been one of the Brobdingnagians."

Little tiny head shake as one looks at the meter and sees that it didn't read on Brobdingnagians, but did read on Lilliputians, see?

And then, "Oh, well, I didn't mean anything. I – helping you out."

You actually have the identical problem that a mother has, auditor. And some mamas solve it and some don't. They help little Roscoe to a point where, at twenty-one, little Roscoe can't shovel soup into his gullet, see? [laughter, laughs] Of course, there's an equal extreme the other way. They don't help little Roscoe to a point where little Roscoe, at the age of twenty-one, shoots them! Puts cyanide in the soup!

See, all of this is a happy mean, you see? And it isn't constant one pc to the next. That's what the trouble is, because one pc requires more help than another pc, because they're at different levels of independence. And you get a pc who has a very high level of independ-

ence and a very deep level of aberration, and of course you've got trouble! I mean, the guy can't walk, and he keeps putting his feet in the stew and in the mud and everything else. And you watch this guy caroming off into doors, and it practically hurts, you know? "Oh, I'll do it, I'll do it!" and at that moment, why, spills the tureen over his head, you see?

Well, that's all within the margin of an auditor. That's where his ebb and play comes in, is how much does it take to improve this guy's independence and self-determinism? How much does it take to improve his ability to know? How much help does he need in order to know? And you'll find out that's a varying quantity, see?

Here's this poor guy off the street, he doesn't know which end the door is, you know? And he's helped enormously because you actually show him where the door is. It makes him a bit better. You understand, from there on he can find the door, he can itsa the door from there on out. See? So you haven't taken all of his itsas away from him.

All right, well, that's the extreme case. But let's handle that extreme case wrong. Let's handle this just dead wrong: We tell him he never can know where the door is. See? And let's build him a special set of rails so that when he walks toward the door he runs into it. And every time he walks around that particular end, why, he'll collide with the door, see? Well, at this point, of course, you have exceeded the degree of. In other words, you haven't helped him at all. You have deteriorated his ability.

And what you want to do is take what ability you have, that you find there, don't you see, and gradually uncreate any dependence that is created. And the perfect formula is reduce it. See? Give him all the help he needs to get along and then gradually reduce it. That is always safe. Give him whatever help he needs to get along and then reduce it – which makes something like 3N into about four or five different routines, which is quite remarkable. And eventually, why, he isn't even given a line plot. But that's getting pretty adventurous, don't you see, because he can get himself in more trouble without a line plot. It's almost a dirty trick to turn somebody loose into a wildcat GPM before he's run a few that are line-plotted, you know? You can make a pc fly, but then the pc says, "I don't think – I don't think, I don't think this sequence follows on through this way. I think it cuts off someplace here. Something cuts off."

"Well, follow your line plot! Follow your line plot! The line plot. Give me the next item, the next item. That's what I want, next item."

"Yeah, but... "

"Next item!"

Well, even if it was there, the pc sooner or later is going to be right enough to convince you that it isn't – because you never let him find out.

Now, combining all of this nice sense of judgment is the extra bonus of your own flubs, because you cannot reduce them to zero. Don't ever try. Don't ever go beating your brains out. Because you get caught in cross-plays of communication where you didn't quite understand what the pc said when you thought you did, don't you see? And so you said, then, at that time – the pc is saying, "Let's see, what was that series we found? It was – let's see, I think I found early – earlier that such a series we found..." and so on.

Well, you say, "Well, you've already found it, you see? It's been found for several sessions, and it's 25.4 trillion years ago," see? And he's trying to find this date, you see? He's trying to re-remember what the date is, and you're just trying to get the series started, see? So you say, "Well, that was – that – oh, you're talking about the 25.4-trillion-year-ago series."

He says, "Yeah. Yeah, I guess so. I don... I-I do – get the.... No, you see, that isn't the point. Um..."

And you finally let him stagger through this, because you've, see, flicked his attention and slipped him the mickey with the wrong communication line because you didn't understand. That wasn't what he was saying at all. He's trying to find that lock incident that defended on the series, and his communication being a little bit blurry, why, he's not really communicating what he thinks he is communicating to you, so you make a mistake on it. And because the pc's communication line is so often fogged up in session, for an auditor, then, to do a perfect job of handling the communication line is impossible, because it depends upon the pc's articulation and communication being perfect.

Sometime a pc will say something to you like this: "Well, I suppressed my gains for this session." And what do you do? Well, is he giving you an itsa? Is he announcing a catastrophe? Is he getting off a suppression? See? Does he want you to do something? What's the intention of his communication? Well, maybe he doesn't even know, either. And almost anything you answer to this, you're going to be wrong! See?

So don't go around in fear of being wrong, and don't teach people to be afraid that they're going to mishandle one of these lines, because you're teaching them to be afraid of something that's going to be inevitable – inevitable.

The pc all of a sudden looks up and he gets a starey-eyed look in his eye and he says, "Say, I don't think that's true." You're running a Helatrobis implant, you see, and "Say, I don't – I don't think that's true."

And you say, "Well, what?"

He says, "That. You know? I just don't think it is."

Well, what do you do? Is he talking about the Helatrobis implants? Probability not. He's skipped into something. What's happened here? What's he collided with? We don't know. All right, to ask him for more data than he's got is a fatal auditing error, so we ask him for more data than he's got and we are in trouble. We don't ask him for the data he does have, we are in trouble. Don't you see?

Because, these are the troubles of handling an indefinite communication line, and troubles always originate. The communication line at its source is indefinite, so therefore the handling of it becomes a situation. So that just makes you have to get very slippy. And you have to learn various things about the intention line which we're not particularly discussing today.

"Do you want to tell me about it?" *Ha-ha-ha-ha* – cut your throat. How do you put the pc's attention on anything? How do you put his attention on a chair? You say "chair," don't you? How do you put his attention on a house? You say "house," don't you? How do you put

his attention on a date? You say "date," don't you? How do you put the pc's attention on the auditor? You say "auditor," don't you? "Do you want to tell me about it?" *Clang!* Out of session, ARC break, house falling down, everything going to pieces, gains being wrapped up, everything betrayed – Christ, what happened? *Ha-ha!*

You in vain try to trace back anything you did. Naturally, you tend to blame yourself for it. Well, you, in actual fact, didn't do anything except inadvertently direct the pc's attention in a direction where it wasn't going and give him a sudden attention shift, because of your misunderstanding of what the pc was talking about in the first place. Do you see the liabilities of this kind of thing?

So, know how to do it right, and do it right most of the time! See? That's the only thing you can expect and hope for.

All right. This pc itsa line is going to get better to the degree that it is permitted to exist. This doesn't mean to the degree that you let the pc talk, necessarily. It means the degree that you keep the pc's attention directed in directions where he can find things to identify: in his bank. And when he's found things in his bank to identify, let him identify them.

He says – you say, "All right. Now, I want you to take a look at that incident there that has the robots in it. Good. All right. That's fine. All right."

And he says, "Say,..."

"Yes, I know. They're robots."

Well, I'd just say that was too corny for words, see?

All right, you keep up that sort of thing with a pc very long, and you tell him what he is looking at always – see, it isn't a 100 percent proposition there, either. You sometimes tell a pc what he's looking at, see? You put his attention on the track to some incident that you know is there, and he doesn't know is there, well, you're certainly giving him something to itsa, aren't you? So you've given him something to itsa, and he'll start itsaing it, happy as a clam, see? But if you prevent his itsaing it after you have given it to him to itsa, you will see a gradual deterioration over a period of intensives – now, not one session, it's a long period – of his ability to identify. You'll see this deteriorating.

You're creating a dependence on your metering. You can create a dependence on your recognition, a dependence on his confirmation as to whether or not he's right. He says, "Well, I don't know if it was the cowboys in the white hats or the black hats, and cow ... You look on the meter," he will say. "Look on the meter."

One of the ways an auditor gets this started is invalidating a pc's data. He invalidates the pc's data a little bit, and – you know, tends to somewhat, and sounds doubtful, and the pc sounds this – and finally the pc will say "Look on the meter." And the auditor cuts his throat and looks on the meter. See? It's a case of he should say, "Well, I believe you. I don't have to prove it," see?

"If you don't believe me, look at the meter."

Proper response is, "Well, I believe you. Go ahead, tell me what it is. " Don't look on the meter.

Eventually you'll get a habit started whereby every time the pc wants to communicate anything to you, he convinces you by showing you that it bangs on the needle. And his itsa line will start deteriorating. See, this can be done in various ways. That's confirming his itsa line, which leaves him with no positiveness. It leaves him with no sensitivity as to what's right and what's wrong.

Well, that's an ability that you are trying to improve. And if you look on it as an ability that you're trying to improve and as the *chief* ability which is there to be improved in a case, you really won't make many mistakes on it. Your mistakes will be cut to a minimum. But if you look on a case as something from which significances have to be removed in any way that they can be removed, regardless of the self-determinism of the pc and regardless of his ability and regardless of his knowingness and his recognition and so forth, oddly enough, you will still make it, but you've multiplied your time factor considerably. Time factor is going way up – ten to one, something like that – because you're deteriorating his ability.

Now, just auditing the pc in general, you'll see you will inevitably get an improvement of the ability by the removal of charge. Now, if at the same time you're creating a dependency, to the degree that you're increasing – you see? You can increase and decrease, and whereby he's getting more track and more charge in his vicinity, his actual potential of improvement is being cut back by his dependency on the itsa of the auditor, see? It improves anyhow. But the auditor is cutting it back, and he's just costing himself more auditing time, more auditing time, more auditing time, more auditing time. More difficulty, more ARC breaks, more upsets.

There's many a – many a way, many a way by which all this can be handled in various ways. See, you have what you call an ARC breaky type pc. Well now, this pc probably has a high degree of independence and probably has a high degree of itsa ability already, but possibly is a bit swamped with charge, see?

All right. Now we take this pc and we deteriorate his ability to itsa, you see, by creating a dependency on the auditor. You know, by telling him everything, by telling him everything. You know, "That read. That didn't read," and so on. Of course, the funny part of it is – there's one other point of this I should mention in passing – if you don't tell a pc when an item is finally discharged, in the early stages of running GPMs, he'll leave items charged, and the mechanics of the bank will cause him to bounce and ARC break. See? So that again is one of these factors whereby you're putting in the itsa line – "itsa discharge."

Now, but sooner or later the pc is going to start telling you when it is discharged. Well, that's damn well when you better stop telling the pc that it's clean. Do you understand? You just better stop telling him at that point.

Ah, but you've got an interesting problem here. Maybe you've stopped telling him at the point where he still can't tell. Now you're going to have hell raised, because you're going to have him stuck in incidents. You're going to have RIs live all over the place, you're going to have his postulates live and so forth.

I think I'd start working on a campaign on him: "Well, run it until you're very sure it's flat" is the kind of a campaign I'd start running, is "Get that item until you're very sure it's flat."

"All right," he says, "that's flat."

"Okay, say it again. Good. Fine. You're right, that's flat," see?

And he all of a sudden, "See, I can tell you." You know?

"All right, good. Good," see? "Fine." And wean him. And gradually don't check, see? Don't check. Say, "All right, I can depend on you." Because he can tell you, eventually, when it's flat.

He'll also get very bored with an item and leave it half-unflat. You can sometimes make a citizen out of him by letting him do so. Trouble is, he's liable to have bounced and gone into something else.

Now, there's various problems involved here. I'm not trying to tell you this is simple. Don't get so involved in the problems, however, that you miss the basic mechanics of the situation. Basic mechanics of the situation: the pc is the one who is living with this bank, and if he can't tell what's in it, and so forth, he can't live with it. Obvious? I mean, that's one of these ne plus ultra things. You're unfortunately, or fortunately, not going to be at his side for the next two hundred trillion billion squillion years. See, you're not going to be there telling him whether it is a GPM, you see? Going to have to find this out for himself. So sooner or later, you're going to have to kick him off with regard to this bank.

The time to start is when you start auditing him. You start auditing him, why, start weaning him. Don't increase his dependency. Decrease it. Give him all the help he needs! But isn't that a tricky statement? How much help does he need? Well, you know if he doesn't have line plots and a design on the track and the concepts of life, and that sort of thing – if he doesn't have something like that, he'll never put his foot on the road at all. And we know that if he doesn't have a line plot for a standard GPM that he's got to run, and so forth, we know he'll wrap himself around a telegraph pole, man. He'll practically finish himself off by giving you wrong items and upside-down items and missing items, and so forth. And the next thing you know, why, the penalty is much worse than the cure, here. See?

Well, where do we go? Well, how much help do we give him? Well, we give him all the help he needs. How much help does he need? Well, that is something you establish individually in each pc.

You're going to get ahold of some pc sometime or another – you know, he possibly hasn't been down here long, or he got here by accident, or something of the sort. And this pc cognites on the Axioms, knocks out the bank, does Change of Space Processing between your auditing room and the next building for a while, goes around and thanks you very much; you're left with your jaw dropped because you haven't had an opportunity to get your meter on and tested. [laughter]

Well, don't feel so betrayed that you didn't get a chance to audit. You audited. So, there are various degrees by which you have to approach this problem, and that's the difference of pc's.

Now, these very, very ARC breaky pcs sometimes get a reputation for being ARC breaky and they get very upset this way and so on. It's actually where their concept of their

own independence is being invidiously cut up by people putting itsas in for them. And the charge on the bank is too great, so that they get into this stuff and they'll dramatize at the drop of a hat. And this is upsetting to them. It's more upsetting to them to dramatize, but how did they dramatize? They dramatized only because somebody put in the itsa line they were not able to.

So, what do you do with such a pc? Well, a pc who's routinely ARC breaky must obviously have something wrong with the itsa line. Well, he wasn't the result of auditing – it was probably something that occurred before auditing, because we are not in the business of aberrating people. Well, it must have occurred in some aberrative area.

Well, you can do such a thing, as give them an eighteen-button Prepcheck on the itsa line. Simple. Now, an eighteen-button Prepcheck is not thrown out by the itsa line because the eighteen buttons are the select choice, very best, grade A, straight-from-the-ocean itsas. You realize that a Prepcheck is almost the perfect series of itsas. Most powerful buttons, so they're most powerful itsas in existence since the beginning of the universe. "Since your beginning of travail, has anything been suppressed?" Wonder how long that would run. But that's an itsa, because he must have itsa'd by suppressing. So you're getting off the crisscross, see? If he suppressed it, then he can itsa it. If you get the suppression off, then he can itsa.

These are almost perfect itsa lines. The Prepcheck actually comes into its own. But very interesting about a Prepcheck: you can prepcheck the itsa line. See, on that? That takes the cake, man.

Now, you take one of these very ARC breaky pcs that has a very great reputation for being ARC breaky, and you put the itsa line into some comprehensible thing. Very often, if you just explain to them what the itsa line is and prepcheck it, you'll be better off than trying to redefine something, because you won't then be prepchecking the itsa line. But this takes some doing.

An auditor has always got to be able to interpret the auditing command and clarify the auditing command so that the pc knows what it is. One of the best ways to clarify an auditing command like "Recall an ARC break" is explain an ARC break and give it to him, because you use any other word, you'll run into some GPM – almost certain to run into GPMs. "ARC break" is contained in no GPM and therefore is a totally nonbackground word. See? Give him a new word, new symbol.

All right, so you say, "Itsa line – well, your – your recognition of things. Your consideration of things. What you think life is all about. Your opinions. You know, somebody says, 'What's a cat?' and you say, 'It's a four-legged animal.' I mean, your right to do that." You know, go on, go on, explain it any way you want. Prepcheck the itsa line. Or get some other designation for it. But prepcheck it.

And you'll be very fascinated that the pc who is the ARC breaky pc is not really ARC breaking because of auditing and bypassed charge. This pc's itsa line is cut right here and now as his most colossal PTP – by something else, nothing to do with auditing.

I'll give you a marvelous example of how somebody's itsa line is cut right here and now: He's on this planet, isn't he? If he tries to get off, he hits the between-lives area. His itsa

line is cut because he can't it'sa anything else in the universe. He can look at the stars, but he can't tell what condition they're in. See, he's the prisoner on the island who looks toward the mainland longingly, so his it'sa line is cut.

See, there's all kinds of ways of cutting the it'sa line, don't you see? No reason to dream them all up for the pc. Put in a Prepcheck on his it'sa line.

You'll be astonished. He'll make some case progress – sudden case progress, and cease to be ARC breaky.

Other ways of attacking this same problem sometimes give us the very, very fascinating and interesting aspect of somebody who has found that the ARC break is a solution to some problem. So he solves the problem by ARC breaking. There's various ramifications, but he normally runs into this when you prepcheck the it'sa line. You have a big piece of understanding here. It's a big, new, whole piece of understanding. It's a new piece of the jigsaw puzzle which has fitted into place and made citizens out of most of the center pieces, and has shown us that there's just this little few out here on the edge, of how come a guy had to identify and familiarize himself in order to feel alive or secure? How come a guy got into an obsessed necessity to it'sa? That little piece is about the only piece missing right now, and it's up here in the corner. And it's missing just to this degree: You show me a problem, very shortly later, I'll show you the answer.

Thank you very much.

PROJECT 80

A lecture given on 22 August 1963

Thank you. Well, what is the day?

Audience: 22nd of August.

Twenty-second of August. Boy, you're lucky! You got all the way up to the 22nd of August. And you're still alive. Boy! Some people have all the luck!

All right, Saint Hill Special Briefing Course lecture. And we're going to recapitulate now on the itsa line and levels of auditing and et cetera, et cetera, et cetera. Going to talk to you first about Project 80.

Why 80? Why does Ron always use these 80s and so forth? Well, 80 is a mathematical trick, because you turn it over on its side, you see, and you have infinity. And it's a sort of a mathematical joke. You've got an infinity, you see, and you've got a zero. So you have embraced the totality. So it's just a mathematical trick of saying "all."

Now, Project 80 has to do with organization targets and dissemination and technical planning. And this has a great deal to do with organizations, and it has a great deal to do with anybody who is in practice and has a great deal to do with anybody who is in Scientology.

And the only reason a designation of Project 80 has been assigned to it at all, is because there's a whole cluster and collection of bulletins and policy letters which will be coming out along this line, and there are a great many publications will be coming out along this line. And you'll recognize them when you see them because they will have designations like "Scientology One," or "Scientology Two." And the embrative action of what to do with these things is included in Project 80.

Now, you're watching here now the dawning of 1964, which is the year of Scientology for everyone, you see? And what has happened here precisely is a lot of guys have come along, and we've been all together in plowing through the research and it's been very trying at various times. Research is very far from ended when you can make a breakthrough of the magnitude of the itsa line, here, just in the last couple, three weeks. But we've come all the way along this line, and we've seen it changing, changing, changing, and this and that coming and going, and stable gains and a lot of hope going along the line and all that sort of thing.

Well, this has made in essence a special breed of cat. And we're not in a situation where we're going to lose such people, see? Most organizations' activities, forward pushes, in this particular universe are up against continuous loss of personnel. It's one of the most crippling things that they have – the loss through death and casualty and implant and this, that and the other thing all the way on up the line, you see? And frankly, if anybody could live long

enough he would be rich. Just think of that for a moment. Supposing you went on with some – at least the vigor that you might have at thirty or forty, and just keep going! Keep going with no wipeouts.

Well, let's take movie stars. Let's take movie stars. All during the – all during the 40s and 50s you had the movie stars who had made it in the 30s and 20s, which is quite remarkable. Those that came up in the 30s, particularly. John Wayne, Gary Cooper – these characters, you see? And you just saw them on and on. My God, he's... Gary Cooper playing the lover at sixty-five was quite interesting, I think. But they simply were not necessarily good, they simply were persistent. [laughter]

I don't know anybody who ever handled dialogue worse than Cooper. But they were persistent. And what happened to their rivals? Well, it wasn't that their rivals didn't make it or weren't so good or something like that; they simply fell by the wayside, preys to various ills. And even those that were prey to considerable ills still made it. Like, look at Judy Garland, the ups and downs and so forth. Persistence. If you could just keep going, you yourself become a sort of an institution, don't you see?

Well, we've got this particular factor, to some degree, licked – at least the solution of it is well in view. As I told you yesterday at the end of the lecture, why, give me a problem and I'll get the solution to it, usually. I've been operating on the basis that if I can conceive of the problem – I amplify that a little bit further – if I can conceive of the problem, why, I know we're about forty-eight hours from what made it a problem. Not the solution to that problem, which is a MEST universe reverse-end way of looking at the thing, but how did it become a problem? And this is organizational, you see? And we see this pretty well, so that I've become cocky to this degree: I know that if I can conceive of what we're up against, and I know if we can conceive of what we're up against, we can – in dissemination and technical and that sort of thing, we can whip it.

It's all very important to our future progress. Now, we are also, incidentally, working here with the problem of vanishing people. And that problem is the one that causes most organizations to deteriorate and go by the boards.

Now, we've had quite a struggle coming up the line one way or the other. That struggle's a long way from over, but the murderous – the most murderous aspect, organizationally, is well within our realm of resolution, which is losing all your people. In any given – any given twenty, thirty, forty years on this planet – on this planet, any organization practically loses the totality of its people. Now, we're not up against that. We have a lot of people here who in the last (some less than this) five, six, seven, twelve, some thirteen years, have been going along this research line with me, see? And things have ebbed and flowed and you've seen it all changing and reversing, and the ink was dry on the bulletin so therefore it must be out of date – this kind of thing. Right here this particular unit of Saint Hill has had to cope with shifts and changes, but I myself have never compromised with this for a moment. And I think you're awfully good sports, all of you who have put up with this, to put up with it, because I'm sure you understood that if there were something better coming up you didn't want the something worse just for the benefit of stability.

You see, in essence *we* are the stability, when it finally works out. Well now, it may not be apparent to you, and it may be apparent to you, particularly those in Z Unit, that we've pretty well got Level Four – Scientology Four, the road to OT – that's pretty well wrapped up. You could know a few shortcuts, there's a few refinements, there's a terrific number of releases to be made on this subject. For instance, I discover lots of exciting things along in Four that aren't yet released. For instance, just last night I got my hands on the pattern of the O/W sequence itself – the overt-motivator sequence, rather – got the whole pattern, tailor-made. And it's a lolly, man! It's a doll! It's a GPM of sorts and its own special breed of cat. And there goes your overt-motivator sequence. Well, there's a lot of stuff coming out like this, you see?

But the *modus operandi* by which you find that material is there, and the type of material which is going to be found has already been established, and the various ways by which you use this material on the pc has all been established, don't you see? And you call that a wrap-up, see? It's an incomplete release, but a research wrap-up. Nobody is going to be working very, very hard to find some new type of incident, or something like this. They just aren't. There was one more type to be found after the GPM, and that was the screen-type incident. There's some ramifications of postulation-type incidents and so forth, but these we already have the technology for. We already have any kind of a drill you ever heard of for a Thetan Exterior has already been wrapped up years ago.

So call that level a wrap-up. It's just practically office work to put the stuff together, see, if... that which isn't together. Anybody finishing the Z Unit here at this particular time is perfectly competent to handle all of this. He'll pick it up and say, "Oh, oh, yeah, yeah. Well, that's one of those," you know?

So, in view – in view, of course, is a wrap-up of the between lives, and stripping it out so a person doesn't do a report-back. Now, that's very, very pertinent – very pertinent situation, and I thought that was going to be very tough. It is a little bit tougher than I thought it was going to be. You can undoubtedly strip out the report-back mechanism without doing much else, but the between lives is full of GPMs. Ha-ha, isn't that nice! And they're all negative on the beginning end of the screen and they're all positive on the "end" end of the screen, so of course the positive-negative type goals, the di... it's a dichotomy, you see? Those that are positive dichotomy are as you leave, and those as you arrive are negative, so of course that collapses one on the other to a marked degree and makes it a very nice mess.

Fortunately they're not given with very much violence and the earlier sequence and series of these things is given much earlier, before one has actually entered the civilization which you now unwittingly find yourselves. They're the Train goals, and we have the pattern. I've got to confirm this and dabble around with it for a while, but it's that kind of work which we're doing.

Exciting enough in its way and certainly valuable enough and vital enough to make OTs. But I don't think that anybody has very much doubt, except if he's been dropped in the middle of session, that we're going to have all of this worked out and it's mostly a matter of grind away and get the GPMs out of the road and keep the tone arm flying and so forth, and

gradually work it out, work it out, and hold the pc's hand through the rougher passages of it and rough it out and then we'll finally have arrived at that.

It's a matter of – once more it's a matter of shovel work. It's more comparable now to moving a pile of coal from point A to infinity-zero, see? It's just – it's just auditing. It's a number of auditing hours. There are some rules I'm working out that make it faster and easier, such as if you get your paws on a GPM, the running of which gives you tone arm action, do not let it go till you have run it and its whole series. This is the faster ways to do this sort of thing, you see?

If you are stripping off a between-lives screen and you suddenly find some incident that's way back in something-or-other land, just don't just date it and let it go – run it. And when you've got it run, come back to the screen lives... between-lives screen to strip it down some more, don't you see? And eventually the whole puzzle all comes apart and everything falls apart in your hands, case all goes back to battery, and bang – that's it.

That's just a matter of working at it. But what is the central action of this? The central action of this is auditing. And auditing's central action has to do with keeping the pc's attention directed to those significant portions of the track which give him tone arm action and which take his case apart. That's the highest level of professional auditing. There it is.

Well now, look. You know how long you've been on the road, and look how much you've studied, and how much you've sweated and groaned and that sort of thing in order to achieve the technical level which you right now have achieved. That applies to anybody here. You know how far you've gone. That's quite a ways. That's quite a ways. If we expected everybody to go that similar distance, we would lose. And what we happen to have – we have a group now who have come along over a tremendously long distance and who then form an advised cadre. They would know which way these cats are going to jump; they've been exposed to just about every brand of process that you can imagine and so forth.

Now, this is very important. This is very important to have such people. We're not going to lose these people. It's going to go on for quite a while. But how about all of those other blokes, huh? How about all those other people? Well, to expect them to graduate up the hard way – it's too much to expect. A lot too much to expect.

They're operating at certain levels of reality, and that level of reality establishes their ARC. And if we're going to bring off any coup with regard to large public acceptance, broad dissemination – if we're going to bring off any coup on this particular planet, we're going to have to pay attention to that ARC.

Now, this bloke is plodding along there, and the highest level of his understanding of mentality is "Women are all alike." This he knows. When he finally decided that, wisdom burst upon him. He felt pretty good. Every time somebody throws a coffee pot at him or something like this, why, he just sits there and he's satisfied as can be. He grabs hold of that stable datum, inserts it into the middle of his thinkingness, and he knows now the answer to it: Women are all alike, see? And that explains the coffee pot, and that explains everything, you see?

And we come along to this bird and we say, "Hey, bud, you're a convict. You live on a planet called Earth; it's part of the Marcab Confederacy. What you got is a whole lot of GPMs and you got to run these out, see, because they're positive-negative items that go into a dichotomy." Now, you give me his ARC. What is his ARC at that moment, see?

Male voice: Broke!

Broke but good, that's right. Correct! At least it's just going to be kind of unreal. He's not going to be very happy with us. Well, what then in essence has happened – is we've carried along here by our bootstraps, at many times great personal sacrifice, certainly through lots of disappointments, upsets, through tremendous loses, all kinds of things – we've carried along here, and we have been making our way and we've been getting along just fine, and the gap between us and them has been getting wider and wider and wider, and eventually we find ourselves in an informed ivory tower which of course we can take off from, to Lord knows what but we've left no bridge behind us.

So the particular cadre of Dianeticists and Scientologists who have come forward to this point could very well just sever at that point and we all goes our ways selectively, or we do or we don't, but we have left no bridge behind us. I consider that somewhat important. Particularly since it's going to take a long time to bail out things and square things around and that sort of thing.

I want to point out to you, this planet is in a slightly different situation than other planets in that – not to go space opera on you – but this planet has a prayer of not getting tilted. That is, what you put into this planet has a tendency of remaining here. There's a probability that it will, don't you see? Well, this is not necessarily true of the other planets in the immediate vicinity of this planet, because very often you get into a condition of warfare of some kind or another and things happen.

Now, all I'm talking about is that to get any kind of entrance into the social strata of nearby planets and so forth, to get any entrance into that is fairly improbable. They're far more likely to explode – being very tightly and intimately governed, they're far more likely to explode and go up in smoke. Do you see what I mean?

The... you've got your feet into this one, and this one does make a rehabilitation center of one kind or another. It's worth salvaging – with all the other crude expletives I've been using about planetary tilting and so forth – it is worth salvaging.

Now, what happens to the other immediate planets that are connected with this confederacy in this system I could not bet on just for two seconds. I just could not bet on it. In the first place, these are invasionary planets; they possibly were facing some type of invasion here into this particular galaxy. There's probably political situations in existence and you and I would not know what of, don't you see? And I know they've made a considerable incursion into the thing, because I know that the Espinol Confederacy used to control this very much and I found out the other day that their return platforms were closed, were barred off with speakers, you know, saying "Get away from here," and "Report to the ones we told you to report to," and "Get away from here," and "We don't want anything to do with you." In other words, their return points are closed.

Well, that just spells nothing but defeat, see? So what is this? Now, is there some other planetary system – is there some other empire system which is deeper in to the heart of this galaxy which is going to backfire against this one? I would say probably yes. Probably yes. There... probably this is coming right up over the hill. I mean it probably is not long. Maybe this confederacy or this activity right now is in trouble. But conquerors nearly always spare the jails. Did you realize that? The Allied troops going in Auschwitz, Belsen, places like that, they didn't knock those apart. They knocked apart the belligerents' property, but they didn't knock apart their jails. All kinds of political situations complicate this picture.

I'm not trying to tell you what they are about or the solutions to them. I'm merely saying that these are complicated and I've only vaguely touched on how complicated it might be, see? We can't bet on that. We actually can't bet on the preservation of Earth. But we can bet on this – that this planet has a better chance of becoming a rehabilitation center than other planets, see. That's a very faint bet, don't you see? But supposing – supposing now, you have not left any bridge to – in the rehabilitation center, don't you see? Well then, everybody in this area, now, just keeps floundering around without any contact and no way to get up on it, and very mad at the only group of people that could assist them. I don't think that's a desirable situation at all. In fact, I think it's a highly undesirable situation and I think it could actually impede what we ourselves are trying to do. We've got to leave – we've got to leave a bridge.

Now, organizationally and in private practice and other functions, our feeder lines into the public are very, very weak – extremely weak. But they are not weak administratively, they are weak technically. It's technical weakness. Now, that's why I've circled around and come back to Scientology One as a heavy point of concentration in research and development.

Now, this is all very, very interesting that we would consider Scientology One a heavy area of research and development. Well, the other is wrapped up. I'm working on it as fast as I can. You see little things sandwiched in amongst other things. For instance, you just saw a bulletin – if you've gotten it yet – how to handle the pc's postulates when encountered in GPMs and engrams and that sort of thing, you see? Well, you see stuff like that all the time. But this other stuff is coming out now which is this bridge. And that bridge is Project 80. See, that's just Scientology for everyone. Now it requires, actually, that we study Joe and Bill and Pete a bit and find out what they agree with and utilize that agreement to improve their ARC – not with us, but just to improve their ARC – up to a point where we can hit another level of agreement. See? In other words, raise them from a level of ARC, from where they are, to a next gradient point of ARC. And then at that next point of ARC put them in the way of getting their ARC improved up to the next level. And they come to Scientology Three, Clear. And then put them up from that up into a higher level. Do it by gradients, in other words, not with crush and crash.

Now, the eight dynamics, various scales, the ARC triangle, the dynamic principle of existence – all of these things are too high for Scientology One. Interesting, isn't it? So they comprise Scientology Two – HCA/HPA level. And you're back to – you're back to what you might call thirty-, sixty-day HPA training. That means a lot for a Central Organization.

Well now, how could we possibly make an HCA or an HPA in that length of time? It's because of our breakthrough on the itsa line. It's this piece of technology which has made this

possible. And we couldn't have climbed this hill with the technology we had, because we had to have technology that could be grasped so easily that even if misinterpreted somewhat would still work. Now, that's an easy one. So we come back to that. And we get various definitions for these various levels.

Now, in studying over this problem, I am now supported by a tremendous amount, and growing rapidly, technical data – technical results – from the itsa line and this exact approach. And I'm very, very interested. Why, I'm also very interested that some of you, as auditors, haven't yet coped with the level of win. See? You're living here on cloud nineteen, see, and you know what a terrific win would be in auditing, you know? Well, run out a whole series of GPMs on somebody with terrific tone arm action and so forth. You're hoping for that level because you know you're setting them right straight up for OT, you see? And you overlook what is a big win to a pc. For instance, our Staff Auditor has just made that mistake. He's worried. Of course, he's trained up to the nines, you see. And he got a perfectly raw piece of meat and their first session she couldn't say a word, really. No benefit, nothing. A few repetitive questions were asked her, practically spun her.

Next session, she was very happy to have been able to talk to the auditor about these things. Now, that was her gain for the session. But the auditor hadn't been able to get her to talk about and get good TA action on what he wanted her to talk about, so he was regarding this as a lose. See, he was getting worried about the case. Isn't that right? I just saw her folder and I haven't had a chance to talk to the auditor yet; he's at a disadvantage here. Well, he's getting his itsa line in on a brand-new, fresh pc. And probably what he doesn't realize is she is violently pro-medicine oriented, and would ordinarily be what you would consider an impossible case to process. In a couple of sessions she's got him – she's talking to the auditor and getting a little TA action doing so. Well, I consider this is terrific, because this case would have barred us out a few years ago, or even a year ago, even a few months ago. It's at the level of win. See? You have to learn to settle for these little wins, see? See, you have to settle for these wins on a gradient. So he's winning. He must be doing an awful smooth job of auditing to get over all of that. And in actual fact, the moment he started putting in the itsa line, just as such – even though she wasn't particularly interested in talking about what he was putting the itsa line in – he had a win. Think of that! I consider it fascinating!

Tells me at once the auditor must be doing a splendid job. And it tells me the case must be winning and it tells me this case, which I would have considered unauditible, who has been refusing auditing left and right – not really refusing it, just ignoring it; much worse than really refusing it – and he gets the itsa line on this person a little bit and he gets a win. So I think he must be doing well. That case must be doing well. And he doesn't have to do anything very, very extraordinary about what to get this case to talk about. See, as long as he can keep the case talking she'll win. Aw, that's an awful easy level of auditing.

So here we are, operating in the operating climate of where we've known this is very hard to do. So hard to do we've almost forgotten that we ever hoped it could be done! And there it is, sitting in front of us, doing it! And it's almost too spectacular to be accepted.

How long has it been since you took somebody who was half-seas over or upset in existence and tried to audit him, and wouldn't be audited and had to then fall into an unauditible

category. When's the first one of those you ever had, and when was the last one? Well, now those are the real loses, man. Because, you see, you didn't get to process him at all! So it's a win if you processed him at all. And you actually, when you get your hands on this, you will be completely surprised to find out that in this kindergarten of auditing you have very stellar results obtainable – so obtainable that medical healing is contained in this line – solutions to the problems of medical healing.

Now, I'm not saying we are going to do medical healing. I wouldn't be caught dead with it! I've done my... I've served my time that way. And pretty poor. So don't think we're downgrading a result, is all I'm trying to put across to you. We're not downgrading a result, but it's going to take us a little while to get used to the level of result.

I had quite a shock on this the first time. First time, I just – I had worked out completely, in the absence of tone arm action the pc wasn't winning. See, I'd worked this out, theoretically and so forth, and I started putting it to use and kept very close tally on it and found out that the significance which I would erase off the case did not have a value comparable to the amount of charge that was tone-armed off the case. And I was completely flabbergasted. It was a matter of watching pcs over twenty-four hour to forty-eight hour periods after a session, and it was astonishing that the session following good tone arm action on the pc – regardless of the completion of that session, regardless of the significance of the session – established a very high level of win for the pc. Pcs felt brighter, more alert and so forth.

Now, you could get tone arm action and too much significance entered into the situation and be pressuring the pc along very hard in the direction the pc had to go, and yes, you were driving the pc toward his ultimate goal and that sort of thing, but the pc wasn't particularly happy about it. It was trying – like trying to get speed out of a motor boat half-full of water. Not lots of charge was being released, and slopped over, and the pc felt groggy and weary and sluggish and so forth. You nevertheless were making it, you understand.

So the optimum level of cheerfulness as far as the pc is concerned, and the feeling of getting a case advance, as well as actual case advances, lies just in the direction of the itsa line in and the tone arm moving. You can almost delete "on what," see, at your lower levels of auditing.

Now, when I say – I used that "medical healing" unadvisedly because they'll be wiped out soon if our plans mature. These birds... here we've got a guy who is – who's got a – he's got a wonderful case of lumbosis and so forth, and his lumbar has been bothering him for a long time. It's Douglas fir or something, and termites have gotten in there, and this is predisposed toward disease, this area. A predisposition toward disease.

Well, I think this is quite remarkable, because if they treat the disease they never get at the predisposition, so something else has got to happen to the lumbar. So the obvious thing to do to the lumbar is to surgicalize it – cut it out so there is no lumbar. Obviously the solution to trouble with the lumbar is no lumbar, see? But they've completely overlooked the predisposition of the lumbar to disease because of trauma. They keep concentrating on the bugs, you see?

Well, this has a – perhaps has its limitations. But what exactly does this do? Do you know that if you could get somebody talking about his health, or his lumbar – for instance,

you're handling that right now; you actually are trying to head in and get her to talk about something about her health. Something. And you'd probably have to make a very fancy assessment to find out what it is. But the final analysis here is if we can get her talking, this pc, about her health, we'll eventually get her talking about her lumbar, and we'll find out that the cures and solutions and decisions and discoveries and cognitions and comments and considerations and hopes concerning that lumbar, in their aggregate, caused her to have lumbosis. And if we can get those off with TA action, we will then have a recovered lumbar. It sounds utterly incredible. Doesn't apply to broken legs *yet*. See? Probably have to set a broken leg.

I'm just trying to give you where the zone goes. Your Scientology Two is probably the open-sesame to healing. We've got to accumulate a lot more material on this, and I've – as I've said already in descriptions of Scientology Two and in the process of getting this material together – well, my whole statement is, is we're not putting in this HCA or HPA's hands weak tools!

Just because they're simple, they're not weak. And by using the itsa line, we possibly could take this person and cause him to be very effective in the treatment of some physical conditions from a spiritual/mental level that have never before easily surrendered. See, I mean we've got a door open there. It isn't just cracked open, it's crashed open!

Now that means, then, that your HPA/HCA level training is just exactly in the zone of where you've been here with the itsa line and the TA action, with a slight direction of the pc's attention – method of direction of the pc's attention – mostly to this lifetime, to limbs, to conditions in their life and so forth. So we have to train him at this level. We have to train him in the Auditor's Code; we have to give him, of course, some TRs; we have to tell him about the Axioms so he sees that the subject has breadth and depth; but mostly, we tell him about the ARC triangle, the CDEI Scale, matter, energy, space, time, form and location; we tell him about the dynamics – see what I mean? And when we get him all grooved into this line we teach him the tone arm of the meter, and that's it.

Now, this is certainly several cuts above Scientology One and is an expectable cut, because he'll be able to use that information, particularly if we put it together so he can use it. Now, puppy to the root, with great curiosity and facing the unknown, he will of course (and his instructors may of course) wish to charge up into the character of this bloke and his name, rank and serial number before he came into the Marcab Confederacy, and considering it very important that the auditor know this, and then it's very important that the auditor know something about 3N, it's very important they really know how to run an engram, and it's very, very important that they know how to run this and run that – and in the course of a few weeks they try to press in an education which has actually taken you something on the order of what? That's heading for no success.

But if they could learn these other factors and well, and if they effectively produced a result for them, then that whole group undergoing that training and handling that processing would win. They would win all the way across the line. Their ARC, then, would again come up.

Let's take Scientology One again. We study this guy and that guy, and we find out what they are in agreement with – already what they are in agreement with and what they are

antagonistic toward. And studying these factors, we give it a Scientological orientation and organization – that's Scientology One. You got a datum, something – if you realize that psychology has not even come up to that level that we're aspiring toward in Scientology One – you realize these guys dabble around with stuff like this and consider it very wise? Such as, "When troops get letters from home their morale rises." – psychological report rendered to the commanding officer – "Therefore I advise that you have more mail transports to the front lines. Chief and God almighty of the Psychiatric Division of the Army of the Republic, signed this date..." Scientologists look at that and say "Oh, *pfft!* Why is the morale of front-line troops down? The morale of front-line troops is down because they don't get mail from home. Bull!" This bird, then, is occupying a point of swindle to some degree, because he's supposed to be a high-caste character that knows about these things, but what he does is put out these fantastic banalities. See, we're not even – we're not even going to go that low for Scientology One.

Scientology One says that it is possible to have a happy marriage. Improbable, but im... not completely impossible to have a happy marriage, see? That's its level of discussion of marriage, you see? Not "Marriage is a marvelous experience which can be..." you see, all built up on the line. And, "How do you actually live a happy marriage? How do you get along with children?" Well, you make the whole of child psychology something on the basis of – something on the basis of "When the kid tries to tell you something, understand it and acknowledge it. Don't ignore it."

Employee-boss relationship. Communication formula with regard to the employee, with regard to the boss. The project of saying, "Good morning" to somebody over a period of forty days, until they finally say, "Good morning" back. You know, the use of. It's just getting into communication. See, your common denominator of all that.

Now, you turn – you turn you loose on a platform, talking to the mothers of East Orange, New Jersey, about their children. Now, look at your levels of choice. There you are, facing all of these girls, and they know you know your business. Now, you can say, "Your little Rollo has just been through the between-lives area, has the following GPMs..." [laughter] Or, you can say – or you can say, "Your problem with little Rollo is basically one of communication..." I think you could take off from there. I think you could really take off. What is he trying to say when he cries? How to handle him. How to handle him.

I'll give you a case in point. The stuff's effective! But it takes a while. One little boy – one little boy went – I don't know, it must have been the better part of four, five months – without feeling anything but hostility, but at the end of that time became very anxious to please. And what exactly was being used? Every time he said something, great care was taken to find out what he'd said and to acknowledge it. Every time he showed up one said hello to him. This brought about the total reform, as long as we deleted out of existence any punishment the child was getting during that period. And this reformed a very bad boy. That doesn't sound like much, but you'd find people who were not particularly ambitious would care to undertake a project of that character within their own limits long before they would undertake a more complicated project, and the joke is that that project happens to be real, the case history I gave you is perfectly correct, and it is a way of handling the situation and is quite remarkable.

Now, there's – odd thing about it is, is once you've given them a single datum, you have an enormous series of complexities that add on to the datum, and you'd just be amazed at how many questions there are that arise around that complexity, and you can ama... imagine after you've answered a few questions from the floor on the subject of what you have just told them you'd be surprised how your repertoire goes up and how you finally find out what they want to know. And you may be incredulous at what they want to know, but nevertheless that is what they want to know, don't you see? And you, with a great deal of technology at your fingertips, of course are able to evolve that rather easily.

Now, it doesn't really put you on a withhold with regard to the thing.

"I understand that you Scientologists believe that everybody has lived before. Is that true of little Rollo?"

"Well, Madame, that would be up to little Rollo. If he wanted to tell you that, why, I'm sure he could, or would."

Experiment of exact nature was carried on at Wichita, Kansas one time. Little Rollo in this particular case was about five, six years old, and he was over at the swimming pool when Mama was asking this somewhat snide question. She was intending to be rather nasty. And she said – I said, "Well, why don't you ask little Rollo – involved?" and so forth.

And she called little Rollo over and she said, "Now darling," she says, "you don't remember when you were a baby, do you?"

"Oh yes, Mommy!" he said, "I remember when I was in your tummy," and went off and dived into the swimming pool. [laughter] It's all very interesting.

Now, where you cut this line and how you design it and what you do with it, and so forth is all regulated by what people can go into ARC with. And there's the only point where a dissemination program or training program would fall down.

Now, you have not any good example in me. Just – I'm not a good example of this, because I'm mainly talking to you. And I don't care if stuff wanders out into outlaw and wildcat hands – I can take it. I simply say what is with regard to what I am now looking at, at Scientologists, and some of them think I'm kind of unreal lately, or batty and so forth. I am sufficiently insouciant and confident, and confident of my ARC with Scientologists in general to know that they will forgive me, and also know that they will look it over and run into it themselves and say, "Hey, what do you know!" and all of this sort of thing, so I'm operating on a different – on a different basis to a marked degree in that particular regard.

It doesn't mean that you have to withhold what you know about it. But you certainly have to talk to people at a level where people can talk, if you intend to have any ARC with those people. And therefore your basic dissemination area throughout the public must be at a level that people can go into ARC with. The technical material must be such that they can use it, and there we go.

Now, you could make a Book Auditor who will get fantastic results, and I'm – I was just telling you I was very proud of the fact I've been studying some of this in just the last few days, and I've been getting a lot of material on this itsa line and so on. And R1C is – you'll be

getting it in proper bulletin form – but it is simply a list of questions that anybody can add to, that you get people to talk about to get in the itsa line. That is all; that is what you do.

And it's a bunch of canned questions, but it actually could be thousands of questions. And I can see it now! I can see some Book Auditor with a dictionary of these questions. Guy's got lumbosis, and here are the cross-referenced things with regard to what this guy can talk to that will cure up his lumbosis. See, this is how you get the R1C run on his lumbosis. And you can get a very complicated cross-coordination of the number of questions he could answer that would finally add up to his lumbosis, see? And it would – which is much more surprising – it would answer up to his lumbosis.

Now, that's Book Auditor line. Of course, we expect a Book Auditor to have many more failures, flubs, be incapable of possessing sufficient self-control and discipline to keep from flying in the pc's face. We expect this kind of catastrophe, but oddly enough, my experience at this level of auditing has been rather good. It has been rather good. And if we put into their hands very, very securely, stuff which they actually can co-audit on and get results with – merveilleuse! And that's your R1C, don't you see?

And you hear somebody starting to dive for GPMs, something like that, say, "Well, perfectly all right for you to dive for GPMs' perfectly all right. But your pc – your pc probably feel better if you take the HCA Course and the HHS Course and go to Saint Hill and then come back and run it on him. You're liable not to make as great a mistake."

And he'll say, "Oh well, I can still run it." Call you up in a couple of days and say, "What do I do?" you know?

Say, "Well, all right. That's good. Why don't you ask him about things he has not quite liked about auditing, or..." [laughs]

You'll find your brains are sufficiently stretched even handling that level of co-audit, you see, with just R1C, that type of question. But they gonna get results! And that type of processing going to raise their level of ARC. And if this type of processing also exists on co-audits and so forth, you actually can divide Scientology One into two grades: the nonauditing and the auditing. Well, the nonauditing are going to stay much less advancing and so forth, but remember they will still exist. Old Dianetic and Scientology groups always had people in them who wouldn't ever audit or be audited but were members of the group. And they very often would form a majority of the group. They hung around the fringes of this and they never dared quite get their toe wet. And you had other members of that group who considered themselves very, very upscale because they did audit, and they were auditing somebody and being audited and so on.

Well, the natural evolution of this thing, then, divides it into two, is the nonauditing and the auditing levels of Scientology One. So therefore, you've got to have quite a bit of theory that matches up with Scientology One that people can talk about. A lot of theory going along with it.

Scientology Two – Scientology Two is capable of getting tremendous results. I think even an old-time auditor wouldn't really believe the results that are obtainable at that level. The backbone processes – the backbone processes are R2C – any assist line, or anything like

that – but R2C. And getting complicated now with R2C – this is a complicated process. This is R1C, but an assessment predetermines the thing. I can give you a very rapid rundown of what R2C is, and I think you'll find it's a workhorse process. It's with an assessment. You have your new expanded CDEI Scale, and you have an expanded scale of eight dynamics. That gives you two lists. The session is begun and the tone arm is used, no needle actions take place, and the person is given the expanded CDEI Scale to inspect to find out which one of these things best characterize his life.

Now, you don't expect this assessment to take place in any specific period of time. It might take ten minutes and it might take fifty hours. As long as you can get tone arm action out of the assessment, why, you're in! You don't care how long it takes him to pick over this little CDEI Scale of cards and try to figure out which one most applied at what times in his life and where and how and which and what they are and how they relate and that this is a pretty clever scale and... I can see some guy getting stuck for a hundred and fifty hours just doing nothing but examining this scale, see? See, so I'd never discourage him or speed him up from examining the scale, because there's a lot of residual tone arm action to be gained right there with that scale.

Well, let's say he finally came up – anywhere between ten minutes and five hundred hours – he finally comes up with a level. See, you don't care if he picked it right out or it took a long time, as long he was getting tone arm action while he was doing it, that's the only condition. And we... he's picked out this level. He's decided that that is the one which most applies to his existence. He's got that now. All right, that's level X.

And now he thinks he's all set and you're now going to do something else, but you don't give him any chance to do that; you repeat the operation, you give him the eight dynamics, expanded. They're expanded with their subdivisional dynamics, you see? And he has to inspect that list and tell us which one he has been most concerned about and how, in this lifetime. What one has he been most concerned about in this lifetime? And that's again anywheres between ten minutes and five hundred hours, you see? That's a repeat and a replay of this thing.

It actually doesn't matter whether he does this slow or fast, don't you see? As far as his case gain is concerned, it doesn't matter a darn whether he does a fast assessment or a slow assessment.

So we've got these two scales now, and we have – Y has been picked out as that dynamic he is most interested in. Therefore our question for R2C now becomes XY, all in one question – "False actions about animals." Anything that you want to do. Now, there's a third one – if you want to put your auditing question together perfectly, you could have a third one which has "decision, solution, cure, consideration, ideas about, concern for," don't you see? You'd have a whole bunch of verbal actions if you needed it to continue to put your question together again. That just makes your question neat. What has he been with regard to animals and so forth? Well, he's had concern for them. All right, that's fine.

Now "concern about falsity about animals," and you just plow right down the middle of his case, man. You've got a wide-open significance that... and it'll make that tone arm flow like mad. And what have you done, essentially – you've matched up the ARC triangle against

matter, energy, space, time, form and location in a neat little package, and he's away. See? And you've matched it up on gradients so that it first starts out ARC versus ARC, and he gradually gets around to where he can confront MEST a little bit, you find out he'd eventually swing into the sixth dynamic, and he'd eventually swing into the seventh dynamic as you repeated this operation.

I think you are looking at clearing this lifetime. I think that's what you're looking at. I think this is a process which would bring about a free needle. Now in Two you also have – this is upper Grade Two, and we would expect this on a retread. We expect this on a retread. You would have R2H, and you would have any other process that – such as Prepchecking and so on, is relegated more or less to that band, not really to the band of HPA, because that's a needle action.

So what do you do? You just take up the itsa line, purely, and then at the lowest professional level you take up the tone arm, and then at the retread professional level you take up the needle. You're moving these things up gradually, consistently, on a gradient, and you've got people who at every level can produce a result. It's whether or not they can produce a result that permits us to do this trick, don't you see? If they were unable to produce a result at these levels we wouldn't be able to do this trick. So I've just been glowing – glowing like a well-oiled halo on the subject here of watching this itsa line produce some remarkable results with regard to it.

Now, if you're going to run anything like this type of an activity, you're going to pay any attention to this at all, you'll find out that another element enters the scene. Just as the devil always entered Paradise according to the very best implants of the O/W sequence – the overt-motivator sequence, rather – they're all apparently associated with the devil and hell. I think it's quite interesting. Devil, hell and punishment. The... we already found heaven, now we've found hell. Very good.

But just as the devil always enters in, so does the ARC break. There's always the auditor who couldn't keep his mouth shut. And we have a tool which requires the use of the needle. So we make the ARC break assessment a specialized activity. And we try to bring it home to everybody that if this person is ARC breaking all the time, that the person has to have an ARC break assessment. Well, this gives us a crack at the auditor as well as the pc. So you say bring the pc in for an ARC break assessment, and you go ahead and give the pc an ARC break assessment.

Now, as a Central Organization operating a special division or department in which this is done can also keep an awful lot of co-audit activities running here and there throughout the field, and can keep a lot of teams straightened out (when I said co-audit I meant just individual teams) and can keep an awful lot of stuff on the fire and can keep a lot of – actually, professional auditors who are having trouble one way or the other, can keep them patched up by giving their pcs some ARC break assessments and straighten them out. We also would have a crack at the auditor at that time. Right? And we lay the fear of something or other into him on the subject of breaking up the itsa line and chopping off the pc, or evaluating for the pc, basically by pointing out: follow the Auditor's Code.

And in such a way – in such a way, you'd have a high level of effective activity going in a community or an area. If you add such things as testing and very cheap co-audits, and if you add some little course in which an HBA can get a classification – you know, he can come in and he can study these drills – this little basic drill on how you listen, see, and how not to cut the line, and give him some gen about the Auditor's Code, and that's it – he's a classified auditor, see?

We straighten him out to that degree – the organization or the auditor in private practice is always willing to give an ARC break assessment to somebody who is falling apart, and straighten out somebody's pc for him, don't you see – why, you'd have a well-knit, well-running, very orderly forward progress in the community, providing that ARC is maintained to agree with the public at large, to agree with the partially indoctrinated, to agree with the first levels of professional. If the ARC is there to match, why, of course we will communicate like mad.

The whole secret of our communication is the fact that it's up to us to establish the level of the communication line. And we have to some degree considered it rather dishonest to establish a line less than everything we knew. Well, it's not true. It's not true. There's no particular reason to hit everybody in the head with everything we know. But we all do it. We all do it one way or the other. I suppose we'll continue doing it. I can hear it now – this Book Auditor, he's sitting there, and he's... we're trying to do an ARC break assessment and he keeps coming up and he says, "But all this person will talk about is wanting to moo. And they just keep saying 'to moo, to moo, to moo' and so forth, and I've gotten them to repeat it several times but it gives them a headache!" I can hear you now. He gets the equivalent of a Saint Hill Course in the next fifteen minutes, you know? At high velocity!

But I'm not at a – for any instant even vaguely pretending that this won't happen. See, I'm not pretending for a moment that the program will go forward perfectly and without a hitch. There are various reasons why it won't go forward without a hitch. And one of those reasons is, is some people get nervous when they see action in their vicinity. Gets them nervous! Gets them nervous. They see fifteen people in the Registrar's office and they know that's too disorderly. People have no place to sit down or anything like that, the place is crowded, the Registrar can't do her work. She's putting money in cash registers, you know, and they keep dashing around having trouble with the invoicing machine, and commotion going on, she's leaving pieces of paper on the floor – very, very unneat. And so they know what to do, so they cut down the line going in to see the Registrar. That's obviously the right solution to the situation, because they want things neat.

And you see testing being knocked out in various ways. I think testing – there was some forty-some ways testing was knocked out in Johannesburg one time after it was put in. Those forty ways were counted. I think they were the subject of an Info Letter. I've forgotten how many there were. Such things as leaving bicycles across the walk into the testing office, don't you see? Making sure that no forms or blanks were available. Making sure that the person in charge of testing had too many other things to do and couldn't test.

Now, that isn't being really vicious; this is the consequence of people who are upset about motion. And they get too much traffic and there's too much going on, and they get –

they get emotionally disturbed about the whole thing, so they want to shut it off. You find that kind of action. And you finally find people who think that if they could just be left quietly to –by themselves, the best solution to the whole thing is to go get a rich man someplace and have two auditors process him and audit each other, and a hundred years from now, why, somebody will make it. I've had that advanced to me, by the way, two or three times as the only real solution to Scientology.

Well, that's awfully quiet! But the funny part of it is, it's been tried and it always failed. I think that's the most remarkable condemnation of it. Oh, they'll have other things going along that will be hashed up one way or the other. You'll have situations of the unusual solution. They can't get the tone arm moving. They can't get the tone arm moving on an itsa line, can't hit the right questions, so they ask you. And they – you give them a qu... the answer, and they despair of ever fitting in the answer and they go off and run something unusual. And then they can't get any tone arm motion there, as a matter of fact it's a little higher, so they run something more unusual. And the tone arm is a bit higher and they run some – needle getting tight now – so they run something that is even more unusual. And you keep telling them to do the usual, and then you find out to your horror that you have a pc you've got to put together again with tweezers practically. You can only bleed off charge one micro-amp at a time, see?

There will be casualties of this sort of thing. There's going to be some... you say to this husband and wife team, they have no training of any kind whatsoever and you tell them that they should co-audit. All right, and they go off and they co-audit, and you hear the house is burned down or something. They're busy getting divorced now, because they got rid of some O/Ws inadvertently, don't you see, and the other one couldn't take it and blew up in their face in the middle of session, and all this sort of thing. This is not... you see, this doesn't make for peace! That's what I'm bringing home. There's a certain amount of catastrophe involved in this sort of thing and the only thing you can do is minimize the catastrophe. Just minimize it. And hold it down and keep it along the line, and then not get pinned on this dissident member of the congregation and that character who is raising trouble and that situation, and then just get pinned totally against these things and forget that everywhere else it's just running fine. These various things occur.

Actually you can practically destroy an organization by getting your attention too fixated on two or three small evils of one kind or another, and you don't realize that the rest of the organization is running wonderfully well. I had that happen to me in Johannesburg. My attention got riveted and I had – the situation was picked up long after I could do anything about it and the attention and so forth got riveted on everything but the fact that the staff was doing extremely well. And the traffic was going as well as could be expected. They were getting their throats cut from a certain quarter and I think to this day don't even realize that they got their throats cut from that particular quarter.

Outside pcs were being used to collect money individually and the poor staff was not getting any of the money it was working for and therefore was working for practically nothing, and then being told by the very people who were doing it to them that it's all very sad and they should do something extraordinary, and so forth. And these guys were cutting their throat. And the second I tried to do something about it, the situation was so triggered and so

explosive and so forth that it practically spattered over that corner of Africa. Just now getting back together again.

This kind of thing occurs. And that occurred from the result of getting your attention too fixated upon some evil and trying to take this evil apart, forgetting the rest of the organization, don't you see? And it was running all right. It comes from what you could call "crusading." Crusading in ill-advised directions.

You've got mobs of people who are walking in for the PE lectures. Mobs of people, see, they're just walking in, and they sit down and so forth. And the PE director makes his biggest mistake when there's that guy named Swinkopf. And damn that fellow, you know! He comes in and he sits down in the front row, and he sits there with a sneer on his face, you know and so forth, and the whole lecture gets twisted around Swinkopf. Guy's talking to fifty-five people out in front of him, you see, and yet addresses his lecture to this one dissident character who is probably a commie anyhow. See, it doesn't make sense, you know? If Swinkopfs get too much in my road, why, I always tip off a couple of guys, the next – in the next lecture when he comes in, why, you put him out. They always do it very gladly.

There's no sense in, then, narrowing down the whole of the forward progress and all the information you've got and all the theta you could generate, you see, to take care of Swinkopf. The odd part of it is there probably aren't a dozen people in the United States, actually, who are against Scientology. I mean, count them numerically. There are probably not a dozen. Look at the amount of time and effort being invested in that particular line. Great!

Two birds at the AMA, fellow by the name of Keaton and a fellow by the name of Field. And these birds throw all the brickbats, generate all the press, kick all the fuss up that is kicked up, and so forth. Well, there's probably a member or two of the AMA board that sicked them on, and there's probably some bird down in the FDA, who – I don't know, maybe he's done something – I don't know, maybe he got somebody in a family way at some time or another, or maybe he takes all the drugs that are sent in – something. Anyway, this guy feels absolutely imperiled by something or other, so he's just Johnny to the root on it, and so forth.

Well, there's no doubt about it, they can cause a lot of fuss. But just let me point out something to you. You don't see me spending very much time concentrating on that particular dozen. Because every moment of time I spend on them is wasted on the remaining – count them, man – a hundred and eighty millions. It just isn't a figure, you see, that's proportionate one way or the other. Probably all evil generates from too great a concentration on evil. You can neglect a fantastic amount of entheta and still get by. And you keep the show on the road and you make it very easily. But the way not to keep the show on the road is get so fascinated with how the show is not on the road while it is still on the road, that you, of course, contribute to not getting it on the road. You eventually contribute to stopping the show, don't you see? You have to be very careful along in this line.

So there are fifteen co-audit teams going in your immediate vicinity and so forth, and there's one team that is always in trouble. Every Saturday night that you have off, it's an ARC break assessment for this pair. They've blown up in smoke, see? And there it is, there it is. Now what are you going to do about it? Man, I'd lay down the law! I'd say, "Now, look! Either sign up for professional auditing, go into the local HGC – something on this situation."

Because why? Because they're taking up all the time you actually should be spending with the remaining fourteen teams – which is a bad economy, a bad estimation of effort, don't you see? There are means of taking care of these situations. And what you want to do is form up ways of taking care of these things and take care of them on a routine basis, not on a emergency basis all the time, well appreciating and predicting that things like this are going to occur. And then traffic will run. And then the consequences of stirring up such a tremendous activity in the public at large and so forth, actually will be very easy to handle. And when we get – finally get through with this thing, we'll be handling a lot more than we're handling now.

This thing has fallen out into its natural consequences. Finally when you go out through the top you can generally pick up a simplification at the bottom. We are a very long way from totally finished with research, but I think that when we've gotten down to the basis of where we have shaped auditing at its lower levels totally around the definition of "auditor" – one who listens – if you can get any simpler than that, I would like to hear about it.

Therefore, I think that we have laid in a safe basic, and have made a safe assumption that this is good dissemination channel material, and will remain constant enough for us to project it very easily and heavily and consistently and keep it going for a long time and get it all grooved in, and get things shaped up in that direction, and take the general public and make 1964 the year of Scientology for everyone.

Okay? Thank you!

RIGHTNESS AND WRONGNESS

A lecture given on 27 August 1963

Thank you.

All right. What is this?

Audience: August 27.

Twenty-seven August AD 13, Saint Hill Special Briefing Course.

All right. If I can get the text written on it, these two new students will be getting Scientology – a Scientology One process known as "Acquaintance with Saint Hill." We're making strides here at an incredible rate of speed on a lot of things, and I've been working hard on getting processes arranged as to their exact uses and getting exactly what you can do with a case and how to put a pc's tone arm exactly under the auditor's control so the auditor doesn't have to worry about it and so forth.

There have been quite a few breakthroughs of great importance here recently. And all this stuff is going down in bulletin form, and I thought this morning – I was sitting there, I was thinking to myself, "Well, this morning, here I should be putting it all down in a bulletin; I'll probably go out there and put it in – down in a lecture," don't you see? And then having put it down in a lecture, then I won't bother to put it down in a bulletin, you see? Then you'll all forget about it because it was just in a lecture, don't you see? Horrible. So it left me in between, you see? So I didn't know whether to give you a lecture on the subject of what I was currently doing, you see, and what you needed to know, or throw away the lecture and put it down in a bulletin, and it left me in a terrible confusion. So I guess the best way to resolve the confusion is just tell you what I know about it – and also write it down in the bulletin. But you probably won't see the bulletin for a long time, so you better get it here.

Very complicated. Are you sufficiently confused about it? If I keep on this way, you see, you won't in a moment know whether you're reading a bulletin or listening to a lecture. [laughter] And this is Russian technology, Russian technology: how to convince somebody that black is white and that he's somewhere else when he isn't.

Lubyanka Prison, I think, they practice this sort of thing. A guy is walking down to an interrogation, a woman dentist will step out from a secret door in the hall and start examining his teeth. See, totally non sequitur. The guy is trying to understand this, you see? And while he's busy trying to understand this, something else unpredictable happens to him, see? Guys come in looking tough with big rubber hoses, and so forth, and offer him a cigarette and talk

about his wife, you know? It's all *th-th-th-th-th*, see? When he gets through, he doesn't know what he is or where he is, so he joins the communists.

The use to which mental technology is put in this universe, remember, is put that way and is put to the use it is put to in this universe because people don't know what they're doing, because there is no mental technology.

Now, if you stop and think about it for a moment, the purposes of mental technology must consist of survival, with its consequent domination – necessity to – and must, therefore, thereafter, consist of being right and wrong. It may be somewhat mysterious to you how these three things fit together in a channel, but they do. This fellow is trying to be right, trying to be right, trying to be right. Why is he trying to be right? He's trying to be right about the most aberrated things you ever heard of. He's always trying to be right.

If you as an auditor look at this bloke who is suffering from alcoholism or dope addiction or something like this, there's one thing that you can always be right about, see? It might be that it was made available to him while he was in high school and he was being blackmailed into it and he was this and that. And it might be this and it might be that and it might be something else, and it might be because his medulla oblongata has slipped – a lot of might-be's, might-be's, might-be's – but in actual fact all he's trying to do is be right. And if you want to be right about him, then you should realize that the reason he is drinking or hitting dope or something like that, or doing anything else he's doing, or cooking bad dinners or anything else – whatever else this person is doing which is apparently weird or contrasurvival – is in actual fact his effort to be right. And you can always be right about somebody's aberrations when you recognize they're trying to be right. That is the lowest ebb of aberration. Sounds completely weird.

Well, that's because a thetan can't do anything else but survive, and in order to survive you have to be right more than you're wrong, so you get obsessed in being right. This is elementary, my dear Watson. Do you follow that?

If you go out here and make a practice of being wrong, wrong, wrong, wrong, wrong, you're not going to survive. See, if you're always going to be wrong – you go out here and you get on a motorcycle, and you turn the petrol on and you turn the spark on full, advance it all the way, and – particularly one of these big boys – and kick the kick starter, and so forth, you sail somewhat gracefully over between the handlebars because the machine kicks back. Well, if you consistently do this, why, you're apt to be nonsurvival in the extreme. You follow this? So, actually, right and wrong are the tools of survival and nonsurvival.

In order to survive, you have to be right. In order to get somebody else to succumb, they have to be wrong. You follow this?

You see, actually, no great military commander ever wins a battle on anything else but the wrongnesses of the enemy. And he compounds these wrongnesses up to a total attack which really makes them wrong. So even they realize they are wrong, and of course at that moment they no longer survive. And the point you degenerate into succumb from survive is the point where you recognize you are wrong. That is the beginning of succumb – the recognition that you are wrong.

Naturally then, if that is true – and that is true; that's not sensible, it's true – naturally this follows, then, that if a person is surviving at all, if they are "thetaning" at all, no matter inside of what mass, there must be some residual rightness, even if it's only an insistence upon rightness. So rightness goes hand in glove, immediately, with survival.

So this works itself back and forth into an aberrated A=A=A. If the individual is surviving, he must be right. It can even go to – if an individual is undertaking an action, it must be a right action, if he is surviving. Do you see how A=A=A this becomes. In fact, it becomes complete idiocy from the lucidity of its beginning, because in actual fact there was no reason for a thetan to worry about survival in the first place.

See, he has to enter this lie into the scene before he gets off into this other series of lies. He starts worrying about his own survival. Now, we can well ask, "How does he start worrying about his own survival?" Well, he worries about the survival of something else and then identifies himself with it. You see? He says, "This thing has got to survive, and I am it, so therefore..." and here he comes, his next lie – and he needn't make this fantastic lie at all, but they manage it – and that is "I am now worried about my survival." And actually, it isn't until he takes that step that he goes halfway round the bend. See, he's practically finished now.

There is no reason at all, just because you have built a bunch of sand castles and are protecting these sand castles from destruction by the tide or naughty boys – there's no reason at all that you can't go on protecting these sand castles ad infinitum and safeguarding their survival. You don't have to take the idiot step of becoming a sand castle. See? It isn't until the individual takes that idiot step of becoming a sand castle that he himself becomes worried about his own survival. But at the moment he becomes worried about his own survival, he then enters into the necessity to dominate in order to continue to survive. Best way to protect your sand castles, of course, is to dominate anybody who would threaten to destroy your sand castles. That's elementary, isn't it? You have to be tougher than the other tough boys on the beach, in other words. You have to dominate their behavior to the degree of restraining them from destroying the sand castles. This makes domination a necessity, if you've already entered the game of survival. See, you don't even have to have become a sand castle to start dominating.

Now, what happens now? What happens now? The game of domination consists of being right and making the other fellow wrong. And that is all the game consists of. There isn't any other – I mean, out of this vast universe, you finally shake out this one little, tiny, idiotic simplicity, you know, and it all makes everything look silly, you know, when you come to think about it.

Russia and the United States – the great game. Well, that's silly! The game is silly. Russia has to dominate the United States in order to survive; therefore, capitalism has to be wrong; therefore, communism has to be right. The United States has to dominate Russia in order to survive, so communism has to be wrong and capitalism has to be right. What's wrong with this? Well, what's wrong with this is there isn't any capitalism to amount to anything. Ha! And there's practically no communism. That's getting idiotic about that stage of the game, you see? Anybody can see that one.

But let's go back to why does Russia have to dominate the United States and why does the United States have to dominate Russia. Well, that's because Russia is liable to destroy everything in the United States, and the United States is liable to destroy everything in Russia. Now, let's look at this a little more closely.

Why are they liable to destroy everything in the United States and Russia? Why is this liable to happen? I don't think you have any more answer than anybody else does. Exactly why? Well, that's because Russia is threatening to destroy everything in the United States, and the United States is threatening to destroy everything in Russia. And that's why the United States have to be very careful not to be destroyed by Russia, and Russia has to be very careful not to be destroyed by the United States. You see, this is very elementary.

You work this thing out. You don't need these Ruskian idiocies pronounced at great length to explain the international situation, to see, actually, what is taking place. Yes, but Russia is devoting so much of her production capacity to weapons and rocketry and other things in order to dominate the United States, that communism is failing. And the United States is devoting so much of its production capacity – it actually amounts now to three quarters of the total production capacity of the United States and three quarters of the total engineers, scientists and technicians of the United States are involved in this effort – that it is destroying capitalism. Because, you see, it "has to" in order to keep the effort going, in order not to be destroyed. Well, this is a typical game.

And you start examining this game on the basis of survive, dominate and right and wrong, and where's the right and wrong come in – you start to examine it, or examine any game on the basis of just these things: survival, domination and rightness and wrongness. Examine the game and immediately the rightness and wrongness that you see residual in it appears to be pretty mixed up.

Well, the United States would be very wrong to destroy its economic stability and prosperity in order to destroy communistic economic dominance or prosperity, see? And reversely, communism would be very wrong to destroy any benefit residual in any communistic system, if there is any, in order to knock out the capitalistic lines, you see? She'd be wrong to do that, but she is doing it and she is doing it on the supposition that she is right. And the United States is doing all this on the supposition that it is right. So you'll see that A=A enters into the situation where rightness becomes wrongness. And people will defend the most fantastic wrongnesses on the basis that they are being right.

As you audit people, if you specialize in this particular line – as you audit them you will sometimes be appalled by the justification of the person's own actions. You're utterly appalled. Gauze is armor plate compared to the argument that they will put up, don't you see? I mean, they put up this thin facade. "Well, you see, the reason I left my wife – reason I left my wife is because she seldom, uh – very, very seldom, uh – was ever home, you see, to put out my bedroom slippers. And therefore, I had to leave her."

"Well, why wasn't she home?"

"Well, she was working and supporting me."

And you say, "End of scene. *Rm-rm-rm.*" [laughs]

And yet he will go right on leaving, you see, and staying "left," and perpetuate this action and defend it down to his last breath.

I can see it now, the hammer and sickle flying over the White House, you know, and all of the arguments and press releases that are coming out from the White House saying, "Down with Russia," you see? "Down with Russia. We are absolutely right to continue to support capitalism."

Then you'll say finally, "Well, what is capitalism?"

"Well, capitalism is all the workers are told exactly where to work, and exactly how much they're going to get, and all the property belongs to the government, and a capitalist gives you a clenched-fist salute. That's what... And we are being right. This is a right action. And it's right, what we are doing."

Well, maybe the actions were sensible. If you look down along the line, you see, you'll see some sensible actions being – taking place, and this is what throws you. Because you can see some sensible actions going forward through all this, and you may understand some of this, but what you don't understand is how right this is, or why they don't recognize that the consequences of it are just wrongness, and that they are actually being very wrong while they are saying they are being very right.

You go over to Russia and say, "How come you got income tax these days, bud? How come your workers all get different rates of pay, and status symbols seem to be entering in here, and what's all this about some unions being organized, and well, what's all this going on here? This doesn't look like communism to me."

"Oh, yes, yes, yeah. Oh, this – this is communism. This is communism. You see, a good communist – a good communist loans money at interest. That's the definition of a good communist. And we're perfectly right in everything we are doing. And that is really correct communism."

And you look at this and it just becomes complete idiocy to you. You don't see whether you are coming or going, you see? What is all this about?

Well, you see this sort of thing taking place on the international front. It's very, very easy to recognize at that level of action. Very easy to recognize. But it's not quite so easy to recognize when you see this skid-row bum. He's just all soiled from having spent the night in the gutter, you see? And you smell the canned heat on his breath, you know? And there he is, you see? He's about ready to hit the chutes. Now somebody tells you, "Why is he doing it?"

"He is doing it because it is a right action."

You say, "Oh, no!"

"Yes," you say, "he's being right. He is asserting the rightness of being a skid-row bum and canned heat and all the rest of that. And he's asserting that as a rightness. And that is why he is doing it."

Well, you see, you've undercut the simplicity and you've left a large zone of unreality, because the society itself has worked out all kinds of rightnesses and wrongnesses on its own bat as to why he's a canned-heat eater, see? They worked out this fantastic... "Well," they say,

"after all, he probably had few opportunities in his youth." The guys who want more appropriation for the university say he never had a chance to get a university education, you see? The milk producers who want to sell more milk said, "Didn't have enough milk and there wasn't enough strontium 90 in it."

Everybody has got explanations for this, so you come down to the final, last-ditch explanation, which is the right one, and nobody recognizes the rightness of the explanation. He is asserting the rightness of eating canned heat. Why? Because everybody has always tried to make him wrong. His automatic response is to be right, so he has no choice but to eat canned heat. Get the idea?

Now, if he at any given instant says, "I am wrong to eat canned heat," he'll collapse. He's finished. He may go into a coma. He may even die. I mean, it's on that elementary basis. It's a fantastically elementary situation.

What is it all about? Well, behavior doesn't necessarily have everything to do with the whole track, you understand? Behavior is behavior, and then people have tried to aberrate it one way or the other and have tried to twist it around one way or the other and mess it up and make people do some other way, but the science of life still remains the science of life.

The factors of life still remain the factors of life. And if you were to delete all of the GPMs and incidents and everything else, you would not have removed the basic laws on which Scientology is built. That's interesting, isn't it? Come to think about it, you get so involved in erasing things. These simply enforce and exaggerate and destroy freedom of choice. They destroy freedom of choice over the exercise of the ability to be happy or powerful or normal or active, or something of the sort. They destroy power. They destroy freedom of choice. They destroy the ability to be self-determined or to be pan-determined about things. They make a person one-sided about everything under the sun, you see?

And they simply use basic and residual law – unwittingly, by the way – to exaggerate certain things which then lead a person to enslave himself. And the basic mechanism of enslavement is survival – the insistence upon surviving, followed by the necessity to dominate, followed by, then, the necessity to be right or wrong. The necessity to be right or wrong then becomes as irrational as the original postulate to survive. And these postulates go downhill, and you will find in them the most incredible situations you will find. You will blink – I told you about this, you look for it. And one of these days you are really going to blink at what somebody is doing in order to be right. They just become totally concentrated on the last way they can be right. This is how they can be right! And everybody's working all around them, on top of them, pounding them, publicizing them, kicking their head in on the subject, and the more that people kick, why, there it is.

Then the person will go more degraded. You'll see sometimes a person who is only nominally degraded – they're a politician or something like that, see? And you'll see this person go downhill and become a covert criminal and slip a little bit further and a little bit further. And you'll see him out lecturing for the Salvation Army, protesting against the very thing which they recently held to be right. This individual has sort of died a death now. He is talking about going to heaven. He's talking about being dead. That is mainly what he's talking about.

You very often go into – you go into a church of one of these older faiths, and you'll find the minister up there haranguing and screaming, you know, about "the evils of the demon rum," or something like that, to the congregation. "Stay ye away from that pub, bud," you know? Yelling, you know? And he goes back to his study, you see, and he takes this little nip of medicine to fortify himself, you see, after the exertions of his lecture.

Now, these birds who are working this hard were working inevitably and invariable in the field and area of death, because they are right down to the point where you get an aberrated rightness and wrongness; cessation of survival is so threatened that it becomes imminent. It actually gets dramatized before it happens.

And you'll see somebody turning against religion because of the amount of hypocrisy in it. You know, the guy is saying, "Well..." Well, the Roman Catholic church probably lost its grip on the world which it's trying to reassert now by killing off the Buddhist. I beg your pardon, the better interpretation is that it's only those in charge in Vietnam who are members of the Catholic church. That actually isn't everybody. There are some Presbyterians there, too, in the American troops, and so forth.

I have opened up a chapter here which is leaving you blinking just a little bit.

I'm sure somebody is going to make the assumption sooner or later, though, that if the only government in the world being maintained in force actively by US arms is a Catholic government, that that government's turning against another religion has something to do with something here that we haven't quite put the finger on. And we add to the fact that that same government is attacking the only other organization on the face of Earth who doesn't believe in death forever, we begin to ask interesting questions. You probably hadn't linked the attacks on the Buddhist up with US arms supporting the government of Vietnam, nor the attacks of the FDA against the FCDC in Washington, DC.

Yeah, everybody else is all right. Criminals, they're fine, and so forth. Everybody's all right. But it's just these two organizations on the face of Earth plus one other, the Theosophists, who talk about reincarnation and who talk about coming back to life again and who talk about these other things. And it's an oddity that just in the last two or three years all three of these organizations have been furiously attacked by the US government.

Sort of an interesting puzzle, isn't it? Well, don't worry about it. We'll get there before they do. This is just an interjected thing.

Now, they're evidently asserting a rightness about death. I know it's mean of me, it's cabalist, it's rabble-rousing for me to infer that the majesty of government is actually being used to further some foul, religious end in some way and to cause everybody to be dead. But I'm very interested in the fact that the Church of England, of all organizations, right down here in the form of a vicar (who, I think, has had to move since)... this bird – I'm looking at a face or two here who were present in this – was being very censorious about our giving death lessons to young children. Story went around the world. What do you think this guy does every time he stands up there in the pulpit? It gives one to wonder, you know? He's talking about going to heaven and all this sort of thing. He's giving death lessons to little kids.

Diana came home from school one day crying. She was going to a local school up here. She wanted to know if all this stuff about poor Christ was true. And I gave her the hot dope, and [laughter] – well, as a matter of fact, I did. I was very reasonable about the whole thing. I said, "Native populaces have their religious beliefs, and wherever you are, you must remain tolerant of the current beliefs," and so forth, and she took this in.

But it's interesting that this bird down here is asserting how wrong it is, don't you see, to give children death lessons while he himself is giving them death lessons. Only our death lessons are straight dope – this is what happens with regard to death – but his are a darn lie. Somehow or another, this makes him right. How does this make him right? Well, you can just go round in circles trying to figure out what's the rightness and wrongness of this, you see? Why should a powerful state attack a truthful philosophy, you see? Why, you know, why some of the calmest and most decent people in Asia – the Buddhists – why are these people being attacked and shot down and their pagodas burned and that sort of thing Why? What...? And you can go round and round and you can get real confused and you can get real upset.

Well, there's always one stable datum. There's always one stable datum: Somehow, whatever they're doing – no matter how mad the action may appear – is undertaken by them to be right. Now, you would actually have to get them on a meter or get them to explain and put in a long, long itsa line on this subject and get off the automaticities until they finally told you the rationale. And the reason it isn't a rationale is because A=A=A along the whole line. You just would not be able to believe how or why this guy had to, you know – canned heat.

You ask him a question, "Now, how does it make you right to eat canned heat?" You say, "Well, he sure can't answer that, you know, because – ha-ha! It's ruining him. Everybody has been down on him. The 'I Will Arise' and everybody else is jumping him about this, and he's been talked to by all the ministers and everybody. He's read about how the evils that it'll do and so forth. So, heh-heh, he can't defend this one." So, of course, one would never normally ask that question; say, "How does it make you right to eat canned heat?" See? Well, brother, only an auditor would be able to adventure this far, because you're going to get a screaming automaticity.

Well, it makes him right. "Eat canned heat? Well, that's..." Makes him right because "*Rah-da-da-da-da-da-da-da-da-da* and *ta-da-da-da-da-da*," and that makes him right. And "*Ta-da-da-da-da*," and that makes him right. And "...eat canned heat, and therefore this makes that right," and it's "That right and that right, and so forth, and so on and so on and so on and so on and..." I mean, you finally get through, this thing has practically wound itself around the dial.

And you say, "All right, now. Now, how does it make someone else wrong?"

"Oh, ha-ha-ha-ha-ha! So-so and so-and-so and so-and-so, and so-and-so and so-and-so and my father, and so forth and so on. And I parked my bicycle on the church steps there one day, and that old minister came out and – and he actually had the police take away my bicycle, and so forth, and he always was lecturing on the lectures of drink, you see? The evils of drink and so forth and so on – ha-ha! There you are." The guy says, "Wait a minute. That isn't sensible."

And do you know, whether he has understood it very well or not, he will now have a very hard time eating canned heat. See, here's sanitariums, the Keeler Institute – Keeley, I think it is. (One has lie detectors and the other has alcoholism. I always got them mixed.) He's been there. He's been treated. He's been biochemically injected, you know? He's been psychoanalyzed. He's been everything you could think of, see? They've given him stuff that when he eats canned heat it makes him sick. He just goes right on eating canned heat. There wasn't any stopping it because of this block – this block he had. And that intention is the strongest intention in the universe. There is no stronger intention than that at a mental level.

Above that, of course, you have the effort to dominate, and above that level you have the effort to survive. These things are very strong, but I'm talking about a mental activity: a mental activity, a thinking activity, an intentional activity – strongest intention. Survival – that just happens, you see? Domination – that just happens. Those are not intended things. You get down along the line of *intended* and it's right and wrong. And that's where that lives.

This becomes very remarkable. We've got this teenage girl. We've got this teenage girl, and she's running around and having an awful time. And she's been arrested and lectured to and shown motion pictures and been horrified and hit over the head and defamed and threatened with kicking out of her home – that if she doesn't behave on the second dynamic, you see? And she goes right on misbehaving and that sort of thing and so on and so on and so on. Now, this is an actual case history.

I had one in my office one day. Changed her whole life – almost accidental. One of the research cases that furnishes data that leads to data of this particular kind. She was just trying to make her parents wrong. She realized it. That was the change of her behavior pattern, right there. We didn't even touch in that particular case on her trying to be right. She was just trying to make her parents wrong. Well, obviously, how could you make them wrong. Well, you could make them wrong by trying to make them change their mind on what they insisted upon the most. And the diagnosis of how do you make a person wrong is, what does that person most insist upon? Therefore, if that person most insists upon this particular factor, then that is the one you must make them wrong on.

So the criminal tries to make the forces of law and order wrong, you see? The diagnosis taken from the viewpoint of the being involved is simply, what are these persons insisting is wrong? What do these people insist is wrong? And then make them wrong on it. It's a perfect Q and A, see? What they say is wrong: make them wrong. You can't get a closer identification than that, you see? Mother is saying, "Be a good girl, daughter. Be a good girl, daughter. Be a good girl, daughter. Be a good girl, daughter." Daughter, getting more and more antagonistic against the old lady – she knows now exactly how to handle Mama. You make Mama wrong. How do you make Mama wrong? All you got to be is not a good daughter. Elementary, my dear Watson, see? It isn't what aberration the individual is dramatizing. It's what aberration does the individual dredge up in order to make somebody wrong. That's behavior. It isn't the accidental thing that you think it is.

So we've got a schoolteacher. And he says, "Children, you mustn't chew gum. Children, you mustn't chew gum. Children, you mustn't chew gum." Well, the characters that like him the least are going to chew gum. Don't you see? That's how to make him wrong. You

can't destroy him overtly with 16-inch guns, but you can cave him in trying to make him wrong covertly. And he'll sit around and worry about those children chewing gum. It does. It serves to cave him in, too, a little bit, you know – a little bit, a little bit, a little bit. He may even go away sometime and stop teaching school and leave the children alone, you see? This is fantastic.

So a government which is trying to conduct decent law and order has worked against it, continuously, this factor: that bringing about decent law and order is wrong. Now, a government with that force pushed against it continuously, endlessly, on and on and on, will eventually come to the realization of exactly what keeping law and order is: It's being as criminal as possible. See, it's been made wrong to the point where it now identifies the right label with the wrong action. It knows how to be wrong: to be a decent government.

See, on this broader perimeter you watch this thing as it works its way out. If you can see that, it gives you a rather vast understanding of aberration. Now, whether or not you can reach this aberration is not the subject. This is simply, can you understand it?

Not whether or not you can reach it and do something about it with an E-Meter; because this particular rationale, although it is very true, happens to have been booby-trapped by some very evil-intentioned characters on the whole track, who implanted goals which contain – and items and implants and GPMs – which contain in them right and wrong.

And you start running an individual very long on rightness or wrongness, he is liable to collide with one of these implants and it goes into restimulation, and the cure is therefore barred. And you're unable to cure him of this particular thing, because you can't audit him on the process necessary to resolve that particular facet of aberration. This is a barrier, in other words, that's been installed. It is totally accidental that right and wrong are there, and he is not acting the way he is acting because he has that GPM.

Now, get that through your head, see? He's not. That just intensifies this action, but it doesn't bring about that action. That action would, in any event, exist whether or not there had ever been an implanter or not. But unfortunately there have been some of these implants, so you can't ordinarily say with complete security – oh, yes, you can without any security, and often get away with it – ask this little girl, "Now, how does being sexually promiscuous make you right, and who does it make wrong, and how does it make them wrong?" see, and get those two things worked out, and all of a sudden she's completely reformed. She isn't doing this at all. Oddly enough, she's no longer able – this isn't necessarily making her well – she's just no longer able to get the power into it that she had in it; she's no longer this interested in it; she's no longer this fixated on it. Because in any itsa line you will tend to trigger out enough to deintensify the force and power and concentration of the aberration.

It's very interesting that aberration is very hard to maintain. Let's say this fellow is – he's an accident prone. He takes an automobile out and runs it into a brick wall; and he takes an automobile out and he runs it off the edge of an embankment; and he takes an automobile out and he runs into another automobile; and he takes an automobile out and he leaves it parked on the train track, and so forth. And you let him come anywhere near this automobile – well, all of us have accidents to some degree, but he is carrying it to excess.

money make others wrong." Now, it might not even be real to him, and he might have an awful time doing it, but that's the end of that behavior.

Now, this is processing actually below the level of recognition or cognition. You can dig this one awful deep with a pickax. You can also do some weird things to a case in changing its behavior, going along this line. But too much of a good thing is too much of a good thing, and it's a hunt-and-punch process. In actual fact, contained in this is the answer to neurosis.

Neurosis could be defined as an antisocial action or an antisurvival action which is compulsively undertaken by the individual. We just wrapped up the work of Sigmund Freud. It's as elementary as that. You understand we didn't – if you don't intend to make the person happy, and don't intend to make the person cheerful, don't intend anything except just to keep the person – fit the person better into the social framework, and if that's all that mental therapy is for, why, you got it wrapped up. I think it's faster than implanting.

Now, in the first place, the only condition for this sort of thing is we have to be more capable of communicating, perhaps. We have to be able to communicate to the person in that we would have to listen to the person. We'd have to listen to the person. We'd have to ask the person a question. But we'd also have to get our hands on the person in order to do that. The cowboy in the black hat has to get his hands on the person to implant him, too. And they also have to do some communication, too, don't they? And then they create a hell of an ARC break, don't they? I think they get twice as much aberrated behavior afterwards. I don't think it's a solution. I don't think the development of mental technology for the purpose of aberrating people down to a level of powerlessness where they won't bother us – I don't think that's a successful approach.

Well, let's just be practical. This has nothing to do with decency or overt-motivators or anything else. Let's just be cold-bloodedly practical, as cold-bloodedly practical as these characters fancy themselves to be. I don't think that it's valuable. I don't think it's valuable technology. It's valuable to know about it, of course, from your point of view. But as far as knowing how to implant people and calling that a mental technology, or knowing how to give somebody a transorbital leukotomy and calling that mental healing, knowing how to shoot somebody with some weird powder or something of the sort that makes them bounce about in the middle of the floor for an hour or two, it looks to me like all of those lines of action are unsuccessful. I don't think they're successful. They always have a hole in them, and the hole in them is that survival can futurely be threatened.

Suppose anybody ever undid it. I wish I had a nickel for every implant station that's ever been destroyed. I've known thetans to make a career out of it. In fact, I've known thetans to tilt a planet ten or fifteen degrees, with the equivalent avalanches and glacial epochs and so forth, or pull the air cover of a civilization just because it went on implanting. In fact, there's a lot of things happen because of this. Why? Because somebody was implanting. I don't think it's a sensible solution at all. In fact, I don't think it's a solution. I just think it's a dramatization of rightness and wrongness. I don't think there's any more intention behind it than that.

Look at the amount of time and effort and energy expended. Why, in any given day the appropriation of the US armed forces is probably less than the Marcabian appropriation

for the maintenance of implant stations. I think it's expensive. I just think they do it because they are trying to be right. I don't see any other reason for it at all. They're trying to be right and make others wrong. That's all.

Now, you can add political significance just as you can on Rusk's pronouncements: "NATO must be in accord with the Franco-Berlin Wall unity because the ruddy rods are all on the left side of the rifles," you see? "And therefore, all us Turks must pull together with all us Hungarians because the great entente of northern Rhodesia must be maintained," you see?

Well, it's not quite as insane as that, but in actual fact if you take it apart and examine it very carefully, the aggregate sum total of it is insane. It is not sensible. What's the end product of it? The end product of it is no solution and a worsening condition.

Now, whenever you see this rightness-and-wrongness situation where somebody is acting simply to be right and making others wrong simply to make others wrong – you know, there's no more action to it than that, no more reason to it than that – whenever you see that, you'll see a worsening condition. Wherever that zone and area is, you'll see things worsening.

The young girl trying to make her mother wrong with sexual misbehavior: that young girl is getting worse herself and is making her family worse, don't you see? In other words, it isn't that a status quo is being maintained. You're getting a dwindling spiral out of this sort of a thing, see? It's the last dregs of domination, this whole action, you see? No matter how covert it is, it's still an effort to dominate. It's like the guy lying on the ground with four knives in him, he's still being right and the enemy is still wrong. It's still his final effort, you see, to dominate the enemy. And many of these methods of dominating the enemy exist. And it's just an aberrated war which is in progress.

Now, we look over this implant situation as an implantation proposition, and we cannot really assign to it any improvement of circumstances. If any improvement of circumstances existed, it existed for such a short term as to render it relatively useless. A short term on the whole track might even go to a hundred thousand years. That's a short term. That's no duration for an empire. They might say, "Well, we've got it all licked here. We've got it all solved," but they haven't. They've just got a lid on, and you'll notice the situation deteriorates. The situation gets worse, gets worse, gets worse.

So that any activity that enters in upon this type of a rightness-wrongness solution – "We are doing what we are doing simply to be right and simply to make somebody else wrong" – any time any solution is entered which has that sole rationale, you can then expect a continuous worsening, not only of the person who is engaging in enforcing that solution, but also the people in that person's vicinity. So the whole thing becomes a dwindling spiral. This thing is going to develop a leak sooner or later. It's going to blow out at the edges, don't you see? Any such situation is going to go *blingo!* someplace or another, because it isn't a solution, it's a dramatization.

Now, you may not suspect it, but you are looking at the final ranks not only of neurosis but psychosis. That is the madman. That is the madman. He sees spiders on the wall. Medical treatment consists of telling him there are no spiders on the wall. This looks to me like one madman handling another madman, both with the same solution. The madman is saying, "I am being right and you are being wrong," and the person (quote) "handling his case"

(unquote) is saying, "I am being right and you are being wrong." Because of this basic agreement, you find many of these medicos winding up themselves in the padded cells.

First place, they don't understand what they are doing. And they don't understand that their solution is just as crazy as the patient's assertions.

Guy is having trouble thinking: cut his brain up. Can't think. Well, ding, ding, ding, here comes the wagon, man! This is nonsense, don't you see? I mean, there isn't anything to be gained in this. I don't see anything happening on the subject of medical mental healing but more insane people. The insane population of the world is going up, up, up, up, and the medical doctors say they've got to have more people to take care of these insane and there have got to be more buildings to take care of them. Statistics are increasing. Statistics are going up. There are more and more people going insane. And therefore, we got to have more doctors to make more people insane.

You begin to look at this after a while. You say, what the devil is wrong with a legislator who won't look over the fact the statistics are rising on insanity, therefore, the money we have been appropriating it for is being wasted? Obviously, there is no proper solution to this, we obviously have the wrong people on the job. But they never do this because they're engaged themselves in a rightness-wrongness type of piece of nonsense, and most of government is how to be wrong convincingly. So the end product of the thing is no solution, don't you see?

You want to know why they did this to you, or why you ever did something to somebody else. Well, in the final analysis, the overt-motivator sequence hinges, basically, simply upon this aberration concerning survival – the effort to dominate – which falls into a contest of "I'm right and you're wrong." Now, both sides are saying, "I'm right and you're wrong," and therefore, you get a double-clashing sort of a proposition. You have A saying, "I'm right and you're wrong"; you have B saying, "I'm right and you're wrong." You get a natural commingling of their ideas. After a while they don't know what the hell they're talking about. They don't know what's right. They don't even know what they started out to say was right, you see?

Now, a mental technology, so called, which engages itself upon the worsening of people, or making people wrong and making themselves right as an exclusive activity, is not in essence a very broad or a very intelligent technology. This is hardly worthy of the name "technology," yet it does have technology, don't you see? It certainly is not a mental science which embraces very much understanding. There's very little understanding involved in this thing. Something like the psychologist or Pavlov: if you put a young man on the table and make a dog bark, the young man slavers. (I'm being sarcastic.) Well, I don't know. I'm tempted to say on the subject, you see, "Well, I don't know. I look around and I'm not having any trouble with slaving dogs. I mean, why are we working on this problem?" It's as idiotic a statement, you see, as their own conclusions.

Stimulus-response mechanisms and so forth. Why be interested in a stimulus-response mechanism? Aw, that tells us right there that somebody must be, interested in being right and making the other fellow wrong. Don't you see? The stimulus-response mechanism – that's as far as they ever advanced. Stimulus-response mechanism. Well, stimulus-response be

damned. The consequences of the stimulus-response is what is – the Scientologist is interested in. And that goes at once into the overt-motivator sequence.

You move right on upstairs from stimulus-response, you see, into a proper piece of technology. They seem to have avoided that whole piece of technology. Why? Because they're only interested in being right and making somebody else wrong, don't you see?

Now, a mental science cannot be worthy of the name "mental science" if it keeps dramatizing an unknown one of its parts. See? That outlaws anything which continues to dramatize one of its parts, you see. It outlaws it from the proper name of a complete understanding. You said a science; a science would be a complete understanding of something. Well, if something is dramatizing one of its parts, it certainly does not have a complete understanding of life.

Now, the sciences of life are difficult just to this degree: You are living. See, you have a day-by-day interrelationship with the laws of life. And to rise superior to this, in any way whatsoever, is so phenomenal as not to have happened ever before. It's one of these tricks. It's by your own bootstraps, don't you see? And for a while, if you know all the aberrative angles, you find yourself batting about in the bottle like a bluefly, see? Every direction you fly, you run into something else. If you started analyzing your own behavior in a single day according to the basics that you know, and if you had all of them available in Scientology, you see – if you analyzed your behavior throughout any twenty-four-hour period, you'd find out, a short period of that time, somewhere along the line, you were dramatizing something. In fact, you wouldn't have to do very much analysis.

In fact, right now, all these people out in front of me are dramatizing breathing. Automaticity: they think to stay alive they have to breathe. You tell some doll that someplace and his jaw would drop, you know? You say, "Well, you can't live on Exnoo because there's no air." There'd be a lot of beings that would look at you awfully blankly.

"What you want air for? What's the air supposed to do?"

"Well, you know, air, you know, air – you got to have air, you got to have oxygen."

"What are you going to do on Exnoo that you need oxygen for?" They'd try to figure it out how you're going to put it in bottles or sell it or you... Maybe you got a new fuel for rocket ships has to do with oxygen; couldn't make... They'd finally understand what you were talking about. They'd finally understand that you were peculiar. [laughs] You get the idea?

The total cessation of the dramatization of the game called life, you see, renders one, at first glance, in a very confused situation, since he's trying not to dramatize its various parts, you see, and yet he inevitably must dramatize certain of its parts. And then he finally comes to the conclusion, "In order not to dramatize life, you climb away to a large cave on the side of a very bare mountain and hope people will put crusts of bread outside, while you sit and meditate and don't have anything whatsoever to do with life."

Now, by not having anything to do with life you have now rendered yourself free of dramatizing life. And oddly enough, there's enough workability to that. You get away from all restimulative factors and your restimulation dies down, you see? Get less restimulated, you feel quite calm. So you say, "Well, this is the way to do it. You don't be any part of life."

No. The real challenge of a science of life is to know it and be able to live – be able to live that life, you see? That's the real challenge, and oddly enough, if you know all the answers you can always do that. It isn't necessary – because you know a half a dozen lies, you see, that you think are answers, it isn't necessary to go crawling off to some cave all by your lonesome, you see? You can stand out in the middle of life and live life, don't you see?

The final challenge of a science of life is does it produce life? Not does it produce death.

When you analyze this thing all the way on down, it'll leave you kind of buggy at first. You get all sorts of weird ideas. "Well, maybe I ought to stop auditing. Maybe I ought to leave auditing. And maybe I ought to get back to my knitting or whatever else I was doing," don't you see? "And I ought to something or other."

And then you suddenly realize that what you're trying to do is drop part of what you were doing, you see, in order to get away from what you were dramatizing in order not to dramatize. You can get into an awful confused state, man. You can sit around for days trying to sort something out along those lines. Well, that's all right.

It's enough to realize, however, that you are in a situation where it can be sorted out. And that's a remarkable situation to be in. Very remarkable situation to be in.

Myself, I've had to groove off the importances of existence – what are the important things? – because time, making a problem, you see, has made it necessary to concentrate on certain importances of existence and wrap these various things up. Well, that's a very proper solution to the thing, but it certainly isn't inactive. It's flat out, man, flat out activity going along at a very high rate. I notice that there's more and more of a tendency – more and more of a tendency as one goes along the line – to recognize more and experience more life. He doesn't have to work so hard to experience life. That's one of the things.

Person who can't experience very much has to work very hard to experience something and get all involved trying to experience existence. Existence is all around them. Walk down the street and they're experiencing existence. But to convince themselves that they are surviving, they think they have to stand under a truck. And that is another way of going about it. They have to suffer impacts. They have to be in there living. What is living to them? Well, living, to them, you see – find to some degree, is being right. They have to be convinced that they are being right or convinced that they are surviving or convinced they are dominating something, you see?

And you take some king of olden times: why, there he sat upon his huge throne, and so forth, and all of his courtiers are saying *bog-bog* and *bow-bow* and walking backwards three quarters of the entrance hall, don't you see, and bumping into the guards and messing it up. All of which is simply designed to convince this fellow and convince others that he is dominating, you see?

Well, I'd say he couldn't have had much of an impression on people if he had to work at it that hard. That's simply the mechanisms of domination. You find anybody who has to work at it that hard, see, he's practically dead, man. He'd be gasping most of the time.

You find some teenager, for instance, out here going to dances and listening to music and diving and experiencing all sorts of weird new thrills and sensations and so forth; they're trying to convince themselves they're alive, don't you see? They're half-dead about nine-tenths of the time. But they're having a hard time of it.

But a science of life should bring about living.

Now, there is a level at which rightness and wrongness ceases to be analytical or comprehensible. And when we speak of aberration, it's when it drops below that point. It isn't that trying to be right is wrong: It's obsessively being right about something that's obviously wrong that goes loopy. See, that's when that mechanism goes astray, and the level of neurosis is only reached when the individual is no longer able to select his own courses of behavior, when he is obsessively following courses of behavior in order to be right.

Now, everybody has a few of these. You can all try them on for size. This fellow is – eats salads. He hates salads, but he eats salads, and you just get on this. "Is there anything you're doing that you really don't like to do?"

And this fellow says, "Oh, I just don't like to eat salads."

You say, "Well, how does eating salads make you right, and how does it make somebody else wrong?"

Now, you're going to get into an interesting situation where you're going to find out he has been already overwhelmed on the subject of salads. This thing is going to cross back the other way. It's a question of how was Mother right in making everybody wrong on the subject of salads, don't you see? And that is not a good processing question. That's somebody else's aberration, so we're not particularly interested in that.

So we just bring him up to that point and this thing will snap. You've got a lot of these things, but by and large they have no value. They have no value.

It isn't until a person reaches inability, weakness, stupidity and other suchlike things as a way to be right that the dwindling spiral is entered.

Now, he's being right by being unable. When you see that one loom over the horizon in any zone of behavior, you have approaching neuroses if it's not there already. And when a civilization goes all out for this, watch it, because it's going to be dead tomorrow. The dust is going to be moaning through its temples and the tumbleweed rolling down its freeways, because that civilization has already entered in upon the necessity to be unable in order to be right.

The way to make somebody else wrong, then, is to be nuts – incapable.

Now, a dramatization, any dramatization (entering in upon this whole field of mental science), which brings about a further disability is wrong for that civilization, no matter how right that civilization thinks it is. And anything which enters a civilization into more life, more livingness, more ARC and so forth is, of course, by basic definition, right for that civilization.

So, you see, it's also capable – this also renders itself susceptible to understanding what one should do, as well as knocking out neuroses. Now, anything that is mad in an indi-

vidual, at some higher level, was okay. All madness is simply an exaggeration of some ability or capability; it's some perversion or exaggeration of this.

Let us take in the lower rungs of it – well, let's take sexual misbehavior of some kind or another. This, of course, is a lower-harmonic enforcement of the ability to create, see, way upscale. By the time you get this thing all mixed up and clouded up, and this way and that way, you get it down here, you got some sexual disability of some kind or another, and that is how the person is still being right about this upper thing, you see? So these things really enter along this line. Way up here it was right – really right – you see? And then it came down a little bit, and it was a method of survival, and then it was a method of dominating, and then it was a method of being right in order to make others wrong. And then in that contest one got enough overts – the communication line did a switcheroo, don't you see – so what was right about it is now wrong about it, but what is wrong about it is now right about it. And we've got this thing all the way down to the bottom of the scale. It's very recognizable where it came from, but it's gone through all of this switcheroo, and down at the line it's practically unrecognizable from its immediate state as far as a person's behavior is concerned.

This fellow is an artist. He could paint. Let us say he could paint a side of a house, you see, you know, with a beautiful scene, you know. *Prrrrrrrooom* – nothing to it, you know. And you find this fellow down there nursing a girl's shoe, you see, to his chest, you know? And he hides this all the time. It's a girl's shoe, and he sniffs it occasionally, you know, and it gives him kicks, you see? I mean, it's more or less the same channel, but there the upper-scale ability has become the lower-scale mockery.

And you get these lower-scale mockeries all the time get the upper-scale abilities in trouble. And once in a while you go around feeling ashamed of yourself for having suddenly thought you could do something about the United States or something like that because some nut in the booby hatch is talking all the time about doing something for the United States, don't you see?

Well, the difference is, is you probably could and he couldn't – a slight difference of ability.

Now, when you look over this whole panorama of behavior and what a person is trying to do, you enter in upon an ability to understand much of the nonsense which at the present moment you may only be protesting against. You just look around on it. But this task is rendered very difficult by the fact that the explanations so obscure the kernel of insanity of the rightness-wrongness that it's very hard to get at what they are really doing.

I don't know what the United States is doing today; maybe it's having a revolution. But it's being right about something. It's being right about something, and it's making people wrong about something. We're not sure what it is, but on a careful analysis or on an auditing level, we could discover those two points. The moment we discovered them, they'd all go un-snarl.

So a science of life actually is a science of examination of behavior, and behavior is based upon lots of ramifications, tremendous explanations in all directions, but narrowed right on down to the middle, looked at in its bare bones, it comes down to survival, dominate, rightness and wrongness. That becomes the main line of behavior. I hope sometime when

you're looking at somebody who is sitting there picking bugs off himself, one after the other, cockroach here and a cootie there, let us hope you don't jump back to keep them from getting on you. And let's hope also you don't try to convince him that there are no bugs there, because you are now playing the one game which makes him make you wrong, and at that moment, you will cut your communication line – just like that.

So now he has only one purpose in view, and that is to make you wrong and make himself right. And you can cave him in, you can deteriorate him, you can put him further downscale, but you can't bring him back up the line again. It's impossible. Because you've taken the one step to cut the communication line which could have made it all right. You see that?

So a dramatization of rightness and wrongness is not the answer to a dramatization of rightness and wrongness. And probably out of all the factors of a science of life, that one you would have to know, otherwise you would simply get trapped into the dwindling spiral of everything you tried to do anything about anyplace. It is the essential piece of understanding which is necessary to keep you free of going the chute. Okay?

Thank you.

THE TONE ARM AND THE SERVICE FACSIMILE

A lecture given on 28 August 1963

How are you doing today?

Audience: Good.

Good.

[part missing]

Well, this is the what of the what?

Audience: 28th August.

Ah! August the 28th, 195..

Audience: AD 13.

AD 13! Thank you. Thank you. The day the White House was burned. All right. Well, today we have some good news. We have some good news technically to do you the most good. This is all, actually, Scientology Two. But the understanding of it, I'm afraid, lies in Scientology Four.

Now, let me give you the first startling statement – just a startling statement. If you cannot make a Keyed-Out Clear with a Prepcheck in twenty-five hours or less of processing, then the pc is operating on a service facsimile. A startling statement, isn't it?

Male voice: Yeah!

It's elementary. It's elementary. A Prepcheck fits in with your itsa line in a very hand and glove proposition. And, of course, these are the hottest itsas there are: is on your eighteen-button Prepcheck list. Those are hot itsas.

And you give somebody an eighteen-button Prepcheck and that tone arm doesn't go through the complete rehabilitation cycle – *uh-uh-uh-uh-uh-uh-uh-uh!* We assume that you, the auditor, have not parked it with clumsy auditing. We assume that. We assume you haven't let an uncontrolled itsa line wander down through the bank and restimulate everything on the early track. See. Because you put in an itsa line that is untimed and uncontrolled, and you sooner or later are going to be in trouble. Itsa lines have to be timed. In other words, your questions on itsa always require a time limitation factor or you're going to get somebody in trouble. "In this lifetime _____," "Since you have been in Scientology _____," "In Birmingham _____," "In college _____," you get the idea; that sort of thing.

Your pc wanders around all over the place and wanders into a bunch of things that you didn't want him in and you've got a restimulation factor to deal with now which you didn't intend to have. So an uncontrolled itsa line, now that you've had a lot of fun letting an itsa line wander all over the place, I'll give you the trouble with an itsa line. And the trouble with an itsa line is that an uncontrolled itsa line will get the pc in more trouble than you've been in for a long time with a pc. Why? Because the pc's attention is permitted to wander and tick and clip things which heretofore were inert. They then restimulate and the charge comes up and blows his head off.

And then, because you aren't running systematic whole track things, like R3R and R3N, you of course keep clipping GPMs, and that sort of thing, and restimulating them and clip another GPM and restimulate that and clip another and then half a dozen engrams, then a few entrapments and a few crashes and a few betrayals and let him touch two or three overts, too! By this time you have no tone arm action. Why? The case is overcharged. That's an uncontrolled itsa line. We'll go into that more fully later, not necessarily in this lecture. I just give you that as a word of warning.

You can let a pc's itsa line wander all you please, as long as it is wandering exactly where you want it to go. [laughs] I'll give you an idea. Sometimes the pc will overanswer the question. You say, "Review..." – I was going to put this in a new Model Session and then didn't do so because you'll have too much trouble with it. You would have had. "Review the last session." All right, the pc says so-and-so and so-and-so and so-and-so. If the auditor right – isn't right up there on the edge of his auditing chair ready to cut that line the moment the pc exceeds that question, see – the pc doesn't review the last session but starts to run the incidents or new incidents contacted in the last session. Doesn't just review it, but gives you brand-new stuff out of the last session which wasn't there – in other words, exceeds the answer to it – and you all of a sudden have yourself some trouble. Well, what's this trouble? The trouble is that your pc, on an uncontrolled itsa line, has gone and plunged off and started restimulating material that he shouldn't have been in and now you're going to have trouble in this session.

You already predetermined, by letting the itsa line be uncontrolled, what you're now going to run in this session. So therefore you can't ever carry out an auditing program. It'd be perfectly all right to do that as long as he *just* reviewed the last session. That was all. "What did we do in the last session?" "We did so-and-so and so-and-so and so-and-so and etc., and I had a cognition of so-and-so and so – and – so and so – and – so." And you say, "All right. Thank you. Good. All right. *Good! Thank you.* Thank you very much. All right." Your pc – your pc, if the auditor is unadroit, psychic, and so forth, is going to feel his communication line has been cut. But let me assure you, it's far, far better for that pc to feel his communication line has been cut than wind up eight trillions eight ago in the middle of a GPM which you had no business running. Because now your pc's really going to ARC break!

In addition to that, why, you've got more charge restimulated than you're about to handle. Do you understand? You got to control the itsa line. The best way to control it is with a time span. You can do time spans in several ways. I wrote that up recently, I don't know whether it was published or not. There's a... time is always part of it. There's time by subject,

you see? Saint Hill, see, that's a time period although you've merely said a subject, and so forth. But they're all time periods.

All right, so itsa line is always controlled by time period. You go in, put in R1C on a pc without specifying the time of your question and without carefully limiting the pc's wandering and you're going to have an overcharged pc, an overrestimulated pc, every time. Got it?

There is a direction of attention necessary where the auditor comes in. Now that you've had some experience letting a pc wander all over the place, and so forth, maybe you've learned how to listen; now learn how to control that line. Very difficult problem: how to control the itsa line without cutting the communication of the pc. That, my dears, is *your* problem. [laughs] Still getting me in trouble; I've got no business telling you how to do it!

Now, what's good news, here – what's good news here that's not necessarily germane to the situation – is that a pc answering Prepcheck buttons is, of course, giving you straight, direct itsas. These are the key itsas of the case. So, as he gives you Prepcheck answers within a time period – and I don't care how you limit this time period; it'd probably have to be half this lifetime. You'd have to clean up something on the order of about half of this lifetime or maybe a bit more in order to make a Keyed-Out Clear with ease. A Clear – let's drop it back in definition to the Dianetic definition which never considered anything more than this lifetime and let's handle what we set out to handle in the first place. We made a lot of Keyed-Out Clears. Let's not defame this particular situation because it is very valuable. It's a valuable state of case and it's a state of case which you yourself ought to be able to create now with the technology we have with the slightest – without the slightest qualms.

How? Well, just put in an eighteen-button Prepcheck. Well, do you require an assessment? Well, that would be nice. That's about how valuable the assessment is. It'd be nice. Gives the pc something to ask – answer about, the assessment does. But that assessment and your Prepchecks are headed at only one thing. They're headed at restimulation. What you're trying to do is key out restimulation and that's the only thing you're interested in, is just keying out restimulation. Therefore, clearing is destimulation. Way to clear somebody is destimulate him. Well, how do you destimulate him? Well, you knock off the points of clearing where the restimulation took place. This has nothing to do with getting out the original incident.

Incidents, then, categorize into an inert incident – unrestimulated – an inert incident. Nobody's worried about it. It's buried down there in the center of the Earth. Nobody's kicked it, tripped it, touched it – has nothing to do with it, don't you see? It's inert. It's got charge in it – potential charge, man! You tread on its tail and it goes *bzzzzzzzz!*

Now you have restimulated it. All you have to do is flick the pc's attention on it and you have restimulated it. There's of course the degree that you can restimulate it, but we are not worried about the degree that we restimulate it. This could be a large catalog like Kraepelin's chart of insanity, see, the degree of restimulation. And if you work over an incident and chew on it and chew on it and chew on it and restimulate it, of course you restimulate it more. And then there's not letting it discharge while it is being restimulated and there are all kinds of conditions to the degree that an inert incident can be restimulated, see; restimulated greatly or slightly or just kicked in or something. Well, we don't care about all of that. That's getting

far, far too nice. That's like a fellow being good mannered and being an expert on Emily Post. I don't think they have anything to do with each other particularly. It's just being too much. It's what kind of fingernail polish do you wear on your little finger that you hold aloft from the tea cup, you see? What is the proper color of the fingernail polish? What is the proper color of it? That of course is *pooh!* Who cares?

An incident is restimulated or it's not restimulated and that will do us. You will find yourself saying, "Good and proper restimulated," you see? And there's also "unknowing restimulation"; it got restimulated and nobody knew what was restimulated including the pc and that is the subject of your ARC break. There are different conditions of restimulation. But in final analysis, it doesn't matter what the condition is. The fact remains that it is restimulated. So there is simply this matter of it being restimulated.

And then there is a state of case. A case is restimulated. All cases are restimulated to some degree of one kind or another – all cases are. But a case can be overrestimulated and that is a condition of restimulation. The conditions of restimulation are extremely varied, as I have just said, but there is a condition of overrestimulation and that condition of overrestimulation is that it will – its Definition is – it will not discharge by ordinary means.

Now, the situation that we have to deal with, in all of these regards, is whether or not something can be discharged. And something that is overrestimulated is not easily discharged because in some fashion or another the discharge has been prevented. That's prevented discharge; overrestimulation. So it comes from getting ahold of too much and not discharging it. And that is what is an overrestimulation.

And then there's the condition of destimulation which simply knocks out the restimulation. It doesn't knock out the incident. And then there's the condition of discharge. Discharge is entirely and completely wrapped up with what is being discharged. It is simply the flow-off. Now, an incident which is discharged, is discharged! It is no longer capable of restimulation. It is not now an inert incident. It is a gone incident. The batteries in it have been short-circuited. That's the end of it. It is no longer capable of producing restimulation – discharged.

Now, where you get a condition of restimulation which is then let off, that is not discharged. Now, we're introducing a special definition and meaning here. That is not discharged. It is *destimulated*. Got the idea? That's not discharged. Discharged means that the incident just is now incapable of being restimulated. You have just up and hit it in the head with an ax and it's gone, see? But if this incident is going to be put back in an inert state, then you destimulate. So there's two things which you can do to a bank. One is destimulate it, which is simply knock out the key-ins of the original charge. You didn't knock out the original incident, you just knocked out the moments when the original incident was keyed in.

I'll give you an idea. You're coffee shopping with somebody and you say – you say, "You realize, you realize that there's a GPM – there is a GPM devoted to homosexuality, in the between-lives implants? There is one!" And he says, "Oh, I don't really think so." He says, "Well, get the – get the – get the idea now, just get the idea of 'to be a homosexual.' Just get that idea for a moment, and you'll see." Ha! That, of course, throws that GPM alive, see? It actually – just discussing it isn't going to do very much about it, see. He's got to con... you got

to concentrate – somebody's got to concentrate his attention on it! Him or somebody else, you know, has got to look right at it, you know, straight at it and bang!

That GPM, which up to this moment has been inert, now becomes restimulated and is now in a restimulated state. Now, there are two things which can be done with it. One is discharge it, which is run it. Get its items out of it and take it off. It's something like taking the battery out of a car. Discharge it. In other words, there's no battery left in it. It can't charge up now. That's it. It's had it, you see?

And the other thing you can do, is say, "Now, recall the time that you were talking to Joe, there, in the coffee shop, and he said to remember that GPM. Yeah, that's right. Well, what was happening *in the coffee shop*?" See, there's your time factor, see? "Oh, there was a lot of clicks and clacks of cups and saucers, and Joe was arguing with me, and so forth, and actually I had a withhold from him at the time. Been out with his girl last night," and so forth, and *click-clock*, that's the end of that GPM restimulation, see?

Get the idea? That is now destimulated. Now, at any given moment, somebody can come along and say, "Well, there is a GPM in the between-lives area, 'to be homosexual'." "I don't believe it," he says.

You say, "All right. Well, just take a look at it!" Bang! You see? There it is; somebody's turned on the ignition switch.

So, an incident – an incident, which is an inert incident – is not having any effect on the pc. It's not part of his aberrative picture, you see. But might very well, by various chains and channels, have influence upon him, don't you see, in various ways. But it itself, as an incident, is not restimulated. We're not interested here in behavior. What does this inert incident do to influence behavior – the degree that it is inert – we're not interested in that. We're just interested in whether or not charge is coming off of this thing or charge is blocked up and almost off of this thing, and we're interested in that kind of a proposition.

So there's two things you can do to an incident. You can destimulate it, which is knock out the times it's been keyed in, or you can discharge it, which is to just to knock it out and shoot it down in flames, forever, see? There's the two things you can do.

Now, let us consider, let us consider that the reactive bank is basically concerned with and contains inert incidents. Let us just assume that. It's inert incidents. After all, there's a fantastic amount of time track and the individual has not been out on this time track to amount to anything and there it is all stacked in one way or the other. And there's probably thousands – hundreds of thousands of incidents – make some auditors just weary to think of how many incidents there are in the reactive mind. They'd just throw their hands up in horror. And all of those things are little potential batteries. They can furnish charge. They can furnish charge like mad, see?

But nobody's been walking around on top of them. They're just lying there. They're not doing anything, see. Not hardly anything at all. They're not doing anything. Well, if they'd just stay quiet, you'd never have to clear anybody. But the pc's attention, directed by life or some artificial means such as auditing, can be made to connect with – or by his own means –

can be made to connect with one of these incidents that has never before been alive. And at that moment its batteries go *bzzzzzzzz!* and start generating juice.

Now, what's remarkable is it's actually the pc's attention which generates the juice. So the incident is merely a manif... a trick put together by which the pc's attention can be converted to restimulation over which he has no power. It's out of his control, if you want to go into the real mechanics of the situation.

In other words, here's this dead fish lying there. Had no life in it. Pc's attention is placed on the dead fish and the fish begins to wiggle. Worse than that he begins to fan his tail and the ripples come up from that we will call "charge" – that's charge. All right. Now actually, as long as his attention is flicked back and forth across this inert incident, charge is generated, and if this attention is fully enough directed to it and if the channel of the pc's attention is clear enough so as to permit understanding and confront – in other words, permit his ARC to flow – you will see motion on the tone arm of your meter, and very soon, fish: no wiggle. Very soon after that, fish: not there.

Now, actually, you can put the pc's attention on this, he can put his own attention on that zone or area of the time track as many times as he please and he will never get any charge from it. That's discharging an incident. That's erasing one. You have various terms for it already.

Let's look at this other action. Let's look at this restimulation from another point of view. Pc's attention flicks onto it – either from an uncontrolled itsa line or something happens in life. Somebody comes charging up to him and holds a dead fish in his face, something like this, and it reminds him of this other thing – and his attention wittingly or unwittingly flicks over this particular section of the bank which has been lying quiescent. And the moment when his attention flicked on it is the moment of restimulation. We call that a key-in. His attention hits it, so you got a moment of restimulation.

Now, oddly enough, it is only necessary to destimulate that incident to have it go back into a dead fish state. You only need to hit this moment of restimulation. Knock out any aberrative factor in the moment of restimulation and the incident will destimulate and the individual's attention is no longer fixed or fixated on this particular incident and the incident goes quiet again. "Keying out" is the term we normally assign to that action.

So theoretically, you can take a hold of the pc and take anything as powerful as the eighteen buttons of the Prepcheck and with any time of – kind of a time span, or subject direction here, that nevertheless gets it all in – let him wander up and down this thing, putting in the buttons of the Prepcheck – and you should key out the bulk of anything that has been keyed in in this lifetime. Then you would return to a state of free needle.

You have, in effect, Clear. You've destimulated somebody to a state of Clear. That's a Clear. You see, it isn't necessary, then, to make a Clear in order to make an OT; but, you should know how to do it because you're going to have to do it, in part, a lot of the time.

Very fascinating, that all of this ties together so neatly, because it s directly represented and analyzed by the tone arm. Directly and immediately, and in the higher state of free needle, of course, requires the needle in addition to the tone arm. There are eight states of

needle. You'll have a bulletin on it. There's no reason to go into them now and call them off number by number. They begin with free needle, they begin with tightening needle and moving tone arm. They go up to – through this to high tone arm. They go through high tone arm to low tone arm. They go from low tone arm to tone arm at clear read, dead thetan. See? Clear read, tight tone arm, tight needle, no motion, at clear read, for the pc. That's dead thetan that you've got in your *E-Meter Essentials*, and so forth.

Its next stage now – let's – you got that? That's a cycle of tone arm conditions. There are a few more of them, intermediate stages, but you'll have a list of those, as I said. Now, let's take a look at this. They also compare to your eight levels of case. They're straight across. You can analyze the level of case by the level of behavior and action of the tone arm. Now that makes – I'd been trying to solve this for you for a long time of how the devil did you make a diagnosis of the case and finally worked out how you could do it, with the way a person appears on a meter. So, that's very direct.

How does he behave in the first few minutes of processing on the meter? And that gives you the level of case – bang. I'm not making a lecture now on the diagnosis so you can have your levels of case and your tone arm conditions and so forth some other time, or in the bulletin which I'm doing on it, if I ever finish it!

I seem to keep hacking away at this bulletin. It's now getting about a foot thick, full of papers and...

Now, the conditions which you must pay attention to are these: dead thetan, clear read without tone arm motion and tight needle. That's your lowest case range, save one. There is one below that. But that one below it is not a tone arm manifestation, so it is not included. But I just throw it in gratuitously. The needle is inversely reading. It's inversely tight so it's frantic. You'll see for the first time a constantly rock slamming needle with the tone arm sitting at dead thetan. It's just constant charge that is reading. It's like reading a switchboard of a power plant, it's just *yaawlyaaaa* – everything moving except the tone arm. But we just include that in the unaware case since it's a needle manifestation; we don't need it.

Your next movement up from dead thetan is low tone arm case – the low tone arm case. That case sits constantly and continually around 1 or 0.5 or something like that. You just can't get any motion out of it. And the next case that is important to you is the high tone arm case. And the next case is one moving in the high range and then there is the case which has got what you would call good tone arm motion, which is going past and through clear read. And then this goes right on down to free needle with tone arm at clear read.

In other words, it turns a whole cycle. So you have to be able to recognize the difference between a dead thetan and a Clear. It's fairly easy to do. One's alive and one's dead, I mean, [laughs] but you'd be surprised how often this one's been missed! I've seen it missed. Guy sitting there, he's a pale gray, you know, never has anything to say. The needle is totally stuck. You ask him anything, try to do a Sec Check or something on him, total stuck needle. No reaction from anything of the sort. Somebody comes around and said, "Well the guy's Clear." I've had it happen! I haven't believed it, but it's happened.

Then I've seen arguments with Clears. Arguments with clear reads. Now, you can see that if the state of Clear – and this is something that's needed classification and clarification

for a long time. We're working actually now at the level of Scientology Three when we're actually working with Clears. This has needed clarification for a long time. The second I tried to push a Clear through from anything but a destimulated Clear to a discharged Clear, I found out you had to go all the way to OT. There wasn't any way stop. Even though the person would exteriorize and they'd be a Theta Clear and they'd be this and they'd be that and so forth. None of these – none of these furnished a sufficient way stop short of OT so it's just a long pull. The odd part of it is that at any time on that route you could make a Clear. At any moment on that route, you could make a Clear.

Well, all you have to do is prepcheck them this lifetime to a free needle and you got a Clear. That destimulates whatever you're running, see? You just drop all the restimulation off the case, and there it is. You'll have a free needle. Now, it's interesting that this is a very easy one to produce. It's been produced by a nine-year-old boy on a staff member in New York. That's right! He just got in the Prepcheck buttons on his pc and didn't nag the pc and clean cleans or cut lines, probably didn't even read the meter, to that degree! The pc finally said that that was all the suppress, well, that was fine, that was all the suppress. I don't know that the session went that way, he might have been hell on wheels getting that needle clean, too! But obviously, he couldn't have cut the line very hard or he wouldn't have gotten the result he got which, of course, was a free needle. Needle sloppy and flop and drifting across and falling on its own pins and you can't get it to read on anything, you see? Elementary.

Now, the condition you've got to have, in order to take anybody to OT, is that next-door neighbor to a free needle, a moving tone arm which is moving through the clear read with good motion. Now, if you don't achieve that before you start trying to strike for OT, you're not going to make it. Well, why? The case is overrestimulated. There are too many incidents kicked in, and you, in trying to take the case – it's elementary, it has nothing to do with the state of case, oddly enough. I mean, it doesn't matter whether the guy is loopy, balmy or – it has nothing to do with it, you see, what he can or cannot do, it's just the state of this meter. And you try to take this character on to the backtrack and of course you restimulate something new and you add it to the overrestimulated case, which adds up to a frozen tone arm. So you actually have put his case state down one click, see, from wherever he is. Now, if you continued to do this, he would theoretically – theoretically – go from a fairly loose tone arm – well, that is to say it moved a little bit once in a while – he'd go to a high tone arm and if you continued to overrestimulate the case and run the case without tone arm action, the case would then become a low tone arm case. And if you continue to run the case without tone arm action, you would have that needle stuck at the clear read; just as elementary as this, you see?

Then, by doing a Prepcheck – now it's now more difficult to do the Prepcheck, don't you see, because he's sort of disassociating and he's overcharged and blown toward PT and he can just get yesterday and so forth – you've overcharged the case. Now, with Prepcheck, however, you start cleaning up all this stuff. You back the thing down from clear read stuck; that goes right straight on through to a low tone arm case, stuck, and that frees up a bit and goes to a high tone arm case, stuck. And then with more prepchecking and actions in this direction, destimulating the case all the way, the case then turns to a fairly free needle – toward the free needle state, don't you see?

Well, you don't have to get to a free needle in order to now run the case on the back-track. It's a cinch if this guy is carrying around this much toxemia in the way of an inert bank, that any time anybody sneezes in his direction, inadvertently puts his attention on the time he was crucified, he then – he goes from free needle to this, you see, [laughter] it's a cinch he's got to have those incidents discharged sooner or later.

Now, the subject here is not *how* you discharge the incident, it's *when* you discharge the incidents. See, that gives you all. Now you really know all when you start to look that over. Well, you put the case in a state where incidents can be discharged. And if the case is getting good tone arm action – and what do I mean by good tone arm action? There's a bulletin on it – but you've got – you've got to have a fair sweep of that tone arm. It's got to be moving around, man. And it should, preferably, be moving through 3, preferably moving through 3. A higher range motion, from 3 to 5, is critical. And the second you go backtrack, by actual experience, on a case that is moving – well, not 3 to 5, but a case that is moving from 3 – no, let's take an actual – let's take in some actual figures here: A case moving from 4 to 5.25 with good tone arm action, when taken on the backtrack to restimulate a new incident or GPM, promptly flies up to 5.75 and sticks. See? The case would run on this lifetime with tone arm action between 4 and 5, or something like this, or 4 and 5.25, and get good tone arm action. And the second you go backtrack and grab a handful of inert incident and restimulate it, why, clank! She goes clang! Right there – stuck – 5.5 – stuck – 5.75, something like this, don't you see; stuck. *Thung!* There it is, see? Got the idea?

So that case isn't a high enough case level to run backtrack on. How do you diagnose this? Tone arm motion is moving in that sphere or zone. Now, let's take a much more critical case. Let's take a case that is moving down here from 2.25 to 0.5, and let's achieve that as the case's tone arm motion. 2.25 to 0.5 is the extreme range; and we take that case backtrack, well, you're probably not going to make a high needle. You're probably going to stabilize this case toward clear read with less tone arm action. Ah! You moved it from a low tone arm case to a dead thetan case. That is a long way from enough tone arm action or a proper tone arm response to run backtrack, see. That's a long way from it.

That case, actually, under Prepcheck, will become a high tone arm case – in theory – and move around to the high range before it moves down to proper tone arm action. Do you see the progress of a case, then, as represented by the tone arm? Stuck tone arm at clear read, low tone arm, high tone arm, tone arm in range, tone arm settling back to clear read but loose and the needle free. See, it goes that cycle. That's the way that tone arm behaves in the presence of cases. To get a clear, absolute, text book look at this, is rather difficult because sometimes, when you start prepchecking, the case transfers rather rapidly from one kind of case to another case – rather speedily – goes through one of these stages without your seeing it go through the stage. See, because you weren't purposely going to stick the case high up. So therefore it doesn't stick way up and then doesn't stick lower, and so forth, actually does a spin and goes through 7. And you'll see such cases, a low tone arm case, go through 7.0 – *bzzzzzz!* And you wonder where the needle's gone – where it's gone – where's it gone – sit there, the meter's gone out of action, obviously, because the tone arm can't be centered on anything – gone, you know!

When that happens to you, and you wonder what has happened, by the way, there is something on here, you probably had never paid much attention to, there's the trim knob. And you just take that trim knob between your thumb and forefinger and give it a violent switch. And you just twist that trim knob all the way over and your needle will come back on. When she goes through 7 and won't register, why, your trim knob will put the needle back on the dial for you – if you get stuck at 7. Handy thing to know. But I myself – it happens so frequently... infrequently that somebody goes through 7.0, that I myself get caught on this. I got caught on this the other night.

I was trying to catch the thing... and then finally flip, and I had it. Thought the meter goes out. It's almost impossible, it's such a startlement, to keep from directing the pc's attention to something weird going on here. Could happen – very rare. It's very rare that your thing goes through 7.

Now, it can go through 7 wrong way to. It can go through 7 from high tone arm – high stuck tone arm – to low stuck tone arm. That's undesirable. It can also go through 7 and come back off 7 again, by going through high tone arm, through to low tone arm, you rescue the pc by doing R2H, or something like this, you're doing R2H or something which rescues the pc rather easily and relieves charge rather easily and keys out nicely. And it only stays in a low tone arm state for a split second. And then *slip-slip-bing-bang!* Goes back through 7 again and comes up on the other side, but this time maybe a bit higher. In other words, you were carrying the case downhill and you went through 7. Going through 7 doesn't always mean that the case is improving. The case can also deteriorate.

Now, this puts under your control – this puts under your control – the very interesting fact that you can make a Clear at any given moment. You can make a Clear anytime.

You can just sit down and make a Clear! Nothing much to it. You got the weapons, it's very easy, just don't clean cleans on the Prepcheck line, or something like that, and be rather permissive in running some kind of a Prepcheck on some kind of an assessed subject, and maybe another Prepcheck on another assessed subject, and maybe even a third one on another assessed subject, and all of a sudden you'll be sitting there looking at a free needle. Pc will feel wonderful. It's fine.

And, oddly enough, you have done enough – such is the power of auditing – to keep him going for years in most cases. They'll start worrying about it, however. They'll start chewing at things which they remembered they used to chew at and they'll wonder how those are now and there goes their attention onto an incident you'd made nicely inert. And they kick that one in so when they get up in the morning they put themselves on the E-Meter to find out if they're still Clear this morning – and they're not. They're at 3.25 and that's not so good. And they worry about that, don't you see, and wonder what incident kicked in, put in their own itsa line, flick down, hit some other, and the next thing you know you've merely got somebody with an active tone arm now.

You see what's happening here? In other words, you carefully destimulate somebody and they, or life, restimulates the thing back out of existence again. Well, that's about all there is to clearing. Clearing, then, you would look at it as a relatively unstable state, and so it is.

But it is more stable than anything that's ever existed in the whole field of mental healing, psychotherapy, or anything else; so why not accept it as a state?

Now, you could – the next step up by which you achieve this and by which you achieve this totally stable – with complete stability – is there's nothing left in the bank except things that don't have batteries in them, see? The incidents left, whether they're inert or otherwise, aren't going to do anybody any harm. You get a case level 2, you see, as far as the bank is concerned because you discharged everything else. You're going to start seeing free needles occasionally, and when you just delete all of those, too, or delete why he is mocking up a bank, all of a sudden the whole meter goes blank. Then the pc has to worry about how does he estimate the amount of beam to put on an E-Meter electrode in order for you to get any connection between the two cans. And one way of doing that is just hook a permanent beam between the two cans and the meter continues to read very nicely. That hasn't anything to do with the individual.

In other words, you haven't got anything to measure and that, of course, you reached up to a state of OT. So a state of totally discharged bank is OT, and a state of – see, OT and Clear are the same breed of cat except they go out on two different sides of the house. See, you pull the guy out of the bank and he's not in the bank and he will behave very nicely and can probably do a lot of interesting things, but if he does them he's going to kick in charge, occasionally, and this is going to worry him and he doesn't really dare turn on any power or juice, because if he turns on any power or juice he runs into inert incidents and they activate and this throws him down scale again, so he feels tippy. He feels – he feels somewhat unstable the second he starts keying back in again. It's a loss of hope. He gets a lose. That is he considered himself in such wonderful shape and suddenly he isn't in such good shape.

Because, actually, that fellow still has in his bank enough incidents – he has them all, you see – that if you threw those incidents alive, one after the other, systematically preventing their discharge, you could run this case just *bang-bang-bang* – by the amount of charge that was restimulated – you could just run the case down to action – action, and then highest tone arm, and then low tone arm, and then dead thetan. You could so overcharge him he couldn't remember his name, rank, serial number or anything. Because he's still got a bank.

Overrestimulation is the cause of amnesia. All you have to do is overrestimulate somebody, you get amnesia. It's the cause of weird behavior. It's the cause of a lot of things. It's the cause of making you feel like your skull's coming off. It's the cause of making your body feel bad. It doesn't matter much what part of the body feels bad or what's the significance of feel bad is, it's the overcharge that makes one feel bad. One feels nervy, edgy – that sort of thing.

Now, if you were to give a pc three sessions in a row without achieving any tone arm action on the case, the case starts to feel pretty wild because just the fact of auditing is going to restimulate. In other words, he's going to wander around. Now, the more overcharged, the more restimulated a case is – the more overrestimulated, to use the proper term – a case is, the more it greases around on the track. The more it dissociates, the harder it is for it to hold a position on the track. The harder for it is to sit in an engram. The harder to stay on the back-track. The more easily the case is swept up toward present time. It's all grease, see, and it's all

uncomfortable. Memory is bad, recognition is bad, the facsimiles look bad. Of course, you're walking up to something that's charged like – got ten thousand volts on the confounded thing, you know, and you expect him to get near this facsimile. See, because he's got so much charge residually, the charge is starting to match up with charge.

Incidents start to jam together and that is all assisted by wrong dates and wrong durations. And the bank starts to look like it's been in a wine press or something like that. It's kind of a mess. And that is always due to overrestimulation. Now, as you move overrestimulation off the case, why, the case goes back into a happy state of time track in place – everything's in place, everything's fine. You don't even have to head for the exact moments of restimulation, just Prepcheck buttons are good enough. Case all gets patted back together again. Time track will be back there, unwalked on, but in beautiful condition. The pc will be able to get near incidents, hold himself on the time track; everything's going along fine. Visio is up and perception up when he does hit an incident.

Now, in a condition like that, an auditor, carefully, without keeping the itsa line in with no control – an auditor carefully regulating the pc's attention – goes backtrack, grabs up a handful of GPM that he knows about and runs it with an accurate line plot and discharges the thing, and so forth, and he's still getting tone arm action. Now, the tone arm action of the pc potentially will increase and you get better tone arm action because he's one less GPM, don't you see? That is, even if you do put his attention on the backtrack, it isn't so likely to freeze; providing you don't take eight GPMs, you see, restimulate all those, and then go off to find some better-tasting clover. And then because that didn't taste very well, go off someplace to find some more. And then find the exact combination of how come he got GPMs. Well, let's get basic on the whole line of GPMs and let's get the first GPM out. Let's do this, let's do that, and let's not run anything. And the next thing you know, why, your case is a high stuck tone arm case and you're getting no tone arm motion; you can't get anything on the backtrack; he has no perceptions; his memory's bad. Somebody drops a pin a block away and he jumps a foot. He's all nerved up. What is happening to him in auditing? Auditing is doing him in – all of this, all of this, all of this, you see? And he gets all of those things as a net result of overrestimulation.

Now, you can turn right around, prepcheck the case – with appropriate terms, and so forth – you can prepcheck the case back to good tone arm action; take him on the backtrack to stuff you already know is there, take the stuff up selectively one after the other, discharge it properly and the case is on the road again. But the wrong thing to do is to not pay any attention to the condition of the tone arm and hope that you can go backtrack and pick up the incident which is responsible for this restimulation. *Pah-ha-ha-ha-ha!* Because you always restimulate, at any given instant, more than you are discharging. So a case has to have some latitude for restimulation. You're going to do a – you're going to take one Bear GPM series; one Bear series. Well, I defy you to run one Bear series without ticking the adjacent pair... pardon me – one goal out of the Bear series without ticking the adjacent pair in the series: the one above it and the one below it.

Just in the process of finding the top oppterm, why, the pc is around – that isn't so much. Finding the items, that's fairly easy. But getting down to the bottom – you have to have the next GPM in the series to get the bottom oppterm. So you've now thrown that one alive,

haven't you? And now how about listing for the next one? Well, that's liable to throw that one and two or three other series alive, see? What is the next GPM? Well, you have to list for it which, of course, throws more restimulation onto the case.

There's got to be some tolerance for an additional restimulation without killing the tone arm action. In other words, the case has to be in pretty good shape to have this kind of thing happening to it. It's got to have a width of tolerance. In other words, you started out with a margin of tone arm action. Now if you started out to do this action with no margin of tone arm action, no tone arm action to spare at all; this case is running between 4 and 5. Getting good TA action between 4 and 5. And now we're going to go back and we're going to take a series of the Bear goals, one right after the other, and we're going to run those GPMs out.

That case is going to stick at 5.25, or thereabouts, and is not going to budge because it's overrestimulated. See, it's overrestimulated to begin with; didn't have enough margin to run on. Now, sometimes you win on this, so you discard it. Sometimes you just play it lucky. You knew there was a GPM back there, you went back there, you ran out that GPM and it restored a little more tone arm action and so you ran the next GPM to it and there's a little more tone arm action. You thought that was fine. And once in a blue moon, you will actually restore the case's tone arm motion from the backtrack. Cut your throat, because that's the type of win which leads you into sin.

Because the other nine times out of the ten that you do that, the reverse happens. You go back, you knew where the GPM was, you're going to run this GPM, you got the plot, everything of the sort, you start – *bu-uh-uh-tut-tut-bebo-ba-pong!* And we're presented with something which is running at 5.5.

One session at 5.5, pc survives it. Two sessions at 5.5, *hmmm-mmmmmmmmm-mmmm*, "Well, if we just get the rest of this GPM out, *ahhh-ahhh*, if we can just get the items and we have no – no ARC breaks or flubs or anything like that, and the pc stays happy through the whole thing and we get enough charge off the case because the GPMs are actually what cause that tone arm to stick, we know that, so-so-huh-this-we-get-the-th-th – and so on, you – you say you have an ARC break? Well, let's see, do we do an assessment? Uh, well, maybe we can just clear it up – what – did I cut your comm or something? Oh. *Ohhhh!* Next – give me the next item. The next item. The next item. Yeah, give me – give me the next pair! Give me the next four." [laughs] "Let's just get anything off of it we can, down to the end!" See?

5.75 – stuck. We did get a blowdown of 0.2. And we try to run something else, and there's that tone arm: Up! And you're not going no place, man! And you can't get on the backtrack without sticking it harder. Why? The case is already overrestimulated. You've got to take a long breath and run something on this case to destimulate it and return the tone arm action so it's going pleasantly, back and forth across 3, and is running in to good condition and good tone arm action before you dare do anything else on the backtrack.

Now you go on the backtrack and get some of the charge off and the case runs like a startled gazelle and everything is fine! In other words, you damn near got to make a Clear before you can OT somebody.

I consider that a very interesting set of data, and that's why I say we're lucky. Because that tone arm behavior compares exactly to case levels and case level is just overrestimula-

tion, not bank. You consider that a case has a bank, a reactive mind, the content of which is inert. But if he gets walking around in there in his muddy feet, it soo... going to soon cease to be inert. But there it sits. Nice big inert mass of junk. Unrestimulated. Big, it's sizable! It's formidable! But it is inert and therefore is not bothering anybody.

And then we have a subsidiary, if we want a graphic – graph this so it looks like something. Draw a great big circle for your inert bank and then draw a little tube off the big circle and draw another little circle. And you call that the restimulation; the amount of restimulation. And the amount of restimulation is always the auditing target. Now, that amount can be great or small. And as it becomes great, you get the lower case type and as it becomes small, you get the higher case type as far as your representation is concerned.

In other words, you're working on two bins here. There's one great big one, that has inert, and then there's what has been restimulated off of that, and that lies in another cubicle. And the auditing is always done against the cubicle of restimulation. And when that cubicle is emptied, the auditor can reach into the big bank, expertly, grab by its tail one GPM, haul it over into the little restimulation cubicle, audit the hell out of it and empty the restimulation cubicle of that, and then reach over into the big bank and haul another great big whopping series of stuff out of it and put it into a state of restimulation. And just graphically represented, it's now in the restimulation chamber, and now he empties the restimulation chamber and so he brings about an OT. Now, when he puts his great big hands into the inert bank and hauls out fifteen dozen fish, all in full restimulation, he finds he's got more fish than he's got bank! He feels now that he's auditing the whole reactive mind, simultaneously, and that's the way it looks, because he's restimulated too much.

So, having – if he's done that error, the thing to do – or if life has done that to the pc – the thing to do is just throw the fish back into the main chamber inert, and just empty this cubicle.

Now, if we get this graphically pictured, we get something that looks something like this – which I've just described to you. We have your big bank and that is your reactive mind, and then we have the restimulation chamber.

You understand? And your restimulation chamber has some kind of a vent on it which is discharge. Now, you can discharge this – and always some of this discharges, regardless if you're destimulating – or you can put it back to sleep, which is destimulate, see? So there's – you're auditing the restimulation chamber, always. You're always auditing the restimulation chamber and you have another action, which really isn't auditing, it's restimulation. You do it with an E-Meter, and so forth, and you select something out of the reactive mind and it goes live and it looks like it hasn't moved or anything, and it really hasn't. But pretend that you've hauled that through into the restimulation chamber and you've got now charge. And you audit that charge off and you discharge that.

And when you've got this thing nicely empty, only then do you reach back into the reactive mind and haul something new out into the restimulation chamber and discharge that. At any time, if this condition seems to exist, whereby your restimulation chamber seems to be that size, you open up this line – of course inevitably you get a little discharge here – but you open up that line and just empty it back into the reactive mind. Got the notion that we're in-

volved with here? It's just the idea is the auditor can, at will, put into restimulation or into this restimulation chamber, at will, he can put anything and everything he wants from the reactive mind.

Well, you got line plots, you got pictures of the track, you got various things like this. Put an itsa line in, "Uh..." – get a time factor: "On your early track..." that's a nice time factor! "On your early track, what do you suppose you must have run into that convinced you you should have aberrations or pictures or something like that?" And then just sit there for a while, see, and let the pc talk. In fact, sit there for several sessions, if you really want to make a good test of it, because you're going to get tone arm action first. That's what's going to fool you.

And you'll see the tone arm go on up and stick. And then you'll see the tone arm go through 7 and go low, and then you'll see the tone arm go to dead thetan, because you're just asking this guy to restimulate the whole backtrack, see. Uncontrolled action. So you brought this restimulation chamber, not just full, but bursting. If you're not undertaking an auditing action to empty it – such as to run the line plot and shape it all up and groove it all down and that sort of thing – horrible! This case, pin drops quarter of a mile away, goes through top of skull. Nervous. Body things happening. All kinds of wild things are occurring on this case. You say, "Go to ten years ago." Track's greasy, see, so he goes to ten million, five million, six million, tomorrow, yesterday, out of session, *zzzz*. Looks like a bear on skates. He's just going all over the doggone place, see?

And you say, get an incident when you were in a baby carriage. Flick-flick-flick-flick-flick-flick-flick-flick-flick-flick-flick-flick-flick – he's gotten fifteen incidents of being in baby carriages in the last fifteen lives.

Why? Well actually, the thetan just gets backed up here in the corner, subjected to enormous pressure. He's just overwhelmed. He's just drowned. He can't cope with it. He can't... he isn't – hasn't been permitted to understand or confront the things which have been restimulated, so they haven't discharged. And he doesn't know what to look at. And you get a high tone arm case; the main thing wrong with them is they don't know what to look at. And you ask them to do anything and they do something else. And they don't quite know where or how to go about this. And it takes very precise action on your part. So it takes something like a Precheck. You get to put in a time limit – one that is real to the person. And the next thing you know, with one single exception – which I will come to in a moment and give you a much greater lecture about – why, the case peels right on down into destimulation and you get the case back from this state to this state and then you actually get the case into a state of nothing. That's Clear! Nothing in the restimulation chamber. That's all a Clear is. No loose charge kicking around.

But some case that is having trouble – some case that's having a lot of trouble – all you have to do is make a motion. You know, you've got more charge kicked up in this restimulation chamber, it's practically bursting, you see; and you just raise your hand in session, and bank caves in on him. See? In other words, the charge, the overrestimulation, the amount of charge present is so great – charge isn't overrestimulation, but the word overcharge is not proper. People get to thinking about fees or something. And this degree of restimulation is so

great that anything in the environment kicks some part of the restimulation into action. So he's just totally reactive. Everything is already fixed up so it can react – it's already reacting, so everything reacts.

You run any pc three sessions with a stuck tone arm – I don't care where the tone arm is stuck – case is going to worsen. *Uuhhh!* Then they come to the fourth session, *hohohoho!* They've already been coming in feeling grim. And that fourth session, *hmmmm!* Man, they feel bad and they're griefy, they don't want to go on, they don't want to have anything to do with anything. Just overrestimulation. Because it's not possible to audit somebody without doing one of three things – one of three. It's impossible to audit somebody without doing one of three; which is: restimulate, destimulate or discharge. You got to do one or another of these actions.

Now, when a case is already in a confusion and is not understanding or confronting well, naturally the amount of destimulation and discharge is going to be minimal so the restimulation is what takes over. And you just start auditing the case and just auditing restimulates the case. Nothing is being discharged because there's no motion on the tone arm. There's no destimulation taking place and there's no discharge taking place. So obviously there's only one thing left to happen and that's restimulation. So just the fact of auditing somebody is going to do one of three things. And when you don't destimulate anything and you don't discharge anything, you certainly are going to restimulate something more.

So an auditor's danger signal is no tone arm action; and that's a danger signal. And you should go at once into finding out why there is no tone arm action. And there's several reasons why there's no tone arm action, but first and foremost amongst these things – I say several; there are two, two reasons why there's no tone arm action. Of course we understand already that the tone arm action as case level has deteriorated because of restimulation to that case level which doesn't achieve tone arm action. That goes without saying. We say there's no tone arm action; obviously the case level has deteriorated.

Now, these two things here are present in your actions. The auditor either does something that can discharge the existing restimulation or looks for what reason it has not to discharge. In other words, he really undertakes those two actions. He either discharges it right now, which he'd better do, and if he can't do that right now, then he had better look to find out why it isn't happening right now.

The case isn't running something that will discharge. In other words, the case is overrestimulated – the stuck tone arm. It's already overrestimulated, so you better jolly well not restimulate anything else. You'd better take an action under that heading which will discharge something that has already been restimulated, but mildly and up toward PT ordinarily; not necessarily. Tone arm action just stopped. You just got through abandoning twelve GPMs, one right after the other, and tone arm action is now stopped. Well, the way, obviously, to start that tone arm action – go back and flatten those twelve GPMs one right after the other, and the tone arm action restores, maybe.

You see, you might have accidentally restimulated more by doing this, you see, than would ordinarily discharge and you're now – the case is over its head. Your best action is a Prepcheck type action or R2H, or some such action as that. A Routine 2 process – which is

aimed toward making people healthy and well and clearing them and so forth. Or Routine 3 actions – Routine 3 actions which tear into the backtrack are definitely out! And if the condition doesn't instantly and immediately remedy itself and tone arm action restores by reason of your Prepcheck or your R2H, or something like that, and if you don't get immediate restoration of that and you can't bring that about at once, then there's only one other thing that is wrong with this case – this case is sitting on a service fac. Service facsimile.

Therefore, we can say that any case, any case that cannot be restored or put in the situation of Clear in a relatively small amount of auditing, certainly less than twenty-five hours, is sitting in a service facsimile and their case will not do anything but worsen until that service facsimile is located and cleared.

This also gives you the hidden standard; this gives you a lot of other things. And just so you'll have a record of it right now, rather than – I'm going to give you another lecture about service facsimiles and that sort of thing. The service facsimile is viewable because, when you prepcheck them on some subjects, mass turns on in the pc. The Prepcheck turns on mass? Oh, who ever heard of such a thing. A Prepcheck couldn't turn on mass. Oh, yes it will, on a service facsimile, because the pc doesn't intend to get rid of this. The pc has, of course, a rightness-wrongness equation of something in life and this rightness-wrongness thing is what doesn't surrender, then, to normal auditing because it is a service facsimile. And you now have rightness and wrongness and you have domination and you have survival that you can directly address the service facsimile and discharge it, and the case will then go back to battery, and go to clear read.

But, if anybody has been audited over a long period of time on Prepchecks, on "In Scientology *yap-yap-yap*," on this, on that and so forth, and they have not reverted to clear read, there is only one thing that stands in their road and that is a service facsimile. And the service facsimile has got to be gotten out of the road with picks, shovels, sledgehammers or any other type of action, and as soon as it's out of the road, then the case will pick up and fly and will go to clear read.

There's a rightness-wrongness computation. The reason we never handled a service facsimile before – the reason we never handled service facsimiles before is actually we didn't have any way to handle it. Because we didn't know their total anatomy. We knew of their existence, as you'll find in *Advanced Procedures and Axioms*. But the service facsimile is a rightness-wrongness computation. Any case that isn't improving at once, instantly, alertly, right on the way, tone arm action improving, needle action improving, on such a thing as a Prepcheck, on such a thing as "Their auditing," on such a thing as "Recent times," on such a thing as "This lifetime," – anything in this lifetime – case isn't snapping back to battery, the case still having recurrent present time problems, case is still worried about something of the sort, *yip-yap, yip-yap, yip-yap*, always trouble with this case, this case isn't so on, tone arm action is very hard to restore on this case, Prepchecks don't seem to do anything to this case – oh, my God, isn't life awful – that case is sitting on a service facsimile. And the thing to do is to isolate the service facsimile. And we haven't got that all tied up, "How do you isolate the Service facsimile," but I will tell you, the service facsimile, if present, will turn on mass when prepchecked. Won't surrender to a Prepcheck *ha-ha – ha-ha – ha* – what do you know! And that was the big discovery on the thing.

How could anything not surrender to a Prepcheck, see? Well, all a Prepcheck is, is the series and types of decisions which a thetan makes about things. If a Prepcheck is going to turn on mass, what's kicking here? What's happening? Well, it must be that the Prepcheck is in conflict with the rightness and wrongness, and the auditor must be sitting someplace with the Prepcheck, trying to make the pc – in the pc's imagination – wrong. So the pc reinforces the facsimile and moves it forward in defense, reactively. You got a rightness-wrongness computation represented by the existence and increase of mass.

Well, that takes care of about three-quarters of the HGC pcs, doesn't it? [laughter]

Well, I think it's quite interesting. I've often noticed that an HGC got along all right when it didn't get any case results. But that's quite interesting; an awful condemnation. But the truth of the matter is that it often – I've noticed this – that quite a while it'll get along all right, without getting any case results. And we can finally put that down to that it makes people so right not to have any case improvement. Lack of results in their immediate neighborhood, however, over a period of six or eight months, eventually will catch up with them and the whole roof caves in. But they can go along so long without case results that one almost wonders if people don't come there to be made right about what they're doing.

So, there is your proposition. There's your proposition with regard to why charge can't be discharged. And the only thing which prevents charge from being discharged is there's too much overrestimulation. The overrestimulation is so great, the pc can confront nothing so you get no tone arm action. As long as you address unspecific backtrack things, you get no tone arm action. You got to have something the pc finds very easy to understand, very easy to confront. In other words, his ARC has got to be raisable on it before it'll discharge. Or, if this isn't happening, no matter what you do, then it must follow that the pc is operating on a service facsimile.

And then your two reasons for high tone arm action – actually the one reason for high tone arm action is overrestimulation. See, that's the one reason for high tone arm action. But the two things which prevent discharge are the overrestimulated condition or the fact you're auditing a service facsimile and the guy isn't just about to give that up! "My God, what would happen! What would happen? What would happen? If you can't chew tobacco – if you can't chew tobacco, how can you get even with the army?" You know? Horrible! Horrible situation here.

All kinds of additives get added on this situation. "Well, naturally I've got to have – I've got to have – I've got to have a – the situation has got to be terrible, because if it weren't terrible, why, it would be terrible!" See, logical! You've got case where a little kid, if he wasn't on crutches, why, he'd be wrong. And you try to take him off crutches and he's – mass turns on. How fascinating! So, you must be, then – by resolving his crutches – you must, in some way, be making him wrong. So he's defending his right to be right. This is perfectly understandable and that's the anatomy of a service facsimile.

Now, to some degree, very few cases fail to fall into this category. There are very few cases that – but most cases, the bulk of cases, are slowly resolvable. And so you settle for the slow resolution. And actually the service facts that the case has aren't directly across the auditing channel. So then we assume that only those service facsimiles that lie directly across au-

ding actually prevent a discharge or destimulation of the bank. So they're the only ones that really stop clearing from occurring.

A guy can have a lot of service facsimiles if they don't operate directly and immediately in the road of auditing. See, if the service facsimile, however, has to do with the condition of his spirit or the service facsimile has to do with the fact that if he got better something or other – if it has to do with his case; if it has to do with a – well, let's take a state of insanity. Supposing he was being right with the state of insanity. You're going to audit him, huh? You're going to audit him on any other button but this, are you? I'm afraid not, see, because there's a vested interest in insanity. What's the vested interest? Well, obviously it's a vested interest. That's all. Service facsimile, that's all.

You've got a situation going here whereby the person can only be right by being insane. I know that sounds insane, but all service facsimiles are insane just that way. So there's your whole situation laid out in a panorama. The closer a service facsimile moves in toward being right by having a wrong case, then the less progress the auditor is going to make on this pc. So the pcs whose hills are very hard to climb have service facs which lie directly across the road of auditing.

For instance, I asked myself – this is so true! – I asked myself – this is so true! Then if I have a bank at all, then I must be having a bank in order to be right, see. In some way I must be having a bank in order to be right and I almost got my head knocked off. I ask myself silly questions like that once in a while. Help you out, see? And I got – the answer was sitting right there, man. If I didn't have a bank they'd give me one! [laughter] See? So therefore, the only way you can survive would be to have a bank and then they'd leave you alone. Well, that's the type – that's the type of logic, you see, by which – by which that whole computation occurs.

There are also interesting computations, if you can't go anywhere on right and wrong, you also can go someplace on dominate or survive – the survival value of. But right and wrong is your best – your best bet. And it's always, "How would it make you right and how would it make others wrong" woven around in some way so you get a right-wrong balance in asking the question.

Now, there's your service facsimile lying across, and you actually have only these two factors involved in the state of a case. As far as from an auditing viewpoint, you only have this – they're the only factors involved in a case state. One, two, three. The case factors are: the state of overrestimulation and the possible presence of a service facsimile. And if your overrestimulation cannot be immediately and directly cured and you cannot make the case promptly and immediately Clear so you can get on with auditing them to OT; in other words you can't get the tone arm moving well so he can go up to OT, then you know at once that you're dealing with a service facsimile and that you'll have to handle that service facsimile with a Prepcheck or an itsa line or something of this sort, and your case will still get on the road. And I think we've just whipped the biggest single barriers of auditing.

One, an understanding of what is charge and what is restimulation and what are we auditing in the first place? And the other one is if you can't do this, what other factor is involved, and we've had that for years. But we now have a process that handles it and I hope you find it very successful.

Thank you.

THE SERVICE FACSIMILE

A lecture given on 29 August 1963

Thank you.

Well, let's pick it up where we left it. What is the date?

Audience: August 29th.

August 29, AD 13.

[Part missing]

Okay. Today I want to talk to you about service facsimiles. And this has a great deal to do with overrestimulation, the tone arm, the itsa line, all of this is a very neat package. And if you absorbed all of its various angles and all of its ramifications, boy, will you be able to audit! Wow!

Now, we've covered everything, actually. We've covered the itsa line and we've covered charge and restimulation, and we've covered all these various factors. And the last challenging statement I left you with was something on this order – was, if you couldn't make a free needle Clear in a twenty-five-hour intensive using Prepchecks, then you must be dealing with a rightness-wrongness computation. Must be dealing with that computation, see? One of the data on this is the fact that if a Prepcheck turns on mass, you've got it. Your pc is sitting right on a service fac on that Prepcheck subject.

Now, when we say a service fac, we are dealing with old Advanced Procedures and Axioms, and actually we are adding to the definition an understanding of something we have had for a long time. So there isn't any good sitting back and yawning and say, "Well, I know all about service facsimiles," because I'll let you in on something: I knew they existed, but I myself did not know all about them. There was more to be known about a service facsimile.

It's what the individual uses, according to the early definitions, to explain his condition. That's according to the early definition. What he uses to explain his condition or get his way in the world, and so forth. There was ramifications to uses. That was why it was called a service facsimile, because it was of service to him.

Now, let's extend this a little bit and understand exactly what this thing is. Because with that definition which you have just been given, it did not promptly surrender. You notice nothing in that definition gives you an open sesame to – how to attack this thing. How can you do anything with it?

Yes, we know this is true, but that is the end of it. So this guy has a service facsimile, of a bent head, you see? All right, what does he do with it? What does he do with this? Well, he makes – he explains how he is not getting along in life and explains all of his failures with

it, and so forth, and we know this about this bent head, but you notice that doesn't resolve any bent head.

Now, a new factor swings in on top of this and we also had the O/W mechanism and that might have ticked some corner of the service facsimile, but they don't seem to be too closely associated. But in actual fact, the service facsimile manifestation is a blood brother to O/W. A blood brother. Because it's how you make people guilty.

Now, a better understanding – a better understanding of this – many pieces of which we've already had and, I'm sure, thought about – opens the door wide open to cracking a case. So it took just this little bit more understanding. And that is, just this definition of a service facsimile: It is that condition which the individual uses to make himself right and others wrong. And the second we have defined a service facsimile as any condition or state which an individual uses to make himself right and others wrong, the second that we have done that, we open the door to a resolution of cases.

It's terribly, terribly true. The only thing which blocks the door from opening all the way, is the fact that the line has been booby-trapped in GPMs with rightness-and-wrongness GPMs. There's "to be right"; there's the right-wrong dichotomies in GPMs; there's... these things are to be found on the track, and by using rightness and wrongness, we are liable to get the individual into them, particularly if we do not use a time factor. But the use of a time factor obviates much of that.

An individual has not had a GPM in this lifetime, so we say, "In this lifetime, how have you been right or how has doing something or other made you right?" [An airplane is flying over the house and is making disturbing noises] Anybody got a fly swatter? We say, "In this lifetime, how has eating canned heat made you right? And how has it made others wrong in this lifetime?" Don't you see? And you've kept the guy from going scintillatingly backtrack. Now, in actual fact, you're dealing with sufficient power here in sufficient magnitude, that you can whip somebody on the backtrack and restimulate more than you can pick up in a long day of Sundays, if you run it with complete wild abandon. Just like you let an itsa line wander around on the backtrack, you're filling up the restimulation chamber – the... so fast that there aren't enough petcocks on it, and the seams go creeeak and the pc looks like he's going to explode.

In other words, you can kick up charge with this. All you have to do is get the pc into the GPM of rightness and wrongness and then not run the GPM and *zzzuh!* Actually the GPM has only partially aberrated this thing. In other words, it's not the reason for it. The GPM of rightness and wrongness, a goal to be wrong or the goal to be right or something like that, actually are not the reason for this situation. We're dealing now with an upperscale rationale.

Now the remaining parts of this rationale will be of great interest to you. There's survival. Now, once in a while you run into the goal "survive." You run into this once in a while. There's one about – the fifth galaxy over here, they start their Darwinian implant, and so forth, with "to persist." And you wonder where's the rest of the GPM. Well, the trick is there isn't any, and it isn't – hasn't even got an opposite side. It simply sits there as one lonely item at the beginning of the implant, "to persist." There's – not very often on the track do you find this idea. But it's mostly couched in the lines of "persist," or something like that. And frankly, at

this moment, I do not know of a single GPM that contains the word "survive" – at this moment. I'm prepared to be wrong and find one. But I don't know of one. Which is quite interesting, as you look at it there on Dianetics – you had expected Dianetics to be mostly dramatization and things off the whole track and that sort of thing. The funny part of it is, it rather miraculously escapes these at all angles. And "to survive" apparently does. Of course, I'm at any moment prepared to find one. But apparently this concept was not motivated by some bank mechanism.

"Survive," you'll find – except for "to persist," or something like that – you'll find is a relatively free highway. You can use "survive" in processing rather easily. Now it is the top scale of all of this. By the way, "live" and "alive" and other things like that, man, that'd – *heh! Hah-hah-hah-hah-hah* – the implanters never missed those, you know, "That's the trouble with you people, you are alive, you know! Oh, we got to do something about that!" Sound like the American Medical Association, you know. "An operation a day keeps the doctor wealthy!" "You might not feel good, but we can buy better Cadillacs!" You know? That kind of approach. I don't – didn't mean to make a snide remark. We should actually bow our heads and – in a moment of silent prayer over the poor AMA. Do you realize that the major insurance companies now have all of their money on the fact that the AMA will cease to exist, as a powerful entity, within five years. Why? Because they're going to be socialized. Socialized medicine is the chip on which the big insurance company has put its money in the United States and of course that finishes the AMA.

The AMA is only there to keep the doctor wealthy and the moment the doctor is expropriated, the way these foreign governments are always taking over your assets, you know, well, the doctor gets expropriated within five years. Our strategy on this is very sound. All we have to do is hold the fort, keep ourselves in good shape, keep our technical alive, keep the gun cocked and within five years there's no opposition. It will have been taken out by another of our worst enemies. I think it's marvelous! All we've got to do is hang on, hang on politely and sweetly, and so forth, over in the corner of the ring, not getting in the road of too many blows, and there's two fighters out there in the ring right now, cutting each others' eyes open, and bloodying each others' noses, and so forth, because "Democracy is going to bring medicine to the people." Democratic governments have insisted that this is their right – to bring medicine to the people. We're not quite sure why, but they're going to bring medicine to the people. That's democracy.

And on the other side of the fence, the medical doctor has decided that he is not going to be part of the government. And he lost that fight in Britain here a number of years ago. And actually, you go up and you kick the British Medical Association and push it and turn it over, look at its face, pry open its eyelids, turn it back over on its face again – it's dead, it's dead all right, but somebody forgot to bury it. And the only overt action it's taken against Scientology, as far as I know, is an occasional letter to somebody who asked them about Scientology or something like that and he says we're a bunch of quacks that hang out in Brighton. I think that's their public line on this.

And that's very interesting, because we don't use quicksilver. You say, what has that got to do with it? That's the meaning of the word "quack." It is one who cures with quicksilver. You used to see them around the county fairs of England all the time, with bichloride

mercury, and they cured things with mercury and very often poisoned people, and so on, and had a bad time in general, and from "quick" came the word "quack." And that is what a quack is, it is one who uses quicksilver. And you probably could win a suit against the AMA right this minute, by saying, proving conclusively that we do not use quicksilver! They tried to broaden the definition of this old English term. And of course, it is still itself and has no other genus.

All right, so much for that. The point we're making here, is that we have a wide open road, all along the line, here, for clearing, and with clearing goes healing. The line is opening up to such a degree, that I would suspect that the HPA/HCA of tomorrow practiced a great deal of healing. In the past, as we realize, we have not really wanted anybody to go in for healing. I've told you many times it is nonsense to go in for healing, and I'm sure you've heard me. The world of healing, however – it was not something that we couldn't do something about, we were actually being polite and courteous, and so forth, and didn't try to invade that particular sphere. And we didn't get paid for it. And they kept saying, "Why are you healing people?" And we didn't heal people and they'd say, "You dogs, you're healing people!" And so forth. And one court in Virginia they proved conclusively that Scientology was a healing science, because it cured things, and actually brought people into court to show that they had been cured of something by Scientology, which proved it was a healing science, and gave some... and I don't even think though they had the nerve to call the auditor in and sentence him. I think he remains unsentenced to this day. It was just too much nonsense, you see.

In other words, they can go clear around the line. That proves we're a healing subject, you see. Wild business. Look the length and breadth of the land, I don't think they could have found anybody who'd been healed by anything on medicine. But they were proving our cases for us. I think it's marvelous! But anyway, that restriction will be over. You today could heal in England. And as far as Australia is concerned, Australia is very closely associated with the United States with regard to its attitude toward medicine. And the Australian medical pattern is patterned directly after the AMA. But there is a great deal of pressure on, in Australia, to socialize medicine in Australia and I think that the next orders to Australia will be, "Put all possible pressure behind socialization of medicine by the government." Because it apparently totally paralyzes medical activities. It's the greatest way to have no medicine that anybody ever invented.

"Socialized medicine is good for you!" You just get a – because there isn't any healing involved with it. Doctors are supposed to have a certain number of patients and if they get a large number of patients then they draw certain fees and they can't draw any more fees than that and that's the end of that. And then they don't have to see the patients in order to draw any fee, so they don't have to work, so who cares?

You'll find, however, they're quite eager beaverish and do try to drum up a practice out beyond their socialized practice here in medicine. And you'll find out this is – they're quite active in this particular sphere.

Now these boys – these boys have a tough line and with their existing technology won't make it. Because there's always the plumbing trade. The broken leg has to be put back together again. The bits and pieces that get strewn over the highway have to be reassembled.

There's always the carpentry side of healing. It's a sort of an artisan activity. Somebody's – gets a fractured skull and that sort of thing and the bits of bone are around, and so on – well there's always... They used to use barbers to do it and so on, and well, the barber sign today just shows, "We bleed people." Why don't you startle some barber someday when you go in and say, "All right, bleed me!" Because the barber pole twisting around is a trickle of blood running into a basin and that's why that barber pole is striped that way. Phlebotomy was done by barbers.

Now, the medical doctor is straight up against it. Because the moment he comes out of the plumbing trade, he runs square in to the mechanics of the mind. He believes that structure monitors function. He believes this. He's hung with this one. If you ever want to argue with a doctor and get him going in circles, start proving to him that function monitors structure or thought monitors structure. If a guy doesn't want to walk, he isn't going to. You can do a lot, but somehow or other he'll always manage to fall down and not walk. No matter what you do. No matter what you do, medically. Now, you can go into the plumbing trade all you want to and still nothing happens, you see? These guys are up against this all the time. And when they get away from setting the broken bone and patching up the face and putting a new piece of skin on Mrs. Gotbucks' nose and re-forming the ears and physical features of criminal B, and when they get off these various points of purely mechanical handling of matter, they're lost.

Nobody on this planet knew anything about it till we came along. They had ideas. Psychology merely had the idea that it didn't do any good to cure anybody. Not only would nobody ever change, but it didn't do any good to try to cure anybody, because if you cured them of anything, they would get something else. And the psychologist has already commented upon that and so has more or less abandoned cure.

The medical doctor is infuriated by the use of the word "cure," so is the psychologist, so is the psychiatrist. They do not want to have anything to do with this word "cure." In fact there are twenty-five diseases in the state of California – I'm sure there are more than twenty-five diseases in the state of California – but there are twenty-five diseases out there which it is illegal to try to cure. If you say that you are trying to cure them or say that anything could cure them, you could be promptly arrested and slapped in the clink. This is how convinced they are that a cure is impossible.

However, twenty-two and a half percent of all the cases which come in front of you, you shouldn't be proud of. Twenty-two and a half percent of your pcs should cause you no vast feeling of pride, if they suddenly grow wings and get well. Because that's the expected percentage. If you fed them flour-and-water pills, if you patted them on the back, if you tapped them on the shoulder lightly and said, "Your name is skunk," it wouldn't matter – they would get well of whatever they have. This is this suggestion group. There's over twenty-two and a half percent or twenty-two and a half percent of the people of this planet are apparently in a constant hypnotic state. So almost anytime you tell them they're well, they're susceptible to becoming well. That doesn't keep them from getting sick tomorrow. That's something that you should realize. If a healing profession does not get more than twenty-two and a half percent, it is not doing anything. And if it gets less than twenty-two and a half percent cure, it is impeding it. Your expected figure, then, is twenty-two and a half percent. If you do a perfectly dreadful job and sock them on the head and depress their morale and kick them around and

all of this sort of thing, why, you will get less than your twenty-two and a half percent. If you do something for them, you will get more than twenty-two and a half percent. That figure is going to stay there anyhow. If you're a healer, you'll get that many people getting well. Which is quite interesting to you.

I don't know what our figure is up to. I am unutterably cocky about this kind of thing. I myself have healed so many things, accidentally and otherwise and on purpose and not for pay, that it was quite obvious that weird things would happen if a Scientologist was ever turned loose in the healing professions. Healing something is relatively easy with Scientology. But the only thing which cuts your percentage back now – there are two things – is you can't get in communication with the person – already dead, or something – in a coma or already dead and you can't get in communication with him at all. See, you understand, that would cut you back. And the other one, is the service fac. That's the other one that'll get in your road.

Now, if we allow now, in our technology, for the fact that as far as present lifetime techniques are concerned, it takes a relatively short period of time to train an auditor into them, and don't worry about making an auditor who can make an OT – let's just keep him along in that other level – he doesn't have to be a super, super, super expert to do a Prepcheck on this lifetime, let me assure you! You consider that amongst your more banal toss-away tools, you see. And if you turn somebody loose with an understanding of the service facsimile, an understanding of a repetitive process, an understanding of the itsa line, limited him to this lifetime, let him rely on the tone arm of the meter, there he'd be! He'd be practically sweeping the boards, as far as illness is concerned.

Now it's all right to say somebody has a bad back because they have a facsimile. Got an incident or an engram. All right. Now that's all right. But that's too short a look at the situation. In the first place, the facsimile has to have been restimulated for the person to have had a bad back. Just the possession of a facsimile that can deliver a bad back – if that guaranteed that you would have a bad back... and this is, of course, the one thing that the healer of the past has never been able to sort out. This guy – one guy has an experience of some kind or another and gets well, another guy has the same experience and he doesn't get well and therefore it's all random. See? Now, the truth of the matter is that having an experience which is liable to give you a bad back, is not a guarantee that you will have a bad back. That's no guarantee at all. Another factor has to enter in: Something has to restimulate that experience. Something has to bring it into being, kick it in and actually, to give you a real bad back, hold it in. You have to have a continuing restimulation of this thing to have a real bad back.

And that comes under the heading of restimulation. So not only do you have to have the incident – see, unrestimulated, this incident is going to be nothing – you also have to have a restimulation of the incident, in order to bring about a bad back. And that restimulation to keep the back bad, for a long period of time, has to be constantly restimulated. Constantly. For instance, part of the incident that's being restimulated is a girl with green eyes. And the guy marries a girl with green eyes. He's had it! Bad back!

All right. You get the mechanism by which a psychosomatic illness can occur. Now, add to that a mental aberration. Oh, there isn't one of you that doesn't have a beautifully pol-

ished, wonderfully grooved in, perfectly administered, by the best medical – I beg your pardon – by the best implanting agencies, some goal, like "to be insane." Well, why aren't you all crazy?

I ran by one the other day, I'm afraid I wasn't even interested in it. It didn't go into restimulation. Wasn't anything there. It just didn't appeal to me, somehow or another. Wasn't anything I was afraid of and it wasn't anything I was going to attack and it wasn't anything this way and it wasn't anything that way. It was likely to remain quiet for a long time, don't you see? Well, the combination of circumstances and so forth didn't include that particular one into the lineup – well, it just – it isn't even the accident of restimulation. It's what the individual feels might become restimulated. What he himself opposes. What he becomes afraid of when it is restimulated.

Because to all this mechanical activity, which viewpoint we have gratuitously inherited from the Aesculapians from all of the ancient schools of healing. Just that it's just going to be a mechanical fact, see. They're so used to dealing with the broken leg, that they say, you hit a leg – it breaks, when you set it – it heals, see. They love life to be in that mechanical action. To that we have actually added the individual. Now this is something new and strange. This is something that is unheard of. Now, the medico says, well, some people want to get well and some people don't want to get well, and sort of dismisses it. He hopes. If he ever enters into that field at all.

Did you ever stop and think that the experiential pattern of a being might itself make up an aberration? Regardless of the incident. Now, we see, we're above the level of Scientology Two, Three. This guy has lived all of his life in the vicinity of very cold winds, storms, situations – cold. All of his life. Cold. He eventually gets a certain amount of knowingness on the subject of cold. He eventually learns how to take care of himself on the subject of cold. So one fine night you throw him out into the middle of the forty-below cold snow storm. Well, one of two things will happen. He either has somehow or another maintained his confidence in his ability to handle himself with regard to cold or that confidence has vanished with regard to it and he is afraid of being cold. So at the point we throw him out, he either freezes to death or lives. See, even though we've had a lifetime of Pavlovian slaving – excuse me, conditioning – even though he has had a lifetime of this conditioning, a lifetime of conditioned reflexes, of familiarization and so forth, we can't count, at the final end of this line, whether or not he has learned to be afraid of what he is conditioned on or has become confident because of what he is conditioned on.

These factors have a lot to do with the individual. How he looks at something. You can take the same engram. Identically the same engram in A, in B, and C. You may get something on the order of, A will be terrified of it and fight it and try to get away from it and want nothing to do with it whatsoever. B won't even look at it, just skips it. And C says, "Oh! Phhh!" And that's the end of it. Now what makes the difference between these three reactions? What makes that difference? And we curve right on back to the service facsimile.

How many ways, off hand, could you use a facsimile to be right and make others wrong? How many ways? Now this guy who is terrified of this facsimile, ha, ha! Obviously lying in back of this thing you're liable to get lots of ways to be right by having this facsimile

and make others wrong by having this facsimile. This guy B, who doesn't have any reaction to it at all and just skips it, doesn't have any use for it at all. Either to make himself right or to make others wrong. And this guy C, who just goes "*Phhh*," has got another method of making others wrong: By being competent, with regard to this type of facsimile.

See the ramifications of it? There's only one of these three, then, that has no vested interest whatsoever in the rightness and wrongness of the situation. So that is always present, in any bank, in any pc, any place, it is always present that you have the rightness-wrongness possibility. Every person is slightly liable to this – greater or lesser degrees in one field or another field. Everyone is liable to this. Of the using certain kinds of injuries. Using certain kinds of actions. Using certain kinds of disabilities. Using certain kinds of inabilities. To make himself right, and make others wrong.

So this is not a selected thing, which simply goes home to one, two or three people. Now, to the healer – to the healer, this represents a very heavy barrier. Because a guy who is using ulcers to make himself right and make somebody else wrong, is not going to get well from the ulcers. Man, you can feed him full of barium meal. You can cut off his cigarettes. You can prescribe all kinds of things. You can put various type of amino acids in his diet. You can beef him up with types of refortification of his blood sugar or *sovwaal*! You know? And the guy will still go on having ulcers!

Sometimes if you're really good and he isn't watching, you get to him. See? You get to him sometimes. Even though he does have a rightness-wrongness possibility, so the occasional random cure among the rightness-wrongness things tends to set it aside as being the reason why, you see. He just wasn't looking. You know, he kept taking the amino acids and kept taking the amino acids, and by God, one morning he woke up and he didn't have ulcers. I bet it worried him sick! Did, too! Very shortly after he has nightsweats.

Why? Well, you've taken away from him, you've taken away from him his rightness-wrongness service facsimile. It's the most constant use. So what's he got to do now? He's got to get another one.

Now I told you something the other day, that wasn't quite accidentally. I gave you a joke and you might have taken it as something that was something else. I said the guy who was picking bugs off of himself – I was telling you not to worry about getting them on you. That was the joke. In actual fact, if you were to sit there and pick bugs off yourself, you'd establish a communication line with the guy. That's perfectly valid! And will furnish you enough cures of such characters as to establish you a considerable reputation! This bird's sitting there – you sit there and you go... All of a sudden the guy'll look at you and he'll stop doing it. He's somehow or another communicated it to somebody. He may take it as an itsa line. He also might take it as a mockery, he might also take it as an insult, he might take it a lot of other ways, but enough times you will have gotten through to him that you could at least talk to him.

So it's quite valid to mimic in that particular line. That has a very low level of application in the field of psychotherapy. Now it's interesting, it's interesting. But a certain number of those cases will stop picking bugs off themselves and promptly look for snakes in inkwells. So you look for snakes in inkwells and they'll stop looking for snakes in inkwells, don't you

see, and start looking for police in wastepaper baskets. And this goes ad nauseam. Now the second you would not have established the first communication line and the person would have done something else, you must recognize then, that the person has a vested rightness-wrongness interest in picking bugs off themselves. Insanity or craziness or distraction is a service facsimile. Aberrated behavior is a service facsimile.

Well, now, that blocks the line to more hopes of curing things than you could count. Because you can't ever apparently, if you didn't know about a service facsimile, you could never get a hundred percent series on any technique. Let's take a hundred patients and you're going to cure up and up along the line, and all of a sudden you have there thirty or forty of these characters standing there looking at you jut-jawed, not cured. Your first response to this sort of thing would be, "Well, that technique did not work." The wrong answer might be to find another technique. Of course it's also possible the technique didn't work, see? There's always your random factors.

Was it because the technique wasn't working? Or was it because those thirty or forty people had service facsimiles?

Now, if the technique is good, good enough, for God's sakes, to work on sixty or seventy of those people... [whistles]! Look at how far that is above that twenty-two and a half! Look how far that is! This is how you evaluate techniques and processes, by the way, you should have some knowledge of that. Look, my God, you cured sixty or seventy out of that hundred! What were you entitled to? You were entitled to 22.5. I don't know what you would do with a half-cured bloke, but there you are! Your statistics, then, are well in excess of the required 22.5 percent.

So actually, recognizing that, you would – should look elsewhere. You should look around elsewhere to find what happened to this thirty or forty. What happened to them? How come? And what you would find, if you investigated it very carefully is, being the way they were, made them right, and being the way they were or that type of were-ness, made another or others wrong. That computation sits there surrounding that service facsimile.

Now, this is apt to keep a lot of research workers running on a mad treadmill. Trying to find something that gets the hundred percent. And paying no attention whatsoever to the fact there might be something different.

Let me give you the difference of research. The medico sets up a series – he sets up usually a series of two, series of one. That's right. You read their papers when they have conferences, you'd be amazed the biggest series they'll show. "It is incontrovertibly proven, that nitroglycerin is the very, very best thing to fix up bunions. On three consecutive cases with bunions, chosen at random, over a period of eight years, putting nitroglycerin capsules between the toes..." and do you know this is good enough to cause Parke and Davis and Lilly and the big drug companies and all these blokes of one kind or another to immediately turn out eighteen billion pills, sold at a vast figure, at a vast profit. Particularly to the AMA which apparently owns the major stock in the drug companies. And the FDA, of course, which somehow or another always seems to come out tops when they pass a drug. And it was a series of three.

Quite interesting. This is very careless research on which modern medicine is built. Very careless. Series of one, series of two, series of three. They'll pass a whole operation on the basis that three people survived it. That's not good enough. That's not good enough research statistics. Because of what? Well, I don't know, maybe they were – you haven't outlawed the twenty-two and a half percent, don't you see. What'd you have? What'd you have? Three volunteers? Well, how do you know these three volunteers weren't part of the twenty-two and a half percent, and would have gotten well whether you'd done anything with them or not? How do you know that?

So it requires a long enough series to get around that factor. And when you're demonstrating whether techniques work or not, it's a series that has to be longer than... so you can isolate the twenty-two and a half percent. Because the more people you use, the less likely it is that they are members of the twenty-two and a half percent, don't you see? You got to outlaw that accidental fact, and we've very definitely outlawed it over a period of years, we've outlawed it and gone upstairs – I don't know how many cases have responded along in this particular line.

But it wasn't important to us, because we had no way to test whether or not the case was or wasn't. And the way this problem got its back broken might interest you. The tone arm. The tone arm turned out to be a very reliable measure of case progress. The tone arm's a measure of case progress. A consistent and continual, to get effort, to get results, here, there and elsewhere, on cases meant that you had to get tone arm action on those cases, and it was very carefully watched what was getting tone arm action on these cases and the negative result was the first one that turned up. The negative result. If you don't get tone arm action on a case, restimulation is the only thing that occurs from auditing.

That's a horrifying figure, you see, restimulation, destimulation or discharge. Those are the three things that are possible under auditing. And if there's no destimulation, of course, there's no tone arm action. If there's no discharge, there's no tone arm action. So when you get no tone arm action, you have restimulation. That's all you've got left. Because something is going to occur in auditing. Why? Because the auditor is busy, the pc is busy – they're trying to do something.

That's the negative look. That's the negative look at this situation. No tone arm action, you're going to get restimulation. You audit without tone arm action and you'll worsen the pc. About three sessions, he's had it. Three sessions without tone arm action, and he will become one of the saddest characters you wanted to see for a long time. The margin is only about three sessions. At the end of the third session, he feels horrible. Don't ask me how he feels at the end of the eighth. Because it would be proportionately greater, because there's more and more restimulation occurring here.

It is overrestimulation which brings about the acute amount of discomfort that the pc ordinarily claims about. If a pc is being upset about auditing in any way, if the pc's life is not running smoothly, if the pc's ability to handle things is bad off, and so forth, that all slots in to the one slot of overrestimulation. That covers the lot. You don't have to worry about whether or not he's got GPMs in restimulation or engrams. You don't have to worry about whether or

not he's got ARC breaks in restimulation with the auditor. We don't have to worry about anything except that. We know overrestimulation has and is occurring.

Which means more has been restimulated by life and auditing than is being discharged in the auditing session. All right, that was the first thing learned. And that's a very, very important datum. It's idiotically simple this datum, anybody can get ahold of that one. That's easy.

What about the additional data? What happens with medium tone arm action? Which is to say, something that would add up to, well, something that would add up to fifteen to twenty divisions of tone arm action at session ends, of down tone arm. Quantitative, see? Supposing you took every single little twitch of the tone arm that occurred in the session. Every twitch down. Of course, it's got to come back up, too. But let's just take every twitch down, that it makes, during the whole session. And let's carefully mark those down in fractions of a division – no matter how tiny they are, don't you see? Let's mark every one down. At the end of the session let's add all those up.

Good tone arm action, or excellent tone arm action, would be up around thirty – somewhere upstairs like that. Around thirty. Acceptable tone arm action will be around fifteen to twenty. And below that point, more restimulation is occurring than discharge. *Oooh!* That's a lot more tone arm action than you thought, wasn't it? *Ugh!* Horrible! My God, what are you doing to your pc? Hey, I better watch that. Stop worrying about it. You'd be surprised how rapidly fifteen to twenty divisions of action stack up, even when your pc is only getting little quarter of a division blowdowns. And if you want to really know, just pull that mathematical trick on the pc. The figures, actually, I've given you are just approximate. The estimation of how much is good, excellent, and so forth. That's just approximation.

We'll know more about this when we measure more pcs.

But that gives you how much tone arm action there was in the session. It isn't really how much per twenty minutes – that gives you a small amount. But actually if you wanted to know how much there should be in the twenty minutes you should add up all of the moments – movements down during the twenty minutes and get that final figure. And little blowdowns of .2, little .2 blowdowns, well, .2, .2, .2, .2, .2, well look, we got a division! You'd be surprised how fast these things add up.

But there is a point where an apparency of tone arm motion exists, when in actual fact only restimulation is occurring. And that's – you work on the guy and you work on the guy and it's stuck, see, oh boy, it's really there, it's right there, 4.75, you see. And you work on him and you assess and you assess and you assess and you talk to him and you work on him and you work on him and finally he finds the little lock and you get your tone arm blowdown! Hah! Finally! I got all of that tone arm blowdown!

Well, in actual fact it was 1.75 divisions. And it starts going back upstairs again and it goes back upstairs again and it goes back upstairs again and you work on him and you work on him and you work on him and down toward the end of the session, somewhere down toward the end of the session, you get this tremendous blowdown from 4.5 to 3.75.

Well, that's 1.75 plus .75 and that's the total shift of the tone arm for a session. Oh, oh, oh, oh, oh, oh! How does that – how does that agree, see, with this other figure I just gave you? Well, it doesn't at all. It's a dangerous amount. In other words, it's just sitting there. Of course the one I'm talking about, a motionless tone arm, that just sits at 5, at 5, at 5, at 5, at 5, for three sessions, your pc is darn near going to blow his brains out, man!

But you see, this was apparent – you did get a couple of motions of the tone arm during the session. So you say, "Oh, well, yes, there was tone arm – tone arm motion in the session!" No, there wasn't tone arm motion in the session! Not enough to worry about, see. It was just 1.75 plus .75 and that was the totality of the whole session. Look, you restimulated more than that. Just making him look at his bank, you restimulated more than that. That's for sure!

You're – sure enough, you're going to find at the next session he doesn't sit at 4.75, but sits at 5. It's gone up .25. More heavily charged. Now, we're going to have less – less ease of getting those blowdowns. When we get this blowdown, it's .2. *Heh!* And we get two .2 blowdowns in two and a half hours of auditing. *Hmmmm!*

Now! Next time he comes into session, we've got it at 5.25 – it's sitting next time he comes into session. And we audit him that whole session and we don't get any blowdowns at all. And tone arm doesn't move at all. Now, if you went on another session, after this, that needle's going to start sticking and if you carried on a couple of more sessions after this, this thing is going to go through 7, backwards. And you're going to have a low-tone-arm stuck-needle case. Now, if you carried on with this nonsense any further, you'd have a dead thetan. Tight stuck needle, pc at Clear read, going no place.

All this was very important data. Very, very, very important data. If that kind of thing can happen to the pc, we'd certainly better know all there is to know about a tone arm action and behavior. Well, one of the things of course that I went into and found out – I didn't so much go into this. Mary Sue got the idea that she would – kept somebody adding up all the little blowdowns, all the little blowdowns, all the little blowdowns, any kind of motion, and so forth, and I think she wound up with what? Thirty...?

Female voice: Thirty-seven, that's up and down.

Thirty-seven, up and down, which made an aggregate of something on the order of about eighteen and a half down. And that tone arm, during the whole session, never moved more than about .25 divisions. But it did it so frequently, you see. It did it so often, and actively. And that's what made the difference.

So, it is the total amount of blowdown, during the entirety of the session, all added together, that gives you what you call tone arm action. Now, I'm going to get a little pedometer one of these days, if I possibly can, every time you move the tone arm down, it cranks a little speedometer up at the top of the meter. Now, I don't know who the devil will ever make this or when it'll ever come out. But that is the – that's the ne plus ultra, see? And you mark down on your report that the pc got that many tone arm divisions.

Only in that way would we know with great accuracy what is tone arm motion. See, and then we could carry it out and finish off the whole thing, as a thing, and we could give it to the decimal. And we'd say this exact figure. When you don't get as much as that... *aagh!*

Watch it, see? And if you get more than that, why fair, if you get more than that, that's good. And this is an adequate discharge to permit us to run whole track. And then we'd set the auditor up that he's got to clock off – he's got to clock off, pretty regularly, with routine processes, he's got to clock off enough TA action to permit him to run the whole track. And then of course, somebody's going to free the needle and get none, by Prepchecking, and then, of course, never be able to go whole track because he hasn't got enough tone arm action – ya-ya, I'm sorry! That's a – I'm getting cynical, you're making me cynical, you realize that?

Now, that's – you got to have a certain amount of tone arm action in order to say that discharge is taking place and that you're discharging or destimulating more than you are restimulating. This gets very important. Because it goes into this fact now: Why does the tone arm go up and stick? Why? Is it just the pressure of overrestimulation? Hm-mm. That's it!

All right. In the presence of no tone arm action, why, why – if you have no tone arm action – why do you get restimulation? Well, that gets a bit stickier. Because you're overwhelming the pc's power of choice and therefore you're throwing up mass. Restimulation is throwing up mass on this pc. You're trying to get a discharge and the pc isn't going to let it discharge and that's what it amounts to.

Now, if you're running something that isn't restimulating the backtrack heavily, isn't restimulating new stuff heavily, isn't stepping all over the inert bank and throwing it into view, and your auditing, therefore – the type of auditing, would be present life or Prepcheck or 2H or something like that – is causing an increase in the height of that tone arm, without a consequent discharge, you therefore must be overthrowing the pc's power of choice. And to prove this, he gets more and more ARC breaky, as this occurs.

Well, somewhere, in that thin, never-never land, of border between just pure charge – there's no more significance to it at all, it's the pc is simply overrestimulated, the tone arm sticks, see? That's an easy one. Some place between that and then auditing him and not getting any further tone arm action, we move over from the simple fact of overrestimulation, over into this new field, service facsimile. And we move there, at that point, where, when we're prepchecking the pc – you won't always notice this, but it's the thirddimensional pole that stuck out of the two-dimensional plane that indicated this whole thing to me and permitted it to be wrapped up.

There's the mathematician's story about the two-dimensional worm. Two-dimensional worm, of course, he lives on a two-dimensional plane. One day, walking along on this plane and he bumps into something. And he says, "That shouldn't be," and looks kind of upset, his reality shattered, because how can you bump into something if there's only two dimensions? You can't bump into anything if there's only two dimensions, because that requires a third dimension.

Another worm comes along, a long time later, he's maybe heard from this first worm there might be something over there, and he goes along and he runs into this thing, clank! And he says, what's that? And he gradually is able to lift his eyes for a moment off his two-dimensional plane and he sees this pole up above him. And he says, "Hey! There's a pole!" And he starts up the pole. And when he gets up the pole, he doesn't know what the hell to do! That's where we get our, "Up the pole." [laughter] That's where it came from. Somebody went

up the pole. He's up there, and he doesn't know how the devil it is and he doesn't know where he is, he sure feels pretty wild and ecstatic sometimes. He's discovered something, he doesn't know what, has nothing to do with his reality. And you'll see this occasionally.

Now, this is a mathematician's – an old time mathematician's effort to get somebody to understand the fourth dimension. So he puts it into the second dimension, you see, and then adds the third dimension and then it gets into everybody's reality. The actual fact is, anything that has not been discovered operates sort of in that fashion. You find something that shouldn't be there.

And the thing that shouldn't be there is that when you are doing a Prepcheck on somebody who is a stuck or sticky tone arm case, the Prepcheck will turn on mass, or when you're doing a Prepcheck on anybody and it turns on mass, you are looking at something that is perfectly idiotic. How can a Prepcheck turn on mass? It can't! You're asking somebody how does... has anything been suppressed? Anything he's been careful of? Anything he's failed to reveal? Anything been invalidated? Anything been suggested? Mistake been made? Anything been protested? Anything he's anxious about, anything been decided? And you mean to tell me his coming up with answers to this situation, which are good, clear-cut answers, are going to turn on mass? How could it possibly turn on mass? It's not possible!

And that's the basic diagnosis of a service facsimile. Your Prepcheck buttons would easily get rid of it. But some other mechanism moves in back of it and asserts it. The pc is being right as long as he has it and is going to make somebody else wrong. And the main person who is being made wrong right there in the session, unfortunately, is you! And so, there turns on the mass! Pc is perfectly innocent of this thing.

Let's say – let's take a husband, you see, and we're prepchecking him and we accidentally start prepchecking him on his marriage. And we begin to notice there is something very peculiar starts occurring here with the tone arm. We'd notice it with the tone arm. The tone arm seems to get less action. Doesn't seem to be much action in this sphere. There's a little action, but there's not much. And then all of a sudden we notice he's looking sort of crushed or strained or something. You say, "What's happening?"

"Well, something seems to be pulling in on me. Something seems to be frightening me."

"Well, what happens there? Is – what – what am I asking about? that makes...?"

"Well, every time you mention my wife."

Ah, ha, ha, ha, ha, ha, ha, ha, ha, ha. What have we got here? Look, any mass for a thetan, is an assertion, that's wrong, man! If a thetan's wearing mass, why something's weird going on, right away, now, anyhow, although you have to go to some lengths to do something about it. The fact that it turns on during the Prepcheck shows you rather quickly the fact that he ain't going to let go of that, man! You're confronted with this odd phenomena. You got a block of ice and a hose of hot water. Now, you know and I know that if you turn a hot water hose on a block of ice, the block of ice is going to melt and that is going to be the end of that block of ice, right? Well, you're confronted with this thing, when mass turns on in a Prep-

check: You take a hot water hose and you take a block of ice and the longer you play the hot water hose on the block of ice, the more ice you've got.

Can't be! That's how you define – there must be interference with people's livingness on this particular planet. Because in actual fact, if people just lived long enough, if they just lived long enough, they would – the restimulation of life is not really adequate to keeping the whole bank restimulated. Life isn't that dramatic. Just ordinary living, it isn't that dramatic. Read all the detective stories you want to. About the only people that get kicked around in life – there are a few, there are a few activities in life which actually manage to furnish themselves enough restimulation, which on top of the interference with the thetan on this planet before he's set here and all that type of implantation and all that sort of stuff, in addition to that, is almost enough to keep it going.

Newspaper reporter, he's the leading contender. Every time there's trouble, every time there is upset, every time there is anything, the newspaper reporter is there. And where do we normally find him? We find him at a case level 7. He's only interested in his own opinions. He writes his story before he leaves the office and comes down to you to see if there's anything he can furnish – you can furnish him that will confirm his opinion, which he got before he arrived and so forth. And you find this young man, he's ordinarily all shook up, all the time, man, he's in terrible condition. And you look him over some time. It's very interesting. They only talk to you if you treat them like a case level 7. You salt your speech down with, "Your opinion of this thing is obviously..." and then tell them what their opinion is and they just sit there... They're – of course, they're in a hypnotic trance to their own opinion, so anything you say must be their opinion, see?

Aw, you shouldn't do things like this to people. "Don't cheer, boys, the poor devils are dying." That sort of an attitude. It fits in this. There's several other professions, there's that of doctor, who's always being pulled around, restimulated and whose suicide rate is higher than any other. The various activities of this kind almost furnish enough restimulation, if you start the person out with that much restimulation.

But, in actual fact, almost any other field, the bank just would go to sleep, if that was all there was. It'd just go to sleep! Give it a couple of hundred years, particularly, or three hundred years, it'd be damping out and things would be going inert with such rapidity, that the guy would get a lot better. Of course, this is all potential to be kicked in at any moment, so therefore he's in danger to that degree. But what do we have? What are we looking at here, when we're looking at this mass increase? We're looking at an impossibility. You mean auditing is going to make the guy worse? You mean mild auditing is going to make the guy worse? See, what we've asked him in essence, "Now, is there anything you've decided about your wife?" Well, we know that that will deintensify mass, don't you see? Naturally, because it pulls out little fixed attention points and having pulled those things out, the confusion and randomness surrounding them tends to ease away, see? Ah, so we pull out some of these little fixed points and he's got more mass! Well, that's because what you're doing and what he is doing are in two different spheres of agreement.

He ain't about to get rid of his attitude and opinions about his wife and you are trying to get rid of it and the disagreement in the session is enough to turn on that mass. His atten-

tion – his intention is to hold onto it for billy-o's sake! And your intention is to get rid of it, so you and the pc are in completely divergent agreement with regard to this whole situation. He's sitting down there, not to resolve his marriage. And you start addressing his marriage, he isn't going to resolve his marriage. He's not sitting there to resolve his marriage. He's sitting there to make his wife wrong. That's his only purpose. He has no other purpose. And don't think for a moment that he does have! No matter what he says, he's just trying to make somebody wrong. Now, it follows that any thetan that has been hit hard and consistently and continuously, has had loses continuously and who has tried to get back at and attack continuously any zone or sphere, will be unable to put in the itsa line on what is attacking him.

He can't say what it is. And that's actually all there is to this whole mechanism I'm talking to you about. Can't put in the itsa line. He can't say whether it's bad, he can't say whether it's good, he can't recognize it or something like that. Maybe it was emanating too much. He doesn't feel he has the power to look back along that communication line or be at cause over that communication line, in any way.

Now, a thetan, to be sane at all and to have any reality at all, has got to be at – some degree at cause. Now when he goes down scale his final method of staying at cause – this is present all the way down scale, but remember it's only when it becomes a final method that it becomes horrible – is to be right. And for the other person, to be wrong. And this goes on down the line to a point where he simply has to – to make them wrong – he simply has to hold the concept that they are wrong. And to be right, he simply has to realize that he is right. And the final effort of being right and wrong on the thing is just to have the idea or concept that one is right and the concept that the other person is wrong. And he is still being cause.

His target is a thousand light-years away and has been dead for trillennia. Don't you see? He wouldn't even know when it disappeared. That's one of the laughable points of it is. He wouldn't even know if he'd ever succeeded. Because he can't observe it. It isn't there to observe. So this particular mechanism hangs out in life as a sort of a side panel to it all, because it can never as-is. He never knows when they disappear. He never knows when they go away.

You could take some old lady and haunt her house for days and days and weeks and months, and so forth, and then not haunt her house. And she's liable to go on for years, being sure the house is being haunted. You understand? You – you get how this mechanism comes in?

Well, it's because she never saw anything that was haunting the house. And she couldn't have gotten back at it in the first place, so there is no method of inspection of cessation. How do you inspect the end of everything? How does it end? How do we know it ends? Do you know there are Japanese soldiers left out in the Pacific, who still think that World War II is in progress. I'm absolutely sure of it. Because they were finding them years after World War II, up in caves and so forth, on South Pacific Islands and they just knew what would happen to them if they were ever captured and that sort of thing and the war had been over for ages! And there they were, up in the woods.

They were haunted by a nonexistent thing, in other words. Why were they? Well, because they didn't have the communication line to ascertain a cessation. They couldn't ascertain

that it had ended. So if they couldn't find out if it had ended, the right survival action is to assume that it is continuing. So, one answers the problem of survival best, in that particular category. There's many a guy who has been missing the top of his head. Many a guy – top of his head went missing, because he assumed that the enemy over in the next gully had pulled out. So he looks. And there went the top of his head, you see?

Now, life can teach you this lesson – rather consistently and continually. So eventually, you develop a little more cautious frame of mind with regard to these things, you eventually come up with this solution to those problems. *That if you cannot ascertain if anything is ended, you then assume it is continuing.* And out of this you get this wrongness-rightness thing going on for trillennia.

In the first place, the guy went back into – through force and overts and other things – he went back into only being able to be right about this thing. He couldn't do anything about it, you know. If you want to really start a cacophony, ask somebody in one of these modern socialistic countries, how they have been right about the government. You're liable to get automaticities. But you say, these people don't ever think about the government. I know they don't ever think about the government. No, they don't do anything to the government, no, they don't have anything to do with the government. They're supposed to vote once in a while, but less and less votes are being cast per capita. That's the final thing they could be about the government, is right. That's the final thing they could be about the government.

Look at the fantastic things they would have to do, in order to have the government be wrong. Look, look at them, man! They're legion! And they'd all be aberrated. Why? Since the government today represents fantastic force! Fantastic quantities of force are represented in the powers of government. So much so that the leading heads of government today tell you that no population can revolt. US – top gun in the US not very long ago was holding forth at great rate on the subject. I think it was Lodge, Henry Cabot Lodge, and he was holding forth at a great rate on how no modern population could revolt in the face of the weapons which were available today in the hands of the government.

What is he talking about? He's talking about raw force, isn't he? The more that force goes upstairs and the more – and less and less able that populace is, to ever reach back, in any way at the government or to be cause over that government, you see, the less, so forth, why, the more they have to go into aberrated rightness and wrongnesses with regard to the government. Until they finally get down to some of the wildest things you ever heard of!

And you'll find people walking down the street, and they spit, on the street. And that's their one channel of action against the government. Because it's against the law. How could they be right about the government? They could spit. It's irrational, see? It – listened to in that line, it becomes totally incomprehensible to the auditor. How this could, any way, shape or form, add up to a logical answer of rightness and wrongness. And that is why it is aberrated and that is why it turns on mass and that is why a Prepcheck won't do anything with it. Because it's totally irrational.

Now, how do you establish this? Well, actually you could establish it with the preliminary step of R3R. You could establish what they're being right about; what they're being wrong about. You could take your original listing steps of R2 – R2-12. Don't do R2-12 on

pcs, by the way, it's dangerous. But you could take the original listing steps of R2. You can think of innumerable ways to establish this sort of thing. You can say, "What have you been trying to solve in processing" This is another totally illogical approach. "What have you been trying to resolve in your case in processing, Mr. Smith? Very good. Oh, you've been trying to resolve the fact that you have ringing in your ears? Thank you very much, Mr. Smith. Now, let's see, how many hours of processing have you had ringing in the ears?"

"Well, let's see, I had a twenty-five hour intensive in Washington, I had fifty hours in London. Then there was a private field auditor who gave me a hundred and seventy-five hours, and that didn't do any good either, *heh, heh*, no, that didn't do any good. And then we had numerous other processing and there was a lot of Group Processing and that sort of thing and I tried some 'Subub,' too and that didn't do any good either, and so forth. And I've been under a doctor's care for some time now, with this ear ringing, and so forth, and just nothing does it any good."

He has given you the whole song, bell, book and candle, so help me! He's told you that the ringing in his ears is, or is associated with, a service facsimile. What is the rationale? It is a service facsimile because it didn't surrender to processing. Didn't surrender to mild processing, so it must be a service facsimile. I mean, the – you will be lead astray, in two directions; assuming that everything is a service facsimile and trying to run everything on rightness and wrongness and the other way is just assume that nothing is, because it is all so reasonable. Well, he's got it all explained. Actually the first auditor he had over in Washington was mean to him. And the next half a dozen auditors he had, they didn't understand him. That was obvious. And we didn't have the technology at that particular time.

You see, you can be logical about this whole thing, you can go on and on and on. You can realize all of this. You can figure it all out. But all I ask you to do, is just look, head on, at that one fact: Has the guy been processed on it unsuccessfully? Or is it something he wanted to resolve in processing and never seemed to be able to resolve? And that is your total diagnosis of a service facsimile, from an auditing point of view.

Now, you can diagnose it in numerous other ways. You can use the medicos for a diagnosis. You say, "What have the medicos treated you for, bud?"

"Uhh, kidneys – kidney trouble, *ne-ho-ho*. Didn't make me any better, they operated and then they put in two new kidneys and then we have a couple inflatable life tubes now, back there, and so forth..."

You can use this, don't you see? Now, you have to vary the wording of it, so that it makes sense, like – what is it, his health, sometimes it takes a broader word than "kidneys," you see, "being sick," "being unable," and so forth. One of the ways of doing this would – "What would be a method of making others wrong" and he will sometimes give you on a list of what would be a method of making others wrong, he will sometimes give you the exact thing that he is making others wrong about and you turn the process around and find out how he is being right with it. Which is the missing side of it, don't you see.

Now, I'm not pretending that – to give you at this particular moment a complete diagnostic system by which you could always determine the service facsimile. This includes other things such as the Hidden Standard and other things of that character. I'm not trying to give

you such a system at this moment. I'm simply pointing out to you the basic mechanics which underlie this thing.

The O/W sequence falls hand in glove with this, because of course, as I will tell you in another lecture, make-guilty is something we've known about for a very long time and which plays its role in this. But your right-wrong characteristics and factors involved on it are very useful and very usable.

These are survival mechanisms, whether they realize it or not. And if you can just look at them as survival mechanisms, and not expect them to be sensible survival mechanisms, why you can crack almost any case. If you go around insisting that every survival mechanism be sensible, or workable, then you're not going to crack a lot of cases. And you're going to find that there's some weird ones sitting around and they sit around on these buttons of rightness and wrongness. Fortunately, there are only these buttons that would really aberrate a human being, then.

There would be survival, domination, rightness and wrongness. And, if those buttons were not contaminated in any way, why life would be a dream for an auditor. But he, of course, has got to run... some broken field running in here, against the backtrack implants that contain the words "right" and "wrong." And he's got some other things to worry about – he could use time to get around these things. He's got other mechanisms to use to get around these things. But it's still a liability processing very directly on the thing.

So, at the moment I would reserve rightness and wrongness for the extreme case that doesn't immediately surrender and go down toward fast tone arm action and good tone arm action on Prepcheck, and destimulate rapidly, then I would get very interested in what part of their case, or maintaining themselves in an aberrated condition, is a service facsimile and resolve that and get back to standard processing.

We're not trying to ride a hobby horse here, whereby all processing becomes the service facsimile, you see that often – too often happens. What we are doing is simply giving you a weapon, whereby if a case gets difficult on you and you're doing all of the usual things for the case, and so forth, and yet the tone arm does not come down and level out, then you had better go into an examination of this case from the viewpoint of a service facsimile, and you will find out, and the case will agree, that there are several reasons why he must not get well!

And when you crack through that, of course, your technology goes through it like hot butter and you get the remaining thirty or forty percent that you were looking for. Okay?

Thank you very much!

R3SC

A lecture given on 3 September 1963

Oh, you're in for today! I wouldn't have applauded like that. *A-ha-ha! Blll, bmmm.* Bad business. Oh boy. In for it today. Wow! Can't you manage look scared? What's the matter, don't you believe I'm mean? Ah, I'm afraid you know me too well. Anyhow, what is the well-known date?

Audience: September 3rd, AD 13.

3 September AD 13, Saint Hill Special Briefing Course. And we have a lecture on R3SC.

Notice, Mom, no hands. [laughs] No papers, no notes. Cold, like that!

All right. Now, once upon a time we had something called a rock slammer. You remember the history of a rock slammer?

Audience: Mm-hm.

All right. You did a Scientology List One, which is not the L1 in that bulletin, but the old Scientology List One. And what did you find in this? You found that occasionally as you went down the line you picked up a tick, and when you put in the big mid ruds on that particular tick, you all of a sudden got yourself a nice, handsome rock slam. So you say "auditing" to somebody and you got a rock slam, right?

You remember this technology? Well, this meant that something was going to go wrong in the vicinity of auditing with regard to this person, by reason of aberration.

Now, of course, punitively, punitively, we said at once all rock slammers were bad, and they all ought to be shot, and so forth, until we found out that practically everybody rock slammed. [laughter, laughs] And then, of course, we had to come off of it. [laughs] But that isn't all that we came off of. We just dropped that piece of know-how in the mire and let it lie. You notice suddenly we weren't saying anything about that at all.

Well, that didn't mean that I forgot it, completely. That didn't mean that it was utterly gone as far as I was concerned. But I had seen some phenomena which I definitely had to straighten out. And that phenomena had to do with the reason a person doesn't recover under auditing. Now, that's the whole department head; that heads up that whole department: the reason the person doesn't recover under auditing.

Now, this has been with us, actually, since 1949, 1948. It must have been present then. I didn't run into it head-on until about 1950, and it became very crucial in 1950. One of the

reasons this would peak up is that in the type of auditing which I was doing in 1950 there was a great deal of slippiness. A lot of it was very slippy. And there was a lot of this and that would work its way through, and you didn't have a hard, tightly bound process, you see? And as soon as you got a tightly bound process that was limited to running of engrams, you ran into this phenomenon of people not getting well.

So again we have run into engrams and again we all of a sudden come up with this interesting datum – but not for the same reason – of people who just don't recover.

Now, in my catalog of things to be done, this business of rock slammers and reasons why people didn't get well continued to ride right along there and take a prominent position in looking over all new things.

And all of a sudden I collided with the old service facsimile. But the collide was rather oblique. And the way we collided with that was by a study of the tone arm, the necessity to get tone arm motion and the various positions of the tone arm.

Now, all of that material which you've had in a recent lecture – very germane to this. It became obvious that if an individual were audited for three sessions without tone arm action, he got into pretty terrible condition. Bad. Bad show. Bad show. Therefore, you had to audit with tone arm action.

I don't say he fell to pieces, but he just wasn't feeling well – he didn't feel so good. You'd find his session goals became gloomier and gloomier. In other words, you could predict any time that a case was going to feel not so good by noting that he had no tone arm action during the session you had just run. And this I tested out. And I tested this out. I watched it, coordinated it and so forth – no vast series of cases but that wasn't necessary. I had a considerable background on all this material.

Now, there we are – person gets no TA action during a session, person doesn't feel so good. Three sessions – they feel pretty wog. No TA action. So we mustn't run without TA action. So it became very, very important to find out what was stopping TA action. And there are several reasons why TA actions stop. Many of them... the basic reasons are still those; all the reasons I have given there are very valid reasons. But they fall away from the very high theoretical to the very easily applied practical aspect of it. And the practical aspect of it indicated just this: that an individual would release charge or an individual wouldn't release charge. And that's about all it came down to.

Now, that you are getting – now get these slight divisions here – that you are getting tone arm action does not guarantee that your pc will feel better. Now, that is one for you there. Doesn't guarantee your pc is going to feel better. But getting no TA action guarantees that your pc is going to feel worse.

Do you see that, see? So you haven't got quite a yes or no. Now, why the individual who gets TA action doesn't necessarily feel better is contained in restimulation and over-restimulation. The individual is overrestimulated – the restimulation is too high and yet the charge is still releasing. Now, that's quite interesting there. You've got maybe fifteen sources of charge that can be released, and they're all in restimulation. And you're only running one of them, so you're releasing charge off of that one.

Let your pc's attention wander off of what you are running and you instantly have added more restimulation to the case. All you have to do is be a clumsy auditor at Level IV auditing on the itsa line and you've had it.

Now, let's grade up auditors here – let's grade up auditors, just in passing. I: Well, we just leave it on accident whether the guy gets TA action or not. We hope he gets TA action, see – Class I. We just hope he does. And it's not going to endanger anybody very much because the fundamental questions that they're being asked are very un-fundamental. They're being asked how they cured their lumbosis or something of the sort. All right, so they don't get TA action. So the guy gets a percentage of wins and he gets a percentage of loses, and we just hope the percentage of wins that the auditor gets at that level are greater than the percentage of loses, and that he doesn't get discouraged about it all, and so forth. We just hope, you understand? Because frankly, at that level of training, we can't do anything else. See, it's – look at the amount of technical material which goes into this and you see at once that it's too formidable. This guy would go on – he'd have to go on for months or years of training before he would come up to being able to cope with that situation.

Well, it's a very small price to pay. Because the funny part of it is, now, with the itsa line, we can take that chance very nicely and come out with a great deal of percentage of wins. But you recognize that the auditor at that level is taking that chance that he's going to run some sessions without TA action. He's going to listen to a lot of natter and he's going to listen to this and he's going to listen to that. And he's going to get a certain number of service-facsimile-type cases that don't get TA action, you see, and he's not going to get any TA action. And this isn't seriously going to put somebody in the hospital or anything like that, because the process isn't that strong, don't you see? But it's going to be the guy just doesn't really think auditing is getting him anyplace; that sort of thing, you know? And he just feels gloomier than he would ordinarily feel, and so on.

Well, what's happening with all this? Well, we can't expect at the level of training of Class I for the auditor to be able to remedy it. And of course the second that you, instructing auditors and so forth, come back to remedy this situation, you are no longer operating in the zone or area of Class I and you are actually trying to make a Class II Auditor. So you see, that still stays with the definition.

You start saying to this guy – the moment you start saying to this guy, "Hey, for God's sakes! Read those rules, man, read those rules in that RIC. Read 'em! You're asking this person for problems, problems, problems – what problems have they had in life? And what have they been trying to solve in life? That's a backwards question, a backwards question, man! Of course that TA is going to stick." You know? Well, you're working on Class II, see, straight away. See? So, you see, the condition still remains as it is in Class I, which is a relatively un-instructed auditor.

All right. Now, we move up into Class II: we get "with tone arm action." And the way we handle it there is actually not with the change and shift of processes, beyond just altering the question a bit. But we get listening with tone arm action, and that means that a certain amount of direction of attention is going to have to be done, even if it's just directed by the question that is being asked. "What have you done about your lumbosis?" See? Now, he's

supposed to know the rules of what not to ask, and so on, and to get TA action, and he's got some various ramifications there that are pretty good.

And he can do some things in this line, but it's very light attention direction, don't you see – very light indeed. In fact, we don't even instruct him to direct attention; we rather tend to instruct him not to direct attention. For instance, "Don't drop the E-Meter," you see?

All right, we get up to Class III and what have we got? What have we got at Class III? We've got a direction of attention at Class Level III toward service facsimiles and the state of Clear. Now we're starting to drop out this endless, wandering itsa line, don't you see? We're starting to clip this guy for letting the pc's attention wander off too far into other subject matter. We're supposed – that auditor at the level of III is supposed to be able to control the pc's attention to keep the pc's attention on what the pc is supposed to be talking about. We get – the limitation of attention is what enters in here, see, to some degree. We start telling the fellow, "Now, don't let this pc start wandering around on the early track. And don't do this and don't do that; and keep the pc's attention centered on what you're trying to run and don't let the pc's attention wander over into his environmental restimulation. And if it is there, clean it up with 'since' mid ruds." See, at this level we're using mid ruds; we're knocking down environmental attention. We're paying a lot of attention to the pc's attention at Class Level III.

Now, that control of the pc's attention is at a very high high, you see, there at III. That's pretty high, now. This pc is really being put in the groove. This pc is supposed to talk about A and B and his attention is supposed to be freed up from C and D so that he will talk about A and B. You get the idea? In other words, here's control – control of attention here is getting rather heavy. That's fine, has to be.

Now, let's take Class Level IV: Man, you're living with the lightning now. You've got this pc on a backtrack. You've got this pc there. You've got him on stuff that is quite overwhelming. All he has to do is skid around inside the GPM. All he's got to do is say "Let me go back up and pick up those two early items that we missed." *Zzzzzp!* – and he throws forty RIs into restimulation. Why? Because he had to walk through forty RIs to pick it up that are only – you see – that are not properly discharged. All right, that isn't so bad, you see?

"Let me repair – Oh, I see what this item is. Let me repair it in the earlier goal." And then, much to your embarrassment, you have missed a GPM between these two goals, and he returns up to the earlier goal and throws a whole GPM into restimulation, consisting of some 230 items in the Helatrobis. *Eeerk!* Look, you're walking across Grand Canyon on a wire one millimeter thick.

Now, if you see the various classes in terms of expertness of control of the pc's attention, all will start to make sense to you on the subject of these classes. If you only see these on the complexity of the information the auditor has, auditing will not occur. Oh, well, yeah, you know all about GPMs and you know all about engrams, you know all about processes, you know all about this and you know all about that, and therefore you're Class IV. No, no, no, no. There could be that one element missing – that one element missing – control the pc's attention with expertise – and you would not have a Class IV Auditor.

Now, you start letting a pc talk, you start putting in the itsa line on the backtrack. *Ha-a-a-a-a-a-a!* I've done it myself; I know exactly what I'm talking about, because I've got a

good subjective reality on that sort of thing. "Hey! I just had a cognition. There's a this and a that and a tho and a thee, and down there in that engram there's a spot and a *bolp* and a *bo...* oh, my God!" *Bow!* The roof falls in. You got the idea? Suddenly throw into restimulation fifteen or twenty chains of something, see, just with a nice cognition. There is something earlier! Zoom! See?

Now, the auditor in that particular case wouldn't even have time to open their mouth, you know? Pc is sitting there in a brown study. You think he's looking over the next RI, you know? Pc all of a sudden says, "I think this came – I think this came from – Yeah, there's a – there's a GPM there about eighteen trillion years ago. Oh yeah. Oh yes. There it is. And it's there and there, and that fits into the other two and it comes up to here. And then that is what gives you the background music of all that – *uh-uh-uh*. What's the matter with my throat?" The auditor actually doesn't have time to say a word.

Now, how does that situation take place? That situation takes place when the case is already overrestimulated – greasy on the track, attention hard to control. Greasy on the track. Now, if this pc is quite a bearcat, he will go right on getting tone arm action but very uncomfortably. He'll go right on getting the tone arm action necessary to resolve the case, that's for sure. But he's running in an atmosphere of exhaustion, of worry; misemotion comes up here or there. In other words, he's a bit overwhumped all the time. You see, you've gotten up to the point of overrestimulation, and with this overrestimulation now in progress, you are still discharging things. Do you see? Case still runs but the case isn't comfortable while running. Case will still make it, but doesn't feel like he's getting many auditing wins, see? Awful hard grind. Spends most of the time between sessions in a fog, don't you see? Case still making it and tone arm running.

Now, let's add this other liability. Now, you see that we've gone over some difficulties here. Now let's really clobber it. Let's say that this case we're doing this with has a fragile tone arm to begin with, which is susceptible to being stuck low or stuck high or stuck dead thetan. Let's add that liability to all this other complexity.

Now, what do you think is going to happen? Well, the auditor is going to spend all of his sessions worrying about the pc, and the pc may or may not spend any sessions worrying about auditing, or between sessions, but just going around being *blaaah*, or having a bad time or being very nattery or something.

But the auditor is wild. Auditor is trying to get tone arm action, trying to get tone arm action. And he keeps looking. He comes back into the session. He finally got tone arm action in the last session. Oh boy, finally got it. He got four blowdowns of one division in the whole session. Oh, that's fine. That's more than he'd seen for a long time, and so forth. And he comes back in; he got this pc halfway through a GPM, don't you see? Now all he's got to do now in the next session is pick it up and finish it and that means – you know, was getting tone arm action, more tone arm action, and you run some GPMs, you know, and you get tone arm action. That's obvious, you know, wonderful. That's obvious, and so forth.

And he comes back in, and there's the tone arm. "What the hell? Well," he says, "something must have keyed in between sessions. Something must have keyed in. This tone

arm is sitting here at about six and a half. Something must have keyed in between sessions. All right. All right. Something keyed in between sessions. All right.

"Since the last time I audited you – now, when was that? When was the last time I audited you? Last time, last time now? When – when was that?"

Pc finally thinks and thinks and thinks and thinks, and finally remembers. No tone arm action.

"Now, since the last time I audited you, has anything been suppressed?" There it sits. Right on down through all of those buttons, there it sits. Pc tells you all sorts of things, but there it sits. You say, "That's obvious enough to give anybody tone arm action," but there it sits! Horrible!

You say, "Well, if I can just finish off the rest of this GPM. Now, in this session, if I can just finish off the rest of the GPM." You say, "All right, now let's pick it up at the last item where we left it," and so forth.

And the pc says, "Last item? What – what's the last item?"

"Well, that last item. It was 'absolutably coughing,' you know," and so on. "Let's pick it up."

And the pc says that and then the needle doesn't twitch and nothing happens and nothing moves, and... You realize suddenly that if you stay there any longer, this pc is liable to do an around-the-clock and go into maybe a low-tone-arm case, or something like that. You realize that you're looking at something here which can't hold, because you're getting absolutely no discharge at all. And you hit the silk, and you get out of that. And you say you're going to put in the itsa line on auditing or you're going to do a Prepcheck on auditing or you're going to take anything that you've had as a good way, you know, to key off the case, and so forth.

Now, in this particular case we're talking about, this tone arm here, is – let us say, is gone at 5.75. So you say, "All right, we'll just destimulate the auditing. That's easy. Just destimulate the auditing and we'll get tone arm action back, obviously." So we say, "All right. Now, on auditing, on auditing, when was – well, how many years have you been audited?" or something like that, or "How many months? ...has anything been suppressed?" And of course you get the same story as the "since" mid ruds. There it sits at 5.75 – no tone arm action. The restimulation is now too great to permit even the discharge of the key-in. That's what you've run into. In other words, you're running this case downhill on a toboggan. And it all traces back to what?

Now, you see, this is quite a problem I've outlined to you here. And I see from the looks on some of your faces that you yourselves have had something like this problem. Now, the resolution of this problem is therefore pretty gargantuan. And that's what – just to get it all in line – that's what's been resolved with service facsimile.

Service facsimile, in actual fact, is not an accusative thing. It is simply a solution that the individual has himself so restimulated that it won't discharge and nothing will discharge past it. In other words, it's a solution that is so valuable, so survival, so magnificent, that if one got rid of it as a solution, one would, of course, perish at once – like a wax effigy, you

see, would just melt right there, you see, and be gone. Too horrible to contemplate getting rid of this solution. Actually, it is simply an overcharged solution. That is all it is.

Now, how does it get so overcharged? Well, it's because the pc is restimulating it. It isn't being restimulated by life. There's volition going on here. The pc himself is keeping this thing kicked in.

This girl has life solved, has life solved: Don't eat. Every time the boss is mean to her, something like that happens, "Well," she says, "I don't have to eat. That's the good, sensible solution to the whole thing. Therefore, really, I don't really need a job; I really don't need anything."

The husband, he's a little bit mean, nattery and upset some evening. So she says she knows what to do about this – he don't eat. Dinner accidentally burns or something like this, see? And one of the children gets upset, something like that. Well, she knows what to do about that – kid just won't eat, that's all. That's it. He's had it, see? And all of this is so complicated and so filled with ramifications that it actually has become a survival computation. And it sits there. It sits there like a mountain rising out of the plain or a dam across a river, and no charge can flow by it. Because if charge were permitted to flow by it...

You see, the difference between our rationale, and so forth, is we know people do things. See, it's not on the automatic, push-button type mentality of Pavlov, you see, and Wundt and the rest of these birds – gents – jerks – fellows. Push-button mentality, you see, so that it's always caused by some mechanical thing. No, there's also a being there. He's also up to something, and that's the further complication, don't you see? The person can do something, you see?

Now, if you tell somebody that the survival computation is "not to eat" – if you told somebody else – they'd say, "You're nuts!" But not – not this one. See, that is the survival computation. Well, naturally, it's aberrated, but unfortunately for this being, it works. Hubby always gets in line; the kids always shut up. Don't you see? And she can relax enough about her job or doing what she's doing, so that by saying "Well, I don't have to eat," you see, that actually that sort of – she stops attacking in that zone and sphere. And it actually has some weird, backwards, upside-down survival computation, see?

So what it is, is a non-survival solution which has become survival. And it doesn't make sense – not even to the person, when they begin to take it apart. It really doesn't make sense, but it appears to make sense. It appears to make sense. And that solution can become so fixed in the activities of the individual that the individual feels that if it were disturbed in any way, life would become unlivable. And this can be a pretty batty solution.

You maybe are looking at a service facsimile when you look at a suicide type of thing: The way to live is to dive off the top of the Empire State Building, see? Now, you say, "That's nutty." But the funny part of it is when you run it, if it weren't so pathetic, you would probably be able to sit there and just almost ruin your stitches, because this – it's wild! I mean, how this thing works out. I mean, the way the put-together, the A=A=A and the disassociate and so forth, of this is so – so fantastic.

And very often in the early stages of it, the pc will sit there and they give it to you with such a straight face and with such a solution to the whole thing and, "Well, yes, obviously. Obviously, the way to cure a fear of height is to fall off the Empire State Building," or something like this, you see? It'd be something fantastic. Even that's too sensible.

But what it is, is a solution which has become fixed and which the individual is actually working with. And maybe they've been overwhelmed by this solution – it's explainable in bank terms, too – but the individual keeps that chain or channel in restimulation. And then you start to audit the engrams of this thing, and all the individual sells you is "bring up more engrams of this thing," but oddly enough they won't erase.

And this was another source of search. The other source of search, of course, was why do some engrams erase and some engrams not erase. That is an old, idle datum – been kicking around for a long time. Some engrams grind out and some discharge. Why? Some pcs turn on mass when you prepcheck them and some don't – mostly don't – but some do.

What's with this pc who does? What's with this pc who can't erase this particular engram? You go over on the left and right of this engram channel and you can find engrams that will erase, but the pc never gives you those – they only give you the engram channel. That's because they're obsessively restimulating this particular channel in the bank. They're obsessively restimulating it, because it's survival to have that. Therefore, they will sell you as the auditor that particular channel if it is a service facsimile, because their penchant is to keep it restimulated. So they always sell you that channel.

And then you, you knucklehead, you going to run it out, man. Why, you've picked – if that person is a service-facsimile case, which – not all cases run this way, fortunately. Unfortunately for us, many cases run quite easily and smoothly without any of these complications, don't you see? In fact a little more than half of your cases will run smoothly, without these computations.

Well, that – that makes it bad, don't you see, because then you're unable to understand this other percentage of cases that doesn't run smoothly, see? So you say, "these techniques work, but on some cases they don't work." Well, therefore, you have to bring the broad line of restimulation and so forth. Aberration is always of some use. At some time or another anybody's aberration on any subject has been of some use to them – always. You can trace it always – you can trace it back. It's been of some use. Otherwise they wouldn't keep mocking it up. But it normally doesn't amount to this fixed service facsimile level crash, you see? And it erases, and it handles up, and the guy cognites on it, and it straightens up, and all that sort of thing happens.

But on a service facsimile none of these things occur. The engrams don't erase, the prepchecks don't work, the tools of the game are suddenly null and void, apparently, unless you know this little, secret channel down through the middle of it. And that secret channel is advised by any tone arm trouble – that doesn't mean that for a quarter of a session – since you always get the top of a GPM almost always early on in a case, you're going to find the tone arm hung up high or something like that. The tone arm normally will hang up on the first fifteen, twenty items of a GPM and then suddenly loosen up and tone arm action restores. That's on a Helatrobust-type GPM. In the first stages of hitting a GPM, you normally will get a bit of

a lockup. That's beside the point. That's just a point in the session where the thing locks up. No, we're talking about the case that gives you trouble with a tone arm, the case that is a dead thetan, a low tone arm case, a high tone arm case or a case whose tone arm hangs up at the drop of a hat.

The full, complete diagnosis of the case is done with the tone arm, not with how loopy they're acting in life. I think anybody on this planet is acting loopy in life, see? If you put it up against survival standards, you'd find it was very non-survival. You cannot be human and be right. So there's no reason at all to try to trace it back, analytically, or medically – psychiatrically – say he's got schitzobonga, or something, you see? There's no sense in any of this. This is all for the birds. There isn't any reason to do it off of a graph. There isn't any reason to do it off of any of your tests. Nothing. The only place you'll really see this is by putting the pc on an E-Meter, and then, if the pc's tone arm looks all right, running the pc awhile to see if you run into the trouble.

You see, you could even be fooled – and some of you will be – by a dead-thetan case that merely has a Clear read and a tight needle. Maybe the person isn't a dead-thetan case; maybe they're just sitting in the middle of a bump of some kind or another that's got the needle slightly tight. And you ask them one question and you practically have a free needle, see? Needles change in their characteristic. This may be hard to analyze, but that's the only state that is hard to analyze. The low tone arm, the high tone arm – the second you put them on the meter – the low tone arm, the dead thetan: definitely, always service-fac case. Dead thetan: service fac. Bang, bang. That's all.

This person cannot get discharge in life. In the process of living he discharges no aberration. So living is a very, very aberrative thing to him. See, he's right up against it there: there's no accidental discharge of anything. Give him a birthday present, he doesn't say "Hey, what do you know!" you know, and his tone arm moves, even though you haven't got him on the meter, see? No, nothing like that ever occurs. This guy's tone arm is fixed all the time, all the time, all the time, you see? Always fixed. And as he lives, he just gets unhappier and unhappier; life becomes crueller and crueller. And eventually he becomes a newspaper reporter, you know, or something like that.

It's a very weird thing how many newspaper reporters I've seen who're dead-thetan cases. Restimulation of life is too high for their level of understanding.

Now, the low-tone-arm case: definitely service facsimile. All you have to do is put somebody on the tone arm, see it's got a low tone arm, See it's hanging down below 2 here – nah, service facsimile. That's it. See? Diagnosis right now, bang. You just know.

High: questionable, but probable. You can question it, but it's probable. But you just accidentally put somebody on the tone arm – you just put somebody on the meter and you find his tone arm is reading high, that's enough, see: service fac.

Now, case down here at 3.5, 3.75, something like that, with a fairly decent needle and so forth: some possibility still exists that this is a service-facsimile case. So it goes from some possibility still exists to maybe/maybe not but probable on the high tone arm case. Low tone arm case: yes, yes, yes, yes, yes, yes – nothing else. Dead-thetan case: well, you're lucky if

you can get them to talk to you long enough to give you the service facsimile. Definitely service-facsimile cases.

So any difficulty with this tone arm – any difficulty with this tone arm... Now, I'm talking about tone arm difficulty; I'm not talking about difficulty with a case. You know, difficulty getting a pc into things and difficulty getting them out of things. And you can have a thousand different things that could be difficult in running a case. Well, just – it's just difficult to run cases. That's not diagnosis. That's just a banality.

Oh, this guy, every time you let him anywhere near the backtrack, why, he all of a sudden starts picking up things at trillions-eight, then there's one at trillion-thirteen, and then there's one at trillions-six, and so forth. Yeah, you have trouble with this guy. You have trouble limiting his line, getting him into something and so forth. Well, the case is simply overstimulated. You could use this same technology and possibly hope you could find a service facsimile on him to cool it down. Wonder why this stuff doesn't bleed off faster or why the case restimulates himself to this degree – maybe it still lies in the realm and zone of a service facsimile, you see? Possibility that it does. It's worth scouting, worth scouting.

But all these troubles I'm talking about are troubles with the tone arm. Anybody who's got a troublesome tone arm, has given you a bad time, won't move enough, gets stuck in these three positions with great ease – no, man, you're looking at a service-facsimile case.

Now, what you're doing is looking at the normal river of discharge blocked up with a great, big, high stable datum – "horses sleep in beds," see – with this slight trimmings: He knows that if he gets rid of this and if he no longer believed that horses slept in bed, oh, cut his throat! Finish him! The hallmark of a service facsimile is that some time during – in the running out of this service facsimile – some time during its run out or between sessions (you'll hear about it when the pc comes back into the next session), a person questions the wisdom of getting rid of it. I don't care if it's jabbing butcher knives in their right arm. He will question the wisdom of getting rid of this aberration. And you might miss hearing it on some cases, but it is always there. Sometime in the process of running it out, they got up to this level.

"Now, let's see, if I got rid of this, *uhhhh-ohhh* I don't know. I don't know." Say his service facsimile is "hitting policemen," see? "Oh, I don't know – if I got rid of that, man, I just might be in jail all the time."

You look at him in amazement, you know? "If you got rid of the service facsimile of hitting policemen, you would be in jail all the time." You don't treat him like that as an auditor, see, but you'll hear some weird ones. The guy is in jail all the time from hitting policemen, see? But if he got rid of the service facsimile of hitting policemen, something would go very wrong in his life and he couldn't survive and it would be finished, see?

It's where life has been so overwhelming and he has done so much overwhelming that it actually – it makes no more sense – he has abandoned it, and in lieu of any good sense he has erected this monument. See? And that monument is a monument to total asininity.

"The way to have good health is to smoke cigarettes," you see, "and never take any exercise," and so forth, and so forth. And you'll hear this guy going on along in this and you'll

hear a dissertation and it seems to be just a little bit offbeat. And you'll wonder how on earth this – what this really adds up to.

Well, without precise assessment you probably could not establish exactly what it was. But it might be as banal as "good health." The service facsimile is "good health." How do you have good health? Well, the best way to have good health is eat poisonous foods and throw yourself under trucks wherever possible, and so forth. You see, the thing is completely twisted around the other way to. It's an aberrated survival computation, is what it is.

Now, it might better be called a service computation, or a survival computation – but we already have this term service facsimile, so we might as well stay it – with it for the present at least – because it isn't just one facsimile. It actually isn't a facsimile at all. It's the guy himself keeping facsimiles in restimulation because he knows what's best.

You see all this wild aberration inside of a society which compels its citizens to do this or that. You're probably looking at third-dynamic service facsimiles. They get stuck on these things. Take the jail system which is used right now in the West. The jail system is rather interesting. Because they know for a fact, and all their statistics demonstrate, every single one of them demonstrates – the lot – that they increase criminality with the present prison system. All the penologists know this and they adhere to it slavishly.

In 1835 a study was conducted to find out what penal systems were in use around the world – not to find out which was most workable, but what ones were in use. And they adopted the present system in Philadelphia. They adopted this present system of the cell and the confinement and the guard and the this and that. And at the time they adopted it, they knew that it did the least rehabilitation.

I mean, the committee that did this had the data in front of them that they were doing the most they possibly could to perpetuate crime by adapting the present prison system. Now, this prison system today is so general and it is in use so far and wide, and the present court system – court system is not any part of it – is so wide and general and so forth, that everybody thinks that is the only prison system there could be. That is very far from a fact.

There are actually hundreds of prison systems. And yet they have hung themselves with the one which they found was the least rehabilitative, the least workable and produced the most crime. And that was done by study – by careful, analytical study. So you must realize that there are third-dynamic service facsimiles at work. It's a totally non-survival computation to choose the worst prison system you could possibly choose, and yet they set out to do so.

So I don't think they were studying public safety. See, they weren't any longer studying public safety. They were simply studying how to make criminals wrong!

So penology, by 1835, had ceased to be a study of how to make an honest society safe from the inroads of a criminal and had begun to be just a system by which to dramatize "the criminal is wrong," see, so no longer had any useful application. I don't care what money they're spending on crime today, if they'd stop spending it they'd have less crime. I don't care how weird and aberrated that happens to look. But I'm just showing you, here is a solution stuck in the society.

Not to go on this subject, this is not a horse I ride; it just happens to be an interesting datum. I got this out originally and was rather interested that Warner Brothers did one on this a long time ago. Crime colleges: that's what they've established. You want to – as I asked you in an earlier lecture, how is it that argot is the one thing that seems to be a current slingo that goes along, a language that carries along, and yet it's the most secret language there is. How is this perpetuated? Well, it's perpetuated by the state with its existing prison system. So with that argot then, must go all the systems of defrauding, robbing, murdering and wrecking the society. And they have gratuitously, at public expense, erected these universities all over the place in which these fellows can carefully communicate to one another the very best criminal methods. And this is all done at great public expense.

And that's a service facsimile at work. That solution – the prison, see – stands up there right now as the primary method why the society is going criminal. And yet it is supposed to be the reason why the society – or... the reason why the society is not criminal. See, it's erected to protect the public from the criminal. And there it is, however, educating criminals, perpetuating crime, going forward in a very businesslike way at great public expense to do the least possible rehabilitation for the criminal, make him feel the most outlaw of any other system, make him feel the most individuated from the society, spoil his reach and therefore his sanity. It makes sense to a Scientologist particularly – put a guy in his place so he can't reach anything, can't itsa anything, he's naturally – get a case deterioration. Well, if he's already a criminal because he's crazy, how about deteriorating his case? Well, naturally he'll become more of a criminal, won't he?

So, all kinds of actions of this character – I'm not even standing up for another system. Frankly, if you just erected a big stockade someplace or another and told the fellows to go in there for a while, and we didn't care who they took with us, we'd probably, you know, have a better system.

If the Scientologist were to go about this – I already figured this out for the federal prisons of the United States. The head of all federal prisons in the United States has required Dianetics to be read, by the way, by all his wardens. And I worked out a system for him. Too much work for me to put into effect and so never went into effect. We are not without friends or connections or influence, in spite of the fact that some two-bit – some drug addicts, the Federal Drug Addicts, are after us, because they're actually not under the government, they're under the AMA.

Well, that's who pays them, you know? People work for those who pay them, don't they, normally? Naturally. They, by the way, recently got some legislation through, I see. Now, so that anything is mislabeled, all they have to do is arrest the guy and throw him in prison without a hearing. I was interested in this new legislation that came through from the FDA. When they do something like this, they get a level of unpopularity that has exclamation points after it. So they're doing their best, and we'll help them out. The direction which they want to go, we will help them go, any day now.

But there is service facsimile.

Government sets itself up a stable datum: "Foods must not have noxious products in them." And this outfit is now protecting the public against good electrical equipment and cer-

tifying electric-shock machines that break people's teeth and spines. And they pass these. But the E-Meter – no, that's deadly. It's pretty grim – I mean, it's pretty gruesome when you start to think over the level of action.

Well now, that again, on a third-dynamic level, is a service facsimile in action. See, somebody put up this solution that the public shouldn't have to eat noxious food products or something like this, or poison should be kept out of foods. That, basically, you see, is a good idea. And then this idea starts going all mad, and madder and madder and madder, till practically the only thing that'll get certified is something that kills somebody. See? You get the idea?

Well, all right, so they must be there simply to make somebody wrong. I don't think they have anything to do with anything except making somebody wrong. I don't know who they're trying to make wrong. They're not going to make us wrong. But they must have somebody they want to make wrong, and we're not quite sure who it is. But there is, you might say, a service facsimile.

Well now, you take any good solution to a situation and then plow that solution in so that it lower-harmonics. It goes through several flips. Stays itself, you see, but it's lower and lower and lower on the Tone Scale. It finally gets below all other solutions and becomes itself an aberration.

Now, it isn't true that all solutions become service facsimiles. You could immediately conclude this. As a matter of fact, I have looked at it rather wildly occasionally and said, "My heavens, if you – if any time you solve something, why, you're in the soup." No, no, that isn't it.

A service facsimile is a solution which is insisted upon but won't itsa. It's a solution which is insisted upon but won't itsa. A solution, to be a solution, leads to a further ability to itsa.

Now, if you solve something on the basis of the solution reduces the itsa or the ability to itsa, then you've set up a potential service facsimile. This is one of the reasons why Scientology would never become a service facsimile in a society. See, it increases the ability to itsa.

Now, let's look back at the FDA for a moment. They are taking over a role of classifying for and protecting the public from making up their own minds about food. They're denying the public an analytical attitude toward products. And they step in there and protect the public from themselves, which is to say, they cut the public itsa. Now having reduced the public itsa very severely along a level where it didn't need reduction, they have then set up a situation where anybody they pass is okay. The public then loses the criterion of inspection; the public no longer does its own inspection. They don't buy Salinas Valley lettuce because it's good and avoid Mexican lettuce because it's bad, see? But the FDA, aberratedly, because it's in some wild state, then goes in and passes – because somebody slipped them a quick buck or something like that (slipped them Mexican lettuce) – and says, "Well, that's okay. Mexican lettuce: that's – that's all right, that's all right. Seal of approval – bang. It's fertilized with dysentery."

Look what happens to the public suddenly. The public can be caved in by it, because it's opened a gate which is destructive. See what they are? They are not, then, increasing familiarity with the environment. They are decreasing it and leaving this area in a mystery. And it's all set up on the irrational supposition that they're infallible.

They had some non-pregnancy drug the other day and it had wild side effects, and they passed it. They passed it. There's been several drugs of recent times that have been passed that are terribly destructive one way or the other. Now, obviously, some role exists for such an agency. But every time you set up such an agency, you set up a potential service facsimile, which will then accumulate to it a great deal of evil. And the next thing you know, you have set up a situation where nobody can live with it. Now, you get how that's done? It's by reducing itsa.

For instance, you'd almost never look for travel agencies to aberrate a society. See, you wouldn't look to a travel agency as a primary source of aberration in the society. They could bring in a little bit. We had a situation here – we had a situation here in England where anybody that could buy a ticket in the West Indies, you see, could come to London. And some shipping company made millions shipping everybody to London. And this was looked on in some particular lines as something. And then oddly and wildly enough, the Parliament up here was faced with the embarrassing situation, suddenly, of limiting the amount of immigration from one of its own colonies – very embarrassing. They managed to get over it and pass it and nobody has ever heard of it since. And they've limited immigration in that particular line. But I'm afraid this wasn't even much of an aberration. I mean, that's about as close as a travel agency could come, you see?

So it doesn't mean that all these sources are perfect. Little randomities exist around these other sources, don't you see? But broadly, those that directly reduce the itsa – those that directly reduce the itsa and don't help or support the itsa line in any way – are most likely to become service facsimiles. They're a solution without inspection which is too broadly applied.

This girl has a survival solution. She simply says, "Families are no good." This is what she's made up her mind to. She holds that in place. She proves it to herself all the time. She works day and night. She sits there – you can see her in a brown study, you know? She's sitting there and so on. "Hmm, yeah. Yeah," she'll say to herself, "yeah. Proves it. Mother didn't say anything to me this afternoon, so that of course proves, you see, families are no good." See, and it all works out. Now, she doesn't have to look to find out why didn't Mother speak to her all afternoon. And that brings about a no as-issness of mass. There's no necessity to inspect. She's got it solved. Mother didn't speak to her all afternoon because families are no good. That's it. She didn't have to inspect the fact that she, last evening when she took the car out, bent the front fender and then didn't say anything about it and didn't offer to do anything about it and put it back in the garage. And Mama found it at noon and cut the communication line because she already knows that it's disastrous to try to talk, you see?

So you've got a situation there. Now, that little ARC break is never going to blow away, is it? It's never going to be talked about, not going to be any communication on the subject and so forth. Well, what's preventing it from being talked about? "Families are no good." That proves it.

Now this, added to – you understand, it gets charged up because every one of these ARC breaks that contributes to it in its immediate vicinity charges it up further, and the person holds it in line harder, and more ARC breaks pile up on it until it eventually becomes an accumulation of mass. And therefore, when you prepcheck somebody with a service facsimile around the vicinity of this service facsimile without hitting it on, you turn on mass. The source of the mass is: nothing has been itsa'd.

Now, you're prepchecking them this way: "Since the last session, has anything been suppressed?" Let's say it's auditing that's the target. This is in vignette; this is not a real service facsimile – "My auditor is no good."

("There is no reason to answer this question because my auditor is no good, because auditors are no good.") "No." Now, the case is in a solid, continuous ARC break so it doesn't register on your meter.

"Since the last session, has anything been invalidated?" you see?

"Nope." ("Auditors are no good. Wouldn't do me any good to answer the question anyway, because auditors are no good.") You see?

Yet the case isn't thinking this consciously. Case isn't thinking that consciously. That's just everything that you ask the case comes up against this.

And you – my God – you're trying to talk to this case. You're trying to get this case to talk. You're trying to get this case to do something. And you do know what you're doing. And yet you're going up against some kind of a barrier like this in this case. And then all of a sudden, you wheel back and you say, "Uhh-uhh! I'm a failure as an auditor." No, you're not a failure as an auditor. You just didn't clip the service facsimile that made auditing impossible. You see that? And this is expressed by the no-motion of the tone arm action. Because there is no itsa in that immediate vicinity, there's no, then, dismissal or discharge of the charge hanging up on it. You see that?

Now, you're listening to this opinion, "Auditors are no good," on somebody who is... who never inspects an auditor or auditing. There's no itsa. In other words, the whole thing is just completely unjustified. How do they know whether the auditor is no good or not? They've seldom heard one; they've never looked at them. See, how would they know?

And let's get another situation: I'm very, very sure that some of you have been over the coals of being considered immature, or some other way, by either your mother or father or family – irresponsible, see? Now, you probably have never asked yourself this other question: "Did they ever look at me?" Now, there's lots of mothers, the last time they looked at little Roscoe was when he was about two. And they're still trying to advise two-year-old Roscoe at the age of thirty what he should do about his marriage. Well, they don't know anything about him.

If you want to give somebody a send that has a lot of family trouble, just ask them questions along that particular line, and so on. Ask them what they have observed about their family. There's a good RIC. Probably get tone arm action out of that, you see, because it's on the fringe of something if they're having trouble with something. And they're liable to come

up with the realization that their family has never looked at them and doesn't know them. See, we're on a no-itsa situation, some preconceived notion.

Societies tend to get stuck with these things, to get stuck with some idea. And it's very interesting that this is probably the way that a society reduces its strength, just as an individual reduces his strength this way. I feel sorry for this society, in a number of ways, because in certain zones and areas which the society depends upon for its control of mean, vicious, nasty persons and things like us, these guys haven't got any itsa line out. Do you realize what's happening? If you want to look at it bluntly, these guys are sitting back taking the wrong actions with regard to certain situations. They're trying to prevent – through their wrong itsa on Scientology – they're trying to prevent certain zones and spheres of activity, which is to say, "the public must not be practiced on by an unqualified guy who doesn't happen to pay dues to us," and that sort of thing.

All right, now they're set with certain set, fixed ideas, see? They believe these ideas. And they believe that what we're doing and what we have to do with is no good and it's corn, see, and that it's not any advance on anything.

And my God, during this whole period of time we're moving right straight on ahead into more mental technology and more technology about life and livingness than they ever dreamed could ever exist. We have actually been effectually isolated and insulated from any further interference, or from having our energies drained down by being made to comply with or agree with the mores of their particular practice lines. That would have slowed us down like mad, don't you see? We're moving forward at express-train velocity.

There isn't any faculty of any college or something like that is going to tell you or me whether or not we had better research or not research some particular sphere of existence. If we can put an itsa line on it, we look at it. It doesn't then make it "bad" or "impolite," see, or something like that – "this is why we shouldn't look." And we're actually traveling as a subject without a service fac, and it's making fantastic velocity. And here these poor sods are, whose whole life is bound up in these – you know, the mustard-plaster level of healing. And they're not in contest to keep their developmental line coming forward, so there they sit, and there we go.

How high can it rise before the potential suddenly explodes? They're nuts. That's what it makes them look to us. The potential will eventually explode in their faces. In what way? They suddenly won't have any patients. Nobody will be paying any attention to them, because they have a wholly authoritarian educational system. That is to say, they put it on TV, "You must see your local doctor. Your local doctor receives you in open arms." Well, they're so unreal they don't realize that that isn't the public line. Their word of mouth – I don't care how much advertising you buy, you got to have good word of mouth, man. You can buy newspapers full of advertising to get somebody to go see a movie that's no good and the theater will stay empty, because their word of mouth is bad, you see? And the word of mouth on medicine is very bad. Very bad.

And while they're taking fortunes away from people in the United States for not healing them, and not advancing their own technical lines, and not really measuring up the way they should, they're not making the effort necessary to survive. Why? Because they have a

service facsimile on us. They don't even know they've got it. It's hidden down amongst their case, amongst any other batty lines.

I had a good news story on the subject. I didn't release it. It might have woke them up. They have to reorganize the whole of mental and physical healing before they could cope with what we're doing. This potential – these poles are stretching further and further and wider and wider apart, and eventually they will become a no-factor. That's what happens to them – they're a no-factor. They simply are not powerful enough or influential enough or anything else enough to do anything about it.

You may not think that we're growing. But I look back over any six months of the last ten and eleven years, and frankly, I hardly recognize a comparable size – just six months to the next six months. This is a rather fantastic thing, only this is going on internationally.

Now, did you ever double a penny for thirty-two days? It's the old mathematical trick. A guy says, "Well, you needn't pay me anything but one cent doubled every day for thirty-two days."

And somebody says, "That's fine," but of course at the end of thirty-two days – I don't know what the figure is. It's either a million pounds, or it's something like that that it has grown up to, don't you see? It only takes this type of curve growth going on up.

Now, therefore, they're not impeding what they should be impeding if they wanted to survive, themselves. They're not handling the situation within its own zone of reality. And that's all aberration is, is a failure to handle the situation in its own zone of reality.

So this, then, is the service that a service facsimile performs. It makes it unnecessary for an individual to handle the situation in its own sphere of reality – makes it unnecessary to do so. So nobody ever does anything about it; so mass accumulates up on it. Now, any mass that accumulates on a case, any mass that accumulates by reason of Prepcheck, any body mass that occurs by reason of processing and so forth, must to some degree or another then be battling up against a service facsimile. And if a person cannot be knocked out on the subject of a psychosomatic illness of some character or another by processing, then that must be part of a service facsimile.

Those things that auditing won't change are, then, rooted in this other mechanism. They're a solution without inspection which pulls in upon it all the uninspected mass. That's all. And of course, mass disappears because it's as-ised. And when a person does not as-is the mass that is there, he naturally gets an accumulation of mass. And the mass that accumulates around one of these service facsimiles is rather marvelous to behold. And of course, it's that mass accumulating which holds and prevents the Prepcheck action. And those are the technical mechanisms which prevent tone arm action.

If you don't get tone arm action, it's because the individual does not as-is and has not as-ised any mass in that zone or area for a long time. And not having as-ised any, when you get into its vicinity, you go into it with a thud if it gets anywhere close to processing, getting well or handling the environment in which the individual finds himself.

The auditing session, to this effectiveness, extends out to everything the individual does during the period of time that he's being audited and every environment he finds himself

in. So that if any service facsimile exists which is being reacted upon in any of his environment, anyplace, it will to some degree influence his auditing. And the more of these things exist, the harder it is for you to get tone arm action – until it gets impossible.

Now, an individual can have a service facsimile and still get tone arm action – get some tone arm action. And it would be better in some cases to make sure that the service facsimiles are out of the way before plunging backtrack. The amount of time that you could save in processing is a very large factor. I've just made a restudy of this. And I've been brushing off Clear left and right and saying no good, no good – you know, I mean, and so on, Keyed-Out Clear. And I recently found out that you can stabilize – there's a possibility here of stabilizing a Clear by the eradication of the things that will key in. So, you see, if you knock out a number of service facsimiles out of an individual, why, the case then stays stable to the degree that it doesn't still have service facsimiles.

Now, R3SC is an extremely workable process. I have written it up; it's been released. Of course, one can expect certain refinements of a process of this particular character. But this is peculiarly complete, because we accidentally already had a couple of types of assessment that you could do for this. We have the old 2-12 assessment, and we have the R3R assessment – preliminary step. They're perfectly adequate, don't you see? There are slippier assessments that you can do and I'm sure we'll have some fancier assessments on it one way or the other, but these happen to be adequate assessments. And you'll find that the mere inspection of a folder from beginning to end will give you a bunch of candidates. Just inspect the folder. Just start turning over things and looking at auditors' notes and mentions of this and that, and what the individual has had *bing-bang* runs on of one character or another – whether they gave tone arm action or not, you see? But look particularly for periods of no tone arm action and then go back before those periods and find out what was being addressed on the case. And you'll probably have a service-facsimile combo sitting right there, and just use it in your ordinary steps of R3SC.

You get an idea: let's take a period – we found a period here the individual was audited for an intensive and toward the last half of the intensive got no tone arm action. We notice this from the old, old, old, old auditor's reports, see? We find out that on Wednesday "form" was addressed by the auditor and that was the end of tone arm action. We notice that there may have been two subjects there that could have been addressed. Well, run them both! Don't be chichi, see?

Now, you can run almost anything with R3SC, which is what makes it very good. Just don't overrun it. And if the pc says no, and he can't give it answers and so forth, come off of it; don't shove it down his throat. With those ramifications, then, it doesn't much matter what you pick to be the service facsimile. But if you do a slippy assessment, which is a preliminary-step assessment, it's a bingo assessment right dead-on – and something like that – boy, you get action, man, you'll get action. But if you pick almost anything else, you will also get some action.

So it's not critical – the assessment is not terribly critical. Of course, the faster you get what is really the service facsimile on the case, then the faster your tone arm action restores and the case reverts to battery. So there's a lot of ramifications to this sort of thing. But in the

final analysis is, here is a process, full bloom, which totally replaces your R2-12 type processes – makes them utterly unnecessary – and takes care of this thing we call a rock slammer, and takes care of body mass and a lot of other things in cases that we've been particularly worried about, and particularly takes care of the auditor's main worry which is "How do I get tone arm action on this pc?" Obviously, if he can't get tone arm action on the pc, the pc is sitting in a service facsimile. I mean, that's the end product of that.

Now, you may have to run two or three or four service facsimiles, but by that time you're going to Clear. So you might as well go ahead and clear the guy. Throw it all out of restimulation; make the case sit there with a free-flop needle, and so forth, and say, "All right, I cleared you." Let the guy enjoy it. Let him enjoy it for a day or an afternoon or something like that before you reach for the earlier GPM.

All right. Now, that's R3SC. And I hoped – I noticed – do you notice that it's tabulated 3? I want to make a short note on that. It's the tabulation of 3 is because, actually, it is a 3 process – being a clearing process. We rehabilitate Scientology levels against the existing scale, and that means that your R3N, and so forth, will be called R4N. It's a reorientation. But I'm not going to reuse their letters when they're moved up to 4. And there aren't any other R4s, so they're very easy to recognize, and they won't get you tangled up in any way. And then we'll be able to throw these clearing techniques in straight where they belong. And there are a few of them there, so we want them tabulated. We're getting our house in order, and it's making very good sense the way it's going together.

That means that there's quite a few cases around here will have to be cleared before they go on to OT. I'm sorry, but that's the way it is.

Thank you.

HOW TO FIND A SERVICE FACSIMILE

A lecture given on 4 September 1963

Thank you.

I'm very, very glad to announce that there are some of you who are not in trouble. Thought we'd start the lecture on a happy note.

What's the date?

Audience: Four September.

Four Sept. AD 13. Don't know what the month is named after, but probably something very barbaric.

Well, the shadow of your big toe has approached within several yards of a service facsimile. You remind me of a scout looking over a citadel which is bristling with guns and quite hostile, observing it from as far deep in the neighboring woods as you possibly can get. And I think maybe you've caught the tip of one turret or have seen a sign which says "Citadel." And I'm going to ask you now to be brave and even get out to the edge of the woods and take a look at this thing, because it's well worth looking at.

And perhaps the fault that you have not seen it is resident with me. It appears to be quite lucid to me; it doesn't seem to be offering very much complication and so on.

But I know what this breed of cat is. I myself have taken a look at it and have audited it and have seen the results of it, and over a period of years have had an unhappy history of colliding with it. You know, you're going down M1 there and you're wide open, you know, and everything is fine and I'll be a son of a gun if somebody hasn't piled barrels across the road, don't you see? And well, that's the end of that one, you see?

Pcs, pcs have always been full of surprises, and it's been of great interest to me to find out how they create these surprises. [laughs] And so I'm very, very happy with what we've got here in the service facsimile, because it is how they create these surprises and what happens. Apparently there's a great deal to know about this thing. And I have not, to any great degree, relayed this information even in the bulletin of R3SC. Apparently this takes a lot of grasp, basically because it's terribly simple. And it's not that anybody is protecting their service facsimile – you can almost wipe that out.

You head a person's attention toward the service facsimile, and they go right on in, man. They go down the toboggan and over the falls – crash! They are no more able to keep

out of the service facsimile than anything. And you needn't erect, now, a structure of philosophy to explain bad assessment by saying the pc will defend himself against his service fac being found. The pc will not. The pc gets to the middle of this whirlpool and just whirls. That's it, man. All you've got to do is swing him somewhere in the vicinity of the lake in which the whirlpool exists, and he dives right in and swims like mad and goes right to the whirlpool and says that's it – unless he's prevented from doing so.

My first plea, then, is don't prevent the pc from finding his service facsimile. That seems to be a rather obvious point to make, and I'm sorry that it sounds sardonic or sarcastic, but I'm afraid has to be made.

Because you could say, "Well, of course, if the pc counts on this for survival, he's not going to let it be found," you see? And you could go off on that line and make a lot of hard work for yourself, and actually it's not of that nature at all.

Now, there are so many ways of isolating a service facsimile that to cover the area of assessment at this particular stage of the game is merely to put in your hands a lot of rote this and that which will more assist you to miss the service facsimile than to find it. There is no substitute whatsoever for knowing what one is; there is no substitute at all.

Now, the service facsimile, first and foremost, is a tremendous solution which the pc believes, if disturbed, will end his survival. It is always an aberrated solution; it always exists in present time and is part of the environment of the pc. And it is something that everyone, unintentionally or otherwise, is telling the pc is wrong and causing him to assert that it is right.

Now, you get to understand a service facsimile a little bit better when you recognize that last point. That last point is very, very important. Otherwise, you're going to be running some of the silliest things and calling them service facsimiles, and you're not going to make the boat at all.

The environment, the mores, one or another dynamics, is insistently and constantly at work trying to tell the individual that the service facsimile is wrong, and the individual is constantly saying that it is right. And when you have that situation you have an unauditible pc, because he is getting audited only to prove that this is right and actually will constantly bring it up in auditing.

It is about as hard to find as a burning tar barrel in the middle of an empty field on a dark night, see?

The pc is always bringing this to the auditor's attention. This is so much the case that once you have found it you will consider that you have been very obtuse indeed. But sometimes it's being brought to the auditor's attention in different wordings, in different conduct, in different approaches that one doesn't find it easy to label. And it is probably labeling it that is harder than finding it.

Now, let us first look at the exact thing we are trying to do with a service facsimile – the exact thing we are trying to do with it; there is one thing we are trying to do with it – and then this will move out of your perimeter, as an auditor, any necessity of trying to use this principle to make an OT, because that is not what we're using it for.

I'll give you an idea now of this. Reg and I just had a discussion a moment ago, and he was saying, "Well, a human body would be a service facsimile." He's absolutely right. He's absolutely right. But this, of course, is being applied to going OT – not for the purpose we are applying it.

See, the remark is absolutely correct. It turns on mass. See? It is being asserted constantly, and so forth. Obviously it's a perfectly good service facsimile, you see? Well, all that's wrong with it is that it isn't the service facsimile we are trying to target. See? The wrong target. Because if you used that, you would be going to OT, don't you see? And we are not using the service facsimile for that. We're simply using it to get a person auditable, this lifetime, and get out of the road those constantly restimulated solutions that make it hard to audit this person. And that's its purpose. Its purpose is simply to clear this lifetime.

Now, I can give you some beauties on the application of the service facsimile on the whole track. What do you suppose you have a bank for? It obviously must be some sort of a service facsimile. Obviously; it turns on mass, doesn't it? It follows all of the rules.

Obviously, "How would having a bank make you right and others wrong," well, obviously – ha! – obviously would kill the pc. Why? Well, you'd just restimulate the whole early track and you'd throw him into countless GPMs and you'd overrestimulate him like mad. But obviously, according to the theory, it's a perfectly valid service facsimile. A reactive mind is a perfectly valid service facsimile, but not for the purposes that we are going to use this for.

It's well to remember the basic principles of the service facsimile when you are running somebody to OT, because sooner or later you're going to find this guy, and he just can't seem to get up to a point where he can tilt a planet. You're having trouble with this pc. He sits down there on one mountaintop, and you sit there on the other mountaintop and you're trying to audit him, see? And the E-Meter you use are the little glows that appear in the various parts of his vicinity. See, you say something; you see something glow, you say, "That read." [laughter] Probably your auditing commands are all in telepathy or something like this, but we don't care much about that. That's a good thing to remember. This guy just – he keeps complaining, complaining – ARC breaking. Weather gets terrible on the planet, you know – keeps ARC breaking. Thunderstorms and other things occur. And he's got this PTP, you see? He just can't tilt a planet. Weak. And I bid you remember this point, you see, that undoubtedly you are now bucking a service facsimile, see, which would probably, after you've talked for a while, add up to something like "being incapable."

And you ask him, "All right. How would being incapable make you right and how would it make others wrong?" and so forth. And you run it on up with just the same steps of R3SC. You undoubtedly got this boy flying again, you see, into some new zone or area.

So you're never really rid of the principles of the service facsimile. He's got some tremendous solution, and that solution is "being incapable." How does he survive? By being incapable. At what level? At some very upstage level of some kind or another, you see? All right. So that's perfectly valid.

So it'd be valid almost at any point of a case, but that isn't what we are using it for and that is not the design and style of R3SC. It's the same breed of cat – the same breed of cat. But

we are attacking here a solution which, just like any other solution, is a barrier to the discharge of the confusion.

What's made this possible is a new evaluation and a new road found through the bank on guess what? You've had a new communication level in auditing, and so forth, and that clarified a lot of things. But, of course, the service facsimile is born out of a reevaluation and a readjustment of the confusion and the stable datum – that basic; confusion and the stable datum.

The confusion can only stay in place as long as it has a stable datum to hang it up. Now, that is so light and so easily changed by a thetan or a being that this does not much get in anybody's road. It's only when it becomes an aberrated solution, the loss of which threatens survival, that the individual fails to be able to discharge the mass associated with it.

So if you could see confusion as a stable datum (you know those principles; they're old HCA principles), you should realize that you can actually pluck, out of the center of the confusion, the stable datum, and at that point get a discharge of the energy held in place. It's a new discovery, you see? What holds the confusion in place? A stable datum. That's a new thought, do you see, because you handle life all the time on the reverse line. You've got too much confusion, put a stable datum in and the confusion lines up on the stable datum. That's how you've been using it before.

All right, let's take a reverse look: How is the confusion held in place? The confusion is held in place by a stable datum. So the removal of the stable datum then discharges the confusion. And a confusion is a very good description of "what is charge?" Charge is an electrical confusion.

Now, as long as a stable datum is held in place by the person, the confusion will not discharge. Do you see this? So here's a new piece of advanced technology – rather remarkable piece of technology – that we have had around for a very long time and it's simply a reverse look at the thing, and we know now how to hold a confusion in place.

Now, fortunately for us – fortunately for us – confusions are tolerable and not always aberrative. In fact, the biggest part of the confusions of life are not at all aberrative; they could go on for a long time without hurting any thetan or incapacitating him for a moment.

You're playing a card game; you're playing a card game and you're having an awful time playing this card game. You just never seem to really get anyplace playing this card game. And you discover a little booklet and it says "How You Play Canasta," see? And you read over this booklet and it gives you some hot dope on the thing, and after that you can play canasta. This is just about as aberrative as eating blueberry pie. You understand?

Nevertheless, the confusions of canasta are held in abeyance by these little rules you have learned about canasta.

Now, of course the confusions concerning canasta, as I say, have no aberrative value whatsoever. Zero. Life, you see, as I've told you several times in recent lectures, is not in itself an aberrative activity. Aberration has to be rather extraordinary. It has to be worked at; it has to be kept in restimulation all the time.

Now, this rather innocent action of the switchboard girl solving the confusion of her job on the principle "If I have twelve calls simultaneously appearing on the board, I handle one and then handle two and then handle three," don't you see? In other words, she's got a confusion of calls, all you have to do is teach her to handle one call. Each confusion she has from that point thereon is handled by that. Well, it actually is not at all aberrative to her. Nothing going to drive her mad because she has twelve calls simultaneously, don't you see? That's nonsense.

So now, we pull off the case – we say, "All right, what system or solution have you had to answering calls when they were too many or a confusion of calls?"

And she says, "Well, I answer one at a time," and so forth. We get the motion of the tone arm here could not be detected with a micromilli-vernier UNIVAC. See, it actually doesn't back up any charge. You get the idea?

No, there's got to be force and violence mixed up with these things. There's got to be something fabulous. Now, she could add this up and you could add this up as part of the confusion of trying to survive by having a job – and this could be part of it. And you might touch on it and it might appear to move some mass, but actually she's got something else she is worried about. Her survival is threatened by the fact that she could not handle her job and she's liable to be dismissed, don't you see? Ah, but look, solving how she handles a switchboard does not solve what she is worried about. She is worried about the fact that if she does not handle her job she will not have a job and her survival will thereby be threatened.

Ah, there's a much bigger tower on which this little piece of confusion was leaning, don't you see? All right, so we address this. How does she hold her job? By being a competent switchboard operator. Well, I'm afraid that this is not very aberrative either.

Why is she worried about holding her job? You say, "What solutions do you have for holding your job?" And you get a little TA action, see? Get a little bit of TA action.

She says, "So-and-so, and be nice to the boss" and so forth, and so forth, and you get a little TA action, see. Because this threatens her survival, don't you see, very much – much more intimately.

But the case is still relatively unauditible. There must be something on this case if we're auditing this case and we're having trouble with the case; there must be something else that we are bucking into here. What are we running into? Something else. Something else.

And we look around and we find out, "Well now, what makes you upset, particularly, about losing a job?" or something like that. "What would be upsetting about this?"

And you hear, marvel of marvel and wonder of wonders, you hear – you expect to hear, you know, "My aged mother would then starve to death," you see, or something like that. And she says, "Well, actually, it's my dog."

You can't add this up. Actually, she can't either. Actually, it's unaddable. And you say, "Well, what about the dog? What's this got to do with the job?"

"Well, you see, uh, they'd put the dog to sleep if I couldn't feed the dog, you see?"

Now, you might be getting here close someplace and that even looks a little bit sensible, don't you see? That doesn't look quite completely dippy. But you've got the idea of a human being working like mad and terribly worried about their job and so forth, and we've traced it back to a dog. Now, ordinarily human beings do not work to support dogs. But this one is; this one is. And my golly, we work this around for a little while and we suddenly find out that she has lots of trouble all the time and lots of upsets about keeping the dog in an apartment. And we may have a service facsimile that is simply described as "keeping a dog."

See, that's probably too mild a look at it, and I haven't given it to you as rough as you would actually find it or as incredible, because I want you to understand it, not sit there with your jaw dropped, see? But keeping a dog – keeping a dog, or keeping a dog in an apartment, some such action as this, or keeping a dog – and "How would keeping a dog make you right?" And "How would keeping a dog make others wrong?"

And we find out that this girl has one computation in existence which makes her right and makes others wrong, and it has to do with keeping a barking dog in an apartment where it'll annoy people. And that makes her right and makes others wrong, and she feels if she were deprived of that solution her survival would be shattered. And this is what's causing her to worry about her job. Don't you see?

So she always carefully gets these little, sharp-bark terriers, you see, that scuffle and raffle when they walk around on the floors, you see, and that yip and yap endlessly, particularly in the middle of the night. Sooner or later as you're running this thing, she'll all of a sudden cognite, "You know, I always seem to get very noisy dogs. Wonder why that is?" Well, of course, naturally. It bothers people more.

And you run this thing down and you will get some kind of an incident, early-life incident and that sort of thing, where somebody insisted that a dog be put to sleep or something like this because it was getting old and scrawny. And she had to drive it down to the pound, and everybody was busy making her wrong and, he [she] was trying to make everybody else wrong, don't you see? And this thing is all wound up in a ball. And wonder of wonders, we get this thing audited out – it's all about dogs, you see? And suddenly, because keeping a job and handling a switchboard was attached to an aberrated service facsimile, you see, to this degree, then, her worries and anxieties all have a big lie in them, you see? And they're all twisted around wrong way to, and all of a sudden she can operate a switchboard much better – doesn't even have to have a stable datum to operate one, she just operates a switchboard, don't you see? And she can keep a job, she doesn't worry about the job, and so forth. She's relaxed on this line. You get this action?

Now, I've given you a very, very simple, understandable solution here – very simple, very understandable. And they're not quite that simple when found in real life; they are more aberrated. I gave you a more intelligible one because I wanted you to understand there was some connection. Now, as you walk across this in real life they jump, usually, a wider gap than from job to keeping a dog, see? Probably be more involved than this.

They are across a larger spark gap. You may find out that it is "breaking dishes." So you may have some more steps in it, you see? Breaking dishes. And this doesn't make any sense at all about keeping dogs or holding jobs, but nothing makes any sense anyway. She's

breaking dishes to be right, you see, and breaking dishes to make others wrong, and this is the service facsimile on which everything else is piling up. And oddly enough, if she's not permitted to break dishes, she knows she cannot survive.

She may not know what the barometer reads; she may not know how wide the street is; she may not know a lot of other things in life. But this she does know: that if she ceases to keep the dog or break the dishes or something like that, why, that's the end of her – total tertiary line of defense.

Now, you may not discover this at once on a case. You may not discover this promptly, immediately and at once on a case. You may audit off one, two or three apparent service facsimiles that all answer up to the complete description of a service facsimile, but are actually only leaning on the central service facsimile that is restimulated in present time, don't you see? But as you take these things off, why, the central one comes to view.

Now, you see now why, when you say or imply to me, "Now Ron, you should give me some kind of a rote procedure by which to isolate this every time," you're asking me, of course, to apply a logical system to an illogical action. I probably could do it and we probably will do it and all of that sort of thing, but I actually would much rather you understood what you were doing. See, I'd much rather. Because, frankly, you can hunt and punch around on a case. You can take an old case, assessment sheets and folders and 2-12 and something, you know, on the case, or the case reports or auditors' reports or case histories or something; and you could get a whole list of things – anything that's been found on the case. And you can have a discussion over these various things and points, and you can assess them in various ways and get one or another of them to read. And you'll find out the pc's interest will hang up someplace on this list. They'll be very interested in it. Far from leaving it, they dive right in on it, see? And here's the pc's interest; it'll hang up with a somatic, so forth.

And now, in fooling around with this, it is sometimes necessary to reword it. You don't have to worry about rewording the command. You'll get results on cases by running different commands, but you'll only be running oddball, flank material on the service facsimile itself, don't you see?

Now, the command's – is always, how would it – whichever you have found – makes the pc right and makes others wrong. It's always that command, see? It's not "How would opposing it," "stepping on it," "throwing it away" or something like that, or "fighting it make you right?" see? Because you haven't got the idea of what the service facsimile is, see?

Because the condition, the final identification is that the service facsimile solution is the pc. That solution is the pc, so it is something he has. It's "How would it make him right and make others wrong?" Now, you can vary it: "How *has* it made you right?" and "How *has* it made others wrong?" You could even say "What would be made wrong by it?"

Now we're going afield, but the pc sometimes springs over, and when they're operating in an aberrated area of this particular character, their ability to follow an auditing command deteriorates markedly and they slop. That's all right.

The way you handle that, and so forth: He's all of a sudden – pc is answering what and not answering how, see? You say, "All right. Well, just give me the rest of the whats and we'll

get back to the how," you know? I mean, they're not very tough. You know, don't make them wrong and stop them and all this sort of thing. Let them go because you may be standing in the road of an avalanche at an automaticity, see? They'll slop on that auditing command, do you understand?

But the auditing command is not ever "How has it made you wrong?" Never. Never. Never. Oddly enough, it'll run, but it'll run the pc down scale. "How would doing things to it make you right?" see? Oh, oh, oh, no, no, no. You'll get some tone arm action. See, this is what'll fool you. You'll get a little tone arm action. It'll look okay.

Well, let me take the case in point. We assess "Father, " and some genius has just read the rest of the 2-12 bulletin and found out that it was always "oppose" – you were supposed to oppose what you found on that. So he ran 2-12 plus R3SC, which is pretty good. I suppose you can run several other processes in conjunction with it, too. You could probably have the pc feeling the walls at the same time you ran the process. I mean, you could do a lot of things. [laughs]

But anyhow – I'm sorry, but that actually happened. And the command was "How would opposing Father" – this is not quite the right one, but don't want to cast too many bricks – "How would opposing Father make you right?"

Brother, that is not a service facsimile: opposing Father is not a service facsimile – that's an action. See, that's just an action. Now, if you assessed it out, you've got to try it. You got to try it on for size and you got to find out if there's anything to this, because it would be if you assessed Father... it just simply – I mean, it's too idiotically simple: Father must be a solution. See, it must be a huge solution. So we say, "How would Father make you right?" And "How would," you know, "Father make others wrong?" you see?

Now, you can drag this over into the cow pasture and say, well, hating Father is probably the service facsimile and so forth, but actually you're just looking at a secondary or tertiary condition of a service facsimile. You're not looking at a service facsimile, because this is no action. See? This'd be something which was the result of a service facsimile.

And the first rule is – what I first gave you in this lecture – if the pc doesn't immediately jump into the lake and swim right straight to the whirlpool, but tells you "Oh, well... Father – make me right, hm-mm, doesn't make any sense," I call to your attention the pc is still standing on the bank – not service facsimile. Got the idea? Pc has not swum madly in and got all embroiled in this thing. Because that's the first thing they want to do, hit the service facsimile – drown. Why? Because to drown is to survive. Obviously – that's the characteristic of a service facsimile.

The pc says, "Um, I don't think um, I don't know. It's – I'll have to – right – I don't know whether that's right or not. I'll just – make me right? And – don't – I don't know if that would make me right or not. Let's see, would it make me right? Would it make anybody else wrong. I don't know. I can answer the question. There doesn't seem to be very much wrong."

Wake up there in the auditing chair and take a look at what's going on.

Pc is standing on the bank, feet not wet, whirlpool not approached – equals service facsimile not been found.

So go on and do something else clever. Say, "Well, that's fine. I'm glad we covered that," cheerily, cheerily, cheerily, cheerily, cheerily, and you gather up your papers and get the hell out of there, see?

Pc won't be able to keep out of it; that I guarantee you, man. Won't be able to stay out of it.

You say... the service facsimile is "burning cats." See, something weird like this comes up, see? Or "being a cat," you know? Something like that. "Being catlike." "How would being catlike make you right?"

"Oh, well, that's so-and-so and so-and-so, and so-and-so and so-and-so and so-and-so, and then, of course, so-and-so and so-and-so, you understand. There's quite a – quite a – that's quite a thing when you start really thinking about it like that. You see, catlike is so-and-so and so-and-so and so on, you understand? And so on, and a lot of times been catlike because, you see, it – it uh, it's catlike, you know, and – and so forth, and uh, that's the way it is and so on." And when you can't get in an auditing question to get the session properly started, know that you have hit one. [laughter]

Now, the reason it turns on automaticities is, of course, that it is automatic, unanalyzed solutions, and they simply just pour off in a Niagara. When you got a real one and you're running one, always note in your auditor's report "automaticity." It merely means, more answers than the pc can articulate are arriving from the bank – conveyor belt stacking up. Just note down when you find one of those automaticities. It's a guarantee you've hit on a service facsimile.

Now, this gives us the way it has to be run. Because it is susceptible to avalanches, you can't then run it with the old TR 0, 1, 2, 3, 4, see? You've got to throw the question into the arena and let the lions fight over it for a while, you understand? And just don't stop it with a new question; don't stop it with acknowledgments; let it sort of run out. After a while, the pc has given you fifteen, twenty answers and so forth, and seems to look rather blank – doesn't seem to have one now, and that sort of thing. Well, you can either give him another question or you can change the thing over to the other side, and it does the same thing then. So it's actually not one auditing question for one auditing answer. You're not running it that way. You're running it one auditing question for one waterfall.

But sometimes the pc swaps ends in the middle of it. Well, this is no time to stop him either. He's busy making others wrong with this "being catlike," you see, and others wrong, others wrong, others wrong, others wrong, "and it'd make me right to so-and-so and so-and-so." And he's just reached the end of the flow and he's turned around and he's on the back flow. You can also overrun these things and put the pc into a stuck-flow sort of a drifting anaten. You're insisting that more answers must exist, you see? Well, he's already at the end of his rope, and you're making him run too long on that side. So it's run very permissively.

What you're trying to do is get rid of this avalanche and automaticity and get some tone arm action. That's your main purpose. So how you do that as an auditor is give only enough questions to get the pc going and only enough acknowledgments to acknowledge the fact that you had a lot of answers. And turn it around whenever it comes toward the end of the rope; and turn it around the other way. It's very simple stuff.

Now, trying to keep the pc answering the auditing question is sometimes difficult, as I just told you, because the pc will skid around on this and disassociate because he's in a disassociated area. And don't you ever tell me that you're very shocked because this pc has given you a whole bunch of answers that weren't answers to the auditing question. Now, that's expected. That's expected, see? Because what?

This solution – now, let's talk back on the theory of the thing. This solution, you see, is holding back a tremendous amount of aberration, none of which makes sense, so it doesn't as-is. So there sits this solution, see, "keeping a dog," you see?

All right. All this stuff is back of it and nothing is going to flow, because as long as this person is able to keep a dog, life is handled: Jobs are taken care of, everything is protected; all is right in the world – except, of course, for the painful stomach, a hatred of dogs and some little marginal fringe worries, you know, of one kind or another. And being broke all the time and not being able to have a job or hold a job.

It's like trying to solve a problem with a whopping lie, don't you see? And boy, would you have to get busy to keep this problem solved with this whopping lie. So it has to be continuously asserted – continuously asserted. And that solution, then, is just a solution. That's all it is. And the pc doesn't even have to work on it consciously because the pc has got it all triggered to be worked on all the time anyhow. It's the immediate answer to anything.

So life just continues to stack up on this solution, and it accumulates mass on this solution, and the solution accumulates mass.

Now, because the solution... Now, let me give you the condition of what kind of a solution it's got to be: It's got to be a below 2 on the Tone Scale solution – always below 2, nothing above 2, see? It's a below 2 solution, because it, perforce, is a substitute for an itsa line. It's a substitute for an itsa line. The pc started out by feeling he or she could not itsa the object that he or she was trying to make wrong and so dreamed up this solution – dreamed up this solution as a final solution. And that, then, is a substitute for an itsa line, believe it or not.

Well, there's a girl sitting there and Mother has not spoken to her since noon because the fender of the car has been dented. And she has this solution, "Well, families are no good," you see? Makes it unnecessary to observe Mother; makes it unnecessary to observe the environment; makes it unnecessary to participate; makes it... No necessity at all to do anything about it because it's all done – it's all contained there in the solution. And then because, you see, there is no is-ness occurring on the environment, you get an accumulation of mass. See, mass only accumulates in the absence of itsa. So there goes the old shell game. So it's actually a substitute itsa line.

Now, because of this, of course, it then is referred to every time one refers to anything. And when it is a below 2 on the Tone Scale solution, it of course is propounding this – it's propounding this very clearly, as aberrated as this sounds: To survive it is necessary to succumb. And that solution always propounds that, one way or the other, in some oblique, aberrated way.

Survival is made up of a numerous number of succumbs. How to survive: "Not to have any fun" – that's a good way, see? "To cry all the time." "To appear to be destitute." Obvi-

ously, see, I mean, to... These are all manifestations of non-survival, don't you see? Survive, in order to, it's necessary to manifest non-survival in order to survive. It's always this kind of an oddball solution, see? You'll get something like "not eat," see? That's quite common, by the way, service facsimile: refusing to eat, not eating – common service facsimile. Little children will play this an awful lot of the time, and when it gets out of that realm and range and moves into adult life, why, you have diets. They usually don't amount to a service facsimile, but when they do, you've really got a mess on your hands. It's really a nice, big mess. And this must be terribly common because one of the major problems they have in insane asylums is making people eat. Not eating is one of the final protests – hunger strikes. Throw guys in jail, one of the first things they think of is go on a hunger strike. If they want to make a big protest, they go on a hunger strike. So there's a very common service facsimile.

Some version of no sex – no second dynamic. I don't care how you have it or how you phrase it. It's got to be some "no second dynamic" one way or the other, see? It's an incapacity on it; it's an aberrated practice of it. It can go worse than that. How to survive, you see, is to murder children. How does that add up? Well, it adds up to the guy all right, you see? And on the first dynamic, how to survive? Well, commit suicide, you see? In innumerable ways, you can commit suicide on many gradients, you see? "Be ugly," you see? "Be overweight." "Be too thin." Be this, be that, be disabled, be something, be something – doesn't much matter what it is, you see? You might collide with that on the first dynamic.

On the third dynamic, "to be antisocial." See, these are all sure methods of non-survival, don't you see? And yet they are added up as a survival computation. "Shoot policemen." Third-dynamic solution: how to survive: shoot policemen. Simple, effective. And you say, "Yeah. But that couldn't be a service facsimile in this lifetime, because this pc has never shot a policeman in this lifetime." *Ha-ha-ha-ha-ha!* Don't make me laugh. This pc has always shot a policeman; every time they see a policeman they shoot a policeman.

"Robbing houses." You say, "Well, robbing houses – this individual – this couldn't be a service facsimile, because this person has never robbed a house." Oh, well now, don't be too sure. Never passes one but he doesn't rob it – thinks about it and so forth.

Well, how does he use this service facsimile? Oh, he uses it via the newspapers. He always clips out robberies and shows people about robberies and that sort of thing. Figures out robberies; reads nothing but detective stories, see, and – robbery – robbing houses; good service facsimile.

So, you see, it doesn't even fit in with the guy's environment. Therefore, it sometimes is rather hard to trace.

You get somebody who is in a death cell, you see, having already shot up innumerable policemen and so forth. Well, you know what his service facsimile is – you think. You say it's obviously "shooting policemen." No, I point something out to you: He shot policemen. Probably wasn't his service facsimile at all. His service facsimile is probably "never loading guns" or – you know? Service facsimile is "being kind to everyone."

See, the exact circumstance of the person doesn't always guarantee you that you have your hands on the service facsimile. That's what I'm trying to point out here. Because this thing goes underground. It's not very visible, and they very often... The most effective service

facsimiles are those which are totally hidden until you've come anywhere in their vicinity and then they're laid in your lap, see?

You don't find service facsimiles above 2 on the Tone Scale. Now, it'd be completely silly, then, to add up the ARC of the lower Tone Scale, like "not communicated" or something like this, and say "Well, his service facsimile is 'not communicated'." "How would not communicated make you right?" or "not having communicated make you right?" or "not communicating make you right?" and so forth.

Well, this is, I'm afraid, a little bit too general, see? You don't use these buttons by their isolated selves because they are insufficiently directional.

The pc answers them too broadly.

And all you do in such a case is restimulate the service facsimile without labeling it. Well, let me give you – just dream one up here; don't say it's terribly workable: "Who or what would make themselves right by not communicating" Something like this. Or "Tell me a means of not communicating," and make a list and assess the list. Don't you see? Some odd action of this particular character. Such a button, then, is useful for the location of a service facsimile, but is not in itself a service facsimile.

You eventually get, on this list, "hiding pencils." And you say, "Well, this can't be very damaging, but we will run it anyway." Well, it's not maybe very damaging; but you find out that the reason the pc has always looked so bulky is because they're always carrying fifteen or twenty gross of pencils; can't get into their room at night because of the crates of pencils, you know? Everybody in their vicinity misses pencils all the time. Never spotted him. This is loopy conduct of one kind or another. But sometimes it can look so ordinary to you – because this is this planet – that you sometimes don't put your finger on an obvious service facsimile.

Let's say it isn't "being sick" but it's "having chills." "How would that make you right and make somebody else wrong?" or something like that, you see? Or "having a cold," or something like this. That still could separate out into a service facsimile, don't you see? But it might not be on and it might be on: it doesn't matter.

You, you see, I've given you a bunch of stuff that you may think, by this time, the service facsimile, again, is very hard to locate. No, it isn't. I'm just giving you the idea that you've got to look for it. You've got to prowl around. After this character has given you something that might be it, make a "represent" on it. Be quite frank with the pc. Don't pussyfoot on this thing. There's been too much pussyfooting about already.

Say, "We's looking fo' you' service facsimile. What is it, boy?" You know, subtle!

"What do you think your service facsimile is?" Do a list. Pull the missed withholds and null that list – good reliable method. Pc – withhold it perhaps, and then just the fact that you put it down on pulling the missed withhold – and all of a sudden he dives into the water, swims right over to the middle of the lake, dives right into the middle of the whirlpool and says "There we are. *Uhhhhhh!* What am I doing here?" Interest! Attraction! So forth.

Because, of course, it's not a volitional solution. That is to say, he doesn't think up this solution all the time. It's a subawareness solution which goes into automatic action. It's that buried. He's right on the verge of it all the time, he's in direct connection with it all the time, so you just lay down the faintest link to it and he can't help but travel that link, don't you see?

That's one of the reasons, you say, that neurosis and psychosis are very, very difficult to maintain. All you practically have to do is spot them and they start blowing up. It's very hard to dramatize the exact reason for them.

Why anybody would go through heroic actions to explode a psychosis or neurosis, or electric shock people or go into brain treatment, just because the person is jumping about the floor and screaming or refusing to eat or doing something like this, and so on – that's not a good enough reason. That doesn't mean that the psychosis or neurosis is violent, you see? That only means that it produces violent reactions. See, it doesn't mean that it is violent at all. Maybe this girl, insane, is jumping about the floor because she doesn't like cockroaches. And that's the logical explanation of the thing, and people fail to note that this is true because there are no cockroaches there. But she's seeing cockroaches, you see?

So you might have something on this order (this becomes very elementary): You say, "What really might be worrying you all the time?" You make a little list. And she jumps about the floor and hangs from the chandelier and rolls up in a ball and so forth, but she'll talk to you and she gives you, finally, a list. And you assess this list out according to interest: Which one is she really most interested in? And you'll find out that it's cockroaches. She's very interested in these cockroaches that are all over the floor. And you'd say, "Well, how would seeing cockroaches make you right?" And that's probably the end of her insanity. Why, she probably couldn't maintain it from that point on. She wouldn't be well; she wouldn't be calmed down or anything like that. But she's now going to have a hard time maintaining it because she's got a connection to it. And the thing will discharge. See, it's hard to do now. Now you got to get volitional about jumping around in the middle of the floor; now you got to mock up the cockroaches to put them on the floor, don't you see? And she just can't make it. And that charge, just that much charge, and it's gone.

That, by the way, was practically the totality – the accidental fact there, is probably the totality of the Freudian recoveries – is contained right in that. It's just that they would evaluate in some fashion or another, like you do with an ARC break, you see? And they'd happen every now and then to strike something that was a service fac, and the individual would think about it, and it would be impossible then to dramatize it. But not knowing the mechanics of it, it nevertheless would slightly discharge, don't you see? And it's all those false assignments that made their people sick, see? It was the assignments that weren't service facs, and that sort of thing.

So you can learn from that just in passing. And don't give a guy a bunch of phony service facs, see? Let him decide what it is, you see? Don't ever foist one off on anybody. You'll find that's always a good part of the rules. If he says it isn't it, it isn't it, man. That's it. That's the rules. Customer is always right. Because frankly, if you've got it, he can't stay out of it, see? That – if you keep that little fact up your sleeve, why, you can afford to reject any quan-

tity of them. You say, "All right, 'beating dogs' and so forth. You don't think that is it. I had it on the list here. It read a little bit."

"No, I don't think that is. Beating dogs, beating dogs, beating dog, beating dogs, beating dogs, and so on – beating dogs..."

"Would it make you right in any way?"

"Nah. Would beating dogs make me right? Hm. Heh. No. No. No. Wouldn't do much. Well, actually, could add it up – it could make me right to object to bad behavior on the conduct of dogs and make dogs wrong to indulge in bad behavior." End of computation, see?

You'll find every once in a while a pc will give you something like that. And then they'll say, "Oh yes. Let's see. How would it make me wrong? Now, let's see. How would bad auditing make me right or... bad auditing wouldn't make me right – it'd make me wrong." Of course, that's the end of that. You pursue that no further, see?

But, "How would getting stuck in an engram make you right and make others wrong?"

"Wouldn't do it."

"Well, how would auditing make you right and make others wrong. You see? How would auditing make you right?"

"Well, it'd make me right if I got better and it'd make the auditor wrong if I didn't." End of computation.

Of course, that's no service fac. Perfectly logical answer. There are no further answers behind it. No vast blast of the TA as it falls down; there's nothing going on here particularly. So you don't want to hang people with these things, because it's too easy to find the right ones. And they abound, man.

This is one of the most interesting little treasure hunts you ever engaged upon, see? And you might as well get used to what it is and figure out what it is and put your own itsa line in on it, and so forth, because you'll sure know what it is, then, see? You say, "Here it is, man. This guy has got this thing which is some kind of a horrendous solution of some kind or another, and it's got all this charge backed up. And whenever I audit him with a Prepcheck, why, very little TA action or mass turns on with a Prepcheck – must be a service fac. This case not very easy to audit; has a fragile tone arm; tone arm gets stuck hard" – another condition, you see? – "must be a service fac, and so on. Can't get this thing. Why?" Well, look – it – obviously, if all the discharge you're going to get is a confusion running off in the form of charge – if the charge won't run off, there must be a solution there which prevents the charge from running off. And that's all there is to it. He's got it solved. He doesn't have to look around. Back's bad and his head's bad and his ribs are bad and he can't sleep at night and he's got ulcers and so forth; but he doesn't have to inspect this. See?

Say, "Well..." You start running this down, you'll find out, well – do this little list or something like that, or however you're going to run it into, or do past data, moving in toward this thing – you find out he sleeps on the floor. Doesn't sleep in bed. Has a bed but he sleeps on the floor.

Well, I'd try that on for size and just say, "Well, is there any possibility you do that because it would make you right?"

Now, you're going to get one of two reactions: "*Ppffff*". Well, it would make the landlady wrong, because she doesn't change the sheets very often, and so I sleep on the floor, see?" Or, the other reaction, which is the one you're looking for, see, is "Well, sleeping on the floor make you right?" "Oh, yes, yes. As a matter of fact, it would, so on. And a long time ago when I was in – when I was in – in boarding school, you know, we used to have these bed – big high beds and so forth, and could pull you out on the floor and ma... But that isn't the real reason why this thing was. You see, I kept sleeping on the floor. Actually, you get more fresh air, and so forth, and..."

Well now, look, don't be a complete knucklehead as an auditor and try to go through some more action, see? You're just using auditing actions to cut the itsa line. You got one running, man. Just sit back and let it run. Do the easy thing, see? All you got to do is sit back and let it run.

The only trouble you'll get into is sometimes the pc starts running backtrack on it in a hurry, and then you should start getting nervous. So if you can get in an auditing question on the thing, why, slide "in this lifetime" or something like that on the front of the auditing question, providing you have asked an auditing question. If you haven't, why, try to get it in at the next question – if you get a chance to ask the next question. Got the idea? You might not get a chance to ask the question at all. It may run all the way out and he's now ready for the other side, see?

Now, the main thing that you gain from all this and the main thing you gather from all this is tone arm action. You've got the mass flowing that kept the pc from getting tone arm action. And that's your interest in it. You're not interested in his social conduct. You're interested in his auditing conduct. Where old medical psychiatry went adrift, we needn't go adrift. They become so fixated on the subject of "rrrrright conduct," without even being able to define what it is (except maybe a slaver when the bell rings), that these birds are always adjudicating everything on the subject of conduct. Insanity is a brand of conduct. Neurosis is a brand of conduct – conduct, conduct.

Well, the unfortunate part of it is – the unfortunate part of it is – that it doesn't catalog, it doesn't classify. You cant do that, see? Because it just renders everybody open to the charge of being neurotic or psychotic, just everybody wide open – which is one of the more interesting factors, and then they can use this politically, don't you see? And then anybody they don't want around, they merely say some of his conduct is aberrated and they can throw him in the local spinbin and chop his brains up for hamburger. I don't know what they eat.

The point I'm making here is that's highly dangerous – highly dangerous – saying a person is insane or sane when your sole basis of adjudication, you see, is conduct.

So this doesn't always meet the eye. Some of the most roaring inanities on this planet are classified as sane behavior.

Now, in actual fact, you're measuring up not a person who is in agreement with this planet but you're measuring up a person who has lived a very long time. So whatever is the service fac is the service fac, don't you see?

It's not because he does something peculiar, or not because he does something this, or – we have a list of things. I can tell you what it's more likely to be than something else. But action that is peculiar is only peculiar, not compared to the mores of the society in which you find yourself but just compared to the datum of survival. See, just compare it directly to the datum of survival. And it's always a contrasurvival action which is posing as a survival action.

Revolt. I don't even know why you'd revolt against an Earth government; they're all convicts, see? You're living in an area where there are no wardens, see? Actually kind of silly to do anything particular in this particular direction because they're nuttier than anybody else, don't you see? They probably need their hands held twice as hard as anybody in the spinbin, you know? They don't know what they're doing.

So what is considered normal on this planet might at any one point be completely batty. So the service facsimile comes down to the comparison with the datum of actual survival and the fact that the pc is interested in it and that it releases tone arm action because it must be a fixed solution.

So actually, what you're studying are fixed solutions uninspected by the person, which are contrasurvival. Now, when you hit all of those, man, you've hit the jackpot.

In any case which has a fragile tone arm which is liable to stick at the drop of an E-Meter cord, see – bang! like that – you're looking at a service facsimile. You must be. There must be a fixed solution. Why? Because there's no charge runs by it. So if no charge runs by it, it must be a fixed solution, and it gets in the road of auditing, so it must be contrasurvival. Actually, it could be a fixed survival solution which really was a survival solution, and you'd find it wouldn't even vaguely influence auditing.

See, you'd go out and audit the guy and you get tone arm action, and he'd go on flying and he's got these fixed solutions all over the place. He's practically nothing but a bundle of fixed solutions. You're trying to find the black spot in the middle of the ball of yarn, see? The black spot in the middle of a mountain of white spots. The mountain comes down if you find that spot. Fortunately for you, there are several gray spots in its immediate vicinity, any one of which can be hit and do the case some good. So it's a constant prowl on this route. You handle one. All right. Fine. Is this case going to remain stable? Well, that's very doubtful so let's find two. Let's find three. Let's make sure we got it, see?

Now, your tone arm is flying around and your needle, by this time – the thing can't stick. You find you find one, the case will tentatively resume its stuck-needle condition, momentarily resume it. Interesting. Can't hold it, but it's a drop, you know?

You haven't got all of these now; you haven't got all of them you want, and it'll still be a little this way. And the next one you find – *pshew-sss-sss-ssss-ssssew*. It's coming down. Needle is getting so it can't stand upright, because there's nothing to hold it. Just the weight of the needle causes it to bang against the sides, you see? You actually have trouble reading your

tone arm, as you're winning on these, when you are really hitting center. You're having trouble with that tone arm because you can't find out where to center it.

Your needle is not as nice as it was before. It's too floppy. You're having a trouble centering it. And you just about get it centered and it moves, see? And you just about get it centered, it flops over the other way. Your tone arm reading gets very, very inaccurate as this really starts to bite. You can't quite keep it properly centered. It's moving too fast, too. Pc just thinks a thought, see, and it goes clank! It's gone. But, gee, how much charge went off there? Well, we don't know. It's because you're bleeding, you see, a central reservoir of charge and it's flowing in a Niagara.

Now, the other thing it does for you and the reason why this is very beneficial to the case – completely aside from unblocking this – is a service facsimile is always protruded into present time, always protruded into present time. So any constant PTP that your pc has had will of course produce the service facsimile. And that is very good news for you. You can produce the service facsimile out of any PTP that has been constant and continual with the pc.

"What did you come into Scientology to resolve?" And he'll give you a long series of this and that.

Now, it's very, very dangerous to list too many problems on a pc. You list too many problems on a pc and you're going to wind him up in a bang! That's dangerous. Call that to your attention. Listing problems – not so good, see, not so good. Bad show. Doing an incomplete list of problems will ARC break the pc. A complete list of problems is very often too long and is a bit dangerous to the pc's needle and case condition.

So how do you find out the problems? Well, you have to take a step backwards before you take a step forwards. See, locating the problem that you're trying to solve – you can't let that run forever because that's the exact opposite of an itsa line. It's a whatsit line. See, a problem line is a whatsit line. And you can freeze your tone arm gorgeously with a whatsit line. So a whatsit list will freeze your tone arm, and so forth. So it had better be on the basis of a friendly discussion which you can leave in an awful hurry. And you recognize that you're taking a step backwards with this case, making him whatsit, which is basically what's bum with these assessments, and so forth.

"What problem – what was your chronic present time problems when you got into Scientology, and so forth? What were these things? What were these things you were trying to solve at that particular time?"

Now, if you hang up this case too badly, you can take that little list and ask for a solution for each one of the problems he's given you – if you've made a list – ask for some solutions for those problems, and you will take the tension off the tone arm. So there is a cure for this situation, but it's rather a lengthy and involved cure. But you may have, sitting right there... the solution, you see, is not a problem; the solution is not a problem, but a few of these problems can be looked at as pointers to a possible solution.

He's having trouble in a certain area. Now, your problem, once you've got any idea of his problems, is to put your finger on some solution with regard to that problem. And that solution will be the fixed solution – which gives you the service facsimile.

Now, notice that R1C and R2C are designed to strip away solutions, decisions and stable data off the case – so-called stable data. Therefore, they are very, very easy to run and they produce tone arm action and are the least likely to hang up the tone arm. You start asking for whatsits, however, in R1C: "Well, you say you have had a – you – you've had the idea that all snakes were – lived in the tops of houses, and so forth. Now, what problems would that solve?"

Man, cut your throat! You've asked the reverse side of R1C and the tone arm is going to go up and stick. But notice that your R1C and R2C, these itsa-line questions and run, are designed to strip away charge from the service facsimile area.

Therefore, it is a very good thing to find out if the pc has been run on R1C and R2C. Of course, they won't have discharged the service facsimile but they may have some data there that they uncovered in looking at all this, which you might then sort out and get an idea, don't you see? So you say, "While you were being run in the co-audit down there, what did you run into that you found very interesting while you were running your case? What did you really run into?"

"Well, I ran into this and that and the other thing and the other thing and the other thing," and you make your little bit of a list of these types of solutions and zones and areas and you've got yourself an assessment, See? Then run this thing down, and – with a little further discussion with the pc – and you're liable to hit right on it just like that.

Funny part of it is that R3R is almost a dead-center pitch on a service facsimile, providing it winds up in a stable solution.

Now, "failing not to communicate with eating figs in Smyrna," I don't think you would find a good service facsimile. I call that to your attention. If it doesn't make sense to you, it's not likely to make sense to the pc. So don't go astray on this, because, after all, the preliminary step of R3R was designed to do an entirely different thing and it may be only a fragment of that and it won't be the tone level you found, see? It won't be that. It'll be some fragment of it or a rewording of it.

Now, I funnily enough have found one on an incomplete R3R assessment that two stayed in on. The list had to be extended, don't you see? And one of those was the service facsimile. I find that quite interesting. In other words, if we had completed the list to the final run, we wouldn't have found the service facsimile, see, because it would have been buried back on the line a little bit, don't you see?

Well, this tells you that it doesn't really have to be a terribly good assessment – any kind of an assessment. You've run something like "failed to shoot" – "What have you failed to shoot?" or something like this, or "failed to have been with?" or something – And you get a list, get a list of this; go on down the line; assess the thing out. Well, even if your "failed to shoot" is kind of a lousy level, as long as it's in not because it's been protested or was a mistake on your part, see? Pc has protested it, so it's in, you know? That's the corny way those assessments go astray.

Pc didn't understand it, didn't know what it was. So it keeps reading, you know? If you don't clear anything with the pc while you're assessing the pc, you can expect that problem to come up on auditors that are green in your supervising sometimes.

That can be sort of corny and it'll still produce something. And you're doing yourself a list over alongside of this thing, and you didn't even really get a chance to complete your list very well, and so on, but it went out, and you finally had a level stay in. It's much more likely to be that level if the pc is interested in it. You get the idea. It's the item – pardon me – it's much more likely to be the item, you see, than it is the level, because the level is too broad. And just running it loosens up the bank enough so that you can then do one with greater accuracy, because everything on that – as long as you just got something to stay in for fifteen strikes or something like that – you know, one of these arduous lists where everything is alive on the whole list. Everything is alive on the whole list and you've got ten strikes after each one, but one has fifteen strikes in before they *all* went out. You know, one of those corny ones, and so forth. You can actually pick up one of those and the thing that has fifteen strikes, "Was that in because you didn't understand what it was?" "No. I understand what it is all right."

"All right. That's it. Now we're going to list this one."

See, it's that crude. You'll still get somewhere in the vicinity of a service fac, because it operates just like a magnet. And that you're ticking away at it draws the pc's attention toward it, and as he lists, he's even liable to list it non sequitur on the list. It doesn't even answer the question, but there it is, see? You want to watch this, see, because his attention is being pulled to this thing inevitably. You're asking him for right answers, and he gives you the rightest answer he knows: "Jump off the top of the Empire State Building." That's the solution. That solves everything. That solves all problems, so you're asking him "What don't you have affinity for in this lifetime?" and he finally puts down "jumping off the top of the Empire State Building," see? Hasn't anything to do with what he doesn't have affinity for, but it'll go on the list. You get what I'm talking about, now?

You see, your assessment is greatly assisted, greatly assisted by the fact that as long as you're not ARC breaking the pc and keeping him on levels that he is protesting and is unhappy about, and as long as you don't disregard the pc's interest while assessing, the mind gets pulled right over to the service facsimile, bang! They'll put it down non sequitur. They'll put it down a dispersed, a disassociated item, and all kinds of wild things happen while you're doing an assessment. You want to watch this sort of thing. That thing stays on the list, and you notice it doesn't even have anything to do with the list sometimes.

Well, actually, the degree it's disassociated from the subject of the list is the most likely clue that it's a service fac. But it just reads on the meter as long as anything else. It'll stay in. You'll assess it out, long as the pc understands what it is and isn't there because it's a protest, see? Solution is not very difficult to find. If it's the solution to life, the guy is going to give it to you. He's going to handle your session with it. See? And you'll sometimes think you've been an awful knucklehead. You've had a pc sitting across from you for a long time that's been handling all sessions with this. Something like that. So it eventually dawns on you that that's what that is, you see? Doesn't make sense, but it's sure been present.

And I'd keep looking for and running service facsimiles on a pc until it looked to me like we had notoriously and considerably altered this pc's methods of going at life and until I had a wonderfully free needle and a nice, gorgeously clear TA, and I'd just keep it up.

Now, what's the basic benefit? I was going to give you one other benefit to the thing. It, of course, is the source of your present time environment. So the pc who is always coming to session with a PTP that has to be audited before you can get on with the session, of course is having his service facsimile kicked, out of session. So it's a diagnosis of the existence of a service facsimile. That's continuous. Anybody has a PTP once in a while. That's always got big PTP, big, big, you know, big, big. You know, *"Il-dal-dal, oh-dada-dal*. And we can't be audited today because of so-and-so, and we got to handle this other situation and so on."

You're just looking at a service facsimile. What mass is it that is such a magnet for trouble on this case? There must be something restimulating here in the environment all the time. There must be some restimulable item right here all the time. And man, if you can get rid of that, the overrestimulation factor of a case vanishes. See? The overrestimulation vanishes. So you have knocked out at one fell swoop – because restimulation by reason of present time is always about 50 percent of the restimulation present on any case at any given moment, that has service facs, you see? It's about 50 percent of the charge on the case.

You've only got, then, 50 percent, you see, that you can restimulate with safety because the tolerance for restimulation, you see, is lessened by 50 percent. All of a sudden this character will run like a startled gazelle if you can get this service facsimile out of the road, because your environmental restimulation has nothing to kick back on.

Now, we used to try to solve this by "process him faster than the environment can kick him in." Remember? You know? Process him twenty-five hours during the week, keep him away from home, and his wife won't kick his head off, and when he goes back home he'll stay stable. You know? That kind of thing. But we were just hoping we'd get the service facsimile before he went back home. You understand? So if you could reduce that factor out of the case, then all the gains the case made in session would stay. So there's another bonus. See, the cases wouldn't drop between sessions, see?

Now, the amount of attention which the pc has turned in on this service facsimile, and it's the disabilities which accompany it, and so forth – the attention that he has on that – also keep him from looking at his bank. I could say that an expert handling of service facsimiles – this is just a wild guess – would probably raise the runability of a case about a hundred to one. How easy a case would be to audit. See, if every case has some of this and it only becomes visible when some cases make it impossible to audit, see, well, how easy is a case to run? Well, we probably don't know the answer to that question.

See, but we know some cases are impossible to run and those are the ones we have attention on right now. So, you take care of those for me just now, will you please?

Thank you.

SERVICE FAC ASSESSMENT

A lecture given on 5 September 1963

Thank you.

Well, you're very lucky today. Very lucky today. I'm not mad at anybody. What is this date?

Audience: 5th of September.

Five Sept. AD 13. And we have a lecture here on Scientology Three, which wraps up the field of psychotherapy.

I don't wish to overemphasize these banal, sweeping statements – and I don't even think you heard it. In fact, I know you didn't!

I'll say it again. I have a lecture here which wraps up the field of psychotherapy. [applause]

Thank you, thank you. [laughter, laughs]

All right. Now, we have been walking around the edges of the field of psychotherapy, by which we determine its relationship to the neurotic and the insane, and so on, for a very long time. We've been giving the boys, who we thought were holding down this field, the courtesy of more or less staying out of it, and so forth.

But there are some interesting things which you should know before I go into the technical material involved here. And this is sequitur to the two lectures which you have heard this week, but there're some things which you should know at this stage.

The word psychiatry has no proprietorship, has no legal definition, is supposed to be the treatment of the neurotic or the insane, and isn't owned by anybody, isn't patented, means nothing in law, and so forth, but does mean something to the public. I consider that's interesting.

We were having some press trouble here a few weeks ago and I wrote at that time some articles on this particular subject which clarified... I had to study two particular spheres – that of newspaper, and had to study the field of psychotherapy to some degree. And although I was talking a great deal about psychiatry, I finally differentiated exactly what I was talking about. I was talking about the untrained mental doctor in the field of psychiatry.

He has no business there. Of course, you always look for an aberrated situation, you'll find that there's a lie connected with it.

Things which people can't solve have a lie connected with them, and that thing we call a service facsimile. And this happens to be the third-dynamic service facsimile. The medical doctor who is not trained for and has no business in the field of mental healing is attempting to take dominance over this particular field.

See, he's not a trained mental practitioner. In fact, somebody just gave me a clipping – down in Australia, some London bigwig comments on the amount of training given the medical doctor. And I think it was ten half-hour lectures, most of which were unattended by the students. A real roast.

No, this man is not trained in the field of the mind. He's trained in brains and surgery. So therefore, he applies brain – gray matter and surgery and force and electric shock – naturally applies these things because he doesn't understand the mind at all. He has no proprietorship over the mind. And as a matter of fact he's not trained in the mind at all, he's trained in the brain. He knows it occupies the skull and that you can shove ice picks in it. And this he considers mental healing.

Ah, but he's told a big lie. He's told a whopping lie. And he's put it across on legislatures and that sort of thing: that the medical doctor is qualified to operate in the field of mental healing. And of course he's not trained in the field of mental healing.

And all you'd have to do is bring pressure to bear on legislatures that people who are not trained exclusively in the field of the mind may not practice in the field of the mind and you've secured the entire field of the mind. I think any legislature would pass this. "People who are not trained in the field of the mind must not practice in the field of the mind." Banal.

It's on that stable datum that most legislatures pass laws – misrepresentation. You've got to be trained in the field of the mind, you see? That's the is-ness of the situation. The big lie is that people who aren't trained in the field of the mind at all are practicing in the field of the mind and calling themselves psychiatrists, which they are not. They're medical doctors. The only person you have to deny the field of the mind to is the medical doctor, and he has no business there.

As far as the field of the human mind is concerned, George the other day, did a survey out of all existing society records and so forth, and found out there were 272 mental practitioners in England outside of Scientologists – 272. And there were some eight nurses who were also qualified to give diathermy to the disturbed – 272? Well, we outnumber them, man! Over and over and over, I mean, just active Scientologists outnumber them in England. They're nothing to outnumber. There are 70 in South Africa. In all of South Africa there are 70.

In other words, there is no field of the mind. There's apparently a great deal of advertising, there's the medical doctor, who is numerically very short in supply, and there's lots of articles in the newspapers saying "the field of the mind, the field of the mind." There's legislatures, there's appropriations. Everything is all laid out just as though there is a field of mental healing.

I wish to point out to you, my fair friend, that it's a totally unoccupied field. There isn't anybody in it. They rattle around like an atom in a cubic light-year of space. See, they aren't. You don't have an opponent. And one of our lies, then, is that there is some opposition. And

we have done the trick of putting an item where it isn't. See? We've said there's opposition there; therefore we've mocked up our own opposition. And you know how serious it is with a pc when you put an extra item into a GPM. See? Well, we've done that.

Now, somebody, gratuitously, someplace or another, I don't know on what budget, is advertising the existence of mental healing. I don't know, but they're spending fantastic quantities of money on it. There's nobody to receive the results of it except us. This becomes a ludicrous situation.

Therefore, people qualified at Level III will very soon have available to them a certificate as a psychiatric consultant. It's perfectly all right with me if you call yourself a psychiatrist. [comm lag, applause] Marvelous! People must be looking all over the society for these psychiatrists, you see? That's 272 of 'em. Isn't this a fantastic situation? When you look at it – when you look at it right in the teeth – you see that it is a fantastic situation.

Now, when you recognize that human illness will surrender to R1C, and certainly to R2C – you know, that's just "What solutions have you had to your lumbosis, bud?" – you're going to get 60, 70 percent returning. There would be 30 percent, 40 percent, something like that, that won't recover. That's because they require further care.

But just your ordinary healing: You know what you can do with an assist, you know what you can do in this various levels. The medical doctor isn't even then safe in his own field of healing. He isn't safe there because I think that an HCA, an HPA, very shortly, will be graduated in the field of healing. He'll know the three corners of the ARC triangle and the eight dynamics, and he'll know some of the basics of Scientology, and he will know how to keep in an itsa line and keep it directed to the person's illness, or something like that.

And just about that level we have an HCA/HPA. And then your Level III is somebody who can list and do a Prepcheck. So we've opened the gates here by taking out and training and specializing in.

Now, when you think of your level of training, well, this is something else, isn't it? So that requires a much broader recognition. And there's a lot of HCAs and HPAs right now who won't be just eligible – through the training they are getting right this minute – they won't just be eligible for an HCA or an HPA, they'll be eligible for an HSS, don't you see? All they've got to do is round off their qualifications for HCA/HPA with their itsa line, don't you see, and that gives them that. But they've already gone on to Prepchecking and meters and all kinds of wild things of this particular character and so on, so they've practically completed their HSS.

Now, how about you? How about you sitting here, you see? What do we do with you? Well, I don't know, we've already got you a certificate, haven't we? And we can also make this other certificate available to you, "Psychiatric Consultant."

So if you want this certificate, listen to this lecture! Because I'm not going to have it said about us that we give ten one-half-hour lectures which nobody attended. We'll go them one better: You're here, listen! [laughs]

Now, you've already had two lectures on this subject. The difference is, we expect now that you produce some results with this. Now, you've been getting your fingers...

(This is the lecture I'm giving you now. Those were mainly announcements. Giddy world we live in.)

The orientation of Scientology – reorientation of Scientology – looks very innocent. It looks like nothing much happened. I put out these five levels of Scientology, you know, and it brought order, order, order, order, order, and everything has been snapping into place beautifully. Well, you're the winner because you've gone all the way on up through the lot, don't you see? And the future face of Scientology will look a bit different.

But Level III is expected to be able to clear. And it also, incidentally and accidentally, takes in the whole field of neurosis and psychosis and gives you a greater purchase on this particular zone and area than any mental practitioner in existence on the face of this planet – or any other one, for that matter. You'll be far more qualified to treat the insane if you can do this particular trick, because this is the only thing that makes them insane.

This is the basis of insanity. The basis of neurosis and the bringing about of a state of Clear are all the same breed of cat, except they're just different degrees. It's what is it wrong with the mind, but it's in different degree. The degree is whether a person can live with it or not. And if he can't really live with it but just worries about it all the time, all the time, and really can't live it at all, and so forth, well, we say he's neurotic. And if he can't even manage himself in his environment, we say he's insane.

But what's wrong with him? He's got the final solution. He's got a final solution and that solution is not necessarily the solution of being insane. It is some solution which is all-pervading and makes it unnecessary to it's anything. After that he never has to look. So of course, what happens to him? He just disappears in a mound of un-as-ised mass. He never has to look. All he needs is the solution.

Now, in processing, a certain amount of introversion takes place. A certain amount of introversion takes place by reason of processing. But that introversion is only undertaken to bring about extroversion. The actual progress of a case depends upon the raising of the A, R and C of that case, step by step, forward. The only way that introversion does not lead – introversion and erasure of something – does not then lead to a greater ability to reach in the environment or greater ARC, the only reason that does not occur, is when overrestimulation is brought about.

In other words, you restimulate twenty units and pick up ten of charge, you see? Well now, although you have advanced the case by means of erasure, you've actually increased the introversion of the case by running it at too high a level of restimulation. That factor still exists in Class IV. You've restimulated too much.

But it is full track, whole track, that is most likely to get a pc into this condition. You're not likely to get this pc into this condition in the very circumscribed area of one lifetime. You have to let his attention wander all over the whole track and on to the backtrack, and let him it's this GPM and that GPM and another GPM, and this chain and that chain, and not flatten these things, and so forth, at Level IV, in order to get this individual more introverted by reason of processing than extroverted. But of course, you're winning all the time, even though you're winning with an introverted pc.

In other words, he's looking in all the time, he's looking in. He is not reaching more. He will eventually come out of the woods at the far end of this thing and have a tremendous reach. But during the period of his going, he is overrestimulated and therefore introverted.

That's the ills of overrestimulation. They are not very great. You're not likely to spin anybody.

That's at Level IV. What about overrestimulation at Level III? Well, at Level III you take somebody who is very, very batty. You could probably overrestimulate him in this lifetime. Let's take somebody who is in catatonic schizophrenia. Let's use a fancy term – doesn't mean anything. Catatonia means they're lying still, in apathy, unmovingly and not reaching anything. Schizophrenia means "scissors." I don't know how you can lie still in a scissors, but they've managed it.

Just shows you what happens when strange people who don't know anything about the mind try to invade the field and advertise that they can do something in it: They get things corned up this way.

Let's put it more factually. This character is in total apathy – total, unmoving apathy. He's lying there in the asylum. If you put your finger on the exact button this person could talk about and would talk about, the person would communicate with you. But if you put your finger on a half a dozen other things and plunge them into even this-lifetime engram, or something like that, the person would spin more, don't you see? So the worse off a case is, even in one lifetime – and this is true for all cases, even on the whole track – the worse off a case is, the more careful you have to be about overrestimulation. If you restimulate something, pick up the charge you have restimulated. That is the byword on this.

Now, you won't see very great upsets by this, but once in a while somebody will – who is pretty bad off, somebody who is pretty neurotic or something like that – if you're treating this person, if you're processing this person, and you all of a sudden just ask them accidentally for any pain or anything that was connected with that incident – and of course they've been running it on a conceptual basis and weren't close to anything like that – and they suddenly go into more pain and they practically spin in front of your eyes. You got the idea?

So the worse off a case is, the less reach they have, the less ARC they have with their environment – these are the things which measures worse off, see, the less reach, the less ARC – the easier it is to overrestimulate the case. Becomes very easy to overrestimulate the case because you're using very powerful tools, actually, and they go into the mind like they're going through hot butter. And it's very easy to do this.

So remember this; this datum monitors all clearing efforts, and that's Level III. You see, you're not going on the whole track to clear anybody; that is the next thing you must realize, that you're going to stay off the whole track. If you're going to clear somebody, you're going to stay in this lifetime, and that's the only place you gonna stay! If you're practicing Level III, you have not left this lifetime; if you're practicing Level II, you have not left this lifetime; Level I, you have not left this lifetime. You got it? The only place you leave this lifetime is Level IV. And the only reason you take somebody down the line on Level IV, if their tone arm is sitting more or less in a very active conditon. And it never goes low and it

never sticks high. And then you're going to run somebody down the track because then it's very difficult to overrestimulate them.

You can overrestimulate them at Level IV. You can just, perforce, overrestimulate them, in spite of good tone arm action and so forth. You can do it.

But this is Level IV. This is Level IV when you take them on the whole track. So Class I, Class II, Class III, whole track? Nyet, nyet, nyet. See, strictly Russian participation in world affairs. No!

Guy says, "You know, I think I've lived before."

"Oh, good. Thank you very much. I'm glad of that. Now, in your immediate environment here, have you noticed..."

You understand? Why? Because if this person is having trouble... Now we get to the next factor of restimulation, see? This is all a piece with what you've been hearing about restimulation and everything else. It all integrates together very nicely. You got another factor you're working uphill with, with any pc on this planet particularly, and that: environmental restimulation.

And it is environmental restimulation that is the straw that breaks the pc's back.

If you can audit the whole track on a pc who also has environmental restimulation, you are doing something heroic. It can be done; it makes hard auditing, and you are doing it right this moment in Z Unit. So don't think it can't be done. But you know, right there, that it's a source of considerable amount of upset and worry. Guy has PTPs, he has this, he has that and so forth. What are all these things? What's all this constant level of restimulation in this environment?

You take, in an HGC, where people are walking in off the street: these people have PTPs; they're just nothing but a walking PTP. Well, all right, that means their environment is keeping them tremendously restimulated. Day after day, night after night, their environment is restimulating them. That's environmental restimulation. That's the wife's natter and the kid's demand for another shilling. That's the income tax folder that is lying in the mailbox. That's the news that just comes out on TV that all males are now going to be conscripted below the age of and above the age of, or maybe, see? It's this, it's that, it's the other thing. Environmental restimulation.

When this source of restimulation is at a high level, the pc is unauditable. And the difficulty that the auditor has in carrying forward a case to a good win is basically – when dealing with the public at large and that sort of thing – is basically auditor versus environmental restimulation, not auditor versus bank at all. Now, this is so great that an individual who has tremendous present time problems in his environment does not make progress on his auditing. He will not change his graph.

Now, we know that. That's a stable datum, man, that's in with spikes and rocks and welded. They know that in HGCs; before they operate very long, they learn that one. Pc has a continuous PTP throughout the intensive, there will be no graph change of any kind whatso-

ever. If he has a PTP throughout the intensive and ARC breaks during the intensive, the graph will worsen.

How to make a high graph? Well, you've got to audit the pc in such a way as to get around the environmental restimulation. Therefore, the practice of an HGC operating mainly with raw public or partially interested Scientologists or just newcomers, something like that – or even old-timers, very often – is a battle with the environmental restimulation, the surroundings in which this person lives. It's not a battle with the reactive mind at all.

Now, when this environmental restimulation rises or when the pc is more susceptible to it, he gets into states which are called neurotic and psychotic. There are no psychotics on the whole track – no whole track psychotics. Psychosis is a temporary condition which normally exists in one lifetime. Interesting look, isn't it? Very temporary condition because it's environmental restimulation monitored by the susceptibility of the individual to that environmental restimulation and that's all there is to it. It's his ability to withstand the restimulation of the environment versus the environmental restimulation.

Now, of course, a person's ability to withstand the environmental restimulation is one erg of thrust-back, you see, and the environmental restimulation is three ergs. Right away you're going to get a condition – of course, I'm giving you an erg or a dyne or something like that, you see, as some fantastically... I think a dyne is the amount of force exerted by one something-or-other, infinite – one gram going one centimeter? What is this thing? It's something on the order of a lead pencil dropping – a lead dropping from the end of the pencil to the table, don't you see, over a distance of about a half an inch. You know, just nothing, see?

Well, this guy's a very weak little fellow and he lives on a little farm, and it's a long way from every place, and it's awful quiet. But his environmental thrust-back is capable of only one erg, see? And by God, one day the pigs get loose. And by God, he spins. You see, this is proportional. This helps you understand what happens to cases. And this other guy has three megatrons of resistance, and he's got forty foot-pounds of thrust in his environment, see? Nothing, you see? Doesn't even dent him, see? Run the whole track like crazy, see? See, his environmental restimulation is fantastic, it would have killed forty people, see? It just doesn't happen to bother him. He can handle that much, don't you see?

So it's the environmental restimulation on the one hand and the ability of the individual to front up to it on the other hand which gives you your difficulties of cases. It's those two factors in combination – see, these two factors in combination. It isn't just the environmental restimulation. Well, you see, there's fifteen office workers, and all of a sudden a concrete mixer sets up across the street. And they start putting up a new building, and one of them goes batty and the fourteen do all right. What's this? It's the same stimuli. See, same amount of environmental restimulation, but one of those girls had very low resistance – that is, low thrust-back.

Well therefore, if you simply studied the environmental restimulation and sought to reduce environmental restimulation by social or public measures, making it a very quiet life, you would make a lot of people go sane – this is perfectly true – but a lot more would go mad with boredom. See, so the do-gooder with his idea of "Peace, peace, peace, peace" is trying to get himself an environment that he can live in, that he won't spin in, see? Don't you see?

And these characters that go out beating the drum along this line as an exclusive thing, you see, they'll work the hardest at it because they're the most worried about it. But they create, in the final analysis, a very dull world, and therefore they get protested against.

For instance, people have hobbies. Some people have some hobbies, some people have other hobbies. Some people have the hobbies of knitting. Some people have hobbies of sitting still and daydreaming. Some people have the hobbies of riding motorcycles and some people have the hobbies of shooting down airplanes. See, there are various hobbies. This is how much randomness an individual thinks is necessary to the environment.

And you're coming back now to an old principle of acceptable randomness. Well, acceptable randomness is this ratio which I just talked to you about. People, for a long time, couldn't understand this factor; well, here's the understanding of it. It's the amount of restimulation of the environment measured against the amount of restimulation which the individual can withstand. And these two factors together give you a constant.

Now, it's very hard to work out this constant because we have no actual figures, but express it in terms of life: This individual is able to stand one dinner party. See? And he gets two funerals and a suicide. You see how you can work this out? And here's this fellow who can withstand two massacres, you see, and a wreck, and he gets as his environmental restimulation one dinner party. See, so you get these differences amongst people. And it makes them all look different, but actually it's on the same basis, and it's on this basis of restimulation.

Now, you're busy auditing: You're auditing this guy that can stand the randomness of one dinner party, and you audit him into an engram where he had a wreck. Now his environment consists of what? The ability to withstand a dinner party, but the restimulation of the environment is what you're running him on, which is one wreck. He's promptly swamped. He's promptly swamped. He can't run that kind of an incident. He just goes in over his head, don't you see?

Well, one of the ways pcs solve this is by not going in. And it is probably the favorite method of resolution. They audit only what they consider safe. This is almost line one of Book Three of Dianetics: The Modern Science of Mental Health, see? The mind monitoring – you know, it won't go in over its head. We got techniques now which can push a guy in over his head but that's beside the point. The point is that the mind tends to shut off any restimulation that will overwhelm it. It just tends to.

It's like, this guy can stand one dinner party. And you say, "How would you like to have two funerals and a wreck?"

"Uuuhgh, no!" See?

Actually, this gets so bad, that if two funerals and a wreck incur in his environment, he can actually just be completely – they didn't exist. They aren't real to him. He locks them up out there as not having happened. And so does he lock up his bank as not having happened.

In other words, his ability to resist restimulation is too low for him to face up to track, and there's your problem as an auditor. How are you going to get rid of any track with this boy, huh? How are you going to get rid of any track at all? How are you going to get anything

done on this case at all? Because that case is liable to sit there and not even come in close to its track, or ambitiously going in over its head all the time.

So cases actually divide into three categories: those who are audited easily, those who won't even approach the bank and those who are always trying to commit suicide in one.

We'll call these cases Three, Two and One, with the One, the case who can be audited, you see, and the other two, you see, as cases that always are going it too strong, man. In eating, you'd say their eyes were bigger than their stomachs and all this kind of thing. Then the other fellow who just won't – Two, you know – just the guy that just doesn't even come near the bank, he just doesn't have anything to do with it, see? "What bank?" you know, "What bank?" Engrams all over the place, you see; he just got through – just got through going through a windshield, see? "What engram?" you know? He's cutting his throat with it all the time. Doesn't exist, see?

And you say, well, "Let's run out this accident you just had," see?

"What accident? Where? No accident. I just learn to take things calmly in life, you see?" And he's sick and sick and sick, man. He's just learned to take things calmly in life, see? He's got something going there, see?

Well, how do we convert Case Two and Case Three into a Case One? How do we convert these two cases, one which audits at a suicidal level and the one which audits on a no-approach basis at all, and you can't get anything done. And that no-approach basis is your most flagrant example of the stuck tone arm, the low tone arm, the dead thetan – these misbehaviors of the tone arm, see? Don't come near the bank. Hasn't got anything to do with him.

Now, how do you convert that case into one that is auditable with good tone arm motion? Well, now I have – I've given you a lot of technical data here. I don't really expect you to do too much with it or think about it too much. I'm sure you understand it. But I'm giving you the actual technical background to the highly elementary material which I'm now going to give you. This material is very elementary.

All cases tend toward the safe solution. All cases tend toward the safe solution. You're making a note on it, write it down and underscore it. That's very, very important. That is an element of simplicity the like of which you never saw, see? Some cases – some cases – also adopt a vengeful solution: "Getting even with them by dying."

Now, when I say all cases adopt a safe solution, oddly enough the dangerous solution comes under the heading of a safe solution. This gets wacky, but "the safe thing to do is to jump off London Bridge," because it all comes under the heading of a safe solution, don't you see, but it's actually, sounds highly dangerous. And they very often go in over their heads. That characterizes, then, your cases that you're having any trouble with or having any trouble in processing. One has simply adopted a good, safe solution, and the other one has adopted a dangerous solution because it is safe. I know it doesn't make sense. That's what's the trouble with it.

Now, if you move these cases over into the auditable line, you will move them over on the channel of safe solution: All cases move over on the channel of safe solution – safe solu-

tion. Very, very important. Safe solution can be stated as "safe decision," "safe assumption," "safe treatment," "safe environment," "safe position."

You have a world here which is security-oriented. It is, for instance, trying to keep up the ideals and ideals of human rights. But we notice that human rights and human liberty are succumbing. Why? Because twenty bystanders stand around and watch the cops mess up a citizen's human rights, because they're all operating on a safe solution. So all human rights disappear down the channel of the safe solution.

That is the hole in the bottom of the bathtub. It's the most dangerous thing in the world to have a safe solution because that is the hole out of which sanity drains.

A safe solution inhibits observation. And anything which inhibits observation destroys. Whether a person is merely difficult to get over toward his bank or is going in headlong or in a much worse state – these are specialized states and are not gradients of the other state – is very neurotic or is completely psychotic (they are not cousins to these other states), it's just to the degree that they have adopted a safe solution. That's all that establishes it. That's the common denominator.

Now, you could make a lot of hay out of that – out of just that statement, just as a philosophic truth. And it is a philosophic truth. And that is the plow that plows the furrow straight down through the middle of the problem of the human mind as it has been approached and as it has been attempted toward solution by mental healing – granting this thing called "mental healing" that just plows it right up, man. That's the end of that. This datum underlies mental healing with the same sweepingness as "survival is the common denominator of existence," you see? It's actually another method of saying survival, in aberrated form. People make survival solutions which then become so safe that they become contrasurvival.

So you have entered a brand-new datum here. You've got a brand-new datum which is as compelling and as sweeping and so forth in the field of mental healing as survival is in life. People solve things in the direction of survival even when it means they have to succumb. When it gets into mental healing, you are actually investigating the difficulties people are having surviving. But the basic method of survival is the safe solution, and that makes the individual right and makes others wrong, and therefore, intends to enhance the person's survival by bringing about a position of dominance; permits him to escape domination and permits him to dominate others; and then at the higher level permits him to survive and causes others to succumb – he thinks. With great amazement, you'll find committing suicide as a survival computation as it becomes more and more aberrated. How to survive: not to survive, of course.

Everybody is solving that. The miser: How does he survive? How does he survive? Well, every once in a while in New York they dig somebody out of an attic or something like that; he's been dead for three or four weeks. And the guy has got no stuffing in his mattress at all, there's nothing in there but hundred-dollar bills, you see? And his method of survival is to have lots of money. And that's a very safe solution. But he's neglected, in his obsession with this safe solution, to spend any of it in order to live.

So as attention becomes more and more concentrated, it becomes less and less sensible.

For an individual to be totally wise, it is necessary for him to be able to observe his environment. He also must be able to permeate his environment. He has to be able to have reach.

It isn't good enough to have a couple of maxims tucked behind your left medulla oblongata to which you can refer in times of stress. The Arabian ruler, every now and then, would be calling up poets to help him out in his efforts to rule a flea-bitten population whose favorite pastime was executing rulers, and they would come up with such things, such gems, as "That, too, shall come to pass away." Very wise. Very wise. And yet if it were adapted totally, it'd kill somebody.

People have philosophy all mixed up with these witticisms, these platitudes. They look through philosophy for safe solutions. And you can take a philosophic textbook that has been down in the local library and has been read by pencil margin-scribblers, and all you're reading there are things which they widely agree with but which they also consider safe solutions.

Philosophy, then, is not a study of wisdom. Philosophy is simply a study of safe solutions. Makes it a very low-level activity, actually. For instance, Kant had himself a safe solution and I imagine that's what made him batty. He had a good, safe solution. A lot of things were unknowable. They were so unknowable that nobody would ever know about them. And this, of course, is completely nuts. If these unknowable things can never at any time be sensed, measured or experienced, how the hell did he know they existed? Well, he didn't. So he made up a fantasy over there someplace called the unknowable. And this made him very comfortable. He could live in the knowable.

And this is so general, and so forth, you even find it in Dianetics: Modern Science of Mental Health – says you don't have to know everything in order to know this. Well, that's fine. And that disarms one's thrust into this, and the amount of overwhelm; it lets him compartment things and look at things in sections rather than just be overwhelmed by the whole, don't you see? Well, that's an entirely different operation than finding a safe solution and then drawing off into a corner someplace with this safe solution and never looking at anything again. And that activity is what you will find most people engaged in.

Now, that safe solution is what we call a service facsimile. And that's all it is.

Now, you can be a very cunning auditor. You can be a very clever auditor. And sometimes (let me impart this to you on the side) you're going to have to be clever. You're going to have to turn up your genius to a cube level to find that safe solution in somebody. It'll be lying right in front of your face and you'll feel like a fool when you finally pick it up. But there it was. But to find out exactly what it is, and to use that, and so forth – it's very easy to state, very easy to do this. But remember, in the pc it is extremely alter-ised, complicated, and so forth. Even though it's sitting right on top. It's not believable. That's one of the things.

There could be thousands of them, don't you see? And it's picking out the one from those thousands. That's what's going to give you the most trouble. And sometimes you're just going to do this on sheer genius and find that you were dead right. And other times you're going to exert a great deal of time and trouble and sheer genius, and you're dead wrong. So the final test of it is, is did it resolve the case?

"Have I found the service fac?" is answered by "When audited, did it resolve case? If answer is 'yes,' I have found a service fac on case. If answer is 'no, it didn't resolve case,' I have not found service fac." And in the first ones you find, the most you can hope for is that you have found something that moves the tone arm and has moved you closer to finding the service fac, see? So you always willing to settle for that – always willing to settle for something that moved the tone arm because that, of course, will move you closer to finding the service facsimile. See, always willing to settle for that.

And sometimes, after you've found two or three of these – and each one you knew was *the* service fac, but somehow or other this pc didn't go free needle – actually, they've been very droopy for the next couple of days; *hahaha*, you know, didn't resolve the case. "We sure found the service fac on that pc, except it didn't resolve his case."

Yeah, I can hear you now, sitting around the table in the evening, coffee shop, saying, "Well, sure found Joe's service facsimile, you know? I sure found it. It was a very brilliant job. We managed to get these three coordinating lines, and they all crossed exactly in this place, and it was 'swallowing swords.' And he's always thought of that, and so forth. And we got his service facsimile," and so forth and so on.

Joe comes up and he's looking... [shows something, laughter] Or now he's in total prostration: "Yes, they found my service fac. Yes, yes, they found it. I feel terrible – I mean, I feel good."

So you see, the test itself – the statement is very simple – and the test of whether or not you found the service fac is also very simple: It actually reads on the meter. If you have found a service fac on the case, the needle will be looser and the tone arm in a more reasonable condition. See? And if you finally walked it all the way through to *the* service fac on the case, see, it's like all of these extra service facs you've been pulling off it are something like bands of trees and sod that lie up against the mountain peak, you see? You haven't got the mountain peak, but you sure got a lot of trees off of it, you know, and you got some rocks off of it, and it's looking more like a peak, anyway. It was just surrounded in clouds when you first located it, see?

The test of it, in each case, is looser needle, better-acting tone arm. See? So you're always willing to settle for that.

Now, the other rule that you come up against here is, that which doesn't run on the right-wrong when found, you prepcheck. And that which won't run on a Prepcheck, you run on the right-wrong. So you got it coming and going. This is pretty loose.

Well, let me see. You looked through the pc's folder, and you found "peanuts," and you found "brothers" – and this was other... you know, this is old-time stuff that's been found on the pc, assessments of one kind or another – you found "mechanics," and you found "dog biscuits," and you found "me," see? Various things, you know? You dug these up out of his old 2-12 and his parts of existence and his this and his that and that sort of thing.

Well actually, you could make progress with the case if you just applied this rule: is just prepcheck each one. Got it? You could assess the list and take the one with the biggest read and prepcheck that, and then assess the same list again. Because it must have some resi-

dence in the case, you see? And whatever else you find, prepcheck that, don't you see? And just prepcheck anything you found. See, just prepcheck it. And the second that you're not getting tone arm action from the Prepcheck, run... This is awful crude what I'm giving you right now, you understand, but I'm just showing it. You can take this gun that's been developing – that's R3SC – you can just take this gun and point it in almost any direction and birds fall out of the sky, see? It's marvelous hunting, I mean. Case is going to make improvement no matter what you do.

Well, that which you can't prepcheck with tone arm action you could treat as a service facsimile, see? I mean, just one, two, one, two, see? So it either prepchecks or it runs on right and wrong, see? "How would it make you right and make others wrong"

Well, a pc... it doesn't do much on a Prepcheck, and it doesn't do much on right-wrong: All right. All right. So there weren't any birds in that section of the sky the gun went off into. I mean, you haven't done anybody any harm.

You haven't done anybody any harm at all. And this is sort of creeping up on the mountain. You take a layer of clouds off of it and you cut a couple of trees on the slope and you bulldoze away an avalanche away from the side of the thing and so forth. And it's looking bigger and starker and so on. More clouds coming off of the thing, you see, and it's getting clearer and clearer to view. Because you can't keep up this type of action without displaying, eventually, the service facsimile.

Now, the funny part of it is, even the most obtuse auditor, if he kept up this type of action of assessing something or finding something that had been assessed, and he – prepchecking it, and if it didn't prepcheck well, run right-wrong on it, see? You know, run the steps of R3SC on it, see? If you can't prepcheck it, it's obviously turning on mass, so therefore, if it's turning on mass, obviously it has something to do with the service facsimile. So you run the right-wrong and you get that out of the road, and so forth. You just keep going at this sort of thing and keep a list of your debris of other things that have turned up, maybe, in the process of doing so. And your cleverness – your cleverness will pay off in length of time. The cleverer the auditor, the shorter time he can do it in. This is about the only thing you're narrowing down.

But the very, very clever auditor can be too clever. I'm not warning you against being clever; be a genius, man. Perfectly all right. But you actually can take this case – now, that's why I started this lecture with the restimulation data – you can take this case, and there is an assessment I'm now going to give you which is so powerful that this poor guy has the resistance of one dinner party, see, and you're going to present him with the guts of his whole case. You're probably going to spend the next few hours holding his hand, because the walls keep going *bloooo-zooong!* [laughs]

Now, I told an old-time auditor who is a guest here today, Mike, told him a little while ago, I says, "You see, we're auditing the stable datum out of the road of the confusion, so the confusion will flow off and that's what the flow is on the E-Meter." And he went *b-zz-zz-zz-zz*, you see, because he's been taught differently. He's been taught that you don't pull the stable datum out from underneath the pc or you'll get the confusion, see? If you do too sudden a

yank, you see? And he turned rather pale when I told him this. So you'll probably be rather pale occasionally. [laughter]

In other words, you can climb this hill too vertically. You can immediately grab the mountain and say, "It's gone," see? And the pc is saying, "My God, what am I doing in all this mist? Where am I? What is this? What is this? See, what – where, where, where, what? Ooh-oh-oh-oh! Something terrible is happening to me!" And he feels masses going this way and that way, and pains are turning on and off, and the end of the room – the boards all look like they're going like this, see? [laughter]

See, with great genius, you just, "*Tsk!* One mountain less!" [laughter]

So you see, it isn't necessarily the wisest thing in the world not to sneak up on the case. But this isn't going to do him any harm, providing you run R3SC on it until it's flat. Now, you do this assessment and drop it in his lap, this is going to be the immediate result. It's got to be audited, now, to make it all right. So you're going to see periods on pcs when they're not going to be happy about the whole thing.

Now, I told you that any pc is liable to say, somewhere in the running of service facsimile – one of the tests of a service facsimile is, does the pc say at any time, "I'm not quite sure that it is wise to get rid of this?" See, he's going to say that on a real, honest-to-God service facsimile, somewhere along the line. That's what he's going to say. Well, you find the service facsimile, he's going to say it all at once. "*Huhhh!*" He's going to try to put on the brakes all over the place. Of course, he isn't going to make it.

Now, you're not going to do anything very desperate to this person as long as you finish him up. Oh, so he's going to have a few bad days – it's all right. It's all in the business.

But you possibly, you possibly – now, let me give you this word of caution – will practice in a field of neurosis or psychosis at some time or another, see? You go into that field, you make awful confounded sure that you unburden the cliffs before you pull the mountain out by the roots. Because that person, by reason of being spinny, cannot withstand the environmental restimulation in the first place, so you've added the processing restimulation plus the environmental restimulation to somebody who cannot stand the environmental restimulation. So of course they can't take any. So, the only course you can follow with that case, even though he is standing there – and this will be true: he will be standing there nakedly saying his service facsimile. It becomes very tempting. You look at some of these characters and they'll be just saying their service facsimile. It requires very little genius to figure out exactly what the wording is to make that service facsimile there, because he'll be saying so.

Now, therefore, the environmental restimulation has got to be reduced to some degree on the case. You follow this? In other words, the reduction of environmental restimulation should always follow, and you should be able to make good that minimal environmental restimulation during processing will occur, must always occur and continue to occur during a course of processing.

You have any environmental restimulators present in the vicinity of a psychotic and you're not even going to come near it, anything, no matter what you know. See, because you add the environmental restimulation of processing to, you see, the actual existing environ-

mental restimulation, and it – guy is already in whelmed – overwhelmed by the environment, so of course he just spins, spins harder. So that's why you must approach this on a gradient.

Now, with cases that are just walking about, I don't really give you any caution about it at all, because it doesn't matter to me whether or not these cases go to bed at night and have holes fall in the middle of the floor and various other odd phenomena occur, because they're going to get processed again and the process will take care of the restimulation.

It's a ghastly thing to confront. And the better the assessment and the less the assessment has been approached on a gradient – see, in other words, the less slopes of the mountain you have processed before you process the service facsimile – why, the greater shock it is to the person. There's plenty of restimulation. You've just taken their whole difficulties of this lifetime and done an "ectomy" on it, just like that – bang! out, gone, man! There it is, you see, and you leave him with nothing but the confusion. There sits the confusion. And it hasn't any E-Meter to bleed through and no auditing commands to guide it off and so forth, so it just starts hitting the pc from all directions.

Remember, this pc adopted this because he couldn't stand the confusion. So he adopted a safe solution. A safe solution is always adopted as a retreat from the environmental restimulation – always, inevitably.

Well, therefore, doing a service facsimile assessment doesn't necessarily require great accuracy at first. There have been things found on the case, there's things this guy is worried about on the case. Take some little stable data, RIC type of approach to the situation, that sort of thing. It's very good for the case. And this becomes healing, you see, at Level II of Scientology. You've got healing now.

You say, "Well, what have you done for your lumbosis? Anybody in your family have lumbosis? What did they do for it?" don't you see? "What have you done about them?" Any kind of a crisscross that might occur on a valence shift or something, you just get the person talking about it.

But it's solutions. You're asking them for safe solutions, stable data. And the more stable data they have put in, the more safe solutions they have put in place about their lumbosis, the less the lumbosis will discharge. So you keep plucking these things out and eventually the lumbosis will.

But of course, when the environmental restimulation is too great, no charge will flow off of the case and you will have that percentage of case which, just by talking about a few things, won't give you a tone arm shift. And that's because this person is already pretty overwhelmed. See, the environment itself is the overwhelming factor.

But let's get back to the other. How do you raise – how do you raise the ability of an individual to withstand environmental restimulation? If this is a big factor, as I gave you in the beginning of the lecture, if that's a big factor, how do you raise his ability to do it? Well, you do – you pull his service facsimile. His service facsimile is what, in actual fact, reduces – besides his innate capabilities, which might be different – it's what reduces his ability to see his environment. The more safe solutions he has adapted, the more environmental restimulation he isn't as-ising, the more he isn't confronting up to, the less he can confront up to. This

becomes a dwindling spiral with great speed and rapidity. So therefore, the thing which reduces his ability to handle his environment, oddly enough, is the thing he has adapted to handle his environment for him. You remove that and you at once increase the individual's ability to handle the environment.

Because he's now seeing it. He's inspecting it. It might not make him happy, but that's not what we're trying to make. We're not trying to make a happy person, we're trying to make an able person. There's many a lunatic who is quite happy.

Now, if you bring about a condition, then, at Level III, where an individual does not have environmental restimulation, he won't be interrupting his processing because of environmental restimulation, and you will be able to go at Level IV onto the backtrack because he's no longer fighting the environment. And that restimulation is not added to his case all the time. And it's that added restimulation which can be counted on to lock up his tone arm if he has any fragility of his tone arm, see? It's this little added restimulation of the environment. The environment is too restimulative, therefore he can't go on the backtrack, see? So it's very important that you get that out if you want a smooth, faster run to OT.

And now I will let you in on why I have suddenly gone into this line: is because I want a faster run to OT. I don't care anything very much about whether anybody gets Clear or not. That's just between you and me, see? Make a hell of a lot better human being, it solves neurosis, solves psychosis, makes a guy able, is a fast thing to do, it is not a slow freight through Arkansas. You can make a Clear by getting off enough service facsimiles. You can make a stable Clear so you don't keep apologizing for the fact he's only a Keyed-Out Clear, because he's going to stay that way longer, you see? And all this is better human beings, better human beings, and so forth, and that's fine. And it's a well worthwhile state to achieve, and people will be happy with this state, and everything is fine.

And just between you and I, I don't really care about the state at all – I want somebody to be able to hit the whole track, see? So it's been developed, and I put up the speed of development to cut down the length of time in processing at Level IV, which is already a sizable amount.

So by reducing the environmental restimulation off of Level IV processing by knocking out the service facsimile – which is what encourages the environmental restimulation – we then have enough attention free so that we can go whole track and erase things faster. And we're not always being held up by "The guy is a low-tone-arm case..... The guy has a high, stuck tone arm," "We started to do a GPM, we got a little bit mixed up, we went into the Bear goals, and then we got into the Helatrobis, then – ha! – *uhhuugh!* Didn't realize it but we were in the invisible-picture goals all the time!" [laughs]

Now, we don't want that pc's tone arm all locked up because of environmental restimulation, see? Session restimulation also drops because any difficulty your pc is having in session is actually environmental restimulation because the session is part of the environment also. So if he has session trouble and he has rough sessioning and that sort of thing as one of his difficulties, of course if you delete that off he can get a lot more done on the whole track anyway. So I'm just getting rid of sources of restimulation, don't you see, and reasons of res-

timulation in order to buck into the backtrack and really hit the things that have to be knocked out, so we don't have to worry about these other things, you see? That's important.

Now, what is this "assessment beyond assessment"? I see you've all got your paper ready to put down this assessment. Two or three of you are going to be very surprised; you're going to pick up some folders tonight and find yourself looking at it and say, "Why haven't you done this?" You know, I mean, that kind of an attitude. I'm good at that sort of thing. After I get something figured out, I have no patience with people who don't understand it! [laughter, laughs] Yeah.

Anyway, the assessment is a simple one. And we're back into our old, worn-out, creaking technology of listing and nulling lists. And if you don't know how to do this, man, you just haven't been around and I feel sorry for you. But I'm afraid nobody is going to waste much sympathy on you. There are many liabilities you can get into with listing and nulling lists, and if I hear anybody running a parts-of-existence list 187 pages, why, we've got a quiet place over at the other end of the estate where a gunshot won't be found and so, watch it!

Because this just becomes asinine, man. I mean, some people can take these lists and run their service facs crazy on them. Oh yeah, that's a fact! I mean, just run fabulous amounts of lists.

How long is a list? Well, a list is as long as it has to be to be nulled. It's got the item on it, and so forth. And I can see now, people fighting dirty needles and listing. And I can see now, "Well, did they get the service facsimile on Jay? Did they get the service facsimile yet on Jay," I'll be saying.

And "Well, no, they're still listing."

"Let's see, when was that? Oh, that was, see, let's – when did they start listing? Let's see the folder. Oh, well, they started listing a month ago." You'd be amazed. I've had this happen.

So come off of the corn. Come off of the corn. That's just nonsense. A list is as long as it is necessary to be in order to keep the pc from ARC breaking because it's incomplete. And it's just a list, don't you see? So we get into all that trouble. But that's perfectly all right. We can handle that, now. Any nonsense that we see about it, I've already given you what the remedy is, see: a quiet corner of the estate. Because I frankly am tired of this point of randomness.

My lists never go longer, never go longer than about eight, nine, ten pages, with about twenty items on each page, see? So I don't understand a long list. I don't see any reason for a long list. If your list isn't complete, it won't null, of course, but I've never had to do one longer than that in order to get the thing to null, so I don't understand all this other – unless it is simply safe to keep on listing! [laughter]

So anyway, you do a list, parts of existence. Now, some of you are highly – you're already rich because sitting right in your pc's folder will be a complete parts-of-existence list. Probably already been done. Parts of existence – thing has sometimes even been nulled.

So you do a parts-of-existence list and then you null it. And I frankly don't care whether it comes out to one in, two in, three in, four in, something in that range. I don't care. I

don't care if it rock slams, rocket reads. I don't care what the resulting item does, just as long as it expresses itself some way on the E-Meter. I don't even care if it is right, as long as the pc isn't in argument about it. That's the one thing that is subjected to here.

So you do a good workmanlike job of listing. Just try to get yourself a nice list and null it down rapidly, and so forth, to a point where you've got one item in. That's fine, that's fine. You do that job, bless you. But if it comes out that four were left in and the list probably wasn't complete in the first place and there's a lot of randomness, we'll just do the second step to all four levels left in. You understand? We couldn't care less. It's just as long as the pc isn't saying, "But that couldn't possibly – it's because I'm objecting to it, you know? I accidentally put down 'hoop skirts' and I don't know why I put them down, it doesn't have anything to do with my case at all! It doesn't even answer the question."

And the auditor says, "Well, it's what is in, 'hoop skirts'."

Because you're going for a service fac, so all things apply. And basically the individual is very interested in his service fac.

Now, the funny part of it is, the pcs will only come close to the mountain, and they'll go right on up. They can't stop themselves.

But there's a funny zone or area before you get close to the mountain, and they sure bounce off of it. Because they'll dramatize it; they'll only do what is safe; they'll only say what is safe. And they walk very carefully and won't tell you anything mixed up in anything like that. They're walking through life on a tightrope, see?

And therefore, you may have to do several approaches, and this whole assessment may have to be done several times. So the accuracy of your first do and the ease with which you can do it or the difficulties with which you do it, I don't care about. Do you understand? You probably already got enough in the pc's folder to prepcheck or run R3SC on for some time, you understand? But I don't even care if you use that – because nobody here is in a tremulous condition – or just drop the bottom out from underneath him with this assessment. Because if he's too bad off, he's not really going to give you the service fac, but he'll give its cousin, and that cousin is just as good as anything else.

Now, you've got a list of parts of existence, haven't you? All right, and you assessed it, didn't you? And you wound up with one, two, three or four bits in. All right, dandy, dandy. Now, we tried to wind up with one in. We hoped one would be in. Makes life simpler.

And then we take that item that we found, and we now list safe solutions for it, or safe assumptions about it, or safe decisions that can be made about it. It's what we can clear with the pc. What we really want are safe – what we really want is service facs with regard to it. But that's best expressed by "safe solutions" or "safe assumptions." And then you not make a list there. And once more this isn't 187 tight-packed pages leading out, because that isn't the processing. That's just trying to find something to process, you understand?

So, to the best of your ability, you get yourself a complete list that is nullable and that's got a significant phrase or item on it, and so forth, and you get that out. Now, that doesn't mean you've got the service fac. The item there is probably, however, either as close as

you can get to the service fac at this time or the service fac. It's one or the other. So we're going to treat it, regardless.

Now, we're going to take this item; we're going to work it over. We're not going to do a "represent" list on it, we're going to work it over. We're going to get this thing chewed on, the final thing that we found out, see? I don't care what it was – "wearing petticoats." I don't care what it is, see? And we're going to chew on this thing until we can get it till it's a solution to more than that dynamic.

We just meanly – we found "peanuts" on our parts of existence, and the thing to do with peanuts, the safe thing to do with peanuts, was "not eat them." That was our item, see? Now, that is the resulting item for "the safe solution to peanuts": "not eat them." See? All right.

Now, you actually could process this. See, you could prepcheck it or run R3SC on it – you probably won't be able to prepcheck it. Because it's too close in, it's going to turn on mass, it's going to make things pretty sticky. But if you talk about this for a while to the pc and ask the pc to phrase this up variously, "How might this type of an assumption apply to other dynamics? Is there anything else that this would...?" And the pc will have to give you a variation of it. We're taking the parts-of-existence list now, and we're trying to see if this solution fits any other parts of existence, and how it would have to be rephrased in order to fit other parts of it and "peanuts." Get the idea?

We're trying to do a subtle adjustment here that throws us into a broader version of our safe assumption, so it applies to more than one dynamic. And if we can do that, why, hurrah, hurrah, hurrah, see? We're probably sitting on a much bigger zone or area of the service fac. This is a way of graduating it up, don't you see? But I've told you, it's perfectly all right for you to just process it, just what you found, do you understand? But you're going to get very smart, sooner or later, and you're going to say, "Well, what do you know? You know, this fellow says 'not eat them.' Hmm-hmm. 'Not eat them.' 'Not eat them.' Now, let's see. Does that fit to any other part of these dynamics?" and so forth.

"Not eat, yeah, not eat. Ah, yeah. Uh, it fits, uh, yes, actually fits on the first dynamic. Fits on the first dynamic. Fits on the first dynamic," and so forth. "When I'm processing, I always feel like I'm eating my bank, you see, it's this 'not eat,' you know, 'not eat.' And oh, yes, yes, fourth dynamic. You shouldn't eat men. Yeah, fourth dynamic, and fifth dyn... You sure can't eat MEST. That's the best answer to MEST, is not eat it, you know?"

And so forth. Well, you've got it away from "not eat" then. This is your most elementary address to the situation. You see this thing is broader. There was just one little flag sticking up, just one little piece of a dynamic had this assumption on it. But this assumption doesn't actually handle peanuts: This handles the whole cockeyed sweeping lot. And when you've got one that handles the whole lot, man, you're sitting there with your paws full of service facsimile. And if you haven't got it, you've got to audit what you did get... You're going to prepcheck it; if you can't prepcheck it, you're going to run R3SC. Or you're going to run R3SC on it, and if you couldn't run that easily – you know, questions didn't come up – then you're going to prepcheck it. See, you're going to handle what you found.

And then you're going to do the whole operation again. Only it's going to be a new parts-of-existence list, because, listen, you've prepchecked a part of the service fac, so his lookingness is going to change, so he's going to give you a different parts-of-existence list. See. And then you're going to move in on that, and you're going to get whatever part of existence you now assessed, and then you're going to take that part of existence and you're going to list that, you know? Safe solutions to it, safe assumptions about it, safe solutions to it – whatever it was you could list that gave you things that sounded like service facs, see? You're going to get that list complete and then you're going to rip down the line; you're going to take one of those out. There it sits. Now you've got a nice thing. And it says, "assuming everything will destroy me." *Uuuuuughh*. Boy, you have hit the bottom of the barrel. Safe assumption. If you don't assume that, something might. And of course "eat peanuts," well, that's actually devour – "devour me," "destroy me." That's as close as he came into it. So on your second assessment he just moved in on the center of it, see? "Assuming everything is going to eat me up." That was the service facsimile. You just found an offbeat of it, don't you see?

And you keep working on it, you keep working on it and keep working on the pc until you can't make your meter work. That's when you end.

Needle gets up toward the middle and it falls, see? And the needle – have you seen a needle that is too difficult to set? You can't get it into the set area, because it goes? And you can guess about where the TA should be, but really can't make it very well. Now, that's really a free, free needle.

Pc's sitting there. The pc's not worried about anything.

But don't think the pc isn't going to worry at some place along this line, because you're going to hit this point on every one of these things that you found. As you walk in on this, if you're doing any kind of a job of assessment at all, he's going to say, "Ooohh, I am not so sure. If I get rid of this... No."

Now, there's one other thing you must know about this, is you have sometimes processed something on somebody, let us say – well, let's just use "eat" – "an inability to eat." And you've processed this out gorgeously, see? And the pc is still in a horrible state with regard to it. There's one more step you can do with it. After you've finished it all up and the pc – the needle got looser and everything, but the pc, "Oh, I'm not so sure about this thing. *Theaa*." You've just cut the top of it off, see? So now do "a safe assumption about the inability to eat" or "a safe assumption about eating." You understand? You didn't get close enough to the service facsimile. You got the idea?

Let's say, "an inability to eat." Well, actually, I gave you a bum datum then: "a safe assumption about eating" is much more likely to produce the service facsimile. In other words, this is a flip-flop. He not only used "eating," but you only caught up to one portion of it, you understand? And you can work your way through this thing, you can get a better statement of what you just got through running and finishing up. And sometimes you can't get that better statement, at which time, of course, you made it with the first statement.

I'm just talking about the adjustments of the assessment, see? You sometimes will get something like "an inability to eat." That's a service fac. And it ran, he made people guilty with it, and you know, he made people wrong and himself right, and it all ran out and prep-

checked, and everything had gotten better. But you notice the tone arm still hanging awful still toward the end of this thing. It ran well for a long time, and still at the end of this thing the pc feels kind of...

You say, "How do you feel about, now, the 'inability to eat'?"

"Well, I don't know, I mean – *whoa*. There isn't anything for me in it, to eat, no..." and so on and so on.

Well, you've flattened everything you could flatten out on the thing, don't you see? Well, you better assume that you came close in on the mountain, and you'd better do a safe assumption about the subject of what you found before. That's the rule. There's some safe assumption with regard to eating that the person could make. You're sort of doing a safe-assumption list on the safe assumption, don't you see? Represent. And you get closer into it, and that tears up a lot more ground. Got it?

Now, that last one may have confused you. I couldn't care less, because I am not at any moment saying that you must not exercise the highest level of genius in doing this. Look for identification. Look for identifications – that is to say, $A=A=A$. You're doing this Prep-check; you're doing this Prepcheck on "dolls" – for some reason or other, "children's dolls," in this lifetime, and so forth, on "dolls."

And they say, "All dolls are cheap," or, "Dolls are always given away."

Just watch for it. This is a totally unreasonable assumption, don't you see? "If you don't watch dolls they are liable to attack you." Oh, yes? See? Completely unreasonable assumption. Draw a little box around it in your auditor's reports, because you've hit an $A=A=A$ computation that leads in toward a service fac, don't you see? It's a completely unreasonable assumption.

You know why the person is having a bad time in this particular zone. He's just said so. Doesn't resolve, but the person just said so. And you'll find out that's a cousin to the service facsimile, or dead on it, see? And you keep fooling around, and all of a sudden, why, the pc will come up with it, and you'll come up with it, and you'll come up with it and the pc will come up with it, and *ughh*, all hell will break loose, see? Confusion starts running off and knocking the pc's head off. And the pc can't sleep at night and has to have the light on until you get back and process it again.

But that's all expected randomness. This is what's keeping everything in restimulation for the pc, and in taking it out you get a certain amount of restimulation going. But there is the way you find it. And the formula I gave you of do a parts-of-existence list and then do a list of safe assumptions or solutions for the item found, and then using that as a service facsimile directly, you will find – will find most of the service facsimiles; or if it doesn't the first time you do it, will find the next time you do it, you see, because you can move in on it – or maybe the third time you do it. So you can do this on a crude basis, you understand?

Now, that – there will probably be other methods of doing this released. There will probably be other material developed on this. But let me invite your own lookingness on this subject and not at any time get over the idea that a certain amount of genius must be invested in it.

Okay?

Thank you very much.

Destimulation Of A Case

A lecture given on 10 September 1963

Thank you. Well, autumn has come. And you may arrive, too, someday. [laughs] All right, this is the what?

Audience: September the 10th.

Ten September AD 13, Saint Hill Special Briefing Course.

The lecture today concerns service facsimiles, Scientology III – capital I, capital I, capital I, don't go spelling it capital Arabic three, because it's not Arabic. It's – use Arabic numerals to apply to routines. When you're talking about a body of data, use a Roman numeral. I will clarify this a little bit better. I've been even... clarification – show you I'm getting around to chip into the odd corners of things, the clarification I've been hitting for recently has been as low level as fixing up some sample auditor reports, so that everything's in a proper place on an auditor report. I mean, things are getting awfully buttoned up around here.

I'm going to tell you about service facsimiles and how to find one on a pc, and I'm going to tell you something about the zones of restimulation in auditing. Otherwise you're gonna be sitting there in the auditor's chair one of these fine days and finds yourself with mo' restimulation on your hands than you could possibly imagine existed.

Now, you don't think you're handling an ARC breaky subject when you're handling Scientology III, but let me assure you, when you go in for service facsimiles you are handling stuff which can bypass more charge than any other single item there is. For two reasons. One, pc gives you the service facsimile, you refuse the service facsimile, you bypass the most vital charge on his case, and of course he blows his skull off, and you pick bits of bone off the ceiling for weeks. See, that's all that's necessary. I don't mean to frighten you, I just mean to terrorize you.

Now I learned most of this stuff the hard way, and you could probably learn it, too, the hard way, but I don't think we ought to expend one pc to train one auditor, or something like that. It's too high a cost, let's try to lead you along the line a little more gently. We expect a certain amount of auditing casualty, but we don't expect that casualty to be permanent. And when you are dealing with a service facsimile, you're handling what makes aberration "permanent" (quote) (unquote). Nobody's ever been able to do anything with this before, but it's funny that a lot of boys have nibbled around the edges. You'll see Freudian teeth marks

around on the edges of the service facsimile. Hadn't been dented any, but you'll see his teeth marks.

For instance, it's very interesting how many preclears have second dynamic service facsimiles. Well, the reason for this has nothing to do with life. But it merely has to do with your situation on this planet at this particular time. I know that sounds absolutely goofy, but the sickness, incidence of illness and so forth on this planet is unusually high for planets in this universe, for the excellent reason that the way to make everybody wrong of course is obviously to produce nothing. That makes everybody wrong, makes the government wrong, makes the between-lives boys wrong, makes everybody wrong, you see. Because they count on guys going ahead and making bodies and keeping the civilization wheeling to keep a thetan interested enough so that he'll keep reporting back through the – you know, the whole system is based on this.

But that's why the industrialist is in trouble on this particular planet at this particular time, is because he's producing. And going on a whole track basis, we find that a thetan is in trouble simply because of MEST. That's the way he looks at it, you see. He's in trouble because of MEST and if he could just have arranged at the outset of all this never to have created anything, then he wouldn't have anything now to be in or be in trouble with, don't you see the reasoning? Quite obvious reasoning, probably quite valid. So any creative activity is doomed to attack.

You'll find the artists and musicians of this particular planet always have some schnook alongside of them to cave them in. They always marry the wrong girl, you know, and get the wrong agent, and... Because they're creating. The industrialist, the manufacturer, that sort of thing, these boys, it's not because of any deep-seated communist plot, it's just they are in trouble, that's all. They haven't got enough force to protect their own creativeness, and as a result, why, people attack them. Elementary. Basic answer on the whole track, if you had never had anybody create anything, you would have no trouble. Nothing had ever been created, why, of course you wouldn't have any universe to be in trouble *in*. This is all very elementary.

And therefore you find a lot of service facsimiles that have to do with the second dynamic. And herein lies the difficulty. You take it as a service facsimile, you dust it off as a service facsimile. You operate as a service facsimile and you very harshly and tightly keep the itsa line in this lifetime. You preface any question you're asking in an assessment, preface any question you are asking in any list of any kind, preface any question you are asking as an auditing question with "in this lifetime," but severely, and you will get into a minimum amount of trouble so long as you do one other thing. Now, you see, that isn't something that's nice to do, that is something that you will be blowing your brains out one of these days if you didn't do, you understand? You'll say, "Oh, my God!" you know, "*Oohhhh!* Why did I get up this morning?" you know, because you just didn't use that. See, you didn't circumscribe the pc's attention line to this lifetime.

So that is the first thing we must know about the service facsimile. We're engaged upon a key-out. We are not engaged upon a bank erasure. That's the next thing to know. And of course that is contingent upon the other fact. If you're engaged upon a key-out, you'd better

damn well stay in this lifetime. And if you're engaged upon bank erasure of Scientology IV, well, that's another horse of another hue. And you certainly had better keep Scientology IV and III together, and that's the next thing you ought to know. First, preface everything with "in this lifetime," don't let the pc's attention skip outside of this lifetime, see. Just keep it there, man. Because it's going to go.

It goes with the greatest of ease. And this is befraught with many, many liabilities, because when you're circumscribing his attention that tightly and you refuse to let him put his itsa line on something he's just put his itsa line on, of course you bypass all that charge. Well, I leave you to worry about that one.

It's a key-out. That's your next thing I've just given you, it's a key-out procedure, it's not a bank erasure procedure. You're engaged upon a key-out. And I can tell you why. And your activities are all guided by the fact that one little step beyond what you're doing leads you into the bank. This is a thin-ice activity. If you recognize it as anything but a thin-ice activity, sooner or later you're going to get into trouble. A thin-ice activity.

The pc, unbeknownst to him, is walking across a thin crust of ice. And he's liable to go through it any minute, which is to say, go on to the whole track, swish! Now, the moment you combine Scientology III with Scientology IV, you're going to lose. Right now, you're going to lose. You've had it. Why? Simple. Elementary. You're doing Scientology III and you find a goal, "Yeah, well, we found this goal, we might as well run it out. Might as well go back on the track and run it out." You're now doing Scientology IV. You're erasing the bank, you're not keying out. You'll be sorry. You can get away with it, you can get away with it, but recognize you're no longer making a Clear. And recognize you probably have not handled the restimulative factors of the pc you started out to handle, and recognize that your backtrack is just throwing in more restimulation on the case.

All right. So how do we get around that? You word every question as far as possible, since it's not always possible so that you won't get a goal – word your questions, if you can, so that you won't get a goal as an answer on your list. And you avoid all rocket reading items as answers to your assessments. If it rocket reads, leave it alone. Because only a GPM rocket reads.

I know this is horrible, this puts you in a terrible situation. You've now taken the wrong item off the list. Haven't you? You go down, you null this list of "What's a safe assumption for coonbats?" Good, you get a nice long list, safe assumption for coonbats. And you get "tear gas bombs." See? You get this, and you get that, and you get the other thing. And you get "to be old." And you're going down the list, you're nulling this thing, "tear gas bombs" goes tick, and "to be old" rocket reads. Oh, look at that service facsimile, man, ho-ho! What a wonderful service facsimile. Oh, look at it rocket read. Oh, hell, you – the more you monkey with it, the more you're going to go sliding into the bank.

Actually, you could get away with running it, in this lifetime. You could get away with it, and you could key it out. As long as you don't oppose it, or you don't do anything to it, or don't run any 3M2, or don't list on it any further, and handle it very gingerly, and do your Prepcheck very neatly with "In this lifetime..." on every Prepcheck question. See, you probably could park it back on the backtrack, and you might be able to do the pc a lot of good. And

I don't say you can't do it. But you are already running a pc who was walking on thin ice, you see, and now you have turned a heat ray loose on the lake, the moment that you're using this rocket reading item, see? I don't say it's impossible.

Because you've got two liabilities now. You can take a wrong item off the list, "tear gas bombs," and run that with great occasional dissatisfaction of the pc. Or you can take this other thing, and just act as though you were prepchecking a goal, but only in this lifetime. See? So you can get around this. You can get around this. The moment you do anything else with it, you're running Scientology IV, and you're away, and you're no longer doing Scientology III, and you're not going to make a Clear, and your ambitions for present time restimulation are not going to be reached, and you haven't destimulated the pc, you have restimulated the pc. And the probable reason that you're doing Scientology III in the first place is over-restimulation on the part of the pc.

You see this? You see that as a distinct liability? Now what do you do? What do you do? What is the absolute textbook answer? You use your judgment. But by God, don't go back and run that goal, if you're going to stay with it. You can mark it down as a goal that you have now found for later reference. You can probably do a lot of things. But you're – you're in trouble.

So the best answer is to ask questions that don't give you goals, see. They don't give you goals. The question can't be answered "to be safe." Question has to be answered in some other way. Like "safety." Get the idea? You take a – you take a solution. "Tell me a solution to that item," see, that part of existence, or item, or whatever it is, see. "Tell me a solution." The guy's going to say, "To bip, and to bap, and to bee and to bot, and to bot and to buk, and to bow bowt, and uh... Well, you can't do anything about it, except sit there nervously." But the point I'm making is, is it doesn't produce actually the best service facsimile assessment. You want a safe assumption about it, or a safe assumption for it. Or you want a stable datum that you would have in regard to it. You're liable to get goals, but you won't get them with the same frequency.

You say you've got the – you've got the service facsimile spotted that has something to do with the law, see. And you've got something like "What is a safe assumption about the law?" You normally get, "That it will..." don't you see? "That it will..." "That it does..." don't you see? "That everybody is crooked," see? "That cops are no good," you know, stuff of this particular character. You say, "Give me a safe solution to the law."

"To run like hell." "To move." "To get out," see. Oh, boy! Guy's coming right up with a goals list, see. You don't want it, see. Service facsimiles are almost never "to..." – almost never "to..." but they could be expressed that way. But the moment they're expressed that way you're much more likely to key in a goal. So you're in trouble. Object of auditing is to get as much done as you can without getting any – into any more trouble than you have to. Auditing is not an activity in – where the auditor is always out of trouble. There is no such thing as a perfect session. There is no such thing as perfect intensives, where at no time does the auditor ever get into more hot water than he might otherwise have done, you see. There's – there's – no pc has ever run over a long period of time without an ARC break. Just make up your mind to this, see. First place, it's almost impossible to [not] bypass charge.

Now, you'll find that skilled Scientology III bypasses much less charge than unskilled or semi-skilled Scientology IV. You have a more gorgeous opportunity of colliding with charges to bypass with Scientology IV than you do with III. So the thing to do, the obvious solution, is to run III in such a way as to keep it out of IV.

Now, you should have a very clear-cut idea of what you're trying to do with Scientology III. Very clear-cut. Destimulation is its keynote. It is the technology of destimulation. And therefore, the more that you restimulate, the wronger you will be. It is possible to be wronger than wrong. The Aristotelian absolute can be exceeded.

The individual who is being destimulated is having a very worthwhile activity performed. Possibly, you might not have too clear-cut an idea why, because I myself just a few weeks ago did not really consider it worthwhile until I took apart all of its elements, and looked it over very carefully. Now I see that it is very worthwhile.

It became necessary to do this in the search for tone arm action. Tone arm action is very necessary. In auditing, a great many pcs on the whole track do not get tone arm action. You can run out GPMs with rocket reads and so forth, but you don't get tone arm action. And therefore, this is a very vicious proposition. You're going to practically kill somebody if you run him three sessions without tone arm action. You take a pc in a queasy state and run him two hours without tone arm action, you'll wish you hadn't. I mean, it's that critical. You want tone arm action.

Well, tone arm action ceases in the presence of overrestimulation. So the whole track is too restimulative to the pc, obviously, if it locks up his tone arm. Elementary. When tone arm – she stop moving, when tone arm stop moving, pc's in overrestimulation. If Confucius had said it he would be a very wise man. That's a stable datum about tone arm action. If you haven't got tone arm action on the pc, pc is in a state of overrestimulation.

There is another state that I can point out to you of no tone arm action, which is simply auditing nothing on the pc. You can put a pc on the cans and walk off to the other side of the room and sit down on the chair, and it's very probable that the TA will not move for hours on end. I just want to call this to your attention, too. But actually, that's quite rare since just the mechanics of auditing shift charge around, controlling the pc's attention upon himself or his environment will shift charge. So to all intents and purposes we're left with just one reason – providing any auditing is being done at all – were left with just one reason why the tone arm isn't moving. And the tone arm isn't moving for the excellent reason the pc's in overrestimulation.

Let's take an example of a room. Call tone arm action a moving person. We have a moving person in this room. Tone arm action, see. Now we fill the room half full of cotton bales. We call these cotton bales charge. Notice that this person moving around in the room can only move half as much. Because it's half full of cotton bales. Now let's put the remaining half of the room half full of cotton bales. Now this moving person, of course, can only move a quarter as much as he could in the first place and only half as much as he could just a few minutes ago. Got the idea?

All right, call these cotton bales charge, still, and let's fill up the room with cotton bales. Our moving person doesn't move. And a very green, inexperienced auditor who doesn't

know any of this tries thereafter just to get more cotton bales in the room. That's the hallmark of an inexperienced auditor. "Tone arm action is reduced, move more cotton bales in the room. Let's get some more engrams going, let's get some more GPMs in there. Let's restimulate a few more present time problems. Let's really shove it to this guy. We'll get tone arm action sooner or later." Yes, you will, too. Down. "Well, I finally made a Clear. There he sits. 3 – needle doesn't move at all. He's very calm, he's very calm; as a matter of fact he never says anything to anybody. Must be Clear. He went through a period of low tone arm, but I cured him of that." Well, of course, the symptom of all those disorders are – naturally are just the theory that if you put more charge in restimulation on the case you'll eventually get tone arm action. And I think this is the way the psychiatrist works. Medical psychiatrist.

By the way, did you notice that the medico is getting an awful beating on the subject? Did you notice, in the Times? Medical doctors want nothing to do with mental healing. They only had six lectures on the subject and didn't understand those. The medical doctor is not competent in the field of the mind and moving out of the field of the mind. Interesting, isn't it? Round and round the little ball goes, and where it stops, God help us. Did you notice this propaganda line that's going on? Well, keep an eye on it, because we got it going now. We're reducing false data out of the society – that they know what they're doing. Scientology 0 is at work. We've just developed a new one, Scientology 0. The illumination of unknown areas, and false data, as a prelude to the introduction to stable data. Scientology 0. Interesting.

Well, I bring that up at this time really because it's interesting, but I could use it as an example of what you're doing with clearing. You're getting all of the chronic restimulation off of a case, before you walk ahead with the case.

Now, what you're doing there is removing a lot of false nonsense off the case, service facsimiles and that sort of thing, you're destimulating this lifetime. And if you're very slippery, and you're very clever, you'll get the wildest tone arm action you've ever seen on a pc. In Scientology III, you'll never see tone arm like it, tone arm action like it in Scientology IV. You start hitting in close to that thing called a service facsimile, even close to it, sit out on a border of it someplace, and just start moving in, man. That needle starts loosening up, and that tone arm starts moving, and it's wham, wham, wham. An auditor really has to work to prevent tone arm action in Scientology III. He has to sit there with both feet braced against the tone arm to keep it from moving. It's almost impossible not to get tone arm action, providing you follow its very basic rules. Very difficult. You don't even have to have the service facsimile and you can get tone arm action. It's quite remarkable.

Let's look at this thing, then, called restimulation, since that's very important to Scientology III, since every case you will approach is in a state of overrestimulation. That's all cases you have anything to do with. They're all overrestimulated.

They walk in off the street, they come in from government agencies, they come in anyplace and everyplace, they leak out of the walls from the FDA, you know, out of the woodwork, come out from underneath the rocks from the American Medical Association, all these guys are in a state of overrestimulation. All of them. Thoroughly overrestimulated. That's the hallmark and the keynote to their activities and conduct. This is why they act the way they do whatever the screwball activities that they're exhibiting. However all this hangs

up, or why, or anything else, they can be said to be overrestimulated. And that would be a very accurate statement.

Because the way you keep somebody trapped, and the way you keep somebody sucked into it, is never let him go sit down on a rock and think it over. You've got to keep kicking him around, see, you've got to have economic pressures, you know, you've got to have this, you've got to have that, you've got to have familial complications, you've got to have problems, man. You've got to have trouble. You've got to have "finance." You've got to have banks. You've got to have currency control. You've got to have things like income tax, you've got to have rising and lowering costs of living. You've got to have booms and depressions. Things have got to be hectic, you understand? This guy's got to be kept worried. If he's kept worried long enough, and gets his attention extroverted hard enough and so forth, he will remain trapped.

The basic mechanism of entrapment of course is not just being on a pole someplace and trapped, you understand? Or just being in a body. The complications of entrapment are a little more broad and a little more complex than that. They have to do with Professor Utgat, at the local spinbin – I mean university – who is saying, "The economic situation is far too complex for normal understanding. But if you merely keep everybody in want, you will have economics. Uh – the idea then is to increase demand. Now, if you sufficiently increase demand, everybody will be afraid of starving to death, and uh – they will end up in actual want, and this will keep them from ever thinking a sensible thought. They will too be – be too busy with the ideas of survival and the worries and problems of life, and so forth." Actually, he'd be a very wise man if he spoke exactly like that, so actually his speech in essence is shortened to this: "Strive. Confuse. And that's economics. Now we're going to take up the principle of government. Uh – artistic harassment is our first subject."

You're – you get into a large protest against this particular planet, not understanding some of it. You start moving up scale, you begin to understand some of this. You begin to understand it as simply an extended act of entrapment. The thetan wants something out of it. And he thinks there's some pay. In other words the trap wouldn't run at all, don't you see, unless the thetan was so busy in it that he never had time to look at it, you see?

So the idea is that you chase him hard enough, and you harass him hard enough, you worry him hard enough, why, he never has an opportunity to sit down and take a look at anything. So if he never has an opportunity to do that he'll make a lot of foolish decisions. And these foolish decisions, you see, are made to hold back foolish confusions, and the net result of that of course is he's now in more trouble than he was before. And if he'd made no decision at all he would have been better off, don't you see? So it goes from one entrapment to another type of entrapment, and so forth, in economics.

Just think, just think of being without money for two weeks. Supposing you had no money of any kind for two weeks. Well, it's quite fascinating. I mean, as a principle, because there's really no reason in the world why you should have any money for two hundred years. What's money? Money is a course in economics, at the local university, I guess. It's an idea and a fixation. Some kind of a representation of something for something. To begin with, it's a bum itsa. See, the – what is it? Doesn't even have metal behind it, now, see. Some kind of an

idea is afloat that it's exchanging from zub to zub, and here guys are going off skyscrapers half a mile tall and everything else to get a quick buck, you see. Absolutely fascinating. As a matter of fact you can take a handful of money out and buy most anybody on this planet. Why? Well, I don't know. But it sure is confusing! That you can be absolutely sure of, see. That's – it's pretty doggone confusing. He got the idea that if he gets enough of this stuff, you see, somehow or another he'll be free. Well, what the hell was he while he was getting enough of this stuff, you know? That's silly.

Look this over. You look over socialism, and you recognize it's far more complex than old capitalism was. But capitalism was complex enough. There's hardly anything left of it. But it was plenty complex. But capitalism, there was some time when you could buy off your debt to the local money lender, you see? There was a time. You could at least look forward to a time, you see hopefully, that there would be a time when you came out of it. There was a possibility that good luck and steady application and so forth would eventually cut this thing off and you'd no longer owe this debt. There was some hope involved. Well, in socialism, you haven't got a prayer. See, actually the end product of socialism is you're not permitted to save any money, so in – somehow or another you're trying to buy yourself off, in some way, but of course you never do get bought off in any way, shape or form, so there's no end to the amount of involvement in which you are mixed up. You see what I mean?

So you – what you see is a perfecting system of attention-shifting. All of these things are. They're attention-fixation, attention-dispersal, attention-shifting, all of these various things are all part and parcel of keeping somebody tied down.

Now, that isn't just a snide comment. That isn't just a cynical comment on our modern society, this is an actual – this is – if you don't have bars on the trap you can have principles of one kind or another, you see. You can have political solutions of some kind or another, each one a little more cockeyed than the last, you see. Now, you look around and you're in terrible protest about some things done on this planet, when as a matter of sober fact, that is what you're – probably what you're supposed to do. Protest. They are not there in the final analysis because somebody is stupid; they are there because somebody has been very clever. And they have provided a piece of randomness of sufficient magnitude to keep somebody consistently enturbulated. Thus overrestimulation continuously occurs. You have to keep somebody overrestimulated by keying him in and doing various things to him, in life. You see that?

All right, your pc walks into your session, subject to all these mechanisms of restimulation. There he is, see. And we call this environmental restimulation. This is all very elementary, actually, these are sources of overrestimulation.

Now your first area here is his PT environment, see. And we call this environmental restimulation. That's a source of restimulation. Here is your pc in session, see, he's about – he's right here, coming into session, see. One pc. And we're looking now at the restimulation, we're looking at the restimulation to which he is subject. And there's this environmental restimulation. That's the old lady, the old lady just flew another snit, you know. And that's odds and ends of this particular character, you see. There was a note on his desk that morning, which has begun, "Dear Jakes, in view of the fact that we are making less money than we

were before..." and then nobody finished the note. See? There's a story in the newspaper, you see, "All workers beyond forty years of age will hereinafter be reconstituted," see? He wonders what the hell that is. [laughter] Shoes are wearing out, and the shoe store no longer sells that design of shoes, you know? In other words, life is hell.

But it's just continuous little barbed arrows, you see, of restimulation, you see. Here's restimulation. We call it "r, e, s," not "R." "R" is "reality." [laughs] So this is all the lightning bolts, don't you see, this is all the lightning bolts that you run out when you say, "Since the last time I audited you has anything been..." You're trying to flatten that off, see, so that you can audit him. Well, you know that is necessary. But these things can get so continuous that your auditing can become very, very difficult, see?

And then there's this zone, this zone, here. See, that's all part of the lightning hitting him, here. Then there's this zone of action and that is restimulated bank by reason of service facsimile. So we'll just call this "service fac, restim" that's hung up here. And actually there's an interdependency between this first one, environmental restimulation, and service fac restimulation, are interrelated, so we actually can draw a circle around the two of them. He wouldn't have PT problems if he didn't have service facs, that's the discovery, see?

Nevertheless, we'll call this service fac restimulation, because there's another type of bank restimulation which he is subject to, and that – that he is battling along with here – is what has already been restimulated in auditing, see? See, so this is past auditing restimulation, see? That's what's already been restimulated in auditing and not erased, see? We've got to take that into account.

Now, here is your current auditing restimulation. This is what you're going to restimulate in a session, you see. This is what you're going to restimulate in session, you understand, in the way of engrams, and that sort of thing. See, that's what you're going to restimulate in the session. Those two things we can group together as a pair. See, that's what's been restimulated and what you're going to restimulate, or in the process of restimulation.

There's another one that you might not have paid too much attention to but which you're fighting with all the time and I'd better identify it and this is called session restimulation. Session restimulation is just restimulation by reason of being audited. See? High, high restimulation is attendant upon an auditor who is rough, rough, rough, see? You know, every time you open your mouth to talk, the auditor says, "No, I meant something else." Keeps the itsa line cut, and stuff like this, don't you see? Little accidentals. The better auditor, he'll just get an occasionally accidental flub, you see? But whatever that auditing skill is, it still adds up to, see, session restimulation. Now that's not bank restimulation. See? That – that's just what's happening in the session to kick somebody around. You got that?

Now, let's look at another one here. And this is the bank. Now, you see, that anything coming from this of course has to come up here to current auditing restim, may kick in past auditing restim, is being kicked around by session restim. Got that? Hooks up on this restim, got that? And actually only can operate from service fac. You look over that. That's sources and zones of restimulation.

Now, just put it this way. There's obviously several places from which you get restimulation. There's more ways of throwing cotton bales in that room.

Now let's go over these ways of throwing cotton bales in the room. Now there isn't just Scientology IV methods of restimulate a GPM, see. All right, that's throwing a cotton bale in the room, but there's also a – some bits and pieces and sometimes some mighty big cotton bales thrown in the room by rough auditing, see? So that's a source of restimulation, see? And then we look at what you're auditing on the pc here, as past auditing restimulation which is made up of bank which has been restimulated and not erased in past session. And that has two divisions, and what you are currently restimulating, you see, that's your other zone. And then there's the present time environment that he's living in and this of course is added to the other restimulation and then that, however, is kicked in, cross-restimulation occurs, you see, he's worried, and he's nervy, so therefore he has more ARC breaks in the session, don't you see. So it keeps beefing up the session.

Now, all that stuff is interactive. All of those sources of restimulation are interactive and the only core on which it sits, in actual fact, that can be touched, short of knocking out the bank, is the service fac. The service facsimile is what keeps environmental restimulation restimulated. It also has a great bearing, you would be surprised, but it has a great bearing on the amount of session restimulation which occurs. It has an enormous bearing, up here, on past auditing restimulation which hasn't been picked up because, of course, it was blocking the discharge, you see, the full discharge of everything. It's going to prevent you from discharging current auditing restimulation; even though you restimulate it, some of it is braked, don't you see, by the service fac. And actually his environment is in shambles all the time because of his service facsimiles, see. And so therefore it comes back to the service fac.

Now, the most notable thing, which you missed by the way in the quiz last Friday that was pointed out to you, again, but the most notable thing about the service facsimile is: The thetan is doing it – *ha-ha*. Well, of course in the final analysis he's mocking up his bank and he's the effect of his bank, too, and you could say that very circuitously, and at some long, drawn point, yes, he is responsible for everything that is happening to him, you see. But this is intimate, direct, and now. He doing it. He's doing it right now. Right now he's involved in making something and somebody wrong, and himself right. And he is doing it all off his lone little hatchet and it is just about as influenced by GPMs, see – it's him keeping that particular GPM in restimulation. See, he says – he says, "To crack walnuts, man, that's the way this life's got to go. *Ooh*. That'll fix 'em, you know, *ho-ho*." And there's some GPM sitting back there, "to crack walnuts," you know. Well, of course he keeps that in restimulation, too, but that isn't really what's making him crack walnuts, you understand? He's cracking walnuts because he's decided that cracking walnuts is the thing to do. You'll find out that before he got the GPM "to crack walnuts," he was also cracking walnuts. You understand?

So we've got two different problems here. We've got the thetan doing it and we've got the accumulation of experience knocking his head off, see? So we have two sources of lightning.

Now, to be very plain here about this drawing, you can see here, you can see here, that all of this stuff, see, all of this stuff, in combination, makes a very messed-up pc. Charge. He's got charge here. In fact, you're not really auditing a pc. You're auditing a live bomb. A live bomb liberally garnished with firecrackers. And the bomb may not go off, but you sure get a lot of fire crackers exploding.

Now, I don't want to leave you in the dark about what restimulation is. How does the auditor restimulate something? I want to get this in passing here because maybe if you live long enough you'll learn this. How does an auditor restimulate something? By putting or letting the pc's attention go on it. By putting the pc's attention on it, by letting the pc's attention go onto it. What's "it"? Actually, any charge, heretofore inert, which can be rekindled. Or if it has been restimulated already, then re-restimulated or increased in restimulation. Now that's very technical. And that sounds very esoteric. And I'm afraid that has the terrible simplicity of a mud pie dropping on a sidewalk. It's just about that complicated.

I'm very sure that you at some time or another in a session have rather wished that you had just cut your throat rather than come in to audit this particular pc, because you don't seem to be able to do anything right at all. Everything is going wrong. And you say therefore it is the pc's trouble. The pc is causing this trouble. Well, actually, the pc is totally incapable of causing trouble in a session. The auditor can sit there like a total knucklehead and let the pc's attention wander all over the bank, you know, pick up engram A, engram B, engram C, engram D, engram *waaa*, so on, *baaaw*, *baaaw*, *brr-brr-brr-brr-brr*, *whooo*, *whooo*. And the auditor isn't doing a thing. He's just sitting there being a good listener, see. He was doing everything right, and all of a sudden the pc exploded in his face, see? Well, that's just accidental restimulation. You just let the pc wander. Actually, the pc is wandering under the command of his service facsimile. That's what's commanding. He wants to make certain zones and areas wrong, and one of the ways to make them wrong is to get awful restimulated and collapse. I mean, that's usual.

You wouldn't have any such thing as psychosomatic medicine unless every thetan had the computation – they all do have the computation – that, well, the best way to handle it is get sick, in the final analysis. Otherwise, psychosomatic trauma would never make anybody sick and it makes everybody sick, so then everybody must have the service facsimile that the way to handle the situation is to get sick. You see that? I mean, it's just open and shut because it's the definition of it, so everybody has the service facsimile of sickness. You try to run the service facsimile of sickness, ordinarily, oh, go ahead and run it, but you limit it to this lifetime otherwise you're going to wind up there trillions-twenty ago, you see. Because he had that for a long time. See, that's old. That – what comes under the heading of too much service facsimile, that's almost "pc," don't you see? There's some of these things are so confoundedly standard that you sometimes wish you hadn't started auditing them. You know, they go back-track too quick, too fast. Too upsetting.

All right. Now, this business of restimulation, let's get back on what this business of restimulation is, this is very interesting, very easy. And there's nothing much to it. If you want the pc's attention on a cow, you either let his attention wander to the cow, or you say "cow." I mean, that is how elementary it is. Very many auditors don't ever get the idea of how you – how they could possibly restimulate anything because they overlook the idea of the simplicity of the mechanism of restimulation. If you don't want the engram about a cow restimulated, then you don't say "cow," you got the idea? I mean, it's that elementary, my dear Watson. You don't want the pc on a GPM, so you don't say anything about the GPM and that's all. You want his attention on the GPM, you don't mention – you mention the GPM. That is all. That's

the basic thing. It's how many times you mention it, with what complexity, that fixes the restimulation and increases it. But to start in, all you have to do is say, "GPM."

Pc's going on and on, and you're going to be very agreeable, you see. And the pc's going on and on about this service facsimile in Scientology III, and he's saying, "Well – and so on – and – uh – to be goofy, that – that seems..."

"Oh, that must be the goal. Oh, I know, yeah, the goal we ran the other day on you."

The auditor doesn't look on this for what it is. That's getting out this twenty-foot pointer, neon-lighted, putting the pc squarely in front of the bank, taking the pointer and putting it directly on, says, "put your attention on that GPM there, square now, son, right there. That's it, right there, look at it now," get it all restimulated, and get sparks flying off it. I mean, that – that's all very fancy, but actually the whole operation is complete, "Oh, that goal we ran the other day. Yeah, I know." That's all. That's all – that's all the auditor has to do and he's restimulated the goal, don't you see. It's too elementary.

Just had an occasion of an auditor trying to find the time limiter and innocently asking for four engrams on an overrestimulated pc. You understand? He just said, "Well, what's the first time you ever had any trouble with that?" Talking about a physical injury, you see? Four engrams, *pang-pang-pang-pang*. Boom. Overrestimulation, bang. ARC break, boom. Simple. I mean, this is how easy it is to restimulate somebody.

But you shouldn't be afraid of restimulating somebody because that's part of the auditor's trade. But just know what you're doing, for the love of Pete! Know what you're doing. You've had four rough sessions with this pc, see. You say, because you want to get on the good side of the pc, "Well, I'm sorry we've had such rough sessions lately..." There goes four rough sessions! Pc says, "Wha – wha – wha – what? Who? Who? Where? Where? What's the matter? Who shot me?" You understand? Oh, but you said, "I'm sorry we had these rough sessions, lately." So your intention was not to restimulate. No, the mechanism of restimulate is simply *name*. That's the whole of restimulation. *Name*. And the more often you name it, the more it'll restimulate, and that's all.

Now I'll tell you the perfect way to produce an ARC break. Name it and not permit it to be itsaed. That's all you got to do, see? You say engram, no itsa, engram, no itsa, engram, no itsa; ARC break. It – it's terribly fantastically elementary. And that's actually all there is to a rough session. It's the auditor naming things, or preventing itsas of things which are named. And that's all that's going on, that's all that's going on in a rough session.

The pc is very nervous on the subject of Instructors or Supervisors, or something like that, he's it – I'm just talking about a student now. And he's got – he's got twenty infraction sheets to make up before Sunday, or he doesn't go up to the next unit, see, and so forth. And he – eventually you've got him calmed down in the session, don't you see? Pc's there, and he's finally starting to look at his own bank, and interested in his own case, and you're going along, just fine, don't you see, and then you say, "Uh – I'll have to ask the Instructor." And you say, this is an ARC breaky pc. No, this is just a blabbermouthed auditor. You get – you get how it is, see?

So you come back to the thing, all auditors talk too much. But the sources of ARC break become – come from this, that is, just – just naming, naming and then not picking up – see, in some fashion or another, naming and then not picking up the itsa. See? And then we've ensealed in what restimulation is there. If you're not going to pick up the itsa, don't name it. And you'll have the – you'll have sessions that are absolutely glass-smooth. You'll just be absolutely fascinated. You'll never see such cheerful, happy, appreciative pcs. See, if you're not going to pick up the itsa, don't name it, man. Elementary, my dear student.

There's the whole of smooth auditing. Now, there's another way to do this. Another way to do this, is let the session, and the activities of the session, bar the discharge of materials already restimulated. See, the auditor didn't name it, but it's been named. From some source or another, it's been named. And the pc, the pc's sitting there – the pc's sitting there, and it's been named, and the pc is saying, itsa-itsa-itsa-itsa-itsa, "Well, is it all right with you if I start the sess – uh – session now? All right, is it all right in the room, room's all right – uh – so forth, the uh – uh – uh – squeeze the cans uh – yes, yes, uh – pardon me, squeeze the cans again. Hmm. I didn't quite get that, squeeze the cans again – all right. Now, now, uh – all right with you if I uh – start – start the session now, huh? Is it all right with you? Okay, all right. All right." Gives him a session start, I won't start a session for you, and – "What goals would you like to set for this session?" and is absolutely horrified to have, "Well, I don't really care to set any goals for the session as a matter of fact." And the auditor says, "What could I possibly have done?"

It's just elementary what he's done, don't you see? There's a source of restimulation. Now, auditors very often ask silly questions to be sociable, right before they start the session. And they get an itsa line going, and then stop the itsa line by starting the session. You can actually sit down in any session you've had that was a rough one and if you had – particularly if you had a tape of it, you could say, "Oh, my God!" You say, "How've you been?" Pc says, "Uh – well, all right."

"All right. Is it all right with you if we start the session now? The room's okay? Uh – chair's all right, is it all right if we audit in the room?" We get down to goals, see. "What goals would you like to set for the session?"

"Well, huh! Don't care to set any goals. Well, to live through the session."

This whole thing then is completely mysterious to the auditor. And the mystery is complete. He didn't do anything. Hell he didn't! He put an itsa line in – or he put a whatsit in. Throw the pc a whatsit. I know an auditor who has a rough time all the time ending sessions. Always puts a whatsit in at the end of the session. Then never lets it be itsaed, and then gets an explosion. Do you understand this? See, this is – this is elementary. This is all there is to an ARC breaky session.

Well, let's take a look at this, now, and we see then that the auditor is in control, to a very marked degree, of what's restimulated.

But on an uncleared pc, the service fac is interacting with the existing restimulation so the pc is actually putting in a continuous restimulative factor in sessions. And you get restimulation trouble as long as the pc has a prominent service facsimile. Now if you add, then, to this bank, we go back to this one – if you add now, if you add in restimulation – all this is

in place, see. And you add in some restimulation from down here, to here, see. Mathematics of the situation! There's fifty ergs of energy in overrestimulation on the case right now. So you pull in a GPM from the bank which contains another fifty ergs of restimulation, you now have a hundred ergs – capacity of the pc for easy handling is probably ten ergs to begin with. So you're now auditing on an overrestimulation factor of about ten to one and you sit around and you say, "Well why doesn't the tone arm action move? Why – why don't we get tone arm action here? Why – you know? What's the matter with the tone arm? Well, maybe we're running the wrong GPM, uh – do you suppose we're running the wrong GPM here, pc?" *Uhh!* What's the pc going to do? He's going to look at each GPM that he's had anywhere around, see? He's just picking up them cotton bales, you know, and shoving them into that room and that tone arm just locks up harder and harder, freezes more and more and drifts lower, and so forth. You see the exact mechanism in progress?

So it's actually very, very much to your benefit to get rid of the service facsimile, at least out of this lifetime and the auditing environment. Because then we can possibly get rid of this, service facsimile hangs up that – past auditing restimulation. You're not restimulating anything very much on current auditing restimulation if you're being very clever in handling the service facs, so we maybe cut out half of that. We cut session restimulation down to, very small thing, because we can be incautious with our speech without restimulating all this stuff that's already live. Do you see the benefits of all this?

All right. Well, see that and see as well that it's pretty adroit business finding a service fac without kicking everything else in. Do you see what you're trying to do? Audit smoothly, of course, that's the solution to your session restimulation. Restimulate no more in your current auditing, don't start naming a bunch of things, see. Don't start pulling up a bunch of things. As far as past auditing, give the pc frequent Prepchecks, you know, "on auditing" Prepchecks. Every fifth, sixth session, you can keep that cut back, you see. Present time environment. Don't audit the guy one hour every three weeks and expect him to hold his own. Actually, do you know that two and a half hours a week is really not quite enough to hold down environmental restimulation on most cases. Which is interesting.

So we can cut these various things down. We can get the pc in a less restimulative environment – the way you would, by the way, handle the insane or the severely neurotic. You'd simply put him in an unrestimulative environment and be very, very careful that the sessions you gave him were totally lacking in restimulation. All the restimulation that's necessary to the auditing of this case has been done for a long time. You don't have to – you actually don't have to restimulate much else. It's all in restimulation.

You can do these various tricks to cut down the restimulation on your pc. You actually should remember this graph here, these zones of restimulation are things that can restimulate the pc, because you could sit down with the pc and you could simply say, "We're going to audit this bird and he's having a hard time. Well, now, what would be practical to cut out?" Normally the auditor's responsibility simply goes into trying to reduce the auditing restimulation. Because they're trying to reduce it they very often goof. I mean, they overdo the job, you know. Get nervous and won't interrupt the pc and they're afraid to cut the pc's itsa line and let the pc wander into all kinds of things, you know. They don't provide good specific small tar-

gets in auditing to center the pc's attention on them and clean them up. They're always taking a bit bigger target than the pc can grab hold of and that sort of thing.

In other words, there's various things you can monitor and that's mostly what we study. The various things you can do in auditing. But look. Look, that's one out of one, two, three, four – see, that's one out of five. And you could actually sit down with this little chart, and subdivide it. You could subdivide that present time environment restimulation over there into about at least eight different categories. You could just break them down into the dynamics. You sometimes have to do this.

We had somebody one time that used to go home every night after the auditing session and go through a bunch of voodoo exercises. I think it was voodoo or some such practice. And I think he was repeating over the words of a half a dozen GPMs simultaneously or something like that. Actually, the way we took the case apart was simply the auditing supervi – well, Mary Sue, just told him, "Hey! You're doing so-and-so and so-and-so. You quit that." And he quit that, and we made some case progress. See, that's just reducing that. You could take his present time environment, in other words, and you could compartment it into various sections and zones of restimulation, don't you see. You know, his job, and his family, and so forth.

"While I'm auditing you..." we notice that he always has a present time problem about the wife, and he has a present time problem about this, and present time problem about that "...take a week's vacation and don't live at home." See? You've actually reduced that much current restimulation, maybe you can get some progress with the case, see. That's – that's the crux of a lot of these things. But you could actually take that chart and find out what you are going to cut down.

Now, of course the responsible agency here that's going to give you the most trouble is the service facsimile. Because that's what he is holding in restimulation to make people wrong, and he's liable to make you wrong.

It's very interesting, occasionally I'm trying to make some student right with auditing, trying to give some auditor a win, and the auditor will go *bzzzz*, in some fashion or another try to make me wrong on an auditing instruction or something like this, by just not applying it, or crossing it up wrong, don't you see. Therefore, trying to create a rightness is debarred by the – by somebody's service fac getting in the road.

Now you see, that even comes true then on the supervision of auditors. That's rare, but occasional, don't you see. It just doesn't work somehow. It doesn't happen very often. It's usually inadvertent, and it's always easily explained. Like they didn't quite receive the despatch, or they didn't understand the despatch. Or they told the pc all about the direction before it was done or something wild happened with regard to this auditing direction, you see. Or it all turned off too quickly so that we couldn't go on auditing it or something, you see. A little goofy point. It's all explainable. But you recognize, if you look through it, and you were to rehearse the service facsimile of that particular auditor and so forth, if this was a consistent occurrence, if that occurrence was very consistent, what we'd have to do of course is find out the mechanism he's using to try to make somebody wrong. Now that would there – would therefore bring about a kickback.

Now, he apparently consciously doesn't know what he's doing. You understand? And there's several ways of handling that. You can simply bring it sharply to his attention that something is operating here that is preventing something from happening, and usually, why, he'll take a look at it and laugh and straighten it out. That's normally what would normally happen. You can engage upon some duress or something like that. As I've said I've been known to put a head on a pike just to make everybody follow my instructions for a little while. Just did it, as a matter of fact. And their heads are still on their shoulders; it wasn't very vicious, but it was to their attention that a little more attention could be put on this particular point.

Now, what are you going to get out of something like this? Well, you'll get less restimulation for the pc. One of the things that's going to happen, they'll be a little bit more careful. You get less restimulation for the pc. Of course, you're liable to get more restimulation on the part of the auditor so he doesn't follow the instructions any better. And all of this randomness simply occurs because of a service facsimile. Now, one of the reasons why the auditor goofs, and the four guys I just shot down in flames will be rehabilitated in a short while – were shot down, actually had this as part of its element.

They were auditing toward the service fac, therefore the pc was trying to make them wrong. You understand? So you can count on this occurring as you move toward the service fac. If you do anything inadvertent – no in... the tiniest little goofs that don't amount to a hill of beans and you're just approaching a service facsimile, then the pc targets you as the one to be made wrong. You get this? And I'd say, in all – these four students I was just snarling at – that that had occurred, you see, to some degree.

In other words, the auditor was already enturbulated by this situation. All right. Now an enturbulated auditor, an enturbulated auditor, has to be given a new stable datum to some degree, so just do it – do it – do it, is the best stable datum that you can give him. Offhand, let him get a win. Let him see the breadth and understanding of this particular zone, exactly how this thing is operating and let him sit back and take a look at it, because obviously that pc must be very restimulative to the auditor or he wouldn't be as – so adventurous as not to follow one of my instructions. Get the idea?

So one of the ways you can do it, one of the ways you can do it, is shift auditors. See, you get a new pattern of make-wrongness from the pc, don't you see? And the auditor's wits can settle down on the situation, don't you see? And then you apprise the auditor one way or the other, something for him to look at with regard to all this, see. It'll straighten out. Well now, that's a method of handling it. But it's all handled on the basis of restimulation.

Now, if you make a practice of handling all of your auditing actions on a basis of restimulation, your adjudications and judgment with regard to your auditing sessions and your pcs and so forth, on the basis of restimulation, you will seldom be very wrong. Even a poor solution, based on lessening restimulation, is better than some heroic solution, like shoot the pc, you know, like they do in the medical profession, see? Any solution that reduces restimulation, even if badly put into effect, very often delivers the goods. Any pc that is running badly then – now get this one, because this is pretty sweeping, and I'll be lecturing again on

the service facsimile of course, we will take it up, exactly how you do this. But all this is a very necessary prelude to this sort of thing.

Any pc, and anything wrong with that pc, is there because of overrestimulation. And any resolution of the auditing situation or the case has to take into account a reduction of restimulation, whether by discharge or destimulation. One or the other. You key it out, to destimulate, and you just blow it, of course, to discharge it.

Now, of course, you've got a room full of cotton bales, you're not going to get anybody moving around in there, it – there's so many cotton bales in the room, don't you see, the guy can't move around to throw the cotton bales out. So that's it. You're not going to get any – you're never going to empty the room. But you can still look in other directions to reduce the restimulation. I've just given you a map of them. You could actually audit, particularly amongst the neurotic and so forth, simply on a basis of giving advice against that little chart I just drew for you. Just destimulate the person's life somewhat, and the person will recover from some of the most amazing things. It isn't esoteric at all, see.

Something in his vicinity is naming things that go into restimulation, that's all. What is restimulation? A restimulative environment simply contains things in it which put his attention on things which are in the bank, and restimulative. I mean, it's as easy as that. He's got a – he's got a naming environment. And remember that with his service facsimile, he's doing some naming, too. So the service facsimile is naming a bunch of things to go into restimulation. See?

So if you reduced the other sources of restimulation, of which you have five there, and if you reduced – if you reduced the session restimulation, your current auditing restimulation, what you're auditing, your past auditing restimulation; you reduced your environmental restimulation on the pc, reduced all those things, you see – in the – the various ways you have of reducing these things, you see, and then audited out the guy's service fac – even though this took quite a while to accomplish on reducing these – well, reducing environmental restimulation: Let's have the guy go live in the hills for a year before we audit him, you get the idea? You know, simple as that. Have the guy get a – some kind of a very calm job of some kind or another.

It – no matter how bad his case was, don't you see, we – it's all solved on the basis of reducing restimulation. And now we take his service fac, and we approach it head-on, and we audit out the service facsimiles, which he is in, for one lifetime, and get ourselves a nice free swinging needle and we give ourselves a nice behaving tone arm.

And then we go at a very – we've got accomplished all that – we of course have now set up practically an unrestimulative environment, auditing situation, bank and so forth. So we can naturally then reach into the bank at this point and pick up the string of almost anything in the bank, because you've just got a basic map of the bank. I mean, you got... say, "All right, let's get the goal 'to be dead,' you know, first goal of the Helatrobis Implants," and for the next month or so, why, just audit out the Helatrobis Implants. You can audit them all out with good TA. Particularly if you give an occasional Prepcheck that cuts down the past auditing restimulation and cuts down your accumulated session restimulation, see. The guy's going to make it.

And that's any case, see, that's any case, that makes any case an easy running case. Now, a case is as hard to run as it is restimulated. It's as hard to run as it comes to you restimulated and as hard as you have restimulated it improperly, see. That – that's as hard – that's how hard is a case to run. The case is no harder than that to run. A case is as difficult as it is restimulated.

And you get some guy walking in, his hair's wild, and he says, "The world is coming to an end tomorrow night!" you know, and "Watch out, I've got to get rid of these bugs," you know. Aw, don't pay – no reason to put any attention on the case. What do you know? Something right away you know. Case is overrestimulated, naturally. He's gonna sit in that auditing chair and pick up the cans and answer sensible questions about his service facsimile in his life? Well, I don't know, you might be able to get him into session. Get him to tell you about world's coming to an end – if you kept him in this lifetime, carefully controlled his itsa line. You might surprise yourself, you might get a lot of tone arm action. He might be quite auditable. But the chances are he wouldn't be. The chances are you're not even going to get him near an auditing session and if you did, the auditing would produce no tone arm action.

Actually you know about it, that he's got a stuck tone arm. In he walked, what's his tone arm condition? Must be the same as for any overrestimulated case. Stuck. So how can you approach or attack the case? Well, of course you're validly auditing the case to the degree that you reduce restimulation on the case. So there's probably a lot of ways, looking at this little chart up here, that you reduce the restimulation on the case, see. A lot of odds and ends. He knows – he knows psychotherapy; he's had electric shocks and that sort of thing, see. You can develop a whole bag of tricks just out of that fact, see? You destimulate psychotherapy. See, you sit there, you don't say anything. You don't do anything. See? Don't do anything. When he leaves, you say, "All right, thank you, thank you, Joe." He'll finally get pretty calm around you.

Well, that isn't – doesn't look like auditing to you, but actually it's destimulation. Compare this with "Prepare Number 62 for electric shock and a prefrontal lobotomy in the morning. *Hrrmph-hrrmph*, we've got to cure him! Ah, *ha-ha*. Get the wet packs, the cold packs, the green packs, the purple packs and the ice packs. Oh, yes, we've got to fix him, rouse him up, rouse him up, yep, yep, yep." Looks to me like these characters are adding more environmental restimulation than they can pick up so, of course, they have a lousy record of cure. In fact, they all carefully explain to you how insanity is incurable. It may or may not be incurable, but is it, that's the main thing. Is insanity? And the answer of course is no.

The – there is however an overrestimulated pc. There is an overrestimulated being. So if you look into all this very carefully, you'll see that you can cut back restimulation all over the place. And you get all hepped up on the subject of all you've got to do is get your E-Meter and put the guy on it, and find the service facsimile and run right and wrong on it, and that sort of thing, and so forth, you're going to lose. That – that's fine. That's fine.

Develop confidence in this particular direction. But you realize, there are going to be a lot of people who can't sit in a chair and can't pick up an E-Meter. People that are unconscious; well, you can bring them conscious by running Touch Assist sort of thing on the sheets.

But he can't talk to you, he's afraid of you, he can't sit down in the chair, he this, he that, see, all these other things.

Well, actually, it's the same problems you have in auditing. It's a problem in destimulation, or discharge of existing restimulation, it's one or the other. And normally you'd select out destimulation by simply decreasing the restimulation of the various zones from which he can get restimulation. You'd select those out very carefully, measure them up and give somebody some advice on the subject of it and his restimulation would reduce. The next thing you know, "Miracle worker in the field of the mind," you know, and people will say he doesn't do anything. "We don't understand, we don't understand how Doctor Jones gets results, because all he does is sit there and nod and the patients come in and nod when they leave, and they seem to get well. Must be some tremendous personality that he has," you see. We've reduced treatment restimulation, you see. He didn't even pick up a pad and issue any orders, see.

Now, if you can digest all that that I've just been talking to you about, and you've got all of that taped, and you've got everything I've been talking to you about absolutely taped, we can approach the subject of a service facsimile, which we will do in a later lecture.

Thank you very much.

SERVICE FACs AND GPMs

A lecture given on 11 September 1963

Well, what's – what's this today?

Audience: 11th of September.

I didn't mean that, thank you for the date, but – yeah, just taking a look at you, I supervise a lot of your cases, more than you think. And every once in a while, why, with a horrible shudder you realize I've been looking over your shoulder but – I always take a look at you, my perceptivity on a pc is pretty good, I know how you're getting along. And as auditors, same way, I know how you're getting along, see – it's very easy. How caved in does your pc look. So you see, if you have a dominant number of the class caved in, why the auditors aren't doing so good.

Now, what's the date?

Audience: September the 11th.

Eleven September, AD 13, Saint Hill Special Briefing Course. And this lecture slightly exceeds its normal scope of lectures.

Have a lot of bad news for you – a lot of good news for you, a lot of bad news. And on May the 8th, *The Nature of the GPM*, says that the early GPMs contacted on the pc are implants and it says, down there its tenth, twelfth paragraph something like that – this does not mean that the pc's own GPMs do not exist. Do you remember that?

Audience: Yes. [comm lag – laughter]

The pc's own GPM has the power and velocity, over an implant GPM, of somewhere between a thousand or a hundred thousand to one. Actually, a much greater figure of magnitude. I just threw that in, just to give you an idea that there's magnitude difference, see. Now hold your hats. The whole of the implanted GPMs: between-lives area, screens, implant GPMs, the Minion goals, the Helatrobus Implants and the Train goals – all this sort of stuff, all of those GPMs, all those implant GPMs – are one RI in one of my GPMs.

Audience: Hmmm. Wow. Whew!

Interesting, huh? One RI.

One RI. The name of the RI is "goals" – "oppterm goals." Which is one of something on the order of a hundred RI personal GPM, which extends from trillions-thirty, to trillions-twenty on the time track. But which is actually still going.

Now several things are – need clarifying. A lot of you have been protesting, this – you wonder why this is part of the service fac – well, you'll get around to that in a minute – but

several things need clarifying. And one is the length of the time track. And a lot of you have had considerable protest on the subject of the length of the time track. Because trillions of trillions of trillions of trillions of years, you know, T-T-T-T-T-T-T-T-T-T, you know and, "Ohhh, my God, ho-ho-ho! Ohhh, ho-ho dear! Getting so long. Da-dsa-dya-dya-dya-ohhh! Uhhhh!" You hear that around every once in a while. You probably felt like that yourself, you know.

Well, I just have good news for you in that particular department. What I would choose to call "modern times" extends from trillions-thirteen till now. That's modern times. The stuff that's more likely to influence the preclear in present time.

Well, this is very germane. Because you now have your paws on Scientology III, just about the handsomest little package of stuff you ever had anything to do with, called a service facsimile. First introduced as Routine 3SC. Correct?

Audience: Mmm. Yes.

What you're doing is fooling around with the pc's current RI in his existing goal line of his current truncated goal. And you're fooling around with one little RI, see. And you've got this, and it's in present time and of course there's an opposition to it. And you can get your hands on the opposition, and you can get your hands on the RI and you can fumble and fool around with this, and almost any way you look in it, or almost any way you carve on the edges of it you're going to make a Clear. Well, what are you doing. You're actually clearing a dumbbell pair of the pc's own GPM out of sequence on the track, see. That's all you're doing.

You've got your paws on what he is doing right now. Well, of course in fumbling around it'd be very easy for some of you to lay your paws on what he was doing last night. Oh, take or minus trillions-five years ago, see. "Last night," you know, what he was doing. You're liable to get your paws on that. See, but that's still all right. But of course the pc's goal is going to fall out of this thing, with a thud, like Ann's did last night. Listed goals and one rocket read, and so forth. Wasn't listing goals, listing ideas on the service fac, you see. And one of them rocket read.

Well, it's the greatest probability that while you're looking for the service fac, that which rocket reads is the pc's own goal. So. Now, at this point you should however be very wary, as I told you in the last lecture. I've been aware of this, I've been holding out on you for a couple of days here, I've been aware of this. But I didn't believe it. I really didn't believe it very hard. And I had to do some more looking at the thing. That is to say, I just didn't believe the magnitude differences. I've been looking for enough – if you are a powerful character... Let's put it this way, if you are a powerful character that once had *muscles*, and played billiards with planets, and we've got to look for some order of aberration to reduce that power that's comparable to that power, right? The degree of aberration necessary to reduce that much power must be comparable to the power reduced. And we have there a law or a rule. Do you see that?

Audience: Mm-hm. Yes.

You don't take – you don't take – you don't take Big John from the north woods, you know, that was customarily picking up Douglas firs a hundred and seventy-five feet tall and

picking his teeth with them, you know, the Paul Bunyan type legends, you see – and drop a tack hammer on his toe and have him crippled for life. You see? That just doesn't happen. No, I'm afraid you would have to have – you would have to have quite a few forests fall on his head, see, for him to get a headache. Well, the forests that have fallen on the head of the thetan of course, are these GPMs.

Now, we look it over, and so, they put you on a monocycle, and you went *pocka-ting* down between a couple of rows of things that spat at you, see, and great. Great day, fine, all right, all right. I don't even care if I key you in, because what am I keying in? You can always scratch a mosquito bite, see. If you went down the line with these things barking and firing at you and that sort of thing and they said that you were *absolutely* no good and that sort of thing. Bull! The only thing they did was get you very confused as to which was your goal and which was their goal. And that little tiny GPM that they installed had the power of being installed backwards, and being installed according to the actual pattern of GPMs, had the power of getting a thetan confused. So he didn't want to really look over that; he didn't want to have too much to do with that.

You see why? It's backwards, you know, they implanted them from the top to the bottom. Well an actual GPM is run from the bottom to the top, the way it was lived. See, you don't run an actual GPM from its top oppterm down to the goal at the bottom. You take the goal at the bottom and you list it back up to the top oppterm, you got that? Otherwise it doesn't make any sense at all. They will list backwards, but you'll find yourself being thrust forward in time and it's hard to do.

The liability of reaching the goal is of course the goal is the furthest item from present time, being the bottom terminal, and when you get your pc to reach down for that goal, this is what I wanted to give you, as just a little tip. I didn't want you getting too adventurous here. Because when you have the pc reach for that goal and examine that goal, he actually is to some slight degree moving through time between that goal and present time, don't you see. And he lives up the whole track. And the wild part of it is it looks just like – well, I don't know if any of you have ever looked down the Helatrobis Implants, and just looked down between the row and it was all nice. It was all clean, you know, you could see all the stuff, and you looked down to the end and you say "I wonder what that item was, or that one." What happened, see? You got a sort of a tunnel of blackness occurs the whole way along, if you had some sensation of that particular character.

Well, that's what happens when you reach down the GPM. Well, the same thing happens when you make a pc reach down *his* GPM channel. Only this is something of the order of you can reach down a GPM in the Helatrobis Implants, you see and the pc manages it – it isn't so good. He doesn't like that, he didn't think that was so good. I mean, that's his – that would be his ordinary reaction, don't you see. But he looks down his own goal channel like this, and scrapes up and down his own goal channel, and mucks around in it any length of time, reaching back to the goal and reaching something else, and so forth. And it's something like having your head shot off with a sixteen-inch cannon, see, because the residual charge is – oh, I'd – it'd be almost impossible to state the difference of magnitude. The charge is great. I'm not trying to scare your own GPMs, but I'm just giving you an idea as auditors.

Now, let's say, let's say, that somebody has a goal "to be sexual" or "have sex" or something like this, you see, or "to create," "create my own universe" or something like this, see. Let's say that's the pc's own goal, see. And you're clobbering along here with a service fac, see. You're looking at a service fac, and he lists it. It's "to have my own universe" or something like this. You take this up and you put it in red, with a great big square around it on the auditor's report. You understand? So it's big. So that nobody can miss it while they're going through folders and that sort of thing. You put it up there because that's *very important*. It's infinitely more important than any implant goal, see. Put it up there so it's big. And then don't start mucking about with it. On any process except 3M2.

Oh, you can list it and get its oppterm and oppterm that, and so forth. You've got all the technology; it'll be back on your checksheets tomorrow morning. But, you get the – all the technology exists for this stuff, you see. Well, what if you used that "to have my own universe" as the service facsimile? Ho-ho-ho-ho! You're running something back at maybe trillions-twenty-one. You're not running a service facsimile. You're making the guy look down this channel, see? Because that the goal, clean statement of, you see, is the first RI in the GPM. No pardon me, pardon me, it isn't. There is an – probably an earlier one, which would be something like "a being with the idea that 'to have my own universe.'" "The being with the idea to have my own universe" may come previously to that, don't you see. Because he hasn't become the postulate yet.

But nevertheless, you've got something that's down there at the beginning of this track. See, and there's at least a hundred RIs between where you are and it. At least a hundred RI's and you go charging down there to run this as a service fac and yeah, it'll make a lot of sense and, yeah, you'll get a free needle, yeah, you'll get some tone arm action, yeah, there's nothing like that. But sooner or later somewhere along this line the pc's scuffing back and forth, commuting you see, he's gonna rough up the rest of his track. And oddly enough, it lies in a channel, which looks not unlike one of these implant goal channels. Of course there aren't any firing mechanisms or anything like that but that's all arranged.

A pc's own GPM looks like a black island. I've already given a lecture on this and described all these and so forth, a long time ago – spring I guess it was. And – but they – they look like a black island floating and so on, and they're quite meaty. And they have specific, distinct sizes and all of this sort of thing. Well, you get the pc scuffing back and forth, recognize that you're running him from the bottom of an island of solid mass maybe three-feet thick by seventy-five feet long, by maybe thirty-feet wide, and you're just running him up through the middle of this thing, you know and you're running him back through the middle of the other and you're running him back up there again and *uhhh!* Hey, hey! And all of a sudden no tone arm action, nothing else. You won't be able to continue your activities with a service facsimile. You see that?

Fortunately, not all is lost. All you would have to do in this particular regard is just break out your little pencil and a hundred and seventy-five reams of paper, and go to work with 3M2 – with all of its various complicated laws and that sort of thing, taking the first item you found down at the bottom of it such as the goal and working on through. And working out the GPM.

In actual fact the beauty – the beauty of the pc's own GPM as compared to an implant GPM is the pc's own GPM disintegrates. And the pattern of the needle action, you get quite a bit of tone arm action. When you start in, it's kind of stiffish, and then the needle starts getting freer and the tone arm starts waving more. And as you get down about three-quarters of the way toward the top of the thing, just as it's given on your early plots, those early plots, "to scream" and that sort of thing, they're all quite valid, you see. They're your own GPM patterns, you see. That's the way they look foreshortened, but nevertheless those releases are all quite accurate.

And you get up – you get up about three-quarters of the way, and you all of a sudden start seeing that thing start rocket reading blowdowns. Rocket reading blowdowns. *Psssww! Psssww! Psssww! Psssww!* Then you start watching this tone arm come on down here toward Clear read, *psssww-psssww!* and it'll just go on that way – it'll go on and it'll go on and it'll go on. Then you find another RI, you see. And then it starts going some more and it starts blowing down. And this thing practically disintegrates. You've got an automatic disintegration, is what happens.

Sometimes your pc'll sit there in session; he'll look at one of these huge islands, which has been black and is now turned grey and it'll be buckling and quivering and buckling – no, that's the wrong word. It's shaking. Something begins to buckle, you've got something on top of it. But you'll see it shaking and shivering and fraying. It looks like – it looks like some jello. It looks like a piece of opaque jello that somebody has left in the sun. It ceases to be so hard and fast, and it sort of drips away and it shatters.

Well, actually that charge isn't going through your meter or through the pc, fortunately. You're only getting a small indication of the amount of charge going off. I don't know how much charge is going off one of these things, but I should think an early track GPM is probably losing a megatron or something like that. I'd say, at least. But it's simply disintegrating into the never-never land and you don't notice it. But you do see it on this meter. And the pc is fended off from the thing, don't you see – he's – it's over there, it's over there, maybe eight, ten, fifteen feet away from him. And it's going apart rather quietly. But it's that much force that is dissipating. And you just get a kickback on the meter which is almost telepathic in its lightness. See, there's hardly any kickback coming at the pc. You understand?

Well, there's enough charge to make Paul Bunyan into a punk, see. See, there's enough charge to take a guy with the total capabilities of an OT and reduce him down to somebody that when the medico trims his fingernail or something like that, he has an awful time. You get the idea? See, there's enough charge to aberrate. Aberration must be equivalent to the amount of power aberrated. And it's the pc's own GPMs.

Now, there's various – various data extant in this particular field. It's covered under the techniques called R3M and R3M2 – was its final consolidation. That technology all exists. Now, what you – what this lecture's principally about; the technology all exists, the lectures exist, and so forth, pc has his own goals, his own GPMs, and these RIs have a tremendous amount of mass. One RI, you see, is maybe a hundredth or a two-hundredth of a big GPM, see. And this reliable item is the pc's own reliable item, is floating round here in present time.

In fact he's busy, busy, busy, busy, busy, the nut, making himself, making himself an RI and it has an opposition. He's busy, busy, busy, busy, busy. See.

Now, it has a central postulate of its own and it's dependent on the goal, also. In other words, all these RIs – oppterm or terminal – have in common the goal. They all have the goal in them. Because they're part and parcel of the goal. But they have their own significance with regard to the goal.

Let's take the goal, let's imagine there is such a goal, "to go to school." Such a goal would never exist, so we just take it so it's non-restimulative. All right. Well, you've got an RI up toward present time – got an RI up toward present time, that'll make you very, very upset, you see? Because it apparently won't have anything to do with anything. And you don't understand it really until you get the goal. But the confounded thing is baffling to auditor and pc alike. Because it's to – "to ring bells" or "to ring the bell" or something like this, you see. What the hell? What does it go up to? The guy wanted to be a fire engine laddie or what's he want to be, you know? I mean, what is this thing? What is this thing? A service fac "to ring the bell," see. It nevertheless will run because it's part and parcel of "to go to school." Naturally, why, in small schools, why, the better pupil was called on to ring the bell in the morning and that's – see, there he is, you see.

You might find something, "to get a gold star" and you think of gold star mothers and that sort of thing, and it's some confounded innocuous thing like, you know, "to get A." Or you're liable to get an oppterm of "people who bring their lunches." Creak your brains, you know? How in the name of common sense is this an aberrative factor in anybody's case, you know? Well, you don't have the GPM goal, so of course the RI all by itself doesn't make much sense. But it's hanging out everywhere and you can come around the perimeter of it and you can take your techniques which are given in R3SC, and they'll land you somewhere in the perimeter of the oppterm or terminal of the pc's *own* GPM as it applies more or less to PT or some old one that's in restimulation in PT, and will be the source of his present time restimulation as per the graph I gave you yesterday.

And of course you can knock that thing in the head and get yourself a lot of nice tone arm action – wonderful tone arm action – particularly because it's in formation, don't you see? It's an RI in Formation. And you can knock it all to pieces and you can pull its central postulate, and so forth, and you get all kinds of interesting meter phenomena and all that sort of thing. But when you try to make it make sense, it very often doesn't. And it may not make sense, it may clear the pc up very nicely, but make no sense at all until someday he's run on R3M and we find out this bing to ring – "to ring the bells," is the goal "to go to school." And he'll let out a war whoop in the session and suddenly add it all up, don't you see. Well, the GPM will be somewhat disintegrated already. You've already tackled this thing obliquely.

So that's actually what you're auditing. I thought you might like to know.

Now, well, you've got tremendous complexities enter into this situation. I hit one last night. I might as well tell you about. Now, you actually can assess for a service facsimile without a meter, on this basis only: Write a list until the pc seems easy and thinks it's complete and then just look on the list for the one that makes the least sense. [laughter] And you should know that as an auditor because it'll help you a great deal. You don't have too much to

do with significance on this sort of thing. But it's the one that makes the least sense. It's a lie, it isn't true, and so forth.

And we had a list going last night; I was being audited and one appeared on the list, "abandon all help," as a solution to anything that was gone. Now, you add that up, I couldn't! But it tore a somatic off of my jaw the like of which I haven't felt in a long time, you see. And the auditor went on another column of listing and nulling and so forth, and it went in and it went out, because it was being suppressed. It was worrying me, see. Not necessarily because it wasn't sensible – but because it wasn't sensible I suppressed it and it stopped reading. So another one or two which were only locks on it, started reading. They read momentarily, you see, because I'd abandoned it. They were reading by the bypassed charge on it.

That's an interesting solution, isn't it? "Abandon all help," if something is gone, you abandon all help. Well, it didn't make any sense at all to me, but I happened to know what GPM that it's coming from, it's the GPM "to be free." And it's simply an RI and it becomes completely sensible. One of the ways of being free is to abandon all help. See? Perfect method of becoming free. If you need no help from anyplace, why, naturally, you can be free. So you see, it makes sense in its own GPM but doesn't make any kind of sense at all. And yet, would audit – yet would audit very nicely. Pc cognited on it all over the place, and straightened it all out, and free up the needle and free up the tone arm and everything go along fine, even though it didn't make any sense. And wasn't compared to the goal, don't you see? Because the RI that it was being listed against was not the right RI, probably. But it just popped up because it's a PT solution, see, of the GPM line, so therefore it's an RI of the GPM line "to be free." Method of being free – abandon all help.

Well, that wasn't actually an RI. I don't even know what RI it is out of, but it's the central postulate of the RI. See what I mean? And what you're handling is the central postulate of the RI when you're handling a service facsimile, so you get a disintegration. I see I've left you adrift, here. You thought the central idea of an RI made the RI. Well, that's perfectly valid. But it all too often simply describes what makes the central postulate. See, we know a little bit more now about the RI.

Let's take – let's take the RI "a lame man." See, we've never really gone into the anatomy of a reliable item of a GPM, because we were dealing so many months now with these confounded implant GPMs and that sort of thing, I never bothered to go forward on the thing. Well, what makes this "lame man" RI hold together? Why does he assume the identity of a lame man? See? Well, he assumes it because it's got a solution in the middle of it, which is an *idée fixe*, which then prevents him from looking at anything else, and it may be "lameness." See, although the item is "a lame man," the postulate which brings that into action, you see, is "lameness." Do you see that it's not quite safe.

Now sometimes they are more distant than that. You see? "Not walking," let us say, is the principal idea. And you get that perfectly validly as "a lame man," don't you see? Or "an immobilized person." You've got that as an RI. Now that characterizes simply the identity of the RI. That is the beingness of the RI. What is the thinkingness of this RI? The thinkingness of the RI might be different. Not always, because sometimes the RI comes up as its own thinkingness, don't you see. But particularly a beingness RI, or some conditional RI, may

have at its core an idea. And it's this idea which is an automatic solution. Well, an RI always has an idea at its core. But sometimes you don't have the idea when you *have* the RI, don't you see, you've got – you've got this RI, "a lame man." Well, this doesn't tell you what idea lies in the middle of "a lame man," see. That you could list for and find. And disintegrate the RI. But it's the thing which has all the characteristics of what you're calling a service facsimile. It forbids inspection. It's an automatic solution. It's safe. It solves everything, see?

Now, that is *how* an RI is generated and that's all contained in R3SC without any further embellishment. Guy gets an *idée fixe*, he no longer has to inspect in order to solve, so therefore he never as-ises the mass, so therefore he gets caught in the middle of the mass. Bang! That's it.

Now if it's a goal that he does this with, the accumulation of RIs resulting from that goal – each one of them has this goal carried through into it, but it's a new idea which makes the RI, don't you see? And that whole mass come together, is a GPM. So you have this huge mass, huge block of energy with its separate items and so forth in it – it's hardly distinguishable as separate items because it's all squashed together, there's been so much attack and so little inspection. And this whole GPM is dominated by one idea – let us say, "to go to school," see. That's one idea. And that is common to every RI or identity in that, see, which is what accumulates it. But that idea all by itself is no inspection. Solve all problems, "to go to school," see. See, if you have a headache, go to school, you see. If you have something of the sort and if you didn't know something, go to school, and so forth. You get the idea, see?

It's totally uninspected. Totally uninspected solution. So because it's uninspected and automatic and fixed, it then generates into it this second step of identities which have this as a central idea, but the identities already have their own characteristics. See, they've got this – this idea is dominant, see, but their characteristics of the identity would be something like way up at the line, up here some place, you know, a terminal, after he's no longer able to carry out the postulate, becomes something on the order of "an idiot child," see. And you go into the basis of an idiot child to find out what it is, is "people like unintelligence," see? Or, just "unintelligence" seems to solve everything. So the central idea of this RI, "an idiot child," may be "unintelligence." But the RI is "an idiot child" and the reason it could get formed in the first place is he already had the *idée fixe* of the goal.

So you've got actually three ideas in connection with this thing. One is the GPM's central goal – which is the first postulate of that GPM – plus the central idea of the RI, which in itself, in its peculiar way forbids inspection, and the resultant mass, caused by the goal noninspection and the RI central idea noninspection, we have as an identity or an individuality. We have this as the third step. So we would say, the goal, "to go to school," central idea, "unintelligence," results in the RI, see, "an idiot child." Do you see that? Well, that's characteristic of all – of all RIs. And that is the anatomy of an RI and it also happens to be the anatomy of what you've got as a service facsimile.

That which is not inspected tends to persist. And that is your basic rule, this little Hobson-Jobson on one of our earlier ones, "that which is not admired tends to persist." And your little rule there – that which is not inspected tends to persist. Why? Because it's never as-ised. That which you look at will tend to – and inspect, tends to become – well, it doesn't tend

to remain in an aberrated state, don't you see? But that which is never inspected, of course, has this factor of uninspection which adds mass.

Now, because it is – not just because I just used this – because it is actually quite unintelligent. What happens? Well, a person gets hell knocked out of him, that's what happens. And he can never attack the right enemy. He's got some idea, you see, an idiot child is liable to attack bright kids, see. Something like that. Well, anything that's characterized as "bright kids," he attacks, see. So, it's a perfect invitation to attack. And because there's constant attack and constant overts going on and constant withholds going on and constant battle going on, it of course accumulates an awful lot of mass. And there's where the mass comes from of an RI.

It's quite interesting that an idea is most easily substituted for a thetan. You... an idea doesn't have any mass connected with it basically, and it appears to be – have some wisdom in it and that sort of thing. It's very easily substituted for a thetan. So somebody can walk around as "the guard." See?

He isn't a thetan, he's "the guard." Got the idea? And you probably had something to do with guards and they have rather unintelligent activities. You say, well, "I left my lunch on the counter in the washroom and I'd like to go in and get it."

"Yes? Hmmm. Do you have a pass? Hmmm! What department do you work for? Hmmm. Have to call the security chief, I'm sorry. I have a young lady out here, wants to get back into the building. Security section."

You can see it now, it goes straight up to the president of the company, the FBI is called in and so on. The federal government is justified for its existence, don't you see. There's telegrams going out in all directions and so forth, and you're standing there, you left your lunch in the washroom, see. I mean that was all there was to understand there. [laughs] But not the guard. He's the guard, see, and so he doesn't – it's not his to understand anything. He's just there to be the guard. Do you understand that? Well, that's an identity which is substituted for a thetan, see.

Well, now similarly, any idea is liable to become a substitute for a thetan! Because a thetan does it himself. He has some bad luck, see. He's had some bad luck. Last three or four mountain ranges he built, fell down. Bad luck. Overbalanced the planet and it started going in the other direction, you know. The poles appeared at different places than they were supposed to, you see. So, on the idea of planets, "never build mountains." That solves it, doesn't it? Well now, all the confusion of the accident which has just occurred, is now prevented from ever occurring again by "never build mountains." And that holds in place then, all uninspected, all of the confusion he just got into by building three mountain ranges where he shouldn't have built them, see. So all that confusion and randomness is held in place, because it isn't inspected, it's solved – "Never build mountains," see. That's it. Now, he's got it all taped, you see.

And that's his idea. Now, if we go along and follow his career, it's sooner or later, why we'll find him running a society which prevents the building of mountains. Society for the Prevention of Building of Mountains, you see. He shifted his identity only to the point where he's the president of it, you see. But you see, you've got the substitute of an idea for the being in this particular case.

He just had this as a solution. But this solution he kept working at, and it itself then gets battered and hammered by the environment. The environment that has a solution in it, you see, "never build mountains," rather tends to push against this bloke. See, so that accumulates more mass, you see, by reason of this thing, and then he fights back and that accumulates more mass and then eventually he becomes the idea "never build mountains," don't you see. And it might appear as some different RI, but you look there and you'll find, "never build mountains" has been substituted for a thetan, you see?

So, that's the history of a person's lessening abilities. See, these RIs, these substitutions, all of this sort of thing. All of his O/Ws and various things, all get piled up on one of these *idées fixes*. The biggest *idée fixe* that a person can have is a goal. Biggest one. That develops into a GPM. Not all goals develop into GPMs, but those he's got have developed into GPMs. So here's a GPM floating there, and finally life becomes completely unlivable, and he doesn't want anything to do with it anymore, so he abandons all that and gets a new goal.

If you want to see – the Helatrobis Implant people did an interesting job of tracing the deterioration of the thetan, but actually the Bear and Gorilla goals are a better one. They're a better model. And those which we turned out in the last year here – that don't have the positive items in it, you know – those that just show you the... you know like "to scream." You know, those GPMs which came out? They're graduates up the line. Well that's what a pc's own GPM looks like. Because he keeps moving off of these *idées fixes*, abandons those and has to have a new *idée fixe* to solve the situation which he's just solved, but which wouldn't stay solved. Once you start solving things in this peculiar fashion, you eventually wind up with GPMs. That's all you can say about that.

Now, you find this pc with R3SC, I'm not talking to you too much about GPMs although they come into this naturally, and because I'm also telling you what the score is with regard to them. Horrible feeling of exhaustion just swept over me in the idea of having to cover all the ground that we have covered before on the subject of R3M, and the pc's own goals and GPMs. And just to help you out on this, that ground is all there. I'm talking about reevolving it. The only part of it that needs reevolving perhaps is mostly done – and that's how do you find the pc's own goal and how do you separate it out from an implanted goal because they both read the same when you first find them on the meter. And it's much easier to find implant goals than it is own goals, and you try to run an implant goal, as though it were the pc's own GPM, and he doesn't have a goal under that heading, but there's only an implant goal, and you're running the Helatrobis Implants with the wrong items, don't you see? This is all very involved.

But if you keep an eye very cleanly out, while you're doing service facsimiles, why, the Helatrobis Implants and other implants of that character didn't have the power actually to do very much to generate the RI which you find as a service facsimile. They might have monitored it somehow, made the guy resentful of hockey sticks or something like this or monocycles. He probably can't stand monocycle acts in the local vaudeville. But what's your – what's your application here? That you must be very alert to anything you find that rocket reads while doing R3SC – and you must be very careful not to tackle it head-on as the service facsimile. Why? Because it doesn't run well with your service facsimile technology. You're going to run a GPM with your service facsimile technology? I rather think not. But

you can run one RI with your service facsimile technology. See, you can run an RI with it. You understand what I'm talking about now, do you?

That thing that rocket reads, *pssw!* Every time he gave you this solution which he's selling you as the service fac and cogniting on, well, don't shut him down in his cognition, but don't let him wander too much on the track either. Because you've got your hands on something which lies trillions-multiple in the past, see. And you haven't got anything – have anything to do with his present time. You've got something that belongs and can only be handled in Scientology IV.

But there are other ways of attacking this situation. Now the beauties of R3SC is it doesn't matter which side of this orange you start peeling. See, here's this RI that's monitoring his present life. It doesn't matter which side of it, it doesn't matter if you take out that little green thing at the top or the navel at the bottom or peel off some slabs or actually blot the oil off of it – you're going to do something, don't you see. And next thing you know you're going to start cutting up this RI – because it'll chop up just like anything else. And charge is going off of this thing madly in all directions and so forth, and he'll eventually become very calm about it.

Now, if you leave – if you find one of these things – here's another liability – if you find one of these things, if you find an RI and you've got yourself a pc on whom energy is going: *Nnwwaaam, waaaoooww, waaaoooww, waaaoooww, rrrrr, creak, rrrr, brrrr, brrrr!* He's left session, you see, and he's walked out three doors – only there's only one, you see. And he lays down at night in bed after the session and he'll *fowndeh* and it's started going: *whooooo, wawww-whoooooo.* And he got up and hastily turned on the light and four o'clock in the morning he's still sitting at his window looking out into the street and tr-trying-not-to-to-breathe-too-deeply-because-every-time-he-does, he goes: *whoooooo, wwwwwllll, whooooo!* It's ghastly! Most ghastly sensations, you can feel like, you know, these suction cups they clean out WCs with, you know, you could feel like you're inside one of those things, you know, being spronged and bonged. Or inflated and deflated rhythmically by an air pump or something like this. And things go around, creak. The guy's shoulder, for instance, moves over into the middle of his chest. And won't go back. And his chin suddenly moves up, as far as he's concerned, looks to you to be mostly – in fact he might even look better! But from his point of view the chin is apparently at the top of the crown of his head. Just occupational hazards. Factually not even very dangerous. But they certainly are frightening! Because you've come in close to the middle of a GPM.

Now, your first – your next reaction from this pc, you're entitled to know what it is. "The GPM is something else. I mean, the RI. The thing is something else. You haven't got the guy's service fac – it's all been a mistake. Actually, his service fac has to do with not liking Patagonians." That's far enough away from what he's just been in. [laughs] See, he's got himself – he's got himself a qualm. This is a new – a new illness that occurs in Scientology, and that is "the qualms." Q-u-a-l-m-s. And the cause of it is getting into or into the fringes of, the service facsimile and deciding that we have come close enough. See, he wasn't close enough in to be pulled into the thing, but he was close enough to be *whooooo, ohhhh, nooooo, ho-ho.* And he wants to change his mind. And he'll give you another service facsimile. So you get an invalidation of what you found, going on almost continuously in R3SC. And you can Q-and-

A with that invalidation. You can Q-and-A with that invalidation, just so much without restimulating the living daylights out of the case.

The way to repair it if you restimulated the case and he's apparently getting worse or something under R3SC – is go back and pick up everything that has been found on the pc. One of the first requisites is to keep good records. And pick up everything that has been found on the pc and guessed at as a service facsimile, and finish it off according to the rules of the game. Just finish everything off! Elementary.

Now, the best way to finish these things off is with the – with the lot. You give it the lot. That's all of R3SC steps. If you find "blackberries" and I know, you've said it was wrong, and it wasn't an idea and it wasn't a postulate, and actually it was an identity and it was an item, and it just turned on a – turned on a pain, and then didn't do much and it was abandoned and then you found – and you found "going down," for some reason or other, and that was just touched up lightly, but the pc couldn't see how it made anything wrong, don't you see, so that was abandoned. You look for another one, and then the pc went into the qualms and you found one that had to do with "to be little" or something of the sort, and this was awful close to it, and you decided that – you and he both decided that must be a GPM because it was too gruesome to be confronted. And about the fifth or sixth one along the line, you'll have gotten tone arm action, but you'll also have an awfully confused pc.

But you should realize that what you're doing is picking up a stable datum and leaving the confusion alive. And the net result is this: The pc's memory will, (quote) tend to deteriorate (unquote.) In other words, he'll just get foggy, don't you see. Because you've left half or three-quarters of the confusion, attendant upon that stable datum, still around. You've taken the stable datum out somewhat and you've left the confusion – but the stable datum couldn't be all the way out or the confusion would have disappeared! So the pc who feels confused, on R3SC, is either in the process of having a stable datum audited out, or you've – or some other auditor has abandoned stuff that is close in to the case and has left it in a confused restimulation.

The repair on it is just take everything that's been found on the case and worked at in this particular way and simply give it the lot – that is, all the steps of R3SC. Just give it the whole works.

Now, let me say something here about running this, because it's very germane, it's not out of place at all because you're dealing with RIs. The postulate is so far downscale, if you find the center of the RI, that postulate is so far downscale that it is probably twenty tone arm divisions below "hide." That's not just a hyperbolic statement, that's probably where it is. It's an idea that's turned into MEST – way down scale. And it runs to cognition. You only run it to cognition, but it enters at any one of these stages: A solution – making a good record of this – a solution, right-wrong process, make you right, others wrong – domination – survival.

It enters anyplace. Anyplace. And you run it to cognition. Now, you say to the guy, you say to the guy, "Well, would that make others right?"

"Oh, yes, it would make others right. It would..." – pardon me, make others wrong. He'd say, "Yes, it'd make others wrong, so forth. But, hey! It'd also make them right."

You say, well, it can't be the service facsimile, because it didn't make others wrong and make him right, and abandon it. Ha-ha! Wait a minute. The run was only – the run was a twelve-second run. It ran twelve seconds to cognition before it changed that level of that scale I just gave you. Understand? In fact one of you poor Zed students got sent to Siberia for doing that. The pity of it is, is the Zed students that that happened to, you know, they didn't have the data on what they were supposed to have disobeyed yet. [laughter] Unjust, isn't it?

Now, the upshot of this process... Now, this is – I should give you practically a whole lecture on just this process, and probably will. You'll be hearing a lot more of it. But if you consider this process here as this picture of survive, you know, I mean that's "help own survival-hinder the survival of others," you know, that sort of thing. "Dominate," which is "help you escape domination" and "achieve the domination of others." And "right-wrong." And if that's the way you look at it, and you always enter here at "right-wrong" and then expect it to go to "dominate" and expect it to go to "survive" – that's only gonna happen if you've got a first cousin to the service facsimile RI, of the pc's present time GPM series.

In other words, you've got something that does him a lot of good, don't you see, and he gets some automaticities on it, and everything is going along fine. But if you've got a real, honest-to-Pete, honest-to-goodness GPM, it doesn't go at this level. The idea doesn't come in here at right-wrong, and then proceed up to dominate and then go to survive, see?

Actually, this is what the picture looks like. Much more germane. It goes solutions... Well, let's take this at this level. It goes solutions, dominate – pardon me, solutions, right-wrong, dominate, survive, dominate, right-wrong, solutions. Horrible, isn't it? And here of course is your next right-wrong and your dominate and your survive. You understand this?

Female voice: Yeah.

And so, that it actually, actually just builds up into... You understand? It might enter here anyplace. Because it goes on – that's your top one, let us say, here. See, that band is okay and if it were a light perimeter idea which is still intelligent, and if you start abandoning service facsimiles because they're not sensible, you will only get this light variety. Because a real service facsimile is about as sensible as an admiral's hat on a cow, see. And so your entrance point here, your upper entrance point would only be in that proper, exact order, nicely, nicely, nicely – if the idea were still intelligent or still knowable or still sensible.

Ah, but the GPM does not look very sensible and when it's a rather weird solution of some kind or another as it would be if it were the center of the RI, it's liable to enter in almost anyplace down here. So, what's the net result of this? You find this thing, "to kiss cows," you see, or something like that or "cows are kissable" or something of this sort and it's on a list – it's on a list of "how to repair motor vehicles." "How would you go about repairing _____?" "What's a safe solution to motor vehicles?" And we get "cows are kissable." Well now, if we were psychologists, we would of course throw that one out because it doesn't fit the rest of the data. But that's what's wrong with it, it doesn't fit the rest of the data. It's the service facsimile.

Now, "cows are kissable," the pc may sit there for a little while and say "Right-wrong, eh? Wouldn't make anybody right. Wouldn't make – wouldn't make anybody right or wrong."

"Well," you say, "Well, all right, then, let's just abandon it." Or "Let's just prepcheck it."

Oh, no, no, the only thing he's done here is give you this scale. And you say, "Well, how does it fit in with domination? Do anything with domination? Do anything with survival? Is it just a solution?"

"Oh, survival! Well, of course! It's total survival. There's no question about its being survival. That's it."

Oddly enough, he's answered the question and cognited in that one sentence. And he's simply said, "It *is*." Which of course is a cognition, because it's a recognition. It *is* survival, see. And you say, "Well, how are we going to run a process on this, you know. We're auditors so we've got to run processes." Well, the way you run a process is try to find out what level you can run a process on and not cut the pc's itsa line while you're doing it. Because you then spring back to him – you spring back to him, "Well, has this been a solution?"

"Oh, yes, solutions, oh my God. It's a solution. All I've ever done is just solve this, solve that, solve the other thing and so on, and so on, and when I was getting prepschool and so on and solved that solution and so forth. And I always use this solution and so forth, when I have to do – when it has to do with buying peanuts. Every time I buy peanuts I use this solution. Of course, it's just been a solution and so on – it's been a solution, been a solution, been a solution – it's been a solution, it's been a solution, it's been a solution." It's half an hour later, you see. "It's been a solution." And he says, "You know, I don't think it's... I've just taken a look at this, and I – I really don't think it's the best solution in the world to buying peanuts. It isn't quite applicable." Cognition, see.

All right, now let's shift it. Now, let's shift it. And we say, "Well, how would it – how would it make you right?" Or "How has it made you right?"

"Oh, I've used it quite a bit. It – it does. It – it makes me right. That's why I use it. It makes me right."

That was the cognition. That's the end of that process. All right, "How would it make others wrong?"

"Oh, well, now that's another thing. It really, it's kind of hard to re – realize, maybe, but it makes others wrong and it – so on and so on and so on and so on and so on... " and fifteen minutes later, why, "... and so on. It also makes me wrong. He-he-he-heh. I didn't really realize that, but it also makes me wrong, somewhat."

That's your cognition. All right, you say, "How would it help you dominate others?"

"It wouldn't."

"Well, how would it help you escape domination?"

"Wouldn't."

"All right, well, how would it help you survive?"

"Oh, well, that's something else."

Twelve minutes later you have now found out, cognition, see, of some kind or another. Like, "It helps *everybody* survive. That's why I picked it up, you see, it helps everybody survive."

You're back there chipping it apart, you see. "Well, how would it hinder the survival of others?"

"Well, it wouldn't."

"Well, when have you used it as a solution?"

"Well, I've been damn fool enough to use it for a solution for a long time. But I answered that question a while ago, didn't you hear me?"

You've had it. What'd you stick your foot in that for? [laughter]

"All right, let's check this over now. Let's check this over now, let's check it on the meter. 'Survival?' 'Domination?' 'Right-wrong?' And 'Solution?' 'Wrong' still reads. How would it make wrong"

"Oh, well, yeah, I – I've been kind of withholding that, there's some other ways this works, that makes a lot of other people wrong, don't you see. If they had it, it would really make them wrong, if they had an idea like that."

"All right, that's fine. That's fine. Very good. All right, how is this thing going now?"

Well, you've put in a little whatsit line there and he tells you all about it, and so forth, and you uncork your Prepcheck. And you just give him an eighteen-button Prepcheck on the subject, and your tone arm action somewhere along that line starts to die down. Gives you a little bit more yip-yap about it and that is it. That is the end of it. Do you see how that's run?

Unfortunately – unfortunately, the auditor is always in the liability of hitting the GPM. And as long as this technique is around, you're going to have auditors grab "to go to school" and run with the ball and have a pc not going Clear on the service fac and get all chopped into something that's only resolvable with 3M2. Why? Well, actually they didn't pick up this pc's service fac, they got the pc's goal. This is counterbalanced by the fact that if you got the pc's goal you're rich, because it's very, very hard to sort the pc's *own* goal out of the implanted GPMS – it's because they both rocket read.

Going to – somebody's going to ask me the question, I'm sure, "Does the pc's own goal and own RIs rocket read?" And the answer is "Yes." In fact that is probably what makes implant goals rocket read. They're probably rocket reading off the top of the pc's own RIs. Secondary RR and that's the only thing that makes them rocket read. Pc's own goals rocket read.

Now every RI, including the one that the service fac may be in, may rocket read. And the GPM goal that the pc is sitting in is going to rocket read. That goal is going to rocket read. But your GPM does not need to rocket – pardon me – your GPM, to run it, has to rocket read, RIs to be acceptable have to rocket read, and not turn on mass when they do. But – just slide some 3M2 sideways in there. But the service fac doesn't have to rocket read. You're under no compulsion to accept a rocket reading service fac. As a matter of fact there's some liability in doing so.

It isn't necessarily true that you should reject all rocket reading service facs, but be perfectly calm about accepting a service fac that just goes on a little eighth-inch tick. Perfectly calm. You're not going to do anything to this character, anyhow. You're just going to have him straighten out his survival, and you're gonna loosen up the needle, and free up the needle and you're going to get some TA motion.

Now you actually have to be pretty knuckleheaded to do R3SC wrong, even though it has the liability of being part of the pc's GPM and so forth. You really have to work at it to do it wrong, and the best way to work at it is to be completely unthorough.

Go over little things and little things and little things and little things, and pick up this idea and throw it away, and not put it through the grinder, you know, and get that idea off of him and pitch it overboard and not put it through the grinder, you see. And then knock this one out and I mean push it into view, and pc says, well he's cognited on it's a service fac, so you say well, we don't have to run that then.

Because the end product will be a very confused pc. His – you've half – see, every time you restimulate a stable datum, which is what a service fac is – a very aberrated stable datum – they're a sufficiently aberrated stable datum to wonder – make you queasy about ever getting another idea so long as you live! I know I was thinking the other day, damn me, if I ever solved anything again I ought to kick myself. I mean, you see how much trouble you can get into with solutions. That fortunately is not the case, don't you see. You can go on and live life.

But, the point – the point is that every one of those things that are perimeter solutions on the center of a service facsimile, which is simply the pc's current RI... If you want to get very technical about what it is, it's his current solution, see, monitored by the goal, see? That's all it is. He's generating it, that's for sure! It's *his* solution. And it's aberrated as you can come, because it's an uninspected solution. He... actually, was a perfectly decent solution when he first got ahold of it, but now it's living his life for him, don't you see? And therefore it doesn't take care of the environmental restimulation. Doesn't even vaguely take care of his life for him. Doesn't write any letters for him, it doesn't issue him any paychecks, it doesn't box any policemen, it doesn't do anything. It just sits there and keeps him from doing anything. Well, when you move that thing, all the policemen he's not boxed, all the letters he's not written, all the inspections he's not done – start hitting him in their aggregate. So all you've got to do is disturb it and move it slightly out of the way, and some of this confusion starts generating. And the pc starts feeling confused. And you'll – running R3SC you'll have some of the most confused pcs in sessions you have ever seen. You've got to adjust to this as an auditor. You've got to adjust to this as an auditor.

Don't go arguing back at the pc because he says, "But you haven't started the session yet!" And you've said "End of session," so that the two teams on both sides of you are going to ask that you calm down, and so forth, and the pc just knows you never started session, that's all. Just knows you never did. And pc is going to walk out, and then suddenly come back and ask you to end the session, you know? And leave his books, you see, leave his books on the chair – leave his books on the chair and then get a taxicab to go home for them. You

watch this, see. Well, that is simply ordinary. That would be ordinary in running R3SC. Quite an ordinary state of mind.

Now, if that's an ordinary state of mind, what is the state of mind of the bloke who has had five service facsimiles picked up, partially run and thrown away, by the auditor. Now he's got five zones and areas of confusion which are knocking his block off. Well, man, if he can tell the time of day, he would be very, very lucky! It's not terribly dangerous, but it's useless to put a pc into this particular frame of mind. It's silly.

Now, you'll find out inevitably that this happens accidentally. Just in sorting them out, you miss one, you miss two, you see. Something like that. You couldn't get one to run yesterday. Something is sitting in the middle of what you are trying to do and you can't get the pc to talk about it, something like that. So you go on with your assessment. And you think you've now got one for that session. No, you've got the second one for that session, don't you see? Pc is so confused and stony he actually can't tell you about the one he got. See, the first one you got. Now you're already en route to the second one, without recognizing that you have found the first one, you understand? So it's a very good thing to review the auditing you've done every now and then and clean up what you've left behind.

There's no crime in having three service facsimiles up in the air like Indian clubs, as long as you're on the stage to eventually catch them, you see? There's no crime in having three in the air. The only crime is not being there to catch them as they come down, you see. Finish them all up in other words.

You're going to be fooled on a lot of service facs because they're so far downscale that they don't run according to the steps of R3SC, you have to jumble the steps, don't you see? Well, actually you don't really change the steps, but it just doesn't hit at this level, or hit at that level and so the pc says it isn't and it isn't – and then you tell the pc, "All right, well, then it can't be a service fac," you see, because it didn't enter at the level of right-wrong. Well, this is a serious blunder, in actual fact. It'll very often enter at the level of solutions; it'll very often enter at the level of "domination," quite often enter at the level of "survival," you see, when it won't enter at any other but the level it enters in on. That's the one. That's the entrance point.

Now that's – a real service fac behaves in a most outrageous fashion, in that regard. And something that isn't a service facsimile but simply gives you fine tone arm motion is more likely to behave perfectly. You still follow the steps of R3SC, see. You still do all those things. But, just because the pc can't do one of the steps is no reason to abandon it as a service fac and simply prepcheck it or something like that. No, try to enter these other points. Try to enter these other points, and you all of a sudden will trigger the automaticity, on occasion, that you've been looking for. You'll all of a sudden realize that you're running some perimeter thing. The main thing is to get tone arm action. That's the main thing for you to get. That's the big thing for you to get, tone arm action.

Administratively, remember to keep your weather eye peeled for the pc's goal, because this is the best goal finding method that we've had to date. The best goal finding method. You're actually unburdening the bank to the pc's goal. And all you do is run service facs – if you're actually hitting – you run service facs, until the pc's in pretty good shape, see, and has

handed you his goal. Elementary. Means some pcs will be on a long run, see, before they do. But if that's the case then they should be. They should have been on a long run.

Now, you're cutting down the environmental restimulation of the pc, constantly and continuously as you're addressing the service facsimile. Chronic present time problems, hidden standards, the other things, the very things which attract present time problems to the pc are of course contained in the RI of his own GPM which he is now in the process, laboriously, of forming, by being a blind nut. Naturally. He's got an RI, "a lover." That's the RI he's forming in this lifetime. See? On the goal "to be famous," not the goal "to be sexual." See, and there he is forming up this RI, "a lover," see. And its central postulate doesn't have too much to do with this, it's "to be good." That's its central postulate.

You find "to be good," you don't connect it with "a lover" see, and you certainly don't connect it with "to be famous," you see. You'd naturally say it's a sexual goal, you see. And "to be good" is a disciplinary goal of some kind or another, and all kinds of ramifications. And we don't dare run "to be good;" it doesn't rocket read, but it sounds like a goal, don't you see.

In other words, you can have a picnic walking through this forest of spears. You can have a picnic. But of course, that's nothing, because naturally the pc's whole bank is booby-trapped with these GPMs that have been implanted, so they read like goals, too. That's the one you worry about. Don't worry about doing these R3SC things, just go right ahead and do them, get lots of tone arm action and so forth. You'll get action, tone arm action, on the pc's own goal line – much, much, much, much better, infinitely better tone arm action, than you ever got on any implant GPM. And actually this whole thing has been resolved on the basis of looking for tone arm action. We finally come back to: Tone arm action is best found on the pc's own GPM channel.

You can use almost anything. You can use almost anything in the way of RIs, to do this R3SC stunt; you can do this stunt on any GPM RI found. The best way of handling it, however, is to oppose it with 3M2 if it's a backtrack thing, run it as a GPM. But you're not looking for that right now, you're trying to get down the environmental restimulation of the pc – calm him down, cool him off, and so on, so as to cut down the session environment restimulation and square him away. And you best do this with R3SC. R3SC will eventually lead in to a differentiation by the pc and by you as the auditor, of which is and what is the pc's own goal. When you've got that you can run 3M on it and actually the pc will fly like a bird. You won't have seen tone arm action the way you see tone arm action on a real GPM.

The only thing that puts it in the shade is R3M2 – is complicated, it is delicate to run, it is hell on the pc, you can miss items like crazy and the fact that you're running those GPMs over the top of falsely implanted GPM probably makes it a picnic, the like of which we never heard of.

So let's just quietly worry right now about R3SC and meet the other dragon when we turn the corner of the road.

Okay?

Thank you.

Service Facsimiles

A lecture given on 12 September 1963

Blue: needs to be checked.

Red: Omitted in the NEP tape.

Thank you.

Sorry to keep you waiting, I had to turn down the static!

I see my casualties here, are doing to badly. (laughs)

This is the what?

Audience: The 12th of September.

12 September AD 13, Saint Hill Special Briefing Course. And you're into the horrors of hidden standards, GPMs, chronic PT problems, service facsimiles, non-observation by the pc, a postulate being where the pc ought to be.

How's it feel to audit a postulate? I mean, you always thought you had a pc in the chair and you haven't. You got a postulate: a postulate which is designed to make others wrong and themselves right. I think that's quite interesting when you get right down to think of it.

We've had all these things in the past. This is Scientology Three I'm talking to you about, and as it flips over into Scientology Four. We've had all these things in the past, and the difficulties that a pc has in getting forward with his case are actually just those difficulties which I just enumerated. I'll go over them again for you seriously.

Pc has a hidden standard. Almost any pc that isn't making excellent progress, getting good TA action, and so forth, has a hidden standard.

What do we mean by a hidden standard? Well, he doesn't even know what he is measuring his progress by. But it's that which he measures his progress by. You say, "Did you make any gains in this session?" and he consults this standard of some kind or another. And then he says yes or no in accordance with whether or not this standard had shifted.

Now, this is your lower level of case that does this – not necessarily lower level, because you can get a case into restimulation so that I suppose he does have temporarily a hidden standard. Pc's got a headache. Had a headache for a week, been processed for some little time – a considerable length of time – and a headache has turned on. Well now, he's liable to measure his processing as to whether or not it turns off his headache. You see that all the time.

Well now, expand that. Of course you can take by gradients all kinds of aspects of things, and you can see that these tiny little things can graduate into very serious, overwhelming proportions. That is to say, any insanity or any complete spin condition is simply an exaggeration, *ne plus ultra*, to the exclusion of all other exaggerations, of something that is quite normal in most anybody.

You see, you eat. You see, you consider that normal. It isn't very normal, but you consider it normal. And that somebody is eating is not used by you as an auditor to measure whether or not the individual is Clear or not. You just don't pay very much attention to it. This is something you don't think about very much.

But as a case gets a little bit worse off, why, you have to start paying attention to it because this may become a very great exaggeration. And it can become an exaggeration: a not-eat or an eat-too-much or something like this, you see?

Now, several other facets of life drop out at this particular time, and if you took this same phobia at a lower-level case, you could get somebody who did nothing but eat – didn't do anything else, see? And you say this person is crazy. See?

Supposing they just ate everything in sight, see? Pencils, razor blades, rose bushes. See, you'd say they're crazy. And supposing they refused to eat anything of any kind whatsoever – similar condition, see? If you want to understand what is an aberration, it is simply an exaggeration of the positive or negative of the usual. You can take anything a thetan can do and exaggerate it, *in extremis*, and it becomes an aberration. That's anything, don't you see?

You could say even exteriorization can become "extremis," see? Somebody always flies out of his head; he is always out of his head; he cannot get near his body in any fashion or another; he worries about it all the time; he can't contact his environment via the body or contact the environment. Well, you'd say he's batty on the subject of exteriorization, don't you see?

Well, what is this then? It's simply an exaggeration of a condition which a thetan ought to be able to do well. Well, everybody is a bit batty on this particular subject at this particular time because practically nobody exteriorizes easily, or they're always exterior. See? There isn't any halfway measure on this particular line of exteriorization. That's because they are assisted to exteriorize by various means, don't you see? I mean, the implantation and other means to exteriorize them.

But this is an aberrated condition. But you see people around and they're not exteriorizing easily and you don't think this is odd. Then we look at that.

So that's an accepted neurosis, see? That neurosis is the common denominator of the society or the "normal." See, that's "normal." Well, just because everybody is doing it... Man has an interesting way of measuring up what's right conduct. He has it measuring up of what's "normal."

One day you get into a society where everybody in the society is terrified of spiders. You get into this civilization – everybody in this civilization is terrified of spiders. They're picking spiders off of themselves all the time, you see, and they sleep in their beds surrounded by spider traps, and they, you see, just go on and on. Well, there's practically no girl in the

room who isn't a little bit nervy on the subject of spiders, don't you see? You find a spider crawling across your nose, you boys would be upset, too, you see? But this society does nothing whatsoever but fight spiders, see – nothing known in its activity but that one thing.

But this isn't crazy because everybody does it, you see? So, according to those blokes in that society, they look at each other, and there's one guy there who isn't afraid of spiders, see? See? One guy there, so they say he's batty. He doesn't use spider bait around his plate while he eats, you see? Guy's crazy, you see? Obviously!

So this shows you, this shows you of course, that a departure from the norm – I use an old cliché – a departure from the "normal" is no indication of aberration. It is actually of no real concern of the auditor, because you're bound, sooner or later, to find somebody who doesn't put spider bait around his plate while he eats, you see?

This, by the way, what I'm saying here, occasionally causes auditors trouble. And they'll have trouble with some case – case runs too easily.

Supposing you found somebody that just clipped off engrams in chains: *bzzzzzp*, bong! – that's the end of that chain of engrams. Well, you have trouble with him, you see, because it's not a normal auditing response.

I remember old Ray Thacker, she used to be worried about auditing me after lectures and so forth. She'll tell you about it today, I think, and so on. Changed too fast. It's upsetting.

Finally got this thing taped. It isn't that I'm so good, but I thought it was rather amusing, you see? I run Havingness, and *zing-bang*, cognitions – *brrrrr* – and that's the end of the long chain of this and that sort of thing.

Well, that's a different auditing response from the normal, so you're not completely proof of making a mistake as an auditor, so long as you accept this normal or this average, you see, as the index as to whether or not a person is getting better or how he should behave in processing, you see?

Well, this gets booby-trapped, too, because you start processing somebody and he says he's out of his head and he's on the moon and he's here and he's there and he's taken care of the whole bank, and that sort of thing. And you're processing this bloke and you may find out it's not true, you see? And this upsets you.

So a few weeks later you're processing somebody who is close to an OT and is doing it and it is true, see? Well, it's just whether or not the guy can do the process – that's your thing – or whether or not he gains and whether or not he can get tone arm motion. Now there's a good index, see?

Pc get tone arm motion, you know? Pc stay in session. Pc go on willing to talk to you as the auditor. See, these are your indexes. And those indexes are constant. They have nothing to do with the speed with which a process works or the slowness with which it works; doesn't leave you, then, hung with this thing called "departure from the normal." You don't have to then have a normal for the human race (God help us all) as an index as to whether or not somebody is making progress in processing.

I dare say, if you went through an insane asylum, almost any insane asylum in the world, you would find in there somebody who was supernormal and who was not crazy. I dare say there's probably one per asylum, see?

But if insanity or neurosis, see, is measured by just this one thing: whether the person is "normal," why, then you run into all sorts of trouble in trying to adjudicate it. So what you'd stick with is your auditing tools, see? You find out whether or not this person gets good TA, see, on what you're running on him, and whether or not this person can do the process and can stay in session with the auditor, and if the expected gains and that sort of thing are made on the thing. And that's your index, you see? His behavior, his actual behavior in life is not of any great worry to you.

Now, I give you that as a word of warning, because as you move up the line with modern processes you very often go through periods of change – and particularly with a service facsimile and so forth – you go through periods of change which may be very swift. And a case does some sort of a flick of some kind or another and goes from A to Z without bothering to stop at any other of the letters in the alphabet. Or does it momentarily and hits a high and then does a slide back from the high, or something like this.

And if you were worrying all the time whether or not the pc had normal behavior, you've just added something into the whole problem of auditing which you just haven't anything to do with. That's all, see? And take it from me, it's of no value – no value at all. We don't care whether they're normal or abnormal or supernormal or something like that.

You can define various states. And it's easier to draw up a scale of abilities in life and try to measure somebody up against that, if you must study behavior, don't you see? Let's get a scale of abilities, only let's take a whole row of abilities, you see, and let's find out how the person measures up on each one of these ability lines, and so on. You might have some idea of his condition as a thetan, see? But that again would have nothing to do with normal, see? Nothing whatsoever.

You try to measure up thetan to thetan, why, that's rough.

Now, you get some case that doesn't behave well under usual conditions of auditing – and you are having trouble under usual conditions of auditing, don't you see? – well, you've got another problem staring you in the face here. And we don't care – that problem is not solved by saying the person is normal or abnormal. It is solved by the condition of restimulation of the case. That's how that is solved.

And I've given you a whole chart here which, by the way, has a great deal of value, and you could put any pc on this, or monitor any auditing against this particular chart, and start cutting down restimulation on the pc. And you can cut down environmental restimulation, you see, and cut this and that down. And you can cut down session restimulation in numerous ways, you see? Just don't give him anything new to audit, and that sort of thing – and numerous ways of doing this (anyway, those various zones I gave you there the other day), and you'll pick up the necessary TA action at some stage or another, see?

Now, that's completely independent, you see, of what process you are running on the pc. That, too, that doesn't come into it either. You could probably make almost any pc get

tone arm action on almost any process, providing you reduce the restimulation in various fronts and sectors till the pc's attention could be centered on it and the restimulation was at minimum. And you could probably get, on almost any pc, tone arm action on almost any process. But on some you'd have to be a lot more careful than others because the restimulation is very great. You see these as the factors with which you, an auditor, handle a case.

Now, let's take a look, then, at the fact that there are some case peculiarities.

And these case peculiarities all come under the heading of the material you've – that I've just reviewed this minute, see? Nothing in these things violate that. Now, that a person has a hidden standard does not make him subnormal or supernormal or normal or anything else. It merely means he has a chronic restimulation. That merely means he has a chronic restimulation of some kind that is throwing on to the case an additional amount of charge.

Now, that was given in your chart I gave you here about what's in restimulation, see? And that comes under the heading of that. And this thing is in restimulation; it's chronically in restimulation. Now, in service facsimiles and other reasons and so forth, we get the reasons why it's in restimulation. But we're not examining why it is in restimulation at this particular time. We're examining wholly, totally and only that it is in restimulation. You got that? Just reduce it to that simplicity. There's current stuff in restimulation. All right, if there's current stuff in restimulation, it includes, in some cases, this thing called a hidden standard.

And you say to the pc, "Did you have any gains in this session? Did you have any gains in this session?"

And the pc looks sort of hollow-eyed for a moment, and he looks back into his skull with his eyeballs or something of the sort, and he says to you – he says after a minute or two, he says, "No."

Now, what – what brought him to say no? What brought him to say no? Well, the thing that really brings him to say no is no tone arm action. So you can predict whether or not he's going to say no.

But this hidden standard is terribly interesting as a little mechanism all by itself. And it's a mechanism that you should look at as fascinating in its own gimmickry. It's in chronic restimulation. It's some engram, some facsimile, you know; it's in chronic restimulation. And if it was changed in the session, then he's had a gain. And if it wasn't changed in the session, then he didn't have a gain. You understand?

Now, that's what makes the pc say whether he's had a gain or not a gain. And, of course, there's the mechanical fact that if you get tone arm action, you must have been discharging some of that restimulation. So, of course, it will have changed this thing and he will say he did have a gain. See, it's as elementary as this. But, nevertheless, his gain is measured by this thing called a hidden standard.

So there he is, there he is with something which tells him whether or not he has had a change. He, actually, most of the time is not aware of this. Now, if that – if that was the only thing that happened in the session with regard to a hidden standard you would be in clover, because you could cope with that, because you just have tone arm action, see?

But that isn't all that happens. Unfortunately, that isn't all that happens. There is something else going on during the session that you should be very interested in. And that is the fact that he's taking this thing, whatever it is, into every facsimile, into every process, and is trying to fit the process to this thing. He is always trying to find, hectically, scramblingly, and so forth, what it is in the incident that you are trying to run on him, in the process you are trying to run on him, in the picture he's just been presented with, which resolves this thing. You got that?

In other words, he takes this little red wagon everywhere he goes. And he doesn't look at the picture. He says, "Did it wash up that little red wagon?" See?

Now, you're going to run – you're going to run some kind of an implant or something on this fellow, you see? And the stuff is spitting and spapping and burping at him and so forth, and he hasn't got really any attention on any of this stuff at all. He's trying to find out whether or not it's doing anything to the paint on this little red wagon, see? Which in effect is what? It gives a pc such an introversion in a session that he doesn't as-is anything and you don't get tone arm action.

And time and the tone arm fit together. Now listen to this one because this is very important: He drags this thing into every other incident or thing to fit it up, and therefore is misdating something for the duration of the session and all sessions. He's always misdating something.

That's worth knowing, isn't it?

The fellow with a hidden standard, then, is always misdating, because he's dragging the hidden standard – he's dragging the hidden standard into everything you're trying to audit. And of course that isn't the date of it. That's a fascinating little set of phenomena. He's dragging this red wagon, which may have the date of eight trillion trillion years ago, you see, and he's dragging it into yesterday and he's dragging it into the breakfast table this morning, and so forth. And he's dragging it here and he's dragging it there. If you tried to run birth on him, he would see whether or not it did anything to the little red wagon, you see? Wouldn't do anything to him. So, in essence, he's put eight trillion trillion years ago into birth, he's put it into breakfast, he's put it here and he's given it a new date every time. It's the most effective stopper of TA action there can be – the hidden standard. Misdate, misdate, misdate.

Now, there is a way of getting rid of it. A process which is called – was called 3T. Actually should be called, now, 4T, but could just as easily remain as 3T. And until we do a complete revision you can write it as "3T" – Routine 3T – which simply asks the pc (now, this is very germane to your service facsimile, because this is very cute, very cute), you ask your pc for his chronic psychosomatic. What does he mainly complain about in auditing.

Now understand, you have asked him bluntly and directly, "Hey, bud, what's your hidden standard?" But all he knows about it is that he experiences it and that it is always present. So, you ask him what he is experiencing and what is always present.

And he says, "This lumbosis, this – this lumbosis, this lumbosis."

And you slicker him. You slicker him. And that's just called R3T because the total action of it is you date it. You date it and let him get the itsa line in on it. And you'll find to a very marked degree, in most cases, that's the end of the hidden standard.

What you have to know, in order to understand this completely, is the hidden standard always expresses itself physiologically. The hidden standard is never hidden physically. It's hidden from the pc, and it'd be hidden from the auditor if he never inquired into it. It's that thing by which the individual measures his gains in processing. But that's actually just about as hidden as an elephant in the middle of a ballroom. It'll be what he complains about in processing.

And sometimes it's going to take you an hour or two of itsaing just to find out what it is. And that too is very good auditing. What's this thing he's been trying to solve in processing. What's the physiological condition which most worries him in processing and which he has been trying to solve? And he will eventually lay it out on the silver platter. And he will say, "It is my stomach pains."

Now he's got that all settled. Now, that, by the way, has already alleviated it to a marked degree, and has given you some interesting tone arm action, maybe where you didn't have any before.

R3T is one of these things you can use *in extremis*. You just put the itsa line in like mad on the guy's chronic somatic, you see? "What are you trying to solve in processing?", see? He gives it to you and he gives it to you and he gives it to you and he gives it to you. Now, the only difficulty with this: if he starts giving you problems, you've sort of had it because that problems isn't an itsa. You understand? So your question probably ought to lean in the direction of "What physical condition are you trying to solve?"

He'll eventually isolate these gut pains. Gradually, gradually, gradually, you know? Itsa line, itsa line, itsa line. It's good auditing, see? It's marvelous auditing. He'll gradually itsa this thing out into view if he doesn't tell you at once. Sometimes he spoils the whole process. He says, "Oh, it's my lumbosis!", see? I mean, you've had it, see? Then you'd have to go into it on the basis, "Well, when has this troubled you in processing?" Then you'd probably get some TA action out of it – sort of an anticlimax. But you could probably get some TA action out of the thing, even so.

And that may be the only way you can handle it, you know, is "When has this troubled you this lifetime?" or something, you see? But you can take that, with R3T, and you say, "Gut pains. Gut pains. Order of magnitude. Years ago? Tens of years ago? Hundreds of years ago?"

Keep going, man, keep going. Don't stop just because you've hit a trillion. Some people get allergic to this thing called a trillion. I don't know why. They got lots of them! [laughs] You have big problems in how to express trillions, and big problems in how to this... I've even had some suggestions that we invent a new unit of time, some kind or another. I'm all in favor of that, but I'm afraid it would have had to have been done some time ago for it to work on the thetan. Thank God we aren't measuring it in numbers of heartbeats!

Anyway, you just get that order of magnitude, see? And this is, by the way, good auditing to do this. You date very alertly, and sometimes you say, "I've got a read here; appar-

ently it's in the order of magnitude of trillions of trillions of trillions of years ago." And the gut pains go *bbzzp-brrp-booom*. And that's all you hear about it and that's the end of that process. That's the lengthiest process in Scientology in terms of numbers of years covered but not in hours of auditing.

One warning here: you try to nail this thing too closely, and you get yourself in trouble. And you find a pc is sitting in the engram, and you're going to have to shift to R3R right there. He's so stuck. And if he was in a GPM you'd have to shift to 3N. And if he was in his own GPM you'd probably – oh, well, 3M2. So therefore, you can make too much of a good thing out of R3T. See, that can be, too. So the dating – now get this – the dating is done with an eye on the pc as well as the meter. And that's what makes it a process which commonly will fail because it is simply overrun.

You find out this thing is thousands of years ago, and he goes *dllukglunk-tum!* And you see *hhhp!* It's almost as good as the meter, see? He'll go... [short comm lag]. And you say, "All right, I had a nice read on that. That was thousands of years ago. All right. Now, how do you feel?"

"Oh," he says, "I feel better."

And at that point you haul in the itsa line and go flank-speed ahead into your next process. You hear this? Why? He gonna push himself into things.

I remember, old-time Dianeticist, been around for Lord knows how long – he's down in Los Angeles now – and he was in at 42 Aberdeen Road, and I was showing him what Straightwire was. I was showing him, unfortunately, the difference between Straightwire and engram running. Unfortunately, see?

So I took his chronic somatic and his worry about this lifetime, and I straightwired it out of existence like that. I just spotted the time and somebody else had it and it blew, and that was that, see? He was the happiest man you ever laid your eye on, you know? He was just pleased, you know? He just was shining and pleased. And then I said, "All right, now we'll pick that up as an engram," proceeded to do so and keyed it right straight back in.

But it was actually a terrible cruelty to do that to the man, and I actually wouldn't have done it had I realized that he was setting so much store by it. So let that serve us as a lesson. It's a mistake I haven't made again.

What's the essence of this, then? When the pc drops this one off, bail out. Too much of a good thing here. You can even make up some homely platitude, you know? Something about "A little auditing goes a long way if a long auditing goes a little way," or something like that, don't you see? I know, it confused me, too! But there's something about medicine, you see, "If a little bit of medicine did a lot of good, why, a lot of medicine will do lots of good," and you can actually get caught in between this on this little process.

So the process is not greatly advertised. Terribly effective – it's been with us forever – because it's dating the somatic, you see, and getting rid of it. But in this particular case you're not dating the pc's somatic. You're asking him what he's trying to resolve in processing. You get the difference? And that's the only reason it has any importance at all, is because once you've dropped that off the pc, he then won't consult it to find out if he's made his gains, and

he won't be dragging the thing into every facsimile or anything else you try to run on him. So he's going to make some progress and he's going to make more TA action because he's not always misdating something. You got it?

But a little of it goes a long, long way. Slippy, quick, fast. I dare say – I dare say when you first use it, about 80 percent of the time you will overrun it, when you first start using it, and then you will get very, very expert and about 50 percent of the time you will overrun it. See? And you'll eventually, if you keep using it, time to time, why, you'll suddenly find out that you're getting pretty slippy; you're getting pretty slippy. You see, if it disappeared on the itsa line, you'd bail out. It *isn't* likely to, but if it did, you would.

You'll find out that some horrendous body masses come off of the pc by reason of this operation.

The only thing – the only thing it's used for is this thing called a hidden standard. You got that?

Now, a hidden standard is not always present in every pc to a point where it ruins the auditing. But it is present in any pc who has a difficult or delicate tone arm. So on your delicate-tone-arm cases you have another little weapon. And if you don't have a delicate-tone-arm case – this character is just running fine with the tone arm action and that sort of thing. It isn't always stop, you know, and isn't always this and isn't all that. And you find yourself going around worrying about somebody's tone arm, that is your immediate and direct answer.

If session after session you've worried about somebody's tone arm action and you're doing everything reasonable in order to get the tone arm running and you have not made it, and so forth, then you just remember this little point on the time track, or this little point on the tape, when the old man said, "Delicate tone arm: probability – hidden standard. Remedy: R3T." And remember, he also said, "A little of it goes a long way!" [laughs] You can get enthusiastic with this R3T; you could probably try to run a whole case with it.

All right – let's see how you can run a whole case with it. All right, now, "What are you trying to resolve in processing? What pains, agonies, illnesses or sicknesses or physical sensations are you trying to resolve in processing?" and so forth. Pc gives it to you. Order of magnitude: date it, date it to the second – you even have to do that sometimes – but you date this thing to the second. Find the pc stuck in the engram – find out it is an engram – shift to R3R, get that out. And then find the engram is stuck in the middle of the GPM, so you shift to 3N, you see? And you get that handled, you see? But then you find that this, in actual fact, is part of one of the pc's own GPM's RI, so, of course, you have to shift to 3M – R3M2. All right, now you've shifted to R3M2, and you find out actually it's reaching up into PT, so you run a service fac on it. Now, having run a service fac on it, you accumulated quite a few ARC breaks during this auditing, so you.... [laughter]

A little of this goes a long way! And you'll finally get expert at hitting the silk.

But you actually could take everything the pc was worried about, see, and do this whole thing. You could do R3T, even well done, on everything the pc was worried about in present time. Now we're being sensible, see? This isn't ridiculous, this is true, see? You say,

"What are you worried about?" You know, "What are you being processed to resolve?" and so forth.

And he says, "Well, my gut pains."

"All right, that's fine." R3T gut pains. Order of magnitude. What's – where's the gut pain? Well, to hell with that. That's the end of that, see? All right. "What else are you trying to resolve in processing."

"Well, my headaches."

"All right." R3T headaches. *Pssheww!* That's the end of his headache. "What else are you trying to worry about in processing?" and so forth. "What are you trying to resolve?" and so forth.

And says, "Husbands."

"All right, let's date husbands." And – fact, see? All right, *pssheww!* Order of magnitude on husbands, you see? "Your worry is back there at trillions-thirty-five. That's it." Okay. No itsa line. *Ahw-v-v-vh!* See? Trillions-thirty-five. That'd be good.

"All right, anything else you're trying to resolve with processing." and so forth.

"Well, I'm trying to resolve having a body – having a body. I'm trying to resolve having a body. Get in my way – get in my way all the time. You have to wash 'em, you know, have to wash 'em. And they dent, and they drip blood all over the place when you stick holes in them, and so forth. They worry me, they worry me."

"All right, body. Order of magnitude, - body." *Bzz-bzz-bzzz-bmp, zump, zump, zump, bop.* "Well, well, 208 thousand years ago. Very good, all right. That's it."

Pc says, "Yeah, there's an interesting – interesting thing there."

"Well, good! Good! Thank you." That's when you want to get that TR 2 in there, see? "Good! All right! Well, what do you know! Well, I'm certainly glad you found that! Very fine. All right, I'm glad you found that! Okay. Now, what else are you worried about, in actual fact, in processing?"

You see, you let his line go on the backtrack, and he's going to have you wrapped around into every process you ever heard of, man. You're going to lose control of that session.

When you finally finished up, you'd have a Clear. That is a method of clearing. Got it?

Needle would go free, TA would come down, and so forth. Impossible as it seems, it is a method of clearing. That'd be every hidden standard he ever heard of. Anything he could dream up here. But don't let him pull any back from the backtrack. Ha-ha-ha! That return journey – no payload. Return empty, see? Nothing, no baggage. Otherwise he'll start scraping that track up and bring it up to PT, and the next thing you know, why, you're doing "Oh, my God," see?

Now, the service facsimile – the service facsimile – has to be severely located on the time track. And we say "this lifetime," but actually what you're doing is circumscribing the duration. This is your absolute limit of your service facsimile activity – R3SC – is the pair of

RIs he's currently sitting in on his own GPM line. Now, that can be a pretty broad sphere. But if you limit it very severely to this lifetime, you could even work to key that out, don't you see?

But if for some reason or other this becomes so complicated and you can't get down to it, and somehow or another it doesn't come, and they just can't make it out, and you – and you get to wondering why you ever came to the session in the first place, you see, why, you've still got another string to your bow – You've got R3T – R3T clearing. You can still make a Clear; he can't stop you from doing it. You see that?

Now, this is with the pc that you can't seem to find a service facsimile on that runs over any period of time. You know, difficult, difficult. Now, I say you're going to get some difficult pcs – it's impossible to say otherwise – because the hidden standard in this particular case is the service facsimile. But it just happens to be, for some reason best known to somebody else, completely undentable.

Well, there's one thing that will dent it, and that's to pick it up, wrap it in a small black bow, wind your arm up around your head and pitch it with high velocity down the time track to a place where it belongs. And that has a degree of workability.

Now, of course, this is all under the heading of destimulation. So, because it's under the heading of destimulation, you have to be very careful not to run anything. See, that's why it becomes absolutely ridiculous to start running things. Because you start running things on the whole track on a case that you're already trying to destimulate – why are you trying to destimulate the case? You're trying to destimulate the case so that it doesn't have PT problems and so forth to kick your auditing session to pieces. So therefore, if you start a destimulation action – if you start an action of destimulation – what have you done if you suddenly start running something on the backtrack? Hm? And if the pc's service facsimile has in it "to make you wrong as an auditor," that's the first thing the pc's going to do: He gonna try to restimulate more than he already got.

Now, how do you keep the itsa line in on a pc who wants to restimulate more? That's your problem! How do you keep from ARC breaking this pc? How do you keep him from actually actively cutting the itsa line?

Well, the best way to do it, actually – and I will help you with this problem – is be awful damn careful of your whatsits. Use that whatsit line with great skill. Knock out of your auditing all social actions. That's the first thing you do. Avoid all violent attention shifts. Avoid all attention shifts that you possibly can which are directed by a whatsit. In other words, don't direct the pc's attention in such a way as to ARC break the pc so he starts to get even with you by restimulating more, or some weird combination like this occurs. Just avoid all that. See what I mean?

Be awful careful of those whatsit. Don't say "How have you been today?" You understand? That's a whatsit.

Gives him an opportunity to say, "Well, actually, I was sitting in – up in the lounge at the Bide-a-Wee Club, and so it occurred to me, you know, saw this figure in Roman armor."

See? You've had it. Got the idea? It isn't a matter of withholding something, unless you're obsessively social. It's just don't use them.

Now, the type of Model Session that is employed on a case that is very prone to re-stimulation – isn't getting much tone arm action anyhow – is your W Unit Model Session. That's your zero social. Oh, let him discuss anything he wants to after a session – discuss anything he wants to after a session – but he's aware of the fact you're no longer auditing him and he actually won't plow it in. You get the idea? Now, don't keep putting the brace on him and shutting him off and stepping all over his toes and that sort of thing. But in session: "How did that go?" *Hmmmm* – you're walking along the edge of the precipice, don't you see?

Any delicate-TA case, any case that you're having trouble with, any case that you're having difficulties trying to stabilize them into a process, any case – you know, overrestimulation leads to self-invalidation. You should know that. Case is invalidating his own case and he's chewing himself up all the time, and he doesn't know, and he this and that. Well, actually, the more you re-stimulate, the more he's going to self-invalidate and the more he's going to invalidate Scientology and other dynamics. You understand? This is a symptom of overrestimulation.

You can actually classify aberration into these two classes. There's the symptoms and reactions occasioned by overrestimulation, and then there's the particular significances caused by the service facsimile and other things, you see? The significances – the dramatizations the person goes through – that's one channel, and re-stimulation is another channel. Of course, re-stimulation gives you the degree of dramatization, too. If you raise the re-stimulation on a case, you can raise its dramatization.

If you handle these problems in the guise and line of re-stimulation and monitor nicely with destimulation, and handle a case very nicely like that, you can get the case up to a point of discharging a great deal of stuff and you can get a case to discharge lots of charge.

But if you go at it so knuckleheadedly that everything you say to the case leaves the case wide open to the re-stimulation of more actions, you see, on the track, everything you do with the case, and so forth, leads to more re-stimulation, and then if your queasiness in handling the case also gets in your road and prevents you from really running a process – or the pc's nerviness or overrestimulation – then the case is just going to get less and less and less and less and less controllable; less and less and less controllable. Do you see why? Re-stimulation is catching up with you.

So, therefore, the destimulation of a case is an art, and it is a peculiarly positive sector in the field of auditing. And most of you are on this sort of thing right now – service facsimile, see? Now, the service facsimile, discharged, decreases the re-stimulation that the case is subject to, even though it's just discharged right here in this lifetime – present time, a lot of action and so forth. Case is subject to less re-stimulation because he pulls in less present time problems in his environment, don't you see?

Now, the present time problem, the aspect of the present time problem, is another category of upset to you. Case with a tremendous present time problem does not make good processing gains. If a person's graph remained the same throughout a week of auditing, you can assume this case had present time problems. The way to handle present time problems is

to handle that factor in the case which causes the case to have present time problems. What causes the case to have present time problems? There must be something in restimulation to the case which pulls in present time problems.

I'll give you another method of listing for a service facsimile which actually nails present time problems with magnitude. You realize that there are so many solutions in the zone or area where we are operating at this particular moment – there are so many solutions to the thing – that it'd be very hard to give you a total coverage of all of these materials. And you're going to discover quite a few solutions in running somebody with an itsa line and handling service facsimiles and that sort of thing, see? You're going to discover a lot of these things.

There are certain standard ones, and this could be classified as a standard one: "What's a safe assumption about your environment? What would be a safe method of handling your problems here and now in life?" Now, a question and a list of that particular kind is going to drop into your lap, with a thud, the stable datum that the individual is holding at bay various sectors of his existence. So it comes, in that wise, a method of destimulating the environment. All you had to do is just list the list with some such question as I just gave you, and you'll wind up at the other end with what he uses to handle his family, what he uses to handle his job (that may be another one, see).

All right, now let's expand that process and let's take the pc's whole environment to pieces. Let's take this big sector we call the pc's environment. Let's take that whole sector and let's compartment it. Let's find out – in present time, let's find out where his life is in conflict or contact with what. Let's find out the whole lot, don't you see?

Now, this is terrific itsa line stuff. You're not saying "this lifetime," now, you're saying now, man. There's no opportunity to go restimulating something else, you see? It's now! And his idea of now will probably go back to yesterday afternoon, or it might go back for a year or so. Somebody living in a farm community or something like that and things are pretty calm, he may consider his present time, you see, much broader. You ask a London city dweller what his now consists of, and he will tell you about his sandwich at lunch, you see? That's about as far as his time goes. It's very hectic.

But let's just take this guy's environment, just in a social sort of an auditing way, because you've got such a terrific limiter on it, you see, that you can be very relaxed with your auditing. See, you can ask him almost anything as long as you don't throw his attention on the backtrack. All of your questions have to do with right now, your present time.

"The life you are living at this particular moment: what have you been in contact with?"

The person will say, "What period?"

"Well, you know, now. Now."

"Well, now I'm in contact with the session." This guy's too sane to ask such a question of.

So you say to him, "Well, in the last thirty days, you know, what are you in contact with?" That might not include his parents – they haven't had a letter for thirty days, something like that – but it's part of his environment.

Let's just get that environment all torn up, see? Let's get him to tell us, you know, where each sector of this is. This is terrific Scientology One. The guy's got the is-ness of his environment. How many people have ever sat down and seen exactly what their life contacts consisted of here and now? You talk about orientation, man! This is orientation. Well, that's going to throw you with TA action, and that's going to loosen your needle – just that.

Little innocent questions from you, "Well, where are they?" see?

"Oh, and I know the Smiths. I know the Smiths. The Smiths. I know the Smiths pretty well. She's pretty nice looking, and he makes awfully good rum nog and punches," or something, you see? And, "Yeah, I know the Smiths."

Well, he's just liable to go on saying, "Well, I know the Smiths," you know, "I know the Smiths." Your tone arm action will die down after a while.

Wake up. Well, what can you say? Well, it's like the questions you use in 2H, see? "Well, where are they? Where are they?" see? Now, there's – there you're running the locational process on him. You know, "Well, where are they?"

"Oh, they – they're – they're up at Eastbourne," see, "they're up at Eastbourne, and they live at – they – they moved. They moved. Let's see, they used to live at 13 Galloway Street, and they now live at 42 Yard Road – yeah, at 42 Yard Road. I don't know quite where that is. I was up in Eastbourne the other day – ." and so forth and so on. "Let's see, Yard Road..." and so on. "I think you come up from the dock. No, no, it's that one under the hill. That's – that's – that's the one. Yeah, that's where they live. Yeah, I've seen the place before. I haven't seen their new house, but I know where that place is. Yeah, I got that, see?"

See that tone arm action go there, man. You watch that fly. You see, "Where are the Smiths?" It's apparently got nothing to do with the price of fish, see? But now you've got the Smiths, not only categorized, but located, see?

And he works for the Bide-a-Wee Biscuit Company, see? All right, that's fine. Of course, you can reduce all this to a rote procedure that takes all the life out of it very easily. Bide-a-Wee Biscuit Company – he's telling you very interestedly about the Bide-a-Wee Biscuit Company. They get – they're located there, and he goes down there to work every morning, and so forth. And there's a porter there by the name of George, and George has always got his hand out for an apple or sandwich or something of the sort, and he's always got some wisecracks and so forth, and there's a lot of people around there. And they're pretty good people down at the Bide-a-Wee Biscuit Company.

Well, let him get away with this "down to the Bide-a-Wee Biscuit Company," you see, just so long. And well, you want to know "Where is this Bide-a-Wee Biscuit Company?" you see? He's run the tone arm action out of what it is, you see? Well, let's get some tone arm action, let's bleed it down with where it is, don't you see? And man, he gets the Bide-a-Wee Biscuit Company parked, and he's all of a sudden liable to have a terrific cognition. He all of the time, because he goes in the underground, it's lost sight of the fact that it is actually twelve

miles from where he lives, see? So, his Bide-a-Wee Biscuit Company... And then he realizes they got a lot of branch offices around here and there. And he's been to several of these branch offices. And you can just see this Bide-a-Wee Biscuit Company: He'll start to expand – take place, and you see the tone arm start moving on the thing. You get a lot of nice tone arm action out of it and so forth. And he finally – finally he gets down to the personalities on the thing. And you'll notice, it will be the things which he's having a gradient scale difficulty of confronting. And you'll build up this gradient, see? And you'll see his confront starts going up on his environment to the degree that you blow charge off of it, see? And his confront starts up on his environment.

And you can notice this in his kind of answers if you're very clever about it. You'll notice that he just goes down to the Bide-a-Wee Biscuit Company, don't you see, and he sees George. You know, George – that's the Bide-a-Wee Biscuit Company, you know? That's about all he's got of the Bide-a-Wee Biscuit Company, even though he goes there every day, is George. And the only important fact about George is the fact that George has always got his hand out for an apple. See? Something of that particular sort, see?

Now, however, he expands the fact that he actually works in a certain section of it and he has certain associates there who are something-or-others, you see, and they work in a little bunch of offices. And then he all of a sudden tells you all about George's family and where George lives, see? He'll revert to that and do a wider confront, see? And then he'll go up and then he tells all this and, of course, he finally can tell you who's managing director, and you'd consider his confront is adequate then at that moment.

But you'll see how pinned down his attention line is in the environment. It doesn't take a terribly clever auditor to do this, but it takes one that doesn't mind a pc being gabby. And you're just putting the itsa line in: What's his present time consist of and where is it and who's in it and where are they? Next thing you know, you got the guy permeating all over the place, see?

This is a lot of auditing. This is a lot of auditing. It's a terrific HGC approach, see? After that's happened to somebody in an HGC they'll know very well that the HGC has got their good interests at heart. Well, they have, you see? But they know that because a good Scientology One has been run here on the person's lifetime.

Well, when he's all through with this and he's got all of his environment laid out and his wife's relations and how likely it is at any moment they're liable to come to visit him and when he's got everything all taped every place under the sun, and you finally now decided that you've got his present time. Because you've used this, you see, "present time," a lot of times with him in the discussion – and you don't let him catch sight of that, otherwise he's going to tell you his war stories. False itsa line. False line. You don't want anything to do with that, see?

So what your lineup here consists of is his present time – got that all categorized – and then you throw in that process I just gave you.

Now that you've got all sections of it – and you could actually lay out a plot of it and draw a map – you now know where are his zones and sectors of problems and you know which one he's most fascinated with, because he gets gloomiest whenever he talks about it.

You don't need an E-Meter to tell you that. Although if you kept talking about it very long, it's problem, problem, problem, so your tone arm action would die down, you see? "Oh, well, there's my parents. [sighs]"

About that time even the most imperceptive auditor would notice that there were problems in that vicinity; he wouldn't even have to look at his E-Meter, see? But if he also looked at his E-Meter, don't you see, he would see all of a sudden that it started to rise and it wasn't doing any blowing down. Got that?

Well, that's a weird way to do an assessment. But that's a very accurate assessment. There's more problems there than he can confront. See, a rising tone arm is a no confront – always, you see? He can't confront this many problems, so he can't put any itsa into the vicinity.

Now, why can't he put an itsa into the vicinity? Well, you say you can explain that very well. "Sons feel odd sometimes about their parents," you see, and so on. You can explain and explain and explain, you see, and you can figure it all out and you can figure it all out and you could worry yourself to death. But let me point something out to you: The longer you spend worrying it out, you see, at breakfast, and that sort of thing – the longer you spend doing that – if you catch yourself doing too much of this, realize that you are not, at the time you are eating breakfast, putting an itsa line in on the pc. And even though you come to a total conclusion with regard to the thing, you won't have moved his tone arm one bit. And I point that out to you, see? You won't get any tone arm action on him at all.

Now, in your idea, you should be getting tone arm action on him; that's a reasonable assumption, see? So, use this as your assessment line. Now, isn't that an interesting assessment? It's not an assessment by tick and click and reading lists, you see? That's an assessment of zone. And it's an assessment by "Oh, yes... yes..." An assessment by rising tone arm. And you've located a zone where he has a service fac in operation. Right like that, see? Now we know. Now we know.

Now, why do you get a rising tone arm? He obviously isn't confronting it. Now, it's no good for you to assume that there are lots of reasons why he can't confront it and it blows up in his face every time he tries to confront it, you understand? That's nonsense for you to assume that, for the excellent reason it's not true. You're going to find out he can't confront the Bide-a-Wee Biscuit Company because "biscuits are no good." Stable datum. He never confronts the Bide-a-Wee Biscuit Company; he confronts, and is, a biscuits-are-no-good, see? So as long as he's got that problem totally solved in present time, he never has to look at the Bide-a-Wee Biscuit Company. So now he will continue to have present time problems with the Bide-a-Wee Biscuit Company.

I'll give you the most elementary type of present time problem with the Bide-a-Wee Biscuit Company: If he can't confront the Bide-a-Wee Biscuit Company at all, he's going to make mistakes on the job, and it's going to make present time problems for him. Doesn't have to be anything esoteric about it, you understand, because present time problems are in direct ratio to the no confront. The frequency of present time problems are the measure of no confront. And here's the recent datum stated at a terrific simplicity at the service-facsimile level. Here's this recent datum, service facsimile: No confront is caused by a substitute confront.

Now, that gives you a brand-new look at life. You always assume, you see, that the reason the thetan isn't confronting is because he can't confront. See, we don't care whether he can't confront, but that statement doesn't lead to a solution of the problem. That's all we need to know. See, so don't worry about whether he can't confront it or not. Yeah, colloquially we speak all the time, as Scientologists we're always saying, "Well, well, you know Joe, he's always in trouble, he just can't confront that," see? That's fine, that's perfectly true, in its limited sense. But in actual fact, that doesn't lead to a resolution of that guy's case, because it isn't factual. It isn't quite factual. The reason he's not confronting is caused by the substitute confront which we call a service facsimile.

It's something like he has set up a little radio tower in the middle of the Bide-a-Wee Biscuit Company on which has got "I hate biscuits" see? And that thing, that thing confronts the whole Bide-a-Wee Biscuit Company for him. And so help me Pete, as long as he's got that thing, the Bide-a-Wee Biscuit Company is going to cave that guy in and is going to knock down the case between sessions to a point where you're always having to handle the restimulation of this case in his environment. And if you're only auditing this case two and a half hours a week and the case is spending forty-some hours a week at the Bide-a-Wee Biscuit Company, in that two and a half hours you're not going to even come close to removing the gathered restimulation of the past week.

You add up the number of hours which you've spent with the case on the subject of the Bide-a-Wee Biscuit Company, you'll find out that they will vastly exceed, in efforts to handle his PT problems with the Bide-a-Wee Biscuit Companies, the effort you would make to simply compartment his environment with great care and find the stable datum that he uses for the Bide-a-Wee Biscuit Company. Find that and run it as a service facsimile with R3SC. See, that'd be the smart thing to do.

Well, the opening gun on a case, obviously is, if you've got the tools to do it, is to clean up his present time problem so he isn't going to be accumulating, continuously, this, see?

Now, the present time problem which generated in his environment is a different thing than this other thing I was talking to you about called a hidden standard, see? That's a different thing. Now, it stems simply from a bigger zone, however, of restimulation. But it's being pulled into restimulation arduously and forcefully by the pc, continuously, for some reason best known to somebody else. And the reason it's in continuous restimulation is just all these things are bits and pieces of the RI the pc is in. And it's interesting that you can put that RI to bed and take the thing apart in this lifetime. That's what's fascinating: that you can do it at all.

But this thing of Bide-a-Wee Biscuit Company, he does this all the time. It's one of the best things a thetan does. He gets tired of walking down the halls, so he puts a postulate in the hall, "I hate biscuits," and that's the end of the Bide-a-Wee Biscuit Company on his confront. But the damn fool continues to stay on at the Bide-a-Wee Biscuit Company.

You can put right conduct down, is "Don't remain places that you don't want to keep confronting." See, you can put that down as a little lesson in life, see, completely aside from processing, don't stay in places you don't want to keep on confronting, see? Because your don't-go-on-confronting will then lead you to stick up a stable datum of some kind or another

to do your confronting for you in that vicinity and the next thing you know, this is going to be a gorgeous piece of mass, and it's going to be giving you more present time problems than you can ordinarily count. And your life is going to become very restimulative indeed. That's a little social lesson I give you there, out of Scientology Five. Anyhow – how to get along in this universe, if possible.

Now do you see, in essence, the compartmentation of the environment and the selection of these little odd bits and pieces, you see, that he's using as stable data in his environment? And the knocking these things out, you see, with your R3SC processes and so on, you will find a very easy activity. That was what R3SC was originally designed against and for. It, however, goes a little bit deeper in that it can take apart a service facsimile. When R3SC is running very, very hard and very arduously, and your pc is being knocked all over the place by all of this sort of thing, recognize what you have collided with. You have collided with the RI which is the current RI in the forming GPM of this particular lifetime. It's very difficult not to collide with it. Well, it also surrenders to the techniques of R3SC, but makes a very much more arduous run of it, you see?

So you would say there's two versions of R3SC, see? But in view of the fact that they are both handled in the same way, we classify R3SC in terms of what assessment was done in order to find it. And we number the assessments. Regardless of what stable datum you find, you are going to handle it by the steps of R3SC. You could enter the thing at almost any of these levels. You can also enter it at a fourth level, solutions. "When have you used it for a solution," see?

But you've got this pattern by which you address a stable datum – R3SC, see? Now, how you arrived at that stable datum would be the assessment you did for R3SC, and there are several of these numbered assessments.

Now, I've just given you a very simple one. A good Scientology One done by a Class II-type auditor – but it's Scientology One, orientation and is-ness, you see? He just does this with the itsa line in and everything running along gorgeously and he gets his environment all oriented on the pc and he gets this thing all taped and he locates the most prevalent source of PTPs on his pc by an assessment of mostly "Ohhh," an assessment also with a rising TA, but that is less observable than the pc's attitude about it.

He's been talking about, you see, "Well, actually, I uh, I'm – I'm in contact most of the time with airline companies. I go down to airline companies and deliver things and that sort of thing and talk to a lot of people. Have to talk to a lot of passengers and so forth. And talk to hostesses – a lot of hostesses to talk to down there, too, you see? Once in a while I get to talk to pilots. And uh, I get out to the airport quite often and go over there. There's a girl at the magazine stand I like to talk to; she's – she's lots of fun, and so forth. And any of the toys get worn out, why, she gives them to me for my kids, and so forth. We have a pretty good time out at the airport, and I do that, and so forth."

Well, the real knucklehead of an auditor comes in after that dissertation and says, "Now, what stable datum do you have for the airport?" He isn't going to have any.

He'll finally say, "The dispatcher's tower." See, he'll give you something in the airport. You know, "The girl at the magazine stand." You see? "She's a good stable datum for the air-

port. She always tells me what's going on." In other words, you won't get one, see? So you have to be perceptive just to that degree, and....

Now, you're going along, and you say, "All right, now all right, we got all that taped and so forth. Well, how about the socialist club that you belong to – you mentioned a moment ago. What about that?"

"Oh... [sighs]"

Well, the auditor after a while should wake up and realize that what isn't being called on here is another whatsit. What's being called for here is a safe assumption for the socialist club. He must have landed right in the middle of it, because he obviously has a nonobservation. The easiest way to look at it is, if the pc hasn't got anything to say about it, he isn't observing it.

Obviously, then, it's being observed for him. Well, who's observing it for him? What's observing it for him? Well, that being, person, idea, thing, television set – that's a service fac for that zone or area. What do you do with it once you've assessed it out and so forth? Why, you've got it lying there and you – *voilà!* Just run your R3SC steps on it. That's all. "How would it make people right, and you wrong?" And the person said it wouldn't. "Well, how would it dominate somebody?" "Oh, well! *Ho-ho-ho-ho-ho-ho-ho-ha-wha-ha*. That's a different thing, huh? That's the most dominative stable datum that you possibly could have. That – that's – that – that – that – that's the most dominative that you could have. Yeah. That – that – that – that is. That is. Yep."

You keep sitting there waiting for him to answer the question. Well, hell, he's answered it and he's blown the level, too. See? Here you've got to come back in there and say, "All right, now, what's the – how does it get you to escape domination? Help you to escape domination in any way?"

"Ho-ho, ha-ha. Perfect solution!"

That's the end of that level, see?

"All right, how is survival with regard to this thing."

He's realizing things all the way along the line. It doesn't matter, you see, whether you flatten any of these processes or not at the first run through. When you finally check them over, just don't leave one of them hanging out unanswered, do you understand?

It doesn't matter how you chop these things up, see? Don't be neat, because it's not neat, see? At the end of the thing, get neat. See, make sure you've got them all now and it's all straightened out, and that sort of thing, see? Now be neat.

But he's – "What – what do you mean? What do you mean, 'domination'? Dominate – how would it dominate somebody, dominate somebody, dominating somebody? How would it dominate? I don't know how it would dominate anybody. I don't have any idea at all how it'd dominate anybody, you know? It doesn't dominate anybody. Haven't got any idea."

Well, of course the auditor's a real knucklehead if he says "Well, yes. Well, the question was – I'll repeat the auditing question for you. How would it dominate somebody?"

"But that's what I'm trying to tell you. Dominate somebody? It doesn't dominate somebody, and so on." See?

You say, "All right, okay." Take his answer – it wouldn't dominate anybody. "All right, all right! That's all right. How would it assist your survival?"

"Oh-ho! Well, that's a different thing. Come to think about it, it – it just is. It just is survival. It is – is survival. It's – it's – it's – it's – it just is. It's just life to me, you know? I never really looked at that before, but it is just – it's – it's life. That – that's what it is. It – it is. It's just life."

And the auditor who says at that time "All right, thank you. Now, how would it assist your survival?" is being a complete knucklehead. The guy has answered the question. He's not answered the question, he's answered the whole universe of questions with regard to it. He's given you the perfect answer, which it is. That is the most perfect answer there is about anything! Thing you got to do is keep your tone arm moving. And you do that sort of thing and you do it real slippily and only ask the pc what he can answer and only take it, and so forth; don't start getting hard or tough on the pc till you finish it up, see?

"Now, let's go over these things. *Tsk! Tsk! Tsk! Tsk! Tsk!* Ah, that one ticked. That one ticked. That one ticked, right there. All right, now, how would it make people wrong?"

"Well, I meant to tell you, but in actual fact I – I used to use this quite a bit, quite a bit on all of my girls. I've been reluctant to mention it. But there it is." And he clears this thing up and of course you're away.

In other words, you've got a variety of processes here that are all running more or less at once, and the reason why you have a variety of processes all running at once is you're running a variety of confusion, so it won't be very orderly. It won't get orderly till toward the end. Most of the confusion is discharged. You see, that service facsimile held in abeyance all the confusion that was there residual. It's that confusion running off which gives you the tone arm action. Your tone arm action doesn't come from stable data flying off. It comes from enunciating and as-ising stable datums which then permit confusions to fly off which have been held in abeyance by those stable data. So if your confusion flies off, you're going to get charge releasing, because charge is in essence a confusion. That's all there is to that, see?

It's elementary. You're going to untangle a ball of string, you're going to have string. If you don't untangle a ball of string, you're not going to have string. I mean, that's all there is to that. You untangle a ball of confusion, you're going to have tone arm motion. And if you're not going to untangle a ball of confusion, you're not going to have tone arm motion, that's it.

There's two reasons why you don't get tone arm motion, then: You're not untying the confusion or there isn't any confusion there. That's the only two reasons.

So you enter into this problem at these various levels, and you'll find out there's a beautiful assessment that gives you service facsimiles like mad. Now, how you run the service facsimile after you've gotten it, I've just covered. But it's always the same: You always handle a service facsimile in this particular line. You'll get very slippy at it after a while. It's slippy auditing. But the number of ways that you can arrive at what is the pc's service facsimile are practically uncountable.

Now, the very best method I know of, at this particular time, is the method I have just given you – not the method of picking up the RI from a pc's goal, see? That's liable to re-stimulate the whole GPM, particularly in very inexpert hands that couldn't rescue it, and list it out anyhow, if it did happen, see? But this other one is a doll. This other one is a doll. I can see you now, supervising auditing someplace or another, and you hand out this assessment sheet, you see, that the auditor is supposed to fill in, see? And you hand him this assessment sheet, you see, "Who are your parents and why not?" and all kinds of things, and they all go down the line. And the thing has got about three pages and you've got this assessment sheet.

And you say, "Now, you're running R3SC. Make sure to keep the itsa line in very, very well while you're doing this assessment sheet." And you give him this four-page sheet, see? Takes care of his job and his profession and where it's located and all that sort of thing.

The auditor bounces up forty-five minutes later and hands you the sheet all complete. We obviously have somebody there who "had to get something done," as an auditor, see? He just blew the intensive, that's all! And I'm sure this is going to happen to you. Every one of you that's supervising any auditing at all, this is going to happen to you. You just blew the intensive, see, for the pc. Now what do you do? Now what do you do? Where do you go from here? I mean, that's it. You obviously have to run some other process.

No, you can go off on to parts of existence and that sort of thing, but in actual fact, the assessment sheet was never filled in, don't you see? You just said, "Who's your father? Who's your mother? Mother's name? Mother's name? And brothers or sisters – got any brothers or sisters? Thirty-three brothers, four sisters and eight cousins. All right, that's fine. How old were you last birthday? Forty-seven. All right, thank you very much," so forth. And "Where do you live – what's your address? What's your address? All right, 933 North Elm. All right. Cincinnati. Very good. And what company are you with? Oh, the Bide-a-Wee Biscuit Company. Very good. All right, thank you very much. What's their address? Where are they located? What's the address? Oh, 29 Front Street. Thank you very much. Now, so..."

What's missing here? Well, the only thing that's missing is the total assessment. He isn't... he just missed the whole purpose of what he's supposed to do. You want to know all about this pc's present time and everything he's in contact with, you see?

Well, in a matter of fact, you could come back to the question I just asked you before, if you were scotched to that degree. You could come back to the question I gave you about assumptions about your present time environment, and that sort of thing. You could get a stable datum and you could get the pc to run without the assessment, don't you see? Look at all that gorgeous tone arm action that you missed out on, see? You might have missed out there two sessions, three sessions of gorgeous tone arm action. Marvelous, you see? The thing would be flying all over the place. The guy destimulated all over the place; the guy practically Clear and flying, see? It'd just be in the difference of emphasis of the assessment.

So the understanding of the assessment and understanding that an assessment in R3SC is to produce tone arm action, not data. We don't care anything about the data it produces. But the tone arm action! Now that assessment's supposed to produce some tone arm action, and you'll see that it's – an R3SC becomes a peculiar brand of assessment. And the individual in Scientology Three who has been carefully, carefully, carefully educated in doing an R3SC

assessment, keeping the itsa line in, keeping the tone arm running like mad, moves into Scientology Four and does an assessment for a GPM goals list with the itsa line in wide open. *Uhhh!* Well, that's one case we wrote off, see?

R3M, see, is done *pocketa-pocketa-pocketa-pocketa-pocketa*, see? No itsa line. Data, data, data, data, data. All of a sudden the pc cognites on something, you see? Oh, that's fine. He tells you something about it and so forth, see? All right, good. Data, data, data, data, data, see? Item, item, item. List, list, list. There *th-th-thuh*, "There's your item, bang! 'A schnook.' Got it. That's your item."

"Oh, yeah." Now let your itsa line go in a little bit. "In this lifetime I really had... Oh, yeah, a schnook could really – would really – really mow a schnack down, man! That – that – that – that – that's it, that's it, that's it, that's it. That's it."

"Fine, all right. Good! All right! Here's the next list. Who or what would a schnook oppose? *Tsk-tsk!* Rapidly, rapidly. Come on, come on, come on, come on! Come on! Give me the data. Come on and so on and so on. Schnook-oppose. All right. Good, good, good, got it, got it, yeah. Your next – come on, come on, come on, what would it oppose? Well, all right, you can cognite. Give you thirty seconds to cognite." Something like that. [laughter]

Give you the idea? That's 3M2. See, you could go dragging your heels doing one of those assessments and you'd wind up five intensives later with two RIs found, see? Pc in total restimulation, everything gone to pieces. You wonder what's wrong. You get the difference?

This lifetime, present time, itsa line in, assessment: "Well, I don't know, I don't know. I think we're going to have to get rid of Bill as an auditor, because he had one of these present time assessments and it only lasted him two intensives! He found out all about the guy by the middle of the second intensive. *Tsk*. Nothing else to do on the pc. Finished. Wrecked the case. Wrecked the case. Pc not Clear yet and he's got the intensive filled. Now what are we going to do?"

See, there's a different end goal in progress here, isn't there? Entirely different atmosphere involved in these assessments.

So you must keep in mind that there are two different moods of assessing. And if you don't keep that severely in mind, you're going to make an awful flub, because it's another auditing style. R3SC: leisurely, quiet, calm, drag it out endlessly, itsa line in. Because it's all guided, you see, by present time and a lifetime and that sort of thing, see? R3M2: *pocketa-pocketa-pocketa-pocketa!* "Gimme-gimme-gimme-gimme! What is it? What is it? Let's make it! Speed, man! All right! Oh, you only found four RIs in this session. Going to have to speed it up in the next session," you know?

Assessment: Do a goal-oppose list. "We did – we did – we did a goal-oppose list, and so forth. All right, it's taken us two and a half hours to find this next goal."

"What's the matter with you? It took you two and a half hours to find the pc's next goal? What's the matter with you? What's the matter with you?"

Guy had been doing Scientology Three all the time. "Well, I thought I had until the next intensive."

"Oh, man, you're doing another type of process here entirely, and so on. Let's get that goal-oppose list listed and nulled and that sort of thing, two hours. That's all you got. That's it, that's it. No more than that. So you understand?"

Why? Because backtrack, you got to keep the itsa line shut. Got it? Otherwise you resimulate the pc; your tone arm action disappears.

All right? I've kept you a little bit overtime. Start your sessions fifteen minutes late tonight. [laughter, applause]

Okay? Thank you.

Thank you.

WHAT YOU ARE AUDITING

A lecture given on 17 September 1963

Thank you.

Well, I know I shouldn't be talking to you this week, as a matter of fact you're getting extra lectures. Well, that's so that at any moment I can do a bunk, you see.

But there's so much data going by and we're in the middle of a summation – some of you are departing and I wanted you to get a good rundown on this. Because we're dealing with a pretty summated picture now, and unless you have a good aspect of how this is assembled, why, you might have some trouble with cases.

All right, this is what date?

Audience: Seventeenth.

What date?

Audience: Seventeenth of September.

Seventeenth of September – how did we get up here? Seventeenth of September, AD 13, Saint Hill Special Briefing Course.

[part missing]

Now, your – the picture of a pc is what we're interested in. We're interested in the total concept of what you are processing. And this is very important, because it can now be summated with great accuracy.

The idea of old-time psychotherapy has been... Ah well, forget it, you know? Ha-ha! You know?

They used to use camels to carry freight, you know, and ox carts and things of that character – well, those were practical, because they would still be of some use. But old-time psychotherapy has no use or value to you of any kind whatsoever and you can just forget it.

We make a very clean break. Now we've always gone along on the foundation and formation of some early work of this material. The historical value of it is interesting – curiosa. Curiosa of an electric shock machine, you know? The curiosa of when you were very young you thought a sexual thought, so now you've had it.

That if you talk for four or five years to somebody, he can then tell you at the end of that time what second dynamic shock you had in this lifetime that accounts for your whole difficulty, you see. I mean – man, this is something like shooting BB guns, you see, at the *USS Missouri*. I mean it's just about that level of comparable magnitude, you see. The only

thing we can say for them is they tried, and they made some interesting popularizations. And amongst those was the fact that something might possibly be done about it.

So we cannot discount their hope or interest factor in the matter, or the fact that they made man aware of the fact that a mental condition existed.

But when you take it – when you take it to that point, you have taken it all the way – taken it all the way. Now, in Dianetics we talked about the mental image picture. Very interesting. We have that whole technology surviving today under the heading of R3R. It's of considerable interest. R3R is of great interest. To be able to lay your hands on an actual facsimile or an engram on a pc that has never seen one just merely by getting its proper date and then getting its proper duration and there he is running the thing and that sort of thing – that was an outstanding problem of considerable magnitude, and that problem got wrapped up in R3R. And R3R, however, as far as the actual therapeutic value is concerned is – well, I don't know, shooting a rifle at a battleship.

Because you're dealing with free track and free track is relatively unaberrative. If you can run any engram on somebody, why, it wasn't terribly important. Its value – value, interest; cure psychosomatics with it momentarily or temporarily or even permanently. You can alter physical condition with it and so forth, and you say, well, these things should not be gainsaid. Well, they shouldn't be gainsaid unless you're dealing with the idea of order of importance or order of magnitude. Because this is still just a rifle against the battleship. This is free track. This is the problem of free track.

You could probably run free track for years without producing an OT. And, horribly enough, without producing a Clear. But it's part of the tools of the auditor. And it gives him a view of the bank. It gives him a view of experience. It gives him the whole anatomy of traumatic experience. Has an automobile accident, has a crick in the back of his neck thereafter – you run the engram and he doesn't have that crick in the back of his neck from an automobile accident. She loses her husband, this is a considerable secondary – you find the beginning of the secondary and you run this with R3R technology and just run that one engram, you see, not even finding its basic, and she looks young again and alive.

This is miraculous or magical technology when it works. And it unfortunately hangs one with a great many sporadic wins. And that is the trouble with it. Sporadic wins. You take this guy, you locate this engram, you run it through, he no longer has psoriasis, see? It's gone, see? See – bang! And take the next guy – he scales all over, and you run an engram and – he's still got it. You get the idea?

And your attention is still drawn to that magnificent job that you did back there at such-and-such a time. In other words, it sticks an auditor on the track with wins. And any technology which does not uniformly produce wins and which tends to stick the auditor with some spectacular wins, is a dangerous technology. Because he'll go on using the doggone thing.

You'll see – out in the field, you'll see somebody and by golly, he – he found out that you did some pat-a-cake as a part of the CCHs, you know. And he was doing this pat-a-cake with this little kid and this little kid couldn't talk and couldn't hear and couldn't this and

couldn't that, and he did some pat-a-cake with this kid and all of a sudden – bang! – on went the kid's total perception and the kid was in marvelous condition thereafter and eventually became a Rhodes scholar, you see. This kind of thing, you see. And my God, years afterwards you'll find him sitting there in front of pc after pc after pc running this same pat-a-cake. It hasn't produced another result since.

See, that's the danger of one of these big win techniques. But R3R is a marvelous training process. If you can handle R3R and move the pc around on the track and that sort of thing, and you get a good insight into traumatic experience, mental image pictures, that sort of thing, and it's just very – very, very nice as a training technology. Beautiful piece of training technology.

Also has an assist value. And an auditor should be able to carry off a good assist. He's got – Jones has just fallen off a horse and has a broken clavicle and you tie into it with R3R and all of a sudden, why, the guy's clavicle mends up and so forth, if it's going to. So this is a good assist level action. Good training, good assist, and as far as making Clears and OTs is concerned has a very small value – very, very small value.

An auditor who can run it can call himself an auditor. Get the idea?

All right, now let's take up a much broader zone of action – R3N, the handling of implants. The handling of implanted goals and the handling of implanted materials. And a lot of you have been worried about this because you kept asking yourself the question, "Because these implants have an effect on us, is this going to turn out that we were all implanters?" You see, you keep on working – where's the overt? See, how come? How come these things have any value at all on one? If we're all going to run these implants all the time, what's all this about? What's it about? What's it about? What's the relative value of all these implants?

Well, the exact value of an implant is that an auditor without an understanding of implant goals and implants and implanting can very easily get the pc's own actual track mixed up in them. And if he doesn't have a good grip on these things and know what they are, he'll keep walking around them like a stray dog walks around another stray dog, and he will always be confused on the subject.

This pc's got a goal "to be alone," and you – just an actual GPM, see. And we open up the meter on this guy and we say "to be alone," and boy, that really rocket reads. That – man, that really rocket reads – that's very fine. So we go straight to the implant area and start running a line plot on it – it would do the pc in or it wouldn't quite do him in or you wouldn't get tone arm action or you wouldn't quite know what's happening, don't you see? You're running an implant GPM when you thought you were running the pc's actual GPM.

Now let's say it wasn't the pc's actual GPM but only an implant GPM, and we start to run 3M2 on it – the old technology of yesteryear, see. All complete, all valid. Now we start running this – we start running 3M. We start listing. See, we start listing for *his* items. They don't sound anything like implant items, you see. And we list these things. And when we finish all the way up and down the line, what do we find ourselves sitting there with? Horrors! We have just run something that only exists as an implant GPM by cross-listing, as you would do a 3M2, and so have succeeded in spending a lot of time. And we now have a collection of about thirty-five or forty items or something like this, sitting right in the middle of that en-

gram, and every single one of them is a wrong item, a wrongly worded item, amidst two hundred and thirty bypassed implant items. And if you don't think that isn't going to take the pc's skull off!

So therefore, an able auditor should have a good training background on the subject of implant materials. In the first place, it gives him a beautiful idea of RRs. Gives him lots of practice on meter reading. Gives the pc practice on the form of the GPM and furthermore, the forms of those GPMs are quite accurate even though their item titles are highly corny. You get the idea?

There's – nobody's got a GPM RI that's got "absolutely snuff" in it. See, plooeey! You got no such thing, see. So therefore, if you couldn't – if you don't know a lot about implant GPMs you won't learn anything much about the form of a GPM. And you're asked to sail cold in on 3M2 and do all of the mechanics of a GPM on the pc's actual goal and so forth – nervous about rocket reads, nervous about this, what is the form of the GPM, what is this, what is that, what is the other thing? Do you understand?

Now you start tying a pc up in knots on his own actual GPMs and you've got trouble. You got lots of trouble. And the implanters – I don't care if it practically caved you in back along the track and certainly enough it did, there is no doubt about this at the time they occurred – but I don't care how many implant GPMs you've got; this is beside the point. This is beside the point.

They have practically no aberrative value, compared to the order of magnitude we're discussing. Practically no aberrative value. Yeah, you can get tone arm action out of them. But what's it do? It opens up the track. The little charge that you get off of these areas and so forth opens up the track sometimes so that you can find out a pc's own actual GPMs. And an auditor who is well advised on the subject of implant GPMs never gets the two confused. He's always got sense enough to say, "All right, 'to be alone.' 'To be alone.' Now, is that your actual – your own goal or is that an implanted goal? Oh, that is your own goal, that is fine."

Now, I – but – or "I get a read on both of these: implanted and actual. All right, good."

Now, at this point he can take his choice. Although it's of no great value to run this implanted GPM, if it's that stuck in the pc's craw, he of course has, because of the research that's been done on it, the line plot for that actual GPM and could sit down and he could run it out. Take a session, run the thing out.

Now say, "Is there an – do you have an actual GPM, 'to be alone'?" Clang! Got a bigger read now, see. And sail in with 3M2 and straighten the thing out, *bingety-bang*. Do you understand?

Audience: Mm-hm. Yes.

That is the value of it. It's an auditor's value to keep from wiping the pc off the face of the Earth by running implant GPMs with R3N – the technique for his own GPMs, you see – and running his own GPMs with implant GPMs line plots. Unless an auditor's got this fairly straight, why, he's sunk.

When you first start looking at this – and your first considerations with regard to this are liable to make you practically faint. But you'll get over it very rapidly.

You say, "Oh my God! What have they done?" Well, what they did was this: Some eager beaver dug up the actual form of a thetan's GPM and the bulk of wordings that thetans use in forming up their own GPMs, took a synthetic line plot and implanted them with it. Planted them with their own actual goal, hoping they would hit some of their own actual goals if they implanted them with enough goals.

So, you see, you get thirty, forty, sixty goals, see? In the final aggregate you'll find out that the pc's been implanted with in excess of a hundred different goals, and some of these many times. See? Actually making the total number of GPMs he's implanted with probably creeping up toward a thousand.

Well that's – that's been very confusing. That was very confusing to thetans when it was done. But why? Only because it was a parody and mockery on the thetan's own actual GPM and tended to key it in – and it didn't even successfully scramble it up. Although it was very hard on the thetan when this happened, although it probably helped his demise no end by making him sad about the universe, and undoubtedly influenced his postulation of his next goal or some of his RIs, undoubtedly influenced all this sort of thing – in actual fact the aberrative value of an implanted GPM is back in the "rifle against the *USS Missouri*" class. See, no value.

But with that in mind, the implanter then did us a great favor. Now, I know it loused you up and it was hell, see. But he did us a great favor. He gave us a training ground – gave us a training ground. And you can run with the greatest aplomb any quantity of implant GPMs, and you can train up an auditor left, right and center and he'll now know what GPMs kind of look like and what their anatomy is and how they go together and what's at the bottom of them and all of this sort of thing, and what rocket reads look like and how the pc can suppress things, you know. He can get the whole thing taped without wrapping the pc around very many telegraph poles. And there's any God's quantity of them can be found on a case.

It's hell trying to find the pc's own actual GPMs, but any quantity – you could practically take any man off the street out here and ask him for the goal "to forget" and run it. He'd be very happy to have it run! He'll think this is really great stuff. You can make it rocket read, don't you see, and so forth – so that any group of students running implant GPMs will eventually find out what a GPM is like.

A GPM looks more like the old bulletins on the goal "to scream," however, with more items in them – the original ones released – look – an actual one looks like that really a bit more than it looks like an implant GPM, because the implant GPM is being synthetic and so forth. Of course, an implant GPM has no application to the case. His case has really never been upset about being "absolutably snuck up on," or something, you see. He's never really been worried about this at all.

You'll find his item somewhere along the line – "a sneak." And when you hit this rocket reading own item, see, *psssw*, you know. And he'll say, "Yeah, that – that uh – that's sure so! That is true!" See, you're hitting him right where he lives. And you get this thing opposed, and the meter goes *bbzzzzrrmm* and clank and bong and thud, don't you see? It got lots

of action, lots of cognition – this is where he lives. He doesn't live on that implant track, he lives on the other track.

Now anybody, however, who's had experience in running 3N – the technique of running the implant GPM – is going to make good headway and so forth with actual GPMs. And it's very well worthwhile to get an auditor to run these before you put him on actual GPMs. Why? He can find them – bang! See? He can run them – bong! He can get it wheeling. He gets accustomed to handling the pc under duress in the midst of all this living lightning, don't you see.

Then he can turn around and go through the arduous of finding the pc's own actual GPM. And then he lists that out on 3M2, just as 3M2 was last released; no faintest changes in it. And there's your – there's your case – your case will really start flying now.

Now the tone arm action – this basic breakthrough of course all stemmed from discovering the value of tone arm action and how it is produced – and the tone arm action lies in the actual GPM. It is thousands and thousands and thousands and thousands of times more aberrative than an implant GPM. Unimaginably greater magnitude. And it's got action in it. It's got tone arm action in it.

But there's difficulties in getting to an actual GPM. You've tried to find pcs' goals. That's a sweat, man! That's miserable! List and list and list and guess and hope and list and trying to get something to rocket read and, *waaahh!* and list and mess around and hope and – that's it! No, that now doesn't rocket read, and *oooh-whooooo!* And, first place, an implant GPM will rocket read a few times and fold up; an actual GPM will go on rocket reading for one awful long time. It doesn't wear out, you see.

But if you've ever tried to find a goal on a pc that rocket read, then you know what I am talking about. And it has been in the past an auditor heartbreaker. So you could find implant GPMs easily, therefore it makes a good training ground. But to make the pc well and straighten him up, you've got to find his own, actual GPMs. And they exist – they exist no slightest bit different.

I mean the top oppterm is, of course, the bottom terminal, more or less, don't you see? And the bottom opposition terminal, which the pc started out as *against* – the opposition terminal to the goal as an RI – that bottom opposition terminal is what actually the pc himself eventually becomes in his struggle through this.

Those – those old GPMs, those synthetic patterns and that sort of thing are all quite valid. Nothing at all wrong with those things, and you'll get tone arm action. There's where the tone arm action lives. This is on the actual line. But the big stumbling block was how did you get the goal? How did you get the goal?

Well, this is not a simple action. But we have just speeded this up about a thousand to one. With what? The service facsimile. What is the service facsimile? A service facsimile is the top RI terminal of the pc's actual present time developing GPM. And that's what we call the service facsimile. It's the top RI.

And of course, in view of the fact that that GPM is evolving and he is sitting in an incomplete GPM, usually – truncated, we call them – we don't quite know which side of the

fence he's on for this thing. But we have there a wide-open door to finding the pc's goal while getting tone arm action.

Now, we have to ask this question: Why was the pc's goal so difficult to find? Well, it was difficult to find because present time, bearing down hard upon that goal – GPM – all of its RIs and in particular the RI of that GPM which lived in present time – that present time RI – kept the pc sufficiently overrestimulated that you had a stuck-up, messed-up tone arm – and his rocket read is totally suppressed, if you can't immediately find his goal. Do you understand that?

You've got a matter of environmental, auditing, other things that I showed you the other day, the various zones of restimulation in present time – all of those things are bearing immediately down upon the reliable item and its accompanying opposition terminal. The terminal and opposition terminal of the GPM as it lives in present time, those are the last two items of the goal he is now living with.

And all of those things are in restimulation because of his own postulates that make up those things so he is doing something there, don't you see?

And this present time environment comes down against those two top items with a crash, and everything stays gorgeously in restimulation, your tone arm hangs up beautifully, and the case goes nowhere in a great hurry. And that is the mystery complete – no additional cases or qualifications of it – that is the mystery of the stuck tone arm. And that's come right through, and that is the service facsimile.

When you eventually find the totality of the pc's service facsimile, you will be into the top or next-to-top RI of the current existing GPM. There you are. So therefore, the action of finding the pc's service facsimile leads you directly and immediately into two things: one, into the GPM he is now sitting in, and his RR on his own GPM. His own GPMs – Goal Problem Mass – will now RR, providing you unburden it.

Now, I'll give you an example of this. We're doing a service facsimile. Now, I'm taking you very rapidly across a great number of techniques. Probably you're catching up with these numerals one by one, and little by little – you'll make it!

But here's the situation. Present time is hitting this guy *bangety-bangety-bangety-bangety-bang* and he's so overrestimulated he doesn't know where to spit, and he's keeping himself beautifully aberrated with these stable data "horses sleep in beds" or something like that, on the goal "to ride" – and he's there he is, banging away, present time banging away at him, and he frankly is so restimulated his top is blocked so that there's no release of charge or confusion. It's just hung there. It's just hung there and he's just frozen in concrete, don't you see?

Present time is hitting him, kicking his head in; his present time environment is knocking his block off. Auditing might be right in on the top of it – take the goal "to leave," you see, with this present time RI of "not permit anyone to speak to me." What's that going to do to an auditing session, man? You see? And there it is – and he's getting his head kicked off and he's kicking off everything else's head, don't you see. And there he sits, there – he's right

there at the top of the line. He's so overburdened and his case is so stuck up with all this restimulation that he won't RR.

And that goal is overburdened. And that goal is so thoroughly overburdened – the one he is actually in – that if you find any goal at all, you will probably find one down the track trillions fifty or trillions thirty or something like that, see – some vast distance back. You try to run that one, you of course, are running the pc who is sitting in the present time GPM and you're trying to run him trillions-a-hundred down the track and his bank goes *creeeak! creeeak!* And you can't get tone arm action out of the thing because the present time restimulation is so great. And, of course, all his backtrack charge is smashing him right on forward up toward present time, you see. He's running like mad and you're trying to run this goal back there "to be," you see.

Oh, brother, you know! Nice, high-toned goal. And it's all in restimulation, it's pressing him up against present time and so forth, and his present time GPM, of course, is nothing as great as that, you see. It's – be something like "not to be slimy," or something. See? To n... And there it is, see. All your present time restimulation is hitting this goal "not to be slimy," and its top oppterm and top terminal. And you're trying to work this thing "to be," way back down the track at some unimaginable distance... The length of the time track is our most – is our biggest, fortunately, and not a serious error – but is our biggest error in Scientology. The length of the time track! That's silly, man! You write "trillion" on the board a hundred times and you have the medieval period! [laughs] Write "trillions" on the board thirteen times and you've got modern life! Trillions-thirteen. It's nothing for a GPM to extend over vast periods of time.

But here he sits – up here at the top of the bank. And there he is, being run at some vast, early distance. And of course, it doesn't answer any of his present time problems. It's totally unreal to him. And the reason it's unreal is his attention is pinned in present time and is being ordered to some vast earlier period of the track which is probably a dichotomy of some sort on the goal he's stuck in. And that's why he'll come up with the other goal. So it's totally unreal to him.

You start talking to him about trillions of years ago and why, hell, he's worried about the fight he had at breakfast. He's still trying to explain how come he always fights at breakfast. See, he's trying to explain this, you see. And you get the reasons why he doesn't like fortifications to exist. Well, man, he hasn't been a fortification engineer for the last four or five hundred years! It's the last time he ever had anything to do with it, see. And the last time he *could* do anything about it, or it was a present time problem to him, was maybe trillions-a-hundred.

So here he is, worrying about that fight he had at breakfast and that's sitting on the goal "not to be slimy." And the only thing wrong with breakfast is the eggs were a little bit firm. Because by this time, of course, everything must be slimy because he's gone to the top of the bank, you see. So you've got "everything must be firm," you see, as one of his items. So he's opposed to anything slimy, you see or something wild is going on, you see.

You see how far you are running him from his present time problem? And yet you couldn't really find this top of the bank. Because it's so overburdened and so thoroughly in

restimulation that any RR discernible on it will be almost impossible to reach because it's so overburdened with locks. Locks, locks, locks – practically everything in present time's a lock on these things. So he won't RR.

Now, I'll give you an experience which is interesting. R3SC, finding the service facsimile of the individual, just exactly the way you're going about it now – fumble and punch. If you're running this successfully, you found out the pc would occasionally have a needle fall. And as the case went on, in the next session or something like this – happens fairly rapidly – in the next session, if you'd been very observant you would have seen that needle accelerated. When he had a fall, it accelerated. But it accelerated on everything. Everything you were running you'd get a – everything you're running, see? Everything you're running.

Now, you've started to do some lists. This is the next session – another session, see. You started to do some lists, and three times on that list as you're nulling it, you see very sharp, fast falls. Next couple of sessions you're nulling some kind of a list, and you see little tiny rocket reads on about four items – and lots of steep falls, but little, little tiny rocket reads. So you get more tone arm action running on his present time problems, and that sort of thing, you get some more. And you're sitting there, and all of a sudden you see some gorgeous rocket read. You see something just go *ppsssswww!*

Actually you've merely reached in – you haven't necessarily reached the RI, but you certainly reached a lock on the RI. And the bank is loosened up enough so that the pc can differentiate on rocket reads on his present bank.

Now, you do – you're still working on service facsimiles and a day or so goes by, and you're doing this list and all of a sudden you see "to hide" *ppsssswww!* Hey! You had a goal rocket read. You come back and you call it, "to hide" – *ppsssswww!* There she goes, man, she's really taking off! Give it to him again. Prepcheck it. Do something with it. It always fires! Fires! Fires beautifully.

Then you say, "Is this an implant GPM?" No read. "Was this 'to hide' implanted on you?" No, no read. "Is this something you actually made up yourself? Is this actual..." so forth. *Psssswww!*

You say, "Well, well! We have arrived somewhere!"

But exactly where have we arrived? Exactly where have we arrived? We've arrived within the last four or five GPMs. That's – we can be sure of that. The last four or five actual GPMs. Now, if you took off immediately and said that's a very low-scale goal, "to hide," you have underestimated the state we're all in because of the immediate backtrack. We haven't postulated any high-toned goals to hide for several trillion years. That's a high-toned goal, man!

Now, how do you get lower than "hide"? Well, I think you can go down about twenty tone arm divisions below "hide" I'm beginning to see, on the scale. "To never be caught anyplace and have nothing to do and to be vis... invisible." Any goals of this particular kind. "To be – to never be found out," you see, "to have nothing worth taking," goes down to something like this. "To have nothing" that's a high-toned goal, you see. But, "to commit suicide," "to get

rid of it," "to go insane," "not to be so slimy," see? "To endure" – see, that kind of thing. You'd be surprised how far south this can go.

So you're within the last five. You can be fairly sure of that – you've seen a goal rocket read while searching for the pc's service facsimile. You've tested it out and you've found that the pc actually has that as a GPM.

You, of course, with vast enthusiasm wish to God it were the last GPM and the one right up into PT, because how wonderful life would be if that were the case. Unfortunately you have no guarantee of that whatsoever; it'll even read on the meter that it's the last one, and not be it. That's quite interesting, because you see it's – it's apparently right there, don't you see? You got your paws right on it, and – actually the bank is so jammed, and the GPMs are so jammed up as they approach present time because they're so much more susceptible to res-timulation, don't you see. But, it isn't – it isn't the last one.

Now, that doesn't say it isn't always – it always isn't the last one. Once in a blue moon you might have a little luck and after that become careless and wind a pc or two around the telegraph pole before you got back to battery and sensible again. But the thing to do with this "to hide" is lay it all out, test it just the way I showed you, see? See, use it anyway you can, trying to find that as the GPM, you see, and then oppose it. What goal would oppose "to hide"?

Now, you want your pc to be in pretty good shape at the time you do this. Why? Because he's just now going to be put through a lot of mischief. The last three or four GPMs; you're going to drag this pc through them. What kind of condition do you think the pc has to be in in order to be dragged through three or four GPMs – of his own actual GPMs – bodily? You want him to be in pretty good shape and you want the auditor to be no fumble.

Let's list this, let's list this. And let's find the next GPM. And the pc will be sure and for a moment or two you will be sure that this next firing goal that you get – you'll be absolutely sure, you see, that it's it. What would oppose "to hide," and that's going to be something wild or weird or peculiar, like "to have nothing worth taking," you know. And then you're going to be sure of it, he's going to be sure of it – in actual fact if you tried to run it, you're going to come a cropper, because it's probably not the present time GPM, see? So you be very careful about this, and you try to list it up to PT with "who or what would oppose 'not to have anything worth taking'?" see. Who or what would oppose that?

Now, the probability is, is you're either on it or right next to the present time GPM. So you scout that one down real carefully, whatever you found as a result of that, and the possibility is that you're on it. If you're not on it, do another oppose list and land in the present time area. Prove it out conclusively, ask questions of the meter, Ouija-board the meter, make sure that this is it. And the pc by this time has got a lot of restimulated track behind him and he's probably very uncomfortable. And he's been getting tone arm action like crazy. It doesn't matter, you see, you've hit him – you couldn't help but get tone arm action.

And now, list for the existing highest or the latest terminal of the final goal you found, "not to be so slimy." Just list for that. List for it. And you're going to find it. And you got his service facsimile and you realized, if you look back over your records that you were walking right in the vicinity of it all the time anyway. See, it suddenly adds up.

Lightning bolts go through the pc's skull from both sides, you see – "Yes, yes, yes, yes! Oh, yes, yes!" As a matter of fact if he's so involved in it, he could also have this reaction to it: If this GPM – this last GPM, the one closest to present time – if this last one up has already run its gamut and is about a hundred items deep and he's up close to the top of this thing, "not to be so slimy," is "to oppose sliminess" or something. You see, he's going on the opposite side of it – and he's on the opposite side of it. He's in the camp of the enemy, the terminal is now. And the oppterm is "a slimy thing," or something, you see. This thing has gone backwards because he's lived all the way through it.

When you start landing in the middle of this stuff, you just run your 3M2 straight on from there and you'll find out *bam-blam-wham-wham-bing-bang-bang-bang*. Pc's liable to be very sick, and what I was going to tell you is a word of caution. The pc: "Oh, I don't think this could be my goal," you see. Well, he's in the opposite oppterm, see. "Couldn't possibly be my goal, 'not to be so slimy.' I've always hated slimy things and I – I actually couldn't possibly be – it couldn't be my GPM, don't you see, because – I just... Couldn't be because I always opposed the thing, you see, and..."

It's at that point where an auditor has to be very alert, because the pc is in actual fact – goes into almost a total dramatization of the RI terminal he is sitting in, and it may have at the top of the bank reversed itself, so that he is now the enemy of his own goal.

And with that reservation and that realization you are running your service facsimile like a startled gazelle. And if it turns out not be a service facsimile at all, you just run it in 3M2 and you go *pocketa-pocketa-pocketa* down the bank. And the best way to run it, run one of these actual GPMs – little piece of data I'm giving you in passing, and which you will hear again – best way to run one is to list carefully for its top oppterm, take what you get and run it down toward the bottom as accurately as you can without missing any more RIs than you can help – but just keep finding RIs all the way to the bottom. Keep finding RIs, see. Find oppterm and terminals and oppterm and terminals and oppterm and terminals, and try not to shoot off into some other GPM. That's the only thing that can louse you up.

And get down to the bottom of the thing and you'll get a blowdown.

You'll see those rocket reads going by, man, and that tone arm going down, down, down, down, down, down – *pssew-pssew-pssew-pssew-pssew-pssew-pssew* – that whole goal is look – going to look like it exhausts. And then you turn around and go back up to the top again. Go from the bottom now, list it – terminal, oppterm, terminal, oppterm, terminal, oppterm – right on up to the top again. And you'll get the 50 percent of the items which you missed on the way down. And, of course, that thing will clean up like a bell.

That is, instead of trying to find every item perfectly as you go down, just discharge the thing and on the way back up find the remainder. Don't Q-and-A too much with whether or not it was a terminal or an oppterm and you've made a mistake so you've got to relist, you know – you're all wrong and the pc's wrong and the bank is wrong and – don't get into that kind of a monkey business because you can kill two or three sessions without finding yourself very many RIs, don't you see. What you want to do is just *pocketa-pocketa-pocketa* as best you can, get down to the bottom of the bank and get that thing blown.

In the first place, you can't list it from the bottom up. The second you put your paws on and try to list and find its opposition terminal to the goal as an RI, you see – "to catch catfish" down there at the bottom. Of course, "to catch catfish" in a real GPM is at the heart of every single RI which evolves from it.

So when you start listing that bottom and fooling around too much with the bottom, you throw the whole top of the bank of that GPM into violent restimulation. The thing to do is – you see, these things are laid in as they're lived. Implant GPMs are all backwards – you see, the top oppterm is the earliest thing. But that's not true of an actual GPM.

So you list it all the way from the top down to the bottom, turn around and list it all the way from the bottom up to the top – making careful that you don't go further south than the bottom because now you'll be in a foreign GPM. The only thing to be very careful of while you're handling these things – the only thing to be excessively careful of – is to not go finding RIs for goals, for – RIs for goals you don't have. You know, that's the old one.

That's the only thing that turns off an RR: is you're running item after item after item after item after item out of the bank and you don't have its goal, sooner or later that pc's RR is going to go off. It's going to close down, your TA action will stop and so forth.

You recognize that. You remember this from way back, some of you?

Audience: Yeah, yes.

You mustn't run RIs without having the goal. That's just as important now as it ever was. None of this old data has ever changed, you see. It's still there.

All right, what's interesting about this is that you are right now doing that with R3SC. You're looking for RIs for which you have no GPM. You got no goal for these RIs. And yet that service facsimile is one. So the question is only this: How long can you go on looking for these service facsimiles without running into finding RIs without finding the goal? How long can you go?

Your guess is almost as good as mine. Because you're shredding an RI up and chewing it up, and because it applies to all present time and so forth, probably extends the length of time – you aren't really just finding RI after RI, don't you see, and so forth – but I would say the low side of the estimate, well, I'd say it probably is not safe beyond fifty hours, and there might be a pc or two around where it isn't safe after fifteen hours. This is "be careful."

But that phenomenon doesn't occur until a goal – some goal has begun to present itself, so it's not anything very dangerous, providing you stay on alert for the pc's goals. I told you when I first gave you R3SC, when you see a pc's goal rocket read, write it down in a big box over to the side for further investigation – don't hide it anywhere in his papers. See, go right on running R3SC if that is what you're running, don't you see, but put that over to the side. And put that in plain view so that can be investigated.

Because all of a sudden the tone arm action might cease and the thing – what you want to do if the tone arm action suddenly and inexplicably ceased – you go back and you pick up any RRing goal the pc might find and let's go into one fast scramble to make sure that we

have got ourselves a goal. And then let's oppose that goal, and then let's oppose the result of that and make sure we're in present time. And now we've got the goal for the RR – for the RIs we've found, and all will be well again.

So it doesn't do to go too long on R3SC. You get why? You can key it out. You can do all kinds of wild things with it. It probably – I've just estimated it for you on the very, very, very supercautious safe side, you understand? You'll probably hear of somebody in... some field auditor and so forth, and he's run it on – he's run R3SC on somebody for five hundred hours and it hasn't disappeared yet, see? All right, he – trouble with it is, he keeps getting these RRs all the time, and they get in his way. "Can't read the meter too well because the needle is always going like that," you know – that sort of thing.

But the point I'm making here is that we must be alert to this old rule. Now, we haven't seen any search on R3SC turn off any RRs or turn off any meter action. We've not seen that yet. But we know this other point. We know we are looking for RIs that are at the top of the GPM line, and the action of looking for that RI all by itself could apply the old rule which we know to our bitter experience. All you've got to do is start charging down a GPM, go past it. Go past the bottom of the GPM, go halfway into the next actual GPM and all of a sudden you've got no RR, you've got no tone arm action, you've got nothing, pc is "*Whoaaa, creak!*" you know, "*Ooooh, horrible!*" you know, everything is going to pieces and so forth. And possibly sometimes, as we learned early on on teaching R3M2, one of the last things that the auditors at that particular time thought of was that they might have gone past the bottom of the thing and were already running out the next GPM. That's practically the last one they thought of. It's just the pc never put the goal on the list, don't you see, so it never demarked.

Well, there's – there is the score of what you are processing and there is just about the scope and limit of processing. There isn't very much more limit to it. But let's look at what this is all about. Let's look at what this is all about.

By using this type of analysis, by using a program of this particular type, by recognizing this put-together for what it is, we have probably programmed OT very well within reach. I would say we've shortened it considerably, because we've shortened all the difficulties of actual goal finding and that sort of thing. But something else has happened. Something else has happened.

We have found a method of straightening out PT which can be used actually at any time that you started to run into trouble at any stage of running any actual GPM. You can't seem to be getting anyplace and things seem to be pretty grim, and you mustn't immediately suppose that the old rule of finding RIs without the goal doesn't apply. You scout that one down first, you see. You've run out of... pc's all restimulated, you're not getting tone arm action, everything is going to pieces and so forth.

Well, for some reason or other you now have a condition where the pc's present time is in overwhelm as far as the RIs he's currently sitting in. So you could just go ahead with R3SC, you see. First, you would examine to find out if you'd been finding RIs that you didn't have a goal for. That's the main one, see. And then you could go on, find that goal and so forth, but you could actually destimulate present time at any time by using your techniques as you're – used in R3SC.

You could use any RI, any terminal, any oppterm – you can do all kinds of wild things with these things, you see. And you can disentrubulate his PT and you could practically clear him at any instant during the time of taking him to OT. And I know that sounds weird. See what I mean?

Given that you're not finding tons and tons of RIs without having the pc's goal for it – given that one horrible fact; that one cared for – you've run this fellow now, for seventy-five hours and you've found one and one-half GPMs, and that's the end of his seventy-five hours. You see, you unburdened his bank and you got it all, got – PT is all straightened out and you've got all of this first top one and so forth, and – this is a lot of work you did, you see – and you got the next half of the bank of the next one, see? And that's the end of his time.

Well, you could spend the last session or so trying to find the service fac for his present time environment. Just scouting out his present time environment. Of course, any application – the RIs which he has now found – you see, any application they have to present time will cause them to disintegrate. So you'll get a disintegration of the factors which are still hanging up in present time, his needle goes very floppy and you can hardly set it up and it's on the Clear read and so forth – and you could practically sit there and make a Clear out of it, although he's only halfway through a bank.

Of course, he's going to go creak, and he's going to talk to you, and he's going to persuade you and try – if you could just get to the bottom of this next thing, you see. That would maybe take you another twelve, fifteen hours just to get to the bottom of it – not to clean it back up all the way up the time, you see, it's something on that order. And where you've got to sever it off you've still got – you still got a technique which is analogous to R3SC. In other words, you could make a Clear at any time you were making an OT. And you can clean up his needle and his tone arm read at almost any time.

Very valuable thing to know. Because if you've seen the agony some people get into running actual GPMs, you would realize that it's well worthwhile to have a technology which straightens them out as cases. I'd – to program such a case, I would just make sure, if the case is sort of gummed up and in a bit of trouble and so forth, I'd make sure I hadn't been finding RIs for which he – we had no goal; make sure of that. I'd give him a nice bunch of ARC break assessments. I'd do a big case analysis on the subject: "Have we found any implant goals?" don't you see, "and thought they were your actual goals?" or "Have we run," you see, "actual goals as implant goals?" or – disentangle that – "Have we skipped any GPMs?" you know. "Have we found a lot of wrong items?" "Have we listed things backwards?" You know, the stuff that's in your list – do a sort of a case analysis along this line, make sure he was all straightened out in that line. And then I'd very eager-beaverishly start in on R3SC, trying to find the service fac for his present time now.

And, of course, we're going to find out he's now applying the goal, you see. And he's now applying the goal "to fly" or something like this to his present time environment. And we'd clear off a lot of locks and we'd get a lot of PT action. Blue smoke comes out of both sides of the meter, you know. Pc settles out and goes Clear read and the case straightens up.

Theoretically, this is quite doable, and if you got the other reasons out of the way why the case was gummy or feeling bad – that I have just outlined to you, no more complicated

than that – you would then be able to apply your R3SC once more and you could bring about a state of Clear. So your state of Clear is bring-aboutable at any time with this one proviso: The most dangerous time to use R3SC is before you find the first actual GPM. Apparently the simplest and easiest time to find it and to use it, you see, is in actual fact the most dangerous time to use it, because you actually are running at RIs without the pc's goal. Do you understand?

So that's – you can go at it with great aplomb. I don't know how long it'll go on. I can also tell you that I don't know, and there's no reason to suppose it would go on more than an hour in some cases. I don't want to scare you. But in everybody so far addressed it has gone on for a nice, long, comfortable time and isn't getting in anybody's road and there's no sign of these difficulties appearing. But by past experience, they're there to appear.

Therefore, it is very necessary that an auditor who is doing R3SC must sit there very alert to the rocket reading goal. If he gets anything on a list that rocket reads, why, he should mark it loud and clear, See. Put a big RR down after it, something like this, you see. Looks like the pc's goal – if there's any discussion of it ensues of any kind whatsoever (and that's very easy to have happen, you see, in R3SC) – mark it down: "Pc thinks this is his goal." Put it over there very clear.

Now, if the pc can be kept in session – let's talk now about not just somebody trying to clear, let's talk about taking it from there – you've gotten tone arm action established on this pc, this pc's pretty comfortable, you're – gotten some of the aberrative factors out of the pc's environment so the tone arm doesn't stick up every time you sneeze and you got a goal sitting there. Well, you'd better research this goal.

Let's find out what goal it is. Is it one back or two back or three back, or is it – is it this or that, or what should we do with it, and should we oppose this goal and find a goal that's a little closer to present time and then find an – what should we do with this goal? Let's search this thing out. It isn't as easy as, "Well, that is the pc's goal, let's list it," see. It isn't that easy, See. It's – the only goal you really dare run – and this is what gave all pcs trouble – is the last goal: the one closest up to PT.

Now, knowing all those things, you're going to go getting tone arm action. Your tone arm action there is residual on the long haul. Now, it's residual in the pc's actual GPMs. That's where the tone arm action lies. Now the very system that you understand as a service facsimile applies to every RI and applies to every GPM the pc has, and it is that system which has aberrated the pc. That is the system which has aberrated the pc. And all pcs have done this, and they've brought it all the way along the track, and it arrives till now. Actually, the service facsimile *cum laude* for a GPM is the goal as an RI. That is the big one.

And, of course, it accumulates to its subsidiary RIs – see, reliable items are accumulated to this basic one – and the whole of these in their associated pattern make up what we call a Goals Problem Mass. And that mass is quite actual. These RIs are – have diameter, they have mass, they have this, they have that; they're all very much in the groove.

Now, what are the – what are the symptoms of somebody running out of – well, you're running too many RIs and you haven't got his goal, your TA action will cease and the needle ceases to RR. Now, therefore, when should you dive for the pc's goal and start this goals pro-

gram? What is the dividing line? Well, unfortunately, it isn't as easy as X Unit and Y Unit or something like that, you see. That isn't that easy. It's different. It's a technical point. It's have you rehabilitated the pc's RR? And you run service fac (R3SC) until you've got a rehabilitated RR. And then it's going to be awful easy for you to find the goal.

Now, the question arises, what is the exact progress of the case run on this particular scheme of things? What's the exact progress of the case? Well, you run a case on the latest part of his aberration all the time. That keeps his PT cleaned up. By keeping his PT cleaned up, you're then keeping him nice and calm and so forth.

He actually isn't going to develop any skills to amount to anything as an OT. He's going to rehabilitate very slowly. Rehabilitation factor then is slow, even and gradual. It doesn't do a roly coaster type of action. You'll get – occasionally some guy will bang out of his head or something like this, but that's just not of any vast importance. What you'll get is an increase of ability on a steady, calm progress front.

Oh, of course, you're going to have your difficulties of you listed this thing backwards and you shouldn't have and so forth. These are merely technical difficulties as you go along. The pc's going to spend an awful time between session A and session B because you skipped a GPM – when you were listing down, you didn't get the next adjacent GPM, you got the one after that – and it's going to make him quite miserable.

But your actuality here is that the pc is advancing as a being in relationship to present time. He's getting an expanding perimeter of present time, but he is advancing with present time. And therefore he is advancing to a marked degree smoothly and calmly in regard to present time.

Now, this has two factors, one of which is relatively unimportant. You might not agree with me that it's unimportant, but I rather class it in that sphere. You're not going to get spurty, fluky manics turning on and off. And boy, they can get more in an auditor's road than you would think. Pc goes – the most dangerous thing of them is not damage that the pc does, but the pc goes tearing off in a manic, and this has been one of our main problems: He feels so good, he's so ambitious, you see, and he doesn't want any more auditing because he's going out and he's going to get busy, you see – and you know that he's going to take about three days to fall on his silly head!

Well, the reason for that is, is you've dropped back earlier on the track than the reality of the pc. See, you're earlier on the track than the pc's reality goes. This is a very important factor. If a pc's attention is thoroughly in present time, any effort to go backtrack, of course, brings about a feeling of unreality. There's a slight unreality involved on this quite normally.

Well now, multiply this to a fact that by taking him backtrack, you, of course, are bringing his ARC at a lower pitch than it might be, and he can't actually cope with the aberration which is being thrown at him and he goes into manics and he turns on somatics and he has a bad time and he sits around all day worrying because he can't tear up all the pavement of MI or something. You get the idea?

Now, that's all totally and a hundred percent simply because somebody is being run well over his head. The dangers involved in it are negligible, because he's so overwhumped

that nothing very serious could occur. But by taking him back down the track from present time all the time, actually the past is present time.

See, the past is being carved off in present time all the time, don't you see, and therefore the reality of the pc is continuously increased and you actually make – the more important fact is, is you won't be up against the hurdy-gurdy of restimulation and upsets and *rawf* and bing and bang – the pc will be much more cheerful and you won't be up against these sudden manics; you won't have any difficulty in this direction.

In actual fact, it is very doubtful if a pc could make it to OT unless you continually handled the application of what he was doing to the aberrative factors of present time.

The only danger in processing anybody up the line is somebody's going to get – go into some big snit of some kind or another when he's about three-quarters of the way through, don't you see, and he isn't up to it and that sort of thing.

Well actually, the – I don't think – I don't think you could keep him in session or push him in that direction or hold him in that direction long enough to make him – to have enough strength to misbehave. You understand? It takes a smooth run. This thing requires a smoother run, don't you see?

What you want is an even progress chart. And the way to do that is to take everything down as you go against the present time which the pc now has, and you'll get a discharge of it and probably reduce – this is the important thing – reduce the number of hours of auditing by at least 50 percent. Cut it back from PT. Now, we've been making a mistake by going early and coming up toward PT. It's very hard on a pc, because all of the RIs he's dramatizing are right in PT.

Now, let's say he goes back and he finds the goal "to have." Let's say this guy's been run and run and run and run and run. And he goes back and he finds this goal "to have." All right, that's way back, see? And there he's got this GPM "to have." And he gets into the top oppterm of the thing "to have." And he said – it's "want nothing to do with nobody nohow," see – something like that, see? And he's against capitalists or something like this, see. Or people who have things, or something like this. You see, the thing is reversed.

You'll find that the moment he enters that level, if you have peeled back the track all the way down smoothly to where he is, you'll find at that moment, his thinkingness is colored by the RIs he is sitting and confronting. His thinkingness is colored by these things. He'll get up in the morning and he'll look around, and say, "Well, I sure don't need three pairs of shoes. I could get along with one, you know." His thinking is colored in this particular direction. Well, that means it's directly discharging against PT.

So in actual fact, your discharge against PT, of course, accelerates the speed at which it goes. You needn't worry too much, or you're not really concerned with the ethic level of the pc, as auditors. I'm just talking about you as – your general attitude and opinion – you're not worried too much about the power or strength or otherwise of a pc. You never have been.

But, of course, you are approaching – you are approaching a point where this will become of interest to you. It will become more and more of interest to you. And be reassured – be reassured by the fact that an individual whose present time problems are not cleared away

doesn't have very much power to do anything. He's too involved and too enturbulated to exert any force or power in present time. Interesting datum, isn't it? Doesn't even really fall back on ethics. See, it falls back on that restrictive fact. Why? Well, he's sitting in a couple of wild stable data of some kind or another and he's resolving everything, and it's all mixed up any-way.

So his power and his difficulties are terrifically restricted by his present time involvements and confusions. And frankly, no pc ever really progresses beyond his present time problem. That's in actual fact the secret of processing. That's why, particularly, you can throw away the Freudian idea that a little girl was looking in the window of the boy's room when she was three, you see, and has been aberrated ever since, you see. No! No, no, no, no – that had nothing to do with aberration. Why, it's back there!

Now, if you were running the RIs formed at the time she was three and you had peeled back to them, you would find the pc oddly enough sitting in the present time problem caused by the inability to observe. Non-observation and non-communication. At any given moment during auditing, the pc is introverted at the level of what is now in present time. What is now live in present time, on that the pc is introverted. Therefore his power is consistently, continuously cut back to practically nothing. Consistently and continuously.

You see gradients work this way. You walk out here and pick up a – one day you can pick up a pebble. And the next day you can pick up a rock. And the next day you can pick up a big boulder. And the next day you can pick up a stone wall, you get the idea? You'd think in auditing a pc would move ahead on that gradient of ability. A pc will not move ahead on that gradient of ability.

A person halfway through won't be able to pick up the pebble. You mark my words and you watch it. If you carry it all the way through to a complete conclusion, it's when he gets all the way back to the other end of the line and all those things have sheared off against present time and he's got all those things straightened out and he hasn't become totally overwhelmed by it all and so on. He's going to be three feet back of his head.

Now, I've had a period recently of being up in the... looking around, and that sort of thing.

And I just got gorgeously confused with my present time problem. And I frankly became so involved with present time problem – it was a present time problem to me at that moment – that I was like to wrap beams all around my head and I was yo-yoing past the moon, don't you see. I suddenly couldn't hold a position in space worth a nickel. I was very introverted on the whole thing. I didn't quite know what my present time problem was – I was trying to figure out what my present time problem was, see. Present time problem, of course, was sitting right in the RI I was sitting in.

The odd part of it was it *was* a present time problem. See, it *was* a present time problem. I didn't think it was. And that's always the case with the pc: It *is* a present time problem. It's that the pc can *perceive* it is a present time problem. So all progress is measured on the pc's ability to perceive what *is* a present time problem. And on that you get a measure of his forward progress. And he gets present time problems which are years wide, and tens of years wide, and hundreds of years wide, and thousands of years wide, don't you see.

Present time problem is the distance of one inch – his forehead hurts, don't you see – to his room, to his world in which he immediately lives – that is to say, you know, back and forth, the route to the office and that sort of thing – to the planet, to the this, to the that, to off of this planet, to the confederacy, to all of the various connecting links of all the confederacies, to this universe, to the lot of beings in this universe, and to the formations of this universe, to this, to that, to that, *thup, thup, thup*. It's always the length and distance of the pc's present time problem.

It actually isn't even – that is on – his only measure of reach. It isn't how far he can reach or how many stones he can lift or anything else. It's just how wide is his present time problem. And in every case, it is his reaction to present time that is creating the problem. Beyond that, there are actually no problems. You got this? This – it's how – what's – what's his perimeter? What's his perimeter of problem?

So you can measure that, and as these RIs are peeled off against PT as you go back through actual pairs through the GPMs – you go back through these actual pairs and these things are up in PT and so forth – he'll be expressing this degree of introversion with regard to the ... Well, he's just got an awful worry, he's got an awful worry, he – so rapidly goes onto planetary affairs in think like this, it's quite dizzying.

He's got an awful worry. He's got an awful worry. He's found, the idea that he actually can no longer – he can no longer make waterfalls fall backwards. See, he isn't out there trying to make waterfalls fall in any direction – he's got a problem. See, his problem is he can no longer make a waterfall fall backwards.

And there's your consistent run of processing and the way it peels off and goes all the way back. Now, do you see then what the approximate anatomy is of what you're tackling? In essence, you have something I can draw you here – in spite of the lateness of the moment – I can draw you here this with great rapidity, and there's – I'll draw it for you again.

But here let us say is your pc, and he is being an RI – and here's – here's the goal as an RI. See? And this whole thing is one annealed GPM, and this is present time. The pc is being this thing and therefore it is his service fac. Right back of this is a bunch more – goal, this is a GPM. This is your current GPM.

Now, when we reduce this on this level, here's PT, and let's make it look like this and let's just draw a GPM, shall we? We're going away from PT, here, see? When you're looking for your service facsimile you're looking for this fellow right here – or this one here. You'll find one or the other of those.

First goal you find is possibly – you're looking for the goal, here. You see, this GPM may not be complete – may not be finished because he's still living it. He's postulated this goal, but you get a goal, and you – you actually found *that* goal. See? Goal found. So what you're going to have to do now is list a goal oppose, against that, to find that goal, and then that goal, and then that goal – and then as soon as you're sure that he's got this goal, and you actually list for those two RIs and peel down that bank and clean that bank up. That's the end of everything you're working with, with the pc. And also the end of all of his aberrations, all of his worries, all of his concerns, all of his upsets in PT, and isn't – well I won't say isn't life wonderful because he now has all these. [laughter]

Fortunately, by actual count, there is only twenty or thirty actual GPMs on the whole track. Twenty or thirty. You're on the sunny side of a thousand hours to OT – and I mean all the way. You're well on the sunny side of it. And knowing me and the fact that we discover things as we go and so forth, I would say we'll probably have that cut down a bit. But at this present moment I see no reason to change anything we've got.

We've just fallen back and taken up all the technology of a year ago, without changing a hair in it. It's all been done. There it is. We've investigated through this summer, implant RIs. You know how to run those things, you've got good ideas of what GPMs are, you're all neat away. You know how to run service facsimiles – you're learning right now. You can tear into that thing, find the pc's own goal and you're away! And you're really away.

So, it very well may be with other developments that you're looking at five hundred hours. It may be within five hundred hours. And if your case is very, very slippy indeed, and you audit very well, and you give very good auditing and receive very good auditing, and you're very good children indeed, you might be within three hundred and fifty hours! But that's might be – I can tell you for sure you're within eight hundred hours of it. That's for an absolute certainty.

Now, this is what – this is what it means, that is what you're processing, there isn't anything more that you are processing. The fact that free track exists, that implant GPMs exist, that all these other things – screen implants exist and so on. I ran about twelve, I think ten or twelve screen line implants off in one RI listing, couple of nights ago. Nothing. They were getting in my road. I was trying to put down items that were aberrative, and I kept running into these things – mosquito bites.

All right, but that's what it looks like. I don't care what else is on the track. That is all that is on the track that is important – right there on that sheet, right there in front of you. And that's in actual fact what antiquates psychotherapy. Who would have dreamed of any of that or of its considerable simplicity in its final analysis.

We had to know an awful lot of things to bring it down to that level of simplicity. And once you're studying it and grinding it through you won't think it's simple for a while, and then all of a sudden it'll fall apart and you'll see it's relatively easy. That is what you're processing, and that's the way it falls apart and that's it.

Anything that's wrong with your pc is *right* here – influenced by that first goal – anything wrong with your pc, that your pc is now – is real enough to know about. Because when he gets to here, he's going to have a whole new set! You understand? Of course, this is going to modify, he gets different changes and so on. Until he gets that whole GPM gone though, he's still going to worry about that idea, see. Sort of withdraw from it and be upset about it.

These – these ideas, we don't know what – we don't know what's going to turn up down here. Of course, he's got that much charge off of his case, he can handle it better, he's that much saner, life will go that much easier, you can get rid of it that much quicker. But down here, if this is the goal "to eat buttercups," he all of a sudden goes in for horticulture and starts worrying about these poor flower seeds lying around all over the place dying without being planted. He never worried before about it in his life. But now, it's a present time problem.

Well that's – that's your variations of case. That is a map of a case. It is that simple. There's nothing much more to it. It doesn't excuse anybody from careless auditing. It doesn't say you can't make mistakes – but it is basically very elementary. And there it is.

Thank you!

SAINT HILL SERVICE

FACSIMILE HANDLING

A lecture given on 18 September 1963

Thank you.

Well, now, this is the – ?

Audience: 18th.

The 18th of – ?

Audience: September.

September. What planet?

Audience: Earth. AD 13.

AD 13. And solar system. [laughter]

They're tearing down Alcatraz, did you know that?

Audience: Yes.

Did you know they were tearing it down?

Audience: Yeah. They are tearing it down.

Yeah, they're abandoning it and tearing it down, and I think that's awfully good news, and so forth. And we're of course going to follow suit with this planet. Anyway... No, no. Don't – don't get me wrong. We don't intend anything violent. I think we need a rehabilitation center and this one will do as well as any. Okay?

Male voice: Yeah.

Now today, today I'm going to talk to you about the service facsimile and the state of the pc and a Saint Hiller method of moving in with a service facsimile and straightening up a case.

Now, you have to know where the stops are on the organ before you can play an organ. This helps a great deal. You have to know where the keyboard is, and with the new elec-

tronic organs you have to know where the switch is and a few things of that particular character.

So you – just sailing in on a case with great nonchalance, you see, and not turning on the switch of the E-Meter and not finding out anything about the case's PT and having no safeguards of any kind whatsoever and not knowing what you're doing anyway might be rather adventurous, might be rather adventurous. In fact, I think every psychiatrist that has been along this ground is very adventurous. Never was so much done by those who knew so little.

This situation, however, stems from lack of technology and lack of know-how. Now, this know-how situation with regard to the mind is very, very hard to arrive at. There are so many suppositions that – just walking through a forest of favorite beliefs. And when you realize that every case and every practitioner in the field of the mind would be concentrated on one aspect of existence and then dedicated to not observing existence except through that one evaluation of existence, you see at once the tremendous limitations imposed upon the discovery of anything about the mind, and then, secondarily, getting any application of any truth known. Do you see that this, then, would be a self-defeating proposition?

Not only are we given a vast panorama of data, any one of which is – can be a favorite aberration (not a truth but an aberration, don't you see?) in this vast forest, but then we ask people who themselves are concentrated upon favorite data, you see – substituting for themselves to handle this situation – and you get a difficulty; you get a randomness right there.

Now, let's compound the randomness and realize that knowledge about the mind means freedom for life and beings in this universe. Once you recognize that as a principle, you will see that anyone who is dedicated to total enslavement or the dwindling spiral or caving anyone in and caving everyone in, and so forth, are immediately not in favor of total knowledge of the human mind, but quite on the contrary are in favor of great ignorance.

And there's two ways of accomplishing that ignorance. One is simply a denial of information, which is practiced but sometimes cannot be fully enforced. For instance, the Catholic church for many, many centuries made a great thing out of "ignorance is wisdom," you see? Everybody had to be good and stupid and so forth, and whether you're Catholic or not you'd have to admit that that was the modus operandi of the existing church over a period of about, oh, I think it must have been eight hundred years or something like this – is almost their total devotion was to ignorance.

Well, it doesn't go just that far. That sooner or later gets interrupted. But there's something that can be substituted for total ignorance and that is false data. And false data is probably a much more effective means of denying freedom.

One of the ways of going about false data, for instance: The fellow wants to get out of the woods and there are two trails. And one trail lies much deeper into the woods and the other trail goes out on to the plain. And all you have to do is put up a sign at the crossroads and point to that trail which goes deeper into the woods and say, "This way lies freedom," you see, and you've promptly trapped a lot of people.

And that is such an easy action that when it is added to the fact that everybody is sort of mired down in their favorite fixated data, this can become quite a vicious morass. The trick is, then, to find the exact mechanics – the exact, precise mechanics which apply to all minds.

Now, the moment you have found the exact, precise mechanics which apply to all minds, you can then get a broad agreement on the situation because they override the minor data on which the people are fixated. In other words, they also would have this broader perimeter of data and they'd recognize the truth in the broader perimeter of data. But the moment that you move even a sixteenth of a millimeter sideways off of what is generally applicable to all minds, you are again into the particularities and opinions. So therefore, if you had a broad sphere of knowledge which was true, and these were all high generalities and everybody would agree with them, frankly it'd be very easy to bankrupt and upset that whole operation by taking it, and by false relay – you see, bad instruction and bad relay of the material and dropping out a datum here and a vital datum there and substituting something or other – you eventually could then again effect a sort of a slavery out of that information.

In other words, even if you arrive at the technology, you still have the task of safeguarding the technology because, once more, it can easily turn and become a false technology.

These are the various ramifications that Scientology has had to deal with over a period of many years. And the solution to the difficulty is results because once the technology is applicable so that results occur by reason of its application, then of course, you don't get any arguments with these. You don't get the intrusion of a great deal of crisscrosses.

So the whole contest has been not for the achievement of certain truths – we have had many of these for years – but a workability so that we attain an application of those truths toward a rapid release of attention from favorite and fixated data. And in that wise, then, the truth is carried out by a demonstration that if it is used a greater freedom is attained.

And we have to look at how long is the attention span of a preclear. Well, in actual fact, as far as Scientologists are concerned, their attention span, their willingness to go along and try in this direction, is terrific. But the casualties which occur along the lines occur because the body of knowledge has not arrived in an individual in the release of his attention from his favorite data. Do you see that?

This fellow is sure that all horses sleep in beds. Now, it isn't only that he has this as a fixed datum; he also has this as a total datum. And any data that does not contribute to horses sleeping in beds he will discard. You see, it's not just that he's got this one idea. He's got this idea which then bends all idea toward this idea. And the truth of any existing situation is whether or not it fits this *idée fixe*. His idea of separating truth from falsehood is whether or not it fits his *idée fixe*. Now, if the thing is false, it doesn't fit his *idée fixe* and therefore should be thrown away. And if it is true, it does fit his *idée fixe* and therefore should be retained. All of which is rather interesting because if his *idée fixe* were "horses sleeping in beds," he would only listen to mental technology that affected horses or beds.

Therefore – therefore, the early discovery, and the long dormancy, arising in a greater use and application of the service facsimile means a great deal to Scientology. Means a very great deal to Scientology because you're now dealing with the one reason you can't get across

a general truth to a preclear. You're not trying to teach this preclear anything but you're trying to show this preclear that by reason of what you are doing you get a release of attention so that the world looks brighter and he can look further and he feels better and more powerful.

Now, if you do not attain this in a session with any given pc over – sometimes it can be a very long period of time – but if you do not eventually attain this, you will eventually lose your pc. Sometimes it lasts only an hour and sometimes it would last for several years.

Now, the degree that it – the pc will sit there patiently has direct ratio to how fixed his idea is. Now, the pc who will sit there for years waiting for a greater truth does not have his attention so involved with an *idée fixe*, you see, that he cannot absorb the greater application of the material which he is presented with to process. And he will get perimeter benefits even though his *idée fixe* is not touched. He gets these perimeter benefits solely and totally because he is not that fixed! Do you see? He's just not that fixed.

Now we take this bloke who says that horses sleep in beds, and that is the total modus operandi of life. We have to look at the totality which this can become. This is the eighth, seventh, sixth, fifth, fourth, third, second, first dynamic, see? All sex is answered by the fact that horses sleep in bed. The way to run a family is to have horses sleep in beds, you see? God is actually a horse sleeping in a bed, see? This has really got to be a fixed datum.

Now, to the degree the datum is fixed, he is not able to explore the perimeter of his ideas and therefore cannot see a greater truth. In other words, he's more entrapped and more imprisoned than the next one. Now, that is what is known as very bad mental condition: It's how fixed this one idea is.

Now, when you're dealing with neurosis, you have somebody who has an *idée fixe* which only occasionally arises to wreck his life, and he can see a little more beyond that. But when you have psychosis, you have only the *idée fixe* – only. Just as I just told you: God is a horse sleeping in bed, see? You'll find the institutions are full of these blokes.

Now, that's it. Now, that scares you when you start thinking about the fact that you, of course, have a service facsimile that is an *idée fixe* and so forth. All right. It's degree, then. It's degree. Your attention isn't so pinned down by that that you can't examine a greater truth or you wouldn't be sitting here this very minute. See, so immediately you're lifted out of the ranks of the insane and the neurotic. See?

Just by definition. That proves itself – quite self-evident. Now – you can see some wider idea.

But let's take Mamie Glutz or somebody, the cashier at the local service station, and we try to explain to her – we try to explain to her – that beings are beings and that each one of them has a mind. Let's just go that far, see?

Now, if she's got a very furious *idée fixe* of one kind or another, such as "all men are alike," see, this doesn't fit. So therefore, you become false. To her, you are false, do you see? Then any datum which you utter on the broad perimeter of life, if it doesn't add up to "all men are alike," is a false datum. You could have an elephant stand in the middle of the room, and say, "That's an elephant." Well, it's not a man, so therefore it's a false datum, don't you see? So that you're indicating that an elephant is standing in the middle of the room – and there is

an elephant there – you are indicating a false datum to her. And therefore you are saying something foolish.

She knows this. How does she know this? Well, she knows this because, naturally, "all men are alike."

One fine day you happen to tell her, "A lot of men are aberrated. In fact, most all men have aberrations of one kind or another." You're in there cooking; you're now true. This one accidental datum goes by and latches on to this service facsimile, see? Just one. Now you spake truth. And perhaps from there on, everything you utter, she will say, "That is true." But once more, it's without evaluation or inspection.

Now, get the degree, then, the degree of fixation upon an all-resolving datum and then you have the degree of enslavement of the individual. These things actually are not degrees of knowledge or ignorance but simply degrees of freedom or slavery. It is secondary – entirely secondary – that truth is truth and falsehood is falsehood. It's whether or not it leads to freedom or slavery that establishes your final amount of truth, because fixation is only upon falsehood. You can never get fixated on truth. That's quite a fascinating thing.

Truth is an all-freeing mechanism. If it is not all-freeing, then the truth to some degree must be limited – either limited in its conception or limited in its reception or limited in its application. So that you can say that anything you were worried about must have a falsehood connected with it. There is always a lie connected with anything that you are having a hard time with. You go out and you can't start your car. And you fool around with it and fool around with it and fool around with it, trying to start the car. And you finally realize that it must be the carburetor. So you have the carburetor fixed. And you still can't start your car. Obviously you conceived a falsehood about the car. It couldn't have been the carburetor because after you fixed the carburetor the car still didn't run. This is easily demonstrated in the field of mechanics, you see, because things run or don't run. So there was a falsehood connected with your analysis of what is wrong with the car.

Now you say, "Well, it's probably the spark," and you fix the spark in some way and the car runs. Therefore, that must have been the truth.

Well, we can't observe to that degree people running or not running. Their motors don't purr or stop and they appear to be all right when they're not and they appear to be not all right when they are. And very often an auditor has been very embarrassed at the end of session to sort of start apologizing for what a terrible session it's been and get the whole load in his face on the subject of taking away the pc's gains: "Why, I had a fine session! It's a marvelous session! Found out a lot of things! Had a terrific time!" you see, and so forth. Far as the auditor's observation was concerned, the pc was sitting there quite glumly and hadn't had much of a session.

All right, another way: An auditor is looking at the pc, and the pc is smiling sweetly and so forth, and so forth. And actually the pc is practically spun in by the session, don't you see? Now, you can make that observation of the pc a modus – well, a cause here.

Let's look at how far we have come in this direction. You are actually now in a position to determine, without the faintest difficulty, whether it was a good session or a bad ses-

sion for the pc without asking the pc. Now, that's rather terrific. This doesn't look like much, don't you see? But that's pretty terrific.

If the pc got an acceptable amount of tone arm action in the session, the pc by session end might have even been roughed up by something but still would have had a gain and will be fine the next day. But the pc who did not get tone arm action in the session will not feel good at session end, no matter what they say, and the next day will probably feel terrible. One session, no TA action: pc bad off.

Now, that doesn't look like much. That doesn't look like much. That looks like a datum which you now know and which you're living by and auditing by and it just doesn't look like much. Actually, there was more wisdom in that discovery than there has been in the former fifty thousand years of thinking man, because it immediately and directly took out of the realm of inspection, worsening or improvement as a result of treatment. There's no opinion about it now. We don't have to depend on the auditor's opinion or the pc's opinion. There's no dependency on that at all. Did you get tone arm action of an adequate amount? All right, then that pc is going to feel good at the end of session and the pc is going to feel better the next day. You didn't get an adequate amount of tone arm action: The pc is not going to feel good at the end of session and not going to feel better the next day, no matter what the pc says.

Now, once in a blue moon you can turn off a somatic and the pc feels nice about the somatic going off without getting a great deal of tone arm action – without getting a great deal of tone arm action. But you watch that pc during the next forty-eight hours and exactly the same result will occur. I mean, we haven't stepped sideways from the basic data involved in it at all.

Now, that's interesting. That's interesting. Therefore, just on that little grounds alone, we must know something about the mind and be able to do something about the mind which is in excess of what has been done about the mind. Look at the tininess of what I am giving you here, you see? That's hardly anything, you see? But that truth will hold up – that truth will hold up. You say, "Well, it's a mechanic truth, it's an application truth, it's this kind of a truth." But nevertheless it'll hold up.

As you go along and audit, you will find out that that truth holds up. In fact, you're finding it out right now. You've sat there over a stuck tone arm for two and a half hours, you've looked at the end of session and the pc has been going groan and creak, and it hasn't been going too well. And if you cared to look at the pc a few hours later, you'd find the pc sort of caving in, in various spots. Pc will be nattery to you the next session and that sort of thing. By the time you've gone three sessions without any tone arm action, you will start wishing you had never started auditing this pc in the first place, because the reactions are going to be rather extreme. In other words, this will follow out a general observation.

So therefore, we must be dealing, where we're dealing with the pc, in certain principles of action. Those principles of action are also very elementary. They fall back immediately upon the *idée fixe* – the stable datum and the confusion. And it must mean that all confusions are there, and therefore all masses are there, because they are held in abeyance so far as observation is concerned, and will never as-is, by a stable datum. A stable datum, then, prevents observation of the environment or these masses and therefore accumulates masses. A

stable datum is a dam erected across the river, and with that stable datum firmly in place no water is going to flow.

Now, what is wrong with a mind? Well, it must be that a stable datum was adopted in lieu of inspection. A person ceased to inspect. For some reason or other he fell back from inspecting, fell back from living, fell back from being anywhere and just let everything go to pieces. "Oh," he says, "well, I'll put this stable datum there and the devil with it all. To hell with it. I'm..." He either said, "I'm incompetent" or "I'm bored with it" or "I want to be elsewhere," or something of the sort. He said something. But he still put a datum there to substitute for his own observation and his own coping with life and the situation at large.

And at that moment he started to get an accumulation of confusion. Because you can write "I eat pie" on a piece of paper and put it in the middle of a bakeshop and it won't do a thing. It won't bake any pies, it won't buy any pies, it won't sell any pies, it won't do a thing. You can put "bakeshop" over the door so that people will know that's where the bakeshop is, and start handing out pies and selling pies and doing things like that, and you have handled a confusion just to that degree. But the moment you put "bakeshop" in the middle of the place and take the baker out, you haven't got a bakeshop. See, it's pretty obvious.

Well, when the thetan did a bunk and left an idea where he was, after that no confusion gets as-ised, but on the contrary, rather develops at a high rate of speed. You get more and more confusions and less and less as-ising. And eventually this develops what we call mass – mental mass.

Once you shake up that stable datum – whether you find the exact stable datum or not – once you shake it up by finding a cousin datum to it or finding something in its perimeter, you have taken some bricks out of the dam that is lying across the river, and water is going to start to flow down that river. And as it flows it tends to wipe away more and more stable data. And true, as in any hydraulic works, you're going to get more flow and more widening of the hole the flow is going through, the more flow there is. You've got to start the flow flowing.

Now, how does the stable datum become so fixed? It becomes fixed by the very thing it's supposed to confront. It gets fixed by the confusion it's supposed to handle and doesn't. And the more it is in place to hold back the confusion, the more confusion batters at it, so the more accumulation of confusion you get around the vicinity of this stable datum.

It's something like twirling a bowl of taffy or something like that – twirling a fork in it. You're just going to get more and more taffy on the fork, don't you see? Because it is there. If it weren't there, you weren't going to get any. Now, it might be there to remedy the confusion. Actually, it accumulates confusions. And you get more and more accumulation of confusion and therefore more and more mass, and more and more this, and more and more that, and more and more eradication, and less and less ability to inspect and communicate on the part of the individual. And finally the whole house gets full of these things and the guy has got no place to move anymore and he sort of sits there and he himself is one of these things. And you can't find the pc because he's just another stable datum. He knows, see, and so on.

And man, man has gone the route. Man talks about the brain when he talks about the mind. And if you want a commentary – if you want a commentary on a state of mental technology – just look for the degree that the thinkingness or beingness of the man is considered

to be mass. And the more a being is considered to be mass, the lower the technology extant will be found to be. Why? They're just dramatizing the stable datum and the confusion.

So you look for modern science. Modern science says, "Man's an animal – ha-ha." See? "Man is an animal. And it's – he's a brain, and electronic impulses go this way and that way and that causes thought."

What have you got here? What have you got here? You've got a brain substituted for the being. And if all mental technology believes that, what kind of condition must those practitioners be in? They're in the condition which you see them in today. That's pretty grim. They're hard people to have anything to do with.

Now, you wonder why they are hard to train. And they are hard to train. And one of these fine days you'll be training them. Just remember that their whole orientation has already added up to a tremendous confusion which has used a brain as a stable datum.

So you'd run a process like "Tell me all about the brain." "What decisions have you made about the brain?" And you're going to get tone arm action. And all the charge of the former confusions which have been stopped by false data is going to flow by on your E-Meter tone arm. And the next thing you know, they have enough inspection ability to learn. And that's why they're hard to teach. That's all. Because all the knowledge you're handing them, they do this with it – You say, "Now, there is the idea of a – flows. And when a flow flows too long in one direction it tends to get stuck."

And this is the way they receive this datum: "Uh, let's see, a flow flows too long – brain. They're talking about blood. Uh, this is a discussion, then, of the causes of coronary thrombosis." So they write down "Coronary thrombosis, diagnosis of." Get the idea? What's holding this – what – how come? How come there's no inspection? Well, because they're even depending on their own brains to do their inspection for them. You imagine a thetan getting so lazy that the brain is going to inspect everything for him.

Well now, this, then, is actually just putting your attention on the limitations of beings to the recognition of truth or falsehood. And that recognition is limited in direct ratio to the amount of fixation upon a stable datum. And that's the degree of limitation. Very important principle.

How then can an individual who is totally boundaried and bound in and totally fixated – and he himself is a stable datum by this time; he's no longer a living being – how can he be expected to get anywhere? What can you do for him?

Well, you think, well, let's see, there's two approaches here. You could take a datum of enormous magnitude and you could hold a gun on him and you say, "If you don't believe this new stable datum, we will shoot you." I'm not now talking about an unused method, see? "You say 'Heil Hitler' or you'll at once be talking to the Schutzstaffel," see, that's a substitution of a datum for understanding. He'll be talking to the Schutzstaffel, promptly.

Patriotism rises on every hand. See, everybody says "Heil Hitler" all the time and eventually the nation goes down in defeat. Why does it become defeated? Well, there's nobody there stopping any confusion or handling anything at all except a stable datum known as "Heil Hitler."

Mussolini's empire went the route. One of his boys was always expected to call Rome if he had to make a decision. Now, when the Allies first went into Sicily they had to appoint some of these blokes back into civil positions. First they appointed a whole new batch and found out they'd appointed the Mafia into total control of everything. And they had to reverse this and get some of the old Fascist officials. And they said the only thing wrong with them was they couldn't think for themselves. They always had to call Rome to know what to do with a piece of paper or something of the sort, and the lines were real busy. But that empire too went down to defeat.

So this method of holding the pistol or the sword or the fist and saying, "Accept this stable datum or else," and so forth, has a level of workability. And it is used, but normally ends up in greater slavery and certainly less effectiveness. It can be counted on to wind up with less effectiveness – less IQ.

Now, we made a study in Johannesburg – inadvertently, but made a study down there – of a bunch of papers that came through from school children. And we had one school that was tested from one end to the other down there in the test department. It was quite interesting to see the deterioration of the IQ of the child. I think the highest IQ that we measured in Johannesburg was a seven-year-old boy, if I remember rightly. I may have this data wrong. But he had an IQ of about 200. And that was about the highest IQ we had around there.

But studying the school at large as they had progressed from class to class to class to class, you saw a deterioration of the IQ. Well, that was an interesting commentary on the school because the school was never asked to inspect anything, never asked to understand anything. But they had to accept this as a datum, never inspect it in any way, shape or form, and let it stand as a substitute for themselves. Of course, you got a deterioration of IQ. Right?

Now, there'd be a whole new level of education if you said to somebody, "Look this over very, very carefully and decide what is true about it and what is false about it and what is workable and what is unworkable." That's a whole new zone and area of education, and a very interesting zone and area of education. But you see at once what limits it: With everybody fixated on his own special idea by which he's going to tell rightness from wrongness, that, as a totality, can't exist. But it's another idea, you see?

Now, this would be another method of going about this, and that would be to free up people's ideas so their perimeter of inspection increased, and having increased, let them inspect the data which lies before them. Therefore, you have a sort of a cross of these two schools of thought. You lead them up with a certain disciplined action that finally shows them their *idée fixe* – inadvertently, not even intentionally, but just leads them right straight to that. That then, knocked out of the way, shows them a greater perimeter of understanding and you could lead them forward continuously to higher and higher levels of understanding and to total freedom. Because remember that the individual is trapped to the degree that his ideas are fixed.

You're actually leading any person who is not Clear, then, out of a morass of entrapment, not out of a morass of ignorance. And he's trapped to the degree that his ideas are fixed. Therefore, it is of the greatest importance to you to find, first and fastest, the idea on which he is the fixedest. That's very important, then. And that would give you the speed of processing.

That determines the speed that processing is done at. It's how fast can you find the *idée fixe* and free the individual for a broader perimeter of inspection.

Exteriorization, even the state of OT, depends upon bringing about greater states of freedom, not greater states of wisdom. This is an important differentiation because the wisdom will take place anyway. But by concentrating on the wisdom you are all too prone to fall over into the idea of the implanted stable datum. But if you think of it in terms of freeing his attention, you then lead to freeing the being.

The only thing that can trap a thetan is his attention. That is all that can trap a being; stone walls do not, definitely.

You have a situation here where an individual is totally untrappable; completely and utterly untrappable by anyone except himself. What traps a being is his unwillingness to confront things which are not interesting to him, or to back out of situations in which he has lost interest, or to move off and go his way but still, somehow or another, be responsible for where he was. Various combinations lead to this situation.

Well, we are studying, now, how does an individual fix his attention and then substitute for himself or for thinkingness or for something else some inanimate postulate? Joe was here, you see? Here he is as a thetan, able to contest, confront and handle any of the confusions in his direction, see? And actively doing so.

Now, he says, "I have an unconscious mind that does all that."

How has he trapped himself?

He says, "This is an unawareness area which is going to handle these confusions."

Steen-trillion-squillion years afterwards, Sigmund Freud comes along and finds the unconscious mind.

Well, actually, the unconscious mind would be that totality of stable data which are holding back that totality of confusion which the individual is no longer aware of but is still doing.

Well, so much for freedom and slavery. That's all it amounts to: it's freedom and slavery – of the individual's fixed attention and so forth.

Now, of course, the individual can go to extreme and extraordinary limits. They say, "Well, you are the auditor and I'm depending on you utterly as my auditor to free me. And therefore my idea is fixed on you, so therefore I ought to be able to go off and self-audit myself, and so forth, because it's very bad to have my attention fixed on you as an auditor." Well, that's strictly ding-ding-ding, here comes the wagon. You're not part of his stable data. You're part of his environment. There's a slight difference. You are freeing his attention, not entrapping it. There's a difference. Now, how does all that add up in our modern swing and quick look around on technology? I have just given you all the important data. I haven't given you the ramifications of this data or how it becomes fixed in this and how a thetan exactly does it. I haven't given you any of the mechanics of the situation. But I actually have given you the fundamental rationale which brings about aberration. And actually they're – you can name a lot of parts to all this, but you've got it right here in just what I've just got through telling you.

There's actually no more in the essence of the broad theory to the subject than just what I have told you. There's really no more to it.

Now, the technology of how you free up somebody's attention; the exact method of how it is entrapped; the exact comparisons that trap it; the exact things he does to form these entrapments and that sort of thing: That's a broader field of technology. But it nevertheless has a total dependency on the data which I've just now given you.

And when you are looking for the pc's service facsimile, therefore you are looking for that thing in present time on which his ideas are most fixated – his attention is most fixated in present time. That is what you're looking for when you have a service facsimile. If you find any cousins, sisters, aunts of the service facsimile kicking around and knock those out – any other stable data that are around – you're going to get tone arm flow. There's going to be flow and it's going to express itself on that tone arm.

"Horses sleep in beds": you inadvertently hit on "bedside tables." Oh, you get lots of flow, because "bedside tables" is part of the bed, don't you see? And you get flow, flow, flow, flow, flow – "bedside tables," you see? You don't ever expect that it's connected with beds, much less suspect it's connected with horses.

But you've got your paws on "bedside tables." Therefore, you're finding something which is at least a first cousin to his service facsimile.

Service facsimile by definition is the last optterm or terminal that the individual has or is forming – has formed or is forming. It's the last pair of RIs in combination – it's that pair that makes it – last pair of RIs formed up at the top of the last GPM postulated. That's exactly what the service facsimile is. It isn't anything else. But you're going to find a lot of cousins sitting around in there. Of course, he's busy getting this one together, see? "Who opposes horses sleeping in beds, you see?" "A horse master," you see? So he's busy being a horse master, or something like this, and that's his beingness and stable datum for life, you see? And what he is opposing is horses sleeping in beds, but horses sleeping in beds he believes. You can get some kind of a ramification out of that. I'm not now trying to give you a neat picture of these last two items. That's beside the point, but just take it that they're there, see?

Now, sitting around in their vicinity you've got all kinds of things: you've got a horse master's hat, you see, so you've got a hat; you've got a whip; you've got boots; and you've got bed... or you've got posts, you see; or you've got sheets; or you see, you've got all of these little additional items, see? There are tremendous numbers of items scattered around here, completely aside, you see, from a horse master and a bed and a horse, see? There is much more stuff. You get your hands on any one of those little things and you're going to get some tone arm action.

Tone arm action actually depends on your getting your paws on one of those things. You can call any one of them, for just practical purposes, you can call them, "Well, I found a service fac," or something like that. I don't care whether you call it or not. That's not neat. That's not neat. You won't know whether it's a service fac or not until you've found the actual GPM and found its two top items. And then you'll know what the service fac really was. And your face is going to get somewhat red, see? It's "horses sleep in beds," you see, and it's something about horses in beds, you see? And man, you had it all figured out that it was bedside

tables and had to do with the second dynamic, you know? You had it taped. Didn't have anything to do with the second dynamic at all. It had to do with the fifth dynamic. Quite amusing. You'll nearly always find yourself that far off when you're just entering from the top with R3SC. So just expect to be. You'll be on the safe side.

The chances of your actually finding the service facsimile itself in a combination of two items is not merely rare – it's impossible. So get that well. It's impossible. Can't be done. It requires the illumination of knowing they are part of that bank before they are recognizable to the pc. Pc just won't recognize them, that's all. Even if you found them, the pc would reject them because they don't identify with the goal. You don't have the combination of the last goal (closest to PT, you see), and those two RIs and their relationship to that goal. And then, you've got to get those three things before you get a total "Hey! What do you know!" See? And then you get it, see? But before that, you could have actually had it on the list and it wouldn't have meant anything to the pc.

So you're not going to find the pc's service facsimile. Do you understand? But go ahead, try like mad [laughter] – because it's on that route that you're going to find the last GPM.

Every one of these little goofball things like "the bedside table," "a bedside lamp," "a chamber pot that sits under the bed" – any one of these things – you find these things, you know, and he adds them all up and that fits over there – and they don't fit any such place, but that's all right. He adds them all up. And you get tone arm action, tone arm action. You list for the thing. And he won't get any real relationship of how this relates with that. But he'll get some action. It does mean something in his environment – does have something to do with it.

By the way, tremendous subjects come into this. Somebody's suddenly going to cog-nite that we're dealing with, also, Freudian fetishism. This is Freudian fetishism. Some narrow perimeter of this would be fetishes. You know, the guy is absolutely fixated on getting ahold of women's dancing pumps, you know? He has closets full of them, you see? All of this sort of thing. That's a Freudian fetish. They went through all sorts of wild things along this particular direction. But they're simply objects associated on some distant perimeter with the service facsimile. And, of course, a person seldom is that fixated on any object. It actually is not common to all cases. But you will find these things around and it's rather fun to look at them. You'll find grandfather's pipe, or something like that, you see? Oh, you get lots of action on the thing, you see? Terrific, you see? Pc had an ally, and he'll figure it all out and he's got it all taped, and that sort of thing. And he won't have anything to do with it. When you finally get the service facsimile, service facsimile maybe has something about pipes in it, you know, "steam pipes" or something, not anything about smoking pipes.

But you got too close an identification, see? So all of these things get identified into the bundle because he is incapable of inspecting them very freely. They cross-associate and you can bleed charge.

Now, what has got the pc so restimulated that you can't get tone arm action? The two top RIs of the last GPM formed or being formed. That's what's got him so restimulated. That's what makes his present time so miserable. And that's what charges up his tone arm so it won't

move. It even cross-influences into auditing restimulation because his auditing is being monitored by these two top RIs.

So, when you get down to the – the final chips are in, you haven't got any choice but to find the pc's goal. Not the pc's backtrack goal "to be a giant," you see? That's a very nice goal, and we appreciate that he had that goal but that happens to be trillions-seventy ago. You can't even write trillions-seventy on this wall. You couldn't. Just writing along with normal-sized figures, just writing and writing and writing, you couldn't write them on this wall. That's a lot of time. And that's not present time!

You can, however, go skipping; by goal-oppose, goal-oppose, goal-oppose, goal-oppose, you can bring it on up to PT, see? When you get it up to PT, why, you'll see it ticking as the PT goal. And it ticks "yes" – you know, Ouija-boards your meter. "Is this the present time GPM?" you see? "Is this the goal you've last formed? This the goal closest to present time?" Tick, you see? All right, and whatever the goal says, "Is this a right goal?" Tick. "This a wrong goal?" No read. "Is it a wrongly worded goal?" No read. "Right goal?" Tick. "Present time goal?" Tick.

Then you look it over yourself and find out whether or not you think so. Like, it could be the goal "to be big," you see, or something like this. And that's a present time goal? Ha-ha-ha. Look! Self-evident: The fellow's here on Earth. That isn't his present time goal – self-evident. And he probably would have made some part of it if he had, don't you see? It may look too high-toned a goal to you, in which case you do another goal-oppose on it. And the worst that will happen to you – the very worst that will happen to you – is that you just run into greater and greater quantities of tone arm action. You're doing a goal-oppose, but it is the present time goal, so you're peeling off the lower goals off of it.

Well, you'll eventually see you'll just run into more and more tone arm action, so you just ask it on the meter, "Is this the present time goal?" And you get a nice read, now, see? And there it is, and you list for its top oppterm, you know? "Who or what would be the latest item formed or the latest idea formed concerning this goal 'to catch catfish'?" – whatever it is. List it out, get a reasonable list, not 189 pages, listing the guy back and forth, up and through and back and forth through his GPM, and back and forth through his GPM, and back and forth through his GPM, eye sockets getting darker and darker and face getting blacker and blacker, and back and forth through his GPM... "Well, we actually haven't run all the tone arm action out of it yet, we've only got 189 pages of listing..."

No, I'm afraid that isn't quite the sensible way to go about it. You're listing to find the top oppterm. However you find the top oppterm is how you find the top oppterm, see? You want the top oppterm – you don't want a list. And when you do this reasonable length of list, you know, and you got a clean needle – listing to clean needle is very excellent – and you got a clean needle, why, there you've got it. And you null it down and you see one of them goes click, of one kind or another, nice little slash or a surge or something. Let the pc cognite on it for a while, prepcheck it and you'll see the most gorgeous rocket read you ever saw, and you needn't have seen a second, momentary, even-for-an-instant rocket read the whole way. And that's a discovery. Now, the way you've been finding goals is you get the goal and you lay it

out and you prepcheck it, and if it doesn't rocket read it isn't the goal, and so forth. And you have to prepcheck it until it rocket reads, and this thing is falling off the pin, and so forth.

Hey, what if this goal is "to be God," trillions-hundred. And you're prepchecking some pc at trillions-hundred while his top RI is "auditing." What do you think is liable to happen? The RI, the service fac in which he is sitting and that he's frozen in right here in present time, is "auditing." And that's an oppterm. And the terminal is "a screamer" or "an ARC breaky pc."

Found that on a list the other day, and the auditor tried to sell it to me as a terminal. It turned out to be an oppterm, fortunately.

But look-a-here: There he is up here in PT with all that restimulation, see, in his environment and everything else falling in on his head. Those RIs are all ready to pull in. You take him back to trillions-a-hundred to prepcheck a goal? You going to get there? You going to see an RR? You're going to see an ARC breaky pc. Going to be a little bit too much strain, isn't it?

So what's this add up to? This adds up to the difficulties in finding pc's goals was getting pc's goals to rocket read. That was the difficulty in finding pc's goals, not getting the pc to volunteer what his goal was, because pcs are always giving you a big sell on what their goal is. See, that's easy. You say to somebody – so forth and so on. You can finally get something to read in this direction, see? But to get it to rocket read, to get it all polished up and laid out and that sort of thing, that was our trouble.

Well, you can do this whole operation without any Prepchecking and bring it off with only ticks up to the point where you have prepchecked the top oppterm. And your first rocket read is after you've prepchecked – after you've given the pc the top oppterm and prepchecked it – and then, and only then, do you see your first rocket read. And it'll be gorgeous. You don't even have his GPM rocket reading. You don't even have the goal rocket reading. You're not doing anything with it at all. And that's the way to find a service fac. Slippery. Sneaky.

Now, I'll give you the exact way you go about this, because I've left you rather stonied and it is not quite complete. I haven't told you all the steps either! Now, the first thing you do is to find what you fondly hope is, and which the pc implicitly believes is, his service facsimile, which gives you enough tone arm action to act as an anchor to windward. This is Saint Hill method of finding – it's not just finding somebody's service facsimile but actually clearing the whole case to OT. Here's the way you go about it, See? You just hunt and punch around enough till you know you've got your paws on something that will bring about excellent tone arm action. And then you don't use it. Well, what do you want it for? Well, just for this reason: If you run a session totally without tone arm action, your pc is going to be pretty miserable and he's not going to get any gain from auditing and his morale is going to go down, he's going to feel bad the next day, and you're going to get into a no-auditing situation with great rapidity, see? So we take this – this thing called a service fac; we hunt and punch around until we find something that can produce tone arm action. We know it can. All we've got to do is prepcheck it or run right-wrong on it or domination. The pc is trying to cognite on it, you know, and that sort of thing, and trying to run this thing desperately and get tone arm action and all that sort of thing. And you politely – you've found it, see? And for some reason or other you don't do anything with it. It's going to produce tone arm action, though.

Now, therefore, you can afford half of your next session, if not two-thirds of it, to flounder around where the GPMs are growing, with no tone arm action at all. And if you haven't gotten any tone arm action in the first half or two-thirds of the session, and you haven't really got anyplace or got your hands on anything and you made a few bum steers, you can still cheerily, cheerily, cheerily say to the pc, "All right, now we're going to run your service facsimile."

"Why the hell weren't you doing it earlier?"

"Well, that's right. That's all right. It's all right," and so on, see?

So, *pocketa-pocketa-pocketa-pocketa-pocketa*; get some TA action, TA action, TA action; the pc comes out of it feeling fine. He's got some auditing, right?

Next session he comes back in expecting to run "peanut boilers" or whatever it was; you start looking for GPMs, see? Half the session, two-thirds of the session goes by and you still haven't produced adequate tone arm action, you still got a service facsimile to run, see? So he gets a session, doesn't he? Everything's fine – his morale is staying up and everything is fine.

The next session – if you're going this long (you've just been a complete knucklehead up to this point, see?) – you do your other list, and you've ruled out a few things now and what you've tried isn't so good, and so forth.

Now, this one, about a third of the way through the session, you've found the goal "to be wonderful." And it went *tick!* And you said to the pc, "Is that your actual goal or is that an implant GPM?" And your search-out found it to tick every time you said "Is that an actual goal of yours?"

Well, we're not going to get that thing to rocket read because that is way back down the track. But we're going to go "What goal would oppose 'to be wonderful'?" And we're going to complete a list and we're going to find a goal and we're going to use this goal we find – it just ticked (the goal we find); just nice, healthy tick left in on the list, see? And we're going to ask about this goal. "This goal: Is that an actual GPM?" Don't you see? Going to go through the same routine as though we'd just found it, see, originally. "Is that an actual GPM? Is that," you know, "your own GPM?" and so forth. And "Is it... ?" so forth. And "Is it a present time goal?" And of course, naturally, it isn't, most of the time.

You got it all straight – don't prepcheck it or anything silly like that because we don't want it live, see? Now let's roll up our sleeves and do a new goal-oppose list, see, and it was "to be a schnook," see? So we say, "What goal would oppose 'to be a schnook'?" see? And we get "To be an evil being," or something like this, don't you see? That's pretty high-toned for present time. Do the same thing with it, sort it all out, don't you see? And we finally move him up. We don't care if we moved him through twenty of these things, see? We found this little tab out. There was one goal that he claimed was his goal, see, and we could get a tick every time we said "Is that your goal personally – not an implant goal?" He's always very interested in it.

You guys are very lucky. For instance, I can look right over here: Guy over there's got a goal "to understand," see? I can look over here; I know what goal you've got; just watching

your records, you understand? You know, because absorbed attention whenever you hit those implant goals, you know, boy! That ran, you know, boy, that was a – that was a good one. Got a big send out of this implant goal. Hell, naturally you got a big send out of the implant goal. It was your own goal, except that was the implant lock on it.

See, so you're rich. So anyway, you just take that goal – take that goal and say, "Is that your actual goal?" Tick, see? And so on. And do a goal-oppose list and move that thing by goal-oppose lists only, you see, up to PT. And you finally get something. "Is this your PT goal?" You're very suspicious of that because sometimes you can be three goals away from the PT GPM and it will still read "It's your PT goal." We just haven't discovered that other.

There's reasons for this, too, and I can give you the clue of what happens. When you've got the PT goal and you do a goal-oppose list against it, you don't land the guy up in the future with Buck Rogers, see? [laughter] So you just do your goal-oppose, your goal-oppose – a reasonable length of list, see? And you just list your needle clean, null the thing down – it ought to null easily – and you get your goal-oppose list item. And you've got a new goal; go through the same business with that. You could occasionally, you know, mess it up. You didn't get the right goal or you fell into an implant goal. But you'll sort all that out on a meter. So you just make sure that you got the pc's own goal and it's closer to PT than the goal you had last time, see?

All right. Now, when you finally get his PT goal you can still be suspicious of it and list "What goal would oppose it?" See? "To drown myself," see? That's a nice PT goal, see? "To drown myself." That's pretty real for PT.

All right. (Now, I don't say that'd be anybody's actual goal; that's why I'm paraphrasing it.) All right. So we list "What goal would oppose it?" and we can't make it. We can't do anything with this list because we keep developing more and more tone arm action.

We're not now developing less and less tone arm action, the way you do on a normal goal-oppose list, you see, if you're not up there. You're going to produce more and more tone arm action. This needle is going to get floppier and floppier and looser and looser. The pc isn't going to ARC break, mostly because you're listing toward what his ideas would be sometime in the future, don't you see? But you're actually unburdening this goal. And when you start running the PT goal, you just start running into more and more TA action, and more and more TA action, so you know better than to continue that list. When I'm saying "more and more TA action," I mean *TA action* – not .25 divisions every hour, or something like that. I'm talking about *TA action*, you know? You know, *TA action*. You know, it's *action*. You know? You know, action! Good action! Hot. And you start running and you find the further you run the hotter it gets. Now, you know you must be listing a goal-oppose against the PT goal, because there isn't anything there to list against, and all you can do is run out the PT goal.

You can also sometimes produce a blowdown. When you've picked up the pc's goal, you list against it, produce more tone arm action, you sometimes can produce a tremendous amount of blowdown by saying "Are there several of your own goals on this list?" *Psssssewwww!* See? You just picked up his goal out of thin air and started listing – it was the PT goal. Well, of course, you'll list backtrack goals off the thing. You won't find one of them. See, you'll just keep listing them. And you'll find out a lot of them will start reading little bits.

And the TA action is the thing to keep your eye on, though. You just – by listing against the PT goal, "What would oppose that goal?" – you just get more and more TA action, see? Becomes a fruitless task trying to find another goal.

Now you're real safe. The meter says that it's the PT goal, and the list and everything says the PT goal. Everybody knows it's the PT goal. All right. You want to list for the top oppterm. By this time, you no longer need this other service facsimile to windward, because you're producing so much TA action that you won't be able to record it anyway.

So the thing to do is to list for that top oppterm and get yourself a nice list for the top oppterm. Now, it isn't, probably, the top oppterm – the thing is truncated. So you really don't know and the pc doesn't know if he's started to oppose the goal yet or not. You can ask that on the meter and clarify it for the pc: "Have you started to oppose this goal yet? Or are you still on the side of trying to execute it?" One or the other will read, and you can tell the pc so he's got some kind of an idea of what to list for. But even that isn't totally reliable. But you could help a pc out to that degree.

You merely want the latest opposition terminal formed for this GPM or for this goal "to catch catfish" or "to drown myself" or whatever it is, see? And just have him list the thing.

All right, so he lists this and you get one. You null it down. You got to list it to clean needle – that's the main trick. And you list it down, you get a nice, clean needle and you null it. Don't have two rocket reading items on the list. All the listing directions apply here.

But I wouldn't worry too much about this or worry too much about whether it's the top oppterm, because – you know, I mean, don't beat the guy to death for fifteen sessions trying to find out if it's the top oppterm when it obviously is getting a hell of a lot of TA action – "Well, don't cognite yet. We don't know whether it's the top oppterm. Yes, shut up, now. Be very careful. We don't know whether it's – " so on and so on. When you actually hit the top oppterm the needle tends to go mad. I mean, if you hit the top oppterm and it went tick and you got no tone arm action, no cognition, I would think at that moment you probably didn't have the top oppterm.

This is the way to look at it. You know, the expected manifestation is that he's going to get a lot of action out of this thing.

All right, there you are, you've got the top oppterm now, and there it is. Let the pc cognite on it. One of the tricks of 3M2 is, after you've given the pc his item, you sit still. That's one of the tricks. You sit still and let him cognite for a while. When he kind of slows down on this whole thing, you put in your Prepcheck buttons – big mid ruds, just big mid ruds on this thing. Get as far as you can, or get as far as you can without annoying the pc. And call the item and you're going to see a gorgeous rocket read. And it's probably the first rocket read you will have seen in the whole operation.

See? That – real slippy. That's real fancy. That's cutting corners. That's driving with one hand at ninety miles an hour with your feet on the top of the windshield. You understand? That's going around every corner on two wheels. That's making sure of nothing.

Now, I did that whole operation I have just accounted to you – did the whole operation – in two hours and fifty minutes. I don't expect you to do it in two hours and fifty minutes, but I'm not talking a theoretical procedure which hasn't been done.

I didn't find the service fac as part of that two hours and fifty minutes. That took me closer to six hours. Something that would make the tone arm go *boom! boom! boom! boom!* see? So I could turn it on – unburdened the case enough so the case could run. But then, every part – other part of the operation I've told you, and (now listen carefully) the pc on no goals list had ever put the present time goal, including – including the operation I was conducting – had never put this goal on a goals list and didn't while I was straightening it out and checking it.

This was a goal that I had seen give half a rocket read four months ago. It went – . Just accidentally called it. It was in a channel of implant goals, and couldn't get the implant goal to run, and yet the thing went *pow!* see? I saw it do half a fire; couldn't get any – close to it. But ever afterwards, whenever you ticked it – called it – it ticked. Finally just said to the pc out of thin air, "Is that your own GPM?" Tick! And used it. It turned out to be the PT GPM. Interesting.

Now, that's what I mean by cutting around corners, because it's definitely against the law to give a pc a goal. Pc had never, at any time, had ever said that was the pc's goal. So that's definitely against the law and you shouldn't foist a goal off on the pc. And the only excuse I would have to do this is the pc did mention it at the time it went tick – you know, did half a rocket read. Pc speculated on it for just an instant, months ago, and it was seen to fire.

So there were several other goals in this category that had been presented up at one time or another, but none of those ticked as the pcs own goal.

You could call those off. "To disappear," see? "Now, is that your own actual goal?" – the deadest meter you ever saw, you see? To this, to that, you see? You know, "to be sexual," to be this, to be that, you know? Other kinds of goals that had from time to time been listed, you see? "Is that your own?" And all of them flunked; all of them flunked the test; none of them would read. And finally I remembered this other one goal that I had seen read and mentioned that and it went *ping!* And that was it. Never did see it rocket read beyond a half-slash four months ago.

So this is done fast and rapidly, just from knowing the pc or from examining the pc's record very carefully. Now, supposing you inherit a new pc? Well, he's mentioned goals and he's thought of goals and you look back through it again. And if you're real clever, you'll always draw a red-pencil box around any goal or an important datum of this kind so it's easily trackbackable to. See, that's very, very clever to do that on a pc's auditor reports, or print it big so that it's indicated well.

But in actual fact, I don't think the pc would have come up with this goal under interrogation. But there were several other goals, and on careful search I would have got one of those to read. Because when they were listed, laterly, they tried to do little quarter-inch RR slashes and they were the pc's actual GPMs.

In other words, here was a lot of points of interest. I'm just giving you the extreme case of an auditor, four months before, has seen a goal do a half-flash when the pc mentioned it – see, half a rocket read. And then the auditor just runs out of chances, just on an indifferent – you know, just shuffle out a few cards – the auditor says, "Well, I don't know. Let's see, what goals have I seen, what have I ever seen rocket read?" And pulls that goal out of the hat and calls it, says, "Is that your own GPM?" *Plang!* See? You get the idea? But this is just auditor observation of what has fired on the pc. Well, that's driving with one hand on the wheel and your feet on the top of the windshield on a curving road at ninety miles an hour. You recognize that? Because that's cutting it awful close.

All right, but what did one wind up with? One not only wound up with the pc's service facsimile, with this exact operation I've given you – not only wound up with the pc's actual service facsimile but in a position to run the pc all the way to OT. *Chugata-chugata-chugata-chugata*. See, twelve hours hence I will have that bank – the whole first GPM, every item found in it – all the way down and found back up to the top and cleaned up slick as a whistle, on the basis of an item every fifteen minutes, which is rather fast auditing but which can be done. That's one goal down.

But when you hit – when you hit that one RI, see, that first RI – when you really hit it right on the button – that makes all the sense there is to make. This accounts for all the present time restimulation. This accounts for everything. And if you're only looking for service facsimiles, that method I have just given you, I would very thoroughly recommend to you. Because it is safe to this degree: Supposing we had picked the wrong goal. Supposing on our goal-oppose lists we hadn't come anywhere near finding the next goal up. Supposing the many slips 'twixt cup and preclear had occurred. We could still turn around – put in the mid ruds for the session rather rapidly – turn around, get the pc some tone arm action before the end of the session. Pc would feel good, ready to go again, see? See, that's all to the good. See, you're working it both ends from the middle.

You finally wind up with it. And it tells you, then, that the reason we have not been able to find goals on pcs is because of the overburden of the top oppterm and the top terminal. Accumulating, as they do, all of the debris of present time, they therefore mask the top GPM or any other GPM we are looking for.

There sits the pc with the roof pulled in. And of course you can't get him to rocket read like that on his own actual goals. So his own actual goals have tended to stay a lost commodity. But we used to find them. Two or three years ago, we used to find them with a tick. Many a slip 'twixt cup and lip, man, but we still were able to find them with ticks. Now, if you find them and stack them in on an opposition – you know, "What goal would oppose (the goal you found)?" – and you're moving the guy on up to PT, moving him up to the PT GPM. You know now what it is. Now you list its top oppterm; you're going to find the pc's service facsimile. It's going to make all the difference in the world.

And all of that overburden is suddenly going to go *bluuhhh-floof!* And so, of course, at that moment you don't call the goal, even. Just ignore it. You just got the top oppterm. It's going to rocket read like mad. Well, anything that improved the rocket read to that degree,

you're certainly on the GPM line. You haven't got anything misworded. There aren't any mistakes here, man.

So you're going to oppose this thing; you're going to get the next one and you're going to oppose that; and you're going on to the next and going to oppose; next one, going to oppose; next one, going to oppose; and go on down to the bottom of the bank. And finally arrive at the bottom of it and you're going to clean that up. And you're going to list it right back on up to top again and you're going to see meter action, meter action, meter action, meter action, meter action.

Now he has a new problem. He has a new problem – brand-new problem now: He's against detectives, see – against detectives now. Can't read the newspapers without getting all restimulated – always coming into session restimulated. Terrible situation, you see? And we find that we've got a GPM something like that – "to be unlocated," or something, you see? We're running this and we handle it in the same way. Of course we've got it now. And by running it properly and running it on down you're going to be...

The only fault you have in actually running GPMs is not following a sensible routine. Overlisting, skipping banks, listing items backwards – these various traps and frailties and follies that you can run into; skip down over a whole GPM and start running the one below, leaving a whole GPM in place and then wonder why the pc is coming apart in the auditor's chair and not notice it.

But look, we have all of our lists – ARC Break Assessments. They're all data – assembly material now. You know what's going on. We got lots of things to prevent difficulties with, one way or the other. Used to do long, long, long, long, arduous, arduous, arduous, arduous – oh! terrible, aching, painful lists. A goal-oppose list of items to find a top oppterm, you see? Oh, my, my, my, my, on and on and on, a pc caving in. Everybody hated to do one of those things because it was too grim. Actually take the risk of asking the pc to do a "represent" on the top oppterm, see? "What might it be?" Do a list, you know? These things have simplified.

Doesn't say that you're not going to make mistakes doing it, see? Doesn't say that, because mistakes are there to be made. The picture I drew you yesterday is a picture of the bank and that's exactly what you're running. That way you not only find that datum which prevents observation in present time at any given instant, you also find the source of the datum, which is the goal, and all other data related to it and then all other lower goals on which it appends and all other actions of whatever kind. When you get to the other end of the line you got an OT. You're directly on your line.

That's how it is done. The only security measure that you take in it is to make sure that your goal responds as the pc's goal, and make sure before you start on a bunch of listings and fumbblings around, of one kind or another, make sure – very, very sure – that you got an anchor to windward: can you produce tone arm action on this pc?

All right. There's a very neat package of clearing. That is based on the exact essentials, the construction of the human mind and on the truths I've given you in this lecture.

Wish you luck with it.

Thank you.

Routine 4MTA

A lecture given on 19 September 1963

Well, you're very lucky to be at Saint Hill at this particular time. Very lucky. In times to come, why, probably this will be old hat – all be old hat.

What's the date?

Audience: Nineteen September.

Nineteen September AD 13, Saint Hill Special Briefing Course. Running the pc's actual GPM. A full and complete rundown thereof, including the new development of finding RIs by tone arm action.⁹

Once upon a time there was a pc and he was lucky because he was going to get out of it. But he'd been a very foolish thetan for a long time. He kept postulating goals. And he says, "The way to handle life is to get a very broad datum. A big broad datum and then I don't have to be there and handle life, see?" Which is your ultimate in no confront. "Don't want to handle life anymore, don't want to confront life anymore, so I'm going to postulate a goal 'to be a schnook.'" And he was. If he wasn't one before he postulated the goal, he was afterwards.

Now, I don't mean to be too hard on us because it would be equally self-accusative. But the mechanism which is in operation and which is the broad basic mechanism is just about the simplest thing you could possibly state. You'll have to probably do a lot of work on green Scientologists and so forth, trying to get them to understand what a confusion and a stable datum is. There were a lot of examples on this a dozen years – ten years, eight years, seven years, ten, five years ago. There's been a lot of examples of this kind of thing. But I found it was relatively difficult to teach. As a graphic analysis of the situation, I remember trying to teach it to HGC auditors at London HASI. And they had an awful time – they had an awful time trying to embrace the idea of a confusion and a stable datum.

Well, it goes like this. You, in actual fact, get less confusion by adopting one point of confusion as a stable datum. If you want to enter this thing of confusion and the stable datum – let us say we tear apart – and this is a graphic experiment which you can do – I mean you can show somebody this. You can tear apart a piece of paper and make a lot of scraps of paper, they're fairly light and float. And take this handful of bits of paper and throw it up in the air and when you've thrown it up in the air, it of course all exists one to the next as a confusion, don't you see? And then you say to the person you are demonstrating it to – pretend you're one of those pieces of paper, you see, and then that will appear to be motionless and everything else will appear to be in motion. Do you see how that would be? So, you can have

⁹ Editor's note: Per HCOB 2 Oct. 63, GPMs EXPERIMENTAL PROCESS WITHDRAWN, Technical Bulletin Volumes, Volume V, this process, R4MTA, was cancelled.]

a lot of motions going on and even the stable datum itself could be in motion, don't you see? But by adopting one of these scraps of paper that's floating through the air as the point of view of seeing the other scraps of paper, then of course you've reduced the situation by one scrap of paper which you at that moment of course pretend to be motionless. Do you see this? Do you see this? So it all starts with a lie. A stable datum in actual fact is in motion when it's fixed up like that. You see?

Now, you say you're motionless here on this planet. Now, I can count out to you by advanced physics – not as taught in universities but by real advanced physics – that there are at least a dozen motions to which you are subject while you are busy standing still. You are going through a dozen motions. This – this way, Earth is going in two different motions – just in the orbit and its own rotation – and it's undergoing a slight tilt all the time which precesses slightly. And then the solar system is in a tilt and then – it's tilting and at the same time it is moving. And you start adding this up – not trying to make you dizzy, but it's considerable rate of motion. You start in with the grossest motion, is the rotation of Earth, and actually you're traveling at the rate – just this very instant – you're traveling at the rate of one thousand miles an hour approximately. Just by reason of the rotation of Earth.

And yet you appear to be motionless. So, we don't then care about whether the stable datum is motionless or not motionless. You see? Or factual or not factual. See, we care nothing about that. But we do care that it is considered to be the one point which one presumes to be motionless. Now, that's a very crude example which I've given you and it's totally applicable to the field of physics.

Now, to go into what a thetan does and a little bit further than this, you get some more very complicated ramifications. This is all under the definition of space, actually. Space and then change which is time, and so forth. And space, of course, is a viewpoint of dimension. That is what space is and that is all it is.

Now, the point from which you're viewing naturally then establishes a perimeter of space. And if you want to give somebody a high old time, just conduct some of those ancient old Scientology experiments on the basis of "Space is a viewpoint of dimension." You can really turn on the winds of space and the whirr around him. Say, "Get the idea of planting two..." I did this to an architect not too long ago. He's used to working in a two-dimensional plane, you see. And it upset him no end. Get the idea – you know these flags that they put in golf holes – the cup, you know. "Well, get the idea of taking two of those flags and putting them out there in front of you," you see. That's one of the old experiments, you see. "Now take two more and put them in back of you." Of course, this just about tears the bank into ribbons, you see. Because you've put this individual who is used to viewing a sort of a flat perimeter, you see – he sort of doesn't confront it at all and you have given him a viewpoint of dimension. Of course, he immediately gets motion. He immediately gets motion.

Ceasing to view – getting very, very technical on you – ceasing to view develops the potential of motion. Why? Now, let's go over this again slowly. Space is the viewpoint of dimension. If you sit at one end of the room and look at the four corners at the other end of the room, you're going to develop yourself a sort of a pyramid of space from where you're looking at those four opposite corners of the room, see? Well, just doing that will develop motion.

Why? Because you don't do it. That is why. And in actual fact the entirety of the bank is a no-space proposition – as anybody who is busy listing with the mass coming in on him and the thundering thuds and so forth will convince himself of very rapidly. It's a no-space proposition because there is no viewpoint.

Follow this – this is very, actually, very comprehensible. You're making much more out of it than is really there. Now, let's have the pc sit in a room and look at the four corners of the wall at the far end of the room. Well, that's going to be a very dizzying thing. He's going to feel things move. Well, why does he feel things move? Why does he feel his bank shifting around? Because he will! If you don't believe it, make the experiment yourself this evening and you'll find out. You don't have to go to the extreme of taking two golf flags and mocking them up out in front of you and trying to hold them there and then two more golf flags and put them behind you. Put yourself in a cube of space – putting yourself in a cube of space is wow! *Zzzzzz!* Boy, the motion really starts going.

So, supposing – supposing we put in this room the person looking at the four corners of the far wall. That makes a sort of a pyramid of space between the far wall and himself, see. All right. Now let's take him away. Let's take the person away and let's have this piece of paper look at it. Well, you say, well the piece of paper won't see it – that's nonsense. That's right – that's nonsense and that's what the pc's been doing all these years. [laughs] Now anything then that develops in front of this piece of paper in its pyramid which comes from the far wall to the piece of paper is then uninspected motion in uncreated space, see. He said the space was there and then he is no longer making the space, so anything happens in the space, of course, is not confronted. Because he's got a stable datum confronting that space for him.

Now we take the piece of paper out and we put the pc back in. Because he's been gone, motion has been – potential has been developed in that area. And the second we put him back in again, it will start to move and right itself one way or the other back to space as a viewpoint of dimension, you see. He recreates the space, so therefore the potential motion in that space goes *bzzzzz*. Do you see? See how this is? Because, of course, when we put a piece of paper there to keep the space for him, it didn't and anything that happened in that area was uninspected and it was a mess. So, the second we put a stable datum in there to keep the space straight for him, naturally it apparently does so because it actually isn't creating any space. And this is a somewhat comfortable state of mind. He doesn't have to worry about this now. He's got a lot of subterfuges of one kind or another that he can lie to himself about, don't you see? At the same time he holds that piece of paper in there, confronting that space for him – and of course it doesn't confront – and therefore anything that happens in the immediate vicinity of that thing is uninspected, unaligned, unhandled. Everything that goes on, there's nothing looking at it, there's no space for it to happen in, there's no rationale of occurrence, but there is occurrence, don't you see, because there is some space there, because he made it originally. You see the mess that is coming up.

Now, we take our thumb and index finger in the form of one auditor with one E-Meter and we pluck out of that position that piece of paper. And we put the pc in it instead of the paper. He re-creates the space. All motion which was held in abeyance or stored in that area immediately starts occurring. We re-created the space of that situation and that time. See this?

Well, therefore, the idea of just throwing some papers up in the air and assuming the position of one of the papers and noticing if the rest of them then move in relationship to it and all that sort of thing, that's too simple – much, much too simple a description of confusion and the stable datum, see? Too simple. In actual fact, the space tends to collapse when we put that – assume that point of view, don't you see? Because in actual fact, with the stable datum we no longer have a point of view.

So the thetan, as he's gone along the line, has put in a false point of view called a "stable datum" which he hopes will keep the space and take care of that immediate area. And of course, it naturally by the rules of GPMs and problems and confusions, don't you see... He's here and this stable datum is supposed to confront that confusion, don't you see, and you get your RIs. Your terminal and your oppterm situation occur and this thing all gums up and the next thing you know, it's a solid black mass and it's that which you think the pc is finding very uncomfortable and that which the pc is finding very uncomfortable. That is what is happening. That is the situation. Now, you'll see this.

The pc starts going *vrrrrrr* and your E-Meter starts going up and gets sticky and goes up *rrrrrrk* and well, what are you doing, see? Well, you actually are – you got a piece of mass but you haven't found the position from which that space is being created, see, has been created in the past. And you haven't got him in toward the center of this thing, see, you haven't got the exact wording of it, you see, and that sort of thing.

So, you don't know what that stable datum is, but you're moving him in toward it and of course he's now viewing himself. So, the fact that he is viewing that zone and area of space, regenerates the potential mass of that old confusion and it doesn't discharge, of course, because he isn't viewing it from the right position. He's viewing it from over here, see, he's looking at it from over here. Of course, that isn't where it's being created from. There's a datum in there which is making all that for him. Don't you see? And he – he's over here, way over here on the right of the – you see, of the area, see, he's way over here and the datum is way over here, see, down toward the center of the thing. And so you get a stuck tone arm. Why? Well, of course there's nothing. The space isn't being re-created, so therefore there is no discharge of what it contains. It's just *ruummm*.

Now we move him back into the area and we say, "Hey, fella. Once upon a time, a long time ago, for reasons best known to you, you deserted an area in here which had an awful lot of confusion and you left a sentinel or something in there to create all the space for you and it didn't. When we get your attention back in there, it reactivates the sentinel. We've got to get you over here to the point which you occupied originally." The second we get him to the point he re-occupied originally we get *crreaaakk*, *brrrrrr*, *mmeeek*, *zzuurp*, *zip*, *zip*. Why? The space is being re-created and the energy potential stored in that space, of course, can now discharge.

So, we can conclude that so long as you do not have the stable datum for any extant mass of confusion, but have the pc somewhere in its vicinity, you're going to get a motionless tone arm. And when you move the pc over into the point of view from which it is being created, it is going to produce tone arm action. Elementary. If he isn't in the point of view from which it is created, see, no tone arm action, but you're going to get a stuck tone arm because

you're reactivating the area, see? You're reactivating it, but you haven't got the point from which it's being created. So it goes *crreaaakk* and stuck, see? Nothing is going to happen. And then you move him over and you get a little bit of happening – a little bit of happening. And when you get him over into the center of this area where he is really creat... was really creating that space originally and substitute the pc for the stable datum, see – make him go back and take a look at this thing you see – the second he reoccupies that point of view he gets promptly and immediately tone arm action. The whole thing blows up. Tone arm action will keep on going then, going then, going then until the confusion is discharged from that immediate area.

Well, now part of the discharge of the confusion of the area is finding out what the stable datum was erected to confront. And that's the other RI. So, there's another stable datum over there, but mostly a confusion, called the enemy. That's the oppterm. The opposition terminal, the enemy. And he conceives it to have a point of view. He conceives it to be a confusion. He has a lot of ideas about it and so it is all part of this space. But it, he thinks, is creating its own space and you'll have then two interlocked spaces. Because they are exactly and precisely interlocked, they float in time, because there is no motion involved in it. You have the stable datum of the oppterm, you have the stable datum of the pc. Those two points are staring at each other and have been staring at each other for a very long time. You move the pc into their vicinity, he reactivates some of this space, he becomes aware then that there (quote) "is something there." He is not looking at it from either the point of view of the enemy or his own point of view. Don't you see? And because he knows there is something there, you get your tone arm going up.

Now your next action – your next immediate action after this occurs – if you are moving the pc toward either his own point of view or the point of view of the enemy – his fancied point of view of where the enemy looked from, you see – we're moving him in right straight on top of where he had that idea originally – his recognition of the idea tends to give him a resumption – he tends to resume the point of view where he left the datum to make the space for him. Don't you see? Now, he tends to resume that point of view and the moment that he does, of course, you get energy discharge because you have created space. See, he is there, therefore he creates – re-creates the original space that was created there and you get *zoom, zoom, zoom, zoom*, tone arm action. If you don't put him in that exact point of view, you don't get tone arm action. You just get a high tone arm.

Now, there can be lock points of view which is quite interesting. Other little balls of massed energy cling to this big stable datum. Other subsidiary points of view. If you get him into one of those, you get a little blowdown and it will go back up again. In other words you can recognize – now listen to this carefully – you can recognize on the E-Meter whether or not you have brought the pc to resume the point of view of the center of that mass either of his own space or what he considered the enemy's space. And the second that you bring him actually to that center point of view to re-create that space in that time span, that meter just goes apart. Because there's nothing else can hold the space together, you see. That space now starts discharging, *zoom, zoom, zoom, zoom, zoom, zoom, zoom*. Loose. Everything's going to pieces. You can't get anything done, you know. You got too much tone arm action.

That's when you got him dead center on an RI – whether his own RI or the enemy RI. Everything goes to hell. That stuff won't stay together anymore, because he's re-creating the space on which that and all the locks occur. But if you have him merely on a lock, it simply disturbs it a little bit by resuming to some slight degree – you see, he's in close to resuming the point of view – and you get a little blowdown and then the arm will go up again, it will all rocket read don't you see, but you haven't got tone arm action as a result of finding it. You got that?

Now that in actual fact is a theoretical dissertation on the subject of what really should be redesignated now as Routine 4, because it's just Class IV, Routine 4M. But we could say Routine 4MTA. Now, it's practically the same 3M you did before. But it has this big difference. I have just been working this over. I've gotten my hands real dirty with this and I've looked it over and I said, is there any faster way that an auditor can absolutely guarantee that he will really get the RIs? Yes, there is. And that is by tone arm action, tone arm action. Now, you all know the phenomenon of finding an item and getting a blowdown. You give the item to the pc and the – your pc then says, "That's right," and you get a blowdown. If you did that, you found a lock. That's just a lock.

You should be – have two blowdowns. You should have a blowdown when he gives you the item on the list and then you should get fall on the next items, the next few items, fall, fall, blowdown, blowdown, fall. You see? And you list a little bit further and you got your tone arm action that's calmed down just a little bit. You go back and you check. It will be one of those items and usually the first one. The first one of that little series of blowdowns that you got.

Now you give the pc the item and you get a new blowdown. Only this time nothing can hold the meter together. It just goes *aaablalablabowbowbow*. You understand? You've pulled the plug out of the bathtub. You haven't just splashed some water on the floor. You understand?

Now, let me put this in more practical terms from your point of view. What you're looking for a service fac for and what's a service fac supposed to do? It's supposed to produce tone arm action. Why does it produce tone arm action? You pull it out of the way and the discharge will then go. Simplest way of putting it. You start getting this discharge of energy. That's because it's no longer there to block it. You're dealing with the same thing here, see? Now, if you get anything that's close in to a real service fac, anything that substitutes for it, you thereafter get lots of tone arm action. Don't you see?

Well, don't you think you ought to get even more tone arm action for a real RI? More tone arm action for a real RI? There are two things you can do. You can find a lock which gives you a *beautiful* rocket read. Nothing rocket reads as lovely as a lock. If you really want to see a classic rocket read, find a lock, that is not accompanied by a blowdown. And it'll just rocket read and rocket read and rocket read. Beautiful. Dial-wide. Gorgeous thing. Takes off with a beautiful spurt and has a curly tail on the end and so forth. Marvelous.

If you want to demonstrate to somebody what a perfect rocket read is, I plead with you, don't find a service fac or a real RR or... I don't mean to infer that all service facs should rocket read – what you're calling a service fac or can use with one isn't an RI. Find a lock,

find a lock on a pc's GPM. Start the list and see an RR and then don't go on listing. See one RR that is not then followed by any blowdown. Oh, it might be a little 2. – you know, .25 division drop. Little, little drop, doesn't amount to anything. And just don't complete the list. Of course, the pc probably will ARC break but that's all right, you can tell him to shut up while you demonstrate it to the class. Don't you see. Every time you say this – you see, the real item is "a sultan," see, that's the real item and it was going to come up in about six or seven more items listed, see? And you found "eunuch," see, on the list and you saw it RR, see, and you just stop the list right there. "That's it. Thank you! Shut up." You know. "That's it. All right. That's fine."

"Now, class, we're going to show you a real rocket read," see. You say "*eunuch*" *psewwwwwww!* "*eunuch*" *psewwwwwww!* "*eunuch*" *psewwwwwww!* Gorgeous. Marvelous. Nothing more lovely. It'll keep up days later. You put in the mid ruds on it and it'll fire, if you never complete the list. See, it's – just go on. Why? It's getting its power from the actual heart – the actual point of view – it's getting its power. And that power is leaking sideways and of course it will never wear out. It will just go on rocket reading endlessly, rocket reading, rocket reading, rocket reading.

All right. Well, let's take pity on the student a few days later and let's take pity on this person for demonstration purposes and let's finish the list. This is the way it will behave, see. "A eunuch..... scimitar," "harem," "camels," "grand wazirs," "sultan" – right away *psewwwwwww*. That moment that he says it, see. And then he will say "palace," "date palms," "desert," "Arabia" – tone arm action here, see. Every time he says one of these things he gets another fall or a blowdown. Gorgeous falls, gorgeous blowdowns, see. Well, you go on and he also says, "dates" – that didn't do much; he says "dates," "oil wells," uhmm – "NATO allies," you see, and nowhere – nothing – it's going on up now, see. It'll go up. If you keep going, you can get it pretty high – you can get it pretty high, you see.

You'll notice the pc is starting to look kind of black and creaky and torn up and so forth. Don't pay any attention to that, just go on, list it, you know – you get up – I think you can probably get it up to 6 if you tried. Why? Hell, you found it, man. You found it. What told you you found it? Because you got consecutive, now get that carefully, consecutive blowdowns. That patch of stuff can't hold together.

You actually don't find, now don't get this one wrong – you're not listing in actual fact to find an RR. You're listing to find a series – two, three, four, five – of blowdown items. You want a series of these things – you want a series. You're listing for a series. As soon as you find that series, you've done it. The only thing you have to do is list until you don't have the TA action quite so much. It's coming up. But you really actually don't have to go that far. All you need is that series, see. That series.

And therefore, although it's very nice to have your tone arm actions over on the side – you'll very shortly, by the way, have meter computers, that give you total TA action. We just had a conference with Fowler and Allen and they're building one and they equip onto old type meters, too. The new meters will be equipped with them. Don't know how fast it'll take them to get these things out, but they're up over the horizon here someplace. But that will give you your total action for the session. And if you're so busy sitting there writing figures that you

haven't got time to write BD or B, you know, for blowdown and F for fall, see – if you haven't got time to write your tone arm commotion – you're so busy, you see, trying to say, well, it went from 4.25 to 4.1, you see, and then it went from 4.5 to 3.5 and so forth – if you're so busy tracking figures while trying to write items, too, you'll soon find yourself lost in the dust and sand, you see.

So, the real BD that you want, the real blowdown that you want to record is how far the thing blew down totally as a result of having found it as an item. You could mark that in after you've given it to the pc, you see. Therefore it takes some mention of where your tone arm got to and so forth. But that isn't what I would read by. That isn't what I would read by. I would say... in the first place a blowdown isn't .25 divisions. Nothing ever blew down that little. You understand? That's not a blowdown. Not with this – I'm still trying to call it R3M – this 4MTA. That's not a blowdown. We want a blowdown! The biggest one that you're going to get is about two divisions. That would be considered awful darn good and rather rare, I would say. You know, maybe you got every eight, ten items – RIs that you found – you had one that on giving it to the pc you promptly and instantly got two divisions of blowdown you see. That's rather extreme.

.5 divisions I would consider minimum – minimum expectancy to be called a blowdown. So that leaves us up to about .75 or 1 division and so forth as what you would call commonly a nice blowdown, see. Phenomenal – 2 divisions. Minimal – about a half a division. Less than a half a division you can't read it without a microscope anyway. You understand? Go ahead and keep all the tone arm record that you want that is compatible with recording so that you can find out what happened. So when you put blowdown on something, well you know, this thing went down, see. This hit the silk, you know. Oh, I can see some auditor sitting there quietly, quietly, quietly auditing along and the needle moves and he gets .1 divisions of motion of the TA and mark that a blowdown. Now, that could leave you with a totally erroneous impression of the whole thing, you see. So if you're going to mark something with a blowdown, let's make sure it blew down, you see? Let's not fool around with it.

Now, the whole point is simply this. This is all you really have to get. That if you pick the RI – whether a terminal or an opposition terminal – out of that bank, if you pick it out, there ain't nothing holding the bank together. You understand. At that point there's nothing holding it together. You're going to get tone arm action. And if you pick out a (quote) RI (quote) (unquote) and it all stays together beautifully well and there is no tone arm action and you go on thinking you've got the pc's RI, then you're going to get into one of the wildest cat races you ever saw in your life, see. Because you're going to have locks opposing locks and locks opposing more locks and locks opposing more locks and you're going to go astray, you're going to be listing into the next GPM and over the hill into the next bank and – oh, you're going to have 5,682 items per GPM and oh, it's just going to be so involved that you, and so on. Furthermore, the items won't make much sense on the line plot. Locks, locks, locks. See.

But you list by tone arm action, you get an entirely different view. Now, you want a consecutive series of blowdowns. Now, we will settle for steep falls on the next two or three items, that also cause a tone arm action. Once you reach in to that bank and pull the plug,

well, naturally the next three or four items the pc gives are going to be in violent motion. Because the only thing that was holding them still was the big one.

Now look, you're trying to find service facsimiles to get tone arm action, right? All right. Find RIs for the same reason, while you're doing the pc's GPM and you can't miss. That's all the tone arm action there is to see or have. The most that you will get. What is the service facsimile of the pc. It is simply the top – either one of the top RIs of the current GPM, see, there it is. So, why do you think stuff out of the main bank would operate any differently? It operates just exactly the same. Every time you reach in there and pick up a great big handful of RI and yank it out, wow! Everything caves in, which means your tone arm is going to move and it's going to move right now and it's going to move fast. And he gives you another item – of course, he's sitting there in the middle, now he's reoccupying the space that he occupied before. See, he had it occupied with a stable datum. But now, he's reoccupying that space. So, he gives you the next one and that goes *booorrrrr* and he gives you the next one and that goes *pow!* See. The next one *boom!* The next one *bang!*

Well, how's it going to operate if you don't find the RI? Beautiful rocket read and the next one's going to go *click* and the next one's going to go *tsk* and then it's going to go blank for a few. Why? It's all in place. You haven't disturbed the bank any. He can live through lots of these being found. See the difference? You haven't in essence found anything that tore the bank up, so of course, if you didn't find anything that tore the bank up, you are not going to get tone arm motion. That's all there is to that.

So then, when you're going down the line listing *pocketa-pocketa-pocketa-pocketa-pocketa*, mark in those RRs, ooh, that's fine. There's nothing wrong with marking in RRs. You sure better had. You see something RR, mark it in. See? But auditors sometimes miss RRs. But it's very hard to miss a tone arm action. So, you notice this thing isn't centered. So, you better put down BD, see. "Sultan" – BD. Now, you'll get a lot of blowdown, a lot of items blow down a half a division so you just mark that. It's whether or not they produced a consecutive blowdown of items that is important. See, that's the important thing. So, if you've got "a sultan," you see, "a palace," "a kingdom," you know. And it was "a sultan" – BD. And "a palace" – fall, BD, "a kingdom" – BD, fall. See? Hey, we're riding up on this thing, you see. And "oil-well revenues," you see, fall. Now, it's going to be real quiet.

Well, I don't know, I don't know quite how you shut the pc's itsa off and sometimes they feel better for going on listing for a while. They get very engrossed and that sort of thing, because now you see they're occupying the point of view, you see. "Hey what am I doing here?" You know. "I haven't been here for a long time. And I'm very interested." You know. And here it is and so forth. "Gee, look at all this space." You know. And they'll go on. "Gold-plated Rolls-Royces," you see. "Turbans." "Diamonds," you know. "Robin's egg rubies," or something you know. They'll go on and go on. "*Good! Good!* Thank you. Robin's egg rubies, thank you, thank you. That – yeah, yeah, that's it. I think we got it." See. ARC break? No. [laughs, laughter]

But the point is – the point is, the pc gets so darned involved that they'll list their TA way back up again and you can go on, and on, and on, and on. And you start listing them around the corner and they'll go into other banks. You didn't go around the corner on the first

consecutive series of blowdowns. You hadn't gone around the corner. You hadn't gone anyplace, see. You're right there. But you keep going on to the next consecutive series of blowdowns, well, you probably missed an item. And you go down the next consecutive series of blowdowns and your TA starts looking awful high now. And then you'll start ducking around the corner and going into another bank and all kinds of wild little ramifications. This thing is now getting high, it's getting sticky. The pc's got bad sen. The pc's got bad somatics turned on by this time. And you say, well, just to be on the safe side, let's list all the tone arm action out of it. Well, that datum was perfectly fine for source lists, but it sure doesn't apply on any other kind of list. As a matter of fact, even source lists don't have to have the tone arm action out.

Now, this is all in the effort of shortening up auditing. The whole effort is how fast can you run a GPM. See? I ran one in three hours and a half last night. Whole thing. And I was riding right up on top of the thing and it turned out that the only mistake I made – the only mistake I made going down the line was I ignored a consecutive series of blowdowns, not having the technology, of course. And I finally sat back and said, you knucklehead, and backed it up again and got it in there and squared it around and it was all right. I said, well of course, of course, you're pulling the plug out on this stuff and naturally you're going to get tone arm action. I hastily thumbed through everything I had and I found out you always had this condition – you'll find you'll always had that condition.

If you're working on the right goal, if you're working on the right RI and the right list and opposing it right way to and it's all going along fine and you haven't skipped any items, then you're going to have a consecutive series of blowdowns that's going to last for two, three, four items. See. It's going to be commotion. When you see that commotion, it's one of those items, probably the first one. Undoubtedly the first one, because that's the one where you took the plug out. But you might not have noticed that one as it went by, so you take the one just before that.

Now, as far as neatness of RRs are concerned, the real RI does not have a neat RR. It's a disintegrating RR and is blowing up in your face. The thing is disintegrating all over the place. Actually, you really can't tell if it's an RR. It looks like steep surge or fast fall or what is it and it's so wide and so long that you just see the start acceleration – if you're lucky. You don't quite know when it's going to take off. You don't get a chance to see the end of it usually, it's too long. And the tone arm motion is falling too rapidly. Don't you see? You never see a good looking RR when you find an RI. They just – that's on an actual GPM – they just don't look good. They're too big, they're too long. They're falling to pieces as you look at them. Charge is blowing up in all directions.

So, you come back and you call the thing. You're going to get a nice – nice looking read of some kind or another. It's going to read. Now, here's the next little precaution. All of your listing stuff applies, but there is a precaution, that if you start nulling and you get two items to tick, any two items on the list to tick, well, you've missed. You shouldn't have two items ticking on a list, not for this technique. Not for 4MTA. No, no, no, no – you don't – you don't want two items ticking on a list.

You read "eunuch" and it ticks. And you read "date palms" and it ticks. I wouldn't pay any more attention to the list. Why? Well you've obviously left the plug in. The tub must still

be full of water. They didn't release. If "eunuchs" and "date palms" didn't get out of there and if they're still reading, you obviously haven't found the RI. See, it's elementary, my dear Watson.

You see the rationale? The area still must be charged up if something else beside is ticking. You actually don't need much of a test. Read a couple of items that you've seen RR, you see both of them tick, man, you haven't got any more RI on that list than the man in the moon.

Now, if you run into trouble on this, you've done something knuckleheaded. And there are very few knuckleheaded things that you can do. Most knuckleheaded of them is – is keep on listing with a high TA which is going higher. Pc has got heavy mass and is pulling in and it's all very uncomfortable – well, you just missed an item. That's all you did. You just went right on by.

Now, it's very easy to list an opposition to something. See, some series of blowdowns is the only frailty of it and find yourself in the wrong GPM. So this step is absolutely necessary. You can miss an item and find yourself wrong to. Thing doesn't list well, energy pulls in on somebody, see. You've skipped a pair. You've gone around a corner, you see and you've skipped a pair. Doesn't behave well. Isn't operating according to the textbook, see. Well, you better get busy. Did we skip an item? *Yorp*, we skipped an item. Well, let's go back and find that item, see. Not leave it there. Because this blowdown phenomena will not continue to occur if you've skipped items. See, the bank is still very well cohesed. There's some point of view the pc has not taken. So, as a result he can't assume the next point of view. He's sort of stopped right there. So, if it isn't working, what I'm just telling you, and this isn't occurring, then you've done something goofy.

Now, the other way you can do something goofy is to oppose something backwards. Ordinarily you ask the pc if the terminal had pain on it. You say, "Did that have pain on it?" and the pc said, "Yeah," and he'll point out the point where it had some pain on it. Well, that was a terminal. Heat, cold and pain is actually all terminal stuff. Winds of space, sensation, that sort of thing, that's your oppterm test. You don't need to strain at this too much. You normally can run it beautifully just on the – just on the terminal side without upsetting the pc at all, by just finding out if he had pain on it. Because if it was a terminal and you're operating on a center RI, of course he had pain on it. Don't you see? See, you keep your check there and you practically never list one backwards. It's quite obvious where you are in the bank ordinarily. The line plot is making sense and everything is going along gorgeously. You know where this is.

One of the main things that will get in your road as you're doing this is just: if it doesn't go right, you've done something wrong. I mean that is all there is to it. And the sooner you recognize it isn't going right, then the sooner you can ask those burning little questions like, "Have we listed one wrong way to?" And "Have we skipped an item?" "Are we operating an item that isn't part of this GPM?" That type of question, you see? Now, there's one question – and you can be suckered in on this because a pc is very often very obliging.

You must run this little formula on an actual GPM. It is totally missing, you see, on old 3N, now 4N – on old 3N, now 4N, it's totally missing whereby you check up and check up

your goal and all that sort of stuff. But that is *vital* in running an actual GPM, that you do all those little courtesy steps. They – all the little *bing-bang* steps, you see. "Would a sultan oppose the American government," or whatever the oppterm was, you see, that you're listing on. Check and make sure the oppterm doesn't tick. If the oppterm still ticks, man, you just haven't got the RI, that's all. Don't argue with it. You just haven't got it. And naturally, why haven't you got it? Well, the list is incomplete and you haven't had the proper series of blowdowns and all that sort of thing. Or the pc is busily listed around the corner. Well, if the pc is listed around the corner, he'll list back around the corner again if you let him just continue the list a little bit. Actually a pc sometimes will list himself down to seven banks below where he is. Not bank by bank, but he'll give you a couple of items from the seventh bank where he is and then give you items back in the bank where he's operating.

Well, unfortunately you once in a while can get a series of blowdowns from the seventh bank. *Aaaaaahhh, hahaha*. And the best way to check that is you say to the pc, see, "Would a sultan – how would a sultan relate or – would a sultan relate to the goal 'to be rich'?" And he'd say, "Oh, brother. Ha – ha. Yeah, yeah, yeah." All right. The pc says, "Well, let's see *da-da-da-da, da-da-da-da* ... Well, I guess it could, yes, yeah, it could," and so on. Don't be a fool, man, you've got a item out of a wrong GPM. Pc can't tell you, "That relates." Bang! Just like that. See. If he just says that, "Oh, well, hell yes, what are you asking me for, you idiot," you know, "Sultan. Gonna be rich. You're silly. I mean – ha-ha. Of course. Naturally."

Sometimes you think it's very obvious and you shouldn't ask the pc these little courteous questions that fit in at this particular point which are all given in the rundowns. See, you could omit these. Nonsense, man! That is the biggest test there is to make sure you haven't gotten in the wrong pew. You get – you get an item like "titillation." All right. Good. Now, you say to the pc just *rat-a-ta-tat-tat-tat*, how would that oppose and so on. "Well, it would oppose it all right." And you say, "All right. Now, how does that 'titillation' relate to the goal 'to be rich'?" you see. "Well, let's see, if you *mph-ha-mp* so on and so on, well it – it does." Brother, watch it. You haven't got anything out of that GPM. You may be fifteen banks to the left. See. Maybe completely wrong. It's got to fit, right now. Bang! See?

Now listen. If this 4MTA doesn't run by the book, it's old 3M, it's all done with the same steps, but if it doesn't run by the book, you've done something goofy. Something is wrong, see. The technique isn't wrong. The pc isn't different. Nothing else screwy has happened. This GPM is not constructed in some different fashion, you understand. See, you've done something screwy. And the only screwy things you can do you can actually plot out of the picture of a pc in a GPM, see. You thought you were in *this* GPM and you're actually in *that* GPM. You thought you were listing an oppterm and actually you got a terminal. And you thought this was the next item, actually you skipped an item. Don't you see? And you've done something goofy here, see. You could plot them all up. They're just elementary things. You just landed in the wrong viewpoint of dimension.

Naturally, in the midst of harems and sultans and that sort of thing this item "titillation" obviously, it comes up, it occurs to him. He actually pulled it out of some other bank. It's been lying in there for some time, see. It's not a neat plot. It's in from somewhere else. And if it doesn't go right and it doesn't go by the book, you've done something wrong. And if

any RI you find doesn't blow the bank up, as far as you're concerned at that moment, you haven't got an RI. You got a lock. And you start opposing locks with locks and I wish you "lock" because you'll need it. [laughter] Anyhow ... [laughs]

Now, actually you'll prob... there's far fewer RIs in a GPM than has been thought. There's a possibility that this is the case. You start finding nothing but RIs, see, with an exclamation point! You know, every time you get one it blew down and then was followed with a steep falling item and a blowing down item and a steep falling item and a blowing down item and you – you got it, see. You go back and you call one of these off, you'll find there's just one fire on the list, see. That thing is probably firing sloppy, too. Only one of these. See. There won't be one or two of them firing. One of these fires sloppy. Usually the first one that started the commotion and that will give you a beautiful fall or a surge or a blowdown of the TA or a rocket read or a commotion. See? After you get it all tamed down and prepcheck it, see, if you got it all prep... tamed down, you put in your big mid ruds on it. You got it all straight. You got it all calm. You got it all straightened out. Most of the confusion has blown off this immediate area, don't you see. And man, the pc has cognited all over the place. It's nice and calm now and so forth.

Now, you say it. See. "A sultan." *Psewwww!* You'll get that rocket read because that's the charge – that's as much charge as is left on it now. And that will continue to be left until you've opposed it or it's been opposed for the next RI. That's the only charge that's left on it, see. There's no more residual charge mixed up in it.

Another thing is, you don't want to give a pc an RI that turns on a lot of mass. You hand him this RI and it's some opposition terminal and some kind or other; "federal drug addicts," you see. Opposition "to be happy." You see. Goal to be happy. See. Federal Drug Addicts. And he sits there, you know – you get a little blowdown, you know. You say, "What's the matter?" "Oh, nothing's the matter and so on. There's all these pictures and these ridges and so forth and there's this black mass lying alongside of my head." You haven't got the item – you haven't got the item. Too much mass on it. Now, all items have a tiny little bit of mass on them or they wouldn't be items at all. But when you move him into the center of this thing see, why, he shouldn't have the mass sticking to him. It should be going *bzz-zzz-zzz-zzz-zzz!* see. And if you've got mass plastered all over his face or his head or something like that, you obviously have him about half in. See. You got him over here some place. He hasn't moved into that old viewpoint of dimension and knocked out that stable datum. You see. He's only halfway in. So, of course he's half ridge and half not ridge and he's messed up to that degree.

If you just consider this what it is, that the cohesion of the bank is a problem of the confusion and the stable datum – and you don't get off a lot of the confusion, you haven't got the stable datum – if you use it the same way as service fac, it all makes beautiful sense to you.

Now, of course the whole GPM is held in position by the goal. But the RIs are major exclamation-sized locks on the goal itself. But they are RIs in their own right. And each one of them gives this phenomena. And unless you find them, you won't get a blowout when you get to the bottom of the bank and find the goal.

You've got to list for these and you've got to crisscross and you got to bring them down. Every one of them is going to behave just exactly what I've been telling you about an RI. One of the mistakes that you can make – now listen to me loud and clear please – I don't care whether you test the goal going down the bank or not, if the RR's lessening, you haven't got the pc's goal. TA is going to hell. I mean you've got something wrong with the goal. You know. This is some elementary type business that an auditor is accustomed of running into.

But you're going on down the bank and you call the goal off occasionally, it ceases to read very rapidly when you really find an RR... Is. When you're really finding real RIs this goal ceases to read at an awful rate of speed. When you get down to the bottom, that goal exists as an RI totally independent of its influence on the remainder of the bank. And this is one of the goofiest and one of the strangest phenomena which you ever wanted to see. It won't fire as a goal, but it will fire as an RI. That is utterly nutty. Just exactly how that degree of differentiation can take place, I am completely flabbergasted. But it does. I just got through watching one. Call a goal you know. Call it and call it and call it and talk it and prepcheck it and worry about it and make sure that we're on the right goal and everything you know, and there's nothing firing because it's all blown apart, see. And is calling the goal and calling the goal and calling the goal. Not even a flick, just a perfectly smooth needle. Next item the pc put on the list was the goal as an RI, *pow!*, see. Spooky, you know. Thing just fires its head off. It's an RI now. It ain't a goal anymore, it's an RI.

Now, you turn around and take that firing goal and you use that fire as a goal oppose to the next list, don't come telling me how your pc is feeling kind of creaky on 4MTA, you see. Don't tell me, because you haven't heard what I'm about to say, so hear it. It not only fits down against the next bank, that goal as an RI, see. That not only fits down against the next bank, you see. But it also has an item over here that it opposes. And the way to go about it is to find the item or find the goal, but always find both. That's the most marvelous way of missing an item and lousing up a bank anybody ever did – is not realizing that the goal – "to catch catfish" let us say, is a goal for the whole GPM, influencing every RI and then in its own smug, little armchair self is sitting there as also an RI. And has an item which is holding in place as an RI. See, I don't care if you come down the bank on your usual zig-zag of listing and you finally wind up with this – with this goal, where you say, well, all right, that's the whole GPM. No, no. That's the goal as the RI. You got down to the bottom and it's still firing. Now, if you do a goal oppose list with it, you're in trouble. That – if you do a goal oppose list and go off and leave its opposition RI unfound, you'll be in trouble, because you've missed an item.

Now, very often between two GPMs there will be a floater pair. They're quite cute. We've got the whole GPM below. Its top oppterm, however, is below. This is quite interesting – unlike Helatrobis Implants and that sort of thing. We know a lot of things that the boys who originated those other – the – I mean the – pardon the boy – the punks, excuse me, I didn't mean to be... – originated those things, didn't know about. And that is, not always, but sometimes between two GPMs, there will be a pair of items which aren't related really to either one, which give you the reason the pc postulated the goal. See, he had a reason to postulate it.

Now, you've run one whole GPM – one whole GPM you see, comes up here to the two top oppterm. Its own – pardon me, its terminal and its oppterm – see, that's a whole bank.

Then there's a pair of items and then there's the goal as the RI and the item, you see, above that which opposes this and we're into the other bank, see. So the goal as the RI quite commonly will come down and hit one of those interim items. See, one of those in-between pair. And the goal as an RI being on the bottom of the bank when you get who or what it would oppose, it hits this interim pair. It doesn't hit the top oppterm of the bank below. It hits this interim pair. See, it hits the opposition of it and then you list against that one that you've just found and you find the other terminal which is across from that. And then when you list this other terminal, you get the top oppterm of the next GPM. See, if you don't know that... it's not always there. That's what's bedeviling about it, See? Some of you were neat and some of you just sloppy, you see.

It really just depends on whether or not the top pair of a GPM were adequate enough excuse to postulate the next goal. And if they weren't, why, you'll get then a couple of items of a goalless pc. See? And it'll be – you'll get some ran... a random pair of items. It'll be – the oppterm is "boredom" and the terminal is "to postulate a goal" or "to have a game" or – that won't be "to have a game," it'll be "having a game" or something like that. Or "having no game." And man there isn't even a GPM within miles of the place, has anything to do with a game and has nothing to do with boredom or anything else. There they sit. They really belong there.

So your goal as an RI, if avoided and simply used as an opposition, its RR will disappear. Because of course, it's being listed against "What goal would it oppose" to get the lower goal, don't you see? And that'll disappear. And you'll sit there and you'll have a sleeper. There's no trace or lead-in now to that pair of interim items that sit between those two banks. And actually, goal as an RI is just as alive as Punch, man, it's just sitting there with total dynamite. You prepcheck it for a little while. If you prepchecked it as an item, not as the bank, you see, why, it would start firing again, probably even if you listed it for two hundred items. You know, listed it down into the next bank for a goal. "What goal would it oppose?" "What goal would 'to catch catfish' oppose?" see. It'd still be sitting there.

So you can set up a situation where your pc feels terrible, where you've got the goal as an RI alive, but the fire, you see, has been vanished by doing your next goal oppose list. But it's still alive. It's still there. And you've got the two interim items which gave the reason why he postulated the goal. They'll be floating there completely unobserved. And you've got three hot items between the present time and the bank you're working. You'll have three items above you, all the time, all the time, all the time and boy, will you get in trouble. Pc is ARC breaky and he *unemememaunn* and you obviously have the top oppterm because, God, you couldn't get any higher on this next GPM you're doing, you see, than practically the goal itself as an opposition, you know. You couldn't get any higher. And you'd leave three RIs. So that's a common mistake that you can make.

Now, let's just sail into this as a fast résumé of how you go about it. Let's assume that you got a raw meat pc. Raw, completely raw. How are you going to find his PT goal? That's easy. Find his service facsimile with R3SC. After you've found four, five or six (quote) (unquote) "service facsimiles," you'll finally wind up with one that is hot enough to find a goal with. You just list goals against it. And you can say, you know, "What goal would it be part of – what goal of yours would this be part of?" Any – I don't – that doesn't give you an exact

wording. But I'm telling you what you're trying to find out, see. So use this fac... service facsimile to find out what the guy's goal is. Now, the funny part of it is, is you can find four, five, six of these service facsimiles before you actually reach one which if listed – if you listed goals against it, will give you that present time goal. It's quite interesting. Terrifically overburdened, you see. Bank in terrific overrestimulation from PT and all that sort of thing.

You can count on mistakes, so you found, oh, all sorts of divergent things, you see, you found marriage and you found sex and you found wisdom and you found investigating things and you found eating and... You want to look for the – not necessarily the one that gave you the most TA, unfortunately. You want to look for something that looks like it might lead into a goal. It'll be something the pc had *lots* of problems about. And the best indicator is, if you find a service facsimile for which the pc gives you, in answer, an automaticity of problems – you're heading right in there, man, you're riding right in. So, you take it or its first cousin, something right there and you'll be able to find the pc's goal with it.

You know what I underst... what I mean when I say an automaticity of problems. You're fooling around with this pc just using R3SC you see, and you're fooling about trying to find TA action and browsing around and you're combing out present time, some kind or another, and pc all of a sudden hits – hits the village square. Now, the pc doesn't tell you about the village square but tells you an automaticity of problems about the village square. Just goes *brrrppp, brrrppp, brrrppp, brrrppp, brrrppp, brrrppp, brrrppp, brrrppp, brrrppp, brruu...* "Yeah, I hate to tell you, but you can't get down, there's too many people in there, you can't get your car in there and so forth, and all the people around there. I'll tell you you can't get near the stores. I'll tell you there's an awful lot of difficulty in this particular area, because you see you can't get near the stores. And the police are always on the corner and so forth. And you try to get through there and it's got no traffic light. Nobody will do anything about it and there's – so forth and the pavement's all rough, as you walk over it with spike heel you sprain your ankle every damn time, you know. I mean – and – and so forth." I'm not – I'm not now just – just clowning, you see. I'm giving you this dope. I mean the pc goes problem, problem. *Da-daahhh!*

You're sitting right on top of his PT goal, man. You're sitting right on top of an RI. You must have come in close to this RI, you see. Or he wouldn't have been making that much space. When he makes this space, he gets his head knocked off with the problems. You haven't got the RI, but you've got its cousin, man. Now, you start running any kind of R3SC process, you see, on what you've just found – the village square is what this thing... You opened your mouth and said the village square and you got *poppeta-poppeta-poppeta-poppeta-pop*, mortar fire on the line. Well, that's all there is to that. That's easy. You know that the goal is somehow or another associated with the village square.

It'll be totally unlikely, but if you asked for goals listed against the village square, see – so what kind of – you know, what kind of – what goal would have something to do with you and the village square – I don't care how corny your listing is – you'll probably find out its – they'll tell you eventually, you see, "To never go to church." And you get a nice tick on it and that thing can't be driven out. Don't you see? You got a nice ticking goal. You examine it. Is this the actual GPM? Is this properly worded? Is it differently worded? You know, and is this

present time? And so forth. Or is this an earlier one? Go through a bit of an analysis of this particular character and it'll show up and the pc had never seen the fact that the village square has a church at the end of it, see. And the top RI, you see, isn't the village square at all. It'll have something to do with – entirely different. But you just moved in on a lock that close in, you see. It'll probably have something to do with tombstones which you can also see, you see. Or hymns or something – Just, village square – hymns, you see. They don't compare. So don't try to get too logical about this thing. But you give it to the pc, you've triggered in close enough that he'll fire off his goal at you. All right. That's a raw meat pc.

Scientologist – somebody who's had a lot of auditing over a long period of time, I've already given you the formula for this in the last lecture. There is hardly anything to improve on. "What goal you found is terribly interesting, is that your actual GPM, all right, what kind of GPM does it look like? All right. Let's list what goal would oppose it. What goal would oppose that? What goal will oppose that? It seems to be in present time. Is this your present time goal? All right. That's very fine. Good. Let's give it the most likely top oppterm for this particular thing," see. And that fires and we list it and it starts blowing down and you're on your way.

You run into trouble, doesn't go by the textbook, you've done something wrong, you see. You've taken the next to the last one, I mean, or wrongly worded goal or you've done something else, see.

All right. So you got the pc's last GPM. That's what you want, you got that and so on. You got the top oppterm for it. Well, that should have kicked a hole in the meter, see. Big TA action when you've found that, because hell, ifs the biggest piece of service fac you could possibly lay your hands on. It'd be the PT RI and that's what's got all of his present time res-timulation in high gear. You oppose that. Bang! You've got his first terminal. There should be pain on that, big bunch of tone arm action. All right. Just carry it down. Now, you oppose that with a list. You get your next opposition terminal and you oppose that with a list, you get your next terminal, and you oppose that and you get your next opposition terminal, and you oppose that and you get your next terminal. And every one of those things ought to blow, blow, blow, charge, charge, charge, charge, action, action, action, action, tone arm motion, tone arm motion. And you're running – you're running this process on somebody with the tone arm at 5. Brother, you have done something incredible, not just wrong, incredible. See. They just carry it down, you find the oppterm, top oppterm, whatever it is. Of course, you don't know how complete this GPM is. First one. All the rest below that are complete. But... everything else is complete, but the first one. And it may be complete. You're kind of on the spot with that one, though you're not too sure where it ends. And it follows, of course, the form and pattern of the earlier sample GPMs, like the one "to scream." That sort of thing. That's what they look like.

And you just list them down. You finally get down to where you get the goal as an RI, see. Well, about halfway down the goal itself starts... stops firing. Then it fires again gorgeously as an RI. Now, at the point of your departure you may, in having listed the pc up the line, found the goal just under this. If there's any way to know what this goal is without listing another list, use it. Don't monkey around. You listed opposition goals up to it, you see. Well, heck, you found the guy's goal. It's the one "to go to church." You see? It's – this one is "to

live a saintly life." You see. It's something like that. And you found that GPM. Well, list for its top oppterm. It's the first action you take on that. But remember to dispose of the other GPM that you just left. Let's get its opposition, see, to that goal as an RI of the one you just left. You understand? You found the next GPM – you better do something about the one you just left. So let's not corn around with it.

I don't care whether you find the goal first or you list the thing out against an RI first. I frankly don't care which one you take. Probably it's more comfortable on the pc not to find the next goal yet, but just get that goal as an RI opposed, see. That's probably the more comfortable action to take on the pc. But sometimes to get that thing opposed, he opposes it much better and more accurately if he's got some idea of what the next GPM is. That's the only reason I say there's a variation of technique at that point. But if you can, just avoid finding the next goal or something like that until you need it. Don't throw any more in restimulation, you see, on the pc than you have to. Take it easy.

All right. Now, let's take that – take that bank. Now, you've opposed the goal as an RI and you've got all the other items, they're all written up on a line plot and it all seems to make sense. You go over that line plot and you read them all off to the pc. Any one of them ticks or suppresses, you keep checking for Suppress, Suppress. Just keep checking for Suppress. Suppress is the one you want to find. Because if you find one ticking, there is something wrong. So the thing that keeps them from ticking is Suppress. Sometimes "Fail to reveal." The three that are suppressive in the extreme, of course, are "Suppress," "Careful of" and "Fail to reveal." It isn't really terribly necessary to get all those in on all those RIs. But you're looking for something wrong with one of these RIs and actually the thing that stands most in your road is it's suppressed. And you go all over that bank and everything you've found in it. You go right on up that bank. And you get the pc to assemble that bank and you work with the pc. But you're trying to get that bank put together. And you're trying to find out if anything ticks. Because if something ticks, you got something wrong.

Now, take off at that point and do an analysis sheet. Let's find out if you've skipped an RI or this isn't the RI or there's a missing RI. You just found a lock or – you see. Let's find out what's wrong at this point and let's straighten it out. Whatever it is wrong, let's straighten it out and go on back up. And the most usual action is to have left a pair at the top or more than a pair at the top. Two, four, six pairs at the top of a GPM. You might have that many pairs missing at the top. You get into mischief. So you want to check that over. Ouija board your meter. You know the Ouija board is something that the spirits are supposed to guide and it tells you the answers and spells out the name of the man you're going to marry and all this sort of thing. Good old 1890 – it was developed the same time as medical psychiatry and so forth. Has about the same degree of reliability. But when I say Ouija board your meter, you'll find some auditors doing this to the extreme, you see. Are you? Is it? You see. They're asking for the answers out of the meter. And they sometimes ask the most unlikely things you know that a meter never could tell them. You see. The data just isn't on file you see. Like, "are we going to have a happy session," you know. [laughter, laughs] But you can ask – you can ask a lot of questions.

You can ask enough questions of a meter to find out actually whatever is wrong. Have you missed items? Have you done one wrong way to, you know, has an item been listed

wrong way to? Anyway, you just straighten up that bank, add any additional items that you find in it, assemble the whole thing, make sure that no extraneous items come from some other GPM, you see. Make that just as neat as you please. And you're going to just be blowing charge, blowing charge, blowing charge, blowing charge all the time you're doing this, so it's quite worthwhile, you see. Well, you just clean that thing up and sweep the street, man. Don't leave a single shard or a bit of glass or anything else around there. Just neat that up gorgeously. Go on down – if you haven't found your next goal, find it. Repeat the same operation, of course, on your next GPM. Work from present time back. Never work from back to present time.

Never go on the basis that if you just find the earliest item, the earliest GPM, the pc's going to be in beautiful condition because you're working – I'm afraid that's going to be too unreal and too upsetting and too out of line. You'll be crowding the pc into present time. And none of the problems it solves have anything to do with his present time existence. So you've left the totality of his present time restimulation sitting on his head while you're trying to run the hottest stuff that he's ever come near. So, that's a serious mistake. You must work from now to then, never from then to now, except of course, when you're straightening up a GPM, you of course come back up the same GPM.

Now, when you make that real neat you'll find out your needle gets awful, awful, awful floppy and the next moment that you get into the next and actual GPM, your needle gets very stiff and the tone arm goes up and you have lots of trouble because now you, of course, have put the pc into a viewpoint of seeing it's there but not into any viewpoint from which he has really viewed it. And he's now in trouble, he's got somatics, his neck hurts, he wishes he hadn't quite started the session and he probably hasn't and you got most of your troubles all over again.

Now, working it that way, you can cope with the idea that the earlier you get the most – more savage these GPMs are. So your pc is in good condition all the way. He's coming up in a gradient sufficient to handle the degree of charge that there are – there is to be found on these things. You work it the other way to and of course you're taking this little tiny pc who's gone way down scale and you're putting him back in a great big cavern. And he feels mighty timid about the whole thing. You work it the other way to and you're going to find that your pc stays pretty happy all the way. It doesn't take very long to run these providing you run them against tone arm action, that you're very neat and you clean them all up all the way, too.

The speed of doing it is proportional to the accuracy it is done with – the accuracy it is done with. You have to keep working at it *pocketa-pocketa-pocketa*. But if you start finding lock RIs and you start listing items out of wrong GPMs and this GPM, you'll find you'll spend three sessions wishing to God you hadn't been such a knucklehead as to make the mistake you made in the first place because you won't make any progress. See? Actually, the fastest way is the simplest way, is the easiest way, is the textbook way and the first moment that it doesn't run like that and so forth, start bloodhounding the whole thing. [sniffs like a dog] "Are we going to have a happy session?", You know. [laughter]

Thank you very much.

SUMMARY I

A lecture given on 24 September 1963

Thank you.

Well, we – back in the running here, where we were a year ago. Twenty-four, is that it?

Audience: Yes.

Twenty-four Sept. AD 13.

Now, this is what you're going to get your talk about today. Summary.

Now, you may not be aware of the fact, completely in a concrete way, but from the 24th of July, the lecture of the 24th of July, on down to Thursday's lecture of this week, you have a complete summary of modern Scientology, on all levels and all processes on those levels – the tapes from 24 July on forward until the tapes of this coming Thursday, which is the 26th of September. And in those twenty-five lectures you have a totality and summary of modern Scientology. Nothing lying outside the province of those lectures has any great validity, as far as cases are concerned.

There's been work over a long, long period of time, all of that work has value. It's flabbergasting how much material exists, all the basic material of course is of great value, and quite valid. As far as technical application is concerned in the resolution of cases, you have from the 24th on through.

That also happens to include presentation of Scientology to the public. This is the direct and definite result of the sprint I started on in January to speed up research along this particular line, and the material which you have in your hands now is workable beyond all – anybody's dream on the subject.

It does not mean that a case is easy to handle, but it means that if you know this material and can apply it, you can handle a case. The finite results are beyond anything anybody had ever hoped for.

This comes oddly enough at a time when psychology and other nineteenth-century materials had thrown in the sponge, and the head of London psychology department the other day made the announcement that mental treatment did not work and nobody was ever made well by any mental treatment of any kind whatsoever. Interesting, isn't it?

They're trying to make wrong in the direction of our continued development – as one of the more fantastic chapters in the area. First they said you know, nobody ever changed, and we proved to them that people did change. So they haven't... then they said, well, they could

change people, and then they threw out and invalidated all of their own tests. And now as we're walking forward and so forth, why, the word is out that no psychotherapy works.

There is no such thing as psychotherapy. This from people who make their total living of psychotherapy.

I suppose they're going back to advising advertisers how to trick people with subliminal advertising, which was their basic function anyway. Psychology lasted its time out, and is mostly devoted today to getting somebody fired who wasn't nice to him in the canteen by giving him a bad personality report or aptitude test for his job. That's cynical, isn't it? But, actually the subject must have some use, and I think maybe losing people their jobs is about the highest they ever could have attained anyway.

It's really regrettable where psychology is operating on the part of industry, regulating this, because – regulating jobs and hirings and aptitudes – for the excellent, excellent reason that they will defame themselves you see, they'll get in trouble and then mental healing will get in trouble. But they're now in a position where they say, they're saying mental healing, mental treatment, things you can do with the mind, these things don't exist at all. This is the most remarkable thing anybody ever heard of, since that is the first basic on which they were founded, of course, that something could be done. They have no reason for existence.

Now, let's take off along that line. You of course have no existence as an auditor unless you can bring about a change in a case. That's terribly fundamental. That's terribly fundamental. Now, we're in the driver's position today, of being able to say that if you have followed the rules you will get a change in the case. Now, that is a horrible position to put a practitioner in, because the practitioner is then hung by the fact that if the pc didn't get a change then it must be the fault of the practitioner in some fashion or another.

Remember it can also be the fault of the pc. Somebody goes out and spends all night in the bar and that sort of thing and comes in for his session, somebody who is breaking rules in pushing his PTPs and overstimulation in present time up to the zenith-zenith-zenith, naturally is influencing his own case, too. I had an example of this the other day. I did my mail, US mail, Sunday, and it isn't that anything new or strange has happened, you see. But a terrific amount of restimulative material of one kind or another, which I immediately couldn't get at, that is to say, I couldn't get at the source of the situation right at that moment, I got restimulated and the first hour or so of my session was just about the lousiest mess I think I've looked at for some time. And for that to happen to me is a bit of a clincher.

There we were also running slight errors and so forth in the put-togethers of the GPMs I was running. But nevertheless, I had been working very hard and it stacked up a tremendous amount of correspondence and that sort of thing. Was trying to take care of situations I couldn't take care of very directly or immediately. And I just merely felt sorry for the Washington staff. I just got to thinking about sitting there and being slugged with all this bunk that's being handed out and around, living in a highly restimulative atmosphere, a governor – a government which has apparently turned insurrectionist and is against the people and so on. And it isn't that they're doing anything really different than any other business in the United States.

I made it my business one time or another to find out how bothered other businesses in the United States were and I did a little canvass and I went all around to find out, and they're bothered, man, they're bothered. Perhaps more than we are.

So that it isn't any direct action, it's just that they've got too much government, they haven't got anything to do, there isn't that much crime, so they have to invent crime, and so on, and they do. They invent it for the little shopkeeper, and for this person and that person and so forth. And I just felt – started feeling sorry for these people. Got restimulated to the degree of living in a lawless type state or government at the behest of the powers that were, and I – it simply just upset me to that degree that I went straight from doing that folder, you see, straight into the session, see, bang, bang, you see. Trying to cope with a bank, feeling sorry for the Washington staff, you see. Cope with the bank, you know, and so forth, and so on. Terrific – this condition, you've had it all on a present time problem, of course, but I was looking at something very directly because it wasn't a present time problem, see, beyond the fact that one can't immediately say [snaps fingers] and straighten it all out, don't you see?

There was no problem connected with it, it was just restimulation. Pure and simple, of one kind or another. Situations which exist which you can't do anything about. Don't you see, it doesn't even have to be a special RI. You see, get the idea? You don't have to blame it on the particularities or significances of a bank, don't you see, it's just you are a being, you have certain pride, certain belief in yourself, certain confidence, certain feelings that you should be able to do things in life. You have some kind of a belief or feeling that the sphere in which you exist should be calmer because of your existence in it.

You find yourself incapable of immediately effecting a result to straighten something out, and bang, restimulation. It doesn't have to be an RI on the basis of, well, you don't have to have an RI "government" to be restimulated by a bunch of guys shooting at you. You get the idea?

So, the upshot of the situation is that a pc has a great deal of bearing on this sort of thing. If I'd had any sense whatsoever I let – would have let it cook, you see, till next week, or something like that. Instead I do all this mail, I get all restimulated, I go into the session, the auditor has a horrible time. An hour or so, man, we're really climbing the wall, see? Too much – too much split of attention.

Well, this becomes a very important factor in processing. Extremely important. And it is so important, it is so extremely important, that this has been the – you probably think you have seen many breakthroughs. You have. You have, undoubtedly. But you think – you think that they lie hither and there. Actually, they lie right here in this direction. Finding the pc's own goal and his present time GPM and then finding as you can the two top RIs which is his service facsimile, becomes feasible, and running the actual GPMs of the pc becomes feasible, only when you handle that which hits the restimulation square on the head, which are the present time RIs which is also the service facsimile. Those two top RIs of the actual GPM that are riding in present time are the service facsimile. The interreaction between those two RIs – that is the service facsimile.

So you can approach it through R3SC, you can scoop this stuff off and get tone arm motion. You're bound to get tone arm motion in that area. Now you can go ahead and destimulate the person to the best thing that you can.

Now I'll get on with the rest of this story about this particular session. It took us until the next session to find an RI. You see, it took us until the next session to find an RI that even vaguely fitted this situation. But because one was simply – you know, something fitted the situation. And immediately we pulled that out, the restimulation diminished. But the RI wasn't even really directly connected with the restimulation, don't you see.

Now, the present time environment and the present time RIs are what you as an auditor are handling. And let's not get off into a whole lot of balderdash or monkey business, because that is what you are handling. I don't care what process you are doing. R1C or any process that you are doing. You are handling the two top RIs of the pc's last GPM.

Now, the reason it is possible to return to the technology which was first represented in the form of R3M2, and which is carried forward consistently under the heading of R3 and which is to be found in all the records under Routine 3, don't you see, consistently, and which has now got to be upgraded because of the new classification levels to R4 – that technology was difficult to manage simply because we didn't hit the present time GPM goal, and the two top RIs of that GPM.

Now as long as you tried to do the rest of the bank, the earlier goals, earlier GPMs, do earlier patterns, all of this kind of thing, your poor pc is sitting there being hammered to death on his present time GPM, *bow, bow, bow, bow, bow, bow*, and man, he hasn't got enough attention to put it back down the bank at all. You could almost redefine Clear, only you can't achieve it technically, but you could define it theoretically as somebody who had the two top RIs destimulated or out. Just the two top RIs of the last GPM, you understand?

Now, that GPM has got maybe twenty, thirty, forty RIs. See, it's got those reliable items. Twenty, thirty, forty reliable items. There they are, great, big cracking reliable items, you know, bong! They make a 2-12 item, you know, look like a – look like a – about as offensive as an ant at Sunday school picnic, see. As compared to a jet bomber landing in the middle of the picnic table, see. The difference is about of that magnitude.

So, what are we going to do? All processing then cones up against the two top RIs, the two top reliable items which are sitting in present time, from the GPM which is sitting in present time. Now of course that GPM stretches back and these GPMs – the pc's actual GPM plots against time, and the time is pretty vast for one GPM. It's also very interesting. They measure, I suppose, at the absolute minimum would be thousands of years per RI. The minimum. Now look at the cracks – how long do you think it'd take you to run out all the engrams of the past two hundred lives of the pc? How long do you think that would take? Oh, brother, you wouldn't be able to do it. And yet that whole period is probably covered by one pair of RIs. That's fascinating, isn't it?

Get those out of the way, get those things destimulated, and that whole area ceases to be aberrative, just like that. Two hundred lifetimes' worth of engrams gone up in smoke. Get some idea of the order of magnitude. One RI. Not just the whole Helatrobis Implants, but the

Bear, the Gorilla, Helatrobos, right on down to the Train goals and the between-lives implants. One pair of RIs.

Now, of course some of you have been diffident, and some of you have managed to put two or three in during the period, and here and there you're going to find somebody who was able to put a whole GPM in during the period. He was thinking about it all the time or something, he was worried about it, see. But as a general statement, I'm just giving you the order of magnitude of aberration. There's the jet bomber landing in the middle of the picnic table, see, as compared to one ant eating one crumb at a tree remote from the table.

See, a slight difference of value. And you've got two of these confounded things, sitting, riding in and forming in the pc's present time area. Either one of those things has more qualifications and significance than the whole concept of the reactive mind as advanced by Sigmund Freud.

It's quite interesting, the early definition of the service facsimile carried in the glossary section of, *Advanced Procedures and Axioms* in the glossary, the glossary section, the definition of it, carries the – I – carries the description of an RI. That is the embryonic description of a reliable item in that little definition. It's not more than a paragraph long. And it says the pc's doing it, and it says the pc's holding it in place. Quite – quite – quite remarkable. But that still holds good, see, we haven't veered off of that. Out of all the pieces and bric-a-brac of the mind, what is it that you have to hit? And that choice of target has been the problem in research and application of Scientology. That choice of target. What is the target?

Now naturally, one of these RIs is so capable of dispersing the pc, that research work on it always finds you veering. You get in toward it, and you veer and you get in toward it and you veer and you get in toward it and you veer, and you get in toward it and you veer. So of course it's been very hard to isolate it.

Aside maybe from some OT at some vast period of the backtrack, some vast period in time, who wrote – who found out, knew he was doing it perhaps, and found out the exact character of goals and RIs, and perhaps left it in a document form, which was then picked up by implanters. Aside from that, except for that, as far as I know, the data is not known in the universe. See, they – it must have been somewhat on that order, because if they'd developed Scientology with that information, as they very well could have, they wouldn't have had to go in for implanting. See? So they went a different route.

So the information must have come to them in such a way that it didn't de-aberrate the thetan. So therefore you can apparently find, just on a guess, because implant GPMs exist, you see, and because they did have something that looked like a GPM, then one must then assume that one can find these things without de-aberrating them. One assumes that you could sketch one out or do something like this without taking the charge off of it in some way.

Now you feel that that would be pretty difficult, and actually it would be very difficult. Be fairly hard to do. But nevertheless it's apparently, as I would say, probably been done. Otherwise they would have had something that resembled Scientology. And if they'd had something that resembled Scientology it would have won out along the line. Because theta always has more force than entheta, regardless of what you think.

It isn't that it always wins out, and that sort of thing. You actually have practically no experience with a theta communication on a social level. There practically isn't any. You say, well, if this fellow led such a good pure life, and that sort of thing, why is he getting his head kicked in? How do we know that he just isn't leading a totally withdrawn life, introverted, that is inviting the inflow? See? How do we know this? Well, we don't know this. In fact we look it over and all the evidence is that people have redefined what a good being is. A "good being" is somebody who doesn't communicate. I think the stories of Harold Bell Wright and his strong silent men which were appearing there at the beginning of this century, marvelous stories. These fellows are strong and silent, you know. They never said anything.

These fellows were set up as paragons of virtue. That isn't theta. That guy must have been crazy! Used to irritate me like mad when I was a little boy. I'd read these books, and they'd – I'd – my hair would stand on end, you know? I'd be horrified at this, you know.

I remember seeing an early silent movie one time, and the parents of some child were in vast trouble. I think I was all of about six. And they were in vast trouble and this thing was getting more and more complicated, see, and more and more complicated. And I finally was getting awfully bored with it, and the two companions I was with were more than bored with it, you see. And I remember explaining to them that the whole thing was silly because why didn't they just communicate with each other?

Now therefore, one very seldom sees a straight communication line. And the power of Scientology based on straight communication lines and that sort of thing – you see, over the years we've had a history that apparently, well, it permits somebody who was in Kansas City to write me a letter which was in my Standing Order Number 1 lines, yesterday, he had attended some original lectures, and he'd followed my ups and downs, mostly downs, see. I look at this, you know, with astonishment.

I suppose, when you – when you read an AMA regulated press or that sort of thing you might possibly get this wild impression, you see. Unless you looked at the growth graphs of organizations and other things, over the years. And you actually have to remember how it was maybe in 1955 or something, to give yourself a real shock. And here it goes.

Now you think this FDA thing, and income tax nonsense and that sort of thing in Washington DC amounts to anything. What it amounts to is I just saw – the kids are – staff there are upset, and it made me sad. About all. They haven't got a prayer. Those poor guys have been climbing the barber poles all over America. They've been trying to find somebody who would really complain about Scientology. And they released their witnesses the other day; we've not heard of them, we have none of these people in our – in our Central Files. We have no record of most of their people. But one of them was an FDA agent who attended class for some time and then blew. Name was Quinn.

And he – they advanced this as a witness and so forth. Well, now, what can that man testify to? That he's actually seen a meter cure somebody? No, not in an HCA class.

Actually, we're gradually – we're gradually mounting up a very heavy casualty schedule against the government. Very heavy. The FDA has now been forbidden to make such raids. Hmm! The uproar which has come about in general is rather historic up on Capitol Hill. People are nervy about this. You did a good job getting letters in to the government and that

sort of thing, you see. The attorney who first handled it has slowed down the government case like mad because the guy studied it for a long time and then went down with a very serious illness. He couldn't bring himself to attack this. The casualty figures are growing, and they still aren't getting anyplace.

Well, they're going to have a trial of some kind or another, and they're going to hear a lot of things. They've been going all over the place trying to find some evidence. But sitting back of that, I've already seen this function several times. They know they are lying, and they know, the more evidence they collect, that they are attacking something which is good and decent and beneficial. And they know they have to be lying in their teeth. And when they start somebody to investigate it, he comes up against the fact that makes him wrong. Makes him wrong. So he gets sort of enturbulated and savage and, so forth, but he keeps trying, but he just gets wronger and wronger the more he tries, don't you see.

And we have had far more serious things on the backtrack than the FDA. One of the things you don't realize is the old man sat there somehow or another and kept the lid on. In the early years I was very discouraged from – I mean everybody advising me never to say anything, see, about these things, never put in any itsa line on the stuff that was happening because it would enturbulate everybody. I think it was a terrible mistake, but in the early years I was overridden. You have to defer to somebody else's opinion on these things now and then, particularly in that zone and time. But much more serious things have occurred which had greater threat value in all directions. Why, we've had Federal court actions to seize every single piece of research, and so forth.

I have been sued for using my own name on the material. There are very serious actions along the way. None of these things succeed.

So if anybody had ever developed Scientology, you wouldn't have the universe you have. That's what you have to adjudicate about the thing. It'd be perfect – with perfect aplomb we could import it into Russia. We could give them all the plots for implant GPMs, we could give them all the material, we could give them everything that you could possibly think of, could give them the material, let them study it, let them fool around with it, let them fool around with set techniques. We must have techniques however that they can understand and do in an elementary fashion.

I was very interested – an old-timer was down here this afternoon and she hadn't been anywhere near Scientology for a long time, and she wanted to know how to handle her – one of her relatives who was upset with her mother's death, and I was very interested to be able to give her the itsa line on solutions, you see, and decisions with regard to her mother, you see. That's all she'd had to do and keep the girl talking. She dug this at once, that seemed to be a very reasonable thing to do and there it was, you see. Terrifically easy communication. Communication of a process. No complications involved in it.

Well, that's what makes theta, is actually the ease of reach, the ease of the communication of what you are doing. Entheta, enturbulated theta, becomes enturbulated only by going through numerous vias. It's vias which enturbulate the thing, because it no longer is a straight line. Don't you see?

I had a big problem the other day. Why don't thetans use weapons? That's quite a problem. I've been trying to solve it for some little time. Why don't they use tools? I got very intrigued with this. Why don't they use tools, and so on. And I remembered one bloke I collided with, much to my own disaster, by the way. A long time ago. And he was using tools. He was using a scoop of some kind or another to make a sea. He was a tool-using thetan. He really did me in at that particular time. I was in a queasy enough state to permit myself to be done in.

But, there he was using tools, and I wondered why we'd never used tools, you see. And I got to thinking about the cave man could defeat the tree-top man because the cave man used stone tools, you see, and the tree-top man wasn't using tools, and I could figure out – was trying to figure out how the free thetan, you see, lost his dominance, you see, and exactly how he sort of lost out. Huh. I've been trying to go over this and go over this. You'll find this is quite a problem. How has he lost out, don't you see? What are the factors involved with it?

Well, this is way up ahead, see, this is Scientology V. You have to know answers to the situation. And I found out finally why he doesn't use tools and why you never use tools and why you don't like to use tools.

In the first place, you don't need them. And in the second place, if you get the idea of using, well, let us say, using an ice cream scoop, see, over here, in the ice cream, see. Well, actually you've got to withhold the length of the ice cream scoop. Get the idea? See, you're holding back just to that slight degree, see. All right, well, let's take another one. Instead of knocking somebody's head off who is in your road, you pull a gun and shoot him. Do you realize that you just figure it out – this is a little fun to make a test on for yourself. See, you get the idea of doing something to somebody on a via. And if you go through the mechanisms of trying to do to something – to somebody on a via, you'll get the idea of withholding ability. And you suddenly realize that you're on a withhold. And then you begin to realize that you must be withholding ability. You're withholding the ability of knocking the guy's head off yourself. Why are you doing it with this gun, see?

No matter how intriguing and entrancing it might be to use a gun, it is still a withhold. You see, you start studying this out and therefore, thetans who are in pretty good shape have never used tools. And those who have used tools make up populations such as convict planet Earth, which probably is far higher-toned than the organization and political organization that runs this planet. All of which is speculative.

But as far as that's concerned, tools, tools appear to be so good, but actually bring about a downfall. How do you – how do you figure this? Well, why is it, why is it that there are races on the planet right now which are apparently stronger and more powerful than the white race? See, white supremacy. How white supremacy – they now talk of as a myth in most of these publications and so forth. Well, it isn't, but they talk about it like that.

Well, what happens? What happened? Well, actually you have a – you have some racial virulence you see, amongst those who haven't been corrupted by a lot of tools and dependencies. You see, you still have some vitality. I don't care if these fellows... it isn't just necessarily the colored races. Let's take – let's take some Berbers or something like this. And they haven't been sitting everyday looking at a television set, you see, and that sort of thing.

Now all of a sudden we move those fellows up within reach of the possibility of achieving some political dominance, don't you see. They have vitality, they have ideas. They have these various things, and they give the appearance, you see, of virulence, and, you know, muscles. They – they give this – they give this appearance.

Now, culturally – culturally, the democratic system opened the door, but in actual fact no aristocratic system... it isn't – it isn't actually a problem, you see, in nationalities. Not a problem in nationalities at all, or a problem in color or a problem in any of these things. It is simply a problem in what group is the least corrupted or decayed by modern civilization.

Now if you stop and think for a moment, the Greek civilization once dominated the entirety of Earth's civilization. It was well before the Roman, and the extent of the Greek civilization was probably wiped out by Roman history rewriting.

These blokes wiped out – the Roman wiped out the actuality of Greek history. You have to actually go out to India, and get your feet dirty with the red clay, to really find out that the history book, as you read in Western civilization, isn't correct. The – Alexander the Great didn't go charging out to India and say, "Oh, too bad, I have no more worlds to conquer," gather up his army, and come all the way home, and kick the bucket or something. This was maybe a shallow look at it, but in actual fact Greek administration was established in India. There was not a shadow. They were once administering India. What's this?

That's quite wild. Look at the sway and zones of dominance of early Greek civilization. And it was huge. It was big. And those commun... it was big enough so those communication lines still exist today. You go down to Athens, they think they own the world still, they haven't found out they haven't. They speak of "Our colonies in Spain. Our Iberian colonies..." The guitar, Greek instrument of course. That's right. They have sort of this atmosphere. And you look around, you'll see that there's an awful lot of Greek flags on the high seas. Tremendous shipping interests are Greek.

The lines, and shadows of the lines of that ancient civilization are still in, and if you don't think they've made the grade in some directions, Greek philosophy absolutely dominates all Western thinking. You're living in the shadow, you see, of an ancient civilization, and if you said today, if you said today, well, the Greek is a menace to world peace or something like this, and everybody would look at you sort of blankly. What a – what a weird remark to make. Don't you see, because the Greek civilization's not militant.

Greek went through a tremendous period, a tremendous period of conquest and dominance and her people were very, very down to earth, crude, rugged, tough, one-blow type gents. See? These were tough boys. And they spread their dominance out through the known world at that particular time. And then somebody started working them over, and the next thing you know they had this and they had that, and one of the reasons why the Greek nightclub, the idea of nightclubs is Greek, you see, and you get the reason why they are so adept. You by the way, go to a nightclub in Athens, you get – you'll get far better entertainment than the best one in New York, and this nightclub in Athens, you see, they think – what are Greeks – stand for as a floor show? Well it has to be a very, very high-level show, and it has to go on for hours and hours and hours and hours and hours. New York, they come out and do a tap dance and disappear, you see. That's not – that's not the Greek.

How did they get to this high level of entertainment? Must have been their last method of conquest. They can't any longer knock the invader out, see. But when he arrives they can say, "What a good fellow you are! And have a good entertainment. And have something to eat. And some nice wine." And the guy said, "These Greeks are nice people." That was the last method of defense. Do you see this? They could still handle somebody on a highly introverted basis, and so forth. They hadn't entirely disappeared along this particular line.

But there is – there is the – probably the greatest civilization on this planet. And look how far down you might conceive it now, because if I said this was one of the greatest powers on earth you would say, "What the hell's he talking about right this minute?" You see?

You fly over Greece, you see their denuded hillsides. You see – you see the stuff couldn't grow there anymore, that's all. And you look at their coasts, and the harbors and that sort of thing. It's shot, man! But what's going to happen?

You see another great empire, the Roman Empire, I don't know if there might even be some political official on Earth today, still he calls himself the Holy Roman Emperor. I think there possibly is one, isn't there? Who is it, the Pope or somebody? Or did it die out with the Hohenzollerns. I don't know. But I'm sure the title is active. I'll bet if you dreamed up in all directions and looked everywhere you'd wind up with the Emperor of the Holy Roman Empire, you see. Quite fascinating.

Various aspects have taken place, but Roman civilization is far more present right at the present moment than this. You see, you've got this cycle now going, the Greek civilization, you see about where it is. The Roman civilization is perhaps a little more so. We still had a – it still could resurge in the form of Mussolini and scare everybody to death before it folded up, you know, in World War II. It's still got a little power in it. You still have Roman lines, you see, out.

It's interesting that in England they're trying to get rid of their Roman Background. They say, "Well, it happened – it was a long time ago, and it's all different," and so forth, and up and down the street, walk these fellows, direct descendants of Romans, you see. You look at them, their faces, and everything, see, walking up and down the streets, same size, same everything, you see. You go around and you look at the ideas of British liberty and this country has got the greatest background for jurisprudence and material of that particular kinds and legislative system, and so on. It was just the furthest thing from Rome in which Roman jurisprudence was implanted. And it survived a long time. The Magna Carta, other stuff, you see, that's the old Roman Empire, you know, just going along, going along, doing its business, stable data, on this subject.

Of course, they have to kind of get rid of that. Kind of have to get rid of that, because it's a zone and area of dominance. There are various other reasons why it had to be gotten rid of, because this started to work when the Angles and the Jutes, and so forth, came in here. They had to get rid of this thing, and they had to establish first a Danish and then a Saxon civilization and so on, and they had to keep saying, "It isn't a Roman province, it belongs to us!" And everybody would say, "Heil." See? "You're the conquerors." And they never really did knock it in the head.

And these – this thing keeps revolting, because these ideas were good ideas, don't you see, and these ideas keep reaching forward in time, they had useability. And you have a very strong civilization here, which in its turn was a great empire. We're just now at the period where it's trying to give it away. I don't know why it's trying to, but it is. I don't know, I think it makes more Lords, or more seats in the United Nations or something, but a lot of – lot of stuff is going on at this present time. They talk more about the disintegration of the empire than it actually is, but I notice right now it's having trouble in Indonesia, you see. It's got new problems now. This new empire has new problems. It's a newer empire, it's now considered an old empire; it's now considered that the British... they don't even call it "Imperial" anymore, things are all "Commonwealthian," don't you see. Bits of it are being taken off one way or... Not really necessary that it go in this particular direction, but its force and power in the world today is tremendous.

Its amount of finance, manufacture potential and so forth isn't anything on the United States, and yet the United States looks at things British and says, "Aye aye, yes sir, yes, oh, yes, mylord." And they're really scared to spit unless they ask the permission.

So here is your next cycle, see. Here is the British Empire, see. And then they got Johnny-come-lately empire called the United States, see. And it's been going and trying to spread all these various sentiments in all directions, and handle and pound and buy friends, and do this and show everybody that they're all set, and put shipping lines in, their manufacturing potential is flooding into the rest of the world today. The same way that in 600, 500 A.D., or even in 100 A.D., the pots and linens of Rome were flooding into England.

And here we have this new – this new empire, see, and it's hardly an empire. You can't quite put your finger on it because it isn't the right thing today to say, "I own," don't you see.

And now – no, it's taken its responsibility in the world, it's pushed out ahead of everything, and it's going along here, at a great rate of speed, and trying to make its way forward and so forth. Don't make any mistakes about it, it's trying to become a dominant empire. Whatever it's *saying*, that is what is *happening*, you see? And it's looked on rather intolerantly by a bunch of other fellows who are sitting around who've already been the route and they say, "Well, yes, *hm-hm-hm-hm*." Got the idea?

Because I've been describing to you four GPMs on the third dynamic which apply totally on the first. Because that's just the way a GPM acts. Got the idea? Just as you to some tiny fragment at this moment are influenced by the Greek civilization, so you would be tinely influenced by the fourth GPM back. See? And just as today you are very much more, but not much really, influenced by the Roman Empire, you see, you still have some influence on it, but that's the third GPM back, you see. And now we got the American Empire, and it's actually blown its cork. And we have a new empire already forming called an "internationalism." And it's stumbling around, and it hasn't got a grip on anything, and mostly it's a matter of confusion. And that would be your present time GPM.

The two RIs on it right now, God knows, I don't know quite what they would be, but there are two RIs from the United Nations. I don't know what it was, maybe Wendell Willkie put it in when he said "One world," or something like that. The goal possibly "To have one world," you know, something like this. Yet everybody sort of believing and working dynami-

cally, very dynamically in the direction of creating just one world, see. And if you want to really get somebody's attention and so on, in a shop in England or in Greece and so forth, you talk to him about the decay of nationalism. And he will pretty well agree with you that it is now internationalism that exists, see. He'll kind of beat the drum a little bit with you too for internationalism and so on. That's a forming GPM.

We don't know where that one's going to go, but that's very truncated. We actually have already seen the top oppterm of the American Empire. We've already seen them. They're going into history rapidly. But still be influenced over fabulous periods of time, don't monitor, say it's less. But the new force is this.

Now, what are you affected by, right this minute? Actually, you're affected more by the decay of the American Empire, without tracing why. Well, it's got to have money, it's got to maintain fantastic commitments. It's got to maintain all kinds of defenses. It's in a frantic state. Don't you see? Its people are sort of agin it, but they're not for it, but well, their dream of liberty has dwindled you see, they don't have that anymore. Maybe it was like the goal "to be free," don't you see?

Something – something went on here, don't you see? But you still – we get the kick-back of this particular thing, but the dynamic RIs in the present time are – how can we live all together without having an atomic war? Maybe that's one pair back, don't you see, we might have another one forming right this minute. It would take a very careful analysis to look at exactly what was forming on the third dynamic that we could call the top. Existing top RIs, see.

Well, we certainly – we haven't gotten rid of these last two top RIs, international war and atomic fission, or whatever the two top RIs are, don't you see? You follow this? Well now, that's the picture with every pc you're operating on. That's his picture.

Now, we're going to enter his case see, we're going to enter his case, and we're going to say, "All right now, we're going to get..." I suppose a Greek civilization could have said, "to spread Greek culture," see, or "to culture everyone, if it kills them," some type goal. "To be cultured," maybe that would be its goal, see, something like that. Or maybe that was a later day goal. It was certainly "to conquer." Possibly "to conquer," maybe that's the GPM line. Maybe the Roman one was just simply "to govern well." But now, we take this pc, see, let's call him a world. You know, let's call him – this pc called World, we're going to say, "Now, we're going to straighten you all out now, World. We're going to run out the top RIs of the GPM 'Greek civilization.'" Go ahead, go out here on the street right now, and tell the world, you see, that you're now going to run out – you're going to make the world well, you're going to run out the Greek civilization. And do you know, I don't think you're going to get anybody to agree with you at all.

You could tell them, "Well now, look, if you just get rid of Plato, see, that's a big RI there, and it's a reliable item, and if you just get rid of Plato, see, you'd be all set."

"Plato? Plato?"

You'd list the thing, and the fellow would say, "Yeah." But he'd really only do that so long as all the other GPMs were in place, don't you see? There comes a time when he could

become very interested in the Greek civilization, don't you see. But not right now. The world would say to you, "All right, you're going to run out the Greek civilization. Well, what about these atom bombs?" Wouldn't that be the response which you'd get? And that's the same response you get from the pc. Only you're not given to know exactly what the top RIs are of the pc when you start auditing him. On the face of Earth, you can see quite obviously it must have something to do with international war and atom bombs. See, that's very visible to you.

But there's the pc sitting there. Now, what the hell is he stuck in? We don't know. But in actual fact the influence upon him in GPMs, his ancient Greek one – not that he was in ancient Greece, you see – "to conquer," see. That GPM, it's still influencing him. The Roman, "to govern well," see. British Empire, something on the order, "to have freedom of the seas," or something like this. I don't know what that GPM was. Whatever it is, see. Yeah, all those influence him. Oh, yes, you could get tone arm – little tone arm action, yeah, you could get some interest and so forth. And all the time he's doing that, he's got one eye cocked up at the sky to see whether or not that mushroom plume has formed yet.

"Yeah, yeah, Plato. Yeah, well, let's see, against Plato there were poisoners or that was Socrates. Let's see – so on... did you hear an airplane go overhead?" [laughter] "Oh, all right. Now, let's get back, let's get back and let's list this – let's list this – this out here a little bit, let's see now, Thermopylae, Marathon – and so on ... What was that? Did you hear something. Sound to me like somebody crying an 'Extra' out on the street, you see. I heard the word 'Russia.' What was it? What was it? What was it? Oh, well, wasn't anything, let's get back into session now. Wonder what the – what it was!"

Get the idea of split attention? Well, he's got two top RIs that are just split his attention just that much, all the time, all the time, all the time. And they might not look very logical to you but they'll sure look logical to him.

Let's say – let's say it's a – it's got an optterm "child murderers – child murderers," you see. And with the RI "police officer." See, they – the terminal "police officer" versus "child murderers," you see. That's his own actual GPM, it's sitting right up here in present time, don't you see. And you, miss, come to the auditing session as the auditor, in a blue dress with some brass buttons on it. And this particular session, you can't figure out why – you didn't get particularly much tone arm action, the pc was sort of nervous all the time, don't you see, and so on, and so, so, so – and – so, and so and so on, and he seems to be very fixated on you and he ARC breaks sort of very easily, and you can't find out what it was.

Actually, if you assessed the whole environment you might be able to find out something about it, and it might lead you in toward it, and I won't discount it as a method of finding somebody's service facsimile. But you're just looking at some restimulator of some kind or another, you see. Now, what are those things? Well, those things are the two topped formed items which extend from a goal which may be as new as the United Nations or actually as old as the United States, don't you see? It's a – it may be brand-new, and it may have very few items in it or it may be quite old as a goal and it may have a lot of items in it. He may be almost anyplace in the formation of that particular bank, but it is that goal which has its immediate command value over the pc. And you'll find as you drop back from it, you have, right into the top of the next goal just below, you will have influence on present time. You

won't solve all of his problems by – with those two top RIs only, don't you see, because you've got these other GPMs which are influencing him, and the influence, however, ceases. Well, let's put it this way: The influence has total command value. The two top reliable items of present time has total command value over the pc. Total. Unquestioning, unseen, just any flicker, any whisper of any of this of any kind whatsoever finds him going, "*tsk, tsk, tsk, tsk, tsk,*" salute, salute, salute, "Yes – yes, yes sir – yes sir, yes, do it right. Oh yeah, worry about it – yeah – oh – comply. *Aaaaaah. Uh-ooohf.*" See. Frantic, you know. Total.

And just below that, merely desperate. Desperate, desperate, desperate about something. The next two RIs, you see. Next couple of RIs, worry, worry, worry, worry, worry, worry, worry, worry, worry, worry all the time, all the time, worry, worry, worry, worry, worry, worry, worry, worry about them, think about them, hoping they won't occur, worry about them, but they're in a state of worry, and the couple of RIs just below that sort of thing, a sort of a dull feeling of apprehension. Constant and continuous dull feeling of apprehension.

Actually, all those emotions are combined in present time. We get much earlier than that. We get an idea of sort of enduring it, whatever the goal is. You know, well, we can – we must all die sometime, and be sick, and have to brace up to – you know, face it. You know, that type of a situation. But now you're about six pairs down the – I mean, six pairs down the line, you see. And that's the kind of present time reaction he would have to that. You know, "Well, we – we can live with it, I guess. Sort of hope. If I – if I confront up to it I can probably endure it." That type of reaction, don't you see.

And you get about eight, ten back, it's, "Oh well, that's life. Nothing you can do about that, that's just the way life is. That's life. Might as well be philosophic about it."

In other words, that's about how his attention is spread over the dozen pairs that are immediately adjacent to present time. His attention cones down in terms of less and less desperate, but still with him, see. And then it goes off into these things, influenced by life, and once in a while he's noticed that he's done something peculiar in this particular direction, he hasn't thought about it particularly, don't you see. You get earlier and earlier than... Actually his present time attention isn't on them at all. See, but can flip into them, and out of them, see.

All right. Now, these immediate RIs and the – that compose with their goal, the immediate present time GPM, see. Those aren't the things which make the pc concerned with present time. They're the things which make it impossible for him to be – to get his attention off of the things he's concerned with in present time. Get the idea? He can't change his mind. It doesn't mean that if those were all gone and he saw a kid's bicycle run over in the middle of the street he'd feel nothing, see. I mean, but the presence of those things means he can't take his attention off of it. His automatic response to the situation, you see, is big, and he's not able to sleep that night. He gets a very heavy high level of effect from this sort of thing, you see. He can't change his mind with regard to these things, so that observations which come in upon him have tremendous influence with him, to the degree that he really can't shift his mind on them.

Regardless of the significance of the operation we do know that he now lacks fluidity or power of choice over his reaction to his observations.

In other words, when something happens in present time he's *stuck, right there with it, and that's all he can do about it*. So he comes into session and you say, "We'll put in the itsa line on – on – on what you've been doing since the last session," and he's, "Hmmmm!" and so on, he talks and talks, and he's desperately trying to suppress and get rid of it. And he really can't get his head off of it, don't you see. *He-he-he-he has a hard time feeling better about it*. See the difference?

And you have to work and work and work and work and then you get – get half of his attention off of it, and now you've got enough attention to maybe run a bit of bank. Makes very rough auditing. Very hard on the pc. And it doesn't give you such a situation of tremendous send on the part of the pc by reason of auditing, if you, well, duck back down the track and take stuff that isn't in particular restimulation but he can run it, you can put his attention on it, you can do something with it, don't you see.

What you've got to do is tackle head-on. You've got to tackle it head-on with his case. Now, whether you call that RIC over things he's concerned with and has been solving in this lifetime, don't you see, that's undoing the two top RIs. Or whether or not you do it with a bunch of ARC break assessments, which is less good, but nevertheless is very spectacular as it works – R2H. Or whether you do it in the direction of R3SC – just as given. You're still working with those two top RIs and present time restimulation.

Now you can actually destimulate the case using in that gradient those processes which I just mentioned, bring it up to a point where the individual might be able to see a goal like he sees "to govern well." See? And he says, "Well, all right, that's a nice goal. Yeah, that obviously is my present time goal," that's good and safe, see.

He'll run it, and you can find a couple of top RIs and they don't seem to have too much to do with the situation, and his appreciation for wine rises. And say, well, that's interesting. In view of the fact that he doesn't drink wine, what good is it, see?

But you – you find you've taken off some present time restimulation, you're handling this situation, or you have reached back and found "to govern well," and you've opposed that, and you've gotten "to rule the seas," you see.

And then "to free everybody," maybe that was the United States' goal, you see. And then you've opposed that, and you've got "to have one world." Ah, oh man, we're getting someplace now, but boy, is that stuff hard to read. It is starting to fly apart – case is starting to fly apart – you're getting tone arm action like mad as you're doing this sort of thing. But there is a point and I warn you on this, and you need the warning because you will veer off, there is a point as you approach PT when the auditing restimulation by reason of the bank and the goal and that sort of thing, not from finding the goal, you can get away with that, see – but let's say we found the PT GPM, the kickback and the nonconfront of those top RIs is so great that it may obscure the actual PT goal. You may have "to free everybody," the one of the US Empire, don't you see, and go right along as though that's the top GPM, see. And everything reads that way and you're Ouija-boarding, the meter reads that way, and everything goes along here gorgeously, don't you see.

The top GPM, that obviously... don't be so amazed, after you tackled it for a while and tried to get its top RIs and done some other things with it, to all of a sudden find, "to have one

world." See? There it sits. Where'd it come from? And then don't be surprised if you have a very rough time listing the pc. Because you're running the pc in the middle of his living lightning, man. You're reaching into the middle of the gall bladder and pulling it out, roots and all, don't you see?

Now, it isn't the pc'll run badly, or anything like that, up to a point, you will be able to get in, but you will run into this action, that when you start approaching the last dozen pairs, it'll keep reading all the time that there are no pairs above them. Always read that you've got the last pair. You may have – you may have – you may have ten pairs above you, see, and it'll – oh yes, this is the two top RIs, you're Ouija-boarding it, see, his no-confront on these things is getting terrific, because it's right up here in present time. Damned atom bomb's liable to go off at any minute, don't you see? *Brrrrrrrrrr!* Dangerous to get near this situation, see, and *uhhh!*

Any solution you might have to it, like he's got an RI, let us say, "a duck," see, he – that's the solution to the atom bomb. "Duck." You get anywhere near that thing, why, man, you're running in charged-up bank. Because it's got hanging on it every part and particle of the universe he has any connection with in this present time. It's hanging on it, is restimulated by it, is cross-restimulated into it.

Well, this is why we didn't – weren't able to find it. It isn't that they're downgraded, it isn't – this is why earlier we veered off again and didn't finish up the actual GPM to amount to anything. That was because it required more technology to really tackle it well, because right now, with the technology you get, which is listing by tone arm, not rocket read, that technology right there, when you start for the last dozen pairs that are right up leading up here into PT, is going to give you not an ARC breaky pc, but an exasperated, worried, upset, frantic, desperate pc who won't be able to get the item on the list in most cases without going through a complete snit.

You'll hear things like this: "But I told you, I – I keep putting it on the *list*. It's already on the *list!* There *it is, it is!*" You're getting the incomplete list ARC break, see. "It's already on the *list!* I keep saying it! I tell you what the item is! *It's 'duck – fast!*" And that's *all* it is. And I've had the idea since you first began the list. I know what it is." He says, "I can't get it on the list. It – damn you, you just – never rocket reads for you! Why don't you look at your meter!" "All right, I'll list for a while longer. Farmyards. Parachutes. Caves. Holes. Quacking loudly. But it's the same one. It's the same item. I know what it is."

You can expect that quite routinely. It isn't really an ARC break. It's really not quite a dramatization. He actually quite honestly feels totally *desperate*. It's just that. He just feels totally desperate. So you want to make awful darn sure that when you start listing it on him you're already listing from a right goal. Don't make any mistakes like this, because if you make a little – a little bunch of technical mistakes at a slightly wrongly worded goal...

You see, you Ouija-board the thing. This is always – Ouija-board these things, when you start moving into this area, see. Ask questions like, "Is this a correct goal? Is this an incorrect goal? Is it correctly worded?" I don't care if you get it reading it's a correct goal, go on and analyze it, see. Have we skipped a GPM? Is it the PT one? Is there anything incorrect about its wording? You know, go through your little act, see, and look this thing over, and

you'll all of a sudden find there's a word missing on it or something like this, or it's too long. Don't call the pc out.

Because look, supposing you've just got a wrongly worded goal, and then you find a slightly wrong item for it, and it moves up into these critical pairs I'm talking to you about. And then you start listing against it, and you already have set up the probability of a desperate pc, who will get desperate before he manages to complete that list, see.

Oh, man, you've got good reason now for him to be ARC broken and desperate. You can half-kill a pc with it that way. With dynamite. You're listing dynamite, pure dynamite. So never take a chance, see. Every time you find an RI, you see. Is this an RI from this GPM? Is it from another GPM? You see, is it correctly worded, you see? Is it – so on. All these things, you go over with this thing. Was the list complete that it came off of, don't you see? And the test of the item you're listing from, does it tick? And how does it compare, you see. Go over this little analysis on that RI, because you're already putting this boy over the jumps, madly putting him over the jumps. Because if it's a right goal, a right RI, and you're opposing this right RI, it's an absolutely correct reliable item, and you're busy opposing that in the very best textbook absolutely correct fashion, your pc is liable to – not always, not for every one of them he won't go through this – but he's liable to get in a terrifically desperate ARC breaky screaming state of mind. He won't be able to quite approach it.

Don't you see, the reason why he can't obviously, it's data substituted for him. And he gets into the vicinity of it, he veers right off of it, don't you see. And he can list all around the edges of it, don't you see.

I had one last night, I sure know what I'm talking about. No-having, can't-have, I was going to pieces on the thing. Finally turned out it – to be "not having." See, just "t" missing. Yes, but the second it was hit, the bank went *bzzzzzzmmmmm-pheew* – one RI, splat. Blew up. Practically blew up the meter. But not "can't-have." That didn't blow up the meter. And not the other nine pages of lists which went with it. All of that, you see, delivering terrific tone arm action the whole way. But going up, up, up.

See, listing by locks, you would list the tone arm action out. That's your 2-12, listing by lock rules. Well now, you're doing this R4MTA. Well, if the tone arm action goes out of it, you haven't got it on the list. If there is the faintest, tiniest twitch, microscopically viewed, of the needle when he gives another item, you haven't got it on the list.

Now, your old R3M2 listing goes, well, you list it and you go 25 beyond that, it's all right, you didn't have any RIs and so you read the next-to-the-last rocket reading item and the thing didn't rocket read, you read the last item and it rocket read, and bang. That's all simple. That's 2-12 lock listing and it's absolutely guaranteed to give you locks. And you can oppose locks against locks against locks against locks, and you could probably find thousands of them in one GPM. Thousands of them. You could have a line plot five to ten thousand items long. You could take a thousand hours of auditing to clean up one.

It's how you got these long line plots. It's how you went skidding out of one GPM into another GPM. It's how you got items listed backwards. See? You've got to list the tone arm action into it, and only then have you got an RI. And then your tone arm – you'd be surprised how hard it is to do sometimes. And the pc says, "Well, that turned on a little bit of mass,"

and he just starts gratuitously give – well, that isn't it – gives you some more items and the next thing you know, that needle's going slash, slash, tick, tick, slash.

Oh, man, if the needle's going tick and slash on a list, you haven't got it. No RRs, it's just the needle – the list – the action of listing is giving the needle ticks and slits and that list is not complete. I don't care how desperate the pc looks.

You want to be awful sure, then, what you're listing up against. You want to be awful sure that that's a correct goal. No chances. You want to be sure that that RI that you already have found came from a list that you did have the main RI on.

Now, I've drawn you pictures of RIs, and they're great big, massive things, surrounded by a lot of ball bearings. And you can just find any God's quantity of these small ball bearing-type RIs and shells. They sometimes look like onions, too. You can find any quantity of layers on them, any quantity of items lying around them. They'll all rocket read. So the test is not whether it rocket reads, the test is it gave you so much tone arm action that it obviously has knocked the bottom underneath that particular vicinity of bank, and that listing further items doesn't give you a tick and a click or a slash.

The tone arm action is listed in. You'll occasionally see your needle go up to 4, 4.5. I mean, your tone arm go up to 4.5. And your needle has gone sluggish and sticky, you say, "Oh, my God, what am I doing?" you know? Because there it is, stuck, and your needle isn't moving very much, and your pc is getting edgy, and he says, "There aren't any more. There are just no more items on this list. There's no more. Nobody could think of another item on the list. There aren't any more. You can only say it so many ways. And I've said them all!"

It's up to you at that moment to be very diplomatic. "Well, just for fun, give me one more." And I even have pulled this gag, right or wrongly: "You haven't given me – you haven't given me 'feathers' yet."

"Oh, haven't I? All right, feathers." [laughter, laughs]

And you'll see that tone arm come down, come down, and all of a sudden you'll hit one of these blowdown areas. They'll give an item, it'll give a blowdown, be followed by a fall, be followed by a blowdown, be followed by another blowdown, *psssww!* And it's way down here, and it goes lower, and all of a sudden you're up and down and it's action and so on and so on, and you look over here and that needle will be slashing. Don't stop the pc to read them. The needle's moving, what are you doing? Why stop to read them? The needle's moving. As the pc lists the needle is moving, so obviously you don't have the item on the list. Because when you get the RI it kills all action on the list. It kills all ticks on the list. It kills all slashes on the list. It kills all RRs on the list. And sure doesn't kill TA motion. That's the one thing it doesn't kill. Because he just thinks about TA and you'll get *phhhhhh*.

And you will get blowdown motions of the TA. You'll see it going *pssswww*, *pssswwww*, *psssss*. Needle, see, going *phhhhh*. You try to read sometimes as you're listing through one of these blowing down needles. You can get these blowing down needles without finding the RI.

The question is, now when you read a little blowdown area back to the pc, did anything tick? Did it – did it slash once? You better make a list of these. Did it tick? Did it slash

once and then not slash again? Does it read when the pc says it, but not when you say it? Well, it's not the RI. That's not the RI. Did two items go faintly tick and the next one go tick? You haven't got an RI on that list. Because two items went tick.

"Ah, yes," you say, "but I'd better get in the mid ruds, I'd better get in 'Suppress' and 'Careful of' and 'Fail to reveal' and 'Invalidate' and 'Suggest' and 'Mistake' and 'Protest' and 'Anxious about' and 'Decide,' and if I've got all those in maybe I could make it read." Save your time, man, save your time. Get in your session mid ruds if you want to. But don't try to make an item read. Because you couldn't stop an RI from reading with an anvil parked against your needle.

So I repeat, just as you've just listed there, if you're – if you're – if it – you call it once and it goes *pssww*, and then you call it again and it doesn't do anything, that's not it. You call it once and it goes a little, tiny slash, and so forth, there's no sense in sitting there, "Has this item been suppressed?" and so forth, and so on. There's no sense there. *Dumph!* What's the difference? Did it give you a laggardly fall? No blowdown? When you gave him the item you got no blowdown? It's not the item.

I don't care if you didn't give it to him or not. You just said the item, you got no blowdown. Two items ticked on the list, much less two RRed, oh my God, you're getting up into orders of magnitude – two items fell, two items slashed, oh, forget it man, get out of there fast. If any item after it slashed, ticked, clicked, did anything, you haven't got it on the list. It isn't on the list. Because when the RI, an RI comes on that list, you won't – you'll get expert. You probably won't make any mistakes at all. First time, you'll say, "Oh, gee, look at that beautiful blowdown there, now look at it, oh, what lovely tone arm motion." Oh, yes, well, let's read it back to him. Oh, well, one of the items ticked, but the other one sure reads nicely – *Ha-ha!* So on. We'll give that to him, you see, and we'll list against it, and your pc will start getting sort of green, and *uuuuuhhhh* – this one is going off the rails in an awful hurry, you see.

You finally find the item you're listing from continues to tick. And if you eventually came back to it and continued your list, you'd find out that he would have put four more items on with the TA more or less motionless, and then all of a sudden you get twice as much blowdown as you had before, and twice as much commotion, so you say, "Well, gee, that's all the commotion a meter can produce! I've never seen that much commotion before on a meter, so that's obviously an RI. That Ron really knows what he's talking about because that really is an RI. Look at the amount of tone arm motion that thing fell. *Wow!*" See?

That isn't it. You'll have – you'll have experience with this. Can think nothing of going through six areas on a list where the meter falls apart and blows down and blue smoke comes out of the corners. Think nothing of it, before the real RI goes on the list. Because when it goes on the list it is totally unmistakable. Anything else a pc puts on the list now, as he says it, will not disturb the needle. But you'll be getting – you'll have to read between the fact that your needle is moving to give you TA blowdown.

But you – he says these items, and nothing happens. Says them and there's no slashes, there's nothing, nothing. You read it back to him again, it goes *pppsssww!* and blows down and goes and he cognites and everything, *bwaa* and he finally tells you that's it. You some-

times give him the item and the pc, if he has any honesty whatsoever, he – you give him the item and it flicked, ticked.

Aaaaahh! "Duck feathers. Things that come out from ducks." He'll start giving you items again. Quite common. He recognizes this thing turns on, it doesn't do anything for him, so on, you realize he's given you – you've given him a wrong item of some kind or another. So he just goes on listing. So never stop him from listing. Anything that turns on a lot of energy and mass and black ridges and that sort of thing, that isn't the item, that's all. And you just have to get used to it. You have to get used to, one, being awful doggone sure that when you find the pc's own goal – it's easy to find pcs' own goals today. But when you do find it, make sure it's the right wording. Make sure that you are listing the present time goal. When you find an item let's make sure it is the right item, and so forth.

And one little note before I cancel it off here, "coterm," there is no such thing as a coterm. That's the same RI appearing as a terminal and an oppterm in the same GPM. And very rarely appearing in two different GPMs. Same item appearing in two – but it appears as a terminal, appears as an oppterm, so of course it looks like it's a coterm. So it's both. And that was the mystery of a coterm. I've now plotted it all down and straightened it all out.

Drive you mad! I mean, this item, the inability to duck, or something of the sort, you see, that's halfway down one bank and it's the top opp – the top terminal, and the middle oppterm. And it just takes that poor bank and it just ties it in a pretzel. And you finally list against one side and you list against the other side, and you don't know which side you're on and so forth – well, go ahead and list it, but you know what you're doing.

Now anyway, there is the score, with regard of R4MTA. This is the final product of this sort of thing you're actually handling all the time. Whether you're chipping in on it from the top, tickety-tick, with a – with a little tack hammer, with RIC, that sort of thing, as long as you get tone arm action, you're carving down toward those two top RIs and you're carving down to the top of the GPM. And there's nothing else to carve down to. Doesn't matter what you run, you're running those, and when you find the GPMs and move it on up and get the guy's goal and get his present time GPM, of course you list for those things. Always be suspicious that you haven't got it. You might be twelve pairs away from the top ones, even though it looks like the top one. But keep trying for them. Keep moving them up.

You can always take what you get as the top, run down to the bottom of that bank to its goal, and run it out, and then go back and find the top. And you will be surprised how much top there was still on the bank. This is good programming.

But the main point I'm trying to make you is, is that is the zone where the pc's interest is. That is the zone where the pc's attention is. That is the zone which produces the overstimulation that makes pcs almost impossible to audit. And that's the zone and area that you're trying to crack. And it fits in across the lines technically and otherwise, and when they blow you have never seen quite the same result on your pc as when you get the real top PT GPM and the two top oppterm for it. And really get the pair that are really there – not the ones that you thought that were there at first – the meter said. But when you really get those, and when you get those top twelve, you'll have wondered what you thought a case result was. That I can

absolutely guarantee. But remember you have to be a careful auditor; you have to do a very good job, and you mustn't miss anywhere along this line.

Because you do something careless, and you do something stupid, and you do a proper – an improper analysis on a goal, and you do an improper analysis on the – on the RIs you find, and you start getting sloppy and goofing up, one way or the other, man, you will never have seen such a mess.

So you're going for the biggest win and the biggest mess. Therefore you have to know what you're doing in order to get there. But let me assure you, it is very, very well worth doing. Even the pc who is saying, "But I have put it on the list. I've put it on the list twenty times. I've put it on the list more than twenty times. It's duck eggs! I've put it on the list – duck feathers! Duck eggs! Ducking! Oh, well, all right, all right, all right, all right. Barnyards. I've given you the item before, but I'll give it to you again, I'll be nice. Barnyards. Barnyards, cows, picken – chickens, pigs, horses, farms, farmers, so forth. *Aaaaah!* Geese!! Geese eggs! I'll give it to you, I'll – all right, I will, oh, you want me to give it you, then I'll give it to you! All right, *rrrrrr* – if I don't give it to you first in some other way." [laughter] "Oh, wait a minute. Wait a minute. It's duck. Duck!"

Pssss! Your meter goes. Duck. That was fifteen pages of hell later. But he will say, even then, it's worth it.

Thank you!

Summary II: Scientology 0

A lecture given on 25 September 1963

[part missing]

What's the date?

Audience: 25th of September.

[part missing]

Twenty-fifth Sept. AD 13.

All right. Well, the lectures you have listened to from the 24th of July forward round up, as I told you yesterday, all phases of Scientology. And you may not quite grasp that at first glimpse because as you look back over this particular period of time it doesn't seem to you, perhaps, that there's too much in that period. I know you look at your notebook and you get a little staggered, but nevertheless, it didn't look like you hit too many subjects or ideas or something since the 24th of August – pardon me, July. Since 24th of July, just haven't hit too many ideas of types of things and so forth. Since that time you've covered the itsa line, you've covered ARC breaks, the auditing cycle, the versions of R1C. You've had the R2H Tone Scale and so forth. And you've had service facsimile and clearing by R3SC, and you have had the pc's actual goals on a rundown of it.

And now if we add to that Touch Assists and the CCHs, the Tone Scales, various scales, all the particularities of the ARC triangle, the Auditor's Code and Code of a Scientologist – you even had Project 80 in that period which is Scientology I, don't you remember? – and actually you've got the lot. You've got the lot. There's a lot of hellfire and brimstone can be added to some of these points, you see, like: "Oh, my God, if you don't do this – *ohhhh!*" and you know, that sort of thing. A lot of things can be added along that line.

Undoubtedly there's a lot of new ways to dig into a service facsimile. But you've got a roundup. You've got a roundup. And only two things add to this roundup that round out this series. Well, I just want to lay it before you that you're actually looking at the entire span of body of knowledge of Scientology. And that's quite remarkable. That's quite remarkable. And what I have to tell you now, the first of it is new, which is Scientology 0, and the other is finding goals, which is old R3, and that of course has always been difficult and is much easier now since you can find goals through R3SC, relatively simply.

But these two points are about all that is left out of that entire rundown, and these, I point out to you, are simply particularities.

Now, a lot of work exists which is thrown into this, such as the listing rules, don't you see? We haven't had too much about listing rules, but I've told you a new type of listing which

is by TA. And even that has been described. But this is a summary. This is a summary of all of the important points. And this is the data, covered as I have told you just now and since the 24th of July, which is very, very, very important data.

There are about five tapes from 1962, in the autumn, which talk about the theory and Formation of the GPM – the pc's actual GPM. Well, these are interesting. They're background theory material and they're quite interesting. The HCOBs on how you run R3M2, and that sort of thing, are contributive to these things.

Now, the whole body of implant GPMs and this whole body of knowledge has been examined with great particularity. It's a marvelous training area. But the value of an implant GPM is very slight. Aberrative value is very, very slight. I think of it now, those fellows working in the sun and the big moon of Helatrobos – I think of them now, sweating there, the temperature there was seldom below 85, you see. It was real hot and so forth. And there they were, sweating and keeping the poles greased and bringing thetans in and freezing them up and going through all these ramifications – and sweating and miserable about the whole thing, you see. Their consciences rotting away within them, you see, it's a terrific overt. And these between-lives blokes, you know, there they are, they're sweating away, you see, they're keeping that running, you know, and *ahaaa* and implanting, and they've got a trai... they wear out trains and trains and trains, giving those train goals, you know.

And there they are, going on right now, here in present time, and there they are, vast sums of money and so forth. And the amount of aberration which it adds to the case is something like a drop of water into the Atlantic Ocean. It's horrible. Because they would be so upset if they knew. They obviously don't know or they wouldn't keep on sweating at it. It's fantastic. It's all for nothing. It's all for nothing.

All they did was make the universe look more hostile. And they probably color the type of RI which the – or – and even sometimes the type of goal which the pc postulates. They undoubtedly have had an influence in this particular direction, but it's an influence of significance and not an influence of quantitative action at all.

Now, if they disappeared the world would look friendlier and people would have a better chance of destimulating, you see? The present time problem with regard to it wouldn't be so great and they would feel better about it. But this I – point I wish to make: is those blokes aren't doing it to anybody. See, they're just some tiny, small assistance. The thetan is doing it to him self. Which of course a lot of you during this period of this summer, going through these implant GPMs... and I'm very glad you did because it's a highly educational area, those that were in Y and Z. And if you think you've escaped them totally, why, those coming up now out of X, they're all set and roaring and so forth, and they're going to probably find on their plate some morning, "Run 'to forget' out of a Helatrobos series," before we let them run any aberrative GPMs.

The poor pc will be sweating there and his tone arm won't be moving much and the auditor will be trying to get those rocket reads and they'll be right back in there pitching again, don't you see?

One of the ways of doing it is to find the pc's own GPM and then find out if there is a counterfeit one somewhere on the track, and it'll run like a startled gazelle. Aberrative value 0

but it'll just run fine. By the time you've run three or four of them – "to be lost" or something like this – by the time you've run three or four you're not going to get any TA action because you will have restimulated, of course, the pc's own actual GPM to a remarkable degree and have to go ahead and run it. But it's an interesting practice area.

But I think of it now, I think of it now – the administrative agents; the FBI of the big confederation, you see; and the Bureau of Implants, don't you see – and there they are and they're all feeling bad about this and they know that it's all necessary and has to be. Hasn't practically any influence. It speeds up the dwindling spiral and it makes the universe seem hostile to people, but beyond that its aberrative value is nothing. One great, big, crashing RI has more value than the entirety of all of the implant series.

But it's a good thing for you to know what this universe is like. And if you really want to know what it is like, and that sort of thing, this is an exploratory area: what has been done, what people are devoted and dedicated to in keeping other people aberrated, that sort of thing. And it's quite interesting, as a review.

And you should consider quite valuable any experience you've had in running an implant GPM because you won't ever have any trouble with an actual GPM. Actual GPMs are far sloppier and nowhere near as neat and they're not preordained at all. And you're off into the blue and you're having to use judgment as you go along the line on these things. And you can make more mistakes in less units of time than in any other field of superhuman endeavor.

Now, that sphere and area is one that cannot be skimmed. And we mustn't skimp the technology of how you run an actual GPM; you mustn't skimp that. It looks kind of sloppy so you tend sometimes to do it kind of sloppily. And one mistake in that aberrative stuff is of much greater value than having gone – the pc's having gone through the whole of the Helatrobis Implants. So that's nothing – that's nothing to toss around lightly.

But that technology – that technology all exists and it's in the bulletins on listing and so forth. And the only thing modern of that has been covered since the 24th of July, and that is you list by TA.

Now I want to cover rapidly here, there's actually three subjects, I've got to cover more about handling this – today's lecture and tomorrow's – more about handling these, programing these things and so forth, in actual GPMs. Want to tell you right now – having gotten your goals all restimulated – I want to tell you right now about Scientology 0. And this is just a very brief, brief, brief coverage. We'll have much better coverage on this subject, but the essentials of this are of great interest to you.

Every level of Scientology contains, in vignette, all levels of Scientology. It's a nicely built little schema. Reg was busy pointing this out to me, he said, "Each one of them contains all the levels." That's right. Level II contains all levels of Scientology. Level III contains all levels of Scientology. What do you mean by all levels of Scientology? Well, levels of Scientology, each one, have its own designation. And these, perhaps, could be better defined and the material could be better released to you, but let me give you just a rapid coverage; and I don't say that these definitions particularly hold good because I'm just talking to you for your understanding, not for your memorization.

And that's simply this: Scientology 0, of course, would be the big question mark. This is the problems and confusions and wrongnesses; zones of chaos of existence – the identification of those zones of chaos.

Now, let's take a 3rd dynamic example. Healing has in it the medical profession. All right. They apparently got it all wrapped up. They're a marvelous solution, aren't they? Now, you've got to identify the chaos. Identify the falsity. Identify the upset. People walking around all over the place and they think mental healing is all solved. They think healing is all solved. They don't know that if you've got lumbosis you haven't got a prayer. See, they don't know any of the true data concerning this. What is the situation?

Now at Scientology 0, you point out this interesting thing: You point out the fact that these are unsolved areas or there are pretensional solutions in them. This is a survey area and a delightful area to work in. In fact, newspapers and so forth work in practically no other area because all you have to do is find falsities and wrongnesses. And that's it.

All right, now how do you use this? A bunch of people come in – PE class – and you're talking to these people, and they're sitting down there and they think something is all wrapped up. Well, at the level of Scientology 0 – and everything always starts at Scientology 0 – is, you say, "Well that..." You see – they – it's religion and God, see. Let's say that you unfortunately got into this particular zone and area, and so forth; let me give you a very flagrant example you would not use, see. And that is the church – let's put it in its crudest form – the church does not have the human spirit all wrapped up.

That's an interesting – an interesting approach, you see? But let's say you have there this bloke, he's sitting there and although he doesn't believe in religion, he believes the spirit is all wrapped up. In other words, man's going to go to heaven or he's going to go to hell and that's it; and the vicar knows best. See, he's got that. That's all packaged, it's all put away, and it's some mad zone of confusion that would hum out at him like a flock of bumblebees if he ever really lifted the cover on it, don't you see.

Well, the least you can do is warn him that if he lifts the cover on it, he's going to be hit in the face with a lot of bumblebees.

Somebody made a horrible mistake over at the FCDC the other day, by mentioning between-lives during the church service and learned immediately that he should have kept his mouth very shut. And was around at a... looking kind of scarlet-faced afterwards, and so forth. Well, he at least knew he had made the mistake.

But in actual fact, how much of a mistake had he made? Well, he had only made this mistake: He had opened up too much Scientology 0 too fast. That's the only mistake he had made, see? So it's a case of degree. It's just a case of degree of what you reveal or point out, and this is something. This is a powerful subject. It's a level of the operation of an aberrated world, an aberrated universe, see. That's the level of spotting.

Well, now if you stand up there and you say to the people, "Oh, everything is all bad. It's all bad over there and it's all bad over there, and it's terrible, and everything is going to pieces. Oh, yeah, and – and everything is bad everyplace and there isn't anybody good anyplace, and there are no – nothing but just false situations and everything else." They'd say he's

nuts. See, so this is just a level of degree. He might be making sense! I mean it might be perfectly factual. But that's too much Scientology 0, see. That's something like emptying the cough medicine down somebody's throat, and it's the wrong presentation, see.

Too exaggerated, insufficiently definitive, obviously opinionated, R-factor poor, not a convincing presentation, don't you see? I mean, all of these things are wrong with it.

Now compare it with this – let's take a typically British approach to this situation – "Government might not be the perfect answer." [laughs] See? That might be a too-little dose.

All right, what you want – what you want here – in Scientology 0, you merely want the people to become aware of the fact of what the problem is. Now this is an interesting level to work in because it doesn't have any tone arm action in it. And that's why you can easily overdo it. The only way you could get any tone arm action in it at all would simply be to talk about false solutions. You might get some tone arm action in it if you talked about some false solutions. But if you say there's nothing but problems, problems, problems, problems, problems, you've got no tone arm action at all on your audience or anybody else, see.

So you shouldn't infer that there are no solutions and only problems. Now, I'm just trying to give you the fact that people don't try to resolve anything or do anything if they think it's all wrapped up. And you'll find out that the complacency of the world is one of the basic things which keeps it gorgeously aberrated. The complacency is marvelous. The government has got it all wrapped up, but the FDA all of a sudden decreed that everybody had to take two quarts of fire extinguisher fluid a day to wash out the vitamins which poisoned them. They'd say, "Well, yes. Well, they know what they're doing, and so forth," and you see, the fact that a bureau has said it or something like that immediately decrees there must have been some sense to it. This is this terrific reasonability factor that drives us around the bend, you see.

And if they want 95 percent of your pay, don't you see, in tax, well, there must be some good reason for it, don't you see, and so on. And you might say, the last stable datum that anybody can get in is a toleration of the terrible condition. See, and they say it is reasonable or there must be a reason for it, don't you see, so therefore in some fashion it is all right. And that keeps it off their back as a problem.

But you, being more adventurous characters, are always lifting the lids off of things, you see, and you say, "Well, maybe that isn't quite all right." Don't you see? And you look inside this thing, and you don't only find that it is not all right, don't you see, you find out that there's an awful swindle connected with this thing of some kind or another.

Well, it's all right to discover all that, but Scientology I is getting off these solutions and falsenesses, see, so you're really not involved in Scientology 0 with running the false solutions, don't you see? You've got a little borderline there, and you put an itsa line in, but remember you're going over toward Scientology I slightly.

Now, it's simply – it's simply the level of existing chaos. And you say – here's a typical Scientology 0 question: "Is your family hard to live with? Do you find your home noisy?" Yeah, typical. "Are you worried about your job? Is there any part of life about which you have anxiety?" See, these are simply – these are simply questions which awake a person to the possibility that his life might be better.

And it all carries with it the possibility that the condition can be improved. And that is its sole and total therapeutic action: hope. You say there are these problems: bong, bong, bong, bong, bong and maybe something can be done about them. So its entire therapy level is this faint hope. "Maybe we won't always have a government." That's its therapy level and you find out this is quite workable. It's quite workable.

This is the lowest level of processing, is giving somebody some hope; lowest level there is. And that goes along with the fact that you say there *is* a problem – so let's now summate this level, see – "There *is* a problem" is its strongest statement, and the strongest process that is applied to it is "Maybe something can be done about it." See? It's just that.

A view of Scientology 0 is simply the world as it exists, and if we had no level of Scientology that paid any attention whatsoever to the existence or the is-ness of existence, you see, that is the conditions and problems which exist in the society, we would have no area to study society just as itself and we would keep on simply trying to resolve society all the time. We wouldn't ever look at society and therefore to that degree we're moved off from society.

So this is the legitimate level of inspection. At this level we can notice, somewhat dispassionately, that the greengrocer, every morning at 9:32 rushes out of his shop and throws rocks at the small boys and rushes back into his shop again. The therapy is, in that particular character, "We hope the rocks didn't hit the small boys, you see, and we hope he isn't too disturbed. And we hope he will be happier about things someday." You got the level? But you still could stand there and watch him rush out and throw rocks at the small boys and watch the small boys, and he goes back into his shop at 9:32 every morning, see.

We don't go around and say to him, "Well, why don't you make friends with them or communicate with them," see – *ha-ha-ha-ha-ha* – Scientology I. Called 0 because you don't do anything. At this stage there's nothing.

Now, a lot of this goes a long way. We say all the levels of Scientology are contained in each level of Scientology. Do you realize that in order to find a service facsimile, you have to ask the fellow what problems he has, or what he's worried about. This always comes into it slightly, doesn't it? So a little of this goes a long ways. And this is an assessment of problems or something like that. Well, that's the Scientology 0 aspect of the case. In this particular case, however, we aren't limited on the therapy angle because it appears in another one.

But we still have to have an H-factor in sessions, remember. You know, you can knock your pc in the head. Your tone arm's falling off the pin, see. Your tone arm's going *zing, zing, zing*. It's falling off the pin and so forth. You sit there – you sit there... and he's going on listing, see. He's going on, and he's listing and he's listing, and he looks at your face, and you... And he says, "Well, am I getting any place? Is – is the tone arm action – I mean – I mean, is it increasing, or anything is happening, or we still getting a lot of rocket reads?"

"What?"

And he goes, "*Uhhhh.*"

You see, the H-factor is still there at upper levels of Scientology. You say, "You're doing all right," see? "And if you aren't, I'll fix it up so you are." Little hope involved in this

situation, you see. That keeps up his confidence so that he will tackle it. And so even your H-factor's in there.

Now, if you said to everybody on a PE Course, "Everything's bad, all over, everywhere; everything is all bad. In fact, there's no place anybody can find where anything is good," you immediately would have gone wild with your Scientology 0 because, you see, you would have omitted the process. And the process is simply even if you said everything is all bad everywhere, you say, "But maybe it..." The faintest thing you could say, "Well, maybe it'll turn out all right," you see, or "Maybe if everybody got busy they could do something about it," or "Maybe if we studied this thing enough and learned something about it, it wouldn't have to be that way," don't you see? That's the least statement you could make. And even though you're then talking about entheta conditions, you've still got a theta line going along with it, see. You say, "Well, maybe we could even *ease* these things, or get rid of them or something like that."

Now, you'll find that this is very acceptable on a public level if you don't overwhelm them and if you apply just a small amount of hope and don't get too enthusiastic about the amount of hope and don't promise them the moon with a fence around it, because that isn't necessary at all. As a matter of fact, it's not acceptable within their R-factor. You give them something on this order – you give them something on this order: This fellow, he's come in and he's all gimped up one way or the other. He has a pretzel for a spinal cord. There he is and we say, "Well, so-and-so and so-and-so and so-and-so." "Well, your trouble," we could say to him, "your trouble – possibly that you're disturbed about something."

And you let him put in some Scientology 0 on it. So it works the other way, too. He says, "Hey, you're damned right I'm disturbed about something. My spine, you know. I'm in pain, agony all the time."

Well, there isn't any sense in selling him up too high, because you'll give him too high a hill to climb on his reality factor. You hear about it; he can't sleep at night and he can't this and he can't that and he can't something or other, don't you see, and all this is impossible and this is agonizing and so forth. And pick out one of these minor, minor, minor, minor, minor things that he is giving you and say, "Well, there's possibly some poss – ," because he won't believe you on any of the strong ones. And you say, "Well, maybe we can fix you up so you can sleep better at night."

This becomes very acceptable. Now he's got a goal. He goes ahead – he doesn't expect you to unpretzelize his spine. But he'll move ahead on this and you some degree have slightly bypassed the hidden standard, don't you see? You've given him a new little standard. If he's winning any, he'll sleep a bit better at night, see, something like that. Something you think you must possibly make out of this.

Wrong approach: "Oh, well, we'll have you walking 6 foot 6, and looking 16 years of age, and all the girls whistling at you as you go down the street." No, that's not acceptable. First place, that's too much. He has already learned to live with it. It's already part of his service facsimile. It has some method of making people wrong. You try to go head-on with him and take it away from him directly, or say you are going to, he isn't going to release it, man. All he's going to do is make you wrong.

So what you've got to do as far as that's concerned, remember, you're just working at Scientology 0, not at your processing levels, you see, is he tells you this and that and the other thing. Well, you just pick out the tiniest little one that slid in, any way whatsoever, and put some hope in on it. See?

Like, "What are we going to do about the government?" "Well, maybe we could fix it up so there are fewer politicians talk on TV." Got the idea? And you know somebody would – somebody – they got enough – they can face that, see. It's a gradient of confront is what you're working with. This guy could face perhaps giving up enough of his service facsimile, you see, to sleeping a little bit better at night, because he didn't intend to have his rest disturbed, too. He just wants to get even with people in the daytime. [laughter, laughs]

But, you're giving him a little bit to confront, and maybe these people on government, you say, "Well maybe we could get the people to – maybe get the politicians to talk less, you see, on TV." And by George, you know, you could probably organize quite an association, and quite a society. You could probably have people without saying two questions of it, or anything else, or doing anything odd about the association at all, but just going out and working like beavers and writing letters to people and visiting their parliamentary representatives. Well, they'd have a marvelous time, and so forth. And all they want to do is limit the amount of time which a politician can talk on the air.

Now, there's an adjudication between this, is how much is too little and how much is too much? And that is a piece of judgment that has got to be made. And a person who is working at Scientology 0 – and remember, you work at it every time you talk to a pc about what you're going to do – while you're working at this, that's the judgment that you must go: not too much, not too little; acceptable and confrontable by the person. What's confrontable.

Now, you're talking to a PE Course. You're talking to a PE Course. Now, this is the study of confusion. Now, the practical aspect, if you ever gave anybody a drill on Scientology 0, would – you would have a long sheet of beautiful confusions that have to do with the immediate family or neighborhood or the immediate dynamics of the individual. And you'd simply have him pick out which one of these confusions it was probable that the people he was talking to could confront. See, which one of these confusions could they confront? And you could train him up, see, to this degree. You could have a drill, you see. And you eventually wouldn't get somebody dashing out saying, "It's bad all over the place, and we're going to shoot everybody tomorrow," don't you see, as the immediate indicated confront. "We want you to go and shoot everybody tomorrow," you see.

Well, even though he has an audience that possibly under different case levels and so forth might have been perfectly willing at one time or another to have shot everybody tomorrow on a problem of the magnitude they are facing today, he is not at that moment talking to an audience that is going to go out and go down to the arms store and get the police permit and shoot everybody tomorrow, see? They're not going to do it.

All right. But they are going to do something. And this, then you always make as an assumption: that there is always something that you can get to be confronted on any dynamic. Always something you can get to be confronted on any dynamic. It mustn't be too much and it mustn't be too little.

Let me give you – this would be an absolute perfect formula for a social worker – going around, and the babies are falling downstairs in the tenement, and everybody's crying and screaming and there are three fights going on on two landings, and a flatiron comes sailing down through the area way, you see, aimed at the maintenance man or the janitor, you know. And Mrs. O'Leary has an awful lot of problems and her problems she's firing off at this social worker, and it's this and it's that and it's this and it's that, and so forth. And if the social worker says – Mrs. O'Leary's husband gets drunk all the time and never brings home any pay and furniture all gets stolen – it's always being broken up – and the rent's behind and so forth, and there's all these things, see. What's the social worker trying to do?

Well, the social worker always has to ask himself this question – the auditor always has to ask himself this question – the PE lecturer always has to ask himself this question: What is he trying to do? Well, if he's trying to make somebody happier in his environment or trying to get some action in some particular direction or something like that, then he uses and adjudicates his actions – he uses these formulas and he adjudicates his action along in these formulas.

He gets something done that can be confronted by the person he is trying to get to do it. This is all so elementary it sounds like you're talking kindergarten. But actually, there's a little bit of something interesting here. This is an undercut of such fantastic numbers of problems, that although it sounds very simple and innocuous, it has fantastic workability.

So he says to Mrs. O'Leary, and so forth, the social worker says to Mrs. O'Leary, she says, "And you can't do, this and you can't do that and can't keep the place clean. About the only thing, you know, just can't keep the place clean at all." And he notices that Mrs. O'Leary has emptied an ashtray for his cigarette see, as she's standing there talking to him and so forth, and he says, "I'll tell you what I would do. I'd start in on this thing a little bit at a time, and I'd get the place cleaned up. Now, why don't you keep the ashtrays emptied?"

Although she might even fly back in his face, see, at first glance, you look around here, what could she do? He's not processing her because it's sort of a one-command situation. Well, she might be able to keep the ashtrays empty.

You will be surprised. She might even natter at him a little bit. And when he leaves, why, she'll go around and empty the ashtrays. And all of a sudden a fantastic resurgence of hope may occur in that woman. See?

The trick is, there is something to be done about it – that's one level of hope – that *you can do* – is the other level. Naturally, it applies in all processing, too. Pc's in trouble, it's always a marvelous thing to sit back and ask – find out what the pc can tell you about it. You'd be surprised how often this works to pull a pc completely out of the doldrums. Pc can confront doing something. He's climbing too high a hill. Every once in a while a pc says to you, "I'm climbing too high a hill." Well, there's a point where you make him climb that hill anyway. And another point where you don't force him to climb that hill because you'll wind up in trouble if you do.

Particularly in Routine 4 processes, you actually mustn't force the pc forward. You mustn't force the pc forward. The pc's nattering, find out what the ARC break is about before you proceed. And if the pc is actually having a hard time doing, well, just take it easy and see

if the pc can't do it anyway. And you'll be surprised, if the pc is not pressed or pushed, how the pc will climb that hill anyhow.

All right. Well, this is a difference here, this is an oddity here, I'm throwing this in as showing you that it does fit at lower – upper levels. We left Mrs. O'Leary emptying the ash-trays. First doggone thing you know, she's liable to be getting highfalutin ideas she can do something about stopping her husband from drinking and coming home. She starts to get the idea something can be done about it.

This isn't the experience of the average social worker, now, to show you how missing this technology is. These people are, (quote) trained in social work (unquote) with an exclamation point on the quotes. Because they only complain to you about one thing, and if you talk to social workers they'll just complain to you about the fact they can't get anybody to do anything about anything. And for lack of this piece of information you get total socialism and total indigence in a society. And that's how big the datum is that sits at the bottom of it. Because nobody ever gives anybody anything they can do.

Nobody ever adjudicates the problems involved in the situation and then does something about those problems that can have something done about them and that somebody can confront to do something about them, see? So as a net result, a social worker goes down scale on a toboggan because he never gives anybody anything they can do.

Now, here and there, there may be some screaming genius of a social worker who is not bound by those rules or who has stumbled onto this data and utilizes it one way or the other. But such a person is, of course, vastly in the minority, because the social worker at large is terribly unsuccessful. Fantastically so. Always giving people: "Now, what you want to do, Mrs. O'Leary, is clean this whole place up; scrub it down from top to bottom, after all, we've given you soap. And get your children there and get them cleaned up and put in those nice new pinafores that we have had sent down to you. Now, I'll have a talk with your husband concerning his drinking."

And right at that point the social worker has – even if the woman – even if Mrs. O'Leary *would* have cleaned up the whole place, even if she *would* have put the children in the clean clothes, at *this* point she and the social worker part company violently, because the social worker has *told* Mrs. O'Leary something that Mrs. O'Leary *knows* by experience *cannot be done*. Nobody can talk to her husband about his drinking. She couldn't even conceive the United States Army, with fixed bayonets in a Little Rock charge doing anything about Mr. O'Leary's drinking. See, she *knows* this. And you've just run head-on, you know, *crrrrash!* See, into a stable datum.

Now, don't get peeved, for instance, at the Better Business Bureau, so-called; it's a swindling organization that uses blackmail to procure contributions for fear that they might say your business is bad. It operates in the United States. It's quite a racket. Mostly their bureaus are run by people with criminal records. But anyhow – they're the primary authority on how bad Scientology is in the United States, see. All right, now, these boys – these boys, because they're fed this by these two jerks at the AMA, see. All right, great. But these two birds up there feed them data and then they put this data out, but they don't put it out to be mean,

they actually put it out because they believe it because they don't think anything can be done about anything.

First, one, they don't know any problems exist, and two, if they did, they didn't – wouldn't think anything could be done about them anyway. Now, if you just accept it even at a level of the Better Business Bureau whose questions you see, one – well, their ethics and intentions are probably open to serious question. You probably could even sweep them aside if you used this particular type of approach and this data and kept your head on while you were doing it. Just used this, see? Because the Better Business Bureau says that nothing can be cured. And you could probably sweep this away by getting the Better Business Bureau to agree that people could be made more comfortable. I mean, if you were talking to them and arguing with them.

Your Scientology 0, then, would consist of the fact of there are a lot of people who are uncomfortable; your level of problem that they could confront, see. They couldn't confront the problem that people are sick and dying and being cut to ribbons on operating tables and the blood spattering all over the wall, you know, because this is a pretty gaudy picture, see, of what they're supporting. They wouldn't be able to confront any part of it, so they don't consider it's a problem because they don't see it, you see. You've got to snap them out of their service fac just to this degree: To give them a problem they could confront.

Now, "everybody is dishonest everywhere," that just plays right into the hands of their service facsimile, don't you see? No, you could probably get them to agree that there are quite a few people around who are uncomfortable, and by talking to somebody in a friendly fashion could be made more comfortable. Oh, they'd buy that. They'd say you were great. The AMA wouldn't even be able to convince them now that you were doing wrong. Why? They can agree that people are not comfortable. And they could agree that a friendly person visiting them could make them more comfortable. They could agree to this, see.

Well, that would be your Scientology 0 in all levels. There is the study of the problem, discovery – discovery of the general problem from your viewpoint. Then the discovery of the area the problem that can be confronted by the person you are talking to, and then finding some part of that problem, or doingness in that problem, that that person could face up to and execute. And all this is done in an atmosphere of hope. And you have your Scientology 0.

If you could do that uniformly to everybody that walked up to you, you'd have so many pcs you wouldn't know which end you were standing on. Guy comes out here, and he says, "I have an awful lot of trouble with my business. Secretary's always drunk and the workers aren't working and so forth and they came in and they opened the cash drawer and the police are always walking through the place in their muddy boots and – and so forth, so-so-so-so..." He's just talking – you're just listening to some kind of circuit.

And you say, "All right, now, I heard that. Now, what's really wrong here..." See, you can put the itsa line in just as well as he can. You don't even have to do an assessment of Scientology 0, you see – "What's wrong here..." It doesn't matter whether you put in the problem or you get the problem from him, see, we don't care which. And you'll find out this works in R – in R3SC. It's – you can't give somebody goals, but you can sure tell somebody what his service fac might be bordered upon and run it with considerable tone arm action sometime.

For instance, you've been doing lists, you look over somebody's old lists and you find out that every time he hits the subject of women, you notice that – bad women, good women, and so forth – this gives you tone arm action, see. Just that little period there. You know, you get a little blowdown and tone arm action and so forth. Just say, "Well, we're going to run women." See, you didn't do any assessment. That's a trick some of you characters lost out on last week, by the way. You were busy, busy, busy, busy, busy trying to find something wrong with the pc that you could pin a service facsimile on, and after you had done two or three dozen pages of lists on problems, of course, you didn't have any tone arm action. So you see, this has a broad application over into that sphere, because you didn't have anything – any business doing that with anybody who was getting no tone arm action anyhow, see. You didn't have any business doing that with somebody. Well, you didn't have any business listening to any problems and cutting his itsa line on listing and all this kind of bunk. This was the time for you to put the small crank in through the temple, and wind it a few times and have the little bell go *whirr-ping*, you see?

And say, "You know, every time this guy has a present time problem," you know – you've been auditing this pc maybe only a few days – but every time this guy has a present time problem, it actually seems to concern the course. See? [laughter] That's all, see. Or it concerns the girls around, you see, or it concerns something. Assessment – just use Scientology 0, see. Obviously, obviously this person has problems about it because he can confront them. He can confront the course; he can't confront the world; he can confront the course. You'll be surprised how often you will run somebody's best friend as a service facsimile. Well, he can confront his best friend but he can't confront any of his enemies.

Very often, by the way, somebody's liable to get mad at you. They won't be mad at anybody else in the whole world. They'd be sweet as pie to them. But they'll be mad at you. You're their best friend. They can confront getting mad at you. You get the idea?

They would be in a screaming rage at the rest of the world if they could confront it, but they can't confront that. But they can get mad at you. You should understand that sometimes as an auditor. Because you realize, it's always safe to get mad at your auditor. See, your auditor's bound by a code of ethics not to get mad back. [laughter] Furthermore – furthermore, your auditor *is* a friend of yours, you see? So that you might not be able to get mad at your bank, but you can get mad at your auditor, don't you see?

In actual fact it doesn't make the auditor less a friend of the pc. But that's the lowest level he can afford to get angry at. That's actually the basic secret of the ARC breaky pc. He's ARC breaky with the world at large and it's safe to get mad at the auditor. That's all.

Now, that's – you recognize then that here is this – maybe this little mouse character, you see. Why, she hasn't whispered on the street anything of the sort. And yet she's got a – gets into a session or gets into a group meeting, or something like this, and she realizes she's amongst friends so she can dare get mad at them. It's quite interesting. Quite a case gain.

I'd never criticize them for it, particularly. I'd just find something else they could get mad at. But what – that isn't a session use. Thing to do is find out the ARC break and keep going. Get tone arm action is the whole answer to that. Find the bypassed charge and get tone

arm action and, you'll bring them through anything. These are good, workable, sizable stable data that won't wear out.

But here's your Scientology 0 aspect of existence. And you don't tell people about problems that are completely unreal to them and that they know they can't do anything about and expect them to be in a wild, stampeding enthusiasm to get going in any particular direction at all. Works with the pc, works with a group, works with anybody.

Why, you can have the police shooting down rioters with machine guns right outside the door, you see? You could have rioters burning down every government building. And there'd be a very large portion of the population in the midst of all this mess, and so forth, that'd be – sit there knowing that everybody had it under control who was supposed to have it under control. See? I mean, the visual evidence means nothing to them. That explodes one of probably your favorite stable datum, that if somebody could see it with his own eyes, he would believe it.

See, this has such a limited workability. There was one of the high top aeronautical design scientists flew over here from Holland some years ago. Heard I was in London, had to come up and see me, and talk to me about a theory about something or other. And he talked to me, *brrr-bang*, for a while, and went back and climbed on his airplane and went elsewhere. But he told me a funny story. And that is after he had demonstrated that something was actually hanging in space and suspended, counter-opposed to gravity, the commanding general, in charge of all of the project and so forth, got down on his hands and knees and crawled all underneath the table and all around the room, trying to find the secret magnetic equipment and so forth that was holding this thing aloft.

In view of the fact that there wasn't even any cloth on the table, because there was no way to put anything under the table, this was quite remarkable.

Now, of course, his observation of the situation was simply that his word had been questioned, and he was quite wroth on the subject, so he was also limited in his observation. So he didn't really see how funny this story was. There wasn't anyplace in the room to put any such machinery. Yet the general even invents a table cloth to hide the nonexistent thing that is keeping the designed flying saucer, you see, in suspension, see.

See, he couldn't – he saw it with his own eyes, and he didn't believe it. We know this is chronic, this is customary. If you get to thinking it over, you could think of many instances where people see things with their own eyes and don't believe them. In fact, they're probably more numerous than the reverse. [laughter]

So, you never count on that as a stable datum. There's not even any particular – particular sense in being terribly good to prove to people you are good. Because if they're saying you are bad to that degree, then they are incapable of the power of observation to determine when you're good. This – parents and fathers and mothers are notorious in this particular line. Sometimes the son gets to be forty years old and his father still has never been introduced to him. He has a theoretical symbol someplace that he calls a son. And sons behave in a certain way, so therefore this fellow behaves in that way, and he'll even invent a whole false past and a whole series of false adventures to account for this image that he has, but this hasn't anything whatsoever...

And the child often goes, "*Gluuhhh*," practically spins on the unreality of this sort of thing. There is many a child who is always being challenged for the things they have done, which they haven't done. And they get in a woggy state of mind because they're doing things that they should be challenged for and nobody ever sees these. And it gives them a complete *zzzzz*! You see, it doesn't match up reality.

So this is the type of person, and this is the beingness of individuals when you're dealing in the sphere and zone of aberration, or when you're dealing with guys who are downscale far enough to be doing nothing but wear meat bodies, you know, and be on the economic treadmill. When this kind of thing occurs, you must realize the power of observation is out. And the easiest thing to relay in this particular line is an idea. But the idea must not violate the confront ability or the confront potential of the individuals being brought to. So therefore neither the problem, which is being pointed out in Scientology 0, nor the solution must exceed the reality of the person to whom it is being pointed out.

Now, all right, this colonel goes around the army camp and he wonders how these fellows can be so involved in their company streets and their barracks and that sort of thing and operating in their tiny little spheres. You've probably had the funny feeling yourself occasionally, in going into a shop and wondering how somebody could work at that particular bench all day long and never move out of that zone or area, and it probably is almost giving you the creeps. But in actual fact – in actual fact, that person's confront potential on problems is problems of the zone of that particular little workbench. And his ability to confront solutions are the zone of solutions which he is applying. And therefore we say he's an effective person on the job.

Now, when his ability to confront problems gets up to the full zone and area of the entire camp, and he really is confronting the problems of the camp – not problems he dreams up, because this very easily goes on a lower-scale mockery – and he can confront solutions which are actual and real solutions to these problems or doingnesses in that particular direction, you no longer have somebody who is working at a workbench, you have a colonel. See?

Now, because of the system of labels which is used in this particular society, very often the guy who was commanding general in his last life is a private in the rear rank in this one. May be that his confront potential has not particularly reduced. He'll have quite a coterie in his immediate vicinity whereby he's pointing out the things that are wrong to the immediate troops in his vicinity and pointing out the solutions.

What's interesting is, is these are usually more real than the command decisions. That's quite amusing. And sometimes at a lower level of rank you start filtering around through the lower level of rank and picking up the grapevine on the subject of what are the problems of the camp and what are the solutions to it, and you generally find out those are the answers. But according to the staff, command level, you see, why, the problems are – and it's really, they'll start in this sort of way: "Well, really, it's very involved for an uninformed observer, you see, to realize the tremendous difficulties of coping with this situation, you see. And in actual fact, you see, General Smith here is having a very, very hard time trying to keep his number in the proper rank up, you see, at the Pentagon. And that is really the basic difficulty here, because we've got to make a better show with the – and..."

Well, your problem, you thought up to that point, was simply one of morals and drains, don't you see? No, we find out that they're very complicated. And if we listen to this kind of approach for a little while we get absolutely staggered, get completely overwhelmed. We don't know whether we're coming or going. We don't know whether there are any problems in this camp, or just lunatics, don't you see, if we listen to it at this level.

I'm sure – I'm sure that the FDA's opinion of what are the problems of the United States, and so forth, wouldn't stand inspection by a psycho. They wouldn't. I'm sure that if you sat around the press office and the administrative centers and so forth at the White House today and listened to what the problems of the world really were, you would sit there and your eyes would probably start an inch out of your skulls. See? Their Scientology 0 is wildly out. See, wildly out.

It's based on an inability to observe. Well, sometimes these inability to observe are quite real. In other words, you can't go there and look. But that doesn't mean you can't get it trustworthily looked at. That's always something to remember. You can get things trustworthily looked at.

For instance, all too often in Scientology some guy is kicking around and somebody suddenly says, "Well, he's no good and he audited a pc very badly," and all this kind of thing, "and therefore he should be suspended from staff," or something like this, "until he's had 8,000 hours of auditing," or something like this.

Well, there's some kind of a command decision, see. I mean, it's made by an Assoc Sec or somebody of this character. Well, as long as everybody's fate depends on this particular level of action, and as long as that fellow actually isn't observing what really happened or what the circumstances actually are, there is actually no justice or personal security possible. If you get just a freakish flip and "Oh, well, somebody's got to be hanged, so we'll hang this one," you know, that is not a possibility of solution. If you're going to have any justice at all you've got to have the situation looked at. Don't you see? The situation has to be intelligently looked at. That is as intelligently observed as it can be observed and as unbiasedly observed as it can be unbiasedly observed.

You've got to hear people who've said, "All right, he did a bad job," and so forth, and all right, and these other people say, "Well, yes," and you eventually get down to it and you find out the pc had a hangover that morning, don't you see, and something wild was in the lineup, quite ordinarily, that nobody suspected up to that particular time. There were contributing factors; there were all sorts of things.

Well, a person at command level has neither time, you see, nor the position from which he could observe, in order to settle it. So he'd better settle it with people who do have the time to observe the situation and then abide by what they have observed. That's a solution to the situation, don't you see?

In what wonderful shape you would be in if all during your career in this universe you had only operated, ever, upon the actual facts. See? So we get a branch out of Scientology 0. If a group is going to operate in any cleared level, you've got to take the service facsimile out of it as far as you can. And the characteristic of a service facsimile is: is nonobservation and a generality substituting for judgment. Now, those are the characteristics of a service facsimile.

Now, to the degree – you see, you cannot totally remove those on an absolute from all situations everywhere, see, because the very fact of removing them would become so complicated that you would now have new complications to observe. But you can go a long way in this direction. You can go an awful long way in this direction. What is the situation? That's the first question. What part of the situation is potentially confrontable? And what part of that situation will somebody do something about? And of course you've got the whole formula worked out to get observation and action accomplished in this universe.

There's many a – many a king, like Kennedy, swanking around, wants to get everything done tomorrow. I'm sure – I'm sure Kennedy, left to his own devices, I'm sure he would have the Cubans out of Cuba. Isn't that what he's trying to do? I'm sure he'd be able to accomplish this because he's a good, sincere man, basically, at heart, even though he's stone-blind and stupid. Now I'm trying to be fair. So he marshals up the whole United States Army and the whole United States Navy and the whole United States Air Force to solve this situation. And they go out and make fools out of themselves on the high seas for a number of days with tremendous amounts of rocketry, big guns, everything of the sort. They put a blockade all the way around Cuba that anybody can get through. They have an invasion on Cuba and it's carefully planned so that Kennedy, at the last moment, calls off their air support.

The revolutionaries and the people who know Cuba have now been disowned completely; won't have anything to do with them. Shoot them, they're – they're not, after all germane to the situation because they are out of Cuba already, see. So he accomplished that much. So we don't worry about them. We don't ask for any of their advice. It's starting to look wilder and wilder when you get right down and look at it, you see, and this is just a basis of generality substituting, you see, for actual judgment. And the generality got there in the first place because there was no observation of the situation. I don't think anybody's made a study of the situation at all of any kind of an impartial nature. I think everybody's just riding hobby-horses and big wild theories and that sort of thing.

Situation couldn't possibly maintain itself the way it is if somebody sat down and made a good, broad, wide survey of all the factual evidence and did all the personal observation that he could on the situation. He'd eventually wind up at the other end with an exact appraisal of the problems and situations as they exist in the vicinity of Cuba. And then, of course, he could pick up something which is confrontable about all this and start moving in on that quarter, and then start moving in on another quarter and the problem called Cuba would go *pssww!* That would be the end of that. Got the idea?

All right, you do with – this with a case all the time. And you ought to know this cold about cases. Very often, any time you've got a failure on a case, you have *not estimated* the state of the case; that is to say, the confusions and problems of the case. These you have not estimated. It's very often a great shock to an auditor after he's been auditing, out of the best possible motives, auditing somebody for two or three weeks to suddenly come up with a gasp and find out something new about this pc that he'd never known before and it completely alters the whole situation and program of which he was operating, you see?

Well, what's at fault there was an uncared survey of the case. He didn't look this case over before he began in on it, so of course he made mistakes. In other words, he cut out the

observational point. Then he, himself, didn't do what could be done, because of course it was based on unreal information. And then we get what is commonly called a case failure. You know, he didn't make good progress; it's that sort of thing.

Well, frankly, all case failures are addressed more or less into this zone and area. Somebody made an improper estimate of the case in the first place based on bad observation of the confusions and difficulties of the case and then didn't handle it on the basis of what the auditor could confront and what the pc could confront and, of course, we have a case failure.

Now the auditor, in looking this pc over, as he's listing these problems and difficulties and solutions is actually listing two different zones, or two different aspects. The problems he can see about this case – problems and difficulties and confusions about this case that he can see – and then, of course, there are problems and confusions and difficulties about the case that the pc can see. And these vary widely. These are two different points of view and they are quite different. And I've told you about the fellow that walks in on the crutches and tells you that he has a constant pain in his ear. That's what's really wrong with him. All right, he's apparently never noticed that he didn't have a right leg, you see?

This then follows through that there's the auditor's estimation of the pc's problems and difficulties, then there's the pc's estimation of the pc's problems and difficulties. Well, the auditor is too often simply content with his own estimation of the pc's problems and difficulties; he pays no attention to the pc's estimation of his problems and difficulties. This becomes a missing factor, then, in auditing.

Now, there's a certain level of these problems and difficulties that the auditor finds confrontable. He finds confrontable, see, or she finds confrontable. And then, of course, there is the point of the problems and difficulties – and now remember this is not a point of view of what the auditor thinks is wrong, but a point of view of what the pc thinks is wrong which the pc finds confrontable. There's one of these things – now get this – that the pc thinks is wrong that the pc can find confrontable. So therefore there's what the auditor can confront about this case, don't you see, but that's a confrontation of this totality of confusions and difficulties which the auditor sees; and then there's the pc's point of view over here, but that is a point of view of an entirely different group of problems and difficulties. You got that?

Now, the pc has some part of that series of difficulties which the pc can confront. See that? All right, then – then there's a certain point of level which the auditor's experience and so forth has told him that he could do on the problems and difficulties which he has confronted. So that actually is the doingness which the auditor is willing to attack – that's – attack with. That's what the auditor is going to do about the confrontable problem or difficulty out of the total problem and difficulties of the case. You see that?

Ah, but there's another one for the pc. There's the pc's attitude of what he could do about the problems and difficulties which he himself is able to confront out of all the problems and difficulties which he has some awareness that he has.

Now look at these as six factors, six factors, all stacked up on one case. You want to know how you get a misestimate of the situation, well, just draw this for your pc sometime. Just ask your burning question at each level. "What are the Problems and difficulties which I honestly think this case is in?" So-and-so and so-and-so and so-and-so. "All right, what part

of these am I willing to confront?" Well, so-and-so, that one's the easiest to confront, that's obvious. "All right, then, what am I willing to do, or know that I can do, with regard to that one I can confront?" That would be the auditor's estimation of the case and its progress. Interesting.

All right, then there's three more. What's the pc's estimation of his states of confusion and difficulties? What one of those problems and confusion does he find potentially confrontable? And what is he himself willing to do about that problem and confusion which has been found confrontable? In other words, big one, smaller two, smaller three, see. You've got six factors at work here then, in any auditor-pc relationship. This is all Scientology 0, and nothing else.

Now, the funny part of it is, is this isn't that important on a pc level because it's mostly taken care of by the fact that if you can get tone arm motion on the pc on a hunt-and-punch system and a push-about and so forth, why you're all right. But listen, when you *can't* get tone arm action, man, that is important and that becomes important and you haven't done anything about it.

A little serious discussion with the pc on this particular subject would entertain you vastly sometime or another. The pc may be talking about these *tremendous* things that he has in mind that he would like to have, or something like that. But that isn't the question we just asked. We asked the question of, out of this total sum of his problems and difficulties, which one is potentially confrontable by him and what could he do about that one problem or difficulty?

Now, of course, the greatest use of that particular survey is not in the field of processing but in the field of auditor advices to the pc; a field which we almost never touch, because we say, we shouldn't evaluate or invalidate for the pc. Nevertheless, it totally exists as a field and exists as such a broad field that not to call it a level of Scientology would be to disown what man is ordinarily doing with man all the time: He's giving him advice. And if you follow the rules which I've just given you here, you'll give some beautiful advice, believe me. It'll be pretty gorgeous. You'll be a very successful adviser.

Funny part of it is you'll actually be in total control of the situation before you know it because all the advices you give will be followed. And what stops people advising? Because the advice they give is never followed. But your advice in this wise would always be followed.

You've got now an estimate of what the person – not pc – but what the person considers problems and difficulties. Good. You've got that estimation. Now you've got what of all these problems and difficulties they would find confrontable. See, we only now wind up with one problem or difficulty, you see. Now what would they be able to face doing about that one problem? And you of course have smoked it right out into the clear, see? And bang, that... they will do something about it. They will then, to that degree win, they will then, to that degree, be able to see more of their own problems and difficulties; they'll be able to confront more of their problems and difficulties and the cycle can be repeated again. So now you will find out that a new review of the general situation finds out that they have an improved idea of what is potentially confrontable amongst their problems.

So you can now find out what they would be comfortable to do about this new problem and they would do that and that would give them another win. Now the only difficulty is, is they very often go up scale with too great a confidence and, like a little baby who has just learned how to walk, they go tearing across the room at a high run. And I'll call to your attention they usually fall on their face about the third step. They can get much too ambitious.

So you have to take *this* into consideration when you're giving that sort of thing and say, "Well, don't do any more than that at this particular time," you see. That would be giving advice. That would be social working and that sort of thing.

Well now, you have to enter this field as auditors because it is your duty to reduce the present time restimulation of a pc to a point where the session is controllable. So in that particular field you have to study out the situation sometimes and say *zit*, and *zat*, and *dit*, and get done what the pc can do about it. And he's handled some of his present time environment, don't you see?

So this is where this comes in. It comes in at pc – at pc level on advising the pc so as to cut down present time restimulation. It all comes – so comes down to wonder why the pc feels he's losing all the time. Of course he can't do any of this as the pc who eventually, of course, does all these things about his own case.

And then you get the – you get this additional aspect of the PE person – the new person. You get the people who can't audit, who are part of a group. You get these various zones and spheres and you have to talk to these people about things. Well, if you make it your business to rapidly – because you mustn't dwell on it because there's no tone arm action in it, you see – to rapidly get an estimation of what they think is wrong, then find out which one of these points they can confront, and then find out what they're going to do about that point that they think they can do, and then get them to do it. And at that point become terribly militant on the subject of getting that point done. Man! You have agreement with a capital "A." Agreement with a capital "Affinity" every time. How come?

You haven't told them anything that they think is false. And they've got an estimate of the situation. And they know when you're advising them on that estimate of the situation, they know then you speak true. And I'm a bad one to use for a model on this because in the first place in talking to you, I'm not talking to the public. I say, "You see that vertical wall? Oh, you've left your fly-shoes home, huh? Well, climb the wall. Just walk straight up. Now keep your back stiff." I know you sometimes feel like that when I hand you something to do. Slightly different relationship is involved.

Now I'm talking about the analysis of a situation in any given zone or area. People don't know what the world is all about. They don't know how to get any further along in life; they know they can't make any improvement in life. They know it's impossible to be any better at all, *yeahhhh*. Well, you could actually sit down and prove to a whole group that it is possible to get better. You can make them write it on a sheet of paper. I can see Allison down there in Cape Town doing this now in a month – few months. Have them write down on a piece of paper – and see the rest of you, too – "Write down on a piece of paper now, a short list of problems that you think are wrong with your life – the problems you have in your life. Just write this short list down," and so forth. "All right, which one of those is the easiest for

you to confront?" and so forth. "Now write that down, see? All right, now, now, write down what you absolutely know for sure you could do about that last one you have just written down. All right, write that down. Now you see what you've written down at the bottom of this page? *Do it!*"

They say, "My God, this fellow's reading minds! The guy's a genius! How'd he know I could do that?" It's quite fascinating, you see? You could then – and just leadership of a group in PE or a Scientology group or something like that – increase your agreement just enormously with the rawest meat you ever had – rawest meat you ever had anything to do with – and social work and in other ways.

Now, I notice every once in a while a Scientologist winds up as an adviser to some bigwig someplace. This is quite interesting. Every once in a while, once in a blue moon, I'll get a sudden letter from somebody or another, and it, all of a sudden, it'll really all be foxed up enormously. More power to them, you see, but there's – you can see that mahogany desk, you know, just imprinted on that letter, all over. And this will be "Mr. Bushbottom's Scientology Adviser." Every now and then it comes through my mail lines. Quite intriguing. And they land in these positions and they very often stay in them for years and years and years. What are they doing? They're processing this guy, you see, and they process his staff and that sort of thing. They don't do too much dissemination work and so on.

But that position and post does exist in Scientology and does occur. I'm not making any fun of it, because we make a considerable inroad. It's quite interesting. It's just a niche that Scientologists here and there carve out for themselves. If he did – was very careful to do nothing but Scientology 0 on his advisory capacities on that particular post, they would think of him as the greatest screaming genius that ever walked through that front door; particularly if he never pointed out a single problem, he himself never dreamed up a single solution to any of the problems, but just made people continuously estimate the situation and do that which they thought they could do about the situation, see. I've given you the perfect formula for this, see.

That is not all of Scientology 0 because it's a confrontation of what things are all about. That's what it is. It's the problems. It's the chaoses. It's other things of that particular nature. There are ways and means of handling these things. I've given you the most elementary material there is on it.

Scientology 0 has high applicability to any case level anyplace because it's simply an estimation of the case. And I point out to you that there are two actions always involved in Scientology 0 in all of its problems, and that's your viewpoint and the other fellow's viewpoint. And they are always those two, and they always lead to two different views of the exacting – of the same situation. If you can get the other fellow to estimate the situation, you seldom have to, which is the laziest way to look at it.

Of the two of them, it is slightly more important for the other fellow to estimate the problems and confusions – the potential problem be confronted and so forth, and what he can do about it – slightly more important for that than for you. But you shouldn't lose your gift in this particular wise, because life is successfully lived with Scientology 0 well in. And it's very unsuccessfully lived with it out. And probably the reason you came down scale and figured

out all those things to do all that confronting for you in those GPMs and that sort of thing, is because your Scientology 0 was out the whole way.

So I think it's time, after all this time, that we got it in to some slight degree.

Thank you.

SUMMARY III:

ABOUT LEVEL IV AUDITING

A lecture given on 26 September 1963

Well, how are you today?

Audience: Good, fine.

Well, this is the last of these lecture series – not that I'm going to stop lecturing, but I mean, you have to keep up with it to find out what's been changed. But this is the last of the review tapes – let's just sort of bring you up to date and orient you with regard to Scientology. And this is the what?

Audience: Twenty-sixth, seventh September.

There's disagreement here. What's the date?

Audience: Twenty-sixth of September.

Twenty-sixth of September, AD 13, Saint Hill Special Briefing Course.

You've had Routine 3 now since 19 – what was it? – 61. And this has gone through many vagaries and many vicissitudes and one of the reasons it has – it is just about the most complicated tightrope that anybody ever tried to walk across the Grand Canyon on. Do not underestimate Scientology IV, goals and pcs' actual GPMs, and that's the first word I can give you about it – do not underestimate the difficulty that you encounter in these. Just don't underestimate it.

The thing which saves the bacon today is R3SC which permits the discovery of the pc's goal on a pc who is too overburdened for the goal to read. The reason the pc's goal cannot be found is, of course, the case is too overrestimulated by present time exigencies for the auditor to get any kind of reads on the actual goal channels. That's why goals don't bang and rocket read when you first come close to them. It's just too much restimulation.

Now, getting the service facsimile out of the road, which means softening up the two top RIs which are the most restimulated RIs in the bank by R3SC, brings us into a position then to have a numerous category of things against which to list present time goals. I'm talking about a raw meat pc, and the finding of those goals is the most – has been the most time-consuming activity.

But with R3SC you get a variety of things which you call service facsimiles. And all you want to know is what goal do they fit. And you will wind up... If you've got five or six

things which you've found as service facsimiles on the pc, the one which produced the most tone arm action is the one you want to list goals against. And it won't be really the RI, you understand, of that goal, but it will give you the entrance point to the goal.

Now, let me give you an actual example: We get, without too much brainwork or fortuitousness or something of that sort, but just using your routine assessments for R3SC, we get some category such as "auditing," we get "insects," and we get "bodies," and we get "gathering data."

Now, these are the things which were run with rightness and wrongness and which produced tone arm action on the pc, and we look at these things and we find the one that seemed to be in for the long haul – well, it was a tie between "gathering data" and "bodies." And "gathering data," however, is picked off a list and wasn't assessed so it is somewhat questionable, but the other actually was listed to. You know, in other words it was chosen more carefully.

And although the goal was not found by this system, it was quite obvious that if one had asked the pc to have listed goals against "bodies," which gave excellent tone arm action – the pc, of course, would have come up with the goal "to be dead" which was the present time goal. It's quite obvious, you see.

The pc – right there on the verge of cognition, don't you see – what's – what goal would relate to "bodies," and, "Well, there'd be 'to live,' 'to be alive,' 'to kill everybody,' 'to be dead'," and that would be your rocket read and away you'd be – away you'd go. Get the idea?

So the R3SC opens the door on goals finding, such as we've never had it opened before, because it carries with it the – the deletion of – of the restimulative factors, so that you take the... The fact goals weren't easily findable was the overrestimulation of the top RIs of the pc's actual bank.

Now that's why goals were not easily findable. And that's also why you couldn't get nice, big, gorgeous rocket reads on your pc, because of the overrestimulation of those two top RIs of the present time pc's actual GPM. And it's elementary, don't you see? The more beefed up those two top RIs are, they're sitting right there in present time, and the more havoc is being created in the pc's environment because of the fixed ideas in there, naturally the more out of session the pc is, just for that, you see. He's not under the auditor's control, he's too worried about his present time problems and all that sort of thing.

Now, to parallel what the mind is doing is again and always has been the basic mission of processing. Find out what the mind is doing and then parallel that with processing and you're going to get large quantities of results. So what is the mind doing? The mind is holding in the pc's two postulated RIs which are based on his last goal and he's just busy, busy, busy, busy, busy. See? And those two RIs are right here in present time, and let's say one is "blackboards," you see, and the other is "chalk," to be nonsensical about it, don't you see. Now out of that we will have locks such as "teaching," "school," "instructors," you get the idea? "Studying" – all of these kinds of thing will come off of it.

We find – see, we don't have to find the RIs. We have to find the goal they fit to, you see? And "blackboards" and "chalk" are – let's say those are two top RIs, to use something

non... very banal – and we eventually get studying, see, and we get instructors, and we get some other things, as service facsimiles. Well, all the time we're doing this, we're taking charge off those two top RIs, you see? Now, there's what's causing – they are what's causing the present time difficulty. But of course, what's supporting them in place is the goal to which they are attached, which is earlier than them, and we find out that here they are, "blackboards," "chalk," but we get "studying," "instructors," that sort of thing.

Well, we eventually list – and we get "school" and so forth – and we eventually look at these things, and we find out that "school" produced nice healthy tone arm action when we were handling it on R3SC, you see? That was very healthy – very healthy. So we just list some goals against it. We just say, "What goals might relate to schools?" you see, or something like that. And the pc comes up with "to be ignorant" and that is the present time goal.

And then because you've under... you see, you've taken off the burdening that was on top of it – that burdening, of course, permits this goal now to RR, otherwise you might not get that goal to RR, don't you see? So then you know the goal for sure and you can recognize it easily. And if you miss on that goal and you pick up, as is quite common, an earlier goal on the track that is RRing, your checkout and so forth of that goal will then lead you in the position where you can oppose that goal with lists and get the present time goal.

See, so you can tackle this thing in various ways and it enters in various channels. And it is not uncommon to – after you've listed your R3SC service facs that you have found, so-called, you've listed those things – and it's not uncommon to pick up such a goal as, let us say, "to know." And – ho-ho! I don't think this is a present time goal, you see. I don't think so.

But you check this out (as I will take up in a moment) and you find out that it is not the present time goal but you still have entered the goals channel. You're still now in a very, very fortuitous position, because all you've got to do is oppose it. See, get a new goals list; you come up with another goal, checked that's the PT goal; it's not, so you oppose that; and check another one, you know, and oppose that, you know and check – you know. You get the idea?

No matter what goal you find then, no matter what goal you find, you – of the pc's actual GPMs – you can oppose it and walk up the bank and find the present time GPM, and then you can find by listing the two top RIs, and your pc goes off like a well-oiled bomb. Why? Because you've walked him back in to the guts of the service facsimile, and you're taking off the case rapidly all of the restimulative factor of present time, at one fell swoop, *crash*. And if you don't think that won't give you tone arm action!

You see the system of programing? Your mission is to get onto the goals channel, and once you're on the goals channel, to goal oppose until you get the present time GPM. And when you've got that, you want the top – now listen carefully, because this is a change – you want the top terminal. This is the way you handle a truncated GPM, because that top one is the hardest one to find the two top items for because it is not completed. So therefore the goal hasn't spent itself out.

It's very easy to get the top RI of a formed goal, because the oppterm of course is some direct conduct of the goal and the terminal; the pc now has turned against the goal, and so it'd be some anti-goal thing. See, that's very easy on a completed bank, but on these banks which

are present time GPMs, these things maybe have been formed in very recent times; there may be only a few RIs formed in the thing, and you don't know where to hit it. You don't know where to hit it. But it is easier to hit it as a terminal, for this reason: You can ask the pc "What are you in present time," don't you see? "What are you in present time that relates to 'to be ignorant'?" See? And he can list that.

But you say, "What would 'to be ignorant' oppose?" you see, you're just asking him "What's the whole bank?" or "What is the last item – top item of 'to be ignorant'?" or something like that, that is in opposition.

And well, what is it? You see? It might be a version of the goal, clear up at the top, don't you see? It might be down to the middle, just where the thing is turning, don't you see, some innocuous indifferent thing. This is too hard to do. But you can say to the pc – because you're telling him to go to the drugstore without telling him what town he's in. don't you see? And... very hard to do.

So the truncated GPM gives you a very special case. It's a special case. On all other actual GPMs you can list for the top oppterm, but not on the present time one. There you want the top terminal. And if you list for the top terminal, you're actually – he will Hobson-Jobson it over and ask this – answer this question, "What am I in present time that represents this goal just now?" See, that's more or less... and he can list that, because you don't have to send him to the drugstore to find the drugstore.

You say, well, "Who is going to the drugstore?" and he can find that. See? You don't have to ask him, "Well, where are we sending you to, from noplac?" And you'll find the pc gets very baffled at this type of action.

So then, you can now take that from the top and go on down the bank to the bottom, and take out the bottom plus one. You may have to find the next goal to get the bottom opposition terminal of the bank, but you want that discharged. You want the goal as an RI discharged, you want that reliable item totally flat, and you want what it opposes totally flat, and you want the pc out of that bank before you then repair the bank. Why? Because the goal as an RI, of course, and its opposition, hold everything fixed and rigid in the bank until they are gone.

So, the proper programing to take on any actual GPM – program of an actual GPM for any GPM, see – any actual GPM, no matter where it is located – is to find the top RIs, the last RIs, and they're very easy to find. I don't care whether you list for an opposition terminal or the terminal, you see, on an ordinarily totally formed GPM, don't you see? Doesn't make much difference. But it makes a lot of difference on that present time one.

So you find the top RIs and go down the bank, go down the bank clear to the bottom, and clear it all out all the way down as best you can, and then turn around and inspect the whole plot again to find out if anything is still ticking, that you have found. Anything you've listed for and found as part of that GPM, is it still ticking? And if you have one that is still ticking, you assume – now get this very carefully – you assume that the list from which it came is incomplete.

You see, it is not that it has not been properly opposed. Yes, it's been properly opposed, but it's still ticking, so that says it came off a list which was incomplete.

Now let me give you the idea: You've got the item "blackboards" ticking. And you've got "blackboards," you see, by saying, "Who or what would chalk oppose?" See. And you listed that, but you've got "blackboards" still ticking. So that means "Who or what would chalk oppose?" is incomplete.

This sometimes doesn't show up, by the way, until after you've done the whole GPM. I mean, you thought you had it at the time, but you come back later and you find out you have something still ticking. Well, students who had a bit of trouble with this – trying to get this straight – so I'll just tell you that is a point of trouble. So make sure you – you get this one. If you find something ticking on the repair of a bank, it means the list from which it came is incomplete. You don't try to do anything with that item. Actually, you abandon that item. And you complete the list from which it came. And now you will get a whole new series to do in the bank.

And you get a whole bunch of them now, and they go back and forth, and they carom this way and that way, and you say, "My God, how could I have missed this many RIs in this bank?" Well, you could of course, because they were all fixed in place by the bottom RIs.

Now what is, in actual fact, the reason we don't go from the bottom of the bank to the top? That is quite important. It's because the goal is germane, part and parcel, to every RI in the bank. So therefore, if you start listing on the goal and opposing from the goal up, you tend to beef up the whole bank. Do you understand? You tend to throw every RI in the bank alive – as you start from the bottom up, you tend to throw all the later ones alive. And the pc can't reach them. And he will have a heavier bank, he will have heavier going, and he'll have far more difficulty because he'll just miss, miss, miss, miss.

Now you'd look at it at first glance, you'd say, "Well look, you've got your hands on the goal, it's very easy to oppose the goal and get the next item and what's all this thing about oppterminals or terminals; they're very hard to find," and so forth. Well, all that's very reasonable. Everything is reasonable about it except it doesn't work. You could theorize on it until the cows come home, and you'll find out that you always have a bad time trying to go from the bottom of an actual GPM to the top. And you have a rather easier time going from the top to the bottom.

And one of the reasons for this is the pc is trained on running GPMs by this time, by implant GPMs, which are all backwards. He isn't putting his own GPMs in backwards now, but he – he rather tends to get the idea that you can go down them but not up them. Because, of course, he's literally had thousands of implant GPMs put into him backwards.

Well, that's one slight reason, not the real reason. The real reason is, when you start in from the top you are taking the burden off the actual GPM. It's the same thing as you're straightening up present time before you find backtrack. He'd always be more interested in those that are closer to present time which is top, the later ones. He's almost more interested in the later ones than the earlier ones. So he'd get many more cognitions.

And going down the bank this way, you get some of the most gorgeous tone arm actions and blowdowns which you ever cared to see in your life, going down the bank. But you don't get that same action coming up the bank. It's stickier.

Now, it's hard enough to find the top of a GPM and go down the bank. This is hard enough, without complicating it by making the whole bank beef up by trying to run it backwards. You very often will be in the horrible position of going up from the bottom and then going back to the bottom and think you are going on up the bank when you are not going on up the bank. You turn around and go down toward the bottom again. And all kinds of wild variations occur.

Now, what occurs when you do it properly, which is from the last formed RIs to the goal? Do it in that fashion as your first pass. What happens in that particular case is, the pc will just go on down, and you'd utterly be amazed at how many RIs he can miss, on his progress down. But you have kicked the stuffings out of the bank by the time you're at the bottom of it. And that thing is limp. You probably can't even get the goal to read. You probably can't even get it to do anything industrious at all. You're handling a relatively inert proposition now and your listings and so forth are – they're – I shouldn't use the word "easier." The listings are not so difficult.

So the program on a pc's actual GPM is something like this, from a raw-meat person: Get into the channel (the goals channel) through what you found as a service fac, listing goals against, but get into that goals channel. By goals channel, I mean your pc has thirty or so goals. He doesn't have very many. And he's got these goals – might be more than that or less than that from pc to pc – but he's got these GPMs, and if you can get onto the sequence of the GPMs anyplace, you can then do goal opposes and bring the pc up the line and list the one in present time.

Now of course, that restimulates the pc more than if you found the present time GPM in the first place. But nevertheless, this is acceptable and doable, and you will get an enormous amount of tone arm action ordinarily in doing this, which is quite interesting.

But you throw the bank more alive. It's a little harder to handle if you find something well on the backtrack. But that's all right, that's still acceptable. So long as you, so long as you don't go completely knuckleheaded and try to run the far-backtrack GPM. If you run anything in a far-backtrack GPM, you are committed to a completion of it, and you will now have hell on your hands. You're running this fellow at trillions a hundred with no reality on anything and it doesn't have any application to his modern life, and here he is sitting here, trying to solve his lumbosis and the trouble with him in that lifetime is he was having trouble with his lightning bolts. You see, they never quite went on target. And honest, he doesn't have this as a present time GPM.

His present time GPM is how not to get shocked when he puts his finger in the mains, don't you see? And he – he'll Hobson-Jobson it over, but because his interest is so much closer to present time, he then tends to list on wide sweeps, and he will give you present time RIs on this past goal and it just gets to be the awfulest mess. You can bring him through it and he'll survive, somehow, but it is very, very, very hard. It actually compounds the diffi-

culty of running so great that it has been known for people just to back off and not audit the process. It's just too, too straining.

And that strain comes from auditing the pc too far from his actual zone of interest. Now, why did you find this early, early, early GPM in the first place? Well, it must be a lock of some kind – the present time GPM of course is a lock on it. But there must be some restimulative characteristic. It may be a dichotomy, see. Maybe his present time GPM is "to be a slave," you see, and this very ancient GPM, this very ancient, ancient, ancient GPM, so forth, is something on the order – is "to free," see, or something of this sort. Well, "to free" will lock up on "to be a slave." So you find "to free," because it's – it's right there available, and it's also – seems to the pc to be safe to offer something up which is that far from anything that is wrong with him. See, it's a safe action.

Now, if you started to run "to free," and you just went *pocketa-pocketa-pocketa*, started to run this thing, oh man, you're going to be in trouble. It's going to be difficult.

In the first place, you'll have to complete it and it'll be very hard to do, and all of the pc's present time problems and worries are not being solved by auditing all during the time you are running it. So he's worried about his lumbosis in present time and the GPM you're running has to do with getting people out from underneath lightning bolts or something like this and doesn't have any application, you see.

So therefore – therefore, any goal that you find puts the pc in his goals channel and then don't run anything until you are sure that you have the PT goal. And go ahead and work now to obtain the PT goal. And when you're pretty sure you've got the PT goal, start running, and still be totally prepared to the horror of finding you're running a goal three back. See, still be prepared to find out that you've still erred here, but remember to finish the goal you started to run. Don't do anything else. Don't go off and leave it just because you found it was three back. Go ahead and run it, but you understand that it's going to be more difficult.

Now you can move up into PT, and move his – and find his actual PT goal and run *it*, don't you see? Be as careful as you can to find that present time GPM. Do everything you can to find that present time GPM. And then sit down to run something which you hope is it, and then if it turns out not to be it suddenly, you go on and run what you found. You go ahead and find the present time GPM, but you run what you started to run. Otherwise you're going to have your pc in trouble.

Now programing, then, comes up to that point of – find any goal, move it on up with goal oppose till you get the present time GPM, be fairly sure – as sure as you can be – that you've got the present time GPM, and then run it, and if it isn't the present time GPM, but the present time GPM now turns up, well, you go ahead and run what you started to run. And you finish that off, and you come back and find what you've now found as the present time GPM, you understand?

All right, and your next action is to start in listing. Listing from the top, and if it's the present time GPM, you'd better start listing the oppterm – the terminal, terminal, don't – don't list the oppterm on that first one. List for the terminal. And now move on down the bank as best you can, on down to the bottom, and get out the whole bottom of it. That is to say, the

goal as an RI, what it opposes, its opposition into the next GPM, which requires that you will have found the next goal.

So the actual fact is, you clean out the whole bottom, find the next goal, oppose the top optterm of the next goal, you understand now, because you're listing now for the top optterm of the next goal. But that's very easy. It's just "Who or what would the goal as an RI oppose?" You have to have the goal in order to list that normally. In other words, you're going to find the next GPM. And you're going to make sure that you got all the items at the bottom of the GPM you're working on, and then you going to roll up your sleeves, in spite of the sales talks of the pc, in spite of all of his answers about how he's now interested in "to be a snip," and he's no longer interested in what you've just done. Of course, that looks dead and flat to him.

Recognize that you've probably got 50 percent of its RIs unfound. And you're going to go back up now, and you're going to find anything in it that ticks and you'll find something that ticks inevitably, and recognize that the list from which it came is incomplete. Complete that list. It will give you now a rocket reading item, a nice rocket reading RI. Use that and start cross-opposing inside that bank. And I frankly don't care whether you go up or down, because you very often will think you're going up and you're going down. And very often think you're going down and you're going up. And you will be very surprised to suddenly find yourself in present time when you thought you were getting down to the bottom of the bank.

All sorts of wild things happen on these repairs. But repair is essentially a very easy action. The only thing that is difficult about it and so on is the pc sometimes becomes very exasperated because he doesn't seem to be able to get the item on the list. And that's just an auditor liability that you'll just have to face up to and come over with and be persuasive.

Pc was not really ARC breaking. The pc was just going to pieces from exasperation, as I've already told you about. "But I've put it on the list, it's on the list a half a dozen times," you know? So on. Tone arm has not given an adequate blowdown, you're still getting ticks, you're still getting dial-wide slashes that might be rocket reads and might not be and so on, as he lists. Obviously the list is incomplete. Have to keep him listing somehow or another.

But you'll find you'll eventually get that whole bank clean. That whole bank will all clean up and be very gorgeous, and so forth. Then if you want to really polish the fingernails of the whole thing and so forth, why, give the auditing of that bank a Prepcheck, and give the goal a Prepcheck, too. Just polish it all up, see. You'll get terrific tone arm action, terrific gains.

Every once in a while you'll find your tone arm goes up and sticks very hard, and sometimes it sticks very hard simply because the pc's interest is in the next bank below. And the pc is busy selling. And all you have to do is call this to the pc's attention and the tone arm will come down again.

In other words, you already have found the top crust of this next GPM all the time you were doing this other action. So therefore you're going to get a sales talk. And the pc will go out of session, wondering what it is – what it is, that confronts one-armed paper hangers – or something like this, you see. And just what is it, and so on. They come back into session, well, you just realize that his interest is actually on that next GPM.

Why? Well, actually, you've got all the kick out of the one you're doing and it's just dog work finishing it up, you see. But if you don't finish it up, it's going to give you trouble from here on out. Then, when you've got it all cleaned up and so forth, go on down to your next GPM and do exactly the same thing with it. Go from the top of it to the bottom of it and then come back up and clean it.

Now, if there's two items ticking, always take the higher item. In a – on a repair, if there's two items – two or more items ticking, take the one that is the highest in the bank, the closest to the top. Let's say you've got three items ticking in this bank as you – you survey your line plot. You read your line plot back to the pc, see, of this GPM that you're doing, and there's three items in it that go tick.

Now don't put your mid ruds in on these items, don't – don't try anything like that. Because if an item's got enough in it to hold the mid ruds out, it still – it's – something wrong with it, see? Mid ruds read because the things they are reading on are charged.

So you've got three items. You're going over this line plot. This line plot is all finished by this time as far as everybody is concern – as far as the pc is concerned, rather. Oh, he's – he's through with this. He – he's got to get on to this next goal, you see, and that sort of thing. Well, you're just a very bad workman if you just leave it like that.

So you go over that and you find that there's three items in it that are ticking, as you read the line plot of items already found, you see, to the PC, three tick. And if you want to make your choice amongst these things, take the top one, the high one, the one that's closest to the top of the bank. And you'll find that if you do that, you won't have to worry about the other two. Because as you go *clang, clang*, back and forth from one item to the next and so forth, these things will fly off and cease to be part of the list. You know, you've caught them on some other list as you went down the bank again, don't you see?

And you still have to check over the existing line plot now for ticking items, but very shortly you won't have anything ticking in that GPM; it'll be really dead. It'll be a gone story, it'll be history. Now is the time to do the next one.

Now, you're working back with this from present time into the past, GPM by GPM. I could call your attention to a lot of lectures about GPMs. People think maybe they're ideas and they think they're this and that. Well, so is a block of concrete an idea.

If you had an idea of an electric blanket, beautifully short-circuited, that was about 35 feet long by about 3 feet thick, by about 15 feet wide, or 10 feet wide, if you had an idea of that, coal-black, or fuzzy black with gray undertones and sometimes gray, and so forth – this object, which you actually could build out of – here out of plaster of Paris or something, or something that looked just exactly like one, you see, this object is a pc's actual GPM. That's not the series of GPMs, that's one actual GPM. Pretty – pretty remarkable.

Now, he gets these out of sequence sometimes and you as an auditor in listing can yank them out of sequence and maul them around most gorgeously. So let us say we have a carpet of these electric blankets laid out here which stretches about a mile. They're distant – one from each other – but we've got this straight carpet reaching here, and here is present time, and back at the bottom of that is the earliest past, you see?

Now you start listing and you start making a bunch of mistakes and you take the first – the one that's third from the beginning of track, see, you take that one and you yank it up into present time and insert it between the last two from present time back, see. Now we've got sort of three sitting here. Now we criss-cross items and make a big mistake in accepting the wrong item and it's from another GPM, and that sort of thing, and it turns out that we have an item from the fourth one back.

Now we pull that one and we pile it up on top of these three up here in present time. Now you do a nice case analysis on the thing, you straighten all this out, and those – two of those three separate out and park over here to the left, you see, about 25 yards away from the pc. They're sort of sitting there quietly. Now as you start doing some more, you find some more wrong items on the one that's ten back, don't you see, and accidentally get into that. As you list goals, the pc gives you one that's ten back, he doesn't give you the third one back, see. He gives you one ten back.

So you industriously run this, you see, and you find the wrong items in it and then it sort of goes out of gear and he says that's very far in the past. So actually he tries to push that into the past. So it goes back there now where these three that are out here 25 yards away should be, you get the idea?

I mean, you think you're running thought, but you're not. It's just longshore sort of work and you find them in wrong sequences, and you will, they pile up on the pc this way and that way, and they jam this way and that way and they go here and they go there.

Now in the course of livingness, he very often has found new use, new use for the goal "to be a God," see. He joined a church or something. And he found new use for this thing, and so on, and he pulled it out of line somewhere in the thing and he is – he's sort of using some of its RIs, you see. And it's been hauled up grossly over the track and it sits up here in present time also. So he's been at it and an auditor in the process of being at it, he gets at it. And the next thing you know, we don't have these big blocks of something or other lying out here to a mile or two away, you see. We've got these things scattered all over the doggone place. And if you do a bad job on that, this one is half-run, that one's a quarter-run, this one is over here restimulated, there are four chunks missing out of that one, and then the pc is stuck squarely in the middle of the fifth one back while you're running the second one back. And it – it's all very interesting.

But it is a mechanical proposition. It's as though you took the pc and maybe you made these things out of India rubber, you see, and poison gas or something, and you – you had them stacked around. Actually they're quite innocuous. But it's something like diving into tar pits, you know or – or something like this. It's that physically a fact, see. You're not running an idea. See, you're running a thing. And this thing has mass, man, and it has location in space and everything else.

Now, the big joy is when you do this thing – program right – you have the right goal, you found the items and so forth – you'll see this meter start going *pssww*, *pssww*, *pssww*, *pssww* – every once in a while. It's just repeating rocket reads, rocket reads. What's happening there? One of these blankets is folding up. And it's very funny, once in a while the pc as his perception rises – he'll eventually – he runs stone-blind on this you know; he just thinks

there's this room here, you know, and there's nothing else in the universe. Sometimes you get – you run two, three GPMs before he starts seeing these things. You know? There's this great big cog... the further they are back on the track, by the way, the bigger they are. These present time ones are little dinky things – Woolworth, you know?

And he's – he's looking at this and there's this huge – huge mass and it's going *bzzzz-z-z-z*, shake, shake, shake, quiver, quiver, quiver, quiver, *zzzzzz*. It's discharging out there, it's not discharging, fortunately, through you, through his meter – through the meter and his body, see. But it's going *bzzzzzz-zzzzz-quvvvvv-shuuugggg*. You know, and – and it's sort of just wisping away, you know?

Then it'll stop doing that and you'll find another item, you know, and it's at it again, you know? And he feels like – sometimes he's been sitting in a blown-up toy balloon and somebody's letting the air out of it and so forth. The physical sensations of these things going down are quite remarkable.

And these things go shudder-shudder-shake and they disappear and fly off into the far horizons and they – they eventually disappear. But when you half-run one, you half-leave one. It only shakes out to a point of where it went *bluuh* and it's still got left on it *bluuuhhh*. See? And you sometimes don't get that last *bluuuh*, until you prepcheck it or repair it, you see. Sometimes if you repair it you'll get it, sometimes when you prepcheck it you'll get it. But eventually it'll just all go *lluyyyaahh*.

And it isn't what happens to the mass, the marvel of it is that it stayed suspended in time to this degree. And that's all under the heading of how a GPM is formed. Of course, that's postulate-counter-postulate, the anatomy of the problem, the basic way these things were scouted out and discovered empirically, all of that material is germane to this thing.

But there's these black islands and the earlier they are on the track, the bigger they are. And of course, it's much better to have the pc tackle a small island, apply Scientology Zero, than it is something he can't even see the other side of.

Now, sometimes he'll look down the track, when he's looking when he shouldn't have been, you know, and he looks down the track, and you've just been listing something or other, you've been listing some goal oppose list, and he sort of reaches down the track to see what that is. And I do mean reach, you know. Just – just looking won't do too much, but he sort of reaches down, and all of a sudden one of these things will appear back there, see? And it's about fifty yards long and so on – it's backtrack. And it's almost frightening. The whole thing goes alive, you see, because he raked his thetan paw across it.

You can do this same thing to an implant GPM. It's standing there, all beautiful, there's these little poles, I don't know at what cost, you know, and what industry. It's the devotion of these fellows, you know – it's marvelous. God! Laboring out there in the hot sun, day and night – anyhow, these little poles all along and the little path, and that sort of thing. And it looks quite innocent in the facsimile, see. And the pc will stand there and look at it and then you'll ask him what goal is down at the end of it and he'll sort of rake his paw through it, down to the end of it. And it all goes black.

What he's done is reactivate his own suppress in the thing and all the items go live, all the way down to the end of the thing. And it looks like a black carpet has suddenly been laid out here, between these two poles. And if he does it again, why, even the poles will disappear. It isn't very heavy, it isn't very massive, it's fairly easy to handle, as you know, in running a – implant line plot. But you get the same effect in your actual GPMs. Except in your actual GPMs it is not just somebody throwing some old black cloth out on the road, you see – it's something on the order of a nonexistent island that nobody ever heard of – black, writhing and vicious, suddenly appears in the sky of the pc's own environment. Where'd it come from? So forth.

Actually, he's usually quite tame about these things. The only time a pc normally gets nervous, after he's up to being able to see them – of course his confront must have been fairly well raised before he does that – the only thing that makes him nervous is to be sitting in one that is warped around him in some fashion and he can feel the creak. And you'll probably hear more of that word, because nothing else describes it. It's all the corners are going out of adjustment of everything – creak.

And it's just creak, you know – and he's sitting in – in the middle of this thing, and there's another one over there someplace, and there's another one over there someplace – and he feels his face is sort of dividing in half, and he can feel this fantastic tension and stress. Something is trying to go south while something else is trying to go north. *Ooooh!* He feels his chin is being worn on his forehead, you see, or something like this. You know, it's all *creak!* He can feel these *foorces*, you see.

That's under the heading of bypassed charge of one kind or another. It's nonidentified charges in his immediate vicinity. The only thing that really permits you to run an actual GPM is what – a new subject entirely and you'll hear more of this because you'll get the list, called case analysis. Analysis – just let's call it analysis. Because there's a broad case analysis, there is a GPM analysis, that is the state of the case versus GPMs and goals, and that sort of thing. There's that broad case analysis.

Then there's the analysis for one goal. There's the analysis for – you know, about its items – and all this sort of thing. Then there's the analysis of *an* item. Analyses – this is a word that you're gonna, gonna hear a lot of. Because it's a saving grace, and it's a new development which you will just thank your stars for.

Just like you have often thanked your stars for an ARC break assessment list, so you'll thank your stars even more so for one of these, because the pc isn't necessarily ARC broke, he's just in trouble. And you don't know what's going on, and man, these things are so complicated that it's just this – *aaahh*, makes your brains creak.

But actually, the questions which you ask are very few. The number of things are very, very brief. So if you find an RI, you do an RI analysis on it. Oh, you give it to the pc and let it blow down and everything else, but before you do anything with that RI – you let the pc accept it and cognite on it – but before the auditor accepts that thing, he's got to do an RI analysis. He's got to find out about this thing. He wants to know if he's bypassed any RIs. He wants to know if it came off an incomplete list. He wants to know if the wording in it is correct, or if the wording in it is incorrect. He wants to know if it is in its proper position in the bank.

In other words, he wants to know all about this RI. And if he gets a big – cracking, big read, then he's saved himself from more grief than you can shake a stick at. He wants to know if it's from a proper goal. He wants to know if it – make sure it doesn't belong to some other GPM – get the idea?

It's a little list of about eight or ten questions and you just rattle those off at the pc and the pc will think – you'll think at first that it's invalidative of the pc's item. Well, it may be invalidative of the pc's item, but it saves the pc's life. And you'll find all of the problems which we had with running actual GPMs before, evaporate under this analysis idea. Because we don't then find an item from the GPM that's three-quarters of the way down the track and pull it up into PT don't you see, and then oppose that crosswise and then get that wrong way to, and pull all the mass in on the pc.

That's because we want to know all about this item before we use it – want to know all about the thing. Similarly a goal – we want to know all about this goal. We want to know if it's an implant goal or it's an actual goal. We want to know if it's also an implant goal, you see – and an actual goal. Because we might be running into something here sooner or later because the pc inevitably will start to list out of the implant goal sooner or later, and he'll give us some item or two out of the implant goal, and if we're running an actual GPM, we don't want that other item just because it's rocket reading.

Of course, that's small matter, but it's got creak in it. If he's got the actual GPM, it is also hung up against the implant GPM. You're not going to bother with the implant GPM, but you want to know it's there, because it's bypassed charge if it isn't. I can see you now with a raw meat pc, sitting down in a fatherly fashion on this dear old lady that you're running actual GPMs on and say, "Well now, well now, Mrs. Smith, I think it's about time I told you about the birds and bees. Once upon a time a long time ago, some people probably got mad at everybody or did something or other and they put a goal in just like this, but which isn't your goal." And you'll see a tone arm blowdown on the thing.

Then you can do such things – case analysis is vital, because you can get into – even with case analysis – such an idiocy as this: You start into the next GPM. You suddenly find out – because it's behaving wildly – you think you find out that it's a wrong goal. And then you do some more and then you get some charge off by finding some more items off of some other GPM, don't you see, and then you come back and find out that it was a right goal in the first place. See?

So – so analysis saves the pc's life. But don't expect an analysis to be totally completely valid – and let me show you for this reason – I'm not trying to invalidate an analysis, where an analysis reads, there is something wrong. That's for sure.

Let me show you something now. Let's – let's take this. Here is why – here's why an analysis doesn't work. Now I'm going to hold this crayon here, and you can't see any crayon here above this meter at all now, can you? See? All right, now there's just this much of the answer showing, and it isn't going to register on your meter worth a darn, because look-a-here, you see? You've just got this little tip showing. See that? All right. Now if you ran some more and got some more charge off, this would happen: "Oh," you say, "It's a crayon." See?

Or you say, "Oh! Oh! Oh! Oh – yes!" See? The more charge, more charge, more charge. These things are more visible.

So you get the idea, the case totally charged, you don't see – even see the tip of this crayon, see? No tip at all, see. You see nothing. So you ask the meter, is this a right goal? Is there a goal? Does the pc have an actual goal? Blank, blank, blank, blank, blank, blank – you see? There's nothing. I mean, there's not enough charge of it off The thing is still too heavily burdened for even the meter to see, much less the pc. The meter sees before the pc in any event.

And then we finally get up to here and we're doing a case analysis or we're doing a goal analysis or something, and actually, it's just the burden is off of it just to the point where you can just see this little tip, over the edge of the meter, see. Over the edge of this box, here, see. You've just got this tip showing.

Now, you tell me if you didn't know already, what is that tip? See, what's this – what's this scrap of metal that is showing above this box edge, see. Well, you can ask is it a right goal? Is it a wrong goal? Is it an upside-down goal? Is it an earlier goal? Is it – have we bypassed a goal? And so forth. We might even know, you know – we're assuming that it might even be something that we don't even know what it is, because you see, it isn't enough in view.

But if we keep running and keep getting tone arm action on the case, these things then, well, you get it up this high, you get it up this high, you say it's a crayon, see? It's now visible – visible to the meter. See? Now visible, so you read your analysis, you see, "Is it a right goal? Is it a wrong goal?" you see, "Is it – we bypassed a GPM here?" and so forth – and everything reads and smartly. "Is this a correct goal?" You know, bang! Everything reads like mad. It's all gorgeous, so forth.

Of course, you unburden it just a little bit further and the pc can see it and tell you. See, it's totally in sight. So the more a case is overburdened, the more a case is restimulated, the less visible it is to analysis. See?

So if your case is – if your analysis goes until you get an ARC break, you've got the violence of the ARC break riding on top of – see, it's just a problem in overrestimulation. See, you've got this riding on top of something that wasn't very visible in the first place, see? You say, "Is this a right item? Is this an oppterm? Is this a terminal? Is this your own item or is this something you oppose?" and so on. And the meter's just going *zzz* and *zzz* and *zz* – no answers on the thing, and there is nothing happening, don't you see? I mean, it – it's hard to tell. It's hard to tell about this. Got the idea?

So you'll find that the only time analysis is trying to you is you haven't got enough in sight. You haven't taken enough burden off the case. Got it?

So therefore we get a rule, for this and other reasons. We already have an Auditor's Code thing about flattening the process in – you know, not too much change of process. You can put one there to complete, given available time, to complete process cycles of action begun on the pc. And you'll see that in that wording or otherwise, added to the Auditor's Code.

This is this important – given available time to complete process cycles of action begun on the pc.

Well, that probably could take a five-hour lecture all in itself, see. But I'll tell you what it is, and I'll just – just put it down here in terms of emphasis rather than verbosity. This little demonstration I gave you might not look like much, but it'll look like an awful lot to you sitting there someday trying to sweat it out on the meter, trying to Ouija-board this meter. "Is this a correct goal, an incorrect goal? What have we done? Have we bypassed a GPM?" Pc's going *creeeeeak*, you know and *ohhhhhh*, my God, and there's force and power, and he's upset and so forth.

Remember that if you can get this case a little less restimulated in that particular area by removing charge, your meter will read better. So you get a rule of thumb action – a rule of thumb action. And your rule of thumb action must always amount to: Do a case analysis, and then complete what you are doing before you did it. Very important. If you can understand that, it will save you more grief than anything else I know of in doing actual GPMs for the pc.

Pc's going *creeeeeak*, you're listing – you've been listing – you were opposing "catgut" in the goal "*swiddlepump*," see, and here you are, and you're listing for that, and the case is going *creeeeeak! uhhhhh!* Awful time – awful time, man.

You now do a case analysis. And it tells you you're running a wrongly worded goal. Goal is wrongly worded. Now, to run a wrongly worded goal makes it very difficult. Very, very difficult. In fact it'll be upsetting. What you want to do is get the right wording of the goal if you possibly can, if you can do it rapidly. It's just like ARC break assessment, see. Get the right wording of the goal and then go back to opposing "catgut." You got that now? This is – this doesn't sound like much to you right now. See, I give you a broader application out of this. The pc says, "Ha – ha! It must have been a wrong item for this and it must have been a wrong item for that." No, you were – this was where he was hung up.

You got enormous amount of relief and you say, "All right, well, the goal was to – the goal was to – 'to *spoodlepaf*' not 'to *squidledunk*,'" you see. So, "Oh, well, we better list for the top oppterm now, of the new goal 'to *squidlepaf*,' you know? Uh, the new goal..." Oh, brother! That pc will be in more trouble and wrapped around more telegraph poles. Why? Just the factor of overrestimulation. You're encouraging overrestimulation by not completing a cycle of action. It requires some judgment. But this item was already supposed to be in that goal and it probably is, it is, and that sort of thing, but you've got a half-completed list there. You haven't completed the list. There it is. It now belongs to a differently worded goal, but it's there. It's there, and it's "catgut" that you complete.

Do a case analysis – remedy, rectify or identify any charge you care to and then go back and do what you *were doing*. And the only real serious trouble you will have from running a pc's actual goals and making an OT, will be at those minutes when you knuckleheaded and you did a case analysis and followed the case analysis. You did a case analysis and then followed out the actions of the case analysis. Then you did a case analysis and you followed out the actions of the case analysis. Now we got half a bank line-plotted here on a GPM and then all of a sudden the pc's going *creeeeeak*. He's got the creaks, you see? *Hell go mad! Rrrrr!* And we do a case analysis. We analyze this thing. "Is this the present time GPM? Is it actually

not the present time GPM?" *Ho-ho*, see – *thud*, see! Oh, there's another present time GPM? This thing showed as the present time GPM.

Well, there was some reason it showed as a present time GPM, there was some reason you were fooled about this. And you didn't find out about it until you removed some charge off the case, you know? We took the burden off, by running the GPM we thought was the present time GPM, don't you see?

So now supposing we got half of this line plot, of what we thought was – and we find there's a new present time GPM. That's – there's a later one.

And we depart, we depart from the one which is two back from present time, and we start now listing the new GPM, and we leave the other one undone. *Oh, oh, oh!*

It might have occurred that you did this and you audited perfectly fine the next day and you did perfectly all right the day after and then about the fourth or fifth day, something starts going quite wrong with the session. Things just aren't running right. And you don't look back there four days to the point where you abandoned a GPM that was half-run. You don't look back there, you look into your – you see, I mean, you would ordinarily just look interiorized into the session you're running, you see, to that degree, and you'd be looking into this to find out what's wrong and what have we found wrong, and that sort of thing, and we do another case analysis, and we – doesn't show up on the case analysis. And we don't know what to do, and it's not running well, and we don't seem to be able to find the PT GPMs, don't you see. Its items – and we don't seem to find its items well. You get the idea? The answer's back there four days. You half ran one.

Sometimes you get into a nervous fit of throwing away the pc's line plots. And you start in with the top oppterm and you carry the bank down about ten items. And then you find out there was something wrong with it all and you start in all over again – throw away that line plot, see, and then you start in with the next one, and you find a high item, and you go all the way down with that high item, then you find out there's something wrong with the thing, see, so you throw away that line plot. And what you don't realize is, every time you throw away the pc's – look, look, they were his items, they might not have been the central RIs or something of the sort, but they *were* his items. And you're just bypassing that much charge on the pc, just by the action of throw away his items.

If you don't believe it sometimes, take a lock item that you have found on the pc, and you thought it is, and put it down in front of the pc written on a piece of paper and X it out. Say, "Well, that isn't your item, I'm very sorry, that – that wasn't it," and watch the ARC break. ARC break the pc just like that. He didn't care anything about "biannuated coffee grinders," see, he cared nothing about this, right up to the moment when you said it wasn't his item. See, because you bypassed any residual charge that was in it. It isn't his superownership of the item, you've just bypassed the charge. You invalidated the item, you said it didn't exist, so you've hung him up in just that much charge.

Well, it was already a wrong item, so you hung him up in the charge of a wrong item. Now you've hung him up – not only the charge of the item, but you know, the additional charge of the wrong item. Take a pc's line plot sometime after you've listed a lot of lock items

accidentally and say, "Well, that's – that's that," and wad it up, and throw it on the floor. And you'll just watch the pc go straight through his skull. He won't know what's hit him.

Well, that's just one of the reasons you shouldn't throw away the pc's line plot. But when you do – now you've got this new thing called case analysis, see. And here's what auditors have been doing, because it pushes into sight what has happened to actual GPMs. And, this is, by the way, is not an isolated malady. This malady was good and broad. And this malady was sufficiently broad to make it impossible, really, almost, to make an OT. It was good and broad.

They would do a case analysis; however they did it, they'd find out, you see, that it wasn't, see – in some jackleg fashion find out there was something wrong, see? And then follow the analysis, see. Whenever they found out something wrong, then they'd follow the analysis, and only go on from what they found in the analysis. Perfectly all right to put right what you found wrong in the analysis, don't you see, perfectly all right, as long as you remember to come back and complete the action you were doing before the analysis was done. You must *always* – I appeal to your humanity, and if you're upscale high enough so you haven't got any of that – to your good sense. And if – if you're feeling awful shy on that during some session, I appeal to your allergy of randomness. And if your tolerance of randomness has gotten very, very high indeed so that you don't worry about that particularly, well – I appeal to your intentions to do some good for the pc.

And all it does is add up to just this and nothing more: That a case analysis is there to take the creak out. It's not there to follow. It's like an ARC break assessment. We're doing this goal "to free." We've done four items out of it. Not – misguidedly we did the bottom and the top, or something stupid, see. We got the two at the bottom and the two at the top, or something. That's pretty wild. That'll turn a blank – that tries – a GPM will never come around totally circle. But it will pick it up and bend the whole act. Let's say we've done something like this, and then we do a case analysis and we find out that there are several goals up to PT and the goal up there is "to be a slave." And we drop "to free," and we do and start in on the slave.

Tell me, who is going to destimulate what you have just done? You're now running with all that extra charge in the bank. It isn't going to wreck your pc, it's just going to make your pc feel horrible, however, and it's going to make him hard to audit. He's going to sort of be draggy about it; he's going to feel like life just isn't worth living. There's a lot of things that'll go wrong. But they all go wrong from this single thing. They don't always go wrong simply because you've done wrong actions. Pcs can live through a wrong action or two. See, they can live through some wrong actions. But they can't live through – in this actual GPM running – leaving cycles of action incomplete. It can get awfully, awfully, awfully grim.

So the rule of thumb – the rule of thumb on it is – is: do a case analysis, do an item analysis, do any other kind of analysis that you're doing, and then go back and do what you were doing. Find out anything you want to by case analysis, straighten out these things, and sometimes the creak is so great that you can't progress unless you do a case analysis of some kind or another. Anything, anything that you want to do in the line of a case analysis is straighten up the case, straighten up this thing.

And after you've done all of that, go back and complete the action you were doing before you found it out. And man, you will be in very, very small quantities of trouble, compared to the enormous difficulties that you can get into otherwise.

Now, all those difficulties actually stem not so much from the auditor's inability to follow the process or read the meter, we assume those things exist. Don't you see? But it's just from the fact that he's always chasing, he's supposed to be after the deer, and by God, those rabbits cut across that deer track, and there he goes. And another rabbit cuts across that rabbit's deer track, you know, that rabbit's track, and away he goes on that track. And then all of a sudden a deer track crosses that rabbit track, you see, so he's after that deer. And then a dog crosses the deer track and he's after that dog. And the next thing you know, he isn't even in the woods. And he looks up and there isn't even a pc in front of him and he wonders what happened.

Well, what happened was is he just didn't complete cycles of action. If there's any difficulty generated in any case, why, it's from that.

Now, there's a knuckleheaded way of following this rule. This rule can be followed in a very knuckleheaded fashion. Determine, after you have not completed the cycles you were doing, but did follow the case analysis, let's say you've been following case analysis and doing everything the case analyses have been doing on a case. So you've done some kind of a case analysis and then you've done what it said, and then you followed the case analysis and done what it said, and so forth, and you've been doing this for a long time. And you decide at this particular time to now be good. You're going to be good, and you're going to do right, and so forth, and you abandon a half-done list on a half-done GPM, and go back and do the first unfinished cycle of action that you can find.

This, too, can produce chaos. Pc by this time has had that earlier action pretty well destimulated. It sort of drifted out by reason of time or something, you see. And yet, all of a sudden you'll find out the pc will stop running. The tone arm will freeze up and everything else. Because you've added that to the restimulation of what you're just abandoning. And what – what you see in this knuckleheaded way of following it is you don't realize that you're abandoning the largest zone and area of charge, don't you see? To go back and put his attention on charge he now doesn't have.

So repairing a case – repairing a case over a series of goofed-up actions, on the basis that you must take the first time the case was goofed up and repair that now, as a means of answering up to this rule, you'll find out that doesn't work. You'll just get in more trouble than you can shake a stick at.

So you should complete the cycle of action which is most ready to hand, in which the pc seems to be interested, if you've got that kind of a case. And you'll get that kind of a case because you're Saint Hillers here, and they're going to be dragged in, ambulances backing up – that sort of thing, come in on crutches, and they'll be wanting to know – they'll be wanting to know.

And you'll find out that an auditor in 1962 find the goal "to spit," and then listed it all backwards – and it mostly has in it items from the goal "to catch catfish." And the pc's been doing very, very poorly since. And it'll be a great temptation on your part to say, "Well, let's

finish up this goal 'to spit,' and get this thing straightened out," because that's the earliest in-completed cycle of action.

Well, that is all very well, but remember, the pc is halfway through the bank "to spat," or "to not spit," right at the present time, don't you see. The thing to do, when you're faced with a quandary of that character, is just take an assessment of interest. Where's the pc's interest seem to be and then make the auditor be good from there on, you see. There's a point where you start completing cycles of action, that's my whole point to you here. And you can get so knuckleheaded as to make this an unworkable rule, see.

Let's complete the cycle of action of 1950. What engram wasn't run on the pc and completed in 1950? Pc's halfway through a GPM. Of course, put in those terms, it becomes absolutely ridiculous. But nevertheless it can be ridiculous at a lesser gradient.

You say, "Well, now I'm going to be good, I'm going to take the first – first GPM that was found on this pc – now, I'm going to stop working on these GPMs that we've been working on and try – try to find the present time goal. I think what I really ought to do with this pc is go back and finish off this goal that was first run on this pc in 1962." Don't blame me if you find yourself with a handful of overrestimulation. And a stuck TA.

No, you pick these things up in turn. The way to do that is to go back and finish them off as they turn up. Just go on and run the case. You'll find out these old flubs will turn up in their own order. Somebody has run the goal "to be stir-crazy," they've run it a quarter of the way, they ran it that way, got a lot of wrong stuff in it, messed it all up, so forth. It'll eventually turn up on the track. After all, you're going back down the track, it'll eventually run into the goal "to be stir-crazy." You'll repair it when it turns up.

You can defeat the rule, then, by causing – making the rule the reason why you won't complete the cycle of action you're involved with. You have to use some good sense as a guide in this thing.

Now, of course there's some more judgment involved in such a rule, is you find the item you were listing against, is a wrong item. Go ahead and try to complete that cycle of action! That's too intimate an error, don't you see? You're trying to do this item "roofs" and it's actually "chimneys." "Am I listing against a wrong item?" Well yeah, you're listing against a wrong item. Obviously the incomplete list was the one which was not completed just *before* this. See, you have to complete that list before you can complete your cycle of action, you see, in order to follow it through. You got the idea? So there's some judgment used in this.

But you find your main trouble comes from doing an analysis and then abandoning the cycle of action on which you're engaged and then following the analysis. And you'll find that in training auditors and in handling auditors here and there – that you'll find out that's to be their worst crime: they're rabbit chasing. They're just rabbit chasing. They do a case analysis and they find out that "Oh, there's a wrong item in this bank," you see. And my God, it's clear back up to the top of the thing, see. And that's why the pc's ARC broke or something of the sort. Got some creak. A wrong item up at the top of the bank, see.

All right, they want to go right up – leave this item which they're doing, down here toward the bottom of the bank – they're almost to the bottom of this thing, see, almost got this

first program step out of the road, see – and they're going back up and they're going to – going to complete that item up *there*. *Uh-uh-uh-uh-uh-uh-uh – slap. Naughty, naughty.*

Well, they say, if the pc's going creak and he's all ARC broke, well all right, just tell him there's a wrong item up there. He says, "I wonder which one it is."

"Well, all right, I'll tell you it's *ta-ta-ta-ta-ta-ta-ta-ta* – that one, that one – 'wagon wheels.' We didn't complete a list. The list wagon wheels – now 'wagon wheels' is your item, but there happens to be a more fundamental item from the list. All right, now we're going back down here and we're going to complete this next to the last item that we were doing." See? It's just that. That's all you do, see?

All right, there's three more goals to present time. "Well, what are they? What are they? What are they?" That wasn't part of the bargain, man. If you don't have to know them, don't find them. That's just adding restimulation.

"You've got three goals toward present time. This wasn't your present time goal. That wasn't your present time goal. The one we're doing right now isn't your present time goal. There's three more up to present time."

"Oh, there are? What are they? Oh, gee." See, a big sell, big sell. You always get this, you see. Big sell. "What are these things?" Well, you – you put the pc's attention on it. See? "What are these things? What are the goals, what are the goals? Oh, let's – well – go – shouldn't we list? Look, I – I've got some items right here. I – I've got some goals right here." [laughter] "I – here – here's some goals. Here's some goals." You see?

And you say, "Good. I'll –" make sure you make a note of those.

But the creak will disappear. And that's all you want to get rid of You thought you were doing the PT goal; there are three more goals between where you are working and PT. You go right on then, point this out, straighten it out, straighten out anything you want to do with it, you know? Pat it in the head, square it around, let him tell you what he wants to do about it and go on and complete the GPM you were doing.

I don't care how much creak there appears to be on it. You've got that one out of the road – remember, there was some reason it was in your road. There was some reason why it turned up first. And in making any case analysis, remember there was some reason why you got the wrong item. You got the goal out of sequence. See, there's some reason for this. Must be that the visibility was awful poor that morning. It must have been that the restimulation to which the case was susceptible at that particular zone or area threw this goal up before it threw up the present time goal. So this goal must be in more restimulation than the present time goal. You get the idea?

You're going off and leave this thing? Oh, hell man, don't do things like that. Make me nervous, just the thought of it. As long as you remember that – that guiding principle: do a case analysis, an item analysis, a goal analysis – anything you want to do. Straighten out anything you want to straighten out by reason of the analysis, so long as it doesn't take too long and doesn't bring much restimulation onto the case, always the restimulation is a factor you've got to figure here, see. You're trying to get rid of restimulation, so you're trying to destimulate. You do too much about it and you're going to restimulate more than you had before. And

then don't follow the analysis. Go back and complete your cycle of action – and if you keep doing that, man, you're going to be an auditor. And you're going to get terrific results because your pc is running these actual GPMs.

We are blessed with a case analysis. We are cursed with "rabbit-dogism." You see, the pc's interest goes to the case analysis, don't you see? There's lots of things – reasons why an auditor is persuaded not to do this. A pc's interest goes there. The auditor's interest is there. That damn thing is in my road. It was just – the case was just in the pcs road up till this time, see. Now, what he finds, it's in his road as an auditor. This is what was making the case go creak. They had this goal lying crossways up here or something like that, see.

And the auditor, he tends to fixate on this and of course he's always interested in new things and he doesn't want to go back and do hard work, you know – just carrying up bricks – he wants to get bricks up or make it all look pretty, you know, that sort of thing. And there's lots of reasons. The pc will sit there – sell, sell, sell, sell, sell, sell – God, you'd think they'd taken a course at Dale Carnegie sometimes.

"Oh well, if I just really knew what this goal was, if I knew what the next goal was that would be much better." And then so forth and so forth, and so forth. Agree with them perfectly, keep their itsa line in and complete the cycle of action you were already on. And boy, you won't be in very much trouble. A pc is in a heavy state of restimulation as he starts to climb this hill, it's a very steep hill to climb anyhow and therefore must be climbed with considerable care.

Now the processes we are doing at the level of going to OT are not processes that are handled clumsily or badly, somebody's – can't audit, you know, and you've got him doing something like this, man, it's just wow – can't make it, see. No, this is a skilled operation as you go to OT. And I don't care how much you emphasize that skill, because the amount of gain that you can get on a pc at Level II or at Level I is now greater than it's ever been, by these most elementary processes. So you have a perfectly right – good right to demand that somebody run the process with which they can get gains and that an auditor be confoundedly awful doggone good before he starts climbing this hill of the actual GPMs.

You let somebody do that: he's going to have nothing but loses; pc's going to be wrapped around telegraph poles, and so forth. This is a skilled area. This is a skilled operation of magnitude. You got R1C, you got R2H, you got R3SC – I don't know how long they could run on R3SC. You got your lower levels and so forth. What can be done today in the field of healing is absolutely phenomenal. Staff auditor has been – he's getting intolerably insouciant. If he keeps this up, we're going to be in very bad condition around here. We won't have auditing rooms or anything else. They'll be standing out here on stretchers, see.

The last couple of raw-meat cases that we tackled [snaps fingers] – medical miracles. And his insouciance is going to the point of running R1C with a little black and white processing thrown in. I think that's very cute! That's insouciance. Got rid of somebody's arthritis – solution to the illness is all, you see, that sort of thing – *bang, bang, bang!* We're getting very hot in these particular departments.

Well now look, if a partially trained auditor has processes of that character available to him, and if achievements of that level can be attained through lower-level processes such as

we've covered in this particular series of lectures, I see no reason whatsoever why somebody would want to commit suicide by trying to walk the hill of an actual GPM without proper training as an auditor. So I'm asking you to discourage it. I'm asking you to snap and pop and get right up there to a point of where you can do it.

But I'm also asking you to just trod thoughtfully on the instep of auditors saying, "Oh, I've got to find somebody's goal and so forth. We – oh, goals, is really find goals." "Find goals, man, well why don't you – why don't you cure some broken legs or something like that, you know? There's plenty for you there to do, you have plenty of ways to get gains, why do you want to tackle this hill? Why don't you get some wins and learn how to audit and that sort of thing and then we'll let you find some goals and go upstairs."

That's the way to handle this sort of thing. Otherwise, you're going to have lots of casualties. Because this is the area where casualties are made. This is the raw living lightning that you're handling and you start going up this hill and you start letting somebody go up this hill who hasn't yet found out how you grasp the handle of the toy wagon – he's not going to have trouble, he's going to have Armageddons. He is going to be living in the middle of the worst catastrophes possible that you could hand out with Scientology 0. So don't minimize it.

We've developed processes which are above the level of the pc to tolerate errors made in. We're awful good at it, we've got this stuff grooved. It can't be done without training and good sense.

All right, well, that's the wrap-up of the lot. The only thing we haven't covered is Scientology V, we've covered that to some tiny degree, we said it was that level of Scientology from which all other levels of Scientology came. That's good enough, so that actually gives you a total roundup of this.

Thank you very much.

ESSENTIALS OF AUDITING

A lecture given on 15 October 1963

Well, I'm glad to see you back. Where you been? [laughter] Have a good trip? Well, it's the first of these lectures in – well, it's the first one of these lectures now in two weeks. So what's the date?

Audience: 15th of October.

Fifteenth of October, AD 13. Actually, you would see to me all rested up, you see, from having not lectured for a couple of weeks, but frankly the lecture weeks are the relaxation weeks. We put 900 feet of film in the cans yesterday. It took us two days to put 300 feet of 16mm in the cans and yesterday afternoon and evening we put 900 feet in and we just shot it with luck all the way. This is – of course, we are shooting right on top of it and this is the Saturday congress in London.

This is Monday and the film has – this is the Monday shoot and the film had to be at the developers and so forth on Tuesday, and we hope we get it back with a print on Thursday. And we might even have a chance to edit it but we shot it with no editing. I just used – being an old Hollywoodite on these things – just abandoned all movie technology and threw in a lot of – just abandoned it utterly – and threw in TV kinescope technology, which is quite different.

And Reg got a beautiful Auricon 16mm magnetic sound camera from over in the States. You can line it up on one of these TV screens and it doesn't get the lines or anything, so it does a gorgeous job. And we can film demonstrations and so forth. That will be reduced down to 8mm, and 8mm with a magnetic soundtrack, and then these projectors – put in all organizations – and we can give them some material that will hold the line. And of course, yesterday's film – we just put everything in it including the kitchen sink. There was students and buildings and we had Nicky out here throwing a penny in the wishing well. And we had the kids saying goodnight and so forth.

You'd be surprised how long a half an hour is when you're making it up with shots, you know, different scenes and shots and that sort of thing. And we gagged it up quite a bit, and it'll probably – you'll probably see it next Saturday if you go up to the London congress, and you undoubtedly will see it at the US Eastern congress and the US Western congress and so forth; you'll be seeing this film around.

And the strain of it, however, was too great for us. The strain was too great. We began to crack up toward the end, you see, working on into all hours. And we were just so lucky that it's just almost impossible to estimate the amount of luck involved in the thing – so we'd shoot a shot and that was it, you see? And we weren't dropping ashtrays and other things like that. For instance, we shot a Model Session complete from beginning to end using Havingness as the process. I don't know what film footage we shot that on, but it was very brief.

Male voice: A hundred and twenty.

Only about a hundred and twenty feet of film for a whole Model Session from beginning to end with every step in it, and it all went off very flawlessly. And the only thing I did in error on the thing, I thanked the pc for the goals and gains after having gotten both goals and gains which is hardly anything at all because I've been doing that routinely anyhow.

But the score is that that film can do a terrific job of TV demonstration, you see, because you just give a usual routine ordinary TV demonstration and the camera is downstairs there in the lower studio or camera room, and it just takes the demonstration and you flick the meter onto the screen, you flick the picture on the screen. You could flick a picture of the pc on the screen, you see. You could put anything on that screen and then you shoot it off from the screen.

You say, well, what happens to the quality and so forth? Well, I think you'll see that Saturday. The quality actually doesn't suffer at all. It's quite remarkable. You don't see the lines of the screen because of the shutter – and you just don't see them show up. That's all. It just looks like a picture of something, not a picture of a TV screen. Your eye can detect more lines and so forth than a camera can detect on a TV screen. You can also set up the contrast so that it's much more agreeable to film.

Furthermore, a TV camera would shoot a picture in here now. Ha-ha. Try and take one on film. Now, you could set up two or three TV cameras, one up there and one up there, you wouldn't have to have any operator to it to amount to anything. You could shoot a picture of this lecture here, pick it up over in the lower studio and just by flipping the turret, shift from one scene to another scene, and the sound is just going right onto the camera directly, and so on. You got a picture of a lecture.

You wouldn't hear any whirring camera noises or anything like that. And you don't have to have the fantastic glaring light levels that are required for motion pictures. So we've done quite a job on that. I just thought you'd be interested in it and give you a little bit... There is a gag that I'll let you – I'll let you be able to whisper to the people. Reg is going to pull this gag. Right at the end when we finally broke down, why, Reg and I sat down to the – my organ in my office, you see, and got a picture of us going to play a tune, you see, and as we were about to strike the keys and playing on a duet you get the first of your end titles, you see. We just blank out, you see. And got that? And we carry on with a beautiful organ piece which plays out through the end titles.

And I'll let you in on a little secret. It won't be much of a secret because you listen to this music. It's actually the "Saints Come Marching In." [laughter] But in actual fact, it's being – it is the biggest pipe organ in the world. It's the Hub rink organ in Chicago, you see. I think 64 foot pipes the thing has got you know, and that sort of thing, and here we are sitting down

to this little tiny Wurlitzer. Well for sure, you see, there'll be people at the congress though who don't get the gag. [laughter, laughs]

Well, we had a lot of fun shooting that. But it was really high-pressure stuff. We'll be able to make training films, in other words, of the various types and activities. And we'll be using them here.

Now, here we have another system going in, and that is to say we can put a projector down there and put it on and throw a switch on the projector down there, and you get the picture on the TV sets here in the chapel. In other words, you don't have to have a blacked-out cinema in order to see the pictures. In other words, a little 8mm projector sits down there. This is all 16mm we're shooting this stuff on reduced to 8, you see? You can turn on this little projector down there and show a session or a demonstration or a piece of auditing, it appears on the TV screen. You watch the TV screen. And Mr. Skinner doing that – he even figured out when I asked him if it wasn't possible, why, to fix it up so that it would just shut everything off when it finished the film, and there'll be a small fee to the Instructors and so forth for that one.

In other words, you could set up a film, load it, and simply by just press a button, and you've got the – you've got the thing demonstrated from one end to the other. And then when it's finished, it doesn't even have to have anybody pay any attention to it. It simply shuts itself off. Shuts all the sets off. Shuts everything off. Turns out the light, sweeps the floor. [laughter, laughs] Well, we're getting this geared up.

Communication of Scientology materials to the auditor and the student is one of the biggest humps, as you could realize, that we must have. And there are many, many things – I'm just going to give you a talk on that sort of thing and give you some data concerning it that you'll find of interest. And that is that the TV systems, the bulletins, the graphs, the materials which you have, your live demonstrations, your live Instructors, all of this sort of thing is an effort to relay information. And the idea of education is simply taking an idea from one mind and putting it in another mind. And that is really the totality of education. It really doesn't depend on whether the idea is good, bad or indifferent, true, false or otherwise: The methods of education are all the same.

And they are basically the methods of communication, so therefore the ARC triangle, to a large degree, operates in these mechanisms. And one of the things: if you can take MEST out or take effort out of the communication line, you can normally get a fast, accurate communication line. But there is a point when the communication line, not having any mass in it, becomes unstable. In other words, you cannot hold a standard because it isn't down anyplace.

Let me give you an idea. One of you goes up to London, walk through the Central Organization in London. Well, I don't say stay out of the Central Organization in London. I don't say don't answer questions asked you. By all means, talk all you please, but it is quite ordinarily followed on a Monday by a catastrophe in the HGC.

Now, your communication line to the student or the HGC staff member or something like that was probably quite accurate. But what did he tell Joe? In other words, a standard wasn't held here so that you get weird things which are then attributed to the Saint Hill students going to London. Even one time it was contemplated not letting any Saint Hill students

go to London – go into the organization in London, see. That was once contemplated. Well, I finally put my foot down. I said no, no, no. I figured it out. No. They do them much more good than they do them harm. Because the false communication line does not come actually between the Saint Hill student and the organization. It comes between what – that the person who has heard the Saint Hill student ordinarily and who that person was talking to. See, you get some wild variations.

For instance, you might not know it, but you had all London in a complete panic just a week ago – just a week ago. They had heard that the TA required – minimum TA for a 25 – hour intensive was 400. And they all had headaches last Monday and so forth working at this horrible data, see. Well, data like that occurs in the absence of a fixed data source. It isn't written down in a bulletin, you see. It's adrift somewhere on the communication lines and so on.

Now, we sometimes sin to this degree. There'll be data which is given in tapes which never appears on bulletins. And there are little scraps of data of one kind or another that could make all that difference in the auditing session going on in Keokuk that have simply never been published. Well, to round up all this data and put it all together is a Herculean task. It would be to a marked degree up to me to do it. But well, for instance, Reg has been working on the last two years of bulletins. He's had his secretary working on the last two years of bulletins. Getting them all together and so forth. And they finally did get all of this material together. Now they're trying to get the last two years of tape notes complete. Now, if we did that, we would have two years of total research. But still, outside of it would be left the data which I have given you walking down the hall, see.

There is always some data escapes the fixed communication line. So you have to be very thorough and you have to sort out what are the fundamentals which should be taught, and therefore, in order to communicate and in order for anybody to assimilate the information on the other end, which is part of the educational act, you have to have a condition where the data is not in conflict and is not so complicated that it cannot be communicated or cannot be assimilated. So therefore you reduce things to their fundamentals. And this has two purposes. The one purpose is the educational purpose and the other thing, of course, is things which are reduced to their fundamentals are resolved or far better understood.

Now, the purpose we're speaking of now, however, is the relay of it. Now, the relay of that education and of data from mind A to mind B is susceptible to many alterations, many alter-ises, many omissions, many curves and so forth. It's almost proportional to mind A to mind B. All right, that's one set of alter-ises. Mind C – we have now added a new – that's mind B to mind C, that's a new set of alter-ises. Now we got mind C to mind D and that is a new set of alter-ises. And we've got D to E and that isn't alter-is by this time; it's unrecognizable.

Now this also occurs on the time stream. That datum, which was thoroughly understood in 1800, by 1900 has become unrecognizable. In actual fact, we probably have very little grip on what was actually thought in 1800 – very little grip, on the opinions and activities of the time.

But I well recall in just this first half of 1900, a tremendous change of manners, mannerisms, and so forth, brought about by other communication media, such as the motion picture, television and we mustn't omit the automobile as a communication media. It is because it's a particle that can travel rapidly and independently from A to B.

The telephone is earlier than that, but all of these things have influence and they influence a culture and they influence what is going on in that culture. But this we talk about in terms of an overloaded communication line now. And I'm not going into the five ways you can cut a communication line. They're the subject of a great many executive bulletins and all this sort of thing, but I'm infringing on that quarter right now. You can actually overload the communication line so that it doesn't communicate. There is simply too much data on the subject.

This – you sometimes feel like that. I know, see? And you wish, for heaven's sake, that you could pick out of it a few fundamentals that would sort of sum it all up and you would be able to wrap your wits around it and so forth. And that in actual fact is the subject of this lecture that I'm giving you; here is how you do this.

The situation, then, of an overloaded communication line is that there is insufficient time to peruse the material. You could get into that kind of a situation rather easily. So you can have too little communication. You can have too varied or too variable a communication. Or you can simply have an overloaded communication line.

For instance, I walked into the Explorers Club one day up in the library up on the mezzanine floor, and I wanted to know a little bit about ice, I think it was or something like that. I didn't – wasn't particularly hepped on it. I just wanted a little datum about ice, the conditions of ice and the temperatures at which ice became rotten, so called, and so on. I just wanted a little information. I asked the librarian up there. "Where's some text here on ice? Where's some text on ice? I want to look up something, some stable data about ice." And he looked at me as though I were mad or I'd suddenly gone mad or I was about to steal his whole library or something like this, and he waved his hand and he said, "Well, that cabinet over there is part of the material about ice." I looked at that cabinet over there and it contained something on the order of a thousand volumes, all of them thick. And you can frankly shut the door to learning in somebody's face with a dull clank.

Needless to say, I went down and found an old friend of mine that knew the Arctic, at the tea table that evening, and I pumped him on the subject of ice for a short space of time, and, "Oh, when does it become rotten?" "Oh, well," he said, "that varies," and so forth, and he gave me the variable edges and he tossed it off. It was very easy for him to toss off this datum for the excellent reason that he had tremendous familiarity with the subject. But my door was closed in the absence of this boy. My door was closed. I was to sit up there and read a thousand volumes hoping that somewhere in it I would discover something about rotten ice.

One volume said ice also becomes rotten through moss – certain types of moss. And the next thing you know, I was reading a chapter on biology. I don't know how I got off into biology. I was just looking for some rotten ice, man. See, you get off into these wild excursions and you feel like somebody who picks up a copy of the *Encyclopaedia Britannica*, and

he's going to look up anteaters, you know, and the next confounded thing, you know, he's reading with great fascination about armadillos.

He's been totally derailed. So too much information on a subject or too many volumes of information on a subject can effectively close the communication lines. We actually, oddly enough, don't happen to be suffering from that in Scientology. You think we are, but we actually aren't. We're actually suffering from a lack of text.

You would be very happy to have a text that says, "ARC Breaks Level I," and that gave a five, six, eight, even ten page breakdown of all possible sources of them that gave you the cross-index conditions of the pc for each one of them. Herculean task to do things, something like that. But, nevertheless, that would be a very welcome volume to you. Instead of that, our material is actually a research record, and you are looking at a research record. You are not looking at textbook material. And as soon as you realize that, you'll have a much easier time of it.

At any given instant on a research line, that which is known is believed to be true, and it wouldn't be there unless it had some workability at any given instant. But at any given later instance on that research line, you will find that that material has been reexamined and that certain data in it which are not important have been dropped and certain data in it which are important have been clarified and added.

Now your main difficulty is looking at a time span of development and trying to pick out of a time span of development a great many fundamentals. Well, the most remarkable thing in the world was how we got along, having started with the definition of auditor. Giving the sweeping ideas here. We got the definition of an auditor as one who listens and originally, one who listens and computes. All right. That's great. And we come up thirteen years, almost fourteen years later with this as a resolution of cases.

Well, that is certainly different on the research line. See, there's two different points here fourteen years apart, and one, it just says well, an auditor is somebody who listens and computes and most of the time the auditor thought the compute was more important than the listen. Then fourteen years later, we drop the compute and we put the listen in there for Level I. Wow! What a difference, see? What a difference. This little tiny change of emphasis gives us a sweeping difference in auditing.

So therefore, at some period during that fourteen years, some of the data concerning the definition of an auditor and his function must have been reevaluated from time to time, and sure enough, we see that. We see different TRs, we see this, we see that, we see the other thing coming along the line. And we see an enormous number of extraneous and additional data, all of which support what an auditor ought to be doing. Well, all of that data concerning what an auditor ought to be doing was, of course, an effort to clarify and explain to the student or to the potential auditor what his performance should be.

Well, it must have been there to this slight degree. It must have been there because the basic definition and understanding was not present. So, the more data in education... Now you can draw these extrapolations because we're not a bad model of education if you just remember that you are studying a research line, and it's up to the old man to someday grab it all together and put it together somehow or another and assemble it and so on. And my solution to

it right now is merely expect you to be geniuses at it, see? That's all. Simple solution. It saves me time. Funny part of it is you all too often measure up to it.

But the system now of data-summation, gathering of data and so on – adds up to a very interesting datum in the field of sciences, and that is this – this is an interesting datum. It's quite pervasive. It's quite useful – is the more arbitrariness or the more arbitrary didactic solution – you must, you've got to, you must not, and so forth – there are in a subject, the further that subject is from the actual comprehension of the basics involved in that subject. Now I'll state that another way to make sure you got it. The subject itself has arbitrary data in it in direct proportion to its distance from knowing its own fundamentals. That's an elementary remark. Now I'll clarify that. How about art? Just how about art? I remember old Don Rogers mentioned this a long time ago, 1950. How about art?

Man you've got nothing but opinion in art. Opinion, opinion, opinion, opinion, opinion. "This is a good picture because the Metropolitan Museum hung it." Oh, brother! I've met a director of the Metropolitan Museum; I wouldn't consider that a recommendation. "This is a great picture because it was analyzed by professor Joe Blow of Krapunkin as one of the great pictures of the Screamp Century." That's why you wander through a gallery and you see these four dobs of paint there, you see, running down into a mass of wrinkles, and there's a sign across the bottom of it and it says "Commerce." And *ohhhh*, which wall, see?

Well, therefore, a subject can be so way out that it is nothing but opinion. And when a subject is nothing but opinion, then you can safely assume that there is nothing known about the subject. That's one you can put in your hip pocket just as a snide method of analysis.

Now, for instance, testing: When you have tests which depend upon the opinion of the tester to say whether or not somebody is sane or insane or delirious or something, you see, and it's up to the tester to give an opinion, then you must decide two things: that little or nothing is known about testing and that no fundamentals on the subject of the mind must be known in that quarter; otherwise, the tests would not be so far out as to require only opinion.

Here once more we have the fact: The opinion present is proportional to the unknowns present. And you can get, then, all kinds of weird (quote) sciences (unquote).

Now, that's a little bit different than looking at a developmental line. A developmental line is simply a self-critical and active and ambitious effort to learn more fundamental materials to clarify and throw away irrelevant materials. Actually, it's a self-critical line that is trying to shorten its own volume. It's trying to reach minimal information.

It looks to you sometimes in this field of study as though it's trying to reach maximal investment of time to understand it. But if you will look at the materials, you find out that they are condensing, condensing, condensing. The data are getting less per section of the subject. But with that lessness comes a greater importance because they're more fundamental previously.

You can, for instance, take a Hindu philosopher's textbook, Krishnamurti or something like this, open up the chapter on time. A Scientologist would be very fascinated to read Krishnamurti science on the subject of time. He'd be flabbergasted, as a matter of fact – flabbergasted. How'd he know this?

Well, unfortunately, there's a little hook to it. His data about time, that are factual data about time, are sandwiched in at the same monotone of importance with about five hundred or a thousand other data about time which are *totally* false and to which he has given the hat tip of being fundamental.

So you can go through any body of writing, and you can find certain numbers of truths in it, but did the writer find them? I used to horrify English professors by saying – about witticisms and being very clever in writing and that sort of thing – I used to horrify these boys. You could just see their – the resistance of iconoclasm item go straight up in smoke, you see, when I would say, "Oh, yes, well, Sir Thomas Browne, anybody that would write that million words couldn't help but say something clever." Nevertheless, this has scientific application.

You can't write on the subject of time endlessly and take every stray thought that comes in your head on the subject of time and put it down on a sheet of paper without having in that mass certain fundamental and sweeping truths about time. Only, now, which is the drop in the Atlantic Ocean which is the important drop?

Reevaluation of information in the direction of arriving at more fundamental conclusions which have greater usefulness is the basic of this progressive research line which you are studying.

Now, it isn't true, and I am very happy to find out that it isn't true – I've been over this ground and over it – that you are necessarily studying Ron's case. [laughter] As my auditor can tell you occasionally, I go pale when we walk in toward a fundamental of Scientology when I'm being audited and think for a while that that might be the reason why I have called something something, don't you see?

This whole contest has been a much more dramatic contest. It's been the effort of by the bootstraps above the level of one's own case and have at it. And when I haven't succeeded in rising superior to my own case or items and so on, I am the first one to turn slightly pink. And it was quite interesting to me – it's quite interesting to me – for a while ago running into survival – to survive as a GPM, don't you see? Well, obviously, this would explain so much if this were the present time GPM. It would practically explain all, wouldn't it?

Well, when I found that in session that I had such a GPM, I *was* very, very blushing, you see. And so much so that I pulled it completely out of line, in the lines of GPMs, and put myself in a terrible creak because it actually belongs *waaaaay* back on the track lost with a lot of other GPMs, and simply had gotten pulled out by the recognition of the fact that survive was the basic principle of existence. And then that had turned around and taken this GPM and hauled it out of the backtrack and carted it up to present time with winches, and there it has been sitting putting me in a gorgeous creak, see? As soon as I recognized that this had been the action, bang! It went back into place. I haven't been troubled with it since.

The whole contest has been then to see things clearly, well knowing that one could not be on this planet researching things without having his opinions colored. And yet trying to rise above the coloration of opinion by one's own aberration and associations or even the penchants and enthusiasms of the age. These things also tend to color things enormously, you see.

Well, it's been – we have been successful to the degree that that has been accomplished. And has been accomplished to a considerable and remarkable degree. Now every time we ferret out a new fundamental, you actually lose out of your study data a bucketful of items, a bucketful of data until you begin to wonder, well, what is stable and what isn't stable in the past. That's fascinating. What is stable and what isn't stable?

Well, actually, the Axioms are in there in concrete. The Logics, the Prelogics, the fundamental material of the *Philadelphia Lectures*, the behavior of a thetan, the only thing I've seen it necessary to change in that particular line is the idea of exteriorization – is the only thing that's been changed recently.

What will a pc do when you bring him up to a point where he does not have to be in a body? See? And we used to think that he would move out of his body. And that is not what he will do. He will move his body off him because we have changed him up scale to a point where he can hold a position. And if he could exteriorize, the first thing he would have in mind, if *his* body was getting in his road in any way, would be to move it over there.

Now, I think that's an awfully minor – minor thing to have shifted in all that body of theoretical information. You have the Factors. You have all sorts of – you've got all of this what we are now calling Scientology One material, you know, and your ARC triangles and all that sort of thing, basic materials by the ton. These things are all completely accurate, see? Been no reason to change those at all. They're in concrete. So, therefore, the working field in which we have been engaged has been the field of *applied* technology. There has been no reason under the sun to alter our theoretical technology. Not even the datum I gave you just now alters the theoretical technology of Dianetics and Scientology – not a hair. That's still there. Theoretical technology? Dead accurate. Dead accurate. Nothing wrong with that.

Well, what then are you as a student seeing change? What do you see change under your nose? What's this that's going by? It's the reevaluation of data as applied technology. And you're seeing continuous reevaluation of data as applied technology. Now, because you're studying to be an auditor, not a theoretician...

As a matter of fact, I could confide in you, you would be having a breeze if you were studying at Scientology Level Five. That's the theoretical level out of which you evolve Scientology, you see. If you were only studying at that level, what a breeze you would have. You didn't intend to apply it to any case. You didn't intend to do anything for anybody. Maybe you – all you wanted to do was know about the organization of things, the principles of things, and that sort of thing. If you were studying at that data, you would say "good heavens, the unchanging monotony of this stuff is fantastic." So where is it shifting? Applied technology to cases. That's where it's shifting. And that's what's giving you a headache as a student.

But let's go just a little bit further than that. What's giving you a headache as a student in applying it – if you do have a headache as a student applying it – is trying to apply what you know to a case sitting in front of you so as to obtain a result. That's where the data mills around. And if you look over your bulletins, they're all addressed to this subject. Not just because you're a student, but that's the most of the outflow and information available.

It is so rare to release any definitions of communication from Scientology Five – it was a terrible shock to people apparently to release Project 80 – the definitions of Scientol-

ogy. There have been several complaints about these. Well, of course, there's been tremendous huzzahs – most sensible people have said huzzah, and so on, but there've been several complaints, too. It was a great shock, it's a great shock because they contain three words in them that are very upsetting in the United States particularly. It says the common people's science of life and livingness, you see? I think that's fascinating. That's what's wrong with that level.

I don't think that's what's wrong with that level at all. I just think it's the derivations or the reinterpretations that you can get into with this particular phrase. But the odd part of it is everybody has spotted the lie, see? In Project 80 there is one lie and that's that Definition. Only they don't quite know what's wrong with it. And they're picking on it. There have been several letters in complaining about this. Everything is fine except that one: "The common people's science of the mind" or something like that, whatever it says. Fascinating.

They haven't realized that they've spotted a lie. And they think that they're complaining about the common people. And they're not complaining about the common people. That phrase is not what they are complaining about. This dashed off as an example – you understand that that Project 80, this was an example of what these definitions should be. That was all. And this one was thrown in. No, that's a newspaper toss off. See? That's a newspaper definition toss off to get people to understand it. To get people to communicate it one way or the other, and that little particular phrase happens to be untruthful because if there's anybody uncommon, it's a Scientologist. The common people on the subject of the mind left to their own devices – God 'elp us! Because remember, this is a subject which confounds the wits and creaks the brains of, and has the best thinkers and philosophers that have ever been on this planet in its written history.

And through false modesty and because it communicates better, and so forth, one backs off that particular point. These are the problems that drove Socrates round the bend, see. And we're studying them and handling them as an everyday activity. Oh, wow! Of course, you can't say then this is the common people's...

You want to know why can't we get more people into Scientology, see? Well, you can get a lot of people into Scientology. There is no doubt about it. But if you get them in at Level I – or at Level 0 or at Level I – you've got to fairly rapidly make them very uncommon people to bring them on up the line. Correct? So it is a lie. They're not common people. This is nothing – this is nothing against those people who have been complaining about that. They're dead right.

That, of course, that particular phrase was taken out of a newspaper handout that I was kicking around and we were putting together, and so forth, and it just seemed like a good off-hand definition that was simply put off as an example of how you would define it, don't you see? Well, everything else in it is quite truthful and quite factual, but that one happens to be a lie, and there have been several complaints about it, all saying, we are not common people. See? And that is not ... Now, you could say the average person – I just got one from Detroit of all places – the average person's mental science. Now that would be acceptable but not the common people. You see how far that datum is shooting? See how far that is missing. Well, that would then become an aberrated stable datum and it would only stick because it con-

tained a lie. Now, out of all this other truthful material we find people paying a lot of attention to this one that: (1) isn't important, and (2) happens to be the only inaccurate rundown that we have in Scientology One, Project 80.

Now, what does that have to do with education? Why is Ron going off to this degree? No, the mind tends to fix on those things which contain an alter-is from truth. And conversely, an alter-is in the truth of the situation is the most resistant thing to the truth of the situation.

You've got the cowboys in the white hats and the cowboys in the black hats here, see. The cowboys in the black hats are aberrated stable data. Now, I'm very sure that at least one or two of you present, if not more, have become very worried about absorbing any stable data realizing that a GPM is made up exclusively as data which has become very, very stable indeed.

And if the whole source of human aberration – running your itsa line, and so forth, and taking out solutions – that the whole source of human aberration is actually derived from stable data assumed to hold back confusions. And I'm sure that to some degree you've been shaking in your boots about postulating any new stable data. Look what it does to you.

No – it's an aberrated stable datum. The common people's mental science, see? Look at the randomness of that thing. And suddenly confusion suddenly started entering into various parts of the country and even Detroit. See, confusion entered in. People started batting at this thing. They didn't like this. This is wrong, and so on, and so on. So any error entered into the line is apt to get battered at.

But a reverse fight also goes on. An aberrated stable datum will batter back at the truth. But where you have a slightly altered truth and you were trying to give it to someone who already has an altered truth on that same subject, the two will come into a conflict which promotes all sorts of bad applied technology. Now, this is something like saying, "Well, an aberrated auditor has a hard time auditing." You've heard that old saw, see. I can turn out a very nice session; I never pretended to be unaberrated. I don't believe that, see?

But I will tell you this: that a guy with some of his aberrations in place, some of these aberrated stable data... You see, the real hang-ups are: "The way to get on in life, you see, is to die." Oh, it'll hang you up because it's not true. It stops. It stops a proper flow of data.

All right. Now, if you, then, are studying material which has any place in its body at all, any alteration from the fundamental that should be there, and you yourself have an alteration – remember, it's an alteration – which is contrary to the datum – altered datum – you are trying to assimilate, you get a dog's breakfast. It becomes a real mess.

In other words, we're trying to drive a truck through a truck. We've got this aberrated, slightly aberrated datum and we're trying to push it through an aberrated datum. They've both got lies in them to one degree or another or they're slightly nonbasic or nonfactual and they won't mix. So you have this fellow with this slightly aberrated datum – "all horses sleep in beds," you see – regarding the datum "all beds are soft." You see, "all beds are soft" isn't true, and "horses sleep in beds"; that isn't true.

Now, how are you going to get these two data together? Well, they just aren't going to fit. And you'll have this fellow going around in circles and he'll have every reason under the sun why it isn't true that all beds are soft. Some beds have got to be hard. They've got to – in the first place, they've got to support up to a ton of horseflesh. Now, he actually at no time looks at what is really wrong with this datum he's trying to assimilate. All beds are soft. That's not true.

If you've ever been on an old-time sailing ship, you would know that. If you've ever slept under an airplane wing, you'd know that. In fact, I could think of some hotels that would tell you that quite rapidly. There's some landladies around here that wouldn't agree with that at all. They make it completely false.

So you've got – you've got this fellow and he's saying, "All horses sleep in beds. Well, 'all beds are soft' can't be true because if it was true they wouldn't support a ton of horseflesh. Imagine getting a Percheron to sleep in that bed, you see? Too soft; go right straight through the mattress. You know, the bed's got to be stiff, stiff, see."

Now look at the ridiculousness of this conflict. Is any part of this conflict going to resolve itself at all? He's finding the wrong thing wrong with the datum because he has a vested interest in trying to make this datum fit or unfit somehow with another stable – unstable, erratic, aberrated datum, see? So he can't get these two data together. Never the twain shall meet. He then tries to understand an aberrated datum through another aberrated datum, and of course he develops complications. Now, he's liable to get Professor Sweeney to write a paper on the proper softness of beds, see. He's liable to get all kinds of things, but he's actually trying to push home the data "all beds should be hard and strong."

He's actually trying to push into existence as aberrated a datum as he's being presented with. Now, out of this conflict and counterposition, vis-à-vis and one against the other, aberrated stable datum versus aberrated stable datum, you get a crush of superimposed opinions of one kind or another, all of which rise up into a fantastic potpourri that is called opinions, logic, demonstration of this and that, and so forth.

Now, you have a pc who is a walking gold mine of aberrated stable data. Now, if any datum which you're using to resolve that case is the least bit curved, that case won't resolve but develop new complications. Do you see this?

Therefore, the mass of technology which grows up in Scientology is, of course, centered around applied technology. And you get a swelling mass of this data which then will subside and a lot of it will be thrown away. And you get a swelling mass of this data and it'll subside and be thrown away. But it only subsides and is thrown away when a new clarification is given to a fundamental. So the greatest possible truth, in terms of fundamentals, has to be used in application. So it's my contest on a research line to leave no stone unturned to get at the most fundamental, clean, clearcut fundamental possible for the resolution of the case because the cases otherwise will not resolve.

Now, we've gone an enormous direction. We've gone a long, long way in this particular direction and we have made some tremendous gains in this particular direction. But is there any other zone – is there any other zone, now, where we get a randomness? Yes – the person who is applying the data.

Now if you, in assimilation of data, are assimilating to the slightest degree data up against a miscomprehension or an allness* which you're putting in place of the auditor, you don't get an assimilation. You have difficulty assimilating the data; but you can assimilate the data. Your trouble comes when you turn around and take the datum you've assimilated and altered in some fashion and then have tried to apply it to the case who is sitting in front of you. And the alter-ises in that data will then bring about a nonresolution of the case you are confronted with.

The only solvent is truth. And even though absolutes are unobtainable, truth – in a very refined form, the purest possible – is the only thing that will resolve cases all the way because it is the one thing that the aberrated case cannot argue with. Therefore, you as an auditor desiring results have no business whatsoever in letting yourself get bent around in circles or riding hobbyhorses with regard to the technology which you are applying because it will get furiously in your road if it has been twisted in some fashion.

Now, that looks like an almost insurmountable barrier. Actually, there's considerable tolerance and you get a resolution of cases within this zone of tolerance. There is a zone of tolerance. It doesn't have to be quite that perfect to make it work because the technology heretofore was too imperfect ever to work.

And it has been my task to bring about a recognition of fundamentals sufficiently great and technology sufficiently great to overcome a lot of this alter-is. But it is a task which is, of course, a thousand times greater than simply presenting the task necessary to resolve a case. We're not just presenting the material necessary to resolve a case. We have to present it so fundamentally accurate, so close to the purest of pure, that the auditor in applying it can still alter-is it, can apply it to a pc who is – because it's right up against his case – maybe as a person he'd be able to override some of this, but when it's applied to his case – being that makes something else – who is going to take that data already twisted and twist it further, such as in answering the auditing command, and still have a resolution of case. That's an heroic problem then.

Well, now you haven't too much to worry about along that problem line, but you do have this to worry about: The amount of difficulty you have with cases is directly proportional to the amount of aberrated or alter-is – aberration or alter-is that you're adding to the data that you're using. That's directly proportional. Now, of course, this also is directly proportional to the purity and assimilability of the material you are given to study. I already accept some fault for that, don't you see, because that is a difficult one to bring off. But we're in there awful close, don't you see? There isn't too much out.

That would get by if we didn't have an alter-is of an offered datum by the auditor which is then applied to a case which is just going to alter-is the living daylights out of it. The only universal solvent is truth. That's the only thing that will solve anything. Imagine it – we even know that the way you solve solutions is solutions. We even know how to cure cures. It's fantastic.

* Editor's note: see p.19, second to last paragraph, for further explanation about what is meant with "allness"

You know, there's practically no field of healing has ever gone in this direction at all. These are all undisclosed and unrecognized data. This guy's got lumbosis. Reg did the other day – asking what solutions has he had to his back trouble – he was asking some pc. The pc all of a sudden turns up with no back trouble. What – did he have back trouble? No. He had solutions of the back trouble.

Well, when you've penetrated that deeply into the morass of consciousness and unconsciousness, that you know what is cause and effect along this particular line, you're dealing with fairly pure information. But everywhere I have made the tiniest little mistake or thrown the wrong emphasis on something, you're going to have some trouble. And you might be able to get by with that – and might not, too – unless you took that datum – or took data – and then alter-ised it thoroughly and then shoved it at a pc, and of course, by the time it gets to that pc, the data is very far from truth and therefore is not a case solvent anymore.

Now, it's my task continuously to look up these holes in the technology, find out where they sit, find out what misconceptions people have about these things and reevaluate the information and re-release it again. This has been done at Level IV to such an appalling degree now that Level IV does the impossible. It brings about an OT but is actually only workable at a level of tightwire walk that doesn't permit a variation of an eighteenth of an inch from its procedure.

I'll show you right now how much you can vary Routine 4 and smash a pc. There was a hole in it, but the hole didn't appear until somebody wasn't asking the exact question. There was a hole in it – I've been looking these up rather rapidly lately – and that was simply this: There are three goals that will rocket read – three types of goals that will rocket read. And we started out with just one type of goal that would rocket read. That was old Routine 3, way back when.

And those are: an actual goal, an actual GPM and an implant GPM. There could be another type which is a phrase in an engram, but that will not necessarily rocket read. But the other three, any one of them, will rocket read. Now, as you sit there and look at what you've just written there in your notes, when you regard that, you say that's not much of a discovery. Well, look, we used to have one type which was a goal. We were awful glad to see a goal rocket read. And then through this last summer's work, I found out practically all there was to know about implants and implant goals and it was obvious that actual goals and implant goals were getting mixed up. And we got at least one case in Z Unit who does not know it, until this moment, I start giving this datum just at this instant, who's wrapped around a telegraph pole.

Actual goal, but it hasn't got any GPM connected with it. Isn't that a nasty one? Any GPM may have in it upwards to a hundred actual goals, but there's only one goal for that GPM. These others are totally superfluous. They're nothing. Do you realize that the goal a pc sets for a session is an actual goal? A pc's actual goal, isn't it? And do you know that they will every once in a while rocket read? And they haven't got any items attached to them at all. They are probably a lock on a reliable item someplace – just a lousy lock. And if you take one of these things as the pc's goal – GPM – and run it the way you would an actual GPM, you can find items. Oh, where do you get them? Well, you pull them in from the nearest implants. You pull them out of other GPMs. You pull them off other locks. Hey! You can just find

items, items, items. You can make the beautifullest line plot you ever saw in your life. But there was no GPM there in the first place.

Now, the patter I was using in handling Routine 4 was exactly as follows: "Is this an actual GPM?"

This is meter questions and these, by the way, are just dead accurate on the meter. You're just shot in the pants with luck because these things are always correct on the meter. There's a lot of things you can ask a meter, such as "Is this a PT goal?" and things like that. That's not accurate. It won't give you an accurate response. But it will give you a dead accurate response on this other information first crack off the box and that saves your bacon.

You can take this – I was asking these on the meter, of course.

Find a rocket reading goal, see, and say, "Is this an actual GPM?"

"Is this an implant GPM?"

"Is this no GPM?"

And that were the three questions I was using. Ah, fascinating, because auditors have been asking, "Is this an actual goal? Is this an implant goal?"

Oh, my God, what is this? Well, it's enough to kill somebody. You could frankly just wind somebody up in a complete *blang* with it. That's what I mean by the eighteenth of an inch off the tightwire. But there was a piece of technology missing where the pc's actual goals will rocket read and don't have to have any GPM connected with them. It's only those goals which have GPMs connected to them and have formed a GPM that you have any interest in of any kind whatsoever. And they're good, nice, great, big, smashing masses with – full of RIs and tremendous relief and they explain the aberration of the pc, and they can be opposed, and so forth.

You take one of these actual goals. It hasn't got any GPM connected with it. It's just some kind of a lock on some RI, you know, "to eat candy," you know. That thing rocket read. Do goals opposed list on it. *Ooooh*, we're going to get the pc in a mess. No, that's fine.

Let's find another one because we'll never find an actual GPM listing one against. So we're going to find another actual goal, aren't we? And then we're going to oppose that. *Ohhh*. And we're going to oppose that and we're going to finally find a present time actual goal such as, "to not get Infraction Sheets," you see, or something. And by God, we could sit down and find a top oppterm for it. That's what's frightening.

Where would we get it? Well, we'd have to get it from a few trillion billion squillion years ago or we'd pull it in from some RI someplace or another or pull it out of the actual present time GPM, you see. Just pull in a random RI – anything – but usually locks on RIs. We wouldn't really get RIs. But they'd fire because they sort of fit, you see?

And you would get a nice, beautiful line plot all on the pc – but there's no GPM that goes with it. Oh, you could probably keep this up for sessions and sessions and sessions and sessions, and you could probably get tone arm action and tone arm action and tone arm action. Well, everything's going fine, and all of a sudden the pc goes *deooooooooooooooooom-boom!*

Tone arm goes clink. Pc's starting to develop ulcers of the stomach, lumbosis. Frightening, isn't it? Just varied one word.

Instead of asking, "Is this an actual GPM?" ask "Is it an actual goal?" And you'll get a read. And then suppose that therefore, if it's an actual goal, it has a GPM attached to it. Around the telegraph pole; so that much variation in technology. But there was a missing datum there, wasn't there: that a pc's (quote) "actual goal" could actually rocket read.

It's a good thing, kids, that I'm totally indestructible because these things usually happen to me first, don't you see? It's gruesome, gruesome. A couple of weeks ago I was ambitiously listing on one of these things but it didn't feel right and it didn't look right and it didn't oppose right and nothing was going right. It was a mess.

And light finally dawned on me. I generally wake up just as I go down for the third time, you know. I can see this stream of bubbles over my head and decide I'd better surface. I said, "You're checking an actual goal. You're not checking an actual GPM. For God's sakes, check this thing for an actual GPM." No read. No GPM. It's the only thing that checks out, see? Oh, my God! See, just a little, little piece of technology, see? Hardly enough to bother with. Cool! And it can throw a curve into the works like that.

You know, you could go on auditing somebody for months with this kind of nonsense and wondering why they weren't getting any better and they never have any cognitions and life would just sort of be grim and they wouldn't quite be making much case gain – TA yes, oh, yes – but fundamental error in the case just taking them down one after the other; the reality getting poorer. Something – something is happening here that is incorrect, see?

PC ARC breaky, kind of hard to handle, you know. A little datum like that. Let me show you another datum. This is a spooky one. This is a very spooky datum. I might as well leave you all gray-headed in the next three minutes, which I'm just about to do.

Let's take Level I. Nothing to learn now in Level I, is there? Got it all straight, haven't we? There's our whatsit line, see? There's your C and E, and here's whatsit. Very nice. And there's your auditor over here, of course, you see, and here's your pc over here. And there's the pc as a thetan. Here's your communication line. There's the bank. And here is the itsa line: E, C. There's your itsa, right?

How many communication lines have I just shown you?

Audience: One, three.

How many? Come on.

Audience: Three, three, five, six.

Well, the drawing right here. How many do you see on this drawing?

Audience: Three.

You see three. Well, how many do you see in your pc? When you're sitting in an auditing session, what are the three important communication lines? And what is their order of importance? Some of you are going to say this whatsit line; that's the most important. Some of you are going to say the itsa line. And you're wrong.

It's this one. One – first importance; two – second importance; three – third importance. And anybody who doesn't think that that line is important has got the definition of an auditor wrong. It's this delicate. This is scary when you start looking at the delicacies and nuances of definitions. Willing to talk to the auditor is very easily interpreted along these ways: such as talking to the auditor.

So, the auditor cuts this line to get the pc to talk because it is this line, the itsa line, of course, that blows the charge, he says, and so cuts the pc's communication with his bank – cuts the pc's communication with his bank in order to bring about an itsa line, and wonders why he gets no tone arm action and why the pc ARC breaks. Because the cut communication line is not perceivable to the naked eye. Not perceivable to the naked eye because it's hidden, because the pc is a thetan unseen by the auditor – to the pc's bank, unseen by the auditor. Which causes the auditor then to basically – an auditor can do this: start running on only line three, whatsit, and itsaing on the meter. See, itsas on the meter and whatsit on the pc and therefore has this line cut and this line cut.

Now, you see the picture I've just drawn you here. This picture, taken up carefully with any auditor as to just exactly why this isn't true and just exactly what the score is with regard to this will disclose to some, some horrifying data. Horrifying! And they wonder why they haven't got tone arm action on the pc. Tone arm action has to be prevented. Well, this is the basic method of preventing it.

Now, here we are. Basically, I am to this degree on the research line – I'm not telling you I'm in error because you can't take anything out of whole cloth and then prove it and then continue to say you're in error about it – but I'm in error to this degree as far as the relay of this information. It was not all found out. And the evaluation of the importance of these three lines was not totally done. This line appeared on your early drawings but was not assigned its level of importance.

Now, this is a communication breakdown as far as I'm concerned because, of course, to me that would be all auditing was about: trying to get the pc to confront his own bank. So I'd simply neglect to say anything about this and then appear to be laying undue stress on just the itsa line, and then anybody looking at this and analyzing it and trying to pick it up and learn it with, let us say, a datum of this particular character: You can't ever trust a pc to answer an auditing question, so therefore you shouldn't get him to look at his bank because if he looks at his bank, he'll overstimulate himself, won't he? So therefore, the best thing to do is every time he starts to look at his bank, attract his attention to the auditor and get the pc talking. *Heh-heh-heh-huh-bloo!* You got that?

Now, there's probably 8,750,963 – 734.2 combinations of reasons why this situation can't occur. But once it's explained this way, and you see it clearly and you understand your way through it, the auditor is simply there to get the pc to confront his bank, you see. The charge blows off of it to the degree that it's confronted, and this is represented by the itsa line, and the itsa line is a report on what has been as-ised that gives it its flow. Now, that sounds, perhaps, to you like an entirely different explanation of the itsa line. No, it's the same factors we're dealing with. I have just weighted it slightly differently to make a better communication.

Now, the reason that communication could not be accepted or the reason that communication couldn't go through would be the reason why the auditor is having trouble auditing. So I'm giving you all parts of education now.

A research perception, an investigatory perception, of the actual truth of the situation with regard to the communication lines present in a session; the communications lines of auditor to pc on the whasit and then pc to his bank and then pc to auditor giving us the itsa, of course, includes its most important part – pc to bank.

But because it goes one, two, three in sequence, we're liable to take up that number one is the most important or some other aberrated consideration with regard to it and so auditing would not occur. But the breakdown is simply my failure to recognize exactly *what* these factors were in a lucid way and then to communicate it and have media by which to communicate it that would bring this through rapidly and then have it received. And you have all points of education and you have technical result occurring if that is done. If you don't have that being done, you don't have technical result. And that is about all there is to be said about it.

Now, any auditor who cares to reevaluate or look over his considerations concerning this and why these things can't occur and what really exists here instead of this very simple rendition – you actually would be able to sit down and coach a fellow very carefully with this little drawing as elementary as it is and get all the reasons why and et cetera and what a pc is liable to do if you – and you know, and so forth, and what really blows the charge and where it actually exists and where it doesn't exist. Take this all up in full, you're going to find a whole hat full of aberrated data fall out: wrong stresses, alter-ises and that sort of thing. That's because you're presented here with a relatively pure datum. Therefore, that datum would go through and resolve the rest of the way.

Education, then, is basically successful to a technical end only when it is in a very pure, comprehensible state and is relayed well. First it must be conceived very purely and then it must be relayed well. If we were not teaching you toward the final devastating result of "did it work on the pc or not," if we had that horrible test out of the road, then we could teach Scientology V, and you would be sitting there being very happy to learn all the axioms by heart and straighten it all out and have some cognitions on the thing and everything because the data would never actually be subjected to any final result. That's what makes Scientology different than any other mental study that has ever occurred. Somebody comes along and says, "Oh, I know what Scientology is. That's just like Taoism."

Just like Taoism, huh? Who ever got "Tao'd Clear" or "Tao'd better"? Nobody. That's the answer to that. But it's a beautiful philosophy and there's a great deal of truth connected with it. But if this truth is never put to the acid test of performance, who cares? But your technical gains on your pc depends first and foremost to take responsibility for it – for the purity of the datum which you are given for application and then depends upon your ability to perceive that datum and apply it without a great deal of alter-is so that it arrives in the direction of the aberration in which the pc is involved in a sufficiently pure state to as-is and knock out of existence the case; that is, the aberrated condition which he is confronting. That sounds terribly elementary. That sounds terribly simple. Actually, it is terribly simple. It's an action

which can only be complicated. It can only be complicated. It can't much go the other direction. But there's the acid test of result.

Now, no pc – no pc is going to resolve in a minute because you're up against all the reasons he can't get well. But in an auditor who is altering data which comes his way, you're up against all the reasons the data can't be relayed. So therefore, education to this degree lies in clearing the line. Get the line cleared up so the datum can be applied. That becomes a highly important activity. And I invite you, one and all, to look at that little plot there as simple as it is. Look over those three lines and decide for yourself. Decide for yourself what the relative values of this thing are or how this thing all adds up and all the reasons why it can't be done or won't work. And you suddenly will stop cutting the pc's itsa line, and your pc will stop ARC breaking, and so forth, because you've laid out for yourself a series of clear-eyed understandings with regard to exactly what you are doing.

It is fundamentals of this particular character which make breakthroughs. The itsa line itself is a tremendous breakthrough. Now, a clarification of the itsa line is absolutely necessary. We find out the most important part of this particular communication pattern happens to be a totally hidden line. Where your auditor neglects that hidden line, where he doesn't understand that hidden line, where he can't integrate it or do anything with it, he's going to fail. But as I said, that long number I gave you is the number of reasons why and the number of methods why these three lines can't exist. And they will be voluminous.

Therefore, education also carries with it de-education. And when you're studying on a research line, you have to become very flexible indeed because you have to de-educate yourself by a clarification and understanding of materials you thought existed – and so did everybody else – existed in a more complicated state five years ago. And you'll find one of your great difficulties with an auditor is he's glommed onto and made an all out of one of these old data of some kind or another, and he's got it standing there in his road.

But all of this comes down to one other simple fact that I can't forbear to say anything about even though you're going to be able to come fifteen minutes late tonight. And that is simply this: No datum I give you is a substitute for you. That is the burning thing to remember as an auditor. No datum I give you is a substitute for you. You put a datum in an auditing chair and tell it to audit a pc and it isn't going to. It isn't going to. The only thing that can be in an auditing chair is a live thetan, because only that can handle the communications and confusions which arise.

Now, if you have a very complicated thetan – this thetan starts doing forty-seven and a half other things besides just sitting there handling the situation, he's riding on a bunch of data. But what do you have essentially.? You have some other data sitting in the auditing chair you didn't know was there. So the one thing for which there's no substitute – you've got to have technology because nobody was ever able to make a breakthrough on it or your technology exists and it exists in a fairly pure state – well, there's one thing for which there's no substitute whatsoever. And that is a live thetan in the auditor's chair. And no amount of textbooks sitting in the space which he occupies will ever audit the pc. And I think you see in that a purity of truth.

I notice that I do best as an auditor when I just sit there – oh, I use all the routines – but when I sit there and I handle the pc in the session, and I'm there and I'm alert and rolling along down the line and rolling with the punches and shifting this way and that, my eye on the situation. And I audit worst when I'm trying out a theory because there's a theory sitting there. See? There's a theory sitting there.

Well, let me show you this. We do know now that a successful session moves the tone arm adequately throughout the session. And that's the final test. Now, at higher levels not only will it now move the tone arm, but is the auditor proceeding along the line which will continue to move the tone arm and not have it break down somewhere up along the line? Now that – we're describing Level IV because he can get tone arm action on Level IV that dumps him over a cliff and gives him no tone arm action a week from now, see?

So we have this final criteria: Not only is there an acid test of the technology in the field of application, but there is also an acid test of an auditor. Does he know his business?

[Please note: this tape ends abruptly as did the original master recording]

THE ITSA MAKER LINE

A lecture given on
16 October 1963

How are you today?

Audience: Fine.

Good. Good. We have the 16th of October AD 13, don't we? Is that the date?

Female voice: 17th.

What's the date?

Audience: 16th.

All right. All right, you're outvoted. [laughter] One motion we don't have to table. Saint Hill Special Briefing Course.

Well, we have a lot of material, but the material you were most fascinated with was the examination of the communication cycle and the recognition that there was another communication line in it you hadn't really been aware of. Several auditors so far have been very, very delighted indeed, and I think several pcs already have been. And there will be a great many more pcs who will be delighted with this before we get through. I better give you a bit of a talk about that, in spite of the fact that I haven't hit on a final name for this line – we'll call it the itsa maker. Now, that possibly is not the most applicable name.

Let's take a look at this thing. This line is actually the line which you are guiding as an auditor and which sorts out the various things in the case, and which then reports – which then gets the material, you might say, that is reported to the auditor as itsa. Actually, the itsa itself occurs at the end of this line, not at the auditor. So actually, it's the itsa communication line that goes from the pc back to the auditor. That is the itsa communication line.

Itsa is a commodity. It's a commodity. It's actually the identification of isness – and, of course, time can enter into it and you will get wasness. Now, you get all types of variations, all tone scales and everything else fit into this commodity called itsa. You could ask for "failed decisions." Well, the pc says "itsa," see – he says "it's a failed decision," don't you see. It's a this, and it's a that, and it's something else, but you could even have a failure to identify. You could ask pcs for failures to identify. Now, if you were going to ask a pc for a failure to identify, you of course are on the borderline between a confusion and an itsa. See, that's the borderline in between there.

Times when you didn't find out something. Now you'd be surprised that occasionally you'll get a little TA action on this. But you will also stir up enough overrestimulation to mess

things up gorgeously. Now, the commodity called itsa is so simple – recognizing it can have tremendous variety – it is nevertheless tremendously simple as a commodity. There is nothing much to this commodity. You walk in the room and you look around to see what's there, you see. Well, it's a chair, it's a student, it's a ceiling, it's a floor, don't you see. That's itsa for the room. And that's all there is to it.

Now, until the itsa is recognized, it's only potential itsa. There is something there to be itsaed. Now, where you get in a lot of trouble as an auditor is you think you have a potential itsa where there's in actual fact a nothingness, and you're trying to get the pc to itsa a nothingness. This is the way you go about it. Let me show you just some of the problems that an auditor runs into with this.

He says to the pc – he says, "What's going on?" or "What's happening?" You see?

And the pc says, "I'm just sitting here looking at a picture of a statue." You got that now, see. That's the situation.

Now, the auditor says, "What is happening?" or "What is going on?" in some version or another. Now, the degree that the auditor can vary this, buries it from view of what he's actually doing, see.

The pc has told him what was being – what was there, see. He said "itsa." "Sitting here looking at a picture of a statue," see. Simple.

Now the auditor says, "What else is there? What are you doing? What else are you doing? How are you doing it?" and so on. "What decisions are you making about this?" You get this?

Well, the pc isn't doing anything else, isn't making any decisions about the statue and in actual fact there is exactly nothing else going on. Now, this is the commonest method by which an auditor refutes itsa.

Now, on a meter you call it "cleaning a clean." And you'd be very reprehensible at somebody who's saying, "On this (blank) has anything been invalidated?" And the meter is just absolutely sleek, see. "Oh, what was that? What was that? What was that? Wha-wha-wha-wha-what was that? What was that?" You know, you didn't get a read, see.

And you can count on the pc ARC breaking very shortly. "Oh, that. There isn't anything else. There's nothing else been invalidated." Protest, see?

"Well, I'll ask the question again. On (blank) has anything been invalidated. Oh, that reads. That reads. That reads. What was that? What was that? Wha-what was that? That reads." Well, yeah, there's something there now because he protested the fact that a clean – clean was, so he protested the Invalidate button, so now the Invalidate button now reads on Protest. You got the idea?

Now, out of this idiocy can get some of the most tangled situations. See, he cleaned a clean on the meter and the pc protested the cleaning of the clean, which made Invalidate read as a button. So now Invalidate reads, so now the auditor demands to know what is there. The auditor now becomes certain there is something there, don't you see. Reading on the meter, isn't it? And out of this, they can go wandering all over bayous and byroads and up in bal-

loons and so forth, and it just goes to pieces from there – all of which proceeds from cleaning a clean. You've probably seen this happen – you may have had it happen to you. It's a what – a very common error. Any auditor will do it sooner or later – he'll accidentally clean a clean. He just wants to be sure, you see. "Anything else been suppressed there?" you know. He's had a clean read, and he wishes to God he never said so, but of course Suppress can suppress its own read. So you're left in a bit of a quandary – and the pc said, "No, there's nothing else."

"Ah, ah – well, I see a read there now." Protest read or something like this sort of thing. Pc looks and gives four or five more answers – each one of which is protest, do you see. So the button keeps reading, reading, reading.

Finally, the pc says, "Yeah, but there isn't anything else here!" See, he's getting up into an ARC break situation. What's he being asked for? He's being asked to identify nonexistent itsa.

Now, this is the same trick as this: You take a wide, empty room. And you – this is brainwashing stuff, see – and you say to the person as you bring him in the door, "Describe to me the elephant in the middle of the room." And the fellow says, "There isn't any elephant in the middle of the room." "Oh, uh, uh, uh, uh, uh, uh, uh, uh – oh, no, no, no, no, no. Let's look *carefully*. Look carefully. Now, look all around the floor and see if you can't see those foot-prints and so forth. Now, you'll – you'll get – you'll get it after a while. You'll get this elephant after a while there."

I swear if you kept it up, you could make the guy practically mock up an elephant in the middle of the room, don't you see. But the guy would be very overwhelmed and very ARC broken. What you're trying to do is tell him that something exists which doesn't exist. Now, perhaps that is – aside from the definitions of it – the source of – or failure to understand the definitions and so forth of itsa – probably the source of the greatest difficulty is cleaning cleans. You've seen it happen on a meter, you've seen yourself get in trouble occasionally, too, cleaning it on the meter. Well, similarly, you can clean it without a meter. You can say, "What are you looking at?"

And the person says, "I'm sitting here looking at a statue."

"Oh, all right, good. Now what kind of a statue?" This is barely admissible, see, because that one might lay an egg, too.

"Well, it's just a statue kind of a statue." You see?

"Yes, but what does it look like?"

"Well, it looks like a statue."

"Um, all right. Uhm. Wha-what else are you doing there?"

"Oh, I'm not doing anything else. I'm just sitting here looking at this – or was sitting here looking at this statue – until I was so crudely interrupted."

"All right. Well, now who might have made the statue?"

"Well, I don't know."

"What time period do you suppose it's in?"

"Uh, sometime I guess."

"Well, where – where – where is this statue located? Where is this statue located now? Where's it located?" and so forth.

"Well, I don't know. Just here."

Well, the amount of tone arm action you're going to get out of that is horrible because, actually, there's nothing else to itsa, don't you see? The auditor is creating new things to itsa which aren't there. The pc was just sitting there looking at a statue and actually probably was just looking at a vague blur, and he couldn't tell whether it was female or a male or anything else. He didn't know where it was located. He knew nothing about it except he was just struck by the fact that he saw this thing, and he assumed it was a statue and so he was sitting there looking at a statue. The auditor comes along and says, "What are you doing?" you know?

And he says, "I'm sitting here looking at a statue." Now that is the itsa – and the way to really foul the pc up – and this is something you as an auditor just have to get straightened out yourselves, see – the way to foul the pc up, then, is to demand more than the pc's got. And you're not going to get itsa; you're not going to get itsa by demanding more than the pc's got because there's nothing else there to itsa! There simply isn't anything to itsa. You have got the itsa. But by asking again, you deny the fact that it has been itsaed. Now there's the real hook in all this.

You say – you've said in effect when you say, "What else" – oh, you could say, "What else are you looking at?" without disturbing the pc too much. He says, "I'm sitting here looking at a statue."

And the auditor says, "Well, what else are you seeing?" There would be a good example, see: "What else are you seeing?" Well, maybe he isn't seeing anything else. You see, this would be your thing – but you have in effect said, "I have not accepted what you have said." So now the itsa comm line is cut – as different from cutting the pc's itsa, see. You have not permitted the itsa particle to travel on that comm line.

You have not only cut the – you have not only refuted the itsa – you see, the itsa isn't cut – it's refuted. You say it doesn't exist. "You haven't said anything. You haven't said anything because I want to now know much more about it than you have said. So therefore, you haven't said anything." This is what you're saying. So you also cut the itsa comm line. See, you've not just blunted out the itsa but you've cut the itsa comm line and the pc will ARC break eventually under this kind of treatment accordingly.

So that then it appears to you that by cutting the comm line, you have caused an ARC break. So then you specialize in not cutting the comm line, and go on asking the pc ridiculous questions which knock the itsa in the head. Now you see how you could get fouled up on this? And your pc would ARC break like mad and be very upset about this and that and about his auditing and not getting any TA action and no gains and all this sort of thing, you see. Basically, no TA action. And the auditor could be quite certain what's wrong, you see, that he is inadvertently cutting the pc's comm line to the auditor in some fashion.

And so now, compound the felony by developing a new system which overcomes this – because he actually hasn't got the trouble in the first place, see. He's got a new system

he's going to develop to cure this old error, and he's going to say all the time, "Have I interrupted anything you were saying?"

Well, this is not germane to it, so would only compound the ARC break. See? He hasn't interrupted anything, so again he has cleaned a clean. In other words, he's put his finger on the wrong error. You see that?

This kind of a situation could develop: Auditor says the whatsit, see. The auditor says, "What's happening?" or "What are you doing?" And the pc says, "Well, I'm just sitting here looking at a statue." "Oh? What's the – what else is in view there as you're looking at the statue? What else are you looking at there in the statue?" He isn't looking at anything else – there isn't anything else there, don't you see?

So the pc says, "Well, uh, mm-mm, uh, mm, uh, uh, uh, uh, uh. I'm just looking at the statue."

Auditor sees a dirty needle, knows that a cut comm line turns on a dirty needle. Now says, "In some way have I cut your communication line?" Hell, no – he's forced the communication line, not cut it. Not only that, but he's invalidated – the sensation is that the – what the pc has said has been invalidated.

You would be surprised how well something runs when you say to a pc, "What's happening?" or "What are you doing?"

The pc says – said, "I'm sitting here looking at a statue."

Now the auditor who doesn't have an eye cocked on his meter at this moment... You know, an auditor should be walleyed – one eye on the pc and one eye on the meter. And notices – and you can, you actually can get nicely walleyed. You look at this thing out of the corner of your eye – you can see what's happening to a meter even while you're apparently looking straight at the pc. As a matter of fact, it drives my pc nuts sometimes when she gets all tangled up in something or other, she'll notice something like this and growl about it, you know. "But you didn't see that on the meter!" Well, of course, I have seen that on the meter. It looks to the pc like this, you see. Pc absolutely certain that you aren't looking at the meter. Not so. Not so at all. I've seen everything that meter has done, see.

I tell you how you do it – I tell you how you do it: You take the iris, you see, [laughter] and it has an inner reflective quality, see. And you actually look at the reflection of the meter on the inside of the iris. That's actually the way you do it. Anyway. Joke. But you actually can see this.

Now, you've got to establish – what are you trying to do? Well, actually, you're trying to get tone arm action, see – that's what you're trying to do. Because that is the most visible action of success. If you've done everything else successfully you get tone arm action; so you say, well, what are you trying to do? You're trying to get tone arm action. Don't say, "I'm trying to clear somebody, I'm trying to heal somebody's broken leg, or I'm trying to do this or trying to do that." Scientology Levels I, II and III, you're trying to get tone arm action. The significance of how you get tone arm action – oh, *btheaaaah!* No matter what you do with a pc, it's all got to be done thoroughly at Level IV. You understand that?

You can destimulate and put present time back where it belongs and dust the case off and let the case live, don't you see? You can do very remarkable things at Levels I, II and III – don't make a mistake. And on Level IV, you're going to find all the somatics again. It isn't that you haven't blown charge off the case at large – yes, you have at Levels I, II and III, but a lot of it was destimulated charge. You make it possible for somebody actually to run IV at Levels I, II and III. But the significances are the pc's actual GPMs, the pc's RIs, the terminals and oppterms, and that whole chain of actual goals back to time immemorial contains every possible reason why the pc is batty, except one. Except one. How did he get so batty that he started doing this in the first place! Well, actually, that's merely a decision. It's just a sort of "How do you make matter," see. Well, he easily comes out of that.

You want to know why the pc has pictures? He's probably got some GPM to make pictures, you see. You want to know why the – why the pc is getting less powerful? Well, he has some GPM to be less powerful. I mean that's a – see? That's – you want to know why the pc is terrified of height? Well, he's got an RI or a GPM to make him terrified of height, don't you see? I mean anything wrong – or if the guy has a broken leg, why, you're going to have – you're going to have some RI someplace or other that tells him to break his leg. You get the idea? I mean, the – they're – all the explanations are there. There's no sense in looking for explanations anyplace else on a case. You understand?

And that's very discouraging – but amongst us pros we can – I mean its very discouraging to the pc after he's just gotten rid of this and he feels fine about it and all is going along well, to actually realize that back on the track the real reason is still resident. But if we didn't recognize that as auditors, we would not be honest with our own technology because we know that to be true. He's got stuff back on the track, don't you see?

Now you've got to put a case in shape so the case will sit there and run this high-powered stuff at Level IV, and Level IV is the Scientologist level. You can talk all you want to about how easy it is perhaps to run raw meat and all that sort of thing. It is – it is, too. But remember this at Levels I, II and III: It practically takes an educated pc and a very well educated auditor to run Level IV, and the pc wouldn't know what to do with it if he got there.

So you've got two different brands of action going on here, see. You've got three gradients of one brand – Scientology I, II and III – and you've got another brand of stuff. And that other brand of stuff depends utterly on skill at I, II and III. But Level IV is the Scientologist level.

I don't think after looking it over for a long, long time, is I frankly don't think in spite of this – I know this is quite a revolutionary statement but this is actually based merely on observation – is I don't think, it's my own opinion after all the evidence is in, that anybody will make OT except a trained auditor. Now, that's the only – the only person I know of. In the first place, his confront is up to this stuff. In the second place, he knows what to do. In the third place, you're dealing with things that a pc would have to be educated into the nomenclature of before he could even run the process.

How are you going to communicate to a pc "actual GPM." Well, you could say actual Goals Problem Mass. What's that going to communicate? These are totally unknown factors. These are – these are factors adrift in the whirl-wind, you see. Nobody's ever heard of these

things before. And as far as somebody being able to become conscious of and concerned without his confront as an auditor rising, without an understanding of the various put-togethers of these things – *plooy!* I just don't think it can happen, see. I think that's the basic barrier on the track. The basic barriers to development of mental science.

If you specialized 100 percent on a total effect and total result by reason of a mental science – see, total; that was your goal – and you were not going to make a fully trained pro out of everybody you were going to do it to, see. At the same time, if you had – if you had a body of professionals over here which were barring out everybody else from becoming professionals – the same *modus operandi* that the medicos use, that the psychiatrists try to use, other people try to use, you know. They say, "Us educated people," see. And "We hold the holy sepulcher," you know, and "Worship Saint Pavlov." This kind of stuff, do you see?

All right, they bar all these fellows out, and then these other fellows that are supposed to be the fellows who have the effect created on them, don't you see – they're the patients or they're the recipient of the technology – and then all of these birds who are the pros, you see, they have all the know-how. And these other fellows over here, why, they're the recipients of the know-how, but they don't get any of the know-how and so forth. And I think that's a very effective system from ever – for ever keeping anybody from getting anything, or getting anywhere.

So your Scientology Levels I, II and III – particularly Levels I and II – are very adaptable to handling far in excess any requirement that the public at large has for a psychotherapy. It's wildly in excess! You just learn a few of these things I'm trying to teach you, and you'll find it's just wildly in excess. Staff Auditor here is having a ball on this stuff. I mean, case – oh, poof! Nothing to that, see.

Got to remember, he's saying the raw meat case – there's nothing to what? Making the case feel better. Making the case feel happier. Curing the lumbosis. Getting the case over this. Getting the case over that. Yeah. Ah, but there's a different mission which mental science could fulfil. Entirely different mission, which is a total sweep-up of the total case. How tough and how educated and how understanding do you think a pc has to be in order to stand up to the number of randomities which can occur at Level IV, because, don't kid yourself, they can occur!

Well, let me tell you: In two or three instances now, people have been carefully audited in HGCs at this particular level, and in two or three of those cases, even though they had a GPM or two cleaned up, they got a couple of RIs out of place. A couple of RIs out of place – you ought to have ten goals out of place sometimes. Ten GPMs smeared around backwards – you'd know what a creak was, man! "Well, we had a couple of RIs out of place so we had an awful ARC break. And we want our money back from the organization." Oh, slap my wrist!

They're going to run into that continually, so why – why say it doesn't exist? We could be hopeful and say well, wouldn't it be nice if it didn't exist? But actually what you have for the first time is really a body of pros who, by the nature of the technology as far as I can survey the technology, have a level of technology applicable to them who were possessors of a

level of technology which is applicable to the general public in the fields of mental and physical healing!

Now, this is a riches that you probably hadn't really totally looked at. When you finally get through and get it all summed up – summed up, the characters that are going to make it are Scientologists, as other people aren't going to make it.

I know I've done the research vanguard on this as a pc, because it would have killed anybody else – but I personally can't see anybody going through one-tenth of what I've gone through in the last two weeks, see. What, on the general public level? Oh, no. I can see you characters going through it, see.

Seen doors go out of plumb and out of plane and walking down floors which are suddenly tipping like the deck of a rolling ship. Somebody skipped a GPM or two on you, you know. They – they went for some... Everybody got brilliant at this particular point, and you had a GPM called "to catch catfish," you see. And they did a goal oppose list for the next earlier GPM. And they got "to be a horse." And the pc said brightly, "Oh, that's the next goal. Yes. 'To catch catfish' opposes 'to be a horse.'"

And the auditor says, "Well, I don't know if quite true." See – reasonable. You know it's, "I don't know if it would be quite true. It's uh – I guess it would be all right. Well, we'll go ahead and find the items in it", you see.

And the next thing you know, why, corners of the room are going at forty-five degree angles to the pc and their chin is over here a foot and a half from the bottom of their face, you see. And if a doctor would examine them at that moment, they'd say, "An advanced case of coronary thrombosis, you see." The pc's heart is leaping, you see – air bubbles coming out of his bloodstream. Like these divers in fish tanks, you know. Grim.

Well, actually, that takes an awful level of understanding. That takes an awful level of determined push-ahead. It takes a terrific amount of education to know what's happening to you. You'd say, "Well, *huehhh!* there's something wrong in the bank. I didn't feel like this on Tuesday. Let's see, what in the name of common sense were we doing on Tuesday? *Phhooo!* Didn't feel like the – what did we do on Monday? *Phhooh.*"

And finally after a few sessions of wrestling around and it gets worse, and it gets horrible, and now you've got half the bank found in the wrong GPM, you see, why – auditor gets enough Suppress off, and the pc gets enough momentary itsa on the bank and between the two of them, why, they suddenly find out that "to be a horse" – "to be a horse" was an actual goal but not an actual GPM, and that "to catch catfish" goal oppose list is not complete, and that they haven't got a GPM that they've been running items out of. That, in addition to jumping a couple of goals, you see. They didn't jump a couple of goals – they just missed them all, see.

Then all of a sudden – snap, snap, pop, tick, bang! – and no coronary thrombosis and the room is all level, and you meet the guy that afternoon and he's saying, "*Yabbledee-yabbledee-yabble*. Everything's fine. Everything is fine," and so on. He hasn't even found the next goal yet. They just found out why, you see. He's fine. Everything's fine.

And you say, "Well, how about that..." You can just see now some medical attendant in some organization who wasn't in the know, you know. He'd be coming up there with a little

black bag, "Now, Mr. Smith, how is your coronary thrombosis this afternoon?" The pc says, "Coronary thrombosis. What coronary thrombosis? You mean 'actual goal-osis'?"

No. It takes – takes a level of nerve. That's another comment that we can make on this definition of the common people, see.¹⁰ We're talking about a Level I, yeah, common people. But you're talking about – you're talking about way upstairs stuff when you're talking about Level IV. Don't kid yourself, now – don't kid yourself.

All you've got to do is make a bum error on the present time GPM and start running one that ain't it, and your pc's had it and so have you. And because you won't have a snowball's chance of getting anyplace. The pc will go into the creaks. Half a dozen banks should be there.

Do you know how – how far the mistake can be? Do you know how wide the mistake can be for a present time GPM? How wide that mistake can be? You can get the fourteenth GPM from present time registering as the present time GPM. And then every day or so find a new GPM that's closer to the present time that is now incontrovertibly the present time GPM. No slightest argument about it. Every day, find another one.

And finally discover that when you found that first one that you were sure was it and that checked out on the meter – meter rocket read! "Present time GPM?" Rocket read, see – Why? Well, actually, you merely found the GPM in which the pc was most firmly stuck. So, of course, it looks like a present time GPM. That looks like present time to him – so of course it registers. Nothing to that. And in addition to that, GPMs are timeless by construction because of the RI balance. They float in time like goals, so of course these GPMs will register as any place. It takes a considerable trick to date one. And after I've dated a GPM, I always say "maybe."

You know, done a terrific job of dating with the greatest care in the world. Everything proved out perfectly that this GPM was at trillions one hundred to trillions ninety-one. Proved it conclusively! Well, I will learn out of that, that probably it is not the present time GPM – maybe. Because these things – these things, of course, are constructed to be instantaneous.

Go back to your early material on GPMs. They're instantaneous. They haven't got any time in them. So of course you can't date them worth a nickel, so of course you can make mistakes of this particular character.

Well, I know one case that has had a GPM that people have been trying – it's perfectly valid GPM – that people have been trying to run items out of now for a couple of years. Sounds like a long time, doesn't it? They haven't found any yet! I think they got the top opterm once. It's probably – it's probably fifteen, twenty GPMs from present time!

No, it isn't Suzie. I've got – I've got several pcs that don't really know they're on my critical list, you know. But I watch this – I watch this. And I watch people trying to list for something and find something there and so on. There, you can't run it. It's just this: You can't run a GPM that is not the present time GPM! There's only one way that GPMs can be safely

¹⁰ Editor's note: This refers to something LRH mentioned in the SHSBC Lecture of 15 Oct 63, "Essentials of Auditing", where he discusses the definition of Scientology as "the common people's science of life and livingness".

programed, and that's find the present time GPM without any doubt whatsoever, and then doubt it, and get its top terminal and oppose it, and run the – now I'm giving you a different type of programing here – and you run that all the way back to the beginning of track – finding RIs and GPMs in proper sequence – all the way to the beginning of track without skipping a single pair of RIs, without repairing anything and without missing a single goal as you go. Got it? And when you get it all the way back to the beginning of track, and you get the first postulate that the pc ever made – let me call that to your attention; that's prime postulate – when you run this out of the pc, don't be startled if you see the rafters kind of go *errrrrutah*.

When you got that, then you go back and repair it. Go back and run it all again and find out if there was anything missing. But listen – if you try to repair it before then, you won't make it. I've got the later data on this. You cannot repair a GPM on the run. You just find the RIs for the next GPM you should be in. It's too horrible for words. Or you pull RIs out of implants. Or you pull RIs from elsewhere. You can always repair and find new RIs for a GPM you just completed. So you don't run them from the top to the bottom and then go back to the top and repair them. Because you never go back to the top and repair them. The only thing that happens is you find RIs out of the next one, without the goal. See, it's in a horrible mess. So, of course, you can't take any chances with this thing.

The odd part of it is that if you do it right, it runs off like a well-oiled dream. It is the most invariable process anybody ever heard of! It is just like a Swiss watch. It just runs off perfectly – runs off just exactly according to R4M2. It's just perfect – I mean there's nothing to it! Like falling off a log!

But you make one mistake, and now you have five hundred thousand words required of written material to take care of the repair. You got it? I mean, to do the process itself is very, very easy. You make one mistake and you got complications. It's nothing, for instance, to throw away three sessions, just because you made a stupid boob in one. You just can't find out what's happening. It just, "Ooh, *bleah, whoo*, my God." And you'll find out it is some stupid boob error. And then you get errors and then you lose the error, you know – and then you find what the error was, but then you lose the error – and you find out that wasn't the error but something else was the error. You got the idea?

It can get horrible. But the repairs of it are quite feasible providing they're gone at sensibly. But there is a way to run them. There isn't much to running them. You can run them very rapidly. I find an RI every ten minutes of auditing, routinely – *racketa-packeta-packeta-packet*. Takes me about an hour and a half to find a goal on a pc. Next goal. There's nothing much to this but it's a precision line of auditing. And it is no line of auditing to be done by somebody who hasn't got a tremendous grip on auditing itself, and who is still trying to find out which is the tone arm – "Oh, that's the tone arm. No wonder I couldn't find the goals list on the pc. It's kept in the tone arm, isn't it? I've heard..." You know? You can't do auditing like that.

So you wind up, of course, with Scientology Levels I, II and III, which is your professional address to the situation. You wind up with Level IV. If you think you're going to go out and find goals on the general public, you might as well just forget it. You're not – that's all.

Oh, you can find some goals. You can find some implant goals. You could – you could mess around with this. They'd say, "What do you know? This is unbelievable," and so forth.

You might even do something, accidentally. You might even do something. But what you'll pay for it in terms of a pc you can't handle, in terms of a pc who will chicken out, in terms of a pc whose confront and education don't even vaguely compare with what he is doing – do not make it worthwhile. You have now terrific processes at Levels I, II and III, so you'd better learn all there is to know about itsa and what makes itsa and all this, and be able to just sit there cold – knowing nothing much about the pc, you should be able to sit there cold – plug in your E-Meter, give a pc the cans and turn on thirty-five divisions of tone arm in your first two and a half hours on any raw meat pc in any place. Now why can't you?

And it'll be lack of or noncomprehension of some of this data like the itsa maker line, see. What is this line? Well, now you get fouled up as to what this line is and you're not going to get TA divisions. You know what this line is, why, it's like a breeze.

Now, let's get back on that. I was just trying to get your frames of reference in with regard to where this technology fits. Naturally, this same itsa maker is what's banging in at the GPMs. It's the same thing you're controlling in Level IV. But all Level IV is done with formal auditing. You try to do this other type of auditing and you're going to lay an egg. You're going to let the pc itsa his own GPMs? What – how many telegraph poles do you want this pc to be wrapped around? Plenty!

But, if you are doing Level IV without a complete command of the pc's communication cycles and communication lines, you will also wrap him around a telegraph pole.

Now, let me show you some misways of handling this situation. One is just not understand what it is. And the other is have some wild preconceived idea or – even some Scientology datum magnified out of all proportion, magnified out of all proportion to its actual relationship, such as "pcs never answer the auditing command." So there of course, you can never trust this itsa maker line. See? You can never trust it. So therefore, you transpose the itsa maker line over to your meter. So you do nothing but ask the meter what is going on with the pc; never ask the pc. You have now effectively shut off the pc's itsa maker line from aud... from the pc as a thetan to his own bank – that line. That's the itsa maker line, see? And you've cut that line. By doing what? By trying to read it all out from underneath the pc.

Now, the meter actually can operate as a sort of thetan. You and the meter can be a sort of a substitute thetan. You realize that? You got a bank sitting across the table from you, and you by putting in whatsits can kick things that – in the bank that read that the pc isn't perceiving. Well, this is absolutely vital at IV, which is why I've spent some time talking about IV – because all of IV and GPMs are sub-itsa. The itsa maker line playing over the tops of these things sees a bunch of black Alps – but the meter and the auditor can undercut that bank, since they are not influenced by those direct and immediate bumps and the significances in them.

So they can undercut these things and find out what goal it is, because it rocket reads while the pc is still wondering what goal it is. Yes, but you can get too much of that kind of thing too, very, very easily. You can say, "Well, me and the meter know and the pc doesn't know. So therefore, there's no sense in paying any attention to the pc." So we cut his itsa

maker. And we find session by session his R-factor drops on his bank. We try to do it all very mechanically. We should do it mechanically, but we do it mechanically by cutting his line. Now, we'd have to have a wild idea of what this line is, in order to pull such goofs as this. We say to the pc, we say, "Well, give me – give me a goal now on this list."

And the pc gives you a goal on the list and so forth, and you're asking the pc, "Is it an actual GPM..." – you're asking via the meter, see – "Is it an actual GPM or is it an implant GPM or something?"

And the pc pipes up and he says, "You know, I think this is an implant GPM. I can see the Helatrobos Implant areas. Yeah, I think it's an implant GPM."

Now here's the way to cut the rug right out from underneath the pc, see, is say, "All right. Thank you. Thank you. Is it an actual GPM? Is it an imp..."

All right. Here's another way to cut the rug out from underneath the pc: "Oh, I think," he says – you're asking these questions off the meter and the pc answers them, see – and the pc says, "I think it's a – it's an actual – I think it's an implant GPM because I can see the Helatrobos Implant areas. I mean they're right here. I can see them." And the auditor says, "Oh, all right. Well, is it also an actual GPM?" And the pc says, "I – I don't think so. I really don't think it is." "All right. You mind if I check it on the meter?" "No, no. Go ahead."

"All right. Is it an implant GPM? Is it an actual GPM? I get a read here also it's an actual GPM. What do you think about that?"

"Well, it could be. Yeah, as a matter of fact, it probably is. Oh, that's what that damn big black mass is floating over there – that's it." You understand?

But we know of the existence of this itsa maker line, you see. We know of the existence of the line between thetan we're auditing and his bank. We know of the existence of that line.

Now watch the first one again. "Is it an actual GPM? Is it an implant GPM?"

Pc says, "You know, I think this is an implant GPM. I can see the Helatrobos Implant grounds here."

"Oh, yes. Well, thank you. Thank you. Is it an actual GPM? An implant GPM?"

Now what, in effect, have you done? What have you in effect done? You've cut the itsa communication line, you have not permitted an itsa to flow on it, you have invalidated the thing that he is looking at and you have cut his communication line to his own bank. Now, don't sit around afterwards and wonder why you have an ARC break. You know, that's how many lines are cut by this simple, stupid action.

And yet you say, "It's the most obvious action in the world." And you say, "Well, Level IV is a very mechanical process. And you should do it just bang-bang-bang!" See? And all right, you're doing it bang-bang-bang! What gets in your road? This itsa maker line from the pc to his own bank. That gets in your road terribly! And you've also heard that you mustn't let him wander around on the backtrack because he'll overstimulate himself and you won't get any tone arm action, see. So every time you find him looking at the backtrack, drop your E-Meter. See, get his attention – get his attention over on you! And you won't get any TA.

You'll just have ARC breaks galore, all the time! So just start inspecting the number of things you could do with a careless action of that particular character. You just refuted what he said, is what it looks like in the first place, but you'll be surprised the nuances that can exist with this sort of thing.

Now, it isn't for you simply to be careful, careful, careful from here on out not to commit these crimes. That is the wrong approach. You just know what it is and know how to handle it. Even a nitro-glycerine expert gets so he takes a pint of a – flask of the stuff and shoves it in his hip pocket and goes out for a ride on a rocky road in an old Ford. And he never gets blown up. It's always somebody who wanders in carefully and stumbles over the cork that somebody's left around, see. That's the person that gets blown up, see?

You just move yourself up into the category of the nitro-glycerine expert, that's all. You're handling very deadly stuff. All right – know what it is. Examine it. Get familiar with it. And you won't go on being careful all the time not to cut the pc's itsa line – you just won't. And on occasion you may find good reason to do so. You know what's going on.

Now, all sorts of things – things we used to call intuition, an intuitive sense – can suddenly be born in you just like that. You suddenly develop the facility of seeing that the pc is looking at something. You don't just neglect the whole existence of this itsa maker line. You just don't neglect the whole existence of the bank and just keep running it on the meter, running it on the meter, see. You glance up sideways with this walleyed look, one eye on the meter and the other on the pc, you see – with the reflection of the retina, this is done. And you notice – you notice that the pc is introverted. And you will know exactly what he's doing – he's looking at a piece of the bank. So you won't keep wondering if the pc has said everything he wanted to say about something. You'll have developed the facility of taking a look at the pc and see that he's looking at something and leave him alone until he's through looking at it.

And he'll be sitting there – and actually – actually, it's quite visible. The pc's sitting there and he's looking at you and he's rather foggy-eyed most of the time, let us say, since he's somewhat introverted. And you say, "All right, now. Is this your item?" Or "Is that the problem that you were worried about at that time?" Or whatever the hell it is you're asking him. It doesn't matter, see. And you're saying this to him, "Is that your item?" And the pc goes sort of, "Uh... yeah. Yeah. I think it is." See?

And you just get so you can tell. You hear me? You just get so you can tell when that inspection is taking place and not go, "*Yeaow-yeaow-yeaow! Bark-bark-bark! Eba-eba-eba! Yelp-yelp-yelp, yap-yap-yap-yap-yap-yap!*"

Why do I say that? Because some auditors remind me of terriers or something of the sort of thing. What do they do? It's actually just like – if you visualized a piece of string over here from a thetan to his bank – it almost seems to the pc as though the second he starts to put this piece of string down to his bank, the auditor reaches over, grabs the end of it very hastily and puts it out here on the auditor. "This is where it ought to be. Now, what did you think about that? Where's the – why – why aren't you itsaing anything?" Got a hold of the piece of string, see? "Why aren't you itsaing anything? Now, I'll put – put your – put this piece of string down on some part of your bank and tell me something about it. No, I'm not going to let it go. You just put it..."

The pc goes, "Oh, my God – what's happening to me?" you see. "What's happening?" Well, what's happening to him is, is the itsa maker line is being carefully held out – carefully pulled out from any possibility of bank inspection – and the pc is being given whatsits. That's the actual situation. It isn't that the pc – it looks to the pc, and he will say, that the auditor is asking whatsits and he's not being permitted to answer. That's what he usually feels is happening and that actually is usually not what is happening. The auditor is perfectly willing to have him answer. But the auditor's putting in whatsits while not permitting the pc to look for the answer in the bank. The auditor's carefully keeping this string from thetan to bank pulled out so that the bank end of the string is over here on top of the E-Meter, or into the session. And of course, your pc's out of session all the time, all the time, all the time. What's the definition of session, see? It's only willing to talk to the auditor. Just willing, you know. Not talking to the auditor. Just willing. And it's really not – and that definition could be revised and made better – it's not just "interested in own case," but "passing this inspection line over his own case" – not passing it over the auditor of the session.

Now, one of the things that you get as an auditor is when you've grabbed this line inadvertently – and oh, count on the fact that you're going to make two or three blunders with this per session when you are a complete expert, see. Actually profess... perfection on this is unobtainable because you're going along at a mad rate and you're trying to push along through and get a goals list finished by the end of the session or you're trying to sort out a service facsimile, little list that you have in front of you, don't you see?

And actually in Level IV – Level IV particularly – your nulling is done "Bark, bark, bark, bark, bark, bark, bark, bark." There are very few auditors can talk as fast as the meter can respond on nulling. You just get it out of your mouth and you're reading the next one, see. There's that tenth-of-a-second pause to let the meter read. Didn't read – that tenth-of-a-second told you so, you've said it very fast and very rapid. Man, I tell you, a good auditor – a good auditor can take a cracking awful big list and just mow it down, man.

And you're going down this list – and all of a sudden, why, the pc says, "Hey! I – I thought of another – I thought of another – I thought of another item. It's 'a cat whisker.'" See? Something like this.

And you're intent on going down the list. And the pc – you don't – you don't really get the pc's lift of his head, you see, and his "going to tell you," see. And if you just missed it entirely, you'd get a hell of an ARC break – but you pick it up just a little bit late, you see. It's just a little bit crude and crummy and you realize you've slid over the last ten nulling items without the pc's attention on the list or something wild – it's usually the last two or three, don't you see. You've goofed it up one way or the other.

Well, no matter how perfect you are, you're going to goof it up sometimes or another. Pc's going to be sitting there and you'd swear he was bright, bushy-tailed, right up in PT, answering the end of session, and then my God! He was examining – he was examining his session goals and you were trying to ask him about his gains. You've overridden the pc's comm line. It's how adroitly you can wiggle out of what you get into, that is the mark of the expert. It's not staying out of everything.

Most of my auditing is highly swift and effective simply because it is very brassy. I know I can get a pc out of anything I get the pc into. And I know I'm not going to get the pc into any more than I can possibly help. So therefore, it just adds up to a "to hell with it." And I just know the factors I am dealing with and I shift those things round in a session – click, click, click, bing, bang. So this particular pair didn't quite mesh over here in the corner and the pc said, "Rrrrrr." And I'll trace it back to some auditing error I just made two seconds ago and so forth, patch the thing up in a hurry and I'm off and away, see.

One thing I do that I hope you will be able to acquire someday is spot the birth of an ARC break upwards to an hour and a half before it happens. Please develop that facility. Know – don't be so reasonable!

The pc is sort of saying, "Well, I don't know... Well, you kept looking at the meter. And so on and so on. I don't really know whether this item was less *yeaow-nya-wha-wha-wha-whaf...*" And you start to see some of this kind of stuff and you all of a sudden – not be unnecessarily cautious – but you suddenly recognize it for what it is. You've chopped up this auditing comm cycle somehow or another. Somewhere it is missing. Somewhere something has gone wrong. Something has goofed somewhere, and right then – spot it and pick it up right now, without nulling fifteen more new additional lists, you see, and holding up the pc for the next five sessions, you know. Get that quick. Recognize an ARC broken pc. And recognize how slightly an ARC break registers when it is actually beginning to form and pick it up then – don't ARC break the pc in order to find out.

Well, there are several ways to do that. One of them is not ARC break pcs. As I've just told you, that is next to impossible. Your own auditing enthusiasms will cause you to ARC break pcs. My God! I pulled one the other day you would have gotten an infraction sheet for and so on. I saw very clearly that on a list an item had rocket read and blown down which was not the right item. It was the very exact item which the pc was madly listing for, and the pc was actually tending to go into a strain on an overlist of trying to get this item on the list – and I said, "You just put this item down on the list just before this. Could it be it?"

And the pc said, "Why yes, I guess so. Put it on the list," and immediately was a little bit natterly about the pen scratching. And I took the item right back off the list and put it back on the other list and continued the pc and we got another one – and the item that was on that list, if accepted, would have missed two RIs. It came up two lists later as the right item. And the one which was the right item was very resistant. It was one of these – well, I'll say – tell you what the item was – torture. Very resistant item. You'd call the thing and it wouldn't – wouldn't fire. It'd start to fire. It – every once in a while you find some kind of a goofball situation like this. And you call it and it – *blhblhblh* – it doesn't quite fire. And it won't let go. And it goes, *ssshhh-kk!* It looks like it's up against springs. And ordinarily you say that's – that's not the right item – it's slightly misworded or something. In this particular case, after we'd listed enough charge off, the pc continued to assert that was the item and suddenly I called it, and it fired like mad and blew down. In other words, it had to be unburdened a bit by listing before the thing fired.

This is a very peculiar thing. Happens – the tops of GPMs are very hard to run. They don't fire well and so on – the tone arm tends to stay high. You get four pairs deep into a

GPM and it's running just like a river of hot butter, see – there's nothing to it. Those first few sometimes are quite resistant. So, what's the auditor trying to do? The auditor's trying to be too confounded helpful, and it was helpful to a point of actually evaluating and putting an item on the pc's list for him. Well, that's absolutely forbidden, see – absolutely forbidden. And yet there I sat with my big, blue eyes wide open and wanted to help the pc so bad that I just called attention to the fact that we'd had a firing, blowing down item on the previous list – *k-k-k-k-k*.

Now, that ARC break could have gone into considerable proportions. But recognizing that the ARC break had succeeded after an auditing action, see, immediately after the auditing action – picked the item up and put it right back where it came from. The ARC break went *phreeeu*, – that was that. It didn't even get a chance to form, see. See, there was just that beginning of the critical cycle, beginning of attention on the auditor. Now, this is not important, and I'm not talking to you about ARC breaks or beefs. I'm allowed a good, big, juicy mistake every thousand hours of auditing. That's – I insist on being allowed that. But the point I'm making is here – is apparently it was a wrong item that was causing the ARC break. Actually, that really wasn't the beginning of the ARC break. That pc was very introverted inspecting the bank.

Now, let's look at this inspection line. Exactly what happened to the pc's line from pc to bank, see? Just look at that line. Let's see how mucked up things got from the standpoint of that line. This line being invisible to the auditor, don't you see, you've got to synthesize what's going on and you'll rapidly learn how to do that if you realize that it's simply a line scanning over things in the bank. It isn't just a unit area, by the way – think, think, thinking. You know that. It's an actual line. It's between this bright spot called a thetan, the real beingness of the being – whether its parked in his head or he's extravagantly detached on a reverse flow exteriorization – we don't care where he is. He is looking from that bright spot. He is that bright spot – and he is looking at a thing! He is looking at a thing! It's as – it's as real as a pencil, don't you see.

And the bank is all laid out geographically, and it has numbers – a finite number of things in it as far as types of things in it – a finite number. And that line is stretched from where he is to one of those things. Well, what happened when I said, "This item appeared on two lists back"? What happened to the itsa maker line? The line from the pc to his own bank. What did I do with that line? Apparently, I picked up the line and put it on the auditor – took it off the bank suddenly and put it on the auditor. Now that was a sudden change or shift of attention, wasn't it? Well, we call it a shift of attention – actually, it was a sudden shift of the target of this line. Here's the line deeply engrossed in inspecting the bank, see. All of a sudden, auditor picks that line up and puts it over on the auditor and then moves it back two lists ago in the GPM just done two lists ago. Here's two shifts of attention – sudden shifts of attention – and then puts it over here someplace to recognize that an item has been missed because, of course, this other item was being suggested as a substitute for the right item. So there must have been a realization of that – but by this time the pc must have been pretty confused. So the pc, then, in defense of this confusion, picks up the inspection line – puts it on the auditor and says, "Your pen is making too much noise." See that?

What can be itsaed around here with certainty? Something about the auditor can be itsaed with certainty because the auditor has inhibited anything that should have been itsaed, being itsaed. You got it?

Now, there's probably a dozen different ways that an auditor can accomplish these things. There are probably thousands of different ways – we probably haven't dreamed them all up. If you don't learn this well, we give you the assignment of finding out how many ways each one of the communication auditing cycle lines can be cut by a new Academy student. I think you will find out they run probably thousands per line – they're probably fantastic numbers. It's easy to find out how to handle them right. That's the easier part of it. How many ways can they be cut? Enormous numbers.

You can refute, you can invalidate the itsa – the thing being itsaed – you can refute the communication line on which it is travelling. Like, "Don't talk to me now because I am busy writing your auditor's report." This is done in various ways. "Don't talk to me now because I'm busy trying to keep track of the auditor's reports." It's a – it can come about as a very studious action: a sort of a little tiny frown at the pc and then an enormously industrious writing, you see, of one character or another and reading over the meter and the pc's going on talking. Don't look at the pc and keep on doing this and so forth. Eventually, the pc begins to realize that you're not really writing anything that has anything to do with him and accommodatingly follows the auditor's order.

And the pc nearly always follows the auditor's orders one way or the other. You would be surprised how obedient pcs are. The bank is 100 percent under the control of any auditor at any time. And the pc – the greatest percentage of the time – is doing exactly what the auditor apparently wants. But get that "apparently." Now the auditor can say "Put your attention on the ceiling" and point to the floor. Now, the pc will do what the au – what he thinks the auditor apparently wants. Now, if the gesture is more forceful than the voice, the pc will look at the floor. You say, "Look at the ceiling." And the pc – the A greater than B, B greater than A, don't you see – will have a tendency to, "Well, he's saying look at the ceiling but he wants me to look at the floor," see. He gets confused doing this, but he obeys – he obeys, you might say, the most forceful apparent order.

Auditor's main goofs are made up in giving apparent orders that he doesn't intend to give. He doesn't intend to give these orders at all. For instance, you would never tell a pc, "Now stop inspecting your bank and put it on the E-Meter." That would be idiotic because there'd be no itsa and there'd be no TA if you asked this thing. And yet what is this apparent order? [fiddles around with an E-Meter, noises can be heard.] What's the apparent order there? "Take your attention off your bank and put it on the E-Meter," see – that's the apparent order. The pc will nearly always follow an apparent order.

Now, the bank is very idiotic and is always under the auditor's orders and will do what the auditor says. Therefore it takes the auditor's whasit and guidance of the pc's inspection line of the bank, you see – the itsa maker line – it takes both of those activities in order to get a bank inspected, see. So the auditor and the pc have got to be working very close together, and if the auditor cuts this line – this is going back to The Original Thesis, explaining some of the things in there, see – now, if the auditor cuts this line from the pc to his bank, of course,

he's now apparently brought the bank in on top of the pc and done other things which are undesirable. But he usually is giving orders he doesn't intend to give. Nobody is going to argue with the goodwill or the good heart of an auditor. The only thing I ever find any fault with is occasional knuckleheadedness. That knuckleheadedness can be pretty gorgeous. I just gave you an example of it. And yet any auditor is suddenly liable to this sort of thing.

Well, I'll give you another example. I'll have to run out all of this invalidation of my auditing after this lecture. But I did this inadvertently the other day in a session – don't think you won't. This wouldn't happen to you once in a blue, blue, blue moon that the pc can hear the pencil squeaking. That's why you use a special type of pencil that doesn't squeak.

So I'm busy writing the list, and the ballpoint ran out of ink. This wouldn't happen to you again in a long time, see. Ballpoints do run out of ink, and you always have a spare ballpoint around, don't you? So I hastily reached over to where the other ballpoint was handy and picked it up, and at this moment there wouldn't have been any slightest squawk, you see, there wasn't a tremble in the session, see. And I picked up the other ballpoint, brought it over here, and it had just enough ink in it to write one more item. [laughter] We still didn't have too much randomness going in the session, you see. Auditor beginning to sweat just a little bit about this time. I laid aside this ballpoint, but the other ballpoint was over on another table barely within the auditor's reach – a different color ballpoint, see. Barely within – but there was a ballpoint over there – over the top of a pile of paper. So as not to disturb the pc's attention, very carefully reached over to pick up this ballpoint and I said, "Well, I'm going to win after all on this," you see. And had to stretch just a little bit out of the auditing chair, and went out of the auditing chair. [laughs, laughter] Happen to you once in a blue moon. I don't think I've done a goof like that for ages and ages. Concatenation of silly circumstances, one on top of the other.

And what do you think happened to the pc's itsa line? Well, the pc's whole motion was not to ARC break, but to keep the auditor from falling out of the chair. [laughter] And got a motion and locked up a bunch of effort in the middle of the session, you know, of trying to pick the auditor up when the auditor went down. It took a couple of minutes to undo all this and we went on going at a – at a rate because I recognized that something had happened there that had to be undone.

All right. That's a very unsmooth but unlooked-for happenstance. Well, if I can do them, man, so can you. So the thing to know how to do is pick it up at once, straighten it out at once, and get the show on the road again without any more nonsense. Because, frankly, anything is liable to happen to you in an auditing session.

An auditor who feels absolutely serene and secure that all is going to go well from here on out – or if an auditor has allergies to anxieties or unpredictable circumstances occurring in a session – he ought to go to an old ladies' home or something and retire, because it's going to happen. The things that have happened to auditors – some guy's halfway through a screaming grief charge of one kind or another and somebody hears him down the block and the relatives come up screaming up to the door, pounding on the door, trying to get in to find out how Bill is being murdered or Joe is being shot or something, see. This has happened, happened, happened.

Now, how does an auditor keep his aplomb, handle the situation, repair the shift of attention of the pc – what does he do? How many things can he do to straighten it out? Well, actually, there's a lot of things he can do to straighten it out. In the first place, he audits smoothly so that when he does audit, he gets lots of TA. Got that? That's a marvellous cushion on which to operate, see. When something does happen – when it bothers the pc, but not otherwise – you know, occasionally a water tank can fall off the roof and come right down through the shingles, and the pc says, "Oh," and goes on and saying, "and then I – then I – then I said to Agnes..." See? You'll learn this – this goes all the way up to Level IV. Don't you ever fool with a case that is running nicely, see. Case is running like a well-oiled dream, you've got the PT going – you're going down the line. The only trouble that's going to occur from there on is actually goofs you make. Case is running fine – don't patch up a case. Don't patch up a case that's running well.

Case you want to patch up is a case that isn't running well, and you only patch it up when it isn't running well. So if the roof has fallen in or the auditor has reached out of his chair for a pencil that was out of reach and fallen on the floor, the first thing you must learn to observe is: Did it move the itsa maker line all that much? Did it affect or influence the pc? That's the first thing you learn, because if it didn't you're not going to repair it. Because, look, your effort to repair something that did not upset the pc can itself disturb the itsa maker line and all other communication lines to such a degree that you can cause an ARC break. Because what are you doing? You're cleaning a clean. You're handling an ARC break that didn't occur. "How did you feel about the water tank falling off of the roof and coming down through the shingles and so forth?" "Oh, did it?"

Do you realize it might be a considerable mistake to ask the pc how he felt about the water tank falling through the roof?

Many auditors are so conscience-stricken – there is nothing like having no conscience to be an auditor, see. Because an auditor gets so conscience-stricken sometimes, he gets so worried – well, I've gotten worried, you've gotten worried about cases you were running – but gets so worried, it causes the pc in – to go into just a spin of worry. Gets so worried about the case that he's putting in a whatsit – a whatsit all the time on the pc. He's ask – the pc's saying, "Well, what's wrong? What's wrong? What's wrong? What's wrong? What's wrong? What's wrong?" The pc isn't doing an itsa. The pc doesn't have his communication line into his own bank, everything. He's got a communication line from where he is to where the auditor is, wondering, "What does the auditor think is wrong? What does the auditor think is wrong?" He's trying to itsa the auditor's confusions or banks. Well, that isn't what the pc's for. That isn't what the pc's supposed be doing, don't you see? So it goes this nonsensically. If the pc's itsa maker line from the thetan to the bank is there and is functioning and your TA is moving, if a fire engine comes through the front window and it didn't seem to interrupt the session as far as you could tell – not by asking the pc but just by casual observation – you simply ask the next auditing question, because case repair also interrupts various sections and portions of the auditing cycle.

In other words, there's no substitute for auditing but auditing. And you only repair auditing when it isn't occurring. If you haven't got any auditing occurring, you better find out how you're going to get some auditing occurring. You can't get any auditing occurring, well,

repair the case and get some auditing occurring. But it's in more or less that order, not the order of "there sits a case, let's repair it."

"Now let's see. I know this case – this case had Georgie Burns for, you see, an auditor in 1958, and I've been audited by Georgie, and *uh-huh-huh-huh-huh*. And Georgie has this horrible habit of saying, 'Yip' all the time in the session. Every time she acknowledges she also says, 'Yip.' And I know that was very annoying to my pc, so the first thing to do is to repair Georgie Burns's auditing in 1958." All this without any investigation of the case at all. Well, that's repairing the case before you've got – before you find anything is wrong with the case, you see.

And you only repair cases when something's wrong with them. The case is running well with good TA, why move the case around? That's the way to stop TA. Why? Because you pick up this itsa maker line, move it out of the area it's in and move it into some other area, and you suddenly bog the pc down. You get him into areas he can't itsa or he isn't able to itsa or there's nothing there to itsa or they're all cleaned up or – you get the idea?

So this pc's sitting there – I can see it now, you see – the pc's sitting there happily inspecting his bank and he's running a service facsimile. You're getting about forty, fifty TA divisions per two and a half hours of session, TA flying beautifully. This explains the pc's fantastic penchant for burning dinners, see. And it's got – it's all going along fine, and all of a sudden, why, some auditing supervisor says – in the HGC or something, says, "Oh, have you taken care of that pc's lumbosis? Well, you know, she came in here originally to get her lumbosis fixed up." And the auditor, being very nice and sweet and obedient about the whole thing, turns around and starts working on the lumbosis at eight TA divisions per session. Lumbosis isn't going to resolve. That's a shift of the whole program of the case. Well, get that as a broad shift – it would be tremendous error, wouldn't it? Now let's move it down to a very short error. Auditor is sitting there, the pc is looking in an introverted fashion at a field of cows, you know. And he says, "Cows. I've seen a cow in this lifetime – cows, cows, yes, cows and so forth and cows and so on. Cows. I wonder what this countryside is like here. Cows – cows..." TA moving, TA starting to move.

The last whasit the auditor got in on the case, you see – the last whasit the auditor got on the case was "How would baking bread make others wrong?" And finds out that the pc is inspecting all these cows. He says, "Now, let's get back to what we were talking about there." Getting TA action, see, inspecting cows. "Let's get it back to what we were talking about there, and we were talking about baking bread making others wrong. Baking bread making others wrong. You've got the auditing question now." TA – clank! Dead still. What happened? Well, actually, the auditor thought the pc was probably being non sequitur. Trying to push the pc's attention, see – this line, this itsa maker line – over to baking bread. But he's got TA action, and it was just around the corner that the pc was going to cognite that bread and milk, you see, go hand in glove together. Big cognitions about to occur, and he'd been a ranch cook, see. He'd been a ranch cook but never, never, never had they ever had any milk to make bread with! This is right around the corner. If that attention line is just let go, just that – TA moving, everything's fine. The auditor all of a sudden – one way or the other, by a thousand different mechanisms – suddenly picks up that attention line, puts it on something else, you see? TA – no motion. Why? There's nothing there to make any motion, you see.

This is something like a guy's sweeping a street, see. And you walk up to him and you say, "Give me that broom. All right. Sweep the street." "Well, you got my broom. You got my broom."

"Well, you don't want that broom down on the pavement. Just – broom's suppose to be over here – be over here on the curb. Now, all right, we've got it here on the curb. Now sweep the street."

"Yeah, but – I got to have my broom. I mean, you know, how can I give you any – *huh-huh-huh*. How can I sweep the street with you – with the broom...?" so forth.

"Now, look. Now, look. I know what's best with this broom. I know what's best with this broom. After all, this is street cleaning department property and it must be preserved, and we're supposed to keep it over here on the curb and so forth. Now, sweep the street!"

You can see the nervous wreck that becomes the street cleaner. That's what you're actually doing to a pc. Pick up the pc's attention line one way or the other – grab it, hold on to it and then tell him, "Look at the bank now. Yeah, here, give me that line. Yeah, yeah – let's – let's – let's give me some itsa. Where's your itsa now?"

"Well, I uh – I, uh – so forth, and I think it has something to do with this facsimile..."

"Oh, oh, *bbbzzz* – the facsimile – oh ho-ho-ho-ho-no, no, no, we got to look at something else. Now, give me some itsa. Whatsit? Whatsit? Whatsit? Uh – uh – give – give me that line. Give me that – give me that communication line. Now, but don't-don't-don't-don't start moving any attention lines inside your bank now. And give me some itsa, see. Whatsit? Whatsit? Whatsit? Don't look. Whatsit?"

Well, you can figure many ridiculous examples on how an auditor can do this. As soon as you get these things taped, all of a sudden auditing just is – just – it's just very relaxing. And on Level IV, it is very, very industrious, but you're doing an excellent job the whole way of directing the pc's attention. You're getting that line directed because the materials of IV permit that direction. It's a very precise direction. If it's not precisely directed, God help you. It's something like shooting sixteen-inch guns, you see, without any pointers. Everything gets blown up if you don't point them in the right direction.

But this is the essence of the auditing you were doing, and any real trouble you're having with auditing, there's some misconception of these various communication lines or what you're doing with the pc's itsa maker line or something like this. Tell the guy to itsa something, then not let him look at anything to itsa, he'd go berserk. He itsas something – don't accept it. Say it must be something else. Something like this. Keep this rattledy-bang going up somehow or another – you get no TA and you get no auditing done and everybody goes around the bend.

All right. But I know you're not doing any of the things which I have been remarking. I know we're all agreed that I'm the only one that's making any auditing mistakes lately. So you go ahead and do a good job, huh?

All right. Thank you very much.

LEVEL IV AUDITING

A lecture given on 17 October 1963

All right, what's the date?

Audience: 17 October.

Seventeenth of October. Saint Hill Special Briefing Course. Going to give you a lecture today on IV. You've heard me stressing Level IV a little bit. Actually the lectures I have been making are not particularly usable in Academies and that sort of thing, because we keep talking about Level IV and interjecting it and that sort of thing.

And what – those of you in the lower units – what you're terribly interested in, of course, is how to get TA motion and so on. And so I'll salt this Level IV down with Levels I, II and III, you see? And reverse the procedure today. So you can still hear it and...

Now, getting – getting TA motion is a common denominator of all Scientology activities. And you will be happy to know that on the staff co-audit – feel a little self-conscious, just been watching that film we just made, you know. And good heavens! It's a good film. It's a good film. They'll like it very much at the congress.

But on the staff co-audit and so on, they at first didn't believe, of course, (and still some of them don't really quite believe) that you can simply sit there and let the TA move around at a mad rate, see. And they're – they're learning, gradually, however. And the learning rate is very interesting.

Really, they're not running anything different than they were running, you know. But they went into a terrible slump. They went into a terrible slump. For a while they were getting fair TA, you see. They were getting around fourteen, fifteen, eighteen, sixteen – that sort of thing – divisions per two-and-a-half-hour session, see. And this was it. And then I started leaning on them to increase it, and it went down to an average of about eight TA divisions per session, you see. [laughter] They just went all to pieces, you see. Got so self-conscious about all this, you know, that it was horrible. Now they've come out of that slump. And it's interesting that they're moving up a few more TA divisions per session.

Now, you say, well obviously the pc is loosening up and things are getting along better. No, that has nothing to do with it at all. The state of the case of the pc has practically nothing to do with TA motion. The sooner you get that out of your heads that the pc has something to do with TA motion, the more TA motion you're going to get. What you do is simply sit there and get TA motion, and I don't know why you're doing anything else. See, I don't know why you're doing anything else than just sitting there getting TA motion.

It's too easy. And it's something like looking for an elephant in an empty room, you know – and there's nothing else in the room but the elephant. And one day you say to yourself, "Let's see now, if I don't yank the pc's attention off his case, and if I give him anything at all to itsa, and then if I don't stop him from doing what I ask him to do, I get TA motion." And you'll finally come to that conclusion as a horrible recognition and wonder what the devil you were doing before! And so on.

Well, I wouldn't begin to be – tell you what you were doing before. Because they are too numerous. The variabilities are too great. One of the ways of reducing TA motion is to vary your Model Session. Every session run a different Model Session on the pc. The motto of no TA motion is: Be unpredictable as an auditor. When the pc expects you to put in the R-factor, get the can squeeze. Put in the R-factor after you've started the session. That's good. That surprises him. But next session, correct it and put it in before you start the session.

And then he says, well, his attention goes onto his case, you see, before you've started the session, and he has to suppress his case for that. Well all right, so next session just omit the R-factor. You get the idea. This makes life very, very, very unpredictable. See what I'm talking about? Pc doesn't know what's coming next.

Well, this is a method of getting the pc to whatsit the auditor. What is the auditor going to do next? The pc doesn't know what the auditor is going to do next, so the pc now whatsits the auditor. And the more the pc whatsits the auditor – does this auditor know his business, what is this auditor worried about, what is this auditor going to do next – why, the less TA motion you get. Because you've got the pc running a whatsit.

And the auditor can then, of course, run an itsa. You've got the auditor then itsaing and the pc whatsitting, and that is the reverse to getting TA action, and then you can carry on from there on out and get no TA action. You could settle down very comfortably into these particular errors, and sooner or later you suddenly get a breakthrough and a win, and then you're startled to find out that something must have been happening, and you'll suddenly say, "Well, this session – there must be something wrong with this session because it was too easy." See, this was too easy.

Now, one of them on the staff co-audit – to be congratulated on it and so forth, just rolling along the line – got thirty-six TA. Thirty-six down divisions of TA, see. Moving it up from about eight, and not running anything very remarkable. But I'm sure the auditor in that particular case thinks that what she ran had something to do with it. Yes, something – had something to do with it, but there must be a relaxation setting into this sessioning. Get the idea? So TA motion isn't being prevented.

Now, the auditor is in control of the bank. That's something else that you may or may not ever believe. You are in absolute, positive control of the bank. Just complete! The bank obeys you, and doesn't obey the pc. The pc nearly always tries to look at what you want him to look at. The bank always does what you tell it to do. It's this sort of thing: You remind me of somebody sometimes, when you get confused about this, who is rolling a marble along the walk, you see, something like that, and arguing – arguing like mad about the marble won't do what you are making it do, you see. And you kick the marble and it rolls along very nicely in

the straight line – the exact straight line that you kicked it, see. And then if you kick it with a little slice or a curve or something like that, it goes over into the verge of the walk, you see.

Well, there are people around who say, "Look at what this marble is doing to me." And these people take up golf. It enters into the whole nomenclature of golf, you see – you hear them talking all the time, you see. "The clubs are doing it," and "My drive has a slice," see. "My brassie gives a hook." Now, if you want to really fix a golfer but good – he's dubbing along one way or the other, he's getting... you know, he's fair. Got a handicap of two or three hundred. You know, just a golfer. And he – he's doing all right, see. And he can step up on the tee and there's the ball and he hauls off and swoosh, down comes the driver, you see, and wham, *zzzzt!* out onto the fairway goes the golf ball and so forth, and he's getting along all right, see. Occasionally things happen, like he tops it, you see, or undercuts it or something, but usually something happens. Now walk up to him and say, "If you just interlock your hands, you see, in the Snead grip or something, you see, and then if you'll flex your elbows just before you do this, and then don't take your eye off the ball and so on, your drives will be much better."

Now he's in trouble. Now he's in real trouble. Now he is facing up to the fact, he's not driving now a golf ball. He is interlocking his hands on the handle, he is keeping his eye on the top of the golf ball, he is doing this and he is doing that, and he's doing all these other things. But he is not driving a golf ball, and the answer is, of course, he doesn't. One professional lesson can put fifteen or twenty strokes on almost any dubber's score. Just one pro lesson, and he's had it. Now let's take some twelve-year-old kid, and we take him outside, and we hand him – we hand him a set of golf clubs, and we say, "All right, now there's the ball, and you put up on the tee and drive it down the fairway," and so forth. Funny part of it is, he's actually liable to connect. He's liable to connect, and he goes on and he fools around and he plays golf and so forth. Now we want to do him a big favor. He's going around in about a hundred and ten, you see, or something like that. Let's do him a big favor. Let's get him some professional lessons.

Well, for a long time his score will just increase, increase, increase, increase, increase, see. And he'll go into absolute despair, finally, on the thing. But somewhere along the line he starts to coordinate again and select out what's essential and so forth, and it comes back and he drifts back to a point where he is actually driving the golf ball again, and he starts making remarkable strides. Now, unfortunately, it is necessary for somebody to go over this period. Necessary, in order to play golf. Or to audit.

Now, Reg, on Sunday here, with the people he has here – he's got them chattering nicely to each other, you know, they're putting in the itsa line, they're auditing each other at home. They don't know what to do wrong, you see. And they very, very happily get along and they listen to each other and their fundamentals are this and that and they're all in and so on, and their TA motion's probably fair. And all seems to be going along very well.

Well, you look at this as an auditor, and you say those guys must be naturals. No, those guys are auditing unconsciously. They're ignorant. And ignorance is bliss in that particular case. And here's the test: The second there's just a little more sand in the trap, the second that there's just a slightly greater dogleg on that particular hole, they've had it. They're

through. The second that the pc says to them, "Well, I don't know, the pain's moved up to the top of my head now," they go, "*Huhhh! Huhhh!*"

They end the session instantly, and come back and ask Sunday what they should have done. And one fellow did that and he said this very excitedly about this, and all of a sudden he got a sort of a filmy look in his eye, and he said, "You know, I should have kept the session going, shouldn't I?" See, his own cognition. He found out something about it.

Those guys would be dead ducks if they ran into a ripple on the sea, if they ran into a pebble on the green, if anything happened, if the wind was a little bit higher that day, see. They're dead. Now, what makes a pro is actually being able to go over this hump and go all the way through it and get something at the other side.

Now, he becomes almost unshakable when he can do this. He'll carry on. He'll do the right thing. And when you introduce a new style of auditing such as Listen-style Auditing, why, the auditing of a lot of auditors shatters promptly. And one of the errors they make is to make formal auditing adapt itself to Listen-style Auditing, see. It's like teaching somebody to dance: You teach him a polka – as it says in the bulletin, something like that – and you teach him a waltz. Well, he doesn't differentiate between the fact that a polka is quite different than a waltz, and right in the middle of the waltz he starts polkaing, and right in the middle of the polka he starts to waltz.

Well, that's because he doesn't realize the tremendous difference – the tremendous difference between the two dances. And yet, a good dancer would be able to polka or waltz at will, knowingly, without going all over the place.

Now, I won't minimize the fact that formal auditing has been altered – has been altered to some degree, in that you should let the pc itsa the item or itsa the goal, and you shouldn't stop the pc from itsaing what the pc is supposed to be itsaing. That's for sure. But that is the only lesson in formal auditing that is learned from Listen-style Auditing. That's all. You sit in formal style auditing letting somebody itsa his bank or itsa his items or itsa his GPMs, and you're going to have a mighty sick pc on your hands.

"All right, what do you think your first goal is?" Now, sit back, inviting communication – Listen-style Auditing. That's it. Let the pc talk for two hours and a half. You're going to get yourself some tone arm action, that's for sure. Next session, "Now, what do you suppose your first goal is? That was the auditing question you were working on." Sit back and don't do anything. Sit back and invite communication, and you're going to get a little less TA. Next session, "What do you suppose your first goal is?" Sit back, invite communication, and you're going to get a lot less TA. Next session, "What do you suppose your first goal is?" TA stuck, 5 ½. Thud! Unmoving, frozen in concrete.

Why? Because the factor of overstimulation gets in your road. Very important factor. Don't let somebody wander amongst the GPMs and RIs endlessly if you want TA action. Why? Well, because they can't do it, that's why. Well, why can't they do it? Well, the reason they can't do it is contained in the RIs and GPMs. So you've got a circular activity going on here. You are locating the things that prevent them from itsaing. And therefore, if they restimulate the things that prevent them from itsaing, they won't be able to itsa. You see, this is the snake eating his tail.

You're dealing with very high-powered stuff. This is the backbone of aberration in the case. There is no greater aberration in the case than is contained in the goals – GPMs and RIs of the pc's actual goals as they roll on back.

Now, if you ever want any facts about this, if you ever want to see this in actual operation or action, and you want to practically smash up the pc to find out about it and establish the matter, all you'd have to do is, is: "You had a lot of goals given you back around forty-three trillion years ago in an area called Helatrobis Implant area. Now let's move you back there. Now, all right, now you just tell me all about the goals in that area that you were given." I know anybody that's been over this stuff would just shudder with horror. It's like – something like asking somebody to go up to the top of the Empire State Building and be a bird.

He's going to be hit left, right and center by charge. Everything is going to go black on him. The more he looks at things the blacker it gets. The more he tries to move, the more he'll become fixed on the track. The more goals he picks up, the more jammed he's going to get, the more mass he's going to pick up, and he won't recognize the mass properly anyhow, so he'll get all wrong masses, all wrong names for the items. He hasn't got the patterns, you're not giving him any assistance of any kind whatsoever. Now, just – just take that as an example. And if you doubt me, why – and don't have nerve enough to actually go the whole hog with somebody – just throw somebody into Helatrobis Implant area and watch the behavior of the tone arm. And then somehow, if you can, run the session out.

No, there's stuff on the backtrack that bites. Level IV is all sub-itsa. It's all sub-itsa. The thing which reduces the pc's ability to itsa is contained in the materials of Level IV. It's contained in those materials. So the restimulation, but not the discharge of those materials – and they will not discharge, because there's no way for him to tell what is what – the restimulation of that will therefore reduce his ability to itsa.

Now, if you're just looking at it as, "Well, all right, what's your first goal? Fine. All right, give me the two top RIs. Oh fine, I'll just write those down here. All right, that's good. Give me the next pair of RIs. Good, I'll write those down. Ah, thank you very much. What do you suppose your next pair of RIs is in that GPM? Oh well, good, I'll write those down. Oh, that's fine. Now, I suppose as you – don't say – there's nothing more much in that goal? All right, though – that's fine. Give me the second goal on the line. All right, that's what you say it is? Okay, I'll write that down. That's fine. Now give me the top RI – what's the matter? I don't seem to be getting any TA here. Have I cut your itsa line? Have I stopped you from telling me something? TA seems to be stuck up here. I seem to not be getting any tone arm motion. Let's see, now. Oh, all right – I'll do an ARC break assessment for the session, you see? All right, is this restimulation of an earlier cut communication in the session? Uh, is this restimulation of an earlier rejected affinity and so on? I don't seem to get anything to read here. Oh, well. Well, let's see. On auditing, now, how – what about auditing? What about auditing. Uh – yeah, what solutions have you had for auditing? I'm going to get somewhere now! What solutions have you had for auditing?" Half an hour later – TA now is at 5.25. "Well ... well, let's see, maybe I can send him back to goals of sessions – old session goals, you know. Here's an old session goal 'to lose my lumbosis.' Now, we used to have good action on that. All right now, let's go back into this again because we can really get someplace now. Now give me

some solutions for lumbosis. What solutions have you had for your lumbosis? So forth. All right! Good! Good." 5.5, stuck.

There is nothing known, and I'm sure nothing will ever be known, that will take that TA down, except Level IV. The right goal. The right item. It's just going to go on up, and it's just going to stick, and the only direction it's going to go is higher. And the more you keep at this type of nonsense the less tone arm action you would have. Your tone arm action would drop to zero for the session itself, and maybe on your "since" mid ruds and so forth, to one.

And then, if you kept up this nonsense, would drop to zero for the session and zero for the mid ruds and zero for everything else. And you'd see that needle start to stiffen, and that needle would go stiffer and stiffer and tighter and tighter.

And if you kept up this nonsense, you all of a sudden would take the pc backwards through 7, and find the pc sitting at 1. Now if you still kept up this nonsense, and so forth, you would eventually move the pc to Clear read with a total stuck needle – dead thetan, and a very sick pc it would be.

So it's all very well to talk about how you must listen to the pc. When it comes to Level IV, the liabilities of using Listen-style Auditing, the liabilities of using that as the exclusive approach, are enormous. Now, this is the level of the one-man band. This is the level of the one-man band. This is no time to have an auditor worrying about his hook into the trees. This is no time to have an auditor who gets spooky because he misses a putt. Now look, he has to keep in the itsa line and not cut the pc's itsa on the goals and RIs which the pc is supposed to be operating on. He's supposed to keep the pc out of trouble on the track. He's not supposed to let the pc wander all over the place on the track. And he's not supposed to cut the itsa line.

Now, those are two interesting counter-opposed data. You mustn't let the pc idly itsa on the track, and you mustn't really push the pc all over the track either, and you mustn't, of course, cut the pc's itsa. Now look at this as a problem. What's a solution to this problem? Pc starts to look on the far backtrack and the auditor says, "We're not going to go into that now." The bypassed charge of what the pc has already restimulated kicks in, and you've got a beautiful, roaring ARC break. You understand that?

So this isn't a minor problem. This is a major problem, and it's no time, at that level, to have an auditor worrying about his putting. Worrying about "shiny clubs or dull clubs – which?" See, it's no time to be worrying about any of the niceties of auditing. This auditor's got to know all the niceties of auditing. He got to be a pretty smooth article. This is no time to have an auditor who can't keep his Model Session straight. This is no time to have an auditor who is still queasy about "Let's see, what – what – what – what is a rocket read? Let me see, I – I've – I heard of one once, I wonder what it is. Uh – do you suppose that's – uh – where's the Instructor? Uh – what – is – is this a rocket read? This tick?" This is no time to have that kind of thing going on.

Level IV is the Scientist level. It's a one-man-band level. Do you know how you solve the backtrack problem? The solution to this – of not let the pc wander on the track and get his attention all stirred up all over the place – is a complex solution, but a very workable solution.

You just have to be able to audit like a streak of light. You just audit so fast, you list so fast, and you null so fast, and you keep going so accurately, and you never halt anyplace along the line, and the pc never gets a chance to have his attention wander. It's a case of attention wandering. You simply are so positive in what the pc's attention is on that the pc never has an opportunity to draw his breath and wander. Now, I'll give you an idea what's – what – it's very easy to make a pc wander on his attention. Very easy. Let's have an auditor – of course, the basic action of listing and the question is: Can you write as an auditor "I spit" fifty times and then read back "I spit" fifty times? Can you do that? Well, if you can – can't do that easily and without vast misgivings, you'll have trouble somewhere along the line of Listing and Nulling. Because that's the basic action of Listing and Nulling. Can you just do those two things? Not even look at a meter. Can you just do those two things, see? Can you write "I spit" fifty times and read "I spit" back fifty times, that's all! Because that's actually all there is to Listing and Nulling. You write down what the pc says and you read it back. I mean, there are no complications to Listing and Nulling.

Now, how long do you list? Well, that's all wound up in the bag now, there's nothing much to that. Goals lists are almost always underlisted, and item lists are almost always overlisted. And you can make the goals list as long as you possibly can and you may still have underlisted; and an item list, make it as short as you possibly can, and you may have overlisted. Those are the two great sins – the constant fight of a Level IV Auditor. The constant fight of a Level IV Auditor.

You go on, you're running this goals list on the pc, you see. And my God, you've gone fifty past your last RR, but your needle is still slashing. Every once in a while there's a surge. That goal isn't on the list. It's still going tick and clack and surge. About every third goal the fellow puts down, you get a nice big healthy surge. The needle goes across – *whoa!* That goals list is not complete! Complete goals list doesn't have any needle action. There isn't any needle action. Doesn't matter what goal he puts on this list now, there is no needle action. And on a goals list there is no TA action at the time the list is complete. No needle action, no TA action. It's all completely flat. And that goals list is complete, and that is the only safe goals list there is.

You'll get lucky some time, bless you, on a one-goal list. And you'll check it all out, and you've hit it right on the button. And the next time the pc will give you a one-goal list, and even though it doesn't read on the meter, you skip two GPMs, you start listing the thing, you wrap the pc around a telegraph pole, and you spend the next three or four sessions trying to unsnarl this God-awful mess. See, trouble – trouble with Level IV is you can get lucky. And every time you get lucky, you learn a bad habit.

I've seen a one-goal list that is perfectly accurate. And I've seen a pc cognite on his goal, and it was perfectly accurate. But I've seen a pc do a one-goal list that was completely inaccurate, even though the goal fired and it was used, and God help us! And I've seen a pc cognite gorgeously upon his goal on the list – done it myself – and it turned out not to be the goal for that list. In fact, it only turned out to be an actual goal, not an actual GPM. The next five hours of auditing after that fact I wouldn't wish on Khrushchev. Horrible! You're running with a wrong goal and you don't know it.

These are the liabilities of luckiness. Pc cognites – bang! He says, "Oh, my goal is 'to spit!' Ha-ha! I got it. That's it! That – ho-ho! That's it. That – that – that's the list." The auditor says, "Well, I just don't dare ARC break the pc and continue listing. The pc has said that's it, now I've cut the pc's itsa. If I – if I don't take this, I've refuted it." Well, you've got dodges such as this particular character: "All right, fine. That fired very well. Fired very well and blew down. However, I have to take all the charge off of the goals list between the GPMs so we'll just have to list here for a little while. And this is the auditing question – we just have to make sure, you see. Not make sure that it is your goal, it's – we're not interested in that – but we just have to take the charge off of this list. And the charge is off the list, why, fine, and if it's not off the list we will have to take it off." And the pc will sit there just, usually, like a little soldier and go ahead. Unless you've said, "Well I can't help it, I can't accept that goal. No, yeah, I don't dare accept that – I've got to have a complete list. No, that – I know, I know, you keep saying your goal is 'to spit,' but that – well, I – I can't pay any attention to that." Well, of course, you've got an ARC broken pc because you refused his goal.

So the trick is, of course, to accept the goal with wide-open arms, and do your job. See? Always do your job – always accept the pc's itsa and then do what you have to do. That's adroit. There is no substitute for being adroit. No substitute for a live auditor in that chair. He knows if he cuts the pc's itsa line he's going to smash up the session. And he knows if he accepts that pc's cognition without any further check whatsoever, he's liable to smash up not only that session but the next four. Takes the lesser of the two evils. He runs the risk of smashing up the session without cutting the pc's itsa. And boy, that is difficult! Sometimes that is very difficult. But you can be very adroit. "Oh, your goal is 'to – to spit.' Yeah, rocket reads." Reassurance. See, hope factor. Good real R-factor. "Good! Blew down. Blew down. I had a blowdown here on that." And he says that is, so on, and he goes on and he talks about it for a little while – oh, sure, let him talk about it.

And you say, "Well, that's all right. That rocket reads beautifully. 'To spit' rocket reads nicely. And that blew your TA down from 4.5 down here to 2.75, and that's very good. All right. Anything else you'd like to say about that? All right, that's fine. Good enough. Had a lot of good cognitions. All right. Now, we got to take the remaining charge off of this list, and here's the listing question – has no doubt about this, this goal, we've put it right here, I've marked it with a red circle around it and so forth. There's that goal. We've got to take the charge off this list. Charge in between the banks, you know." Pc will sit back and list for you. Perfectly fine.

And 50 percent of the time it turns out that "to spit" was it. But what if it wasn't that 50 percent this time? What if it was the other 50 percent? You get the idea? Pc will get used to this situation. Now, it's true that if you cut the pc's itsa at Level IV auditing, his R with his bank folds up and he gets less and less real. So you must do everything at Level IV to promote the pc's itsa. Well, you say, this is a hell of a thing, you have to promote the pc's itsa while cutting the pc's itsa! Well, there are many ways to do it. And I'll go on and give you some of these.

But first let's go back and take a look at this. How do you keep him from wandering all over the backtrack? Every time you sit back and draw a long breath, every time you say, "To uh, sp... uh, sp... I think – uh, wait a minute, what was this? Uh, to – to sp... uh, I can't quite

read my writing here, excuse me. To, uh – I guess it's uh s... oh! To spit! Oh yeah. To spit. To spit. All right, thank you. Got anything that's suppressed on that or anything. All right. Thank you. All right, very good. That's out."

During that period of time you were not in control of the pc's itsaing attention line – that itsa maker. You weren't in control of it. You weren't in control of the bank. You showed you weren't in control of the bank by being fumbly with a list. So you're in absolute control of the bank, and if you fumble a list the bank will fumble. So the bank fumbles, unseen to you, the pc's line is on the point where you fumbled, therefore the bank is shifted underneath that scanner and of course the pc's attention goes off onto other things, because you've shifted other things into his view, with your "Well, was it spa... uh, spa... uh what uh, spoo... uh, I have to get the mid ruds in on this now, because I guess I've made a mistake on it, haven't I? Huh-huh-huh! Sorry! Huh!" And that bank is going to move. And therefore your pc is going to get his attention on something else. And the pc's now going to say, "Say, you know..." You can always expect after you goof like this, if you're – if you're real observant of your own auditing, and you're studying a tape of you doing Level IV, which you should do someday, you will see that a short time after one of these fumbles the pc will come up with some yickle-yack. Not necessarily crude and not necessarily critical or anything like that, he isn't ARC broke in any fashion, but he's got a lot of comments. See? Adds another four or five goals to a complete list. Get the idea? Something else goes on. In other words, you did something that showed you did not have control of the pc's bank, you distracted the pc's itsa maker line, you see – you distracted that, and played it on something else, shifted the bank underneath it – with this goof you made with this list, see. And you're going to get some other stuff.

See, why? It isn't neat and clean. See, you're – it's all – it gets sputtered up at that particular point. All right, that's – that's the substance of an ARC break. If the pc has any bypassed charge at that particular time, it's that goof will key it in. Or cutting his itsa line will key in the ARC break – key in the bypassed charge and you'll get the ARC break. So that the more of these little goofs and yickle-yacks which you get into here, the more ARC breaks you're going to have per session. And the number of ARC breaks or upsets which the pc has the more wanderings the pc's attention has been. The more cut his itsa line has been. These things are all in coordination.

So a guy who's doing a clumsy job on Listing and Nulling: It's can you write "I spit" fifty times and read it back, see. And if you can't write "I spit" fifty times and read it back, when you're writing the complexity of fifty goals and reading them back, that additional complexity will show up the inability to do the simple action. And you stumble on these simple points. That shows you don't have control of the bank and so loses control of the bank for a moment, you see.

Do you know that if you read two goals backwards or upside down on a list you've disarranged the bank? Let's go back to – let's go up two goals and read one out of sequence just to see if it fired, and then drop three goals – no, don't read those – and read the fourth one down to resume our list. And you put the pc in a little tiny bit of a creak. Because what you've done is roll the bank backwards and then you haven't rolled it forward again. If you go back to read a goal, you actually should keep on going from that goal right straight on through, see. You should be able to write "I spit" fifty times and read it back, in other words!

Not take the forty-seventh "spit," get to the forty-seventh "I spit" and then decide that the thirty-fifth ought to be read again. Because when you do that you've disrupted the reel-off of the reactive bank. See, the time factor, you see – that bank is timed. And it's running off underneath the scanner, you might say, very nicely, until you all of a sudden get to the forty-seventh and read the thirty-fifth or, you suddenly don't read what's there. "I spatticated," you say, and, of course, it's "I spit" at that point of the bank, and so you've got an error point. These are not serious, they do nothing to a case, but they do a great deal to your session. At that moment the pc's attention gets dispersed, and that dispersed attention now leads into itsa all over the cockeyed time track. Do you see how that is?

It is so mechanical an action that it is almost unbelievable to an auditor that he could do this much to a pc with a little piece of randomness of this particular character. So he's reading "I spit." And he says, "I spat, I spatticated – I – I mean – pardon – excuse me. A little mistake there – I spit. Yeah, I spit. Oh, and the one above that, that was I spat – I said I spat, and that's actually I spit. I – I'll read that again. I spit. Now we'll go down three below this, and we will read, 'I spit!'"

And you, of course, stirred up that part of the bank, the pc is not quite able to confront it anyway, the pc disperses, his scanner line comes off of tension, because you've yanked it onto the auditor – one of the reasons. You've put it on – so that it didn't fit squarely up against the bank, it goes off onto something else, it restimulates a little more charge, don't you see. Next thing you know the pc's saying something else about something else. If he has any bypassed charge at that moment you've led – laid in the seed of an ARC break. You do that two or three times and if you've really got some bypassed charge in the session...

See, bypassed charge in a session will just lie dormant. There's always bypassed charge in a session. Always. You can't run a session that doesn't have some bypassed charge in it. Either from former sessions or the session you're running, or from the life around you. And if you're going to go through the beautiful dream of having a pc who has no bypassed charge of any kind whatsoever, knock off the hop. Wake up! You're just dreaming with the opium addicts, man! Because there is no such thing.

The key-in of bypassed charge is always some comm failure. All you've got to do is unnecessarily cut up the pc's communication line, refute his itsa in a dozen different ways, knock it around, knock it around and put some session charge in there, which bypasses charge in the session. That restimulates the bypassed charge which is waiting to be restimulated and only that gives you your ARC break. You can, in actual fact, run a pc with a wrong goal, without an ARC break. Of course, it's rough on the pc. I mean, he's got a wrong goal. You aren't necessarily running that goal, you understand, but you have found a wrong goal on the case. Well, now, man, a wrong goal will just about tear somebody's head off! And the pc can sit there actually with his head half torn off. And if you are a very smooth auditor indeed, you would audit without giving the pc a single ARC break. He wouldn't ARC break.

You see, it isn't true that bypassed charge equals ARC break. ARC break always equals bypassed charge. But bypassed charge does not always equal an ARC break. That formula requires bypassed charge, via rough spot in auditing, via session key-in – of a cut comm

or some other such thing – equals bypassed charge. I mean, equals ARC break. So that's only how an ARC break adds up when you look at it in reverse.

Now, an ARC break, then, does not always come about because you've bypassed charge. You find a wrong goal on the pc, this does not equal ARC break. This may equal a very uncomfortable pc. In other words, bypassed charge does not equal ARC break. But an ARC break is always traceable to bypassed charge. I'll go over that again for you, so there's no doubt in your mind. I mixed it up there a moment.

If you have an ARC break, there must be some bypassed charge. See, that's always true. But just because there is bypassed charge is no reason there's got to be an ARC break. Whether there is or is not an ARC break by reason of the bypassed charge is totally conditional – utterly and completely conditional – upon the auditor. Of course, the more bypassed charge there is in the session, the less mistake the auditor has to make to kick it in.

Now, this depends then on the auditor – some little goof, a little cut comm – usually a commu... cut communication of some kind or another or a refuted itsa. Got a bypassed charge here. Actually, three sessions ago, you inadvertently, when you were coming up the line, found a wrong goal. It's still sitting there, it hasn't given anybody any trouble up to this moment. The PC just feels a little creaky occasionally but is not complaining about it, see.

You've audited two sessions since – no ARC breaks, everything's going along all right – and the pc is looking around dreamily at the start of session or something like this, and the auditor takes over and starts the session badly.

Pc said, "I was having a little bit of a tough time this afternoon talking to so-and-so, and uh..."

"Oh, well, all right, all right, all right. Okay, okay, okay. All right. Now, all right with you if I start the session now?"

And that will sit there and it doesn't take the drop of a pencil to blow in a screaming ARC break. Now it's been keyed in, see. The apparent impatience of the auditor, you see, to do something. The cut comm. The auditor's apparent refusal to let the pc look at his bank. Just a little rough spot that gives the pc some dispersion, and then a cut line on that rough spot, and *pow!* you've got your ARC break. And every ARC break you get on a pc must have gone through that cycle.

There are no ARC breaks that don't go through that cycle, so don't kid yourself. Just because you didn't spot how you cut the communication, just because you didn't spot how you chopped the itsa – just because of this, don't think there wasn't a cut comm. If you'd had a tape running on the session, take my word for it, you could have wound that tape right square back to that point of the session, and you would have – where the ARC break occurred, and then go anything up to ten minutes to a half an hour (sometimes even an hour and a half earlier, it all depends on how much session there was) and you would have found, dead on the ARC break, you would have found some little misdemeanor on the part of the auditor. And then wind it back there anywheres from that point back an hour and a half earlier, you would have found a nice, nasty one.

Crude as this – crude as this, see. They're crude, these things. You're not actually auditing on a tightwire, see. I mean it's a big, broad highway and if you don't drop any stoves on it, you see, and don't cut holes in the concrete, you get along fine. It's actually that magnitudinous. You'll look back there but you... the tragedy is when an auditor doesn't look at these things as magnitudinous. And blames the pc for all this stuff happening, after pulling corny actions of this particular character.

So here's the pc, and the pc's saying, "You know, I – I think – I think we had a – I'm not quite sure, but I – I think we had a-a-a-a-a – overlist on something. I think we've had an overlist on something. Uh, I just think we have. I think we must have overlisted someplace or another. We – I think we went too far on an RI or something..." He's guessing at something, see. Like that.

"Oh? Oh? Well all right. All right, here's your next list question..."

Well, you say, well, that isn't bad. That isn't bad. No, no, that isn't bad, but then you will find out that it actually went like this:

"I really don't think we should go on listing on this list. Uh, there's something wrong here, someplace. I-I..."

"Oh? All right, well here's the qu... here's the question..."

See, there will be a forcingness of some kind or another will be going on here, see. Or – those are about the most innocent examples that can cause this three-day-old wrong goal to suddenly kick, see. Pc doesn't know what it is, he merely knows there's something wrong. And he usually says it very gently, in some particular fashion and the auditor just misses it clean, and slams the barn door on the thing, and he's got the show on the road. Now this thing is going to roll. He's opened the door to the hurricane.

And they always happen like that, and it's too bad that you can't review some of the more serious ARC breaks you had to – to give the – give the truth of this situation. It would cure you utterly of stumbling and fumbling and being unadroit at Level IV. It would just cure you of it, if you could hear exactly how corny the thing was. Because it's plenty corny. This is true of all these types of ARC breaks and misdemeanors.

Now look. The people that Reg teaches here on Sunday – they sit down and they look at each other, see. And they can audit – oh yeah, they're having a good time. They sit down and look at each other and one of them talks about life and so forth and they undoubtedly get tone arm motion and so forth. That is one God-awful distance – that's through the whole training of the game of golf – between there and the pro. See, that's a long, long distance.

And for one of those characters to try to take up with the pc whether it is the right goal or the wrong goal in such a way as not to ARC break the pc and handle that thing to a successful un-ARC broke conclusion is about the same as watching a man intently to see if he's going to flap his wings and fly off to the sun. He just wouldn't – haven't have a prayer. Well, there's where you're going, don't you see.

Now, when you've got yourself a good smooth grip on the situation so it doesn't worry you whether the pc is talking – doesn't worry you to have the pc talking. Doesn't worry you to

have the pc not talking. This – having the pc there talking or not talking, or doing or not doing and so forth is not a great subject of worry – to where you can move the bank around at will. You know, the bank moves to whatever the auditor says. And the pc looks at whatever the auditor tells him to. You learn that real good and you all of a sudden see what you're doing. Bank – anything will appear.

You can say the date 1492 forcefully to a pc and you've moved the bank – 1492. You can even, oddly enough, move the bank to May the 3rd, at 2 o'clock in the afternoon, 1492. You can move it to 2:01. You can move it to 2:02. And you will have exactly what the pc was looking at at that time and date. Now you may have to move him through it several times to obscure the intervening murk. You may have to have the duration of the incident if you landed in the middle of an engram. But it's like developing pictures. All the auditor's got to say, "1492, May the 3rd, 2 o'clock in the afternoon!" The pc's got it! That – that is it!

Now, if the auditor is so corny that he doesn't realize that he's put it there and then ask the pc what he is looking at very unconfidently, you see: "You – you're not looking at anything there, are you? I mean, there isn't anything there?" Of course, the auditor's moved the bank back out again, you see, by being uncertain of its location. And then if the auditor doesn't know that he has to get the pc to scan that area very enthusiastically, before he finally will be able to develop the picture, see, why, of course he will never learn that he can do this.

But it in itself would be a – almost an auditing practical exercise – a cross between the Auditing Section and the Practical Section. Move the pc to 1067 at 8 o'clock in the evening, and find out what he was doing. Oh, my God, how could you do that? How could you possibly do that? Elementary. Elementary. You simply say 1067, 8 o'clock in the evening, you know, whatever the date is. That's all. The bank will respond to that, and then all you have to do is tell the pc to put the old scanner on it and scrub it up. One of the ways of doing that is to move the pc, see – actually it's not moving the bank, you're moving the pc – over the area. Move him from 7:59 to 8:10 on a certain date see – certain hour. Move him once, move him twice, move him three times, move him four times and all of a sudden – *urhh!*

I did it with one guy one time. He actually was dead in his head, solid concrete – he wasn't a special type of case of any kind whatsoever. It's just patience on the part of the auditor. I even remember the date – I think it was January the 3rd, forgotten what year it was. January the 3rd, I think it must have been 1950 was the date I moved him to – and he couldn't see anything there. And took him at that hour of the morning when he – it developed that he had entered his office at that hour of the morning; I thought we'd get him eating breakfast or something. He entered the office at that hour of the morning; we developed the next half-hour. And we just got him to enter his office and develop the next half-hour. Entered his office and went through the next half-hour. Entered his office and went through the next half-hour, entered his office and went through the next half-hour, and after we'd done this about a half a dozen times he was reading his mail, word by word. Addresses that he had never even vaguely remembered were firmly printed on the envelopes in front of his face. He was highly intrigued.

See, it was a nonsignificant date. Nothing had happened on January the 3rd, you know. He first tried to figure it out, you know; figure it out, you know. Well, I didn't interrupt

this – I just kept moving the somatic strip, you see, just moving his time track through that particular time and getting the pc to look at it. And move it through that little time span, get the pc to go through that time span, and move it through that time span, get... An auditor would become very intrigued with the fact that he actually was moving the strip, and the pc was looking at whatever he said. These are very positive actions. There isn't any doubt about it whatsoever. Just because the pc doesn't see it is no proof that you haven't got the p... got the strip there, and got the pc's attention on it.

Now of course there is this bungle: You can move him into something which sticks him and then rough him up so that he and the bank don't follow any instructions, and not arrive. See, there are very, very many ways by which you don't arrive. But they're all along the lines of bypassing charge, refusing to handle the pc's attention line – the itsa maker, see – refusing to move the strip for something there to look at. And these things add up to an impossibility to do it.

But you can take almost anybody as an auditor, and a pro ought to really be able to do this: Take your landlady and say, well – maybe she's forty years old or something like that – and you say all right, well, that's forty years – twenty years ago – 1943, it might have meant the war, we're liable to walk him into a bombing explosion. If we go much earlier however... Let's take 1947. Let's take 1947. All right, now let's pick out a nonsignificant date in 1947. Of course an auditor's always going after significant dates, so you forget the vast number of nonsignificant dates which the pc finds very easy to confront, don't you see. You're always adjudicating whether or not the pc is there and confronting because you're running a hell of an engram – some dentist halfway down his throat, you know. "Oh, you can't confront it? I guess there must be something wrong with my auditing!" you know. Hell, he couldn't confront it at the time!

But let's just take – let's just take – let's scout around a little bit, discussion, and let's get – let's get May the 15th, 1947 and let's take it at random, about three o'clock in the afternoon. And let's find everything between three o'clock in the afternoon and four o'clock that afternoon, see. See, nonsignificant date. And you all of a sudden find that you're actually moving the strip and moving the pc's attention, and the pc's just doing it just like that, see. And next thing you know, "Well, I walk into the kitchen and I put on the teakettle, see." Pc will be very intrigued – I've never had them revolt against doing this. "Walk into the kitchen, I put on the teakettle and so forth." The next thing you know, my God, she's even tasting the biscuits, you know? Quite remarkable. Reading the tea caddy and so on.

Trying to get pcs to get pictures on the track – you get the date and the duration of the incident on the backtrack, you can turn on any picture. And R3R is a conclusion of old Dianetics. It's a triumph, because the reason we couldn't run engrams on some people, don't you see, is they couldn't see them! Well, in R3R you can always get them to see and be the engram, I mean, that's – that's dead easy.

But this nonsignificant gag actually doesn't really require this much nonsense. Of course, you could take somebody who's very aberrated, and doesn't know what the hell you're doing and isn't under your control and is ready to jump out the window, and is – he's sure you're the dentist and all that sort of thing; you're of course not going to produce a result to

amount to anything. They still will do what you tell them to do but they won't be able to report on it, that's the main thing. Their communication line is too lousy, and your doubt and the upsets you get into in trying to get them to do it then stir up things that disperse them and that sort of thing.

But ordinarily this is a very easy activity to take some nonsignificant moment in the person's past, move that nonsignificant moment under their attention, scan that moment and get it fully redeveloped.

All right. Now there's a very minor action. Supposing you didn't permit the pc to tell you what the pc was seeing. That's an elementary auditing situation, see. You see, understood in the session is a command that the pc sort of is supposed to communicate to you because you're doing it, so obviously you must want to know, see. So if you present at that moment, the bank, and then prevent the pc from reporting on what the pc says – and there are several ways by, which you can do this. One is to demand more than is there. That's the most effective ARC breaky method because you've got him now the missed withhold of nothing. And you can do various things with that communication line, all of them very mucky, which will upset the general operation.

And here we're dealing with a nonsignificant thing. We're dealing with from three to four on May the 15th, 1947, when she went in actually and put on a teakettle and made a pot of tea and went down and sat at her table there in the kitchen and ate some biscuits and drank tea. Total action. Significance absolutely zero. She may get confused, she's done this so often! How come – really is this May the 15th? She may doubt this or something like that. But all of a sudden even that doubt will come away and she will know that it's that time she did this same action that she's done thousands of times, you see. It's that sharp.

All right. Now take that situation – take that situation, and figure out the number of ways you could louse up that person; that you could prevent this action from happening. One, not believe that you were moving the date underneath the pc's attention. Do a psychologist's stunt of challenge the experiment all the time so it doesn't work. Psychologists are wonderful at this. It's no wonder they never find out anything. You ought to see a crew of those Martians work! You really ought to see a bunch of them work. I mean, you'd roll on the floor.

By the way, I made a comment on one of these lectures one day, of – that you really wouldn't believe what I tell you about what psychiatrists do to the insane. You probably wouldn't believe it, because it's just too, too extravagant. There's too much. And you possibly just think I'm talking. But if you – if you don't, if you think you have some reservation, why don't you go down to the local mental hospital and take a look at some of this treatment.

Well, actually, in a PE Course down in South Africa, an official in the government heard that tape which I gave you here. And he said, "That's a good idea. Ron says I ought to go down and take a look. All right, I will." So he did, and he wrote me a report which can't be released because he got it as a government official, of what he observed, you see. And you actually would be stunned by it. They just take 220 volts and bang it between somebody's temple and they all go blue and bust them up gorgeously and – it's real wild. Just a couple of nurses, you see, apathetically throwing patients down on the bed and doing this with them, and just a long assembly line. And he looked up at the wall and he saw a whole bunch of –

picture with a whole bunch of psychiatrists in it, and they all seemed relatively young, but they were marked off as most of them dead. And the head of the institution said, "Yes, that's true, most of them are dead. They just seem to all die young in this particular business." [laughs] Didn't seem to strike him as peculiar.

Now, of course, I shouldn't be releasing that much of the report. And I haven't released the actual mental shock report to you. But it was interesting. He went down and he found out it just ran this way, see. This is the way it goes, see. Unbelievable. Nobody thinks it cures anything, it doesn't do anything for anybody. You're even told, you see, that nobody knows why it works, *if* it works. See, it's just all "what wall?" He didn't believe something like that could go on in this planet.

Well, this type of attitude carried through on to a psychological experiment they did at the UCLA. Somebody – you were supposed to say a phrase to somebody who was asleep and then audit it back out and recover the phrase, you see. So the conditions of the experiment were set up: They were only supposed to say this phrase and they weren't supposed to say anything else. So they walked in, dragged the tape recorders in and made all kinds of comments and upsets and fell over the chairs and hooked up tape recorders and discussed the whole thing and then they knew it couldn't work and some of the – fellow says, "Well, he won't be able to remember it, anyway." And he went on – they went on like this for two hours! And then couldn't make up their mind what remark to give the fellow to be remembered. They'd neglected writing that out, you see. And at that time scrubbed the whole experiment, didn't try to get it back and concluded Dianetics didn't work!

Well, you associate with people hanging from trees, you get remarks of people hanging from trees. That's – we ought to find a nice forest for those guys. Anyway, this is their idea of a controlled experiment. Of course, you attack a phenomenon with that fantastic carelessness, of course you – nothing ever happens. You never get a chance to observe any part of it. Did anything happen? You couldn't tell, see.

Well, so you have to kind of wash all that out and stop worrying about whether he did or he didn't or would he or wouldn't he and so forth, and you just do it. And it works every time. In other words, the auditor's in direct control of the pc's time track, and the pc always cooperates, putting his attention on what the auditor says, and out of this combo you could do almost anything on nonsignificant moments and that sort of thing. You can do the most phenomenal things. Why anybody ever had to hypnotize Bridey Murphy, I don't know! I don't know. It just required a little bit of patience. If you wanted to know what somebody was doing – if you want to know what somebody was doing, you'd have to get a time span the person was in. The person might not have been on this planet five hundred years ago, you see, or something like that. There's that possibility.

So you have to get a time span in which the person actually was there and a location in which the person was there to make any sense. Because you can't say "1492" to somebody who didn't arrive here till 1493, you see, and didn't even know the date 1492 when it did happen. But you could take it on "years ago," and undoubtedly land with it very handily. So, move it back on any time span, any – almost any random date. See, because you're going after

aberration, you're accustomed to picking up the cause of a psychosomatic or the cause of this or the cause of that. And you overlook these other simplicities.

See, the total simplicity of the fact is that if the psychosomatic lies there, well good heavens, his drinking tea lies there, see. "Oh," you say, "well, he only made a picture of the psychos..." No, that isn't true, they've just been up there cranking away, man! That – they got that – they got that camera going! They can always replay.

You can just pick a random time, sometimes a rather fantastic time. You could pick seven trillion, four hundred and fifty-five billion, six hundred and seventy-two million, four hundred and sixty-three thousand, five hundred and seventy-two years ago. All right, let's pick that up. Now we could even add a decimal on the end of it – point nine three five. Give that to the pc. But you don't give it to the pc and have him move the time track. You simply, you know, hand it out to the time track directly, see. And get the pc now to go over that little – giving him a time span in that – of what he was doing at that exact moment. And get him to go over that a few times, a few times – just a little time span. Get him to go over the – the point nine two, see. And get him to go over that little time span. Over it and over it and over it and over it and over it. What's he doing?

Well, he's sitting here – he's sitting here braiding some leaves together. Now unless you go mad and try to find out what's his name, rank, serial number, how many wives does he have at that particular time – because you're liable to be rather embarrassed to find out he – he was a woman at that particular time, you see. Unless you start going goofy and demanding more than the pc has got, you will get exactly what is there and exactly what he's doing. He's, like, sitting there braiding leaves, and after a while as you develop it a little bit further – you're working a picture. Now, you have to work this for quite a while, and work a fairly decent span to get the consciousness which was present in that picture, too. And get the memory which was present in the picture. We're asking a little bit too much because the thing is just a picture, don't you see.

But you work that span over, and let's work over one of those years from beginning to end. Over and over and over and over and over and eventually you will even develop some consciousness. If you keep doing this with just one year span, working it over very carefully, you would even redevelop a language. If nothing horrible happened in that year you would for sure do it – if your auditing was absolutely smooth.

Now, *there* is a test of auditing. You're handling all the elements of auditing. Nothing happened – there was nothing alarming occurred at that particular period you're going through, you see. There's nothing to upset the person. Now, therefore, the only upset that can be present is you.

Now, if you can do that action that smoothly and that calmly and just get somebody to do that without introducing any falderal or blang-a-blang, then I think you could audit an engram very well for that period, don't you see. Because now, you've got an unwillingness of the pc. Slight unwillingness. He doesn't want to confront this. He really will, but – for your sake – but you put the engram in front of him, and you say, "All right, now, go through this now, kind of playing the itsa maker over this, and tell me all, what is it, what is it?" You know, itsa, itsa, itsa, itsa, itsa.

"Ahhhh," he starts, he gets a somatic, see – "gghuuuu." That told him he better not itsa it, see. And you got to get him persuaded you know, a little bit more. "Gghuuuu" – that's another somatic, and "Uhhh!" "Put your attention..." "hrgguhfhf" He's not quite sure he wants – "hrgguhfhf! Psssst! That thing's hot! Heh – heh. Hhuuhh! All right, well for your sake I'll go back to the beginning of it again," you see. He's being actually punished for going over this period of the track. Well, you know, he's getting a pain in his epiglottis or something, see, every time you go through this thing. And it's developing worse, and he actually felt very sad afterwards. And he doesn't want to face all those tears. So that requires a little bit higher grade of auditing, doesn't it?

The auditor now has got to be pretty purely straight. He can't be – see, he can't be dropping his E-Meter in between the scanner and the bank, you see. He can't be clubbing the pc around and failing to take the itsa, and having a lot of trouble writing down his auditor report while he is auditing the pc. He hasn't mastered the ability, you see, to make some notes while talking to the pc, you see. These little things he hasn't mastered. He's having trouble with all these things, you know. And nobody polished his brassie, so therefore he's hooking into the woods, you know. I mean, that – this is no time for that kind of thing to be happening. Not while you're running through this engram with R3R.

All right, now let's go a little bit further! Ha-ha! Let's plunk the guy – thud! – into a goal which was supposed to solve problems, which would have caused – and probably did cause – several nervous breakdowns. Plunk him into the middle of a GPM and put him into the totality of a confusion that got him killed at least fifteen thousand times. One RI, see. About fifteen thousand deaths in this RI, all of them painful. And you say – oh cheerily, cheerily – "Go on! Confront it! All right, itsa! Ha-ha! Yeah, itsa! Ha! All right, what goal do you think you've got? What's the RI? What are the two top RIs? Oh yeah, you think they are, huh? Oh, well that's fine. We'll take those. What are the next RIs? You got any other goals of your own? Oh well, just go on through it. You're sure you're there? Oh, you're trying to tell me about it. Well, I'm sorry I interrupted you and so forth – I'm sorry – a bell – doorbell rang. You don't mind, I'll – I'll come back in a moment. Uh yeah, uh yeah. What were you saying now? ... Yeah, well I don't think so. That doesn't seem like that to me. I really think that the goal might have been some other kind of goal, I think you had probably some other reason to have postulated than what you're saying."

Now, I'm just trying to give you an example of the raised corn. Nothing like that would ever occur. But what do you think would happen to the pc, man! *Garrh!* Now, you're handling the same tools. It's just how much nitroglycerin in each one of them. How leery is the pc of putting his attention on that particular stretch of bank? Well, anything that killed him fifteen thousand times will kind of seem a little bit grim. He'd have to have considerable confidence in his auditor that nothing weird was going to happen here, before he could put his attention on this thing and be free of his environment enough to submerge out. Right?

All right. Now you're going to put his attention on that, and this is no time to be putting his attention on eight other things. Now, pcs do take tours for their – through their banks. And pcs do suddenly pick up items and give you. And pcs do cognite on goals. And all of these things happen. And often they are right. And often when they tell you why they have an ARC break they're right, and they're often wrong, too. And after they've told you what the

GPM is, you find out it's an actual goal but not a GPM. And after they've told you the RI, you find out that's just a lock on a lock on a lock on a lock of an RI. You see, this stuff is just – is precision stuff.

All right. Now, if the pc, in his effort to please you and handle the bank and so forth, is forbidden to cut – and not give you all of those things which he's got and is discouraged from giving them to you by finding that they are very often wrong – you have cut down the pc's ability to confront. Now, that's one of the things a pc's got to have there, man! That pc's got to be able to confront. Because the itsa maker only works on those things the pc is willing to confront. And when the pc is not willing to confront something, he can't get his attention on it, and he will balk, and he will tell you that he can't go into it. And God help you if you try to force him into it, too. God help you, I won't! Don't ever force a pc on this stuff, man. If the pc can't go, there's something wrong. Always true. Pc can't go, there's something wrong.

Now, you don't want this pc wandering all over the track, and you don't want this pc itsaing a bunch of stuff he shouldn't have, and if you stop the pc from itsaing things, you cut down the confidence of the pc in looking at that bank. And therefore you've cut down your ability to direct the pc's line because you're invalidating that pc's itsa making line, and you're invalidating it all the time, all the time, and so therefore the pc is soon not going to be able to look at all. And, oh man, this is a one-man-band proposition. And you see the elements it's made out of.

This is no time to be wondering, "Where is the switch that turns on the E-Meter?" You get my point? Now, I'm not saying it is difficult. I'm saying that you make it difficult or you will make it difficult. And that is the whole thing. The pc – the pc will only have difficulty on what he can confront and do if you make a considerable difficulty for the pc. All the difficulties from that point are made.

These are easy. These are easy things to do. But they start out with being able to handle the pc's itsa, encourage the pc's itsa, get the pc to increase his itsa, be able to handle the pc's bank, be able to handle these various factors in a session. Get real comfortable in that and then you start gearing up into this other stuff. And now there are various things which you really have to be able to swing in and do. And those things you have to swing into have to be done rapidly and accurately.

You do a goals list – learn how to write quick. Going to get that goal down, man! Don't go saying, "Just – just a minute. Just a minute. I – I haven't caught up yet." Very usually a pc, if it's pointed out to him that he's giving goals too fast, simply slows down. Pc gets used to it. You don't have to be able to take it all in shorthand. But don't try his patience like mad. And when you get that goals list down, be able to read the thing back. Be able to write a goals list and never make a mistake on whether or not the goal read on the meter. Keep your tone arm record while you're doing so. These are all one-man-band actions.

But they're all extraneous to the basic things of auditing. Can you sit there and handle a pc? Well, can you sit there and handle a pc? Well, you can you sit there and handle a pc and do a bunch of other complicated actions at the same time? It's a one-man-band proposition. Funny part of it is, you do any of those actions well, you finally come out at the other end and you say, "What the hell was I worried about? There's nothing to listing a goals list and getting

a pc's goal. There's nothing to listing an item list. There's nothing to keeping the pc's itsa in. There's just nothing to these things! What have I been worried about all this time?" Somebody's gone Clear as a bell! Somebody's rolling right on down the line.

No, the additives. The additives. "I think this time I will cross my hands, and interlock the little finger and the index finger of the two hands, and then if I bring around the club this way, perhaps I will be able to cure my hook." I'm afraid you will look back eventually, when you've batted one 250 yards down the fairway and say, "For heaven's sakes, what am I doing?"

In actual fact, golf is a very difficult game compared to auditing. It's much more difficult. There's a lot more freaks and things that can go wrong involved in it.

Level IV is formal auditing. Very, very smooth formal auditing, done with great speed and rapidity. And you use speed and rapidity to overcome the pc's idea of wander. You keep out of trouble by never forcing the pc where the pc can't go. You fill in the itsa, every possible opportunity you can. You've got a nice long list you've just done, see – an item list. I say a nice long item list, it had twenty items on it, see, before you got one that could – would RR, see. A long items list and so forth. You've read this item back, and it's gone *ppssswwww!* And you say, "All right. Is this your item? Is this your item here? 'Tree ropers.' Is that your item?"

"Oh, yeah. Yeah, yeah, that's it."

Well, you – don't you say another word, then. Don't cut his itsa line by any action whatsoever. Let him sit there and cogitate. Let him look at the thing. Let him – let him feel around it. Let him cognite on the thing for a while. He stays introverted for a little while – just you be silent and let him do it, see.

All right, when he's all through and he's got all that cognition out of the road and so forth, take the list you just did and shove it over in front of him. And say, "How do these other items relate to it? Is that the main item on that list?" Of course, he has to look at all these other locks. Compare these other locks and you see the tone arm pump up and down and go back and forth. Promote yourself a lot of TA action out of it. "Oh yeah, this would and that would and the other thing would, and those two top items, they must belong to something else because they wouldn't. But this does. This solves all the other items. Yeah, this – that's the common denominator to it." Sort of proves to him he's gotten down to the center of the thing, see. It's him saying – self, saying so. "Yeah, that's the way it is. That's the way it is."

All right, he's done all that, you've – he's said everything he's said about that, he's studied that list all that he wants to, you know doggone well – this whole action – this whole action, by the way, of his cognition, everything else, took three and a quarter minutes. And the auditor wasn't doing a blessed thing. See? Takes that list back, looks it over. He'll see by this time that his tone arm is starting to rise. That tone arm hasn't got any more blow on it because of that item, you see. His tone arm now is starting to rise and he's back there, lickety-split. In other words, he drives like mad!

"All right. Here's your question. Who or what would resolve tree rovers?"

"*Bow-bow. Bow-bow-bow, bow-wa-bow, bow-wa-bow, bow-wa-bow, bow-wa-bow.*" He's had two or three...

"Thank you. Thank you. Thanks. Got it. Got it. You think the item's on the list by now?"

"Oh, yeah, I guess – yeah, I guess it has."

Otherwise you're going around the corner, see?

"All right, all right. Good. I'll just null this list if it's all right with you. *Bow-wa-bow, bow-wa-wa-bow. Bow-wow-wow-wow. Bow-wa-bow. Bow-wa-wow.* That fired. All right. *Bow-wa-bow.* All right. Monkeys! Is that your item?"

"Yeah! Yeah!" Now, you're not doing a thing, you know. "Yeah! Yeah, hey – monkeys. Ha-ha! Yeah, that – that's it, that's it."

"All right. How do the rest of these items relate to monkeys? All right. Is that your item?"

"Oh, I don't – I don't know, I don't know, I don't know, I don't know, I don't know. I thought – I thought the earlier item was your item."

"Oh, you thought the earlier item was! Oh! All right, I'm sorry. Okay. I'll just see what we can do about that! See what we can do about that, you see. Wind! Wind! Wind! I'll see if we can get it. See if we can get it here. Wind! Wind! Tell you what, let's list just a little bit longer and see if it fires."

"Bow-wa-wa-bow, bow-ba-bow, bow-ba-bow, bow-ba-bow. All right. Wind! Wind! Hey, that fires. Is that your item? All right, that's fine. Here's – how does these other items relate?"

"Well, those other items don't. I went – listed around a corner there and so forth. That upper item, that – that – that's it. Winds."

All right, providing that rocket read, it blew down, and everything's fine. I'd compound it by telling the pc – I always can – able to get a little bit more – after the pc has said it's his item – after the pc has said it relates to all other items, after the pc's got it all sorted out and after it's all square with the pc, then I tell the pc it's his item. And I'll always get another half a tone arm division. [laughter]

Now, this is a one-man-band proposition. This is no time to be hauling around and wondering about itsa. So in your lower levels, get very confident. Get up to a point – itsa, snitsa! Nothing to that! Move the bank! Move the bank, move the pc's attention. We want some tone arm action – here's forty-five divisions – swish! Get the idea? Not worried about it. Because look – that is just kindergarten. To that you've got to add up, up, up, up on a great delicacy, on a great perception of what a pc's doing. All these things come on top of those basic skills. And you probably have to break a lot of bad habits, such as the way to run Level IV – "I know how to run Level IV. You sit back, and you look at the pc. And let him talk about his goals and GPMs. I know how to run Level IV." Well, you very soon will find out you don't know how to run Level IV, because it's the greatest discipliner in the world.

But once you've learned how to run it, once you've learned how to handle a pc, once you've learned how to handle a bank, there's actually very little to learning the rest of it. And you'll wind up at the other end of it wondering, "How in the name of God did I ever think this

was complicated? What's so complicated about this? There's nothing complicated about this! This is awful easy." But sometimes it takes a long time to get that point. Sometimes you arrive at that point, and I'll tell you the fast way to do it. Do it!

Thank you.

ATTACK AND GPMs

A lecture given on 21 October 1963

Thank you. Well, what's the date?

Audience: Twenty-first.

Male voice: October.

Octubre veintiuno, huh?

Male voice: Si.

AD 13. The reason you're getting this lecture on Monday instead of on Tuesday is because along about Thursday I have to wear the Washington legal hats and go up and solve their various difficulties for them. And the situation is that I've got to go up Wednesday afternoon and so forth, so you'll get your lectures oddly on odd days this week. All of which is a bunch of nonsense.

It's a spectacle of people defending. Defending. You know, you can defend yourself into more holes. And it just never occurred to them on this one suit that has been going for about five years, to attack anybody. Oh, that'd be very dangerous! You know? *Oh-ho-ho-o-o-o-o!* Very dangerous, you know, *ooooh-oh*, don't attack anybody. It's silly!

Look at the situation. Every time the enemy offers an attack, you defend against it. And that's all you do. Any castle, to hold out, has got to sortie. The proper strategy for any battle is to find a weak point in the enemy lines and attack it. The reason the United States is losing against communism is simply on these same mathematics. That they are losing is patent. All they're doing is defending the points attacked.

Oh, several years ago – on the – this Berlin thing before it really came up to a hot boil, you know? The United States has no – is not claiming any piece over there anyplace, and so is never – to be able – going to be able to swap Berlin for anything. The proper action is to go find something to collect, you see, as a piece. That's a proper action. Yet there they stand defending, defending, defending, defending. Well, don't they want to win?

How about an auditor that sits there and defends and defends and defends and defends and defends against the attack of a pc? How about it? And he never looks for the bypassed charge? He never does anything effective to straighten out the case? He just sits there and defends himself. Well, he'd last about two minutes. About the most dangerous thing you can do.

Look it over. It's the most unthetan thing you can do, certainly. You can defend to a certain degree and you have to defend to a certain degree. But use seventy-five percent of your energies to attack and you'll always win.

Find a weak spot and attack it. That's the point. That's the point. And attack expertly and attack perfectly and don't flub with the attack, that's all. Always put your concentration on the attack and you win every time.

People look awful silly two miles in your rear without any supplies, without any ammunition – with no supplies, with no defenses and no place to go. They attacked, all right. The whole front of the battle shifts. They attacked and you didn't defend. You went and destroyed their supply dump. It's very embarrassing to have this sort of thing happen, you see?

Now, the whole of life is an interchange if you're going to live. It's an interchange – an interchange activity. It's putting out anchor points. And let's look at the gradient scale of how you would go about this. Supposing you're just there all by yourself. And there's no limitation to your putting out anchor points, right? And you can put out anchor points. There's no limitation to this. You can put out as many anchor points as you like, you see?

Somebody else shows up and they say, "You shouldn't put out these anchor points," or "I want to make some of this – I want to have some of this space, too." And they put out anchor points against your anchor points, so you don't put out anchor points quite so far, you see? – talking about the Factors, now.

All right, and let's supposing that every time you put out an anchor point, why, somebody else forbade you to put out the anchor point, and you complied and agreed and didn't put out your anchor point. How big do you think you would be after a while? That's about how big you are now.

See, that's practically the way you got there – the way you got there. There's nothing quite as disturbing and there's nothing quite so certain to throw anybody into apathy, is just continue to put out your anchor points. It's the most disturbing activity that you can engage on. Everybody says, "You mustn't put out your anchor points," and you put out your anchor points. Then they give you lots of reasons why you shouldn't put out your anchor points and you put out anchor points. They bring all sorts of duress to bear on you why you shouldn't put out your anchor points and you put out anchor points. What's going to happen to their morale? See?

Now, sometimes it's very difficult to continue to put out anchor points in this particular way; sometimes you just get cut to ribbons. And it's those particular times that you got cut to ribbons you tend to remember as lessons not to attack, or lessons not to put out anchor points.

Now, the gradient scale on the thing goes, put out anchor points – in other words, continue to create your space – to attacking that which is preventing you from putting out your space. Now, that's also putting out anchor points, don't you see? And you get down along low human levels, and what are you then involved with? You're involved with attacking those who are preventing you from putting out anchor points. Attacking them.

Now, you go down scale just a little bit further. You start defending yourself against attacks. This causes you to live good, to have good behavior, to have various socially acceptable characteristics – all sorts of things. These things are basically defenses against attacks, direct attacks. Now you can go down scale even further than that: You have the defenses against possible attacks. And this causes people to live in castles and you know, dig moats

that nobody will ever think of ever charging against, you see? Invent weapons that have no particular use; invent social characteristics that are impossible to attack.

This causes you, in other words, to go down scale a bit further. Now, there's further down scale than that: is imagining you are under attack. That you are defending, answers itself out – answers itself out in this wise.

That you are defending yourself – you understand, this is the – now let me point back to you the level of the scale just above this – possible attacks, see? Level – you know, possible attacks. You're not being attacked, you're simply preparing yourself to defend possible attacks. See, now just below that there is a point that because there are all these defenses, there *therefore must be attacks*. You see, it proves itself. Well, you got a moat dug all the way around the place! Obviously, there must be somebody going to ride across that moat.

Some of the screens that a thetan puts up are terribly entrancing. These screens are very, very entrancing, because they leave them up forever. Why did they put them up in the first place? Well, they put them up against a lion. All right, the lion might still be there. See, you would have to take the screen down to find out. You don't dare take the screen down because you'd be attacked if the lion were still there.

This causes a very funny action. You can get a thetan, you know, a pc, and get him to find one of these black screens and get him to pick up one little corner of it and peek around it real fast and it reads – sometimes he'll really have to get his nerve up to do it. And he will. Hell see something like a mocked up lion or a snake or something on the other side of the black screen.

See, one of his answers of confronting is cover it up so he can't – won't have to confront it, you see, black it out. There is the final – final mechanism of a defense. Permanent defenses lead to a belief that one is under attack. When you get way down scale, you – it's – must be that you're under attack because there's the defenses. Somebody must be ready to launch the rockets at you any moment because, heh! Here are all these radars waiting to detect them. And of course, the more one defends the less one becomes mobile – one is less and less mobile. So therefore, actually, he never gets out to look.

He never goes out to look, to see if there are any attackers. And I imagine there are nations on planets someplace in this galaxy, at this very moment, who have no neighbors but who believe implicitly that those neighbors are there with full armies ready to attack them; and that live a life of complete defense, complete immobility, never going abroad, carrying through all of the various survival activities, to them, to prevent an attack against nations which are no longer there, that have long since gone to dust.

A GPM, in essence, is such a mechanism. One has a defense up against an area of confusion. He has a stable datum all arranged to take care of an area of confusion that has long since ceased to exist. Thetan eventually traps himself.

The GPMs then are a long history of all of the things which ever attacked him, and those things might now be gone.

What do you think the chances of your opponents of trillions one hundred – get that enormous figure. Trillions one hundred. Trillions written one hundred times. Think of the number of zeros that this puts up: Your enemies of trillions one hundred, still being alive and kicking and ready to knock your block off. What do you think it is? And yet you have all the

defenses for that period all rigged and all the stable data already there with those defenses against those confusions and attackers of trillions one hundred. And that, in actual fact, is what a thetan is doing.

He still has up all of the mechanisms of defense, and he – these mechanisms of defense are usually stable data, identities, beingnesses. And he still believes implicitly in the existence of the attackers – these confusions and chaotic areas, and so forth – he still believes those things are still there ready to bite him.

He became balanced in his attack-defense characteristics. He was defending as hard as he was being attacked and quite accidentally brought about a balance. You wonder how did anyone ever sit down and plan all this to happen? They never did. They would postulate a hundred goals, but one of them worked so well that it lasted for twenty or thirty pairs of items. See, you got lots of actual goals. Why didn't all these actual goals crystallize into GPMS? No, there would only be one of them at a time would crystallize as the single solution – one at a time would become the single solution. And then it would accumulate onto itself all of the stable data and all of the types of attack which could be made by reason, by the way, of having the solution.

One never looked at the fact that the way one got all this trouble was to have a solution for it. He always looked at it that he had to have the solution to keep out of all this trouble. He never really thought that the reverse occurred, but actually it was the reverse which did occur.

Now, all of these various complicated attacks and defenses and methods of keeping his self going, and all that sort of thing, these things swept along, rigged up each one of them as an emergency action. An emergency action is basically a timeless action, so everything was rigged to go into instantaneous operation. And he licked himself by doing this. He practically ruined himself because all of these things are built to be instantaneous and therefore to have no time associated with them; so therefore, to float, in essence, in present time.

And the characteristic of a GPM, because it's an emergency characteristic, is to always be recontacted in present time.

So this is the genus, this is the genus of the pc's actual GPMS – the Goals Problem Mass. The problem inevitably is postulate-counter-postulate. There is the attacker, and he wants to do something – Lord knows what. And there's his characteristic. His characteristic as viewed from the terminal side is of course one of chaos, one of tremendous confusion, one of unpredictability. And yet, it is still a central postulate that is guiding that.

So, one puts up against all this confusion, of course, the counter-postulate which resolves the confusion. And when those things hang in exact balance, you get a pair of items which then accumulate tremendous quantities of mass. And if you want to see some fancy mental mass, you ought to start trying to swim through a GPM. Can't be done. It's just fantastic. You can only get through a real, an actual GPM by running it by R4M2. It has to be run.

And then it winnows away, because it's taken away and taken to pieces on the exact basis that it was built, but backwards. You see, you take the last feared attack and defense mechanism first, which is the end of the GPM, the top of the GPM. And you run that earlier down to the formation of it. And, of course, the immediacy of the situation runs backwards to the formation of the situation.

It was lived from goal to top, don't you see? Goal as an RI, to top. And when you take it apart, you take it apart from the top down to the bottom, and then it will all fall apart.

Actually, you can't pull the goal as an RI out from underneath the GPM because it's too heavily overburdened and won't blow apart. A GPM will never run upwards. You very often will be fooled as an auditor: You've decided to run this particular GPM, you've landed in the middle and you decided to run it up to the top. And you're not going to make it.

You will get all of these items, and they will all be very, very logical. And then all of a sudden you will suddenly realize that you have run from the middle to the bottom. It's very horrifying. It's very horrifying. You have the order, then, on the line plot, in exact reverse because you started in at the bottom and tried to go to the top. A GPM will always unfold from the top to the bottom, and that's the only way the GPM will unfold.

The goal as an RI will not discharge. And you really can't get the charge off of it if you pick it out from the bottom of the GPM and try to discharge it and one of its items. Discharge that pair against each other, and you get nothing. Oh yeah, so you get a blowdown on your meter and that sort of thing. It's interesting that when you go to the top and run all the way to the bottom again, then they are fully charged. Bang. You just run into them again, they're all fully charged.

Furthermore, it was very hard on your pc to grab those two bottom RIs – very, very hard on your pc to grab those bottom RIs and try to run them. Everything will really go creak with exclamation points.

Now, the general situation with regard to GPMS, then, is that they are mechanisms of defense of a certain kind of order; they're also, of course, mechanisms of attack. And the scale which I just gave you will be found in the characteristic of the various items. A person will be trying to do one or another of these levels and it all adds up to just postulate-counterpostulate – a pair of RIs and a GPM, see?

One of the most hideous of the items is the pass-clean-away type of item. Trying to list for that item will be the most lengthy thing that you undertook. The item which you were listing for – and you don't know what the item will be, of course, while you're listing for it – is "Who or what would oppose a bore," b-o-r-e, you see? And supposing the item that you're looking for would be "fainting." Or you can see some Victorian society or something like that, some girl is confronted with this fellow who is a bore, and she uses as a mechanism, you see, to faint, see? See? And the item is "fainting." And man, you will just list and list and list and list and list and list and list, and all of a sudden it pops to view.

It's the least conscious item, so the pc is least conscious of it. The length of the list, then, is to some degree regulated by this other factor of the consciousness contained in the item being listed for.

You will find a goal "to be brilliant" – taking it over into GPM goals – "to be brilliant" much more rapidly than you will find a goal "to be hidden." But this is monitored by the fact that the pc's ambition at the top is to oppose everything that is hidden. And sometimes, when they're too extreme, they reverse, and you find the most hidden ones first. "To be hidden" may be found with great rapidity. Why is this? The last pair, of course, finds the pc like someone opposed to hiding, and the oppterm, "hiding." So, of course, the pc will come up with this

goal "to be hidden." Bang, see? That's because the top RIs disclose it by being in reverse, you see?

Look over the old goals "to scream," that sort of pattern, you'll see what I'm talking about. The goal becomes an enemy by the time the pc is through with it, so you'll get a reversal. Conversely, because of this factor, "to be easily found" as a goal, "to be easily found" might be the last one that you'll recover on the list because of the reversal factor of the RIs.

These factors of variability, however, don't necessarily apply in the GPMs to the tremendous degree that they appear in items. The items, of course, there's nothing else to disclose it except the item and its oppterm – the terminal and its oppterm. And they are always disclosed to the degree that the pc's consciousness is reflected in their wording. "An aggressive person," list one item. See? "A retiring person," list length: twenty items. Get the idea? "A fainting person," list length: thirty items. "A dead person," list length: forty-nine items. You get the idea?

You almost know what you're looking for after a while when you know your business. You know how conscious this thing will or will not be, because you can establish it by the length of the list.

That's true of both terminals and oppters. The least consciousness in the oppterm, or the more danger in the oppterm, will reflect in the length of list. The confrontability of the thing is reflected in its dangerousness.

Actually, a pc doesn't so much sheer off of the dangerousness as the oppterm, as its undisclosed nature. "Hidden men," for instance, would be found much more lengthily than "visible people." See, "visible people." Bang! That's right there. That's one on the list, see? But "hidden men," why, that might very well go twenty-five, thirty items long on the RI list, as you're listing for it. Get the idea?

GPMs, however, do not necessarily follow this characteristic because of the pair on the top oppterm reversing the sense of the GPM, see? So, "to be hidden" becomes sometimes the most easily found GPM. But, a middle-ground GPM is therefore the most consistently difficult to discover; a null sort of meaning that neither offers itself nor hides itself. And those become the hardest to find goals. You might say, "to be average." That will become the toughest goal to find, "to be average."

You find a goal like "to need." Of course, it's liable to present itself, bang! Right now. Or, also to refuse itself. It all depairs [depends] on where in the GPM the person is stuck.

Anyway, give you – giving you some sort of an insight into GPMs in general, the attack-defense mechanisms of life are reflected in the GPMs. These are the conditions of actual livingness that the pc has lived through. And it is their variety and assortment that gives you the different personalities of pcs. And it is only this variety and assortment, unless of course there is a native state which causes a pc to postulate a different variety from another pc, which we're not in a position to examine well. And I would prefer at the moment to say it is the type of GPM which is monitoring the conduct of the pc. And as far as you're concerned, that's perfectly valid, because he made those GPMs in the first place.

It was *he* who imagined the attacking source and the confusion of the oppterm, see? The pc did that, all with his own little paws. And it was he who dreamed up the ideal answer to that situation. He did that all with his own little thetan-esque. It was he who did that.

So, the net result of the situation is that a GPM is the creation of the thetan. It follows out fantastically mathematical lines. Just as thetans made a universe which had so many molecules in hydrogen and so many in lead, so did they make in their personalities this pattern called the GPM, the Goals Problem Mass.

These things are huge black islands that float in the bank, and they have actual measurement – they have actual size, actual measurement, actual mass. They are not in the least bit imagined. They are simply there; they have been created in countless activities and attacks, each of those pairs have been created – the hard way.

The length of time which a GPM covers is – tends to be greater early on the track and lesser, closer to present time. In other words, it's taking a thetan, at this stage of the game, less time to make a GPM than early on the track. Trillions twenty-nine, that's trillion written twenty-nine times, to trillions twenty is about the length from goal as an RI to the two top oppters closest to present time of a GPM on the track, see, for that area of the track.

Now, we go back. Let's go back around the hundreds mark, and we may find that the goal as an RI, when the goal was postulated, would be at trillions one hundred and ten; and that the goal did not finish off until trillions ninety-four years ago, see? Hundred and ten to ninety-four, that's longer, isn't it? Considerably longer to take that RI to goal. And now we go back around the two hundred – trillions two hundred. We're not talking now about two hundred trillions, you know, we're talking about trillions two hundred. Trillions written two hundred times. Trillion, trillion, trillion ... Eh – see? A trillion, trillion, trillion – go two hundred of those – years ago, see? And we find that a GPM is more likely to occupy an area that would cover forty trillions forty. See, more likely that type of an area.

But remember, because of the nature of the time track, you have a shortening characteristic to time, which is one of the things that covers this. And those time spans earlier – now don't get me wrong on this, you become very involved – are in actual fact longer. Those time periods are actually longer. That's only an arithmetical trick that they're longer, it isn't that time was longer. It wasn't necessarily true that people moved slower. But you consumed more time for the same amount of activity.

Well, I'll give you some kind of an idea. The aircraft here on this planet at this particular time: a winged fan-job aircraft lasted about twenty-five years. It's archaic. Now I can't even get the kids to look at them now. And the total time from their development to their de-nouement, actually, the total lapsed period – I'm not talking, now, about the time of their commercial application, war use and that sort of thing – but the total period, the actual total period was really around about fifty years.

Well, in other times and places, and not too long ago either, a winged fan-jobbed aircraft of the same design was good enough for a civilization for a billion years. That's all the aircraft they'd have for a billion years, see? Now, we go a bit earlier on the track, and we find that aircraft not only would suffice for a billion years but it was the same kind of aircraft from trillions two hundred to trillions one hundred. You get the idea?

People have exaggerated ideas of the different characteristics of civilizations on the track and science fiction writers particularly. Ray Bradbury, and so forth, have got to fill everything up with *boogies and woogies and boggies*, and so forth. These boys have a ball. And they try to dream up these oddball civilizations of one kind or another, and so forth. Well, in

actual fact, man is not that imaginative. And thetans really aren't that imaginative. They tend to move up to this average type and very, very little off of that type.

So that a civilization, a humanoid civilization of 450 trillion years ago, it might be just a bit upscale from the 1920 civilization that has just passed by here on earth, but it lasted a lot longer. You see, you have to have agreement on the part of people and it takes a lot of people living a lot of pattern, you see, to finally agree that this is the beingness and doingness and havingness that amounts to this civilization. They all recognize it as type seven; medieval. This is type seven, medieval. Ah, yes! Therefore, we have varlets, you see, and we have funny looking church doors and we have a bunch of religious loops and we know what this is all about. We have Gothic architecture. Oh, yeah. Yeah. Oh, sure. So, if we're going to paint anything or we're going to evolve in any way, we evolve just exactly along type seven civilization, see?

You build a car – you build a car. Why is it that everybody knows this is a futuristic-type car that is a space opera age car? Because that is the car that is used in a space opera type civilization. I mean, it's as elementary as that. See? They've been building them since time immemorial, see? These things are as – much more ancient than the pyramids, and the funny part of it is there are pyramids much more ancient than the pyramids. The United States government carries this eye and a pyramid on the back of its dollar bill. It's one of – the back of the seal, the great seal of the United States.

It's very interesting that even symbols drift along the lines. That total symbol given there, complete, is an old entrance to a theta trap from way back about – ages ago, ages ago – something on the order of trillions eight years ago. There's the complete obverse seal of the United States – complete with the eye, everything else. Thetans used to approach it and get all snarled up in it, and get incarcerated in the pyramid, and so forth. A rather silly trap. The implant was done with cards being held up to slots in the pyramid. And I suppose the card lodges in somebody's head as a bill, don't you see, or something like that. So they somehow or other associate it: is that the proper thing to put on money? I wouldn't know what the hell. Unless money is a trap.

But the – you see, you're dealing with a basic response pattern on the part of a being and he responds to certain stimuli in his environment that he would consider normal for his particular type or characteristic of existence at any given time. And he adds up all sorts of things.

You give a certain number of these elements. You give elements. Well, let's give the elements of a Gothic cathedral sitting in the middle of a plain, you see, and some fellows in funny looking flare-top shoes with pointed toes. If you were just to go that far, some other thetan is going to come along and he's going to stimulus-response on this whole thing. And he's going to say, "Oh, I know now what we should do," you see, and fix up a cobble street, see, that has got a bad turn in it that you can't get a cart down, you see? It's very careful, you see?

And some other thetan will come along and put a certain type of inn – it must go out over the street, don't you see? And he knows what to do with – there, you see? And next thing you know, everybody knows what belongs here. I mean, you've got – the civilization is all built, you see? Anybody coming into it carries it forward – carries forward on this pat-

tern – because that's the only thing everybody else will agree to automatically. In other words, you got a prepatterned agreement. You see?

Well, that's civilizations. And if a thetan is exact on these civilizations, so is he exact on his responses in building GPMS. He considers certain things as dangerous and certain things as defensive. And he considers certain attacks as the best and certain other things as the best and certain things don't belong and he's got this all variously sorted out. And he eventually builds up a GPM that's very patterned.

You won't find any difference from one GPM to the next on any pc. You will find no difference whatsoever except the wording of the goal and the exact wording of the RIs. All else is the same. All the mechanics of the whole thing is the same. It's all built the same way, and so forth.

This fellow has a GPM "to be cold." And it's got thirty pairs in it. And the top oppterm, which is the furthest enemy he has, will be some expression of the first postulate of the goal. It'll be "coldness" or something like that. And "somebody who doesn't like cold" or "a warm person," will be its terminal. You see, it's reversed, now, up at the top. You get this, just GPM after GPM. Now all the GPMS are like that, and they all decline from way early backtrack to present time in the same order. The items are there to resolve. See, so the terminal resolves the oppterm but the goals oppose each other.

And one of the more serious mistakes you're going to make in all this is not making the pc answer the goal oppose question, as a goal oppose. You read some of these lists, man, they're wild, wild, wild! That's no wonder that the guy is never getting anyplace and overlisting himself and going crazy in the bargain. Because the toughest job is listing a goals list. This is most exhausting on the preclear; it is the least rewarding; it's liable to get you into the most errors. It's a rough – it's a rough one. It's a rough one.

After you've opposed this goal for two hours, it suddenly occurs to you to recheck the goal for an actual GPM, you find out the goal you're listing was only an implant GPM to begin with. Why do you learn that now? Well, because by listing you've under – you've taken away the overburden, you see? You've undermined it, so it'll now read more properly, see? And your list is going on and on and on.

Well, you don't keep on going on and on and on with this list. You better start investigating the goal you're listing from. And you'll find out that although it read as an actual GPM when you first contacted it, and everybody was happy and cheerful with it, in the meantime it has become sufficiently cleaned up that it can be recognized better in the mind. And we find out that it was just an – just an actual goal, it wasn't – it had no GPM connected with it or it was just an implant GPM; you shouldn't be monkeying with it anyway, and so forth. And you just have to abandon that because your incomplete list, of course, is the one you got it off of. So you go back and complete its list. And it takes you out to an actual GPM. And now this one checks out as actual far better because the bank in that area is – overburden is taken off of it, and you'll get that more reliably now.

Now you go ahead and oppose that much more thoroughly, and you go on up the line and you get a proper opposition. You say, "We're really swinging, everything is fine, everything is checking out, the pc is comfortable, you checking right on up to present time. We're going to do goal opposes right on up to present time." And you get about four later. And all of

a sudden the pc turns on the creaks, and you don't know whether he's coming or going and so forth. And you find out the last four you find, actually, belong earlier than the fifth back, and they're all out of sequence and they belong on the early track. Well, why could you find it out now? Well, you've taken enough charge off, so that now somebody can read the stuff.

So you start in again with the one that was five back, and you start opposing forward from it and you'll eventually make it. It's a horrible activity. It's really grim. It's hell on the pc; it's misery on the auditor; it takes far longer than you would possibly imagine. And you're starting out with a liability that you find it's very hard to find an original goal on a pc in the first place anyway. This is the roughest.

But the biggest thing that gets in your road as you go along the line, the biggest, roughest, meanest thing that gets in your road all the way along the line consistently and continually is the fact that the pc does not answer the auditing question.

Now, this is no reason you should nag the pc unduly, but it can be pointed out very definitely to the pc if it looks to you like the pc isn't answering the auditing question.

Let me give you an example: You will look over a list which is going endlessly, and the goal is "to be cold," see? And you're opposing "Who or w..." or you're opposing, "What goal would oppose 'to be cold'?" And that is your auditing question, see? That's your question that you're asking.

And the pc is saying ... I – don't pull him up if he lists one or two wrong, see, because he's bound to. But if it's – list is getting just absolutely filled up with this kind of thing: "To be old," "to be young," "to have a hat" that might possibly have something to do with "to be cold," "to be an engineer," might have something to do with "to be cold," don't you see? "To be tall," "to be tall," "to love someone." Well, you say, "Well, that might have something to do with 'to be cold.'" "Yes, yes, that probably is all right." "To be harassed," "to eat candy." Well, that also might oppose "to be cold." "To be lukewarm." Of course, that, of course, might oppose "to be cold." You're all – you're all right, see? You give him the benefit of the doubt, see?

But, when you go back down a list, and you start looking over a list, "to be cold," see? All right. And the goal is "to be a warrior," "to be rich," "to have fine things," "to like people," "to like my mother," "to have a hat," you see, "to jump a long distance," "to be cheerful about life," "to be optimistic," "to throw things." You start wondering what the hell is going on here, see?

What's going on here? Well, what's going on is the pc is answering this question: "What might the goal be?" See? The pc is running a new "whatsit" on himself. "What might the goal be?" And this is very common for a pc to do this; and it's quite destructive, it's quite disastrous when he does.

No, you want it *oppose*, man! "To be cold." "What goal would oppose to be cold?"

"*To be hot,*" "*to not be cold.*" You got the idea? *Oppose*, man! We want an oppose.

Well, you're up against – if you nag a pc too much, particularly with R4 technology, you want – don't want to nag a pc too much. But if I was having this trouble with a pc, I'd rather point it out to him. "Now, let's make sure that you're getting oppose. Oppose. What does it seem to you that would oppose this, now?" And also check, once in a while, until my

pc got used to it and got educated along the lines, "You're not answering what – what might the goal be, or something like that, are you?" Until he suddenly has learned better, why, I would keep a very tight rein on him. Because that can be the most exhausting thing.

Now, if you're going to cut into the goals line – if you're going to cut into the goals line someplace and list on up the line, the closer to PT that you can cut in, the better off you are. Now, nothing in what I've said has told you to nag a pc or upset him or invalidate his answers, because you're dealing with dynamite. It's just you be alert to this condition. Because when I tell you that when it exists and the pc is consistently doing this to you, you haven't a prayer to find the right goal on that list. You just haven't got a prayer.

Pc is answering one question, you're asking another question and it's "oppose." The next goal, believe me, will not be a goal that resolves, it'll be a goal that opposes. The items resolve with each other, but the goals oppose each other. "To be tall," "to be short," see? "To stay..... to leave." "To be alive," "to be dead." See? These are the way these things go. They're a flip-flop dichotomy all the way up the line, you see? "To be generous," "to be stingy." See? They just bang, bang. And until you learn this well from your own experience, you yourself are going to make a lot of trouble because you can't tell by inspection what's going on.

You have this goal – you have this goal "to sing a beautiful song," and you perfectly, willingly buy the next goal to it, as "to be responsible." And the pc will say, "Well, you see, it really figures out this way. You see, I mean, if you're – if you're responsible, then you haven't got any time to sing, and so forth, and so forth and so forth..."

Well, let him get away with it, don't ever argue with the meter; the goal read and that sort of thing. But let's just check this out real hard and let's be awful sure that there's no GPMS skipped, because you're liable to find out there's six, ten, twenty GPMS been skipped between these two goals. They're both actual goals except it skipped a lot of GPMS.

It's remarkable the gradient by which the goals change. It starts "to be hot" and "to be cold" and goes off gradually, you see, "to be chilly," you see? You know, and "to be warm." See? It's more positive and then less positive, less positive, less positive, less positive – but they're harmonics. And it isn't until you get to PT that you get oddball goals. Up toward PT in the last few trillion years there's some oddball goals start occurring.

Now, it doesn't mean that these things don't oppose. Oh yes, they do but they get trickier. Why? They're into the think band. You no longer have got this beautiful bang-bang-bang sort of a situation going on: "To stay!" "To leave!" don't you see? The guy has come down, now, on a dwindling spiral of harmonics until it's very hard to get an opposite.

How do you get an opposite "to be – to be scintillant" you see? All right. Well, all right, "to be scintillant." We'll get an opposite there, "to be dead." No, that wouldn't it. "To be dull." Oh, that possibly might be the opposite. But let's now oppose "to be dull," and we get "to say bright things." Now, that's a more complicated goal, you see, because it's got more think in it. Now, "to say bright things" – how do we oppose "to say bright things?" We're getting up toward PT now, you see? "To say bright things" is opposed in some outlandish fashion – it doesn't mean that you won't have a short, sharp goal there, either, like "to be secretive," or something. But it's usually "to be reticent around people," or "to be reticent" or something of this particular character.

It's slowing down, in other words. Now how will we oppose "to be reticent?" *Tsk!* Well, the guy is actually getting – getting hard put, you see, to get his opposites. We aren't in any positive communication line, here, you see? "To speak well." Now, early on the track it would just be "to speak," see, but now we're getting a modifier – "to speak well," and so on. And "to speak well" is opposed by "not to stutter badly." See, how it's caving in? Now, how do you oppose "not to stutter badly," you see? Well, this goes out "to have something to say," see, as the opposition or something to that.

Something wild going on here. We're getting a diminution don't you see? There's less latitude.

Early on the track – early on the track you're liable to get something like, "to be powerful," see, followed by "to be weak." See, that's good opposition, see? But late on the track, not that broad span, you see? And you can just pick them up on the Tone Scale. You can look at the Tone Scale – the big Tone Scale that goes all the way south. And you'll find these PT goals are all down around the lower part of the Tone Scale and are apt to be more wordy.

Well, so much for that. Your pc, in other words, starts out big, tough, strong, broad, *bang! Bang!* Opposites, you see? "To be black!" "To be white!" You know? *Bang! Bang!* You see? And he ends up "to not be so gray," you see, "to not be so gray" and "to be gray occasionally," you see? And you're getting a narrower span, if you get the idea. Very positive, he wants to be gray occasionally, see?

You haven't got this type of activity – *yayayruyruya*. He's going through life the same way, you know. Limp-gimp, limp-gimp, limp-gimp. You get these complications.

Now, the RIs – the RIs always match the goal, but they don't contain the goal's wording in it, in an actual GPM. That's only an implant GPM. You seldom have the goal wording in an RI. "To be weak" would have "a timid fellow" opposing "a bellicose individual," see, or something, or "bellicose people." You don't have "a weak person," you see, opposing "people who hate weakness." That was your – that was your GPM implant influence. You're much more likely to get something offbeat.

Well, it doesn't rule out, it is what it is. But you look down an actual GPM and you'll see – very seldom you will see the words of the goal; you'll only see the sense of the goal. You'll see the sense of it, but you won't see any of the words of the goal – or seldom do.

Although, up at the top oppterm, it's quite common to have the sense of the goal appearing as the top oppterm. It's also, occasionally, you go from the top into a dwindle. And on an implant RI at the – as the top oppterm, an implant, why, you'll get up there on a goal "to be..." – "to end," something like that, you get "ended." See? Well, on an actual GPM, it'll be something like "end" or "the end" or "ending" and that's quite common. But then it's liable to dwindle twice or three times after this, you see? "My own ending," see? It's liable to be a top-per top oppterm, and a little more to them.

In other words, they didn't know enough Scientology in order to audit these things right and so they didn't get the right pattern. The implant GPM gives you, actually, how close they could guess to the pattern, which gave you a – just about what they thought; because, frankly, between you and me, if they'd put in an actual GPM pattern, you would've had a hell of a time. An implant pattern as itself doesn't get in your road hardly at all except as the goal,

because the goals are quite accurate. Thetans do have goals worded just like that. That's dead-on.

So much so, that if you wanted to find somebody's goal, just take a whole list of implant goals – take a whole list of Helatrobus Implant goals – one way or the other. Read them off to the pc. "Which one of these is your actual goal?" One of them will finally go tick. And you say, "Good." Check it out, get it to RR, start goal opposing it, on up to PT.

In other words, their rendition of the goals was quite accurate but the rendition of RIs; they couldn't audit. They couldn't audit. They really couldn't get enough down in the bank to find out what they really were. Had they done so, we would be in awful trouble, because you couldn't tell your RIs one or the other. For instance, I always – you don't – if you're running a pc properly, you almost never get an RI with modern – an implant RI in an actual GPM line plot – if you're running it properly. You'd have to be overlisting, you'd have to have an ARC broke, chopped up pc, you'd have to be listing on a wrong goal or something would have to be wildly out of sequence. You'd have to be doing something real goofy. As long as you don't do something real goofy, you don't get them. And then you will see things start to appearing [appear]. The goal "to end," you see? Oo-oh. That is in an – that's in a pc's actual GPM? Like hell it is! We didn't know it earlier, but that's all implant RIs.

Actually, the goal declines with great speed in an actual GPM. Before it's gone a fifth of its distance, it's more or less around the bend as far as the pc is concerned. They're real short at the bottom. Quite interesting. It takes a long time for them to go to pieces at the top. But the crossover point – when the oppterm and the terminal tend to balance with relationship to the goal, see, they tend to be more or less of the same value – that crossover point is much closer to the bottom than it is to the top.

You sometimes go up the line eight items, just four pairs, and you get the crossover. And then you may go ten more pairs to get to the top of the bank. See what I mean? Ten pairs to the top of the bank and only four pairs to the bottom of the bank from the point where the pc is no longer on the – what you call on the side of the goal.

Do you a lot of good to look over line plots, implant line plots, and that sort of thing, just see how these things are. Of course, it's very hard to be analytical and rational while looking at that much dynamite, but don't try to run them on himself [yourself] and don't try to repeat them endlessly yourself and don't make anybody memorize one, and you'll be all right.

But, as far as goals and RIs are concerned, you have much more to worry about – you're worrying about much more than you really think. There's much more that you think there is there to worry about than there is. There's lots less to worry about, for sure. You can dream up more things in this to worry about than anybody could easily count or counter. The best way to put it is simply this: Run with absolute accuracy, R4M2 delivers the truth into your hands and through the meter and onto your line plots; and run with any variation of any kind whatsoever, will deliver you a bunch of balderdash.

When you're used to living with the truth for a while, and you've had it added up on *you* a few times, why, you get very used to what the stuff is and you ... Ah, well, it looks good to you or it looks false to you. Funny part of it is that R4M2 carried through without any departure, whatsoever, will deliver the right stuff. And that is quite a testimony to a technique, but it's that way worked out.

The varieties that you will get into – the variations you will get into, come on accidental departures that you're not aware of until they've already happened. Now I'll give you an idea of this now. Here's an accidental departure: You get a GPM and you're opposing it, and by golly, you can't get a GPM on the list. You go fifty past the last RI [RR] and the whole thing nulls out. *Uuulph!* What happened?

Well, R4M2 requires that you have an actual GPM as your departure point. And by some fluke or another, the GPM you got read as a an actual GPM and wasn't – some reason or other you missed. So you had this GPM "to sneeze," and you are listing "Who or what would oppose to sneeze?" And you were taking off, trying to get it up to present time, don't you see?

And you list a list, that goal oppose list. And the pc is answering the question, everything is going along fine. But you list fifty beyond the last rocket reading item, you list there actually till there's not any slash or bash to the needle, you know? It's just exactly according to the book. And you go back and these are all source lists, so you null them one by one, you know? I've seen more than one of them, the goal did not rocket read when put on the list. It only rocket read when the whole list was nulled. It'll drive you around the bend. So you might as well short-circuit any fancy actions; you just do the list and you null the list, that is all. And if the goal is on it, it'll read. It's as elementary as that.

Well, you've got fifty beyond the last RR, and there you are, and you've nulled it all out and you haven't got a goal and you're sitting there chewing your fingernails – "What do I do now?" Well, it's very elementary. The technique required that you take off from an actual GPM. And in this case it was "to sneeze." Now, "to sneeze" has been shined up and a lot of charge taken off of the area by reason of listing. Check it out again, and you'll find out that you were taking off from an implant GPM. *Heh-heh-heh-heh.* You're opposing an implant GPM.

Now if it still checks out – if it still checks out as an actual GPM, you – in other words, you check out your departure point again, see? – the goal that you're listing from. And if that checked out very nicely, then you had better look over this list and find out what happened that you didn't find the goal on it.

Now the first action that you undertake is to ask the question. And the question you should ask for test is this question: "What goal would oppose this 'to sneeze' GPM?" And then you don't hang the goal on the end of the sentence and so get a tick or a swish from calling the goal. But of course you append that additional syllable onto the end of it, and you will find that your list probably reads incomplete. It now ticks. So, in that particular case, we will be charitable and say you didn't miss an RR as you listed in that fifty, but we will extend the list. And you extend the list and you'll find out there were some more RRs all of a sudden. And then you go back and null what you added to, and you will find the goal staring you in the face.

This type of cross-check, in other words. You always suppose in R4M2 that the pattern has been followed. And if the pattern you're following – that is to say that the exact technique has been followed and if that has not then produced a result, you then assume that the technique was not followed and you look for where in it wasn't it followed. It's as elementary as this, don't you see? I mean, if nothing goes wrong, if you can get that firmly straightened out. Something...

The variations which you see will be all sorts of goofball stuff. For instance, you get into a lot of goofball stuff, don't worry about that, you will. Pc is in a horrible creak. The last four – everything is just going *brrrrrrrrr!* – and the last four goals which you found; you check them over; they're actual GPMS. They properly oppose the goal they came from – the opposed goal. There are no skipped or missed GPMS. Pc is in a creak. Well, where is it? Must be an incomplete goals list someplace.

Well, R4M2 probably... well, it wasn't followed with the fifth goal back. Well, you check out four, it didn't occur to you to check the fifth. You were taking off from the supposition – you're taking off from the supposition that you – the fifth goal behind you was accurate. And the next four goals you found were perfectly all right, but unfortunately they fit on the early track – as I just gave you earlier – they fit on the early track because the goals list that you did on the fifth goal back was an improperly done list. Grim, huh?

This is the sort of thing that you can shudder about happening to you. But it happens. The only thing you do to repair R4M2 is just go back and pick up and do R4M2. I mean, it's as elementary as that. You must have overlisted a list if you skipped items.

You don't worry today on item lists of having two rocket reading items. I have seen six rocket reading items on the same RI list. You went around three corners. You went this way and that way and that way and that way. You couldn't get the pc shut up, and they gave you the next four or five RRs [RIs]. Fortunately, they all fired. And you start nulling the thing, everything is firing. Maddest thing you ever saw in your life. Go back up and pick up the first firing item and give it to the pc; don't torture the pc by listing an item list forever. Never extend an item list. Always shorten item lists; only extend goals lists. Goals lists are ordinarily underlisted and item lists are ordinarily overlisted. The only item list you can be absolutely sure is not overlisted is a one-item list – be absolutely sure that it is not overlisted.

Anything else is to be regarded with suspicion. That doesn't mean it doesn't sometimes take the pc thirty, forty items to get his item on the list. Doesn't mean that it doesn't. But you start going at that rate, and you have a lot of blowdowns and a lot of fire, and a lot of this and that, you must have missed everything under the sun, man, you just better stop him. And then go back up and carefully try to find the first item you can make rocket read on that item list. Find the *first* one you can make rocket read. My God! don't find the last one. Got the idea? Because you're going to take him right around the corner.

You assume, in listing items – here's some new data on this – you assume on listing items, every time, that *if something RRs, it is an RI*. Anything on an item list, if it RRs, it's an RI. And you assume that the pc will put the right item highest on the list. He won't list around in a circle and back up to it. He just keeps going and lists himself into another GPM, or down at the bottom of this one. So make them brief And you don't care one continental cotton-picking moment whether it's an RR or a *raow-raow* or a *blu-yew* or whether or not it has a proper curly tail on its "Q," as long as that thing, when called, will send that needle traveling at least three-quarters of that dial away and *blow* down, we don't care what the characteristic of the read is.

Fall, long – long, fast fall, even a slow fall – if it blows down; if it doesn't blow down, it's not the item. But I've also rarely seen a pc fail to cognite on the item, and it wouldn't blow down. Pc saying, "Men. Men. No, no, that couldn't be the item. I detest them, you know, that couldn't be the item. Men. No, no, that couldn't be the item. No. Men – men just wouldn't op-

pose women, that's all. I mean, it's the same breed of cat, they're both human, that's just not the item," and so forth. The thing is falling every time, but no blowdown. And so forth, and "couldn't be... Oh, men! Oh-ho-ho! Oh, men!" *Psssswww!* Blowdown. I've seen that happen, but that's rather rare.

And there's the other side of the thing. The pc is saying, "But it's cabbages. It is cabbages. That is the item – cabbages." "Cabbages." It doesn't read. "But it is cabbages!" "Cabbages." You buy that, it won't read and it won't blow down; the pc is on a big sell. And you buy that, you're liable to wrap him around a telegraph pole and throw the whole bank out of line in an awful hurry. But once in a blue moon after you have listed a few more items, cabbages suddenly unburdens. And you go back and call it, and it reads and blows down and the pc sits there in an exhausted state. And he says, "But I told you it was cabbages!"

You don't read it unless you can get it to go *wham* and blow down. And I mean, you don't give it to the pc. But do everything you can to give him his item, if he thinks that's it, because very often he's quite right. It's just that he – you haven't got enough charge off it, or it's too suppressed, or he's asserting it too hard, or he's getting too desperate or some other reason.

I know one list that went three pages, which is unheard of in item listing. Three pages the thing went! And at the end of that time, the pc just going *zzzzulh!* see? Had been calling an item that was about the fourth item on the list. I couldn't make it read, see? And after three pages, went back and called the fourth item on the list and almost blew the meter apart. Freak, freak – little freaky exception to the situation. They are not the general run of things. They can happen. That's about the only thing that upsets you about things like this.

If you can't get a goal to read, don't ever give the pc a goal. Goals read beautifully when they read. But goals will sometimes hang up the same way. You only get a tick. Pc is saying, "Well, that's my goal!" and *raow-raow*, and so forth, and you only get a tick. And, *tsk!* No blowdown and only a tick? Extend your list; get a few more off, go back and read it, and it now reads. Pc sits there and says, "I told you so! I told you so! I told you so! *Nyah-nyah-nyah!*" Well, let the pc say that all he wants to. You give the pc a goal that won't rocket read and blow down, you give the pc an item that won't slash – you know, go – and blow down – and the pc is going to be in trouble.

Sometimes you have a hard time making them – making them read and blow down, but you can do it.

Now, the less mid ruds you use in this line of country, the better off you are. But you shouldn't eschew them utterly. It's suppress and invalidate that takes care of the goals and items, most ordinarily, just those two – suppress and invalidate. And you take care of the session with a protest and decide. Those are your best working tools when it comes to straightening up the session, and that sort of thing.

The only other thing I could say about this, because of the fantastically brutal nature of an actual GPM, the amount of charge that can be bypassed, don't ever, ever-ever-ever, ever, ever-ever-ever, don't ever, ever-ever, ever, ever-ever-ever force a pc to do something he has some resistance to doing. Never force the pc.

It even goes this bad: Pc doesn't think he wants to run any RIs this session, pc doesn't want to list for the next goal in this session. Well, the pc is either living under some fantastic

present time problem, or there is something wrong with what you just did. About the first thing you decide on is, until you establish otherwise... It's easy to establish, you see – it's a present time problem, just a few questions. The pc says he's so worried about the something or other, something or other, stock exchange crash, or something like that, and he can't possibly go on, see? And he is too worried about this.

Well, you can shift over and do something about the present time problem one way or the other. But if it doesn't seem to be a present time problem of any great magnitude enough to cause this, then you'd better assume that you've run in something wrong. And you try to push a pc through that wrongness, the pc will go through a sad effect. First he'll go into a flaring ARC break and then into the sad effect.

There's some bypassed charge sitting there someplace. There's either an incomplete goals list or you've just – the last item you found is dead wrong, or the place you're going is not where you ought to be going. You ought to be going someplace else. You've been busily doing a list against an implant goal, you haven't been doing a list against an actual GPM at all. There's something wrong here. And you're going to cost yourself the most auditing time by persuading the pc to go on when the pc has got his heels set. Because, he can set his heels so lightly that you sometimes don't notice it.

But you will just curse the day you ever go across this, because you are – every piece of work you're doing from that point on will be thrown away and wasted. Horrible to contemplate. Pc set his heels. Pc says – I don't care what reason he gives – he says, "I've just got my attention on you, I just don't seem to be able to list on the list. I've just got my attention on you, that's all. I just don't seem to be able to get my attention on... I - I - I don't know, I can't think of any – I – I've ju... can't – I just got attention on you." See?

Well, that'd be pretty broad for you to conclude that you were listing against the wrong goal. That's a lot of signal. That's semaphore, buzzers going, flashing lights and little bells going *ping, ping, ping*. The one you've got to look for is the pc looking at you rather fixedly and saying, "Haaaaa."

You say, "What's the matter?"

"Well, your pen's very noisy."

Now, you can also slow down and cause a no-auditing situation by looking for the bypassed charge every time the pc looks at you. So somewhere in this line, you've got to figure out where is it. But you will curse the day you ever go an inch beyond the protest of a pc. The pc is trying to stop the session one way or the other, you'd better find out why. This is no place – R4 is no place for the heavy-handed juggernaut type auditor, because he'll come a cropper every time. Every time. He'll go wrong every time. And when you think of the amount of damage that you can do a case, I don't – I use that advisedly, they can all be repaired, but sometimes who's around to repair them?

You can nail a guy going with his – panting and back agony! And awful headaches! and that sort of thing – usually results from being forced in a direction he didn't think he could go. You're not paralleling his mind, in other words. He knows something is wrong.

Now, if you expect him now, to put in the itsa line with him to tell you what's wrong, you need your own 'ead x-rayed. Because he never knows what's wrong. You sometimes can guide his attention around, read him a little bit of a list, and he suddenly jumps on the list – he

jumps down to, or something like that. And he suddenly cognites, see? "Ha-ha, that's what it is."

"Did you feel any relief?"

Did you the auditor – what you ask – but did you the auditor see any blowdown? Did you see a big change of that TA? If you did, you found it. The pc says, "Oh, well, I know what it is, I know what it is now. You dropped your chair day before yesterday, and that's the bypassed charge." And your tone arm sits right there where it sat before, and it sits right there, and so forth, and the needle is still dirty, and that sort... You haven't got the bypassed charge. These are the things that you've got to be getting used to.

So, the upshot of the thing is that R4M2 run expertly is absolutely marvelous in its effects – it's absolutely wonderful in its effects. And you have this to live with. That it cannot be run mistakeless. It is completely impossible not to commit some errors in running it, for the excellent reason that a pc's bank gets so overcharged that you can't get proper reads sometimes. In other words, you say, "Is this an actual GPM?" and it reads tick. "Is this an implant GPM?" no read. "Is this a no-GPM?" no read. After you've taken the burden off of this thing, listed it or done something with it, or unfortunately started to work with it, and so forth, you all of a sudden find out to your horror it's now reading, "implant GPM," rocket read! *Tsk. Sploow!* "Actual GPM," smooth rising needle.

And you say, "Bail out of here, brother, we're in de wrong place! That goals list was incomplete! Leave us go elsewhere, brethren, and drop that like it was a hot potato." Find the right goal that should have been there in the first place.

What gives you the trouble in this particular time is charge, and the charge is very often so great the pc in the first place is having a hard time seeing what it is. You with the meter can read further than the pc can, you're having a hard time seeing what it is, yet you have to know what it is; you have to proceed anyway and then you find out it wasn't. Something wild like this happens.

But most of your trouble comes on goals listing. There is nothing easier than items listing. Items listing today is a well-oiled dream. There's hardly anything to it. I'm afraid I'd educate a pc a little bit about what a line plot looks like, so on. Liable to give you all sorts of balderdash, otherwise. But I'm – I mean by that they won't get the top of the bank. You say, "See this 'to scream'? Well, you're listing for screamingness, and we've got this goal 'to be cold.'" They say, "Oh! Coldness."

"That rocket reads. Thank you very much. Now, I'll read you this item: coldness. Yeah, it does very well. Is that your item? How does it compare to the remaining items on this list?" Oh-oh, wrong script – only one item on the list.

It cannot be run totally errorless. But the best expert in the world is bound to make some errors, so if this is the way that it is run, then you'd have to be the best, best, best expert in the world, and then you'll make the minimal, minimal, minimal number of errors. You're bound to make mistakes on the sequence of goals; you're bound to make mistakes now and then on what the top oppterm is; you almost never will make mistakes if you're very good on listing for items. They'll go terminal-oppterm. You never even cross-check them, see? This is – well, it's just bang. Terminals all got pain, the oppterm all got sen – if you checked them. You'd hardly even bother to check them. It's just the next one on the list and it read, and the

next one on the list and it read, and the next one on the list and it read, and the next one on the list and it read and that's all there is to it.

Item every twelve minutes, TA action, blowdown! Boom! Everything is fine – I mean, it's blowing down beautifully. You get some more TA action out of it. How – is this the main item on the list? How do these other items compare to it? And that sort of thing. Oh, you get all the dope on this, you get a little more... All of a sudden your tone arm is no longer moving, your pc has finished with his it'sa, you're all set there; and he actually now when the tone arm stops moving, actually has his attention on the next one. If you ask him, "You got your attention on the next item?"

"Well, no, I haven't."

"Well, just put your attention there and let's list for it, here's your question."

And get him off of it, because to get your tone arm action...

Now, you should be able to find one of those every ten minutes – an RI every ten minutes – fully checked out, cognited on, it'saed, squared away, compared with the goal, all the courtesy steps, everything taken on the thing, and you're away listing for the next RR.

Thing that'll give you the most trouble, thing you'll make the most mistakes on is goals; thing you'll make the least mistakes on is RIs. You make – the greatest errors are made in underlisting goals and in overlisting RIs. And this all is very simple. Given those provisions and a lot of those cautions, and so forth, I've given you, this is a flying process. And this goes straight to OT. The only thing you've got to do is be good enough so that the pc lives to enjoy it! [laughter]

Thank you very much.

THE INTEGRATION OF AUDITING

A lecture given on 22 October 1963

Thank you.

All right, what's the date?

Audience: Twenty-second.

Twenty-two Oct. AD 13, Saint Hill Special Briefing Course. I haven't got anything to lecture about, actually, you know everything there is to know. And the only difficulty is just doing it. Small difficulty. But he who maketh difficulty with auditing hath service facsimiles – Confucius say. Your – your difficulties in auditing are all made. They're all manufactured difficulties. And the sooner you learn that, why, the happier you'll be. By the time you've run a tape through, and listened to yourself and you'll see how many difficulties have been made in the session, you'll be appalled. It'd be very nice if those tapes could be of real live sessions, or tape a dozen of your sessions and then listen back to one chosen at random. You see, because in that session you wouldn't be so careful.

But in this universe, difficulty has to be manufactured. Always. Let's take the case of an organization. Organization isn't doing well, somehow or another. Got a lot of willing staff and people, and so forth, and that organization isn't doing well. Well, somebody is manufacturing the "not doing well."

Living beings are theta beings, and they actually have to work pretty hard to be enteta beings. The natural bent – the natural bent is simply to be a theta being and carry on. One has to work hard to be otherwise.

That's quite interesting. Now maybe that labor is all unconscious and one is not conscious of the labor which is being done, maybe it's being done at a level that one doesn't recognize it, but nevertheless it is individually done – enteta. Now let's take the actuality of the thing. There would be no mass in the bank if it were not being created in the given instant that it has the effect on the individual.

Let's look at the harsh look – let's take the harsh look at all this. The cold, scientific, pitiless inspection of what is actually going on. And that is that a thetan creates his own bank. It isn't that he *has* created his own bank; he *is* creating his own bank – that is the difference, don't you see. Any bank, no matter how far it is in the past, is being created at this instant by a thetan. There is no such thing as continued creation. All creation must be done at the moment it is perceived.

Now there can be such a thing as unaware creation or utterly unconscious creation – utterly, completely unconscious creation. And that is in actual fact the source of the reactive mind. One is creating without knowing he is creating. Now the reason he is creating is contained in the things he is creating. Now that's very tricky. That's very tricky. The reason he is obsessively creating is contained in the things he is obsessively creating. In other words he creates for instance an item, saying, "creativity" and this item then forces him to create, but he is unconsciously creating the item and he has not confronted the fact that he is creating it and therefore it is gone.

Now, the difficulty of this creativity is: in view of the fact that he can create so much automatically he cannot differentiate what he is creating. So he doesn't really know what he is creating and what he isn't creating, and so therefore, he cannot see the central things he is creating. Do you follow my line? See, he could know he was creating. But what is causing him to create? What is he creating that is causing him to create? That question he cannot answer because it requires tremendous confrontation and differentiation.

Now, the easiest thing that an individual can do is create. If you see some artist laboring over a canvas and the sweat pouring off of his brow, you're perfectly entitled to go, "tsk, tsk, tsk." If you ask him very carefully why he is sweating over this creation to this degree, he would probably be able to analyze it to some tiny distance. See, he'd be able to analyze it slightly. He would realize – he would realize that he in actual fact, had put an arbitrary barrier against his creation, saying that the canvas must be created in a fortnight. Which is a very short time indeed, to create the amount of canvas he is creating, you see? This must be all completed within a fortnight. Well, that of course, makes it difficult for him to perform the creation because he has a time barrier.

Now, if you ask him further about the thing he would have a doubt as to whether or not it was going to be accepted at the academy, or by the client, so he has this barrier and he could spot that. "Yes, I'm very anxious, I'm very nervous, I don't know whether this thing is going to be bought or not, which ties in with the fact that I don't know whether or not I'm going to be able to buy my coffee and cakes, two weeks from now. I don't know, you see. And therefore, I'm anxious about this particular line."

And you'd say, "Well, could that affect the difficulty you're having creating?" and he would agree with you at once. And you probably would have as-is-ed it to that degree, and so forth, he'd realize that he had economic duress, as well as, the time factor first mentioned, mixed up in the simple action of creating this piece of canvas.

Now you go a little bit further, talk about his materials and tools, and you'll find out that he is working with Synco Company paint because it was handed over to him as a gift by one of his fellow artists, who may or may not be a friend, and it does not work well, see? Now he feels he must use up this paint, even though he could probably obtain other paint – paint isn't all that expensive. He feels he must use up this paint because he has it. There's another barrier to his creativity, you see.

So, even at a conscious level you could sort out with this artist, why the sweat was running off of his brow as he stood there gnawing the end off his paint brush.

Also a musician, you could sort this thing out. You could get the number of factors which he had put in his own road in order to prevent himself from playing music. Now that action followed out in its final form becomes R4. You audit out all the GPMs and RIs – and what are you doing? You're auditing out actually, the barriers which a person has put in his own road, in order to prevent imagined oppositions from having an effect upon him. In other words, a game of shadows.

Now, that it is a game of shadows tends then to make us pooh-pooh the idea that anybody could ever be in trouble. Let's go at it now, and that's the pitiless look I've just given you. Of course the fellow couldn't possibly... He's causing all of his trouble, he's the one who is causing all the difficulties, and so therefore, the hell with him! You see, that could be the adjudication. But no, you needn't add that last, you see – well, he is causing all of his troubles. That is the pitiless, factual look at the situation. Anything that's wrong with him, he is creating at this very moment. Anything that's wrong with an organization is being *created now*, in the organization.

Yeah, they can say, "Well, but three years ago we had a fire, and we've never been able to recover from the fire, and, and yap-yap-yap-yap..." And that so fixates them that they never look at the fact that the Registrar in the organization never comes to work – because they've got it all explained! They don't have to do anything because they had a fire three years ago and they haven't recovered from it, don't you see?

You'll find out that they've got explanations for all of their difficulty, but those explanations when swept aside would demonstrate and disclose that the individual was creating all of his difficulty here and now, and the organization was creating all of its difficulty here and now.

There isn't any real point in saying – well, in the past we so on, and so on, and so on – organizationally, because, they aren't actually stuck in a GPM. You just start looking around the bits and pieces in the organization and you find out – well, they never have anybody come into the organization because they keep the front door locked! I mean, there were some fifty-some reasons in Johannesburg why nobody could get into the Test Section, PE Course. They were enumerated – over fifty ways of preventing people from ever getting onto the PE Course. They included parking the bicycles across the pathway so that nobody could walk up to the door of the test room.

Now, this is all very well, don't you see, this is all very well to say, well, the reason why Johannesburg was in difficulty was because years ago, see, there was a so-and-so and so-and-so and that all affected the so-and-so, and then they had some creditor trouble and that got so-and-so, and that all added up to so... Well, that has nothing to do with the price of fish at all! And that's because you aren't actually dealing with the mass of a GPM.

So on the third dynamic it becomes more obvious than on the first dynamic. Now, you look at this poor bloke – now let's take the sympathetic look at it. Let's take the sympathetic look. Let's take this poor bloke and he's standing on a street corner and he doesn't know whether to walk up the street or down the street or get a job or buy a cup of coffee or go home or so forth – trouble and difficulty is just too great and he is overwhumped. All right. Now we

go up to this fellow – and this is what makes the human mind an interesting study – we go up to this fellow, and we say, "Well, why don't you go home?"

"Well, I'm a – scared to go home."

"Why don't you buy a cup of coffee?"

"Well, I'm afraid to spend my last sixpence because so-and-so and so-and-so."

"And why don't you walk up the street?"

"Well I can't walk up that way because I might run into a cop."

"And why don't you walk down the street?"

"Well, I can't walk down that way because it's full of mud puddles."

That type of analysis, with regard to this one individual, I'm afraid would not wind you up with a happy man. Why? Because the basic building block of all organizations is the individual. And you can get all the boys over on the Moscow party line, talking about "the masses" and talking about "the *people*." And you can get the US bleating about "the *people*" all the time, and so forth – but that's only because there's nothing there to bleat about, you see.

There is no "*people*." It looks like a "*people*," don't you see. Somebody moves in with this theory, into some Latin American country that is in terrible condition financially, economically, and so forth – that its people have never been educated, nobody's ever paid any attention to the individuals – and they just say, "Well, all we've got to do is move in here with communism." Or "with democracy," you see. "All we've got to do is move in democracy and we'll at once have a great prosperous country!" Aw, fo... Chri... ! Where are they going to start building, man? Where are they going to start building. Where's that one guy they're going to start building with, see?

Well, these people have not had education, these people have not had the benefits of any tools or help, for centuries. Spaniards had them running up and down carrying bags full of dirt they could pan out in the streams for more gold for Spain. They never did very much for them. Hideous – hideous past. Political background has been so enturbulated and enturbulent that any time anybody set up a government, why the indoor sport was to shoot it down and so on. Schools – nothing.

Until they look at this fact: to take one individual in the country and give him a few benefits and straighten him out, and then another individual in the country and a few benefits and straighten him out, and another individual in the country and a few benefits and straighten him out, and a few more and straighten them out, and a few more and straighten them out and a few more and straighten them out – they will then have a country which they can put democracy or communism into – and if they did their job well with the individual, nobody would be that silly!

These birds straightened out, might invent a political philosophy that was workable! None of these old corny things that have been kicking around lately – Actually there's been no real political developments since the benevolent monarchy. The only thing row – the only thing – the only thing that is against a benevolent monar... You know you can get a communist to agree, a socialist, people in democracy, you can get everybody that you ever thought

of, anarchists – they will all agree that the best form of government is a benevolent monarchy. They all will agree. But it has one fault – one fault – and that is you can never guarantee its succession. So you can't have it, because it might go wrong in the future.

Oh, I know that sounds very rightist but, unfortunately it's based on the actual discussion with socialists, laborites, anarchists, royalists, and everything else, see. And I found out there was only one meeting ground on which they could all agree. There's the ideal form of government – the benevolent monarchy. But, they all said, you cannot guarantee its succession. It might cease to be a benevolent monarchy, at any moment. So therefore, we can't have it. And that is the method by which they prevent it. They all agree that there are holes in democracies and communisms and that sort of thing, which are all present time holes, which put everybody in misery, don't you see. "Well, that's great, but we can't have those, you see. We've got to have all those holes, and everybody's got to be in misery, because they might be in misery."

Now, look at this as political thinking. I'm not even beating the drum for a benevolent monarchy. I think – I think benevolent monarchies are rather corny, myself I think there is no substitute for a benevolent people! But where your individual is concerned or where a group is concerned or where anything is concerned, you come down to this basic thing called an individual – a being. He is the only live, breathing thing there. I don't care how many administrative lines or how many stable data we park or how many RIs we set up, around, and call it an organization, when it comes right down to it – the building block is a guy. And that's the only – only living thing there. And incidentally that is the only living thing that will *ever* be there! And if you haven't got this individual in any kind of condition at all, you're going to wind up with nothing.

Look, you could read a book about a perfect marriage. You could read a book about a perfect marriage. You could straighten it all out on the basis of a perfect marriage. You could organize it all. You could organize the man's work, the woman's work and everything else. You could absolutely have this taped, completely – down to the last erg, you see. Child planning – everything else. You've got this perfect marriage, perfect. Textbook that thick, you know. I mean, everybody – so on.

But you haven't got a woman and you haven't got a man. Well, where's the perfect marriage? Or you've got a girl with a service facsimile "I hate men" – you got a man with a service facsimile, "I hate women."

Now, this one individual then, this one individual, this idea of the individual – when you multiply him and get another individual and another individual and another individual and another individual – you still have just that many individuals, that's all. But you can get an aggregate result of aberration. This, I think, is called "culture."

Now, in any given organization, there is however enough theta to make the thing whiz, unless everybody is being active – reactively or knowingly – to make it not whiz. Now in actual fact, the only livingness present is the livingness that is present. I hate to have to say one of these – one of these weird, A=A things – but the only livingness present is the livingness present. Now the livingness that is present is reduced by the amount of livingness invested in not-livingness. In other words, arbitrary factors. Livingness is invested in the maintenance of

an arbitrary factor. And the degree that the arbitrary factor is invested in, monitors the appar-ency of the livingness that is present. You follow this now?

You've got a pint bucket. And that is the amount of theta present – in spite of the fact that it doesn't have anything – you got a pint bucket. All right. Now, that's the amount of liv- ingness present. Let's say that's all theta, see. Now we've got a bunch of mud pies, see. Got a bunch of mud pies sitting around. And, they're not mud pies yet – they're just dry dirt. Now, the degree that we enliven this dry dirt – without banishing the dry dirt – is the degree that we will subtract water from this pint bucket and pour it in the pan that comes around it, do you see that? So pretty soon we apparently have no water present. We have only mud. In actual fact, there's just that much water still present. You haven't lost any because let's forget about the evaporation. The water is still present – but what happened to the water? It is all invested in the making of mud.

Now in auditing, the only action you're undertaking actually, is filtering back the mud pies and recovering the water into the pint bucket. Get the idea? Now, it's actually simpler to do it in auditing than it would be in the physical universe. Because all you've got to do is as-is the mud pie, and say, "mud pie A!" and everybody recognizes that it's mud pie A, and in- stantly the mud pie-ishness of it vanishes, and the water goes back into the bucket quite magi- cally.

You might say that's a recovery of attention units. You might say it's a recovery of theta. It's simply the negative quantity recovered because the thing is there all the time. The recovery is only apparent. It is simply not invested in mud pies.

Now, why can't you audit a pc who has a screaming present time problem? Why can't you audit him successfully? Well, there is too much attention invested in the mud pies of the present time problem. In other words, this is such an investment that it has taken all the water in the pint bucket and poured it into all the mud. There's no water left in the pint bucket at all. It isn't even damp. Don't you see? It's a temporary condition.

Now, the present time problem goes away and you now see an apparency of some wa- ter in the bucket. Now you've got something that you can invest. Some pcs are in such horri- ble condition that there is no water in the pint bucket at all and the auditor therefore cannot invest it because it isn't there to invest – it's all mud. Do you see what I mean?

So, the auditor's action is to find some water to get back into the pint bucket. And then invest it in an orderly fashion, to disappear the mud pies. This is programming, crudely stated, but nevertheless graphically true. You get some pc and he can't go into session. Well, why can't he go into session? Well, the bucket's empty. Well, what's the matter? Well, his attention is on so many factors in his immediate environment, his attention is so hideously spread and sprayed around that he cannot in any way concentrate any attention on anything else. And this is comparable to: there's no water in the bucket.

The auditor can't say, "Splash, splash over in that direction for a moment," because there's nothing there to splash, don't you see? So there's apparently no pc present. There's nothing but mud. When this condition is too multiple, when this condition is too chronic, when there is *never* any theta present, when there is only mud, and the mud is very badly

caked, they teach them psychology and psychiatry. Those are the sciences of making mud into more mud.

Now, you're trying to do something different when you're trying to audit, than just handle mud. But your attention could be so thoroughly muddified, that you don't recognize your action is to try to recover attention out of the bank. Now, when there is no attention – no water in the bucket – you have a condition called overrestimulation. You don't get any tone arm action. Tone arm action is the flow of theta to mud or mud to theta. And if you've got no attention, no spare attention on the part of the pc to invest in anything – well, therefore, the pc is totally tied up in the various concerns that his attention is already invested in. Therefore, you don't have anything left to concentrate on the stable data, aberrated stable data you must pick up in order to release some flow. Do you follow this? There's got to be some pc there. There can't be totally mud.

Well, let me give you the extreme action. Somebody's lying there unconscious. You actually can't audit them until you have run some CCH-type process, and caused them to come to and get into communication with you. See? Now there's the extreme condition of mud. Mud, mud, mud, you see. The extreme condition is unconsciousness.

All right, we take somebody who has fifteen present time problems and he's in a fox-hole. He's being shot at this particular moment. He is running out of ammunition, he has no food left and he has just detected a flanking attack in progress. To the right of him he sees mortar shells are beginning to bracket him in. And you say, "Would you like a session?" Well, what's going to be the response? That's how some pcs feel. That's how some pcs feel! They feel no other way! They just "Eeaahh!" "I don't dare take my attention off all this mud because everything will go to hell if I do!" There is no comm point in other words, that you could achieve, with which to operate from.

So, at this moment the only thing you can do is find out what the mind is doing and parallel it. And you'll be able to take some theta back from the mud. What is the guy doing? What is the mind doing? Well, you have to parallel it. There is no substitute for that.

Now, in Routine 4, a pc can get so muddified, so restimulated, so overrestimulated, have so many present time problems, and have so much keyed-in, that they don't want to be audited. They will kick back against auditing. They don't want to be audited. That may be the first expression. Actually, what they mean is, they don't want to be audited on Routine 4.

Let's say you've got some fellow who's easily and calmly finding items, one right after the other, *pocketa-pocketa-pocketa-pocketa*, finding items; and all of a sudden he comes to session; he has a tremendous present time problem, and he just doesn't seem to want to be audited. One of two conditions can be wrong there. The present time problem can be so overwhelming you can't get his attention on the bank. And the other thing that can be wrong is that you have restimulated something or something has gone wrong in the processing which you have not yet detected. In other words, you've bypassed some charge which has caused mud or restimulation. One of those two things is occurring.

Now, it's interesting that a person who has a quasi-present time problem – that isn't yet, you know, totally absorbing – but just on the perimeter of his consciousness, a rather, rather heavy present time problem but not a complete catastrophe, you understand that? The

session just before they got this problem you found ten RIs, in doing Routine 4. *Pocketa-pocketa-pocketa-pocketa* – you found ten RIs. Then they got this problem, you eased the problem up, but *in that next session* you only found four RIs; not because they were spending time – not because they were spending time, you understand, dwelling on the problem. They were working all right – the problem keeps occurring to them however. But they're working all right, they're listing all right, they're – they're behaving all right. You cannot really detect any vast difference in the behavior of this pc except one; you can't get things to fire easily.

You get the item on the list but you can't get a fire. See what I mean? You have to work it over. You list a little bit longer. You go back and you get to the item again, and you call the item, and you get the Suppress off of the thing. You list a little longer and the pc says that *is* the item. You can't make the item fire. You understand? And you finally manage to jockey it around one way or the other and finally you get your fire and your blowdown. See, it's a struggle, struggle, struggle, struggle. That's because you're running this pc in the presence of attention invested in too many PTPs – he is too distracted from the session, he is unable to progress easily. Well now, that's what happens to your tone arm motion in lower levels. The pc's attention is so absorbed in things you are not addressing, that there is no attention available to the auditor to put on and as-is aberrated stable data. So you don't get tone arm action. Elementary.

Now, oddly enough in doing I, II and III Levels of Scientology, you actually can have a condition where the pc runs into Level IV. Where neither the auditor nor the processed, or anything else is situated to handle Level IV. Awful. Catastrophe stares us in the face. Because there is actually more potential overrestimulation and present time problem on the pc's track than there is in his present time. When you look at GPMs and their RIs, there is more potential restimulation on the track than there is in present time. That's very interesting. In other words, he can be more restimulated by reason of keyed-in GPMs and RIs, than by simply getting knocked off or something like that in present time.

You can lock his tone arm up – *ca-rack!* – by keying in a GPM. Now, this is a tremendous liability for Scientology Levels I, II and III. It is answered by auditing goals with "in this lifetime" Prepchecks. Pc has put down a goal of some kind or another. You could audit that goal on a Prepcheck basis on a "in this lifetime" basis, and get rid of the Level IV potentiality. Probably.

But it's messy to work with. I won't kid you. And you never become more convinced of how messy this is, than when you're doing Level IV and you've already found the present time goal and you're going back down the track in an orderly fashion. All the hard work is done, see. And the pc goes to the bottom of the second GPM, where the goal as an RI is sitting there, you see. And you stop the session – at that point, because this is just the end of the session – and you pick this up maybe a week later and that pc's tone arm is locked up at 5 ½.

And you fool around and you sweat and you monkey and you scratch your head, and you have a hard time, all over the place – pc's tone arm is at 5 ½. They left the session at 3, and the tone arm is at 5 ½! Well, obviously something happened during the week to key them in. Well, it did – there were a lot of things happened during the week.

So, you put in your "since" mid ruds to get your new intensive going, so forth, you're all set, and you put in your "since" mid ruds – and the tone arm doesn't budge. And you talk about the things that have happened during the week and nothing happens – nothing. Needle's sticky, tone arm high – you feel you couldn't move the thing with a sledgehammer. It looks that stiff. And you'll say something happened in between.

Now, after you've got it all solved you'll find out what happened. But you go on with your R4 and list for the next goal. That's all you had to do. And immediately you get *bbtzzzzzzzz* – down comes the TA and everything starts to run. That next goal to be listed for, immediately below the third GPM which you were going to go into, you see, that next goal was enough to keep that thing parked. And then you say to the pc, "Did you think about this new list during the week?"

"Oh yes, I told Joe that it was possibly a (blank) or a (blank)."

It's held up by a wrong goal. It was only one of those. That simple remark was adequate to park that tone arm. There's been fire, flood, pestilence and disaster happening all week long. And yet the whole rudiments went out by saying, "Joe, you know I think my next goal is either 'to spit' or 'to be spat at.'" "To spit" was a wrong goal. It was "to be spat at." That was enough to key it in. Get the idea?

Ah, but you guys are walking around all the time guessing at what your goals might be! Then when you've got a pc running on the track all straightened out you can lock up the tone arm at 5 ½ just by their guessing at somebody what the goal was, and there went the tone arm. And no amount of monkey business and figure and figure, and service facsimiles or anything else that you would have done, would have moved that tone arm one hair! That's something to think about, isn't it? That shows you the wide-open hole and liabilities of Scientology Levels I, II and III. Those liabilities are all contained in Level IV.

Therefore, somebody certainly at Levels II and III should know the liabilities of Level IV. And should be able to do an ARC break assessment of List 4. ARC break assessment – what's simpler? You'll find a goal has been restimulated – an actual goal has been restimulated. Or an RI has been restimulated, something of this particular sort. Indicate it to the pc, and down will come the tone arm. Then identify which one it was and handle it and up will go the tone arm – because you can't handle it with anything really, short of R4.

If you didn't know the exact name of the goal, you couldn't prepcheck it – but you can at least kick these things out with ARC break-type assessments, or case analysis sheets. But nothing is going to happen with the case unless those things are patted on the head and rolled-over-Rover, see. We got to have this thing out of the road or we're not going to get any tone arm action.

Now, I see a lot of your ears going up at this particular instance, saying, "Aha! That's probably what's wrong with my pc! Why I can't get tone arm action." Well, there's a possibility that that is the case. A greater possibility is you haven't actually bled the technology itself for total tone arm action yet. See, that's the greater possibility.

Now, a pc out on the street here, raw-meat pc, isn't going around worrying about his goals. You're not going to run into this trouble so you're going to get lots of TA action. But

you take an educated Scientologist, and he's going to say, "I wonder what my goal is? There was somebody worked on me last October, and I just – so on, and we were guessing about it and it's – so forth and I'm just absolutely certain that I have the goal 'to spit.' Certain of it, certain of it. I react to it all the time," and that sort of thing. Comes into session – tone arm 5 ½! How did it get there?

Now, here's another oddity. Present time problems usually occur on the goals channel. In fact, they almost always occur on the goals channel. The present time problem of an accidental accident and that sort of thing might occur off the goals channel, but most present time problems are straight on the goals channel. And it's one or another of the pc's goals.

Now, the pc fondly expects that he is influenced by one RI, or two RIs – or that his entire character makeup is wound up in the substance of one goal. Oh, no – I beg your pardon! He will cognite, cognite, cognite all about his present lifetime – his present lifetime are being influenced by as many as twenty or thirty GPMs and literally hundreds and hundreds of RIs. See, he's being influenced – he's being influenced all the time.

So, this oddity exists: That you actually could see your pc with an enormous problem, you're doing a "since" mid ruds Prepcheck, and you see that you get a little tone arm action – you get some little tone arm action, on the subject of women. A little bit, tone arm action on the subject of women. Otherwise, this thing is stuck up like mad. But when you hit "women" – in doing the Prepcheck, see, doing the Prepcheck, "since" mid ruds – he touches on this subject two or three times, and every time he touches on it in one or another buttons, get a little tiny bit of tone arm action. He'll feel pretty good when you finish up. And you probably should leave it alone. But the truth of the matter is, if you now addressed women, on the subject, the gain that he just experienced is liable to vanish. Why? Because a present time problem ordinarily occurs by reason of a key-in of an RI or GPM.

What is the genus of the present time problem? The momentary present time problems we can usually handle, but how about these chronic, chronic, chronic present time problems? Well, certainly those *absolutely* are the result of the key-in of a GPM. It's a keyed-in GPM. Person has a PTP, PTP, PTP, PTP, PTP, you know, "Oh, my, yes, I got a PTP – PTP regarding drafts" or something. You know, or regarding automobile or regarding something of the sort – I don't care what it is – it just seems to constantly come up.

You take a List 4 or a case analysis type sheet – there – no case analysis type sheet has been published at this moment, but should have been published some time since. They simply ask if goals are backwards or one is beyond the other, or the actual goals or implant GPMs, or no GPM or an actual GPM, it's stuff of this character; it just takes a total analysis. Have we skipped any GPMs you see, and all that sort of thing. Case analysis just takes up every possible condition that these very easily mathematicalled, very easily blocked-around GPMs... You see if you just laid out twenty bricks in a row you've got the pattern of the pc's bank. I mean, it's very esoteric. Just lay out twenty bricks in a row. Label each one a goal, they're all in a string. You've got the picture – that's it.

Now, the fifteenth brick, let us say, has to do particularly with money. He gets a PTP – he's liable to take the fifteenth brick and bring it up into present time. It's now out of sequence. Makes him feel like hell, gives him a cold – messes him up. Now your situation then

– this is the source of this type of psychosomatic illness. I'm now giving you a better source for a psychosomatic illness than you have ever had – the fifteenth brick, see.

This psychosomatic illness to an educated pc will respond to a List 4 analysis. Or a case analysis of GPMs. You don't know what the goal is, see, you don't know what the goals are, you don't even ever find the name of the goal.

But it's on this basis: "Has a GPM been keyed in?" *Ca-lang!* You see. "All right, has a GPM concerning – is that concerning colds or something like that?" *Ca-lang!* You say to the pc, "You've had a GPM keyed in concerning colds." That's the end of that cold – providing you don't go completely knucklehead and ask the pc what's the name of the GPM – *eeuuuhhhh*. Don't, don't start fooling around with the thing, because you're going to give him a real good cold.

See, it must be the fifteenth GPM, out of line – it couldn't be the present time GPM out of line because it couldn't be out of line without being put back into the past – and life doesn't put GPMs into the past – life puts GPMs into the present. In other words, you could probably handle psychosomatic illness, if you had an educated pc, with a List 4 or case analysis form.

Tone arm action. You say, "Well, if this case..." Tone arm action isn't present, it is quite obvious, and nobody can make it go and the auditor is really doing a good job of auditing – then it is quite obvious that R4 has gotten in your road. Got it? Pc with a chronically low TA. Can't get any tone arm action out of him – no matter what you do – no matter how smooth the auditing is. You jump to the conclusion eventually, that R4 has gotten in the road. The way to get it out of the road is just to analyze the blue blazes out of it. You can spend a session or two analyzing a case.

Take goals that have been found and you can date the top of them and the bottom of them – you can do all sorts of wild things. You can date the top and bottom of a GPM. Don't ever try to just date a GPM – this is asinine!

This is like trying to – trying to, well, a GPM, you see – a GPM exists in – across a large span of time – and it's like trying to get an average date. And the top of the GPM and the bottom of the GPM where the goal as an RI is, you see, are two different dates. And are frankly trillions of trillions of trillions of trillions of trillions of years apart. They are a long way apart! So, you say, what is the order of magnitude of this, you see – order of magnitude of what? See?

Best thing to do of course is get the order of the magnitude of the top of the GPM. Get the order of magnitude of the top of the GPM. If you really want to fit one back on the track – *snick* – why, get the order of magnitude of the bottom of the GPM, and then the order of magnitude of the top of the GPM. Date both of them, and it'll move in like a car being parked on a ramp.

It's got span, a GPM has. So it doesn't have a finite date. Take somebody with lumbosis. All right – educated pc of course. "This lumbosis being caused by a – by a GPM? An actual goal? An implant goal? A no-GPM?" See. What's it caused by? Let's go over this thing, see. Even – is it caused by an engram? Is it caused by this? Caused by that? Anything that

could have caused this lumbosis? You see – giving very, very, very high priority to RIs and GPMs. That's most likely – this thing of chronic lumbosis, it must have been an actual goal.

Watch that meter. Get it to clank. You don't know the name of the GPM. Just tell the pc that that's what's been keyed in. Things might change all over the place. Things might go whir-click – you might not have to do any dating at all. A little further discovery on the thing and a little bit of it'sa on the part of the pc and the pc finally tells you, "Yeah! Well, there was a goal discovered on me, something, and I've had lumbosis ever since." And "What was the goal?" "Well the goal was 'to catch catfish' – discovered on me."

"All right. Very good. Very good, very good. Now, is that an actual GPM? Is that an implant GPM? Is that a no-GPM? Is that an actual goal? Is that an RI? Is that a lock on an RI? Is that associated with the Helatrobus Implants?" Implant GPM, see? "Where is it? Helatrobus Implants? Helatrobus Implants?" And run it down a little bit more and a little bit more and a little bit more. Get the order of magnitude on the meter. *Bzzz-bang* – no lumbosis. Get the idea?

This opens up a whole field. This is a very, very elementary field. It's far, far, far more complicated in your head than it is in actual operation. Number of GPMs the pc's got is from... it's actually just a finite number – I wouldn't state how many, because they probably differ and vary from pc to pc.

Let's say, we take thirty bricks, we string them out in a line. First brick is time zero. The last brick is present time. They're all strung out in a line. Every top of the brick has a date, the bottom of every brick has a date. You take one of those bricks and saw it up with a little brick saw, or a chipping hammer, or something of the sort, and it falls into forty sections – something like that. Those are RIs. And you can fit them all back together again and you'd have your brick again, see.

Twenty of them are oppterm; twenty of them are terminals. Elementary as this. Nothing much to this type of thing. I mean, it's very mechanical.

Strewn up and down the line of these twenty bricks is some tar – spots of tar. There's a little puddle of tar there, and there's a spot of tar on that brick and there's a spot of tar down – those are implant GPMs. No great value, except they get somebody's pinafore dirty. And then you've got engrams. And sitting out alongside of the bricks is a bunch of free track, in which nothing much happened. Rather minor activities of one kind or another. But it's contained with engrams which are enough for any pc to confront. This is the stuff you find in R3R, see – that's strung up and down the track.

Now, spotted in amongst the bricks, like flour or well, let's make it better than that – little bits of dough spotted up and down the bricks, here and there, but thousands and thousands and thousands of them, are actual goals. No value at all – except to make you make mistakes. Aberrative value, zero. These are actual goals. Pc said, "I want a lollipop." That was an actual goal, see. Well, that stuck somewhere on this track. And because GPMs are composed of goals, why of course, these actual goals tend to stick on them as locks.

That's the composite of a bank. What can get wrong with this? Well, a bunch of engrams can go into restimulation, and a bunch of implant GPMs can get in restimulation and

throw some tar up into present time. One of these big massy, oh, catastrophe, one of these bricks can come adrift and go floating on up to present time – or two of these bricks can get crossed up, so that one brick is after the other brick and both of them are kind of jarred out of line, see? The brick that should be brick sixteen now appears to be brick fifteen. And the brick that is supposed to be brick fifteen is now appearing as brick sixteen. That's enough to give anybody a cold or lumbosis, see. That is miserable! And you get two of these GPMs crossed up, one appearing to be later than the other – but actually being earlier than the later, juxtapositioned GPMs – *Tyaow! Creak!* Spinal Meningitis here we come! See. I mean, it's wild stuff.

Now, even a couple of RIs pulled up out of line, and sometimes you can get an RI – now this is – this gets very, very difficult. You get the fifth GPM pulled out of line – that's already pulled out of line. And then for some cockeyed reason the fifteenth RI in it, is so much like the twentieth brick GPM that it comes all the way up the line, pulling half of its GPM with it, and moves in on the twentieth GPM. And when you try to do anything with the twentieth GPM you run into this fifteenth RI. Maybe it's called "physical indispositions" or something like this, you see. And that is pinned to the goal "to be sick."

Well, actually these things are pretty neat – it's pretty neat. You think of the bank as chaos. Man, you shouldn't think of a bank as chaos, a bank is pretty neat. But it's stripped around and stretched around. Let's say bricks five to eight have been brought up and inserted between bricks nineteen and twenty. They won't be in line. Your pc won't feel good! That'll be misery, somehow or another.

Now, you busily, busily, busily start listing. And instead of getting the present time GPM, you get brick five. And then by some horror or another you get that what opposes brick five is brick nineteen. See, there's some reason they're out of line. Because the goals sound alike or something. And the pc just goes *zz-zzz-zzzz-zzz-zzz*. You've got brick number five – my God, the power and horsepower in brick number five compared to brick number thirty, you see, is enormous. There's a real beefy brick. So, you've got that up there and it's pinned up onto brick nineteen. And you start from brick nineteen on forward, and you can't seem to get any *plaa-aa-aa-ace*.

Lists don't pan out, nothing happens, and you can't get any fifty – past the last RR and nothing RRs on the list and the pc is going mad, and you've got ARC breaks going, and so forth and you finally get bright and start checking back over all the stuff you found and you all of a sudden find that brick five was gotten instead of brick eighteen, see. And there are two other GPMs hanging out here and they're all pulled out of line. Well the second you find this all out and straighten it all out, it all goes back on the track – clang, bang, you see. And brick five to eight, they go back on the track and they're on the track at five to eight. And then you get nineteen and you take off from eighteen where you should have started off from in the first place and you don't get brick five which was out of position, but now get brick nineteen, and the pc smoothes right out. And you move by goal oppose right on up into PT.

You start thinking of the mind as a vehicle of thought and you are already licked in handling it. It is not an instrument of thought. It's made out of bricks, tar, see? Things. It's full of things. Pc, as his itsa maker gets a little freer and so forth, he gets able to look at these

things and so forth, he can spot them – he can spot them. He can tell you, "It's brick number – I'm sure it's brick number nine. I can see a hole back here in the lineup, and brick – you know – GPM, that GPM is up here and it shouldn't be up here and there's something all twisted up," and you the auditor, knowing best, keep saying, "Oh, well no, really," and so on.

"But it fits, and my – but yeah, but I see a hole back here and I – I know that – that – that GPM shouldn't be back there, it should be up here. And we haven't got the GPM that should be here, I don't see anything here. And where we're supposed to have a GPM I don't have anything. But there's one missing back there and the one that's missing back there is the think – I think the one you're trying to put in up here."

And you, well you know best, so you don't do anything, and the pc starts going "*Ggguuuuuh-rrrrrr-ccraaawwk-bing!*" See. In other words he can actually start spotting these things. And they do – they look like great, big, rough, black bricks.

Probably the reason the Helatrobos Implant people covered up the planets with black energy – and they did, they made quite a campaign of it – was to stimulate everybody on the subject of GPMs. That was part of the restimulation. Black energy. And you show a thetan a lot of massive black energy and he gets kind of *ggguaeahh – creak!* Because it looks like his own GPMs, don't you see. So, that's enough to key him in and he's liable to feel rather weird.

Now, do these bricks ever go back together again and go back into place of their own natural bent? No! You have to roll up your sleeves, and find out where they're out of line and put them back in place. Well, that's normally done in R4 running.

But supposing all this happens while you're running R1 – Level I processes. Well actually, it shouldn't happen. Because Level I processes are normally being run on a raw-meat pc and they wouldn't know from nothing about it anyway. Supposing it happens at Level – well, if it happens at Level I, if you could imagine it happening at Level I, that's just tough. That's how it's solved, is that's tough. It'd take a Level II capable auditor to do anything whatsoever about it, or run any kind of an assessment or any type of action that would do anything about this, don't you see.

So, you just neglect these factors at Level I, because it would be dangerous for you to do anything else but neglect them. You don't get a Level I Auditor, in other words, trying to straighten out GPMs. He gonna make more hash, man! He gonna make more hash than he gonna make straighten out, see? So that's just something that you should say – in Level I, if you run into that kind of trouble with a Level I Auditor, well skip it or turn the pc over to somebody else.

All right. Now, your next levels however, should be somewhat educated in ARC break assessments. And if they aren't, they're going to run into the pc whose tone arm action is not occurring for the excellent reason that he has GPMs, RIs, something or other keyed in, and therefore, is locked up on the track.

Now, the way to do it is not to start to run R4 on the guy. Don't let a Class II Auditor or a Class III Auditor start running R4 on the guy, because the only thing you can do to ruin somebody's case would be to ruin his R4. Got that now? You get his present time GPM and find it all backwards and upside down and mix it up and get it so it couldn't read, and then go

down the line and miss the two intervening GPMs and take all the charge out of the next GPM – how the devil is anybody going to make this straight again? It's going to be pretty horrible. So you better find it and get it done right.

But there is something within the limits of R2 and R3 that you can do. You can do these Prepchecks on this lifetime on goals which have come up. The pc has announced certain goals, or appears to have certain goals or they've been found on him – you can do a Prepcheck on that goal, and "In this lifetime" and get a considerable relief. And you can do ARC break assessments or case analysis of a Level IV type or nature – however you get over the bridge of communication with the pc. That is the difficulty there. And do this type of analysis on the case and pat these things back into place. Find out what's wrong.

Now, there's a level at which this *can't happen*. Nothing will straighten it out. It's a case that has been run on R4 by an inexpert auditor and abandoned. Now you can only go so far in patching up this case – only so far. You can find the GPMs that are out of line and whether or not they were actually trying to run goals on implant GPMs when they were trying to run patterns on actual goals when they were actually implant GPMs. You can get these confusions out of the road and do quite a bit for the case – you can do quite a bit for the case. You can get a GPM that has been pulled out of line and missed, and so forth.

But an incomplete goals list is an incomplete goals list and there is no way around it – except to complete it. So, a case that has been very thoroughly loused up and I do mean thoroughly loused up – by a Level 0 Auditor running Level IV processes – GPMs pulled out of line, all torn up, messed up one way or the other, half-banks run one way or the other, skipped and abandoned – all of these various other things occurring, there is only one remedy – one real remedy. Because it takes this much know-how. And that is to get a Class IV Auditor to audit the pc and straighten the pc out and finish the goals lists. And finish the case up. That's about the only thing you could do about it.

You can make the case somewhat comfortable, you understand. You can kick GPMs that are out, as bypassed charge and you can do these things. But if that case has been run a great deal, inexpertly on R4, it's going to take a Class IV Auditor working like the mischief, wishing to God nobody had ever put his paws on the case, to straighten the case out. Got it? This is dynamite-type action.

But actually at Levels II and III – A GPM kicked out of line, somebody fooled with a goal a little bit, no real R4 ever run on the case, somebody found a goal on the case or something like that – just analyze the goal, pat it back into the place and the case will be as right as rain, see? See, you find out they found a goal but it was an actual goal or it was a wrongly worded GPM or a wrongly worded actual GPM, see, or something like this. You don't even have to find the right wordings for it. Just kick it out of line. Straighten it up.

It's quite remarkable what you can do with just giving a Prepcheck to a wrong goal found on a pc, too, by the way, you know – not even in this lifetime. In other words, some bird had at R3 – somebody enthusiastically found a couple of goals on him. Well, great day! Let's find out and dig up what these goals were. And let's analyze these goals by just your standard analysis form, you see. Is it a this and is it a that and is it a something or other and is

it something or other and all of a sudden – *clang, clang, clang* – it's an actual goal but it isn't a GPM. Well, that's sure the end of that. Charge indicated to the pc and he's away, see.

So, there are various things which you're up against in auditing at the lower levels. And it would not be friendly of me to omit to mention them. Now, that isn't the reason you don't happen to be getting tone arm action. You aren't getting tone arm action on the pc for an entirely different reason. You of course, got the itsa line cut and you got the pc whatsitting while you itsa – I know why you're not getting tone arm action! So don't include now, the reason you're not getting tone arm action with what I've just said because I'll just ignore it. That's a joke.

The truth – the truth of the matter – I don't think there's a case in this room that hasn't had GPMs pushed about and so forth, one way or the other, and who couldn't stand a case analysis on this level of action which would then restore tone arm action considerably to the case, see. But you see, from an instruction viewpoint I have to hold the point that there's nothing wrong with a case – it's just you, see. Otherwise, you'll never find out that an expert auditor can simply sit down and get TA action. But then you must know sufficiently well that you can get TA action. You must have enough confidence in it, you see, to know what is wrong with a case or that there is something wrong with a case if you're not getting TA action on it. You follow this logic?

You see, if the reason you were getting TA action, or the reason you were getting no TA action on the case is because you always had the pc's itsa line cut – every time he starts to look at the bank you drop the meter or something like this. Then you'd never discover any of these other softer nuances because you just get no TA action which would compare to no TA action on a case, don't you see.

Nevertheless – I'll be serious now – you should take up any case that has ever been run on any goals or any goal ever found on the case and so forth, in effort to get TA action, and find out what in the name of common sense is – makes with the bank, see. What is it all about? What is it all about? Your List 4 is actually good enough for a starter, but you need one of these case analysis sheets to really get going. They've had this goal found on them, "to film while rum is burning," see, or something like that. You suspect that the wording of this GPM might not be all that is desired, you see, and so forth.

Well, it takes a little bit of fancy, "Is this an incorrectly worded goal?" You know, and "Is this an incorrectly worded actual GPM?" There are various nuances here of analysis which don't appear on your L4 but you could figure them out, just by fooling around with bricks for a while. I mean – I mean fooling around with bricks for a while.

Just line up some bricks, and number them, one, two, three, four, five, six, seven, eight, every alternate brick is going to be the dichotomy of every single brick, you see. I mean every other brick is the opposite to every other brick, see. So each one's going to be a dichotomy. First brick is "to be white," "to be black," you see. "To be clean" and the next one is, "not to have tattletale gray," you got the idea? See, they're harmonizing, as you go up the line.

And the RIs in those things follow the pattern of the old GPM "to scream."

You actually could go out here and line up twenty bricks, and say all right, those are GPMs and lay some sticks along the line and say those things are – those are implant areas. There's four or five of these things later on the track. You see little groups and there's some implant areas. So they'll be implant GPMs, don't you see. And you scatter some pebbles around and say those are – those are actual goals. And this is the time track. And the time period of this thirtieth brick or twentieth brick or however many you've got made in – laid out there, it's time span is this. And recognize your time span is going to get longer as you go earlier, per brick, for the top and the bottom of the brick. And of course the ones that head – or the end that heads away from present time, that's the goal as the RI end. The name of the GPM is on that end, furthest from present time. And at the top of it, which is the end of the GPM closer to present time, the pc is deadly opposed to the substance of the goal and is himself something entirely opposite from the goal.

And you look at this and start playing with it, and its familiarity breeds familiarity and you eventually will know what in the name of common sense you're doing with this thing.

Because right now – right now you might be auditing somebody and you say, well, there's all kinds of these things, and they have a service facsimile poked here and that's a little quill pen or something that's stuck in here, they jabbed people with. And there's a this and there's a that. And you get befogged by the fact that there's so many pictures. You can't see the woods for the trees. Because a bank just has billions and billions and trillions of billions of pictures. And there's just so many pictures in the bank you never see what's in it, don't you see?

Bank's very entrancing. But the overall look at the bank shows you the important things in the bank, and the things really contained those things which you have to audit, in actual fact are just these thirty bricks. The other stuff is window dressing and it's taken us all these years to get through the trees to find the trees.

There's lots there to audit – you can find all kinds of things to audit. And so long as you don't disturb these GPMs, you probably won't get into much trouble. And the processes you have on Routine 1 – your Level I, II and III, those levels in actual fact are not apt to restimulate too much in the way of GPMs, but if you notice that it gets perilously closer to it, the higher the level. So that at Level III – at Level III when you start auditing service facsimiles, you're actually disturbing RIs and all of a sudden the guy comes up with a rocket reading goal. Well, it depends a lot on what you do with that rocket reading goal as to whether or not you upset the GPM pattern. Because it may not be the present time GPM at all. It may be the fifth GPM. Trillions, God help us, years ago, pulled completely out of line. And you're now going to prepcheck this thing, you see, *uuuuuhh* – dynamite!

Those are the objects which you are handling. They handle like macaroni or spaghetti or bricks or any other physical commodity – they got a lot of names inside of them and they look a certain way and they act a certain way and they're done a certain way and so forth. And if you're releasing them you get tone arm action. If you're leaving it all the same or making it worse, you're not getting tone arm action. I mean, you've got your perfect test, do you get tone arm action, see? There's a lot of – lot of material here.

Well, I've spent a lot of time trying to sum it up so that you could – into its bits and pieces and parts and that sort of thing – so you could take a look at it and know what you're stumbling over and all that sort of thing. There are bound to be some people, some students at first, some auditors, who will say, "Oh God, you – I don't see all that in the bank, I know what a bank is consisted of, a bank is consisted of this medallion." Somebody who's had Freudian analysis a great deal, well, it's actually considered with this circle and this arrow. And that's really what it is all about, and so forth. They're just stuck on the track looking at a single picture.

You start – you have to start shaking loose from this to see the rest of the junk – the mechanics of it. Well, how is a building built? Well, with a great deal more simplicity, particularly if the building was a child's building made out of play toys, bricks or something like that. That's the way the mind is built.

It is actually no more seriously built than a bunch of – a bunch of bricks lined up – it's about that. Each brick breaking down into component parts which are terminals and oppterm and which lie in adjacent patterns. You know the patterns are top, bang, pair, next pair, next pair, next pair, next pair, terminal-oppterm – all very neat. You're an idiot to build them that way, but that's the way you build them. And these things go on back to the beginning of track and so forth.

Now, why are these things continued in creation all the time? Well, you just underestimate your ability or the pc's ability to create, multiply. How much can a pc create and how much can he keep created simultaneously? It's fantastic! Your ability is absolutely fantastic. Everybody's ability is completely underestimated. You can create so well that you'd even stop yourself with your own creations. It's terrific! And you can create so well and so complexly and so unawaresly that you then can't find yourself – find your own way back out of your own mirror maze.

Now, there is no slightest doubt about the fact that when a person is sick, they're sick. And when a person's crazy, they're crazy. And when they're suffering, they're suffering. Because look – the last God-help-us number of years nobody has even guessed any part or corner of the puzzle called the human mind. And during that period of time a great many guys have suffered and gone through a lot of agony that they didn't want to go through.

We have the other factor. Does a person want to be this way? No. Can a person, by his own bootstraps get out of it? No. It's a rat race, and a mirror maze and so forth, that was very simple when you finally had its final anatomy. But right up to the moment when you did, you could only get lost in your own creations. And the actual fact in this universe, there is nothing to get lost in but your own creations. But where one finds a pc who is in trouble, the trouble is with the thirty bricks. With the free track going alongside of the thirty bricks, with the implant tar scattered over the bricks, with the bits and pieces of dough all over the place that mark the actual goals. And all this is lumped up into the form of matter, energy, space and time, included in the never-never land called his mind, which actually has space.

Some time, some thetan will make a tremendous effort to line these things up all by himself. He'll be exteriorized, between-lives area sort of thing, he's avoided it, he'll be trying madly to line these things up. Sitting someplace, thinking it over – looking at them – wonder-

ing what the hell these pieces of energy are. Trying – to get them off of him. Trying to get them off of his face. Trying, you know, like a cat trying to wash its paws, you know. And not be able to make headway on it at all.

And a great canyon, a huge canyon cleft in the mountains and so on, utterly filled with these GPMs, you know. He's looking at them; he's terrified.

Outside, he can of course see the walls; he can also see the GPMs, you see. His perception is greater. Fill up half the Grand Canyon full of the – full of these confounded GPMs, trying to, trying to – well, what the hell are they? Which – which way do I go? What is it? Nobody there, no E-Meter. It's all sub-itsa. He can't make it. He can't make it. Been tried! Even when you knew that close. Because you couldn't get the exact combination to as-is that then as-ised it and undid it, because it was all in perfect balance.

And there were too many possible combinations to sort them out. Even if you knew their anatomy, you'd raise hell trying to put them together. If you at this moment, knowing everything you know, were to be on top of Mount Ararat trying to take your bank to pieces so that you wouldn't be around the bend with it, or something like this – free and clear, no body to be affected, all the time in the world to do it with – you wouldn't have a chance. That is my condensed opinion on the matter.

Yeah, you'd come back and pick up a body. But you need a body to hold an E-Meter. Without the E-Meter you can't do a blasted thing for it. A meter isn't just something that helps. Now, I've tried to work out other systems which passed the E-Meter – which bypassed the E-Meter, which did things. Listing systems, of listing far enough, and finally only come up with the one goal, you see, a listing system of one character or another. And I've gotten exactly nowhere. Exactly nowhere, over a long period of time. And many times tried to throw out the E-Meter, and many times tried to short-circuit it and wonder why we had to have an auditor and wonder this and wonder that. Obviously an auditor is necessary, because a thetan, restimulated by his own bank, cannot perceive his own bank. But an auditor not restimulated by that bank he is auditing, can perceive through the meter that bank and therefore can audit it. So he can get out of the woods.

Well, the road out of the woods is well mapped. There it is. I've given you a talk about it and a graphic representation of what it consists of. You say, well, there are thousands of tricks of the trade which I don't yet know. Well, that's your barrier. There aren't thousands of the tricks of the trade that you don't know. There is nothing there that with a meter, with Model Session, with the anatomy of this thing and with the rules of R4N2, with a modicum of good sense and a good heart, you couldn't make the grade with a pc. Totally feasible.

It'll take you perhaps, if you're just starting in auditing this stuff, it'll take you for a while to realize that there aren't more barriers than there are. You'll have to fumble your way through it and find your own feet and get yourself into a situation where you're not holding your breath and your worry isn't getting you in the road and up the line someplace in a relatively few months, if you're just starting in on it, you will all of a sudden be asking yourself the question "Why did I find this so difficult? Why did I find this so difficult?"

And you know why I know you'll be asking that? Is because I went through that exact, same situation. I could not at the present moment possibly imagine R4M2 as being a difficult

process. There's just nothing to it. It is the easiest auditing I ever did in my life. It's a breeze. No matter how busy I am doing it.

Pc starts ARC breaking, you must have gone past the item. Pc can't get something to read; well there must be something wrong here; let's go back and find out what. The most extreme conditions which cause a balk – the most extreme conditions of auditing and so forth – and even those are dead easy. The most extreme conditions that you will run into in a pc, I have run into. And they're dead easy.

So, what you've got to learn is what I've had to learn. Is that there are practically no reasons why you can't do it. And once you can do that, all you've got to do is take this thread apart, from the PT GPM, with its top items, straight on back down the track, *pocketa-pocketa-pocketa-pocketa*, GPM by GPM by GPM by GPM, each one taken carefully apart, item by item by item with no mistakes as you go. Mistakes are perfectly obvious when you make them. Take them all the way back down the track; you're not going to get back to time zero before you've got an OT, man! You're not going to even vaguely do it.

Starting in, it's absolute hell on the pc. All the way up along the line. Goal oppose, goal oppose, goal oppose, goal oppose – oh, wow! He's got goals in restimulation, and you've skipped goals, and goals get pulled out of line and *oohhh!* And then he lists things and then all of a sudden you finally find the goal on the list but it's an implant GPM! And you go on, and the lists are incomplete and you can't find out why you're incompleting lists and you find horribly six goals ago you found an implant GPM which at that time read as an actual GPM because the case was too overburdened to read right. So you throw away everything that you have found and the pc goes into a decline because you have thrown away his GPMs, so you come back and you realize that that is what you did and you find where they do belong on the time track, move them into position, go back and take the sixth list, all the way back, finish that thing, and then keep on going to present time with it and finally you will get there – if you're alive and the pc is still alive. This is necessary to successful auditing.

That is the most hellish part of it. But once you're in PT without any mistake and once you've got the top RI without any mistake, from then on, you have to be a complete mutt to make a mistake. You know, you have to have – be auditing with both feet hanging from the ridgepole, you know, and the E-Meter – the E-Meter completely out of batteries and the pc long gone. It's real wild, see.

That's making OTs. You've got this whole band and span of auditing, up to that point of skill and capability – Levels I, II and III. You also, of course, have old types and styles of auditing. They are – still exist, and they're still valid. But as you go all the way up along the line on this auditing, remember that it is always the same bank that you are auditing. Don't get tricked into the fact because you have a different name or a different level, that you have a different bank in front of you – it is always the same bank. No matter what level it is audited with or what pc you're auditing. That is an interesting thing to keep in mind. Because you start getting too enthusiastic at Level III, you should realize that you are auditing a bank and that you are pulling RIs around in that bank in order to get tone arm action. And frankly the only level that really fills me with – *uuuugh* – horror is Level III. Frightening. Because I know what's going on.

And once you become very proficient as a Class IV Auditor, Level III will fill you with fits, too. Apparently you can get away with Level III only so long as you close your eyes as to what you are actually doing. [laughter] You're moving GPMs and RIs around – that's what you're doing at Level III and don't kid yourself otherwise. That you can get away with it, is a tremendous attestation to a pc's endurance and your auditing.

But there is the integration of auditing and the only other thing I would tell you on it, is you can do it. You can do it. The only reason you couldn't do it is because you conceive it to be more complicated than it is. You can do it. For instance, I've – I've been auditing quite a bit of modern R4, now, and I find this very satisfying auditing. No worries at all about tone arm action. Man, I get as much tone arm action as I find RIs and keep chuggety-chuggety-chugging and going on down the bank, see? I get as much tone arm action as I audit rapid R4. And let the pc itsa and not rush the pc, and let the pc be a pc. And not get the pc out of session.

"What do you suppose is wrong? What do you think is wrong? Oh, you think it's wrong? You – you – well, I'm having trouble here. I don't know what the trouble is, so forth..." and the pc starts, "What's he doing. Whatsit? Whatsit? Whatsit?" Of course, I don't get tone arm action.

And in actual fact, I can get as much tone arm action out of a session as I can drive myself to run. It's that "how much tone arm action." If I could audit just a little bit faster, not rushing the pc any faster, but if I could audit just a little bit faster, why, I could probably get seventy divisions per two and a half hours, see. I'm having a hard time, I've hit a ceiling. It's about fifty, sixty divisions, see. And I don't know how to increase it. And I might start writing in shorthand or something like that. That might increase it, you see. Now I'm in a sort of a contest of that particular line.

But this is auditing. This is the auditing you're going toward. This is the auditing you should be able to do. And this is the auditing you can do. And anybody that's standing around telling you how difficult it is to do this auditing, of course, is just filling the air full of entheta. Because the truth of the matter is it's very simple to do this auditing. It's the simplest auditing there is.

Probably Level I is more complex than Level IV, because at Level I you haven't got anything to do.

Well, there it is, I wish you luck with it.

Thank you!

AUDITING THE GPM

A lecture given on 23 October 1963

Thank you.

All right, who is this? What date?

Audience: October the 23rd.

October the 23rd? What year?

Audience: AD 13.

AD 13. Who said "63"? Shoot him! [laughs] Anyhow ...

All right. Well, your general – your general course of auditing affairs right now – I've been giving you a series of highly general lectures here just in the last few. And I hope you've been able to make something out of them – bits and pieces and scraps, you know? Trying to give you some kind of a viewpoint, let you take a little broader look at exactly what you're doing and show you some of the anatomy of what you're attacking.

The human mind is a very interesting mechanism and people can get quite goofy on the subject. Nearly every human being is so deeply enmeshed, so pressed down into life and livingness, opposed by so many present time forces – and opposing himself so many other forces, actions, personalities, considerations – that he finds it almost impossible to view this thing called the human mind. He more likely views human opposition. He more likely views human problems. He more likely views human considerations. He views such things as inhumanity. He views such things as justice. He views such things as rightness, right conduct; such things as honesty, dishonesty, criminality. In other words, he's involved not in the human mind, but in sociology. Do you see that?

So when a Pavlov or a Freud comes along, the primary motivation for his work is obtaining some sort of an is-ness of *his* immediate environment and *his* immediate conflicts. Let me call to your attention that all of those things I have just named are potential RIs in GPMs – all of them being dramatized to a greater or lesser degree. The being himself is being a solution, not a living being. Therefore, there has been no view of this thing called the human mind. There has only been a view of the particular RIs which a person is confronting or which he is being. One immediately sees a highly circumscribed horizon. He sees this horizon right close in to the individual, you see? The life and livingness of well, mothers are bad and fathers are brutal, and so forth. A study of the mind is a study of the RI called father, see? Don't you see how this is? And therefore he's going to study the mind. And actually he has made an identification between the thing called the mind and the RI "father."

This is the whatsit that he's not been able to itsa. This is the thing he's in conflict with.

So he wants to know more about the mind. I remember myself asking a question of this sort of thing. I was sitting down banging away on an electric typewriter, throwing out about a hundred and twenty-five words a minute of copy, and so forth, and I had to characterize somebody. And I sat back and I said, "Well, what the devil is characterization, anyway?" I think that was one of the primary entrance points to a study of the mind. I would have been very happy to know what character was so that I could characterize characters more easily in stories, see? This was not a very pressing reason to understand character of the human mind, but then in actual fact I've never had a really – a very pressing reason to do so, which of course gives one a much broader viewpoint.

I have personal reasons along in this particular line, but these personal reasons take the human mind as a solution of a lesser magnitude. In other words, the solution of the human mind is simply a small milestone on a much longer road.

But the situation as you see life and an understanding of life on this particular planet – and probably on most planets – is simply from the viewpoint of a person so immersed in life that he sees only those facets which impinge upon him and upon which he would like to impinge. And that to him is his entire horizon. That is his complete view. And he has no further view of the human mind than that.

I imagine Pavlov had it in for dogs. I imagine dogs played a very, very large part in Pavlov's GPMs. I'm sure he had an RI called "dogs." As a little boy he might have been bitten by a dog, do you see? As being many little boys in many times he's probably been bitten many, many times by many dogs. So he was sure trying to understand dogs. Maybe at some time or another, why, he'd been put on a solid diet of calves' brains or something like this, so that... Who knows? Who knows what these would have been? The fellow isn't available to us at this particular moment to go over his lineups. You may run into him someday. It'd be intriguing to know. What was the horizon of Pavlov that caused him to see the mind as a physiological entity which ran exclusively on punishments, even though he added rewards and punishments in his manuscript? Well, what was his horizon?

And Freud, living in a – in the mid-Victorian ages, surrounded by the hush-hush when – if a woman ever stepped on the steps of a horse car and had displayed an ankle below undoubtedly nonsanitary skirts that they had in those days – that skirt rising out of the dust an additional two inches and displaying that ankle could have caused a scandal throughout the entire town. You see? Just this balderdash of this particular time, you see?

Second dynamic – it must not exist, you see? And he takes this terrifically repressed second dynamic – well, who knows what went on there in Freud's background that brought him to a viewpoint to view the mind as: Repression of second dynamic equals insanity. And why did he pick out childhood? Probably he had an RI called "children," or something like that. You see? He's probably caught and was dramatizing within a sphere of less than five or six RIs.

His general view of the mind, however, led off into perimeters which are quite interesting. He considered such things as life in the womb, he considered such things as birth trauma, and so forth. He merely considered them, he never demonstrated they existed. He thought of a great many things and some of his students – undoubtedly said more than he

wrote – and some of his students became interested in past lives (such as Jung), druidism and that sort of thing. Well, it's interesting that when the past lives came up in the subject of psychoanalysis, that it became exclusively the English druid period. I think that's very fascinating. In other words, past lives equal chaps painted blue jumping about the oak trees, you see? That was the totality of past lives. It's fascinating. You actually would have to work very hard on a preclear to get him to recall this period, particularly if he'd never been in England during that period.

Now, here we have then – here we have the limited viewpoint – the limited viewpoint. And the only reason I'm calling this to your attention is so that you can see that that is not the only viewpoint and so that you, in teaching people and looking at things yourself, might possibly be able to bootstrap yourself out of too great a fixation along certain lines, too great a motivation for knowing about the mind, which is not germane to the mind, see; motivated to know all about the mind because of schoolteachers. Well, you see, in actual fact you will wind up specializing in RIs called "schoolteachers," and you won't know very much about the mind. You might not even realize that it's an RI.

Now, to make a statement like that to you is sweepingly invalidative. It's horrible to make a statement like that to you. And I'd never make a statement like that to you if I hadn't made it to myself.

Can one look further than one is looking? That is the question I am asking you. Can you look further than the horizon you are now looking at in the field of the human mind? Can you extend your vision sufficiently as to escape your own aberration? That is the mark of genius and yet you can do it.

You can recognize – and oddly enough, I know how well you can do this, because it's almost a hallmark of Scientologists. No matter how hard you are dramatizing, some tiny portion of your beingness, you, is still saying, "Boy, am I dramatizing!" [laughs] Screaming like mad at somebody or other, and yet while screaming, still say, "You know, I must have overts and withholds from this bit, or I wouldn't have that – this much of an opinion," you see?

That actually is the mark, not of self-criticism, but of self-enlightenment. And an individual who is capable of this self-inspection and so on, there's a great deal of hope for that individual. But the individual who is always convinced completely of his own sincerity of his own dramatizations, I'm afraid there's not much hope for him. And if you wanted to describe somebody who was totally sunk in humanism, who was totally – gone totally wog, and so forth, you would describe that person as incapable of realizing his own aberrations or realizing that he had any aberrations. You know, the man who asserts that he's totally sane is always the insane man. The rest of us – the rest of us always have a little glance over our own shoulders and wonder if sooner or later we're not going to act a little potty at some time or another, you know?

But this divine doubt never enters at all into the scope of thinkingness of the *very* insane. What characterizes them is their fantastic rightness. They are completely certain of their own sanity and in some brands of insanity completely certain of everyone else's insanity. These are *total certainties* with regard to these fellows.

The Scientologist to a marked degree – not because I have told him to – but just by the process of knowing greater truths – has rather uniformly attained this particular aspect. And it's odd to think of the fact that some of the greater schools of philosophy and some of the greater schools of wisdom have taught that one thing as the highest possible peak of attainable wisdom on the part of a being. The highest possible peak. They call it in various ways, you'll find it described in various ways, but it always amounts to the fact that they are capable of the divine doubt. They are capable of a slight view of themselves. They are capable of a self-inspection. They are capable of a realization about themselves as imperfect.

These various things have, of course, sawed through and become operations at various times. So that there have also been schools which said, "When you know you're absolutely insane, why, then of course you are totally sane; and when you've realized that you're completely bats, why, then we know that you are all right." You know? They've exaggerated this thing to a degree, but any piece of wisdom can be exaggerated into a lower-scale mockery.

But it's interesting that we have attained something which, in the field of the Stoics or other schools of Greek philosophy, would have been considered to be a very, very high point of wisdom. And any of you walking through the states of Greece of twenty-three hundred years ago or something like that, would have been looked on as a very, very, very wise being indeed. See? Saying no more than you say, doing no more than you do, you see? Not even auditing anybody. This would be very self-evident.

So you perhaps have not looked at Scientology from the viewpoint of philosophic attainment. And yet you have attained a philosophic level which is superior to and described as one of the great high levels of philosophy, while still scrambling around and thinking that you actually don't know much and you've got a long ways to go. Do you see that?

Well now, that's actually added, that is simply an added bonus. That wasn't part of the philosophic level. But that you know you have a long way to go implies that you know something or have some feeling of where there is to go, see? So now, that is a greater level of wisdom. You have some feeling about there are greater levels to go to. Well, I'm afraid that that was totally absent in all former schools. At your lowest level, you have attained this bit of self-doubt, this bit of self-inspection, this – this attitude which was the highest peak of former philosophies. And yet you additionally know that you have a long way to go and you also, then, must have a feeling that there is something to go to, so therefore, you must then understand something of the wholeness of a being. And that has never been understood in the whole world of philosophy. The potential of a being, that is a completely neglected subject.

We read "man is evil." We read man is this; we read man is that. "Man is born of sin and dies in sin." We read this philosopher and that philosopher and that religious preacher and this writer and we read the Koran and we read the Bible and we read the early teachings that Christ imbibed; we read Indian philosophies of some kind or another. All of these things – all of these things have a very debased idea of the character of man. They do not perceive him to be anything that he is. If you ever wanted to read a tale of lies – is a description of the beingness of man written in other times and places and periods.

What is man? Oh, man. *Tsk!* What is man's potential – is a completely new field. What is his potential?

Now, they say that – once in a while a poet comes along and he says he can attain to the heights of stars or something like this – just talking in some metaphorical vein – but actually doesn't embrace the real beingness of man.

What is the total potential beingness of a being? And that is a subject that you are grappling with and that is the subject which you actually grapple with in auditing. If you are not grappling with that subject and are only grappling with the fact of, "How do I prevent myself from being impinged upon certain types of characterizations in life," and "How do I myself impinge upon certain aspects of life?" – if you're still involved in that and trying to audit, I'm afraid that you will have many failures in auditing. You'll have some successes, but you'll still have many failures in auditing.

Let me give you an idea of that. A failure in auditing could stem from this basis. Now, don't think this is uncommon. You have a great deal of difficulty with horses. See, you've got a lot of trouble with horses. And you've had a big auditing win on the subject of horses, so you promptly and immediately audit nothing but horses on your pc. That means, immediately, that your aspect or your viewpoint of the human mind must be that of just life and livingness – little symbols that don't amount to a hill of beans, you see? This is a person who is so thoroughly in contest with the environment about him that only those factors in the environment about him that are dangerous to him could be dangerous to anybody. It's a lack of flexibility. It's an inability then – let me show you where the auditing failure is.

It would be an inability expressed like this: Little girl comes in – little child comes in and she's crying and she's shaking with terror and so forth. And she says that – she says the wind – the wind is moaning past her window. And you as an auditor – you as an auditor – this is a piece of life and livingness, not a piece of session, you see – but you as an auditor happen to rather like wind. And you rather think that's a pleasant sound. And you conceive no danger in it whatsoever. So therefore, because you have that different viewpoint, then you say to her, "Oh, nonsense. Wind is a pleasant sound." Now, there's no great danger in doing this, but let me point out to you, you have absolutely done *nothing* for that little girl except knock her itsa down. Do you understand?

In other words, if your knowingness about life is totally based on what you yourself are afraid of or given sensation with, and so forth – that's totally based on that alone – and you have no additional perception that other people might be upset about different and other things, then you actually can never extend yourself out of the RIs you're sitting in far enough to understand what the *other* person is going through. You have to at least be able to say – this doesn't require much; there's no great difficulty here; it's just something that you should recognize. You should be able to say – you should be able to say, "Well, Joe over there, or Bill over there, don't like women. This is silly, but they don't like women," and *know* that they don't like women. And although you have an opinion that this is silly of them not to like women, to still be able to understand that they don't like women.

If you haven't got that viewpoint, you will never permit them to itsa any difficulty with women. Do you see how that would limit the auditor? And it's on these little mathematics alone that you can adjudicate the success of an auditor. In other words, is he capable of understanding that wind could frighten somebody when it doesn't frighten him? See? Can he

understand that there are other conflicts for other people, see? On that alone – on that alone, you see, you could get auditing failures if he hasn't grasped it and auditing successes if he has grasped it.

Pete comes in. Pete is just going all to pieces. Pete is in shreds.

"Well, what is the matter, Pete?"

"Oh, my God! It's my car!"

"What about your car, Pete?"

"I just worry, worry, worry, worry, worry all the time about my car. I keep it in a locked garage, and so forth, but I just know it's going to be stolen. And I just went out a few moments ago and found that I had left the ignition keys in the ignition and the door unlocked."

The guy is shattered! He's practically in tears! Now, a person who can't project himself, see – you didn't even have to project yourself, but just understand that he might be sitting in a bunch of other RIs than you've got, see? – is liable to handle this situation like this:

"Well, your car's insured, isn't it?"

"Well, yes."

"Well, you keep it in a locked garage, don't you?"

"Well, yes."

"Well, all right. What are you worried about? Now, let's get onto something that's really aberrative."

He just let him sitting there in a wild present time problem, because all these concerns are goofy – even yours! See? These concerns are *not* usual. They are *not* ordinary. There is no average set of concerns which makes a person sane or another average set of concerns which makes a person insane. There are no such common denominators. They're *all batty!* And the difference between a Scientologist is he can see that his concerns might be a little batty. He hasn't automatically assumed that because he has these concerns they are therefore the average concerns of the human race.

Now, a fellow who didn't have any RIs about lost property would have Pete come in. Pete's in shreds. He starts in the session, and so forth.

"Well, what happened? What happened, Pete? What's the matter?" Tone arm is high and the guy is shaking and looks ashen. "What happened?"

"Well, I – I just went out and I found I'd I – eh – left the car – uh – and the ignition keys – I – I have left them in the ignition. They've been sitting there – *ulp* – all morning – *ulp*."

And you'd say, "Well. Oh, is that what you're worried about? What is the car – car worried about? Is it losing things? Um – property? Um – property?"

"Property! Huh-huh!"

"Property. Well, give me some way that you've safeguarded property, Pete."

"Oh, well! Ha-ha! God! Oh, yes, and ever since and so on and so on." Tone arm action, tone arm action, tone arm action, see? Everything going along fine, present time problem evaporates and you get the session underway and you're all set. In fact you've probably got your session. If you're not running R4, you've got your session in the bag, see? All because you didn't assume that he was batty for worrying about something that wouldn't have worried you.

Now your gap gets wider and wider the better you get. The better off you get as a case, the wider this gap gets. So it's something to shed if you have it and shed what little of it you do have, because you very readily get to a case gap between your viewpoints and a pc's viewpoints when all of his considerations along in this line look *completely* batty. You'll get to a point sooner or later where the fact that he eats and has to knock off for lunch will seem very, very foolish to you. But because you have been there yourself, you're not liable to cut his itsa line on the subject of being hungry by saying, "Well, that's silly. How could anybody get hungry?" Because you know that you could get hungry, see?

But this gap gets wider. And your gap already is sufficiently great that mixing in amongst even Scientologists, you here at Saint Hill were reported at the congress of shining up to a point where everybody – anybody could spot where a Saint Hiller was in the audience, see, whether they knew them or not. It's quite interesting. This comment has come back to me. In other words, the Saint Hillers are head and shoulders above Scientologists who are head and shoulders above raw meat. Your gap is already pretty wide. You don't ever know how wide your gap is – that's what's interesting – because you are always in the condition you are in at the moment you are in it. There's very seldom any comparative data.

I was looking over the factors of growth in Scientology, and these factors by the way would startle you – they'd startle you. They are not necessarily represented by the accounts sheets of organizations or something like that, but they certainly are represented on the dispatch lines of organizations. And opening up old folders of dispatches and going back just two or three years and looking at what was being said and worried about two or three years ago, is illuminative. It's startling! The various factors present are no longer present in organizations; many of those factors are no longer present in organizations. They have been surmounted. Organizations and the people running them, particularly – mainly the people running them – have moved up above concerns of that particular level and they're no longer worrying about these lines. There's various things that they have shed coming up the line. There are various problems which the organizations had at that time. There's the frequencies to dispatch and that sort of – say, of five years ago. And what was contained – these things look like something from another planet!

These are the factors of growth and these factors are very, very easily measured when you look back and have a comparative stick with which to measure them. But you seldom have very much to measure it by, unless perhaps you – you wrote a diary many years ago. Let's say you had a diary and you start running into this diary and that sort of thing. And you say, "Good heavens!" you see, or "How amazing," or "I'll be darned!" you know? This would give you some type of aspect.

You very often will experience this from an auditor's chair. You run out a whole GPM out of a pc that completely changes all of their considerations and the pc goes waltzing along – life pretty shifted, see – without any real recognition of the degree of shift, see, but just simply take up the new values which are there and go on rolling along with these new values, and they've simply discarded the liabilities of the old values and they aren't a matter of comment.

This will very often baffle you as an auditor, because it's a process of negative gain. You very often will feel somewhat slapped in the face because of this very thing – negative gain. It's a very interesting phenomenon and an auditor has to live with this thing and be able to confront it. This fellow's not been able to sit up. He's always had a badly curved spine or something like this and he'd always sit up like this. And you get to running down the bank, particularly running some GPMs or something like that and you all of a sudden get to that series which have that degree of influence on the body. And all of a sudden the fellow starts to sit up and you never again hear about the curved spine. He doesn't mention the curved spine. He doesn't even think, usually, to tell you how nice it is not to have a curved spine. And the reason he doesn't tell you how nice it is not to have a curved spine is now he has not got a curved spine to the degree that he has no level of comparison with having a curved spine, because you've also wiped out the experience of having a curved spine.

And you're going to face that as auditors, and sometimes it's really going to baffle you. I've had it happen to me and I still never – that doesn't totally leave me cold, even today, see? Change a person's whole conduct, aspect in some sphere of existence in just a hatful of RIs or something like this, you know? Just improve it, utterly! Knock down barriers in all directions. They're just shining now, you know? Well, let's take some subject like miserliness, you know? Before they were always worried to let anybody know they had a sixpence, you know, and they were always afraid to give anybody anything. This is all vanished, see? They're now completely sensible on the subject. They have more money, too, you see? And never have a single word said on the subject of, "Gee, I'm glad I'm no longer wrapped up in all that miserliness," see? Never have a word said on the subject.

If you want to be paid as an auditor your observation has got to be terrific, because it's – nine times out of ten will only be your observation that thanks you. Oh, people are basically very appreciative and they say so-and-so and so-and-so and so-and-so and they talk about it and that sort of thing. But every now and then you strike one of these things of the curved spine, see, you know? Guy's always been going along this way, you know? At the end of some session or several sessions all of a sudden there's no vestige of this and you never hear a word about it. You've wiped out all anxiety about it, you've wiped out all interest in it, you've wiped out all communication lines about it and it's gone.

Now, at the same time you occasionally hit somebody and you – they're up against the gun. And if they've got some present time comparison... Let us say they're going to be operated on for lumbosis, see. And they are going to be operated on and somebody is going to tear out the whole epiglottis and reverberate it, you see, and so on. And you come along as an auditor and you cure it up and they don't have to be operated on. Now, they've got the doctor or somebody, is still nagging them, you see, to have a lumectomy, you see? And they are now happy that they don't have to have this additional duress. You see, that's slightly different.

Now, that person is liable to thank you every time they see you. See, because it's being driven home from some outside source, don't you see? But just the fact that they couldn't read or couldn't see, or something like this and nobody's – there isn't any exterior bang on it, and you ... They can read now, they can see, or something of that particular kind, that doesn't matter a bit – apparently. Of course, they are basically appreciative. They'd be terrified if they thought they would be returned to that condition. But they just neglect to say anything about it.

You had somebody here in the last few months who had gone blind. He was really blind, man! We made him see again. And, by George, you never heard very much about it. I never heard anything about it. And right down to the last moment, right down to the last moment, nobody ever said, "Thank you, Ron, for returning my sight." Because it was there, don't you see? There was no point in doing so. I wasn't even sitting there waiting to be appreciated particularly, but I was struck by the fact that the subject was never mentioned. See?

You very often run into this. So, therefore, you better be able to observe because occasionally you'll pull off a miracle and nobody will ever find out about it but you. [laughter]

Now, when you go into this on the basis of Pete and his car keys, you'll have vast quantities of trouble just because you cannot conceive that anybody would be upset about the car keys – which is the threat of somebody stealing his car – and you find out he's never even had a car stolen in this lifetime, see? And you say, "Well, balderdash!" see? Well, you won't let him itsa it. See, that's one of the main, basic mechanical penalties of this kind of thing.

All right, now let's take somebody as he goes up the line. He goes up the line and he gets into a more extended perimeter, a more extended view of existence. And here is existence spread out in front of him and he can understand that that person over there feels sad because that person over there has an aberration about something which demands sadness when a certain circumstance is encountered. Being able to perceive just that, you can get lots of tone arm action; if you can achieve that, you can achieve tone arm action.

Well, you're never sad about having eaten too many chocolates or eaten up all the chocolates, let us say, see. You're never sad about this; this does not make you cry. In fact, you think this is quite ridiculous. In fact, you don't even really like to eat chocolates because they put on weight or something like that, see. So this person is crying – this person is crying and they've eaten up all the chocolates. Well, this is quite mad. You immediately pronounce it as being quite mad and so you do... You might even be led to process it because you know they are mad. But you sooner or later are going to make a little bit of a mistake about this kind of thing, because your own incredulity on the basic situation that having eaten up all the chocolates should make somebody cry – doesn't seem sensible to you.

Now, it doesn't have to be sensible to you. The only thing that has to be sensible to you is that other beings immersed in life have different viewpoints and different RIs which cause them to feel differently about different things. That's the only thing you have to conceive of. If you can conceive that, you can get tone arm action off most anybody, you see?

In the field of writing, in the field of writing – this is a very poor thing but it's anecdotal and it might amuse you. A fellow by the name of Eric somebody-or-other went out to Hollywood. Well, this is a – this in the old days was a horrible place to be transported to anyhow,

with all the glamour and glitter and so forth. And it was particularly appalling for a writer, because a writer always has the idea that he can write and he has proven it by having written and published, you see? But everybody in Hollywood has the idea that he can write without the small step of having proven it or published it. So, you see, all directors are writers and all producers are writers and all accountants are writers and all the actors are writers, don't you see? Everybody's a writer. And writing, actually, is a fine art and it's quite a craft. But because you're surrounded by all these writers, you see, you always get all kinds of writing suggestions, you see, and so on, and they are quite insane.

Well, I remember this fellow Eric went out there and uh – I think he was a Western writer or maybe that wasn't the same chap – he was a Western writer and they put him to writing musical comedies. And he was going along. And when he first got there, why, he was a very unhappy man. And he had sort of filtered on down the lines and he had become the quasi level of success that people who stick with Hollywood used to become. And – ran into him one day and I said, "Well, doesn't it sometimes get on your nerves, Eric, all the advice you get – gratuitous advice?"

And he said, "No," he said, "I have finally gotten used to it." He said, "I have finally gotten used to it. Now," he says, "when they tell me to put a fire engine in a beauty shop, I put a fire engine in a beauty shop." Total apathy on the subject. See, total apathy on the subject.

No, we're not – I'm not advising you to assume this total apathy on it, "Well, all right, so he gets tone arm action on that; so he – so he gets upset about eating chocolates. All right, I'll – silly to me – but I'll go ahead and I'll process him on eating chocolates." [laughs]

Let me point out to you – let me point out to you that this would be somebody who was asserting that his entire existence should be the entire existence of everybody else, don't you see? And so asserting it, would then combine into a resignation on his part to accept this other existence, no matter how batty it looked. Let me point out to you that is the *wrong* direction to go; that's the wrong direction to go.

You forward this through understanding. If you understand the mechanics of the mind, then you actually don't resurrender any aspects of it at all. You truly understand the mechanics of the mind. You understand that this guy is sitting in a different goal and has different RIs, so then he, of course, has different viewpoints and different reactions, that's all. His experiential track added up to his postulated track gives him these GPMs and RIs and gives him a certain behavior pattern. And that behavior pattern is understandable because he has got a bunch of RIs.

Well, even if you're running Level I, II or III type processes on the bloke, nobody is telling you you can't understand this. Then, of course, it rather leads you to understand that some of your – your favorite ideas about the environment in which you live and that sort of thing, that these things are borne home upon you by the RIs that you're sitting in. Well, nothing quite increases that understanding like having a few hot RIs run off of you. And you all of a sudden say, "Oh ho, yeah!" Your – the right PT GPM and down the line. "Oh-oh. Well, there's an RI. Ho-ho-ho. There's an oppterm there, an oppterm 'toads.' *Tumpf*." Through your mind flashes the terror and horror and so forth of gardens, of going anywhere near ponds, of being in a damp atmosphere or anything else. Here's this confounded oppterm, "toads."

Give you an idea that it doesn't – you don't have to relive your whole life in order to de-aberrate, which is the Dianetic idea. You don't have to relive that whole life in order to de-aberrate. An auditor operating rapidly and competently, just competently, running R4 could in actual fact – could in actual fact take all of these terrors, fixations, upsets and *yalp-yalps* that this person had been worrying about – you know, I mean the real obsession that this person was sitting in – in the course of a few little motions of the tone arm, the blowdown and the little pumping as the pc cognites and the rocket reads as it compares, within the space of ten minutes, have listed it, found it, done the courtesy steps and totally discharged it to no fear of toads. See?

Now, that fear, that RI's duration, the duration of that one RI, might have been many, many, many lifetimes. The duration of the pair, I should say better, see – many, many, many, many lifetimes. Think how many engrams are contained in all those lifetimes; think of how many other aberrations and complications; think of how much else. But you hit it dead center, it's 'toads.' It wasn't – he wasn't afraid of gardens because of rose thorns or he wasn't afraid of ponds because he had drowned in them – this he'd always kind of sort of thought. No, he's afraid of them because they have toads in them. All is explained, the thing as-is, and *bow!*

That lays the terminal to view – well, what did he have to be in order to handle toads – which you may get before or after it, whichever one you're running – and he finds out that this – this is his basic fixation all the time of, "to not – to be imperceptive," you see? So he gets "an unperceiving person." That was his solution. And he always thought it was because he couldn't confront life that he had trouble with his eyes; and he has always thought it was this and he has thought it was that and he's thought it was ten thousand thousand other things. But it's just "an unperceptive person," and one is an unperceptive person because then won't see – one won't see toads. Between the pair they're all explained. And packages that would have turned Freud pale are just gone in that flash of an eye. That is what it consists of. Yet that pair of RIs might have lived for many, many, many, many, many lifetimes – it takes a long time to form up an RI, either side, or a pair.

Well, take a look at this. If you have an understanding of the actual mechanics of the mind and how the mind is put together, and if your understanding of that is both objective and subjective – you've seen somebody recover from these RIs, you see; you've seen somebody recover by blowing them and you yourself have had an experience of a few cognitions and taken a look at it yourself, and so forth – this enormously would improve this ability to see that another being is sitting in the same mechanics but with different significances. And that, in actual fact, is all you need to perceive as an auditor: same mechanics, different significances; same patterns, same pattern type of goals and everything else, but they're different significances – significances are all different.

One fellow has as a top GPM – has a top GPM, "to catch butterflies," and another fellow has as the top GPM, you see, "to swim under the sea," you see? This gives you entirely different sets of RIs. And even if you had two people side by side, each one of whom had a top GPM, "to catch butterflies," you would still have in those two people different sets of RIs. Even if two people have the same goal, they've got different sets of RIs, so they have a different interpretation of significances in that same goal.

All of this is basically a dissertation I'm trying to give you – trying to give you a view-point here of – perhaps you'll be able to see the pc that you're dealing with more clearly from this point of view. Perhaps in looking back on your past auditing you will see why you just never under God's green earth did anything for Mamie Glutz, that famous person – why you never did anything for her. And you begin to realize that she talked all the time, all the time, all the time about her feet hurting her; and you realize that you just could never conceive anybody being that worried about anybody's feet hurting, see? And it just was not something you would have naturally itsaed. So, of course, on this PTP of Mamie Glutz, you never got any itsa at all and therefore, you never got any tone arm action, you never discharged the PTP, so you never did anything for Mamie Glutz.

This explains to you, then, differences amongst pcs and differences amongst auditors getting results on pcs. See, it explains it in this particular breadth.

So anyway, an auditor – an auditor looking over a case if he is a real expert, if he's a real, real pro he should know – he should know very, very well the layout of that bank. He should know that if you take thirty bricks and lay them in a string end to end, with a bit of a gap between them – and I didn't tell you in the last lecture, the bricks are long way to, you see, they string out the long way – and the long way, laying them out there, in the longest line they would possibly make with a gap between them – thirty bricks. And those bricks, as you come up from the early track, are dichotomies – one to the next, one to the next, one to the next, one to the next. And these things just roll on up and every one of them has twenty-thirty RIs in the thing, and those things are fitted together. These are the GPMs; these are the goals and so forth. And that these have wound into them implant GPMs and there's free track floating out alongside of them. And that the pc as he sits in present time, is sitting in a terminal and is confronting an oppterm of that line and is *in* one of these bricks. And that every one of those bricks dismantles into the component parts. And *basically* that the first one at PT (the latest one on the line, the thirtieth brick at PT) can be found and when found will be found sometimes to be cut off. In fact, most of the time it's only half a brick. He hasn't had time to grow a whole brick, see?

And the pc – the pc can be moved forward, can be moved up to the top terminal of the present time GPM, now formed – the latest one formed, you see – can be run back down the track RI to RI to RI to RI, GPM to GPM to GPM to GPM; that this can happen, that it can be done accurately and that the potential beingness of the individual can be recovered by doing that action as difficult as that action might sometimes prove.

Once you've seen that, what I've said just in the last few words, you actually are looking at the totality of this thing called the human mind. That is all that's in it that's important. There are so many gimmicks in it, there is so much glossy hardware in it, there are so many data, there's so much fact, there is so much livingness done by the pc, that it doesn't look like red herrings; it looks like a blizzard of red herrings when you try to see this thing at all, see?

Now, what I've just told you is what is there to see, and it's the only important things there. I've just spent three months chasing every red herring I could possibly chase to make sure of the totality of the GPM. I know about every kind of implant anybody ever invented anyplace, and they're about as aberrative as a pinch of snuff. There's time fouling up, time

track jamming GPM – implants, there's motion implanting implants, there's implants that have – that are just absolutely salted with false RIs and so forth – whole GPMs implanted. Strings of twenty, thirty – it was no accident, you see, that they chose twenty-eight goals in one Helatrob series, see – strings of GPMs from beginning to end, you see, all of them matched up, various things and so on. Between-lives implants, wipeout stations, traps, all the liabilities of life in this universe, and when we shake it all down *you conceived there was an opposition so you invented the solution to it*. They invented a lot of solutions, but on this particular solution – there was an exact balanced solution – you then accumulated enormous quantity of mass because you weren't there, it was. And you didn't do any as-ising of it at all. It was just an automatic – an automatic response. It was noninspected action. You knew what to do.

The engram has some of this in it, too, but not to this degree at all. The order of magnitude is fantastically different. An RI in a GPM? Oh, I don't know, a hundred million, five hundred billion engrams. It's some order of magnitude of this character, see? How long do you think it'd take you to run a million engrams? See? Well, you probably run a hundred million engrams with one RI. Takes you ten minutes to run an RI. Gives you some comparative idea of how far processing has advanced in finding the true state of affairs in the mind, see?

Well, you look at all this thing, you look at all the mischance and adventure and all of the fallings from grace and it's certain that your environment did influence you to postulate certain goals and it's certain that your environment did cause you to influence you to postulate certain terminals and it's certain that your environment was pesky enough along some particular line to finally compose an oppterm; but you had to select it out and compose the oppterm yourself even though you're having nothing to do with it. That's all very certain, this is all very true – and that you are now mocking them up, that's all very true. But the truth of the matter is, you made your own bed of spikes. I don't care how fancy the pinwheels were, see; I don't care how fancy the spider traps were; I don't care how boggy the bogies were, see? I don't care how many times you were lynched – five hundred lifetimes. You'd be walking down the street; you hadn't committed the murder; you were unjustly arrested and illegally hanged – painfully. Aberrative value: pish!

You see, actually a thetan doesn't consider anything valuable except his own postulates. He sheds everything else. And he sure hangs on to his own.

You see, the enemy never even named itself. The enemy might have had a goal, "to capture Chicago," see, or something like this. And that's what they call themselves, that was their GPM. But in order to get them as an oppterm, the thetan had to say "the invaders" or some other such designation. The enemy doesn't even name themselves. I mean, you even make your own oppterm. It's pretty gruesome when you come right down to think of it. So it's your own postulate there in the oppterm. So you're fighting your own postulate in the oppterm. That gets to be pretty grim when you get to thinking about it. And if you don't think one of these RIs – one of these RIs doesn't possess beef, get one out of line sometime or another; get the whole force of somatics of an RI of your own.

These cases of arthritis, these cases of lumbosis, these cases of citizenitis, birds up here in the hospital being carved up into fresh pork – pardon me, long pig – these birds up here being hacked on and slitted and anesthetized, and emergency-ward-tened – these charac-

ters, you know – these characters are not suffering from bad livers, bad spines or any other confounded thing, you see, they're not suffering from these things. They're suffering from RI-itis. It's fantastic.

You get one of these things out of line, up against your heart sometime or another – your chest. Let somebody skip a goal on you sometime if you want to – if you want to get a real reality on things. Let them skip a whole GPM and go from, "to spit," you see, "to whirl." "To whirl" opposes "to spit." *U-uhr-uhr-uhr*. How many are missing in between there, you know? They don't oppose each other. And all of a sudden, after the session, notice that you have coronary thrombosis in an advanced state. You know, these little divers they put in fish bowls, you know, that they have the stream of bubbles coming out of their helmets, you know, that sort of thing. Well, that's the way your bloodstream must look to cause that much somatic, see? *Puckle, puckle, puckle, puckle, puckle*. Coronary thrombosis, man – true advanced case. If a medico got ahold of you at that particular moment, he'd examine you, man, he'd have you in with EEGs and PDQs! He'd blanch!

I've already seen medicos blanch on just running an engram. Ran a guy through measles one time, got him – doctor took his temperature – ran him through a measles engram. Halfway through, why, the doctor stopped me and took his temperature again. He was running a temperature, I don't know, a hundred and two, hundred and three, something like this. And the doctor immediately went into a screaming fit and says, "I'm sorry, I have to order this patient to bed at once!" [laughs] I said, "I'm sorry, this is my consulting room at the moment, sit down!" and finished off the engram. Doctor took the temperature of the patient, it was normal, the patient felt fine; the doctor thought he'd gone crazy because he'd even seen the spots of measles. All the symptoms of measles had been turned on and turned off, complete with temperature.

Well, if an engram can do that, what do you suppose a GPM can do? I'm not now talking about an RI, I'm talking about a whole GPM, see, just missed, clean and clear. Well, I'll let you in on something. You're going to miss a whole GPM on any pc you operate at some time or another. You just can't avoid it happening. So you better begin to understand and stop, because the amount of worry which is going to start entering your skull in the absence of the understanding of what is going on will completely unman you or unwoman you!

The essence – the essence of the situation is comprehension: know the tools of your trade and know what's happening. And also know that there is no perfect method of inspecting a zone or area that you yourself cannot visually see. Only the pc can see this zone or area, until you get up to be – God-help-us. You won't be auditing then; you'll be giving planets a little additional revolutions. You get up there. We got need for you up there, too. We know of three or four planets that need a lot of additional revolutions. In fact we have ten or fifteen times the revolutions planned for them. Crosswise, at right angles to the way they're now going! Now, that's – that's a secret. I sh... I should take that off the tape, that's a secret.

But the point – the point is here, your comprehension must be up to your line of action. You must realize that there is no way of looking at it and taking a look at the pc and seeing where his GPMs are located and what the GPMs are and what each one is, except by the systems of processing. You can see it through a meter and the recognition of the pc who may

or may not see them. Pc starts itsainging them and so forth, well, he can go so far in itsainging them without plowing himself in. He's itsainging them, he's still getting TA action, well, you let him go ahead. But you're *huuh*, you know – you know what you're dealing with, you know what the mechanics of it are and you very readily become experienced in knowing whether it's in line or out of line or what you're doing. There's certain tests that you can lay in. And you must also become completely, completely – not resigned to – but completely expectant of a few misses. You start running it perfectly and you worry yourself silly! An auditor couldn't live with himself at all. Because it's impossible!

I'll give you some kind of an idea of how difficult it is. Found a PT GPM. It was obviously the PT GPM; it checked out beautifully. Did a goal oppose – ran it out. Very fine. It – very nice. Ran out the next GPM; ran out the next GPM; found and ran out the next GPM; found and ran out the next half of a GPM. That's two and a half GPMs, see – two and a half GPMs now, including – I mean, in addition to this (quote) "present time GPM." Case all of a sudden is unburdened enough; pc suddenly looks up and says, "You know, I never have accepted the present time GPM as my GPM."

"Oh?" [laughter]

There's some English family that my family was connected with at one time or another; they had a beautiful coat of arms. It was this enormous rook who was about ten times as big as the castle, sitting on this little tiny turret, see? And the motto was, "Be surprised at nothing." That's a good one to adopt. [laughter]

Thing ran beautifully, was giving beautiful tone arm action. But this is the case of, "Don't repair a case as long as the case runs," you see? As long as that case was running without any difficulty – no repair, nothing, pc didn't say anything. Well, in the last couple of sessions, going down the line, we all of a sudden started to have a tone arm which was parking itself at 5½ and 5.75. Here was trouble. Tone arm action was diminishing. Something was wrong. A GPM had been missed – something is wrong.

However, still didn't make any trouble for the pc, because still getting within the limits of a permissible tone arm action and RIs and making it all right till all of a sudden it's the pc who itsas it. Says, "I never have accepted the present time GPM as my GPM."

"Oh? All right. Very good."

Took the second GPM from present time, which had already been run out but which was obviously an actual accurate GPM or it would have wound the pc around a telegraph pole; assumed that it must, therefore, be the second or some such order; and although it had been found by opposing a wrong GPM, it still was the second GPM. Did a goal oppose list against it of a page and a half long; found the right present time GPM; prepchecked it – almost blew the meter apart, such fantastic tone arm action – went up, counted the number of RIs in it...

Here's the trick for you. How many RIs has this thing got in it? Has it got five, six? You see, truncated present time GPM would not have the full complement of reliable items. So, well, how many does it have? That gives the pc some idea of how to list it. Is it up to the crossover – the middle of it? Or is it up to the top or is it still on the winning side, you see,

toward the bottom? Gives the pc an idea of where to list. "How many RIs has it got in it? Has it got two, four, six, eight?"

"Th-th-th-th-th-"

"How many RIs?"

The pc says, "Th-th – I think six. Yes." And six is rocket reads. There's six RIs in this GPM.

"Fine. Let's list for the top terminal."

And bang! bang! bang! and the pc gave me the first service facsimile found on the pc. Slightly different wording, but there it was, rocket reading like a bat, man! Just going to – bingety-bang. And it just checked out as the top form – opposed it, opposed it, opposed it, opposed it. In three hours and about a half, or something like that, of auditing found that top GPM on a repair basis; found it, found all of its RIs and two RIs that had been missed in the second GPM. The two top RIs had been missed because they were too closely connected with the missing GPM. Threw out the old present time GPM; it now proved to be no GPM even though items had been found. Items had been found but they'd been pulled out of implants and from other actual GPMs. That's where *its* items came from. There was a whole phony GPM sitting there already listed, see?

The other one now in place, pc running like a startled gazelle, tone arm moving between 2 and 3, no longer assuming the heights of 5½ or 5 or anything like it. That's about three hours and a half for the whole operation.

All right. There must have been a lot – lot of auditing going on there. Yes, there was an awful lot of auditing, but it was basically this: Pc said, "I have never accepted the present time GPM as my GPM." And I'm sure that this was as much a surprise to the pc as to the auditor. The pc up to this time had more or less bought it but had some dim objection. But coming up scale enough to actually recognize but didn't accept it, don't you see? So there was a correction which could be done, but only when it had to be done and only when it was pointed out by the pc that it was going awry. Interesting.

Oddly enough, learned something else at the same time. All of your long RI lists – all of your long RI lists – are from wrong items. We already knew that with 3M2. We knew, but we knew it this way. You look up the line plot and find an item ticks. If the item ticks, then the list it came from is incomplete. That's the rule. Well, actually you can do that a little bit better. If you're listing a list and your pc ARC breaks, the item is – tends to be rather long – the list tends to be rather long and you don't seem to be able to find anything and nothing will stay in, the pc is ARC breaking on overlisting and that sort of thing – you are listing from a wrong item. That solves, actually, long lists in listing for GPMs, quickly, for the auditor. It'll help an auditor an awful lot to know that.

These are little gags of one kind or another; they actually become very forceful rules. We knew before how you did this – you checked the items out. But that checkout is not actually a totally reliable pit... situation because it might be suppressed. No, it's only when you run into a long item list. And when you run into a long item list and you can't find an item on it and the pc is ARC breaky and he's tired of listing and finds it hard to list, just assume you're

listing from a wrong item and correct the list just before the list that you did. Extend it, don't you see? Get the right item on this. The case will just run off like this and your tone arm action is quickly and immediately restored.

All this is rules of the game, tricks of the trade, ways to make this cat jump. And when you get right down to it from the word go, you have to be auditing every minute. But what is it that tells you? Do you know that there have now been four mistakes on the present time GPM? Four. At one time a bunch of RIs out of the second GPM were run as the first GPMs RIs. All right, that was gotten rid of and got over that. Another time, tried to go up into PT with this present time GPM – that is, get closer to PT, find items that were apparently missing and read that items were missing – so ran a bunch of irrelevant items which didn't even belong in that GPM, see? Earlier had made two mistakes of a minor nature. But nevertheless, this all added up into patch-up, patch-up, patch-up. Well, fine. But the pc getting tone arm action of a flying nature all the way. And the case is only being patched up when the case has to be patched up and the case isn't being worried to death all the time.

Now, how can one go ahead and do that? By knowing the anatomy of a case, not worrying about this case but just knowing the anatomy of the case and having some idea of the number of lousy mistakes that you can make in running R4M2 and just accepting that as a liability. Since it's not really the auditor's liability, it's the inability of the pc to perceive sufficiently to let your meter read just *below* that level of perception. Your meter always reads just *below* the pc's ability to perceive. Your meter can read *more* than the pc. It is sub-itsa that you read just below what the pc can perceive.

Now – now – now look at this, look at this, because there's another piece of this. Your meter is not under any circumstances going to read *deeper* than the pc sub-itsa level. If the pc has got, you see, can read – pc can itsa at a certain level and then the meter can run at a sub-itsa level and itsa just below that level – that is a constant distance – the distance between what the pc can itsa and the sub-itsa line. Do you understand? That's a constant distance. And when the pc can't itsa something at all, of course, the meter can't itsa it at all, don't you see? So as the pc's ability to itsa improves, of course, your meter's ability to sub-itsa improves, don't you see?

So until you've got that well improved, don't start cussing your meter, just recognize what – what this limitation is. Until that's improved, you're going to make mistakes. It's inevitable that you're going to make mistakes because you're running there at a sub-itsa level which is unbelievably close to the surface and you've got GPMs piled in like mad. And in actual fact, the present time GPM was *not available* in this case until half of the GPM it was pinned to – the third from the top – had been run, because they are so close together – their harmonic is so close – that they were entangled and smashed together. Couldn't be sorted out. When you run half of it, all of a sudden it sorted out.

Pc at this time makes the announcement, "I've never accepted the present time GPM." That's because the other one is now free, so it's knocking on the corner of the skull, saying, "Hey! Tsk, tsk!" So the pc says, "I wonder if there's something wrong with *this*, because that seems to be knocking around here." Do you see?

So inevitably, inevitably, you are going to make mistakes, if you want to call them that, in running R4M2. Inevitably. Because you can only run as deep as the meter can sub-itsa. That's all the deeper you can run on the case. And the case is so jammed up and the itsa is so close to the top, particularly when you start the case, that of course perception is very difficult.

Now, if the perception of this is very, very difficult, how thorough does your information on what it consists of in its basic mechanics have to be? Are you in any position at all to be fumbling around with, "What are the basic mechanics of GPMs and the mind and so forth and what does the mind really look like?" Are you in any position to be fumbling around with that when you already got these troubles of the pc can't itsa any corner of it and the thing is so jammed up and overcharged that we can't sub-itsa with the meter worth a nickel on it and we're making mistakes with – there – at the same time, do we have any time to be coping with a noncomprehension of what we're handling? Well, the easy part of all this simply hangs up on this one fact: The comprehension of it is simple because its anatomy is very simple.

The mind could be a very fancy... You could probably write billions of words describing the number of phenomena and significances and odd bits and types of this and that in the mind. And they're all very interesting curiosa. And a very accomplished auditor would know about an awful lot of them, because he would have run into them at one time or another.

But a few minutes ago in this lecture I was able to sum up everything in the mind in a relatively few words – that is, everything in the mind that has any bearing on aberration or is touched by auditing when auditing is successful.

And it's just a little hatful of stuff; it's just your thirty bricks – the goals, that sort of thing. But those bricks can get tangled up with the implant GPMs, you know? They all have goals and they'll rocket read, too. They actually derive their force and rocket reads, by the way, from the actual GPMs.

You got these various things; there they are stretched out. Your pc's got them, except the probability of his twenty [thirty] bricks – even though he's lived them and laid them out – the probability of those things being in a string or being undisturbed, of all the items being neatly in the proper brick, of all the bricks being separate – the possibility of this occurring is not remote but nonextant. There's no slightest possibility that this is going to be the condition of the bank when you begin to operate on the bank. It's a jam mess. A jam mess.

The GPMs have helped jam it. But the pc has been enthusiastic in jamming it, too, one way or the other. These things have gotten pulled out this way and pulled out the other way and pulled off some other way and chipped up this side and hauled down that side, and so forth. Oh, they're all neat. And when you audit them they go all together like a well-oiled clickity-click machine. If you've got GPM eighteen and you've run everything down to GPM eighteen, then you can find the top – the top oppterm and the top terminal and every RI in it just as neat as you please, right down to the goal as an RI; the whole thing will blow down and blow up and that's the end of it. Oh, yes, it'll all perform – it'll very, very neat.

But your difficulty comes when the eighteenth brick from the beginning of time is pulled up in advance of the present time GPM. And your listing for the present time GPM

finds the eighteenth brick, "to be God," you see, something like this, you know? Good, sound present time GPM, you know? Crunch!

Present time GPM: "To not use my powder puff so often," you know? [laughs]

There's ways of recognizing these things. And when you – when you get this stuff really down, why, you'll see what these things ... But it goes together just like that. There's less to learn about it than building a mechanical toy or building a little block house out of kids' blocks – there's less to learn about it than that. But the point is, learn it and respect what you've learned – understand what it amounts to. And then you've understood – you've understood all the basics of existence. This is what somebody is doing. This is how he did it and this is what's wrong with him. This is what you're untangling and this is what you're straightening out and so forth.

And a solid command of this delivers a fantastic amount of ease into your hands, at whatever level of auditing. This guy comes in, he's going "*Rrww, rrww, and smmmllll-daa-daa-daa-raa*" and so forth. And this is only Level II you're doing and so forth. Let's do an ARC break assessment on a List 4, phrasing it in some way or another – "Has a goal of yours been disturbed?" You know, "A goal of yours that has mass with it, has that been disturbed?" It'll register in some fashion or another and pat some GPM back into place, see; straighten out some RIs that he doesn't even know are RIs. You could get very, very smooth at this kind of thing. You could practically put him back together again without auditing anything, don't you see?

You should be able to handle these things well. But basically you should be able to understand these things and you should be able to understand the mind as the mind, as a mechanical piece of stuff; not as a bunch of significances and not as "a divine creation which is given man to speed his learning and thinking and has made man into the being he is today, lord of all creation." [laughter, laughs]

Just deliver some of that understanding into your hands and you'll have a lot of luck with pcs and so forth and you will be disabused at once of tremendous worry over your pc. Because you'll be able to perceive much more rapidly what's wrong and at the same time deliver into your hands a lot of power to get results over your pc. And those two things are very desirable, as I think you will agree.

Thank

you.

ROUTINE 4

A lecture given on 29 October 1963

Well, winter has arrived and you are all ready now with your mukluks and parkas but there'll be no dog sleds. They bark, you know, and interrupt sessions and so forth.

What's the date?

Audience: Twenty-ninth. October.

Twenty-nine October, AD 13, Saint Hill Special Briefing Course.

[part missing]

Well, I was going to talk to you today about R4, but you look a little weak. And I better talk about it anyway.

Now, if you only knew the truth of it, the whole mind is composed of R4. And you can get somebody into more trouble with incorrectly done R4 and somebody into more high levels of beingness with correctly done R4 than anything you've ever seen.

This R4 doesn't compare to being shot, being burned alive, being dumped out of high buildings, going through wars and things like this. It's much more effective on a thetan.

The truth of the matter is that every now and then somebody, relatively expert in auditing, who is doing R4 or some old-time pc, also an auditor, who is being run on R4 will look up and say, "My God, how could raw meat ever do this?" And that's the truth of it. They couldn't. And I've just been through – we're right up to the top of the bank fooling around with my PT GPM and so forth and – I've had a lot run out below it, but moving in on the thing for the kill, you see.

And we were sitting there doing an analysis of having missed the present time GPM and gotten into a muck which consisted of running items without having the GPM with a shut-off RR, see. The RR had shut off.

The only thing that shuts off an RR or R/S or falls or stills the meter or anything like that – the only thing that does this – and I underscore that's a terribly important datum for you – is running items without having the goal. And they shut off, clank! Off goes your surges, off goes the lot, off goes your TA action, off goes everything else and especially the RR. That goes off. Your R/S shuts off. In other words, your meter becomes completely inoperative and inactive.

And the only thing that does this sweepingly with a crash and an exclamation point, the only thing that does this, the only thing that does this... I – I wish to God that when you're looking at a stilling meter, a meter that's going still on you, you're doing lists – not a goals

list, now, that naturally runs out of its RR, don't you see, and it runs your tone arm action out of the list. I'm not talking about that, you see.

But you're doing items. You're doing items. It's an item list and you're doing items in... you see the – the needle is getting less active. *Aaaaaah*.

Now, if you're very, very clever, very, very, very clever as an auditor and you're very, very observant and you're right on your toes and you know your business all the way through, you're just grooved, man, grooved, you all of a sudden will – will watch this phenomenon. And the funny part of it is, the next slash is slightly less, the next RR is slightly less, the next RR is slightly less, the next slash is slightly less, the next blowdown is less, don't you see? See, you can get a good – you can be fooled, you see? – you can get two good blowdowns on items, then the third item – and it doesn't blow down at all, hardly. And then the other one doesn't blow down, and so forth. See?

But the slashes and the reads of the needle is what you're really taking here, not the blowdown. And you all of a sudden see that you're looking at a stilling meter, you're running a wrong goal.

You are busy, busy, busy little beaver getting items out of a GPM for which you do not have the goal. And the pc will go, not necessarily creak – this isn't what turns on the creaks, it's bad enough, a lot of things turn on the creaks – but the pc feels like he's getting in a sort of a dry sandpaper. Mass is getting very, very thick, and things are getting very heavy and so forth.

And the next thing you know, why, he just goes stuck and he'll go completely leaden. He'll feel just very leaden. He'll feel like he can't think and can't act, can't operate, can't spark and oddly enough, he won't necessarily ARC break. How do you like that?

He just sits there woodenly. You're running in a GPM "to have fun," see, except you're calling it "to be sad." Doesn't even have to be that far opposite. It's just "to be funny." That's good enough. "To have fun," and you're running it as "to be funny." That's enough.

The next thing you know, surges getting less, meter getting less active, everything getting less active. And you find another item and you find another item and you've got less action and less surge and less this. And you knucklehead, you then went ahead and found another item and you found yourself looking at a completely stuck, still needle. No matter what you do with that needle.

Now, of course, the thing to do, isn't it, is to immediately put in all the mid ruds. That – that's the best way to then clobber the pc. Put in all the mid ruds. Of course, that – that's something like pouring gasoline on a fire. That's just nonsense. Nobody can suppress that hard. *Can't* be done. And you do your regular bypassed charge because you can't get anything to read now and you'll get a nice flick on "wrong goal" or "incorrectly worded goal" or something like this.

And there might be a much stronger one lying in your case analysis form such as "Are we..." – because this is the most serious thing that can happen in auditing – you can add a line in there that says something to this effect – something to this effect: "Are we running items out of a GPM we don't have the name of?" Some such wording, see?

You haven't got the name of the GPM, you see. You haven't got the goal for the GPM and you're running items on it. Well, that will lock up a case gorgeously. Now there's only one cure for this. One cure. There aren't any other cures and this is not necessarily a difficult cure, but there is only one, one, one. And that is: Find the *right* wording for that GPM. Find the right goal for that GPM, see?

See, a GPM is a thing. It's a great, big, massy island of mass, black and uncouth and filled full of items which are all opposed to each other and it's all packed in like mad. And if you had one of these things in here – it – because a thetan is mocking it up, you see, it doesn't necessarily have a lot of weight.

But as you get one in the middle bank, why, it's about 65 feet long, about five, six feet thick, maybe 20, 25 feet wide. And it is a thing, in other words.

It's a rather uncouth looking thing. Big slab and irregular edges. And if you had a tractor someplace and pulled one of these things out into the front yard, you see, it's just mass. And it's just mass. But the significance of that mass is its goal – is the goal. "To... (something)" or "not to... (something)," and it's much easier to run implant GPMs than it is actual GPMs because implant GPMs have predictable wordings.

An implant GPM is "to spit" or "to be spat" or something like this, you see? It's always "to be" or "to not" is about as complicated as an implant gets.

"To not be," see? "To be cold." "To not be cold." Seldom the nots. The nots are very infrequent in implant GPMs. It's more likely "to be warm" versus "to be cold," see? And "to run" – that isn't an implant GPM but that would be the sense of one. See, nice and simple.

It isn't the end wordings that's simple. It's that "be" that is simple, see? It's either a "be" or it's missing, see. It's "to move," see, or "to be moved." See, that's the total – the total. There is no more variety, see? There's no more variation in these things. They're quite predictable.

Somebody that's listing for implant GPMS, say, "To have a very good time" and so forth. Kick his shins. There are no such implant GPMS. Couldn't be. See, that's – carried forward by the limitations of those squawk boxes, you see, and those things had to put out a meaning and they had to put it out briefly, and electricians are expensive and people who implant are chichi, see.

They always follow these very, very simple patterns. But an actual GPM is a horse of another hue. Now, an implant GPM doesn't have one of these big islands with it. It's more like an alley. Actually, it has black mass connected with it, but it's more like a little alley. It's a couple of – well, it's a couple of rows of parking meters or something like this. Sometimes they're all centralized in one location with the snaps and bangs up on the poles and the squawk box – speaker box right on the platform they put the thetan on. These vary, but they make a little bit of a mass, see?

They do make a mass. And a thetan who's relatively uneducated, and even one who is pretty well educated, sometimes looks at an implant GPM and... because he's in the middle of it, don't you see? All cats are black, you know, and you can't see out of the middle of a small dark room any better than you can see out of the middle of a big dark room, you know?

That's the same – same piece of business. You can't see, in other words, so you don't know what you're looking at because you're sitting in the middle of it. And an implant GPM looks like it had a little alley about three, four feet wide, but longer. But longer. It looks much longer. They're normally about seventy-five feet or eighty-five feet or even a hundred feet long, you see? Sometimes longer than that.

Thetan stuck on a pole was pulled down between these things, you see? And once in a while you think the pc's running an actual GPM and he says, "What is this parking meter?"

Well, this is not necessarily meaningful because the implant GPM might be part of the RI which you're running out of the actual GPM. You see, the actual GPM is enormously senior to an implant GPM. Implant GPM has the power to aberrate of key-in. It has no native power in itself to aberrate all by its little old lonesome, because it isn't that strong. It doesn't amount to much.

Oh, well, you getting stuck in the middle of them with the pings and the bangs going from left to right and your jaws are hurting and your eyes feel all inflamed, and so forth. There's nothing to be sneezed at. Has about the same power of aberration as breaking your leg or something like that, don't you see?

But I suppose any pc has got 8,760,272,943 ½ broken legs, and he's still functioning somehow or another. You see, it's quantitatively nonsense. It doesn't matter. But here you've got a situation where the pc's sitting in the middle of this implant GPM suddenly doesn't recognize what it is as an implant GPM because it's all black mass.

Well, the black mass, oddly enough, is his suppress. The black mass doesn't much come from the implanters. It comes from the suppression of the thetan. You put the button Suppress in very much on implant GPMs and you'll wish you hadn't.

Engrams and implants you really mustn't run mid ruds on. They mush and they do bad things. If you run an implant GPM putting in lots of mid ruds, why, you'll very soon be in very sad trouble as an auditor because the mass is beginning to mush and so forth. It can't stand up to it.

It's not true of an actual GPM. It's not true of an actual item. These things are big, strong and tough and you can run all the mid ruds you want to on the things and you're not going to get in any trouble.

But getting back to what I was saying there, the individual running a wrong goal in an implant GPM actually gets a similar effect. You can run out of RR and RI if you're running 3N-implant GPMS, you see? See, you can get the same effect. You can run out of RR.

You think the goal is "to be cold," you see, something like that. And it's actually a bit worse than this. It's "to be dead." Rather common goal, "to be dead," in these implant GPMS. Seldom "to die." Usually "to be dead." In fact, I don't know of any implant GPM which is "to die." They're all "to be dead," you see? It's very easy.

But getting back to what I was talking about there, you get into trouble just running the wrong goal and implant GPM. What do you think happens with this great, big mass for which you don't have any name?

Well, you can start running items in it because the pc has no guide, he doesn't know where to go, he doesn't know what the name of it is and so forth; he's going to go over the hills and far away. And he's going to go into other implant GPMs.

And very shortly – running an implant GPM will happen this way, too, but in an actual GPM, this gets very serious.

You're running a goal with no name, see? You haven't got the goal. You're running the GPM and you haven't got the goal for the GPM, and you run RIs and now listen carefully: It isn't so much a problem that you run out of RRs, see, and blowdown, you know, and needle action. That is not really the problem.

The problem is that you almost never find – almost never find the item for that GPM. You usually find an item in some other GPM or an implant. If you haven't got the goal... in other words, it isn't just that your slash and surge and all that stuff shut off on your needle. It's the fact that you now give the pc the wanders. And with what ease you will pull in an item out of an implant GPM. That's very easy to do now. You have no guide, you see, so the pc will pull an implant item in and then you oppose that in some knuckleheaded fashion and you – you all of a sudden will find an – your hair should start standing on end now – you'll find an item in some other GPM, actual GPM, see? Not even the one you didn't have the goal for. You understand me? You're already running one wrong, see. You haven't got the goal for this GPM. But now because you are finding items in it, you are very likely to pull an implant GPM into that GPM.

Now, you got that? That's bad enough. Now if you persist, you then will pull... this is great stuff for an auditor's nerves – it – if an auditor can live through these R4s without going mad and if he – if he can hold his coffee cup without it slipping out both sides, while auditing this on somebody, why, we call him a steady auditor. Only slipping out one side, we pass him, see? Nervy stuff. Because you see, the next item you find is going to be out of another GPM; out of another actual GPM. So that brings – now, it's all right now at this point to start looking pale – this brings another GPM out of line and pulls it up and yanks it into the GPM you haven't got the goal for. Got that?

Now, as you oppose this one, since you're already skidded on the track – it isn't that you just don't have a guide, it's just that there's some – actually some mystery about all this... How come all these things go wrong when you just don't have the goal for this GPM?

Well, it's almost – it's almost magic how wrong it can go, see? It isn't that the pc just doesn't know. Just don't put it down to the fact well, he doesn't know what the goal is, so he doesn't know what item to list on it. It isn't there.

These other things just go wrong just for the hell of it all on their own, see? So now you oppose this one. Now you've got another GPM in here, see. You've already pulled an implant GPM into the actual GPM.

Now you've got your next item and that took a GPM down the track up here 65 feet, 5 feet high, 20 feet wide; and that towed that up the track and pulled that into this GPM that you didn't have the goal for. You got it?

Weirdly enough, pc's still in the GPM you don't have a goal for because there's where he is dying, item by item, see?

All right. Now – now we oppose that. We oppose that one and we're very likely to reach way to some other corner of the bank and tow up another actual GPM and pull that into this one.

Pc by this time, he looks like he had a cross between yellow fever and typhoid or something like this, but at this point, of course, he ceases to be certain of his auditor. For some reason or other, at this point he has some lapse of confidence. And he doesn't necessarily, oddly enough, ARC break. He just gets puzzled and starts to whatsit like mad and he'll say there's lots of things he doesn't understand about what's going on. That's usually what you get out of this kind of a mess.

He doesn't quite understand what is going on. Well, of course, the auditor at this stage of the game, if it's a very persistent auditor who knows he had better get on with it and get his job done because the thing to do is to find items, you see, doesn't notice this tone arm is motionless by this time, you see? And is likely then to go on and compound the felony and pull another series of implant GPMs in on top of this one.

Pc by this time can recognize nothing, see nothing, have nothing to do with anything. Got the idea? I mean that's – that's – it's too horrible for words.

Now what happens?

Well, actually, your proper action is to find the goal for the GPM you thought you were working with in the first place. Your proper action is to do everything you can to find that goal whether you had to do it by represent lists or inspections of the meter. It's very tricky. You can ask does it have something to do with the subject matter, you see, that you're already handling.

You thought you were running "to be cold," don't you see, or something like that. And your subject matter, "Well, does it have something to do with being cold?" or "Does it have anything to do with cold?" and so forth. You can get a fairly good rendition off of your meter; you can at least block it out, you see?

And you can say, "Well, give me some represents," you see. "Give me some goals similar to this goal," or something like that. You're not really doing a goals list. It doesn't follow the rules of a goals list. You're just tinkering with this thing, trying to put it right and find the goal. You'll find yourself doing this every now and then, particularly if you didn't do a good thorough goals list job in the first place.

There's no substitute for a good goals job in the first place, see? But nevertheless, even though you do do one, you occasionally run into this other condition.

Now, you think that's the end of it. You found the right goal and all of a sudden *ahhhaahhhhh*, the guy's RR. You see this thing, the goal RRs and you can tell it's the right goal because in this particular instance the only thing that will turn back the RR is not some similar goal – a similar goal won't turn on an RR. It's got to *be the goal*, you see? Right down to the last comma, see? It's got to be *the goal*.

And you read this and you see the thing RR, you know you've got it because the RR is back on, see? You won't find some other goal. Nothing will RR until you find that right goal. Interesting, isn't it?

And now, because you've sinned and went on and on and on without having the right goal for that GPM, you now have to take every one of those items and identify it, analyze it, identify it and put it in its right place, and try to pat the track back into some kind of condition.

And you do that by asking, "Is this an implant item?" "Is this an actual item?" "Is this from the GPM we were working?" "Is it from some other GPM?" "Is it a lock on an RI?" "Is it a lock on an implant RI?" "Is it a lock on an actual GPM RI?" "Is it something or other?" You see, you just go on with questions of that particular type and you get that thing identified, and all of a sudden the pc will say, "Ah, oh, well, yeah. Ha-ha. Well, yes, yes." And you suddenly see your thing start to blow and a 65-foot-long GPM is hooked up and it starts moving back into its right place.

You've got to undo this ball of yarn that you have undone and tangled, see? You've got to undo that tangle and put it back into its proper order again. That sounds pretty wild, doesn't it. It sounds pretty wild.

It's things like this, and this is only one of them. I want to cheer you up today, in cheery mood. Really, the first day of high furnace heat. I just want to make you – make you feel happy about this whole thing. That is not all of the problems connected with R4. That's just one of them.

It will happen to your pcs. Don't think you can avoid it. It'll happen to you as a case. It's fairly inevitable. It's happened to me twice, and – three times, I think, in running an awful lot of GPMS. But all of a sudden, why, notice that the auditor's gone white as chalk, not feeling too alert yourself, you see? And start to run a whatsit and it turns out that your RR has been shut off for the last item or two. So it can happen, don't you see? This is not an unusual action. And just to cheer you up, is only one of the problems connected with R4.

It's not enough to be an expert. That's the first lesson you've got to learn. You be an expert and then work like hell from there on. First be an expert and then work like the dickens. Because you'll find that an auditor who's an old hand at running this type of – this OT-type processes will give you this – will give you this as a maxim. And you yourself one day, regardless of whether I've told you this here, will one day be sitting there after a complete – particularly arduous session, and you will come up with this as a datum, and so forth, all on your own bat as how you run it.

You do the very best you can. You do everything as best you possibly can. And then you cope with the things that go wrong. You don't try to run a total perfection. You don't try to run this right from scratch, perfectly, with the expectancy that it will be perfect. You try to run it perfectly with the expectancy that every now and then you, canoe, barrel, pc, are going to go over Niagara Falls, see?

You can expect your pc to, one fine morning, not appear. And when found they will be staring emptily at the ceiling in a total creak. And everything looked right on your meter and everything was the best you possibly could do and so on, and yet this occurred.

Now you've got the task of unsnarling what you don't know is wrong yet. You don't know what's wrong, and yet you have to unsnarl it. So you have to find out what's wrong and unsnarl it.

Now, there's no real sense in getting superemotional about it. That is what you can expect. You do the best you can and you cope with the things that go wrong.

And there's no sense in thinking, "Well, this is all just a walk in the park, see? There's nothing to it, you see. And you just sit down and Ron's given me some little rules here, and it's all fine, and I can just put the rules in the chair and they'll run the case and we just sit back and itsa the whole track, you see, nicely and the pc emerges at the other end, OT."

Well, unfortunately that is not the case. That is not the way it's happening. And I can tell you that there is absolutely no faintest possibility, no faintest possibility at all of that condition improving to any great extent. I can give you absolutely no hope of any kind that technology will move an eighteenth of an inch beyond that deadline.

R3M2 has been in existence for a very long time and has been run in a lot of areas. It is being improved. I can give you little tips here and there that have improved the living day-lights out of it. Recognize a new way of recognizing something wrong, don't you see? Something like that.

But there is no substitute for an auditor here and there is no possibility that the technique or auditing it will become any easier in the future. Because the tips I can give you still require an auditor. They still require the same address to the case and the hurdles are still there. And none of those hurdles are going to be mounted by any little set of rules. Any new set of rules, rather. They're not going to disappear simply because I tell you that there is a new address to this particular problem.

Those hurdles are there. And the reason why this hits this horizon and the reason why this process is in this condition and will continue to be in this condition is the matter of a meter.

The meter reads just exactly the same distance always below the pc's ability to itsa. A meter will not read any deeper than that. The sub-itsa. In other words, this meter can see further into the case than the pc can itsa. Well, that's a godsend because it, in actual fact, can see far enough to barely get us by.

As the pc's ability to itsa improves, the sub-itsa level on the meter rises. This is a constant distance. The meter is never going to see deeper. Now, I've experimented with meters for a long time. I'm going to make a very, very antipathetic statement to any research man when I say this meter is not going to be improved. See, that's antipathetic to a research man.

He likes to sweep statements like that aside. Remember, I've been trying to improve this meter. We've been working on this meter one way or the other. We have spent quite a bit of money and time in very recent times trying to improve meters, and the limiting factor on

the meter is a mental factor, not an electronic one. And that is that the individual itsas at level A and the meter reads always then at level B. And as you cannot develop a meter which is more sensitive that will then read to level C. Do you understand?

And this meter's already at the zenith. You get anything – you get anything more sensitive than that meter, it gives you more trouble and has more variations and vagaries on it and gives the auditor more trouble than it gives him help, don't you see?

So as you begin to make this meter more sensitive, as you begin to switch around and change and alter various factors in it, you start entering in various other things.

Now of course, the modern medico approach, Pavlovian, he's got the answer. You stick the electrodes into the brain of the patient. I've had these dogs actually propose this seriously as a solution to an E-Meter.

I mean I'm – I'm not joking now. That we use an E-Meter whereby we bore holes in people's skulls and put the electrodes into the brain and this gives you a more sensitive reading.

Now, I've tried to inform these fellows, "Haven't you slightly mistaken our purpose? We're not trying to kill the patient. We're trying to help him, you see?" And these fellows look at me with complete blankness. They had never realized that we had any idea of helping anybody. Why, they thought we were just trying to find out.

Now, therefore, you can look at no real help from the electronics of a meter. There wont be any. You can put these things... we've tried oscilloscopes – but these things have terrible liabilities. I think if we'd invested a billion dollars, we would probably come up with a slight improvement. We would probably have moved the B below the A maybe a thousandth of an inch. See. Hardly worth struggling for, see, the improvement.

You can put oscilloscopes – great big – you can imagine you auditing with an oscilloscope, you know, great big dial you see here and the thing is going back and forth, you know? And you know these old singsongs where you have the ball bouncing off the words, you know. This thing going back and forth, you know, and ...

I'll tell you something about that. Societies sufficiently electronically advanced to conquer space and to put a spaceship through the air at trillions of light years – trillions of light years an hour, that fast, have not conquered two problems. They've never even come *close* to the problem of the human mind or any other mind, never come close to it. It's something like a small boy shooting at a squirrel in Germany by being in Denmark, see? Not even a miss, you see? Just another state. And they have never conquered space communication.

These very fancy spaceships can go so much faster than light waves and so forth, they can never telephone home and say, "What do I do next, Joe?" You know? That's what causes the warfare state of this universe: the inadequacy of a communication wave. You can never communicate to anybody.

Space fleet sent out is, of course, immediately beyond any possibility of communication or control. This and that and the other thing. A lot of problems add up around this sort of thing.

If you have a crash, for instance, even if your telephone or radio was preserved and so forth, you would never be able to call home and say, "We ran into a telephone pole, Joe. Send the wrecker." That's the end of that. People look for you for a long time on your predetermined course lines or something like this.

The answer to communication is life – a living being. And you can always, of course, release an individual from a wreck to return to base and tell the boys what happened. This, by the way, is the only method which is used in space opera. Didn't mean to get off onto space opera, but I'm just giving you relative development. So they turn the guy loose out of the wreck and he goes home and he says, "Hey, the boys are wrecked over on Pluto." That's the only answer they've had to it. But they couldn't improve that because they didn't know anything about life or the mind. Ho-ho. Interesting, isn't it?

Didn't know anything about that, so they couldn't improve that which left them totally, really without communication because the times you can exteriorize somebody and send him back to Pluto or send him back to home base from Pluto and so forth, reliably, he'd have to be in pretty terrific shape. But this has a limiter on it.

The second you apply a real science of the mind, you get powerful beings and you get fellows who are very able and capable and that sort of thing, and one, they wouldn't be riding in a spaceship to Pluto, so the situation is actually not a neat statement. It can't be made as a neat statement as you unprove one or the other. But these two things have never been improved. Communication in the universe runs up against a factor of this particular character and knowledge of the mind. And that has – oh, they've done quite a bit in this particular direction. They know how to implant people, and so forth. But – they can make people worse, and so on, but making them better: the easier route is to make them better. And yet they haven't been able to do that.

So those are dead-ended lines. And it's my contention that if the great electronic civilizations where the way you get your coffee in the morning is to roll your head on the pillow, you just roll your head over to the other side of the pillow and sleep for a few more minutes and the coffee appears on the side table, brimming hot, exactly to the temperature you like to drink at that particular moment, you see, and simultaneously, why, the living room is swept up and somebody has informed the office you are now awake and the... you see? Any gimmickry that you can possibly think of, you see, way in advance of any gimmickry we've even dreamed of on this planet, you see? If they haven't been able to develop anything that reads the mind, we haven't got a prayer. See? That's as far as... because we're dependent there on another line of science. We're dependent on the electronic development of the age.

And that we had managed to milk this out of the electronic technology extant in this time and period is absolutely miraculous. Absolutely miraculous. And that the – what somebody laughingly called the other day the United States government – busy seizing, trying to seize this, is actually no accident at all.

That, by the way, isn't a very serious suit. I just got a full report on it in the midst of everything else, and the last two weeks have been legal weeks. And that isn't now considered a very serious suit. If it ever went up for trial, we'd win it like that. They can't find anybody to

testify. Even people we've ARC broken, upset and so forth won't come in and clobber us. Government's having a hell of a time. Feel sorry for it. The poor government.

I don't happen to have any items in that particular line. I'm developing some. [laughs, laughter]

One of their ideas of fighting this case, by the way, was showing that I was mad because I thought tomatoes talked. These guys can't even read, you know? Well, we expect – I always knew they were lip movers, but I didn't think they just couldn't read anything.

Anyway, they're trying to clobber this meter. Trying to clobber this meter. This has given me some puzzlement as to why they were trying to clobber this meter because I wondered if they weren't getting orders from someplace or something, you know? I was trying to puzzle this thing out and then I thought well, they're just nasty tempered, ignorant louts, and that explains it, so I'll just let it go. The fact is – the fact is, this meter has been eighty years in existence. This is not a new meter. This is an old thing, but we've grooved it up and sensitized it up to a point where it performs our function. We know more about these things than other people have ever known about them.

We know the voltage it best operates on, and nobody ever dreamed of running these things before at 7½ volts or something like that. And we've done a lot of – lot of work this way, and all this is limited – limited technology because it's limited by the state of development of the period in which we live.

So just take a tip from me. The possibility of your meter getting better – from a standpoint of its guts – and therefore reading deeper on the pc than meters now read is not improbable but nonexistent. Forget it.

Now, I stirred up – stirred up a cup of genius the other day and whipped up a meter that makes it easier for you to list, that it's easier to handle and that sort of thing. That's – and that's in production. I saw the prototype of it the other day. But that's in design. That has to do with physical design of the case. Has nothing to do with the guts. And there's a glass pane, and you look through this glass pane to write your list and therefore you don't have to look sideways and develop that mirror inside the cornea. And this is a very tricky meter. It's a listing meter and you look through this meter and you see the needle floating in thin air on the glass panes, you see, and you look through these two glass panes and your hand is here on the other side of the meter so the thing actually is – it's a little thing. It's much smaller than this, by the way. It's like this. And you look through this in order to write. And of course your line of sight passes through this floating needle. And of course, that needle can't wiggle without you seeing it, see?

And it goes out of set, that sort of thing, why, of course your thumb is right there, bang! because you see that it's out of set. You don't have to pick your eyes up off of what you're listing in order to see if you've had a read on it, in other words.

There are various adaptations of this. This meter, by being wired just the other way to, could be set in a desk – now they're getting really fancy – with a projection light underneath the meter, with the knobs that controlled it over here someplace, and you would have the

shadow of the meter projected on the paper you were writing the list on. It's actually the same meter. You hardly have to change it at all to do that with.

This is very fancy, don't you see? Now, if you took that meter and put it in a desk like this so that it projected its light against the back of your list and you had a video – not a tape recorder, you see, but a video that gave you the picture and everything, and this video machine was running over here and that just had a couple of click buttons, it would be so rigged as to take a picture of your meter, you see, while you were auditing the pc and record your voice and the pc's voice and make a total record of the session, don't you see?

Now, if that video was improved electronically a little bit further, why, of course, every time you moved the tone arm, it would put a certain number of clicks on the video tape and then by running the video tape back through, why, it would also give you the total down divisions of TA for that particular session, you see.

Now, you could fix this up so a Coca-Cola would also appear, probably chilled. [laughter] You see the direction – you see the direction this could move from there on. We actually cease to deal in sensitivity or workability of the meter and simply get into – into flubber-jubber stuff. Foofaraw. Word of another age and time.

Anyway, this little meter with the pane of glass in it answers all these things. It's very lightweight. It's tiny. It surprised me that it could come up so light. And it's a lemon – the plastic on it and so forth is lemon-colored. It's rather – rather smart and it comes in a beautiful British leather case. Gorgeous, gorgeous case. But that case isn't going to read your pc, see. And nothing else is going to read your pc, and you being able to see the needle better on top of the glass, that isn't going to read your pc any better, don't you see? That's going to make it easier on the auditor.

In other words, your developmental line is to make it easier on the auditor, see? Make it easier for the auditor to read and see what is going on but not actually more sub-itsa from the pc. That limit is there.

All right. Let's look on the – looking further on the horror of it all, your pc is of very little assistance even when he's itsaing. In fact, sometimes quite the contrary. The number of things he will assert then causes these things to read on the meter. He's asserted this is an actual GPM, so when you read it on the meter, it reads as an actual GPM, don't you see? And you don't quickly put in your rudiments and say, "On this has anything been asserted or suppressed or invalidated," or something like that. And then read it, you see? Well, of course, your limitation is you haven't heard him assert anything, so you don't do that, you see? A slippy, sensible auditing approach here.

But what's – what have you got? Your pc is sitting there. He's being hammered and pounded by the biggest, toughest aberrations that he has ever been able to develop and they're flashing back on him in a – in a solid avalanche as he goes through this stuff, and as he's being knocked around. And his itsa is just what he can actually, factually realize. And it's not very high because the thing which is reducing his itsa is what you're running. You see, this is the case of the snake eating its tail. This thing defeats itself.

In other words, you could run these things out easily if the pc could itsa better. But the pc can't itsa better because he's got these things. The thing to do is to clear him and then have him itsa these things and tell you what they are. You get all kinds of wild and silly solutions of this and of course that's an automatic limitation. Now, as far as techniques – techniques that improve this condition, you've had one in just an analysis of what is itsa and the itsa maker and the whatsit line, and TA action and get TA action. All these are just general improvements of auditing. And if you can do these things, of course, you can improve the pc's ability to itsa.

But it improves only to a certain extent. And after that – after that, it can only be improved by R4 because the thing which is preventing him from itsaing now are the items which are contained in R4.

But nevertheless, as you find these items, getting a little more TA action than you would normally get, auditing a little more smoothly, making a – fewer mistakes. Not making no mistakes, but making fewer mistakes, and you continuously raise the pc's ability to itsa, and the job gets very good.

So it requires, basically, very smooth auditing. It's auditing. It's smooth auditing is what this requires. Now, the rules of auditing apply to all R4. And if an auditor is basically a rough auditor, he's going to have trouble. He's going to have more trouble on R4 than he would ordinarily get because he's going to reduce the pc's ability to itsa, reduce the pc's meter abilities, so he won't get the right answers off the meter, you see, and then you get into more confusions and more upsets than you'd – ordinarily wouldn't give.

So it comes down to *basic auditing*. So you got to improve basic auditing and improve your ability to audit basically, you see?

This is the cornerstone on which R4 must be built. We already see a process here which is going to go to hell in a balloon at the least chance, you see? It's going to go bang! Well, let's not make it go bang because of a bunch of fumble-bum auditing, see?

I'll give you an example. Pc says, "You've – I think you've overrun the list. I think the list is too long. I think the item back on the list is 'cheesecake.' Now, I think the item's back on the list earlier, and I think it's 'cheesecake.'" And the auditor is insufficiently alert to see that when the pc said "cheesecake" there was a considerable – there was a beginning of a commotion on that meter, you see? And is insufficiently schooled to realize the list is already too long and goes on nulling down the list and ignores this pc statement, "cheesecake," see? Just kicks that out a window. Just ignores it or plows on further, you see?

Well, you're going to have a lot of trouble there, man. You've now added some more suppress, and you've added a potential... you've got a cut comm line on the pc, and the pc's ability to itsa has been reduced, and so forth. Well, it isn't much in itself, you eventually go back and find out that it is cheesecake. Or you go back and find out that it wasn't cheesecake. But the net result is that the mess has resulted from just unsmooth auditing, see? Pc says something, at least give him cheers and say, "All right. You say it's cheesecake." You audit with the pc, not a system, you see?

You say, "Oh, it's cheesecake. Cheesecake. Cheesecake. Anything been suppressed on it?"

"No."

"All right. Well, I'm sorry. That doesn't read. Doesn't read yet. Might read later, but it doesn't read now."

And the pc's itsa has been handled to this degree and not totally invalidated, you see? And the pc – you very often find out that it was cheesecake. You see, the rolling RR; that's what almost knocks you off. You make that list one item longer, and the RR moved one bit further. It isn't that all – each item has a different RR. The RR all comes from the goal. So the RR coming from the goal, therefore and thereby, operates to move as you list.

So that you went – the item that fell three from the top is the item, and yet you went five down and had another one that fell. Now the RR lives at five. The right item is at three. You call three. You say, "Cheesecake. Cheesecake." And you don't whistle the RR back because it has moved further down the bank and the pc's attention is now stuck deeper into the GPM. And so therefore, you can't get his attention off the GPM and back over to the cheesecake - *arrhhhh, arrhhh* – till after you list it a while longer. And finally the pc puts cheesecake back on the list again or does something like this. And you all of a sudden, if you're lucky, you'll see *cheesecake*, and it'll read again.

Well, what happened is you moved the RR, the rolling RR. You moved that thing out from underneath it, see? I shouldn't be using RR because you don't list by RRs these days. You list by surges.

The stable datum is – it took me twenty minutes or ten minutes or twelve minutes or something like that to teach somebody (whose name I won't mention) the other day, a datum. One datum. One datum. One datum. And that is this datum. And you'd better know this datum. I don't think you will. I think you'll do something else with it and then eventually come back to it and know it.

An RI in an actual GPM is anything that surges, falls or rocket reads while being listed. And that is the point of assumption from which we adjudicate an RI. And it doesn't happen to be true, see? It – it's not a total truth because you could also find an implant RI on the list someplace, you see, and it would read, too. But it's still an RI in a GPM someplace, isn't it, even though it's an implant GPM.

You consider anything that falls, anything that does a – well, you know, surge, RR, any kind of a left-to-right-as-you-face-the-meter action – anything that does that – you assume that any item which when said by the pc did that, that was an RI. That's an RI.

What's an RI? It's an item that does that, regardless – of course, you can now describe it in a geographical position in a bank and what it is and how it composes and compounds and all sorts, and you go into that endlessly. But the truth of the matter is, the point of assumption from which we are operating today in the auditing of items is just that point of assumption. And it doesn't have anything to do with anything else and there is no additive to this, and that is itself. And many of you said, "Oh, now, then when you list, so therefore if something appears on the list..." That isn't what I said. I call to your attention, all I have told you is that we

assume that – this is a point of assumption – that anything which moves the needle from left to right, anything that moves the needle from left to right in a surge, in a fall or an RR – that's *or, or, or*, see – was an RI in a GPM. And that's how we define one as far as it's assumed. If it did it, that's what it is. GPM, see? Elementary. That is it. And that's the RI in relationship to the meter. That isn't even anything in relationship to a list, don't you see? That's just the datum by itself.

You get out of your skull this datum that an RI is something that RRs only, that an RI is something that does this only or does that only or does something else only. You just throw that datum out. Just pick up the lid of the garbage can and dump it in because this other datum is the one we have to operate from to find and work – make R4 work. Otherwise, you're going to get in trouble if you don't operate from this datum and know this datum well.

What's an RI? Well, we assume anything is an RI which causes action on the needle from left to right as you face the needle, which we would call a fall, a surge or an RR.

Now, somebody's going to – going to modify that on you sooner or later. Somebody's going to change that on you or you're going to change that. And the moment you change that, you're going to be in trouble. You're going to be arguing around and you all of a sudden are going to have something on the order of, say, "I didn't think that one inch was a fall. I didn't think one inch was a fall." You get the change of datum? Somebody's going to get around this, see? "Oh, I – I – but it RRed so I didn't really give it to you because it shouldn't have RRed. It should have disintegrated."

You get the idea? You get the number of variations here that can go on this assumption? And just know this about that assumption. That there aren't any, and that's the primary assumption that you have to have firmly in mind with R4. Otherwise, you're going to get yourself in all kinds of trouble.

Now, you notice I haven't said it's something which falls when you call it back to the pc. I haven't connected this with auditing in any way, shape or form. It just lives in pristine purity all by itself as a datum uncontaminated by application. That's an RI behavior on a meter.

Now, if you know that, you recognize that and you see what the score is with regard to that, you're going to have very little trouble. Very little trouble, because this now can be used in listing. It can be used in nulling. It can be used in testing it. It can be used in this, that and the other thing. Now, the basic listing datum which you should use is the first RI or the first item on a list that can be made to fall, surge or RR on being called back to the pc – that's the earliest one on the list that when being called back will fall, surge or otherwise – is probably, we hope, maybe, the item that goes in that position. But that by overlisting we can move the read on the list down.

Now, knowing that – knowing that, you get into a very simple situation here. It gives you a terrific number of one-item lists.

The best answer is to know what an item looks like on a meter. Undescribable. It looks a certain way on a meter for each pc. It isn't the same for all pcs, but it's pretty close to the same for all pcs.

So what you must do is recognize an item when you see one on the meter. But until you do, in listing, follow the severest rule – again, not necessarily – not necessarily the right rule – it's: Don't let the pc list beyond the first fall.

You say, "Well, we'll cut off his itsa if we shut him up."

You better cut off his itsa. That RR will be rolled right on down the bank and the right item won't be – won't be readable now. Wow!

So you get things all arranged with the pc. You say, "When the quarterback says so-and-so and hits the wicket with the cricket bat by saying 'thank you' or 'that's it' or something like that [laughter] – 'thank you' is probably better – you're to *shut your mouth* and you are not to say nothing else." Now, this is very hard on somebody in W Unit who has been shot very recently for having dared shut the pc off, do you see?

But, boy, you better get to that valve and close it tight right now because you're going to be in trouble if you don't.

Now, you get – take the first datum I gave you, you'll see why. You'll see why.

So just list till you see an item on the list, using that earlier definition as the item. Just list till you see an item on the list. And without startling the pc unduly, say, "Thank you. That's it. Got it? All right. Now I'll read this item back to you. All right. I'll read the item back to you."

"Well, I – I was saying..."

"Oh-bo-dut-dut-dut-dut-dt-dt!"

"I was, but I had – had it – now – I was trying to..

"Ssshhhh. Cheesecake. Cheesecake. It reads. Is that your item?"

"Well – well, as a matter of fact, it is. Yes, yes, yes. Sometimes, however – no, no, that wouldn't oppose it."

You usually suspect not that the list is incomplete but that it is overlisted. You probably had an earlier item than cheesecake which you didn't notice read. So you go on these various data.

In other words, you've got to shut that pc up. You can't let that pc list, man. Don't let him list and list and list because he's going to be in trouble. Any item – any list that tends to get long – "long" is used advisedly – what is a long list? Well, it is a long list. And any item which is used advisedly like this – any long list comes about because the item you are listing from was the wrong item.

That's also true of goals. That's true of anything. The item you were listing from was incorrect to begin with.

Your list gets long, see? Your list gets long. And you just can't get anything to read back, and the pc says "Battercakes," you see, and you say, "Thank you," you know. "Thank you."

"Battercakes. Battercakes. Battercakes."

It fell beautifully when he said it, see? You can't get it to read back? *Uh-uh-uh-uh*. Well, let him list a little bit further and he comes now with cupcakes, you see? "Good. Thank you. Thank you. Cupcakes. Cupcakes. Cupcakes. Cupcakes." And you sometimes see a – this is the mark of an amateur and it's also the mark of a very harassed pro. "Cupcakes. Cupcakes. *Cup cakes. Cup! Cakes! Cupcakes!* This item been suppressed? This item been suppressed? That's all right. *Cupcakes!!* Sorry. It doesn't read."

You get into too much of that sort of a situation, you see, and your list is going for, oh, I don't know. It's going for 30, 40, 50 items, or something like that. And you still can't get anything to read. You have to assume that what you are listing from was incorrect in the first place. And the usual assumption is that there was an earlier item on the list than the one you gave the pc. That is the usual assumption. You don't now continue that other list.

In other words, listing items is not handed – handled by extending lists. They're handled by rolling back the RR, if possible, under the item it should have been under in the first place. Do you follow me?

R4M2 is nearly always overlisted on items and underlisted on goals. The only thing that really follows all of the rules of listing is a goals list. That follows all of the rules of listing, beautifully. Two items reading on the same list, shoot the pc. It's not complete, see? Two items reading, this, that, all these other rules that you know, they apply to goals list. The list is incomplete. The list is this. The list is that. That applies all to goals lists. And they are usually underlisted. Auditors tend to list too few goals. That's the tendency. Because a pc begs off all the time.

"Well, it's on the list now. I know it's on the list. It must be on the list, and so forth. Well, you haven't had an RR for a long time, have you?"

"Well, no, I haven't had one. I haven't had one."

"Well, how many?"

"Well – it's – uh-uh-uh – 27. That's 27 since the last rocket read."

"Oh, well, 27 since the last rocket read. Well, that's all right, I guess it's..."

Boy, if he'd only put the 28th on, he would have gotten another RR, don't you see? And then he takes a goal from an incomplete list and it is then messed up because he has skipped a couple of GPMs and the pc's attention is dislocalized or moved from where it should be on, don't you see? All these. A lot of – a lot of things happen, see? You've taken an item off an incomplete goals list and doing something with it and oh, it – it's a mess. So an incomplete or underlisted goals list gives bounteous trouble. Oh, that's lots of trouble.

And most of your horrible psychosomatic responses to R4 stem from incomplete goals lists. Nothing wrong with item lists but something wrong with the goals list, see?

All right. Item lists, listing for items inside a GPM, tend to be overlisted, see? Goals lists tend to be – you see, they tend to be underlisted. And item lists tend to be overlisted. You'll see some auditor with what enthusiasm going on on his item list, you know. Bang! Bang! On and on. Boy, he should have shut up and moved on, stopped a long time ago, you see?

Item lists must be as short as possible. You only want an item list just long enough to be able to get the item on it.

You'll have a tremendous number of one-item lists. You'd be surprised how often the pc comes up with the exact, next item. The pc sometimes also in a blue moon skips one. But you'd be surprised at how many one-item lists you've got. So much so that there is a certain way of writing up the list so that you don't have to keep copying the item you have just found. You just circle it and draw it into your next question and then circle that and draw it into the next question, don't you see, and circle that and draw it into the next question, just for rapidity of listing. You can list fairly rapidly this way. You've got to call it back and it's got to fall and blow down and it's got to do all these things, and you got to do your courtesy steps on it. And there's no reason you do these things slowly.

But you'd be surprised how seldom you have to list a long list on an item. And if you do list a long list on an item and you can't get anything reading back easily and it isn't making good sense, why, you assume already that you have just got through finding a wrong item, and you backtrack one list, and then fix that list up. And it usually is an earlier item on the existing list. It's not something that you extend, don't you see?

That's the way you handle these things.

Now, even with that, you'll make a mistake occasionally, but these are fairly infallible actions that you start extending item lists endlessly and you're going to get in trouble.

Now, we've done tests. We've done a lot of tests one way or the other. Tests of how complete lists are and mathematical count lists, you see? I mean like 25 beyond and 12 beyond, and we've done all kinds of list tests of various types, you see? There's a lot of this work has been done. And there is only one listing that works. And that's the one I've just described to you. So all of those other listing systems are not only kaput, but dangerous.

You don't want RRs. The next-to-the-last rocket reading item on the list and the last rocket reading item on the list – you remember that system, and so forth. That just finds tons of wrong items.

But this one – this one – now another thing is, you say, "Well, gee-whiz, this-this-this item rocket read beautifully. Just rocket read beautifully, so therefore, you know, item, therefore – therefore, it must be the item because look at that beautiful rocket read." Well, a rocket read proceeds out of solid mass.

Therefore, you expect goals to rocket read. But you don't expect items to. If an item rocket reads, it's inevitably the wrong item. *Ooooh!* Horrible, isn't it?

You've got to have a disintegrating read and it more looks like a fall than anything else. But if that item rocket reads with a beautiful, stylized rocket read, it must be gripped in a very solid case to rocket read that beautifully. So therefore, it isn't disintegrating; so therefore, it wasn't the next item to come up. Do you see that?

The reason a goal rocket reads so beautifully is because it's got that 65-foot by 20-foot by 10-foot case, see? And that imparts this beautiful rocket read with the whip start and the

hook end and – perfect. Of course it's perfect. You'd be perfect, too, if the thing was that much encased, you see?

Now, very often implant RIs – implant RIs that are RRing are also suspect a little bit, but implant RIs tend to rocket read more often than actual GPM RIs.

Now, you don't throw it out because it rocket reads – if you see that it's a stylized rocket read – but you regard it with considerable suspicion. You wonder if you didn't miss a fall just earlier on this list, you see? You don't get any wild, scurvy, whirling dervish dance over this thing just because you made something rocket read. The least valuable commodity you can have is a rocket reading item. See? That's something like yesterday's newspaper or something. It's going to be wrong. Anything that it says is going to have some difference in it.

A goal, on the other hand, that doesn't rocket read is something to be regarded with considerable suspicion. This goal blew down and, oh, smoke came out of the E-Meter, and everything went bang, and the pc was delighted with it. Cognited all over the place, you know? Rave notices in all directions. Felt so much better. But the auditor could never make it rocket read.

I know the history of several of these things, one or two of them in particular. Blew down, did all the things I just said to you, gorgeous, everybody was very delighted with it, but later on it transpired that it was a lock on an RI in the first bank.

Of course, the power that the thing had was the partial disintegration of an RI. It wasn't even a GPM, don't you see? It wasn't anything. It was just a lock. And there are tremendous numbers of actual goals hanging around the perimeters of RIs in actual GPMS.

You see, it's very hard to do, but if you knew what the goal was – if you knew what the item was before you found the item (this is very hard to do unless you find some out of sequence and ARC break the pc like mad) but if you knew what the item was before you found it, then you could probably tailor-make the goal that would also read.

Give you an idea. Thirst. The item is thirst. See, that's the RI. Thirst. And if you knew that that was going to be the item, you could then read "to thirst" or "to be thirsty" or even "to be dry" and get a fall – get a falling goal of some kind or another. You'd get a goal response. These goals would do something. It's quite intriguing to watch this even though it's almost impossible to test.

I know this because I've seen them in reverse, you see? I've seen a goal fall and then later on found out what RI it was connected with and got a big meter response by suddenly adding in this. These are actual goals, don't you see? They're actual goals of one kind or another which are salted through these GPMS.

Well, they don't have any decent read to them, and they – they don't do anything very much. And you can analyze them out rather rapidly. One of the easiest things to get rid of is an actual goal if you know an actual goal exists, you see? They're usually just locks on RIs. I regarded this with some suspicion for a while, wondering what – if RIs weren't expressed as goals ordinarily and so forth. But they're not.

Funny how these things hang on the perimeter of it. And there are many trips and traps for the unwary with regard to these things. But the point I'm making is that goals – now dealing with goals, you expect rocket reads.

You should know all about rocket reads. If something doesn't rocket read, you sit there and cry into your Kleenex, you see, while the pc pats you on the shoulder sympathetically.

The subject of goals is then a subject of rocket reads. Anything that is a real goal can be mid-ruded up to rocket read, you see? You can fix it up.

First, it'll start rocket reading on just the Suppress buttons. It itself might have just ticked when you first found it. And you get Suppress in as you run Suppress on a real GPM's goal, see? Why, you'll see that thing start to rocket read. Suppress rocket reads. You say, "On this goal, has anything been suppressed?" *Pow!* See, you don't get – you get an instant rocket read on Suppress and that will clean up and another button or two will clean up, and all of a sudden you'll call a goal and maybe once out of three average, why, it'll fire with a rocket read.

Doesn't fire three out of three with a rocket read. That's really asking for it because the pc is anxious and he's wondering if it's his goal, you know, and you call it once and he anticipates the next one. Suppresses the thing. And of course, the next time you call it, it *ha-ha* – what a dog's breakfast trying to get one of these things to read sometimes.

And an actual GPM will blow down, but not much. It'll blow down, but blowdown is no requisite for it, whereas an RI has to blow down. If an RI doesn't blow down, it isn't an RI.

Sometimes an RI doesn't blow down just because the pc is waiting to find out if it's his RI. He's got the brakes on the thing, see. "Cheesecake," see? And you – he's sitting there and, "Well – well, did it read or didn't it?" See? The auditor didn't say it read or anything like that, see. Hadn't really said, "Is that your item?" Had just said, "Cheesecake" and looked alertly at the pc, you know?

The pc says, "Well, is it or isn't it my item, you know?"

"Well, it read. It read. Is it your item?"

"Yeah." *Psssseeww*. You see a blowdown.

Sometimes the pc doesn't dig it, see. It's "Siberia," see. The item is "Siberia" see? And the pc can't see how this relates to Instructors. [laughter] Siberia, Instructors: you see, so on.

"Oh, oh!" And then you get your blowdown.

In other words, lack of comprehension can sometimes hold up a blowdown. Blowdowns, however, usually just happen and they require no other things, but they can be slowed down.

So an RI always has a blowdown. Always. Invariable. An RI that doesn't ever blow down is not an RI for that position.

Now, you'll get some of the ramifications of this definition I gave you of that earlier. It was an RI, but it didn't belong there. It belonged someplace else. In view of the fact the pc's got many thousands and thousands of RIs, actual RIs, and he has in actual fact, well, I'd say at

least a hundred locks – that's being very, very conservative – for every one of these RIs, you see how many things in the bank can be made to read or can be made to function or operate with or be found or something. You got complications on your hands here.

But the point I'm making is that an RI, if it is in the right position, will fall – surge usually – and blow down. But it always must blow down to be the RI for that position. See, that doesn't change the definition for an RI I gave you earlier. If it's in the right sequence, it'll blow down. Very often it's quite correct as an RI, but you weren't supposed to get it for two more items and it won't blow down yet. And this sort of thing. You have to ride this horse.

Now, we look over – we look over R4M2, we find there's a lot of other little rules of various kinds or another. They're not things, however, that trip you up. I've given you the important, salient factors of this process.

There is one more stable datum that I think I ought to peel off, however, and hand to you. If the case is running well, you don't repair it.

You only repair cases when they have ceased to run well. Person's not now running well, you repair the case. Case running well, leave it alone.

I had a case running like a startled gazelle and went back up to repair an upper bank. I shouldn't have had anything to do with that, man. I found about six items, then found out they didn't belong to that bank and found out this and found out that and oh, my God, why should I have gotten up that morning, you see?

But I was repairing a case that didn't need repair. We – all of us learn this lesson many times, and I just am not giving it to you as something you must know now, but something which I am inviting you to relearn every time you do it.

Another guiding datum – another guiding datum which is of great use is: Never force a balk. Never continue to audit across a balk. Never, never, never. Pc balks – Q and A, man – you balk. You're doing something wrong. You try to drive down a one-way street wrong way to, or you're doing something weird – but the pc will instinctively balk.

You never really pay too much attention to why the pc is balking. You don't necessarily say the pc is wrong, but you don't necessarily say he's right, either. The pc doesn't want to go on. Well, then you'd better damn well find out what's wrong with the R4. I don't care what he says, what she says; I don't care. You find out what's wrong with that R4 because there's something wrong with that R4 right now, man. Right now.

And the sooner you find it, the better off you're going to be. And you start to push past any kind of a balk of that kind, you're going to be in trouble, the pc's going to go into a sad effect, you're going to wrap that case around a telegraph pole. Usually the pc can be counted on balking when something is going wrong with the case. It's fairly reliable.

The pc can balk as faintly as this: "I don't really think I ought to have a session today." See, that's a faint – that's a faint balk. "I really can't – can't seem to list on this list." That's a balk.

Now, there's something wrong. And you take those things up at once. Never push past them. Don't, in R4, use the datum that the auditor must go on, summer storm, winter snow or

night, the auditor must not pause in his flight, you see? [laughter] That's the wrong motto. That's the wrong motto.

You try to shove down the wrong rabbit warren on R4 and you got yourself a hat full of trouble and you're going to have trouble and it's going to get worse and it's going to get worse and probably the hardest lesson you have to learn in R4 is not all of its complicated rules and how you stand on your head in order to list. That sort of thing – don't worry about all of that sort of thing. You just – basic auditing and sensitivity to the pc. You notice a balk on the part of that pc, man, find out why right now and analyze it right down to the end of the run, square it up, man, square it up.

Notice those balks. And don't push past them, and you almost never run a pc up an alleyway. Get sensitive to balks, in other words.

The unwillingness to be audited: "I don't feel well these days," "I don't think auditing's doing me much good"; balks, see. Find out what they are. You'll find they're always connected with finding a wrong item, skipping some items, a wrong goal, something out of sequence, GPM skipped. You're running an implant GPM when you thought you were running an actual one.

You know, horrible things are going on here and they're actually – the first notice you have of them is a little bit of a light balk. And sometimes an auditor is not sensitive enough to see a balk when he sees one.

Pc gets right up to the point, "I won't go on." Puts the cans down, you see, steps back from the chair, puts his hands behind him, you see, and is about to walk out the door. The auditor says, "You know, I think that might be a balk." See?

Well, that is a long way and a far cry from where the auditor would – should first notice this balk, which is simply that "I don't know. I don't know. I just..." – and so on. "Do you suppose it's doing me much good to find these items? I haven't cognited on very much here lately." That's a balk.

Find out right away what's wrong, and don't be satisfied with little things wrong. It isn't that you listed the list and invalidated something on the pc, you see. It's that you listed the list through the implant GPM down to its bottom, and you have now been opposing the implant goal as an RI instead of the actual GPM goal as an RI, or it's something horrible that you were just sitting there and all of a sudden this happened, you see? It's that sort of a process.

How anybody ever gets to OT, you will sometimes wonder. Cases are on the road, however, and cases have met up with these conditions and are running through them. It is not a process of sitting there holding the sprig of violets, smiling. No, it's more like one hand full of lilies of the valley, you see, and the other hand full of clouds. You're not quite sure which direction you're going to wind up. It's a – it's a desperate situation. It is fraught with many difficulties, many upsets, and so forth. Winning through this for the auditor and the pc is a considerable task. It is very difficult and it is not an easy process to do, and I would be lying in my teeth if I told you any differently.

The road all the way to OT is the road that you're taking with this. There are lesser roads and there are lesser heights and lesser goals. You're going all the way to OT on this.

There's only one way to do it, and that's right. And even when you do it right, it'll go wrong. And there's only one road to OT, and that's the road over these confounded cobblestones and corduroys and tax.

And so there it is, and just thank your stars that it's there and cry quietly to yourself on your pillow because it is so damned rough. That goes for a pc and an auditor. This is a rough, rough shot.

We know all the answers to this. We know all the answers, but we can't get over an inability to do basic auditing and we can't get over an inability to read an E-Meter. We can't get over these corny ones. But the rest of the road, we know all the rules and in knowing all those rules we can impart this information. I can tell you how to do this. I can show you how to do this. But I can't show a datum sitting in a chair how to do it. You have to be alert and on your toes and you can do it. You can do it. It is doable, and you can do it, but it isn't easy and there isn't any easier road.

I've been looking for many, many months now that we have had this process, trying to find some easier road, trying to find easier roads through it. I've perfected listing a little bit. I've got a little bit better meter coming, so forth. These improvements are so minor that it simply dumps it on our lap and leaves it up to us to simply audit to get through and somehow or another make it.

Thank you.

R4 CASE ASSEMBLY

A lecture given on 30 October 1963

Thank you.

Well, you were supposed to have a demonstration today. Got a prima donna on your hands. I didn't feel like giving you a demonstration. I just had a case repair run on me. And I was running right on up to lecture time madly, developing a present time problem because, you see, end of session must approach at once.

And also, you've got to know more about R4 and I'm not at all unhappy to give you a lecture on the subject. This is particularly valuable material to you in actual fact.

I can see some of you now that haven't got any R4 on your checksheets.

This is what?

Audience: Twentieth-thirtieth of October.

Three-0 Oct. 13. All right. This is a talk on Routine 4. And a lot of you haven't had this on your checksheets, you see, and actually haven't got any bulletins to amount to anything, don't you see. And not having any bulletins to study and all of the listing bulletins being out of date, and although it's all the same as R3M2, it is all different – I can see that sooner or later... Now you thought I was going to say that you'd go into a confusion – that wasn't what I was going to say.

Sooner or later out of self-defense you would figure it out. That's my little mechanism here for putting you on cause.

Now in actual fact, quite a few here allegedly running R4 – that's alleged. That's all very interesting. But practically none of the actual HGA Class IV Course exists at this particular moment. That's something for you to think about.

This course is very well grooved in, beautifully grooved in for HSS Class III. And there's some of you caught in a bind here having to learn IV without that being smoothly, beautifully organized. Because that's still to some degree on the – has been, it isn't now – but it is so fresh off the research assembly line because R3M2 had to be patched up and smoothed out, don't you see.

Although that – all that work was done, the communication of it for easy assimilation by a student doesn't exist. So I'm making up for that to you in these lectures.

You perhaps are also – you're perhaps fortunate in this, not totally unfortunate. Most of you have tangled with goals, one way or the other. You've tangled with these things and you know that quite a bit of randomness exists on the subject of goals and old R3, and so forth.

Now, we've had this around for a long time. And it has emerged into a very precise-very, very precise piece of technology. It's about the neatest piece of technology that has ever been developed in Scientology. There's more research hours been spent on it, and so on, in smoothing it out, than any other single piece of Scientology. Naturally, because it's the road to OT – it's the road out. It's the very backbone of cases.

And whether you like it or not, those of you who are at the moment in W Unit and those of you who are at Class I level auditing and so forth – whether you like it or not, you are handling R4.

This is an unescapable fact. We can turn the blind eye to the telescope and say there just ain't no bank and we will sit there and listen to the pc rattle on expansively. We can take up his session goals, we can do this, we can do that, and we can do everything else. But we actually are looking at R4. That's – would be what's at the other end of the telescope if the Class I fellow looked.

Not that he will someday get up to a point as an auditor where he will be able to handle this technology and that sort of thing. We're not looking at his study course. We're looking at the fact that the pc sitting in front of him at that moment and in every session and in any kind of a session, under any auditor's hands, anyplace in the world, is handling nothing but R4 materials and nothing else.

You understand that? Levels I, II and III are devoted to handling R4 materials without admitting it. They're devoted to getting tone arm action by shoving around GPMs, items, goals, locks – I don't care what you call these things – service facsimiles. Call them anything you want to.

Well, I'll give you an example. You remember that session – this is very hypothetical – you remember that session you had in an HGC one time or another and you had such marvelous tone arm action and you felt a lot better afterwards and so forth. You remember that session? That was a good session, wasn't it? Well, you handled an item or a lock or a goal in R4. You did something to a GPM that made you feel better. Period.

And you remember that pc you audited back *rruh-rruah* and this pc sat down there and all of a sudden – Wow! – and there was this terrific result and so forth and then he didn't have any lumbosis and so on. You remember that? You know, that was *miraculous*.

Somehow, some way, you ran out, keyed out, triggered out, did something with R4 materials. You did something with goals or actual GPMs or implant GPMs or items or lock items on actual GPMs – lock items on an actual goal, lock item on an actual GPM's goal, a lock item on an actual GPM's RI, a lock item on an implant GPM or an im... a lock item on an implant GPM's item RI. Get those various combinations.

One of those conditions existed and you did something with it. Now, I don't... I've never – I've never tried to pull a punch with you. I have held up – I have held up carrots, I have given you hope, I have kept you rolling one way or the other – all very factually, all very factually, because the end was attainable.

But I have never pulled the punches on this sort of thing – when I know something to be true I tell you. And the facts of the case are that it's all very well for you to sit and talk

about a service facsimile and it's all very well for me to write about a service facsimile and it's all very well to observe and explain the pc's behavior in terms of service facsimiles and talk about that. But you're doing a double talk when you're talking about it. You're talking about an RI, a lock on an RI or any of the things I just mentioned to you. See, you're talking about doing something with those things.

Now there's a tremendous liability in doing anything with R4 materials. R4 materials are the materials of the bank. There isn't anything else in the bank. That's it. There's tremendous liability. You shove a GPM north when you should have shoved it south, you shove an item out when you should have put it in, you do something with this when you should have done something with that and you've got disaster staring you in the face.

I don't mean you've got a difficulty in the session. No, you could very easily have disaster staring you in the face. This is the total liability of working in the field of the mind. There is no other liability of working in the field of the mind.

There isn't anything else in the mind. There's a thetan and this is the mind he's got. These are the things which that thetan has been up to over the course of, God 'elp us, how long. These are the things, these are the items that are the things – look, they're items just like this crayon is an item, they're items like the meter is an item, they're mass like this desk is a mass, don't you see?

They have various significances. They have – everything in the Know to Mystery Scale is included in these things. These things are visual, they serve up like hamburgers or they go cold down the drain. It's stuff. It's stuff. You're actually handling stuff. You're not handling, now, a compulsion. You're handling the source of compulsions. You're not handling an obsession. You're handling the source of obsessions. You're not handling an aberrated idea. You're handling the source of aberrated ideas, you see? You're not handling insanity. You're handling those things that cause insanity.

All right. Knowing that – knowing that, I have to ask you to be brave and square your shoulders up to your meter and recognize what you are doing. If you're auditing in the W Unit or doing Class I auditing or even Class II – you're sitting there and you're saying – you're inviting – you're inviting some comm from the pc, see. And the pc says "*Yipple-yapple, yipple-yapple, yipple-yapple and yupple-yopple-yopple-yopple-yipple, and yipple-yipple-yipple-yipple-yipple.*" And you got some tone arm action or you haven't got some tone arm action. That's the Level I type stuff. You've got it or you haven't got it. And the more you chop him up and the less you let him talk, why there's luck involved in Level I, you know. There's luck because you're not directing his attention very strongly, so therefore not directing his attention, of course, it's sort of luck as to whether or not he talks about problems or talks about solutions.

And it's luck as to whether or not he has suppressed all the things he should talk about because you're not using the Suppress button, don't you see. And this character might have suppressed his lumbosis and you're not using the Suppress button to clean it up so how are you ever going to get any tone arm action with him talking about his lumbosis?

These are the factors. In other words, those factors make it an element of chance as to whether or not you get tone arm action. Of course, the smoother you audit and the easier you

can handle this thing, the more likely you are to get tone arm action. The less crudity you add into the session, why, the more tone arm action you're certainly going to get. It's – that... But you don't really add tone arm action to the session by auditing, don't you see, because you're not directing his attention very much.

There's minimal direction of attention. If the pc's going to get some tone arm action, he's going to get some tone arm action. This is the level of chance in which you're operating at that level. And everything that pc is talking about and everything that's wrong with that pc is R4 materials.

I don't care, you sat back and you said – and you said, "There it is. Start of session," you know, and he starts talking and so forth, and he says, "I *yipple-yapped* on the *yupple-yup*," and so forth. He's pushing around RIs, goals, GPMs, implant GPMs, so forth – these are the things which he is shoving around.

Now, you get into less trouble at this level simply because the auditor does less shoving around. So the mind will wander through these various labyrinthine things and pick up a little bit of charge and blow it here and blow it there and the pc feels better. You see? But it's almost – it's almost by chance, but it looks safe and it actually is fairly safe, see?

It's safe. It's safe. Because the auditor's doing practically no control, the pc can't get himself into very much trouble.

Now we move up into X and we get selectivity. We get selectivity of what the pc is to itsa. Now, the crudity of the auditor very much can interfere with the itsaing of it and shove things all out of line and that sort of thing.

But the element of chance here is what does the auditor choose to itsa? And he could pick up his great big gumboots and walk right into the middle of a GPM and reactivate it and then in some crude fashion, through pushing the pc on where the pc didn't want to talk about something or something like that, mix up the fifteenth GPM with the sixteenth GPM, pull the sixteenth GPM up to the position of the third GPM and about that time the pc comes down with hyperlumbosis. You understand?

Although you are apparently doing Prepchecking, problems this lifetime, *yik-yak*, other things, you know, and it's all lined out and it all looks very fine and that's all very smooth, and in actual fact you are doing a blind juggling act.

Actual GPMs, implant GPMs, actual RIs, locks on actual RIs, implant RIs, locks on implant RIs, locks on implant goals – these things are what you are juggling with. Even an engram run runs into RIs. Even running engrams.

You run an engram, this one runs and that one doesn't. Why? Well, one's closer into an RI than the other. Some engrams won't release till you get the RI that's holding it in place and so forth. That was the limitations of Dianetics contained right there in that phrase, because Dianetics – reactive mind. Dianetics describes the reactive mind and says it's full of engrams. All right, that's good enough for this lifetime, because this lifetime is only partially formed RI ordinarily, so you can run engrams and clean up this lifetime to a good degree.

You can destimulate a tremendous amount of stuff so you get this condition of Clear, and that sort of thing. You can destimulate engrams and that sort of thing.

All these things are understood. But the final truth of the matter is that those con-founded goals, actual GPMs, implant GPMs, all these RIs and their locks and everything else are sitting right there and those are in actual fact what you're shoving around. Those are what you're playing chess with at Level II.

Now, in view of the fact the pc has some reality on what he's doing – he has some re-ality on what he can run – that is to say, if he knows about it, why, he's got some reality on it. You understand? So you're taking that first line in Book Three of *Modern Science of Mental Health* and you're taking that first line and you say – if you can parallel what the mind is do-ing, why, you've got it made. Paraphrasing it, see? Find out what the mind is doing and paral-lel it, and you've got it.

Well, that's the byword of Levels II and III – find out what this boy is doing and sort of parallel it and so on and take over automaticities. We've had it in the past, all this kind of thing.

You can do this sort of thing. You've got Prepchecking now and that sort of thing. So, a very safe course here is to have something... and by the way, I didn't happen to think of this; it was one of you who thought of it on the basis of, well, just take his session goals and do something with them. That's fine. A rather obvious step, but a very clever one.

You take that, now he's got some reality on what he sets as a goal, right? He wouldn't set it as a goal if he didn't have some reality on it. So therefore, you could it'sa this and get someplace.

Now, of course, you uncork a Prepcheck on the thing – those nice old buttons – and you start pushing and – around on this particular goal that he's set for the session that gave him a little tone arm action when he wrote it down and so on. You're going to get some nice tone arm action, your pc's going to have a win and that sort of thing.

But we mustn't avoid the fact that in actual fact you are pushing around actual GPMs, goals, actual implant GPMs and the RIs connected with these various things. Those are the things you're still juggling with. You're throwing those up in the air like somebody on the London Palladium Theater, you know. Indian clubs this direction and that direction. And you're doing it blindfolded, which is pretty good.

I hope I'm not ruining the nerves of some of the lower-level students. You can say to yourself, "What in the name of common sense am I pushing around at Levels I, II and III? Well, *awhhhhhhh!* What is this? Well, what are these – *oooh.*" Pretty mysterious, actually. We know what an RI is, it has an actual face and it has pointed ears and horns and so forth. And it's a little model thing that sits in the middle of the bank in some fashion – they don't know what this thing looks like. And *oooh.* Grim. What are we pushing around? Well, that's what you're pushing around.

All right. When we talk about R4, then, we're actually talking about the actual compo-sition of the mind that brings about all and any of the aberrations of the mind, how the thoughts, postulates get encysted in the middle of energy and mass and influence each other

and how they float in time and how they affect the pc and how they group up into large masses which are governed by a goal and all of this sort of thing. The progress of a thetan in aberrating himself.

You've got sitting on top of this thing overt-motivator sequence, you've got a lot of shallow-draft actions that take current energy lines, you've got – you've got shallow-draft activities that sort of handle locks on locks on locks and still give you tone arm action, don't you see?

But nevertheless the thing which is generating the stuff that you're after which has got your pc held down, which gives him lumbosis, which makes him think that he is a turtle – all of these various things are contained in the R4 materials.

So therefore, in the final analysis there is no substitute of any kind whatsoever for knowing about R4. The way we're actually training an auditor from scratch and so forth, from all the way through and we're going to train him for a long period of time and that sort of thing, I'm afraid you'd teach him R4 first, see.

So therefore, the materials I'm giving you here are not ungermane to Levels I, II and III of Scientology. Make my point? It's there. If you're auditing the pc, you're auditing it.

Now when these things get out of line in life – and it isn't just auditing that puts them out of line, you know. I mean, that is not the prime villain here in disturbing the bank – when life starts throwing these things out of line one way or the other and the various environments of the pc, you've got sport on your hands, man. Because life does it without an E-Meter. Life does it very stupidly and unintelligently.

The guy has got these GPMs, he's got these RIs and life shuffles them around on him like mad. Groups them up, puts... and he'll have a bad accident. He's got one – trains or something like this, is an RI in the tenth GPM, tenth actual GPM. But he's – but in that place it's an oppterm. Trains are an oppterm in the tenth actual GPM.

So trains are a terminal in the third actual GPM. One fine day, trains meet trains head-on and there goes the third and the tenth – grouped. After this we have somebody who has to be operated on by the medicos and is worth a fortune to the medical profession. Worth an absolute fortune. Have to have operation after operation after operation. Have to have things removed and unremoved and re-removed and renovated and polished and dissected and so forth. No matter what they cut out, the somatic is still there, see?

Trains and trains, that's what's wrong with the guy.

Now this is a very extreme view and the medico would not say – would say, "Oh, well, that's just – well, it's one school of thought, you see, and there are many schools of thought." No, there aren't many schools of thought. We are the school of thought which explains schools of thought.

See, that's the difference. We're not another school of thought. Because we are handling the materials which build and create a body.

Anybody accusing us of being interested in healing should have his face spat into. I mean, if – particularly if he's associated with the main professions, see. Because, as a matter

of fact – as a matter of fact, we don't ever heal anything. There is no particular point in healing something when you can remove the cause of it. That's a different operation.

Errors – physical errors are just about the auditor's least possible concern, even though they are the thing the pc fixes on the most easily. If he – if his cheek hurts, then he is very aware of his cheek hurting and it's very up close to him and he would like to have his cheek stop hurting.

Well, now, healing means – in some extrapolation of the situation – solving his hurt cheek. Well, we don't do that, you see? We don't move around to other side of this hurt cheek and later on the track solve what is wrong with the hurt cheek. You can pick up the cause of hurting cheeks and knock that out and he won't have not only that hurt cheek... You know it's impossible to (quote) "heal" just a hurt cheek, you see, because you start working on it and you get the other cheek and you get his headache, too. You know. It's very hard. Because – that's because you're not selectively picking up these things.

Now let's look at this from this basis. You are dealing with the stuff which builds a universe. This is how universes get built; all the materials of how the stuff goes together is in that. You come far closer to a physical scientist than you would a medico, but I wouldn't even insult you in that direction either.

You're dealing with – you're dealing with the basic building block of all a thetan. And your study is – and knowledge is – of this beast: a thetan, see. This breed of cat.

Now what does he do? What will he do? What does he construct? What errors does he make? How does he arrange life around him? These are the subjects of an auditor's interest. If we realize that what is wrong with this beast, a thetan – if we realize what's wrong with him, is the fact he's been solving everything or curing everything or healing every error which then amounted to a fantastic concatenation of error, we'll realize what's going on here. You can't go around and give him one more solution. That's what he doesn't need. Aberration is that series of solutions which have had to be solved. Aberrations are a series of solutions, each one of which had to be solved in turn.

You have condition A. Now nothing was wrong at condition A unless the thetan considered it. He had to consider that the condition there just before A was wrong, you see, before he decided to do anything about it. Now there's – you can have an opinion about any of these things and usually at this stage of the game the fellow doesn't care whether it's right or wrong or if there is a condition there, but just to have some game or interest or something like that he decides that this thing shouldn't be. He decides to do something about dancing girls or something like this, you see. Life is dull.

So there is the condition. Now there was a condition, even if it was the condition of simply having nothing to do, there was still a condition. So, the first solution is A – the resolution of the first condition.

Now out of A we get condition two, which is dancing girls solved. Now, if you want to know about an overt act, just solve all the dancing girls for all time, see. That's a hell of an overt act, if you'll pardon my French. I mean, imagine anybody taking off to solve all dancing girls for all time. What an overt act! See? So that's condition two, dancing girls solved.

Well, that sure reduces the game, but it makes lots of problems. Makes lots of problems. If only the problem of the tired businessman coming to town there to be sold Wheaties by the carload lot by his business confrere and he hasn't got anyplace to take them, don't you see. He hasn't got anyplace to take his tired confrere in order to sell him Wheaties or something of the sort, because he's solved dancing girls, see. That's it, you see?

So we get solution B. Solution B solving condition two. And this probably is "drink," see. Can't have – dancing girls have all been solved, you see. They're no longer dancing. They're sort of in stages of this, you see, and now we've got to do something for our tired confrere, so of course, we can solve this status by introducing the item "drink." See.

Well, that's great. So that's solution B solving condition two, see. All right. So out of "drink," out of "drink," however, it becomes surfeit, see. You get sick drinking and all that sort of thing. And too much drink gives us condition three. And that's a bad condition, you see. His confrere doesn't want to have any – have anything to do now with drink when he comes to town to be sold Wheaties, or something like that, because he gets horrible hangovers, you see. And it's a bad condition.

So maybe condition three is hangovers, don't you see? That actually solved – drink, you see, solved that, but drink led to a new evil. Because, you see, we're alter-ising these things – look at them – they're nothing but alter-ises of a condition. So we're alter-ising by solution. So we get an alter-is problem.

Nobody solves the problem by eradicating it in the first place. All they do is alter-is it. So therefore they get another one of these conditions. So we get condition three, which is hangovers and therefore hangovers require some solution or another, so now in order to get anything done here at all, which is the basic impulse, we've got to have solution C.

And solution C is drugs. See, you drug the guy and hypnotize him or something like this, you see, in order to sell him the Wheaties. And out of this, you see, come bad contracts, or something of this sort, so now we've got condition four.

And condition four, of course, is the fact that he wont come to town at all, because he's been slugged and mugged and bugged, you see, and so on. So were still trying to solve this basic problem, you see, to sell Wheaties, you see?

We get condition four, which is an absent buyer. Well, that's great. So now we have to have solution D, which is lures. We've got to – got to have better lures, don't you see. And here it goes. And finally, finally, it becomes absolutely apparent that not only – not only can we not sell Wheaties, you see, but that we better be dead against them ever getting sold, see. So to sell Wheaties eventually becomes, as the conditions deteriorate in selling Wheaties, becomes condition – oh, eighteen or something like this, which is selling Wheaties.

See, it actually did wind itself back to the basic goal. The guy who was at the last throes of the thing is starting dimly to realize that it was the basic goal that he set in the first place that was getting him into all this trouble and he's now agin it. So he solves it by being against the goal.

Oh, that's great. And you now have the model of a GPM. That's how it comes into existence, you see. Guy decides he wants to do something, there is a condition, he solves the

condition – and of course you recognize in the A's, B's and C's – you recognize those as terminals. And the numbers I've given you, those are conditions or confusions which are the opterms. You see that?

Well, every one of these things, unfortunately, accumulates a great deal of its mass and so forth, and if you could get the thing detached from a GPM you could roll it around on the floor. And it's an RI. The condition or the solution, equally alike, form up these balls and mass and they – if you ever tore one of these GPMs to pieces visually – what I mean without – you know, I mean without running it out, because they discharge fairly rapidly – the miracle here is that we have something to run these things back that does discharge them. That's the miracle technique that does so. We could even understand them and not be able to take them apart.

But let's just say we took a big GPM and we ripped one of these RIs out of a corner of the thing and so forth. We'd have some kind of a – of a mass. Mental, thin and so forth, so that it doesn't have any great weight, but it nevertheless has weight and it does occupy space. And we could roll one of these things around the floor. It's quite interesting. Anybody's got them.

Now, anybody who's picked up body weight has just got too many of these things plastered on him. He's collided with too many of the things. Your pc who – who leaves the session looking all right and comes back at the end of the session with his eyes as red as fire and his hair being blown back as though in the wind and so forth, has simply gotten one of these things into restimulation between sessions. I don't care if you get rid of it by putting in the session mid – between-session mid ruds, you see. "Since" mid ruds, that got rid of it. But what hit him was an RI or a lock on an RI, that's what hit him. He went down to the post box and he saw a woman putting a black-edged letter in the box, don't you see, and this was enough to key in some RI on the track and so it hit him and he comes into session. He's got a high tone arm and then you put in a Prepcheck on him, "since" mid ruds, you know, and what you do is, accidentally without identifying it, collide with this particular incident and you come near enough to it to; key the thing out and the tone arm goes down. That is all.

You're handling these things all the time as an auditor. So the final analysis is you should know what they are.

Now, I'm going to ask – I'm going to ask somebody here to get us some plastic – some of this stuff they use in kindergartens, this plastic clay – not the kind that slurps all over your clothes, and – and so forth, but I think you can get it in gray – gray-black and I think you can get it in some pale yellow, or other. But getting two colors of these things and a lot of them – going to have a table built, long, narrow table – and I'm going to get you one by one, not by six and six, to mold a whole GPM from one end to the other. And then a whole channel of GPMs and then show some way a bank could get disarranged after you've made a GPM – show that it is slewed around and it's out of gear and so forth.

Because all this is susceptible to visual interpretation. It's all visual. It's visual anyhow. It doesn't matter if your pc can see them or not. That's what's going on in his bank. That's all there is to it.

This isn't peculiar to one pc. This is why you are here. This is why they are here. That is why people get the way they get and this is where a guy's power is totally absorbed, is in the obsessive construction of these things all the time and so on.

He used to be able to throw a lightning bolt Lord knows how far. He can't do it now. Why? Because he's gone the route down these GPMs. So anyway, by taking a narrow table, maybe two feet wide or something like that, with tall edges and quite a few pounds of clay, you can make alternate GPMs, you see. And then maybe we can get some black clay and you could even dream up a few – a few implant GPMs and shove them into the flanks of the actual GPMs, you see. And dream it up, see. You can make a bank. It'll look like a bank. And that bank, then, becomes mobile. You can move it around. You can move these blocks around. You can move them out of shape, you see.

You can name these goals and so on. You can see how they oppose. This thing is terrifically susceptible to visual interpretation. We will also take films of these things and do quite a job on the situation. But I think it would do you personally a lot of good to play patty-cake with Plasticine on a board and knock together one of these GPMs. Tisn't enough to sit around and draw pictures of them because they aren't pictures. See? They're blocks of mass. They have a very definite shape, they have good appearance. They do get pulled out of line and they get pulled out of line and pulled into other conditions.

And these are the strains and stresses which occur in the pc. These are your psychosomatic illnesses and so forth. You don't get a psychosomatic illness because an RI is called "to have a pain in the head," so therefore you get a pain in the head, you see. I mean, it would be nice and sweet if this type of thing existed. It isn't, you see, however, that.

It doesn't much matter what the RI is. It's about as subtle, if it gets pulled out of line, as hitting the fellow over the skull with a croquet mallet. See. You got this RI, and it is just clanged into the side of his head. So he's got a pain in his head. I mean, it's as simple as that.

You put him in a vise and close the – the screw on the thing, just so tight, he's going to get a pain in his head. I mean, that's a... See, you can think yourself into a lot of complications. And people have never understood this because it's too simple.

These masses exist, and guys get caught between them. For instance, just before this session here we were undoing – we were undoing some bank materials and we had a couple of errors on repair getting ready to – for a long run, on my case, and we found that there was an item which had five or six GPMs grouped. And we got this item and the tone arm flew and flew and flew and flew and the meter smoked and the tone arm flew some more and more charge came off this thing. Then some more things were found out about it – found to be two items, not one, which were grouped; they were in different GPMs – had the GPMs grouped. Interesting condition.

But this grouping, then, did not permit an it'sa of the sequence of the GPMs. Because you certainly can't take a double handful of mud and tell which of that mud is muddier than other bits of that mud. Do you see? What is more mud than mud, you see. And you can't do it.

They've got to have some spatial relationship or be straightened out before you can say, "It's this piece of mud that is later than that piece of mud." Don't you see. You've got to

have some recognition of the situation. As long as these things were that thoroughly grouped up, you couldn't then say for sure what belonged where, don't you see?

But now you could say what belonged where because they'd been ungrouped and an item had been found which was causing the group. An item which had a duplicate item in another set – in another GPM. So of course everything between those two things being grouped had smashed all the GPMs together. Apparently the GPMs had been riding there for quite a while, but this one item, which was actually two items with the same name, or nearly the same name on the two, continuously getting restimulated. And getting restimulated had pulled the bank together, see?

So therefore – therefore you are operating – although later GPMs forming, you still had the impetus and the key-in of the earlier GPM, don't you see? So that was making a nice big creak. Pretty gruesome. See how this is?

Well, now, if you knew the exact spatial relationships – type, kind – if you knew everything there was to know – and actually there isn't any more to learn about it, really, than there is about a kid's Erector Set. I mean, I'm telling you the truth now. You've got an item that's called cats and it opposes... an item called dogs, don't you see? And so on. It solves – it's – cats solve dogs or something like this. Or dogs solve cats, don't you see? And these pairs go together and that mass gets all together and in a ball of the item cats, don't you see? Anything pertaining to cats accumulates on cats, don't you see?

It was when the pc was going by this particular period that he did the most work on it, but it actually never really ceases to accumulate. Something you probably didn't realize. These things aren't dead, gone, buried and so forth. They are formed. They are nicely put back on the track and all is well and then one day a cat goes "*Hccch*" and there's just that little scrap moves back and adds itself to the item "cat." Got the idea? Thetan is very neat.

So these things behave in peculiar ways. Now you can get a restimulation of that item. You can get that item misdated. Now, it's interesting that merely running them misdates them. That is such a slight misdating that it passes all the way with just a recognition of the fact. But it is nevertheless a slight misdating of the item.

It's being run at a different time than it was formed in. That's very faint – that's very faint. There's – that's hardly worth worrying about, although you should pay a little attention to that. But now an item which is really misdated – a really misdated item – we've got the item – we've got the item "jewel thief" – "jewel thief."

By the way, this stuff is all fraught with story material – it's terribly interesting material. I mean it's dramatic, it's this, it's that, it's fascinating in numbers of ways. In fact, the significances of it are so great and it's so fascinating, that people completely overlook its purely mechanical basis, you see.

You got "jewel thief" And good heavens, "jewel thief" is back there – oh, it's ages old. This thing is really old. It's about 5-6 GPMs back from present time, see. "Jewel thief." And the pc has been a detective in this lifetime and has committed some overts against some jewel thieves. And you'll find him sitting there then, with his bank bent around, and the item "jewel thief" misdated. It's brought into present time, see. He's opposing it.

So he brings the item into present time. He doesn't go back to the item. So he's got this item grouped up here in present time. So that item is misdated. That's what's wrong with it, actually, it isn't that it had more added to it.

It appears to be in near present time, don't you see. When is actually – it's that long, long way back on the track. Do you see that?

Now, where we have, then, RIs we have dating, we have proper position, we have a location in the universe for them – very unimportant – dating actually not terribly important. But we have sequence: one comes after another, not before the other, don't you see? You can get things twisted; you can get one earlier than the other. Well, you can get GPMs one earlier than the other when they should be later than the other, don't you see?

The order you think goes 1, 2, 3. Actually, it goes 1, 3, 2, see? That's the way it's actually sitting in the bank and the pc will have a lot of creak on this. You find – you find goal 3 – GPM 3, when you should find goal GPM 2, don't you see? *Whhoooh* the creaks are out and so forth.

Now, it's any disarrangement. It's any disarrangement like this. It's any miswording, particularly of goals. RIs seldom misword, but they – but the goals and so on – miswording. Misworded goal – oh, man. Misworded RI doesn't amount to much, but a misworded goal – ow! Ow! Ow! That is gruesome.

Things out of sequence, as I just said – the various things, things that have been left unopposed; items that have been found or restimulated when they shouldn't be. All these various things – they all add up to case repair. And what is very, very, very, very, very, very interesting is that all you have to do to repair a case is to know all the stuff I'm talking to you about this plasticine. You know, you make up the bank and you tear it apart into its items and so forth, and – well, all you have to do is just put the bank together so that it is neatly the way it should be, see.

You know, so that it goes from a PT goal 1, 2, 3. Not 1, 5, 7, 2, you see. And so that RIs that have been found, for instance, in goal 5 and so forth, aren't hanging up here in present time, don't you see? And so that an RI which is supposed to belong to the GPM "to sell Wheaties" actually is found to belong to the GPM "to sell nothing." You see?

And you've got an implant GPM over here which is "to eat," and somehow or another this has gotten hung up on "to sell Wheaties." See? And they're substituted, one for the other. The pc thinks one of them is the other.

And in other words, it's just mix-up. All you've got to do is straighten them up. Call a spade a spade. It's like sorting out a deck of cards. That's all. Without really restimulating any more than has been restimulated before. That's one of the things you shouldn't bother to do. Enough has been restimulated.

Now, in trying to straighten this out you want them to go 1, 2, 3, 4, 5, 6, 7, 8, 9 – you want all of the GPMs to be assigned to their proper sequence and you want the RIs assigned to their proper GPMs. Those that have been found, you understand?

Let's take 2-12 RIs. All right, well, let's find out where they belong. Well, we don't have to have the name of the GPM in order to assign it. We can say, the third back from present time or something like that. We can count them on the meter, don't you see?

And you can take your meter, and the only – the only inspection port you have, unfortunately for you, is your E-Meter, but you're fortunate to have that. And these things normally will read if the pc can itsa at all on the subject and isn't flying around in circles in PT problems, you actually do have a port. You can say, "Is this before that, and is that later than this?" and you get your answers and you can sort this thing out. You get null reads which means no, and you get flash reads which means yes, and you can gradually work this thing out. And you can get all these RIs back neated up into their proper GPMs and the GPMs in their proper sequence and find any of those that have been found and misworded, and you can just get this whole thing.

To draw up an analysis sheet for you as an auditor to use on a pc is actually an insult to your potential knowingness. Because you should be able to use some modeling clay and mock up one of these banks and show all the things that go wrong with it. And when you're inspecting a pc and you're repairing the pc you should know this well enough so that you just say, well, these various conditions can exist and they just rattle off and so forth.

Now this is nothing to teach a Level I Auditor. Except at Saint Hill. We expect you to know this at Saint Hill. By osmosis – another learning process that you perhaps weren't aware of.

But there actually is no sense at all in your not knowing this. It's – it has no more complications – not as much complications as a kid's Erector Set. Now that we know it, it's just like – like fitting together some kind of a puzzle game. And "Is it out of order?" and – is the first question. If it isn't out of order, don't try to put it into order.

And then you've got your next thing: is there any goals been given this pc, ever? Does this pc think he has any goals of one kind or another?

Well, let's find out. Does he have them rightly worded or wrongly worded? We don't necessarily have to find them, but just find out was it rightly worded, wrongly worded. And if it was rightly worded, why – when – we kind of spot it as to where it was by count, how many back down the line that goal was or something like this, you see?

And if it was wrongly worded we simply tell him so, you know. And he looks it over, you know – it was just – if it was an implant GPM and he thought it was one of his actual GPMs and so on, why, we've got to straighten that out.

There's just so many elements that can go wrong. If an RI has been found, let's find out where it belongs. Elementary.

Let's say a 2-12 RI. In 2-12 people found a lot of RIs, you know. Well, where do they belong? What GPMs do they fit with?

You can actually, without finding the GPMs, find out what GPM they fit with. That's pretty good, isn't it? Let's find out – well, that's a very early one. If – even if it's this crude, you see, that's a very early actual GPM. This one is a lock on an implant GPM, and therefore

is simply a lock on an implant GPM. Oh, yeah. Well, all right. That means it's not very significant.

This one? Well, that's an actual RI from an actual GPM. And it's – it's this many back down the track and so forth. Yeah, there it is. Number 5. That belongs about the – about the 5th GPM. And the pc will see tone arm action going here and all sorts of things going on, and the bank's getting back together again, the pc's lumbosis is disappearing.

There's a great deal of magic connected with this type of auditing that I'm telling you about right now. There's a lot of magic connected with it. Pc's got lumbosis like mad and you say, "Well, have any items ever been found on you? Is there anything you were ever audited on that was particularly potential or something or other, or in life, what was – what was your main concern?" or something like this, and ...

"Well, I was just never able to clear a See Check question on the subject – never able to clear a Sec Check question on the subject of 'eating porridge.' "Oh, is that so? Well, all right. Was this 'eating porridge,' was this... ?" – see, you're taking off from nothing – "Was this 'eating porridge' an RI from an actual GPM? Was it a lock on an RI from an actual GPM? Was it a lock on an implant GPM? Lock on an RI in an implant GPM?" Was it this, was it that? "Where did it fit on the track?" "Is it from the Helatrobus Implants?" you see. "Is it from the Bear? Is it very early on the track? Is it fairly late on the track?" – is it here, is it there, is it something or other? Don't you see?

So that any cross-fitting around – anything you do on this, you see – you get the thing, locate it. Now the funny part of it is, you can date it. "Eating porridge." All right. Date it by order of magnitude. Years ago, you see, tens of years ago, hundreds of years ago, see, thousands of years ago, tens of thousands, thousands of thousands, trillions – and you finally find it's trillions of trillions of years ago, "eating porridge."

It'll go back – *brrrrr* – back down the track, and that's the end of that aberration, see?

You can... This is all just putting the bank back together again. In other words, you can set – this is a new aspect of R4, you see – that you can sit exterior to auditing the case, consider the case has been audited by life, find the various items and GPMs and goals that the person has had and just tell them what these things are, like you do an ARC break assessment, see? But actually fit them in fairly accurately, and kind of slam them here and there on the track and say it's here, it fits here and it does this and it does that and that sort of thing.

Well, that is an enormously broad field of activity. Probably could experience considerable expansion. Probably could be improved enormously. Probably opens up a gate to a certain type of auditing, which is probably more important than anything except R4M2, see?

Now, what does this – what does this mean, then? What does this mean? It means that you have to know that before you can do anything with R4M2. You got to know how to put a case together before you can take the case apart. Now, if you can do that you're a very safe auditor indeed.

Now the rules of how you audit R4, how you find GPMs and that sort of thing, stand entirely independent of this activity of hanging the thing back together again. You don't have to know how to audit it at all. All you have to know is its composition and what these things

are, and know that they can be slipped and slapped back into place again by you. That's all you have to know about this and you can accomplish miracles – absolutely miraculous activities may take place as a result of this single piece of knowledge.

So it stands, of course, separate to then auditing R4M2. It's a different type of activity – it's a different process, you might say. You can't even call it case repair. But believe me, if you can't do this, you see – you don't have to know how to run R4M2 in order to do this. But let me tell you if you don't know how to do this, you for sure will never successfully carry off R4M2. You've also got to know how to do this in order to successfully accomplish R4M2. That pair does go together. Very neatly.

So the upshot of the thing is that R4M2 and so on comes after, in actual fact, somebody is able to reassemble a bank that's been knocked about – by life and other things, you know. And if he could do this – if he could just do this he'd be able to do nothing but this for the rest of his existence, and make a fine way of it and so forth. He wouldn't make any OTs, but he'd make some awful comfortable, happy people. So there's a whole zone of auditing in R4 that you might not really look at as auditing.

Now, we get to the business of making an OT. And that has all sorts of little bits and pieces and ramifications and know-how and so forth, connected with this. It all makes it easier. And the only reason you need all the bits and pieces and odd bits of know-how and that sort of thing is because you stray off of the exact relatively simple procedure. The procedure R4M2 is so foolishly simple – it is in actual fact so easy to do – that it is a very, very treacherous bog to walk into.

You read these things, why, so there's nothing to that. You just sit there and you ask the person, "Well, goals and present time – what might your present time GPM be? All right, we'll make a list and we'll get it," and so forth. And that's all there is to that. And then we take this and we check it out and then we ask these questions. We don't get a read on – if we get proper reads on these questions, why, everything is fine.

And we list for the top oppterm on it and then we go – top terminal, rather – and then we go flicker-flack back and forth down the bank and it all runs out and everything is fine. All we'd do is a list – it's the first thing that falls on the list is probably the item. We just call it back to the pc. There's hardly anything to this, you know – see, it's very easy. You get down to the bottom, any idiot can do it.

The only thing that gets in your road is the pc's itsa, of course, is not up to the bank. That's why you're running it, you see. So you're running it sub-itsa and sometimes the sub-itsa – because the pc's itsa is not very high – is not very accurate. So you can find in consecutive order five different, separate, contradictory present time GPMs.

You try to run one, you try to run another one, and of course you run a GPM which isn't in proper sequence, you're going to wind somebody up around a telegraph pole with a dull thud. And now is the occasion for case repair, don't you see?

You make a mistake – it isn't your mistake, it's the pc's inability to itsa at that particular level, see. So you come a cropper and now you fall back on the technique called bank formation and you put the bank back together again. You find out, was it, and where does it

really exist, and was it a real one or was it a false – you know, was it a wrong goal – incorrectly worded goal? Slightly incorrectly worded, grossly incorrectly worded, not like that at all – this type of thing. And you go over this and you're back into the put-it-all-together-again-smoothly department. See?

So you go ahead with this very simple technology which is – all you do is make a little list and what rocket reads on the list, why, that's it and so forth. And you take that and you go up to the top of that and then you get this and you – the item lists, you do the item lists, and anything that falls you call it back and you call it and you get your blowdown for the pc, circle around and you say, "Is this your item?" and do your courtesy steps and so forth. There's nothing to that, sneeze – nothing to it; nothing to it. Nothing.

As long as you don't run into any difficulty. See? The technique itself is idiot simple. But it's an idiotic technique that takes a screaming genius to run it. You see that?

For instance, the smarter auditor pulls out quicker from an error and gets a pc into less trouble. Pull out fast, you see. You're going down this list, you're listing, all of a sudden that list is getting long, you call back, you see that the fall doesn't – something falls nicely and you call it back to the pc and you can't make it fall for the pc and you get – list a little bit further, and you get another fall, and you call that back, and that doesn't do it. And you go up on top of the list and you can't get that first fall to fall, and you can't get anything to fall, and nothing is calling back and so forth – well, that's a matter of a very few minutes of operation. You don't make a week's profession out of this thing. You just realize what's wrong: you're listing from a wrong item, man.

And you fall right back into case repair. You see. You get another item to list from. If you can't get another item to list from, then you go back and find out if that's the wrong goal you're operating on. You're running out of RR. And you run it right straight on back but you're into case repair at once.

Second anything goes wrong you're into case repair. Case repair is not a long activity that takes the next five sessions. See? Case repair is as long as is necessary to repair the case. And a very clever auditor can repair the blunder which he has just committed in an hour or a half an hour or ten minutes, depending on the magnitude of the blunder, don't you see. It's repaired right now – is detected – immediately detected, what's going on – he can straighten that up and so forth. And somebody else has gone on with error mounting up on error mounting up on error till he's *really* got a mess to repair and so of course it takes him five, six, ten hours to repair this thing, see. You get the idea.

I mean, it's how quick the auditor can detect the case running wrong. And this is all monitored against another very interesting point, just to scare you spitless. Another interesting point about it is that if you repair a case which isn't running wrongly, you will mess the pc up also. If the case is running just fine and you start to get your ulcers up and start to repair a case that doesn't need repair, why, you are ARC breaking the pc because you're invalidating all of his materials, of course. So you have to know when a case is running well and when it's running badly.

Case is run badly, they're ARC breaky, nattery, you can't get much on a list, your lists tend to be kind of cockeyed and long, the tone arm is running at a different place than where a

tone arm should run – either very high or very low – you're not getting much tone arm action per session, the needle tends to stick, you don't get nice blowdowns. All of these various things. That case isn't running well.

But you're running a case at 45 TA divisions and you're getting RRs and everything is flashing, big blowdowns, and everything is just running like a startled gazelle, pc cheerful, happy, everything going along, swinging, and you all of a sudden get worried and start to repair the case. The fact that you tried to repair the case will now give you a high tone arm or a low tone arm or a nattery or ARC breaky pc. You get the idea?

So you have to know when to do these things and you have to be familiar with the anatomy of the thing. The anatomy of the thing is very simple. There aren't any more things in the anatomy than I have named in this lecture. It isn't any vast panorama of things. There aren't this many parts in a kid's – there are more parts in a kid's Erector Set. See? There's more to learn about stamp collecting or something like that, by far, see? There's more to learn about Parcheesi, in actual fact, than there is to putting a bank back together again.

But there is something to learn and it is finite and that is it. You've got to know that, see. There's not a whole bunch of ramifications. You can't have a whole bunch of false data about banks and repair a bank, don't you see? You got to know what really is there. Is there anything else there? No, there's just those things there, that's all.

So the upshot of all of this is this: R4 – R4 then divides into two divisions. And one of those divisions is putting a bank together without running – or finding – goals or items. Just assembly in proper sequence. There's a whole field of that in R4. And the other one is the technique called R4M2 which is how to find goals and run out GPMs. See, those are two broad fields of activity.

The more useful of the two, the more useful of the two, of course, is the repair area. Putting everything back together again. That's really more useful as technology because it's useful at all levels on all cases. And the only difficulty is, it merely makes people comfortable; it doesn't make OTs. So it has a more limited target and a broader application. See? And probably a lot of things can develop out of this.

But R4M2 is the only – the only – technique – the only technique, there is no other technique, there is no biochemical assist. There is no electrical shock assist, there is no "peyote-squirt in the gluteus maximus" assist, there is no "hocus-pocus Dormaphone yourself to Clear," there is nothing – there is no "hypnotize yourself into insanity," so forth – there is none of – none of any of this, see, that will get anybody to OT, see?

No matter how widely advertised, I wish to point out to you the number of people who aren't and the length of time these things have been around. Implant yourself by installments, you see? That doesn't lead to OT. It stands there as the single, isolated, lonely technology – as the only route to Operating Thetan.

Been worked on for a long time; that it exists at all is absolutely miraculous. That it functions is fantastic. And it nevertheless exists. It, however, in the absence of the first broad field of how you assemble a case, you see, how you assemble GPMs and so on, tried – if you try to handle that, R4M2, in the absence of knowing how to assemble a case – *huup!* You've

had it. You've had it. You don't know how to assemble a case, you're going to run R4M2, don't make me laugh – I've got a sore lip.

Your pc is going to be in agony, agony that is absolutely unbelievable. You, as an auditor – your hair is just going to turn gray minute by minute, as the sessions wander on. Worse and worse. You're going to dig yourself into more holes, because you don't know the first broad sphere of how you assemble a bank. See?

You don't know how a bank looks, you don't know where it should go together and so forth. You're operating too blindfoldedly. And operating too blindfold, and there is no way that anybody can be taught this as: you stick a key in the hole in the side of an auditor and wind it up, you see, wind it up and the auditor sits there and turns on the E-Meter, see, and says, "What is your present time goal? I will write it down." It's not that kind of a technique.

It is that kind of a technique as long as nothing goes wrong. But one pebble slips on the path and it instantly reverts to this broad knowledge of the bank. You've got to have a broad knowledge of what the bank is all about. Now you understand?

Audience: Uh-huh.

This is how this stuff works. This is how this stuff goes together. You can do some miraculous things. It's – just to give you a carrot – not intending you to... you can actually do some miraculous things. I don't care whether the pc – I'm not interested now in the communication barrier between you and the pc – try to do this on raw meat. But I can think of one. You could have a bunch of plastic clay over in the corner yourself and say to the pc, "Now, that's what we call a so-and-so," and finally put him through a drill. He's handling the stuff with his paws that he'd be handling in his bank and it looks exactly the same to him, you see.

And it means the same, in other... translate it into English. Teach him how to talk bank, see? And the second you teach him how to talk bank, why, then you could communicate this and you could put it all back together again. That's a crude solution, but is a solution, don't you see?

Now, you have to do that anyhow. I don't know how a pc – an uneducated pc... this is a Scientologist process, man. Everything I've been talking about is a Scientologist process, today.

You might carry on this education. After you've educated the guy thoroughly, why, he'd be partially a Scientologist.

The situation that you're involved with, then, is the real McCoy, all there is to know about it in form of anatomy of a bank. You see. That's it. And that is combined with the technology of how you handle that anatomy. And you have to know both sides of this in R4 to have anything really like success and not disaster. And R4 is peculiar in that it is the one technology which can lead to disaster.

That is the source of this thing called classification. This is why auditors are classified. Because somebody who has no acquaintance with this at all or minimal acquaintance with this, who are trained out in Keokuk or Podunk and is trying to wrestle with this stuff – *na-ha-ha*. He going to kill somebody, that's all. He's just going to kill somebody.

It isn't that he'll get away with it with one case or two cases. He won't even get away with it with one case, see. I mean, it isn't that sooner or later – it isn't adjudicated – classification isn't based on: well, sooner or later he's liable to make a mistake on a pc and hurt somebody. Where R4 is concerned, if he uses it on pc A, pc A sooner or later is going to hit the long chute. See.

Sooner or later. Maybe in the first session, maybe in the tenth session. Don't – don't minimize it, see?

You're looking at the stuff which can aberrate a body and make a two-headed monkey, practically, see. This stuff is velocity. It's got *scrunch* in it. Find a wrong goal on somebody, you know? The guy's – has an actual GPM of something or other. He, oh, has lots of them – just find one wrong goal. Not "to sell Wheaties," but "to buy Wheaties," or something like this, you see.

All right, you say, "To buy Wheaties. All right. That's your goal." He agrees with it. You check it on the meter at the moment, he hadn't had a chance to itsa it – the thing is still charged up, you see, like mad and your meter doesn't give you the straight dope.

You start to run "to buy Wheaties." *Ta-da da-da-da-da-da-da*. You battle your way up to the top of the bank. You battle your way up to the top of the bank. And you find the top GPM of the bank – meter says so, pc says so, it all appears so. And you start to run it and then find out it's the tenth GPM.

Well, break out your violin, brother. Because this pc is going to be in a mess. Right now. Right now.

'Tisn't the ARC break. It's the creak. It's very funny – I mean, the darnedest things – the darnedest things – but they're all just disarranged elements from the materials I've just been telling you about. You disarrange or miscall one of those elements, getting its wrong relationship to some other element, find something out of the fourth bank and infer that it's out of the first bank, don't you see?

You get these things disarranged or you get bank 3 and bank 2 out of sequence – that is to say so that one is where the other should be in sequence. You get these little elementary actions and those things result in lumbosis, scrumbosis and medicalosis.

And this stuff, in untrained, unskilled, noncomprehending hands and so forth, could make doctors absolutely rich. And I'm agin it. I'm agin it. I think they ought to be paid for exactly the good they do. I think medicos should be paid for the good they do. I think they should be held exclusively to our code on this. And so forth. And in view of the fact that they would then be paupers, why, we wouldn't have to worry about them at all.

I sound bitter. I'm not particularly bitter, but I do hear every once in a while how they gouged out the kidney or the – or the – took off half the head of somebody or other, trying to do what? Trying to get rid of a somatic of some kind or another, see?

This g... organ or ear or something has been under constant pressure, you see, from the bank and so has managed to infect or become aberrated in some particular fashion as a physical aberration. Then they start in with surgery. Well, their surgery did not cut out even one

tiny chunk of an RI. And that RI, unless by some accident, is still pressing against that ear area.

A quack is somebody who is a fraud. And I think they're doing well to conduct their campaign for Doctor Quack. I think they do well conducting a campaign against quacks. I think they should do more of this. They should conduct more campaigns against quacks. I'm glad they are conducting that campaign because we don't have to.

A quack is somebody who is paid for something he doesn't do. Or claims he is doing something he doesn't do. In the final analysis, what they are curing is caused by misalignments of the reactive bank. And the anatomy of the reactive bank is just as I have given it to you and nothing more than that.

Now you say, "Well there is such a thing as germs." Yeah, there is such a thing as germs. There is such a thing as matter. Yes, there is such a thing as matter. There is such a thing as this universe. Yes, there is such a thing as this universe. Yes, that's all true. There's no doubt about that of any kind whatsoever. There is an actual GPM called, "the physical universe." The only question I'm asking is whose is it? [laughter]

But this is the level, scope, breadth and what you should know on Level IV. 'Tisn't really very much when you come down to look at it. The technique itself is idiotically simple to do and repair is something you learn simply by knowing the parts and being imaginative as to how many – how many ways they can go out of gear. How many ways they can get scrambled and how to put them back together again. These things you can learn, these things you can do. And the reason they can learn them and can do them is (1) they are simple and (2) there is no other route. Okay?

Thank you.

R4M2 PROGRAMING

A lecture given on 31 October 1963

Well, you have a day here. Hallow's Eve. Allhallow's Eve. Isn't that the date?

Audience: Yes.

Well, we'll talk about ghosts. Are you a ghost? Children plague me with this. They get a lot of Scientology around and it gets in conflicts with their children's textbooks. And – and get quite confused with definitions of what is a ghost, you see, and that sort of thing. We frankly – we need undoubtedly a small textbook on this subject, you see. *Scientology One Junior*.

A thetan is not necessarily a ghost, you see. But everybody is a thetan. Body – thetan minus body equal ghost.

October 31 – that the date?

Audience: Yes.

All right. AD 13 Saint Hill Special Briefing Course. Another lecture on R4. Your morale I can see sinking steadily, steadily, steadily. Small, tiny pennon showing, just the tip of it as the ship sinks beneath the waves, you see. Sort of a feeling of "Good God, how can we possibly climb this hill," you see. I mean, it's all too complicated and too much is being demanded of it. And I can't possibly do it, I can't possibly audit." You know. This kind of feelings that sweep across one or feelings like "Good heavens, what will I be doing to a pc? Is it – is it really safe?" "Oh, God," you know. "Well, do I dare say anything to the pc at all? Everything I say is wrong, and so forth. And it's all too complicated," and so forth. Well, you're right except for one thing. It's not all too complicated. You are. See, you're too complicated.

For instance, there are certain little things that happen in auditing such as when the needle is moving nicely in blowdowns and the TA is going down the auditor who opens his yap is a fool. See, I mean – you don't even have to put it elegantly. And when the TA isn't doing anything and the needle isn't doing anything and you're not getting any tone arm action, the auditor who doesn't do something is a fool. You got the idea?

Now, the auditor who only acts when the TA is moving and who never acts when the TA is motionless, well, he of course is making more trouble for himself than you can shake a stick at. The basic rule, very simple, very simple: When you've got TA motion in progress, shut up, be quiet, don't do anything. Don't even lift your pencil. Just sit there and watch it move. Take some delight in the smooth sweep of a down moving TA, you see. And keep on taking delight in it until it's no longer happening, and you'll be ahead every time. And when the TA isn't moving and when the needle isn't moving, do something.

Actually that's auditing against the TA. It's simply coordination. You've already got the rules in a bulletin. Undoubtedly that's one of the most important rules there is right now. There probably is no more really important rule than that in handling pcs and meters. Just that, see.

Well, you say, "Well, we move into R4, of course, all that is swept aside." Oh no, no, no. Everything you know how to do at lower levels you do at R4. But at R4, of course, you are expected to be in there pitching quicker when you got a motionless TA and a motionless needle. And you're expected to be in there rapidly. You're not supposed to sit there for the next half an hour to find out if it's going to move, don't you see. Because this is – this is quick stuff. This is auditing by quick step. And when that TA starts to move and that – you get an occasional blowdown on that meter and that TA is moving down and so forth, well, you shouldn't be doing a thing. You shouldn't be trying to find a new goal and you shouldn't be trying to make the pc list. And you say, "Well all right, the pc should be talking."

Well, that's a mistake somebody's been making around the W unit. The pc must talk in order to have the itsa line in. What is an itsa line? It's the pc talking. No, that's not the pc talking. That is the pc itsaing. See that, itsaing, a pc who is itsaing is simply looking at and identifying something. And you get a totally motionless pc who is sitting there with his eyeballs swiveled around 180 degrees looking into his skull and you'll be getting beautiful blowdowns on the needle and so forth. Well, the auditor who gets busy and ambitious at that time ought to have his shins kicked. See?

He can stop all of his TA motion just by getting active at that moment. Well, we don't care if the pc sits there for twenty minutes without anything being done by the auditor at all and nothing being said by the pc. Perfectly all right. You got TA motion during those twenty minutes – you got TA motion during those twenty minutes, the pc must be itsaing. Must be, because the tone arm is moving.

And you'll see a tone arm sometime go down and pc's looking, "Is this my goal? Is this my goal? Let's see if this is my goal. And so on and so on and so on and then so, so on and so on and if I don't so on, so on and I have... well, when I was four or five I used to worry a little bit about this, and so forth, yes, and so on and when I was ten I did, and so on." Of course, he's not saying anything, he's just sitting there. That's what's really going on, you see, but he's – to the auditor he's just sort of going...

Now, the auditor who cheerily, cheerily at that moment realizes he's got to be interesting and wake the pc up and that sort of thing, just isn't paying attention to his meter. You'll see that tone arm go down and halt and stop for a moment and climb and then go down again. And you'll see blowdowns, large surges and that sort of thing going on now and then on the meter, and so forth. Well, that's what you're supposed to have happening in a session. See, see? You see, it's just emphasis on what's supposed to happen in a session. Well, if you think a session is something in which an auditor does something or a session is something in which a pc talks or a session is something in which an auditor and a pc have ARC breaks or if you have any odd definition of a session which throws this out, of course, you won't grasp this very readily at all. And you actually will miss the boat and there goes your TA. Bang! Then you get to the end of the session and don't record any TA. Why?

Every time the pc started to get his attention on something and get the itsa maker running on the thing, you know, and looking at it and the thing started to blow, the auditor said, "Yap, yap, yap, yap, yap, yap, yap, yap, yap, yap, yap." And the pc – the pc says, "What – what? Oh, we – oh, yes, yes." And of course did a suppress and that stopped the blowdown and of course you got no TA. That's it. See, you finished it right there.

Well, what's supposed to happen in a session is you're supposed to have a TA moving. You're supposed to have things happening to the needle and the TA. And if you don't have to do anything to make things happen to the needle and the TA, well, that hasn't anything to do with it either. All you're supposed to do is have something happening to the needle and the TA. And when nothing is happening to the needle and the TA, you of course have to audit like mad. But when something is happening you better not do anything. See, it's as simple as that.

And if you can get it, it's as simple a mechanism as when the car is running forward you leave the clutch out. When the car is motionless you put the clutch in. Do you see? I mean it's that kind of a datum, see. Well, that's how you drive a session. It is no more complicated than that. Don't you see?

The only mistake you make is once in a while you'll fumble it just to this degree. The pc has got ahold of something, isn't quite seeing it and for a moment or two nothing happens on the meter. It doesn't start to blowdown yet, don't you see? And the auditor says, "Well, it's a motionless meter so therefore I'd better ask a question," you see. And he says, "Did..." And just at that moment it starts down, see. And he's goofed, you see.

Well, he's got to be a clever enough auditor to adjust the clutch accordingly, you see. Right now, adjust that clutch, see. Why did I open my mouth? It's as simple as this. This is driving an E-Meter. And there's really nothing much to it. And you get more complicated about it, why, you're in grad [great] trouble.

Now, as long as a meter is moving then, as long as you're getting down TA divisions and so forth, no great skill is required of the auditor. He just goes through routine activities. For instance, in R4, well, he finds the item and he calls it back to the pc and it fell and then he waits until the tone arm motion is gone out of the thing and then asks the pc the courtesy questions about it, you see. "Is it your item?" you know, and other things like this. As long as he isn't getting any motion, he goes on with his job. As soon as he gets motion, he stops going on with his job. Well, that's all very routine. You don't run into any trouble, really, with that.

You could memorize and perform – if you – if you know this thing about driving an E-Meter, you could then memorize and perform the other steps necessary to the execution of R4, well perhaps, in a couple of hours. It's pretty hard to sometimes coordinate all the – write and watch the meter at the same time, and so forth, but that's just coordination, see. Just coordination. When do you shift gears without stripping out all of the – all of the teeth, see. It's that kind of a lesson, you know. You're supposed to say so-and-so and so-and-so, and you're supposed to write down so-and-so and so-and-so, and you're supposed to see a meter reaction. When you see that meter reaction you're supposed to say, "Thank you," and call it back to the pc. And then it normally falls and that was the item.

That's all there is to it, don't you see. I mean, these are very simple actions – elementary. If you just look at the set of actual actions which you perform based on this driving the meter plus these little other elementary actions which you take. Don't salt it down with eight thousand seven hundred and sixty-six billion rules, see. You just be there in the session and do those little simple actions which comprise R4. And actually as long as the case is running perfectly, you've got it made, see. You got that – that little spook phrase in there. As long as the case is running perfectly, you've got it made. And actually, almost any idiot could learn how to do this, see. Anybody could learn how to do this.

Now, if those simple ac... if you're going to make those simple actions complicated then you better un-complicate in an awful hurry because those actions are terribly simple. Drive the meter, do something when the meter is motionless and don't do anything when the meter is moving. Get that coordinated. You know what to list, how to head a list, what to write, how to watch the meter, when to stop the pc, when to read the item back to him, how to do a goals list until you've got an absolute smooth flowing needle, you see? And then null the whole goals list back rapidly to the pc and get the one that's in and put a couple of mid ruds in on it and make it fire like mad, see. Those actions, see. They're very simple actions. You should know those actions perfectly and so forth. And actually there's not enough complication in them to actually study very hard, you know. They're just things you do. Fine.

Now, get that line of simple actions. Now, understand that just as a little parade of very simple actions. There are – they haven't got any big rules and so forth in connection with them and they're just there and there they are and so forth, see. Give you such things as you underlist, you normally underlist – the big faults are, is underlisting a goals list and overlisting an item list, then you just know your item lists have got to be pretty darn short and your goals lists have got to be pretty darn long. And – you get this – this is awful easy, terribly easy to assimilate. Very. There's nothing to it. You can learn how to do that. If you're putting your big concentration in on learning how to do that, that's something on the order of learning – it... you get into the swing of this, you get into the swing of this. It took me – took me quite a few hours actually, in actually auditing the stuff to come up with a total confidence on the thing.

For instance, for some months I wasn't doing any listing on a meter. I wasn't doing any of that particular type of a – of research work or anything that required me to list against a meter. Don't you see. Well, I wasn't doing anything like that and I got a little bit rusty and it took me a very short period of – I got so that I didn't quite know whether or not I would see the motions of the needle, don't you see, the next time I did a list. The next time I did a list I said, "Well, now I'm going to list this thing and I wonder if I've got this coordination in."

For a few minutes there I was sort of queasy. You know, was I seeing all the motions of the needle while I was writing and then all of a sudden it just went back into gear and that was it and I haven't worried about it since, see.

A meter can't pip without my seeing the thing. I don't care what I got my eyes on, see. And these are the kind of things that – they're little coordinative facts, you see. This is something like the pride with which you rapidly can shift gears in a sports car or something like that. How smoothly can you shift the gears, you know. Never miss. That kind of thing. It's

just – they're little mechanical coordinative actions and so forth. You learn these with practice and so forth.

And as long as nothing has gone wrong, that is all there is to R4. See? That's all there is. You needn't be skilled beyond just these mechanical actions.

Now, now, the still meter, dat meter what just rises up. It gets up there to 5.5. It gets up there to 5.75. Man, it isn't blowing down. You can't get anything to read. Your pc is developing lumbosis in a hurry. Politis is normally what they get in running this. It's the pole they use in implant GPMs that goes up the back of the pc – politis. Actually, the source of lumbosis is actually politis.

Typical medical remark. You take a mythological disease which doesn't exist, you see, and give it a mythological – not a mythological but give it an explanation and source, you see. Quadam neurosis is caused by kleptomania inverted with arsonism. See. Now, if you memorize that you'll be a psychiatrist and all that kind of thing. A whole bunch of double talk, a bunch of nonsense.

But there's that meter and it's not moving and there's that pc and that pc's got creaks. And that list that you did, that didn't come out to the perfect item. And that meter didn't blow down and you've now got no motion going in any direction. Now, that requires an auditor.

Now, there's no substitute for an auditor in the chair at that point. Now you got trouble. First trouble of this kind which I ran into in running goals and so forth, my back hair stood up and vibrated. Sparks were flying out of my fingers; my nerves were going *zzzzzzzzzz*, see? I was getting some lumbosis myself trying to sit and look calm in the chair. Cup of coffee after the session or something like that it chatters against the cup like a widow maker tearing up pavement, you know. "*Wooooohhh!* What the hell's going on here?" Worry, man. That's a – that's an occupational – that's an occupational illness on this subject. Worry. Did I get enough TA, didn't I get enough TA?

Somebody in actual fact has lost a whole night's sleep worrying, because the pc did not get TA in the session just run, you know. What was wrong? Well, add that up to the fact that it wasn't just not TA, the pc's TA is stuck at 5.75. The meter is so dirty, the needle is so dirty that you can't even analyze anything. You can put your fingers on nothing and the pc is ill. You can get nothing to RR or R/S. You can get nothing to read. No list is traceable back. Where are you? What have you run into? And the cup as you try to drink a cup of coffee chatters against the saucer. Man, it sounds like a machine gun.

Whatever little worries you run into in I, II and III are multiplied enormously at Level IV. When I first ran into this sort of thing causing a big blunder of this kind or that kind, RR shutting off and so forth, I didn't know what the score was to a large degree. I was doing research lines and so on. And I was interested in wrapping a pc around a telegraph pole in the last week but good, and arriving at all the conditions just described, and my emotional reaction to this was a bit of concerned sympathy for the pc for feeling that bad, but my emotional reaction or my puzzlement as to what it was all about and so forth *pah!* No worry, no concern.

The fact that the RR and falls had shut off on the meter simply indicated to me we must be running a – running items when we didn't have a goal. So that just said the goal was

wrong. So it was just a matter – we got to find the right goal for this and find out why we can't find the right goal for this. Just untangle this skein of yarn. It untangled fairly rapidly. Pc feeling quite disabled for a couple of days, but so what, see. Brought it all off at the other end, everything going smoothly. Get the idea?

So your nervousness at R4 stems from lack of knowing. All the answers are now there to know – be known, you see, and you just don't know them. You don't really need any of them – any of those answers till you run into trouble. Now, in view of the fact that the little run-off techniques of "Well, you do the list, you do the goals list and you get a goal and it fires and you check the goal out and you do an analysis on that and you run it over here and you do items for that and you run down the items and so on." All of those little actions – smart, brisk – you should be able to do all of those things. But you should be able to do all of those things actually without knowing what you're doing. And those little actions even if perfectly done will inevitably run a pc into a brick wall sooner or later someplace, because you're not dealing – you may be dealing – you may be perfectly auditing but you're not dealing with a perfect bank. You see that?

It was a dark and stormy night and the pc was standing out in the rain. And they were big, black, oily clouds rolling by. And all this happened in 1936. And it keyed in a GPM, "To never be saddened." And this GPM oddly enough has been pulled fully and completely out of its position and yanked up to 1936. And you're busy doing all of your little actions and these would be perfectly okay if the bank were perfect. But the bank isn't perfect because there was 1936. You see, don't you go blaming Scientology and auditing all the time for what's happened to your pc because life has done a thousand things to him for every tiny little thing that auditing has done to him, see? You see, auditing – it's easiest to find the auditing goofs because they've already been disclosed to some degree. But the livingness goofs, they haven't been disclosed, so livingness itself can disarrange this bank.

All right. Well, that's bad enough. But let's look at another one. Trillions three years ago, see, somewhere around a trillion trillion trillion years ago – you don't have too much to do with these dates now in R4 – but at that length of time while the pc – you've gone down the bank now from present time GPM and you're going along *pocketa-pocketa-pocketa-pocketa-pocketa*, just everything fine, everything fine, everything fine. And trillions three years ago the pc got implanted, cross-implanted and upside implanted with a bunch of goals that were reversed to the goal of the GPM the pc was on at that particular time. Everything has been running gorgeously but this put the track in a group.

So you list for the next GPM. And you're listing into a bunch of wrong goals and implant goals and the pc doesn't know they're there and you don't know they're there and so everything starts to fire and nothing fires and eventually you come up with an – something that reads to be an actual GPM but it isn't the actual GPM, it's merely a goal but is quite like an actual GPM and is so undifferentiated that the sub-itsa, you see, can't reach. It's too burdened. This is too chewed up at this particular point.

So – but you do get a goal and it does check out and you run the items for that goal and you run halfway down the bank and you all of a sudden realize that this pc is riding at 5.5

and is getting less and less blowdowns and there's less and less reads and you say, "Whoa, we've got a wrong goal." Well, judgment comes and when do you hit the silk?

So, you check it all over now and it's been unburdened enough to find out, yeah, it sure is, that was – that was a wrongly worded goal, you see. Something like that. So you go back to your original goals list and you do your original goals list again. And *pocketa-pocketa-pocketa-pocketa*, you're doing your original goals list and you're extending it, you see. You're extending it and you're extending it and you finally get one. Oh, it fires and everything is fine and checks out and it's an actual GPM. Oh, ho, *pfffaaooouuu* see. So, you're going to find the items for it now. You go *pocketa-pocketa-pocketa* find an item, find an item *wo-da-da-da-da-da uukk*. The RR restored, but all of a sudden you haven't got any – it isn't even falling now and your needle's getting very still and it doesn't matter what you list and the pc is now coming down with a good case of politis.

And you say, "Well," – if you know your business – you say "Well, we've run into something here that didn't register right." So you analyze the goal you're now working on and you find out that it was an implant GPM you were busy running without the pattern.

So you haul off then and you come back and you start all over again and you extend this goals list and this goals list won't move and nothing will move and you've nulled the thing all three times and you get in your mid ruds and everything else and then you finally come back to the beginning of them and find out it was the first goal on the list. And it suddenly fires like mad. And you go up to the top of the list and this – now you found what? You have found two separate oppters for wrong goals – two separate top oppters – so this particular position of the bank is some – getting somewhat like Times Square, you see. Just getting a little jammy. So you try to list into that and get something to read there.

Well, you finally take refuge in the fact of finding out how far you can go on the list without ARC breaking the pc. You find out how far you can go down the list until the pc ARC breaks. You can't make anything read, you see. You got the right goal now, but everything is so jammed up that you can't do anything so the only thing you've got left is assessment by ARC break. You know if you go across the item on nulling, that in the next few items the pc will ARC break. So you carefully watch the pc's ARC break and then backtrack and ask the pc, "Well, which one of these items is your item." And the pc picks up the item and all of a sudden it fires and you're away.

And of course now the top terminal, that is – also looks like Grand Central Station or something like this and you can't get anything to read on that, you follow out the same system then suddenly you get big blowdowns and lots of charge is blowing off and all of a sudden you get one of the things to read and you've got the action going and you just proceed as before.

If you didn't know your business at the time you reached this trillions three point on the track a pc would be finished. 'Tisn't a case of they got a slight cold and recovered. You just finished a pc – finished him. Unless you can untangle that, you've finished a being.

Horrible, isn't it. But let's look at the elements it required to untangle that. It required a knowledge of what the bank was all about, of the things that could go wrong. You realize that you walk into too thoroughly an overburdened area, that the more overburdened or charged

the area is from whatever cause the less accurate your analysis by a Ouija board and this E-Meter is going to be. Is this an actual GPM? Yeah, that flicks and that flashes and so forth, and for the moment is correct. But the area is *so* thoroughly charged that those errors creep in. And so you take those things and the more charged the area and the more guth... goofed up the whole situation is at that particular point of the track, why, the harder off you're going to get. The worse off it's going to be, the more unreliable your analysis is and the more mistakes you're going to make.

You realize, you learn eventually that the way you handle a mistake is to remove all possible charge before analyzing. That's the way to cut – minimize such mistakes. Get any charge off that you can get off before you do an analysis. In other words don't do an analysis and then remove charge. If there's any opportunity of removing charge before you do the analysis, for heaven's sakes do so. One of the ways of doing that is to get the pc to itsa what you've just found, before you turn to the meter.

"Well, does this – does this add any effect on your life, do you suppose?" You've just found something, you see, that read, "Does it have any effect on your life? What do you – what do you think it might be? Oh, yes. It's so-and-so and so-and-so. All right. Is there – has this ever come up before? Oh yeah." And the pc will spot this and spot that and spot the other thing and get him to itsa a little bit, see.

Give you another one. You've found an implant GPM. You know darn well it's an implant GPM that's of similar wording to the GPM you're trying to do, or opposite wording to the GPM you're trying to run, you see. And you can't be sure and you've gotten into a track jam of some kind or another. And you know, it hasn't run well, you've – pc's been wrapped around a telegraph pole. And here you are, and so forth. Well look, you're not sure of the actual GPM but you're sure sure of the implant GPM. Because the pc actually has a visio on the parking meters, you see. Well, you got a line plot in your kit and run it. Take the charge off, see. Take the charge off the implant GPM before you check out the actual GPM. Get the idea?

In other words, the rule is, if there's any opportunity of taking off charge before you do an analysis, at a sticky spot on the track – because I'm talking about now a tough, overburdened area – if there's any opportunity whatsoever of taking off some charge, take that before you establish what it is you have found on the list. Got it? Then you'll get your reads more accurately and you'll make fewer mistakes. Take the charge off first and then analyze what it is.

Well, of course that can only go just so far. If you're trying to take charge off but aren't getting any tone arm action then of course you've got to find out what it is. See, it's only whether or not you can get tone arm action on this.

I'll give you an idea. You've gotten into a jam and the pc has a goal "to spit" and you can get an implant GPM there "to be spat at." There sits the implant GPM. You analyze it very carefully and it's quite recognizable as a Helatrobis Implant. Well, you got the pattern right alongside of you and you've got the goal and it's firing very nicely and actually every time the pc says anything about it, you get rocket reads, but you speak of the actual GPM, you can't get much and you're not sure what the actual GPM is. Well, naturally you're more sure of the implant than you are of the actual and it's a lighter charge. Well, let's just take the old

Helatrobus Implant GPM and *pocketa-pocketa-pocketa-pocketa*. Actually, you should be able to get rid of it in a couple of hours. Take the whole thing off if you're – really can audit. *Bong, bong, bong*. You take the items two at a time, make the pc call one against the other item and bleed down the rocket reads on the thing, bang, bang, bang, bang. And you got a lot of charge off the thing. You got your tone arm moving, the pc feels a lot easier and so forth.

All right. Let's move back to this actual – (quote) "actual" GPM "to spit." Let's move back to this actual GPM "to spit." You know, sometimes you won't even find it exists. You're saved from a fate worse than death. You had an actual goal which was a lock on the implant that you were busy testing, you see, something like that. What you can get your hands on for sure, in other words, that will get charge off, well, you get charge off with it.

Rules of this particular kind: Never try to find, without – an unrun, further-from-present-time GPM, by listing. These are the things you learn the hard way. We've got a present time goal "to spit" and our next GPM is "to not spit" or something like that. Well, listing from the present time actual GPM to the second GPM is impossible. Listing from, counting from present time, GPM four to find GPM five when GPM four has not been run, you understand this? I'm talking about unrun. You're trying to get a chain of goals together, see. You're not running them. You're just trying to get this chain of goals. Well, you got the goal for four, now trying to find the goal at five – I don't know why you'd want it anyway – but trying to find the goal at five is impossible. I don't – not difficult, you heard me now. It's impossible. It requires luck of a nature you never heard of. You just wont find it, that's all.

The only way you can goal oppose is toward present time. You can take two full GPMs – let's say five and four – and you've got number five and it's a full unrun GPM, you see. You can't run items if you haven't – there's only one way to run items on this. Just make up your mind to that. That's from the present time GPM back. But you've got number five and you want to know what number four is. Well, you do a goal oppose, see. What goal would oppose the name of GPM five. Do that list and you'll always come up with GPM four.

In other words, you can do a goal oppose toward present time but you can't do a goal oppose back from present time. It just won't work. It just is impossible. I won't even go into the ramifications of why. You always wind up with a mistake. Except once in a blue moon you will be very, very lucky and find a goal below. You'll find a goal below. But you cannot guarantee that you haven't skipped four or five goals. And you can put no reliance on it and eventual – eventual analysis of the case as it eventually turns out, yeah, you skipped about three GPMs, see? It doesn't list back but it'll list forward.

Now, that's – just let me put this in. You have to list back from a fully run GPM. You've run all the items out of a GPM, now you got to list to the earlier GPM back from present time. That's an ordinary action. I'm talking about you can't run down the track without running any RRs – any RIs, don't you see? And you get to GPM four and you've completely run GPM four. GPM four is all beautifully run and polished up and you got all the RIs in it. Now, you list a goal oppose to find GPM number five from present time and you will come up with a goal every time very beautifully. That's because GPM four has had all of its RIs run out of it.

Well, you say that's not even a very important datum. Well, it's important to this degree, that if you take off – this is modified to this degree – that if you take off four or five RIs from the bottom of a GPM – you know, it's got four or five RIs left in it at the bottom and for some weird reason you might decide to do this at some time or another – you never find the next goal. And it can look like you must be listing against a wrong goal or something because you can't find the next goal. Actually, all you find is the next RI. You'll find the next optterm or you'll find something stupid on the thing. But you won't find the next GPM's name because you're listing away from present time and you're listing over the top of several unrun GP... RIs. Interesting, isn't it?

All right. I see that that confuses you to some degree. Well, if it confuses you, you just haven't got the – I gave it to you partially for this reason – you just haven't got the mental facility. Oh! A GPM, that's it. *Bop pow!* And that's an engram and that's an implant and so forth and of course, it's a this and that and naturally they lie in this kind of a situation. And they go plus and minus down this way and bang, bang, and there's nothing to it and RIs sit in the middle of the package and so on. And all visual and we know what it is.

How the h... how the devil are you going to fix a radio set if you never heard of a valve, a condenser, a knob, a dial, an off-on switch or anything else, see. So, you get – you get my point? If you had any difficulty following my explanation of what you shouldn't do about listing, don't you see, then it's because you don't have visual acuity on the bank. Otherwise you'd say, "Oh yes, of course." Nothing to that, you see. You still must be fumbling around a little bit with nomenclature and so forth. I'm not trying to lay an egg on you because I could make you understand it. You can't because what I've told you is perfectly factual.

It isn't very important data that I'm giving you because why the devil would anybody ever want to list from... he's trying to find the present time GPM to go back down the run without finding any RIs, you see. But why would he ever list away from present time? See. Well, he wouldn't. You also can get hooked occasionally though by leaving four or five RIs in place at the bottom of a bank and say, "Well, we'll at least find the next GPM before we knock off this intensive so the pc will know about that," and you try to find it over the top of these RIs and you can't do it. I've tried it several times. You can always find the one closer to present time. And you can run that out very easily.

Facility, nomenclature, what's the orientation of this stuff? Well, actually if you regard it in the situation that you're just dealing with a bunch of child's building blocks and it's actually no more important than that. There's no reason to feel any great awe of these things. Because the only thing awful about them is the fact they remained completely unknown for so long. There must be a large vested interest in having everybody weighted down, don't you see. Somebody's been enthusiastic.

I'm sure the Ford Foundation, an organization of great ethical standards, would have engaged with some success in this direction if it really had intended to do so. You know, they folded up all their mental research. They said we'd done it. Did you know that? They actually put out a bulletin to that effect. Official bulletin of the Ford Foundation. Ford Foundation no longer engages in mental research because it's all been done by the Scientologists. They sent a fellow – years ago they sent a fellow down to Phoenix to go through the organization to report

on it – a report. And they got a full report where we sat with mental research and they decided it was in good hands and they knocked it out, because they had to have money for other purposes, of course, so this... But look at the interestingly easy surrender. They never even tried; they never even tried.

But possibly one of the reasons why all of this escaped view is because it is as idiotic as a kid's set of building blocks. We're very shortly going to – you're going to be drilling with this stuff. This is a GPM. Make you model one, hang it together, name goals. You'll get to a position, I know, where you will eventually walk over to the board with your pc and have the pc arrange the GPMs to show you what his bank – what he thinks is wrong with his bank. Don't you see? You've got – it's that easy, see? I mean, because everybody thought – everybody was stuck at – everybody was stuck down at think or mystery, probably at mystery on this subject, see. And at mystery there are no masses, so the mind of course was very mysterious and you mustn't go into the mind. So nobody looked to find a bunch of little kid's building blocks that had nothing much to do with anything except this.

Now, that's the magic which you've got to put time in on. That's the magic which you've got to put time in on. And you very rapidly will learn this sort of thing. I had my brains creaking last night on one of these problems, because these are problems. These are, you might say, auditing tactical problems. What are – what – what is the misarrangement here that we have run into which makes it impossible for us to get this next goal.

We know, of course, at once that the area is overcharged. That's an idiot statement. What's got it overcharged? Why? Why is everything grouped in here? Why do we keep overcharging it by finding new wrong goals, don't you see? And I found that the pc had had a goal run "to be happy" in the Helatrobos Implant series. Only there is no goal "to be happy" in the Helatrobos Implant series. There is a goal there "to be unhappy." And the pc had an actual GPM "to be happy," which of course made this implant goal very easy to mistake – made it easy to make a mistake on this, don't you see. And of course you get "nix absolutably unhappy" and it sounds like happy after you've pulled all the reverses out of it. So of course it tends to read very easily as a lock.

Now, let your brains creak over this one. An implant GPM "to be unhappy" had been run as "to be happy" which was the pc's own actual GPM. Got that? So the implant GPM "to be unhappy" very easily collapsed on a positive-negative basis on the pc's actual GPM. So that the moment we started into that area, we'd already, you see – it wasn't the auditing that had made the mistake, it was the fact that because this condition already existed in the bank that mistakes could now be made. You see, you wouldn't get nice clean reads and that sort of thing. Everything is kind of muddy. Easy to make mistakes.

Now, look at this. The goal "to be happy" appeared on the goal oppose list from the bank just before, but wouldn't fire, because the pc kept saying it was an implant GPM. Pc knew this, that it was an implant GPM. So therefore every time it'd come up it might tick a little bit but then go splat! So of course then it just wouldn't read. Two wrong goals in addition to the "to be unhappy" wrongly run goal were then stacked up at this point on the track after that. One error plus these two other errors.

In other words, three wrong GPMs. One right after the other came out of that mix-up. It looks like one of these pileups on the highway. See. Somebody wrecks a small car and then a couple of other cars run into it and then a Greyhound bus hits the lot, do you see. A block on the road. In other words, because this condition existed of overcharge on the bank anyway, then mistakes could be made in that area, don't you see?

Now, the auditor eventually had to be smart enough to sit there calmly and undo and guess at the lot and figure it all out as to what was and all of a sudden the pc comes up with broad cognitions because enough attention has been directed into the area and enough charge has been brought out of it to straighten it out. Got the idea?

But here's – the genius in the auditing is that goal even then wouldn't read. The goal – the actual GPM "to be happy" never had been run – wouldn't read on the list, wouldn't read until the pc finally started cogniting and then cognited more and more and then cognited more and more and more and then cognited more and – oh, you're getting blowdowns on this, you see. And he started to get blowdowns and blowdowns and blowdowns and blowdowns and blowdowns, and only then – was never found by nulling then, it was found by pc recognition of what it must be, after the thing was all disentangled by the auditor. Get the idea? Well, that was very smart auditing. But what kind of auditing is this? This is simply the auditing that when you hold up a poker, the name of it is a poker, and you hold up a shovel, the name of it is a shovel and so forth. You aren't wondering if the shovel is a poker. Don't you see. There's no confusion there.

How many – how many things could be wrong? Well, that's a real brain creak, man. That's a misrun, wrongly worded implant GPM run as the pc's actual GPM on the implant... You let your brains creak over this thing. That's a wild jam, see, on the track. You run into these things, you see. You run into these things and it's rough getting through those points.

So as I told you yesterday, in yesterday's lecture, there are two zones and areas of R4. One is the key in the side and wind up the auditor and as long as the TA moves the auditor has solenoids connected, you see, so that they forbid him from saying anything. And the moment the TA stops moving then the auditor goes on with the remaining action, like you run washing machines, you know. It's just as – just as stupid and automatic and crisp and precise as that.

And then there's this other field of knowing what you're doing. And that's a great, big, broad field and that requires knowing all the parts and knowing how they belong and knowing how they can be scrambled. There aren't many of these parts and they aren't very complicated. But there's no substitute for knowing these parts.

Now, by knowing both of those zones and areas, you'll get through R4 like a breeze, given the basic ability to sit there and audit, see. You'll get through R4 just like a breeze. Pc will catch hell every once in a while. After your first two or three mad collisions and pileups on the roadway you'll suddenly realize – you'll have seen it with your own eyes, that when you run a wrong goal, why, the RR shuts off, eventually shuts off. Tone arm goes high. Doesn't require an Ouija board of saying, "Is this an incorrectly worded goal?" and tick, and that doesn't require – well, how much sign board do you need, see?

You were finding items for which you had no goal and that's the only thing that shut off an RR and the only thing that would shut off an RR, so it must be a wrong goal. We don't care what the pc is saying about it. We don't care about anything else. That means that then we had an incomplete goals list and we'd found a wrong goal on it. So we got to extend the goals list and find the right goal on the list, see. Elementary. You'll find it one way or the other, hunt, punch and sweat. And the quicker you get the situation in hand, the easier it is to remedy. The longer you let one of these situations go wrong, the harder it is to remedy in the long run.

So it's these two zones in which you're operating. And there's no substitute for expertness. You should be able to sit there and, big key in the side, and wind yourself up and *pocketa-pocketa-pocketa*. See?

"Who or what would solve a psychiatrist?" You see.

"Sasa-sa sa-sa."

"Thank you." See?

"A shot gun. A shot gun."

"All right. That reads. Is that your item?" Silence from the auditor. Blow, blow, blow, blow. Pretty soon, why, no more action left in the thing. Looks quiet. Two or three minutes later it's very quiet, the meter and everything. The pc's talking a little bit and itsas a little bit.

"Very good. Thank you. Now, would a psychiatrist – would a shot gun solve a psychiatrist? All right. Thank you." That bled you another rocket read and a dial wide. It's fine. You see. All right. "How does the item, 'a shot gun,' relate to 'to be crazy.?' " Fall. "Thank you." Now, you'll notice that your TA is now up. You're not going to get any more motion out of this. You bled it.

You say, "All right. Here is your next question. Who or what would a shot gun solve?"

"Da-da-da da-da-da."

Thank you. Read you back... Just *ha-ha-ha-ha-ha*, you see. Little man, little wound up thing and nothing to it, see. It's all just *zazazazaza*. All perfectly patterned actions and so forth.

It all goes along this way. And you're doing this – you're doing this list and you say, "Who or what would solve a psychiatrist?"

"Ah-bla-bla-bla-bla-bla and ah-bla-bla-bla-bla-bla and ah-bla-bla-blable-bla."

"Thank you. A shot gun, a shot gun, a shot gun, gun. All right. Could you give me a few more items please? Who or what would solve a psychiatrist?"

"Da-da-da-da-da and da-da-da-da-da and da-da-da-da-da and da-dada-da-da and da-da-da-da-da and da-da-da-da-da. Arsenic."

"All right. Arsenic. Thank you. Thank you. All right. I'll read you this item. Arsenic. Arsenic. Arsenic. Arsenic! All right. I'm sorry that didn't read. A shot gun. A shot gun. All right. I'm going to null this whole list now. *"Da-da-da-da-da da-da-da-da-da, a shot gun, da-*

da-da-da-da-da-da-da-da-da-da, arsenic. All right. We'll have to continue this list. Very good. Who or what would solve a psychiatrist?"

"Da-da-da-da-da da-da-da-da-da da-da-da-da-da-da. Ah! Brickbats."

"Okay. Thank you. Thank you. I'll read you the item. Brickbats. Brickbats. Brickbats. Brickbats. Arsenic. Arsenic. All right, I'll read you these – these interim things. A shot gun. *Da-da-da-da-da* and a *da-da-da*."

X, X, X, X, X. Something is wrong.

Now, at this moment, at this moment, rules will not save you. You could be given now a brand-new pattern with a key on the other side and it wouldn't do you a bit of good, because you're running into variation. How many things can be wrong here? Maybe a lot of things can be wrong here. You might be – have all of a sudden run out of – maybe you're running an incorrect goal. Maybe you're running an implant GPM. Maybe you're running with an actual GPMs type of pattern, don't you see. Horror of horrors. Maybe your analysis in the first place is right. Maybe it's so simple, the first thing you would choose is the fact that a psychiatrist is a wrong item. So you continue that list and adjust it from that point because your list is unduly long that came from it, so your first assumption is that a psychiatrist list must be wrong. And the first assumption on that list is the psychiatrist is late on the list and there is an item earlier on the list that should have read in the first place. So you go back and pound that list to pieces trying to find out some earlier item on that list than psychiatrists.

And if you can't get anything on that list to read now, you got to start assuming other things, that something is wrong with the GPM, that you're running implant GPMs, something – *awwsomsomawww* what has happened here! *Ahhhh!* I should have gotten up this morning, don't you see.

You generally find it's something simple. But of great moment to the pc. Small matter, like you're running the opposite wording to the actual GPM or you're running an actual goal that has no GPM, neither an implant nor an otherwise. Or you've gotten a little bit of charge off the thing now and it reads up more truly what it is, don't you see. And you go back and analyze this thing and your hair stands on end.

Now, fortunately it's only wrong goals or mix-ups between implants and actuals and things like that which cause the pc to get ill. If your pc is getting ill, it isn't because you missed an item or something like that. It's because you really put both feet straight into it, see. You're running something real goofy, see. You're running a GPM where there is none. You've skipped a couple of GPMs. You've done something, but good.

All right. Now, the only thing you can do at a point like this is shift gears and go over to the other zone of the thing and know your business, know your business. What are these parts? What is an implant GPM? What is an actual GPM? How the – can these things get crossed? What do these things look like? How do they rearrange themselves in the bank? How many mistakes could we possibly make here? Cover all those available mistakes.

You'll get to be an auditor on this stuff the day you throw away your little – your little pat sheet of case analysis, you can think in terms of these items and entities, you can think in terms of those, throw away your sheet and you'll be all set. Because there's probably, probably

a hundred different combinations of errors arising out of only these eight or nine elements. See. There can be a hundred different complications of errors, don't you see.

You can be running an actual GPM with the wording only of the implant GPM, don't you see, and goofy things like this. You can be running a lock RI, you can have found a lock RI or misworded something or other or something or other or something or other. You can skip some items, you can – oh, it's on and on and on. But this is just the elements, it's just these few basic elements in different arrangement, don't you see, constitute the error.

All you have to do is know what these few basic elements are and you got to be able to crank your wits up to the point of juggling these things, *pangety*, *pang*, and well this might be against that and that might be against that and, oh, I see here. And you look back on the thing and you all of a sudden see here that this is some kind of a figure-figure oppose. I gave you a good figure. Let me see if I can dream up a good figure-figure oppose. "To have a good time opposes to be old." Goals always go by oppose, don't you see? To have a good time is of the sense of to have a bad time when it opposes, don't you see. But you see the pc figures it out this way. To have a good time opposes to be old because if you are old then you can't have a good time, see. And actually GPMs never figure out that way. And this suddenly dawns on you that this looks mighty corny.

See, you've got – you've got "to be rich" versus "to be tolerant," because if you're tolerant then of course you can't make enough money so of course you wouldn't be rich. These are not goal oppose, that's all. See, that's figure-figure oppose. Pcs and their anxiety to get the next goal and their hatred of listing will figure themselves around two or three corners, don't you see, to say how it's all true. To be old opposes to be young, you see. I mean, it's *bang! bang!* And if the auditor can't understand it, why, it usually is not comprehensible. Pc's trying to make something out of the thing.

Pcs sometimes all of a sudden alert and say, "Well, an elephant does not oppose cheese crackers." You know. You might have noticed – you might have not noticed it. You don't ever call attention to significance unless the pc gets in trouble. And then you start to examine these types of elements and you say, "Well, that's certainly a funny looking goal to be opposing that. It's either a wrong goal or we've skipped two or three GPMs obviously because it doesn't fit. See? You know that it doesn't fit because you know that goals – "to be black' opposes "to be white." Don't you see? See, "to be black" opposes "to be white" and that doesn't oppose "to be human." "To be black" does not oppose "to be human," no matter how much somebody might figure this out, it doesn't do it.

You'll get some oddities like this, you see. You'll get things like "to be pleasant" opposing "to be hateful." See? It goes that far afield but that's very comprehensibly an opposite. But you get "to be pleasant" versus "to be an opera singer" because they're so unpleasant. You don't even have to know much about significance to know that that is in error. The thing adds up to what it adds up. You don't even have to add in your significance but you get smart enough after a while that you even notice these things. That by the way is the last thing you notice, is the significance of the situation.

Is the thing an implant GPM? Have you gone into a lock RI? Was it only an act – was it only a goal? Didn't have any GPM connected with it? Have you got an implant GPM mixed

Why are you standing around the corner of the drugstore? There isn't another girl going to walk by all day.

No, sir. The thing for you to do – the thing for you to do at that particular point is: "What other goal has been found on you? What other goal you've speculated with? Did you ever have a goals list in which you found a goal that you were very interested in? What item has been found on you in 2-12? Oh, all right, what was the first one? What was the one that stuck out in your mind mostly? Oh, all right. That was the one that stuck out in your mind mostly. Oh, oh, good. Good. Good. 'To caterwaul.' All right. That was an item in 2-12? Sounds like a goal."

"No, it was an item. It was a goal."

"All right. Well, let's find out. Is it an item? Is it a goal? You know that thing is a goal."

"Oh?"

Tone arm action, tone arm action, tone arm action. Blowdown, blowdown, blowdown, blowdown, blowdown. *Yeah-bluuu-oo-uuuuuuuuu-ooooo*, "I never noticed that before and it was very peculiar and so on and so on and so on and so on and so on, so on, so on, so on, so on." Tone arm rising, tone arm rising, tone arm rising, tone arm rising, rising. Doesn't go down again. All right, very good.

"Well, what about this thing? That an actual GPM? Is that one of your actual GPMs? That doesn't read. All right, one of your – it was an implant GPM? Oh? An implant GPM? Well, that reads. It's an implant GPM?"

"All right."

"Well, let's see where it's from. Helatrobos? Bear? Gorilla? Where's it from? How far back on the track? How many years? How many years ago do you suppose this was? Trillions? Trillions of trillions? Trillions of trillions of trillions? Trillions of trillions of trillions of trillions of trillions? It's trillions of trillions of trillions of trillions of trillions... It's long back, to hell with it."

"It's a long time ago, implant GPM, that's it."

"Oh, is that so? *Da-daa-dadaaa-dadaa*." Tone arm action, tone arm action – stuck.

"All right. Fine. Now, what other 2-12-2-12 item have you had found on you?" Get the idea?

Now, somebody who hasn't obligingly had some auditor digging up things for you to work with, you got a little bit harder job. Don't get the idea it's because he's been audited and found these items, that this is all very bad. This is a straighten up, don't you see, and the auditor's already done part of the job by finding them. You've got the additional job of trying to find something to dig up.

"Have you ever been unhappy in this lifetime? Oh, is that so? Yeah, what period was that? Huh, well, what were you unhappy about particularly?"

"Oh, well I was most unhappy about being married."

"Good. Let me see. Yes. All right. Very good. Part of a goal? All right. Good. Is it an actual RI?"

See what I'm talking about? "It's a lock on an implant reliable item?" See. "Or is it just something you were worried about? Well, unfortunately this has no foundation in fact in your case whatsoever. It's merely something you were worried about at the time" – implant, implant, tone arm, tone arm, tone arm, *bang! bang!* gone, gone.

"Ever so... Is that so? What do you know about that."

And, "I was all worried about it. I thought it was something fundamentally wrong with me."

"No, it isn't anything fundamentally wrong with you. It's just an idea you had. All right. So..." [laughter]

Finally there's no more tone arm action on this thing, you see. "You ever goofed up about anything else?" I don't care whether you speak elegantly or not. "Yeah, well, I used to worry all the time – I hate to tell you this, but I used to worry about all the time when I was a little boy – I used to worry about not going to the bathroom." "Oh, Freudian analysis. Ever been an-analyzed, you ever had any Freudian analysis? Ever had any Freudian analysis? Oh, you have, *ha-ha-ha*. Isn't that interesting. All right. What was found in this Freudian analysis? Oh, keeping girls' petticoats in your bureau drawer. All right. All right. Good. Keeping girls' petticoats in your bureau drawer. All right. Now, is that part of an actual goal? Part of an implant goal? Part of a this? Is it an actual RI? Is it..." See. You get the idea. "Oh, I'm sorry we've just found out that was part of your analyst's imagination." [laughter, laughs]

Now, look at what you're actually doing here. You know the parts of the mind. You've educated your pc, or your pc knows the parts of the mind, don't you see. And you're not in the dark as to what you're talking about. And you can straighten these things out and put his bank into some kind of a condition. What's absolutely fantastic is the bank goes back into condition again. It doesn't go back with total totality until it is completely run. But I mean there will be a trace of the stuff, the RI – the GPM that has been pulled out of place very often leaves some frayed edges where it has been pulled out of, don't you see, and so forth. But you straighten this kind of thing up. This guy's starting to feel pretty doggone classy. See, everything is starting to feel pretty good. Starting to look pretty good. Lot of fundamental errors and maybe some chronic illness he's had in this lifetime and other things of that particular character come up.

You start doing a case analysis, the pc's liable to – you are also liable to hook into this one. You're saying, "Is that an implant and so on and so on was that so and so on. This came up in your case and so on and so on." And you're going through all this and all of sudden the pc looks kind of round-eyed and says, "You know, I've got – I got something sitting in front of me here that says 'riding.' You know it's been there for an awful long time. That's – that's the – the pain that I get across the bridge of my nose. Right up here, 'riding.' 'Riding'?" It is, it's

'riding.' It's right here, across the bri... And you know that's what I've been trying to get audited for. I never realized it but it's right across the middle of my nose."

All right. "Riding." Just analyze it, see? What is it? Where is it? What is it doing? What's it part of? Get the idea? Just as sloppy and as crudely as you can do it, but rapidly and so forth.

Now, because that's a newly found item, not found by listing, you're in, of course, a little bit of trouble and your case analysis is suspended. But the test is, do you get tone arm action. Oh, you're going to get tone arm action like crazy. See, this is the kind of item that might have been found in 2-12 and relieved all kinds of symptoms, don't you see. But you're now going to get tone arm action. And you're just dumb if you do anything while that tone arm action is flying unless you've got a deadline on your session or something, because your tone arm will keep moving and your pc keep itsaing this thing and look at it and so forth. And finally say, "Well, there are probably two of these things. See. One is 'galloping,' you see. And – and I – I think that's – I think that's – I think I'm against galloping. But riding, I'm for riding but against galloping. It's all very confusing."

"All right. Well, where does 'galloping' belong. *Ada-da-da-da-da*. Does it belong in an implant GPM, does it belong in *da-da*, and so on. Is it an RI? Is it a lock on an RI? And so forth. And where does it belong on the track. And about how old is it?" You don't even have to date it, you know. But get some kind of an idea.

"Oh, that's way back on the track."

"Oh, yeah? That's right up here in present time. That's part of the present time GPM. What do you know about that? Very interesting. All right."

There – one of it in. The pc's go... saying – he's saying, "And I so and so on and so on and so on and I – I so on, and well, if that's an opposition terminal then no wonder it's locked up and it must be part of two different GPMs. We ought to really find the goal that this thing belongs with."

Ah-ah-ah-ah-ah-ah-ah-ah-ah-ah. You is being vacuum cleaner sucked in where angels shouldn't be treading.

You've already found something that didn't exist on his case before you were doing a case analysis. Now, don't be a dumb fool and find something else, too. One little error like this is permitted. He ran into it head-on, he cognited on the thing, he recognized the thing, he gave you wild tone arm action. He feels much better for having collided with the thing. Fine, let a dog lie. See. Let that dog roll over on his back in front of the fire now and snore. Because the right way to get that dog is to do the proper programing. That's to go up to the top of the bank and roll on back and you'll eventually run into "riding" and "galloping" and another two or three thousand equally fascinating items. Don't you see?

This is trying to short cut the auditing. So there's a point where analysis stops in that. But analysis is not, "Did you have an ARC break with an auditor because your so and so on."

Now, ARC breaks quite commonly will attend stuff that is out of position. See?

You're liable to find a pc ARC broken. But that tells you the elements are in error. Some misarrangement of the elements have taken place. An ARC break is symptom – is merely a symptom of misarranged elements. Somebody who doesn't want auditing now and doesn't really want to audit now and all of that sort of thing, some – he just – he's just got his GPMs wrapped up, that's all. See? Something – he got GPM five – did – not even in an auditing session, don't you see – he got GPM five moved up to position where the two should be and two shoved out and moved back to where ten should be, don't you see. And the bank scrambled up. And he's got stuff pulled out of line and that sort of thing. That's why he doesn't want to audit and he doesn't want to be audited and he doesn't – then he feels sick and that's also why he had lumbosis when he was two.

You see, Scientology is so intimate to this material that it's, of course, easiest to blame it. The thing that gets blamed right before Scientology is something that's more intimate to the session than Scientology and that's the auditor. You notice it's always the auditor that gets blamed. Well, after the auditor gets blamed, why, then they blame the subject, you see. Well, it's all in the same grade. The guy has got some misarrangement that is causing bypassed charge that's causing an ARC break and that's all there is to that.

You let somebody drift off in that kind of a condition, you're quite culpable as an auditor. And if you know your zones – this big zone of how you put a bank back together again, it just won't happen, see. Now, I could give you L4 and you can assess L4 and you can tick it off and you found a misarranged RI and so forth and it's all very cute and all very mechanical but my contempt, man – you should know where those things are. What are you – what are you – what are you doing with L4? Well, that's – just can call a few things to your mind. That's the best it can do, don't you see? Because there are a lot of other things that can be wrong. You can't put everything – well, do you realize that thing would have to be two or three hundred lines long to get every possible combination?

I'll give you an idea. You're just now – you're doing items and you seem to be in an ARC break on account of items. Well, why are you worrying about anything else but items for a little while? See, you haven't been doing goals or goals lists. Everything's been going along smoothly and you all of a sudden have a – have some kind of a mess-up occurring on the subject of items. Well, there's only a few things that could have happened. You could have found a wrong item or you could have skipped an item or two or you see, you could have skipped into another bank and found an item from another bank and you could have missed in two or three fashions. All of which you would understand if you knew the arrangements and mechanics of the mind, you see.

So, you just say well, what could happen to items. Well, it's one, two, three, four, you see, of items. One, two, three, four and we had item one and we opposed it with item four and therefore left items two and three unfound. And the bypassed charge must be there, don't you see? And it doesn't require a seven foot thick textbook or lists or something to put this home. It's just a certain few things can be wrong, you see. Or we found item one, two, three and we never found item four, but we found an item over here in another GPM, to oppose three and therefore this guy's feeling terrible because we've got two GPMs we're pulling together. See, that's visual, visual recognition, see? They're all visuals. They got spatial relationships and designations of this particular character and there's no sense in not knowing them. Because

they're elementary. They're only a few of them. There are a lot of errors that can accumulate from these few little elements, you see?

So what you doing with a long-screed ARC break assessment, don't you see? There's no substitute for being able to say "Well, so and so on." Well, you flunk it yourself. Well, go ahead and get a long list and see if you run into something accidentally. What things can happen in a session? Well, you should be able to call a session ARC break stuff out, right this minute, bang, just like that, without looking at a sheet. Just looking at your meter, saying, "Did I cut your communication? Reject some affinity? Reject some reality? What's happened here? Do you think I've falsified something?" Whatever – whatever could have happened, you see. "Did you think you knew something that I wouldn't take or..." You could run down any element there is.

The benefit of this is you know what just happened just now in the session. You know what happened in the session. Well, I don't know, why blind yourself to knowing what just happened in the session, you see. There's – this might have struck the pc only in two or three different ways and therefore you settle the ARC break just *bang! bang! bang!* you see. Ask three questions and so on and so on. It's obviously that. That's it and bang.

If it doesn't settle like that, you say it must be something more fundamental – must be something more fundamental. But it's germane to what you're doing. Did you kick in another GPM? Did he take a look at another bank? Is there an engram mixed up with all this, he's run into? Something of this character.

Now, there's some excuse for running a longer list. Some excuse because the thing is out of your hand. But nine times out of ten, you just know right now on an ARC break. It's quite obvious to you what it is. So you ask questions – you don't tell the pc what it is. You ask questions related to what it is and see what reads on the meter. Thing reads on the meter, bang! Well, that must be the subject of the ARC break. Let him tell you all about it and that's the end of the ARC break, see.

Fruitiest source of ARC breaks on lists, of course, is incomplete lists. Or bypassing the character's item on the list and – while nulling. If you're nulling and the pc ARC breaks, you know you must have passed his item. It's as elementary as that. And if you're listing and the pc ARC breaks and you're still getting action here of one kind or another it's obvious that the list is incomplete or the source you're listing from is wrong. It's one of the two things. So that's the only two things you verify when a pc ARC breaks under those conditions. You learn these things quite rapidly. There are only a few things that can go wrong. That's all I'm trying to teach you. There's really – there's so few that there's really not much excuse not to know what these elements are and what they combine as, see?

Now, as far as running cases are concerned, we haven't gotten into this very long. I'm just trying to still give you a viewpoint with regard to R4. I want to read you very rapidly here, as an addendum to this lecture and not actually as part of this lecture this, and I'm going to read this very rapidly to you just to give you a good grip on the situation. This is a program, this is a program for a case. This is a standard program for a case.

In one: Do a complete slow case analysis using all ARC break lists and general questions and clean them all up one by one and anything the pc brings up in the way of items and

so forth and be very thorough. Get that all cleaned up. Got the idea? The case analysis I've been talking to you about, you do on the case extensively. See, before you do anything else.

Number two: Put in the big mid ruds by fast check on listing, items, Routine 3, goals, on your pc. That's fast check BMRs on listing, items, Routine 3 and goals. Put BMRs in on listing, on items, on Routine 3 and on goals.

Third step: Fast check big mid ruds on any goal the pc has had that he was given or thought was his.

Now, you've already done some case analysis on these goals, don't you see? You've already got them padded back into place. Everything is fine. But there still is some residue left there. Now, that pays particular attention to favorite goals or... first priority is wrong goals. Has this person had a wrong goal run on them, see? Well, it was all right to put it back in place in case analysis, but if this person's ever had a wrong goal run on them that you found in c... in that analysis form. See you make a note of these things on your auditor's report, particularly a wrong goal. That's the root, see?

Number three: You uncork the fast check big mid ruds on that wrong goal. Now, you can go with all the eighteen buttons of a Prepcheck, all by fast check, on that wrong goal. You understand? You can go the whole lot. And if you – pc's getting lots of tone arm action out of it, you'd be very foolish – and you notice now the big mid ruds are the early part of the Prepchecks and that's so – one of the – one of the values of this is so you don't have to memorize two lists – but that's so that if you're going red-hot on your early part of those Prepcheck buttons, why, you can continue on through the eighteen buttons. But if you're going slow freight, not much TA, you can unload. In other words, you can just stop this Prepcheck because it's not getting any tone arm action so it can't possibly be doing anybody any good, see. All right, that's to get rid of these big goofs – number three.

Number four: And this is where you really start that – these others are just preparatory steps – you list the question "What is your present time GPM?" is the auditing question. And you complete it to a *smoooooth* needle with no faintest ticks or flicks or falls seen on listing. Test question, sure it's clean, get in big mid ruds on list, fast check and then null the list and you'll probably find the pc's goal sitting on that list. Or you'll see the goal next to the PT goal sitting on that list. You probably will see the pc's present time GPM sitting on that list. You hope. If it isn't there, extend that list. If you've nulled it and can't find it, extend the list. Pc ARC breaks, you've bypassed it. Open-shut case. Got that?

Number five: Check out the goal found. Is it an actual GPM, implant and so on. In other words do a good solid analysis on this thing. Be awful sure of this thing. And do some big mid ruds on it. Get it to read but beautifully, see. And then start in at the top, it's usually truncated. You find the terminal, the first terminal, on all other banks you find the oppterm but on the first bank you find the terminal on the truncated bank because it's easier to do. And you just do these little tiny short lists.

And the first thing that you can get to read back to the pc, you see, the first thing that falls you can re... read back to the pc, you read back to the pc and you give him your – those items. And you just run them on down, *pocketa-pocketa-pocketa-pocketa-pocketa-pocketa-pocketa*. And you get to the bottom of that thing. Do a goal oppose list by the usual rules of

listing. Get your next goal and do the same and the next goal and do the same and whenever you run into trouble do a full case analysis to find out wrong items, wrong goals *arrarara-rara*.

That's the way you ought to be tackling this cat right at the present moment. That's what you ought to be doing in order to get you somewhere. And that for my money is the very best method of doing so. To cut in late and do goal opposes up the channel just because the pc couldn't do this list, actually is a secondary action. Some pc has had a big goal of some kind or another that has been run that wasn't his actual GPM and you do have your hands on that goal. You possibly could do a goal oppose up there. But the best method by far is simply list for the present time GPM. That's the best method by far. Got it?

The other is fraught with many horrors and terrors. I know, I've been over the road myself. It's wild. Trying to list GPMs to GPMs that are all full of RIs. Wild, man, wild. But oddly enough your pc very often will give you the present time GPM, just like that, and it checks out via the actual goal and all is well. What if you checked it out and found an implant GPM? If you can run implants, well, run it as an implant. Anything to get charge off the case.

And there's programing – there's programing. The way she is did. There is a good, fast, rapid review of R4M2, the way it sits in its most optimum condition right at this moment. And that is as workable, man, as can be. Man, that really runs. It's the easiest auditing you ever did in your life until you go over Niagara Falls and put your foot in it and you've struck an overcharged area and you find the pc's actual GPM, only it's a misworded implant GPM which comes from this, until you really analyze it a little closer and then you find out that it was an actual GPM after all what – misworded, and then you get the miswording of that and turns out to – it really was an implant GPM. You're in for a picnic at that particular point. So between now and the time when you go to run this, learn all the elements there are in one of these cases. Learn what they look like. Learn how to handle them. Learn how to juggle them and you'll never really – really you've got it made, you got it made.

Now, your morale was very, very bad. I hope your morale is better. I say your morale is bad. It – your morale is actually – that's a joke – your morale is – holds up pretty well. I sympathize with you on many quarters and so forth. You're going into the unknown at a high flight and it's pretty tough sometimes and it looks very nerve racking. You don't quite know what's ahead. You don't quite know what it all consists of. Basically you don't know what you're doing wrong and so forth. Actually, you're being far more complicated than it warrants. It breaks down to a rather elementary proposition all the way down the line but then you have to find that out, See.

And what you're moving toward is not so much a bunch of data which is handed to you on a silver platter, but your own reality on the actual simplicities that have been discovered and found workable. And when you arrive at those one after the other, there will be nobody cockier than you. And when you pick up your coffee cup, why, the Rock of Gibraltar will look nervous compared to it.

Thank you.

THREE ZONES OF AUDITING

A lecture given on 5 November 1963

Vas da date?

Audience: November the 5th.

Five Nov. – a Russian month. Five Nov. AD 13, Saint Hill Special Briefing Course.

Now, you're facing a cataclysm in auditing – a cataclysm. You haven't recognized fully that *you can be found out!* Not as a pc, but as an auditor. We've gone through the stages of finding out pcs; now we can always find out the auditor.

The tone arm. The motion of the tone arm finds you out. And if you are still in a state of wondering what it is wrong with the pc that you're not getting tone arm action, then you have already been found out. Because an auditor can get tone arm action at will. An accomplished auditor can get tone arm action at will.

Tone arm action has to be *prevented*. There are numerous ways this can be prevented. Numerous ways. There are at least ten or twelve ways per auditor. Now, if you multiply the number of auditors by ten or twelve, you will possibly have some approximation of the number of ways that tone arm action can be prevented. Because it's prevented by additive complications and a failure to recognize basics. A failure to recognize basics.

Today there are three zones of auditing. Three zones, not of just auditing, but three zones of applied Scientology. One is basic auditing. Two is case analysis. And three is R4. Now, that means – that means, then, that there are three zones of expertness and you should recognize these as separate and distinct areas of performance. It's, in driving a car: can you steer, can you handle a gearshift, and can you start, stop, and run the motor via the accelerator? I mean, there are these three separate areas of action.

Now, this tends to reduce the amount of complication that you're confronted with. Because there's many an auditor will be doing R4 and falling all over himself, but doing it perfectly: writing down the items perfectly on lists with a calligraphy that is beyond reproach, who is reading his meter down to the finest point, who knows every rule, who knows every law connected with all goals finding, lists and item finding – knows it cold – and who somehow or another will go *splat!* And the pc won't make it and so forth.

Because there remain two zones: basic auditing and case analysis. And he could do the techniques and processes of R4 with the most surpassing perfection without once colliding

with a win – not even accidentally. His basic auditing could be out or his case analysis could be out. He can do all the actions; he has no ability whatsoever to visualize a bank. Two goals in juxtaposition, to him means nothing. It means it's a thought in advance of another thought or it means something. He's playing mumbletypeg in the dark and getting his knuckles cut to ribbons. Because he doesn't know what's an engram and what's an implant and he doesn't know this and doesn't know that. And he just hasn't got his paws on these items at all.

He can do the technique perfectly, you see. That – he can do that perfectly, but the other – *bluaah!* What's he getting with it? Well, he'll get all sorts of balderdash for one thing or another. He'll do a perfect list and come out perfectly by the rules and he finds a goal "to be, do, have and find catfish." Well, bunk, brother! There was never such a goal ever invented anyplace by anybody! And he has found this by opposing "to dance." It just doesn't make any sense. But because he doesn't know what sense it's supposed to make, he then buys it lock, stock and barrel.

You see, the mechanical actions... When I'm auditing these days, I actually do just about the most mechanical job of auditing you ever cared to watch. It's just *pocketa-pocketa-pocketa-pocketa-pock*. Totally mechanical. Pc says, "waterspouts in the firebox" – that's all right with me, you see. I'll write it down. Pc says, "to spit," and then says, "to orangicate," and "to jump over the moon," and "to wear hip boots," and says, "to spit" again, I'll just write down "to spit," because that's what the pc said at that particular time, you understand? And then says, "to catfish," and "to be a tiger" and so forth, and "to spit" – I'll just write down "to spit" again, because the pc said it, you understand?

All right. Now, he's running along and as long as he runs I don't pay any attention. I'm just there and I read the meter, and if something falls, I mark it "fall"; if it blows down, I mark it "blowdown"; and if it's there it's there; and if it isn't there... When I start nulling, if it falls, I mark it as a "fall"; and if I find two falls on the list or two RRs or two anythings (except a couple of ticks), I just tell the pc to continue the list, I don't care what the pc's saying and so on. The pc says, "Oh, well, that 'to spit,' that's my goal," and so forth.

And I say, "All right, thank you, I'll check it out here. To spit." I'd say, "well, it doesn't read yet. Let's get some more charge off and see where we sit here. Now, here's your auditing question..." Just mechanical, you see. You drop a nickel in the player piano, man, and it grinds off the roller. You get the idea?

Now, that phase comes to end at one of two points. Either everything has gone off according to schedule and I'm sitting there looking at a goal or whatever it is, or it hasn't. And I've got a pc who's looking ragged and red-eyed and who's getting awful droopy and so forth. And at this point I become a case analyst. See? You can't even hear the gears click, but I've moved over into an entirely different department of auditing. New department. New sign on the door: "LRH, Case Consultation." I don't quite change my collar and hat, but I think if you were watching it you would see almost that amount of change occur.

Pc's been running things up to now and he fell on his head. See, I'm perfectly willing the pc go on and tell me anything. See, as long as it fits up and so forth. But now this thing has run into the wrong pocket and the thing has gone awry and I've got a goofed-up pc, and I've got

things that are a bit not running right. See, it isn't all by perfection. Or simply the action – the mechanical action of finding something has been concluded, see?

See, if something went wrong, I consider the mechanical side of the picture is concluded. That's it. See? Just like you're coaching somebody, "That's it." Well, that's all with the mechanics, boy. You have just lost your amanuensis and you have just inherited a case analyst, see?

All right. The action either completed its cycle and finished, or it went wrong and couldn't complete its cycle. So it's quick like a bunny, out with the drawer, off with the robot auditor and on with the other hat, see? Now. Now. All right. Uh-huh! Now – now we're in the case analysis department. "Why did your grandfather have to marry the girl?" You see? We're going to get down to basics here.

Now, the data I'm using now is an entirely different set of data. It's how do banks go together? Does the goal "to be, do, have and find catfish" oppose "to dance"? That's just me, see; I asked that question. I look at this thing that's been found here, see, "to be, do and have catfish," you see, "and find catfish," you see. Does this oppose "to dance"? "Nope," I say, and I'm afraid at that point the pc could persuade, plead, do a mammy act down on his knees and would find me adamant. I would let him itsa all of his reasons – as long as I was getting tone arm action. But that's as far as I would go, because that's over in the field of basic auditing, which never completely deserts you and which we'll go into in a minute.

But he says, "This 'to be, do and have, and find catfish' was originally found in Los Angeles by one of the best squirrels there. And you see that it rocket reads." And it wouldn't matter much. It wouldn't matter much. I'd let him tell me anything he knew about it as long as I was getting tone arm action. And after he got all through telling me all about it – because he's now gotten enough charge off so that maybe my case analysis is a little more accurate – I'd just go through my act and I find out what's wrong here, because I know something is wrong.

Now, it isn't a matter of "Is this list complete?" or "Isn't this list complete?" because I'm not now being the listing robot, see. I'm being the case analyst. And I want to know *how* come this list is misbehaving! That's what I want to know. That's the first thing I want to know. What's it coming from? Is it something wrong here? Has the pc not been answering the auditing question? I don't count on an ARC break. You don't become a case analyst just because you have an ARC break and only because you have an ARC break. No, no, no. We want to know "How does this bank add up? Which GPM has swapped ends with what GPM? How has the pc managed to get himself into this mess now?" You get the idea? And I'm going to find the answer.

Well, there's a dozen potential answers – fortunately, very few more than that – and I'm going to find which one of these things apply and I'm going to straighten it out. And after I got it all beautifully straightened out, we find out, in this particular instance, that it was very, very simple: The pc has been guessing "What goal harmonics on the goal before the goal which we have just been listing?" That was what the pc was listing, you see? "What goal is an upper harmonic of the goal we had before the goal," when he's supposed to be doing "Who or what would 'to dance' oppose?" See, that's what he's supposed to be asking, see. Or the pc is saying,

"What problem would 'to dance' resolve?" See, there's something goofy going on here and I'm going to find out what it is, or I'm going to find out what bank misalignment.

When we did "to dance," in all innocence – because I take it at any given instant that having gotten more charge off, our analysis will be more accurate than previous analyses. So I never count on any analysis carrying forward in time.

No analysis is valid after the date of the analysis. Why? Because the accuracy of an analysis depends upon the amount of charge taken off the case. So at any future date, if you can audit at all, you have taken more charge off the case and so you'll get a more accurate analysis.

All analyses are subject to inaccuracy by reason of charge! Therefore, tone arm action in the interval, having removed charge from this particular area, will now make it possible for you to get a more accurate analysis. Any analysis you do is succeeded by a more accurate analysis until there isn't anything there to analyze. You got it? That's the only time when you never reanalyze or requestion anything.

On Tuesday – on Tuesday, we have found out, *absolutely! equivocably!* with exclamation points! with rocket reads! with a pc sell! with a total auditor agreement! with everything just flags going up in all directions! you see, small Guy Fawkes fireworks coming out of the E-Meter – every sign points to the fact that "to dance" is an actual GPM!

Yeah, but that was Tuesday. What will it do on Thursday? We are now analyzing a case on Thursday. Well, then, my analysis is never based on the *comfortable* feeling that Tuesday I had a right answer. At any given instant, on any analysis, it is only the factors present now which are analyzed. That's the only safe way to do an analysis.

You can make some of the most *colossal* mistakes. Let's say you're going up the bank, trying to find the PT GPM and you found the goal "to play golf" and you marked that down very carefully as the third GPM. You're a nut if you just keep on believing from here on out that when you come back down the bank, having removed two GPMs off the case, you're going to find "to play golf." Probably hasn't anything to do with it. See? It's probably a lock on an RI in the third GPM, "to recreate." Got the idea? But at that time, when you first were going up the bank, you checked it over: "Is this an actual GPM?" *Brroow!* You know, fireworks, rocket reads, everything! Oh, the pc – cognite, cognite! Oh, everything terrific, you see. Blowdowns, oh, marvelous!

It doesn't cut any ice on Thursday. Because Thursday is two more days of charge off the case, don't you see? So you're always approaching a more accurate potential analysis, right up to the moment that you attain OT. You're going to be horrified. You're going to run some goals perfectly correctly, absolutely, every item out of the thing and yet a few months from now when you're going – somebody's going over this case, they're going to find out that half the items were missed and three-quarters of them were wrong. Somehow or another you got by, however, and so forth. Well, that's the case analysis with the case that far upgraded, don't you see? So of course the analysis I more accurate.

Analysis is not dependent upon the auditor's ability to read an E-Meter. It is dependent upon the pc's ability to itsa. And therefore it's going to shift. The fond beliefs of Tuesday are

where most case analyses come apart at the seams. Because on Thursday, with two days of charge off, you're liable to get some different answers that make a lot more sense. You understand?

You never take a case analysis for granted. These things are always taken conditionally. Always conditionally. An auditor needs a nice, full saltshaker sitting around under the corner of his E-Meter, you see, so he can always take everything with a grain of salt.

A case analyst is a skeptic. But his skepticism must not be so high as to undermine the pc's confidence. So this, again, is another frame of mind. An entirely different frame of mind. Your robot frame of mind: Well, the guy says, "I spit" and so forth, and he puts that down, and that's a goal and oh my, you got another one and that's another goal and he puts it down, "to spit" again and so on. And you – your frame of mind is, "Well, he said it, so we write it down. And the meter said this, so we write it down and..." There's nothing going on here except that's what you're doing, you see? You can sit and dream about the weather, as far as that's concerned. There's no mental strain here of any kind whatsoever, see. That's an attitude. That's the attitude of the auditor running the process, you see?

Now we shift the hat. We get a different attitude. Not a challenging, invalidating attitude with regard to the pc, but an attitude of – which is best attended by the song, "It may be so, I really don't know, your story sounds..." you know. This – it's not really a skeptical attitude, but it's the attitude of somebody listening to the tales of several travelers who have just come back from a far land they have not been to with different stories.

It's not a buying attitude, it's not any kind of an attitude. "Well, that's what it is, so we will try that one on," see? "Well, this is the best we can arrive at, so this is what we will use to proceed with – warily. Expecting all trucks to come off the rails at any given instant." See? We're proceeding warily under this.

The case analysis is always as good as it is at the time it is done. And is no better than that. And there's no reason to get misemotional about it just because on Thursday you got different answers. I've seen auditors go out and contemplate suicide, you see, just on this basis. "But on – but on *Tuesday* – but on *Tuesday* it was an actual GPM, and – and – and so forth. And it read, and everything ran, and everything ran along beautifully on *Tuesday*. And – and now I find out it's just a lock, not even an RI; it's a *lock* on an RI. And *ohhh, deeeear, ohhh!*"

Well, there's no reason to be like that about it, because the reality of the situation is, is that Thursday, of course, with more charge off, is going to give you a better answer. So you can always look for a better answer. All answers are taken conditionally. And everything you know about a bank and about a case and about how the thing ought to stack up is used. There's no stops. It isn't a basis of, "Well, I can't make the pc wrong by saying this, 'to be, do and find catfish' doesn't sound to me like an actual GPM. You mustn't say something like that, you see, because that would be invalidative of the pc. No, the thing to do is accept it and let the pc run out of RR in the next few minutes of play." Oh, yes? Yes? Like nonsense it is, you see.

You don't want to speak invalidatively. There's a trick of doing this. I'll show you an invalidation. The pc says, "You know, I – my goal – my goal is really 'to be, do and find – have and find catfish,' and that's – that's my goal."

And you say, "Oh, yeah? All right. Okay. Okay. You want me to check that out? All right. To be, do, have and find catfish. To be, do, have and find catfish. I'm sorry, that doesn't read right now." That's not an invalidation.

This is invalidation – this is invalidation:

The pc says, "My goal is 'to be, do, have and find catfish.'"

"Oh? Mm-hm. To run. To walk."

Say something else to the meter rather than what the pc said and you're in trouble right now. I'll give you an idea. The pc says, "There's some more suppresses on this" – this doesn't just apply to lists, see – "There's some more suppresses on this."

"Okay. On so-and-so, has anything been invalidated?"

"Yes, goddamnit. What you just said has been... Me! I'm invalidated." You know, ARC break, here we go, see? That's a direct invalidation, because it's basically a disagreement, don't you see? You've gone through all the actions of a disagreement. So you don't care what the pc says, you don't immediately throw it in his teeth and say, "Under no circumstances is there such a goal as 'to be, do and have – find catfish,'" without even checking it, and start answering. You know, well, check it. The pc wants it checked, check it! No skin off anybody's nose – it'll read or it won't.

But you got this on the list – "to be, do, have and find catfish," – and that's supposed to be the last item on the list, and this is supposed to be what is opposed by "to dance." Not in your bank, not in anybody's bank. It ain't never happened, and it never going to happen.

The kind of a goal you'll get... It's very hard to imagine what it'll be before you eventually see it and sometimes you get beautifully surprised. But you have an idea already of the kind of goal you're looking for. What would "to dance" – what goal would "to dance" oppose? Well, probably "to be sour," you know, to be something. It'll be some different type of action, you see, "to be funereal," you know, "to drag," you know, "to sag," you know, or something like this. It'll be some kind of funereal goal. Sometimes they're very clever. Sometimes they're very tricky and you can miss them. And they – you have to think about them for a moment, and all of a sudden you see that it would. But it definitely would oppose it. It *definitely* would oppose it. Not resolve it; it oppose it!

Bang! Goals are in *opposition*. It's white today on this bank, and it's black tomorrow on that bank. You get the idea? I mean, *bang! bang!* Direct oppositions. They make a dichotomy, you see?

"To be happy" is followed by "to be sad," and it's no more complicated than that, you see? So you can figure yourself to death in case analysis and so forth. But you should have a general idea. You should have a general idea about what you're going to get there. And sometimes you're very agreeably surprised – "to dance" comes out as "to be a funeral director." See, something like this, you know? And it's just a little bit offbeat, and then sometimes it takes you a little bit by surprise. And you could beat yourself to death by not accepting it, and so forth. It is or it isn't. But because you know case analysis, you know what you're looking at.

Now, if you got a goal like that, however, "to be, do and have catfish," as "to dance" oppose – ahh! If you just got through running "to dance," and it didn't run out of RR, it obviously was the goal. There's no doubt about that. But there's something messed up here someplace and you better find out what it is. Maybe you overran the bottom of the goal. Maybe you got items in that goal from something else. Maybe the analysis of the goal. Or the goal looks all right, however; it doesn't seem to be bad off. So it seems to be – have the right line plot and everything, so... You're not being critical in this particular line because it looks all right. So you finally – you decide, well, "to dance" – there's nothing wrong with that as the source to list from. That would be the first thing that would give you some wild goal like this as the only goal you could get on the list, you see. "To be, do and have catfish," see.

So there's nothing wrong with the source you're listing from, it looks all right, it checked out, you've run it and so forth. When you're just doing goal opposes, trying to get to present time and so forth, you're running it blind because you really never have a second check of running it. Final check of a goal is "Will it run?" not "Will it behave on the meter?" see, but "Will it run? Do you get a line plot off of it?" That's the final test of a valid GPM.

Now, then you must assume other things. Amongst those is the pc might have been out of session while he was listing it, might be an ARC break involved here that you hadn't suspected; you throw those things aside or accept them. Or the pc wasn't answering the auditing question or something of the sort.

So we go into some kind of a dissertation with the pc, finally decide the pc couldn't have been answering the auditing question. There's something wrong here. So you ask, "Exactly what were you doing as you were listing this list?" and so forth.

And you finally get, "Well, I was trying to list the harmonic on the list which just came before this, and so forth. And I was – I knew what it could be, because, you see, on – on just before 'to dance' – 'to dance,' you see, we had 'to be sad' and – and so forth. So obviously it's something about being leisurely, or – or something, and that would be what it..."

All right. Have you found the answer? Well, you'll find out that when things are wrong, your tone arm is wrong. Always. You're not getting action on the tone arm; it's stuck high or it's messed up in some way, but basically you're not getting tone arm action. When you don't get tone arm action you either have just run... if you're running, why, the tone arm action depends on getting the next item. But this thing – this tone arm action is pretty extreme and you've made an error of some kind or another. Well, when you get that straightened out, that tone arm action will correct. Soon as you get your tone arm action corrected and looking a little bit better and you got the answer to what this is all about and so forth, you got the answer.

Now, at that moment you *remove* your hat as a case analyst and you put it in the drawer and you take out your hat as a mechanical auditor and you put it on, and you say, "This is the auditing question. *This, this* is the auditing question. The auditing question is: What goal would 'to dance' oppose? Now have you got that? You know we went a little bit astray just a moment ago."

The pc is saying, "*Rrrraah, rrrraah.*"

"A little astray, you know, just a moment ago, not answering the auditing question. So let's make sure we answer this auditing question real good, and so on. You're doing fine, all right, but let's get the auditing question answered now. Now, what goal would 'to dance' oppose? All right. *Th-th-th-that, th-th-th-that, th-th-th-that, that, that,*" and you get the list. Go through all the rules and – just mechanical – and you come up smiling bright.

That's all there is to it. There's two hats and one of them is always in the drawer.

The speed with which you shift these hats is sometimes rather bewildering. But it's actually a hat shift. So it isn't something that you should get all tangled up about and get your feet all wound up in the rope with. Because in actual fact you are never the mechanical listing auditor and the case analyst at the same time. And you are never the mechanical auditor when there's something wrong with the case. You can't do the job, so you obviously are a case analyst. And after the case is straightened out, there is no more need for case analysis. That's another point you should keep in mind. If there's nothing to analyze, don't analyze. If everything's going along "smoothly" now, why, you go along "smoothly" back to your mechanical auditor hat, see. Let's not start making trouble for the pc as a case analyst. Let's not start showing off.

You've found the answer; you've restored the case; the pc is cheerful; the tone arm is now in a reasonable situation; life, it looks much brighter to one and all. Well, this is the point where you should take off the case analyst badge – hat, and put it in the drawer and put back on the mechanical auditor hat, *Da-da-da-da, de-de-de-de-da, de-de-de-de-da, de-de-de-de-da,* just all sweetness and light. And you're not saying, "Is that an actual GPM? Are you sure you're listing right, now... You... Well, I wonder if that is... So on and so on. You're doing *uvruh-rrhur-urh...*" No, no, no, it's just all sweetness and light, *ta-da-da-da*. The pc says, "Oranges are black"; you say, "Okay, thank you, good, fine." Anything he says – "All right." Got the idea?

Well, so that takes down your complications to a considerable extent – to compartment your actions, see. If you try to run both of these actions at the same time you'll go mad. You'll be under such tension that you will develop GPMs with it. [laughter, laughs]

Now, there's one hat which you wear all the time. All the time, all the time, all the time. Even though you're shifting these other two hats, you've got another hat on the back of your head. And that is the basic auditing hat. And if you can't do the basic auditing hat, then it doesn't matter how brilliant you are as a case analyst.

It doesn't matter how marvelously mechanical you are – and believe me, it's marvelous to be that mechanical, you know, for just your R4 hat. It takes a lot of skill just to sit back there and just do nothing but "So, the sun is shining and everything is fine."

The pc says, "There are fire engines in the beauty shop," and you write down "There are fire engines in the beauty shop," go to hell, we don't care. Everything's fine, but your basic auditor hat could be wrong and prevent you from doing that.

If your basic auditor hat is wrong, *both* of these hats go wrong no matter how well skilled you are in both of them. You could be a case analyst with exclamation points halfway down the wall. You could know R4 backwards and upside down, count the name, rank and serial number of every bulletin which ever carried a listing rule on it and so forth, and be able

So the woof and warp of basic auditing can get *terribly* complicated on this basis – on this basis, this fundamental: You ask most auditors, "What are you doing?" they will tell you what they were doing. But if you asked them this question: "At that point in the session, what happened?" they will inevitably tell you, "I did this, I did that, I did something else." They're more likely to tell you, "I so-and-so and so-and-so." They're not telling you what happened; they're telling you what they did. That isn't what happened. Because all basic auditing actions are coordinated with the pc. An auditor may be just going through some mechanical motions of some kind or another, but he is still handling another thetan and a full bank. And what happened in the session combines what the pc did, what the bank did and what the auditor did and what read on the meter. And there's four elements that comprise what happened.

Now, this is asking you to extend your perimeter of permeation. When you are so sucked back to your chest that you can't see beyond the other edge of your E-Meter, the chances are, you aren't going to be able to do the TRs either. But you're handling a pc and you're handling a bank and you're handling a meter – in addition to your own actions! And frankly, your own actions in a session are completely unimportant.

Ninety percent of a student's worry is about his own actions in the session. How did he hold his little finger of his right hand while he asked the auditing question? And did he have the right vocal intonation when he asked the auditing question? Was his diction absolutely proper when he said, "Thank-*gulp*-you!"

That's the most wasted show in the world. It has no audience. There's no audience, there's no applause, there are no observers. The most unseen character in the world is an auditor in session. He actually, unless he's a born exhibitionist, is about as visible – about as visible as a drop of water in a running stream.

It isn't that he isn't there, it's just that he isn't visible. He's an almost perfect example of a thetan that isn't packing mass. And if he understands that his actions in a session are not the important actions of a session at all... They're not the important actions of a session. The important actions of the session are the performance of the pc, the pc's bank and the meter. And the auditor's actions are completely unimportant. Except where they get in the road and fail to promote the actions of the pc, the pc's bank and the E-Meter.

So an auditor consistently worrying about his own actions and what he's supposed to do right and what he's done wrong in a session... I'm learning some of this from critiques people are making of their own auditing. Yeah, that's right. They're all critiques of their own auditing. I couldn't care less. They don't realize that I have yet to receive a proper report of an analysis of a session given on a tape. I have yet to receive a proper report. I'm still waiting for one to come in. There are some that are almost proper, in spots. But they all – most of them concern what the auditor did. *Who cares?* Do you realize the auditor is not going to get Clear on his own actions in a session?

Now, this is impressed on you by your Instructors, by the fact they do TRs – by your coaches – you're supposed to be able to do this, do that and the other thing. But a little study of this sort of thing goes long, long ways.

An auditor's actions can be anything they care to be as long as they are not destructive of the continuity of the session. An auditor, actually, runs mostly on a lack of action. See, he

doesn't have to do this and do that and do the other thing, and not do this and not do that and not do the other thing. That's a bunch of balderdash.

Somebody's orienting his auditing on the subject of "I should not" and "I should," and "I should." I-I-I-I – Oh – wha... wait a minute, wait a minute! This is an auditing session and that's a third dynamic activity. The auditor's merely running it.

Now, it's only when the auditor starts putting his feet on the desk, and getting the shoes in the pc's face that we run into the not-do's. Or it's only when the auditor sits there tongue-tied and the pc's going into a big ARC break and the auditor's saying, "Well, let's see, the right way to it'sa is to... Heh-heh." You know, you ought to be in there pitching. What the – what – what cooked here? What happened, see? He apparently is not adding anything into the session; he's not getting anything done in the session; he's not directing the session; he's not getting the session running in any particular direction, so that's an absence of auditor.

Now, the pc ARC breaks and the auditor sits there and says, "Oh, it's perfectly reasonable. I have goofed, so therefore it's perfectly reasonable." You know, a lot of pcs been knocked in the head with this. In fact, I know of one auditor (this, actually, is not fully the story of it but just in passing) saw everything the pc was saying so reasonable... The pc was already – for other reasons having nothing to do with the auditing – on the way out. The curtains were ringing down, the between-lives areas were yawning, and the auditor, however, did have a last-minute chance in order to make a grab back, see. The pc ARC broke over a period of days, actually, and the auditor sat there and said that everything the pc was saying was reasonable and so never tried to cure the ARC break. Well, the pc died. Sad story. But I wish to drive it home. That happens very rarely, but this isolated incident did happen, purely and for that exact and only reason!

The auditor knew that everything the pc was saying was reasonable. The auditor did not know how to audit well, the auditor did not know how to read a meter, the auditor did not... You get the story here, you see? So therefore, the auditor sat and agreed that this was all true and a pc never ARC breaks for those reasons. A pc ARC breaks because of uncompleted cycles of action, bypassed charge. And when that's kicked into view, the pc ARC breaks and his attention fixates on the auditor.

Now, a session ARC break is where the auditor has gorgeously goofed, and has yanked the pc's attention with violence off of some charged object, thus not completing the ARC – the cycle of action of the pc's inspection. And so this causes a collapse which is very painful to the pc and the pc will take it out on the auditor. But in actual fact, an eradication of that sudden yank of attention is what is needful to cure this ARC break.

So the auditor who gets in a reasonable frame of mind about his auditing, an auditor who gets in a reasonable frame of mind about his ARC breaks, or gets unreasonable and starts protesting against it, simply doesn't understand the mechanism of an ARC break. His auditing really had very little to do with it – very little to do with it, except where the basics of auditing are violently followed. The pc is saying, "I've got a – I've got a large cat here on the table." And the auditor says, "Well, I'm not going into that now. Get that nasty cat off the table!" you see? That's liable to produce shock. But why? Not really because of what the auditor said, but because the pc's attention was yanked suddenly off the cat, the cat collapsed on it and you had

bypassed charge right there, right then. And then the auditor did nothing to restore the attention and get rid of – locate the bypassed charge. Do you understand?

Auditors running R4 may go on for days, weeks even, with a big section of bypassed charge and the pc nattery and ARC broken. The auditor's saying all the time, "This is a nattery and ARC broken pc." No. That is an auditor who doesn't know his basic business. He just doesn't know his business. Had nothing to do – even case analysis. He just doesn't know his business! ARC broke pc – something big wrong. See? So that's the time when you take the basic auditing hat and add to it the case analysis hat. Basic auditing has gone wrong, so you add case analysis to it to make it work. That's all there is to that.

Auditor's never reasonable about an ARC break. If there's a big ARC break, then there's something big wrong with the case. It isn't that you have slightly misworded some little tiny RI in some corner of the case – *ugh-bluh!* You got a couple of goals wrongly worded and backwards, brother! Great, big, husky GPMs are pushing this pc's head off. And then, of course, basic auditing failed slightly and produced the necessary lock to cause the ARC break to swing up into session. It all requires a little error in basic auditing to trigger the ARC break. A wrong goal can sit there a long time without ever being fired into an ARC break, until all of a sudden the itsa line is cut or imagined to be cut and the pc will flare on that lock into an ARC break.

That ARC break means only this: that there's something God-awful wrong with that case! That's all that means! Something's gone wrong in the case analysis department! Not in the basic auditing department.

The basic auditing department can *always be improved*. Always. And improved 100 percent, to absolute perfection, will not avoid ARC breaks; will not, all by itself, make a case run smoothly.

Given errors in the case analysis department, no basic auditing in the world, no personality, no, "I am a holy man, and everything in my vicinity, of course, runs calmly. I permeate peace." That's not going to prevent an ARC break, brother. You found a wrong goal and you listed it upside down. There's only one thing going to straighten that out, and that's finding it's a wrong goal and that it was upside down. You understand?

So that comes back into the case analysis department. But basic auditing is something we do smoothly, not self-critically. We do a very smooth job of basic auditing. And that's what we do in basic auditing. We don't do *de-de-de-de-da*, and then not do *de-de-de-da*, and *bu-da-da-bup*, but if you *de-de-de-de-da*, you will *dav-dva-dva-dva-vaw*. And – and if you get criss-crossed up, and if the pc says, "*A-wig-a-wag*," you never say, "*Ka-pow-pow*," you see? Bunk! That is the wrong way to study basic auditing! I mean, that is the *wrong* way to study basic auditing.

Basic auditing does really not consist of a bunch of do's and don'ts! It consists of a thetan sitting there in the auditing chair running a pc and the pc's bank, and verifying it on a meter. And keeping up the auditing cycle, whether the big one, or the little one – just keeping it kicked ahead and keeping it going. And there's really no rule or trick in it anywhere that solves all of its problems and so forth, because it isn't that complicated an action. You make it far more complicated an action than it really is.

You say to the pc – you say to the pc – you – you're into techniques in "How do you produce tone arm action?" You're not into basic auditing – not really. But basic auditing will produce tone arm action if it's being done.

The auditor says, "How are you today, Joe?" I don't care what the whatsit is. "How are you today, Joe?" This is basic auditing, See. Joe says, "Well, when I woke up this morning and I wasn't feeling so good, and so on. I still have a little bit of a headache, and so forth. And I think it was that letter I got from Aunt Susiebelle and so on, and she so on and so on and so on and so on..." And the auditor sits there and basic auditing simply requires that as long as that tone arm is moving, you don't do another ruddy, *rrr-rrr*, goddamn thing. See? Heh! It's almost too elementary. See?

And finally the tone arm steadies down, and the pc's finished saying what he's saying. But even though he has stopped talking, he might still be thinking over the remainder of the communication, and if so, you'll be getting some needle and tone arm reaction. You don't even have to learn to look at the pc and tell whether he was introverted or extroverted, you can tell it off a meter. And he goes on and pretty soon – and he looks at you, and he looks blankly into thin space for maybe a minute, two minutes, three minutes, four minutes, five minutes (it doesn't matter how long), and you're still getting the tone arm action and so forth, and he finally turns around and he says, "Yeah, I – I guess that's all, I guess that's how I feel this morning."

And you say, "Good."

Well, where's the technique, see? Unless interrupted, and blasted with bazookas, with his chair pulled out from underneath him and the auditor eating a crunchy brand of candy – see, additive, additive, additive, additive – why, basic auditing runs off nicely.

Now, you've got to know what to ask the pc. Now you're getting slightly into techniques. Now, what do you ask the pc to produce tone arm action? Well, you're getting into the technique sector, and I started out by calling it R4 because we're mainly talking about Routine 4 and I'm trying to coordinate it with you, but at lower levels, the techniques still belong up there in that sector.

What technique do you use? Well, whatever technique you use you run it the way it is supposed to be run. If it's run with a little bit of assessment and a little bit of this and a little bit of that and so forth, it's still run first with basic auditing, then with technique, and if anything goes wrong you finish the cycle of the thing with case analysis. It's always a one-two-three proposition.

The one hat you wear all the time is the basic auditing hat. Now, as long as you've got this basic auditing hat terrifically tangled up with techniques, as long as you've got it terrifically tangled up with case analysis, as long as you've got case analysis terrifically tangled up over here with techniques, you're going to be in a mess, man. I feel for you!

I can see you now, supposed to be asleep, lying there upon your pillow, a bit of salt water dripping upon the cambric, quietly in the dark. And if I was to appear at that moment and you were to ask me, "What am I doing wrong?" why, I'd almost hit it right on the groove if I said, "Well, you've got basic auditing mixed up with technique. You've got technique mixed up with case analysis. You've got case analysis mixed up instead of basic auditing. And your basic

auditing is probably absent while you're doing other things and so forth and if you'd just straighten these things out into its three ponds, then learn to do each one of these things... First, basic auditing without injecting what *you are doing* in it very much, but just do the actions of basic auditing. And the technique – well, learn what the technique is and then adapt and fit that into – so your basic auditing can go on and run it. And when you run into trouble or finish the technique, go into case analysis and so forth." Why, you probably would take a look at that and be able to figure out exactly what you did had crossed up. You probably would close your eyes and go soundly to sleep. If you heard me! I can't talk loud yet.

Anyhow, the situation, then, is that a compartmentation of action brings about a comprehension of action. You go down in the engine room of a ship, and you see the big whizzles going around the scrubbles, and the ruddybars pounding out against the flogwheels – looks awful complicated to you till somebody points out that those bars belong to the generator and these bars belong to the main engine. And those up there, they're steam pipes and they simply have to do with the fire room and they have nothing to do with all this moving machinery. You take it apart and you can understand it.

You realize that all those bars up there can s... when they stop, well, the lights go out in the ship. And when these bars down here – these great big ones – when they go out, why, the ship stops moving through the water. And when the fire goes out in there, why, neither one of them moves. See? And right away you understand this a little bit better, see. Actually, you could teach a woolly fuzz-wuzz that much compartmentation about steam engineering, don't you see? So it's not too much hill to climb. And basic auditing is the firebox, see. You're putting something into this session or you're not, don't you see? And as long – when that's absent, why, nothing moves. Just nothing, see. And – not a good analogy, but the generating equipment and that sort of thing – that's the technique. And the big drives going around – that's the pc's bank, man! And as long as that bank is moving, you've got tone arm action and you've got things happening, the pc's getting better and everything is going along beautifully.

All of a sudden, why, you come to session one day and you got a headache and your basic auditing goes out and everything goes to hell, so you remedy your handling of technique. You go study a bulletin on R2H, you see, to get this new technique because you didn't have a good session with the pc.

So you get down R2H perfectly, *perfectly*, you get it down so it – just to the exact point and you listen to a tape on it, and you get it absolutely squared. And you go into the next session (your basic auditing out the window), do perfect R2H, and you lay a beautiful – *wshhh-boom!*

Well, the main drives weren't running, you see, so you repaired the generating set which was running. Wasn't anything wrong with your technique, you just didn't happen to be applying it. Small oversight, don't you see? All the valves were open but there was nothing generating steam (to make a better analogy). Simple.

You actually think you are being trained as auditors. In actuality, you are simply being untrained over all of the complications which, during the vast vistas of time, you have accumulated with regard to human relationships and minds. And I'm simply trying to lead you through this maze, these barbwire fences, these down forests, these windfalls, this snow, wind, storm

and ice and sleet that you imagine is there, and finally point out to you that it doesn't matter whether it's there or not, this is what you *do*. And you get a marvelously simplified look at the situation, see.

I imagine – you know, in the writing professions they always have writers who cannot write unless they have their blue slippers on. They have musicians who cannot play unless they have the purple handkerchief in the swallow-tail coat pocket, you see. You have the fellow who always has to have a china cat on the piano, you see, before he can give a concert, you know? You have the prima donna who must always have received green and purple chrysanthemums, just before, in order to have good luck, you know. You've got all this nonsense. Well, actually, that's just a big substitute for knowing what they're doing. It's a big substitute for confidence. It's – they put it off into something else. They've got it fitted into some other thing. Because you're actually wearing all these three sectors very solidly, with high level of responsibility asked. But you'll find out that a person believes that if he takes too much responsibility in one of these sectors or something like that, it's liable to go wrong. Well, that's just because he's unconfident.

"It's best, sort of, to let the pc run the session" – this is one frame of mind, see. See, this has nothing to do with basic auditing or anything else. This is a – this is a new datum that is interjected. This is one of the additives: "It is really best to let the pc pretty well run the session," and the hidden datum is "because if anything goes wrong, then it really isn't my fault." And we call this "making the pc self-determined." See, that's the way we excuse this frame of mind. So we're into a complication now that has to be battered down with clubs if you're going to get at anything, see.

All right. Now let's go in the other way. "The pc doesn't know what he's talking about and is going to get himself into severe trouble and I will be to blame. So therefore, I had better do everything in the session and not permit the pc to do anything in the session, because if you depend on the pc, that will make him guilty and that's like blaming the pc, and you really shouldn't do that. So we must relieve all responsibility from the pc, and therefore it's only on the meter." You get this frame of mind? Well, this is this reverse vector of responsibility on the thing. "Let's take full responsibility for the thing, you see, and then it won't go wrong."

Well, what's all this worry about it going wrong? I don't know why you worry about it going wrong. And yet an auditor audits more poorly if he himself has had some bad sessions. Then he has the example of how wrong it can go. If as a pc he's had some very bad sessions or as an auditor he's conducted some bad sessions, now he's got a reality on the fact that it can go wrong. And he actually starts fighting back against it going that wrong. And he'll start fighting back against its going that wrong up to a point of where he does nothing in a session but keep it from going wrong. So there's, of course, no session; there's just an effort to not have wrongnesses. That's not a session.

There are many ways that you could analyze this; there are many ways you could understand it. But this is all in the matter of being conducted across the storm, sleet, rain, night, barbed wire fences and howling-wolf type forests to a safe plateau of confidence, don't you see? It's all liabilities. As long as you recognize that additives are the main thing. And frankly, you – in the field of basic auditing, there's very little to teach you. Very, very little to teach you in

basic auditing. All you have to do is observe that a pc has an attention line on his own bank and that when you ask a question, his line goes on his bank and you should let it go on his bank until he's – until it's through going on his bank and then you should tell him, "Well, that's now off of your bank," when it comes off the bank, and keep an agreement on the situation, and just gets these things running.

Find out what the mind is doing. This fellow's worried about squirrels, so all right, you just say, "Well, when did you start worrying about squirrels?" Now you're in the technical department over here, you see. That's the technique department. So you know that there's something to do if you – you got the times he's worried about squirrels; all right, that's fine. But now you fit that into basic auditing and you're back on the same old stand now. You're no place else. You're asking a question and he's going to play the – play the attention line on the stuff in the bank and your tone arm's going to move and when he's finished talking, why, you're going to tell him he's finished talking, and what the hell? I mean, how can you make anything complicated out of this, see? It's not possible, really.

Most auditors' genius is – when they're having a hard time – is best demonstrated in finding a difficult way to do it. Because in actual fact it can't be complicated.

Techniques are taken care of over here in this second department, See? There are ways to run these techniques and they run off in a train maneuver. Actually, it requires quite a little grooving and training to run a technique. It's all sort of *da-da-da-da-da*, wound-up doll. And this wound-up doll stuff goes on, but back of that wound-up doll stuff – that's not auditing. See? There's no auditing connected with "All right, when was that ARC break?" See? *Da-da-da-da* and so forth, and "All right, now, was it caused by affinity, communication or reality? Is it so-and-so, *waff-waff-wa...*?" Well, this is all a sort of a phonograph-record stuff, you see.

At any moment – at any moment, the auditor's basic auditing hat is liable to go on. He says, "Was it affinity?" And the pc says, "Well..." (There's your basic auditing hat, see?) The pc says, "Oh, well. You know, it could have been. A long time, about 19-*d-d-d...* and there was this girl and so forth. Could have been affinity. You know, it's a funny thing, but every time I thought of that in connection with that particular incident, I *waff-waff-waff-waff-waff-waff-waff*, *waff-waff-waff-waff*, *waff-waff-waff-waff-waff-waff...*" Well, how long is he going to *waff-waff-waff*? Well, it doesn't matter how long he *waff-waff-waffs*, because you're auditing the whole time. There is no speeding it up or slowing it down, except as it produces or fails to produce tone arm action.

Now, if you let him go "*waff-waff-waff-waff-waff*," on "Was it affinity?" when actually it was communication, and you didn't get down to a point of being able to assess that yet, you know, and he's going, "*waff-waff-waff*" on this particular subject and the tone arm is sitting here at 4.7 *period*. And it isn't going anyplace else and you let him "*waff-waff-waff*" for half an hour, you've got rocks in your head! See? That's basic auditing hat – where is it? Where is it? Look through the drawers, man. You must have parked it down there – the last time you took off your case analysis hat, you must have removed your basic auditing hat, too.

This guy has finished talking, but because you are being silent, you are inviting it in some peculiar way. Oh, yes, you could explain it, but the truth of the matter is, time is going by without tone arm action! So what hat is out? The basic auditing hat is out. Not the technique

hat. Not the case analysis hat. It's the basic auditing hat that's out. You're letting the guy run on and on and on and be in-session without getting tone arm action, so, obviously, he has said all there is to say and he's as-is-ed everything there is to as-is and he has done everything you have required of him and you are now from here on, in some weird way, cleaning a clean from now on out. So you, of course, aren't auditing.

You just haven't perceived. You ask him a whatsit, and you said, "Was this affinity? Was this caused by affinity?" And then you looked at him expectantly, you see. In other words, you threw your basic auditing hat into the middle of your technique hat, see? You just didn't go wound-up doll, say, "Was it affinity? Was it *da-da-da-da, wa-da-da-da-da-da?*" Tick, tock, bing, bang; "That was a *d-bow-bow-bow-bow-bow...*" down the line. But you pause somewhere. You invited this. You caused something to be corrected, you know? You're somehow or another inviting an itsa. You're not in control of the session. You got your basic auditing hat of getting him to answer a question. You don't want a question answered, you want a tick on a meter. You understand?

Now, if you're getting TA action on slow assessment, that's another thing. That's the technique, don't you see? But this, you're just simply trying to find the source of the ARC break – *pow-pow-pow-pow-pow-pow-pow-pow-pow*, oh, bing bang! See? All right. There it is – bang. You've done it; back to the basic auditing hat. "It says here that this is a false communication that caused the ARC break. Is that so?" Oh, now you get "*waffle-waffle-waffle, yip-yip-yip, yop-yop-yop-yop, yiffle-yop-yop, waffle-waffle-waffle-waffle,*" down comes the tone arm, up goes the tone arm, down goes the tone arm, "*waffle-waffle-waffle-waffle.*" There we go. There we go. That's it. That's a *wrow*. It's so *wrow*, and so on, so on, and it was so on and so on. And I – I – it was Aunt Sadie. It was dear old..." Tone arm action, tone arm action, tone arm action, and so forth. What are you doing? You're getting tone arm action; what are you doing auditing? See?

All basic auditing is, is coordinating your question and the pc's itsa with the tone arm and when there's nothing happening in the session, make sure that you grab the technique or the other hat and get something – and the case analysis hat – and get something to happen, see. And when it isn't happening – "Well, the tone arm's rolling now, that's fine, and so forth" – just keep kicking the ball along, man, keep pouring the coal into the firebox and letting the flames roar. You're just sitting back there, and you say – pc says – your pc says, "Oh, *scraffle, scraffle.*" And you notice, "Well, he said '*scraffle, scraffle,*' and it's been kind of a little while and we don't seem to be getting any tone arm action here. And he seems to be getting sort of dark in his statements of '*scraffle, scraffle.*' Maybe I'm overrunning this particular thing." Recognize an error in basic auditing – you've invited an itsa on something without having any coal on the fire, see? You just went for a vacation or something when you shouldn't have as far as the basic auditing hat.

You'll get all this stuff coordinated. There's really nothing to it. There's three hats. Now, you're taking the basic auditing action; in the basic auditing action – you can do all kinds of wild things with basic auditing and produce tone arm action. You can produce tone arm action with "Do birds fly?" perfectly done as a basic auditing action. Now, you think I'm kidding. Try it some time. "Do birds fly?" That's as close as you can get to no technique. See? Go through Model Session and run "Do birds fly?" You'd be surprised. You'd get some tone arm action.

The pc says this is a boring and tiring process to have nothing whatsoever to do with that. And you say, "Okay," and if you do it all right, he'll then explain to you why it's a basic and boring process, and you'll get quite a bit of tone arm action.

You've got to have the pc willing to talk to you and got to have the pc's attention on his own case and you shouldn't go yanking his attention off his case and putting it on you, because you're not putting on a show; you're just the auditor. It's not a matter of merely the auditor, but the best auditor is totally unperceived in a session. He's not visible, man. His presence is felt, not seen. He's just about as close as you can get to an invisible man.

Now, of course, it's the technique and it's the state of the case as arrived at in case analysis which gives you the technique, and the application of the technique, and the wound-up-doll characteristics with which you can deliver that particular technique and when to stop delivering the technique and so forth. These are all questions which are really independent of basic auditing. They have to do with the understanding of what's technique and what's basic auditing and what's case analysis. But basic auditing: It's your ability to just sit there and be uncomplicated and keep the ball rolling.

Actually, the divisions do not at first appear sharp to you. They would not appear sharp to you. Because at the present moment I imagine you've got them pretty well intertwined. You say, "What is auditing? Auditing is running the process." Go to the foot of the class. Auditing is not running the process. Auditing is doing basic auditing, running the process, and having an analysis of the case that *justified* your running the process and tells you when the process is flat. See? So there's three different departments involved here. Auditing is three different departments.

You say, "Well, an auditor, actually – in a session, an auditor should sit there – should sit there and answer politely." Well, I don't know. I don't know if that's a statement of auditing or not, don't you see? Why? It's only one section of the session. One section of the session – that's the auditor.

See, there's three other sections of the session and the two most important parts of the session are completely omitted. That's the pc and his ability to it'sa, which you're trying to improve, and that is the bank, which is knocking the pc's head off and via the pc can knock yours off, too, if you mishandle it.

All right, there's two big – great, big, important pieces of the session, and they're the most important pieces of the session. The most important, of course, is the pc. And the next most important is the pc's bank. And the next most important thing is the E-Meter, and the verification – indication/verification process of what the pc said. And we get down to, not the most unimportant part of a session, you understand, because he's actually the most important as far as the beingness of the session is concerned, but the most invisible or unexamined or not germane – conduct not germane, is the auditor. See, these – you don't concentrate on the auditor.

A fellow says, "I listened to this report of my case analysis, and *I* found out that *I* cut the pc's... and *I* found... and *I* did this and then in the session *I* said..." Oh, man, they're not answering the auditing question. The auditing question, on a criticism of your auditing thing –

hell, it has nothing to do with what you did! Who cares what you did? Nobody – unless it got in the road of the session or failed to make the session run. Now, that's important.

What is important is *what happened* in the session. See, it's not a case of "I cut the pc's itsa." Oh, no! It's the fact the pc was itsaing and was apparently as-ising some portion of the bank and was prevented from doing so by dropping the E-Meter off the table on his foot. That's what happened. So now you see, you have all elements expressed. But "I cut the pc's itsa" – I don't think you have the power to cut the pc's itsa. What kind of thetan shears do you use? See?

The pc also can cut his own itsa. Don't be so self-conscious. You don't always cut the pc's itsa to make the ARC break, you see? You do it frequently enough, but once in a while you just didn't pick up the ball at that particular minute, or steer in that particular direction, and with perfect aplomb you were steering to the right and you should have been steering to the left and everything exploded in your face and there was frankly no possible way – you shouldn't be so self-critical – there is no possible way it could have been prevented.

Svengali, Charcot, the best mind readers of all time, inhabiting his bank with him, could not have foretold that when you ziggged, he would zag. Don't you see? The important thing is that a zig occurred when a zag should have occurred. That's important. Why it occurred is of secondary importance. But it did occur. Now you can go ahead and say, "Well, why did it occur?" and so forth, and promise never to do it again and throw half crowns out here in the wishing well in penance and make the Instructors do infraction sheets...

But anyhow, the thing about it is that it did occur. That is primary. Not *why* it occurred; that is not even secondary. That is tertiary, or something. I have to learn what some of those upper figures are. I wonder what "fiftieth" is? "Fiftyertiary," I guess. See what I mean?

You see, a session – a session is something. If we've got a piece of cake and it's sitting on the table and somebody comes along and picks up the cake and throws it on the floor, only a damn fool stands around and asks why he threw the cake on the floor. But people, I will assure you, always do ask that.

The only important – really important element present is that a cake has been thrown on the floor which you were about to get a piece of. And yet you'll inevitably stand around and ask *why* did he do it and so forth. That's completely unimportant; there's no cake, it's on the floor. See, that's important. First things first.

Now, a session is an irreplaceable section in time. It will never happen again, there will never be an opportunity for it to occur again. There will be more sessions, but there will never be that session. See, that session is itself. So we look straight at it and look straight in the teeth of this thing and we see that *what happened* in the session is of primary importance. First, did you get TA action? Second, was the pc's ability to itsa and confront improved? Third, was his bank straightened out? Now, those are the important things in a session. That you cut the pc's itsa has nothing to do with it whatsoever. If, at the same time, you got TA action, you actually did eventually improve the pc's ability to itsa and you got his bank straightened up. You understand? Those are the important things.

It doesn't matter what expression you have on your face, so long as that expression does not impede getting something done. See, that's all that's important. It does not matter whether

you appear in a session in a boiler suit or pin-striped morning trousers or an afternoon cocktail dress. It just doesn't matter how you appear in the session so long as, *when* you appear in the session, is your dress impeding or pushing forward the session?

Now, you can wear a glaringly yellow sweater or a dazzle rhinestone-studded sweater and cut the session to ribbons. So therefore, your dress influenced the session because it ruddy well blinded the preclear! [laughter] The boiler suit, being stained with diesel oil and quite odiferous, impeded the session's progress. So if you adjudicate everything from what – what happened in the session, what is happening in the session and whether or not the session did get tone arm action, whether or not it improved the pc's ability to itsa, confront, his reality on his bank, and whether or not it straightened out the bank any – if you adjudicate those things, you've got it made.

And you go around holding your head in your hands and saying, "Well, let's see, did I give the auditing command in the proper tone of voice?" It frankly doesn't matter a damn whether you gave it in any tone of voice, by telepathy, or by short-wave radio. All that matters is was you – did you produce these results in the session?

Now, what you call basic auditing training is simply the mean refinement – the average action – best calculated to produce a result in the session, with minimal impedance of the session gains. There is no completely proper auditing action except as measured against these elements.

Now, if you understand auditing from that particular viewpoint, when you walk outside after this lecture, you can lift up a flap of your skull and skid out the 568,000 data which you've got there now completely impeding your ability to sit there and get the job done, see. Because in the final run is "Did you do your job as an auditor?" And if you did your job as an auditor, that irreplaceable, terribly precious session was very far from being in vain. It promoted the thing and went on forward and you continued to do your job, adding up one of these sessions to the next session, to the next session. At the far end of it, somewhere up along the line, you've got yourself completely rehabilitated being. And that can mean a great deal.

So all of your rightnesses and wrongnesses with regard to *your* actions particularly, see, are just waste of breath. Your self-criticism has – is badly spent. It's whether or not you produced a result. If you're doing things in session which impede gains in session, well, they're probably wrong, but who cares? Let's do the things that get results in session, not the things that don't. And if we never get results in session by reason of never doing anything in session, well, decide to be brave and do something in session. And that is – about there is where all analysis ends. It doesn't go really much further than that.

Well, I thought I could give you these three sections and subdivisions of auditing, and you could see them clearly each one in their own light and it might make it much easier for you to view what is going on and carry forward a session to a better and happier conclusion.

Thank you.

RELATIONSHIP OF TRAINING TO OT

A lecture given on 7 November 1963

What's the date?

Audience: Seven November.

Seven Nov. AD 13, Saint Hill Special Briefing Course.

You are very fortunate people. You are very, very lucky people. Come down all the way down the track, lived all of those years, did all these stupid things, and you wind up here with a chance out.

The chance is as good as you can audit, and it's not a bit better.

The number of raw meat that's going to go out through the roof will be numbered on a nonexistent Chinese abacus from the Ming dynasty, which has long been lost. They won't make it.

You can patch them up, you make them feel better, but that's about it. Unless you train them, unless they become actually a fully trained auditor, they really don't have a prayer. This, at this stage of the game, is not, "It is a good thing, if anybody is to be fully cleared or go OT, for them to be trained" organization policy. Moves out of that zone and area into an entirely different zone and area. "If dey gonna make it, dey gonna have to have been trained well."

So I can see you now with your sleeves rolled up, sweating dubiously, with three or four people that you're auditing, something like this, over a "Hubbard mind trainer" – putty on the end of your nose, little pointer in your hand – saying, "This is a GPM."

And the fellow's saying, "Huh?"

And you about that time saying, "I wish to God Herbie was here!" [laughter]

Yes. "No matter what I thought of Fred last year, if he were only here now." [laughs] You know, this type of state of mind. And then you'll sock ahead with this, see – sock ahead, and you decide, "Well, why don't you go – why don't you go to Los Angeles or Cape Town or something and take an HCA Course?"

And you keep asking – they keep asking you these silly questions, you see, about "Well, you say something about – what is this thing called a Tone Scale? I didn't know I had to study music in order to..."

You say, "Well, why don't you go to – down to Cape Town or Los Angeles or someplace and take an HCA Course? And when you come back, I'll give you the hot dope here, don't you see?"

Because in the first place, they're not really worried about becoming OT, they want to cure their lumbosis. And of course – lumbosis, slumbosis – who cares about that, see? It's nothing; no importance. And they're all worried about their present time problems. They come into session, you see, and they want to tell you about the fight they had with their wife, you see? And they want this all cleared up as a present time problem. But actually it's their son they're really worried about. And then there's – there's Aunt Agnes and so forth. She has committed a terrible overt act against... They got a motivator: she didn't die and leave them her money. And so forth, and on and on.

And I can just hear you now straightening all this up, saying, "Fine."

And the guy says, "Well, what's all this wonderful power I was supposed to have?" and that sort of thing.

"Well, I tell you, *ahem*. It's like this: You have to be very learned indeed in order to put your little feet upon this road to glory. And you have to have attained certain philosophic poise." Something like this.

And they'll come around, "Well, all right, I've read some textbooks. Now have I attained philosophic poise? Am I now capable of right conduct?" and so forth.

And I can see you now: "By the way, why don't you go down to Los Angeles or to anywhere, take the HCA Course? When you come back, why..." and so on and so forth, and there it will go. You – you wait. You'll do just that.

Why? Because your raw-meat case is very easy to audit – very, very easy to audit. They're marvelous. I mean, of course, you're sitting there with so much knowledge of cases and that sort of thing, you could hardly fail to get some kind of a result no matter what the fellow did. But the facts of the case are – is you can audit the fat off the top RIs. These cases are fat; they're fat with charge. The charge is leaking out of their ears. They remind you of a boiler which was designed to contain two hundred pounds and has been pumped up to fifteen hundred pounds per square inch. In other words, you've got charge here, man! There's voltage coming out of their ears! You just touch them with a glance at the E-Meter and they bleed charge, don't you see? Because the top of the bank is fat.

Present lifetime – got lots of reality on their difficulties; the case is fat. See? Good and fat. And all you have to do is take a little bat at either one of these two top RIs, the terminal or oppterm, and it bleeds charge. So you can just sit there and bleed charge and get good tone arm action, and straighten out how Aunt Agatha didn't die and leave them their money. And you can – charge, charge – you can – just-service facsimiles and *aahh!* and so forth. And the tone arm fl... Very easy auditing, because you're auditing fat.

And the reason why a Scientologist appears to be a tougher case, which he isn't, is because the fat has been taken off of him. No more fat left on those two top RIs. How are you

going to bleed any charge off of them? The only way you can bleed charge off them is find the two top RIs and go on down the bank. That make sense to you?

So how you're finding – in the lower units here at Saint Hill – how you were finding any charge or tone arm action on the pc at all, I don't know, because it's probably the totality of it was removed several years ago. I've made some kind of a side remark on this in an earlier lecture, but I think you must be a flock of geniuses to get charge at all. See?

That doesn't – that doesn't restrain me from insisting that you *get* tone arm action! [laughter] But realize that in all honesty I'm totally aware of the fact that you're attempting the near impossible. You get a case parked into its first or second bank, you get that goal in full bloom, you've got this case all ready to find that goal, and the longer you don't find that goal, the harder and tougher that TA is going to get stuck.

I've seen a case well straightened out – nothing really wrong with the case at all, just lined up beautifully – in the second GPM ready to list for the third GPM, and that tone arm at 5.5, man, and going higher. And there were errors to be straightened out in the case – there were some errors there in the first and second GPM that could have been straightened out beautifully. But even straightening out *those* errors made no slightest difference to the tone arm. That case was ready to roll on the third GPM. And that case had already – *huh!* as one found later – had thought of the next goal. And that was it! No tone arm. I mean, the case could have gotten wound up in legal actions and every other kind of human difficulty you could name and been charged up with it, and you could have put in the Prepcheck buttons on their PTPs, and you could have just done everything you could have thought of, because – I know, because I did it! And there it sat – 5.5, 5.6. Next session – 5.7. Next session – 5.75 and so forth.

And finally got around in the department of case analysis to find out what's wrong with this case: well, the case had *thought* of the next goal. And the full charge of the next GPM was sitting there just *pong!* all ready to go. It was the next charge up; nobody was touching it, nobody was doing anything with it at all. And until that goals list was completed, that tone arm stayed at 5.5. Not even case analysis would put it down.

Why? Because the case was rolling. The case was running. Do you understand that? I was solving just this one mystery, is how did this case come back into session with a tone arm at 5.5 when they'd left the session at 3? After two sessions or something of that order, I found out. They'd thought of, and actually had written down, four goals – and one of them was it. It brought the whole GPM right back up there and it *wasn't* any between-sessions charge, it was the next goal.

All one really had to have done at that spot, of course, was just to continue the R4 and you had tone arm action. And immediately R4 was resumed and tone arm action went back to forty-five divisions per session.

Well, what's – what's the matter here? Well, the auditor wasn't running the next thing to be run on the case. Do you see that? Well, the auditor wasn't running the next thing to be run on the case. This next thing was so germane to the resolution of this case that there wasn't anything that would have alleviated it except doing it.

So Scientologists are sitting there ready to roll. You want to know the truth of it: You can do case analysis and patch up the bank and get some tone arm action, and get goals that have been found, analyze these things – these things you've got to do anyway. And you get some tone arm action and square it up. But think about somebody that *has* his present time GPM. Has it. It is it. Unfortunately, the only real tone arm action you're going to get on that case is finding the top terminal and opposing the next RI.

So, your lower-level case runs on fat. They're fat with charge. When this is blown out and straightened up, their life looks much simpler to them, looks much better and so forth. Well, what's wrong with them now is the whole stretched-out bank. And that is sitting there ready to be run. You're not going to get anyplace if you don't run it. And you can't run it on somebody who doesn't know his mind – the mind – and so forth, backwards and upside down and also right way to.

So what kind of a situation does this put us into? This is a series of data which are forced upon us by technical facts – not by my hopes, not by what we would like to believe, not by optimism. And they're very, very cold, harsh facts. The tone arm action which you're going to get at case levels I, II and III are the fat that exist on the two top RIs and incidental fat that may be on the rest of the bank disarranged. And that's the tone arm action you're going to get. And those RIs are going to be cut down, they're going to feel easier, life is going to be easier, those things are going to have less punch. When you find them, however – when you finally find them – they're going to have bang, they're going to have punch in them still. You can't take I-, II- and III-level auditing and do anything, really, to an RI. When it's put back in position ready to be found, and so forth, it still fires and blows down and opposes everything and so on. These things are practically indestructible. So don't get too worried about "the case was messed up and so some of its RIs are missing." That's never going to happen. You can even find them in the wrong banks. And when you put them in the right bank they fire and blow down as usual.

They only disintegrate when exactly and properly located, and when they are opposed or up against the item which they oppose. When the companion items around them are released and so forth, then they disintegrate and you haven't got any more RI. That's the end of that. Now trying to find it again, now, can actually cause a fantastic ARC break on the part of the pc. You found it properly with R4, it is gone, you now tell the pc, "We are now going to find it." You want an ARC break? Take a pc who's had the first, second, third bank run out and say, "We are now going to run out the second bank." He can't! See? You've told him to take stock out of the shop that isn't there.

You say, "Now, see that empty warehouse? Good. Move everything out of it."

That, in actual fact, is the only way you can get rid of goals, GPMs and RIs, is run them properly by R4. All right. Somebody that's had his bank chopped up, fifth GPM from the top found sometime in the past by R3, bunch of items run out of the thing and that sort of thing, that fellow – that bank, if it was at all well run, is going to cause you trouble when you finally connect with it, because the next goal isn't now going to fire. You're trying to empty the warehouse that is empty. And the way to get around that, if you ever run into that situa-

tion, is to make sure that you have every goal that's ever been run on the pc, and do it by dating. You can confirm by dating.

Because you can date an RI even though it has been discharged. It's the only thing you can do that is left to do with an RI. You can date it. Even though it's gone and the bank is gone, you can still get reactions on where it has been on the track, because of course it was pulled slightly out of position to be run. So the reorientation of it still has the bang left in it necessary to locate it on the track. Interesting, isn't it? It's just the idea is left, and you're really dating the idea; it has no mass with it or anything like that anymore.

So if you ran up against that proposition, why, you can solve the thing by dating. Let's say the bank "to know nothing" has been run out of the pc, and you've got – for some reason or other you've come across the goal "to know" and you've just run it out and you're doing an oppose, and it doesn't conclude with anything; you don't wind up with anything. Well, you finally have to assume that if the pc had been run on R3 earlier and some GPMs run out, look them over. You'll find in that list a GPM that will oppose it. You'll probably find, see, "to know nothing." And you get some kind of a situation here; you can confirm it by dating. You can date the bottom of the GPM – the RI end of the GPM that you just left – and you can date the top of the one that has been run out. The two dates should coincide – should be within a short distance of each other. Trick. Well, but it's a necessary trick to know.

Now let's look over this general situation. I'm sure that somebody sooner or later is going to get around this, going to take one of these big tables and a bunch of clay and he's going to train somebody up who's unusually smart and get them to know all the parts and definitions of the mind and that sort of thing, and get them groomed up to a point where they can call them all off and know what he's talking about and so forth, and find the present time GPM and go on down the line. Somebody is going to do that sooner or later; and that will be the exception, however, to the rule.

You have not realized how much aplomb you have acquired with regard to the mind. You have no concept of how much aplomb you have. Pavlov, his approach to the mind – nervous old-maid aunt. You know, just "Uhhhh!" Nervy, man. If you'd talked about the mind to him while he was on an E-Meter, why, it would have banged across both pins. Why, of course, nearly everything theoretical was a lie on the thing, but he was still nervous. He had no aplomb about this subject at all.

When you start training somebody in an HCA Course and so forth – you've had that activity; that's been part of your activities – you remember how nervous these people were, amongst them, how nervy they get? You tell them to sit down and say something to the person across from them. Well, they will do this very happily maybe in a co-audit, because they haven't even looked at what they're doing yet. It's all unreal to them so it's perfectly all right to do this, you see? And you'll see this in PEs all the time. Well, that – they're not saddled with any responsibility; they're just doing something there because the Instructor told them to do and they're not taking any responsibility for anybody's mind. All right, you get them into the lower levels of HCA Course, and the D of T or Instructor starts chewing them out for the subject of having gotten somebody into an ARC break because they didn't complete the auditing

question or something like this, and all of a sudden they're saying, "What? Somebody is actually requiring me to be responsible for the conduct of a session? *Ohhhhh!*"

Actually, there's little gradients many Instructors have dreamed up, trying to get people to actually sit there and take some responsibility for a session. They give them *Self Analysis* or something like that and have them read questions out of *Self Analysis* to the pc or something like this, just to get the idea of it. The approach there is quite interesting.

Well, actually, these people are all preselected out of the races of Earth today. They're preselected: They arrived and enrolled. That's interesting, isn't it? They arrived and enrolled. Well, they're preselected people to begin with – that they're there tells you that. So it's not any cross section of the population at all. This is a very great minority of the population, certainly composed of the upper tenth of the intellects of the world today. So this is a preselection. And if those people coming into an HCA Course are showing any degree of nervousness, they're already people who have a potential of aplomb on this particular subject. And they get nervous.

Now you start running them up along the line a little bit further, and you start getting them into the zones and areas of running the pc's goals and itsaing the pc's goals, you'll see them a little bit nervous, because they're – they've now got a further zone or area. Getting the read on the meter is a source of nervousness. Not getting TA action, they get nervy. Any of us do – me, you, all of us. And we sit there over a session and we see that TA isn't moving, man, and "*Hoo-ah!* Wha-what's-what's going on? Wha-wha-what's-what's the matter here? What's the matter here? Wh-why-why didn't that run?" Lie awake half the night: "Why didn't I do that? I wonder if *ss-mmm* has got something to do with it. *Wa-wa-wa* and did I *so-wab-ba-ba*," and this sort of thing.

Well, you're smart enough and bright enough and got enough aplomb to get up to that level to get nervous. I think Pavlov himself, he probably would have gone into a complete nervous breakdown. He probably would have been howling, [laughter] if not slavering! But there's your level: You're dealing with preselected people, and these people have a tremendous amount of training. Even people – non-certified people who hang around an organization have a tremendous lot of training and aplomb on this particular subject. It's quite amazing.

So you're dealing with a specialized group, specially selected, and then these people are moved on up with further selection by advanced levels of training. And they're moved on up – their confront, their persistence. Look at the things that are required of one of these people, you see – the things that have been required of you, in actual fact. And sticking with it and the disappointments and the upsets and the reasons why you shouldn't have and all this, and the lack of success you've had with this one and that one and the trouble you've had someplace else and so forth. Boy, if you don't think that isn't a process of preselection, you should take a look at it someday. Just going on being in Scientology, see? It has its rewards, but it also has its liabilities. And the liabilities, particularly the last few years, have been very great. Rolling along on a research line, mostly living on hope and the next and latest technique – this sort of thing, has taken its toll. Don't think otherwise.

And those that have survived this particular process and so forth, are not to be congratulated; that has nothing to do with it. They have simply demonstrated the fact that they will obviously someday make OT. It's as simple as that, don't you see?

All right. Now we walk along this line a little bit further and we're suddenly confronted with brand-new demands of auditing. A new style of basic auditing. Not too different, but requires some neat adjustment of sitting in there as an auditor, not taking the pc's itsa away from him and yet not abandoning the pc to his own itsa. Man, you make that adjudication! That's a rough one to make; you have to make it yourself. At what point – at what point do you take over too much of the pc's itsa, and at what point do you take over too little? Where is the exact middle ground of these two points? Discover it for yourself. You will, sooner or later.

The reason you have to discover it for yourself is it varies from pc to pc. There's a variation here. It's not – doesn't vary from auditor to auditor; it varies from pc to pc. Some pcs are quite bright, their perception of their bank is quite good and so on, and you mess up *their* itsa, you've really done something, don't you see? They know what they're talking about. They say, "There is a cat sitting over there," see? And the auditor that doesn't pay any attention to this at all and doesn't weigh the fact with that particular pc is going to be in trouble.

Similarly, you'll have a pc, he says, "There is a cat over there," and you can be absolutely sure that if the – he said so, that proves it isn't the case. See, pcs are different. He's maybe trying to make a good show for the auditor, he's not trying to look at the bank or itsa. He's trying to put on an act, or – or there's a lot of other wild factors enter in here. Well, how much responsibility do you have to take for him?

And the reason you should learn to adjust this, is as your pc moves on up the line to higher and higher case levels, his perception gets better and better, his ability to itsa gets better and better – dependent on whether or not you yourself have engaged in a promotion of his ability to perceive. Have you increased his reality on his own bank? And if you have, and the case is rolling along the line nicely, why, he will wind up with higher and higher levels of responsibility for his own bank. And finally, running on to OT and going actually on down the track and knocking out GPMs, you'll get to a point where it would be very perilous to challenge the pc's perception of the matter. I mean, it would be just foolhardy. Not that the pc would do anything to you, but it's just foolhardy. You're just making trouble.

Pc says the next goal is "to scat." It rocket reads, blows down – that's the next goal. That's your goals list, see?

Now, if at this point you said, "Well, let's take a list here, and we're going to list this thing out," and so forth.

And he'd say – he'll keep saying, "Why? What do you want to list it for? It's sitting right there. That's it; that's 'to scat'."

And he says, "The top terminal-the top terminal is 'those who scut,' and 'somebody who can't stand scutting,' a 'non-scatter'." And your meter's going wild – what are you going to do at this point? Say, "No, no, we've got to go back, and we've got to trace all this back, and really, we'll go back, and we'll first do the goals list, you see, and we want fifty past the

last RR," and so forth, and so on. Three sessions later your pc's going into a decline. You say, "What's the top oppterm?"

He says, "Oh, to hell with you!" [laughter]

The horrible part of it is, the same condition can exist, apparently, on somebody who doesn't have any GPMs run out. He says, "My next goal is 'to scat,' and there it is right there, and the top oppterm is 'to play on a piccolo,' and the terminal is 'to eat meat.'" You buy this, the pc's wrapped around not one telegraph pole, it was something like sticking him out through a train window as you were going by the telegraph poles, you see? [laughter, laughs] So there is your – there is this adjustment. How much responsibility do you take? How much of the pc's itsa you take, and so forth.

Well, it changes, not only from pc to pc, but it changes in the same pc. Furthermore, you can go reversewise: The pc has had some bad loses, his itsa can deteriorate for a little while. Had some real bad loses, you know, some kind like this: You ran out the present time GPM, only it wasn't it and it shut off the RR. You got him stuck you don't know where, in what. Incomplete list; this, that, the other thing – something is wrong here. Case analysis is coming to the fore, and the pc is all snogged up.

Well, maybe a short time before you did that he could have itsaed it well, but now that this has happened he cannot itsa for a little while very well. He can't spot these things. He really doesn't know, and he gets frantic, and he gets wild, and he starts giving you various ideas and hints and so forth of what you ought to do; he starts giving you auditing directions which are based on unreality and you wrap him around a half a dozen telegraph poles, too – having wrapped him around a telegraph pole, don't you see?

Wrap a pc around a telegraph pole and his ability to itsa will deteriorate. That doesn't mean it won't improve immediately that you straighten it all out again, but you have to make these allowances.

So, not only different from pc to pc, but plus and minus in the same pc. And can not only improve but also deteriorate in the same pc. So these are things that when you say, "This is exactly how much responsibility you take for the pc at any given instant" – well, how many – this is the much – the degree of responsibility you take for itsaing for the pc, you see, finding out and showing him what it is – is not a constant. It's highly inconstant. Varies session to session.

Pc comes in with a big present time problem. He's been reliable – he's been reliable as a grandfather clock – tick-tock. He'll call his shots all the time. And he comes in this session, he's got a present time problem. He's a bit overwhelmed, he's a bit bothered by various things. And in a gesture of impatience or something like that, why, he gives you a wrong datum. You're very accustomed to – well, you haven't estimated your pc for that session. This is not something that takes a great deal of study, but it takes some experience. It's something you want to watch. Pcs run good and they run bad. Pcs run well in the morning session, bad in the evening session, see? Some pcs run well in the evening session and badly in the morning session. See, that's – it varies. One day your pc who always runs badly in the evening session comes in and runs wonderfully in the evening session, runs horribly the next morning.

So, the final solution to it is you do what you have to do to get the case done right, at any given instant of auditing. And every moment of auditing is a different moment of auditing than any other moment of auditing – particularly in this business.

Where you can produce change in a pc, you of course are changing the values by which you audit. You ever look at that? Now, some auditors back in the old days solved this by simply not changing the pc. [laughs] And they'd express it this way: They'd say such and such a process ran well on the pc, so we will now run it, and this is the only process we are ever going to run on this pc. And, of course, the thing – long since flat, you see?

I remember one time somebody a long time ago ran on Mary Sue – one of her auditors – ran her for forty hours or more on, I think, "failed to endure." At the end of that period of time she sure was failing to endure! Very successful series! That's because she happened to be running well on it at the beginning, you see, and then they didn't know how to shift their gears. It's happened to all of us at one time or another. And also the reverse has happened, is before a process could bite, the auditor had changed it, see? All these various casualties occur.

Well, these casualties occur by a failure to estimate the state of the case at the moment the case is being audited. The case is always different one moment to the next; they are never the same case. They are always different. For one reason, they're in a different period of time, don't you see? Time has changed.

All right. Well, let's get back to this problem of you audit the fat off the top RIs and you've got a R4 type case. Now it requires a real genius to get any TA action off the case at all, you see? He's taken something that has no fat left on it and is trying to find some fat. And of course he has to be more and more adroit about the kind of fat he finds, and he can get quite remarkably adroit at this. It makes a good basic auditor because at this particular time he, of course, is running into a case that has no fat to be run to amount to anything, and he is yet running some, so therefore the case is more liable to ARC break and becoming critical of auditing. So it works two ways, and it makes a fantastic auditor.

Not only is there no – nothing there to get TA action on, but there's a greater liability to the whole zone of auditing, because he's more likely to get ARC breaks and upsets in the session. Pc is more likely to develop present time upsets by reason of auditing. So by the time you get through that preselection, why, you're practically a screaming genius, man.

Now let's move into the field of – let's move into the field of what happens after somebody has gotten up the track. What happens? They're in a position of doing R4. Well, at this stage of the game they're probably trained. They're probably trained somewhat. They'd certainly have to be trained further, in spite of the preselections and other things that brought them up along the line. They'd have to be pretty well grooved.

It's almost grimly factual that Saint Hill will undoubtedly make more OTs in the final run, for various reasons. Data first on the firing pin, and it's being sorted out all the time; there's terrific evaluation of this data, reassessment, re-sorting the data continuously occurring and so forth, cases being very carefully adjusted. And right here, of course, we have more people that know more Scientology than any other place in the world, naturally. And – on the staff. And you get into a preselected situation, already, by reason of technical knowledge. And this is expressed right now, that there's only about – I think there are four or five cases at

this moment in the whole world that are headed directly, immediately and straightly to OT without another quiver on the line. I mean, they couldn't be stopped, just give them auditing and they will arrive, see? There are only that many cases in the world right now that are in that particular state, and they are all at Saint Hill. That's interesting, isn't it? So we can suppose that this area of dominance and forward progress will continue.

The best way and the most sure-fire way to get to be OT, then, is to be a top-rank auditor, and that for various reasons, you see, including the aplomb it takes to confront the bank. You have no idea how mu... We had somebody here (I would – I won't mention any names) but we had one case that was running very badly...

I call a case on the way to OT, by the way, who has had the first bank run out. This proves it. This proves the top GPM; this squares it up. First bank run out, second bank coming up, and that case is surely in the channel and on the road.

It isn't just that we've found somebody's goal and we're fishing for the PT goal and that sort of thing; I don't consider that case en route yet. It will take that case anything up to two years to get into this other situation. Anything up to that. Might only be a month. Might only be two months. Just because somebody has found a goal on this person is no guarantee of anything. But I might add this snide, cynical and horrible comment: There is one thing it *is* a guarantee of, that the case who has had a goal found on him – between that point and the first actual GPM run out, finished and the next goal found, between those two points, is more hell, upset and uproar than any being ever thought he would have to endure. That is absolutely ghastly.

I'm talking now about actual empirical experience. I've seen these cases. Now, these are – lack of technology is some of the explanation for the length of time in this.

One of these cases at Saint Hill had the top GPM found – imagine it, it was the top GPM – and its top RIs listed for, over the better part of two years. I think more than that. Horrible! The reason it could never make any progress is there weren't any top items – it was a truncated bank. And it never occurred to anybody to go down into the bank and run it as a truncated bank. Technical, of course, has caught up with this type of thing, but nobody ever suspected this was the PT GPM. GPMs have been listed for, above it and below it and around it, and discarded, and I've seen goal after goal presented as something closer to present time on this case in the last few months. And misery and *bow* and upset and so on, and – oh, me! Misery. Agony.

Even when you've found the PT GPM, that agony isn't over and so forth, because one might miss a couple of items in it, and one might shoot that sideways. Now, now the real trouble begins! This is the toughest period of the case. Top GPM found: Will it run? Is it the top GPM? And I myself have been knocked around for thirty days on just answering that question, session after session, misery after misery and so forth. Other things being found for it, being found above it, being found below it and so forth. And then we found out that it had been run out. How can you make mistakes like this? Well, it's very easy to make mistakes like this, because the present time GPM is the one in which all a person's present time problems sit. And he has practically no perception on it.

You go back-you go back ten GPMs, you can probably run one of those out. Pc won't run it with any reality and it won't do him any good and for God's sakes don't do it! That would probably run with nice perception and everything going along swimmingly. And you move up into the present time GPM, all of his present time problems are sitting on this present time GPM.

Now, do you see what I mean about preselection? Because at any time during that period of finding a goal and finding and running out the perst... – PT – the first GPM on the case, life can become so horrible, so unbearable, so unlivable, so many creaks occurring of various kinds whatsoever, the fellow's just liable to pack it up, man. Raw meat won't stand there and – they won't understand anything about it. They won't have any hope; they won't have enough confront to go through it. A little creak turns on, "Well, I've been audited and I don't feel so good, so I don't think I'll be audited anymore." Well, let them go creak till the end of time. Who cares? Preselection didn't operate.

"Dere was many called, and few was put into de first bank!" [laughter]

Now, these are the facts. These are the facts I'm giving you. These aren't any gilded thoughts of any kind; these are just the grim, horrible facts.

Now, once you've got the person into that first GPM – you know it's the first GPM, there's no doubt about it whatsoever – you can maybe for the next two GPMs worry about whether or not it was the first GPM and be prepared to find two more above it at any given moment, because the bank is liable to straighten out suddenly and so forth, and you find yours... But this is much more – less likely to occur than has been believed in the past. And a lot of case time and auditing time has been lost in taking the first GPM and then knowing it is the GPM, checking it out, and then for some reason or other not running it or not really handling it, and even after running it, not knowing whether or not it was *it*, and therefore do something else to prove something else was *it*.

Because this horrible datum has just emerged as a very important datum. And that is, an *actual goal invalidated will then behave like a wrong goal*. It's terrible! I mean, a datum like that – that's terrible, man. Think it over for a moment. An actual goal invalidated will then behave like a wrong goal. Well, you probably haven't measured in everything there is to be measured into that simple statement. Because it means this: that that invalidated actual GPM will now turn on the creaks and ARC break the pc just as though it were a wrong goal, and just the way a wrong goal would ARC break the pc.

And when you say to the pc, on the meter, "That's a wrong goal," because it reads that way, "we've found a wrong goal, that's a wrong goal – 'to spit' that's a wrong goal," the pc will say, "Oh, well, what a relief."

Proves it, doesn't it? He will feel relieved, because you've just added more not-is. This is not-is coming in. See? But he won't feel very happy. He'll go on being ARC breaky around the perimeter here someplace, but not on that one. That one's all taken care of, isn't it? We knew that was a wrong goal, didn't we? Because every time we say it's a wrong goal it turns off the creaks and the pc's happy and cheerful and doesn't ARC break now. And every time it comes up and gets restimulated, why, the pc ARC breaks, so that's a wrong goal, so we just

say it's a wrong goal. And the pc doesn't ARC break now, and it straightens up beautifully. So we obviously know what it is.

Isn't that terrible?

That's why, now, you've got it contained in your lines, where I gave you that program: after you got through checking everything – after you got through checking everything, you know, all the case analysis on the thing, then you prepcheck everything you found.

That's why that's there. That's – probably you've been wondering. Well, it was there just as an elementary caution to begin with, but it was just my instinct that it ought to be there.

Now I've found out *why* it ought to be there. Because you could have carefully, with great relief to the pc, laid aside an actual GPM as a wrong goal in the case analysis, simply because it was so heavily invalidated that it behaved like a wrong goal.

Now, I don't know that the reverse is true, but I would be – I would expect now, just by extrapolation – I don't know that this is true or will hold true, but this horrible specter might rise, too: that a wrong goal is sufficiently validated to behave like a right goal on the meter on a case analysis. Pc has asserted, asserted, asserted and everybody's asserted, and everybody knows that's the right goal and so forth. And somehow or another it's got now the value of being a right goal while being a wrong goal. I don't know that that particularly will obtain, but I would expect that sooner or later we might run into instances of this. Because if one side of it is true – if you can say that a right goal is a wrong goal and it will then thereafter behave like a wrong goal, you should be able to say that a wrong goal is a right goal and it will then behave thereafter.

There's only one thing wrong, however, with that second statement, is any actually wrong goal – it's no GPM – or an actual goal run as an implant goal will turn off the RR just like that. Two items, three items – no RR, no falls, nothing on the meter. Gone, see? This is the guy who won't get any tone arm action, he won't get any meter action, he won't go – *lah, lah, lah*. You try to – so you're saved, you see, from making this second guessed-at mistake, because it shows up almost at once. You won't ever run, then, a – you won't ever run a wrong goal. That I can absolutely guarantee. You won't have any RR to run it with. That simple!

You'd have to sit there and just lie to the pc. Say, "Oh, well, we found an item, yeah. We found another item" – the meter is absolutely frozen, see? It won't run. So you never really will.

Even though a goal is an incorrect goal, it could only be incorrect for its position, it could never be incorrect for its wording.

You can sometimes – you can get items for an implant GPM, you can get a wrong line plot for an implant GPM, without turning off the RR. But you can take an actual GPM and try to run it on an implant pattern and it turns off the RR right now. Off goes the RR. Off goes the falls. Off goes the tone arm action. That thing will just stick – not necessarily a high tone arm or low tone arm – it just won't – nothing happens now. And the longer you try to run it and find items and so forth...

So the surest sign in the world – this is sure, you know, like it is daylight when the sun comes up: If you run a wrong goal, the RR or falls or any other meter action will turn off, completely aside from the ARC breaks of the pc. So that one isn't dangerous.

What is dangerous, however, is that the pc's actu... an actual GPM of the pc is so thoroughly invalidated, you know, by various things – it's so thoroughly invalidated that it now reads as a wrong goal and so will be consistently discarded by the auditor. He and the pc both know and agree by actual test that "to spit" is a wrong goal. And they're going on looking for the next GPM in the line, or the PT GPM, or something like this, and they can just go on looking forever. Because, you see, you can't find something in a place where something you know isn't there, is.

It's these errors which take up time in R4. They are not, in the broad analysis, destructive. They're merely hell to live through. Hell for the auditor, hell for the pc. The pc's got nothing but screaming ARC breaky sessions, he's not getting any improvement, his tone arm action is minimal, he doesn't know where he's going, he doesn't know what he's doing. He's starting to itsa all in the wrong directions and dish up wrong data at every hand, invalidate everything that's been found on him and knock everything out left and right and rearrange his data, and he's getting into a worse and worse condition. The auditor's sitting there tearing his hair out by the roots. Tone arm isn't moving, is – he isn't getting falls. His goals lists aren't listing properly. He can't find anything. Anything he does find today checks out perfectly and tomorrow is invalidated and won't check out and it's all different, and *thuh-thuh-bua-uah*, my God! – that it should happen, you see?

And there's absolutely nothing will ever be done to make it any other way. That's horrible. Because that is the condition of auditing with the very best auditors and the very best trained pcs there are. That's something to think about, isn't it?

Now, you get a square look at this. Many are called and few ever hit the top of the bank. See that?

See, given all the training, given all the data, given everything else, it has great and wide liability. It can be worked out. Somebody who's started in this line, if he's had that much preselection all up along the line, and enough training and so forth himself, and so forth, is not going to bail out until it is done. But remember, two years have elapsed. Of course, the technology was not up to it in many instances and so forth, but two years have actually elapsed between the actual finding of a PT GPM and running that same GPM. And the interim covered with trying to find the pc's goal, trying to run the pc's goal, trying to audit the pc and so forth. That has actually happened.

And even with all the technology you're sitting there right this minute with, it has been many months of a very skilled auditor and a very well educated pc – many months to finally sort the thing out, finally, and get it running.

We got better technology. We can shorten the time. But don't go around in the happy dream that it can't happen. All the best training in the world makes it possible for it to occur at all, see? The best training makes it possible for it to occur. This is exactly the state that it's in, see? And even with the best training, it occurs sometimes very smoothly and very luckily and very slippily. Just that morning you got up and you were wearing the right halo. And you

sailed in and for some cockeyed reason were actually able to bust through the line and really run it and it started running. Just figure it for what it is. It's a high degree of skill compounded with a phenomenal bit of luck. That's what it is. It's – you just got up that morning, and you – your shoes were in the exact correct position alongside of your bed. And that was it. You're just lucky.

Now, this is a sober look at all these things, and I perhaps might sound to you as though I'm depressing your morale. I'm not trying to depress your morale. I'm trying to keep your morale from departing from a reality. And the reality of the situation is that if you're very good and if you're very well trained, and if you know your business very well as an auditor, and when as a pc you are audited by a very skilled, very capable and very able auditor, and you have a great deal of luck, you won't suffer many catastrophes (get the level of action there: you won't suffer *many* catastrophes) up to the point of having the first bank found and run out. And that's exactly your level of expectancy.

Now, the actual running out of the bank can furnish difficulty. You can get into the fourth bank or something like that and all of a sudden the pc invalidates the goal. It's out of session, see? The goal is, for instance, "to be a snob." See? And the pc says, "Hey, I don't like that goal. I've never – no, I've never been snobbish," and so on. They're caught up somewhere up around the top terminal, don't you see, and they start dramatizing the top terminal, which is "an humble person," see? They say, "Well, us humble persons, you know" (they don't know what it is yet), "us humble per... We hate snobs, you know. They're no good, and uh – and so on and so on and so on."

Or unfortunately – unfortunately, they see a great big limousine going down the street with a guy in a top hat or something in it, you see? Something keys them in suddenly. "That goal couldn't be my goal. That – it couldn't be my goal." And they come back in – you've got some items in this thing, see, already. Put them on the meter, so forth, check it out. The pc nattering, ARC broke, see, "*Nyah, nyah, nyah, nyah.*"

You figure something's wrong here – something's wrong, something's wrong. You check this thing out: "'To be a snob.' All right, is that an actual GPM? And is it in proper sequence?" And – no read, see? "Is it an incorrectly worded GPM?" Tick, you see? "Is it a wrong goal?" you see? *Clang!* you know? It goes practically – rocket reads, you know? "All right, is it out of sequence?" and so forth – there's no read. It's just a wrong goal, that's all there is to that, see?

So you say, "All right, now let's try to do and extend our little goals list that we were doing from the upper GPM." At this moment you have sealed your doom for maybe the next two weeks of auditing. It'll look so reasonable to you and the combinations are so varied, you'll fall for it. It's inevitable.

You try to clean this thing up: "Well, did you think anything" – knowing this, we might shorten it down, don't you see – "Did you think any invalidative thoughts about the goal? Let's get in the mid ruds on the subject of the goal: On this goal, has anything been suppressed?" *Blah-blah-blah-blah-blah-blah.* And all straightened out and...

Pc spends the whole time you're getting the mid ruds on it saying, "Yeah, but I've never been a snob. I never had a goal like this. I never had a – so on and so on. I'm a – I – not

me! I couldn't possibly have had a goal – and so on and so on." So even the mid ruds are converted into a total invalidation of the goal, see? So this thing – this thing still reads "wrong GPM" – must be, the pc's ARC broke.

And you say, "Well, let's get the pc out of the ARC break." "All right," you say, "that is a wrong goal."

And the pc will say, "*Whew!* Boy, that's a relief!" See, you add to the not-is that they're trying to pull off, of course it complements it and so on.

Now begins the silly rat race of trying to find the right goal which occurs in that place. One after another, we get *three* goals to read – actually fire, actually check out as an actual GPM. See, everything's awry now. And we get one after the other. And we start – and we find their top oppterm and we find their top terminal and we lose the RR. That's the end of that RR. Well, it must have been a wrong goal, *hu-hum!* So we throw that one away, and we get another one. We take the same goals list and we work and sweat over this goals list.

And the reason, of course, a goals list will read if you work it over hard enough, unbelievably hard, under a circumstance like this where you've already invalidated the correct goal on it, you'll find other items will start reading on the same list, whether you extend it or not.

So, you find another goal, and you put it in the same place. Pc has eventually sold you "to be humble," see, something like that, motivated by the RI they're sitting in. Only you don't know that and neither do they, see? Top oppterm, top terminal, everything's going along – well, we're really rolling now, got beautiful blowdowns, you see? We get the third item up – *erk!* [knocks against the meter like one would do with a broken device to make it work again] "People who hate humble people. (I don't know what it says. No read.) Let's conti... extend the list a little bit more." That needle is just freezing. It's getting tighter and tighter. There's less and less read, there's less and less fall, there's less and less tone arm motion.

"Well, that's a wrong goal." All right, we *throw* that one out, see? "All right, now let's find another goal that goes in this immediate area and so forth." You're groggy, the pc's bank is all messed up. He couldn't – he actually couldn't it'sa, bright red paint in front of his face by this time, see? You've got his bank looking like a GPM pretzel! [laughter, laughs] And then sometime down along the line – we hope it will be in the next few months – somebody's looking over this folder – you're looking over this folder or somebody's looking over it or you notice it and so forth: The goal you were running ran seven items without turning off the RR. Must be a right goal from someplace. Well, we better orient the thing.

So we put in the ruds on it and we get it sorted out and we eventually straighten it out, and all of a sudden, bang! it *was* the right goal in the first place. And the RR is beautiful, and it's on, and everything is going along gorgeously. And here we go now, and we go on down and finish off and we find we were only two items from the bottom or something stupid, see? It isn't that that was that short a GPM, but let us say we'd found eighteen items in it, and maybe stopped on the last RIs – something like this. This sort of thing happens. See? The one thing you'd never imagine, because it all checked out. Everything checked; everything checked. But it read as a wrong goal because it had been invalidated.

All right, let's take the exact same situation. Remember, we're walking in the dark, here. These six-foot rear-view mirrors: When we've got it all done we say, "Of course!" But at the time we're walking into it, man, that peephole in front is about one-thousandth of a millimeter in diameter. And we are going up the line, one way or the other here, and we say, "Who or what would 'to dance' oppose?" And we get – and it reads, and everything is fine – "to not dance." Obvious! The exact goal! Everything is fine. So we take this goal and we run it and it doesn't turn off the RR. Pc is beginning to look mighty pale and the tone arm's pretty high. We're not getting much in the way of blowdowns and the falls aren't very pronounced, but it's running.

So we say, well, we won't make trouble for the pc; we will go on and run this a little bit further. It's all checked out, everything is gorgeous, you see, and so forth. And it gets worse, and it gets worse, and it gets worse, and we're not quite sure what this is. And the items start to look rather odd to us, so we challenge the pc. We say, "You aren't listing the auditing question. Now, you must list it." Yes, he is; he swears he is.

And he's getting the goal, you see, "to not dance" and... 'Tain't running right, though; nothing's running right. It's going to pieces. Tone arm action's degenerated, tone arm high or low and pc's morale kind of bad, they're dragging around, and they shouldn't be operating like this. Hard to find items, hard to get them to blow down, and have to prepcheck every item to get it to blow down, and all kinds of stuff like this is occurring, you see?

Finally you get bright and you say – you start looking at those items and, "Gee, you know, those look like an implant line plot." And hurrah, hurrah, it is! It is. And you check it over on an ARC break and you get this – you get a tick. Your first clue, maybe by just inspection, which it probably should be, but if you didn't get that, you'd get something like an incomplete goals list is the reason for the ARC break. Well, you've completed every goals list you can think of, so why should it possibly be an incomplete goals list, you see? And so on.

We find out that there *is* a GPM, an implant GPM, "to not dance," and the reason the RR didn't turn off is we were running an implant GPM, and of course an implant GPM doesn't turn off the RR if you're running it. So why should it? If an im... if you're running an implant GPM with the wording of an actual GPM your RR will go off. You know, you think you're running an implant GPM, you're running it by pattern and you're trying to run the actual GPM by an implant pattern, you won't have any more RR than a rabbit. But the other isn't – the otherwise isn't true. You found an implant GPM, the only thing that's wrong with it is, is you're just finding some misworded items in it, and the RR isn't going off, nothing's going off, thing is apparently running, everything's going along all right – except it isn't running well at all. The pc's pretty upset and so forth. You got an incomplete goals list.

You go ahead, and you did your – you finish up your goals list, and so forth, and you'll find out that it was "to be sad" or something, see? And that was the right goal and you're back up at the top and you're on your way again.

How many auditing sessions did it take you to find this? That is the question. How many auditing sessions? It's actually as many auditing sessions as it took you. That is the exact precise statement of time. Because it could take you anything up to thirty auditing sessions to get a blunder. What takes time in R4 is the mistakes. You'll find this time and time again.

The time consumer is the mistake. You make the mistake, you're in for it. Well, that doesn't mean you should go on trying to be perfect all the time, just be as good as you can. And you'll make as few mistakes as possible and lose the minimal amount of auditing time if you repair them as quickly as possible. But this statement will still hold true, that the time that is consumed in R4 is as a result of a mistake. Mistakes consume the time. You make one blunder, you buy the wrong goal, there you go! You've had it!

Now, actually if you'd found the right goal you would have had the whole thing run out in the next session or two. See? Would have been all gone, and you'd have been on your next list. Instead of that, here you'll be, idling around, fooling around – not for just this session, but the next session, and maybe the next session, and maybe the next session, with your pc getting less and less capable of straightening it out, and you getting more and more confused. And everything you're trying on as the error here, you see, is not working out, don't you see? And then you're invalidating things that are true, you see, and validating things that aren't, so that your analysis of the situation is getting poorer and poorer, don't you see?

Well of course, you could say, quite handily, and possibly some day in future ages some Instructor will say it, "Well, of course, the thing to do, obviously, is not to make mistakes in the first place." That's not possible. That's merely a snide, not an obtainable perfection. Where absolutes are unobtainable, that one is peculiarly so, because it depends exclusively upon the pc's ability to itsa. And the auditor auditing with the best possible talent, technique, attention to duty and so forth, is sooner or later going to run into a zone or area where the sub-itsa, as represented by the pc's ability to itsa, is very peculiarly shallow. And he's going to hit that point, and he's going to say, "Well, it's this way and this way and this way." And what makes this... and he's going to be wrong.

But what makes this peculiarly true that you – nobody should go around saying, "Well, you shouldn't make mistakes in it" – what makes it peculiarly true about the matter is that the mistakes that you make are consistently trying not to make mistakes.

Pc's running like a well-oiled dream – I've done it myself – so you decide, just to be sure we haven't made a mistake, we will go back up and patch up... And then find that the next four items I found in the patch-up of the goal above it actually belong in the goal below it. And we got a pc wrapped around the telegraph pole and the tone arm's sitting over here at five point f... if I'd just kept my mouth shut and just gone on the way we were going, all would have been well!

So, you see, you can strain so hard to not make mistakes that you wrap a pc around a telegraph pole. I'll give you an idea how you do this. This is one of the reasons mistakes are impossible to avoid. They are impossible to avoid in R4, because you have to do this but you mustn't do this, see? It runs like this, you see: "All right, is that an actual GPM? All right, that reads. I'll check it out the rest of the way. Is that an implant GPM? Is that no GPM? Well, those don't read. It's an actual GPM. All right. Good."

Pc is sitting there, smiling, happy, everything's all ready to go, you see? You got it made now, see? You're all set. All you got to do is say the last RI down to the next oppterm and get that list, and you're away like the hounds, you see, after the red fox, you see? But you don't do that. You've just got through wasting two weeks on this pc through having wrapped a

couple of telegraph poles around the pc, and then the pc around the telegraph poles for good measure. You're all set now, so you're not going to – you're not going to get caught this time. We know this now.

All right. "You mind if I check that again? This – is this an actual GPM? Is this an implant GPM? That – that reads. Did you protest that?"

"Well, no."

"Is this an implant GP...? (Gee, tha – that reads, you know.) All right, do you – you – you mind if I get the – get the mid ruds-mid ruds in on this goal?" And we come back and we check it again: "Is this an actual GPM? Is this an implant GPM? Is this no GPM? Is this only a goal? That reads. All right. Let's get in the session mid ruds here just to make sure that everything is straightened up all right, because we've got to be sure. Just – *uuuh!* – wasted two weeks on this other GPM. All right, good enough now. Is this is a – is – is this a – only – only a goal? All right, that – that's fine. Now, let's get in – let's get in these – only a goal, yeah. Well, let's get in – let's get in a couple of buttons on the session mid ruds anyway and get these in. In this session, has anything been protested? So forth, so on, so on, so on, so on, so on. All right, thank you. In this session has anything been decided? All right, all right, all right, good, good, all right. Now let's continue this goals list. All right, let's continue this goals list. Is that okay?"

Pc sitting there, "Huh? Find it very hard to list," and so on.

"Well, just – just go ahead. On this list, has anything been suppressed?"

"Well, you sort of suppressed the idea that we already found the goal. I thought the list was complete."

"Well, all right, fine. Got that, thank you. Now, all right, who or what would 'to dance' oppose? All right."

Pc obligingly gives you a whole bunch of new goals. Meantime the actual GPM is all being beautifully suppressed. Then two weeks after that, you suddenly remember that there was a point where the pc was running well and you went back to it to see what was happening at that point, and find out that you had the goal in the first place. And the reason the thing changed from the read of actual GPM over to the read of an implant GPM – the reason that changed – is because the pc was saying to himself and didn't bother to tell you, "Why the hell aren't we running it? Why aren't we running this?"

And he thought that at the time you asked the question, "Is that an implant GPM?" This factually you'll never recover. You understand? You don't get that datum back, but that's actually what happened.

You were going to be *very careful* and you were going to *double-check*. So the second time you checked it, the pc's objections give you an incorrect analysis. That's many complications.

In another case, the reason why you're going to make mistakes, and that's for sure, is the pc is not ready to have an analysis done. The tone arm is still moving. The needle is still blowing down. The pc is still cognizing on this goal, see, "to be a snob." There it still goes,

pshewww! Every once in a while you'll see it go out from under. You think it has now quieted down.

Now, actually the impingement of your voice on the bank, of *your* voice on the pc's bank, is enough to cause – during a particularly blowdown period when waves of heat and that sort of thing are coming off the pc – your voice against the pc's bank is sufficient to produce a rocket read.

Well, look – look. The charge is blowing off, see, and every time it blows off you get a long surge, and you're watching that tone arm come down by long surges – sporadic, occasional surges. Well, look, it got down here to 3.25 and it's all ready to blow down to 3, and all it does is need the slightest zephyr breathing upon it, you see, to trigger it. You get the idea? I mean, it's all set to be triggered, if you'd sat there just a little bit longer and let it blow down all the way. But you thought you estimated it properly. It's still got a way to blow down, don't you see?

Pc's a little bit introverted thinking about this thing of he's – how he's *zuh, zuh, zuh* – this – this accounts for the fact that he can only have Daimlers, you see, or something like this, but he can never afford them and that sort of thing, and really doesn't like them, and so on. He'll say, "That's *zuh, zuh* Daimlers," and so on and so on and so on "and that's why I always went round with tall, blond girls, you see," and so on, so on, and on and on and you know, like this. Still very introverted.

You think the blowdown has stopped. So you say, "All right, we're going to check this now. Is that all right with you?"

And he wakes up, "Oh, yes, perfectly fine, life is wonderful," you see, in a sort of a foggy, dope-eater's daze, you see? Life is wonderful. "Oh, yes, it's all right," and so on. "You – oh, you know best, you know. Good old little auditor. That's fine, we got this – we got this nice goal here, 'to be a snob.' All right."

"Now, now, good enough, good enough, now. Okay. Now is this an actual GPM? Hm?" There's no read there, you see? "All right. Is this an implant GPM?"

"*What! My goal an implant GPM?*" See? "*No!*" See? Rocket read on the protest and the triggered charge. That goal will now continue to read as a wrong goal. And with all of the cares of observation and everything else that you can do, you still can't avoid, once in a while, making one of those wild everything-was-just-exactly-wrong-at-that-moment-for-you-to-have-said-what-you-said-in-order-to-get-that-read. See?

So anything that can make a meter go out, or any condition which will give you an erroneous read on a meter, is then susceptible to throwing out a case analysis. And your own efforts to straighten out a case analysis are susceptible to throwing out a case analysis. And a case analysis can be wrong in the first place.

All right. Those are the nerves with which you live. At least know you live with them. Something like the Gentleman who was going to teach his young boy his first lesson in business, and sent him up to the top of a stepladder and told him to jump, that Papa would catch him. And so the little boy jumped and Papa stepped aside, and there was a tremendous upset

at this particular point, and "Why didn't you catch me?" He said, "That was your first lesson in business: Don't trust anybody – not even your papa." [laughter, laughs]

All right, now, that's the way it is – that's the way it is with your E-Meter, see? That's the way it is with your E-Meter. And yet if you don't trust it you'll never get anyplace either.

These, in actual fact, are really the exact conditions under which R4 is performed.

So you see very clearly that if there are three zones of auditing – basic auditing, the technique or process as your second zone, and case analysis is your third zone – you see that with all these conditions occurring, you haven't got any time to be worrying about how you perform the technique or your basic auditing. You haven't got any time to be worrying about those things, because all of that is going to be subtractive of the real and terrible liabilities of case analysis. And the liabilities I've just been giving you are simply the liabilities of case analysis.

No matter how carefully your basic auditing was performed, no matter how well you knew the technique, no matter for all of these things, your case analysis is still liable to error. And will *always* be liable to error, because you're getting your case analysis from a blind man who is lost in the dark and doesn't even know who he is, where he is or what he's looking at, even though he's perfectly well trained and beautifully educated in the subject to know. The best blind man caught in the dark isn't going to be able to tell you. The only thing that's going to be able to tell you is a meter, and that meter, while when it reads is perfectly accurate, what is it reading on? We're not quite sure of that, and so from that point on we have no time at all to be worrying about our basic auditing.

That's something you should be able to do. You got a headache, you got a backache, you haven't had anything to eat, you feel dizzy, you feel confused, you are very faint, you have just had a terrible session yourself, you are halfway through a wrong goal, and life is looking awfully grim – you should be able in the basic auditing division to turn in a flawless session. That's part of the preselection: to be able to turn in a flawless session. There's no excuse for not doing so. Why? It's very easy to do. Providing you can do it. So there you are.

Technique? Man, this bank and this pc that you're facing – to keep seven Indian clubs in the air is a simple action compared to getting them to sit there all assembled and not ARC breaking and running down the wrong corridors and getting everything upset, even though they're trained and they know what they're looking at and they're well grooved in and their case is not in bad condition and they've still got the ability to confront their bank to some degree and they're not scared to be a pc and horrified at what might happen to them. That's still like keeping seven Indian clubs in the air simultaneously. See?

So your technique: You've got to be able to sit there and dish off a list, a goals list – *plaff-plroof*, who cares? Goals list, fifty-odd down the line, well write it upside down, it doesn't matter, see? Basic auditing going off perfectly; goals list, *blah-blah-blah*, it doesn't matter and so on, down the line, all flawless, perfectly, every read recorded over here and everything's fine, perfect.

But you haven't got any time to worry about being able to do that. You've got no time at all to worry about any: "Let's see, how do I head a goals list? Let's see, how do I head a

goals list? I was supposed to write the question up here, I think. Yes, let's see. And how do I write this first goal down? Let's see. I'm having an awful time keeping this. Where do you keep a meter here? Write a goals list. You – you keep a meter from out here, so on and so on. That's – can't really see the meter. It's – it's this... Can't really see the front of the meter while I write the goals list, and so forth – I'm not – excuse me, I'm having an awfully hard time trying to get this meter oriented..."

It's perfectly all right to have problems like that, but let's have them all smoothed out before we get into the raw meat of running a case, see? There's all kinds of interesting solutions that auditors make with regard to it. The paper slides up this way and that way, and they work these things out, and they start subtracting things from the things they can record and keep track of. For instance, how much tone arm can you keep track of while doing a goals list? Well, I frankly can't keep track of much more than doing a fall and a blowdown while doing a hot goals list on a pc. I'm doing very well to keep track of the falls and blowdowns and the amount of the blowdown. And that's why you need a counter. And a counter which won't subtract [distract] you. The first counter that was developed, by the way, I rejected categorically because it distracted the auditor too much.

So you see, at this point you have no reason for the technique to be posing you any difficulties at all, because you've got no room for it, that's all. You can't be having trouble with technique. How do you do a goals list? See? How do you do an items list? These things should not be an enormous puzzle to you. Otherwise they just take that much out of the session; they cause you to make a lot of mistakes, in other words. You got to have those things licked. And this leaves this tremendous zone of case analysis.

And you should be able to think bank. That certainly sounds funny, doesn't it? Because a bank is for thinking. A bank thinks. A bank pushes thoughts off on people, so forth. Well, there's another point of preselection. You should be able to think perfectly and accurately about a pc's bank which you're not looking at except through an E-Meter, and by signs and data, and you're thinking perfectly about a bank, and the bank is something that thinks. And your bank also kicks around a little bit while you're thinking about the pc's bank, inevitably, a little bit. And so the final analysis is, that's enough trouble. Because that is a big point of randomness. And in auditing R4, that should be the only point of randomness – is, "Exactly what is happening with this – with this bank I am handling? Exactly how is it going together? What are the contributive data I have to make up my mind about the situations in this bank?" And that is plenty for you to handle.

I know, it got plenty for me to handle. I don't – I don't want to handle anything else but that, see? Because that's plenty. Because that's the one that gets you mistakes. And with a perfectly free mind and with perfect education on the subject, you're still going to make errors. But if errors are the things that cause you to stretch the case out endlessly, then we want to minimize these errors. Well, the way to minimize these errors is with perfect training in the zones, oddly enough, of basic auditing and technique, and then the elements of case analysis. And with that three-way triangle there of training, you can make OTs and you can be OT, because you only really get auditing of the level which you yourself give, in the final analysis.

If you don't give good auditing, why, you actually don't tend to receive good auditing. It isn't for the reason of the overt-motivator sequence, it's just the people who will co-audit with you. I mean, there's one point, you see? You can always get worse auditing than you give, to some slight degree, so if your auditing is pretty poor, and the auditing you're going to get is worse than your auditing, think what happens. And that gets to be a grim scene, doesn't it? In fact, I can almost guarantee it. You'll always get slightly poorer auditing, ordinarily – you can view it safely from this viewpoint – than you yourself give. Therefore, if you're a real whiz-bang, your auditing you get won't be so bad.

Now, the training levels and so forth, then, and training, is *definitely, definitely, definitely* a part of the route to OT. *Definitely*. Degrees, levels, training. This is something that it's not nice to be a part of, this is something that is a vital part of becoming OT. And I would say that we have gone and – we've gone up to a new plateau here. Because you've noticed here, in the last few lectures I have given you particularly, I've been talking to you pretty straight from the shoulder about this sort of thing; I've been giving you exactly what the score was and so on.

Now, the best reason for that is, is there are several people rolling up thing right here at this moment on the goals channel, going right straight to OT. And there isn't any quiver on that line; there's just the incidental mistakes of straightening out the goal and that sort of thing. In other words, we are on our way, definitely. And it's from this factual data that one can view this other with aplomb. Our interest in the state of Clear is so microscopic as to be a yawn, see; it's of no importance at all. The state makes somebody more comfortable – so what? You can make a sick man more comfortable by putting a pillow under his head, see?

Raw meat – very nice. You can make them well. Good. Fine. Well worth doing. There's nothing wrong with that at all. You can make a marriage run better and a kid be happier, and you can make life tenable and so forth. But actually you have to know to audit well in that direction just to make life tenable enough for you to be able to go on through to OT. That's a necessary zone, too. Actually a non-Scientologist is so surrounded by confusion that their present time is insufficiently calm for them to have any progress in the direction of OT.

These are other preselections and so forth. Many are called, few are chosen. There are many reasons why this track and path is a limited track and path. Now, it isn't going to say that eventually everybody won't make OT. But certainly, certainly and definitely and positively, it'll be a very, very long route for others, and you'll still be getting around to some hundreds of years, thousands of years from now. There'll be somebody picking it up, saying, "Well, let's see, what's this thing called tone arm action?"

Now, when you look up the line on that and get a real view of the situation, you realize where you are and where you sit. You're right up in the front seat of the first breakthrough that's ever been made in this universe on the subject of the road out, the way through – that sort of thing. You're right there. You're fortunate to have moved up into the situation that you're in. And the only thing I can ask you and point out to you is that you're in a position where you shouldn't waste any of the potential which you have immediately at your fingertips. You shouldn't waste any part of that. The only thing I ask you to do is to make the most of what you've got.

I've tried to give you an outline of training, its use and application, and its relationship to state of case and future of case, and I hope it has been of some assistance.

Thank you.

R4 Auditing

A lecture given on 26 November 1963

Thank you. [continuing applause] Well ... Thank you.

Is that because I haven't seen you in so long? [laughter]

All right. This is the what of what?

Audience: Twenty-sixth November.

Twenty-sixth of November. How did it get to be that? Well, Saint Hill Special Briefing Course.

[part missing]

Well, we're very glad you're here. You're just in time to be launched for Saturn. Some people are very clever. Some people are very clever and arrive right on the spot at the exact moment necessary to resolve the case. And the new students have been.

Of course, they don't have the old-timers' claw-and-paw-through-it-all uncertainty. "Will we ever make it? Will Ron make it? Is it possible? Well, I see we've shifted again to... Well, I guess that wasn't so good, you know." Scientology, Dianetics in the last thirteen years.

Now we got it pretty well taped these days. Too well. So the romance has now gone out of it. [laughter] We can take somebody now by the nape of the neck off the street and bit by bit and edge by edge and level by level, push him right straight through out the top beyond any target man ever dreamed of.

The techniques are all there. It doesn't mean that as you hit the top level that it isn't a... we used to have a tightwire walk across the Grand Canyon that we used to use as an example, you know?

Well, actually, the tightwire is a little bit of an overstatement in the matter. That's – that's putting it up too high. Actually, it's a busted spider thread across the top of the Grand Canyon. There are going to be some people, even good auditors, who get up there and walk around for quite a while trying to get their big toe on the edge of it, see?

The levels that you see as they come up the line all look very confident and they're all very fine till you get to the highest level. And there the best trained pc – the best trained pc reaches with his ballet slipper for the near edge of that spider thread, you see, and goes over and grabs hold of the small cedar tree five hundred feet down and climbs back up again laboriously, gets to the edge; at that moment the auditor inadvertently steps on his fingers. [laughter] This sequence of dramatic events continue for some time until he is safely out over the middle of the canyon with nothing below him and the roaring water thousands of feet down. And at that point – at that point, he gets a wrong goal. The umbrella collapses on him, don't you see, and he's lefted there in suspended animation.

The only way he can possibly make it is his case shape is now sufficiently good that he can maintain suspended animation in empty space.

It isn't that it – it isn't that it isn't frightening and it isn't that it isn't spectacular. He just happens to be able to do it at this particular point.

I know. I've seen them now until you get a bank "to spit," you see? And "to spit" has – this is an alleged GPM for "to spit" – has thirty-two items in it, you see, without any of them having reached up to the crossover, see? None of these – all the items on the terminal side are still in favor of the goal – this is quite remarkable – if they are in favor of anything. And they have certain things like "blacksmith's forges," you see, and so on. Well, you maybe could tie that in to "spit" and that sort of thing. That's fine. And they have "World War II" and "catastrophe," and "my mother's handkerchief," and well, that's probably connected with it in some particular fashion. [laughter] And "barrel organs."

Well, "a steam calliope," you might be able to see it, you see, but "a barrel organ." After a while – after all and so on. And the opptermis that these things solve are such things as "the Constitution," "clouds." Clouds? That might possibly make it, you see. "The ocean." That might possibly make it, too, and so forth. "Library books," we can't quite see how that connects. [laughter] And we look at these things and we'll say, "Well, there's something you can conclude about this. That something has either been overlisted or underlisted or it's an implant GPM or it's only an actual goal, or, or, or, or, or." In other words, there are about eight things you can conclude that would be wrong, and you have to conclude that it's at least one of those eight.

Or it's simply that the auditor is finding far too many items for that bank. You know, a bank usually runs from twenty to twenty-four items. And somewhere in the vicinity of ten to twelve items from the bottom, you've reached the crossover and the items – terminals above that point are no longer for the goal. They are against it on a gradient.

So we see all kinds of wild things and if we don't know our business, why, there it is.

Well, we got an impression from this that it is a long road and that it is a complex road and that it's very difficult. The most difficult end of it, however, is finding the present time GPM. That's the most difficult end of it and of course at that point we find the auditor the least experienced, the pc the least experienced and the hardest part of that to find is the existing, latest terminal of the present time GPM, which of course is not the top terminal. It's just how far up this bank has gotten, don't you see.

And to find that terminal then becomes the touchiest, trickiest piece of auditing ever done. And this is being done by a wholly inexperienced pc and it is being done by an auditor who is just getting his feet wet, particularly with this pc.

The hardest part of it is practically the beginning of it, and this operates as quite an effective bar-out. However, it is resolvable. The funny part of it is that you can't mess up a right item or a right sequence. Now, by that I don't mean that you can't get items in wrong places or GPMs in juxtapositions which you can. But even though you list and list and cross list and suppress and get wrong items and everything else, the funny part of it is the actual bank is still there ready to be run out when somebody hits the happy combination. You cannot wreck a case. You can only kill a pc. That's something for you to console yourself with.

After he gets back from the between lives area – they aren't able to wreck the case either, don't you see – and he picks up another body, why, somebody will be able to audit him just as before. They will find the bank a little scrambled, but they can go through it and get what it is. This is very remarkable.

The only thing that doesn't disappear is the incorrect item, the improperly worded goal, the wrong goal. These things – these things don't disappear. As a matter of fact, they tend to appear, which is another thing that adds some misery to the passage. They tend to appear.

If you find a goal on somebody "to have big ears," I swear his ears would start growing, if it's a wrong goal. If you see somebody dramatizing an item that was found yesterday, that's a very sure proof that it was a wrong item.

The validation of a wrong item tends more than anything else to throw it into the behavior pattern of the pc, which is quite interesting. Somebody has an item "to be mean" or a GPM, let us say, "to be mean." It happens to be a wrong goal, but it's been validated like mad and he believes implicitly and the auditor believes implicitly that this happens to be a correct rendition. And by George, that pc will get mean. That's a way of testing it out because, you see, when you've found a right one, it ceases to have power of making the pc dramatize and when you find a wrong one and say it's right, it is now possessed of power to make the pc dramatize. An unimportant point but a little side commentary; it's just something that makes the way a little more arduous.

We find a goal "to be tired," and it happens to be just – just a goal. It's only a goal. It's not an actual GPM at all. And we find this thing "to be tired."

And it's found just at the end of the pc's intensive. And he goes for a week now before he gets audited again and during that entire week he will be completely exhausted. And he'll know what it is. It's that goal that is making him this way.

And this consoles him and so on. However, in the first few minutes of play of the following intensive, the goal is discovered not to list. The RR turns off, something catastrophic occurs and somebody finds that this is not a right goal. And they go ahead and continue the list and null it down and find the right goal for the list, and "to be tired" has nothing whatsoever to do with it. At that point the pc tends to cease to be tired.

Now, if we had found the GPM – the correct GPM, "to be tired," and it was the right GPM, then some of the pc's feelings of tiredness would vanish. He wouldn't get more tired. He'd get less tired. This is just side commentary and chitchat that I'm giving you here. It's just, the way is arduous.

You can believe the most horrible things about yourself for a while, you know. You do this list and you get this goal, and it's supposed to be the PT GPM, you see. "To be a thief." And this is ladled out to you as the real McCoy, you see. And you look at that and you say, "Well I know it's degrading, but I should accept it and I shouldn't keep insisting on high-tone GPM and it probably is my GPM and I realize that and I – I did steal some sugar once and..." Just explain it, you see, and go around feeling very degraded and so forth and sort of restraining stealing things, you know?

And then, all of a sudden, it turns out that that happens to be a wrong GPM, you see? Actually, the right one was "to be a saint." Something like this, you see? And maybe that was

wrong, too, but if that was wrong, then you'd go around for the next week or two, you see, with growing a halo. But if it was right, you would cease to be so saintly.

In other words, you get the reduction of aberration with correctness and you get an additive aberration with uncorrectness.

Now, that doesn't mean that this is very disturbing or aberrative, but it does tend to upset somebody. And you'll see this happening and that simply adds some more danger to the line. The killing power of a GPM is not to be questioned. You get a GPM wrapped too thoroughly around somebody's neck and you can kill him deader than a mackerel. I might as well tell that here between us girls and boys it takes some real doing. It would be awful lousy auditing. It would have to be absolutely incredible. You would have had to audit the fellow with his RR off for a whole intensive. You'd had to shove the items down his throat with a thud and disarrange all the GPMs in the bank practically and drop them in front of him when they should have been behind him on the track. You'd have to make some colossal blunders that one – one would really have to work at to accomplish this, but the end product is you could knock off a body with it.

That merely adds to the difficulties. I'm just cheering you up. Long ago you got audited beautifully through your lumbosis. Now, you haven't had lumbosis for just years until you get into the second GPM and an item which is an incorrect item – the auditor didn't take the first one on the list that fell but made something else read and goes five items beyond it, pain suddenly turns on. Boy, have you got lumbosis. You got lumbosis you never heard of before.

This is more lumbosis than you ever dreamed of, because anything you got rid of in early auditing is going to be found again. Just to cheer you up.

Now, actually, it's only a wrong RI that gives you somatics. Only a wrong GPM that gives you the somatics and the creaks. This is quite interesting.

A right GPM, or a correct GPM – of course, with this one proviso, that on a GPM you can get sufficient invalidation of it, it will act like a wrong goal and give somebody the creaks or somatics. You understand that? You could actually make a right one act like a wrong one.

Well, with that slight proviso, no GPM which is a correct GPM and no item ever turns on any pain of any kind whatsoever if found in proper sequence. They only turn on heat. They do not turn on sen. They do not turn on pain. They only turn on heat. Great, swelling waves of heat. Globular, radiant waves of heat. And that's a properly found item in proper sequence. Nothing but heat. No pain.

This is so much true that if you find pain on an item, you unload. You hit the silk gracefully and with a swan dive. That is the end of that. You go back and find out where you erred. You will normally find that the item two or three back of you on the line plot – two or three items back – still reads. If it still reads, the list it came off of was improperly done. That is to say, there's a higher item, usually, on that list that was the right item. The auditor overshoot the right item, found the wrong item. Naturally, as you try to oppose that item, it will continue to read. You will thereafter usually get nothing but wrong items for the remainder of the bank. That's cheerful, isn't it?

One of your awarenesses will turn up on the fact the pc turns on pain. That means you've got a wrong item right there, which is unlikely, or an item which you have had just

before was wrong. Probably it was an earlier item on the list from which the wrong item came that was the right item. It's already been listed. It's sitting right there. Don't continue lists these days, for heaven's sakes. Try to make the earlier item read.

If these rules don't follow, you are not auditing a right GPM. That is all. You are just doing only a goal or you're getting locks on an implant GPM. There's something wrong with the GPM if these rules don't apply.

This is very precise material. There are only a few elements to handle. These elements we are getting together to show you in terms of actual model form. The new students are very, very lucky. They'll be trained from scratch in this particular technology.

There are only certain objects in the mind and they can only get disarranged in certain ways and only certain things can go wrong with the mind and actually those things are not significances but masses.

Significance, *poof, poof*. Who cares? It's the mass. It's the mass that counts. And these masses are in different shapes, sizes, with different names, behaviors and sequences. And it's all very simple. There's not very much to it, but you'd be surprised how much complexity can come out of four or five different kinds of items. I mean, different kinds of objects in the mind. And you just get variety, endless variety out of the thing. And every once in a while why, you slip from grace as an auditor and omit something from your patter. You forget to ask about implant GPMs.

You know, you'll start saying, "Is this the – this the GPM?" you know, and *wraabow* - and it reads, and you run it and nothing works right, and ooooh my, and you get about ten items later and you – suddenly it dawns on you that this thing isn't following any sequence anybody ever heard of. There's pains turning on in the pc. The thing is going all wrong, your needle's kind of getting stuck up. It isn't too bad, but it just seems to be sour. And nothing seems to be able to get into proper sequence, and that sort of thing. And you brightly do an examination of it again, and you remember that you didn't ask if that was an implant GPM. *Uuuuuuh*.

And you ask it now, and you get a beautiful blowdown, and that is the end of that.

Then, of course, you can have an implant GPM and an actual GPM which have the same name. Have the same goal. There are several like this. Any pc is common enough to pick up one of these because, of course, implant GPMs are designed on the actual bank, except they – this might be of historical interest to you – they really didn't know what an actual bank was composed of.

They knew it had goals and they knew it had RIs, but that's all they knew about it. So obviously they never cleared anybody because those items oppose, and actual GPM items solve. Quite remarkable.

They knew the goals opposed and so they – then they presupposed that the items opposed, and they don't. And so they could just have messed everybody up like fire drill if they had known that other little piece of technology. They didn't know it, so now we have these beautiful implant GPMs that student auditors can practice on. And I think it was very nice of them to provide us with practice material so that people can see what rocket reads look like and see what patterns look like and that sort of thing.

The difference is, of course, that in an implant GPM you always have to use oppose. And in an actual GPM it is solved. Only goals oppose each other in actual GPMS.

Goals always oppose. Items always solve.

So item lists always contain the word *solve*. Goals lists always contain the word *oppose*. And *never any other way*. I won't look at anybody just now so as to be accusative, but I've seen this violated lately.

Items oppose – implant GPM. Distinguishes an implant GPM from an actual GPM. I think it is quite amusing. They didn't know.

No, in an actual GPM, the items always solve. Always solve. "Who or what would solve a caterwump?" It's very seldom a statement of a goal, but sometimes a "too" might occur in the item wording, like well, of course, as silly as, "going too far," but you can actually have "wanting to get out," see? And it might occur in a GPM, you see, that has nothing about "to get out" in it, you know.

A GPM "to not be bothered," see. And it contains this item "wanting to get out." Somewhere on your goals list this pc is going to write down "to get out." Difficult, don't you see?

He's going to put on this list and it's liable to get a read when the whole thing is all charged up because items read on the burden of the whole charge of everything, don't you see? So you get "wanting to get out," which tends to give you something that looks like a goal "to get out."

Well, it's worse than that. Sometimes a lock item will have a goal wording as part of it. I had one myself "Wanting – not wanting to find fault." And the goal read is "to find fault." Three telegraph poles and what was left of Ronnie later, we found out it was an RI, not a goal. "To find fault."

See, I was perfectly willing to say, "Well, all I do is find fault and that's me. I mean, that fits my personality." You know, trying to degrade, degrade to fit myself into this thing. And I got more and more natterly and more and more naggy, you see. And then we finally find out it was just an RI and that was the end of that. Interesting.

But – so there is the source of a goal and the source of trouble. Sometimes you have the tag end of an item that will give you a read like it's a goal. That's rare, but it does occur. The most trouble you'll get into and the most horrible thing that can occur to anybody is this implant GPM and actual GPM which are the same goal, and you pick up an RI out of the implant GPM and you use it to solve, don't you see, and you get the pc running the implant on the track of the implant GPM, thinking you are running the actual GPM while you were doing it.

And you'll get items like "somebody or something with a goal 'to spit'," see? Well, of course, there are no such-you don't have items like that in an actual GPM. You don't have these "somebodys" and "the goal 'to...'" and all of that. That's just implant stuff, see?

They didn't know what they were doing, fortunately. Because if they had really known what they were doing, they would have put those banks together so they did exactly what banks do. And brother, you couldn't have pried a pc apart with a crowbar. That would have made it ten times as hard.

But it's rough enough. You sometimes will take an actual GPM, RI or something like this, get over into the implant GPM, and the RR shuts off. Oh, marvelous.

Now you've got no RR, so it couldn't have been an implant... actual GPM. The RR shuts off because that isn't the wording of the implant GPM exactly, see. Something like that.

Let's say you have an actual GPM "to be a big man," see, actual GPM. And you've got an implant GPM, well, "to be mean" or something, but there's something about a couple of these words, you see, that hang up on each other, don't you know?

And you find the pc over here running on the implant track, and the RR shuts off, so you say, "Well, there is no actual GPM 'to be a big man' because the guy's implant... the guy's RR shut off, so that proves there was no actual GPM here, so we'll abandon it."

I don't know how many sessions later somebody gets bright enough to realize the pc was simply misplaced on the track. That leave you a little bit adrift? Well, it's very simple. You're supposed to be running down this aisle, you see, with the pc, and actually you've gotten an item for which you don't have a goal accidentally from some implant.

So you then follow this item listing that. So you overlist, go around a corner, jump out of the actual GPM, see, and go over into this implant GPM. You're now running in the zone and area of that implant GPM. Guy's RR shuts off, so you say, "To be a big man" – there can't be an actual goal there because the – the RR shut off. Sure test that there's no goal, isn't it?

Well, it's a sure test up to that point. Then you throw it all away, you see. That's the usual thing. Throw it all away. Dump it all overboard. Get rid of it and start anew. And eighty-nine page goals list later, you still haven't found the guy's goal. Naturally, it was the right goal. Pc was just being run in the wrong place.

Oh, you got a lot of fun ahead of you. I'm just trying to paint a bright, sunny, cheerful picture here.

This is rough stuff. I'm not kidding you. But there are rules. There are rules. And those rules take you through. And the thing is all figured out and the only thing that wrecks you on these rules – well, it's like, it's the first fall on the list. Almost invariable. Almost never otherwise than the first fall on the list.

And this, if your pc is in session at all, is usually the first and last item of the list. But it's certainly the first nice fall on the list. The first fall on the list. Actually and factually that. If the pc's running any kind of shape at all, why, that's the way these things start to fall into place. First fall on the list.

You call it back to the pc and it doesn't read, you maybe list a little bit further, you get some charge off or something like this. Go back and try to make that first fall read again. Just because it didn't read is no reason it won't.

Go back there and chew away at it. Unburden it a little bit. Try and list a little bit further, and so forth, and all of a sudden you're staring at this first... you got another read. Oh, boy, something reads beautifully and you try to give it to the pc, and there's something wrong about this thing.

And you go backtracking and read that first fall again. And work it over real good. Nine times out of ten, it all of a sudden caves in. Great, big surge. Great, big, disintegrating rocket read. Blow on down and so forth. And you say brightly, "Is that your item?"

"Yeah. Why didn't you give it to me in the first place?"

"On this item has anything been suppressed? All right. Thank you. That's your item." Crash! Another great, big read.

You know, you can't be convinced that it all doesn't run off easily. You think the auditor shouldn't have to work for a living, see.

You say, "All right, let's just list and list until we see a great big blowdown and a big fall, and then let's take that item and give it to the pc." And then he's in Illinois and then he's in another bank and then he's doing an implant GPM item, and then he's – he's – and so on. And he's getting kind of weird looking and the creaks are turning on in all directions and somebody gets hold of it and they see this big beautiful item that you got, it went just like that on him. Bang! You just had him put down one, two, three items. Just like that. And that third item just went *boom!* And you know, thorough, full loads, wonderful, you know. Just gorgeous. Except you just got through missing three RIs.

Of course, when you oppose that, because you've skipped some RIs, instantly you will skip into another GPM. It's just like sending somebody off with a rocket.

Miss an RI, the item that you get after that might be in the bank you're listing in, but it goes *phheeeuuuu!*

Your next list? Ha, Chicago. Get the idea? That's how you jump from bank to bank. That's how pc's are made to jump from bank to bank. Missing an RI.

Well, it was pretty hard at first to find out where this RR really lived on this list. And that was difficult because we were using "oppose," thinking it was on the same pattern as an implant GPM, when it isn't. Soon as we got to using "solve..." The dangerous item is the first one on the list because sometimes the pc is saying, "Oh..." pc's saying, "Well, I had – I had some good cognitions on that," and so forth. And the auditor's sitting here and he's getting his paper ready, don't you see, and the pc all of a sudden, without any pause of breath or anything like this or any word of warning, says, "guttersnipes."

"...oh, guttersnipes. Yes, Yes. Here's your question, 'Who or what...' and so on.

And you go ahead and list it. You didn't see guttersnipes on the meter. When he said it you didn't see it.

So you go on down, you get a ten- or twelve-item list and nothing's falling and you try to get it into shape and you know ... So you null the whole list. And you go down, "Gutter-snipe, *fluh-uh-uh-uh-uh-huh*" – go down to the end of the thing and you get this big blowing item down here at the end, you say, "That's obviously the pc's item. Ha, ha, ha. First fall on the list. Number ten. First fall on the list. Obvious. There it is. Fell easily and it read right away and the pc apparently happy."

"All right. Who or what would..." – and this thing is crab apples, you see – all right, "Who or what would solve crab apples?" You see?

"Oh? Somebody or something with a goal 'to eat'." *Sabah-bah-ba-bahbah-ba-ba-uh-huh-bah-bah-bah-bah-bah-and* oh, let's hit a couple of more actual GPMS, carom off a couple of engrams, you see, and do a corner billiard, you see, off the Helatrobust.

And we come up with the item "scavengers." Mm. Sounds good. PC says, "All right." So all right, let's oppose "scavengers" now, see?

All right. "Who or what would scavengers solve?" would be your next question. "Well, it's the absence of eating." (Good implant item.) "The starvation, starving people. Those who are starving." (Nice implant item.) That reads. Good, see. Nice. Oh, that's – that's a honey, that's a honey. That's good. Big, beautiful read. Blowdown. Oh, yeah. Yeah. Show the Instructor, you know, it blew down. I mean, there it is. We're all set, you see?

We got this starvation, starvation. All right.

"Who or what would solve starvation?"

"To run away. Running away. Beings who run away. Those who run away. Somebody or something that runs away."

"Oh, that reads. That reads. No, it doesn't read. Somebody or something that runs away. I'm sorry, it didn't read. The upper one, the first fall, that read. It doesn't read. Well, let's see now. Somebody or something that... Okay, give me some more items. Now, who or what would solve starvation?"

"Oh, cooks, restaurants, somebody or something with the goal to eat."

"Somebody or something with a goal to eat. Here, I'll null this."

We got an item – we got an item list here, you know. It's now got twenty items on it. Now I got twenty-five items on it. When we go back nothing reads. You're trying to get this thing to read, and it won't read. Where are we? We're nowhere, man. What happened? Who pulled the rug out?

Pc's starting to say, "Where did you learn how to audit?" You know, starting to pull this line.

"Well, I told you a little while ago that the item was actually 'eating well' and so forth and you didn't listen to me and so forth" and *oooooooooh*.

Well, of course, the actual action that you undertake is traceable back to that list on which "guttersnipes" occurred.

Now, you go back to that. You go back to that list and you read the item that you took off of it. Ten down, see. You read that item and it's got a read on it. It goes *cltsk-cltsk*. You read it and it goes *cltsk*. What does that mean?

That doesn't mean it hasn't been opposed. That is never what it means. That "never" is underscored, as in implants. Never means it is unopposed. I don't care if it rocket reads and stands up on its tail and barks. See, it has nothing to do with it hasn't been listed against, see.

You say, "Well, I found the right item. I found the right item is ticking, but I haven't then properly opposed it. So that's why it's still ticking."

And that's wrong. Cut your throat, because that's never right. Ha-ha – never. Don't ever go daydreaming on this, man.

If after you've done down the list, what would now be on the line plot, even though it's still on your list, I don't care if it ticks, if it rocket reads or if it blows smoke out of the meter, we don't care what is the quality of read, it only means one thing. The item list it came off of is incorrect in that you took the wrong item off the list. You understand?

It's an incorrect action. And that item that ticks is always improper for that location. It's not the next item to it. It's not the item it came from that's improper. It's *it*. It's a very simple one to remember. It sends up a little red flag and waves it, and it ticks. Or it rocket reads or it blows up the meter. We don't care what. That item is wrong.

Now the proper thing to do, you see, would have been just scrub all the rest of this stuff and get back there on that line plot and read the items you found and you get back here – you get back here to crab apples. And it goes clank! Well, you took the list off – take the list off which you got crab apples. The list off which you got crab apples. Understand? Go *earlier* on that list and roll up your sleeves and go to work. Because almost invariable there's an earlier item on that list. It's almost invariable that an earlier item on that list went undetected by you. And in this particular example I'm giving you, it's guttersnipes which was written down when the auditor wasn't watching, and so forth, and there it is. And you read guttersnipes and it doesn't say a thing. Now it's real good and stuck.

You see, you've put a wrong item in its place. So it's got it good and scrunched. Now, it would have been tough enough to make this thing read in the first place. But you've now unloaded an item where it belongs. Now this could be true of any of the ten it – any of the nine items which preceded crab apples. It could be true of any one of those items.

How you going to make that read? It requires nothing but genius, so wrap it up and just do it. You've got to make one of them read.

Only after you have totally convinced that none of them can be made to read in any way, shape or form do you ever extend that list any at all. And that, man, extension of a list is a last resort in modern OT auditing. That's the last resort. That is just, I don't know, it's sort of like throwing in the sponge. You'll usually find out that the item was so burdened that it didn't read well, but now that you've gotten the other item off of it and so forth, you go back and read it and it now will read and blow down. Almost always earlier than the wrong item was located on the list.

You've got ten items on the list, the wrong item was number ten, it's almost invariably – so I never pay any attention to any other circumstances – it's items one to nine on that list. It's one of those items.

Of course, if you're a smart cookie, you never miss a fall. You've got a built-in periscope into your eyeball by which you can see the fall of the meter even while you're arranging the papers. And the pc said something and the meter falls.

I carry this to considerable extent. I'll hear the pc talking about something and I will keep one eye slanted slightly on the meter. And when I get that, and the pc says things – why, I saw one the other day. "Walking fast," the pc said. "I was walking fast." And I noticed that "walking fast" gave an instant rocket read. And I used it as a cross-verification of the bank we were walking into. That's right. The goal was "to be fast."

The pc had offered it up as something else, so I was able to correct the bank through my inspection of what the pc was chattering about.

You can also go far astray on this. The pc suddenly conceives something or other is his next goal or the next oppterm or something of this character and he says something with regard to it and it tends to rocket read and if you bought it right there at that moment without further inspection, you'd probably get yourself into a lot of trouble. And some – because you'll get yourself in enough trouble, you see, by when – sometimes you buy them after inspection and they're still haywire.

See, you've got – you get it into enough trouble with the ordinary methods without being extraordinary. You don't have to work to get into trouble at auditing to OT at all. It's just sitting there at every bend of the trail. It's all over the place, see?

As you're crossing Grand Canyon, if it isn't meteors, why, it's boiling water splashing from below, don't you see? And if it isn't that, it's hurricane winds suddenly springing up. And if the hurricane wind isn't bad enough, it happens to be blowing anvils that day, you see.

You always look for these things. So actually you don't have to be original to make trouble because you see, there's plenty of trouble there with the most ordinary, textbook methods.

All right. Well, there, you see – now you're four items later, pc's got two more, three more banks chewed in, of course, you're just going to go back and continue the list. That's going to solve the whole thing. But the pc's sort of nattery and ARC broke and you've had some session ARC breaks and he's got some overts now on the session and he isn't running so well and he isn't cogniting now nicely and so forth. And he won't start cogniting again until you get out of the little disturbed area that you had him in. Then he starts cogniting again.

Heat is harder to get off and so forth. But these goofs occur. I got halfway down a bank the other night in a pc. Imagine it. Ten items deep. Gorgeous. Ten items running like a startled gazelle and all of a sudden, *guuh* – here was a list. And it was getting longer. I couldn't get anything to read. And that list was getting longer.

Well, I don't exactly subscribe to the school that pcs are better off for having suffered. I don't subscribe to that school. That's an old school of opera, you know. You couldn't sing unless you had suffered, you know, and I don't think that's true of pcs. So as soon as I noticed that list getting a bit overlong, I became cynical concerning the line plot that we already had and went chasing back up that line plot again, just reading each item in sequence, not reading them backwards but reading them in the sequence that they were found.

Always try to read items in the sequence they were found. Always try to read goals in the sequence they were listed. Do it in the sequence they were put down or found. And you'll find out there was much less disturbance.

Sometimes you can make somebody's bank go creaky by reading backwards or suddenly jumping back from a late item to an early item, you know, and the pc – guy goes creak because they still have location in space.

Anyway, so I went chasing back up the bank and I'll be a son of a gun if it wasn't the third oppterm. I just absolutely was willing to spit ballpoints. *Yaaaaaaaooow*. There it sat. The third oppterm. The third one. And here I was at ten. I'll be a son of a monkey. It was sitting there, I call it. *Tick!*, It was saying very nicely. Tick. "Oh, you drunk skunk," I said. *Uuuh huuuuuh*.

So I fished the list out. Former session list. And I fished the list out and went earlier on the list and sure enough it was earlier on the list.

It was up at the top. The danger point of the list is always the first item on, whether that's a goals list or an items list. It's always the danger point.

It had been missed. I had read it, but it couldn't be made to read. I think there was some other little conditions concerning the thing. Been an upset or some – some little minor, additional thing.

Oh, I remember what it was. It was – it had been left that way between intensives and so the item had been sort of gummed up with the period of waiting in between, so it *didn't* list very nicely. It wasn't actually falling nicely as the pc listed and it didn't start falling nicely until it got down to about the fourth item.

Well, you're not very critical when you see that the fourth item fell when called to the pc, blew down very nicely, pc was happy with it, everything solved in all directions and it listed very well and apparently stayed in the bank and everything was happy and cheerful from there on out. You're not very critical of it, you see? You go and buy the thing. But it was ticking, and I found the earlier item was, I think, number one on that list. *Aaaah*. I beg your pardon. I beg your pardon. I've just given you a piece of misinformation. I just remembered it utterly. It was the item just above it and the pc had *added* the item that I found. And that was when I learned that items with pain on them – I had been noticing this before – the item had a momentary pain on it when given to the pc. It wasn't the third item. It was the fourth. It was the list from the third item that was in error.

All right. That's beside the point. It was simply earlier on the list by one item. Heart-breaking. Of course, that took the line plot and that was it.

He now only had three items on the line plot. I put the fourth item on the line plot that I had gotten in and just proceeded straight from there. I didn't try to sell the pc any of these other items. You never give the pc anything. Don't give the pc a thing that they've had before. Just scrap it from there on, man. That's it. Finish.

You sit there, you think you've got ten items in the bank and suddenly you have three items in the bank. The fall – roof falls in just like that. Now you don't have ten items in the bank. You don't have. Maybe some of those items will come up later and the pc will put them on the list and maybe they will all line up later, but only if the pc put them back on the list again.

Sometimes an auditor probably will be seen kind of shoving the line plot at the pc saying, "Don't you want some of these items there? There's some nice items there. You have nice items there?" and so forth. *Mmmm-mm*. You want to ARC break a pc, try it, because they're probably all out of – scramble in sequence and anything else. And usually they're mostly locks. The pc just launches off at that long – that wrong item. He just launches off into locks and he gets nothing but locks and other bank items after that and so forth.

And then he may freakily, through another double mistake, double back into the bank and actually get an actual RI and then for two or three items it runs straight, you see. But then it goes out of the bank again because you got the bypassed charge, and so you can't – you don't know which ones of those things are straight, so you can do nothing with any of them.

So you just take off where you corrected and proceed from there. And if you're very, very lucky and if you said your Sunday school lessons very well and stayed out of Dallas*, you'll get – you'll get yourself a situation there where the pc will suddenly put a pair back on the list. Say, "Oh, yes. That's railroad locomotives and drunk engineers. They belong there. Oh, that's where they belong. Yeah oh, that's where they belong. Yeah, that's right."

But it's only in the course of listing, and you write them down on the new list. There are – just – just go on writing on your new list, just as though he never heard of them before. That's what a mistake on an item means. And that's how you correct. And that's where you straighten them out. And that's how you hold it in line.

It is adroit. An item list of two items should be regarded as moving into the zone of overlisted. Items are usually overlisted. Goals lists are almost always underlisted. Goals lists are almost never complete – almost never. They're so arduous. You take such pity on the pc. You break it off one way or the other and they just never get a complete list. And the pc will add a few goals and you null those. And the pc adds a few goals and you null those. And you just can't find the pc's goal. And you add a few goals and you null those and you add a few goals and finally you get down one for one. The pc will add a goal, you read the goal back and you say, "That doesn't read." And the pc adds a goal, you read the goal back, you say, "It doesn't read." Echo metering. Whatever the pc says, you say it and look at it on the meter.

Actually, that's about the grimmest thing that can happen. And you know why it's grim? Because the goal, with a complete list, may have been five or six. Number five or six on the list. Way up at the beginning.

The moral of this story – the moral of this story is to do a complete list before you null it. That is the moral. And in view of the fact that's almost impossible to guarantee, when you don't find it on your extended list, at once renull the whole cotton-picking early list.

You should always be *terribly* thorough on goals lists. A goals list is an arduous, mean, vicious, mechanical, clanking proposition. It is done: What goal went up *ha-ha-ha*, oh that goal went up *ha-ha*. *Wawawawawa*. *Wawawawawawa*. *Wawawawawawa*. That's with fall, with the RR, with the tick, with the fall, with the blowdown, watching the tone arm, watching the tone arm over here. Does the tone arm have motion left in it? Finally, we get down to no tone arm motion.

Now we begin to watch for the last fall on the list. And we finally find the last fall on the list. And then we go fifty beyond it. We go, not forty-nine, not thirty-eight, not fifty-seven. We go fifty. Five-0.

How big is a fall? A fall is a distinguishable read that might be the fall of a goal.

You will find that if you continue a list beyond that fifty flat point with no TA, that you start roughing up the pc's needle. The pc starts listing himself off that section or area of the time track and starts listing himself into other areas and you start crimping up the bank. And other evils set in.

So a goals list is complete when you have totally run out of TA – no TA action and fifty beyond the last decent-looking fall on the list.

* Editor's note: LRH alludes to the fact that President J.F.Kennedy was assassinated on a visit to Dallas four days before this lecture.

A finished goals list has a very smooth, beautiful, complete-looking needle. Nothing goes off on it. Nothing, man. I mean that thing is just flowing, just dry, smooth as a little river of butter.

And when you null it, a complete list just goes smooth as a river of butter. There's nothing in at all but the pc's goal. And that rocket reads like a startled gazelle. *Pow!* And when you get to it, you just check a couple of more falls on the list to make sure you haven't got two rocket reads on that list and you give the pc the goal.

It is a bad policy to continue nulling the goals list for the next three or four sessions after you have found the pc's goal. That is not good policy. It puts a certain amount of strain on things. Actually, it invalidates the pc's goal.

You can always tell if the pc's goal is on the list. Not by standing and chanting at the meter, "Is this goal on the list? Is this a complete list? Is this an inc..." I wouldn't give you two nickels – man, I wouldn't give you any communist money for the value of a question like "Is this list complete?" I've just never seen the question correct.

See, I don't care whether it reads or it doesn't read. I've just gotten to a point now where I know what questions will Ouija-board and what questions won't. And that one won't Ouija-board. "Is the goal on the list? Is the goal not on the list? *Heh-bah-heh-beh-thaa?*" I don't know.

Will the United States be here long? Will the United States not be here long? Silly questions, see? Everybody knows what's going to happen to it. It won't be here long. Obviously.

Now, there is a way of telling. (Not unless they get some cops.) There is a way of telling. There is a way of telling. Is this pc in a relaxed, un-ARC broken frame of mind? That's about the first test. Seem happy when you finished the goals list? When a pc refuses to list, you usually only have to put in Suppress and the pc goes on listing. You don't even have to tell him to go on listing, you see? His stopping listing and his nattering have nothing to do with that. But when you finally finish this list, the pc seem calm? Seem happy? Relaxed? Is that needle flowing nicely? The last few goals that went on the list, did they disturb the needle in the slightest? Or did they just leave that needle completely smooth? When he said them, nothing happened.

These are all tests. And a very, very important one: Has pc got heat? Did some heat come off? Start coming off? Is this list kind of blowy?. Is the pc getting heat now? Somewhere did heat turn on on this list? Not pain – heat. Some heat turn on? Man, if some heat turned on, that goal is on that list. That right there. You can go to it at once. Bark, bark, bark. And there it'll be. Reading beautifully.

Now, that's what a complete goals list actually looks like. Those questions were all answered one way or the other.

But if he didn't turn on heat, it still doesn't invalidate the list.

Now, what you'll run into sometimes on nulling a goals list, I should remark on. Because it's quite amazing and mad.

Violate audit with a moving tone arm, you know. Saying things to the pc while the tone arm is moving, you see. Do things while the tone arm is moving, you see. That's a viola-

tion of basic auditing. And of course, a lot of violations of basic auditing gets you into trouble in doing these upper-level processes. In fact, it all requires basic auditing which is a long, smooth – you know, you don't even notice it. The auditor and the pc don't even notice the basic auditing that's in progress. That's the best kind of basic auditing to occur.

And when you get this long, smooth list and the pc's had heat, you've got another little hurdle that just makes life just a little bit interesting. And I'd better tell you about this because you're going to run into it sometime. You're going to be totally baffled. It isn't seldom that you run into it. You run into it quite frequently as you start the pc. The pc's getting more and more OT, don't you see? And his meter's reading easier and easier and easier. And this phenomenon turns on better and better and better.

You're auditing while the tone arm is moving. In other words, you've started nulling the list, see. Bark, bark, bark; and all of a sudden you see big surges start off of this thing, you see. And surges go off of this thing. Tone arm's blowing around here and so forth.

Well, I don't particularly stop and twiddle my thumbs just because this – I go on and null the list because you could waste an awful lot of time doing something like that, don't you see?

Nevertheless, it's a violation of basic auditing to be – for the auditor to be acting while the tone arm is moving; and this is the kind of silliness which now occurs if you violate that, if you're not awfully slippery. And you're for sure going to violate it because you're not going to sit there when you get to this level of auditing for a half an hour waiting for some tone arm action to disappear before you give the pc his goal, see. He will finally ARC break on you.

Any vocal impingement on the pc causes a rocket read. And, man, if you don't know that, you're going to be in more trouble.

Now let me give you the exact statement. Any vocal impingement on the pc may give you a rocket read. That's very accurate. And most of them do.

So you say anything to the pc, like you read him the next goal, and of course it appears to rocket read. And you read him the next goal and it appears to rocket read; and you read him the next goal and it appears to rocket read. Or you've got a goal and it appears to rocket read and you go down the line five more and it appears to rocket read. So you say you've got two rocket reading items on this list, so therefore... This is only true, you know, when you're getting this blowdown. You've already seen this meter blowing around and the pc has had heat. Those things are vitally necessary before this other phenomena that I am telling you about takes place. This doesn't take place unless you've had heat, see, on the thing. And you say, "Well, there's two rocket reading goals on the list. Let's extend the list."

Two rocket reading items on the list, the rules say extend the list. But you didn't have two rocket reading items on the list. You had two rocket reading vocal impingements on the pc. Actually his bank is simply sitting there right in front of you and you're not actually hitting the pc with anything, but your voice can actually impact a bit of the bank. And every time it impacts a bit of the bank, of course, it blows a huge surge into this meter. And you say, "cats," and you'd get a surge on the meter.

You get – your vocal impingement is what's kicking your meter. And you can read this actually very directly after heat is turned on in a goals list. This is something to know because

sooner or later, before you get to be an old veteran at this, you're going to ARC break a pc by refusing to give him his goal because everything on the list is reading.

At this particular time the pc can unfortunately get upset while this blowdown is going on, and a pc can get sufficiently upset that you're going to get the Protest rocket reading. So now anything you say rocket reads and any protest the pc has rocket reads, and then there are occasional surges going on anyhow.

Now, you try to walk yourself through that much rocket reading and that much contradictory information. Now we try to do a case analysis, see. Got a nice, blowing-down goal, see. Going to do a case analysis, see?

"Is this an implant GPM?" Rocket read.

"Is it an actual GPM?" Rocket read.

"Is this only a goal?" Rocket read.

"Is this just an item?" Rocket read.

Now, sometimes it isn't that consistent, so you don't notice it. You say, "Is this only a goal?" Rocket read.

"Is this an implant GPM?" No read.

"Is this an actual GPM?" No read.

Ah, well, it's only a goal. All right. Well, let's check this out again.

"Is this an implant GPM?" Rocket read.

"Is this an actual GPM?" Rocket read.

"Is this only a goal?" No read.

What's going on here? What's going on here, see?

Well, what you're actually doing, you're just bucking away at a blowingdown meter. And this – this pc is throwing off charge and heat and everything else and you really shouldn't be doing anything, by the basic rules of auditing.

Your voice is then causing your own rocket read, you see. Your voice hits his bank, and if it's this way and that way, it either always or occasionally causes the meter to go bang.

And you will notice this once in a while. I've seen an item list – failure to give a pc an item on an item list – and I've seen a pc – an item list with six items on it, with the pc blowing down on the right item, but the right item not spotted by the auditor. With six items then, reading, and a blowdown in progress, no matter what was read to the pc; the pc ARC broke at the same time and so not being informative. Pc ARC broke, of course, because you haven't given him the item. How can you give the pc the item? You've got six items on the list. You've got six rocket reads. Any one of them will rocket read. You can't tell which one of them is and which one of them isn't. Well, that whole trouble and upset causes from flying into the teeth of a moving tone arm, trying to do case analysis, locate items and that sort of thing.

Your proper action, of course, is to sit quietly back and let the tone arm stop moving. Now you'll have to do that on item finding. You can't possibly afford to do it on goals lists.

But you have to do it on item finding. You say to the pc – you've got this thing reading, you see. *Pow!* You say – all right, you say – and you've seen that the blowdown starts, and so you say, "Is that your item?" Now you really see it read. Big surge, see, and the pc's got more confidence in it, you see. Big surge and you got more confidence, and you'll see this thing blowing down. You're just a fool if you say a thing. You're just being a fool. You're just making trouble for yourself. I mean you just must be silent at that point. Just be silent. Just keep your big yap shut. Don't say a word. And let that thing blow down.

Now, it frankly is only going to take it about thirty seconds to blow down. Where you're going to take your big error is waiting for ten minutes for it to finish off all of its tone arm action and of course you're just going to waste a lot of auditing time doing that.

No, you want to get the major read off of that. And it's come down here now to let's say – this is not the – you just don't pay any attention to this numeral – but let us say it has come down to 3.2. See, this is just an example.

It's blown down to 3.2. It doesn't seem to be moving now. You say, "All right. That's your item."

Now shut up. Because first you said, "Is that your item," don't you see? See? You say, "That reads. Is that your item?"

Let me show you a sequence here.

"That reads," you're saying, "Grapevine, grapevine. Anything on that been suppressed? Grapevine. That reads. Is that your item?"

You're going to see *pssseeeeeew*. More confidence, because you're asking him if it's his item, you see.

"Oh, yeah," he says. "Oh, yeah, that's fine. I mean that's my item. That's my item. That's my item. " *Zooooooooo*.

This thing comes down here about 3.2, see. You didn't say a word while it was doing it. He's terribly introverted. He won't notice that you're being silent. He isn't expecting anything to happen.

He's looking at this. What do you know, you know?

Now it's at 3.2, and it appears to be momentarily stable at 3.2.

Don't sit there and wait for the next half-hour to see if it's going to move again or you're going to get into a mess.

You now say to the pc – you now say to the pc, "That's your item."

"Good. Whoa. Good. I thought that was my item, see." *Bsssoooooooooosh* – 2.8. Comes down to 2.8, apparently stable.

Now the pc says, "Yeah, you know, all of a sudden, every time I get in the car and I see a girl and so forth and so on, I get this great – and she tells me a rumor or something like that, I almost go mad, you know. And it's so on. But I'm always wanting to find out what it is and I never want to hear it. And this is a terrible situation I've been in, and so forth." And this thing is going *pocketa-pocketa-pocketa-pocketa*. And you're getting tone arm motion, tone arm motion here and so on. And he finally shuts up.

You'll find that by the time he shuts up, your meter's probably recovered this – don't pay any attention to these figures, they're just relative, you see – maybe recovered to 3.5.

Now if you hang around that corner drugstore, and you wait around leaning against that telegraph pole, you going to wrap somebody around it. There's a nice piece of timing. It's now regained the height it's going to regain. And you'll see that meters do this. They regain this higher level. The tone arm action's gone out of them. You've just seen the new item move into place and the old item go away – because the meter's regained it slightly.

And you say, "All right, see. Now we're all set here. That was *yackety-yackety-yackety-yackety-yacketa*." Now let's blow some more charge out of this thing, see. You don't – it doesn't have to have regained anything for you to blow this charge out, but I'm just giving you an example.

You say, "All right. Would caterwumps solve a grapevine?"

Watch your meter at this point, man. Watch your meter. Turn on those big, beautiful eyes of yours and put them right straight on that dial because you want about a two-inch *peeeeeew* when those two items collide. I don't care if he's already said it! You always say it.

He'll sometimes say, "Well, I already told you and so on. Weren't you listening to me? You cut my itsa and so forth; I already told you that caterwumps solve *wra-wra-wra-wra-wra-wra*." I don't care what he said. You always put it in. We don't care if he's said it. We don't care if he put in all the courtesy steps himself. There is still tone arm action left on those courtesy steps put in by the auditor. The auditor is still the auditor and auditing works still because of an auditor.

So we say, "All right." We found this new item. You say, "Would grapevines be solved by caterwumps?" or "Would caterwumps solve a grapevine?" Which is the better wording when you've got an oppterm. Whichever it was. Or both. It doesn't matter. And you watch. You watch and you will see those two items come together and they go *pssssst*. And you'll see about the nicest two-inch *bang* as they hit that you ever wanted to see. Not because you say one or the other of the items, but because you've spoken about them coming together. Would it solve a *blah*? See? And you'll see it go boom. And that's one of your basic proofs that you've got the right item.

When it do not do it, get Suppress in. Do a little something here. Monkey around a little bit. Test this over. Get suspicious. When you've gotten Suppress in, ask him again just as though you haven't asked him before.

Would a caterwump solve grapevines? Pc says, "Oh, yes." And this time you see the two-inch bang. You say, "That's fine." And get off of that, see?

"Now, how does grapevine" – your next step which follows immediately afterwards. You don't have to worry much about the tone arm action. You say – you say, in no uncertain terms, you say, "How would grapevines ... ?" or "How does grapevines relate to ... ?" Now, be careful now. Don't you use that goal wording. Don't you use the goal as an RI. Get off of that.

Don't say, "How would it (grapevines) relate to 'to eat'." Flunk, flunk, flunk. See. Because you're going to pull the goal as an RI up the bank and keep it restimulated. He knows what GPM he's running. Let him worry about that.

So you say, "How would it relate to this GPM?"

Now, he sometimes has to say to himself, "Now, let's see. GPM, it was to eat." Something like that.

There seems to be a question in his mind it'll always come true. Now that's not as reliable a test as saying the goal that you're trying to relate it to. It's not as reliable, but it is less kick-the-pc-in-the-head. See? It's much easier on the pc and it restimulates the bank less.

And you will get another bang and another blowdown. And as soon as you say, "How does grapevines relate to this GPM?" – the proper wording, see – he says, "Oh, well, it's so and so on and so on, and it's up in the bank and so forth. I guess it's so on and so on, and so on. It's about – it's about the third or fourth oppterm, I guess, and so forth. Yeah, yeah, that's what it is."

You all of a sudden see another blowdown and you'll see your needle. And your needle will go *peeeewsst* again. We blow it out with relationship then to the actual GPM mass. That is your proper step at that particular point.

Now, he may have something to say and he might not have something to say. There might be a little more tone arm action. If so, you could wait it out, but it would just be a matter until it regained a certain level.

Soon as it regains a certain level, your tone arm – you see your tone arm's coming back up and so forth. You might let it come back up a bit. Or let it come back up. Have at him again with the next question, see. Which of course is, "Who or what would solve grapevines?" or something of the sort. Just have him, with the next question, list it down and you're away with the same repeat action.

In actual fact, it takes from four to twelve minutes to ask the question, list the RI, get it to read back, get the tone arm action off, get the courtesy steps in, get their tone arm action off and be ready for the next question. Between four and twelve minutes – somewhere in that vicinity. Sometimes you're rolling hotter than a pistol, the pc's working very, very good and you make up your average in the session by getting one in two minutes or something like that, you see?

But usually your average is a bit more than this. And you'll find your – a session average of once every twelve minutes is perfectly acceptable. A session average of one every hour, I don't know. What are you doing? You must be going on vacations between RIs. Something else going on here. It's not – not the – not what is expected.

Just give you an idea of the expectancy. If you can add up a hundred-and-twenty-minute session of actual auditing in the session, don't you see – a hundred and twenty minutes of actual auditing in the session – and find that you have found ten RIs in that session, the pc is running well, you're going very smoothly, everything is moving fine and so forth.

Don't expect this to happen when you've run into trouble, you've accidentally overshot an item, found a wrong item, you're going back up and have to repatch the bank. You found yourself running a wrong goal and now you've got to have a right goal and the bank is all gummed up and that sort of thing.

This sort of thing is not expected. Now, you're going to have to hunt and punch and grope in the dark and fall over old, odd bits that you've left in the middle of the room, don't

you see. So you won't come up to your average so good and maybe you'll do very well to get one in fifteen or twenty minutes. You're having a rougher time of it and so forth.

But as soon as you get things straightened out and get out of the affected zone that had got kicked around and so forth, it should fall right back to about one every twelve minutes. The thing to do is to get the tone arm action off of those things.

You don't want those things to read anymore. Tone arm action is mainly caused by the discharge of energy in the form of heat on the pc. Those surges, you don't want to get a new item going before the old surges are off, don't you see?

There's a limit at which this takes place. You could, of course, stretch this and take a half an hour to let the surges all come off of the item you found.

I'll tell you a joke. For the last twenty minutes of those, they're coming slowly off the new item you haven't found. You're not finding the surges off the old item.

The pc has moved into the new position in the bank and without even knowing what the RI is, but having some half-dim idea and so forth of it, he will continue to get surges. So the surges off an item actually are those that come off in the first part of the run and down to the last courtesy step of it. Do you got the routine to take? Those are exactly the way you find those things.

I suppose you understand such things as crude as this – that after you've opposed you – "What would the goal – what would 'to eat' oppose? What goal would 'to eat' oppose?" and you've got the new goal "to starve to death," you realize, of course, that you've got to oppose the RI "to eat" – the goal as an RI "to eat" – against the top oppterm of the new GPM you just found.

Well, that is usually fairly easy and it follows the same rules. It's a "solve" question. It is not an "oppose" question. You've found the two goals on "oppose," see, but this is now "solve."

And you say, "Who or what would 'to eat' solve?" is your right question to get that oppterm.

And you normally get them in exactly the same way. It actually doesn't take any more trouble and so forth.

But a wise auditor does a nice little piece of case analysis. He does a nice little dance around the top of that thing after he's got that all taped. He's got the next goal, he's checked it out and so forth, he's found the two top RIs. He's found the top oppterm and he has found the top terminal and so forth. He does not now go like a fast rabbit around the track. He holds hard because the top of the list is the dangerous item, the most likely to be overlooked and the one you're likely to make the most mistakes on are the four top items of which the most dangerous are the top two.

You'll find that most of your mistakes are made in the four top items of the bank, but that the majority of those are made in the first two items of the bank.

And you want to check those out. You want to run a case analysis. After you've found the top oppterm, you found the new GPM, you got that and you got its top oppterm, you now

got its top terminal and so forth and you're all square, you want to run yourself a case analysis.

Is there anything above these things, see? Is there any other item? Are these things correct, see? Are they incorrect? And you're getting some kind of equivocal reads and you can't make out what they are, you should proceed cautiously. Because if you've got a wrong goal – you could have just an actual goal or something like that, but if you've got a wrong goal or something like this, you can get the two top ones – the top oppterm and the top terminal – you can get those. Usually your RR doesn't start shutting down – the length of the fall doesn't start shutting down – until you get the third item.

Now, you don't mess up a pc very much by finding a wrong top item and then having to find a right one. Or find a wrong goal and find its top oppterm and then discard it, and then find a right goal and find its top oppterm. This is not going to mess up the pc to amount to anything.

But if you actually go so far as to find the two – the next goal, the two top RIs and the third and fourth RIs in that new bank – if it is a wrong goal, that's it. The RR is going to go off. And that needle is going to freeze. That needle is just going to freeze absolutely still. And nothing will fall until you start listing for goals. It doesn't matter what you list now, the pc's had it. He has no RR, he has no fall, he has no tone arm action, he has nothing. It just sits there with a frozen *zzzzz-bzzzz* and he gives you something. *Brrrrr*. You can get nothing to fall. You can't get anything to move. That meter just freezes right up. And believe me, this is hell on a pc.

It won't kill him. It won't do anything to him particularly. But it sure – it sure – something like taking several tablespoons full of sand, raw, without salt. No good.

So if you're going to find anything wrong with a GPM, why, find it before you depart from the two top RIs. Now, that you have found those is no – and that the RR has stayed on – is not a guarantee. You can get sometimes as far as four items or even five items deep into a GPM without turning off the RR if it's a wrong goal. You can get that deep and the thing will still be reading.

But a real sharp auditor will have seen his falls getting shorter. From three inches, they have become two inches. From two inches, they have become one inch. From one inch, they have become a quarter of an inch. And he would have to be dead asleep not to have noticed something was wrong by this time. The meter locks up.

He's in a wrong goal, the RIs he's finding are, of course, wrong. They're being dragged from some other GPMs. You're getting GPMs dragged all over the place, and all hell is breaking loose in your auditing. And it is a big, pluperfect mess.

Actually, the number of things you can do wrong are few. The elements you are handling are few. The precision of the technique is great. There are no – there are very few variables in this technique. I don't know of any, as a matter of fact. It's something like, if you have a white salt shaker on the table, why, that means there is a salt shaker on the table. And if there is none on the table, then there is none on the table. I mean it's that type of testing stuff.

Certain things occur. You could even audit this stuff by ARC breaks. Every time you tried to do something, the pc ARC breaks. You should – even you decide after a while that there's something wrong with that direction. You know, you could even – you could herd

yourself down through this stuff with pc ARC breaks. A little bit hard on the pc, but you can do it.

You'll notice that when you undertake such and so an action the pc is not ARC broken. But when you undertake any other action than that, he is ARC broken. Then you can figure out from that what is correct or incorrect about the bank.

Every time you tell him to list more goals, his ARC break ceases. Every time – he's selling you all the time that you have found his goal, don't you see? But he's selling you at a high-pitched scream, see.

"What? You've already got this goal 'to eat.' You've already got this goal. And there it is. And I don't want you invalidating my goals all the time and everything. You know the horrible things that happen with regard to this sort of thing. You already got this goal and so forth."

And you say, "Well, we're going to list a few more goals."

And he sits there and he says, "Uh – to jump, to run, to ride a bicycle, to manicure my fingernails, and so forth, and so forth."

And you say, "Well, that's all right. We don't seem to be getting any reads on this particular list. Let's go back and take this goal, 'to eat.'"

"Well, I told you all the time that the thing was the goal. It's the right goal. I mean, for Christ's sakes – could have told you a long time ago it's the right goal. What's..."

And you say, "Well, when he lists goals, he isn't ARC broken. Therefore, we have found a wrong goal." Slippy, see. You can use an ARC break to adjudicate it.

There are many ways of steering through it. Case analysis – here's another tip I better give you – is always done by blowdown and even then is about 50 percent reliable.

Case's analysis is always done by blowdown. Don't ever believe only the needle. Believe the blowdown. "Is this an actual GPM?" Tick. So what? You can buy ticks anyplace. Any watch company has lots of ticks, see? They're cheap. You can get them by the barrel-load. It means absolutely nothing.

And you say, "Is this an actual GPM?"

Pseeeew. Little blowdown on the tone arm. Ah, yes. Yeah. That's an actual GPM. That's... we got some little confidence. There's a 50 percent chance that it's an actual GPM. Maybe – maybe better. Maybe 64 percent chance it's an actual GPM. Not 100 percent, but the blowdown gives you that chance. Tick gives you no chance at all. Forget it.

The case analysis you should really depend on in your analyses – results that you should really depend on – should be accompanied by a blowdown, particularly after an ARC breaky, upset period. You finally found something wrong and then you finally found what was right about this and you find out what was right and it goes *pseeeew*.

Well, you've got a 64 percent chance that that was what it was, see? And you got a 36 percent chance that it wasn't. And that, having accepted this, you will now be in just as much soup as before, if not more so.

But the blowdown – the blowdown is what you want to put your paws on. That's what you want to have count. A little bit of a blowdown. Doesn't matter whether it's a big blowdown or a little blowdown, you know. But let's make sure the tone arm moves when you ask that signal question, see? Move that tone arm with the question.

If you don't move the tone arm with a question, regard it with a very jaundiced eye. Stuff like, "Is this list complete?" I might believe it if I had a half-a-division tone arm action.

See, I say, "Is this list complete?" Get a half a division tone arm action. Well, that particular question, I think there's a 30 percent chance in favor of the list being complete.

Cynicism is the rule of the day on case analysis.

You do everything possible to overrule the tremendous opportunity for error in case analysis because it's only as good as the pc can do. It's only as good as the pc can itsa and it's just a little bit sub-itsa below where the pc is actually itsaing, don't you see?

And this also is attended by pc's skill. It's horrifying to realize that the only people who will ever get to be OT are Class IVs. That's horrifying. Nobody else will. Nobody will make it. I know that sounds horrible. It sounds absolutely – I saw an old-timer look up back of here and say "What? What??" It's true, though. You'd have to practically educate a guy into the whole skills of auditing before he knew where he was going.

His case would have to be as cleaned up as that level of case would clean up a case, and so forth, before he could head in that direction with any reliability. Because let me tell you, you took some guy who isn't educated and doesn't know what's happened to him about it, you wrap him around a telegraph pole, you have wrapped him around it with adequate mystery to spin him.

He doesn't know what the hell's happened to him now. He has no confidence in anything and so forth.

Now, I'm afraid you're not going to make OTs out of non-Scientologists.

So it takes a lot of education to bring them up to that level. So your case analysis is actually as reliable as the pc's educational standards.

Does he really know what an actual GPM is? Well, that's the only read you're going to get. "Is this an actual GPM?" *Clank!*

Supposing he thinks actual GPMs are actually something that you implant people with.

So your case analysis is as reliable as the education of the pc, and it is reliable as the pc's itsa.

Now the – you – it goes a little bit lower than the pc's itsa, but it's actual fact depends on the pc's itsa because the distance between the pc's itsa and the sub-itsa is a constant distance.

Well, that's why case analysis has to be regarded with a jaundiced eye. Every once in a while, you're going to make a mistake and you're going to blame case analysis and its frailties for your own errors. You'll forget to ask some salient question. You will become so expert – become so expert a cook you see, that you don't bother to light the fire or something in order to cook the beans, you know? Some little mistake like this. You forget to ask if it's an actual

GPM, you see. You just slip somewhere and then you'll say, "See, case analysis let me down." Well, case analysis will let you down often enough without assistance. You don't have to help it out any.

All right. Well, I've tried to give you some very factual data about the running and handling of these OT processes and you noticed today I have not been using the designation which we've been using because the designations that we have been using have become antiquated.

And we're grouping up all auditing skills, techniques, technologies and levels of auditing into new groups. And I found out we didn't have enough groups and so your classifications are about to go up. Isn't that nice?

Now you can really swank it over people.

Thank you.

TV DEMO: AUDITING DEMO WITH COMMENTS BY LRH

An auditing demonstration given on 28 November 1963

Okay, we've got a demonstration coming up here – three twenty-minute demonstrations and what I want cleared is: "Today, has anybody missed a withhold on you?" And that's supposed to be cleared up in Model Session and the session wound up and so forth and so on. We plan these sessions for about twenty minutes each and we'll actually cut into the session if it starts overrunning. Okay? Carry on.

Auditor: Valerie, we are going to run a session here – twenty-minute session – and the body of the session will consist only of this question: "Today, has anybody missed a withhold on you?"

PC: Mm-hm.

Auditor: Okay. Now, is it all right to audit in this room?

PC: Yeah.

Auditor: Good. Please squeeze the cans. Thank you. You're getting half a dial, 3.5, sensitivity 1.

PC: They're large cans for me. I don't like the cans as large as this.

Auditor: Yes. Well I'm sorry, they can be no less at this stage. Can you put up with them?

PC: Yes, oh yeah!

Auditor: All right. Thank you. Okay, is it all right with you if I begin the session now.

PC: Mm-hm.

Auditor: Good. Start of session. Has this

session started for you?

PC: Yeah.

Auditor: Good. What goals do you like to set for this session?

PC: To survive it!

Auditor: All right. Thank you.

PC: Um – oh, yeah, to feel a bit less hopeless at the end of it than I do now. Nice high-toned goals for you!

Auditor: All right.

PC: That'll do.

Auditor: Thank you.

PC: Where am I sitting on the meter?

Auditor: 3 3/8 right now.

PC: Mm-hm.

Auditor: And put the sensitivity up. All right. What – do you feel upset right now?

PC: Yes, I was – I was very surprised. Jenny came and yanked me out of the lavatory. Uh – last thing I was expecting was to be

a pc. It took me rather by surprise. I was feeling a bit lost and there I was when all of a sudden someone banged on the door and says, "Valerie, come be a pc." So I – I haven't quite arrived yet.

Auditor: Okay. All right. Anything that's holding your attention?

PC: Well, yes, my stomach. I wasn't feeling all that well. It's slightly got my attention. Mm – that's all. It feels peculiar.

Auditor: All right. Thank you very much. And I'd like now to go over to this question, which I will first start asking of you, then I will check on the meter.

PC: Mm-hm.

Auditor: All right. Good. Today, has anyone missed a withhold on you?

PC: Um... well, yes. Um – you've caught me on a bad day, I'm sorry, Constantine. Um – not so much a bad day as a bad week, I suppose, or a bad fortnight. Well, it's a bit – I think everyone misses on me – um – how hopeless I feel at the moment, you know, and that makes me feel terribly grieved. I think the one thing that I never communicate to anyone is – um – how hopeless I feel at the moment... I feel a bit as if I've been walking around – um – in the most almighty bypassed charge for such a long time, I've got used to it. I think – well, what I sort of... I sometimes look at myself in the mirror, and – and I think, by Christ, how ghastly I look, you know, and I think probably no

one here realizes how I look when I feel all right. And I thought – it struck me today that probably no one realizes how lousy I feel. You know, if someone walks around looking lousy for a month, it sort of doesn't strike you as anything different about it when you happen to look at them one day and see them looking lousy, you know. If you usually look all right for most of the time then you suddenly looked bad, people sort of ask you what's happening. And I sort of felt, I've looked so lousy for such a long time that [starts to sob] probably no – no one realizes just how lousy I am feeling at the moment. I sort of feel – I don't know – I should – I suppose I should sort of communicate it to someone, otherwise how can they help me? I think probably the biggest thing I suppress is I'll – I'll never let anyone know when – when things are really going badly with me. It's – it's as if the worse I feel, the more I'll – the more I never communicate it to people. Or at least, probably to – never communicate it to someone if it can help me.

I thought – I was – I was walking over to Practical today and Joe then stopped me and said, ""How are you doing?" And I said, "Oh, pretty lousy." And then I said, "The one thing that I do is I never blow because I – I'm too far below it. I just hang around here in apathy, you know." And I was thinking

about this. I walked off, I thought – I don't know. I think this is what everyone misses on me. The fact that I just sort of – I'm actually below blowing. I just sort of feel I'm stuck here forever and I haven't really got... And I suppose I never really take it upon myself to tell someone what's happening to me. I expect them to know and then I suppose they miss it on me.

Um – perhaps I even make them guilty. I suppose I do, I just sort of make guilty. I expect people to come along and help me, you know, when I'm like this. Yeah. I think I actually make people guilty for not coming along and helping me, you know, I sort of - I'll never tell them, I expect them to come along and do something for me. Well, that's one.

Auditor: Thank you.

PC: Would you mind if I blow my nose?

Auditor: Okay, put the cans down, do so.

PC: It seems a funny place to sit and cry about all this when you sit in the middle of a demonstration. I'm sorry, it was just the way I was feeling at the time...

My hands keep on shaking.

Auditor: Okay. We have completed this, all right?

PC: Mm-hm.

Auditor: Okay. Well, thank you very much.

PC: What – what have we done? I'm

sorry. We've completed what?

Auditor: Well, you have completed your answer...

PC: Oh, yeah.

Auditor: ...what you were saying. All right. All righto. We are running short of time.

PC: Mm-hm.

Auditor: So...

PC: I must say, I've got it off to most people now, what do I say? If I wanted to get it off, my God, I've certainly – I've certainly had the opportunity to get it off.

Auditor: All right, well how does that feel?

PC: Yeah, that's – that makes me laugh. I've been a proper victim.

Auditor: Good. Okay. Thank you. Now, is it all right if we end off the body of the session here?

PC: Yeah.

Auditor: All right. Is there anything you would care to ask or say before I do so?

PC: No, I think it's the funniest session that I've ever had, though. Well, fair enough.

Auditor: All right. End of body of the session.

PC: Thank you.

Auditor: Okay. Now, let's see. Have you made any of the goals you have set for the session? One is "to survive it."

PC: Yeah, I've done that!

Auditor: Thank you.

PC: I'm even laughing. I was very – Murray's the one that said that when he was being audited opposite me, he could never tell – one minute I was laughing, the next minute I was crying. I seem to go up and down. That's all.

Auditor: Okay. Number two, "to feel a bit less hopeless by the end of it than I feel now."

PC: Yes, I've achieved that.

Auditor: Thank you for making these goals.

PC: Yeah. I've – I've certainly got off my missed withhold to everyone now.

Auditor: Okay. Have you made any other gains in this session that you would care to mention?

PC: Um – sorry, I keep shaking. Um – my tummy feels a bit more settled. Sorry, the cans keep shaking, sorry.

Auditor: Okay. All right, well thank you for making this gain.

PC: Mm-hm.

Auditor: Please squeeze the cans. Your havingness is pretty good.

PC: Mm-hm.

Auditor: All right.

PC: Christ! I've...

Auditor: All right. Now, what are you going to do when you finish this session?

PC: Um – stop shaking, I hope! I'm going to go back and pick up my handbag. I can't remember where I left it, I think in Practical, and then go and sit down

and watch the TV demo. Some oth... some other poor soul, I guess.

Auditor: Okay. All right. Is there anything you care to ask or say before I end this session?

PC: No, thank you, Constantine!

Auditor: Okay, you're most welcome. Is it all right with you if I end this session now?

PC: Yeah.

Auditor: All right. End of session.

PC: Thank you.

Auditor: Has the session ended for you?

PC: Yeah.

Auditor: Okay. Taking you off the meter.

PC: Thank you.

Auditor: Your chair all right?

PC: Yeah, more or less.

Auditor: Okay.

LRH: Go ahead.

Auditor: All right. Take the cans, please – get this thing adjusted.

PC: There are spider's webs in this can.

Auditor: Oh. Okay. All right. Now, look around the room and tell me is it all right to audit in this room?

PC: Well – um – if I can see through that – uh – that thing over there, I might be able to say no, you know... I guess so.

Auditor: All right. All right, give me a can squeeze please. Okay, that's fine. All right, now what we are

going to be doing in this session is to clean up the missed withholds, and it's for today.

PC: All right.

Auditor: Okay. Good. Now, is it all right with you if I begin this session now?

PC: Yeah.

Auditor: All right. Start of session.

PC: Hm.

Auditor: Has the session started for you?

PC: Yeah.

Auditor: Good. What goals would you like to set for this session?

PC: Oh, to – uh – to survive it.

Auditor: All right.

PC: And well, not to incriminate anyone.

Auditor: Okay.

PC: Well, just to answer the question – the actual question – you know, without uh – pulling in anything else.

Auditor: Very good. Okay. Is that it?

PC: Um, let me think, should be some more I think. Uh – well, to get on all right with you as an auditor.

Auditor: All right.

PC: Peculiar humming noises and squeals and things going on in this room. It's rather – it's like a – rather like a gas chamber, something of that nature. Um, well, to feel comfortable at the end of session.

Auditor: All right.

PC: Uh – I think that's about – that's about it. I don't think I can stretch that out much longer.

Auditor: All right. Very good. All right. Just one moment. I'm going to adjust the earphones – they're slipping out of my ears.

PC: Oh, right, right.

Auditor: And my chair. I hope that moving didn't shift the meter.

PC: All right.

Auditor: Okay.

PC: You look very medical.

Auditor: Very good. All right, is it all right with you if we go on with the body of the session?

PC: Yeah. Yeah.

Auditor: Okay.

PC: We're not doing mid ruds as well, are we? No.

Auditor: All right, the auditing question is going to be "Today, has anyone missed a withhold on you?"

PC: Hm.

Auditor: All right, do you understand the question?

PC: Yes, yes. I – I – I – it means to me: today, has anyone done anything that restimulated me, and what have they done, sort of thing, you know. Uh – rather than what I've done. Being someone else's action.

LRH: Man, don't buy that definition of missed withholds.

PC: [laughs]

Auditor: All right. Did you happen to hear that?

PC: I heard someth... yes, I heard something. I didn't hear actually what he said.

Auditor: Fine. Okay. Good. All right, what is a withhold?

PC: A withhold is – uh – something I've done.

Auditor: All right.

PC: Right. Uh – so a missed withhold is something I've done that's been restimulated by someone else.

Auditor: I don't get that.

PC: Well, something...

Auditor: Oh, I...

PC: You know what I mean?

Auditor: Yeah.

LRH: You keep working on that until we get it straight.

Auditor: Okay. All right.

PC: I'm in – I'm in sort of mystery as to what's going on.

Auditor: Fair enough. Okay. Now, would you give me what you gave me again, please?

PC: Yeah, it's a some – it's something – that – a contrasurvival act that has been – uh – been restimulated by so – by another and not disclosed. That's the definition.

Auditor: All right, that's the definition.

PC: Hm.

Auditor: All right, let's – let's begin in the beginning. Again, what's a withhold?

PC: A withhold is something that I

have done, which is contrasurvival. Yeah.

Auditor: All right.

PC: Uh – which I haven't – which I have withheld.

Auditor: Fair enough.

PC: Right.

Auditor: All right, and a missed withhold?

PC: It's something like that that's been restimulated by someone else. By someone else's action.

Auditor: Oh, I see. Okay. All right. Your doingness, though?

PC: Yeah. An original doingness of mine which someone else has restimulated again, sort of thing. See what I mean? Something that I have done one som... at some time or other, that's been restimulated today by someone else. That's what I understand as what you want.

Auditor: All right. Once again, give me what a missed withhold is.

PC: Uh – it's something that's – that I have done, that has been restimulated by somebody else.

Auditor: I don't get how it's been restimulated by someone else.

PC: Well, say I've – uh – uh – let me see – I have – uh – I have blown the course, say – right? – at some time which is to say an overt. All right. And say I was withholding it from someone and then someone said – started then – that was a long time ago, say, and then somebody says to me – um – suddenly looks at me

and says, "What do you feel about – how do you feel about blowing courses," and I might remember that I have a withhold that I blew the course. And that would be a missed withhold. The act – the incident of him saying this to me would be the missed withhold. That's – that's my understanding of a missed withhold.

Auditor: Let me see if I get it straight.

PC: All right.

Auditor: The incident of someone saying this...

PC: Yes. Well, the withhold is not the miss – uh – the withhold is that I blew the course. The missed withhold is someone saying to me it – it – that – well, the incident where it's missed is when someone said to me – uh – you – what about blowing courses, something of this nature.

Auditor: Fair enough. And they missed that you had, all right?

PC: Hm. Yeah.

Auditor: All right. That's fine. Are you ready to go on.

PC: Yeah! Sure!

Auditor: All right, then here's the auditing question. Today, has anyone missed a withhold on you?

PC: Um – let me think. I'll have to have a look over today and see. Well, I had an auditing session this morning. Um – I don't remember if there was anything missed in the auditing session.

Uh – I remember you banging on the table! Uh – I don't think that was a missed withhold. I can't remember ever having banged on the table. Yes, I – last week I banged on the table, I think. And your banging on the table may have restimulated that. Um – what else now? There may have been some missed withholds in the session, because I was nattering a lot. Well, no, I've been nattering a long time – uh – and I don't think there's – I don't think tha... if there's a with... missed withhold in relationship my – to my nattering this morning, it wasn't missed today. Must have been missed quite a long time ago. Um...

I think Dick may have missed a withhold. He was making remarks about um – a book that I had lent him and um – and he was – he had the session next door to me. And uh – he was making a lot of remarks about some book and it sort of cut my itsa line a bit. And uh – it couldn't really be a missed withhold, that. It's uh – maybe I had probably – I'm a – have lent him – or lent him the book to – I mean, it was perhaps an overt to lend him the book because it – uh – it was nothing to do with Scientology and would take his attention off his studies. Um – you'll probably get a good laugh out of this now. Uh – he referred to – it was a book by Ouspensky, actually, about Gurdjieff's work and he referred to uh – Gurdjieff as a "little Hubbard,"

and I thought, well, I don't know about that. It's difficult to evaluate certainly, you know, one from the other. Hm. That was the session, I don't think there was anything else, I – I – I didn't feel that my auditor had missed any withholds in the session. You know, I didn't feel nattery about him or um – and then I went on the bus into town and uh – well, no, I didn't go into the bus, because the bus broken down. And uh – I'd – therefore I'd – I went in with Edgar. But in the bus, before it – before we decided the bus had broken down, uh – something about blowing – something – some remark about – I made some remark about blowing. I wasn't seriously thinking of blowing or anything. I just – and I said something – and I said something about blowing and the – and someone said, "Oh, I'll keep an eye on me over the lunch," and I said, "Well, if I – if I was going to blow, I wouldn't be saying remarks about blowing." And uh – and then I thought, well, perhaps it would be a good idea. Say I wanted to blow. Then if I said I'm blowing like that, no one would believe me. You see. And I'd get a – make a clean getaway.

Well, I know some missed withhold, yes. I don't think it was a missed withhold in the lunch hour particularly. Perhaps the National Insurance people missed it, perhaps the post office people – no, I don't think they

did. Uh – Herbie! I think Herbie, yes! Herbie must have missed a withhold on me. Um – Herbie was ranting about something in the practical period and he was giving his – his random rote procedure lecture, you know, the one that he often gives – uh – about it being a rando... not a – not a random rote procedure, uh – a wound – a wound-up doll – uh – what was it? How does it go now? It's got to be a rote – a routine rote procedure! You know. And all that sort of stuff and I was – he – he – I had the feeling that every now and then he looked at me because I was – I was finding it hard not to laugh, at this point, you see, and every now and then he would seem to be looking my direction – that – probably my imagination. And I had sort of committed an overt against Herbie the day before, because he see – he had given an example of some experiment he'd done, to prove something, you know. And I didn't think that – um – I criticized this and I said – well, I – more than criticized, I tried to make nothing of his experiment. You see? By saying that it didn't prove anything because there were a lot of things that were different from one situation to another, so I mean it doesn't – it didn't – it didn't actually – I mean, I was right, in the sense that one of his experiments didn't – the other two were reasonably all right and he went on to that. But I – uh – the overt was

that I was trying to make nothing of Herbie – Herbie's experiment, which was no useful thing to do, you know?

And – uh – he looking at me sort of made me think of that, you know. And I thought – felt that I'd done the wrong thing another – in another way by – by saying – uh – by saying that, you know? Because – uh – it didn't do me any good, you know, to go around nattering of this – you know, this was an overt against me as well as against him, you know. Because if one feels nattery, the best thing to do is to keep one's bloody mouth shut, you know, and – uh – so one only knows oneself when one's nattering.

Auditor: Well, all right. Okay. How you doing now?

PC: All right.

Auditor: Okay that's...

PC: Probably got plenty more, you know.

Auditor: Okay. Thank you very, very much. All right, we're going to have to end it off here.

PC: Oh! All right. Okay.

Auditor: All right. Okay, is it all right if we just end it there?

PC: Yeah! Sure! Sure! Yeah! I can tell my auditor the rest of it.

Auditor: Very good. Thank you very much. Okay, I want to check to see if you made any part of your goals for this session.

PC: Hm.

Auditor: Okay. One is to survive it.

PC: Yes, I survived all right! Pretty well, I felt, too.

Auditor: Good. All right. To incrim... not to incriminate anyone.

PC: No, I didn't incriminate anyone. Hm?

Auditor: Okay. To answer the actual question, without pulling in anything.

PC: Yeah, I stuck pretty well to the actual question, yes.

Auditor: All right. I'm sorry. Oh! To get on all right with you as an auditor.

PC: Oh, yes! Yes, yes! I did all right with that.

Auditor: All right. To feel comfortable at the end of session.

PC: Yeah, I feel all right. Yeah.

Auditor: All right. Thank you for making these goals.

PC: Hm.

Auditor: Have you made any other gains in this session that you'd care to mention?

PC: Um – well, let me think. Well, I feel all right about these demonstrations, you know. I think – uh – I don't think I'd like to have a long demonstration, you know. I don't – I wouldn't like to be a demonstration pc on a – for a full session, you know, particularly, but on a short one I don't mind. I thought I would dislike it, you know, but I – I find I don't mind, that's fine. It's rather long wi... long winded to write

down, but...

Auditor: Okay. I got it though.

PC: Yeah.

Auditor: And thank you. All right, now let's have a can squeeze.

PC: Up?

Auditor: No. All right. What is your Havingness Process?

PC: "Feel that."

Auditor: All right. Put the cans down, please. Okay. All right, feel that table top.

PC: Mm-hm.

Auditor: Thank you. All right. Feel the arms of the chair.

PC: Yeah.

Auditor: Thank you. Feel your shoulders.

PC: Yeah.

Auditor: Good. Feel the cans.

PC: Yeah.

Auditor: All right, and feel the back of the meter. Thank you. Take the cans. All right, and squeeze them. Very good, that's better. All right, we're going to leave it right there.

PC: Mm-hm.

Auditor: Okay. Is it all right with you if I end this session now?

PC: Yeah.

Auditor: Okay. End of session.

PC: Right.

Auditor: Okay. Is the session ended for you?

PC: Yeah.

Auditor: Good. Tell me I am no longer auditing you.

PC: You are no longer auditing me.

Auditor: Thank you.

Auditor: All right, how's it seem to you to be audited here today?

PC: Seems all right, actually. Doesn't seem as though the TV camera's watching me or anything.

Auditor: Okay. All right. Is it all right to audit in this room?

PC: Hm – well, um – I don't like all these electronic things, you know? You know, electricity and wires and things, but otherwise okay.

Auditor: Very good. Okay. Well, now in this session I'm going to ask you: "Today, has anyone missed a withhold on you."

PC: Hm.

Auditor: Okay. Is it all right with you if I begin this session now?

PC: Mm-hm.

Auditor: Very good. Start of session.

PC: Hm.

Auditor: Has this session started for you?

PC: Mm-hm.

Auditor: Very good. What goals would you like to set for this session?

PC: Mm. To feel calm at the end of this ... Hm – that's all.

Auditor: Very good, thank you. All right. Well, I've omitted to get a can squeeze at the beginning of session, I'm very sorry about that.

So I'll do it now. All right. Squeeze the cans, please. Very good. Okay, the tone arm there is at 2.0 and there was an eighth of a dial.

PC: Hm! I don't know if I squeezed very hard or not. Very softly actually.

Auditor: Very good.

PC: Want me to do it again?

Auditor: Okay, well, I'll just check. All right, that's fine. All right. Squeeze the cans please. Thank you. All right, that's half a dial now. Okay. All right, well now, if it's all right with you we'll carry on here.

PC: Mm-hm.

Auditor: All right, I'll give you the question. Today, has anyone missed a withhold on you?

PC: Hm – um – appears as though lots of people have, you know. You know, that's funny, Liz! Do you know, in – in Theory – in – in Practical this afternoon, I was longing for someone to pull missed withholds on Jenny, because I had a feeling that Jenny missed something on me this afternoon, and it's just happened. There is something and I just didn't know what it was and I knew I wouldn't be able to find it, unless I sat with an auditor and looked for it. I know what happened, I was in the basement in the – you know, the office here.

Auditor: Uh-huh.

PC: And she said something about

my voice being very – um – kind of- very sort of hard and harsh with the pc. And then I find – found myself defending myself. Oh God, let me see if I can get this right. Sort of saying – um – sort of – uh – I don't know if I said it, I felt like saying, no, no, that wasn't, you know, or the pc didn't get it that way, or something like that. Um – I just thought Sophie's just missed a withhold on me, because I was going to say – I mean she asked me how much TA there was and I was going to say, "Now, I told Sophie I wouldn't tell her how much TA she got until the end of the intensive." But Jenny asked me and then she thought it was quite good. And then she sort of, you know, wasn't critical of – of my speaking that way. But there was something and I felt very funny. I walked out of there and you know how you sort of feel sometimes, you're sort of running away from something, where you sort of – um – what's the feeling, the feeling of – um – wanting to get away. Hm.

Auditor: Mm-hm – Okay.

PC: Let's see if I can get this damn thing. Hm! There's one thing. Um – Jenny was watching the session this morning and um – Sophie got a fright. And um – afterwards she whispered in my ear, "Ask Sophie what happened just before this..." – and Sophie got a fright and the TA blew down about a whole division. And then she said, "Well, when

Sophie feels a bit better, ask her what happened just before that." And as far as I know – I said – I think I said, "What happened?" and then – then I said to her – I didn't wait for an answer, and then I said, "What happened just before you got that fright?"

Now, that ties up with this afternoon. Jenny was talking to me and she said, "But you didn't – you didn't ask her what happened just before she got the fright." So I said, "Yes, I did." No, no. Jenny said, "Ask what we – what was she – ask her what she was thinking about just before that." And I said yes I did – I did ask her, and then I thought, no, I didn't, I asked her what happened just before that, and I got confused, but I knew I'd asked something like that. And there was some confusion there. I think Jenny missed on me that I felt that although my voice may sound very abrupt and sort of – um – kind of careless and sort of hard to the pc – or it may sound like it to someone listening to the session. I feel that my pc feels the affinity flow. And I sort of don't bother with how I say it or something. I always sort of feel my pc knows. And I can – I feel I can sort of say, um – "What happened," in a very sort of abrupt and sort of uncaring way, you know, and tone of voice. But I feel my pc knows that that isn't so and my pc doesn't un... no pc's sort of critical of that or – sorry – and um – worries about that, you

know? That was one thing.

I don't think – and I don't think Jenny got this. And then I said, "But look, Sophie hasn't ARC broken about my tone of voice there." Then she said, "No, well the TA went up to 4, and got – got sticky. " And um – I don't like talking about cases, you know.

Auditor: Carry on. Tell me more, what was missed here?

PC: Um – I don't know – now I feel I shouldn't be talking about cases. You know, about my own pc, and about what happens with my own pc.

Auditor: Mm-hm. Okay. All right, well now – um – just when did Jenny miss this withhold?

PC: That was this afternoon in the basement.

Auditor: Very good.

PC: Definitely.

Auditor: Very good. What did she do to miss it?

PC: I'm not quite sure what the withhold is that she missed.

Auditor: Okay! All right.

PC: I think it was the tone of voice. I was trying to get across to her that this tone of voice may apparently be like that and I may apparently be very abrupt. But – but to me, it doesn't seem like that. You know? And she missed my kind of disagreement and wanting to – wanting to assert something and then feeling foolish and feeling um – degraded

- for wanting to assert something. You know, I feel bad when I have to assert something – you know, defend myself again like that. That was what she missed.
- Auditor: Very good. Okay. All right, now, did anyone else miss that?
- PC: Mm. I told somebody about it, I think. Yeah. I told Don. Um – oh well – ties up into a little story. I told Don about it and he was listening to a tape and he told me afterwards in tea – at tea time that – I'd just said that Jenny said that I spoke in a very hard way to the pc, you know, and he said the funny thing was just as he put the tapes back on, you know, over his ears – the earphones, he heard Ron saying it doesn't matter what tone of voice you use with your pc. Um – hang on a sec.
- Yeah, there's something gets missed with me. It's a kind of attitude. I feel that I can – um – hmm! It's a bit like that thing with Val – she expects people to know how she is. You know? Even though she sort of doesn't say it. Well I expect people to know – let's take a look – hmm! I – I expect people to not be taken in by a tone of voice. Hmm. That's what it is.
- Auditor: Very good. Okay. Is that all there is on that one?
- LRH: Don't repeat your question and end off the session.
- PC: What's that?
- Auditor: I got an instruction from Ron then.
- PC: Do you want me to answer that question?
- Auditor: All right, um – have you got an answer there?
- PC: I'm just a bit worried about that instruction.
- Auditor: Okay. He said not to repeat my question and to wind up the session.
- PC: Mm. All right. If it's all there is to that missed withhold, do you want to know?
- Auditor: Yeah.
- PC: Hm. No, it isn't actually! Uh – it's happened once before. Yes, Jenny said the same thing before about this hard tone of voice. And I know what – I know what she means, because I know my voice sounds like that, you see. And there's a kind of agreement. But the disagreement is that the pc could care two hoots about it and that it affects the pc.
- Auditor: Hm. Very good. Okay. Well, although there may be some more on this, if it's all right with you I'd like to end this subject here.
- PC: Mm.
- Auditor: All right?
- PC: Mm-hm.
- Auditor: Okay. Is it all right with you if we end the body of the session now?
- PC: Mm. I'd just like to check something with you.
- Auditor: Sure.
- PC: Is my needle flying around?

Auditor: No.

PC: Not?

Auditor: Not at the moment.

PC: All right. All right.

Auditor: All right. Okay, well, is it all right with you if I end the body of the session now?

PC: Mm.

Auditor: Okay. Is there anything you'd care to ask or say before I do so?

PC: Mm-mm.

Auditor: All right. End of the body of the session.

PC: Mm-hm.

Auditor: All right. Have you made any part of your goals for this session? Shall I give it to you?

PC: Mm.

Auditor: All right. To feel calm at the end of it.

PC: Um – as a matter of fact I haven't made that goal, no. But I made some gains.

Auditor: Okay. I'm sorry you didn't make that goal.

PC: No, that's fine.

Auditor: All right. Have you made any gains in this session you'd care to mention?

PC: Mm. Mm. I found I was able to look. Didn't expect to be able to, you know? Um, yeah. And I feel I've pinpointed that missed withhold. There – there may be some earlier ones similar, but that particular one this afternoon today, I pinpointed. And I feel good about that.

Auditor: Very good. Thank you for making that gain.

PC: Mm.

Auditor: All right, well, I'd just like to take a can squeeze here.

PC: Mm. My hands are all sticky.

Auditor: All right. All right. Well, I'm just going to check how you've got those cans held. All right, just take hold of them. Very good. Okay, please squeeze the cans. Very good. All right, that's half a dial there. How are you doing?

PC: Fine.

Auditor: Very good. Okay, well it's – we'll leave that there like it is.

PC: All right, good.

Auditor: All right. Is there anything you'd care to ask or say before I end this session?

PC: Um – no, except that you look a bit funny with those things around your ears. Uh – like a strung-up – you know those people – these typists from dictaphones.

Auditor: Mm-hm.

PC: And that's all.

Auditor: Very good. All right. Is it all right with you if I end this session now?

PC: Mm.

Auditor: Okay. End of session! Has the session ended for you?

PC: Mm.

Auditor: Very good. Tell me I'm no longer auditing you.

PC: I'm no longer auditing you.

All right. Here we are with the comments on these sessions. And we have sessions one, two and three and I would have been happy to have commented on these things as they were done, while they were fresh in your memory. The only difficulty with that, of course, is the auditor and pc have not removed themselves back over to the chapel and can't hear the comments being made on their session.

The essence of this problem here is that you just have to remember what's going on in these sessions. These were the sessions of the twenty-eighth of November and there are three student sessions here. We'll comment on them rapidly, one after the other.

But first, before we get into the gruesome aspects of it, thank you very much. Very brave of you people to be on TV. It's too much for me, it frightens me to death being on TV. I get stage fright, you know?

All right. Now, here's the first session. Constantine auditing Valerie. Now, there's no reason for you to go out and blow your brains out or anything like that, Constantine, over this. But we need a bit of brush-up in some departments and let's go into these things. Now, I didn't get the sound the first half of it, you're lucky there. I can't call anything wrong on the first half of it because I didn't get the sound – the sound was off up here. The first half of that. Too faint. When I finally – it was a broken ear plug, something. And when I did tune in, however, I could not help but notice a certain stony silence. A certain stony silence that – if I were being audited that way, I would think I had done something wrong, as a pc.

Now, stony silence is not a proper presence. There's no encouragement there, there's no auditor action. And so forth. There's room there for a little half-acknowledgments and so forth. Let the pc know he's talking. Just don't sit there glumly looking at the pc, because the pc after a while will just start compulsively itsa-ing. And that's in essence what this pc did. That's inviting itsa by silence. Also reproving itsa by silence, in this particular case, because when the pc said something, nothing was ever given back to the pc at all, no "Mm-hm." Now you can go "Mm-hm," a long – a lot too many times. But a nod now and then and some attention to the pc and so on, is very much an action, very much called for.

Now, at the end of the body of the session, there was no action and then sudden lowering the boom by just ending the body of the session. Actually, the pc was not acknowledged at all at the end of the body of the session. In other words there's no, no comm cycle in progress there at all. And you've got to study comm cycle, Constantine, you've got to study comm cycle. You're going to find out what an auditing cycle is. I don't care if we've introduced itsa and so forth, you've got to study this. And you've got to get this down. And you can be grooved in quite a bit.

And now, you knew how to do it once, now you've gone over the other side of it and you stopped doing it at all. Now, let me assure you that there is a middle ground of the correct action. It doesn't run from total talk by the auditor to no talk by the auditor, you see. There's a middle ground. There's a certain amount of talk here and acknowledgment and so forth.

The old TR 1, TR 2 – that sort of thing is what's out there. And did no acknowledgment of the pc, but only ended the session and that's a lousy comm cycle. Get some more warmth, and so forth, in actual fact ending a body of a session that way is using the tools of auditing to cut itsa. And under that heading, using the tools of auditing to cut itsa, there are a great, great, great many crimes. You can suddenly wave your pencil around in the air and be writing, and so forth, so that the pc doesn't think you're paying a bit of attention to him. All right, cuts the pc's itsa. You can misuse Model Session to cut the pc's itsa, but all this comes under the heading of this large classification: using the tools of auditing to cut the pc's itsa. And it's very, very poor, doing it that way.

Now, there's an actual auditor comm lag going on here, Constantine. There's not picking it up, see? Picking it up, picking it up. There's an actual auditor comm lag. When the pc says something or something is supposed to be done, the auditor should not remain silent at that time. An auditor should not pick up his comm lag. It's bad enough to have pcs that comm lag, without having auditors that comm lag, too, you understand? Pc says, "That's all," and the auditor says, "... oh, thank you."

"What's this?" the pc says, see? When the pc says, "That's all," see, pc says, "Well, that – that's all," the auditor says, "All right." In other words, there shouldn't be comm lags in there, before the auditor does what he's supposed to do. Don't stand around waiting.

You see, the introduction of itsa has encouraged auditors to stand around and wait, to do nothing, to invite itsa by silence and brought in a whole bunch of new crimes that nobody had ever dreamed of before. And so forth. Well, itsa is gotten with – in the absence of these crimes, and so forth.

Now, you need to study your Model Session. Your Model Session wording is way out. And that needs to be studied and re-passed and you want to get some hope factor and some confidence instilled into the session, some warmth, and so forth. We don't need any sphinx-like attitude on an auditor. And just to summarize this, why, you're to study the Model Session, the auditing comm cycles and actually restudy itsa.

Now, this crazy comment, "What are you going to do when we end the session?" has never been heard of again. It was said by Constantine on the twenty-eighth of November and then nobody else ever said it from there on, for the next two thousand years. You hear me? I don't know where that wild one come from, but I can see these things develop. Oh, I can see why, you want a trick there, to get the pc to think about another time, but actually is a continuation of the session.

All right. Other than that, Constantine, you did fine and the pc did fine – and don't think I'm being – bearing hard on you; I want a good auditor and you're very capable of being a good auditor, so thank you for giving that session, giving me an opportunity to look over what you're doing and be able to give you a hand on it, okay? All right.

And now, we get to session number two. The placement of chair. The auditor didn't notice the pc then changed the chair. After the auditor places the chair and the pc moves the chair, the auditor should place the chair. It's simple as that. Of course, it operates as a criticism of the pc, but that's the point of control of the session, is right there with the placement of the chair. Pc moved the chair. Was not in control in the session thereafter.

That start was far too slow. Didn't have the pc's attention in order to start the session. Pc was going, "Rah, rah," and so forth, and you just started the session. You got to get the pc's attention before you start the session. You want to get the pc's eyes right on you to start that session.

Also, incidentally, having nothing really to do with auditing skill, and so forth, I noticed that you really need to practice writing faster. With all the writing an auditor has to do, don't take that length of time to audit. Learn to write a little bit faster and you'll have an easier time of it. That's almost extraneous to auditing, but it would help you out and I noticed that in passing.

Now, you did something I told people not to do in the last demonstration that I commented on. Which is, you bled goals. After the pc has given a goal or two, then you asked for another goal. Never ask for additional goals. It's – if you want to know what goals he'd like to set for this session – and that's it, you never ask him again, are there any more goals and so forth. Do you know, you can spend the whole session getting pcs to list goals. Never bleed goals off the pc. Just once – bang! And that's – you take it and that's it and you're away.

You noticed the pc, in this particular instance, was actually flabbergasted. He didn't quite know what he was expected to do or why and you put a huge comm lag into the session there, when you bled goals. Never bleed goals. Any of you. I thought you would have learned that last week.

Now, the auditor in this particular instance, also, inactive under the guise of not cutting itsa. Any time an auditor doesn't want to do anything, he says, "Well, I didn't want to cut the pc's itsa." Actually, we have to get a moderate look at this.

Now, you didn't ever have to call – don't ever call the pc's attention to the auditor. If you got to adjust the earphones, why, just adjust earphones. Don't say, "Is it all right with you if I adjust earphones?" and so forth. Don't keep calling pc's attention to auditor. Don't ever call the pc's attention to the meter, don't ever call the pc's attention to the auditor. If you got to do something, just do it. Put in an R-factor, if you want to, if you think it'll startle the pc, but in this particular case there was nothing of that. That's perfectly all right, but in actual fact, avoid calling the pc's attention to the auditor, always. Now, the definition of missed withhold! I think that's very remarkable, because, you see, the pc never did define a withhold, or a missed withhold. And therefore, this pc couldn't answer the auditing question because he didn't know what it is. And actually, this pc needs to be audited in that direction, needs to be trained in that direction. And the pc's case, any case advance this pc has is hung up, right on that point. And you had an opportunity to cut this wide open and actually, you fell back from doing so. Now, I would have lowered the boom, until the pc really knew what I was talking about. Because of course, a missed withhold is the – a withhold, basically – is just not talking. And the pc never did bring this up. See, it's just not saying. I mean, the basis of it.

And missed withhold: what did somebody else do that made him think that this had been keyed in? This pc had that defined as a motivator. And that needs to be straightened out. Because the pc's advance and so forth, in processing, is actually held up at this point. Right there. Bang! Noplace else. And I've just written some direction for the pc's auditor, we can straighten that out, *bingity-bang!* But you had an opportunity to straighten that out, and I

want to call to your attention – if the pc cannot tell you what the part of the session is, or what the part of the mind is, or what the – what the auditing definition of something is, the pc then can't answer the question in relationship to it, because the pc doesn't know what it is.

All right. Now, that was clearing the auditing question. Now, the pc once gave himself the auditing question. And a smart auditor is always in there repeating the auditing question. The pc says, "Let's see – all right – let's see – what's the question – ah – let's see – in this session has anything been suppressed?" I'm always in there and I say, "Today has anything been suppressed?" or whatever it is. "Since the last time I audited you, has anything been suppressed?" I say, "The question is..." you know? Keep control of it to that degree. Don't let pcs go giving themselves the question. Because they, at that moment, go on to self-audit and you have to bring them back on to a session-audit.

Then we already commented on auditor silence. Then there are quite a few Model Session errors and the auditor here should study Model Session, get the comm cycle in and get command clarification and review missed withholds HCOBs. And that's what this auditor should do.

Thank you very much, Stan, I hope you don't think I'm being too cruel. Actually, you are one of the better auditors. Let's just make sure you stay that way and not go stepping on banana peels and going out into the blue, just because an auditing style has changed. So, thank you Stan.

Now, we have session number three. Model Session errors, Model Session errors, Model Session errors and so on. Study Model Session until it could be done in a hurricane. In other words, hurricane blowing, still be able to do Model Session. Roof falling in, still be able to do Model Session, you understand? That Model Session, pooph! See, I mean forgetting things like the can squeeze test and that sort of thing, tha-that's corny!

Now, side comment, having nothing to do with the auditor – having nothing to do with the auditor at all, but that pc's havingness is awful low for a Saint Hill student and that has a lot to do with this pc's regular auditors. What do you mean, letting somebody sit around with that low a can squeeze? I think it's phenomenal! I think it's fantastic! How can you possibly have a student sit around with that much can squeeze, that tiny amount of can squeeze test? That just isn't enough to bother with! On a Mark V – on a Mark V, a normal can squeeze is across the dial and two bounces off the pin! You've got it? Not a half a dial! That's set at 1. That's set at 1, on a Mark V.

That just isn't enough can squeeze. Why hadn't somebody noticed this and run this pc up the line, till this pc's havingness was in pretty good condition or find out what there is in the environment that's cutting the pc's havingness down. That's pretty low for a Saint Hill student. And if any of you – others of you have been putting up with that kind of can squeeze, and so forth, realize that that little half-a-dial *raw!-raw* – that is not havingness, man!

Put it on the Set mark, pc squeezes the cans, it bounces twice – twice off of that pin. Hits – goes down and hits that pin! From Set to pin – *pshwww-pang!* – twice! Bang, bang, boom! That's the way it ought to look.

If it doesn't look that way, your pc's havingness is too low to be audited. How do you

like that? Now, all of you are sitting there, saying, "What!" you know, "My pc's havingness is only a quarter of an inch and I've been auditing the pc." Yeah, you should hold your head in your hands, because that isn't enough havingness for a pc to be audited on. That pc either hasn't eaten or the pc is not sufficiently rested or the pc is this or the pc is that or the pc is bothered by his environment or has PTPs – but basically has withholds, my God! You understand? Withholds! That sort of thing. That's what really cuts down havingness.

So, your pc's havingness is that low, get the pc's havingness up by normal Havingness Processes and see if you can't pull the missed withholds – run some O/W. Let's get some auditing done around here. If any of you have pcs who have can squeeze tests that are that small, you are then looking at a critical case. So let's do the necessary to make the case audit-able! A bunch of you are going – *hggh!* – like that, right now, I imagine.

Now, this auditor is very indirective of the pc's attention but also the auditor is in W so it's not too serious. But there isn't really enough direction of the pc's attention going on in that session. Failure to direct a pc's attention is never excused by, "I don't want to cut the pc's itsa." You can direct the pc's attention without cutting the pc's itsa.

The auditor actually could have delineated the question there at one particular point and gotten the pc to find out what was the missed withhold. Actually the auditor did not pull a missed withhold in that session. It required this question from the auditor: "What did Jenny do that made you think she had almost found out something?" See? That applied at the right moment. "What did Jenny do that made you think she had almost found out something?" Hm? That's the question to get the missed withhold and it would have peeled off just like that, you see?

Pc was floundering, was trying to straighten it out, and so forth. It's all right, let the pc talk. This isn't too serious because you as an auditor are still in W Unit. But it would be serious in X.

Now, there was an MS – Model Session – error on the goals question and the auditor's voice tone was a bit bored at session end. Little brighter voice tone. And by the way, for the last can squeeze test the auditor did herself – may have done herself out of some can squeeze because the needle was left on the pin over on – as you face the meter – the left-hand side. I think the needle was lying right down against the pin when the can squeeze test was given. Which, of course, you don't want it there; you want can squeeze test given from the needle at Set. And of course, if it's down against the pin, you don't know how far it rose before it's visibly moved. That's all there is to that.

Now, this sounds very, very vicious and your auditing actually is pretty good and you have a very good reputation amongst the Instructors as an auditor. Now, let's not let that down. Let's get to be better even than that. So thank you very much for giving that session.

All right, on auditing in general – on auditing in general, why, I think our modern fault in auditing is – I can sort the thing out – simply falls under these headings: You don't know your Model Session. Just don't know it! See? I mean, you're not good enough – sharp enough on Model Session. You ought to be able to purr Model Session off, *brrrrrrt*, without any difficulties whatsoever and we're going to reassign you to saying Model Session to the walls, the whole lot of you, and get your Model Session straightened up. Got that Instructors?

All right. And the next thing I want to say is, there is letting the pc itsa and there is sitting silent and inviting pc's itsa when there is no auditing question. And I think a lot of you may be doing that. Pc really doesn't have a question, is just talking – if you just sit silent and look at a pc, you are inviting itsa and the pc will talk. Learn that! Make a test of it. Just sit silent in front of a pc and you'll see the pc will start talking. Well, that's all very fine. But don't do it in a session! Pc hasn't got a question. So you sit silent and look at the pc, now the pc's got to talk. But the pc actually doesn't have a question. And so forth. Auditing is auditing, itsa is itsa. There's a happy medium between cutting a pc's actual itsa and being afraid to cut the pc's itsa, so not doing anything. And you've just got to find the happy middle ground and stop caroming off both extremes of this thing. It's either: cut the pc's itsa to ribbons – you say to the question. Here's really cutting a pc's itsa: "In this session, has anything been suppressed?" The pc says, "Oh, well, I uh..."

"Thank you! Well, all right, well, I didn't get any read on that," and so forth, "All right, in this session has anything been invalidated?"

"Uh, well, yes, you sort of invalidated my cognition..."

"Well, I didn't have any read on the meter. Let's see now. In this session, has anything been suggested?" and so forth. Well, by this time, of course, you've got a roaring ARC break. See, that's cutting a pc's itsa.

Now, here's another way to mess up a pc:

"In this session, has anything been suppressed?"

Pc says, "Hm, don't – don't think so."

Auditor: ...

Well, you're going to get an ARC break. Do you realize that you've cleaned a clean, by sitting and looking fixedly at a pc who hasn't got anything to say. When you sit silent and look at a pc, you clean a clean. Pc has got nothing to say, you understand?

You said, "Has anything been suppressed?" and he said, "Yeah, I suppressed – I suppressed all the Instructors, you know?" Whatever. And then he sits there – he's answered the question, you understand? And you sit there and you look at him silently, you say nothing, so forth.

He after a while all of a sudden gets the idea, "Maybe he still expects me to talk. So I'll look for another suppress. Let me see, what suppress, and so forth? Well, I guess not, I don't know, hm, *whao-whao*. What's this guy doing to me? I don't like this place. I don't even wanna answer his question!" Well, he's in a horrible position because he doesn't really have a question and yet the auditor, by sitting silent, implies that he's got to answer something.

Do you understand? And that is not cutting itsa, that is cleaning cleans. And when you start practicing this "sit still and look at the pc and not make sure the pc's got a question, the pc's answering the question," you're not doing anything for the pc – well, what are you doing? You're cleaning cleans.

Supposing you said on a meter, "In this session, has anything been suggested?" You didn't get any read, that needle was *smoooooth* as glass.

And then you said to the pc, "Hey! You heard the question! Had a read here."

Well, the pc's going to try to answer that. Only, of course, he hasn't got anything to answer. And then you just sit there and look at the pc. Well, you can watch a pc ARC break on a cleaned clean.

Well, you can also, also clean a clean, and make a pc ARC break, just by sitting there and looking at the pc! Look, develop a sensitivity. Develop a sensitivity. *Know* when the pc's got something to say and *know* when the pc hasn't got anything to say and act accordingly as an auditor. How do you develop that sensitivity.? That's up to you. I'm just the critic around here. Okay.

All right. Well, that's the end of those demonstrations. I'm very happy to have those demonstrations. I see what weak points are showing up in the last two demonstrations I've looked over here. I see about where we've gone. I see about what the score is with regard to this and I'm very happy to be able to give a hand and straighten this out.

Basic auditing is usually the cause of no progress. Basic auditing is corny – no progress. Yet, you look at techniques and that sort of thing to give you progress. You look at case analysis to give you progress. Well, actually, case analysis and techniques can get nowhere when basic auditing is out. If you want to see results in your pc get your basic auditing in flawlessly, perfectly, right straight down the groove. Basic auditing: Able to handle Model Session. Able to handle the meter. Able to handle the comm cycle. Snap, snap, snap. Able to handle these various things. And you will see, then, that you can apply a technique. But in the absence of basic auditing, you cannot apply a technique. So therefore, the technique appears not to work. So you ask for a new technique for this pc. Doesn't need a new technique – needs a technique applied with good basic auditing.

That's why I have these demonstrations and that's why I tie into you the way I have. I still love you.

Thank you very much.

Good night.

SEVEN CLASSIFICATIONS

A lecture given on 28 November 1963

Your applause is well received. Thank you. All right, what is the date?

Audience: November 28th.

Twenty-eight Nov. We're still in the month of the Russians. Your Saint Hill Special Briefing Course, AD 13. You notice that the daylight is fading and so forth. Daylight's fading, and that has nothing to do with the communist plot. They – purely coincidental that they never have any sunshine in Russia and so forth. I just wanted to reassure you. And the missiles – the missile situation is very good just now – very, very good just now. They used them all up on Guy Fawkes Day, so they have... [laughter, laughs]

I want to talk to you for a moment – this lecture's going to concern most anything. It's one of these potpourri type lectures of all ingredients that you can never realign in your notebooks; that you can never assign on a checksheet. [laughs, laughter]

I wanted to – I ended your last lecture with a remark on classes – new classifications. And this might – you might find very, very interesting. And I'd better give you some rundown on this and so forth, because we're off for the long shoot now, you see? And I said that Scientology would go as far as it worked and not as far as it was administered and that I could have gotten very busy on administration many, many years ago and administered it out to some considerable distance and so forth. So administration, actually, while getting a great deal of attention, and many instances very ably done in general, has suffered for a concentration.

Because until you had the full technical picture, I suspected, all the way – we're not now talking about clearing; we're talking about all the way – until you had the full technical picture, you could not lay out the administrative picture, you see? And I just had a hunch without even thinking about it or articulating it, that it would be impossible to lay out the administrative pattern of Scientology, and all of its administrative angles and designations, without having clear-cut and across the boards, the technical data. And this is very fortunate that this came about and was done this way because the technical data turned out to be no pill that you took after breakfast or a sudden shot in the gluteus maximus to make you Clear or something or grow wings. It turned out to be a highly precise, fantastically coordinated activity at the highest levels. And it also turned out that individuals could not actually be audited at these levels unless they had been brought up to that point in gradients. And it turned out that this was the case.

I'll give you what I'm – what I'm talking about here, now. I think you will agree that this is it, because it's not only just at the highest levels; it also falls in at the lower levels.

Let's try to pull some missed withholds on somebody who doesn't know what one is. You say, "Has anybody missed a withhold on you?" Well, you know what a missed withhold is. So you say, "Well, a missed withhold is a so-and-so and a so-and-so and it's a such-and-such and it's when you did this and when you did that, and so forth, and that is because of this and that. And then there's a double stimulus-response cycle in Scientology. It goes like this: The psychologist, you see, he thought that there was stimulus and response. And he thought there was one cycle: When you stimulated you got one response. That was the limit of his thinkingness. If you pushed a button the button got pushed, and that was all he thought ever happened. And that's why psychology was limited, you see.

"But there is actually a second curve. You can't have in this universe a stimulus-response without getting a stimulus-response. So it's a double cycle, you see, and this is all very simple, but actually when you push the button – when you push that button – even though it only said 'click,' remember, when it clicked, it was a stimuli, and your ears or hearingness responded to the click of the button, didn't it? So when you pushed a button, you got one stimuli response, you pushed button, and then it clicked. Well, that was a stimuli to which of course you get a response yourself. So there are always, no matter how slight the situation is, you always have a second stimulus-response cycle going on for every stimulus-response."

And the pc will sit there looking at you wondering... Well let me assure you, the middle of an intensive is not a time to take up this information. You've thrown him a philosophic conundrum which has never before been propounded in the literature and philosophy of this planet – which is to say, you cannot act without consequences. That's a philosophic, see? There must be consequences for every action. The Buddhist ran up against this same thing and he answered it in an entirely different way. He said, the Buddhist said, "Well, in view of the fact that you get a consequence for everything you do," he dimly understood this was the case, you see, he didn't articulate it, "why, you better not cause anything." And his answer to it is don't cause. In other words, the only way to avoid stimulus-response consequences of another stimulus-response occurring, is of course, start no stimulus-response mechanisms. Push no buttons. Do nothing. Cause nothing. And that was his answer to the situation.

Well, the world – and believe me, the chaps who are walking up and down the highways and byways and sitting in the palaces and at the – in the day of Gautama Siddhartha – were as reasonable, if not more so, at the raw-meat level, you see, than they are today. I mean, you've got the same breed of cat. There's no reason to downgrade the people he was talking to, you see. And he came to this conclusion and from that day to this the Buddhist, you see, tries not to cause anything. That was his solution to a problem.

Well, we have another solution to the problem, is you can audit it out. That's a much more forward method of doing so. But at what level is all this taking place? I'm afraid that you're really not talking to the man in the street. You must be talking to a trained Scientologist. And I don't think you'll even put this across at Level II. I think this is a Level III proposition, according to my new levels here. You get the – you get the idea? This is pretty profound, actually. It's the question of right conduct. Is it right to cause things? Can you really cause anything? If somebody gets into total chaos, he says – he gets this proposition, "Can you cause anything? Do you ever really cause anything?" You find some birds wandering around, and they will tell you, well, by association, you never really caused anything. Because where

do you find the start of the cause cycle? Of course the start of the cause cycle's very easily answered. The start of the cause cycle is where you say the cause cycle started. You just nominate it.

But you'll get this: And if you want to really throw somebody, say, "All right, take a rifle. All right, now, somebody gets killed. Now, if we examine this very carefully from a stimulus-response mechanism we find out that the trigger of the rifle – well, we say the rifle really killed somebody because that actually, you see, had the bullet and the powder and had the barrel to direct the thing, you see, and so it actually was the cause-point, wasn't it? It's obviously because it's the start of the cause-point, so your comm cycle there is cause-distance-effect; it naturally starts with a rifle."

All right, the fellow comes along, and he says, "Well, this couldn't possibly be true because somebody squeezed the trigger. And therefore it was the impulse that squeezed the trigger that caused the rifle to fire, and therefore the finger was the start of the stimulus-response cycle." Somebody else comes along and he says, "No, that isn't so. It was the thought, 'pull the trigger,' which caused the finger to pull and which caused the rifle to fire, so therefore the stimulus-response cycle takes place at the thought 'pull the trigger'." And then somebody comes along and he says, "It couldn't be that at all, because obviously there was some motivation for this. It must have been the motive. The person thought that he had reason to do this. So therefore the reason he had to do this was actually the start of the stimulus-response cycle."

Somebody – behaviorist comes along, and he says, "No, that couldn't be the case – couldn't be the case at all because the fellow got that reason from his early childhood, and so forth. So actually what started the whole cycle was the person's early childhood, you see. People were mean to him or something of this sort, and they complained when he threw spitballs at them, you know. And so therefore, it was really his early childhood that caused this whole thing."

And the child psychologist comes along and he explains to you very rapidly that of course you can't just say something nebulous like "early childhood," you see, you must assign it to something. So therefore, whose influence was the greatest over him: was it his mother, or his father? All right, and they finally figure it out that his mother pulled the trigger with... [laughs] You see the nonsense we get into as soon as we start – well, actually, you just take any – anything in this universe, of course, is so tied in with the rest of the universe that you can just keep tracking back endlessly, and so on.

Fortunately for us there is a prime thought. And it's way back there on the track at the beginning of the actual GPMs and you could track all cause for the individual back to prime thought. Well, that's great. There is a stopping point somewhere. But without knowing that particular data the rest of this data gets very esoteric. And the philosophical conundrums which it gives and the number of humanitarian (quote) "sciences" which it gives birth to – genetics, behaviorist philosophies and so on. You can just start counting these things on the fingers of a five-armed wonder, see, and there's just lots of them. And you've got yourself a – you've got yourself a "Where did anything start?" And then you must then conceive that it

must have started nowhere. See? Must have started nowhere and it was all out of everybody's control to begin with so you better not do anything about it.

Well, the people get so intrigued, you see, trying to trace this cause, this initial impulse for the stimuli back, that they never realize that that stimuli actually causes another stimuli cycle right in front of it. You squeeze the finger around the trigger of a rifle which then fires and there's going to be some repercussions. It might only be the recoil of the rifle, don't you see. But in actual fact the puller of the trigger is going to receive something from the act. It might only be the recoil of the rifle. It might only be the responses which – or pardon me, the stimuli which then start at the other end, which come back and hit the individual, don't you see? We've recently had a very gruesome example of this. I think in twenty-four hours the guy was dead. See? He fired a rifle and twenty-four hours later, boom, he's dead, you see – stimulus-response.* Well, if he hadn't fired the rifle he wouldn't be dead. See, that's very interesting to examine from a philosophical standpoint.

All right. Now you get your overt act-motivator sequence. And now we can go into a whole bunch of other think-think on this thing. Did he get shot because he shot? Was it very involved? Wasn't it just that he delivered an overt of shooting and received a motivator of shooting? Wasn't that just about what that amounted to? Or was it wider than this? Would the word "consequence" have to do with the moral values of his act? See, we can go into another big, wide perimeter of think, here, see. Moral values of his act, *dluhh*, so on and so on and so on. We can get awfully spread out.

Truth of the matter is you can't pull the finger of the rifle without receiving another stimulus-response cycle. It can't be done. In this universe it's impossible. Simply that. It doesn't matter if I... Now, I'll give you an example.

We haven't said how much stimuli and how much response, don't you see; how much cause and how much effect, we put it into Scientology language. Now we take this E-Meter and now I am going to turn on the sensitivity – I mean, the on-off switch of this E-Meter, see? Now, listen. All right, that's fine. [switches the meter on] I turned it on, and then that click occurred at this particular point and it itself was a new cycle of stimuli which then I heard and impinged on my eardrum, see? I'm not talking about the seriousness of things. We're not even really talking about the comparable magnitude. We're certainly talking, however, about stimulus-response mechanisms are met with stimulus-response mechanisms.

A cause and effect cycle is always met with a cause and effect cycle. You can't have a cause and effect cycle without receiving a cause and effect cycle. Then it gets to be a contest of how tough are you and how much can you confront.

Therefore, what you cause is monitored only by how much you can confront. If you can confront getting shot, shoot. You see? If you can't confront getting shot, don't shoot. And actually, moral conduct would simply be only causing those things which can be confronted by those they're caused to. And there in Scientology is an actual route around the overt act-

* Editor's note: LRH alludes to the fact that the alleged murderer of J.F.Kennedy, Lee Harvey Oswald, was himself shot shortly after he had been arrested by the police.

motivator sequence. There is an answer to this. Don't cause things others can't confront. This way you certainly minimize the stimulus-response stimulus-response curves.

You go around shooting people, you're liable to get shot. All right. Maybe this would be all right if you can confront getting shot yourself; maybe or maybe not, but that's a very first dynamicity proposition, let me assure you. Exclusively on the first.

The trouble is we do not live alone. You can go out and sit on a satellite for umpteen trillion years. Sooner or later you're going to – you're going to meet somebody else. Sooner or later. I can guarantee it. I've sat on some satellites and things for quite a few years. And sure enough, somebody always turned up. You wait long enough, somebody always turns up. That you've got a guarantee of, see?

Now, if we look over the proposition which is put before us here, we find out then that if you cause things which others can confront, or which others wish to confront and so forth, why, you lead a rather unstimulated existence. But if by your acts of omission and acts of commission are causing things others can't confront – that is to say it'd be greatly to their detriment if they even tried to confront them, such as of course, starting a war or something like this with its fantastic ramifications – if you set yourself up to be directly responsible for this particular type of cycle, why you can expect to get your head knocked off, that's for sure – eventually – even though you think you could confront it, you see?

You could say, "Well, I can confront all the effects of a war so therefore it's all right if I start a war." No, it's going to generate some effects you can't confront. Because you generated some effects they couldn't confront. The overt is generating effects which are unconfrontable. And the motivator is inevitably going to be the generation of effects which are unconfrontable.

So you see, the limited first dynamicity view of, "Well, I can shoot somebody because I don't mind getting shot. Therefore it makes it all right if I shoot somebody." That doesn't hold good. Because actually the overt isn't shooting somebody, the overt is causing an effect somebody else couldn't confront. And the motivator of it is going to be the cause of an effect that you can't confront. I don't care, it might be some entirely different type of effect. But it'll be something you can't confront.

Well, that's the story of this universe. What's omitted from all this – that any given instant the thetan can get an idea totally independent of all other ideas. And that's what puts in randomness into the whole situation. And any given idea, any given moment, any given thetan can "think" one, independent of everything else that's going on. Now the psychologist didn't believe this, so his work was limited. Other earlier philosophers didn't believe this. The idea was never really envisioned, which was independent postulation. He always thought you had to do it on association and they set you up a trap.

The old idea of you will always make gold – the alchemist joke – you will always make gold if you go to the top of a mountain at midnight, and you get on the top of this mountain and you take an old stump. And you put three pieces of lead in the stump and you say this charm over those pieces of lead, providing the phase of the moon is full. If you do not think of the word "hippopotamus" the lead will turn to gold. You can see it now!

All right, somebody will always think of the word "hippopotamus" because he's not supposed to. All right.

Similarly, they'll set up a proposition like this – they'll prove it to you conclusively. You cannot think of an independent thought. The reason you can't think of an independent thought, you see, is every time you try to think of an independent thought you will see that it is associated with some thought that has already been thought. Then they'll look at you smilingly like Cheshire cats, having set up the "hippopotamus" mechanism, you see. And just leave you, in vain, struggling through trying to think of an independent thought that is not associated with any independent thought. Well of course, that's silly, because you are already in association by having the idea that you should think of an independent thought without associating it with any other independent thought, so that is the independent thought. You get the trickery and trappery involved in this kind of stuff?

Well, just because you could always do weird tricks with association is no reason association is a total all of everything. And association, the idea of association, you think of ice cream, you think of a hot day, you think of a child, see? Stream of consciousness, writers call it. And you think of a this and then you – cause that, you thought of a that, and everybody's got his life all dreamed up as all thoughts were consecutive to an associative base someplace or another which in itself didn't exist. So they don't ever look for a primary or independent base, therefore they start to predict human behavior in a very interesting and peculiar way. They predict human behavior along this particular line and say that it is predictable.

See, they want to predict human behavior so they never recognize that human behavior can be unpredictable as part of its prediction. Part of the prediction of human behavior is the fact that it is unpredictable. And the reason for that is any thetan, at any given time, in any given place, can get a totally independent idea all off his own bat, without any assistance from anything.

Now that's a rather weird and wild proposition which exists exclusively in the area of Scientology: that somebody can think an independent thought. Well, of course, you can prove to everybody conclusively that people can't think independent thoughts by telling them that any thought they think is associated so try to think of a thought now that is not associated with any indepen... with a – with a... A guy will go, "Let's see, I can – all right, I'll think of that door. No, I couldn't think of that door because it's there and of course the fact that it's there made me think of to think of the door." You eventually go down scale. You say, "Well, I can't think of an independent thought."

In other words, self-determinism of think is taken away from a person in this particular universe. And then we get up to the proposition, then, of how much think can a person tolerate. How much think can a person think he has "think"? We see that all the time in the overt-motivator sequence. We start running somebody on, "What have you done? What have you withheld? What have you done? What have you withheld?" and that sort of thing, and they give you motivator, motivator, motivator, movitator, motivator. Motivator, motivator, motivator. You say, "What have you done?" And they will say, "Well, I sat down here so you could ask me – I've done something to myself by sitting down here and letting you ask me these horrible questions." That's the overt, see? You'd be surprised. We've got quite a catalog

around here of "overts" that are motivators. We used to keep lists on them. Some kinds of questions that students would answer in a motivatorish fashion, see?

"Now, what have you done since you came to Saint Hill?" don't you see?

"Well, I made myself come to Saint Hill and I've done something to myself so therefore that is an overt, you see."

They go on this way by the hour. And of course they're giving nothing but motivators, motivators, and not really answering the question. They're making it very reasonable, but they're really not answering the question. It gets worse and worse and worse and their tone arm will get stickier and stickier and they'll plow in harder and harder, see? Until all of a sudden they say, "Well, I did this and I did that and I pinched another student's biscuits and so forth," and all of a sudden they'll start coming up the line again, don't you see?

Well, this is concept of responsibility. So what is the relative concept amongst beings? Well, you find the fellow out there in the street, and man, it's all been done to him. This was the great appeal of Dianetics. See, it's all been done to you. Somebody tries to tell you Dianetics and Scientology are the same thing you might bring up this fact of responsibility. In Dianetics it was all done to you, and responsibility level of Scientology is "you done it." Makes Scientology relatively, not unpopular, but makes it higher toned. Somewhat different. But there is a difference between these two subjects. One concerns the mind and the interrelationships of mental image pictures and the other concerns the adventures of the human spirit. But man is a spirit; he is not an animal. These are entirely different subjects, if you want to look at it bluntly.

All right, so we are faced with a problem, then, of the tremendous popularity of irresponsibility: "It was all done to me." The individual then can conceive so easily in this universe that it was all done to him, that he never had an independent thought, that he never thought of anything that ever had anything to do with anything, that he himself never started an action. You'd be surprised. Kleptomaniacs are always pulling this as a defense: that the garment just moved off the counter and into their bag. And they actually say this, and people think they are joking. See, they don't realize that the kleptomaniac thinks that's what happened. He'll see his arm – he'll see this independent arm go up, and pick the article off the counter and put it in the shopping bag, you see? He sees this happen, very detachedly, see, he had nothing to do with it, you know? Arm comes up, arm comes up...

The common criminal, the common criminal, knows at levels of responsibility which are quite interesting. They watch themselves do things. And they see these things have happened, but they know they didn't do it, that it's due and owing to some other factor or force that it occurred. They have all sorts of ideas. For instance, they think that everybody pretends that people own things. See, they know this – they know this is a lie, that everybody else knows is a lie, and that has been dreamed up everywhere, and that everybody has agreed on for one reason only: to get them.

To give you a slighter amplification of this, the fellow knows that nobody owns anything, you see, he knows that nobody really owns anything anywhere, but they have entered into a conspiracy which they pretend, see, they pretend that people think people own things.

And this is done for only one reason: These other people pretend this to get them personally in trouble.

That is actually the thinkingness level of a criminal. That accounts for the little sly sneer you see on their faces sometimes. They know everybody else is just pretending that it was a crime. They can be gotten to just because everybody else pretends it's a crime, see? Everybody else is being very nasty to them. They say certain things exist, you see? And that's just to get them in trouble. These things don't really exist. And people believe these things just to get them in trouble. Courts and that sort of thing only exist – not because there is such a thing as crime – they just exist so that they can pretend outrageous and unreasonable things so that they can get this poor guy, you see, and they know that's the way things are. And of course, operating in that frame of work, why, they then have the total reality of the uncriminalness of all criminal acts.

Now, the police are going up against a mechanism of this particular kind and character in order to stamp out crime. Now that's one of the most remarkable situations in the world. The cop actually, they have rather widely, particularly in the US, borrowed a lot of our definitions with regard to crime. "Criminal can't work," criminal *rah-rah-rah*, that I wrote some little essays on at one time or another, and they've gotten about. I've heard them echoed back.

But they don't realize this horrible fact: That anybody they're arresting for stealing the car – the guy just overtly stole this car – the person that they are arresting would horrify them if they could look into his head and find out what he was really thinking. He knows, he knows, this fellow who stole the car, that the police are just a bunch of frauds. That the car really never belonged to anybody and that the police are fraudulently pretending that cars are owned in order to get the fellow who drove this one off in trouble. And that somebody else who owned the car is just pretending that he owned the car.

This is one of the reason MEST goes to pieces amongst criminals and so forth. They know nobody owns it. Doesn't belong to them; doesn't belong to anybody. This is a very fantastic frame of mind. Of course that's a total unreality; total this and that. Maybe at the highest levels and so forth, maybe it is kind of a joke that everybody owns everything... no – that anybody owns anything, and so forth. Nevertheless, these are the agreements upon which this society is built. And failure to recognize the rights of other individuals with regard to their zones and spheres of ownership is bound to bring about chaos of magnitude. And to not respect those spheres of ownership, of course, is to sow overt acts that are just madness themselves. Nothing can operate.

Actually, communism gets a very accurate designation because it really believes, nationally, that nobody really ever owns anything. And of course they enforce it as a state. That's why it tends to attract so many hot rod criminals into its commissar ranks. And they got plenty. This idea is basically a criminal idea.

All right. Now let's go a little bit further than this. There, of course, is a very subnormal – subusual I should say – idea that is much below the social level. You're getting into ideas which are down into the bottom of the sewer, you see. They're way below what you would consider a normal. Now you're dealing, however, with what is basically a neurosis. And at some levels this becomes – it becomes worse, it becomes, of course, some kind of a

psychosis. "It's perfectly all right to kill people because they don't exist," is one of the homicidal characteristics of thought. "I didn't shoot him. I didn't shoot him." And one of the reasons he's basing this – "I didn't shoot anybody," he's more likely to say because, of course, the other person didn't exist, so therefore, you know, how could he have shot him? His reasonability – person will be lying there in a mass of blood and he'd say, "Well I – I didn't – I didn't do anything to anybody," see. Why? Because there was nobody there.

Everyone around that person is a figment of his own imagination and he recognizes the delusory nature of his own imagination which gives him a universe, which is quite interesting. But we are not talking, actually, now, in classification about such subnormal levels of thought, we're not talking about psychosis, we're not talking about neurosis. We're just talking about this guy out here in the street. And this boy out here, he's walking around, he has his own difficulties. The most common difficulty at this particular time and space common to most nations of the planet is that "it was done to them." This is pretty much the common denominator of their think. "It was done to them."

The way they are – as they are right now – is the way they are because something was done to them that made them that way. That is their big think about it. The responsibility for their state of beingness is exterior to their own control. They cannot control their own state of beingness; it's always exterior to them. I've – as a writer I used – my hair used to stand on end on one peculiar little phobia I used to have. I have just published a story or something like that and it'd be all over the newsstands and I'd be all swelled up on myself, something like this, and – never seem to wear off, no matter how many stories you publish, you're always glad to see them, and – I don't know, it's probably a second dynamic manifestation – thetan's always happy to see his creations around, you know, for some reason or other.

And some fellow, you know, one of these lip-moving writers, you know, tongue in – held between his teeth, you know, and little stub of a pencil, and you know, fellow's – to sign his name, you see, or make out a bill or something like that, he'll say "Oh," he says, "I always wanted to be a writer. I always wanted to be a writer but the trouble was I didn't have the education." It always used to strike me as peculiar because not one fellow said it to me; this is a totally generalized remark. I heard it everywhere. It was inevitable that this remark would be made in the course of any conversation. "Oh yes, you're Hubbard. I saw one of your pictures recently," or something like this, see, or "I saw something or other" and so forth. And you just wait for a moment, because here it came, you see. "I always wanted to write, but I didn't do so because I didn't have the education." You know, I never really figured out the pat response for that stimuli. I could be counted on to change the subject or to ask them how the weather was going to be or how their wives were or something of the sort. But it was almost inevitable.

This was, of course, from one point of view on one profession. But the generalization of this particular activity – it didn't mean that some of them wouldn't have written, don't you see? It didn't mean that they were being in contest with anything, it didn't mean they were probably doing anything but agree. But what I'm calling to your attention is it – the reason they didn't write had to do with their education. And this made to me, in the first couple of years as a pro writer, particularly stood my hair on end because all during that period of time I was hectically, fiendishly, frantically trying to jettison and throw overboard all of the education I had gratuitously and horrifyingly been given on the subject of writing.

I was writing in *spite* of very good training in this particular field. Almost killed me. By the time you get over all these instilled phobias from somebody else, you have a hard time.

Now, what's this mean? It means that in a little banal, ordinary type of conversation that didn't have anything to do with anything, somebody else had the responsibility. That person – person wasn't writing because they weren't writing or because they were too lazy to write or they didn't have time to write or they just weren't writing. They couldn't say this. It had to be an exterior stimuli of which they were the response. It had to be an exterior cause of which they were the effect. You bring up almost anything with the average being and he will always handle it in this fashion – ordinarily handle it in this fashion. And then he will say, "There's an exterior cause that – which I am the effect." His conversation.

If you want to – ever want to read letters exchanged by members of the American Middle West – those are the most educative letters on the subject of health I think I have ever really read. I've read lots of them at one time or another. I've seen lots of them around. For awhile I was so horrified that I had the fixation of the "you couldn't stand to look at it so you went and looked at it," you know, this kind of a fixation on the subject. And I'd see letters from Mrs. Johnson, you see, to Mrs. Brown – and Mrs. Brown in Sioux City was being told by somebody in Kansas City just the common news of the day, you see. And "Uncle – Uncle Ralph, you see, has his lumbago and so forth and so forth, and they had to take poor Irma's *blah-blah* out the other day, and so forth," and it runs off this horrible medical catalog – the letter, you think of holding it up, you know, and the blood just drips off of one corner of it, you see, and the rest of it is unreadable because of the disease germs. [laughter]

Effect-they're just fixated on the idea of effect. Causative, cause is just lost to this wide, greatest majority of people – anything causative. Now, one of the things which you err in when you try to disseminate Scientology is not estimating this exact aspect where it comes about on the – this mythical character – the man in the street. You don't estimate how much cause he is willing to be responsible for, see? You hit him at where you live, which is you're willing to be responsible for some cause, don't you see? Well, he's not willing to be responsible for any cause; he's effect. Life has done it to him. If he had just been left a million dollars then he would be able to go down and look at the ocean once in a while himself. If he had – if he had – you see. If it hadn't happened to him that... If his Uncle Snodgrass had not died then... If... You see, he's effect, effect. He's telling you all the time, "I'm the effect of this horrible thing called life. I'm effect of all this trickery. I'm the effect of all this nonsense. I'm the effect of all these other things."

Well, he gets into that mood quite honestly because, believe me, he *is* the effect of an awful lot of interesting things, you see? There's not some lack of truth in this, see? At any given instant, why, his boss can take a sudden dislike to him or something like that and he's out in the rain, don't you see? At any given instant, why, some bug comes walking down the boulevard, you know, and gives him a nip, and he's up there in the hospital with a four thousand dollar bill facing him, you see? Wild and horrible things can happen to this individual. He can be the effect of so many things that he actually can't think of himself as ever being cause of anything at all.

So you have some mother whose boy has gone zig-zag down the bad road, or something like this, and she can't think of herself as ever having any part of any of that, you know. Can't think of herself as having caused any part of it. Can't take responsibility for anything that ever happened to this fellow, you see? She'd take refuge in such things – all famous criminals' mothers, incidentally, almost uniformly say at the time the criminal is executed, "He was a good boy." It's just happened again in America. "He was a good boy." That's right. Oswald was a good boy. That was the adjudication of his mother.

See, they don't think any further than that, but they can actually go into an inversion of this and just try to deny all reality with regard to any of the existing situation. One doesn't say that she should take full responsibility for the matter, but why is she interested in being an effect of it if she couldn't cause it? And one of the errors which you make on dissemination, of course, is try to make the fellow take hold of any cause at all.

Dear old Peggy Conway told me one time or another, "I was going along in life," she says, "I was going along in life and I was doing all right and I was doing okay. I just knew that everybody else was the reason for all of my troubles and difficulties, and that I had nothing to do with it whatsoever at all, and I knew that if I believed in certain things and I acted in certain ways and so forth, then somehow or another I would get through somehow, not very well. And all of a sudden you come along and you tell me just, 'All right, stand out there in the open. Now stand on your own two feet. Now be responsible for what's going on in your life!'" She says, "It was a horrible shock!"

'Tis, too! You just – but look. Look at how low this level is. Look at how low this level is. If you just intimated – this would be a gradient on it – if you'd just intimated, "There may be certain zones and sections in your existence which, if you think them over very carefully, you may find you have had a causative action in. If you think them over very carefully and sort them out, you may find that some zone of your life you have actually caused something." We don't say it very much. We say, "At one time or another you decided to read a book and you decided to read the book and your cause there was deciding to read the book, see."

Well, perhaps they'd buy it on that. But ordinarily, if you just dump it on their heads, say, "Look you're responsible for everything that ever happened to you, what's really wrong with you is you've been doing so many weird things with your bank, and coming along and thinking of postulating this sort of thing and so forth, and moving on up to present time, and so forth, no wonder you're in a horrible condition, see?" And they go "Uhhhhh." Well, they want to be an effect. That's the comfortable agony to be in. That's the most comfortable conceivable agony, is to be at the total effect point of all of existence.

Now, you take this fellow and you show him, or her, you show them this little, little bit, that – you show them there are a couple of rules in life. And you show them something or other, and they get a bit wiser suddenly. They look at these things. And then they apply a rule or two of this. Well, you tell them about communication, ARC triangle, or something like this, if you've got them up that high, and they apply this. Or you show them how to do a Touch Assist, and train them up just like you were training a pro auditor, you see, until they

could really stick there, and you know, "Feel my finger." You know? Do that Touch Assist real good. Give them a very disciplined run of a Touch Assist and so on.

And they all of a sudden are working on somebody one day and horrible shooting pain goes through the guy's skull and he suddenly snaps out of it and he's okay, see? Fantastic. He's caused something. The person who did that Touch Assist has caused something. Entering it philosophically, saying, "Look old fellow, you, in actual fact, are the cause of certain things in your life. Just to think it over." He might be able to pick this up on a think-think basis. But in actual fact he won't believe it. If you show him – if you show him that he can talk to his wife or he can do a Touch Assist on his friend, or something like this, it gradually starts dawning on him that he can cause something. He doesn't really wish particularly to look back that you're the one who taught him to do it because he is doing the action. And at that entrance – and he can cause an effect. And he realizes that he is causing the effect.

Now, people who are the most saddled with religious superstition are the hardest to bring out of this rut. Ireland was a terrible example to us in that particular line. Because the one lecture that laid a complete egg every week was the lecture which was devoted to creation. And of course this ran straight into the eighth dynamic and went up beautifully, exploded and fell to the ground in little bits and pieces because nobody could create anything. And finally, the Instructors over there got very clever, and they got up to a point of saying, "You could make a chair. Could you make a chair? Therefore, you have created a chair." And eventually it'd get around, it was heresy, don't you see? Utter heresy. God had created everything and therefore they could not have created anything without actually running into heresy.

It's the first time I noticed this principle at work. Actually, create is the wrong word to use. It's "cause." "Cause." Did they cause anything? And we wouldn't have had that much difficulty. But you can argue with the man for a long time as to what he can cause. You can process him in this direction and so forth, you might get someplace – would get someplace.

But you could be very philosophic and you could be very involved without making very much progress.

Can you cause anything? Do you cause anything? Ah. But the areas where he knows everybody fails are the areas of human relationship, communication, health, well-beingness – these particular areas. These are very desirable effects. These are effects that somebody else wants: good communication, feel better and so forth. All right. Well, he's then obeying this original rule that I gave you: "Cause only those effects which others can confront, or that want," see?

Now, you've given him that and then you give him some tools and train him up well in the use of these tools and let him find out that he can cause an effect. And you have snapped him out of this endless cycle of stimulus-response stimulus-response; everything has a consequence; anything you do you'd better not do anything because if you do do it then you'll get your teeth kicked in, therefore you better be very idle, therefore you'd better be nothing but an effect because your teeth have been kicked in already. Think-think-think, figure-figure-figure, does anybody ever really start an original action? See, all of these – all of these questions.

You see, the point is, it isn't these people are ignorant of philosophy, these people have failed in the field of philosophy. It's not that anybody doesn't want philosophy, they just don't

believe it could exist anymore. You see, these men, out here on the street, we don't care what the savants up in the university are saying about matters of life and death, "...and is it true or isn't it true that eight needles can stand on the head of an angel." We're not interested about any of their philosophic conundrums, we're not the least bit interested. Nor in their opinions, because they are not the living world. They're a pretty dead one, if you want to know the truth of the matter. I went into a university one time, dusted off a professor and talked to him for a few minutes. Put him back in his chair and left. I suppose he's there yet.

That's very, very cruel of me, actually. That particular university, they were very, very anxious to see me – they were very, very happy to see me because they'd been trying to write science fiction stories around there, too, and they'd never made the grade. That's far from the totality of my writing, but that was why they were interested.

Anyway, these savants and their definitions and so forth seem to upgrade the field of philosophy to a point where it is an untouchable area. It's a plateau that nobody could ever ascend to. One must know propounding words and propound words like "telekinesis," and must be able to have an insight into the writings of Hume as locked into the writings of Locke, as modified by "he-couldn't" Mr. Kant, see? And one must be able to give forth verbatim a whole page, *pocketa-pocketa-pocketa-pocketa* of Lucretius, you see, without even pausing for colons, in order to be a philosopher. And actually this is their zone and area of philosophy and that isn't the zone or area that philosophy was ever designed for, that isn't the zone or area where it's ever bought, and it must be that they're studying some kind of dead philosophy that nobody wants for it to reach a plateau of this particular kind.

So it leaves the whole world open to this very, very marketable commodity called "philosophy." I say marketably, not for financial reasons, but everybody wants this thing. Because the philosopher, the fellow, is that little guy out in the street. Except he's failed in this particular field. He wants to know, vaguely, dimly, almost forgotten wanting to know it, "Who am I? What am I? What am I doing here? What are people? Where did this universe come from? What happens to me when I die? Where am I going? Why is it that you really can't succeed in life here? What is tha... what happens to people? Why don't they like me? What is the truth about *raow*..." And actually, some circuitry in the head of every skull on this planet, and the guy himself, is going around at some low level, saying those exact questions. And those are the basic questions of philosophy. And that philosophy hasn't answered them has put it on a plateau so that everybody can pretend that philosophy has answered it, but can't ascend to the plateau to find out.

The greatest defeat philosophy ever had was Immanuel Kant saying, "Oh, well, there's the knowable and the unknowable and some things are so unknowable that nobody ever knows – is going to know them and so forth. The unknowable is just unknowable and that's all." That's insanity, man! Will you please explain to me *how* he would ever find out there was an unknowable if nobody could ever know about it? And as far as religion is concerned, and its answers, are very unsatisfactory, because "God made everybody." That's a wonderful thing. I mean, it doesn't take any time at all to say it, "God made everybody," see. And people go running around with this one, "God made everybody, God made everybody," you know, that's wonderful. Glib. Prime cause is announced right there, bang. Ecclesiastical councils can sit around and propound this for thousands of years, don't you see? "Boy, are we learned!

Marvelous!" Learnedness here goes out by the ream and they say it in Latin with organ music. Awful waste of good organ music. Anyhow, what this all adds up to here – what all this adds up to – is one question from a little child can puncture the whole thing. Little child says, "Who made God?"

So, we go on this stimulus-response track looking for answers, forever, you see, and we're just on an endless treadmill. Of course we come to no full stop until we realize that every being is an independent being who is himself capable of expressing a thought or intention independent of all other thoughts and intentions at any given instant. As soon as we recognize that every individual is capable of himself being causative, we have no, no slightest approach to answers. We can't answer anything. But as soon as we accept that as a basis for action, a basis for thought; as soon as we realize that it's the degree that an individual can accept or execute causation independent of other influences that brings about his state of case, we then have cracked the whole riddle of philosophy. There's nothing left to philosophy to be stupid about.

Now, if we introduce physics into it and say all things are relative to all things in a time stream, and the time stream is invariable and uneradicable, and so forth, we've already accepted our distance into a prime thought. We're that far from prime thought. We've already postulated time. Now, of course, you're on the treadmill of "you must never be able to escape this time." So all things happening in the past must influence all things that happen in the future and then everything is inevitable and let's all go down and die quietly in the barn together. See, I mean, that becomes utter nonsense.

As soon as we got a time stream, don't you see, then all before influence all afters, and then we can prove, because the time stream exists, that nobody can be cause. Until we realize that the time stream is capable of postulation. A time stream can both be caused and escaped from. And if this is possible, then of course, we get another higher level of cause.

So, I tell you – listen to me now – the only thing I'm giving you all this about – you might find it useful, you might find it entertaining. In the field of dissemination it might give you some answers – you say to somebody, "All right, now you realize that you're the cause of this bad marriage. Now just be more causative and straighten out the bad marriage," see? *Bloom!* [laughter] That isn't just an error; that's an ARC break. That is so far from this individual's reality on the subject, you see? So you might have some answers to dissemination along in this particular line, but what I'm trying to tell you here, what I'm trying to tell you here, is the basis of classification.

Now, we've had gotten a lot of technology, and technology is very valuable, and anybody tried to swallow it all off one spoon he'd get an awful bellyache. There's one rule about it, by the way, there's one rule in dissemination – before I leave the subject of dissemination, I will give you one little tip on the thing: If you only tell people things about Scientology that you yourself have an excellent reality on and have experienced, you'll find you'll just communicate like a shot to almost anybody because your R-factor in you is so high that you cannot help but put it across to others. It's an interesting rule in dissemination. You'll hear more of this later. And it probably could be stated much more aptly than I have just stated it because I haven't worked it over at all for a good statement, but it's just more or less that. If you talk to

people about things that you yourself have an excellent reality on – and the best way to have a reality on it is of course to experience something – well, you'll find out you'll communicate like a bomb, and nobody ever doubts you then. They say, "This Scientology's wonderful, wonderful stuff. I mean the fellow and so forth just look at him, you know, and there he is," and so on.

I was very interested at a level of reality that Charles in here, my man there, he's an old sailor, and he'd been everywhere and done everything, you know, and so on. He met somebody up in a pub and some student or other had not really acquainted this fellow with the facts of Scientology. And he was able to communicate to this person and he had this person swinging over from "their bunch of bums and rats" over in no time. He actually was unconsciously applying this rule. He said, "Well, I've been down at Saint Hill," he said, "for several months, and I feel much better." That was his total argument in selling Scientology. "Been down at Saint Hill for several months and I feel much better."

I think that you – I think that you will consider this an interestingly mild little piece of dissemination. But in actual fact that was his reality. See? He does feel better for having been down here for several months, see? But that, of course, carried fantastic conviction. It was just like a bullet. That was his total reality on the subject and he just delivered it across and that was all there was to it. It arrived with complete truth because it was complete truth from its point of origin. Don't you see?

It isn't the startling thing you say; it's the real thing you say. And it isn't whether or not it's real to the fellow you're talking to but whether or not it's real to you. You'd be surprised how well you could communicate if you had a wart in your left ear at one time and you had some processing and it disappeared. Tell this person all about this wart disappearing, you know, and they say, "Scientology's a good thing, you know, and you're a good communicator, you know, you're really talking." Sounds wild, see.

Or maybe, "I had a – I had a – I used to worry all the time, I used to worry all the time about whether it was a good or bad thing, or I'd been a bad boy for not going to church. And I don't worry about that now." The guy's – a benefit he's had, see. And the fellow hearing it at the other end will. "What do you know!" You'll find out it'll arrive in every case with terrific impact.

By the way, this was called to my attention by people talking about things on which they had no reality, and I suddenly got a codification of exactly how you could talk to somebody with a total reality. I thought that was helpful. People don't often tell me things that are helpful, but that one did.

All right, in this other particular – that's enough of that. I want to tell you about this classification scale. Because it does – I've had to work it out one way or the other and I've seen the necessities for it and so forth. But all a classification scale is, is willingness to accept cause over one's destiny and that of others. That's all a classification scale is. It's a scale of willingness to accept... take cause over the – one's own destiny and that of others. Be at cause, in other words; degree of being at cause.

Now, of course, down scale, madmen get into an obsessive "cause," you know. And every once in a while somebody will come along and consult me on the fact that he has to

have processing because he's got to take over control of England, or something of this sort, and wipe out Europe, you know? It doesn't seem to me to be very real. Then we try to find out if the guy can remember what he ate for breakfast and we find out he can't. So this, of course, is susceptible to various reinterpretations. But in actual fact, you could get it every time just by a test of O/W. What is the fellow – what has he done and what has he withheld?

Now, of course, this of course is also susceptible to misinterpretation, because some fellows have done horrible things and they tell you these things without any responsibility whatsoever. But there you are merely looking at a lack of social sense. We are not discussing, however, how you measure this. We are not discussing how you measure this. We're just giving it to you as the basic formula on which classification is founded.

And cause is not expressed in actions in life but in case responses. You understand? It's cause over, or in, one's own case, that we are discussing. We're not ask – talking about the person being causative in various zones and dynamics and areas. We're just talking about his level of responsibility in his own case level. Now a lot of these factors can shake out, and they can actually be plotted. A person of very high levels of responsibility has certain abilities and perceptions, mentally, which are very evident. They're quite evident. They're processing of one kind or another. These – you only get fooled with these for lack of experience.

Some fellow who apparently never ARC breaks may be totally incapable of assuming cause. See, he never ARC breaks. He's a very quiet, good pc, but never makes any case gains, see, unless they're very carefully processed. And you don't realize this until after a while you see that this case is not making any progress whatsoever; his level of cause is not increasing or improving. And he eventually may come up to a point where he will ARC break. This is your propitiation case, of which you are well acquainted. Always tell the auditor in a sort of a sad-looking – from a sad-looking eye about his case, "Oh, yes, I made some good results in-session, thank you," so on. You hear him afterwards saying, "Well, yes, he isn't so good, but I have to be nice, you see." It's all sort of washed out. I've even seen a propitiative manic the like of which you never saw, you know. Process the person, gets no better, gets no tone arm action, nothing of the sort, and at the end of the session, you know, tell you brightly, "Oh, it was a wonderful session! A wonderful session!" and so forth. But these are just variations of lower harmonics of the same thing. People make progress in processing or they don't. And you quickly get so that you can plot up a case as to whether or not that case is doing well under processing or isn't doing well under processing.

Let's take one level of case that can't sit still and answer an auditing question. That's a pc manifestation in processing. You say, "Do fish swim?" and they say, "*Whooo*" wiggle, wiggle off and so forth, cans *raow* and so forth. "Yes." And you explore it afterwards, they answered the auditing question, and they were answering the question, "Is any sun coming in the window," you see. I mean, this thing is all disconnected and they really never answer the auditing question and they never seem to get any this; they never seem to get any that.

And they don't get over this. They don't get over this manifestation. In other words there's no change. One of the ways you tell this is they always set the same goals. You can look over goals lists, and when an individual starts setting the same goals session after session after session after session after session, this individual is not making any progress in process-

ing. It's one of the ways you tell. You want to look for the ARC break session and so forth. You look at the goals set in that session and set in the next session. And violent changes between these two things – not a gradient change, but a violent change – will denote that that was the session in which you should look for the ARC break. And then you see what was done in that session and you can straighten the case out accordingly by inspecting the goals for the session.

All of this is very interesting, but it means that a case under processing follows up a rather smooth, steady gradient. Cases do not leap up suddenly. What the case is doing is becoming more at cause over matter, energy, space, time, forms and other beings. And the individual is assuming greater and greater cause. He isn't being necessarily more causative, he is simply assuming greater cause and he's more capable of cause. We aren't asking him to throw bricks around and keep them hoisted up in midair at a glance. We're asking him whether or not he would be *willing* to do this, don't you see? Would he – willing to cause that?

But it actually is not even the – not even the single act that we're interested in. It's just he is more causative. He can handle his mind better. As he handles his mind better, he is more capable of handling other things around him better, and so forth. And his responses in processing are your very best possible indicator. This is not, then, a quick test so it tends to be neglected. And you actually have to process somebody for a while to find out if they're making some progress in processing. You can't take some fellow, and in the absence of his case folders and in the absence of everything else and so forth, just suddenly test whether or not he can do this, do that, and the other thing. It would be nice and maybe we could devise a set of tests of this character that would give you a good index.

However, they don't exist. You can, however, take somebody's case folder and find out how he was last year and how he is this year. That would make a marked jump, or somebody has had two or three hundred hours of processing and how was he before these two or three hundred hours of processing, how is he now? Well, that jump is big enough so that he knows and so forth, and you actually have to plow around for a little while to find out how he was two or three hundred hours ago because it's all negative gain.

The things that were wrong with him, two or three hundred hours ago, are not wrong with him now and so are not occupying any attention as far as he's concerned. And sometimes a fellow would have to sit there and think it over for quite a while to tell you if he's made any progress or not. But he has.

Case progress. Case progress. That is a direct index of cause. Take this fellow out here in the street, this common fellow, he's totally going to be an effect of everything. He wants to be told he's an effect of everything and so forth. Wrong thing to do is tell him to get causative. The right thing to do is to give him a little training and give him some tools, which when he applies them will demonstrate to him that he is now a little bit more at cause. Now he finds this out, and in the course of being processed and processing, he becomes more and more causative. He comes up higher and higher. He can accept more responsibility. Life in its zones and areas does not find him as a puppet or a marionette dancing at a set of strings, he's likely to have snapped a few of the strings, you see, or he's likely to stand still when somebody shakes the crossbar.

In other words, he's moved up to that degree. He's become more causative, therefore he's less of an effect of life. And these things are the things on which this class scale is drawn. That's all. That is the index, one to the next, within the ramifications of the things I've given you here as indexes as to how to measure it and that sort of thing.

You don't realize how far you've come, you see, until you get ahold of Joe Blow out here someplace working in a garage, and try to ask him if fish swim. Now that's not a particularly educated process or another. Let's not ask him a process. Let's just ask him if he has any problems, and listen to some of his answers. This is quite interesting. Fascinating, what he considers a problem. What is bedeviling his days and so forth. It's horrible. I mean, the fellow is living in a madhouse, from his viewpoint, don't you see?

All right, you just tell that fellow, be more causative, and that sort of thing, and he's not likely to love you for it. But if you can bring him up the line and you can teach him a little bit about processing, you can teach him a little bit, and you can get him processed and work back and forth at a very, very low level of processing, you see, why, he will assume more cause. And at that time he's quite capable of assuming enough cause to assume a new level of processing others and being processed. And when he's completed that he would be at another level where he was quite capable of assuming a new level of causativeness and being able to handle processes at that particular level. And so on up the line, all the way to OT.

This gives us, essentially, seven classes. And these seven classes are in actual fact eight. Now, you think we went up to the eighth dynamic, but we didn't – we went down to zero. There is a zero classification and that's the person who isn't classed. So you see, you have an unclassified class that you can refer to as Class 0, and seven classes, which makes the statement I gave you in the first place quite accurate. But in actual fact there's another class. That is the unclassified.

Now, if you wanted to be very precise about this thing you would say that a person who was a Class 0 was higher than an unclassified person, if you wanted a person who had never heard of Scientology at all, and wasn't in any direction whatsoever, you could maybe call that "unclassified," or something, to differentiate. Actually, we haven't really got any word for that but "raw meat."

But an unclassified person, a Class 0 – however that gets divided up – finds the person putting his rung on the ladder when he leaves Class 0 and becomes a Class I, HAS. This certificate is restored for good and adequate reasons that it's a different route now than a Book Auditor route.

Class 0: A person could be a Class 0 and have a certificate which had not yet been classed, don't you see, because he's only classed by the classification, not by the certificate. He can have a certificate without being of that class. That's important because in training activities, you will have a certain number of people who absolutely get their hearts utterly broken if they do not get a certificate or something to show they have been there and worked at it, and they've tried and they've passed their checksheets and they've done what they could. And all of a sudden you turn around and say, "We're going to give you no recognition for all the work you've done." Well maybe it was ten times as much work as somebody who did pass it all, don't you see. But we've done nothing for this chap.

So therefore, we make the certificate – the piece of paper – the certificate is inevitable for the completion of a certain course of study. But it doesn't make it inevitable that the person would be of that class. They would remain in the class they were in until they have their classification requirements met. Classification requirements, absolutely cut and bang, right on. No monkeying with it. No fooling about with it. You'll find out then that you can hold your classification requirements much more tightly if you do not try to hold your piece of paper certificate requirements so tightly. You understand?

Nobody will argue with you, particularly, you're training some people – you're training some people up through Class 0 and I. All right, you're going to give them a certificate when they're Class 0. They're Class 0 and they completed a certain course of study and that sort of thing, and there they are with a Class 0 certificate which is HAS, but it hasn't got any class on it. They can still run those processes that they were permitted to run at Class 0, which is practically everybody processes, and the Class 0 level of processing is a Touch Assist. See, he can do a Touch Assist. He can do something of that level of process at Class 0. Nobody really requires anything very desperate of them to do so, don't you see?

Now Class I becomes itsa. Now we've got itsa for Class I. That's the process of the class. Just to give you – just as a – not necessarily total final processes that belong to these classes, but it'll give you an idea of this gradient. Itsa is processes; they're Class I.

Repetitive processes: "Recall a communication," that sort of thing, normally the first processes taught in an Academy course. But this tremendous panorama of repetitive processes, they're not complicated beyond repetitive. They're not even complicated with a meter, don't you see? They'll have a meter at this stage, but mostly for reading the tone arm action. The meter is not significant at this level. And that is a Class II, with the repetitive process. And they get all of those old-time repetitive processes that are way back. They're strung out across the years and they're so valuable and that have done so fantastically workhorse a job, don't you see? They all belong in that particular class.

And we relegate missed withholds and overt/withhold processes and all Prepchecking, to Class III. That's missed withholds, O/Ws, Prepchecking, that would be Class III. I have learned by experience that it's pretty hard to teach a meter with great accuracy in an Academy and so forth. It leaves a lot to be desired. So it had better be grooved up into its own class, and that sort of thing. Well, they're taught about a meter in the Academy in a cursory fashion. This is the tone arm, this is how you switch it on and off. But the real hammer and pound on meters comes in here at Class III. They really start using meters at this level. And they can prepcheck. And at Prepcheck levels of course you've got tremendous numbers of processes again. This carries with it a little bit of an assessment. Not much of an assessment, but enough assessment to carry through in these things. You can find out what was the principal problem of this guy's existence, and then prepcheck the old HGC twenty-five-hour intensive. All of those processes belong in this thing.

See, here's what's funny, it's this whole thirteen years of research is suddenly coming alive before your eyes. It is not just deserted and neglected and lying there never to be seen again and your skills will never again be used. As a matter of fact, that stuff had value, value, value. What's happened to everybody is they followed the research line up, you see. And they

moved on up, and tried to move up to the top of the research line doggedly with their tongues hanging out, and that sort of thing. And in many instances have actually never gone through thoroughly any one of these levels as they came on up.

Therefore they get to the higher grade and they find the door barred. They actually never completed one of these lower steps. And they get up to the upper level and they're moving like the dickens with the research line and it has unsettled them to that degree. That doesn't mean we're just throwing everybody into Class 0 either, I'll take that up in a moment. But this is essentially what happened. But there's tremendously valuable processes lying back along those lines. There's fantastic things have been done, in times. Well, the old "Hello Mama," for heaven's sakes. You take a guy with a toothache and have him say hello and okay to it, have the tooth say hello and okay to him for awhile, and the most remarkable things can happen.

In other words, there's all kinds of processes – tons of them lying back along the line – and they fit into these various slots just as they were, you see, and grouped up and made neat. But just as they were. There's no vast reformation or change what the process was. You'll find, for instance, Class II will be studying a comm lag – on comm lags of equal length, as to when to end the process. Remember those old ones, you see? All that stuff is all back in action, see.

Anyhow, here's Prepcheck at Class III, and service facsimiles and assessments, and doing assessments and supervising the doing assessments and all that sort of thing, service facsimiles, all of that kind of work, you know, assessment – real heavy assessment work – and so forth, belongs at Class IV. In anything we've ever assessed or done, except 2. I don't think I'll ever let anybody run 2-12. 2-12 was interesting training ground, it taught people a lot of things and so forth, but in running a case I have found out that 2-12, of all the processes we had, was itself about the only one capable of pulling an RI out of place in a GPM. Process just has just a little bit too much smoke to it. It's just a little bit too hot. Because I've refound misworded 2-12 RIs in running a case to OT. And I found them, man. They were sitting right there and they had an RI pulled out of line. The case jammy at that particular point. In other words, it's just too powerful a process, it just reaches a little bit too deep into the case. So just skip your 2-12, and 2-12A and so forth, they don't fit in this hierarchy at all.

But there are tremendous numbers of assessment processes even so. And they were the old processes of the Prehav Scales, and you assess people on the Prehav Scales and ran brackets and all this kind of thing and so forth. Well, they belong – they're terrific, you know – and they belong at this level of IV – Class IV.

Now, Class V: implants, the whole track, case analysis – all that sort of thing – running implants for practice and so forth. Class V. You don't just run implants for practice. You can make considerable case gains from running implants. What we now call R3R and so forth can swing in at that particular level. But R3R might as easily go into service facs so I haven't made up my mind about that, don't you see? Might crowd the level too much. We might be able to put engram running as an old process, you see – it was a wrapped up process; we ought to preserve it. So it goes at one or the other of those two classes, and I won't tell you at this time which one it goes in.

But implant running, definitely, definitely. Implant GPMs, that sort of thing, at V. And your present, what you're calling now, R4 material – and it was R3 material, now R4 material – goes to Class VI. That is the actual running of actual GPMs for OT goes to Class VI. And then at VII we have old Route One with frills – thetan drills, so forth.

Now these, by the way – just in rapid summary and review – these, by the way, will have certain designations for classes. For instance, there are three types of pin that give this type of thing. There's the small "S" and double triangle, which is your normal thing and that serves in your earliest classes, the first two or three classes, you see, just have that plain "S" and double triangle, don't you see? But it has a little enameled plate in the middle of it. I don't know if you've seen the release pins that were issued at one time or another. But a little disc there, which is a colored disc in the middle of the "S" and double triangle with a Roman numeral on it. Of course with Class 0, they can wear that, but it's – the circle itself makes a zero. But your Class I of course has a Roman numeral I on it.

Now there's a color scheme brought up the line for each one of these classes, for designation, and it has in addition to that – your second type of pin covers the next two or three classes, got a small circle around the "S" and double triangle with the colored plate in front of it and the class number on it. And then the large circle – a great big circle around the "S" and double triangle – for the very upper classes on the thing. Just to get everything neatly in line. I'm just reading that, not to sell you some pins, because they'll probably be given to you. But just to give you an idea of how far the planning goes and this sort of thing.

Your – certain certificates will move on up the line. We'll probably reactivate every certificate we've ever had. You know, there's certain designations were dropped out. There was an Hubbard Advanced Auditor at one time or another, and so forth. Exactly how we pattern these certificates against these various classes, we're going to have some certificates, that's all. Going to try to follow this.

Now, exactly what is happening? Exactly what is happening here? Of course, your key main certificates of Hubbard Professional Auditor and HGA and so forth, those things are definitely preserved. But we may have to fill in some slots here in order to keep this thing neat.

Now, we've got the – the whole situation here, what we're trying to do, is we're trying to open a bridge. If anybody says to you, "You see, they're getting class-conscious" yeah, you bet we're class-conscious. It's a limitation and scope of processes. And an auditor should be audited inside his class only. And he should be audited by auditors of his class only. An auditor should not be audited outside of his class. Perfectly all right for somebody in practice – we're not trying to knock people in the head for processing for fees or something like that, and we're not particularly interested in whether or not some Class IV or something audits some people of lower classes and so on. But if he audits them outside their class levels, he will be hearing from me. Because he's not going to make a case gain with them.

This is an effort to graduate cases up the line and I have found out that they do not advance further than they are trained. And it's an effort to advance cases up the line to... and a preparatory step level with information and skill and auditing availability, right straight on up the line. And the way we've got it rigged right now, people don't know where they are, they

don't know where they're going, they don't know what's expected of them. We've got professional preclears from 1950 standing around waiting for somebody to process them to OT, don't you see? And bless these people, they have been of benefit to many of us in many ways. But at the same time I notice their cases aren't running much better than they were running. I consider this quite interesting. It's because they've never really learned anything. They've hit a certain ceiling, and the door is barred.

Well, this is an effort to bring people all the way through all the way up the line. So that makes it easy then. You take an HCA, HPA level process, this fellow then, yes, what's he going to do? Is he going to process people? Well, he wants to process people, that's all right, and we're not going to raise any devil with him about processing people. But we're going to expect him to train Class 0 and we're going to expect him to be able to award Class I. And we expect him to do just those things and we expect him to do that to people and expect him to get them to co-auditing with one another, at those levels of process, and teaching them to do the things necessary for those particular levels.

And then we expect those people to go and get themselves a real fast training course, and be able to answer up. We're not asking for vast lengths of time in training, because you notice there are more courses involved here, so they can afford to be shorter courses. And so the fellow can get himself a piece of training of some kind or another and make sure there's someone in his neighborhood and so forth that's also trained and he winds up with somebody to audit with. In other words, we're not trying to cost somebody a fortune to get up to OT, because if he's laying out the money to buy all the processing necessary to get to OT, he'll never get there on educational basis alone and it's going to cost him a fortune in order to get there. Whereas by audit inside your class, the guy will inevitably eventually get there.

Why? Because his auditing isn't limited. He can have unlimited quantities of auditing. He normally will get auditing as good as he gives. So therefore it's of very, very great interest to him to be as good an auditor as he possibly can be. Otherwise nobody will audit with him. I mean, it isn't whether or not I say so! You see what I mean?

All right. Well this opens the door, and this opens the channel all the way up and by giving these classes, we're not interested in whether or not we're class-conscious, we are extremely interested, however, in people knowing where they should go and what they should do next.

We're going to give you a chart very, very soon which carries all of these classes and all of the processes and training skills of each class. And sometime after that, much, much more distant than that, we will have a textbook for a class, and a question-and-answer book for the class, and so forth, all the way up. And that will be a very, very neat package indeed.

In other words, there's the whole road, it's all laid out, and the person can go from this level to this level to that level to that level to that level, that level, and they can move on up the line. Well, it'll take some of them ten, twelve, fifteen, twenty years. What's their hurry? They've been in this universe this long, we got the gate open, why should we expect them – why should they expect to kill everybody in the rush, don't you see? Well, it's no leisurely, leisurely proposition whereby we're simply saying time isn't valuable or something like that, it's just what can they do within the framework of this? Well, possibly somebody could go all

the way through this. There's a possibility that somebody could go all the way through this in about eighteen months or two years, you know, just flat out, all the way. Somebody could go through this. But in any event it would take him that long.

Look at us. It's taken you years, it's taken me years, and so forth. You suppose somebody's going to better that? No, I don't think so. The stuff that got bred in the bone in you as a Scientologist on your way along the line, you've still got at your fingertips and that sort of thing. And you're rather surprised – some Johnny-come-lately and you say, "Well, what he needs is some Op Pro by Dup. That – I think that..." And the fellow says, "Huh?"

"Oh, yeah, well, that's a process – you know, Book and Bottle."

"Huh?"

No latch. He missed it someplace along the line. And you'll find big gaps and holes and stuff like this and actually his duplication is terrible and it's just a hole in the fence. And his case will leak out through that hole; he won't go on up.

Now, this gives us, this gives us in essence then, a ladder that can be climbed, a line that can be followed and it tells people where they can go to the next step. It puts auditors in the picture all the way on up the line. And rather than knock everybody in the head, we're toying with exactly what we are going to do with the pre-1963 Scientologist. And we've had under discussion a title or designation, a type of class for this particular individual. Having lived through the period, this us – see – why, he's permitted a certain amount of liberty and scope in that zone and benefit of the information which has been developed while he's been coming along the line. In other words, we aren't leaving these people out in the dark or throwing everybody back to 0. That's not the point.

But we are pulling this foul and terrible trick – this horrible trick. I say "we." That's because I don't want to be that causative just now. I'm halfway through a bank and I'm not being causative at the moment. It's I don't want individuals to get pitched out on their ear, but I do think in all fairness that people whose classifications exist as of now should not particularly be changed until they've earned them. Now that's a horrible blow to some people, but I – my candid opinion is, is they're not doing too well with the material which lying right under their hands and it gives them a chance to catch their breath, and level out at their particular level that they are in, catch up a little bit, get themselves oriented and move on up the line. I think it would be unfair to them.

I think anybody right now, out in the field, running what we have been calling R4, is going to fall on his silly head. I just don't think he can do it. I just don't think he can do it. It's – I don't care if he was even trained some on it here, he just isn't going to do it, that's all, he isn't going to make it. It's a very, very precise piece of technology. This is awe-inspiring, man, I'm not trying to tell you how horrible or how hard it is. I'm just saying it's horrible and it's hard. This is a rough piece of cake to try to get down. And the Instructors around here right now are just getting their hands in on the line on this, and trying to pin this down. Oh man, if a Saint Hill Instructor's having trouble with this one right now, I don't expect anybody out in north Poughkeepsie is going to be having a good time of it. Do you?

So I think it'd be unfair to throw the class level up on everybody around the thing, but there'll be a certain latitude in this particular lineup. Some of the HCAs, HPAs, perforce will have to be classed to Class II, and so forth. Well, that means that you're pretty lucky right here and right now. You will get, of course, the class that you have earned.

[Please note: This tape ends abruptly as did the original master recording.]

CERTIFICATIONS AND CLASSIFICATIONS

A lecture given on 3 December 1963

Well, I'm glad you're still alive. Report I've gotten on your auditing lately, I wonder but that's... [laughs] I wonder. You must have done something terrible to look that guilty when I said that. [laughs]

All right. What's the date here?

Audience: December 3rd.

What's the date?

Audience: 3rd December.

Three December AD 13, Saint Hill Special Briefing Course. We have a lecture here on these new certificate and classification changes and so on – give you the rundown on this. You might be quite interested in this. Tomorrow we will get a demonstration of a session that I taped of finding a PT GPM and I will go over that with you, over TV. But today, I want to talk to you about some administrative matters which also have bearing on technical.

All right. Now, you have received or are about to see HCO Policy Letter of November 26, 1963 which is – probably be the first of many policy letters on this particular subject but which lays out the basic format of classification and auditing requirements for individuals.

First I'd like to give you the TR – pardon me, the Scientology Zero on this of why is this done. Why is this done? We have to go back in actual fact here more than thirteen years, to the original activity which sent Dianetics forward in the community and in the society. And the original method of dissemination, which was intensely and extremely successful, was simply getting some chaps around who (quote) "wanted to be audited," who (quote) "had troubles," and so forth, and giving them some training, supervised their co-audit and took money from them only for those sessions which were patch-up sessions and a nominal amount of money for supervising their co-audit.

That was actually the first method of dissemination. Along with this went a hectographed edition of *The Original Thesis*, which was the only textbook at that particular time, 1949, and the textbook was actually not sold but was distributed by somebody making a mimeograph copy of it and giving it to his friends. And I don't know how far that book went and I don't know but what it isn't still going today. Of course, we would never hear of it because all the addresses are closed on the lines, and so forth. That was *The Original Thesis*.

Now, the system there, and this is – this was me operating, you understand – the system there was simply to get Joe and Bill and Pete who wanted processing – had heard of this new thing and were interested in it and my statement, "Well, if you want some then you had better put the nose to the grindstone and study this over a little bit and I'll show you how to do this and then you three can form up a co-audit of various lines, and so forth. And you make sure that you're here every weekend and we straighten all this out for you." And then their complaints that – their complaints about Pete, you see, who at this time was flubbing a little bit, he wasn't giving as much auditing as he was getting, you see, and that sort of thing. And somebody's effort then to get somebody else into this unit and the unit was up to six or eight before you could sneeze, don't you see. And finally somebody came along who was as clumsy as Pete that could get paired off with Pete, don't you see. And this sort of thing was carried forward.

In actual fact, although the auditing was terribly clumsy and we didn't have the technology which we have today, no shadow of it practically, although the auditing was terribly clumsy, some rather fantastic things occurred with cases.

Now, when they'd get too bogged down, one of these teams would get too bogged down or something like that, well, of course, they'd call on me to give them a session. So, I'd sell them a session. And actually, I don't think I ever really took any money off of them but they used to push money at me, and so forth, because I was not at that particular time interested in any income. But I know there was money there and on several different occasions I had to turn down \$800 and \$1,500 and, "If you will just audit me straight through to Clear now and do nothing else so I don't have to co-audit, I will give you \$3,000." And I'm – my saying, "Well, you can just put it back in your pocket because you're just getting along fine with Joe and you just make up your mind to keep going." You get this kind of an approach – very successful, extremely successful.

Well, when the Foundations were formed, they were formed not at my instigation but it all seemed like a good idea, good roads and good weathers, and they got into a big organizational this, that and the other thing, and there were an awful lot of people in charge.

And I guess there were more bosses around there than you could easily count. And there were many different schools of technology operating. And I remember old Joe Winter going around telling everybody that you had to *believe* in it for it to work. Auditing – there was nothing scientific about auditing, actually it was merely an art, you know. This is all fine; that was dear old Joe. Ah, this kind of thing, don't you see?

You'd give a lecture and then you would find out that that didn't apply to what – the session was going on immediately afterwards.

Well, they started training on the basis of just letting somebody hang around for a month to see what was going on. That was the first training course. And Parker I think dreamed that up and old Parker said – I remember coming down one morning and Parker said to me, "Well, I've – these people keep walking up to the front door. They want to be trained, so I've finally arranged for this to happen. And I charge them \$500 to hang around." Pretty wild.

But the Academy developed out of that particular activity. That first group, by the way, was a group of ten auditors. They were pretty well trained, but they were trained to audit others and they were not trained particularly to co-audit.

I remember teaching them old Straightwire, how to pick up psychosomatics and so forth, off people, and most of those fellows could do it. Their auditing was clever rather than otherwise. Auditors of that day were not badly trained.

But along with this came the same fault that the individual auditor runs into; and that is, people wanted processing and they wanted processing exclusively and only. They didn't want to audit anybody, they wanted to be processed.

Now, let me call this to your attention as a very terrible and destructive action. Let me call this to your attention in that wise now. We've always thought of this as "that's a good thing, he wants processing," and I suddenly tell you that that's a destructive action. Ha-ha. I'm... let me make my point.

Now supposing, I'd taken this fellow's \$3,000 and I'd neglected the rest of the group and I'd just sat down and audited this fellow day and night. Supposing I had done that. Well, what would have happened to the rest of the group? Hmm? I can see an individual now, an HCA, something like that, and he's developed himself a group of ten or twelve and he's got these people going forward very nicely. And all of a sudden Mrs. Gotbucks from Poughkeepsie shows up and flashes a lot of green under his nose, and he sits down to grind it out, and so forth, and earn this money. He's going along all right. But then her husband gets orders to Saigon or something of the sort and she disappears out of his perimeter. What is he immediately and instantly, at that moment, confronting?

He has dropped all of his dissemination, he's dropped this group, he's not paying attention to the eager beavers that wanted to outflow this stuff. He's paying attention just to somebody that wanted to inflow it and nothing else. He didn't get any dissemination in the area then, did he? He neglected the fellows who were keeping it whizzing, and the net result is when her husband gets orders to Saigon there goes his (quote) practice (unquote) and that is the end of that. See?

So, he says then, "Well, I've got a failure on my hands. I'm not doing well as an auditor." Actually, it was not a failure as an auditor, it was a failure in dissemination because he didn't use his best dissemination activities in order to keep himself going. That is to say, he wasn't taking people and making them co-audit and making them help each other and supervising it, and making income off of this action, and making income also on the inevitable patch-up sessions.

Now, let me assure you that if you want lots of processing to do, you'll get lots of co-auditing going. Let me make that point with an exclamation point. You actually don't get any auditing to amount to anything, if a co-auditing activity isn't going. As soon as a co-auditing activity ceases and as soon as the individual swings in on just auditing one person, everything he's doing goes up in smoke. Ah-ha, but the Central Organizations of 1950 made that mistake. Although they had lots of students, and so forth, they went into the processing business. And everybody they processed, who wanted only processing and who didn't want to give anything

for it, introverted. And you get this, the preclear doesn't disseminate. The purely preclear person doesn't disseminate, ever.

You take this old boy's long arduous experience in this particular field. Man, you cured this guy's migraine spooziks you know, and he can actually now do fifteen chin-ups, you see, and everything is marvelous, you see. And you say, "Well, isn't that interesting. Therefore, one of his family members or somebody like that ought to come over and get some processing." That is the fond hope that you might have in this particular direction. But his family members rarely appear. Oh, sometimes. Why? That person never mentions it.

That is about the wildest thing. If you've done something wrong to them, though, they mention it! [laughter]

But that is the phenomenon – this is forced on us in a technical capacity – that's the phenomenon of negative gain. That he has had lumbosis has no bearing on the situation. It's now gone so it doesn't worry him, and if you've done a thorough job of erasing it, he never mentions it. Because it's gone. Negative gain. Everything you do with a case is negative gain. It's the eradication of something wrong. And if it's eradicated properly of course the fellow then never has anything to say about it. He just feels better and everything is going along.

So that, purely processing activities over the vast span of years have produced – they of course have produced some, but they have produced minimal dissemination. And just as the individual auditor – just as the individual auditor who formed up a few people and he had them co-auditing-you see, you don't have to have a big dress parade situation. There's this fellow down at the garage and then there's a librarian and then there's somebody who teaches in the kindergarten, and that's a perfectly representative group. Because if they start co-auditing you're going to have two or three more drift in and then some of those fellows are going to drift out and you're going to get some more in. Your group has a gradual even growth and tends to maintain itself, unless you suddenly withdraw all your attention from that group, and put it on one preclear or two preclears, do you see?

All right, just as a fellow breaks his practice to pieces by knocking down his dissemination activities in that fashion, see – concentrating it on a preclear who rarely disseminates; people who co-audit disseminate, see?

A Central Organization can do the same thing. They get so interested in their HGC income they never bother to make any Scientologists. Now, I shouldn't do this because this has nothing whatsoever to do with what I'm – it's on a line that was a privileged line and it's all very secret, but an Assoc Sec very recently, reading the first info letter which inferred that HGCs would be cut out – it just inferred this, don't you see – was holding his head in his hands. How was he going to keep his organization running, if he didn't have an HGC because his HGC was his mainstay, his HGC was his main income. And he was suddenly confronting the problem of how was he going to keep his finances up, how was he going to keep anything going at all? Because it seemed to be so terrible because his student income was so low. You see, a Central Organization can do the exact same thing that a private auditor can do.

Now look, if you had – if a Central Organization really crowded them out – we tried to do this down in Los Angeles and they never got the word. That's a city over on the Pacific

coast of a country on the other side of the Atlantic. [laughter] They never got the word. I've tried to give them outside private processing activities, you see?

Well, let me assure you that in the absence of these things you get minimal pcs, too. There is just nothing like a good, broad brawling co-audit activities going on all over the place regardless of how hard it was to promote them or how hard to keep them in line or how many ten – phone calls – these are quite wild to handle. They sort of discourage you from handling them because you've got a phone call at two o'clock in the morning. The guy can't end his session, don't you see. And so forth. "What do I do?" And – various processes in the old days. I've had some remarkable phone calls at some remarkable hours of the night. [laughter]

One of the most remarkable is, one time they couldn't get a preclear down off the ceiling of the room and there were four pro auditors present, and she had exteriorized and splatted up against the ceiling. And they couldn't get her off the ceiling and so they held the telephone to her ear and I talked her off the ceiling back into her body. [laughter]

So, I well agree, that the randomness of this type of activity is considerable. You can't sit back in an ivory tower with a lot of co-auditing going on. And some of the most remarkable goofs occur. They're incredible, they're unbelievable. But, you do a sort of a D of P action on these things, you keep them going one way or the other, you try to hold it down.

But those people – those people will get themselves wrapped around telegraph poles if you're speaking in terms of purely commercial auditing, see? And a Central Organization would have three times the pcs. If they had a thousand co-audit teams running in that part of the state, they'd have three times the pcs – just casualty rate. [laughter] Have to straighten them up, you know? I know that's awfully coldblooded, but it happens to be if – the people are going to say, "Well, we mustn't disseminate or co-audit because it's going to hurt the income of the organization," see? Well, let's counter with this coldblooded an activity. What do you mean the income of the organization? You got to have co-audit teams going to create enough casualties to keep you solvent. You'll find as a private auditor that you're always being called on for emergency and people forget to pay you for this sort of thing and that sort of thing. But you give them a good understanding if you have to give an assist or put somebody together and give them special sessions, and so forth, the rate is so-and-so. You'll still come out all right with it as long as you've got co-auditing going.

Unless a man... You see, there are tremendous technical – technical data associated with this. We're now speaking from the security of – and this whole policy letter by the way is erected from the security of technical information. It's the technology rounded out, completed to OT, that is making it possible now to lay down these various lines and say about what the score is. Because it's forced off on us like this.

You'll find, that the individual who is engaged in helping somebody else while he is being helped gets extroverted and introverted with regard to his case. He extroverts and introverts. You'll get somebody being audited during the week. All week long this person is being audited. And you'll find out they're very introverted during that week. You see, it's all what they're doing, and so forth. It's very hard on the auditor meeting them at lunch, you know. They sit there and continue the session, you know, that sort of thing.

Next week, first day or so, they don't really see how they can make it. See, they've got to put their attention now on somebody else, they got to pay for it, they got to help somebody else. An awareness of another being takes place at this particular line and they start extroverting. And along about Wednesday, Thursday, Friday and so forth, they're so extroverted that it's not terribly vital, they're not going to die in the next five minutes if they don't get audited, you see. Of course, it can occur that something has gone wrong in the session, that they've been wrapped around a telegraph pole and nobody patched it up, left them in an ARC break. But a normal course of existence is that they're – by Wednesday of their processing activity – are in a rather extroverted frame of mind with regard to their case, don't you see? You've got an extroversion taking place here, they're looking outward. When they get audited they look inward. When they audit they look outward. And you've got out and in with regard to cases, and you've got an understanding of life going forward. And for the first time it gets off the first dynamic and starts moving up onto the higher dynamics. And life is an activity of multiple dynamics, not an activity of a first dynamic.

So, technically – technically, the individual is in a far better frame of mind with regard to life when he is doing some auditing and getting audited as an activity. This is by actual experience on the thing. I think it agrees with your own experience along this line. Even though it's very tough sometimes to bail out when you're in the middle of something, and then audit somebody else.

Now, the next – the next point here, however, is that an individual can only progress so far without an increase of understanding. Now, previously we said it was a good thing if somebody was Clear, to become OT, that he should be trained. Well, that's totally reversed now. "Should." "Be a good thing." No, no, no, no – it's nothing like that. Hell never make it unless he's trained.

Now, you can talk all you want to about the Scientologist being a rough case, and so forth. No, he's just being run on rougher things, that's about all. You couldn't get anybody else to run on this thing. Of course, the fat, the amount of charge that exists on the case that can be bled off easily, starts getting bled off by the very easy processes.

Now, let's take a look at the schedule of processing here. Very easy processes, this is Listen-style: A guy discusses his PTP and he feels better about it, see? See, lots of fat there and you can bleed charge off like mad. But you have to do it more expertly after a while, and it requires a repetitive process or the CCHs or a Straightwire or Overt/Withholds or something like that to pick him up. Why? You're coming to the bones of the case. Now, of course, this fellow in his original state – to the amount of better off he is, is in comparison to how bad off he is. And of course, he's just a walking lightning bolt as far as charge is concerned. He's just fat with charge, and he is so bad off that bleeding any charge on the case at all makes him better. But what is better, see? He doesn't scream with his headache, you see? It's a betterment in relationship to the worsement that the case is in, don't you see?

All right. We have this fellow feeling pretty good here at Level II and it takes repetitive processes, of which there were innumerable wordings and processes. It takes something like that to bite. But it takes a different kind of auditing. This guy can no longer wind up... and I notice some of you characters doing that this day. You think this character's going to go

forever on a self-audit called itsa, and so forth. *Nah*, ain't going to do it. That is not going to happen, see? Now it takes formal auditing. "Do birds fly?" see? "Recall – recall a wreck." "Thank you." It takes the impingement, the pound, don't you see? It takes the auditing cycle completely completed without cutting the pc's itsa line when he is talking, but then not sitting back and making him make up things to talk about. You get the idea? You differentiate between a pc who hasn't anything to talk about, and a pc who is answering your question. You see?

He's completed answering your question. All right, that's the time to give him a cheery thank you and bear along. Well, that requires a little greater sensitivity. Well, that's a hammer pound of auditing cycle that's going forward here, and hell make frankly as much progress as he gets commands per unit of auditing time. That's old. He makes as much progress as he gets commands per unit of auditing time. He gets a command every three minutes, he will make a command every three minute's worth of TA. See? He gets a command every minute, he will make a command every minute worth of TA.

Now, this carries out at the highest OT processes. I'll tell you this, because this is actually a piece of fantastic amounts of TA and action, and so forth. But the session I ran last night got the PT GPM which had sixteen items in it; found the goal of it and got all sixteen items and got it joined into the rest of the bank. The thing was found to exist after several banks had been run below it, don't you see, which is quite an ordinary circumstance. Did that in three hours. Found the goal, PT GPM, it's top terminal, ran the rest of the items out of it, got it all flat, completely bled of charge, with complete accuracy and so forth, in three hours, with 175 divisions of TA. Now, there's a lot of TA.

Now how? You're going to hear some of this tape tomorrow by the way, not for any particular – not for the technology in this particular instance but for the itsa, the handling of itsa, because itsa has to be perfectly handled in order to handle those levels of TA. See, you have to handle itsa perfectly to do these OT processes. You have to handle – your basic auditing has to be absolutely, well, practically flawless, if you're really going to fly. But it's actually the number of items that you find per unit of auditing time that gives you the TA. You know, if you just sit there – if you just sit there and let that TA drift about, and it sits there awhile motionless and you think, well, maybe the pc will cognite or say something now that'll give you a little more TA and you'd better not talk because the TA might move again and all of this sort of stuff that's preying on your mind, you're going to get – the next item you haven't found yet starts to blow. And your TA is coming from the next unfound item and your pc's going to get very unhappy.

In other words, you just come right up on top of this thing and start driving your auditing session, and it's a hard drive, don't you see? You're not talking when the TA is actually moving a lot, see? That first blowdown that you get. Yeah, you're not saying a word during that blowdown, see. The moment that thing seems to steady down, you're right in there with the next question that is going to kick the TA again, you see. The courtesy steps, you know. And then as soon as you say – get the answer to how does that relate to this GPM – the moment that you get the answer to this which gives you a *brrrrrrrrr* surge, you don't care whether the TA is moving or not because you know right now that any further motion of that TA is going to come from the next item. You just get your question in there, quick.

Well now, that's very refined, very fantastically, closely timed auditing. The way you achieve that sort of thing is just work real hard at basic auditing on lower levels. Make your basic auditing practically flawless. Promote the itsa of the TA, never sit around and get itsa that you didn't promote, don't you see? And handle that. It's like driving a 16-horse team at a dead run when you get up to OT, but it's fairly easy to do it at this level, too, because the repetitive process is very simple. The pc has answered it. Pc has answered it. Give him the next question, see. Bang. You're not waiting around there for something else. You don't sit there for three minutes hoping, then, the pc is finished talking, and afraid that the pc is going to... Because the fact that you're sitting there motionless is inviting the pc's itsa, don't you see? So the pc always will say something else but it won't be germane, and the pc has no auditing question to answer so therefore the pc goes on to self-audit and you no longer have an auditing session. That's how you destroy it with these silences. And you can drive – drive your pc mad and your session down the drain. They can throw your TA completely away.

So, it takes, when we get to Level II... the guy, by wandering around bleeding charge, is no longer able to produce TA. So we've got to pound it out of him now.

So we say, "All right, repetitive process." However many old repetitive processes there were, don't you know? *Bang!* goes your question, good impingement you know. And the pc says, "*Whoa*, that was long." Well, we don't care how long it took to answer. We're going to wait till he answers the question, saying, "*Whoa, mm-mmm-mmm-mm*," and we're going to make sure that we knew what he answered, too; we're not going to be interested in "Yes, I've recalled one. Well, yes, I've recalled one." If you – he answers that way you also want to know what he recalled, don't you see?

So you get your questions answered. But as soon as you got that question answered and he has answered it and you know he's answered it, you feed him the next question you see, *bang!* There you are again, you know? You keep ending off that cycle, starting a new cycle. Ending off that cycle, starting a new cycle without actually cutting his itsa. This is very smooth auditing indeed but it requires very professional training. A guy has to get very good to handle this sort of thing. But it's enough at – an auditor at Level II to handle that sort of thing.

All right, well, we've got this guy now, he's bled lots of charge. He's gotten to a point where he doesn't think a lion is going to spring at him when he goes down to the postbox. He's had a lot of wins one way or the other. He finds he doesn't have to scream at his wife. He finds out the kids make him just as nervous as they always did, but he doesn't have to comment on it now, you see? He can suppress it. See, he's had a lot of wins of one kind or another. But life is livable. He doesn't find he's living at that same level of anxiety that he was before. He's still got a lot of that sort of thing.

Well, that's fine. Is he going to get any better? Is he going to get any better? Well, yeah, he's going to get better when he's on prepchecking and metered processes in the session and assessing and running ARC breaks, and that sort of thing. That's his next logical step forward. And you'll be surprised what you can do for somebody if you can really gun them up into running ARC break. But look at the – look at the level of technology. This guy has to be sharper than a tack. He has to be actually trained to do R2H. He has to be able to spot this and

that. He recognizes that it's bypassed charge. He recognizes he spots the earlier bypassed charge.

Well, you would try to run that on somebody down here at Level I, the guy would just drift. You've heard them. You've audited people at this level and you've been surprised at how much they drifted, and so on. Well, actually, what you were asking them wasn't real to them. You weren't then making the case progress you thought you were making. See, you've had the idea perhaps, that the higher the process, the more it would do for the case, see? Well the process that does the most for the case is the process that is realest to the case at his state of case. It's merely what's real to him, that's all. That's quite a remarkable revision of look, don't you see? That's a technical revision of look. He'll get the most gains on the process that is most real. And the further his case is away from optimum, why, the more insignificant, tiny little things are real, and the more rough and tough things are unreal.

Why, you say to this fellow – well, we were actually running people over their heads in 1950. We were saying, "Well, it's this engram. If we just run out this engram, why you'll be all right." People understand that pretty well, by the way. They respond pretty well. But there was person after person couldn't run an engram, couldn't even come close to an engram, couldn't confront anything about engrams. And yet those people responded beautifully to a little Straightwire processes, and so forth.

I've seen a guy run from total insanity straight on up to a mild neurosis, just asking him for times he'd communicated. Interesting. There was no other auditing command used. There was just a repetitive process. It was real to him that he had communicated, see? As simple as that.

Now, this guy doesn't have to be insane to get a win on such a process. But when he was first doing that process it was already over his head. Communicated. And the amount of comm lag and upset of trying to figure out if he had communicated or if he'd – never had communicated or what was communicating, was quite pathetic to observe. Process was already over his head. Should have taken the CCHs, don't you see? That would have undercut that beautifully and it could have cut up into these upper processes.

But nevertheless, the person couldn't run an engram yet he could make a marvelous case gain on just recalling times he'd communicated, don't you see? Now, any case profits to some degree from this, but these cases back here on these lower levels only profit from that, don't you see? They're hung up at this state of beingness. They're hung up at this level of action. They don't know enough about the mind. Now, you're going to take this person here at Level III and you're doing Prepchecking. You're going to say, "What is – biggest changes that you have made in your life, you know, decisions you have made to change?"

We're going to assess all those and so forth. Oh, the person will come quite along well, and so forth. You'll be surprised. Every once in a while you're going to get a pc who shouldn't be running at that level but running at a lower level. Decisions he's made in his lifetime, heh? "Ehhh. Whoa, decisions? Me make a decis... *whoa, ooh-mm-mm* – I don't think I ever made a decision," see? Well, you're not getting your assessment list. Well, why aren't you getting your assessment list? You're just running the pc over his head, don't you see? Pc is not capa-

ble of deciding, taking responsibility for ever having made a decision to change, don't you see?

Well, that's – back down the repetitive processes you might get something like that. You might get a concept – a concept run. "Get the idea of deciding to change. Get the idea of not – of deciding not to change," see? "Get the idea of deciding. Get the idea of not deciding." You know those old Concept Processes. And all of a sudden he has this red lightning bolt of cognition on the thing and says, "You know, I've made a decision in my lifetime. Oh. Gee, no wonder. I don't trust myself to make decisions but, you know, I really have made a decision." Well, then you might be able to run a Prepcheck process on it, see?

All right. Well, now we take somebody who can get off his ARC breaks. It's a very educated level of process. He has to understand a lot of factors of life before he gets into this, otherwise he's looking at so many ramifications of what you're asking him that his mind can't settle on any one of them. There's just too much charge in his road.

All right. Now, let's get into such a fantastically esoteric thing as a service facsimile. Have you actually any idea of what that requires of a pc? What does that really require of him? It requires that he take enough responsibility so that he actually is keeping himself sick so as to make somebody else wrong. He has to take over the responsibility of his own illness. Now, let me tell you, that is asking the impossible for lower-level cases. You say to this fellow, "Well now, what did you do to make your mother wrong? What sickness did you give yourself in order to make your mother wrong?" We don't care what question it was but this concept is given to this person. This person's liable to fly off in a mad state and tell you, "Ah, that wasn't the case. That wasn't the case. Actually, she was very mean to me. Oh, very mean. Very, very bad to me. She used to tell all kinds of lies to my father so he would beat me. And my father, you know, he'd beat me incessantly." This is your approach in an effort to take – get responsibility for a service facsimile, see.

Look at your level of jump. I was horrified in 1954 when I asked around about full responsibility, the idea of a person taking full responsibility. You know, I saw people around who actually had had some case wins and that sort of thing, who were in a state of collapse, if you please, on the subject. "Take full responsibility for my – oh, no." Actually it's old *Advanced Procedure and Axioms* I think that's in or it's the *Handbook for Preclears*, one or the other. *Advanced Procedure and Axioms*. And when that book was published, why, we made lots of people who knew we were wrong. Yeah, we were wrong. You couldn't take respon... not only could you not take full responsibility but, of course, it was impossible to take any responsibility in any direction, see?

Now, what had happened there is that research had progressed forward on the subject of levels of case, and the dominant level of case at that particular time – 1954, 55 – were getting up a little bit to a point where they could take some responsibility. So people close in who had had a lot of fairly good processing up to that time were perfectly willing to accept this as a concept and an idea. But people who had not been processed in that particular direction or up that high, weren't. You get the make and break point then of how far you can advance with a statement or a technology or a thought or an idea.

And you get things like ARC break assessments – getting somebody to sit still even though he's ARC broken, and so forth, and go into it. You can't do auditing on somebody who's too badly ARC broke who has no understanding of it at all. You're running a high-level process here anyway. You got programing cases and you got missed withholds. Well, it's very rough pulling missed withholds as different than O/W. This again, requires an enormously high-level of responsibility in order to respond to it. O/W – you'd be surprised at what you normally get on the man in the street running O/W. "What have you done?" "Well, I sat for a while," see, level of responsibility. Makes you want to saw in and say, "Well, what have you *done*, man, done, you know, done?" There's no sense pushing it, that's what he has done. And what has he withheld? Well, he withheld getting up. That would be your level of responsibility. No idea of interpersonal relationships at all.

Let's move up on a little bit higher here and we get implants, engrams, whole track, whole track case analysis. Well, very few people walking out on the street right now have any idea of themselves as a spiritual being – very few. As a matter of fact, they buy meat-body philosophies very easily. Treatment – "Saw off my arm, it is sick," you know?

Well, this kind of nonsense that goes on is – this guy doesn't have any idea of himself as a spirit, much less as a spirit who has an eternity to live through, you see? Has no such concepts.

Who has he been? Where has he been, and so forth. You'll find out in that level itself they normally take off into past lives since Roman days. They may get back into Greece, don't you see? If they work real hard, why they'll push it back maybe to Egypt. And they're sticking up at the early part of this run, they're up here in the last 2,500 years, quite ordinarily. They talk quite happily, ordinarily, of having had a bad time in a castle that burned down over in France two hundred years ago, you see. This is whole track. Hah! But that is nevertheless the approach to the situation.

I know these things. I've been through them myself. But that suddenly starts to get real. And after a while you say, "You know, I – I might – might possibly have... I might possibly – you know, I've been somebody else," and it gets to be a fairly good level of reality on this particular basis.

Well, that's a far cry from actual whole track, and yet that is a gradient entrance into it. Guy gets some kind of reality, has pictures on these things so they must have happened to him. You know, that kind of thing. He gets a little feeling of reality on it. It moves up just a little bit further to a point where he might possibly have had a higher longevity. He might possibly have had a higher state of beingness at one time or another, not a meat-body state. He moves up into higher levels of things that have happened to him at one way or the other. These things all increase in reality to the degree that he sheds charge off his case.

Well, in the final run of it, he gets up to a fairly comprehensive idea of what he's been and done. This ebbs and flows, the reality on it gets great and falls away, and so forth, because he's falling all over his actual GPMs as he passes down the track, and so on. He nevertheless, gets himself one god-awful amount of time blocked out. Oh, some terrific amount of time blocked out. He gets up to trillions to the eighth power. *Time*, you know. Oh man, time, you see.

First he gets horrified, you see, at the idea of twelve trillion years ago or something like that. He gets finally, up to a point where trillions to the eighth power take him back to some of the earliest implants. And he's perfectly happy at this level that there's an *awful lot of track*.

Well, when he moves up into Level VII he finds out that one GPM will cover from trillions twenty-nine forward to trillions twenty-one – one GPM. Of course, that span of time is almost fantastic. Because that's much more span of time than the whole span of time back to the earliest implants you can dig up on this guy, and that's just one GPM.

Now, his track goes sizzling back to trillions to the 200th power. Well that's, of course, one of these ridiculous figures. That's trillion written two hundred times. Or one with two hundred times you write all the ciphers of a trillion. That gets to be quite a few ciphers and every one of those things is a year. You're getting into the sweep of time by this time.

Well, I myself have had – I just thought I was doing fine when I was doing some research this last summer. I said, "Gee, you know we're getting clear back here. Trillions four, you know. *Whew*, you know? Dizzying. Concepts of time. Trying to date one of these confounded things, you know. Trying to handle these fantastic periods of time with arithmetic, and trying to dream up other methods of going into all this. Rough! Because it just took the auditor too tall – too long to say anything so you got crude rough approximations like, trillions 4.5, see? Some comprehension of this. Gradually making it one way or the other.

Now, in GPMs you don't have to worry about the time of an actual GPM. It just is. And you don't have to date the thing up fortunately, and so on, because you're into such vast spans of time that it's fantastic.

Now, we've carried this guy from his PTP that went back to yesterday when his boss didn't look kindly at him, who really can't remember what he had for breakfast, who is asked for a tolerance of this and that and whose life cuts in at about at the age of twelve or thirteen – if you pushed him real hard, if a psychoanalyst had pushed him real hard and worked for four or five years, he would have gotten him to remember when he was ten. See? This boy, we pushed him up by gradients to greater spans of time, greater concepts of thought, greater concepts about life and the universe around him, until his tolerance as far as processing him is concerned in time alone just - well today, say well, trillions two hundred, that GPM's back there trillions two hundred. All right, so it's back there trillions two hundred, see? There's no gawp about that.

See, reality, familiarity. Why you'd take – you'd tie a whole session around a telegraph pole if you said to this fellow, "All right, now what we're going to run on you, Joe, going to run on you..." This fellow is kind of a fellow who is – it worries him that he can't remember what he had for breakfast, you see. If you can't remember what you had for breakfast, that's one thing. If you worry about it, that's something else. [laughter] And this guy, and we say, "Well, what were you doing in the 14th century?" You're just going to spend the rest of the session, you see, trying to get around this unreality and his grappling with it. You're not going to get any auditing done. See, you've hit him with too much unreality. He can't meet with that whatsoever. So he goes out of A with you because the R is out, don't you see? He'll go out of C with you, and so on.

Well, that's true of this whole scale. So this is a technical scale. And this takes those gradients of processes which I have learned by experience over the past thirteen years that a case normally follows through. They'll be willing to talk to somebody about their troubles, and then with assists they're willing to have somebody touch them or something like this in order to square up some minor illness. They'll talk on specific questions, RIC, they'll answer specific subject matter. You're not giving a repetitive question there. You're just telling them "Tell me all you can about marriage," or something, you know. "What solutions do you have?" Something like that.

Comes up to a point where they can actually be disciplined and follow through and be alert enough to follow through repetitive processes, CCHs, Straightwire, do these various things, will actually be able to answer up to Prepchecking, an E-Meter, decisions of change, can get up to a point of recognizing when ARC breaks are ARC breaks and what they come from, and what missed withholds are all about and what all these various concepts, responsibility are. And particularly that they are doing things to make people wrong, and there's difference of case responses that they themselves are doing, then we give them the idea of whole track and that they've been here for a long time and then we move them up to the fact that, doggone it, they did it all themselves. Just let them get their bellyful of motivators.

Five, see. You'll find a guy can only be run on implant GPMs for two or three months and he just gets his bellyful. He finally begins to figure out, "Well, how – how could this really have aberrated me? I know it was uncomfortable, but what's this all about?" and so forth. And we had students around here protesting about it and so on. "So it was all done to us. No, it couldn't have been," see? Here were violent protests, and so forth. Well, that was plenty of time to move out on to actual GPMs.

Now, of course, we have an additional level there. What's this old Route 1 and other drills? Well, that's proper and right conduct for an Operating Thetan. And we've had lots of drills of this particular character. They'd probably be different drills today, they'd be a little smarter and avoid – and avoid some of the rocks and shoals of the drills of yesterday.

I remember we used to have change of space drills, and we had at one time two skulls. I think those two skulls are still stored in Washington. And they'd just get the guy used to it, and he'd be in skull A, skull B, you see? Be in skull A, skull B and so forth. Back and forth, back and forth, back and forth. Well, if a guy – a guy was pulled down, really, because of his actual GPMs and all this case load that could key in. You really can't do those things until you got the guy's case practically gone. But whether any of those are really necessary or not is a point in question. I know that if I'm outside, and an auditor will just let me it'sa for a while, that's just about the only thing I require on the thing. Let me find my feet (quote) (unquote) "feet." Let me orient myself, let me get over a queasy idea that I might not be able to hold this position in space.

All right, now the whole – the whole problem as far as we're concerned is that of dissemination, practice, smooth processing, forward progress, and keeping the road open and keeping the Bridge up behind us, don't you see? How does anybody else ever travel this road? That's one of the problems. And how does one travel this road best? And what is the easiest procedure of dissemination? What's the easiest way to take this on, and so forth.

Well obviously, it would be to insist that somebody didn't outstrip his training level with his processing level, because he's sooner or later going to come a cropper. He goes up above his training level too high and the further he goes – although it isn't noticeable at one grade, very – by the time it's gotten two grades it starts to be noticeable and then he all of a sudden gets up somewhere around V or VI, and he practically spins in. It's just not anything that he can consistently make.

A lot of auditors by being very clever, I'm sure here or there, can get a person at higher levels – pardon me, a person at lower levels to sit still for processes at higher levels, and by carefully holding the breath for the pc and so forth, get the pc over certain hurdles in order to get them up to a case gain and then I'm sure that here and there it'll be done successfully. But in many cases after they've gone to all this trouble, they found out that the guy just stepped over to the – on the backtrack and went *below* where they had been. They were running at a level that was too high for them to attain – way beyond their reality. And they were just being propitiative.

So, there's a lot of questions like that. But what interests us is, is how do you keep the road open? How do you keep people coming up the line? And how do you guarantee that a person can make it, see? Now, that's another problem, see? We're not talking now about the *possibility* of somebody making it. We're talking about *guaranteeing* that somebody can make it. Let's take the economics of the situation. They're very much pertinent on this particular planet at this particular time.

The number of hours of processing between Level 0 and Level VII are very hard to estimate – very, very hard to estimate. But the number of hours of processing, I don't know. Two thousand? You make a guess. Fifteen hundred? I don't know. I wouldn't know. That's a lot of hours of processing. Now multiply it by ten dollars. However many it is, multiply it by the very cheap rate of ten dollars. Completely aside from the fact that the guy couldn't buy his way all the way through without being trained – he would never make it, don't you see. The economics that he is being presented with here – the economic picture is inequitable.

How many hours of processing could he buy for the training fees involved? Well, if all the training fees – this is – this is just wild guesswork, I'm not – haven't added anything up, and so forth. Supposing all the training fees and processing, odd bits and other things added up in the line – supposing these things all came together and added up to five or six thousand dollars. Supposing you could get all that? Why, I don't say that it's a correct figure; might be more, might be less, see? That's five or six thousand dollars – I'm trying to give you comparative figures, you see, compared to perhaps twenty thousand dollars. Well, immediately that you decrease the economic – the cost of the thing, of course, you make it more possible to make this line.

All right, now let's see if we couldn't decrease this further in various ways. And I think this could be done on the basis of bringing this schedule of courses up along the line, and each course requiring that the earlier course had been well done, then of course these courses would be briefer and you would have a less costly situation. You see how that would work out? But he would get an unlimited amount of processing and he would also make it. He would get as much processing as he himself was expert enough to keep his co-auditor. That's

practically the technical definition of how much processing somebody gets. Processing – his own processing has got to be good enough to keep his co-auditor.

And then your processing's always got to be good enough to run your own sessions out of your co-auditor, just straight co-audit. A certain amount of skill. That is to say his auditing you – you've got to be able to audit what his auditing of you did to him, you see, or what he said it did. And you've got to – it's in your – in your vast interest to keep picking up his overts against you as an auditor, you see, and your sessions will get very smooth.

Various lines completely aside from that do show us then that it is more economic – the figures I gave you are just so that you can see the point, you see. It's more economical to co-audit along the line. It is also only possible if it is co-audited up along the line because the levels of training are necessary to attain the levels of case. So the only possibility of getting up the line; it's more economical to do so.

Furthermore now, the reality level of advance is cared for, which cares for dissemination. Now, if any HCA/HPA could train and issue the HAS certificate by application to the Central Organization, to the person he trained and actually issue a Classification I to that person, and so forth, this would give him a co-audit area that he could cope with – that he could cope with one way or the other.

Now we've never been very successful in individual auditors training up cases at what is now given as Level II. We've never been too successful at that. It's very spotty. The results have really not been able to because the individual auditor really does not have the facilities to enforce a tight schedule and handle the situation. So that has not been too good.

So therefore, that course would have to be given in some district or area and would have to be short and to the point, but very effective as a course and shouldn't be too terribly expensive in order to get that course. It should be within the finite limits of thirty days because almost anybody can get thirty days off, but you ask them to get off much more – well, that's an awful lot to ask somebody to get in thirty days. Well, it would all actually depend on how well they were trained at Level I, how fast they could go through the upper course.

Now, you see, we are away, because any auditor who had sent somebody out to get something like that could expand a little bit further. It wouldn't be that they would necessarily come back and do it all themselves, but it would come back into a zone or area and then you'd have a broader level of co-audit in progress. That's what it would in actual fact amount to. You'd be co-auditing at higher levels. And it could move on up that way in a whole district or zone, could move on up in that particular wise.

Now, if every one of these levels had its own textbook or textbook with its question and answer sheets so that everybody knew exactly what was required of him at that particular level, and all the data was there for that particular level, and the examinations were all there and the examinations were particularized enough so that they were – you had to really know the stuff in order to pass them, this would make very little randomness in moving up the line. That's another point that has to be taken care of.

That job falling mostly on the back of my neck I absolutely shudder at because it means, my God, I've got to rewrite about thirteen years of work into simple textbook form,

cost us a lot of our Scientologese, but it is actually not to our interest to cut down too much on the esoterics of Scientologese into the upper levels. It's only in our interest to cut them out in the lower levels. The... because there are many things we've discovered in the mind that nobody has any word for except us.

We can simplify, then, on the broad public front the wording and usages of Scientologese, as a language, you see, but in preserving the necessary points, still get a simplification as we go up along the line. But there are certain things you can't simplify. You start calling an actual GPM – you start calling that in too much English and you use an English word of some kind or another for a GPM and you've just about had it. What you want is a symbol that is not restimulative of the wording of goals or items. See, has a lot to do with it.

Anyway, however that is, somebody now is in this position. He's out here on the street, he hears about Scientology. So he goes around and he understands there's an auditor there and he has some meetings on Friday night or something like that. And he decides he'll go along. He's heard from Bill or something. And he goes along there. He sees a chart up on the wall of where he's supposed to go. This tells him at once that there is someplace to go, that there is a way to get there, and if various states of arrived beingness are described with great reality on this chart, and so on...

He frankly won't look at the upper levels of the chart. They won't interest him. He will be mostly looking at the immediately adjacent interests of the chart, you see. And he'll say, those are a good thing to have and this is all he has to do. And this is all he has to study. And this is his practice of activity and it's on this schedule and that sort of thing. And that shows him that he can move from that point on forward. The road then is not blocked out because he sees that every time he gets at one of these points, he can then take off to the next point similarly informed and equipped.

Furthermore, he's not being limited by fantastic sums of money being required of him for processing. He's being asked for enough money to finance training but he is not – and he's usually perfectly willing to give that, by the way. He then realizes he's buying an unlimited amount of training to get through the processes of these particular levels and move on forward.

Well, by restimulating a lot of co-audit – getting a lot of co-audit going in areas and making Central Organizations concentrate on this and show auditors where they fail by not getting co-audit groups going, then the Central Organization itself comes over on to training mainly for its income line. It actually runs more courses than it did previously, more levels of course, and any HGC activity is basically patch-up activity resulting from co-audit areas.

Now, there hasn't been any success whatsoever – any fast success of dissemination or broad knowledge – in the idea of a private professional practitioner who grabbed guys off the street, laid them on the couch and ejected them out the front door. I want to call this to your attention, that this is not – in spite of the fact we have one or two guys, a few guys in Scientology that have been absolute geniuses at this and have made very good forward progress – but this has not been the picture of the whole at all.

This bloke who does this is following a pattern laid down by earlier healing professions. And we don't happen to be a healing profession so we're out of order to accept this par-

ticular zone. Now what's the score here? What's the score? Your... immediately, you have figures – you immediately have figures here before you. It took the medical profession over a hundred years to get anywhere with that system. It's taken the chiropractor, naturopaths, homeopaths, the osteopaths almost equivalent lengths of time and they're not really making it.

Look at this as a healing profession activity. You look at the amount of time it's taken them to get off a launching pad and, why just now the American Medical Association is getting up to a point where they have something to do with public opinion in the United States. And they're doing it for the rather unworthy reason of just getting a few more quick bucks into their pocket. These boys took a long time; these fellows were a long way on the road. So that is obviously not a fast system. Just looking at the comparative statistics we say then there is something wrong with this picture.

We have this Freudian analyst who has an office in the Ritz Building, and who gets a couple of patients in every day and listens to them, and so forth. This picture is not a successful dissemination picture. It happens to be the only picture in the society that anybody is complaining about. The medicos – it took them a hundred years to make it and they're not going to let anybody else make it, if they can possibly help it. They know how tough it is. They're going to – they're going to scuff the track up in front of us. They're going to push us around in order to get that quick buck and the monopoly, don't you see?

Well, we don't belong in their field. We have nothing to do with them at all. And so I don't think that pattern which is so well adapted to... What is – what is their highest level of prac... oh, letting blood, yes. They bleed people these days. They're the fellows that have those barber poles that go up – no, that's some other profession.

Anyway, all joking aside, they have not been successful because they are all poised for the final kickover. They were seized 100 percent in England by the government. In the United States, they will be in the near future. Socialized medicine is certainly going to be there. The big insurance companies of Canada and so on are – have all of their chips down on the fact that all medical healing in the United States will become socialized within the next five years.

Well, that'll be an adequate stop to any forward movement that – no matter what their forward movement might have been. And it looks to me – it looks to me and has for some time that that is not a successful pattern. Furthermore, the society only complains about Central Organizations when they engage in public processing: getting the guy off the street and straightening up something with him. Then they have an objection to this because it's in the line of that. They have also an objection to a private practitioner.

Let me show you here that if this system is followed – if this system is followed – you realize that anybody who becomes a preclear has to become a member of the club. Therefore, anything that's happening to him, he has a right to try to help do something about, if he doesn't like it. He isn't just at the total effect-point. And he's moving on forward and he has some responsibility for the general forward progress of the Scientology movement. Makes a different picture.

Now, the Senate anti-American activity – I mean the Senate Anti-American Committee, (I think that's one of their principal functions) American organizations, and so forth, have to be stamped out now, you see. We mustn't have the – organization never hired a communist

in his life – blacklisted, you know. They're going crazier and crazier. You're seeing government go goofier and goofier.

Now, these boys – these boys come up on an investigatory level, see, and they want to know about this terrible movement Scientology, *oh-wooooh-wooooh!* "They're doing these poor little poverty-stricken doctors out of their honorable duty." You knock them over in a minute – you knock them over in a minute with another plan of dissemination, don't you see. You'd say, "Well, as far as I know, the only thing that's ever gotten us into trouble with the press or with governments or anything is because part of our plan of dissemination – which fortunately for us was our most unsuccessful part of our dissemination activities – paralleled that of the poor, downtrodden medical doctor, who must be protected," you see.

Now, the government itself – the government itself – gets the idea of somebody trying to influence the public at large. They have another entirely different angle on this. They get some idea of somebody treating members of the public. This makes them a sort of a public activity. But look, I'll call to your attention that in every area and state in the world there is this idea of the private club. They have many privileges. The idea of the private club, the idea of the private activity. This fellow is a member of the club so he can buy drinks at hours which are not legal in any public pub, you see? All kinds of – there's all kinds of privileges associated here with the privacy of an activity.

Well, of course, it doesn't seem to occur to them that the member of the public becoming a Scientologist – the member of the public becoming only a preclear – is pretty hard to draw in our particular instance. But it does tend to wipe out forward randomness. We're now running into randomness. We've got such things as the Victorian Parliament. They got the – they got the straw out of their teeth long enough to utter asinities on the subject of "What is this Scientology?" And they're now having some kind of investigation on the subject down there in Victoria State – that's a State Parliament down there, they don't amount to anything.

I was fascinated by their summons to the inquiry. It's inquiring after the corporation which has never done any business in Australia. It wants all the papers of this corporation which has never done any business in Australia. Just happens to be one of the Scientology corporations. They haven't even got the right corporation in other words. They're adrift, man.

Of course, I have no objection to these attacks, so long as they continue to attack along lines in which they will inevitably lose. [laughter] See, the FDA attacking us for healing people with an E-Meter, hooking it up to people and saying their cancer will now be cured because we have turned the meter on, see? That's what they actually were charging us with. So long as they bring attacks along that line, it's perfectly all right with me because we win them. We'll win all these attacks one way or the other. God help the Victorian State Parliament. I used to look at the HCO Exec Sec down there occasionally. She got an interested look across the street, you see – it's right across the street from HASI. And she'd say, "Well, we'll own that place one of these days," and it's already begun. They're the people who did enough overts now and of course they'll run for cover like a bunch of startled quail.

But if their investigation starts by investigating a corporation which has never done any business in Australia, as the corporation they should investigate, well, it gives you an idea of it, see? And they're investigating things that don't exist, and so on.

We don't care much about this type of activity except as it takes it out of me and muddies up the lines and takes it out of Assoc Secs and HCO Secs around the world. They manage to hold the fort. They really don't do us a lot of harm. But if it's stepped up to this particular point at this particular time... We have just now gotten a complete cycle of research here, what's going to happen because of this is, of course, gruesome because this will make a vast difference in its own right.

But everybody's gotten terribly interested in Scientology. Newspapers are saying to us now, "Oh, of course, anything that happens in Scientology is news." Well, of course, what they consider news these days is bad news. And we're not terribly fascinated with being treated this way. But we'd better... not – this isn't necessarily why we would put out this policy letter. I'm just showing you that it does happen to have an advantage in that direction, too.

Now, I've examined this from all fronts. The only criticisms I have with it – it sure does make an awful lot of certificates, has lots of certificates. But I call to your attention that these certificates are most of them extant. They have at one time or another actually been issued or used. And these certificates are an effort to handle the situation of somebody completes a course but doesn't get his classification, at least give him something for the course. You'll find this continuously operates as a problem in handling courses and so forth. You'd be surprised how much upset you get if you don't do this.

And therefore, the certificate does not carry the rights of the class. At no time here does the certificate designate or carry the right of the class. These are just an afterthought. The classification is carried by the Roman numeral and only the Roman numeral regardless on what certificate it occurs.

So someday you may see the oddity – because HGA was given away years and years ago – you may see an HGA with a Class II on it. Sounds wild but – and a lot of administrative randomness can be kicked up along this way. But it's actually the class they have made. And if they are studying for the next class, they may do the processes of that class if they already have in their hands – you couldn't train anything unless you did this – unless they already have in their hands the level of their last class, see? They must have the level of their last class. May therefore do the processes of the next class while actually being trained for that class – while actually being trained for that class, see? Because this breakdown will stand that much – that much strain but may not do the next class.

See, it can only move one above. If they haven't gotten the classification let us say – they've got a Class III and they haven't gotten their IV classification but have been trained for IV, and then they go on to try to take a course for V. Can't do it. Because in the first place, there's something must be wrong back here with their case or something like that. Something must be wrong with the basic understanding not to be able to get a class. Something must be missing here someplace, you see? And you'd throw the whole thing askew again if you permitted a guy to just go on up training for each class up and doing the processes of that class because he was training for it. It would become idiocy.

But you have to allow the next class to be trained from the class award actually given.

Now, the question came up, what about Class 0 and Class I? Well, of course, that's the only one where you have this condition. And that's because it is Class 0, because you haven't

got a Scientologist yet. And therefore, you say, Class 0, you're actually not saying very much. This class has to be double if you take a good bold look at it. You've got the person who is being trained for an HAS certificate. You have to consider him a class of some kind or another. Consider him Class 0 striking for an HAS certificate. And then there's your HAS certificate classed, because there had to be a certificate before he could get a class.

Now that condition doesn't ever occur again. The person from that time on has always got some kind of a certificate to put a class on. I mean it's as elementary and as stupid as this particular thing. There is no other ramification about Class 0 and Class I both coming under HAS. It has no other meaning than that. Of course you call this person a Class 0 because he's taking a course for an HAS, don't you see?

Now, this permits however a basic public release textbook to be issued at the level of Class 0 which doesn't really contain the classification materials for HAS and Class I. It's just public stuff one way or the other – dissemination material.

All right. Not to labor the point too much, I can tell you right now that there are cases all over Scientology who are parked because they skipped some of these levels or haven't got things squared away at one or another of these levels of processing. And they tried to leap with seven-league boots into the rare and stratified air of upper-level processes when they are still desperately worried about the fact that water, every now and then, looks awfully green when it comes out of a faucet but they really can't ever see that it is green, don't you see? And they're worried about such things as visual perception, or what is the environment all about. Something that would be solved all at once with the CCHs, don't you see?

And yet, somebody's trying to run them on implant GPMs or something like this, see? Oh, brother. Now that stretch of unreality accounts for lack of forward advance, and if an individual in Scientology doesn't feel that his case is advancing, that he is advancing, then somewhere along this line – and this schedule is laid out fairly precisely – he has dropped the ball at one of these levels. That level has never been flattened on him as a case. That contains things that he is still desperately worried about.

Now, it's all very well to say that only in the upper levels do you get a real resolution of the case. That's true. But how do you get past the camouflage and the nonsense of the PTPs and upsets of present time in order to get through the case in order to relieve the things which are the real trouble with the case? It is very true that the real trouble with the case lie at Level VI. These all lie at Level VI. And it's also very true that you've got no chance whatsoever to get to them because there are too many other things wrong already that lie on the top of them. The unreality of the situation is such that no one can ever get to these.

So, the anxiety of some auditor to get the most, see, get the *biggest effect* on the pc, you know; do – *do the most* for the pc, you see – takes this little kid who is awfully worried every time his mother leaves the room, and tries to run an actual GPM on him, see? He isn't going to make it.

And the other point – the only other point I'd like to make is I think this reduces the amount of danger, the amount of upset, the amount of randomness connected with processing results. And I'm terribly interested in that.

Well, I've given you a lot of data here one way or the other. I've tried to give you my viewpoints with regard to this, and I hope they've been of some assistance in this matter.

Thank you.

TV DEMO: BASIC AUDITING

LECTURE AND DEMO

A lecture and demonstration
given on 4 December 1963

How are you today? Thank you. Now this is the 4th of December, isn't it? Fourth of December 1963, Saint Hill Special Briefing Course. What you're going to see here today, and what you're going to hear is an extremely novel demonstration. And we're going to combine a lecture with a demonstration.

I'm going to try to give you some idea of the presence of auditing – the use in handling of basic auditing. Now recently, recently, you had something called itsa. And itsa has always been present and actually there's no difference between auditing in 1952 and auditing today. Really there's no difference. I'd say probably 1954 was more like it or 1955. There's no real difference. And everybody seems to have interpreted itsa as some new strange commodity that doesn't have anything to do with what we were doing. Well, I have more or less always handled itsa, and I found out that auditors weren't handling it, and, that they needed a different viewpoint and a different perspective from which to view an auditing session, so as to make their auditing better.

Now, all this is very interesting. But auditors in actual fact – and this goes for, I'm sure, Central Organizations, field auditors and so forth, as well as this course – have all of a sudden dropped into some kind of a category of itsa that nobody ever heard of and that was never intended. And this is pretty awful bad. I couldn't say how much. I mean I – this tape's going out in public so I can't swear, don't you see? But it's pretty grim.

Do you – do you know that auditors are permitting their pcs to draw pictures? Not to illustrate anything, just sit there and draw pictures and pc is humming and the auditor marks down the TA action while the pc is humming and... *What is this?* I mean, what on earth's going on here? This is madness! Auditor sitting back giving the pc nothing to do, not handling any control of session, not doing anything in the session. Of course, your TA is going to pieces. Well, now look, the place to get your basic auditing together is at Class II and Class III. The – your basic auditing ought to be very nearly perfect at these levels. Because you're never going to be able to do an OT process unless your basic auditing is nearly perfect. There frankly is no difference between Class II auditing and Class VI auditing. No difference, really, as far as basic auditing is concerned. Now, the basic auditing is that fundamental

which handles the pc, handles the session, handles the auditing comm cycle and handles the meter. Regardless of what else is occurring.

Now, the situation that you face here is that there is a thing called perfect basic auditing. There is a thing called perfect basic auditing. And at Class III it – now as we know it, it now handles the meter. It adds that into it. But at Class II all basic auditing is doing is simply handling the pc, the session and keeping the auditing comm cycle going and intact.

Now, there is room for improvement in this. Nearly everybody's auditing had room for improvement. Frankly the demand of an OT process on basic auditing is so great that you cannot have frail basic auditing and run anything, really, at Class V or Class VI and expect any result to occur. But for an auditor to be sitting there, letting the pc doodle, for an auditor to be sitting there, with the pc humming, with an auditor to be sitting there silent while the pc had nothing to say; these things are fantastic violations of basic auditing.

Your basic auditing has got to be good. Now, I'm laying it on the line to you here, and it may be very cheeky of me perhaps to play one of my own sessions on this sort of thing. But for the last three months I knew that auditing could be improved. I knew my own auditing could be improved. How about yours? So I've been working for about three months to get my own auditing improved as far as I could improve it. And I've been very careful of various things. And I've been grooving myself in along this particular line.

The trick is to do all these things and keep the session rolling. Now of course, at Class VI you're right on top of the session, you're kicking it all the way along the line, you're speeding it up, you're rolling it very quickly and so forth. But frankly it's no different that it should be at Class II or Class III. All of these auditing lessons, then, apply to all classes above I. Basic auditing is something that should be very smoothly done indeed.

Now, what I have been able to improve in my own auditing are these particular points: handling the pc's itsa, receiving it, knowing when the pc has spoken, acknowledging what the pc has said and not cutting off the pc's itsa. Now of course, one of the ways to (quote) "play this safe," is just not to say anything to the pc at all, and then of course you never cut his itsa. Well, how about cleaning cleans? The pc will just go on a self-audit if you sit there silently. So this is a beautifully balanced situation. You've got to be able to answer the pc without cutting the pc's itsa, and without putting in a big silence there which will also really not handle his itsa. So it's a case of knowing when – for the auditor, when to talk, the auditor should know when to talk and when not to talk. And it's a quick proposition. It is not slow.

Now, there's a lot of ways by which auditors comm lag. And I've noticed auditors comm lag down through the years. But the pc said – you're asking the question, "Do fish swim?" And the pc says, "Yes, they do."

Auditor: "...Oh! Oh, yeah! Okay." And the auditor says, "Do fish swim?" "No."

And the auditor: "Hm. Oh, very good. Yeah, ver... yeah, all right, excellent. Excellent. Yes-hm-hm, yes, *jush-jush*. Mm-hm, well of course. Yes. Thank you. Thank you very much for..."

What the hell is that but auditor comm lag, see? The comm lag of silence, the comm lag of stringing out a whole bunch of acknowledgments so – hoping that something will hap-

pen. These two things are auditor comm lag, nothing else. What's the auditor doing comm lagging? Well, maybe he's comm lagging because he doesn't know the technique. Well, all right, he can learn the technique. But if he is comm lagging his basic auditing just doesn't happen to be good. It happens to be bad. His basic auditing is very, very, very poor.

Now most everybody in auditing believes that if they just knew the technique they would be all set. Well now, auditing is now divided into basic auditing, technique and case analysis. Three sections. The truth of the matter is that basic auditing is basic auditing, and it doesn't matter what technique you are running. Your basic auditing must be adequate.

Now, do you know that it doesn't even change from technique to technique? It's just basic auditing. It's the pc says something, you answer it. Pc isn't saying anything, you get the pc to say something, you know? Pc hasn't got anything to think about or say, give him something to think about or say.

You keep this thing rolling. You keep it going. You keep your action up in the session. You're right on top of the session. That's what gives you tone arm action. Tone arm action totally stems from keeping the session rolling. There's all kinds of ways of mishandling pc's itsa. But the secret of good handling the pc's itsa, when the pc has answered it or said what he's going to say, the auditor then and there at that moment knows the pc is finished talking and answers it. Once in a while he makes a mistake. The pc had something else to say. Fine, let the pc say the something else, and acknowledge it again.

When the pc has got nothing to say, *give* the pc something to say. Give him something to think about. Give him something to work on. In other words, it's the auditor who injects the busyness into the session. Now, I've given you itsa, and the response to itsa is to fall away and do nothing. The auditor does nothing now in the session except record and hope the pc by self-audit will get somewhere. Well, believe me, that is not auditing and it never will be auditing, below – above rather – it won't be auditing above Level I11.

Yes we expect a Level I person to sit there and let the – let the individual talk. We expect this to happen. That's what we expect to happen. But that's Level I. Well, none of you characters have been in Level I for a long time. You've always been doing formal auditing. Well, who stopped you from doing formal auditing? I didn't. But at Level W I thought you could get some idea of measuring communication. And letting the pc talk and learning to listen to what the pc was saying. And I thought that would be beneficial. But you, you've carried it all the way through, and you are going to audit somebody up along the line clear to VII, I suppose, sitting there, comm lagging, saying nothing, while the pc doodles. That's not auditing! You hear me now. I mean, I'm strenuous on this and I'm being rough on this because I was plainly shocked. I conducted a survey of this and, well, you've just simply misinterpreted what is itsa.

Now, the points I've had to improve in my own auditing were handling the pc's itsa. Be right up on top of it. I found out that it was I who was causing the dirty needle, it was I, in my auditing, handling basic auditing, who occasioned the occasional ARC break the pc had.

11 Editor's note: This follows another system of classification as the modern one (for details HCO PL 26 Nov 63). The auditing style referred to here today would belong to Level 0.

Next thing I had to concentrate on was promoting and increasing the pc's itsa. In other words, I never pulled information off of a meter or grabbed information from anyplace unless I couldn't get the pc to give me the information independently. You got it? I didn't ever assess – I stopped assessing, solely and totally by meter. I gave the pc a chance to tell me what it was. The pc couldn't tell me, then I got it by meter. Promoting and increasing the pc's itsa, giving the pc every opportunity to increase his ability to itsa. Because that is the road out. The pc's ability to itsa must be improved or the pc isn't getting any better.

Number three: Not talking while the TA is in fast motion. You've got a TA over here, and it's going – it's going like this. Well, during that period of time you're silent like this, see? Pc says something and you see your TA...[demonstrates something on the meter]

All right, at that moment, you say, "Thank you." You didn't say anything while that TA was in violent motion. But also not waiting to see if the TA was going to move again. I'll give you the idea what this is, see. We get – the pc says "caterwump" was the item. All right, and we see the TA go.

We're silent during that period. Now, if we kept silent here hoping the TA was going to move again, we get this kind of a picture. [demonstrates something on the meter]

That doesn't count.

Now, I'll show you the right way to do this: And you can see this TA moving, and here's a big broad sweep of the TA. Pc says, "Caterwump!" Auditor's silent, you see.

"...Thank you." All right. Just as long as that was on a smooth even sweep, why, the auditor was silent. Because he would have upset the pc if he had talked during that period because the pc's very badly introverted.

Now this is wrong: Pc says, "Caterwump!" And we've got this smooth downward sweep of the TA here. Auditor silent. Auditor remains silent.

See, that TA pumping around, working. That's wrong. That's wrong. In other words, that TA is pumping around. Of course, if the pc is itsaing at the same time and talking, well, it would be because the pc was talking that you kept silent. But ordinarily for reason of tone arm alone, you just take those big, broad sweeps and you shut up during those sweeps and then you don't sit there and wait endlessly for the – to see if the meter is going to move again. Because actually that's in violation. The meter has stopped moving, hasn't it? So at that point of stopped motion, why, it's perfectly all right for the auditor to start talking.

See, you can push this so painfully far that a pc never gets an opportunity to actually – well, he's just left without an auditor, that's all.

Now, actually at Level VI you'll get this situation, that after the thing has blown down and come back up, this pumping motion that you now see, here, this little pumping motion of – regardless of what he's saying, and so forth, is in actual fact coming from the next item, not yet found. You've got all of your TA action out of the item you've found, with that long broad sweeps. And now you're just bleeding TA out of the bank someplace.

But that's a particular thing about TR 6 [level VI]. It works with any process, then, that the auditor should not be talking while the TA is in fast motion. But not waiting to see if it

moves again. See, once it stopped moving the auditor has no business now sitting and waiting to see if it's going to move again. He just simply now says, "Good!" You got the idea?

It isn't a case, then, of sitting there haunting the meter; it's sitting here at 3.5, and you're haunting the meter, wondering if the meter is going to drop. Well, it drops to 3.25. And then sitting there and waiting to see if the meter's going to move again, and finally after four or five seconds the meter does shift up to 3.3. See, that's wrong, that's wrong. What we're talking about when the meter is not moving, we don't want the auditor talking on these war... large sweeps. That's what we're interested in.

So that's another point involved here, on basic auditing. It's a basic auditing point. No technique point. Now, taking up and handling the pc's problems, either at session start or as they arise or at session end. Now, that's all a part of basic auditing. You can't audit and get auditing gains with a pc with a PTP. The pc says he has a PTP, whether that occurs in setting his goals, he apparently has a PTP, or in mid ruds, he apparently has a PTP, or in – during the running of the thing. As he discusses things he suddenly brings up a present time problem. Or at session end he now has a present time problem. Keep the pc's present time problems handled with regard to the session.

Now, you think of a present time problem as something that happens outside sessions, no, a great many present time problems happen because of auditing. Now we have – for instance I'm – will even go to this point now, is just before I give the end of the body of the session, note that there's a goal up here that the pc has set, and this goal that the pc has set up here is very definitely a – hasn't been touched in the session. See, it's sort of a PTP kind of goal, you see. "To find out if I really am bright." Or "If I find out if I really am stupid." We haven't had any of this in the session at all. And take it up before the end of Model Session.

Now, this goal up here – don't wait for goals and gains, see. You can all take this up right after the session – right after the end of the body of the session – but you notice there's an outstanding problem there. You hoped it might turn up and solve during the session, it didn't. You say, "Well, how do you feel about that? Is that really a problem to you?" The pc says, "Something or other *sother sother sother* and so-on and so-on," and "What considerations have you had about that?"

"Well, so-and-so and so-and-so."

"How do you feel about that now?"

"Oh, I feel all right."

"Okay, thank you very much. End of the body of the session."

And then just go into his goals and gains as though you hadn't paid any attention to it. You get the idea?

Pc says in a – now here's a middle session thing. Pc suddenly says, "Well, I don't know whether I really answered the question or I didn't answer the question, you know. See, it's very, very difficult to tell whether I answered the ques..." Know you're looking at a PTP. All right, so you handle it as a PTP. And you say to the pc, "All right, well, what considerations

have you had about it?" You're of course going to wear this one out because it appears to be a pat thing. There are a thousand ways to handle this thing.

But you're going at it on this basis: PTP.

"Well, I don't know I..."

"Well, what was the answer to it?"

"Well, it was so-and-so and so-and-so. Well, I don't really know. I didn't really know at the time."

"Well all right. Well good. Well, what was the question that was asked at that particular time?"

"Oh, so-and-so. Oh, oh, yes! So-and-so! Oh, well, yes! The answer was so-and-so."

"Oh, all right!" And I come right off of it. Because we handled the PTP. Get the idea? Don't let the pc pack up a bunch of PTPs in the session.

Now I'll give you these four points again. Handling the pc's itsa. That's number one. That's not talking and cutting off his itsa, and not being silent and giving him nothing to itsa. That has two sides.

Two, promoting and increasing the pc's itsa. In other words, you give possible opportunity. So that you don't tell him or the process doesn't let him find it out or a meter rather, the – he does – you don't going to find it on the meter, when the pc can tell you. In other words, get pc first on this sort of thing. Get him to itsa. Get him to look at it. Get him to find the answer himself. Do all you can to get the pc to find out the answer himself without barging him down, and making him feel like he's getting no help. You can also do this to a point where he feels he's getting no help at all.

Number three, not talking while the TA's in fast motion, but not waiting to see if it moves again. That's all part of it.

Number four, taking up and handling the pc's problems, either at session start or as they arise or at session end. Don't let a pc have PTPs.

Now, there's basic auditing. Basic auditing is something that an auditor is. This is something he does. And when I get the idea that all the auditors in Scientology are going to sit around and handle a session this way: "Well, what consideration have you had about problems?" For the next hour pc saying nothing, doing nothing, the auditor sits there and looks at the pc.

Look. If all auditing, if all auditing I thought was going to degenerate into that, if it was going to degenerate into that, I'd go on a vacation and I wouldn't come back. Now, you just – mind you now, I've given you the threat.

Here's your – here is something interesting here, from a standpoint of Model Session. Now, you're going to hear on this tape – I'm going to play you little bits of this, you're not going to hear a complete session, you're going to hear little bits of this. And I'm going to give you this tape in chunks. And although this tape is very valuable, this happens to be a present time truncated GPM found on a pc, the goal found and the – all sixteen items in that GPM run

in three hours, with a total TA division of one hundred and seventy-five. That's in three hours. And this is very valuable because it's probably the only tape that gives us the full complete rundown on finding items or anything else. Completely aside from the fact that it is a tape on technology and gives technique and its patten, it is a study in basic auditing.

Now let's see if you're good enough to hear the basic auditing that is going on in this particular tape.

LRH: This is what, 3 December?

PC: Yes.

LRH: The tone arm's rather high here.

PC: Is it really? Where?

LRH: 4.75

PC: Oh.

LRH: All right. Cans in your lap, squeeze your cans. All right, that's fine. Your havingness is in good shape. We're going to continue with actual goal processes, okay?

PC: All right.

LRH: And I think I'll start out this PT situation.

PC: Mm-hm.

LRH: And if not we'll go on with what we were doing, okay?

PC: Mm-hm.

LRH: All right, is it all right with you if I begin this session now?

PC: Yes.

LRH: All right. Start of session. Has the session started for you?

PC: Mm-hm.

LRH: Anything worrying you?

PC: No.

LRH: All right, very good. What goals would you like to set for this session?

PC: If we work on it, find the ninth – ninth GPM.

LRH: Hm?

PC: If we work on it, find the ninth GPM.

LRH: All right.

PC: Clear up any doubts about the present time GPM. That's it.

LRH: All right. Very good. Now we'll get our since mid ruds in here.

PC: Mm-hm.

LRH: All right, since the last time I audited you, when was that?

PC: Last night.

LRH: Very good. Since the last time I audited you has anything been suppressed?

PC: I suppressed um – myself to go to sleep last night, so I would go to sleep.

LRH: Oh, yeah?

PC: Yeah! Because I'd been staying up late and...

LRH: All right.

PC: Um – I suppressed annoyance today at not being able to locate the um – your old passport. I suppressed an-

noyance at Arthur because he wouldn't let me read – didn't want me to read Christmas – the way Christmas is celebrated in different countries. He figured that was too grown-up for him. That's all.

LRH: All right, I'll check that on the meter. Since the last time I audited you, has anything been suppressed? Well, that tends to rough it up just a little bit.

PC: I suppressed concern about getting this affidavit out and done. I suppressed concern, well, what if we don't find your passport, you see. I suppose your police book would do. Um – also, you know, had the American Embassy call again and found out that we didn't have to go down there, do you see what I mean? Always – you know, like can we have it notarized here and then send it there, and then they handle it, you see. Of course, you see, yes!

So um – you see, but Mary called up and she asked about it, "Well, they'd have to come down here to the American Embassy and bring their passports and..." You see what I mean? So it's all right now, and we have a notary coming down, to notarize it here, and we don't have to go to the Embassy in London. Well – well, I suppressed um – I suppressed that um – as usual, with governmental type things I found out that uh – my passport has been out of date since, you know, February 63. And um – I thought, well, that's to be – that's certainly true. Anytime I come into contact with governments I suppress – I don't want to have to do it, see. And uh – so I suppress – I suppress doing all their little actions that one's supposed to do. And forget all about 'em. That's all.

LRH: All right, very good. Check that on the meter again. Since the last time I audited you, has anything been suppressed? That a protest?

PC: I'm protesting the question, yeah.

LRH: I didn't leave anything...

PC: Oh, I suppressed my legs are tired tonight. Standing out there on the cement, cold cement, and watching students, you see, audit. Well, it's like um – like jumping up and down on a steel deck, you know?

LRH: Hm!

PC: Cold floor, hard cement.

LRH: All right.

PC: That's all.

LRH: All right. Since the last time I audited you, has anything been suppressed? Well, that didn't read.

PC: Mm-hm.

LRH: All right, since the last time I audited you, is there anything you've been careful of?

PC: Oh, to write up this affidavit with Plenty of "therefores," and "thereofs," and "wherebys," and "whereofs," and "witness all ye men," and, you know, legal jargon. And um – I was careful to make a complete search for your passport. I've looked all around. That's all.

LRH: All right. Sin – I'll check that on the meter. Since the last time I audited you, is there anything you've been careful of? All right, that apparently didn't read. Since the last time I audited you, is there anything you failed to reveal?

All right, now you've – you've seen this going on to this degree. I'm sorry for the slow start there. Actually the machine had to be considerably adjusted there at the beginning. Now, you heard a blank. You heard a blank. Right after she did the last Careful of, you heard a blank. That was a tone arm blowdown. And as an auditor I just simply made notes on what she was doing, and watched the tone arm blow down and when it hit bottom and so forth, was in there and acknowledged it. Now, do you get that? That isn't just a blank hoping something will happen, it is in actual fact this.

Now, do you see any difference so far, in what you are doing with Model Session and what you are hearing on this record? I'm going to play you the rest of these mid ruds and let you listen to that.

PC: The passports. I kept thinking there was something. I didn't – I never found it.

LRH: All right. Okay. Since the last time I audited you, is there anything you failed to reveal?

PC: No.

LRH: All right. I'll check that on the meter. Since the last time I audited you, is there anything you failed to reveal? Is there anything you failed to reveal? Well, that didn't read. Do you agree that's it?

PC: Mm-hm.

LRH: All right. Since the last time I audited you, has anything been invalidated? The last time I audited you, has anything been suggested? There's some read on Suggest.

Now, I want to call to your attention the fact that the pc is actually given time to answer the auditing question. The auditor doesn't go on talking, you see, because the pc is taking time answering the auditing question. Those are the pc's comm lags. The pc's blanks. They are not the auditor's blanks. The question is asked or implied to the pc, and the pc is then given time to answer the question. So there is your – those silences that you hear there is the auditor giving the pc a chance to answer the auditing question. And the pc is floundering around trying to find if there is any answer to it.

PC: I can't think of any mistake.

PC: No, I don't think so.

LRH: You don't think so?

PC: No.

LRH: All right. Since the last time I audited you, has a mistake been made? Yes?

PC: ... No. Haven't done any mistake. I don't know of any mistake.

LRH: Mm-hm.

PC: Oh, just – just students, making mistakes in their auditing.

LRH: All right, very good. Since the last time I audited you, has a mistake been made? Yes? Another one?

LRH: A protest? Seems to be a latent protest. I'll check the question again.

Since the last time I audited you, has a mistake been made?

PC: Well, I don't know what mistake has been made!

LRH: All right. Was there a mistake about case analysis? That read. What mistake in case analysis?

PC: Well, that was just one of the students not getting the charge off before doing a – a case analysis.

LRH: All right. Does that answer it?

PC: Yeah! Well, I covered that on the – on student auditing mistakes.

LRH: All right, very good. Since the last time I audited you, has a mistake been made? All right, that seemed clean. Since the last time I audited you, has anything been protested? Since the last time I audited you, has anything – is there anything you've been anxious about? Last time I audited you, has anything been decided? Yes, what's been decided?

PC: I've decided to get these uh – get these uh – wigs, and – and uh – false noses and – and makeup grease paint and false beards and so forth, for Diana, and make her up a disguise kit, you see.

LRH: Oh, all right.

PC: These noses, these false noses or rubber noses, you see, and you can put them on and then n... makeup putty, you see. You can put the putty around and then cover the putty up with grease paint, and so on. And they also have a little book about how to make up, you know, how to make yourself look old, and how to make yourself look this or that, or sad or, you know. So um – should be interesting.

LRH: All right.

PC: I also got her some beard, some crepe hair to make uh – make beards or mustaches or sideburns or what have you. Two um – two womens' or ladies' wigs and one wig of a man. That's all.

LRH: All right. Since the last time I audited you, has anything been decided? All right, that seemed clean. All right. And one more checkout here, missed withhold. Have I missed a withhold on you? Yes ma'am?

PC: ... Well, I still haven't thought of what to get you for Christmas.

LRH: Oh, this is...

PC: Missed withhold from me, too!

LRH: Comes Christmas time.

PC: Yes.

LRH: All right. Have I missed a withhold on you? I'm afraid there is one there, Suzie.

PC: Yeah?

LRH: ... There.

PC: Well, that was um – Mary Long, won't be here tomorrow. She has to go up to uh – Guys hospital. Uh – they want to have another look again at her thyroid. And she's going to refuse. She's been refusing an operation on it. But uh – she's going up tom... tomorrow to see how it's going to run. And uh – she showed me one of the tests, you see, and – that they would conduct on her, and it seemed like it was pretty good. Uh – she was able to – you know, you're supposed to hold your arms out and stretch them out and something or another. If your fingers shake or something, well, then this indicates parathyroid trouble and uh – her fingers were pretty steady. So, it looks improved to me.

LRH: All right. Have I missed a withhold on you? There's one.

PC: *Mm. Student not being facile in questioning on case analysis, you know. Ask a question, and – and they don't know how to ask another question in order to verify what they've gotten, do you see what I mean? You know. Also, this one student, everyth... everything the pc said, he checked something different, you know. So I thought, dear! Sort of refusing the itsa of the pc. By at least not being courteous enough to check it, you know? Even though*

it is wrong. You can at least be courteous enough to check it. Well, that's all.

LRH: All right, very good. Very good. I will check that one more time. Have I missed a withhold on you? All right. That – do you agree that's all clean?

PC: *Mm-hm.*

LRH: All right, very good. Thank you very much. Take a momentary break, would you?

PC: *Mm-hm.*

All right. Now there you've just heard the routine actions that you're supposed to take in starting a session. And the silences you heard were not the auditor's silences. That may come as a horrible shock to some auditors. They were all the pc's silences. The auditor's right up on top but except one instance when the TA was moving like it was taking off from a launching pad. All those silences were the pc's. And the auditor was riding right up straight on top of it, bang! In other words, the pc finished off finally, bang! The auditor was in there again. Bang! He's in there again. Bang! You got the idea?

This is – this is not worked the reverse way. That the auditor sits silent while the pc has nothing to do and so forth. There you see, of course, the fast check on the last five buttons, and a permissive check on the first three. In other words, the first three of Suppress, Careful of and Fail to reveal, of course are permissively checked. They are not checked on the meter until the pc says, "That's it" – said, "That's all." And then they're checked on the meter. And the rest of them are just rapidly checked on through.

This is standard, and you even saw an instance of steering. And that instance of steering was on the last button there, of the mid ruds, I think it was. And it was just a matter of pc couldn't think of anything there. Couldn't think of it. Well, having given the pc all possible scope to promote and increase her itsa, naturally we had one – we'd gone to a point where the pc couldn't think of anything in particular – I think that was on a missed withhold – pc couldn't think of anything in particular and the auditor then watched the meter and when it ticked the auditor said "there" to attract the pc's attention to what the meter was saying.

But you see that was only carried out when the pc was just floundering, was unable to see what was making the meter read. Now there – there is just standard, terribly, terribly standard hard, fast model sessioning. The number of TA divisions which were gotten in that little short space of time were *fourteen*. That was not twenty minutes. Much less than that. I don't know, it's on the report here someplace. But there's fourteen TA divisions in that short space of time.

Why? Well, the auditor was working. The auditor was being a pro. The auditor wasn't there for the ride. Anybody who doesn't audit that way handling those things is going to get

minimal TA action. Now, I don't say I'm the world's most perfect auditor, but I'm doing better than you are right now. So let's take a look at that.

Now, let's get into something complicated. Let's not – we'll just pass over finding this next goal. I was able to find that rather easily but did it in a rather unorthodox fashion, since it was right there ready to be grabbed. I was able to list up from the top oppterm of the previous bank because the pc had already had a great many found. Let's just cut into this at random here and see what we find.

LRH: This list complete? Ticks.
You have any heat on this list?

PC: *Mm-hm.*

LRH: You have?

PC: *Yes.*

LRH: Well, we may have something on it. Okay? We listing closer to present time? Or are we listing earlier? Neither one of them read.

Let me null this list, and see what you get here.

PC: *Mm-hm.*

LRH: To be wild. To be wild. To be impetuous. To be impulsive. To be dashing. To do whatever I want. To do whatever I want. To have a gay time. To throw caution to the winds. To be incautious. To be uninhibited. To dare. To be daring. To proceed courageously. To proceed courageously. You thought of another one or something?

PC: *To do as I please, I thought. Is that – is that the same wording as the ones there?*

LRH: I don't think so. Okay.

PC: *Mm-hm.*

LRH: How's that?

PC: *Hm!*

LRH: All right. To act with courage. To be carefree. You thought of another one?

PC: *No, just that "to do as I please." That seems to have heat on it.*

LRH: Is that so?

PC: *Yeah! Only I never do as I please. So it might – if there – if that is a goal it's failing already.*

LRH: To do as I please. To do as I please. On this item has anything been suppressed?

PC: *Well, I always want to do as I please. But I never do as I please. You see?*

LRH: Hm!

PC: *Oh, I know a good one for that! To be irresponsible.*

LRH: Okay. All right if I continue with the list?

PC: *Mm-hm!*

LRH: All right. To be carefree. To be carefree. To be careless. To not care. To not care. To care about nothing. To care about nothing. To follow any whim. To follow any whim. To go off half-cocked. To be a daredevil. To do as I please. To do as I please. To be irresponsible. To be irresponsible.

PC: *Isn't there to be daring on there somewhere? You've already read it?*

LRH: Yes, there is a "to be daring." Check it again for you. To be daring. To be daring. To be daring.

PC: *And then I thought of another one. "To dare." [laughs]*

LRH: All right. To dare. To dare. To – to dare. To dare. To dare. That's still in. Heat on it?

PC: *Mm-hm.*

LRH: All right, I've got one over here that tried to go. To act with courage. To act with courage. To act with courage.

PC: *Oh, that just went because it was amusing. You know, I just – that just read because it was amusing. It was one of those – you know [laughs]*

LRH: All right.

PC: *"To live with honor." [laughs] Die for – die for goals!*

LRH: All right. Read some more of these. I'll check this one now. To be daring. All right. And this one was trying to read. To dare. To dare. To dare. It is not now reading. And to do as I please. To do as I please. And to be irresponsible. To be irresponsible. To be irresponsible. Well, I'm sorry, I haven't got anything reading there.

PC: *Mm-hm. Are we listing for nothing?*

LRH: Are we listing into nowhere? Are we listing for nothing? Are we listing into nowhere? I don't get a read. Is there an item where we're listing for? Is there a GPM here? Well, that tends to slow. Is there a GPM here? All right, did you get more heat on this list when I nulled it?

PC: *As you were nulling, yes. Hm.*

LRH: What had the most heat on it?

PC: *Um, to do as I please, and uh – to dare, and uh – to be daring.*

LRH: All right. To do as I please. To do as I please. That's now reading. To do as I please. To ... That's reading.

PC: *Mm-hm.*

LRH: Now, is that the PT GPM? Is that an actual GPM? What do you think?

PC: *I don't really know, is that an actual GPM, do you think?*

LRH: Is that an actual GPM? It ticks. I'll check the rest of it. Is it an implant GPM? Is it only a goal? Is it only a goal? Is it an actual RI? Is it only a – is it a lock on an RI? I get a tick here, and when you said so it rocket read that it's an actual GPM.

PC: *Mm-hm.*

LRH: What do you think about this?

PC: *Well, I think that's very interesting. If that's the case, it's uh – pretty high, it's got quite a few items in it. Because, uh – I uh – never do as I please.*

LRH: All right. This an actual GPM? Well, that reads. All right, is this the GPM that's closer to PT than "To proceed with caution?" Is this GPM closer to PT than "To proceed with caution?" Or is this GPM earlier on the track?

PC: *It's earlier on the track. Is it? Does it read?*

LRH: I got a tick. Is this GPM earlier on the track? Is this closer to PT than "To proceed with caution?" What did you think of?

PC: *I'm just getting so much heat off I can't – uh – you know, I can't tell which way uh – it goes.*

LRH: Or is this earlier on the track? Earlier on the track? Or is this closer to PT? It's closer to PT? Earlier on the track? Neither one of those are reading.

Now, I had a tick there, that it was earlier on the track, but that just might have been your startlement.

PC: *Hm.*

LRH: Hm?

PC: *Well, check it again. Is this closer to present time than "To proceed with caution?" Or is this um – further from present time than "To proceed with caution?"*

LRH: When you say it, my dear, it falls very heavily on closer to PT than "To proceed with caution."

PC: *Oh. Was that on assert? No.*

LRH: Hm?

PC: *Was that on assert? No. I haven't asserted it.*

LRH: Well, asserts don't ordinarily read a full dial.

PC: *[laughs] No. Caught. Yes.*

LRH: Now, is that the GPM that is the PT GPM? Rocket read.

PC: *Rocket read.*

LRH: PT GPM? That's number one GPM? "To proceed with caution" then is number two GPM. Is "To proceed with caution" number two? Is it number three? Number four? Number two. "To proceed with caution" is number two GPM.

PC: *Hm.*

LRH: And "To do as I please" is the PT GPM. Number one. Is that correct?

PC: *Number one, yeah. Yes.*

LRH: That is the PT GPM?

PC: *Yes.*

LRH: The one that comes into PT?

PC: *Hm.*

LRH: Is that, "to do as I please?" All right. Would "to do as I please" – would the goal "to do as I please" oppose "to proceed with caution?"

PC: *Yes. Because it doesn't matter. Caution doesn't enter into the thing. It's merely just to do what I please. Whether it's incautious or – or safe or sane or – or responsible or anything.*

LRH: Hm. It would oppose it then?

PC: *Yes.*

LRH: Mm-hm. That rocket reads. All right, very good. And let's check how many RIs in this GPM if we can. All right, have you got any estimate?

PC: *I thought fifteen.*

LRH: All right. Fifteen RIs in this GPM? More than fifteen? Less than fifteen? Fifteen? I get a trip of the needle on fifteen. That too many? Too few? I notice it's an odd number.

PC: *Hm.*

LRH: There must be some odd number under sixteen.

PC: *It may – it may be sixteen.*

LRH: Hm?

PC: *It may be sixteen.*

LRH: Are sixteen RIs in this GPM? Now that reads nicely. Sixteen RIs in this GPM. So that takes it up to about the – what would normally be the third – the third or fourth pair.

PC: *Mm-hm.*

LRH: Hm?

PC: *Mm-hm.*

LRH: In the GPM. So that would make eight pair, eight pair from the bottom.

PC: *Um – yeah. Eight pa... eight pair from the bottom, yes.*

LRH: Yes. And it'd be about the f – eight pair from the bottom. That reads nicely.

PC: *And about two pairs – maybe about two pairs from the top. If there are twenty items in the GPM.*

LRH: Mm. Your guess is as good as anybody else's.

PC: *Yes.*

LRH: Yours contain variously, twenty, twenty-four, twenty-two, twenty.

PC: *Anyway, I know what the top opp – top terminal is.*

LRH: Oh, you do?

PC: *Yes.*

LRH: All right. Give it to me.

PC: *Doing as I'm told. [laughs]*

LRH: Top terminal, huh?

PC: *Mm-hm.*

LRH: Doing as I'm told. Well, that seems to blow down. Is that your item?

PC: *Yes.*

LRH: All right. Doing as I am told. All right, something suppressing it?

PC: *Yes, I thought uh – what the uh – was thinking what the terminal – oppterminal might be in there.*

LRH: And what did you get?

PC: *And I got uh – people who won't specifically tell me what to do. [laughs] But emphasis on the "specifically."*

LRH: Well, you know, that read and blew down like a shot. Beautiful!

PC: *Hm!*

LRH: People who won't specifically tell me what to do. All right. Something suppressed on it? It read, but short.

PC: *Um – well, just amusement.*

LRH: Oh, all right. People who won't specifically tell me what to do. All right.

PC: *"Specifically" was really the main thing. People say, well, um – uh – you know maybe my mother would say well, now – um – "Well, go to town and see if you can find me any – any thread" or something like that. Hm! Well, what color? What size spool? What uh – uh – commercial ou... uh – what – what sort of cotton, you know. I mean, you know, let's be specific about all this, you know. What exactly and precisely? You know. Or uh – someone says um – well um – "Write up that bulletin for me, would you?" you know. Well, what I'll do with the bulletin? You know? It's specific. Like, you know, generalities, no, no, no, no, no, no, no, no.*

LRH: All right. People who won't specifically tell me what to do. I'm getting a small kick on that. What's up here? You're not paying attention here, to me?

PC: *Well...*

LRH: Huh, is that ...

PC: *Maybe not.*

LRH: No, is that it?

PC: *Hm.*

LRH: People who won't specifically tell me what to do. People who won't specifically tell me what to do. There it goes. People who won't specifically tell me what to do. What's happening here?

PC: *Well, I suppose my ball of charge is blown off of it.*

LRH: All right. "People who won't specifically tell me what to do." All right.

It reads for me, it reads big strokes when you say it, but it's sort of against a cushion here. Is there any RI above this? Is there any RI below this? All right. Is this the top oppterm of this GPM? All right. Is this the – what'd you think?

PC: Oh well, it could be "in-specific people."

LRH: Inspecific people. Inspecific people. And people who won't specifically tell me what to do. I'm not trying to spoil your itsa here in any way.

PC: It's people who won't specifically tell me what to do.

LRH: Well, that reads, every time you say it. People who won't specifically tell me what to do. Ah, now it's reading for me! "People who won't specifically tell me what to do." It gets a choke on it.

PC: Oh!

LRH: No, no, no, I'm not trying to make you nervous here, I'm sorry.

PC: Hm!

LRH: But ...

PC: I get heat on it.

LRH: I know, but it's choking down.

Just a technical note here, because you're actually listening to this for itsa. But a technical note is, naturally, the top oppterm of the PT GPM, unlike any other oppterm in the whole bank, all the track, of course should just blow up, and shouldn't keep on reading. See, it should just go. And then that's the end of that, don't you see. And in this particular case it didn't do so, so here's the pc having a hard time.

Now the auditor knows, by this time, that the pc has a wrong item, and is itsaing a wrong item, and is selling it. Now, how can the auditor get out of this trap, because the auditor knows it, this item didn't blow up and cease to read. This item is now continuing to read. Now, that would be the only item in the whole bank that will do this. So this is a very peculiar little piece of technology here. The top oppterm of the PT GPM amongst all other oppterm is the one which blows up and ceases to read, almost at once. Because there's no charge in front of it, of course.

PC: Oh, all right.

LRH: Is there a suppression going there?

PC: No, it's just my item and it read, and it blew down and so on, and I don't know why we're – and it's read for you; you called it and it's read.

LRH: Well actually, it's blown down twice.

PC: Right. Uh – huh, and you called it and it did read on an instant read once.

LRH: All right. Yes, yes, it has read.

PC: Hm.

LRH: This is just auditor nervousness, top opp, bank bad.

PC: Hm. Hm.

LRH: Top opp wrong, bank – blooey.

PC: Hm.

LRH: All right? Respect your itsa. I got to just... People who won't specifically tell me what to do. All right. It – it – you have a – an allergy to my reading this. All right. Now...

Now, why didn't this do this? That's what the auditor is asking here. What's going on? And here we get into a considerable tremble and scramble. Pc is getting ARC breaky, because the pc has a wrong item. Now, all you'd have to do is miss your itsa once here and you'd have a screaming ARC break. It'd be the session mid rud would key in the bypassed charge of the OT process.

LRH: Is this the top oppterm of this GPM? Is this the top oppterm of this GPM? Is this the top oppterm of this GPM? That reads. Is this correctly worded? Is this incorrectly worded? Is this correctly worded? Yes. All right, that reads nicely. Is there any RI above this? Is there any RI – is this RI below the top oppterm? Or is it the top oppterm?

PC: *I keep wanting to itsa. There are items below it.*

LRH: Well, I'm sorry. Well, I'm sorry, my dear. All right.

PC: *Very amusing. I keep thinking of that, and I get – and you say are there any items above this and I don't get anything and I think what he's going to ask, are any items below this and the heat comes pouring off, you know. Are there any items below this.*

LRH: All right. People who won't specifically tell me what to do. All right. That's your item.

PC: *Hm.*

LRH: All right?

PC: *Yes.*

LRH: And how does this item relate to this GPM?

PC: *Oh! Isn't it the um – top oppterminal? Ask me the question, um – would it relate – uh – would sol – solve – would the terminal solve that.*

LRH: I'm going backwards. I'm going to take off from here.

PC: *All right.*

LRH: Now, would the top terminal solve "People who won't specifically tell me what to do"?

PC: *Well, I don't know what the top terminal is.*

LRH: I don't want to list it.

PC: *Oh.*

LRH: I just want to know its relationship to the bank.

PC: *Well, I suppose that's top term – top oppterm.*

LRH: Well, what's – what's the matter?

PC: *Well, I want the question.*

LRH: You're going to list it the other way.

PC: *All right! Well, we'll list it the other way but I don't know whether – I can't tell you whether we've got the top pair, until I – I've looked at that question.*

LRH: All right. I want to list in the other sequence.

PC: *All right.*

LRH: I'm sorry.

PC: *Hm.*

LRH: Something wrong here?

PC: *N – .*

LRH: ARC break?

PC: *Well, you never did it that way before.*

LRH: Well, that's because I don't want to oppose this twice.

PC: *Hm.*

LRH: I don't like that system.

PC: *Hm.*

LRH: You got an ARC break? All right. You okay?

PC: *Mm-hm.*

LRH: All right. We made an error here? What's the error?

PC: *Oh, that. You didn't tell me what you were going to do. And I naturally supposed that, you know, finding an item, put in the steps on it. I'm sort of on a wait now, waiting for that question to be asked of me.*

LRH: All right. Who or what would solve people who won't specifically tell me what to do?

PC: *Oh, I have to look at the item, I forget it.*

LRH: "Doing as I'm told."

PC: *Oh, "doing as I'm told."*

LRH: Doing as I'm told. Doing as I'm told. Doing as I'm told. On this item has anything been suppressed?

PC: *Well, yeah. We – I – I did it the other way to. Now we're doing it the other way around.*

LRH: All right.

PC: *I don't know if you're going to get any more reads on it or not.*

LRH: All right. "Doing as I'm told." It's a very flat item. It's read [past participle].

PC: *Hm.*

LRH: And blown down. All right. Would people who won't specifically tell

me what to do be solved by doing as I'm told?

PC: *No! They oppose, but they don't solve.*

LRH: All right, what's correct here? Is the top oppterm correct? Top oppterm incorrect? Top oppterm ticks as correct. "People who won't specifically tell me what to do." Is that correct?

PC: *Well, I guess so. I didn't start out on that basis. I started out on the basis of the top terminal being correct, I think.*

LRH: Well, which is correct here? The top terminal? Or the top oppterm? This – which is this? Is it people who won't specifically tell me what to do? Is that the top oppterm? Or is that incorrect as the top oppterm? Is that correct as the top oppterm? I don't get a read on either one here, you shut off here, what's the matter?

PC: *I don't know. It uh – you see, I suddenly was trying to a – ask myself that question, you see. I felt something was wrong, and I wanted the question asked. And I had to wait to go through all this paraph – this – this, you know, round-robin, in order to get the question, you see?*

LRH: Yes.

PC: *And uh – they don't solve, they oppose.*

LRH: All right. Well, which is correct?

PC: *The top terminal is correct.*

LRH: Is the top terminal correct? Is the top oppterm correct? Top terminal is correct. Is "Doing as I'm told" the top terminal? I'm getting my reads on the fact that it's the top oppterm that's correct.

PC: *Could be a protest, couldn't it?*

LRH: Is that a protest? In this session has anything been protested? Yes?

PC: *Well, doing it – doing it that funny way. We've never done it that way before. It confused me.*

LRH: Yes.

PC: *That – it upset my certainty.*

LRH: All right. Sorry. In this session has anything been protested? Seems clean. In this session has anything been decided?

PC: *I decided that the top terminal is "Doing as I'm told."*

LRH: All right. This reads now. Doing as I'm told. Doing as I'm told. Doing as I'm told. On this item has anything been suppressed? No. Doing as I'm told. You've gotten off on the wrong foot here, Suzie.

PC: *Well, all right.*

LRH: Something – something in error, here. I'm not quite...

PC: *Well, let's list for the top terminal then.*

LRH: Do you have to do it from the top terminal?

PC: *Hm? Well, that's normally the way a top bank is done, isn't it?*

LRH: Yes.

PC: *Thought so. That's why I said that.*

LRH: Because I think I found the top oppterm. Everything reads, that I've found the top oppterm, but not the top terminal.

PC: *Oh! all right.*

LRH: Unless that's a big suppress.

PC: *I don't know.*

LRH: All right, have we bypassed some charge here? All right, is one of these items correct? Is neither of these items correct? Is there some other item? Are some other items the top RIs of this GPM? Don't get a read on anything.

PC: *Hm. Well, I'm ...*

LRH: What's gone wrong here? I upset you with procedure?

PC: *We're maybe on a ... Hm!*

LRH: Maybe on a what?

PC: *I don't know, I thought we're maybe on a cat uh – kitty-corner, but uh – we're not.*

LRH: All right. Are we running a correct goal? Yes. All right, let's list here a bit for the top terminal.

PC: *Mm-hm.*

LRH: You got "doing as I'm told."

PC: *Mm-hm.*

LRH: That rocket read. But tightly. Doing as I'm told. All right, what might be the top terminal of this GPM?

PC: *"Being obedient."*

All right. Now, cutting into this, of course it turned out that "doing as I'm told" was the top terminal, because when it was all listed, got straightened out, and the top oppterm in this particular case, even though it had been – it had read and everything else, finally the top oppterm turned out to be "being disobedient," which she'd put down on the top terminal list. This all straightened out very nicely, two items were taken from the top terminal, went on down the bank in the remainder of the session and the only thing that happened of any vast

significance there was just panning out that area. Now, this of course is a most confusing area and the auditor upset her slightly by shifting the procedure which she didn't expect.

But that was beside the point. There was an ARC break situation, if anything ever happened. I'm just pointing your attention now to the simple basic auditing. This pc was permitted to say what the pc was permitted to say. The pc's it'sa was handled, promoting and increasing the pc's it'sa was paid attention to, and not talking while the TA was in motion, but not waiting to see if it moved again. Several instances of that showed up along the line. And everything went along swimmingly.

But that was basic auditing. Now, that's a considerable trial for basic auditing. Now, you probably when you went over that were paying attention to technique. Technique seems to fascinate everybody, and basic auditing is the char that keeps the whole place clean and running but nobody ever pays any attention to. But the basic auditing in that area, the pc's it'sa was not cut so we didn't have an ARC break. Also, the pc wasn't left with nothing to it'sa, so we didn't have an ARC break. All kinds of errors could have been made there in basic auditing. Because if it good heavens, this pc had a wrong top oppterm, and the pc's right top terminal, "doing as I'm told," had been abandoned!

Now, how complicated could you get? We'd accepted the wrong item and abandoned the right item. Now, that of course is a bypassed charge to end all bypassed charge, and there was no reason under God's green earth for that session to have continued on smoothly. That should have just been a screaming mess from there on. Well, let's just cut into the session at random here, and see what we've got.

PC: *That's it.*

LRH: All right. Lot of heat on it?

PC: *Mm-hm.*

LRH: Being socially acceptable. All right, is that your item?

PC: *Yes, that's my item.*

LRH: All right, very good. That's your item.

PC: *Yeah.*

LRH: All right. Is that correct item?

PC: *Yeah!*

LRH: Correct in this locale? You got a blowdown of about .75 on it. Does that item, by the way, take care of the others on the list?

PC: *Mm-hm.*

LRH: Hm?

PC: *Oh, yes.*

LRH: All right. Hm?

PC: *All of them.*

LRH: All right, very good. Now, would "social confusion" be solved by "being socially acceptable?"

PC: *Yes.*

LRH: All right. Would "social confusion" be solved by "being socially acceptable?"

PC: *Mm-hm.*

LRH: Yeah, there was a little bang left on it there. All right. All these items correct to date? All right. Read. Now what is the relationship between being socially acceptable in this GPM?

PC: *Third terminal.*

LRH: All right, very good. All right. We ... Hm?

PC: *That's all!*

LRH: All right. Are your items all correct to date? All right. Let me see if that item was left on there. There's nothing wrong with this. "Social confusion."

PC: *What are we reading?*

LRH: I'm just reading the item we're listing from, just making sure.

PC: *Oh!*

LRH: Social confusion. Social confusion.

PC: *It's cruelty doing that, because I'm already thinking about what my next item is, you know.*

LRH: Well, is "social confusion" still reading?

PC: *No.*

LRH: Social confusion. Are you thinking about your next item? What's your next item? Who or what would being socially acceptable solve?

PC: *Not being socially acceptable. Social ostracism. Being outlawed by society. Being an outlaw. Being exiled. Being sent to Coventry. That's all.*

LRH: All right very good. Do you know which one it is?

PC: *No. Ostracism.*

LRH: That's an additional item.

PC: *Hm. It's ostracism or being ostracized, one or the other.*

LRH: What?

PC: *It's ostracism or being ostracized. One of the other of those.*

LRH: All right. Ostracism, ostracism. Being ostracized. All right. Being ostracized. All right, is that your item?

PC: *Yes. Yes. The thing I don't like is being all by myself! [laughs] I like to do as I please, but I sure as h... as the devil hate to do as I please all by myself! It's no fun!*

LRH: All right, that's your item.

PC: *Mm-hm.*

LRH: And would being "socially acceptable" solve "being ostracized"?

PC: *Hm! Definitely.*

LRH: Did you have your mind on what I was saying?

PC: *No.*

LRH: Hm?

PC: *Not definitely.*

LRH: All right. Would being "socially acceptable" solve "being ostracized"?

PC: *Yes.*

LRH: All right. Now what is the relationship between "being ostracized" and this GPM?

PC: *It's the um – sixth oppterm.*

LRH: Third oppterm?

PC: *Fourth!*

LRH: Third terminal?

PC: *Pardon me, fourth. It's the fourth oppterm.*

LRH: Yes, that's correct. Fourth oppterm. All right?

PC: *Mm-hm.*

LRH: Well, by calculation there's, what, twelve more in the bank?

PC: Well, we found, how many? That's the fourth oppterm so we've found uh – three, six, seven, and we've found seven items. And we have something like sixteen in the bank, so there're nine more to go, aren't there?

LRH: Yeah. Nine more. All right, I'm sorry.

PC: Nine more to go, that means four pairs, huh? Yeah.

LRH: Four pairs and one.

PC: Four pairs and one.

LRH: All right. And here's your question. Who or what would solve being ostracized?

Well now, that's the way it went and that was the pacing out along the line, and by the end of the three-hour session the whole bank had been run, hundred and seventy five TA divisions had been racked up, the pc was perfectly happy and cheerful, making all goals and everything was fine and swimming.

But this was actually, although very useful from this line, since this is the only tape extant which gives the exact procedure, and actually hasn't even been written in bulletins for modern OT processes, what I've been calling your attention to is itsa. And itsa, itsa. You notice I wasn't talking when the pc was trying to think up the answer to something. I wasn't talking while the TA was moving.

Those inexplicable blanks that you hear on the tape are actually fast moving TA. And it's just held until the TA ceases to move. Now, that's – that is an auditing session. Regardless of what's going on, there is a high level of discipline in action in this session. It is the auditor who inserts the discipline into the session. This pc was never left with nothing to do, nothing to say, and nothing to think about. It was simply from the auditor's point of view, simply drive, drive, drive, drive. And from the pc's point of view, pc appears very leisurely about all this. But that's just the pc's speed of running. That had nothing to do with what the auditor's speed of running was. You don't Q-and-A with the pc's speed of running.

Here we have, in essence, auditing. Auditing the way she should sound. And if your auditing doesn't sound that brisk and if it's not right up on top of it that way, but there it is. But it doesn't matter whether you're running II, Level II, Level III, Level IV, it doesn't matter what you're running, these problems are problems of basic auditing. And if anybody starts missing problems of basic auditing – I played that rather bad patch of finding the top oppterm. It's awfully hard to do this, particularly in the PT GPM. Got off on the wrong foot. Nevertheless if there had been very many mistakes in handling the pc's itsa, in failing to promote and increase the pc's itsa, the amount of strain which occurred at that point of the bank would have ARC broken this thing across the boards.

Well, I played you a little bit, a piece, a little later in this session, and we found the pc very, very happy and laughing and cheerful and so forth. How? Why? Well, it's simply because in spite of the bypassed charge that might have been generated at any given moment and then was straightened out, the pc was not given an opportunity to ARC break because the basic auditing was held in very solidly and hard.

Now, there in essence are the problems of auditing. And that basic auditing is basic auditing. If your sessions don't sound like that I don't care what process you're running, if your sessions don't sound like that, why, don't call yourselves an auditor. Okay?

That's tough to lay it down like that, but if I hear of anybody doodling and letting the pc doodle and whistle and so forth, I'll have his certificate, man, because it's not auditing, it's fraud. You drive it! Keep that session driven. Keep that TA flying. The auditor takes action, let's have him take action. Take action right now. And keep the session going. Keep the session whirring. And that's auditing.

Now, I was just using my tape there as an example, because I've been studying itsa and the handling of itsa here for some months. If you care to listen to those bits and pieces again, on that piece of tape, which will be available to you for study, you will see that it is the handling of the itsa, the promoting, increasing the pc's itsa, it's not talking while the TA is in fast motion, but not waiting to see if it moves again. And taking up and handling the pc's problems either at session start or at – as they arise or at the session end. These things and the handling – the good handling of the meter, of course, these things are the problem of basic auditing. Now, if you don't get good at that, you're not going to make the way up along the line. You're just going to close yourself right off along the line.

So let's not have any more nonsense about: itsa is sitting in a doughy slump, with the pc trying to make a session out of it. That's the job of the auditor. And you make sure that you do.

Okay? We still all friends?

Thank you very much. Good night.

BASIC AUDITING

A lecture given on 5 December 1963

Well, hello!

Audience: Hello.

Imagine finding you here! Glad to see you today. Winter is upon us. In just fifteen days, I think it is, we get the shortest day in the year. And then the sun comes back north again. So remember at Christmas to burn your Christmas trees so as to attract the sun north again. Probably nobody even realizes why they have Christmas.

Well, what's the date?

Audience: December 5.

Five Dec., the nautical month, AD 13. And – haven't anything to talk to you today, about at all, I gave you vent of meanness, cussedness and viciousness yesterday. I know several of you went through the floor. Not those who had their names mentioned but those whose pcs had been humming and doodling in session. [laughs] The problems of auditing are divided into three classifications. I'm not mad at you. I wasn't then, I'm not today. I just want you to be successful, that's all. Sometimes I get a little snarly when I don't think you're being as successful as fast as you might be able to.

Auditing is divided into three areas. And these areas are basic auditing, technique, and case analysis. Now, when we say technique we mean the exact patter or procedure necessary to get something audited on the pc. We do not mean technology. The technique involved – let's take an old process – we're really exhuming them out of the ragbag. Reg was showing me a list of processes being compiled for Level II and nostalgia reigned in all directions! [laughter] Waterloo Station that – gosh! You know? I remembered one myself, I used to run on groups. Always very successful. The only processes anywhere in that lineup that were at all dangerous were the mock-up processes. And you just get those out. And sometimes running a Havingness Process, it is too far away from the pc's Havingness command and you actually tighten his can squeeze up. But at Level II that's just tough. You wouldn't do very much about that. Of course you wouldn't be getting tone arm action; Level II is run by tone arm. There is no needle in Level II.

So that this still would not go unnoticed. But I was looking at some of these old processes. And one of them I used to run on a group was "Spot three spots in the body, spot three spots in the room." Remarkable process. That is almost an optimum process. You'd be surprised what that will drag a pc out of. And drag him out of his body, too, on some cases, if you keep it up long enough. It actually tends to pull him out of pieces of the bank, don't you see, and so on; it's quite interesting. So any exteriorization process, short of actually exterior-

izing the pc, is quite valid. It's quite a decent process. You know the original exteriorization process, not included in that remark, and that is of course, "Try not to be three feet back of your head." That was the original exteriorization process. "Try not to be three feet back of your head."

I don't know if you know it but somebody put that over the air on a New York radio station. I can see the cab driver now, you see? Tried not to be three feet back of that cab. But these – the actual act of exteriorization generally brings the person back into his body more solidly. Because he becomes alarmed. He becomes upset. He is unstable. And this is – actually occurs at higher levels. You inadvertently exteriorize somebody while doing Level VI, what now amounts to Level VI processes, or Level V processes. You can actually blow somebody out for a moment, and he has some adventure that he doesn't particularly like and he tends to come back in and hold on harder. Fortunately at Level VI, with your OT processes and so forth, why, he recovers from that because the GPMs being gone, there's nothing to upset him.

But the fact is that various things happen to people. It's not that exteriorization is bad, it's just that they become frightened and stay in harder.

Such a fellow's walking down – or he's driving down the street, and somebody has exteriorized him and he's been exteriorized for a day or so and he's feeling wonderful by the way, and he draws up to a stop light, and there's the body in the car, don't you see. And he draws up to the stop light and stops the car. And then wanders off. And sits up on top of a building and starts surveying the city and how isn't it very nice up here. And then suddenly horrifyingly comes to himself that the light has changed and every car down there is honking and he becomes afraid that he'd just walk off and abandon his body and his property, don't you see? And this alarms him, so he goes *spang* back into his head again. And the next time you get him out it's rather hard to do. A bit harder to do. And then it gets a bit harder and a bit harder and so forth. Well, the reason why is that he's so mucked up with energy and masses-GPMs and implant engrams and all that sort of thing, you see – he goes through these ridges, they disturb energy masses and it's these which are upsetting him, not the misadventures which he has as a result.

He merely misassigns it and misattributes these misadventures to being frightened, when as a matter of fact the reason he was frightened is because of energy masses that are exerting certain emotional responses upon him. Otherwise he couldn't care that much about it.

But any exteriorization type process, like three spots in the body, three spots in the room, anything that tends to bring somebody out of something, like, "Where aren't you?" You know, "Where aren't you now?" and that sort of thing, why, these things are quite marvelous. And they work on groups and individuals and so on. There's tremendous numbers of recall processes and so on, which fall into those categories – which is, "Something you wouldn't mind forgetting – tell me something you wouldn't mind forgetting." That sort of process.

Now, the liability of these is that they run into GPMs which have RIs in them, such as "forgetting," see? You run into the RI "forgetting." This becomes restimulated and pulled out of line. But this happens less often than you would think. And frankly, the individual audited up to about Level III the way you will see them coming up, are just about as far from a past

life or a GPM as you actually could get. They're riding in all this overcharged fat in the top RIs. And anything is a lock, and anything you audit off of that is improving the pc's perception, his orientation, making him wiser with regard to his environment, so he's in better shape with regard to his environment and as a result the GPMs tend to destimulate, not restimulate. But always remember when you're running a repetitive process – always recall that the danger of restimulation of an actual GPM RI or a lock on an actual GPM RI or an implant RI or a lock on an implant RI and so forth is always present. And the fancier and more comprehensive or – or goofball the wording is of the process, the more likely you are to do this, see.

Now, you actually run this same problem at Level I, of all places, when you say, "What solutions have you had to that?" Because what is the entirety of the track but a series of solutions? And the only thing that saves your bacon in this particular instance is because they – they don't have any reality on any earlier lifetime or any other interior proposition; these things just bite in this lifetime.

Now, if in doubt – if in doubt, you should presage your auditing commands with "In this lifetime." And you'll probably start doing that at about Level III. That starts to get possible. And by Level IV – present Level IV – you will find that you jolly well better had! Because this individual's awareness and alertness with regard to his existence is coming up to a point where he slides through and out of this lifetime just about as easy as slipping on a banana peel. You couldn't move him out of this lifetime, ordinarily at Level I, with a building jack, don't you see? You couldn't do anything about that at all. Let's take – let's take Doctor Snodgrass. And he's been working away for a lot of years and he knows all about life and death. He's seen more bodies, you know, lying there dead, and he knows all these things, this tremendous overburden of false knowledge, don't you see, that's sitting there. Why, you start running a process on him, he'll always apply it to this lifetime. See, automatically and immediately.

When he gets processed enough and he gets enough charge off this lifetime, he'll begin to realize that it isn't this lifetime that is aberrating him. And let him collide with this reality all on his lonesome. Nothing's happened to him in this lifetime enough to aberrate him to any great degree. And let him run into this propounded problem. Self-propounded! "Well, if there's nothing in this lifetime that could make me hate spinach, ahhh, where's it coming from? Must be coming from someplace." And this dawning feeling, "I wonder if I ever lived before, that might have something to do with this?" And by that time he's getting creaky. Well, by that time of course, you must start limiting your processes if you're going to run repetitive processes and so forth. Otherwise you really will collide with GPMs, RIs, implants and all sorts of stuff of this particular character.

Well, they slip through in due course. And they will collide with the materials of the whole track, willy-nilly; some sooner and some later. Main trouble you will have is the fellow at Level I who's on a manic on backtrack and hasn't been in this lifetime yet, don't you see? [laughs] He keeps arguing that he can only run stuff on the whole track and so forth. Well, that's all right. That's your problem. I've already had that problem. A problem of that type was what first shattered the first foundation in Elizabeth, New Jersey. We had a couple of blokes around there that could only run past life engrams on each other. Couldn't find any present life engrams. And they were busy running past life engrams, and I remember poor old Joe

Winter and Parker Morgan and John Campbell and the rest of them, all sitting around there and they proposed a motion that past lives must not be researched or mentioned. Of course, they didn't know up to that time that I could get mad. They found it out right then, right that minute! Upset them! They went into terrible shock! Walking around sadly for days.

But they were in terrible shock because they were trying to make me guilty and make me back down on the thing, because they said it had *bad public presence*! That was their argument. Well, one asks this fantastic question: Public presence? What are we doing? Public presence? Or are we trying to pry people out of the mud? Now, which are we doing? And the *Saturday Evening Post* reporter that was mucking up my weekend here a couple of weeks ago – I finally recovered from it – took some doing. He had collected every bad news story that had ever been printed anyplace about anything anywhere and he was sitting there with this stuff stacked up at about a foot and a half high, don't you see? And he's trying to take up each one of these stories one by one to find out if there was any truth in it. Of course, I just cut his throat and let him bleed all over the place. Because I told him no American newsman has ever interviewed me to get any of the material for any of those bad stories you've got there, so why are we taking them up? That finished it! Left him completely adrift.

Anyway – well, it was! It was nonsense! But the point here is that the university depending for its endowment upon its public presence; the politician, depending for his next election upon his public presence; this planet is public presented to death, see. And there's no room in all this for truth. No room in all this for truth. Because, of course, if anybody – even in the field of psychology researching, they have to think of this because the university in which the research is being done of course must think of its good name. I think it's a remarkable state of mind in which to do research, you see. Well, now, you can go over the other way and become completely antipathetic with what you research. But my point of view is that truth came first and everything else fell in second, and if you could fit it in second or third in line, good! By all means do so, but truth came first. And that's how we got where we got to, which was good, forthright, straight look at the whole situation.

Public presence, though, very often got in our road. You – you'll have these problems and so forth. This dear, sweet soul who has been the – just as calm and as pleasant and cheerful in this particular co-audit comes in one day and she's found out that she was a submarine commander in World War I. Or something like this, you see, or she was a space commander, you see, in the second galactic battle, or something, you see, and the other people start getting upset with her, you see, and try to jar her, and you don't want her reality to be knocked apart. And you actually don't want their reality to be knocked apart. So you ordinarily solve it by being just pontifical about the whole thing. And standing beautifully aloof, telling them, "Well, if she believes it she believes it. And if she was she was, and if she wasn't she wasn't, and that's all there is to that." Truth is truth, and that is all there is to it. A truth – a fact is either true or false. And no amount of opinion will make it either one. So you get around it to this degree. But you're going to run into trouble in that particular direction, even at Level II and these low-level processes.

Now, I don't think you will often run into it at Level I. But even then you might run into it. Because I remember one time at a swimming pool out in Kansas – it was a very country-club type swimming pool. And this society matron had been reading *Dianetics: Modern*

Science of Mental Health and was pleading with me to tell her that children could not remember prenatal existence. And she read it in the book and she was pleading with me to tell her this and so forth and I said, "Well, I can't tell you that," I said, "you've got a little boy over there, he's four or something like that, why don't you ask him?" She called the little boy over and says, "Now, how far back do you remember, Johnny?" And he said, "Oh, I remember when I was in your tummy, mommy." And went over and jumped in the swimming pool. Very embarrassing!

But there's apparently such a thing as acceptable truth. And I don't think that's true at all. I think that's the biggest lie at all, because that gives you a – that gives you a bonus for not telling the truth. So you actually can't compromise with truth at certain levels. About the only thing you can really do is to hold the line. On the average, with a pc, any effort to go back into past lives or something like that early on before their PTPs are handled will be met with catastrophic results. They will turn on somatics the like of which you never heard of, they're stuck into things that they can't handle, they're disoriented and so forth. They're actually being audited against hidden standards; they have terrific present time problems. They don't know yet whether they should go down to the doctor or not, to see about their tonsil which is sore. They're not quite sure in this direction or that direction. Life is just sort of a disoriented confusion to them. And all of a sudden you blang them into some new, startling datum! Well, you haven't got their present environment resolved at all and here they are confronting this big, new datum. And it turns on somatics and upsets them. Op... also lays them wide open for invalidation.

So you'll find most of your problems are solved by following this rule of: process them within their class.

Now, you're going to ask yourself, "Why? Why within their class? Certainly cases can be processed at once, higher than Level I. Certainly. They can be. Certainly."

You'll find the bulk of them can't be. The bulk of them really can't be processed higher and that accounts for most of the processing failures. They want to talk about it. They want to talk about it a little bit. Their idea of control is so nervy and so upset that to do more than to just sit there and say some things about some section of their life is quite beyond them. They want to talk about this or that or the other thing, even – if you start to guide them into O/W or something like this, they can't take that much responsibility. You'd be surprised they even get results getting off motivators. As – knowing the mechanics of the mind better, you'll often be surprised at how improvement can take place in the teeth of some well-known datum. This guy sits there and gets off all his motivators, don't you see, and of course if you could get off the overt the recovery would be quite rapid. And the recovery really doesn't take place fully until you do. But nevertheless getting off the motivator does get them some distance. Of course, that's an auditable situation. Somebody can do that with this person, but also this person is capable of doing that.

Now, if we look at all these various classifications and so on, we'll see that it's just an increasing level of responsibility for self and for the dynamics. And this is what this is basically plotted against. So the processes laid out for the individual in any given class – of course that's a gradient scale of processes, too. That gradient scale should be plotted against increas-

ing level of responsibility. So it starts with motivators more or less, and ends with overts, don't you see? So any type of gradient that can be made inside a class is actually just increased level of their own awareness of their own responsibility. You'll find out that this is a fairly successful pattern of operation.

But oddly enough – oddly enough – as simple – I've just discussed these various levels to increase your familiarity with them. Still talking about these three factors of basic auditing, technique and case analysis. You are still looking, don't you see, there, at technique, when you are looking at these processes. Now, those are all techniques. Those techniques must be programed. The programing of those techniques is based on case analysis. Which technique do you run first? See, that's case analysis. What's this fellow really worried about? Well, that's what we're going to do with him, don't you see? That's a case analysis. So in actual fact, every level – not for somebody just at a high-level auditor, but in actual fact every level – has its own case analysis. Has its own case analysis. And case analysis rises up to the highest level at the high complexity of GPMs and implants and all of this sort of thing. All the bric-a-brac and machinery and bits of mass of the mind are taken into account there. But you can say almost the same thing at a very, very low level. At II you can ask the fellow, "Well, was this something that was done to you?" (implant) "or was this something you did?" (actual GPM). I'm indebted for that clever wording to my friend Edgar. He slickered somebody here into a case analysis situation, did something with his potential tuberculosis in thirty-five minutes or something with this type of a case analysis. Now, he just took the basic steps of case analysis, discovered what the pc's sitting in, get him to itsa it and then fix it very – as accurately as possible. See, there was those three steps of case analysis.

Well, you find out that there's no need to depart from that pattern of case analysis in any level. And that, oddly enough, probably delivers the whole world of – this mustn't be on the tape, Peter, so don't bother to erase it – the whole world of healing, the whole world of healing is actually at this moment, at our complete mercy. At our mercy! We may not take it up, but this was one of the research targets that I set last January. And it unwrapped itself. And you got it very casually the other day as case analysis. And these steps of case analysis have some fantastic workability. And apparently have a fantastic workability in the field of illness and disease, which I think is quite remarkable. Now, no auditor is being advised to use these in this particular field, but there it sits! There sits the H-bomb that blows the medical profession over the hill and into oblivion.

Every one of these levels has its own approach for case analysis. But this first level is just sort of an – at Level I it would just be a discussion of how they're feeling or something like this, don't you see. Or what considerations have they had about some illness which they have. You possibly wouldn't be more definitive than this. But certainly that's a perfectly valid itsa. Now, as soon as we move up to Level II or Level III, certainly, we're into a case analysis which goes like this: Where is the person sitting? In other words, what engram or something are they sitting in? What life... we used to do this, by the way, in Dianetics. We'd say, in – "When I snap my fingers an age will flash (snap)." And the person would get something like twelve, something like that. "All right, is that twelve years old? Yes, well, all right." That's where he was sitting, see.

"All right, what happened to you when you were twelve years old?" See. And you'll finally be able to fix the fact that he was sitting in an engram which occurred when he was twelve. And the thing is frozen there in his mind. Now, there's a crude level of that same case analysis going forward. Of course this moves up to the situation at Level VI, "Is this an implant GPM? Is this..." you see? "Is this an actual GPM? Is this only a goal? Is this an RI? Is it an actual RI? Is it an implant RI? Is it a lock on an actual RI? Is it a lock on an implant..." Well, look at the technology here, which the pc has to know. Actually progressively he has to know more and more technology from a Level I up, to get any response at all.

But at Level VI we have all of this panorama, but only those three steps of case analysis. See. Discover what he's sitting in, you know.

"How do you feel today?"

"I have a cold."

See, that's Level 0 – Level I, you know. Well, that's it, good.

"What have you done for it?" See? "Do you feel better?" They're – actually your three steps, don't you see, of case analysis, shoved in at Level I. They're – they sound almost social. But as an actual fact they are those three harshly definitive steps. Which is – discover what the pc's sitting in; get the considerations he's had about it, in other words get the lies off of it which tend to make it persist; and then establish accurately this – conditions, see. And tell him about them. These are your three steps in every case.

So case analysis – case analysis has a considerable breadth of view. It apparently takes anything in, from healing out, very broadly into the whole track, all the rest of this.

Now, a word of warning. As a pc runs additional actual – this is – well, let's go really out of this world, now – as a pc runs actual GPMs and starts stacking up actual GPMs, the sub-itsa and the pc's ability to itsa – in other words what the meter reads and what the pc can actually see – come closer and closer together. And they come closer and closer together and then on case analysis fold over. And the pc can see better than the meter.

You can get a condition which develops about halfway through to OT, where if the pc doesn't say it is it, you won't get it to read. And you try to do a case analysis this way: "Is this an actual GPM?" See? That's it. Your needle just kept on – maybe there was the tiniest, little stub here; if you had a microscope, you might have seen it go, see. Maybe. But no significant read that anybody in his right mind could detect. Pc sits around and thinks about it for a while.

Says, "Yes. It's an actual GPM." Crash! Rocket reads, bang! Down goes the tone arm.

"Are we – is this a wrong item we have here, or are we listing from a wrong source? Are we listing from a wrong source?" You see, you can't find the next item, it won't prove out. "Are we listing from a wrong source? Have we found a wrong item? Are – are we listing..." That meter's not doing a confounded thing. Doing nothing! Obviously one of the two are true. See? There's only two things can be wrong at any given time. You found a wrong item or you listed from a wrong item. That's why you're messed up at this particular line, see.

It's only two, and you get a smooth flow on both of them. It's got to be one or the other! Pc sits back, thinks it over, "Well, I told you all the time it's a wrong source!" *Psssswww!* Crash! Bang! Down goes the tone arm. Everything blows down. In other words, there is a point of case where the meter becomes useless.

Now, originally that itsa gap between the itsa and the sub-itsa – what the meter reads, and what the pc can tell you-that's pretty wide! That's reading down below all the fat, don't you see? That's pretty wide! So your case analysis can be very adroit at about Level III. And practically ceases to exist at the upper end of Level VI. Quite interesting.

Now, you get somebody with eight, nine or ten GPMs run, actual GPMs all run accurately and the whole case smooth and so forth, you will see this. You will start running out of meter. It isn't registering, because of course, the meter depends on mass and the meter depends on connections and short circuits in that mass and that sort of thing, in order to read. And you're getting a person up to a self-determinism where unless they think it, it isn't so.

In other words, your basic auditing at the beginning of the line, in the earlier parts of the line, particularly Levels II and III, has to be magnificent. Because the pc doesn't know what the hell you're talking about. You get the idea, see? Pc, in order to work anything through this about his own life, or something like this, is a herculean proposition. He's got no nomenclature, he has no reality on this thing, he can't put these things together easily or smoothly and so forth. And what's the whole burden? The whole burden is on basic auditing. Which, of course, is just handling the pc's itsa, improving the pc's itsa. Most basic of basic auditing. You've got to handle the pc and handle the session and handle the meter when it's present. But above all these things, you've got to handle the pc's itsa and improve that pc's itsa because if you're not working all the time in improving the pc's itsa – in other words, never give it to him on the meter when he can give it to you. That's one of the little laws that go along with this. But at the same time the pc says, "Would you check this on the meter? Is it a guffball or a gumshoe?" See? And you say, "Naw, you tell me!" I'm afraid that violates handling the pc's itsa. It actually isn't being courteous; isn't helping the pc.

But somewhere along the line you got to wean him. You got to wean him off a meter. Give less and less dependency because it's going to happen anyway. And if you haven't enormously improved the pc's ability to itsa as he came on up the line, God help you if you get half through a bank having knocked the pc's itsa in the head all the way. Pc's now in a condition where he can't tell you and the meter won't. See, you could get yourself into a wonderful impasse here. On Level I they don't know what you're talking about. The thing is turned a full cycle. In both of those cases you've got basic auditing standing in.

The easiest area where basic auditing can be poor and not be noticed is at about Levels III and IV of the present chart scale. Basic auditing can be pretty cotton-picking poor. Because you've got a meter and it answers most of your questions at those levels and you haven't got much to worry about and so on.

So... but even through there, if you're not working at handling the pc's itsa and improving and increasing the pc's itsa, why, he won't make anywhere near the progress that he could make. So regardless at how the basic auditing – I mean, at what level basic auditing is applied, it is the dominant point in all levels. Now, you get – there is a technique and many

techniques and types of techniques for the various levels. Those things are something you can learn. Like a good pianist learning a new tune. Doesn't take him long to do that. Your basic auditing is grooved; that's fairly easy to do. You have to do these things and they have to be quite precise.

And your case analysis – your case analysis is on the same fundamental steps, but it is quite variable, all the way up along the line. And the only things that vary in basic auditing – the only real things that vary is that a – your start with a meter tone arm. You've still got a meter, there isn't any place on that scale where you omit the meter. The meter can be at any place on that scale. You can also run without them at the very early scale. But you expect somebody's going to be sitting there with a tone arm. And we don't care what level, their auditing is going forward; at least get them used to that tone arm. Because they will get a familiarity with a meter and they'll begin to appreciate what it is. And you've gotten a tremendous bonus so that when they get trained on the meter it doesn't appear to be an unfamiliar article to them that scares them to death. And so you've got, as you move along this lineup, the complications of metering are added to basic auditing. Metering gets more and more complicated as you go on up along the line. And you think you're playing a theater organ on a meter when you get to Level VI. If you can't handle a meter that smooth, fast and good, why, it will find you out, man! If you're having any trouble.

There's little tricks on these Mark Vs. By the way, there's something I've been meaning to tell you for some time. You know you never run these Mark Vs at Levels V and VI – you never run a Mark V meter higher than eight sensitivity. And a lot of your trouble, if you're having any trouble at such a level, comes from setting the meter sensitivity too high. I've had some trouble lately – a couple of times, I've set it too low. I've left it on one and wondered if the pc's RR was shutting off or something until I suddenly wake up with a shock and realize that I haven't advanced it from the start-of-session can squeeze. Just a point of amusement.

See, a pc gets so – needle gets so loose as you're – as you're moving up into these levels that frankly, Level I on a Mark V is reading quite nicely and it never occurs to you to run the Level I because it looks like somebody at about a Level III process, you see, operating at full blast on the meter. But eight – eight is about as high as you ever run the sensitivity on one of these things. You'll get any read that is at all significant at that.

If you're getting a dirty needle, your basic auditing is just too sour for words. You shouldn't ever have to advance sensitivity to get rid of a dirty needle so that you can move through it. Bah! It's just a horrible comment. And also I put out a bulletin the other day and I said that your basic – it was session ARC breaks that caused the dirty needle. And therefore those were solved by L1. And it's at – it's in that bulletin, but it possibly is not stated strongly enough that the violence of the ARC break is actually caused by the bypassed technical charge. Like the wrong goal or something like this and you've got to pick it up with L4 and so forth. But it isn't going to cure your dirty needle. It's just a technical fact that you've now got to go back to your session ARC break to cure that up. It could have sat there without a session ARC break and never keyed in and never given you any trouble. But you gave it a session ARC break, and it keyed it in. Quite in addition to that, none of these heavy charges ever have the power of creating a dirty needle. They don't create dirty needles. Dirty needles come

solely and totally from basic auditing. What's the value of this thing is not how you handle ARC breaks, but how you supervise auditing. Or how you supervise your own auditing. Because you see, you're sitting there looking at a dirty needle, you know darn well that you've done something in this session which was not very good in the line of itsa.

And also in supervising auditing you can go down a line of auditors and look at the meters. And anybody that's sitting there with a dirty needle, you've got somebody whose basic auditing is awry for that particular level. That's for us a very, very good point to know. It's not because he's got a wrong goal that he has a dirty needle, it's because his basic auditing is sour.

Now, basic auditing cannot help but increase – as you come up the line – cannot help but increase with practice and familiarity. I'm quite surprised the degree that the basic auditing can be improved. I was quite amazed a few months ago when I made some tests. I actually played you the tape I made some tests on – those of you who were here a few months ago – and I just busted the pc's ARC and so forth in the session with an inadvertent cut of itsa. And a few things like that. Well, it woke me up to the fact that my auditing could be improved. And so I set out to improve my auditing and to handle itsa and that sort of thing and just made a project out of it. And I've been working on that for about three months. Same length of time as some of you have been around here. My auditing has improved. Has yours? Aw, that's a nasty thing to say. But I have noticed a considerable improvement in auditing. Which is basically expressed in the tremendous amount of TA action which I can pull out of a session.

Now, of course, I know I'm running Level VII; you can't expect TA action like this at any lower level. But in the last five sessions of sixteen hours and ten minutes total auditing time, 638 TA divisions down making an average of 39.8 TA divisions per hour of auditing and 99.3 I think it is, per two and a half hour session. Average.

Now, that is done – that is done with basic auditing. Now, you can say the technique is responsible, but do you know the same technique used and the same amount of elapsed time and so forth, might only have brought off – you've only got as half as much work done – but it only might have brought off half of that, don't you see? It was the basic auditing which made the big difference. That's what made the difference.

Now, I listened to the tape that I played you yesterday and I didn't think I made my point well. Because I listened to that tape and it all sounded very comfortable and very easy. It sounded very relaxed. Well, that's a liability. Because from the auditor's viewpoint – was a liability as a demonstration. I thought maybe I hadn't put my point across at all, because I heard that thing playing on and it all sounded very casual. Very calm. Well, of course it was meant to sound very casual and very calm. Actually the auditor in this particular case was auditing like a mad, whirling dervish, you see. You know, that was really a driven session. But it sounded awful calm. But the auditor wasn't particularly calm running it, don't you see?

But here were all the factors of basic auditing. The auditor was not uncomfortable running this, don't you see, but he was right up on it. See, there was no relaxed frame of mind from the auditor's point of view. See, he was right up on it. You know, the "Do fish swim" or whatever it was, see? The pc was adding long comm lags, you see. She felt self-conscious about this later. Adding these long comm lags. Finally the pc answered it and said *t-t-t-t-ta-da, t-t-t-ta-da, t-t-t-ta-da*. The pc obviously had finished that answer, obviously said every-

thing she was going to say and so forth, and bang! There was another auditor action right there. Get that? It was no lag! No auditor comm lag, see, it was right there. Right on top of the pc, see. PC never had time to breathe. No wonder the pc was comm lagging – only time the pc didn't have to work! [laughs] But now, in that very session you were looking at, that TA was rolling – that TA was rolling all the time that was taking place, there. It was in constant motion. I gave you a slightly bum datum when I said you only go to the stop-point or a still-point of the TA, don't you see. You don't just sit and wait for the TA to move in case it moves again. You go to the stop-point of the TA. And I got to thinking about it later and I got to looking at it in last night's session and I was quite struck by the fact that there were no still-points of the TA. So I have to amend that for you. TA notably slowed down.

Doesn't have to be a stopped point of TA, because if you're really auditing they cease to exist. There is no moment in the session when that TA isn't jittering. It's moving from *whum to whum, to bing, to bow, to zzzzzzz-bump! To dip, to dap, zzzzzzz-thud! Up, up, up, up, zzzzzzzzz-bump!* That's the way it's going. It's just moving all the time.

You're only getting fifteen TA divisions in a session, see? That's what? Five every hour? No, it's not quite, it's – it's what? Clever arithmetic – six point something. You get – you know your TA is stopped most of the time. Stopped. Stopped dead still. There are long periods in the session when that TA isn't budging. Isn't moving a hair and so forth. Well, you get up to TA quantities like 99.3 TA divisions down in two and a half hours of auditing, which is at the rate of the one I just gave you, 39.8 TA divisions per hour. Actually, well below that point, I think it's about twenty an hour, you don't have stopped points. There aren't points when the TA is motionless. The more constantly the TA is moving, of course, the more TA you're getting. But it gets up to a certain accelerated type of activity and there just are no stopped points. It doesn't come down and stick. It slows down and drifts. And then it gets into businesslike action again, you see?

Well, that makes it, perhaps, very hard for you to judge when should you talk, and when not talk and so forth and it's basically on the basis of the big, fast swoops, you keep your mouth shut. If it just so happens that at that moment when you're expected to say something you've got a big, fast swoop in progress on your TA, you wait until it has eased off before you start talking. I wanted to give you a little more accurate presentation of this thing, because it's – I say – what I told you was not quite accurate. It would fit very well, see, on the auditing you're doing at the moment. But if you thought that was all there was to know about it you'd start coming a cropper a level or two above where you're auditing, you see? Because here you're getting accustomed to the fact that the TA stops, which it is doing at this particular time with you, and you go much higher in terms of levels than this and your TA doesn't stop. So you just have to learn to talk only when the TA is moving slowly.

Well, you get blowdowns such as... you don't have extreme blowdowns to get TA like this, by the way. Half – half of that action was from something like 2.75 to 3.5. No extreme highs, no extreme lows. Now, look how frantic the tone arm had to be only running over .75 area of a dial, see. That had to be pretty fast. And you run into oddities as you go along on this, you get such a steep blowdown that it doesn't have time to recover before your next blowdown, but does recover and then you get a blowup! You get into this kind of nonsense. And once in a while you'll sit there and be terribly puzzled as to what the devil happened.

Well, probably your meter didn't track with everything that was happening in the session. See, or you were busy doing something or other, and you didn't get the recovery that did occur. But you didn't set your needle to it, because it happened too fast. Something like this.

So you'll finally find that the rule gets to be at the upper grade of the thing is, when the TA is remarking with blazing speed, if it's moving with a blazing, white-hot speed, shut up! And if it's not moving much, talk. And you'll more or less keep out of trouble.

But you can turn off somebody's heat very easily by talking when the TA is in motion. Because if somebody's got heat on, they got fast TA motion going on and if the auditor says anything, they suppress the heat at these higher levels. And you've got to get the Suppress on. It doesn't do any good to get the Suppress on the item, you've got to get the Suppress on the heat. You got that? You've got to get the Suppress on the heat. "Has anything suppressed that heat?"

"Oh, yes, I suppressed it, because you said something."

"Oh? All right, thank you."

The heat goes back on, your tone arm's moving. Now if you went ahead and made the same stupid blunder again, your TA is now flying because the rest of the heat is coming off and you say, "Oh! Well, that's good! The tone arm is moving now!" You see? *Whohhhuupp!* That's the end of that heat blowoff. And you say, "On this item has anything been suppressed?" No, nothing's been suppressed on the item. The heat's been suppressed! So you'd have to get it back on.

This – I know this looks very complicated and something or other, but these things all have ramifications, they all follow in along the line of basic auditing. When you've got a bunch of action going on in the pc, when you've got a bunch of introversion going on in the pc, when the pc is very happy telling you all about something, when the pc is introverted and looking at his own case, when a lot of action is going on, what is an auditor doing starting action? I mean, it's as simple a problem as that. I'll show you how complicated the problem can look. You see, TAs move fast at some types of processes and don't move so fast at others and you have to adjust your TA and all this thing.

Yeah, but let's just get the basic rule, what really is this basic rule? If you've got a lot going on with the pc, shut up! If you've got nothing going on with the pc, right now start talking! Don't wait till next week. It's the auditor that raises the mischief in a session. Two ways. If there's nothing going on in the session the auditor should start something and he raises the devil with the session if he doesn't. And if there's something going on and the auditor starts something, why, then everything goes to pieces.

What is this? This is just a crude handling of communication cycles or action cycles. See? You've got a bad handling of an action cycle, that's all that is involved in that. Something's going on with the pc, why are you trying to start something with the pc? Nothing's going on with the pc, what are you doing not starting something with the pc? That's about all it breaks down to and therefore it's true for all levels.

But you'll find at the upper levels that you haven't got time to pay any attention to basic auditing. It better be something you're practically born with, you know? You don't go

along a street wondering about the steps of walking. "Now I pick up the right leg and I let the body fall slightly forward and I put the right foot out in front of me to catch the body so that it doesn't hit the pavement. Well, I've got that done now. *Whew!* All right. Now the left leg is back a little bit so I pick up the left leg and I put it slightly forward. Now the body must be made to fall slightly forward again and I catch it with my left foot. *Ahhhh!* I finally got that step!"

You shouldn't be in that condition with basic auditing when you're trying to run a whirling dervish type process like Level VI. I know it sounds obvious. I know it sounds awful obvious, but as obvious as it sounds, it is horribly true. And I had to learn it the hard way. It is something that you assume. You know, it's an "everybody knows" and that sort of thing. But you shouldn't be sitting around worrying about you talking when the pc's not talking and *oohroohroohroo* - sorting all this out. Man, you ought to have that stamped into the bone and marrow of your auditing. Because just handling an E-Meter at Level VI, well, that's a – that would be a – that would be a full-time job for a theater organist.

Keeping that thing paced in there and keeping that needle somewhere approximating Set and because I audit with a counter on the thing, of course I mustn't move the TA while the pc is moving. Because it throws your TA division count out. You'll have TA counters in the very near future. They're quite successful; they're marvelous. You'd never have time at Level VI to record TA. You'd never have a chance. You just wouldn't be able to do it. The only thing you can do is when you ask the question you can write down where the TA was sitting at that instant. And you better had, because that's the last glimpse you'll have of it. See? And then you know what it blew down from. Because you've got to mark your blowdown in terms of figures after the item when you've got it. Well, you've got lots of time to do that, because of course, you're marking it while it is blowing down. See, you use the time that you would be silent in order to catch up with your administration, without distracting the pc's attention too much.

Well, usually during a steep blowdown at having been given the item, the pc's too comatose to see it anyway. The pc wouldn't notice it if you were doing something, as long as it isn't too distractive. So you've got that little period there in which to do your administration and this thing went from 4.2 to 3.3. And you write that down, "to 3.0" You know, "4.2, to 2 – to 3.3," you write down, "to 3.0," which is their – they itsaed a little bit and it gave it another push. But that of course wasn't the original blowdown. That was the itsa blowdown so it's added with another "to it." And that gives you your codification. Therefore you know how this thing behaved.

Well, of course, you can sometimes notice that the tone arm is going up badly as you're doing a list so you can make a notation over on the left side of the list occasionally that the tone arm is now at 4.1 or something like that. It gives you – all you're looking for is the figure. Because when the blowdown happens you won't have a chance to see where it blew down from. So you just keep a handy reference. And that is [the] only tone arm noting that you have any opportunity to do at Level VI. It's just not possible to keep a painstaking tone arm record. You couldn't do it. You'd spend no time doing anything but that.

Prepchecking, oh, heck, in Prepchecking you've got all the time in the world! If you didn't have a tone arm record to keep, you'd get nothing to do at all! But the tone arm – tone arm counters are marvelous. And you have to be very careful when you're using a tone arm counter that when the pc starts using the cans for a pair of dumbbells to do some setting-up exercises or something like this, you see, you've got to notice the pc is doing this and then not touch your tone arm till they bring the cans back down into their normal position. Otherwise you're going to add a lot of false TA to your meter all the time, you see? Then your tone arm counter then is telling you a false story, continuously.

So you've got all these various things to note, and action; and of course, even at eight, a pc who is running at Level VI, even at eight sensitivity on one of these Mark Vs you get this quite remarkable meter response. Your meter responses are big. And they're not minute at all. And the pc's needle is so loose that you've got a problem in keeping the thing exactly to Set.

Now, you don't think this is a serious problem. Perhaps. But do you know you cut your pc's itsa to ribbons by not knowing the interesting trick of a trained left thumb. That thumb has got to be so trained that when you swing your needle back to Set, your thumb also puts the brake on the needle. And stops it cold at Set. In other words, you not only move the needle to Set, you stop the needle at Set.* Now, the delicacy of thumb touch and practice in order to do this is quite remarkable. If you don't believe it, turn your meter up to 128, put your sensitivity up here to 32, and try to kick the needle over here to Set. Just no more interesting like that. Just, you see? Just try to kick it to Set. Without that wobble. See that wobble? All right, let's – the needle came down here. All right. Now, let's kick it back to Set with no wobble. Notice I'm pushing it here with my fingers, not in an educated way. But you see? That wobbles all over the place! How do you get that needle back there to Set?

Well, while you're doing that, before you ask the pc the question you are putting in a silent spot and you're inviting itsa and you're chopping his itsa line to pieces and you've got his action cycle all disarranged, simply because you're not right there with your meter. See? And that's what makes a lot of auditors look kind of silly. They – auditors try to get this needle in and they – you can see them start tipping their – their heads.

Pc becomes interested – attracts attention, you see? Well, you should take and – and turn it up to an extremity like this, and see how – how good you are at bringing a needle back here to Set and stopping it. Swing it over here and just bring it around to stop and brake it. You actually can brake the needle right in at Set. I've just done it, but if I turned it around and showed it to you, I couldn't do it. Because I've not ever run a meter so the pc could read it. [laughs]

Now, all right, that's an interesting gimmick on meter reading. There – there's then refinements above refinements above refinements on the subject of meter reading. Possibly you hadn't even thought of that particular one, although you may very well have had trouble with it. But you actually can educate your thumb, believe it or not. That will bring that thing right back, it'll bring right back to pang, and stop it right on the button. And there it is, right there.

* Editor's note: This refers to the Mark V (and other meters like the Quantum) which don't have a damped motion so the needle's inertia makes it swing beyond the point where you have actually moved it with the tone arm.

Also you can get that so practiced that you begin your question as you do it, so that during the last half of the question the needle is freely drifting. The last half of the question. The first half of the question, you're talking there: "In this session, has anything been suppressed?"

"In this session..." needle braked, stopped, "...has anything been suppressed?" Click! This sounds like – this sounds like an old professional Marine or something like this, what they can do with rifles and so forth. And what they can do with drill manuals, and that sort of thing. But it gets up to that line you say, "Well, this guy, he's just doing a parade-ground drill." Well, you'd be surprised how that parade-ground drill can develop. The Princess Pats of World War 1 fame, particularly, used to have a manual they called the Princess Pat manual. And they would drop a rifle from slope arms, off of the right shoulder. The rifle would do a complete spin, opening its bolt, and move sideways to inspection arm. See, they just let the rifle fall off of their shoulder and then over the biceps and it would come up to inspection with the bolt open. Dropped more rifles doing that! [laughter] It's really goofball types of maneuvers.

I remember embarrassing a Marine captain, one day, I did a Princess Pats spin with a rifle. See it's – bring it up from order arms, catch it in this hand and without this hand being far away from you, since that would look clumsy, the rifle does a whole parabola – it goes all the way around, see. And drops to inspection arms. But it's like you handled a small straw, you know? The thing goes through the air like a – like a ton of lead, you see, traveling at a high speed. And these things weigh about nine pounds. And I think you get a deck court-martial in the Marine Corps for dropping a rifle. And he saw this happen and so forth. I'd seen an old professional Marine do it and was finally gotten able to do this thing, you see? And he said, "That looks interesting." He said, "How did you do that?" And he picked up this rifle, fortunately it wasn't my rifle – and he threw it up toward his arm, you see, and he missed and the rifle went about twenty feet through the dust, plowing up a canal of dust. He turned around and walked off the company street, saying no more about it. Even letting somebody pick up that weapon. Of course he'd laid himself open to a summary – I mean, a deck court-martial.

No, a real pro – I'm not making any real point out of this – but in any particular field you'll find that the real pro, the guy that's been around for quite a while – take a professional truck driver. Let's get down into those levels, you know? The things those guys can do with trucks! The ways they can turn them around and that sort of thing. It's unbelievable. Nobody can do that. You can do the same thing with meters.

At first it just looks like it's very simple. And there's not much to a meter and there's nothing much that you could amplify with a meter. But you finally get up to a point where there's just tricks galore that you can pull with meters. And you can set meters up in various particular ways. You can make meters – well, if you're really used to needles you can tell whether or not the pc is telling you the truth or not without even asking for missed withhold. Have you missed a withhold on the pc? If you're really smooth as ice, why, you know you've missed a withhold on a pc. If your basic auditing is so good you know he didn't – you didn't cut his itsa. And you just look at your needle and you could go on talking to the pc along these lines. And you say, "Well, and so on, something you didn't mention to me in the mid ruds, so forth?"

"No, no, no..."

"You sure there isn't something you didn't tell me?"

"Oh, well, except last night I was drunk, and I..."

Brrrrr! You see. Pulled a withhold without withholds. You can watch the responses of the needle. You can see how – well, let's take can squeeze. If you're real sharp as an auditor, you don't have to run Havingness. You just ask the pc what has upset them. What's upset their havingness during the session. Pc tries to give you an introverted remark. Well, they thought something or other, they thought something or other. No, it'll be something with regard to the room. It won't be anything with the session. So you say, "Well, was the room too hot? Was the room too cold? I mean were you uncomfortable at any time? Was it noisy around..."

"Oh – it was awful noisy around here."

"Thank you very much. All right, squeeze the cans." Bang! His havingness is up to what it was at the beginning of the session, you see. They're just... [snaps fingers] And here is lots of commands of Havingness and getting the pc wrestling around down in the middle of the bank where you had just fished him out of. Do you see, it's clever. Ways to bring up a can squeeze. It comes under the borderline of meter handling.

You know that meter is responding to pulled-in mass, or the pc is more introverted than he was with regard to the room, not with regard to his case! And you can bring up his havingness accordingly.

You can inspect the meter during the last part of the session and know that his havingness is down. You can also – you can also look at the – at the way the tone arm is riding, to be very obvious about something. You can look at the way the tone arm is behaving in the session. And you know this tone arm up here – I'll give you the extreme view – it's up here at 5.25. It's been there for quite a while. Well, anybody would wake up to the fact that there was something wrong around here with that. Well, let's take it just a little bit more mildly than this. Let's take a higher-level process. The tone arm is at 3.5 and has not been riding at 3.5. And for the last couple of minutes has been riding up here at 3.5, which is brand-new. Then we see the tone arm starting to rise one way or the other. Conceive that the pc must be upset about something. Conceive that something must be wrong in what we are doing. Conceive that something is going awry. And simply keep an eye on it, expecting trouble. Doing no more than just expect trouble. And then of course be not startled at all when it suddenly breaks around our head, and say, "Well, I don't know..." You've already sorted it out: "Well, the pc probably listed down into something or other and, I don't know, we probably missed an item here, we – something's – something's going on here that – probably some implant RI or another that we haven't gotten ahold of. Hmm, or haven't fully discharged something, I don't know, I don't know – don't know."

You're going on auditing all this time, you see, and you're just waiting for the first – the first break-loose on the part of the pc. Well, all this is informed meter operation; you've already been told this pc's going to ARC break if you're not careful, because this meter is behaving differently than it was behaving before and it's starting to ride higher than it was riding

before and all is not well. All read off a meter. Well, it's not in the textbooks that you should use meters this way. Well, I gave you an idea of the pro, see?

Well, it's like the thumb trick. Is bang! It goes down, so forth. You bring it back to Set, stop it dead on at Set. See? Of course it goes bang! Down again. All right. Bring it right back to Set, see? Stop it motionless every time it comes and so it can – you'd be surprised, with a little practice, how you can manage this sort of thing.

Well, if you're that familiar with the meter, you should be that familiar with the communication cycle of the pc. What do you mean, having trouble with a communication cycle with the pc? Any more than, well, you have trouble with – you missed a read? That sounds awfully corny, this sounds something that might have happened in – oh, I don't know, I guess you could hear – somebody in Poughkeepsie at some time or another might miss a read. Or Los Angeles... They – something, you see? Something. But no Scientologist – certainly no Scientologist would miss a read. Or clean a clean. Now, if your worries about meters are at the level of missing reads or cleaning cleans, well, that's fine, that's down there at perhaps Level III, Level II. And I'm sure that one should worry about them at some time or another, at about the same time he worries about the on-off switch. But there is a – if you are – if you were to have no greater familiarity with the meter than you're still worried about things like that, man, you could never run Level VI for the life of you. Because you've got no attention for the meter! This meter is something – you don't sit there and worry about how you put a piece of beefsteak in your mouth! You've got no time at all to spend on this meter. And your technique is an all-devouring monster.

You know, I've had to develop shorthand methods of recording on Level VI, just to keep up with it. And even that the only thing that slows down Level VI now is the recording of Level VI. If I could figure some way to speed it up again, Level VI would speed up again. But it's practically at zenith. You can't – you can only write so fast. And you can only shorthand what you're doing so well. And never write an item twice, never do this, never do that, got those things all cut out. And keep the thing all straight on the sheet of paper and so forth. But that's what's slowing things down.

Now, it's – that's no time to be worrying about your basic auditing. About the handling of the pc for instance. Let's see, the pc has now answered the question. Let's see. Now, I think – I think I'm supposed to say something now. That is not the level in which you should be worrying about that. Now, let somebody at Level II worry about that, see? But not at Level VI. See, you just won't ever make it.

You've got to get it up to a point where the pc's itsa is just rolling along like a well-oiled perambulator, see? And you instinctively promote the pc's itsa. Well, you got a list here, and you see the pc's looking very introverted and so forth and you say, "Well, which one do you think it is?"

And the pc says, "Oh, *uhhhhh*. Cat whiskers! Cat whiskers!"

"All right, that reads. Is that your item?" Now, there's an opportunity to do that. But next time the pc is looking, you know ... That's not the opportunity to say, "Which one is it?" He's liable to say, "How the hell should I know? My God! This is too terrible!" You almost ARC broke him, you see, by overloading his reality. His reality, his reality you can... is pretty

poor at this particular line. He's just done a long list and he's very puzzled. "Which one do you think it is?" That would be about all you'd need to torch off the haystack, don't you see? But a lot of times you can do that.

But doing Level V or Level VI is not the time to be worried about how you handle basic auditing. Now, I admit that I've learned a great deal about basic auditing while doing these upper levels. I haven't had any opportunity to do it any other way. But I've been quite surprised that basic auditing is basic auditing regardless of what level it is practiced. Any level it is practiced, it's still basic auditing. And there's practically no zenith on how good your basic auditing can become and there's nothing unknown about any of its laws. These are the laws – simply are based on observation; and you say, "Do fish swim?"

And the pc says, "Hmm..." A long silent period. Well, that's no time to say, "Well, all right! All right! I'll check it on the meter!" See, no! Give the pc a chance to answer the auditing question, man! You busted up your comm cycle. Of course, you're going to bust up his itsa, you're going to dirty up your needle, you're going to distract his attention, you're going to shift him, startle him one way or the other, you're going to throw him out of session, turn him against the auditor, pull his attention out of his bank, put it on the auditor – can you think of any more?

See, I mean it's not just a crime. It's a hanging offense! So, no. The pc – you say, "Do fish swim?" you know, and the pc says, "I don't know. I – I don't know." Well, you know better than to say, "Yes, thank you, okay!" at that point because he's – says, "I don't know, *yah, oooooohhhh...*" You can hear the rest of the communication that is going to follow this, see. "*Oooooohhhh*, don't know. Well, I don't think they do."

"Thank you." See. Now, here would be another horrible error, you see: "Do fish swim?" Pc's silent.

"Well, I don't know. I don't think they do."

Auditor: "..."

Pc: *Hmm-hmm-hmm-hmm-hmm*. [hums a tune] [laughter]

This is too corny for words, don't you see?

Well, the funny part of it is you could probably make some mistakes with technique, you could probably make some mistakes in case analysis – not very many – and get somewhere with pcs. But I'll tell you where you can't make mistakes. And that's basic auditing. And it sounds like it is the area where you could afford to make the most mistakes. And that isn't true at all.

The advance of your pc is totally dependent upon your basic auditing. And it's no better than that and it's no worse than that.

So here's your three zones of auditing. They are – actually, if you do sloppy technique you'll pay the penalty. Your basic auditing will be stretched to a singing high whine. It'll sound like a banjo – banjo tuned up for the days of 49, you know? *Bzzzz!* Because your basic auditing will really be called on here. You didn't quite master how to handle getting down an implant GPM pattern and he gets halfway down and you've left half the items charged. Your

basic auditing is now going to be under strain. That I assure you. But it's your basic auditing that's going to be under strain. Let's say we analyze the case wrong. We decide that he really should have this particular next series of whatever it is run, don't you see? And we shouldn't finish off the engram – the whole track engram that we were doing because it's getting too hard and solid on the pc. So we make a mistake, you see, somehow or another. We cut off something he was deeply interested in doing. Your basic auditing is going to come under a fantastic strain. But the funny part of it is, nothing very serious is going to happen to the pc because of errors in technique. Nothing very serious. And errors in case analysis. Nothing serious is going to happen to the pc. This is mostly true below Level VI, because a pc is pretty much under stress at Level VI, and... Nevertheless, it even holds true at VI.

It's basic auditing that's going to pitch him on his head. If your basic auditing is bad, no matter what level you're on, that's going to catch it. If the technique is wrong the basic auditing catches it. Case analysis is wrong, it's going to be the basic auditing catches it. So let that be a good, strong wall on which to build your sessions and you will be all right. And if there's anything awry with basic auditing, then you're going to pay the full penalty. Slightest error in technique – *crash!* There goes your session. Slightest error in case analysis – *boom!* All in flames, right now, see? Do you get the difference of ratio here? You want to know why some pcs are feeling badly. Well, the auditor – the usual thing is, the auditor's basic auditing is out. It's missing somewhere. Of course there can be technique errors. Don't forget this. You can start down a GPM – an actual GPM, with the wrong technique and you'll have more pc into more ditch in a short time than you could possibly shake a stick at. And a case analysis – case analysis has to be pretty accurate. Nobody's running these things down.

But you can recover easily on those and they actually aren't terribly hard on the pc unless the basic auditing is out. The only place you get somatics turned on, for instance – and this is a new datum for you – the only way you turn on somatics in Level VI OT processes is by invalidation. You found an item, you said it was the item, then you said it wasn't the item. Result: somatics. You found an item that wasn't the item, you said it was the item and said another wasn't the item – you see you're invalidating items: somatics. And you can really wrap a guy around a telegraph pole with somatics. Somatics are very, very rough at Level VI in exact ratio to the amount of invalidation done. It's an exact ratio. Lot of invalidation, lot of somatics. Little invalidation, little somatics. It isn't that items turn on pain. You'll get your pain turned on in this wise: You find the goal "to spit"; you analyze it all out! Rocket read, everything said it was an actual GPM and then somehow or another because of the collusions of the confusions of the something or other and the next session and so forth and couldn't get it to read and so forth, so you abandon it. And decide to extend the goals list. And so forth. Don't be surprised in thirty-six hours if you got a good, sick pc on your hands. Invalidated the goal, don't you see? Well, you ca... it's also true that you can find things that aren't right. So, you pay your money and you takes your chance. And that's about the only thing you can do. Just do it as possibly – as well as you can, with as little invalidation as possible. That's a pretty hard one. So that makes the steps of case analysis mandatory in preparing these things. The considerations must be taken off. These things must be straightened up before you go on. Otherwise, your pc is going to be bogged down with somatics.

But even so, if your basic auditing is in, that is cut to minimum, too. Because the pc has an opportunity to talk to you about them. The pc has an opportunity to comment on it. The pc expressed his opinion concerning the thing and his itsa's being promoted up along the line, his opinion is apt to be more accurate so you make less mistakes. So even that buffers up against this potential somatic situation. You see how we're headed in this way?

Now, those are the relationships of the three parts of auditing. I haven't too much stressed technique, I haven't too much stressed case analysis, but both of them are built on the single point of basic auditing. And I'm just giving you a wide-open invitation to become an absolute, whiz-bang genius on the subject of basic auditing. Not talking when you should be silent, not being silent when you should be talking, riding it right straight up, driving the session all the way through in a very relaxed attitude which is going forward in an awful hurry.

And you'll find out that the heaviest dividend that you can get out of auditing, out of auditing training, is actually the perfection of your basic auditing. And you can move this – of course that includes metering. And you move this all up into a zone of perfection and so forth, you'll find you're so relaxed you've got an opportunity to learn a technique. You'll find you're so relaxed about this you can do an accurate case analysis. This gone, you can't even start on the others. That's how these things sit in their relationship.

I know I've been studying my own basic auditing for about three months. I was never any slouch at auditing. But when I think back over what I once called good basic auditing, I'm horrified. I'm actually horrified! Because the blunders are just wide-open. It looked very smooth to everybody else, it looked very smooth to me at the time. And I had to really work on it for quite a while to find out how bad it was. Maybe some of us are in that particular condition. I don't mean to say so, I'm just saying that I had been in that condition. And I'd be very happy with you if you'd – if you'd sweat this one out and make it look real grooved in and alert and carry it on down the line. And I can guarantee your tone arm motion will triple with some concentration spent on this particular subject. Okay?

Thank you very much!

SCIENTOLOGY ZERO

A lecture given on 10 December 1963

I'm glad to see you, too.

Well, it works out this way: Having completed the entire span of Scientology research at all of the upper levels and rounded it all out, I never thought I'd be called upon to suddenly undercut the lot, find a brand-new series of processes, and a processing theory and philosophy on which to build the edifice. You don't think that's quite a trick?

Of course, actually knowing the upper strata, it might be seen to be very simple to build the lower strata. Well actually, it's quite the contrary. You see with such enormous clarity exactly what has been going wrong and exactly what you've been doing that you wonder how anybody could miss it. You see? And you say, " Well, it's a very simple matter, you know. You got into a knuckleheaded frame of mind and started postulating purposes, you see. And then these accumulate mass, and the basis of the solution of your difficulties in the physical environment and for the last trillions multiple, some vast figure, you see – you been lousing yourself up. That s what it is. You get it now, huh?" [laughs]

And you wonder, "Why don't you understand this, you knucklehead? It's awful clear to me! It's very clear to me. I postulate these things and get all messed up, and so on, and so on, and then all this energy mass is still around and its automatic solutions to everything, and it knocks hell out of me, see? I can't do anything and I have to wear a body and all kinds of wild things occur. Don't you get it?"

I'm afraid you'd find people would look at you blankly. They would look at you blankly. They are worried just today about the fact that the stock exchange trembled, and that "Tel & Tel" rose while gold shares sunk. And this shows that there is some interesting implication concerning racialism in Lower Slobovia. And that's what's really wrong with them, they know. It's the fact that they might go broke if they didn't go broke or something, you see. If they didn't have enough money in order to buy a *wah*, and then the *waf-wah*, and then the boss is a *waf-wah*, and then so *fo-wah-wa*. They know what's wrong with them; and their wife was cross at them at breakfast. They know what's wrong with them.

And you say, "Well, actually, you just think that that's what's wrong with you, because in actual fact what you've been doing is carving yourself down. See, a lot of trillions of years ago you had these goals and postulates and so on, and you run around and make these GPMs and so on. And they react against you, and so on, and you're not very able. And your environment and so on... Don't you get it?" Well, of course, our communication line is absolutely stopped at that point. You can know so clearly exactly what is wrong with the being, you can know so brilliantly, with such insight, exactly what's wrong with you, and see it unraveling at

great speed and with considerable accuracy; and so seeing it, you wonder how anybody else could fail to see it.

Well, the funny part of it is that if you try to... You got a fellow there, and he's facing this boa constrictor. And this boa constrictor is about to constrict. And you say to this fellow, "We're going to run a little process on you. In your childhood..." I'm afraid you're not going to get much attention from this fellow, see? He sits there looking fixedly at this snake, you know, ho-ho. He knows what's wrong with him: he's about to be constricted.

Well, some religious activities have had solutions to this. They say it's very simple. All you do is say, "There is no substance to reality." And you see – you look at the boa constrictor and you think good thoughts. And you think, "There ain't no boa constrictor," you see. And if you think these thoughts strongly enough while you're being constricted, you won't mind it. They've had methods of coping with this in the past. So we're not completely original, here.

But to jack up Scientology one level and run a whole new philosophy underneath of Scientology, which is immediately graspable, understandable and quickly agreed with, which can be discussed in the highest intellectual planes, over the very, very best breakfast tables, and in the lowest hovels, all with complete and utter reality the whole way, and to provide in that sphere a therapy, based on no different an understanding than this, and a reason why... And the last few weeks I've been walking around in a small circle trying to do just that and finally succeeded. And finally got a Scientology Zero that undercuts Scientology One, and which everybody would, I'm sure, agree with.

Scientology Zero, as you knew before, was descriptions of the environment and what was wrong with it, and so forth. This takes care of the world in which the person lives. Has nothing to do with his mind at all. Scientology One is the isness of things and takes care of his mind as well, but Scientology Zero simply takes care of the environment in which the person lives.

Now, the whole subject is instantly summable in – of its own heading, which is "the dangerous environment." That's all. You just say, "the dangerous environment," you see. And that sums up what you're talking about, and the frame of mind of the individual who is listening to you. You have immediate agreement that the environment is dangerous.

Now, the funny part of it is, a great many people who are professional dangerous-environment makers – these include the politician, the policeman, the newspaperman, all of these blokes are specialists – the undertaker. These birds are specialists in the dangerous environment. That's their mainstay. They sell a dangerous environment. If they didn't sell a dangerous environment they feel they would promptly go broke, and so on. So it is to their interest to make the environment far more dangerous than it is. The environment is dangerous enough. But they make it far more dangerous than it is.

They sell a dangerous environment – 100 percent. And like judo, the avidity with which these people sell a dangerous environment can be used by the Scientologist. The whole activity of judo is using the strength of the opponent to overcome the opponent. He aims a whale of a blow at your head and the strength which he used to propel that blow takes him over your shoulder and onto the floor.

So understanding Scientology Zero would include an understanding that the very person who is the worst enemy of Scientology – the chaos merchant, the slave master, the fellow who's trying to hold everybody down, the fellow who's trying to keep everybody shook up one way or the other and so he can't ever get up again, and so forth, the fellow who makes his money and his daily bread out of how terrible everything is – that fellow, of course, would forward Scientology Zero for you with great speed. It's an interesting comment to make and it's worth thinking about in passing.

Now, let us take – let's go in now to modern – ha-ha! – philosophy of the Toynbee school. Fellow by the name of Toynbee – he spent a lot of time in a library, back end of the library, you see, and he knew life finally. He finally knew life; he'd read enough library books written by other fellows who had spent most of their time in libraries. And he came to a great understanding of life.

His actual information on the subject of Mexico, of course, is the tourist poster and the picture of the Mexican sitting against the wall with his sombrero over his eyes and his serape around his shoulders, sitting in the sun. There he is. So he says, with great conclusive exclamation points followed by innumerable degrees, "The reason the Mexican does not succeed is he has insufficient challenge in his environment – not enough challenge in his environment. Therefore, he doesn't amount to anything. The reason the South American, see, isn't an up-and-coming breeder of countries and so forth, is its people have an insufficient challenge in the environment. The reason the African black has never made any progress in civilization is because his environment has insufficient challenge." Then he closes his library books, having written these asinities, and goes back to sleep. He'd never talked to any Mexicans.

Out in the Philippines, why, a brassy, energetic white man jumps up and he says to the Igorots, "Now, if you will just cut a pathway from the village down to the river and take a bullock cart in the morning and go down to the river and fill up a water tank and bring it up here, why, your women will not have to be making that walk to the river. And you should engage in this public works project at once." And he's absolutely outraged because these people do not engage in it at once. And he goes away, and he says, "Ha-ha! Those people have insufficient challenge in their environment. Nothing for them to measure up to. No ambition. Not like us in the West. We've got challenge in our environment."

This guy had challenge in his environment, huh? His mama opened up his mouth and spooned Wheaties into it [laughter] and papa wrote all the checks as he went through college. And the way was paved in all directions with machinery and vehicles and the environment had been licked. So of course, he can stand up there and be brassy.

What's the real environment of this Igorot sitting there around the fire listening to this fellow telling him how he has to cut this path down to the river? What's the real environment? He's got a little boy and he thinks this little boy is a very nice little boy. And he knows this little boy hasn't got a chance in hades of living until he's seven. He knows that – disease, bad food and so forth. So he just sort of quits along that line; gives it a lick and a promise. He knows that when the rains come they won't just be rains; they'll just flood every seed out of the ground and pound the fields to pieces and if he can salvage anything out of that, why, maybe – maybe – why, he might live a few months. And he knows very well that all he's got

to do is walk under the wrong tree and get hit by a snake and that'll be that. In other words, he already knows he can't live. That's what he knows: He can't live. So why try?

In other words, the challenge of the environment is absolutely overwhelming to this fellow. I've studied twenty-one primitive races, including the white race. I know these boys pretty well. I've eaten lizard's tails around the campfires with them. And it's absolutely staggering – staggering – the threat of the environment of such peoples.

Mexico – the political situation, the crop failures, the avarice of taxation, religious taxation, two or three different kinds of courts that you could be hauled up to, everything going to hell in a balloon. And if you haven't got that, you've got bandits, dysentery, so forth. Strictly a case of "why try?" So why not put your back up against a wall and pull your sombrero over your eyes and just go to sleep? It's just too much.

And that's your black in Africa – same story. Too much challenge in the environment. The environment is too dangerous. And that environment is too dangerous for a fellow to have ambition.

Now, they like to tell a favorite type of thing – that you must have challenge in your environment. They like to tell a story about, well, how about this young painter and here he is out there in Terre Haute, Indiana, and there's no challenge in his environment at all; he doesn't have any friends. And he eventually, of course, moves to the big city. They make a big deal out of this thing, you see. The environment, you see, offers no challenge or something of this sort, you know. Heck! The reason he became a painter in the first place is he didn't want to work down there at the feed store with Butch Gregerty, throwing bales of hay around. This guy beat him up during kindergarten, beat him up during grammar school and beat him up during high school; now he's supposed to work for him in the feed store. That's a little bit too much challenge.

Nobody around there buying any paintings, too. And he's prompted by the fact that nobody says "sir"; the environment is hostile to that degree. Nobody believes in what he's doing; it's hostile to that degree. He doesn't have any future, as far as he's concerned, in any line that he can do. In other words, he faces continual starvation. He faces social ostracism. He's unable to communicate or contribute to his community, and so forth. That's a very hostile environment. So he goes to a friendlier one: Greenwich Village. See?

He'd rather – he'd rather starve to death quietly down in Greenwich Village, don't you see, than be threatened to death out in Terre Haute, Indiana – challenge of the environment. And we come to the conclusion that the individual – whether he be white, black, red or yellow – if he is a man and if he is on this planet and if he has not been able to achieve his own destiny; we must conclude that he is in an environment he finds overwhelming, and that his methods of taking care of that environment are inadequate to his survival, and that his existence is as apathetic or as unhappy as his environment seems to him to be overwhelming.

Now, if we get those principles down we have Scientology Zero. Of course, the chaos merchant, who wants an environment to look very, very disturbing... Somebody says there's such a thing as a good news story. Have you read a paper lately? There's no good news stories. "Train wrecked, child raped, murder" – what's good about these stories? There is no such thing as good press. These are fellows who are shoving the environment in your face and say-

ing, "Look – dangerous. Look – overwhelming. Look – threatening. Look. Look." Well, they not only report the most threatening bits of news that they could possibly – couldn't have any possible effect upon their readers' lives, but also sensationalize it, and make it worse than it is. What more do you want, as a proof of their intention? Well, of course, this is the chaos merchant. He's paid to the degree that he can make the environment threatening.

Now, it isn't just and only the politician, the soldier, the militarist, the fellow making the big rockets and the newspaper reporter and so forth, that's making the environment threatening. There's a lot of people spend their whole lives as professional chaos merchants – just worry everybody around them to death. In fact, the percentage is pretty good. The percentage is probably one out of four. Pretty good. "If I can just keep Henry worried enough, why, he does what I tell him" – this sort of philosophy. Just spread the confusion, spread the upset, you see. And along with this goes, "I wonder why Henry doesn't get ahead?" Of course, they're making Henry sick.

So the chaos merchant has lots of troops – a lot of people with vested interests. What's a blackmailer but somebody who's trying to extort money by telling somebody that he can make the environment far more dangerous. "If I just tell people that you and Mamie Glutz were seen in the tourist cabin... A few quick pounds will keep this environment a little less dangerous, see? Because I won't tell." You get the whole theory of the thing? Well, it isn't as crude, you see, as extortion. The newspaper prints "Thousands dead in...", and the thing lies there on the newsstands, and people think, " God! Thousands dead in ...!" You see, they're hit with the news, they can't let go of it, and actually they respond to an extortion – they throw pennies down. And you turn the inside page to see the rest of the headline and it says, "... history." "Thousands dead in history. Past strewn with death." "Have you been plagued lately? The great plague took twelve million citizens in the year 1204." "Will you be a cancer victim? Support your local doctor."

The medico, you know, he doesn't get paid for the number of people he makes well, he gets paid for the number of people in the society who are sick. Don't think it's any accident that the cops will take a dangerous criminal, throw him into prison, make him more antisocial and more dangerous and then release him upon the society. Don't think this prison system which is being used is an accident. It's a marvelous method of getting police appropriations. If you didn't have that much crime, why, nobody would permit police salaries and equipment to be extorted out of them. Of course, the police chief, he's as important as he has policemen under him. He's got fifty policemen or he's got a thousand policemen. He's important and draws pay in ratio to the number of policemen. Well, the number of policemen give you the number of – amount of crime there must be in the society. If there's no crime in the society, naturally you don't have very many policemen. If there's lots of crime in a society, naturally you have lots of policemen. See? So, the more crime, why, the more cops. And the more sickness, the more doctors, see?

Newspaper reporters, for instance, sit around and think solely on this basis: "If I could just run into a big story..." I can see this fellow sitting there now. There's a schoolhouse, you know; a big beautiful school has just been finished, you see. School children are playing out in the yard, playing happily ring-around-the-rosy. And this newspaper reporter is sitting there looking at the schoolyard, "Supposing that should all catch on fire, just as they all go inside?

What a story!" You know, "What a story. I've – sitting right here with my cameraman, why, I'd become famous overnight," you see. "Time magazine, Life magazine – probably give me coverage all over the place, you know? Charred bodies of little children," you know? Well, that's what he eats. That's what he eats. That makes his life forward.

And of course, that's an exaggerated case, but this does run and is to be found in the society to a very, very marked degree. It isn't just the newspaper reporter, the politician; it's also the individual who – here and there that you see – that engages upon this sort of thing.

So the environment is not as dangerous, ever, as it is made to appear. Here you have tremendous numbers of people – vast amounts of money. In fact, I think three quarters of the national income of the United States right now is dedicated to atomic war. Well, that's interesting. There hasn't been one. If they hadn't developed it, there wouldn't be one. Elementary. So the money that financed the horror is now busy supporting the horror, don't you see? And you know, I don't think there have been two cents spent on the actual reduction of the threat of atomic war. They talk about shelters – people could crawl into shelters and that sort of thing.

The truth of the matter is that if you had a few billions to throw around you could probably dream up a defense for atom bombs that would detonate them in the air. You could probably render them null and void without too much trouble – if anybody – if any politician was ever interested in peace. They aren't. They get all their appropriations and public interest and so forth from the amount of disturbance.

Why, he could probably dream up some solution of some kind or another that would handle this international tension situation. And certainly if they spent as much money on it as they did on rockets, they could certainly come up to some kind of a solution. Oh, I don't know, in Scientology we could undoubtedly solve the thing without too much trouble. And talk about money and expense and so forth, it wouldn't take anywhere near the money and expense. But look at the money we would do people out of. Boy, look at the incomes we would cut! Oh, man!

So, anything moving forward that tends to pacify or bring a calmed environment is met and makes a ridge with – is met by and makes a ridge with the backflow of vested interest in making a disturbed environment. So you get this ridge.

Now, if Scientology moved on forward, the environment would become calmer and calmer. Not less adventurous, but calmer and calmer. In other words, its potential, hostile, unreachable, untouchable threat, and that sort of thing – the amount of threat contained in it – would reduce. That's for certain. Because, you see, somebody who knows a few more things about life and knows something about himself and knows something about others and gets a grip on the situation – why, he actually has less trouble – less trouble in his environment. Even though it's only reduced slightly, it is reduced, don't you see?

So, that's a reduction. We'd say, well, somebody hasn't heard of hardly any Scientology, and yet he's – one of the things you can say about him: "Well, he has less turmoil in his environment." Now, that of course is a movement in the right direction. And that would bring about all sorts of things. That would bring about the individual resurgence. So that an individual, less threatened just from the standpoint of the environment, tends to resurge. He gets

less apathetic. He thinks he can maybe do more about life, you see. He can reach a little further; therefore he can exert a calming influence upon his immediate environment, and so on.

Now, as that progressed forward, why, you would produce individuals, more and more and more, who could bring more and more and more calm to the environment or handle things better and better, you see. And it's only things which aren't handled which are chaotic. So we'd get a situation where the threat of the environment would be dying out. This overwhelming, overpowering environment would be tamer and tamer as far as this is concerned; people would be less and less afraid. You'd have more and more opportunity of handling the actual problems that exist instead of people dreaming up problems in order to make a couple of quick bucks or pounds off of them, you see? Be a different – different looking picture.

So in actual fact, the chaos merchant does not like calming influences. He tends to fight these things. This wife – she's made her coffee and cakes for a long time scaring her husband to death, and she keeps him good and scared to death. Scares him at breakfast table, scares him at dinner, and so forth and so on. If nothing else works she brings in the pile of bills after supper, don't you see. Stress. She keeps putting stress on it, and somehow or another consoling him during this thing about – you know, consoles him, about this, even though he is completely overwhelmed, there's nothing they can do about it, and so on. Got him completely under her thumb, see?

All right. This bird walks down to a PE Course. He hears about communication – talk to somebody or something like this. He starts talking to his wife, just as an experiment – saying hello to her or something like this, see. He looks a little calmer. This is not to be borne. And incidentally, at that time, you can expect a considerable explosion. She's going to go on a tirade about the subject that he *must* not have anything more to do with Scientology. And every once in a while you'll run into this in PE Courses and that sort of thing; you'll run into this in practices, and so on. Bill or Pete or Oscar or something – he mustn't have anything more to do with Scientology.

Well, what have you run into at that point? You've run into a chaos merchant, see? And they're buying and selling this commodity called "disturbance," and he's less disturbed. And so therefore, he obviously then is less under control and can be extorted from less, and so therefore, he is being lost as an edible breakfast. You're taking the food off the plate of the chaos merchant, see? Well, you'll see that ridge develop just on an individual basis, and you'll certainly see it develop on a third dynamic basis.

The newspaper – oh, my gosh! Let's take the story of Scientology. The simple story of Scientology is quite remarkable in its simplicity. And in all the fog of press, one loses sight of it. And I thought of this the other day when I was walking through a door into the lounge, and so forth. Almost knocked myself out. I suddenly thought of this and I began to laugh and I couldn't stop laughing. Because I'd been "pressed" to death here in the last few weeks, you see.

I've had more silly questions asked me by silly reporters than you could count... They're marvelous. They're marvelous. And I've developed a new technology for handling that's very disconcerting: I laugh at them. *New York Times* on the phone the other day – I went into howls of laughter at the fellow – a couple of the questions he was asking, and so on.

Standard patterned questions, always been asked before, you know. Goof questions, and so on. You'd be surprised. This guy almost went into tears. He almost went into grief. He wasn't bothering me. He wasn't upsetting me. He wasn't annoying me, don't you see? And, of course, even though he's only trying to annoy the public and disturb the public, when he's interviewing somebody, you ought to be worried. And if you're not suitably worried as his public should be suitably worried – taking this thing seriously and taking the potential threat that he has there seriously – of course, you've taken away from him practically everything he's got to offer. He can't hit you with anything, don't you see?

This particular bloke wound up very, very friendly, and made sure that he... do come by and see him, up in London, and so forth, if I got to town. Very happy to buy me a dinner and a drink. He was very, very cheerful about the whole thing. He wasn't trying to get more information. By this time, he was overwhelmed. He was – he was propitiative. It was him that was going to give up the dinner and the drink, see. Up to that time it was me that was going to give up the news. Only his impingement didn't work, mine did. I didn't take him seriously.

I've noticed lately that's very disconcerting. Or direct them to a sure, open-and-shut source. Just don't answer the question, just direct them to a source, and the source... Smile at them and go, "Oh, you're asking that," you know. "Well, see so-and-so and so-and-so and so-and-so. Let's talk about something that's more important."

But let's look at the true story of Scientology. Let's put it into its most banal form, but nevertheless, a very true form. A Doctor of Philosophy develops a philosophy. Step one: Doctor of Philosophy develops a philosophy. Step two: People find it interesting. Step three: People find it works. Step four: People pass it along to others. And step five: It grows. That's the story of Scientology. If you think it over for a moment, that is the story of Scientology. It really has no further ramifications than that. It's just blunt, straightforward. That's exactly what happens, you see. Doctor of Philosophy develops a philosophy, people find it interesting, people find it works, people pass it along to others, and it grows.

Next time you read the news story, think of this story. I went into stitches over this, when I thought, "Look at the story that they're trying to make a story out of. There's no story there!" – except it's just an interesting story, the way you'd sometimes read in the old Spanish newspapers: "The roses of Valencia are beautiful at this season of the year." A modern story has got to have disturbance and chaos in it. It's got to have conflict, it's got to have upset, it's got to be chewing everybody up. Must be conflict. How do you get conflict into this story.?

Well, this is – obviously they're dealing with something potent because it is growing, because it is spreading, because people are doing things with it, because it – organizations are appearing with regard to it. Obviously there's something going on here! But still, what is going on – that a Doctor of Philosophy developed a philosophy and people found it interesting and people found that it worked and people passed it along to others and it grew.

Now, you begin to look over this situation, you actually can't make any more story out of it than that. You can tell some bits here that amplify the thing; you can get some statistics. Well, all right, "Doctor of Philosophy develops a philosophy, Doctor of Philos... All right. Well, it's – is he? and so on. Do you know anything about it?"

"Oh, yes. He's better – better educated in terms of semester hours, and so forth, than practically anybody that's teaching in philosophy in universities today, and didn't spend all his time in the back room of a library, but went out and studied various races of man and saw how their ethnical patterns fit together and saw how man was getting along, and found there was a common denominator to existence; and applying this to known philosophy and developing new materials on the thing, developed a philosophy." And it's all very adventurous. There's a lot of amusing anecdotes that go with it. But that's all the story you can make out of it.

Well, this reporter, he – he's got to – *ho-ho!* He – he's got to have some disturbance here. He's got to get this thing-*ho-ho*. How do you make a conflict out of it? How do you get the *wuhh* and the *rrr*, and how do these things go together with a *shwirr*. Well, we take point number one. He's got to say, "Well, this fellow actually isn't educated. He doesn't have any degrees. He's never been anyplace," and so on. He actually never gets as far as saying it isn't a philosophy because that's a bit above his educational level, see? But he can try to find something wrong with the fellow who is doing this thing. He can never really find anything wrong, but he tries hard, you see. And he punches in all directions and he comes up with some interesting adjectives and so on, but he really can't make the grade on the thing because his facts aren't supported.

Now, as a matter of fact, "people finding it interesting" – he tries to say that people are hypnotized or they become unwilling victims, or they're dragged off into lairs, you see or... He's got to do something here to make this disturbing and sensational, don't you see? Well, that's – of course, can't quite make the grade there, but he tries. He tries, you see. He leaves "it works" strictly alone. He drops that like the cat dropped the hot chestnut. Because he knows it works. There's not really any doubt in these people's minds about any of these points, you see, they're just desperately trying to make a story out of this thing.

As far as people passing it along to others is concerned, why, the medico, he thinks, "Gee, you know, if they passed this stuff along here to others, why, this would be pretty grim because people would become happy and then what would happen to my income, you see? And that must be stopped. So everybody's got to be hammered and pounded, and so forth." Actually the biggest job of work which we do is trying to smooth it out so actually there are no economic hardships or otherwise. I'm working hard on that these days where abuses might exist. But they immediately have to dream up a word like "cult." See? That bars everybody out because it makes it look like a closed group, see? A cult. The "cult of Earth" – that makes just as much sense, see. He's an earthman, so therefore he belongs to the "Earth cult," see? I mean, it makes just as much sense, you see?

But he works and sweats over this thing and he really can't get anyplace with this thing, you know. I noticed them sweating over this in the Washington raid stories, and so on. They found the box – "A message put into this box goes right to Ron," you know – they found this box, and my God, they took more portraits of that thing, I think. I don't know what they did. Seemed very, very terrible and unusual to them that a communication line did exist there. And it was very upsetting to them. How they worked at it, see! Well, yet they couldn't do anything much about it. And it grows, and that's what alarms them.

Saturday Evening Post's whole theme is how startled they were to find out that it had grown. They thought it had all died away and they were all being very complacent about it and it's... The writer told me this, you see. And everybody was quite relaxed about the whole thing and then all of a sudden they found out that it had grown to enormous proportions and had kept on growing all through those years. And it hadn't disappeared and it hadn't been just a twenty-four hour fad, and this was terrible, and so forth. And he became quite frothy about it. He tries to find things.

Now, as far as Scientology developing, here or there, some ridges and some upsets and so forth: look at the planet it's being released into. You mean to say we're responsible for the conduct of the planet? Well, we're not yet entirely responsible, but we'll make it. See, you start releasing things to people and races and that sort of thing, and here and there – there's going to be a little switch around and an upset or something like that, but believe me, we have less of them than anybody else ever had. And we straighten them out. Eventually we take care of these things. Well, that's quite remarkable. So there really isn't any real trouble for them to look at.

To make a story out of this you'd have to sock at each one of these points one way or the other, you see. And yet because there is no story there, of course, they can't write the story because it doesn't fit into the modern press specifications. There must be disturbance, there must be upset, people must be worried, and people must have, by reason of this story, a more disturbed environment than they had before. Nevertheless, all things to the contrary, the true story of Scientology is simply: A Doctor of Philosophy developed a philosophy, people found it interesting, people found it worked, people passed it along to others, and it grew.

Well, you could dream it up, you could even make a story out of it if it was a sane press, see. You could say, "Look. Nobody ever found these answers before. There has never been one on this planet." You could say a lot of things of this particular character, all of them equally true and very startling and well worth announcement, but there's no conflict in it. So therefore, the story of Scientology goes true as an arrow and nobody really can do very much about it or do very much to it, because they can't rough up its edges. If you ever want to be completely crashed, get in the road of truth.

Now, all disturbance and chaos folds up in the teeth of truth. The Duke of Alba is dashing about, losing battles left and right, and talking about how horrible the enemy is; and the – his troops and his government are getting very, very upset; he's a – and his king is getting more and more discouraged and so forth. And then one day the fatal shaft of truth cuts through this whole chaos. He's been in the enemy pay all the time. Immediately everything sets back to rights again and the troop morale comes back and they go and they defeat the enemy and the king... It works out at the end. Well, that's a dramatic incident with regard to truth. But all truth, whether dramatic or simple, has the same effect. Don't ever try to stop truth. That's the only thing that can go through sixteen-inch armor plate.

This fellow is screaming and howling and raving around and he's cutting you up one side and down the other, and if you know the mind you say, "The reason you're mad at me is because you had a withhold from me concerning my paycheck two months ago." Watch him

fold up if that's the truth. Don't watch him fold up if it isn't, because he won't if it's not the truth.

Fellow named Jones lives over here on the edge of Saint Hill. He has been snapping and snarling and screaming and howling about what horrible things we're liable to do to him at any minute. And I wrote him a letter not too long ago and I said, "If you'll just carefully review the things which you have done to us that you think we don't know about, you'll feel much happier about us." [laughter] I haven't had a word since. It's just been a tomb-like silence. Interesting. It's interesting. The clean blade of truth, and – it can't be stopped.

Now, in a universe which is kept going and made very disturbed continuously by lies, all the basic and fundamental facts of the universe had been completely covered up and particularly those related to life and death; these things were completely masked. And nothing but disturbance and chaos had been dug up around them for so long that that data was gone. It wasn't just hard to find; it was just gone. In fact, many data – many contrary data existed. It was pretty hard to sift this stuff out and get a toehold on to this sort of thing. What is the truth about man? What is he? What kind of a being is he? Who is he? What's he doing? What's he here for? What am I here for? What am I doing? What am I trying to do? What am I trying to get done? How long have I lived? What'll happen to me when I die? What kind of a being am I, anyhow? These are the basic and fundamental questions. Those questions and answers thereto – on the time-honored basis – belonged in the realm of philosophy. The answers to those things always have.

Well, philosophy had come to such a decadence that I think in the West it mainly was somebody sitting around a cracker barrel uttering witticisms. And I think the last time anybody really came up with any really civilized philosophy of any kind or another, they gave him a nice slug of hemlock. It's not been a very popular subject, but it was only unpopular to this degree: that it disturbed the merchants of chaos. And these fellows that had trouble with this were only luckless to this degree: that they didn't reach the truth. They had limited truth. And the road to truth is something that you must follow all the way down. There is not such a thing as a limited truth. You've got to go all the way when you start talking about the truth of life. You mustn't hold up and not find out what it is.

But people set you the consistent and continual example when they say, "Look, philosophy is very dangerous stuff." Well, yes, it is very dangerous stuff to a fellow who's supporting himself by lies. Who's it dangerous to? It's only dangerous to people who are dangerous. It's only dangerous to people who are dangerous to others.

Well, this gives us a very interesting view, when we start looking over the situation, not that the story of Scientology isn't a rather remarkable one. It's actually unparalleled. But it's very simple. It's extremely simple. And the goals and targets of philosophy are inevitable, whether I said they were this or said they weren't. By the mere fact of people looking at this truth, finding these things were true, applying these things and achieving a higher state of existence, you would inevitably get – whether anybody said you would or not – a calmer life, a calmer environment, a calmer civilization. And there would be less disturbance and there would be less pay for disturbance to be bilked out of that civilization. People would go uptone just on that basis alone. Therefore, the first target – the first target when one starts to intro-

duce Scientology to anybody would of course be that person's own environment. His own environment. Not his mind, but his environment.

And here is a whole worked-out philosophy, now, on the subject of the environment, under the heading of, "the dangerous environment." Now, if you scatter your own wits around in this thing, you could at once extrapolate – knowing, as you know, upper levels – you could at once extrapolate the ramifications of, well, diagnosis and treatment. You could dream up processes. On just this basis: This individual believes that the environment is more dangerous than he is – than it is. He certainly believes – this individual certainly believes – that the environment is too dangerous for him. That, we're completely convinced of. See, it's too dangerous for him. There are zones and areas in that environment which he believes are completely overwhelming and that he will not be able to personally cope with.

This we can say with absolute certainty, whether or not we're talking to Joe, Bill or Pete, or even a politician or a newspaper reporter or a cop. This individual – this individual would be able to agree with you on that basis, unless, of course, he were completely insane. He'd be walking around in a toga saying, "I am Emperor of Earth," you see, "and all Earth is subject to my orders," you see. And he'd be in a booby hatch someplace, see? He'd be crazy. He has, of course, got the final solution. You just make up your mind you're dangerous enough and you won't worry anymore.

But falling short of that, any relatively sane person that you can talk to will agree with you that the environment, and certain spheres of the environment, are a bit too much for them.

I'm not, by the way, reviling the merchant of chaos. He's completely crazy in that he thinks the environment has to be made chaotic. I don't know why he thinks it needs his assistance! But this fellow has his points and he thinks the environment's too much for him, and he certainly knows he's making the environment too much for others. He certainly knows this.

So in talking to an individual, we know that the environment is being made more dangerous for him or her than it is. Lord knows, it's dangerous enough. And Lord knows, there are real areas of danger in this environment. But also, we know that there are areas of that environment being made more dangerous than they are. See, we know that point. And that is one of the key points of Scientology Zero.

See, one point is that the – that the environment seems dangerous to the individual – you'll get an agreement on this – and that he is undertaking certain methods to hold the environment down and keep it from biting him. We certainly know that. And we also know, due to the presence of people who have a vested interest in this, that the environment is being made more dangerous in certain areas than it actually is. We know those things exist.

So therefore, we can then say that the individual could be marched forward into some sectors or quarters of this environment with his own inspection, in some way, and perceive that the environment was being made more dangerous than it was. Now, we can also see that, and another operating principle of Scientology Zero is that the individual's health level, sanity level, activity level and ambition level are monitored by his concept of the dangerousness of the environment. These various levels are monitored by *his* concept of the dangerousness of the environment.

Now, what have we got here? We have factors out of which we could work – well, we have factors out of which we could draw up an improvement program for any human being rather quickly. We could draw up an improvement program for any given human being. One, he considers his health and well-being and that sort of thing, to an enormously greater degree... This is the discovery. The rest of this is just built up on this one discovery. The discovery is that his health and well-being, his sanity, his ambition are monitored by how dangerous and overwhelming he believes his environment is; that he's actually not operating to the challenge of the environment; he is withdrawing from the threat of the environment to this degree. Now, knowing that, we could therefore improve these things in the individual without regard to his mind.

Ah, you see, now, we're dealing with a very interesting sphere here, aren't we? We've mentioned this before under "destimulation." This previously has occupied just one little level in the auditor handling the pc. He finds out where the pc's living is too restimulative for him; tells him he won't process him again till he moves; tells him he mustn't go home during the whole period of this next intensive but must stay downtown in a hotel where he's less restimulated.

We've seen this around, don't you see. But now, let's make – let's make a whole – a whole banquet out of this tidbit, see? Now, we're not explaining to this fellow anything about his mind; we're explaining to him about his environment. We know we're going to get – it does – it's a minor amount, but it'll nevertheless be a demonstrable amount – we're going to get a resurgence and a betterment in the area of his health. We're going to get a betterment in his physical and mental alertness. And we're going to get a betterment here on his ambition, his amount of activity and that sort of thing. And if we're working in this particular field – with Scientology Zero – then we're actually not going to work with his mind. Do you see that? We're not going to work with his mind, we're going to take this as another entirely different sphere and activity.

Well, naturally thee and me know that the reason he flinches every time he enters a red room, and so forth, has to do with a whole bunch of facsimiles he's developed on the subject of red rooms which are being firmly held in place by a bunch of RIs that have to do with this and that and the other thing. We know this mental combination and in the absence of that – in that mental combination isn't eventually subtracted or knocked out and so on, we know that his gain is limited.

But now let's talk within the real reality of the individual we're talking to. Now, what is his expectancy? What is his expectancy at this level? It may be this low: that he just won't be so frightened when the doorbell rings. You get a – we're talking now about a very tiny improvement. But nevertheless, this improvement would be quite real to him – be enormously real. And in the story of Scientology, what we're butting up against here now is this one particular level, three – people find it works. If people don't find it works, that is the end of Scientology's progress in that particular direction.

Well, this is an area of high-level workability. You see, all the fellow has to do is study his environment a little bit. He doesn't even have to study his mind. Well, this is a very, very good thing. This is a very easy one. So we're just going to get it that when he wakes up

in the morning he doesn't have an agonizing feeling like something horrible is going to happen if he gets up. You see? This is going to, not disappear, perhaps, but diminish – that he will be a little more active in life.

Now, the funny part of it is – I just tell you – you can settle for those gains. But the gains you will actually get will, in most cases, if you're settling for those, greatly exceed your expectations and greatly exceed his expectations. These gains are adequate here to startle a guy's ears into a thrumming quiver.

All right, how do we go about this? How would we use this material, using these various principles? Well, remember now, that most – the threat he is worried about is probably imaginary. See? It's really not anything to be worried about. Let's embark upon a simple therapy. This is a therapy at Scientology Zero. Don't read the newspapers for two weeks and see if you don't feel better. Of course, he doesn't read the newspapers for two weeks, of course, he'll feel better. He'll say, fine. Now read it for a week, and you'll feel – find you'll feel – at the end of that week, why, you'll find you feel worse. And after that time make up your mind whether or not you ought to pay any attention to the newspapers.

You could just lay this out as a simple experiment, you see? Well, he can easily do that because it's a negative action. It's not expensive, as a matter of fact it's slightly, microscopically, cheaper not to buy newspapers, you see, than to buy them. So it isn't a costly experiment at all. That's in the direction of destimulation, don't you see?

Now, that's all very well from his personal viewpoint. You could actually tell him... And here, by the way, you have the little junior cousin or the little gene that grows into all of the Havingness Processes later when properly placed in this position, see. Just tell him to look around the environment and find something that isn't a threat to him. If he ever gets too upset or confused, why, just start looking around his environment and find something that isn't being a threat to him. That's a magic process, by the way, and that is very smoothly worded. That is far, far more sophisticated in upper-level Scientology than it looks.

You could actually find what sort of a threat he was experiencing at Level Two, and run that as a Havingness Process on a negative. See, he's very worried that things are going to fall on him. So you could dream it up on the basis of "Well, look around here and find something that isn't going to fall on you," you see. And he would eventually, gradually, with great comm lag, find one thing someplace. And you must make him find the one thing, you see, that isn't going to fall on him. He feels much better. And he even has a lesser gain than that. He realizes, if he – if he just ran it to cognition, that he has thought that everything was going to fall on him. That's the cognition. He's already told you this, see. But he now knows it by inspecting the environment.

This – under the heading of this, in processing, is old "Take a walk." You feel bad, go take a walk, and look at things as you walk. Well, of course, this is a forward progress into the environment. And the reason that works, I can tell you now, is the person finds out that the environment is not threatening. This is a whole positive education on the negative threat. You understand what I mean? Positive education. Because he goes around and looks and see if something is doing this to him. And of course if he finds out, it's a negative threat.

This fellow is all in a sweat on the subject of the Chinese situation. Well, of course, you could ARC break somebody and chop him up with this thing, too, by just negating and not-ising the whole situation. You could say to him, "Well, what threat have the Chinese ever been to you anyhow, that you're so worried about?" Now, he has to protest and justify his own thinking. He has to get himself all tangled up trying to prove he's right and you're wrong. So of course, that has no workability at all. But this is true. But this you could do.

Now, in an upper-level process you'd run a repetitive process – something like "Well, what event have you heard about that hasn't affected you much?" You could run that as a repetitive process and you'd get big gain.

But your effort at Scientology Zero is somehow or other to get the individual to inspect the environment and find out that there is some slight greater security in it. That's all. That doesn't sound like much, but then I'm just dumping it on your head – a complete wagonload of work on the subject of Scientology Zero. I can give you the principles which I have just given you, and those principles are very short and sweet. And out of those principles you have to work with any individual as he walks up, because he's got a different environment than every other individual that walks up. So you – can't tell you too many processes to run with this individual. You see what I mean? I mean, he's going to come up and he's going to tell you he's worried about different things. I can only give you the principles by which you could get him to not worry about them quite so much. But it has nothing to do with talking to him, it isn't up to itsa at all. It all runs on the single auditing command, "Look. Don't worry." "Look and find out if the environment is as threatening as it appears to be." This is your single auditing approach to the thing.

Individual is very worried. He's sitting at his desk and so on. Papers are piling in. Everything seems to be going up in a high uproar, and he just feels completely overwhelmed. Well, he himself ought to be able to look at the papers on his desk. They're the source of the threat, aren't they? And find something about them that isn't a threat. The threat, of course, will balance out in the discovery. That would be an action. That's a sort of "Take a walk while sitting at the desk," see?

Person feels like everybody is hostile in the environment to them. Just say, "Well, now, you find – find something people say or do around here that isn't hostile to you." All on the gradient, you see. "Find – is there one person in the organization who isn't actively hostile to you? Is there anything said today that wasn't directly and immediately hostile to you?" This could also be played in the direction of exaggeration. But you get into mental things and so forth. You get into mental responses when you go in this direction and move up in levels. So you know what I mean by that; you can get the exaggeration of it: Get the idea of a Chinese in every corner shooting at you with tong hatchets, you know? You can do all kinds of wild things and an auditor extrapolating and auditing somebody and so forth, would undoubtedly go hog wild with it. Perfectly all right. Let him go do so.

I was running a process the other day – just on this basis; just readying up this material for Scientology Zero – and it was on the basis of "Look around here and find something that isn't trying to exteriorize you." Pc didn't find anything. But had the cognition that she thought things were. And was very happy about that. Did find two answers, both the same answer.

"Me. I'm not trying to exteriorize me." You see this? Almost any inspection that you give it is a valuable inspection – almost any inspection.

For instance, one of you, right now, sitting still or minding your own business or all by yourself, could just think over, carefully... It's a very bad thing to get into "What things in the environment do threaten me?" Now, I'm not – ha-ha! – I don't advise you to go off in that particular line, you see? But sit down and figure out if there's anything that isn't a threat to you. A fellow who has a PTP or something like that usually can't get his mind disentangled from it very far. But "Is there anything around that isn't pushing this PTP at me?" – that's an interesting question. Sometimes takes you a few minutes to get the thing answered.

The guy who has just lost his girl – he just lost his girl, and he feels the horrible sadness and loss, and so forth, it imparts to everything. Actually, everything in the environment will talk to him about this girl. You possibly have had similar experience here. Somebody just – you think of somebody's name and so on, you can remember a time when there was a moment or a few moments or a period of time in which it was impossible for you to look around and not be reminded of this person. Just *uhhhh!* That was a personless environment. When one's concentration has been very, very heavy on an individual or a person, it is sometimes almost heroically difficult to not associate everything with that person.

Well, the trick is to find something, of course, that isn't reminding you of that person. You might have to search a long way. This is how to recover from a love affair. This is a little bonus. Could have used it myself a few times in the last few trillennia.

But the situation is in actual fact a simple one. The individual has identified everything in the environment with his unrest. Everything in the environment has become identified with the threatening things in the environment. And the individual can't pull his attention off of these things. But by indicating things in the environment, even quite simply, and by directing anybody's attention to things which are not so connected, making the individual find things which are not actively reminding one, you get a differentiation going where an identification existed before. And where differentiation exists, intelligence and judgment can return. Intelligence and judgment cannot exist in the face of an identification, but can exist in the face of a differentiation. So this opens the door pretty wide.

Now, the funny part of this is that an individual, oddly enough, usually finds data more workable, that he can work on others, than data which is being worked on him, unless he also has the opportunity to work it upon others. You'll find this as a truth when teaching PE Courses or even small groups of people or even an individual; that if you give him something he can use to help others... It's an interesting commentary on the actual character of man. Man is basically good: If you can give him things which will help him help others, he'll be far more interested than if you're simply giving him things which help him.

And therefore, in PEs and that sort of thing, and in teaching the individual or in any booklets laying out this material and so forth, your supplementary advice in the matter should always go on the basis of "Who are you trying to help?" "Who are you trying to help find that their environment is not as dangerous as they think it is?" This is so true that many of the questions you get in a PE are from an individual are the hypothetical question which is in reverse to the doctor's question. The doctor's patients are always asking them for a friend. "A

friend has this trouble and what would be your advice that I could give my friend?" when it's the person himself that has this trouble, you see. The medico's always running into this that way.

Well, a Scientologist always runs into it – not being in the same profession and a more honest one, which is quite different, quite different. And in actual fact the individual will ask for himself because he wants it to help somebody else.

One of the things that plagues an Instructor is that – his questions he is being asked are very frequently simply being asked by a student so that this student then will make sure that some other student knows. Now, the question is being asked for the benefit of another student or other students. Quite interesting.

Now, that's true of all such wisdoms. So this Scientology Zero has to be pretty darn well understood by you in order to pass it along to Joe so he can help Pete. Because he will actually go help Pete with it, find out that it works to some degree and use it to help himself. And quite often that is the cycle it goes into; not, he uses it to help himself, don't you see, and then goes helps Pete. It's got a flip-flop type of cycle. That is to say, he helps Pete with it and then finds out that it helps Pete a little bit, so he takes some of the advice himself. It's quite remarkable. But that factor enters in particularly at this level of Scientology Zero.

Now, "Take a walk and look at things" is just the mildest, mildest, mildest advice that you could possibly give anybody that is almost certain to produce a result if the person will do it. It's quite a – it's quite an interesting process. There is nothing very dangerous about it. Of course, an old-timer like myself, I mean, I gave myself this advice one time up at 250 Old Brompton Road.

Several sections of the sky had fallen in that day, and there were considerable amounts of tumult and turmoil going on and so on, and I decided that it was just all too much. So I decided I would take my own advice and go out and take a walk. So I proceeded to do so and because I told people to look at things, so on, I went around Old Brompton Road District up there in London, and I was busy looking at things, and of course I looked at them real good. And this intrigued me very much. And I found out by the process of looking at things and then putting tension on the beam with which I was looking at them, well, I could pull myself forward. And I didn't have to walk. And this became very intriguing to me. And, skidding my heels along the pavement and so on, and I became quite cheerful about the whole thing, till I noticed a cop on the corner regarding me with some... [laughter] Shook me confidence, it did, a little bit. Almost pulled meself out of the body that way.

Anyway... Did me a lot of good. Cheered me up enormously. But there's – there's a level of action, don't you see? There's a level of activity, a level of something or other. Now, that was about 1956, or something like that. The only earlier one I had that could produce the same result was go out and clip hedges. And you know, you can only trim a hedge so often. You run out of hedges. It's quite effective. It's quite effective.

Now, the master question is "What part of the environment isn't threatening?" You're basing this on the identification – the individual's identification of everything. That is your master question. "Isn't" – it's negative. Because he has everything identified with that part of the environment which is threatening. Well, you get him to differentiate and find out there are

some parts of the environment that aren't threatening, and he'll make some considerable forward progress.

Then the individual can also arrange his life somewhat. And it's a funny thing that by making an individual plan a life by which he could live calmly and unthreatened, that the life he is living becomes less threatening. Well, this even applies to some guy who's on the – poor fellow who's on the complete treadmill; he has to keep this job; it doesn't pay very much money; he's got to stay there; there's no chance of his getting off of it and so forth. And he finds that environment very hostile. Well, he's sort of in a trap, isn't he? He's in a sort of a box, all of his own making. You get him to plan – we don't care how wildly he plans it or how he dreams it – but just get him to plan a life which would not be so threatening. And he will go on working at the job he is working at much more happily and much calmer.

Now, when you move this up, then, in Scientology One, and you start introducing communication factors and show him how to communicate to people, and so on, they find they can produce an effect upon people and people cease to be as threatening. And these things all tend to multiply on up the line. And if you keep havingness alive as you go on up the levels of Scientology – I mean you keep havingness in mind and don't drop it out of view completely and forever, you really never cease to lose, totally, the benefit that is started there at Scientology Zero. The environment isn't as threatening.

People are looking for a less threatening environment or, knowing mostly that they can't escape to that, looking for a way to be more enduring in the environment they're in. That's what people are looking for. It's a two-way look. They'd love to be able to get out, or they'd love to be able to master. But they don't think they can, to a large degree. They know they can't get out very far, and it wouldn't do any good. And nobody has ever been given – able to give them anything by which they could exert much more influence on their environment than before. And those are the basic goals and targets of the individual. There are no more complicated goals and targets than that that are completely general to every individual there is. Any thetan has these things.

In other words, not to have to stand up to the type of threatening environment he's in, or be more enduring or dominant of the environment he finds himself in so that it is less threatening – these are your basic PTPs of a thetan that have been with that thetan ever since he's been coming on up the universe. And of course, being a fairly nice bloke, he has actually been looking for something he could help other people be less intimidated or less fixed in their environment so they could get out of it, or so that they could endure or dominate their environment better. He's also been looking for something to help his friends. He's never really completely forgotten those. Even the drunk on skid row never forgets that. Even the bum in jail never forgets that.

These fellows, then, are actually trying to help others, and what you need is a level of help which requires practically no education at all. Or the education which it is receiving, of course, is a destimulation of the environment anyway. Just a discussion of the situation. Now, that's what's required. There's no auditing skill required there. There's nothing required there and yet there's a potential betterment.

This will become real to the individual no matter how crudely it is put to him. Just the concept all by itself that he considers the environment dangerous and overwhelming and that he doesn't quite know where that danger or overwhelm is coming from, that concept alone is an enormous piece of wisdom, see, that is just a square mile of wisdom dumped right on his head. It's never occurred to him before. He says, "It's true." He never thought of it. He never thought of it for himself or anything else. He's just felt it and was it, all the time. And what you've actually defined is what he was.

This is his is-ness. Quailing back from a very threatening environment that may overwhelm him at any moment, unable to progress forward into greater endurance or power that can handle that threatening environment – this is his life. You have told him the story of his life in just those few words, don't you see? Well, if you take it out from there and you actually provide a therapy, well, you say, "Knock off some of those things in your life that make you upset." Why, that's good, solid advice, see. "Who upsets you? Well, don't talk to them for a while." I mean, this is crude, see. "What activities leave you feeling worse?" and so forth. "Well, just don't do them for a while." "What things in the environment aren't really a threat to you? All right, you got some of those. All right. Fine. Associate with those. Pay more attention to them." You know, you're liable to shoot that person's IQ up fifteen, twenty points. You're liable to snap him around and get him out of the wheelchair, and so forth, just with no more wisdom than this little package that you've had in this last hour and a half.

So, what we needed was something that was very, very pervasive, something very simple and something that would go forward that had no auditor connected with it at all, it only had a teacher connected with it. And given that, and the developments which you can develop out of that, and which I will undoubtedly write and develop out of that, why, we have pushed a whole new philosophy under the tremendous structure of Scientology. It took a lot of doing. Looks very simple now that it's done, isn't it? But I had to think of: How do I think up a whole field of philosophy that has whole bodies of truth in it, that are an introduction to the man in the street, the person who knows nothing – you haven't any time to teach him anything – that he will immediately see the truth of, that requires no auditing, that requires nothing about the mind in connection with it at all. It was quite a specification. But there it is and I hope it's some help to you.

Thank you very much.

SUMMARY OF OT PROCESSES

A lecture given on 12 December 1963

Thank you.

What's the date?

Audience: December 12th, AD 13.

Twelve Dec. AD 13. The sun is still going south. I was keeping close check on it. It's very difficult to do this – I still have a tendency to go into suns and so forth. I don't hope you have that trouble in the near future, but it's a rather funny feeling, you know. There's the thing and it isn't that it's hot, it's that it's sort of going *slurp!* And you say, "Well, one too many crashes." (We'll probably have to cut this off the tape. We mustn't talk about things like this now, you see, because of Scientology Zero and all that.)

Perfectly all right in this particular lecture because I'm going to try to give you now a very fast and rapid summary of OT processes. And this is a matter of record; not so much a matter of education, but a matter of record. It's very important that we have a rapid rundown.

It may not have been entirely in your view that how OT processes are done and the technology which is the final finished technology of internal bank running and so forth has not been made a matter of record. It is not a matter of record. It's the bits and pieces which are around and even the materials on tape that are around do not form a concise picture. Yet the technology itself is very precise. It's extremely crisp. It's probably the crispest piece of technology which we have. And it is rounded off now to a point where it isn't varying a thousandth of a millimeter. It's just dead-on. It's not something you vary from.

Now, the liabilities are – is having a pc who doesn't know what the score is with regard to a bank and who will argue with you about the structure of a GPM.

Some people become very concentrated on various parts of the bank and very easily make mistakes about parts of the bank and so on and get misconceptions about what they're looking at.

You take some pc, for instance, who has two RIs in view. Well, let's take that. That pc could very easily say, "Well, I have two GPMs." You see? And become quite upset if you insisted they had more than that in terms of GPMs, because these are the visible manifested manifestations. They're just these two big RIs. And, of course, these are two horrendously overwhelming large pieces of mass and quite convincing and so on.

And you take somebody else that says, "Well, they don't have the Helatrobus Implants" or "they don't have this." This is at the lower level, don't you see. Well, there's some possibility that that's true. You see, they might have missed. And they might be from another galaxy. And that has already been cared for in some of the bulletins.

But you know what some implants they do have, however. They wouldn't be on this planet without having the Train Implants. That's impossible. You couldn't have gotten here otherwise.

So there are sets of implants there that you could run into and so forth. And there are variations and so on which occur at Level V – at what is now Level V. And there are variations. Somebody could have missed out on it. And I found the other day, back around trillions two, a whole set of implants – I say "the other day," I've been colliding with them here and there and going back on the track running actual GPMs – but there's a whole set of implants back around trillions two which are quite similar to the Helatrobus Implants, for which we do not have the pattern – which I don't have the pattern for. And yet they look quite like it: there's the standing parking-meter type of implant jet and there's the wide fields and the railroad track and that sort of thing. And here's this whole series of implants – GPM type implants – back there which we don't have.

Well, there's no particular reason for me to wrestle around with this – someday somebody wants to get his "star of something or other," why, he can go back and dig up the pattern for these things for me. I've taken enough knocking around on that line, thank you. And we're just lucky I held together as long as I did.

Now, the upshot of this is that you can get variations, you see, in bank composition, at Level V. Here's somebody without the Helatrobus Implants and here's somebody else with another strange set of implants that nobody's ever seen. You see? You get these ar... differences.

So, there are case differences. The patterns – if you've got the Helatrobus Implant, he hasn't got another Helatrobus Implant pattern. It's the same one. But case differences, don't you see? He's come down a different route because this has a lot to do with the individuality of the individual, you see, and what he – some of us were standing in the wrong place at the wrong time, and he was fortunate enough to be in the right place at that particular time, you see, and he missed. Maybe he was incarcerated in a stone while a lot of things were going on. Who knows what happened to him at that period.

But you can get variations at Level V, is the only point I'm making, but you don't get any variations at Level VI. If you had any variations the person wouldn't be here.

One person hasn't made different types of GPMs than – actual GPMs – than another person. But lack of data on the part of that person and an overburdened case and not any complete or comprehensive understanding of what the symbols are supposed to apply to, could bring about an apparent difference in the case. Am I making my point?

See? They don't quite know what you're talking about and therefore they say they haven't got them, they have got them or something. You've got a lead-pipe crash. I've already gone through thinking cases were different at the OT process levels. See, I've already gone

through this and I find out they aren't different. And that is that. The differences are simply mistakes being made by the auditor or the pc, and those mistakes show up catastrophically after a little while.

Now, every GPM is composed similar to every other actual GPM. Actual GPMs are not different in their basic composition. The goal as an RI always is the first RI in the bank. It then runs on up the line on a *solve* basis, not on an oppose basis. It's a problem – it's the Goals Problem Mass with the opposite items going on up the bank, don't you see?

But those masses actually are very huge spheres. They're the – all the accumulated energies and so forth anybody ever had anything to do with on this particular subject. And they have been lived through and they have been accumulated.

Now, an actual GPM – on the middle track, they have sixteen to eighteen RIs in them. That's in the middle track area. And late on the track they go – that is, closer to PT – they go twenty-two to twenty-four RIs. Each one has a crossover. The middle pair – let's say if something has twenty reliable items in it, then at the point of ten reliable items from the top, you see, you're going to get the crossover. And the crossover is very important: That means where the individual ceases to be for the goal and starts to be against the goal.

And on the opposition terminal side, you get a progression from all the way away from the goal, up through the opposition terminals to the top opterm, which is dead for the goal.

And on the terminal side, you have the goal as an RI at the bottom and it progresses up to the crossover for the goal and then on a gradient scale goes against the goal. The top terminal of an actual GPM is dead against the goal. If the goal were "to be strong," the top terminal would be something like "weak." See, it would be something like "being weak."

Now, that pattern has to be pretty well understood, otherwise the pc is going to get into trouble and the auditor is going to get in trouble. That's invariable. So those patterns are all similar; it doesn't matter where the thing positions on the track, the pattern is similar.

But this change does take place as you go earlier track: You get more items for the goal; the crossover drifts higher. But this is monitored by whether or not the pc, as a thetan, liked the goal or not. You can have the crossover appear almost at the bottom of the goal on one which the pc detests.

"To be a servant" – if the pc really detested that, you could expect the crossover to occur along about the first couple or three pairs.

There's this individual variation. They detest it, in other words. But this isn't something the auditor has to pay very much attention to. Doesn't have to pay very much attention to that eccentricity, so that it's not an important eccentricity. It isn't – it's something that you can expect to find occasionally.

"To be obedient" or "to be good" – don't be too alarmed if your crossover takes place very early and the pc turns against the goal along about the second pair, third pair up from the bottom. The pc is dead against it now, and the rest of it is just a long decline.

In other words, the point of the crossover can be monitored by whether or not the pc liked having this goal and living with it. Do you understand? There's only that variation as far as the crossover is concerned. And there's the variation of shorter GPMs the earlier they occur on the track.

Now, the time span occupied by a GPM is longer, earlier. In other words, the earlier an actual GPM is, the more time span it occupied. And the later – the closer to PT – that a GPM is, the less time it occupied.

It's nothing to have a modern GPM, for instance, only occupy a billion years, you see? And it is nothing for an early GPM to occupy as much as trillions thirty to trillions twenty. One GPM.

These things have a tremendous space – tremendous time spans early on the track. Horrendous.

There are about – this is now a guess, but is an educated guess – about twenty-six of these things or thereabouts in a bank. Very few.

The closest to PT GPM can be expected to be what is called truncated. And that makes it very difficult to enter the track. Because it may have any number of items in it. And if anything – anyone ever called an E-Meter a lie detector they were in error. On case analysis, you can only really take those things which blow down the tone arm. Don't take those things that just go tick. You can only really count on what blows down the tone arm, and you very often are asking the right answer without a tone arm blowdown and there are many variations of – and upsets which occur trying to Ouija-board an E-Meter; trying to get it to give you the truth as to what you are looking at. It is something for you to know that an E-Meter is not reliable in this particular line. It is only of relative use and if you find that all is perfectly correct on the E-Meter, why then there's some possibility that you're right.

But it doesn't work the other way. If it's all perfectly correct on the E-Meter and you take it that way, you sometimes are trying to pound square pegs into round holes and do all kinds of oddball things that won't go.

Now, you do know that a GPM when found will read.

It doesn't necessarily read forever but it does read and it does give you nice, long rocket reads and it does give you blowdowns when found and so forth. But don't expect it to go on reading forever.

Now, the present time GPM, of course, being truncated will have less than a full GPM, which makes it very hard to find its top. Let us say you are trying to find the top of the present time GPM, and you have gratuitously counted out on your meter that it has sixteen RIs in it, which means that it's well past the crossover and is not yet complete. The pc has not lived this one out yet all the way up, so therefore you won't have the exact top. Then it's something short of the final attainment of the goal on the opterm side and it's something short of being dead against the goal on the terminal side. How short? See?

And don't cut your throat after you have worked with the pc for seventy-five hours to get this all straightened out, to find out that your trouble is that it only had two RIs in it – the

bottom oppterm and the goal as an RI. And when you have done one on which you understood it only had the bottom oppterm – this is what you got off the meter – and the goal as an RI, don't be too alarmed or cut your throat or kill the pc just because you find that it was really the second GPM and is there in full and has its top oppterm and its top terminal.

You may not find this out until you've run eight GPMs out of the pc. In full beautiful confidence, you say, "We found his present time GPM. We ran it out beautifully," and you're getting down the bank and you find out every once in a while the pc has somatics and they're sort of sticky and things are upset and sooner or later you're going to have to repair all this anyway. So you go back and you take a look and much to your horror you find out that a full GPM – you didn't even find anything out of it really, because of course it didn't discharge, you didn't find the top items – and there's a full GPM sitting there as the present time GPM. And then you ran all that out, and you asked the meter, "Is there any GPM closer to present time?" And the meter just smooth, absolutely smooth rise. Not a trace of any, so you say, "Well, just in case here, we're going to try to do the present time list. In other words, we're going to list as though there is one up here because every time we mention this fact we get a rise – rised tone arm. Must be some mass there to make the tone arm rise, so let's see if we can't possibly try this."

You list it, and you do a relatively short list and the pc gives you *the* PT GPM. And it has six items in it and you do get all those and they run out rapidly and then you... Of course where you've parked the pc back down the track, that's now going to raise hell with you because you've poured all the charge of running where you had to patch up the upper bank, onto the RI that was waiting to be run. So your next list off of that is going to be awfully corny and messy and you're going to have trouble.

You cannot be sure you've got the present time GPM, you do the best you can, you find the next goals, you run them down. You do the best you can all the time, you do it as nearly perfect as you can do it and then always suspect that there are more RIs up into PT and that the thing can be straightened out and repaired. Do you understand that? See?

You go ahead with great confidence and do everything that you can get done, because after all you're getting charge off all the way. And it isn't unremediable if you make terrible mistakes with the first couple of GPMs. This is not unremediable. And earlier GPMs on the track will run. And they will give you trouble, and the pc will have more somatics ordinarily. It's harder to find items, but not much harder. And the pc can live through it. You understand?

This doesn't then – isn't any particular reason to commit suicide.

But don't underestimate the ability of these processes to practically kill the pc. That pc with GPMs missed, top of the bank chopped up, everything going to hell in a balloon, the pc not too well educated, auditor not too well educated – this is always going to happen at the beginning of the bank, don't you see? Now, you're going to have all the trouble sitting on your head and you're all of a sudden going to skip a GPM. Supposing you did anything like this? You skipped a whole GPM because of the listing, and you actually skipped two, and you started running one out below it and *oohhhh*, the pc goes around with articular sclerosis or palpitations of the medulla oblongata.

Feels like hell, man!

A pc can – never feels worse than on R4 run wrong. If a big error has developed in R4, you can guarantee that this pc is going to feel like a hospital case. Heart hurts, brain hurts, back of the neck hurts. You get into a (quote) "*actual* GPM" that has shown up every place as an "actual GPM." Oh, everything is fine and then you find out you're running an implant GPM with actual items.

You get the wrong – a wrongly worded GPM as you're going on down the bank. And the pc's RR shuts off, and there he is, sick at his stomach, throwing up. Bad, bad business. But he can live through it. The one you should be afraid of is the auditor not living through it; it's mainly the auditor. Pc will ordinarily keep going but the auditor sometimes gets very quivery indeed.

I don't wish to paint this up blacker than it is, but I'm certainly not going to give it to you whiter than it is.

So your PT GPM is the one you are listing for and working for and so forth, and very often isn't found until several GPMs are run. You think you have found it and then lo and behold, you haven't found it. You think you got all the items out of it, and you find out you've got nothing but items from other banks. You've made a mistake, but somehow or another you've kept going and you can always straighten these things out.

Now, the programing of this is only done one way. Now, let me tell you that with great earnestness: There's only one program. There aren't several programs. I've tried them all and they just don't work. They make trouble for the case, they make trouble for the auditor and they are undoable. There is only one program – I can't be too emphatic on that – and that is: You find the PT GPM, you find its top terminal, you list the top terminal for two items – in other words, you list it twice because you've got to get the first and second oppterm from it – and then from the second oppterm, getting the "solved it," you go on down the bank.

All right, I've said that very fast and probably left you a bit adrift, but I'm – I'll go over it again, but I want to give you the programing. You find the present time GPM, you list the present time GPM out, you find the next GPM and you list it out, and you find the next GPM and you list out that, and you keep going that way.

Now, you can cut in and find the second GPM by accident and find out later that it was the second GPM and then by doing a goal oppose of it find the actual first GPM, but that is always just in the – that's just at the risk of the game. You're just correcting a mistake made. That doesn't alter the type of programing you're trying to do.

The type of programing is: You find the PT GPM or something that you could believe was the PT GPM or that answers up and behaves like the present time GPM, you run all the items out of it, then you do a goal oppose list and find the next GPM and run – get its top oppterm and then run it on all the items out of it, and then find the next GPM and so forth, and you just keep up that action until you are at the beginning of track. And you will arrive at the beginning of track. And that is the only programing that is successful. Finding any GPM that fires and trying to goal oppose it to present time is not hard to do – it's impossible. You will not arrive with the PT GPM; you'll arrive with a messed-up track. It's not a doable program.

Now, somebody has had a goal – somebody has had a goal "to be mean." All right, had this goal and it was run back in 1962 and something like that. This case then is specially handled. Nope. You do the same programing as before. You can sometimes get away with doing a goal oppose, and it's been gotten away with often enough that it was not noticed that it wasn't gotten away with hardly ever. You handle this case the same way. In 1962 they had a goal "to be mean" and this goal was run out and two or three other GPMs were run out and all this was very interesting and copacetic and fascinating to one and all and so forth. This does not alter your programing one single scrap. The programing is: Find the present time GPM by listing for it. The command is very, very short and sweet: "What is your present time actual GPM?" or any other such wording. Just list for the present time GPM, that's all.

This can be a very long list and it follows a goals list. And when you've finally got the thing down to where you've gone fifty past the last RR seen on listing and you're getting no tone arm action while listing it, the GPM is on that list somewhere and you do it by elimination.

Now, oddly enough, it sounds impossible that it would ever arrive. It sounds impossible that this could be done, and let me tell you that in actual fact it has been successful wherever tried.

Now, the bar-out there was that it didn't sound like a guy would ever come up with his present time GPM. But actually that was only a theoretical supposition.

In actual fact, they come up with their present time GPM every time. You ask for it, you'll get it. Of course, this has to be an educated pc. A pc who hasn't gone through the lower classes up to this point hasn't got a prayer – not a prayer. I mean they – even if you got them into the top of the bank, you wouldn't get them anyplace. Well, I'm looking at an old-timer now, that says, "Oh, I bet you I could take it away and so forth and I could show them and so on," and he'd wind up with it and along about the time he was about four or five GPMs back along the track he'd wish to God he'd kept them on "Find something that is really real to you in this room." [laughter, laughs]

Look, it isn't that they don't know the parts. It isn't that they couldn't be tracked through on some brief instruction. It's they themselves have insufficient security on being audited to know they can be gotten out of what they're getting into, and they'll panic. And they'll panic.

Requires a terrific stability on the part of a pc to go through this. The auditor finds a wrong item, goes three or four down below this wrong item, gets into an endless list, somatic turns on, pc's jaw feels like it's being wrapped around to the back of his head, stomach feels like it's being tied into a bowline on a bight, feels worse at this particular moment than he's ever heard of, ARC broken like mad through some basic auditing flub which keys in all the rest of the bypassed charge. A pc without stability, education, the long haul and knowingness, who hasn't been brought up as an auditor at this point will say, "Show me the nearest hospital," and that will be the end of him. He gets in there, the doctors say, "Oh, your chin is on the back of your head..." He's had it. He's had it.

It's basically a matter of understanding that will carry him through it. And all too often, you – running up the line when you get there – you will finish a session where somebody

has wrapped you around a telegraph pole quite accidentally and inadvertently, and you'll say, "What's going on? What's going on?" And the only thing that's holding you steady is you know basically what's gone on, that it can only be a certain number of elements that have gone out. And you start sorting these things out. And the auditor has practically gone around the bend between sessions. And go into the next session and say, "Well, you found the right top terminal but the wrong top oppterm, so therefore we're bypassing the charge of the top oppterm and that's why we aren't getting anyplace." You check, it reads on the meter and so forth and he promptly and immediately gets the right top oppterm and you give him the terminal and he's away. But in that short space of time, why, an uneducated, uncomprehending pc just would have thrown in the sponge.

Now, it's the pc – this is what's interesting about this process – it is the pc who comes up with the answers. It's the pc who finds out what's going wrong. Now, a very, very clever auditor can very often take a pc who has quit, quit trying to find out, and get enough bypassed charge off so as to get some facts back on the table again.

I'll give you an instance: Pc's next GPM found, but wouldn't read. For some reason or other, a mistake made, wouldn't read, so the list is continued and continued and continued. All during that space of time the pc is doping off, can't keep awake. GPM's missed, see. Go back. The invalidation is so severe on the actual goal that it reads like a wrong goal. "Is this a wrong goal?" and it rocket reads.

After a while the pc says, "Well, it just must be something that's so invalidated that it's got everything all upset." Pc by this time might be quite ill, by the way. Feeling terrible and so forth and so, well, you just better get on to that goal. You just better get onto that goal and you better prepcheck it. The auditor's tried to prepcheck it before and the pc wouldn't consent to it because he said it was the wrong goal. Get the thing straightened out, all of a sudden, why all the somatics come off, everything goes back to battery, it rocket reads and they're away. Might be overlooked. Might be overlooked completely. It's mostly up to the pc.

That's a brand-new look in auditing, isn't it? You get the idea the auditor's supposed to sit there and drive this eighteen-horse wagon, and arrive someplace and so forth. And as a matter of fact, it's too complex a drive. There are just too many horses.

Now, a pc can also be absolutely sold on something and the auditor go along with it and wind the pc up in the soup. I've had it happen to be three-quarters of the way through a bank – this is before I became very, very wise. If you can get five items down a bank without turning the pc's RR off, don't ever let anybody sell you on the idea that the goal is misworded, wrongly worded or a wrong goal. The RR didn't go off in the first five items – well, that's the right goal, man. It isn't off one hair, that's a correct goal.

But when I was a bit younger and greener on this particular process, I let a pc sell me the idea of its – the goal being wrong. Everything was going wrong, nothing could be listed right, nothing was coming up right, the goals lists were all appetite over tin cup and everything was blowing up and so forth, and the goal had already arrived down around the cross-over area and the pc insisting it was a wrong goal. I've actually listed and found two new goals with the pc halfway through a GPM, until I woke up to the fact that it couldn't have been a wrong goal – it's just that the pc had gotten into a dramatization of one of the items and

so despised this goal and so despised everything about this goal, the pc wanted nothing to do with the goal. And it was coming from the actual sense and impetus of the goal, not from anything else. But because the pc was having a hard time running it, then the auditor was willing to buy the fact that there was more wrong than there was wrong.

Now, therefore, we get to one of the rules of this, of which there are many, and that is: *If it is running all right, keep running.* Don't make trouble till trouble happens. And you would just be surprised at how horribly true that is. It's trouble that takes time. That's one of the old maxims about these OT processes: that session time is consumed by trouble.

Well, I'll give you an idea: I got – in the last three-hour session I gave on this, I got out two-thirds of a GPM, finished, found a goal and ran a third of the next GPM, in a three-hour session. Well, there was no trouble being made by anybody. Take up the trouble when you run into the trouble. Don't handle trouble you haven't got. And if you can learn that real well, by George, you're going to be in clover. But don't handle trouble you haven't got.

Pc happy – go on auditing. Pc unhappy – stamp on brakes, throw out clutch, and find out what is wrong. Don't ever force the pc forward past an ARC break or bad trouble – find out what is wrong. But don't try to find out what is wrong when there isn't anything wrong.

Now, the reason for this is: is you can invalidate goals and items and make them read and behave like wrong items. And the auditor can actually make trouble. And an auditor who is bound and determined to make trouble in OT processes has ample field for his talent. Has tremendous areas of talent. He just hardly has to try at all.

Now, the read – the read which you get on an E-Meter is no read you have ever seen anyplace else. It is not an RR, it is not a fall, it is not a surge, but is itself. And it looks like this: it springs up against rubber, a rubber buffer here. If it goes tick and there's a sharp tick there, that just never will be the item. Never, never will be the item. But it's hitting this rubber bumper.

And the real item will hit the rubber bumper and then go – force its way through it. See? That's the way it will read. And it goes through – it looks like it's actually ramming through a stone wall of some kind or another. And it starts and then accelerates and goes on through that wall. And that's the way a real item look. And it only looks that way, and it goes the whole dial and it brings about a blowdown and everything else happens that's supposed to happen on the thing.

Goals – when there are real goals being found next up – often read that way, and they often merely rocket read nicely. That's unimportant. It's the item, the item-finding that's important. And the rule in item-finding is this: You let the pc list as long as the pc wants to list and then you find the item on the early part of the list.

That has variations to it. Sometimes the pc has put it on the early part of the list wrongly worded and you get a wrongly worded item reading and then the pc will correct its wording which makes it then appear that it's on the end of the list, don't you see. But the thing to do is – these are very short lists. Item lists are short and goals lists are long. That doesn't always hold good because my recent goals lists are one, two and three items long.

Well, I put it on the list, what's the use of going on forever? There it is. Blowing up the meter, rocket reading and so forth and that's it and heat blowing off and so on, so why should we go on? If you tried to go on after that point the pc would simply go into a blackout.

Well, that's a pc getting pretty educated, man. You see the thing there and you know what it is and it reads and so forth. But even then you get fooled. Show you how little of Scientology has come out of my bank, which is quite interesting to me. It used to alarm me every once in a while, "*Ugh!* Did I take this out of my own bank?" You see? "Was this some type of aberrative action?" Used to scare me half to death. I ran into "to destroy" the other day on the goals line, see? Well now, "Who or what would 'to destroy' oppose?" for the next goal. I know you could say it in chorus: "to create," see? Obvious, isn't it? My bank isn't rigged that way. And you know, I had the awfulest time trying to get my wits wrapped around what the actual item was. I gave a goals list of about fourteen or fifteen items which was then extended out for about four pages. Because I myself couldn't cognite on what the next goal was. The next goal was "to worship." "To destroy" opposes "to worship," and I – trying to get that through my wits. I was too well trained.

I knew what it should be: "to create." And that appeared on the first – first one on the list. And I gave it so much credence – it's nothing but an implant GPM, see? There's a lot of implant GPMs "to create." And it would rocket read, see? That must be it and so forth, and the auditor would say, "Well, is that an actual GPM? Is that an implant GPM? It rocket reads that it's an implant GPM."

"Well, I know. But everybody knows that 'to destroy' opposes 'to create,' see."

"Well, it still rocket reads. But it's an implant GPM."

"Well, go on and null the rest of the list." And finally she got the one halfway down the first page and so forth – "to worship."

She says, "Well, that rocket reads."

I said, "I know, but that couldn't be it. " [laughters, laughs] "Couldn't be."

And finally I squared it around – if I were coming up the bank this way and I had "to worship" here then I would, of course, postulate destroy if I got up to here. Well, it opposed that way but would it oppose this way, and I finally – creak, creak – managed to get the thing and of course it flew into line and after that read well. But because the bank had become so upset by this time, it stayed upset and was very hard to run. The only thing it had done for me was give me a somatic sometimes when I played the organ. [laughter] Actually had nothing to do with religion. That was what was the matter with the bank.

At that stage – because this was way back, thetan track, see – it had nothing to do with religion. And you try to list religious type objects like "believing," see, "belief," so forth. They weren't in the bank. See? You were merely supposed to worship objects and places.

It was back then when you'd dedicate yourself to believing absolutely that a mountain-top was holy, see – only no such word as "holy," you see – that it merely should be worshipped. Good game. You get up in the morning, walk out of your cave and you say, "Ah, I

worship thee, O mountaintop," you know. Which is quite fascinating because there are no ramifications of it.

Now, religion came along a few umpteen *brumpf* trillions *rumpf* years later, see, and somebody started saying there's somebody named God and it started doing this and it started doing that and you should go to church and so forth, and it sure raised hell with my organ playing. Anyhow [laughter] – because nobody could bend the GPM around to what the GPM would normally be considered to be.

Well, the earlier you go on the track – the earlier you go on the track, the simpler and more direct the things are. Now, late on the track – late on the track you will find that these items have a tendency to be dispersive. You'll have items like "certainty" and items like "predictability" and – solved by "unpredictability," don't you see. And then the very next ones to it.

In other words, it's a less neat pattern. A thetan is thinking more complicatedly. He's thinking more involvedly. He's in a more dispersed state, don't you see? He isn't really down to earth and down to the groove.

Now, you start getting back on the track a bit and he's getting simpler. I had a goal "to construct," see. And almost knocked myself out trying to find the bottom oppterm, you know. "To construct," you see. "Economic hazards," you see, "decadent societies" – trying to find the bottom oppterm of this thing, you see – "old empires" and so on. And I had an awful time trying to find it, because the bottom oppterm was "a lack of construction." [laughter]

You know, you've gotten so you're outsmarting yourself.

Here you are at this end of the track, you see, in a highly complex, complicated state of mind, frankly, able to think very complicated thoughts, don't you see. And early on the track it's awfully – it's – not even early, but on middle and backtrack, it is getting very simple-minded.

So the GPM and their wordings look a little different. And as you get back – as you get back about middle track on most pcs, you'll find out that a word like the goal is appearing in about 80 percent of the items.

Well, let's take – let's take this GPM "to construct," see? Eighty percent of the time you'll have "constructing" or "not liking to construct" or something like that will be appearing in the terminals and oppterm. In other words, there will be something about "constructing" or something like this appearing in those things, or "hoping to construct," you see – that will be the tenor of the items. And about 20 percent of the time you'll have something that is different, like "difficulties" – not "difficulties in construction," but "difficulties," see – that isn't related to it.

Now, you understand, I'm just talking about the wording of the items. And you get earlier track and it is all almost 100 percent this way. Where a word sense of the goal – well, let's take "to be," you see. All right, then "wanting to be" or "having to be" might be the top oppterm, you see. And then it's "to be," "to be," "to be," "to be," "to be." Everything is "being" or "to be" and all of the terminals have to do with "beingness" and "being" and "to be," don't you see.

So there's a "be" in every one of those items, one way or the other, whether it's "beingness" or "to be" or something of the sort. Well, there's just "be" all over the place, and only once in a blue moon do you get a rare item like "time," see. There sits "time" in virginal purity. Not "time to be," you see, but just "time." *Clunch*, you see – it's sitting there like an item. And means it, too. [laughter]

Well, but very close to PT – very close to PT you get tremendous variation in items and very seldom do you see the goal word repeating in the items, which makes it actually much harder to list. See what I mean?

Let's say we – and now, closer to PT your goals are much more complex. And therefore they're harder to get oppositions to. The hard end of the track is the present time end of the track – the beginning of the case. It's much harder to get oppositions to something like "to dance forever." Well, that's a more PT GPM, see, "to dance forever." Or "to be an aesthetic success."

See? You got various types of GPMs, in other words. They have a more complex thing about this – there's a greater complexity in the thing. "To entice lovers."

Now, you can just see the dwindling spiral of the thetan as you look over these GPM things. He's getting more complicated as he gets on and on and he's got less scope and he's getting less wide between these opposites and they are much more complicated and particularized and the dispersion that he is undergoing in terms of items is much greater, and he's being nattery and picky and so forth.

But you'll get types of items like "to hope everything will be all right." See, now that's a perfectly valid present time type GPM. It doesn't say he won't have a simple one in present time, don't you see, but the chances are far against it.

Middle track, why they're starting – they are simple by middle track. But let's say you get two or three GPMs back, you're liable to start running into the simpler types of GPMs. And middle track you – you'll get such simplicities as "to do," see, "to think," "to postulate." You're now getting very simple GPMs. And early track, of course, they just remain simple all the way on back. But your hard part of the track is the beginning of the track and those GPMs tend to be more complex.

As I say, they have more items in them, the word of the goal does not appear repetitively in each one of them. And I suppose you've gone through implant areas. You've gotten sick of these goals appearing. You've gotten allergic to it. You don't make the goal word appear every time. Doesn't mean your track is wrong, don't you see, when you're doing it on the pc, then, merely because you haven't got the goal word appearing in every item.

Well, you couldn't have in the first place. Let's take an actual GPM, "to look on the bright side." And you think this is going to be repeated as a mouthful in every one of those items, you see? No. Actually is practically nothing in that. Then you'll be absolutely sure that on a GPM like "to desire," that the second terminal from the bottom, of course, naturally, would be "desiring things," or something like that, you see. Obviously, obviously. It'll be some verbal form of that. And late on the track, close to PT, you see, this is just as likely to be

"wanting something." It's skipped the rails that fast. In other words you get changes – these are more changeable.

The pattern itself doesn't change – if anything the pattern is even more secure. The top oppterm is definitely the goal. The top terminal is definitely against the goal, you see. The crossover is there and so on.

Now, the hard things to list – now, let's get on to something else here – the hard things to list are the top terminal and the bottom oppterm. And that's shooting into the blue. Because there's no real clue as to what they'll be anything about. The top terminal is very often controlled by the next goal. But you get fooled this way – you'll think the pattern is going to hold and the pattern doesn't hold.

Let's have the goal "to postulate." And the top terminal of the GPM just before it, of course, would probably be like, you know, "postulating things," or something like that. It might be a preview of the goal you're about to get, see, as you're living up the track, see. And not so – not so, it can just be completely off. It might be just "sitting," see. It might be as far off as just "sitting." Doesn't smack of the GPM that follows it, you see.

On the other hand, it might be quite similar to it like "thinking." That comes very close to "postulate," don't you see?

In other words, you can't predict what that top terminal is going to be – that's what I'm going to – was talking about. You can't really predict what it's going to be, except that it's just going to be opposite to the goal. It might or might not be a foreshadow of the next GPM just coming up. It might or might not be. The bottom oppterm is the reason he done it. Of course the real reason he done it is the GPM he's just lived through. But his particular penchant, close to PT, is usually expressed in the bottom oppterm corner. That bottom oppterm sitting over there is opposite the goal as an RI. And it's going to say what he's mad at in your PT GPMs, you know, like "civilization," you know. Or "financial institutions" or something or other. You could just guess yourself silly, and if your pc wasn't fairly educated and his sight into the bank wasn't good and your basic auditing wasn't good and so forth, he'd just miss it like mad. Just miss it like crazy. It's a hard one to get, in other words. And that, of course, tells you that probably your two bottom oppterm and your two top terminals in any GPM forecast some difficulty.

The toughest ones are the bottom oppterm and the top terminal. They're going to give you some trouble, but that's in terms of difference of wording and that sort of thing. That's going to be rough.

Now, let's get into something a little bit more like technique. How do you really list one of these things and how do you find it?

All right, well, you do your PT goals list and you finally get a goal by doing that. And you try to count how many RIs there are in it and plot it up accordingly. You get your – well, you find out there's twelve RIs – twelve reliable items – in it. It's not a full GPM in other words. And you know with twelve reliable items, it's one pair past the crossover. So it's just a little bit against the goal. The terminal is just a little bit against the goal.

So you get the pc to list this, but also there's another trick: What terminal are you sitting in just now? That gives him – that's a good thing to list. Now, why don't you list the oppterm – that would be so much easier, wouldn't it? Yeah, the oppterm. Why don't you list your bank? That's the same question. He doesn't know what's there. But he is sitting in and is intimately connected with, as himself, this top terminal. Because that's the one he's living through life in.

Now, there can be several patterns at the top of the bank but the patterns that are mainly there are the most – is that it's just cut off at that point and there are two RIs at the top of the bank and one is an oppterm and one is a terminal. That's right into PT here. And here is a terminal and here is an oppterm.

All right. It is very difficult to list for the oppterm; very easy to list for the terminal. So you list for the terminal, find out what the terminal is and then do two lists from that same terminal. One is the top oppterm and the next is the second oppterm. Two lists from the same terminal. You see? Because the charge will expire on the oppterm. There won't be any charge left on the oppterm. But you'd have to do two lists from it.

You see these things always proceed from the oppterm. Oppterm over to the level terminal with it, then kitty-corner down to the next oppterm and then horizontally over to the next terminal and then kitty-corner down to the next oppterm and then over here to the terminal.

Now why? If you get this higgledy-piggledy in the first GPM you are going to be kitty-corner from the oppterm down to the next terminal below it and *that doesn't solve*. The bank doesn't run that way and doesn't solve that way and you just go skipping out into the blue. You're in trouble right away quick. So you get it level there, you want to get two opposition terminals from the top terminal.

Sometimes you almost wreck yourself – you get them on the same list. And there's two items firing on that first terminal list and one is the top oppterm and one is the second oppterm.

So you trace this thing back, you do your "who or what would solve," get your terminal back again from it – that takes all the charge off – take it down to the second oppterm, then solve it across and go on down the bank in that way.

Now, items always solve. Items always solve. Items solve.

Goals always oppose. Goals always oppose.

Never do a goals solve list. "What goal would solve what goal?" You'll wind yourself up and the pc in more soup than you've been in for some time.

Goals oppose, items solve. And there's never any difference from that.

Now, you're going to run into a little trouble on this, because you realize that the goal as an RI sounds like a goal! And you'll get twisted up here by not realizing that you're handling an item, when you get down to the bottom terminal, which is the goal as an RI. But that is an item solve list to the next oppterm.

Now, remember what you do now. You found the whole of your top bank. You've got that now. Now you're going to do a goal oppose list to get the goal of the second GPM. You now, by assessment by elimination, get that goal. You've got that goal. Now, that's the end of all oppositions. That's it. But you've still got an unsolved RI, which is the goal as an RI, and your next list is – and this is the most critical action in the whole kit and caboodle – is you take the goal as an RI: "Who or what would it solve?" and get the top oppterm of the next GPM.

You already find it, you know its name, so forth. But you want the top oppterm of that.

So that's: goal as an RI, solve, and you get a nice beefy list. And you have an educated pc, he'll give you this list very easily and very well. But it still must be a long list.

You have my permission to go kick yourself when you take a one-item top oppterm list for the next bank. Any time you do and get into trouble and intensives later are still sweating on it, why, you have my permission to give yourself a good swift kick in the shins because you didn't hear what I'm going to tell you now. Which is just this – just this: That is the touchiest part of the bank. And you get that top oppterm wrong, you're going to be wrong from there on out.

You're not even going to be running the pc in that GPM. The pc will skip and go into another GPM, and you're going to get nothing but hogwash from there on.

You get a wrong top oppterm, you've had it.

All else in that bank you're about to run is going to be wrong. And it is the easiest one there is to get wrong because it looks the simplest. It's the fooler. What is it? It's the – it's the final achievement of the goal. The top oppterm is the final achievement of the goal. The pc's now against it. Final achievement of the goal. Final achievement.

Oh, on a goal "to sneeze," it would be "sneezing" or "sneezed" or "people who sneeze" or "sneezers" or "having to sneeze" and "not wanting to sneeze." It's something like this, don't you see, that's what it's going to be. Now, if we were running implant GPMs, all we'd have to do is give the auditor a pattern, see, and the pc a pattern and they just fill in all the blank spots and everything is very happy. Only actual GPMs don't run that – that exactly. They are quite similar, one to the next, but they don't run with that exactitude.

You get yourself a slightly misworded top oppterm and you've had it for the rest of the bank. There's the touchy spot. So you do a nice, long top oppterm list.

Items lists normally are short. Goals lists are long. Goals lists are normally underlisted and items lists are usually overlisted when you make mistakes, but that top oppterm list has got to be a nice, long list. You want twenty or so items in that thing. You want a twenty-, thirty-item list up there.

I don't care if the pc is sitting there – this is one time you don't promote his itsa. Pc will always tell you, with what aplomb – I've done it myself, should know – with what aplomb they say, "Ah the next bank 'sneeze.' Oh, it's 'sneezing,' ha-ha, that's it." Rocket reads, blows down and so forth and you, you knucklehead, you take it. Whoa, only trouble is, "sneezing" is the third terminal from the bottom of the bank. At which moment the whole

bank goes upside down – see, you're handling actual mass here – and the pc doesn't know where he is and even if you discard it and get the right one, you now have the whole bank in a tangle. Oh, you can work through it and so forth, but you'll sort of wish you hadn't. It's all tough to do.

No, the time to do it is just to sit there meanly and viciously, regardless of the pc's itsa. That's the one point where the pc's itsa is totally disregarded. There's another point, is when the pc halfway through a bank where his RR has not turned off said that it's not his goal. You disregard his itsa at that point, too. Because it obviously is his goal.

Now, the upshot of this situation is you've got to have the right top oppterm. The best way to get it is to get a nice complete list for it. And you now null this list nicely and you will get the right one firing. Now, this has to be, of course, with the pc's cooperation to get anything to fire in this sort of bank. You get the pc to put his attention on it and go over it.

Do it by heat, after you've listed it down the whole way say, "Which one did you have heat on?" And the pc will say, "Oh well, it was – it was 'the awful necessity to sneeze.'"

And you say, "That's fine, that's fine." You see just above it "having to sneeze," so there's a possibility that the heat went on with "having to sneeze," don't you see, and he didn't notice it till you get to "the awful necessity to sneeze" – you're never quite sure about this type of thing. So you go back and you cover that little area there and see if you can't get that to read. And sure enough, "having to sneeze," you read it and it springs, and you read it and it springs, and you read it and it goes *rrrrrRRH*, and through she goes and she blows down and that is the pc's item. And that is the top oppterm.

Now, you go ahead and check it out. You say, "Is that the top oppterm?" And pc, "Yeah, yeah." And that rocket reads and that's all fine and everybody is copacetic.

Now, be very careful with the terminal. Don't necessarily do a short terminals list. Be very, very careful getting that top terminal because I already told you that is a very critical point. Because the meaning of it is very hard to get. It will simply be an opposite meaning to the bank at large.

Of course he has some clue in the bank he's just left and so forth. But he will normally get it, it'll leak through his skull what it is. He'll put it down on the list and you'll get that read. Now check them both out. Now that you've got the two top RIs, check them out. Make sure – go right through a song and dance here. Just make awful confounded sure that both of them are absolutely correct before you go another foot.

Now, the reason for this is a simple reason: You can get this going in a bank, and when you've got this going in a bank you've had it. It just goes hours and hours of slug and upset and so on. It's a sort of a circular invalidation. You find four items forward, then find one item back of you is wrong – three items back is wrong, so you go back and get that and then you correct the next three items and go two forward, and then you go back two and you find out one of those pair is wrong, and then you move forward... And you're always moving into a messed-up area, don't you see.

You've always overshot with – from listing from wrong items. Honest, it just drives a pc nuts because now he's listed – all the items he's got are on lists someplace but what lists are

they on, don't you see. And he can't quite see it and put it down. You're always listing into a messed-up area. Mess up the area and then go back and correct something, you see, which automatically means the area you went into now probably hasn't got any right item in it.

When you find a wrong item behind you, *you accept no items you have found after that*. Got that? It isn't correcting this little item and then taking the rest of them. *Nuh- uh*.

If any of the items you found after you found the wrong item – if you find any of them are right, just consider it coincidence. It's purely coincidental.

Now, the way you check up a bank to find yourself a wrong item is just go back to the top of the bank and start reading the items off with the rudiments of the session in. And read them off – session rudiments in, not rudiments in on every item – and you read those items off and the wrong item behind you will tick. The item that ticks is wrong. It does not mean that it has not been opposed – it doesn't matter if it rocket reads when you read it, it still doesn't mean it's not been opposed – it means the item that read is wrong, and that is an absolutely inflexible rule. I've gone through absolute hell to prove up that rule. And that rule is proven.

If an item behind you reads, it is a wrong item.

I don't care if it rocket reads or anything else. You could say to yourself – and you will – sooner or later you'll hit one and you'll be cheerful about it and you'll say, "Well, I guess it just hasn't been opposed so, of course, there's still charge on it. And pc says it's right – that it's right, so we'll accept it." And, of course, you'll run into the same cul-de-sac that you just went into before. You'll go straight into the same cul-de-sac. You go back and try to get – use that item again that read and you'll go into the same cul-de-sac. It doesn't matter what happened, the item should not be reading.

The item that reads behind you is wrong, and it being wrong throws into question and throws out every item found after that.

And it's only by accident that any of those items will be right so you pay no attention to them at all. You just go on listing the bank, muddied up now, as though you had never listed it before.

Now, you get back on to one of the items you've had before, you of course have to use its oppose list, but because you've got so much bypassed charge, it probably won't be correct anyhow. But you have to pay attention to it. You've got a mess on your hands, and you have to take what you can get to get yourself out of this wicked lot.

Now, how do you correct this wrong item? You take the list on which it appeared and look earlier, and if it was the first or second item on the list look later, of course.

Look, you don't continue to list – you don't continue the list you got it off of, you look elsewhere on the list. Now, it could be the list is incomplete.

Let's say we're listing "sneeze." "Who or what would solve sneeze?" or "Who or what would solve sneezes?" or something. See? We're listing that list. We've listed it and we have found – we have found "drug preparations." We've gone six more beyond it and we're going to come back and checking out the bank because what happens is, is we all of a sudden can't find an item. We run into a list, it's blank. I mean, we can't get anything to read no matter how

long it lists. Where are we, see? We're going into nowhere. Where are we? And so forth. And you'll just dead-end. You won't make it. And so you've got to go back, because you can't get anything to read now. You've got to go back and you find out "drug preparations." "Drug preparations." Clank! See?

All right, that means the list "Who or what would solve sneezes?" – it means that you got the wrong item off that list. Doesn't mean the list is incomplete – it means you got the wrong item off of that list, so you look on that list for the right item.

Two items reading on the same items list means nothing. Listing rules apply only – and do apply ferociously – to goals lists. All the listing rules you've ever been given apply to goals lists, but they only apply to goals lists.

You can have six items reading on an item solve list. Doesn't invalidate the list, one of the six is right. And you don't continue the list.

You'll find that when you have a wrong goal, you'll run into a phenomenon: At first everything you put down reads. That's one of the gimmicks. Everything you write down reads. Everything you call back to the pc reads. Everything reads to the pc. And that will continue for a little while. And then nothing reads. The tone arm goes clank, the needle goes absolutely stiff as a poker, you can't get anything to rocket read, no RR, and all motion of the needle and the tone arm and everything else will turn off completely until such time as you continue the goals list.

Now, you start to correct it or can write a goals list or something else, it will come back on. As soon as you find the goal for that area, why *bango!* your RR is on at once.

The only thing that shuts off – the only thing that shuts off an RR is a *wrong goal*. Wrong items will not do so.

You can, however, overrun a GPM. You can be running down – they did it here when they were first running these things, a year ago or so. They'd go on down the list, pocketa-pocketa-pocketa-pocketa, and thirty or forty or fifty items later, the RR would shut off. Well, of course, they had long since ceased to run in the GPM for which they had a goal. And had a long time, now, been running in GPMs that they had no goal.

So, you can overrun the goal as an RI and it doesn't get on the list and shoot into the next GPM and the RR will go off. But even then, you see, it's not having the goal that shuts off the RR. You start listing too many items for which you have no goal and the RR will go off inevitably.

The way you lose somebody's RR, needle motion, surges and that sort of thing, the only thing – and this is a marvelous thing to know; when I finally found this out, I mean, I could heave a huge sigh of relief because it's the most marvelous proof in the world of a GPM. You get four or five items deep into a GPM and the RR is still on, why, you knew it was the right GPM. Anybody try to shake your confidence in that, *zzut!* The right GPM, man. That RR would have been off long since if there'd been the slightest comma wrong with it.

You say, "Well, it might have stayed on with 'to sneeze,' but maybe the goal is 'to be sneezed at,' and it could be slightly misworded..." No! Slightly misworded, off goes the RR,

you see. It isn't even slightly misworded, it's dead-on if the RRs – if the RR – if you've still got an RR, you've got the right goal. That's all there is to it. So relax.

Cruel thing to do to test a goal by seeing if the RR goes off. It's not something an auditor would undertake with aplomb. It's a very cruel thing to do to a pc, because it makes him feel like hell. But nevertheless is a last resort test. And you make this test every GPM you find. You never know if it's a GPM.

You're not going to sit there for hours pounding away because you're going to pull the goal as an RI up from the bottom of the bank up to the top of the bank. You're not going to sit there for hours and prepcheck it and call it and so forth and yip-yap at it endless... You're not going to do that, that's all. You're going to make it rocket read and it rocket read – rocket read instantly. And the pc says it's a GPM and you got a blowdown and that sort of thing, that's it. And after that you're not going to call it anymore. You're not even going to say, "How does this item relate to 'to sneeze'?" That wording is out. It's "How does this item relate to this GPM?" You never call the goal again. Not until you get it down to the goal as an RI.

You even refer to it by the number of GPM it is on the track. You refer to it as the sixth GPM. Sixth actual GPM.

"How does this item relate to this GPM?" You know, the pc runs much smoother, the GPM is much less pulled up. See why? Every time you repeat this thing, you're pulling the goal as an RI up toward where you are and you're disarranging the bank to some degree. So you just don't call it all that much. You certainly never prepcheck it. You never do anything to it. That's saved for when you are straightening out the whole track if you ever do, after you have run out all the GPMs. Oh, go back and prepcheck them by all means. And if you've invalidated somebody's goal to a point where it's made him sick as a pup or something like this, well, by all means, you've got to prepcheck that goal. But you say the goal as rarely as possible.

You say, "On 'to sneeze,' has anything been suppressed? On this goal, has anything been suppressed? On this goal, has anything been suppressed?" Got the idea? You don't keep saying, "to sneeze," "to sneeze," "to sneeze." What are you trying to do? You're trying to push the pc down to the bottom of that GPM or pull the GPM up to where the pc is. Got the idea? Use that with economy, then.

All right. In tearing on down the bank, you'll find there are many indicators. Many, many indicators. There is lots to know about this sort of thing, but the rules are relatively simple. And they're dead-on. They're dead-on. You always check these things out. You always say, "Is this an actual GPM?" after you have found the goal. "Is this this?" "Is this that?" "Is this such and such, so on and so on and so on and so on?" And you'll find out after you've run five or six out of a pc that you get no response whatsoever. None. Pc knows far more about it than the meter. Pc said, "Yeah, it's an actual GPM." One-and-a-half-division tone arm blowdown. "Yes, this is the top RI." Rocket read.

But you say, "Is this the top – is this the top oppterm?" See? "Is this the top oppterm?" There it sits, see. "Is this the top oppterm?" There it sits. "Is this the top oppterm?" Pc will say, "Well, what do you want?" "I want to know if it's the top oppterm." "Yeah, it's the top oppterm." Rocket read. [laughter]

If it's not the top oppterm and the pc says it's the top oppterm, it won't rocket read. But you'll find the sub-itsa line is moving up toward the pc's ability to itsa till they are almost at parity. And then it reverses. I don't know what you do then. I think that's a dangerous part of the track. I'm not quite sure how you run the early part of the track when you can't get ahold of the pc and so forth. We'll know all about that very soon.

Basic auditing must be very, very well in. Basic auditing must be well in on an auditor before he attempts to run this sort of thing, and the pc must be easily auditable before he goes on this kind of thing because the littlest piece of basic auditing can make the pc desperate and very ill. And you've got to be able to promote the pc's itsa, you've got to be able to handle the pc's PTPs, you've got to promote the pc's confidence, rather than – distinctly different than – his itsa.

He's got to get his confidence up. You've got to nurture that confidence, because in a very few GPMs you're going to run out of E-Meter. And if his confidence and knowingness isn't high, you have no substitute for anything. So, the pc is moving on up the line and your basic auditing has to be very nearly flawless. And you've got to be able to talk to a pc. The pc's got to be willing to talk to you as the auditor. All these various things about basic auditing have got to be very well in line.

Now, the only thing that makes a bad basic auditor is a person who is afraid of becoming OT or sees a great deal of harm or upset in being exteriorized or in being set adrift or alone without a body, or the idea of setting people adrift or alone without a body restimulates all of those people they've held down with one foot on their throat and stuck spears in their stomachs of. That's exteriorization, too. Murder, in other words. And you get somebody who is doing a poor job of basic auditing down around Level II, Level III, Level IV – their basic auditing will start to fly out like one of these Cape Canaveral boomerangs they're sending up into the sky and it will just start flying out further and further and further and further because they're getting closer and closer to actually going exterior or being exterior or exteriorizing somebody. And all of the perils and terrors associated with that go into restimulation.

It's a don't – it goes into many, many complications – it's "don't deserve to be exterior, don't deserve to be free, don't deserve to be Clear, mustn't be Clear," it makes them desperately ill, they get RIs go into restimulation on the subject of just the thought of moving out of the body. They go *dzzzzzzz!* "Oh, no! Not for me." And, of course, they know that's so horrible for them, they don't want to do it to somebody else. And what you actually do is run into a bunch of bank.

Now, it isn't the significance of the bank. So don't look for it in significances. This will be a great shock to you if you're trying to straighten out an auditor so he can run this sort of thing, and you're looking for a goal "to never help anybody," see? That isn't it. It's the pure mechanics of the situation. It will just be GPMs collided with GPMs in such a way that any thought of moving out of the body or moving into any exterior state throws energy masses into collision one with another, which brings about a feeling of *bzzzzzzz!* See? It's a mechanical situation, not a significance.

And it would be horrifying to you – you'll get a dreadful loss someday, you'll find "to never hurt anybody." And you say, "Well, that's the reason this character can't audit," you

see? And you run this GPM out, you know, like mad and you get all the items out and down to the bottom and they get down to the bottom and they give their next session and fall on their heads with basic auditing. Wasn't the significance, see? What it was, was just a terror of exteriorizing or becoming exterior which is brought upon simply by energy shifts.

Now frankly, you can set somebody up so they will audit and do absolute flawless basic auditing. For one session. And that is you run some O/W on them. And their basic auditing will be flawless.

Well, isn't it interesting that it's O/W that makes their basic auditing flawless, see? So obviously, then, they must consider auditing an overt. Otherwise it wouldn't be O/W that remedies it.

It's peculiarly O/W. This has been subjected to several tests, by the way. And this is a very well-known piece of technology now. First trace of this technology was Melbourne, 1960. Test of – or 59 – test of auditing a staff auditor on O/W and then having the staff auditor go audit a pc and see that the staff auditor at that particular moment would turn in a flawless session. I think that's quite an interesting datum.

I've carried this along, along the way and I've looked now very closely at basic auditing. Basic auditing is terribly important. And actually basic auditing does not improve under training where O/W is so much in the road that a person is practically swamped by it. You can stand and harangue, you can point a shotgun at them, you can do everything to them you could possibly think of, you could show them all the points in the world and so forth, but if they consider it's a terrible, terrible overt, or that it would seem awfully painful to them, or terrible loss to them, or something else – any one of a number of these combinations, all of which comes under the heading that exteriorizing somebody is an overt act – their basic auditing will be terrible. Terrible.

Now, there is a method of overcoming it. Give them a fifteen-minute session on O/W – just general O/W, not directed at auditing at all – just a fifteen-minute assist before they give a session and they'll turn in a flawless session, just like that. It's the most marvelous thing you ever saw in your life. It's absolute magic. And this is very unusual because you would say, well then, naturally, the person would have to have a fifteen-minute session before any session they gave. Well, I'm not pointing out to you that it's rough to do this, I'm pointing out to you that it's possible and it works. Because it is possible to give somebody a fifteen-minute session before any session they give. See? It is possible.

Now, there are no ARC breaky pcs. There are only bad basic auditing auditors. Now, an ARC breaky pc can be very ARC broke and so forth, but in actual fact, good basic auditing will bring them out of it every time. You do good ARC break assessment, find the bypassed charge of the thing, continue on with good basic auditing and that pc will not ARC break. The pc that is dangerous is the pc that doesn't ARC break but goes into the sad effect, and any pc by the way, if audited beyond the point of an ARC break will go into a sad effect. But the difficulty here is that the pc who goes into just propitiation by reason of an ARC break is actually much harder to handle or improve than a pc who simply screams.

A pc who yells like hell and raises hell is actually in the final analysis really easier to handle than the pc who simply goes into propitiation, don't you see? Slightly higher tone level. But a pc should never be pushed into either.

And if a pc *is* going into such states as a reason – as a result of running OT processes, it is not that the pc is being run too high necessarily. Has no basis on it, given that the pc is perfectly capable of being audited at... you know, I mean, he knows the technology at that level, that the auditor knows the technology at that level, yet the pc is ARC breaking, the fault is always basic auditing. And the fault is remediable by short sessions of O/W before the session is given by the auditor. And you'll find the ARC breaks just go like that. That's auditing the auditor of the ARC breaky pc, is what I'm talking about now. And this is very remarkable. So how much for your ARC breaky pc, you see.

Now you've got, then, a great deal of technology here and I've tried to give it to you just in a basket load. And I think if you ever listen to this tape and take all the notes off of this tape and so forth, you would have yourself a ball because I've given it to you in a running river. It's practically all here and the one thing that isn't here is the exact patter, and the exact patter used is on the demonstration tape of last Wednesday. And there are some sections there of exact patter. And there is a full tape and there are several tapes giving the exact patter.

We are about to make a color movie of the exact formation of the bank and all GPMs and so forth concerning it. And the technology is all being packaged up. But I did want to give you this lecture today so that you would have it, as you might say, in a nutshell, to be on the safe side.

Thank you very much.

Indicators

A lecture given on 31 December 1963

Thank you. Well, I haven't seen you for quite a while. I've been trying to groom in your Instructors and I've been working behind the scenes! My hand will have been felt here, shortly.

Well, it's a very beautiful evening for the old year to be dying. I hope it dies very dead! [laughs] I don't like to see it – any possibility of it quivering back to life, you know. We can bury it with all the sentiment of a drunken relative who stole all our money. [laughs] Yeah, 1963 – been quite a year. It's been very successful technically – fantastically. It will go down in history for that reason. But boy, from the standpoint of steady, uninterrupted screech of speed and action and so forth, it – I don't want to see it back!

Actually, that was – this has been the year in which we've achieved the technologies to OT and grooved them in and polished them up; the year in which we have taken all of the various technologies of Scientology developed over all these years, back from Dianetic days, and stretched them out into proper classes and prepared the way and opened the gates and laid the Bridge and done a tremendous number of things.

We've had our heaviest attacks since 1950 in this past year, and these things are folding up. The attackers look like a weak-kneed fighter who has been pulled off the mat the third time, and his manager is standing over there looking anxiously around the sparring partners for a new boy, you know?

And they for instance just, I think it was yesterday, why, Infernal Ravening, a organization over in the United States that practices legal banditry on all the citizens, and so on – the real government of the United States, since it's the one that has the authority over every individual citizen, including senators, congressmen and the president – it lost. It lost. It had attacked Mary Sue and myself, hoping thereby to get through to the FCDC and it lost. And it ran up a small, if somewhat dirty, white flag and that was the end. They were suing us for various things including falsely asserting that we had children. [laughter] And none of these attacks – none of these attacks actually very serious. They make an awful lot more noise than they have lead in them. They – mostly blank shots – they're mostly shot out for the press, and so on. And then they fade, and so forth.

For instance, I think the last – this one with Infernal Ravening was the last shot fired of the year, and it was a total loss to the enemy. But a week or so ago, why, Peter, down in Australia, was taking care of the situation and there was supposed to have been a public debate with members of the opposition: snarling, ravening, hydrophobic froth, you know, peering around their fangs. And these blokes were supposed to have appeared before a television

program and – for a debate on the subject of Scientology, and Peter got down to the station and there was nobody else there. And they didn't show up. And probably died by biting themselves, probably or something like that. But they didn't show up, and this left Peter sitting in front of a battery of television cameras and lights, you see, with nobody to debate with. So very brilliantly they decided that the public should phone him and ask him questions about Scientology. So he sat there for half an hour with the phone in his hand answering the phone, answering everybody's questions on the subject of Scientology. And the station liked it and the public liked it and they got lots of phone calls and traffic and so forth, and we don't quite know what happened to the opposition, but they haven't really appeared since – not only didn't appear there.

But then they're going to have a big hearing of some kind or another and he's got a shot in the locker that is something like dropping a cannonball on an ant! He's sitting there well-armed. And the FDA and so on – this ceased to be serious two or three months ago. There'll be – still be some uproar and upset but sooner or later they're going to have to run up their dirty white handkerchief, too. But everybody is very optimistic about this now and our attorneys and so forth are all optimistic about it over in the States. All you have to do is just keep winning, see, just keep winning. You don't have to win very ferociously on the legal line, but just keep winning. And the only thing we can really hope for in 1964: that all attacks on Scientology are senselessly brought. They bring a type of charge that they can't possibly win on. And if our luck just holds consistently they will continue to do this, you see?

Like suing Mary Sue and myself because we don't have any children. And because we haven't been in England and are not in England. I think those were the charges on which they were suing. But if they will just go ahead and continue this line of idiocy, why, we will continue to win with the greatest of ease. I hope we don't have to work any harder than we have had to work in 63 in order to keep on winning. But we've actually today, with the disappearance of this old year, got it pretty well in the bag. And of course I – look forward to a tremendous amount of very hard work in codification of materials and laying them out.

For instance, you haven't got a textbook for Scientology 0. You haven't got a textbook for Scientology I. You haven't got a textbook for Scientology II. I beg your pardon, you almost have one. I wrote one years ago – a Student manual and it's been sitting there waiting to be published, and so on. And lo, it exactly matches the levels of Scientology II. So we may have that textbook long ahead of any other textbook just because it was written, I think, back in 58 when all the material was still there and fresh. But then there's Scientology III and that hasn't been codified and Scientology IV and that hasn't been codified and Scientology V. And we got lots of bulletins on that, that's actually better – and lots of tapes – that's better done than a lot of other levels. And then Scientology VI, and it's just now in a state where your Instructors are wrestling at it, see.

So, the essence of the future is the compilation of existing materials and getting it out in a very ready fashion in order to get it assimilated easily. This new method of dissemination – I think you'll find it very, very effective. And the only thing I know that might modify this method of dissemination is that an upper-scale auditor will have certain processes which he can run on a lower-level or class person. Do you see what I mean? So that if you're a Class IV, you have a certain small bag of medicine-man tricks which you can trot out on a I or a II

or a III, don't you see, which produces some interesting magic and which they themselves at Level I, you see, would not be able to audit, yet they can receive that level of action. There are several of these and amongst them is this case analysis, of which you have a recent bulletin.

Edgar pulled some off on a brand-new raw-meat fellow and he hardly knew what happened. By the way, that fellow's cough is still off and those were simply a – it was simply a thirty-five-minute application of the basic fundamentals of case analysis adapted with no instruction or understanding on the part of the person receiving it. And it turned off what was apparently incipient tuberculosis and so on. Well, you take a technology of that particular type and so forth, that would be used by a higher-level auditor on a lower-level pc.

So a small little bag of tricks like this I'll manage to collect up and get together; and there are several of these techniques. And then probably – one more thing – there's probably, in 1963, we probably bent the old idea of "you shouldn't heal," and so forth – we probably bent that one very badly. And the AMA has been getting in our coiffure. They are very decent fellows as far as their membership is concerned, but I think that they themselves at the AMA headquarters are due in for a horrible shock because give us a couple, three more wins of the type we've been getting and give us a nice suit against the AMA, something like this – give us a few little more wins and we will open the door wide open on the subject of psychosomatic healing. And that will be the end, man, as far as they're concerned. Because we can then enforce an ethical policy, don't you see, that if you cannot – if you do not get results on the patient, you must refund his money. And we can put this out on a heavy propaganda line and, of course, that will finish any ineffective healing activity there is. The only person who can do this, of course, is the person who has very effective healing activities. That's what's known as – in bridge – as "leading from strength."

We have several of these things now. We have several of these things now which are quite, quite miraculous. And anybody running – anybody running at Level VI goes through – every time his auditor makes a bust he goes through more illnesses and more types of psychosomatics and so on that could be easily counted. All his auditor has got to do is get a couple of goals in juxtaposition and the – start running down the line of a misworded goal and you immediately have thrombosis articularosis of the lumbar – immediately. And you can turn on more ills and turn off more ills than you can shake a stick at to such an extent that I have now become very contemptuous of the whole subject. I mean, I see these guys floundering around. I understand what's wrong with them. I'm not contemptuous of them but I mean the idea of the ills of the human body and so forth. You get a couple of RIs in crosswise and man you've never seen any ills like they can be caught. It's rather horrifying from an auditor's standpoint to look at these fellows and see what this – well look, what is this fellow's coronary? See? Some other bloke, he has a bizarre pain in the sacroiliac of some kind or another. What is this and so forth. And everybody rooting around trying to find the right chemical, you know, the correct chemical in order to squirt into them. Or the proper torsion table on which to stretch them or some of this sort of stuff. And once you get accustomed to what exists on the whole track, it's just a little bit frustrating, because of the complexity of upper-level technologies, that you simply can't say to this fellow, "What would solve this? What's the RI? What goal does it belong to? What is out of shape here on the particular lineup, you know?"

You see this girl, she's crying, her eyes red and streaming, going down to the divorce court, you see, because her husband is a brute and so on, and the children home staring emptily into space – Mama and Daddy are... you know – and chaos reigning in all particular directions and so on. Examine the situation and of course it just – you'll find that she's had a consistent present time problem with the RI, you see, "bad men," or something like this. The amount of – the amount of difficulty that's caused by the misalignment of the psyche is fascinating in its tremendous complexity, and disillusioning in the simplicity of its cause. And you think of how few items can make so many complex troubles, and there it is.

But of course, I suppose that we'll make advance in that particular direction. But the ardures of Level VI technology and the ardures of running the stuff – you see, we've been at this now for about – trying to run these things for about three years and every time we'd make a decent breakthrough on the thing and so on, why, we'd come up against a small nicety, you see, that has to be observed in order to prevent this and that.

Technology itself has finally worked itself into a pretty confoundedly complex piece of technology. Really requires auditing; it requires an educated pc. But of course the end product of this, for God's sakes, is OT. That you can't sniff at.

Any goal we ever have had in the past went glimmering; some time about 62 it started to go glimmering and it sure went glimmering in 63. I mean the goal for the individual on an assured basis of what he could attain if he simply kept plugging at it and going forward and was well trained in it and so on, shot up factually as a realizable fact to some point which is, well, it's just so far out of order of magnitude of what anybody expected before that it's probably quite unreal to most people. And it certainly every now and then gets unreal to me. I get caught between a couple of GPMs or something like this and we don't find the goal on the list or something of that sort and we say there we are, there we are – and we're all set now except for this creak! [laughs]

And I take a look at somebody auditing this and recognize the tremendous skill which both the auditor and the pc have to have. Because even when they have that tremendous skill and even when they know all the answers, they make enough mistakes to keep them very busy. But the end product of it's fantastic.

I got a very great reality on the amount of gain which was attainable. Because for some months we've kept looking for the PT GPM on me. See, we've been running GPMs, but every time we get the track beautifully unburdened we find out there's more PT GPM, see. I mean, it's a closer to PT GPM. I think you'll find out this is quite ordinary, see? You find out that the truncated GPM you ran actually had a top, see. Well, if it had a top, then there's probably one on top of it; there's probably one closer to present time. Well, if there's one closer to present time, it probably has a top, too. And there's probably one closer to present time than that. We're now seven GPMs from the one we thought was the PT GPM – seven.

And just a few months ago – just a few months ago in running GPMs – that is, listing for goals and trying to line up a present time GPM – see, I've been running GPMs, and so on. When they run, they run. Because you can usually start in if you've got the right top oppterm and so forth – all it does is leave a little residual charge. You know where it went on the track. You've got it plotted out because you've got the goal below it, don't you see? And you take

that chunk out of the track. Well, it unburdens, you see, the case tremendously and your perception and ability to handle them increases.

And a great reality I connected with subjectively last night, was how much case advance I'd made in just about three months. Because about three months ago, boy, we were trying to list on a goal oppose basis up from an indeterminate base trying to get a closer GPM to PT, and I was being wrapped around telegraph poles. It was grim. I don't mean telling – mind telling you it was real grim. Of course, on my track I've done all the research that you're getting the benefit of and it's shot full of holes, you know, and things have been misaligned and so on, and things have been improperly run. For instance, I've got a lot of GPMs that have been run with "oppose." Well, that's unburdened them and taken charge off of them but it's still left tremendous numbers of bypassed items, you see, in the area.

Well, last night we were working at it. I was handing up goals lists amounting to five or six goals with the rocket reading goal on it; stacking it up, putting the GPM on top of it, you see. You know, there it is; all right, the next one. Listing in to the top oppterm to see if it was there, see if you could get anything to read like a top oppterm on the GPM in order to find out if there was a GPM closer to present time. And we handled four of them like they were just old sacks of straw, see. You get into it when you finally attack that particular hill and you think of the idea of just casually listing into the top of a GPM to find out if there's an item that's going to read there, see, will actually practically part your hair in the middle with horror because it just about rips you to pieces, you know. It turns on *creaks* and bypassed charge and howling ARC breaks and so on. We're sitting there; I just stacked up four GPMs on up to PT, got the truncated GPM and say, "Well, it cuts off right there." And for the first time could look forward into the future, you see, and there was nothing. Nothing. Where did it all go, you know? Just like it had been sawed off with a band saw, you know? And we had stacked up four of them, bypassing all the items, listing into the tops of each one, chopping them all to ribbons and so forth. I didn't turn a hair. Not even a quiver.

I got up this morning and I wondered, "Well, I wonder if a couple of those are backwards," you know? And I went *creak!* and I said, "Well, they're not backwards! Let's see, what are my considerations on this?" – a little bit of self-auditing [laughter] – and I said, "Well, my considerations on this: there were a couple of them backwards." No creak.

Oh, that's a far cry, man, that's a far cry from three months ago. Ah, I got a big subjective reality on it; tremendous subjective reality. An awful far cry from last spring, man! We couldn't tell whether it was an implant or a splant – of course we didn't even know if there were – was such a thing as an implant GPM last spring, You couldn't tell what was which and who was where and so on. I think I turned out last spring some of the most remarkable line plots, I think, that will ever be seen. Maybe you can do better when you're learning, but that was pretty good, because they have – didn't even know – didn't even know implants existed, you see. So you get things like "being active," you see, solving "somebody or something with the goal to be active." Implant RI sitting alongside of an actual GPM RI. Boy, that must have made plenty of creak, man! Take the middle of a GPM – an actual GPM with great big sixty-five-foot by twenty-feet by ten-foot mass, pull it down into the Helatrobus Implant area and pin it up against one of their parking meters, see? Wild! Absolutely wild! Incredible! Survived it.

I will say I sometimes felt lethargic. My weight built up very, very badly and is falling off now at a tremendous rate. I mean, about four or five – the last four or five days I've lost about twelve pounds – because these things are what give you weight. See, they give you a residual body mass. You see, you never created them ordinarily – your early ones particularly – you didn't make these things when you were in the body. And you made them foot-loose and fancy-free. And running them while you're in a body, of course, is not the way most of them were made. And it's a little bit hard on the body. And the body's in the road of the RIs and is expressing and experiencing all the heat and other duress that occurs. And every time you make a mistake, the duress is tremendous and the body goes *creak, crack, blump, thud*, you know, and you take quite a beating in this particular direction if you're doing an incorrect job of the thing.

Sixty-three was the year I had to do all the research work. I've sacrificed everything now. The other day, the other day – not too long ago – I was outside, taking a look at the dawn and it was a great relief. The Van Allen belt is nice and warm and you can sit in the Van Allen belt amongst the radiation that's supposed to be so harmful. It's nice that it's there. It holds in the warm air, you know, and you can put out your beams and warm your hands. And rain clouds – rain clouds are absolutely beautiful there. They're almost as good as a drink of Coca-Cola. And my... you can get into the ice crystals of a rain cloud and it's very nice. It's very nice. It's cooling, refreshing, you know – like taking a cold shower on a hot summer day. And all of a sudden you're not stricken by these fantastic temperature reactions. See, you're in a body, you see, you get a temperature difference of ten degrees up or ten degrees down and you're kind of miserable, you know? And outside, you get a temperature differential of two hundred degrees centigrade up and two hundred degrees centigrade down – it makes a nice change! Slight variation. Slight difference of aspect.

But I do have one problem and I end this year with a problem. And it's a tough problem; I don't know if I'll be able to solve it or not. But as an OT, how do you drink Coca-Cola? [laughter] This is! This is operating as a problem with me and I've been trying to solve this in various practical ways and so forth. I'm far too big to get into a Coca-Cola bottle. You see, when you really go bad as a thetan and become a drunkard, what you do is you take a few drops of liquor and you drip them on the barroom table, you see, and let it evaporate, see, in your face. You're wearing a doll body or something like this, you know – you let it evaporate, you know, into your face, like brandy sniffing, and you can get drunker than a skunk! It all depends on the degree of volatility of the liquor you happen to be dedicated to. But alcohol works pretty good in this. And you know, Coca-Cola doesn't evaporate. See, you can pour it on the table and it doesn't evaporate, it just gets sticky. And, so I – I don't know, I – I thought in my various offices in various continents and that sort of thing we could get a small tub and empty a few bottles of Coca-Cola, you see, in the tub and dump some ice trays in, you know, and you could get in! [laughter] You could get in. Maybe that would be better, so forth.

Yeah, that's operating as a problem. That's the biggest present time problem I have. [laughs] So that's a fairly good one to be ending the year on. And it's worrisome, though.

Well, we have quite a bit – quite a bit that – ground we've covered, gains we've made and that sort of thing. And we're, in actual fact, we're the gainers; tremendously and all out of proportion the gainers in 63. We actually never really thought we could fly so high so

smoothly. The only real drawback is the fact that the technology that takes it to the highest level is a complex technology. But I'm working hard on it so that it's fairly smoothly rounded and can be learned rather easily as I think the Instructors who are – I'm briefing at this particular time will tell you – it's fairly well rounded up.

Not much doubt about you making it. Of course you're sitting there now, you wonder if you'll ever make it all the way. And I can tell you that if you are or have wondered if you're ever going to make it all the way, while you are making it all the way, you will have many other periods when you'll be absolutely certain that you will never make it all the way. That's the greatest certainty I can give you.

You have just been dropped in the middle of a wrong goal at the end of an intensive that is half-run and the right goal can't be found; and for a week or two you'll be very sure that you will never make it all the way. But the nice part of it is, you can pick yourself out of these things, and you do go on and just the action of getting tone arm action actually restores your hope in the matter and you can keep on going. The finite end product results – I was joking with Suzie about it this morning and I said maybe we're going to do a totality of OT on a gross basis: just handling and messing up GPMs, you see, and handling more GPMs and finally we'll get so accustomed to handling GPMs and the familiarity will be so great, we'll never have to run any of the items at all. [laughs]

Because at this stage I think to some slight degree, I think two-thirds at least of all the GPMs which I have, have either been partially run or placed on the track and discharged to some slight degree. This is not necessarily good, don't you see, because they have been put into considerable restimulation. And you're in the middle of the tenth or twelfth GPM from present time in the goal as an RI and you pack this with you as you come back up, you see, to straighten out the PT GPM. You feel a little jammy. But nevertheless, nevertheless, I hope that – I've been over the jumps on this stuff very hard and very harshly; there's no doubt in my mind it's just a matter of time now, let's get it run out. And I've been – felt horrible and I've felt this way and I've known many times that it was impossible to make it. I've also known that it would be impossible for you to make it. I've known all kinds of pessimistic and very, very sour ideas on how tough it was and that sort of thing. And I've managed to recover from each one of these, so let's hope you do, too.

The final end product of Scientology, or a thetan in this universe, has been achieved in 1963. So whatever else can be said for the year, at least we can give it that. Okay?

Audience: Mm-mm.

All right. Well, I just wanted to talk to you about it a little bit and get it off my chest and talk it over with you.

This is what?

Audience: Thirty-first December.

Thirty-first of December. The last year, all right, of 1963, Saint Hill Special Briefing Course.

[part missing]

All right. I'm going to give you a very brief lecture on the subject of indicators as they apply to lower levels. This is a brand-new subject and the Instructors know all about it; they've gotten the lot. And I didn't bring my notes. The whole subject of indicators is a new one. And when you learn something at an astronomic, stratospheric level, such as Routine 6 and Level VI material; it of course can turn around and go down into the lower levels. And this is exactly what has happened with indicators.

Routine 6 cannot be run without indicators. An individual... this is not a lecture on Routine 6, this is a lecture on lower levels. Routine 6 auditors must know their indicators – bang! They must know the indicator and what to do – bang! All auditing time is lost if it is lost by a failure to know, recognize and do the proper action indicated by an indicator. You could lose 90 percent of your auditing time at Routine 6 if you didn't know the indicators. That's how serious it is. You probably, if you didn't know the indicators at all, you would never make an OT at all.

All right, so much for that level. Indicators are present at *every* level. You have indicators at 0, I, II, III, IV – you've got them all – and V. You've got these – indicators are present at every single one of those levels. Indicators are divided into two classes: good indicators and bad indicators. Accuse me of involved technology if you wish, but I don't think you can get much simpler than that. There's good indicators and bad indicators.

The first thing you must know about indicators is that if an auditor doesn't know the good indicators, he does not then know what the bad indicator is occurring into.

Now, let's go over this a little bit slowly. Somebody comes along and he tells you that you must not cut the pc's itsa. All right, so you don't cut the pc's itsa because of an Instructor or you don't cut the pc's itsa because you've read it in a bulletin or you don't cut the pc's itsa because you'll get an infraction sheet. You get the idea? Well, why don't you cut the pc's itsa? Well, you don't know the good indicator, see?

Cut itsa gives you the bad indicator of a dirty needle and an ARC breaky or gloomy or not-running-properly pc. Those are all bad indicators.

Well, what's the good indicator? What's the good indicator? Obviously the good indicator is a smooth needle and a cheerful pc. I mean, it's elementary as that. And that's why you don't cut the pc's itsa, see, because you want a cheerful pc and a smooth needle. You follow it? You don't – it isn't that you don't cut the pc's itsa because it says so in a bulletin or because the Instructor will be mad at you. It's because the good indicator would not be present and a bad indicator would appear.

Let's follow this now. I have many times had this gruesome experience: I've given an auditing demonstration and had a lot of people sit there and learn absolutely nothing from it except that was how auditing should maybe look when I did it. It didn't look anything like that when they did it, so that was just my peculiarities of auditing. Or: anyone with my altitude, of course, with regard to an auditing session, could not fail to have a good pc and have the session look good. You follow what I'm trying to tell you? In other words, the people sitting there watching the session did not know the good indicators. Because I assure you that I learn – every time I turn around at Routine 6 level and so forth – I can have ARC breaky pcs that ARC break much harder than your pcs.

The level, of course, gives you greater stress on the case. And when you get a Routine 6 ARC break, man, you get a nice, juicy, squeezey ARC break. It splatters all over the ceiling. It's big! It's a Cecil B. De Mille production! It's not only a little "Well, you have offended me," you know. "Blankety-blank, blank-blank! Pow-pow!" And it sounds like that record I gave Reg for Christmas of the "Overture of 1812," with the actual cannon shots in it, you know? And I gave it to him with malice; I want to see if his new hi-fi set would stand up. [laughter] It not only stood up to it, it stood up to it very gorgeously, but it almost – the cannon going off sounded so real unexpectedly that it almost blew Jack Horner's head off! [laughter, laughs]

Now, looking at something like that, we know what we're looking at, what should music sound like, see? Well, it should be intelligible and you should tell what's being played and what is playing it and it should sound real as though it's in the room. You've got various good indicators.

But now let me give you an index about music. And you will see something here. A very, very good electronics chap told me this and this is a very good test for "Is hi-fi equipment hi-fi equipment?" and "Can you really – are you really dealing with a good recording" and things of that particular character. "Is it a good microphone?" – this type of test is very simple. And this is what I would mean by a good indicator.

See, this bad indicator: you say, "Well, the hi-fi equipment sounds corny," and you read up what does – "What is bad hi-fi equipment?" you see? Well, it sounds dissonant. It sounds this and that. You get woof and wow and you get this and that and you get an imbalanced decibelization of the lower condenser areas, you see? And the tweeter – tweeter very poor, it's not matched. Has a different impedance. Didn't tell you a confounded thing, you see, and yet those are all apparently bad indicators and so forth that you have.

Well, the question is – is do these things mean anything, unless they are compared to the comparative datum? Now, you know in the Logics it says for a datum to be understood and so forth, it has to have a comparative datum. So you have to have a good indicator.

Newspapers, by the way, are playing this on you all the time. They're saying how bad everything is, how bad everything is, how bad everything is. I don't know; they don't tell you how things should be good. They shouldn't necessarily tell you how good everything is, but nobody says how things should be good, yet they're apparently always working against an ideal standard. There must be no wrecks, there must be no fires, there must be no, be no, be no, you see – on and on and on. And apparently they're working against the standard which is some kind of a good standard. But they never tell you what this good standard is. So, of course, it's just all bad, bad, bad. Well, let's get back to hi-fi equipment.

You could say the woofers are not woofing and the tweeters are not tweeting and the wow is disgraceful and you can say a lot of things about this hi-fi equipment, don't you see, but how should it sound? All right, there's how it shouldn't sound. Well, how should it sound? That's the important one. How should it sound?

And this old electronics whizzeroo told me – he says, "Now," he says, "it's like this: You walk into the lobby of the theater when the aisle doors are closed and you listen to an orchestra playing in the theater. All right," he says, "that's poor hi-fi equipment, see? Now,"

he says, "you open the doors, and walk down the aisle to about the center of the theater and listen," he said, "and that's good hi-fi equipment." And you know, you can tune a set with it. You tune a set up until it sounds like the musicians are in the room. And you can keep balancing things until you move the musicians into the room.

And oddly enough you can take a well set up panel like Reg's new hi-fi has down there, and you actually can move them into the theater beyond the lobby doors and move them right back into the room with you. See, you can move them out and distant and away. And in tuning up a piece of equipment, therefore, how should a piece of equipment sound? The good indicator: It sounds like the musician is playing in the room with you.

Well, it's almost indefinable, don't you see? I mean there's no decibels or woofs or wows or any other descriptions in this thing, so actually anybody then can figure out what was good hi-fi equipment. Is it capable of putting a clarinet in the room so it sounds like the clarinetist is standing in the room with you playing the clarinet or does it sound like he's back in the bedroom playing the clarinet, don't you see? That's all you have to know about it.

All right, you take it on that basis. Now, we can go woofs, whatters and flops and you put the condensers through into the ruddy rods and so forth. Well, all that is doing is monitoring the reality or present or nearness or clarity of the sound. So if you're going to teach anybody to do anything – I have just learned this principle very recently, not the hi-fi, but learned this on teaching Scientology.

I've had a barrier to overcome. This is a problem I was trying to overcome. And that is that I've had many people listen to or watch an auditing session and not know what the devil they were looking at. I know this for this good reason that I get their comments afterwards written down and it's some of the wildest piece of commenting I ever heard in my life. They don't – they haven't grasped what occurred in the session. And you turn me in a bunch of criticism of your own sessions as taped and so forth, which demonstrated rather conclusively to me that you needed a tool with which to appreciate what a session was all about. What was a session? What should it sound like? And I finally worked this out on good indicators and bad indicators. And that's a direct result of it. And if you don't know the good indicators, of course you can't ever tell what the bad indicator is.

So what should a session sound like? And one of the first things that an auditor should make it his business to know is the points which should be present in a properly running session. Not what's wrong with the session but what's right with a right session?

What's right with this session? Now, knowing what's right with the session, he of course can then tell what's wrong with the session. But if you don't know what's right with the session you can never tell what's wrong with the session. And that is the way I have licked this problem. I trust this will be successful and will improve auditing here and there and everywhere.

In other words, heavy concentration on teaching auditors what are the good indicators of a session. What are the good indicators of a session? They're *bong* and *bong* and *bong* and *bong* and *bong*!

And if these things are not present, then a bad indicator must be present. Well, what's the bad indicator that's present that cancels the good indicator? So I give you that: Don't cut the pc's itsa. Why not cut the pc's itsa? Well, you're going to get a dirty needle.

Well, all right, that's interesting as a statement. But it already assumes, you see, that this particular auditor knows that he ought to have a smooth needle in the session. See, it's as elementary as that but it makes that assumption. And that's an unjustified assumption because maybe he doesn't know that. And the good indicator is the pc should be cheerfully itsaing away. All right. Pc is sitting there cheerfully going on and happily carrying on and cogniting on things and so forth. Well, that's the way a pc ought to operate.

Well, all right. You say, "Well, if you cut the pc's itsa you make the pc unhappy." Well, this assumes that the fellow knows that a pc ought to be happy in session! And maybe people don't know that at all! A psychoanalyst doesn't know that. No other practitioner ever knew that. So this is unjustified.

How does a pc look in session when they are running properly? Well, they ought to be taking their case seriously, somebody will say, you see. They ought to be really concerned about all the wicked things they have done in life, you know? They ought to be – ought to be – ought to be – ought to be – ought to be, and you get seven thousand different varieties of "how the pc should look in the session," all matching the RIs of the auditor! [laughter]

What's the good indicator? Pc cheerfully itsaing. Well, you say, "*Cheerfully* itsaing? Why – what the hell? You mean this guy's going to run through some – you mean this guy's going to get better sitting there cheerfully talking?" Ho-ho! Yeah, he's not going to get better any other way, man! Because the only frame of mind that you can as-is in is a cheerful, high-toned frame of mind. And that's the high-toned frame of mind people as-is in. Now, we're talking about if we run a secondary, of course we'd expect somebody to cry through the secondary or fear or something like that. We don't happen to be running secondaries these days. And you can expect this to occur early on in a session that – or early on in a process that the pc's looking sort of gloomy and he's looking this way and he's looking that way and so forth. But only early on when you're handling the thing he is gloomy about. You're bringing him out of the gloom and the good indicator is that the gloom is decreasing or the tears are decreasing, you see, and that he is moving forward toward the good indicator.

The pc's moving straight ahead toward the good indicator and should arrive there fairly rapidly. You don't want somebody weeping for seventy-five hours. It's all right for a pc to weep. I've seen pcs running a secondary weep a dozen years off their apparent age. There's nothing wrong with this. But that's running, of course, a secondary. Now, the truth of the matter is as the pc rapidly moves on forward, how long should the pc be weeping? Well, how long should the pc be weeping? What's the good indicator?

Well, the good indicator is that it fades away and the pc gets very cheerful with no suppression of the weeping at all. That's the good indicator.

And the bad indicator would be he went on crying for seventy-five hours of auditing. And you would say there's something awful wrong here, man.

So you get a good indicator: here's the pc cheerfully looking at his life and gets interested, talking to the auditor – these are good indicators, you see – tone arm riding at an acceptable range on the E-Meter, you see, with so much motion. These are the good indicators, you know. You can stack these up. I'm not trying to give you a list of them at this particular time. I'm trying to show you what they are.

And we get this picture of what an auditing session is out of the good indicators that should be present in the auditing session. And if these good indicators are not present, then bad indicators must be present. And if bad indicators are present, then certain actions must be taken by the auditor.

Now, certain actions must be taken by the auditor to continue the good indicators in existence. Those are the routine actions of auditing. Those are what you're taught as the TRs and so on. You just go on doing these things and you're not cutting the pc's itsa so long as the session is running.

All right. But when a bad indicator shows up, one or more good indicators tend to go away. And the bad indicator indicates another course of action must be taken by the auditor.

Bad indicator inevitably and always means that the auditor must now do something. Good indicators mean that the auditor must continue what he is doing and bad indicators indicate the auditor must do something else. That's the general picture. But actually, for any given process, the bad indicators give you a precise and immediate thing to do.

This requires more listing and more workout, but you can admit this is pretty clever. See, pc something-or-other and something-or-other; well, you're doing so-and-so.

I'll give you a gross one right now: Pc makes a critical remark of the auditor – makes a critical remark about the auditor. All right, now at one of your Saint Hill levels, of course, that means you do a session ARC break assessment. At a lower level, why run some O/W – or pardon me – at a very low level you'd run some O/W. At intermediate level just pull the missed withhold, or find out what the person's done, see? But there is the action pursuant to the bad indicator.

Bad indicator – you see, the bad indicator doesn't mean there's anything wrong with the auditor. The bad indicator simply means something has gone wrong with the proper form and action of the session. Something's gone wrong here, so it is now up to the auditor seeing this bad indicator to do something about it.

Now, there's several things that – you can overdo these bad indicators and you can get ahead and get all plowed up and messed up and do nothing but remedy bad indicators, remedy bad indicators, remedy bad indicators. And of course, "What's the matter with this session?" Well, none of the good indicators will be present. So if you don't know what good indicators are and don't know that you should continue what is bringing about these good indicators – if you don't know what good indicators are – then you won't know what to continue. Do you see?

How should this pc look? How should this pc sound? How should this meter react? How should this bank be responding? Now, those all have good indicators in connection with

them. Now, here's a good indicator. If you don't know this good indicator then the bad indicator makes no sense at all.

Let's give you the bad indicator and show you how it drops you into the soup: tone arm was high. Tone arm on this pc was running consistently high.

Well, what's – what's consistently not high? See, you have to ask that question, see? What – how should a tone arm operate? If a tone arm shouldn't be moving between 4.5 and 5.5, then where should it be operating? Well, a tone arm oper... out of the broad range of optimum action of a tone arm is from 2.0 to 4.0. That's the broad range. Common range is about 2.75 to 3.5. That's a very nice range; very nice operating range. If you're really hotter than a pistol at Level VI, you'll get the pc operating between about 2.25 – because now you're operating a thetan, and male and female have nothing to do with it – Level VI. It starts in about Level V that you cease to lose the male and female significance of your meter and at Level VI you've for sure lost it. And a pc starts plowing along there, and the pc's running between 2.5 and 3 – 2.5, let us say, and 3.25 – optimum running range. Pc's running in that range. Man, you've got it made! Nothing's wrong. You haven't missed any items, it tells you – so on and so on. It just gives you a avalanche of information just seeing the tone arm moving where it ought to be moving.

Now the tone arm is now moving between 2.75 and 3.75. Well, it still – there's a little something awry but we're not going to bother with it. It's a light indicator, don't you see? It's too light to fuss with. But we've got something crossed up somewhere on the track, and we're not enough sure at this particular time what it is. But the tone arm is running and running like mad between 2.75 and 3.75 and, you see, it's just – it's all right. You don't do anything about it. Just that little bit high. Just that little bit high. Something's been missed somewhere.

Well, of course, the time to use a bad indicator is when you can't go on with the good indicators. Just because a bad indicator leaps up into view – at a very light level of bad indicator – is no reason you knock it all apart, if the session is still full of good indicators, you understand? So the pc's talking cheerfully, everything is going along fine, you're finding items; everything is going along beautifully, and so on and so on and so on. And your tone arm is running now between 3.25 and 4.0. But it is running between 3.25 and 4.0 and I do mean it's running. The pc is getting heat on the items; the pc is so on. All the good indicators are present, you see – they're all there, they're all there, they're all there.

Well, eventually you get down to the bottom of some bank or another and you find out that you've skipped a GPM back there and it's just coming into view – heh-heh! And all of a sudden your tone arm starts to run up now around 4.75 to 5.25. Well, this is definitely in the road of the session. You can't operate this way. You can't operate at all. So you now have got to do something about it; and you very nicely put it all together and do the right thing and go on with your action.

This just gives you an idea of a good indicator and a bad indicator. So there are three grades of indicators. There are two kinds of indicators and there are three grades of indicators. Just thought you'd like it nice and neat. There are light indicators, medium indicators, and heavy indicators. The two grades of indicators – I mean, the three grades of indicators are simply the suddenness with which you have to take action. On a medium indicator, action

must be taken. And action must be taken as soon as you can comfortably get to it. And on a heavy indicator, emergency crash action must be taken right now. And the light indicator is normally plotted so as to show you that something is wrong. You know something is wrong so that you can be alert to find out what it is without actually interrupting the session of the pc. The purpose of the light indicator is just to show you that somebody is moving over close to the edge. And they may move back onto the main road without you doing a single thing about it. But they're over close to the edge and the auditor had better be alert.

He doesn't want that moment when he hears the rending of wheels on the abutment and the crash of the car as it goes over the cliff and the long dwindling scream. That's grade four. And he never should get up to a grade four indicator. He never should get up to a grade four indicator; which means no slightest possibility of any more auditing of this pc ever. We don't even put that in as an indicator, because it would certainly indicate something; because we already have at grade three "pc not wanting auditing." That's an indicator. That's a bad indicator. Now this, of course, automatically assumes that a pc should want auditing as one of the good indicators, see. So you got a pc and there's the pc: what's the good indicator? And by good indicator we mean normal or reasonable; not extraordinary or bonus indicator. This is what we expect, you see?

You expect to sit down to a table and eat off a plate. See, I mean that's the level of expectancy, you see. I mean there it is, you know. You're not going to eat off the floor off a dog's dish, you know – at least not on this planet at this particular time.

Now, you've got, then: what's the expectancy. Well, the expectancy is if you've got an indicator like a bad indicator – pc not wanting auditing – you must realize that there must be such a thing as a good indicator which is: "pc want auditing." Good, you see, doesn't mean superlative or bonus. See, it just means that's expected, normal indicator, see. It's just normal. Pc wants auditing – pc wants auditing – that's normal.

Well, I can tell you how far out indicators are on an awful lot of pcs. See, "Where's my session? Where's my session? Oh yeah, when are we going to have my session? All right, fine. That's good, good," – not anxious to have a session, but he wants his session; then he sits down, and so forth. You don't have to go out; whistle and dig and beat up the brush, you see, or anything of the sort. There's the pc, you know? The clock has wound up to a certain period of time and there is the pc; and perhaps getting a little cross with you for being a few minutes late for your session, or something like that. See, it's all an indicator that he wants his session.

Not anything you do anything about. It's almost a good indicator that he is a little bit, "Hmmm, you weren't here," and so on, "we lost five minutes of my auditing time!" Weren't on time, didn't start the session on time. You wouldn't attach anything to that as an indicator. See, it's not really a bad indicator. It frankly is a good indicator. Pc wants his auditing. You see how this gives you a different frame of reference? Normal, good indicator. The pc wants his auditing. That – that's it!

Well, if he doesn't want his auditing, that's a bad indicator. That's a real, real bad indicator. That's a grade three bad indicator. So it tells you that all of your devotion to session, and so forth, must be on that indicator. Pc doesn't want his auditing. Well, you better not do anything but handle that indicator. You can take it up eight dozen ways from the middle and

you're going to eventually collide with the reason why and it's always going to surprise you. It'll be some elementary simple thing you should have thought of all the time except it's very complex and the pc never would have noticed it. But the point I'm making here is the good indicator is: pc wants his session.

Now, our ARC break with governments and that sort of thing is probably because we're not auditing them. We must remember that Harry Truman going along pertly and so forth, God help us, I certainly would have been much happier to have educated that bloke that did his auditing, but man, he was being sweated over on engrams God knows how long! He practically cleared that man. Every piece of information that came out was immediately snafled up by the White House psychiatrist. There are even rumors floating about that they were spending time, you see, the President was getting psychotherapy of some kind – a mysterious kind of... Well, we ought to know what he was getting, because we were – we would have been much happier to have given this guy some information instead of him culling it out of bulletins and – and he never even had any tapes, don't you see, or anything like that. All he had was Book One – Book One and whatever other bulletins and correlative information was issued.

Well, that's rather interesting. Truman apparently wanted his auditing. Well, possibly – the rest of the government wants auditing and probably lots of people in the world want auditing and we probably ARC break them by not auditing them. They will ask for auditing in numerous ways, including try to blackmail you and so on. The truth of the matter is, though, that wanting auditing is far more common as an indicator than you would suspect. And, of course, it is the expected good indicator. When it is absent, the pc says, "Well, I don't know if I want to be audited – I don't know, *rarh-rarh-rah*..." He's being late for his sessions and he's hard to dig up, and so forth. Man, you're dealing with a grade three indicator. I mean, that's a bad indicator. What's expectancy? All right, what's – you could – I'm just giving you a brief glimpse here: The needle and meter should look a certain way; the pc should look and sound a certain way; the pc's attributes should be so-and-so and so-and-so.

Now, oddly enough it is a grade two bad indicator that a pc has a present time problem. That's a grade two. It isn't to be considered in the line of absolute, crashing emergency because at certain periods of the session the pc will develop a little PTP which you eventually care for, and so forth, just with what you're doing.

A grade three indicator means immediately emergency action. But this is something you attend to and something you attend to right now. Why? Well, the pc makes no case progress of any kind whatsoever in the presence of a present time problem. How do you like that? Present time problem: no case progress. It just equates that way. That's it. There's no modification on that statement. This is borne out over the years, man; this is really borne out over long periods of time: that a pc with an ARC break gets a worse graph. His graph worsens if he's audited in the presence of an ARC break, see.

In other words, there's an ARC break has occurred; the ARC break isn't remedied, then you can reduce the pc's graph. That's the only thing that will worsen the case – is auditing a pc over and beyond and ignoring the ARC break. That's the only thing that will worsen the case. And the only thing that will make the case not progress – not one-quarter of an inch – you

couldn't put a building jack under the case and have the case advance. Pc with a present time problem: that graph is going to remain the same. Present time problem plus an ARC break: God knows what happens to the graph! But, we've got this, you see?

So, we say, "Well, the pc shouldn't have a present time problem, and so forth. You must always audit the present time problem and this is something that you have to take care of," and etc., and etc., and etc., and etc. This is all very interesting. But where's the good indicator? Obviously the good indicator is the pc in an auditing session should have no present time problems. Well, then, obviously your pc couldn't be in-session if he had a present – if he'd always had a present time problem while being audited, then nobody had ever worked forward to getting the pc into session because the good indicator of no present time problem has never emerged on this case. So if no present time problem – good indicator has never emerged on the case, then we can obviously say the case has never been in-session. That is quite remarkable.

When we put these good indicators up in the framework that they deserve to be in, you see immediately they start to show you an awful lot of bright, bright look here, see. Well, you could check a pc out on good indicators, you see? Well, now, this is particularly important to you because you're actually going to supervise as much, or more, auditing than you will do. You're going to supervise an awful lot of auditing and I mean you, and you – all of you; you're going to supervise auditing. That's for sure; you're going to supervise it.

A lot of these new level programs – don't think otherwise. Any auditor becomes an Auditing Supervisor. So much so, that the hat "auditor" is practically synonymous with the hat "Auditing Supervisor," see.

But, auditing supervision – how are you going to do auditing supervision unless you know how a session looks, man? What are you going to do? What is this thing called a session? We have no descriptive material that covers it whatsoever. Can you walk down an aisle and look at [snaps fingers] – *bing* – and say "Is that a good session going on?" Well, is it a good session, or isn't it a good session? Well, you could say it isn't a good session because certain bad indicators were present. Pc's cans have been on the floor for the last half an hour, don't you see, and the pc is facing the other direction looking out the window and the auditor is humming. [laughter] Now, that's auditing supervision by bad indicator. And if you only supervised by bad indicator – now listen carefully – if you only supervise by bad indicator, you will never get any auditing done. If it does occur, it'll occur by accident.

You cannot auditing supervise by bad indicator. You can only auditing supervise by good indicator because when the good indicators cease to exist, your action, then, must be in the direction of re-creating them. But if there's nothing toward which you're re-creating, of course you can't make anything there anyhow.

Let's say, all right, let's say we've got fifteen bad indicators present in the session – let's just be outrageous, you see – we got fifteen bad indicators present. So, very brightly and smartly, you eradicate two bad indicators. Hah – you still got thirteen. You haven't yet got a session going there! So you must learn your good indicators and you must learn to do session supervision by good indicators.

In other words, you can tell everything is running all fine and everything is going ahead and you actually could fix your level of expectancy of how much gain these cases are going to make just on the number of good indicators present. You can look down the aisle and see that so on and so on – just glance down the meters, and the needles are clean and the tone arms are running in the expected course and there is tone arm action going on; the pcs are talking cheerfully about their own case and the auditors are listening to them, and so forth – and it's all these good indicators, you see. One, two, three, four, five, six, seven, eight, nine, ten – good indicators all present, so forth.

Well, you know now that group of pcs – there's going to be an awful lot of psychosomatic difficulties going to disappear, and their difficulties in life and livingness are going to go by the boards and their lumbosis is going to diminish and you can just be comfortable, man – comfortable. There's nothing spectacular going on in the whole length of the room. See?

But all the good indicators are present in those sessions. You could just sit back and relax, put your feet on the desk man, and you just say, "Ah, well, that – all those things are going to happen and everybody's going to be happier and better and they're all going to be cheerful and everything's going to be fine," see; because that's what it ought to look like!

Now, if it doesn't look like that then some bad indicators are present. And for every one of these actions that are going on which aren't going on properly, there is a major bad indicator present. All you have to do is establish what's present – *pow, pow, pow, pow, pow, pow, pow* – and give an immediate auditing response to remedy that one. Your good indicators will pick up a little bit; make sure there are no other bad indicators present. Get these things out of the road, weed them out and you've restored the session, then, back to all good indicators and it goes on swinging. That's how to auditing supervise.

Now, therefore – and let me impart this to you before you really get swinging on the subject of auditing supervision – you should know good indicators just *brrrrrrrrr!* What I'm trying to tell you is you should know good indicators more by heart than bad indicators because if you find out that there's a bad indicator present in the session, believe me you can always go to the textbook and try to figure out some more about it. "Oh!" Because I myself sometimes in undoing a case will have a fantastic comm lag. "Oh! That! Oh! Ha-ha! *Whhuuu!*" You know? That kind of a particular response. After all, you've been walking around the edges of this case for some little time and you knew there was a bad indicator here, you see? You knew there was a bad indicator. But there could have been four or five responses to this bad indicator. You could have done four or five things in order to make this bad indicator right itself. You just didn't quite have the tail of the piece of string; you couldn't quite pull this – the right raveling, and so forth. Well, all right, well that's undoing cases. That's straightening up an individual case. And all cases aren't like that, thank heavens, and so on.

You finally realize, "Oh! The pc's goals are directly – the pc is with a PT problem. We've run PT problems on this pc for some little time in order to straighten up PT – why is it this pc always has PT problems? Oh... so and so on, and so on, and so on and so on. Well, it's... these PT problems all the time. We keep straightening out PT problems, PT problems,

they never straighten up on this pc. Oh? Oh, well, Ron said one time or another if a pc continues to have present time problems and always seems to have difficulty and you never can seem to clean up the present time problems, then the pc's goals must be completely different than the auditor's goals and the session must be a total disagreement. And it must be that the session itself is the PT problem."

Pc's goals completely divergent from the auditor's goals. Auditor trying to make pc survive; pc trying to succumb. Auditor trying to make pc well; pc sitting there trying to make husband guilty. You get the idea. Must be a divergence of goals here – must be a wildly divergent set of goals between what the auditor's trying to do and what the pc's trying to do. So we will remedy it now from that direction. We will get a heart-to-heart talk on this particular subject and all of a sudden you'll see that case unwind.

Of course, the bad indicator isn't present on the next case. Pc doesn't even have a present time problem. He's just sitting there talking happily, so you say, "Well, I had such remarkable success with Lisa Jane in finding out a divergence of goals between the..." so on and so on. You see the bad indicator isn't present in this, but you apply the remedy of the bad indicator and the case suddenly starts picking up a whole bunch of bad indicators and you wonder what's going on here. Well, you remedied a case that was running.

In other words, you've corrected the no-necessity-to-correct. No need to correct it, and you're correcting it. You get the difference between good indicators and bad indicators?

The auditor will ride a hobbyhorse. Every once in a while you always – you always tend to ride a hobbyhorse. You have a big win, see – wins ruin auditors, man! It's a tremendous, crashing win, you know? And you found out that Mrs. Snodgrass was putting rat poison in her husband's breakfast cereal, because she actually had a something or other about "children." So you get children straightened out on your next two or three pcs and then you find out that none of them straightened out on the subject of children, see. In other words, you are remedying – you are remedying a nonexistent bad indicator.

So, there are several things that you can do and err in, but they're all very good sense. And the only thing I want to communicate to you is learn what an auditing session should look like. And when I give you your list of good indicators for an auditing session, snaffle on to it. And when you're training people to audit, hit them over the head with it, you know. These are the good indicators for a session – the good indicators, see.

Good indicators are more important than the bad indicators because auditing only happens in the presence of the good indicators. Bad indicators are used simply to reassume the good indicators. Therefore, you must know your good indicators.

Now, when you get to be a screaming genius and an Auditing Supervisor like – you can say to this person – like I am; when you really get sharp, as I am, you see, well trained, then you can pick up the bad indicators and straighten them out. But that requires genius. Just for now, you go on with your good indicators and make sure that they continue in the session. Cultivate them. You get this level of approach?

Of course I'm giving you a joke along with it. I can see you now, in desperation trying to keep cases from being corrected that don't need correction and trying to get cases corrected

that desperately need correction but the person is sitting there; the pc is dumped over – bent sideways from the trunk, you know – and you didn't see how this could happen. The person seems to be out, boiling off, knocked in the head, every single session; never can be really persuaded to come to the session in the first place, and you're trying to convince this auditor, "You know, there's some bad indicators present in this thing and you – you really haven't got the good indicators of a session because a session doesn't look like that!"

"Oh! Doesn't look like that. Oh, the pc is leaned over to the left!"

You wait! You wait! One of the things that's very disappointing is to give a tremendously effective auditing demonstration, just glass-smooth, you know, every good indicator there, you know, just everything sharp, you know. Everything present that should be there, you know. And realize that some students who were watching it had never seen it. And they tell you what the pc's withholds were is the sole thing they learned out of the session! It staggers you, man! You become staggered when you look at it. Because – but then you'd recognize that they don't know what the good indicators are – what should the session have looked like, so they don't know what was a good session and what was a bad session.

Now, you're going to tell this person get in there and run a good session. What do you mean a good session? You only mean a good session, of course, if it has a good – it's full of good indicators. If it's got the good indicators in it it's a good session. As the indicators drop away; as the good indicators drop away you'll find bad indicators are starting to take their place. And as the bad indicators come in you'll find certain remedial actions have to be taken. And when these remedial actions are taken your session snaps back to battery.

Now, this throws away the idea that some people are auditable and some people are unauditable. I just look down your throat, and say, "Well, after all, you're an auditor!" How do you materialize all these good indicators in a session? Well, that's what you're being trained to do. The standard operating procedures on which you're operating and so forth are all calculated to bring about these good indicators, and continue them flowing in a session. It's elementary as that.

Now, you wonder why Joe Blitz has such an awful lot of trouble with – in the co-audit here, and why is Joe Blitz having so much trouble, and so forth? You don't understand it. Well, Joe Blitz doesn't know the pc's supposed to sit in a chair. See, he doesn't know what – he doesn't know what he's trying to make take place here! So not knowing that, of course, he can't make it. He can't create it.

The gains of auditing are astonishingly automatic these days. Astonishingly. You have a series of good indicators present in an auditing session and you audit the pc just so many hours and you use no brilliance at all of any kind. You just keep on and keep the good indicators in – the pc wins! And he all of a sudden comes around, you know, and you're checking up – their chronic headaches are gone and they now don't have to be operated on by Dr. Sawbones and you'll hear all of this stuff. Why, when you're an old pro, why, you take this in stride. You take this in stride, because all you were doing was just a standard auditing job and the good indicators were present and of course you expected a good result and that's about the way it was. There's nothing very spectacular about it from your point of view.

But it looks totally magical to this person, you see. All right, how does it look so magical to them? Well, of course, they don't know anything that's going on, because they have no point of view with regard to the situation. They just know they've had this wonderful, magical experience. Years and years and years after I've audited somebody, I'll occasionally get a letter from them – they've had this fantastic and marvelous change and so forth, and it changed the position and condition of their life, and that sort of thing, and they really didn't know what happened. What happened? Well, nothing happened very much except just more or less what was then at that particular current time, standard auditing took place. That wasn't any particular fantastic wand-waving went on or magic occurred. There it was. That was what occurred.

And, if you fix your sights at good indicators and standard sessioning and continue those and then when bad indicators pop up take care of those – take care of the worst one first. That's the other little rule on the thing; always take care of the worst one first.

I'll give you an idea: you've got a dirty needle. Well, I don't think I'd worry about a dirty needle if the pc was throwing the cans down on the floor and screaming with a bypassed charge of items ARC break. I'm sure I wouldn't be worrying about the dirty needle. And if there's big bypassed charge possible in what you're running, of course I sure wouldn't be worrying about the session mid r... I mean I wouldn't be worrying about the session ARC break assessment. Much less mid ruds! My God! In the presence of an ARC break start worrying about mid ruds. That's something like you see, this fellow sees this warehouse full of nitro-glycerin burning, you know, and he goes and gets a glass of water to throw on it. Of course each tool has its own position, you see?

Naturally you want to get the heaviest bypassed charge out of the way first – get that out of the way. Then get the lighter bypassed charge, session ARC breaks out of the way and when you've got that all squared out, why, get something like a little O/W in – something like that – if you're really still patching this thing up. And at some point you will, by the way, patch it up to a point where the patching starts creating bad indicators, you see? No auditing starts occurring, or something. You have to use good sense with regard to that.

But you'll have very smooth sessions as a result. The results of Scientology – the results of Scientology are terribly elementary in their action. What's the good indicator with regard to an auditing question?

The good indicator is that the pc has received something to inspect. He inspects it, you know; he's itsaing it and telling you what his insp... and then he tells you what he has inspected and he answers the question fully, as far as he is concerned, and then you acknowledge.

Now, it doesn't matter whether it's by repetitive – that is to say you got the question fully answered by repetitive commands, or you got the question fully answered by giving him one command and he took a half an hour to answer that one command. He's going through an electronic circuit and he finally comes out the right end of this electronic circuit and he's free of it. He's inspected it. In other words, he's walked through the labyrinth of thoughts he's had crossed up on this particular subject and he's fully answered the question and now you can see this and so you respond.

Now, if at any time you cut his itsa, you of course don't let him walk all the way through the labyrinth, so not having walked through the labyrinth, you'll interrupt him someplace and he feels lost. Of course he's lost! He's lost in the middle of an incomplete inspection. And, in this incomplete inspection, it's electronic materials that he actually is inspecting in the mind and it turns on a dirty needle because you have cut his itsa.

Now, you know this, so you let this person insp... you give him something to inspect; you let him inspect this and when he is finished you tell him he has inspected it by acknowledging it. I don't care whether you did that by repetitive commands or otherwise. That's the basis of all auditing. There is no other basis to auditing than that. And that this – this operation is taking place in the knowledge of certain mental mechanics and activities and there's certain types of questions you can ask and so on... But the person who is answering these questions that are being put to him, and so forth, because he is undergoing conditions and he's doing actions which are bringing him up the line, he will come up with a higher IQ and he'll be brighter and he'll be this and he'll be that – providing you're not auditing him during the presence of a present time problem; you're not trying to press ahead while he has an ARC break; providing these things are occurring; providing you are getting tone arm action, why, the guy can recover from almost anything, don't you see?

I've given you, just in these last few words, the – really the basic essentials of auditing. They're just spit out that fast.

Now, if you can bring that about, you've got all the good indicators present, don't you see – the bad indicators are absent. When a bad indicator shows up you immediately take the lightest necessary action – quickest, quickly to set it to rights – you recognize it swiftly, you take the action necessary to correct it, you've got it corrected and then you're away and not making a profession, now, out of this one bad indicator. And you've got the session wheeling and it's going and so forth, and you keep that ball rolling and just the essentials which I just gave you: keeping the pc's confidence built up in that you're not chopping him down all the time, making sure the pc doesn't have PT problems, making sure that you're not auditing him – somebody over the top of an ARC break, this type of thing, and my God, you'll emerge at the other end – even at your lower levels of auditing, you see – you emerge at the other end with a brand-new being.

You can keep – you can keep doing this. But, of course, if you don't know what auditing looks like, then auditing is to a marked degree quite downgraded. Do you see that?

Well, I've given you a rather long lecture; you can come back fifteen minutes late and we'll start class fifteen minutes late.

But I wanted to particularly go over some of the points of 1963. I thought you might be interested and amused. Tell you how it looked at least from my point of view and to wish you a very happy New Year!

GOOD INDICATORS AT LOWER LEVELS

A lecture given on 7 January 1964

All right. Thank you.

Saint Hill Special Briefing Course, January 7th, AD 14.

All right. Now, I've got something – the reason I'm giving you a lecture today, even though I was apparently a bit under the weather and so forth, is I've got something I'm trying to teach you. And tomorrow in the demonstration you will be able to put this to good use.

Now, you have in front of you HCO Bulletin of December 28th, 1963. And this bulletin here is the "Routine 6 Indicators Part I, Good Indicators." Now that bulletin apparently would refer to Routine 6 and apparently only refer to Routine 6. But in actual fact it contains the most complete list of indicators for any session. Of course, there are several of them that don't apply. Now amongst those that don't apply are whether or not the pc thought it was his own goal. You're not going to get that at Listen-style Auditing, Level I. But if you look this over, you will find out that these apply to most sessions.

And I'm going to take this up with you, rather carefully.

Now, if I could teach you – if I could teach you what a good session looks like, and teach you so that when you look at an auditing session in progress, between an auditor and a pc out there – if I could teach you to be able to say, "That's a good session," or bang, "There's something wrong with that session," why, I could make a whale of an auditing supervisor out of you, see. And you'd really get a lot of success, as a D of P, or something like that – why, you'd just come crashing down the line there. You'd have gains, gains, gains, gains, gains.

And the reason why I'm teaching you this way is because if I can teach you what good indicators are, you can then pick out of the muck – well, what a bad indicator is. And we will take up bad indicators in the next lecture. But if you don't know what the good indicators are, you will never be able to figure out what the bad indicators are.

Now, the reason for this is an auditor's tendency to look for wrongnesses. He's always trying to find something wrong with the pc. Well, that's the nature of Scientology. We assume that there's something wrong with somebody. Otherwise he wouldn't be here on this planet. Otherwise he wouldn't be dead in his head. He would be capable of doing a great deal more than he is doing at the particular moment.

When you get down to an examination of what kind of character a thetan is, we find that man has been making a consistent or even intentional error. And the intentional error is that a being is a piece of amoeba or something in the mud, and only by a great deal of punishment, duress, challenge in the environment, upset, holding a gun on him, giving him high taxes and treating him with medicine, is he made into a sentient being. Only by teachers rapping him over the head with a ruler and being put in there, into the grindstone, being conscripted into the army and made to shoot his fellow man – in other words, that's the only way you get civilized. That's the only way you get civilized.

Well now, remember there's an entirely different action involved here. There's an entirely different action involved here. We have a different concept. And until you can appreciate this, you – you'll see what it is. We see an individual, we see an individual as basically, routinely capable. He's basically and routinely good. He is basically and routinely capable of many actions. He's capable of considerable power and so forth. And we see him in, you might say, a state of a free thetan or a native state as a far more powerful individual than when he's been complicated up.

And we conceive here – we conceive here an entirely reverse idea. We conceive that all of this training in the school, all of this being sent to the front and made to shoot his fellow man, all of this being charged high taxes, all of this being lectured to about how he should be good and bow seven times a day due east to where the lodestone is – all of that sort of thing drags down his capabilities and makes him less capable. Now, we have tremendous evidence, overwhelming evidence all along the line that our concept is true, and that the (quote) "biological concept" is – to be colloquial – erroneous.

We tested a series of schools. Now, in the process of testing schools we found out that although the child was advancing in age, his IQ was dropping. As he advanced in school his IQ became less. Understand, that's very important. I think the highest IQ we ever tested in one Central Organization which was testing floods of people, was tested on a ten-year-old boy. Now, that's the highest IQ tested there. That's very interesting. In other words, the harder and longer they were kept in their basic education – the longer they were kept there, the more stable data was shoved down their throats, particularly false ones, why the less their IQ was. That's interesting.

Now, a college student in the United States has been very carefully masked, and the psyrologist – who was the – those are the ex-phrenologists, you know, the bumps-on-the-brain-boys. If you look up in the *Encyclopaedia Britannica* you'll find – particularly my edition – I have a very choice edition of the *Encyclopaedia Britannica* – it's an old one. I think it's the eleventh edition, I love it, man. It's got all of the, you know, "what is black magic," what is – and it gives long explanations of spells and it gives the early history of hypnotism and it just gives all kinds of things. And when you... most of its articles were written as though you didn't know. The modern encyclopedia is written only for the experts, you see. If you're an expert in landscape gardening and you go and look up landscape gardening, why you'll find out all about it – if you're an expert. Well, these old encyclopedias weren't written that way.

And there's an article in there on phrenology which is – which is marvelous. And it describes the bumps on the brain – bumps on the skull – and it gives a map of the head. And, all of this is very intriguing. Because down below it says this particular patient had an extra large meatus. We're not sure what a meatus was, but he had an extra large meatus which showed that he was fond of torturing animals – and as a matter of fact he was very fond of torturing animals and so became a medical doctor. [laughs] You know, when I read that – you know, I bet they'd burn that book, you know; they'd have a law passed in Congress, you know. They'd tell the president "We're going to cut out your adenoids, man, if you don't have that rescinded!" Of course my quote is very liberal – they didn't say he was a medical doctor who was a member of the AMA, trained recently – they didn't say that. They came very close to it, however! Anyway, I'm just giving you a gag.

The facts of the case here is the psychologist inherited phrenology, you know. Only they just went a little deeper into the subject. The phrenologist studied the skull, and of course the psychologist going deeper into the subject went just inside the skull and started studying the brain. And he has just as many superstitions about the brain and its sizes and lumps as the old phrenologist had about the outside of the skull. Now you might say we've gone to the root of the problem and we've gone to the center of the brain and we found a thetan.

Now, this has been much more productive – much more productive. Truth is demonstrated by workability. Now, this is a subject which would be contested in certain philosophic spheres. I guarantee this would be contested! There are those schools of thought which are so enamored of their own falsities that they demonstrate that no truth need be workable. I think this is rather marvelous. There are certain religious philosophies and so forth which say, "workability is not anything we should have anything to do with because actually it is very sufficient for us that Galen – that Galen said that the blood was like tides and so forth. And these fellows – Harvey – these fellows come along and they say it's pumped or something like that or it runs at the impetus of the heart – why, the workability and the fact that you can observe it and so forth actually has nothing to do with it. The beautiful aesthetic, the beautiful aesthetic of the idea of blood tiding back and forth with the tides of the moon or something of this sort – that is so beautiful and so aesthetic that even though we know it is false there is no reason for us to accept the truth."

Now, did you know that there were schools of philosophy like that? You occasionally run into one of these sad apples, and he will tell you that workability is no test of anything. He will say that – well, what he means actually is workability so challenges his own favorite ideas or philosophies that he mustn't have it anywhere near him.

Now, let us use this anyway: the idea that we can observe, that we do something and we produce an effective result. Actually, remember all the exact sciences built up to their present stature just on that idea alone – that you put A and B together and you'll always get C. Well, now in Scientology we have that level of workability. We have put A and B together and we get C.

So, we have this fellow with lumbosis. We have this fellow with lumbosis – this is the idea of the additive datum to the thetan, see – and this fellow has lumbosis. Now, we can give him heat treatment, we can operate on his lumbo, we can do all kinds of interesting things to

him, and he goes on either having lumbosis or kicks the bucket. Now, this is very interesting, that even Freudian analysts realized that some additive had been added that should be deleted. So the idea of deleting something in order to bring about a recovery is not new with us – but in this particular case we only need ask him what solutions he has had for his lumbosis for him to recover from the lumbosis. In other words, if we could pick up all of his decisions and solutions with regard to lumbosis, then we would pick it up. In other words, that's a perpetuation of an error.

Now, this is all part and parcel of additives. We add something to the being and he gets worse. You understand? Now, we take somebody who is feeling bad. I mean you as a Scientologist can put this to test every time you turn around, so you should know really what the basic philosophy of it is. We take this fellow who has had – he feels *bleau* and he feels down and he feels *baruahh* and life is pretty *nnnyah*. And here he is and we set him down and we put in the mid ruds, see, for the last week or something like this. Now what are we doing there? We're actually subtracting; we're subtracting actions. It isn't necessarily that we're subtracting bad actions, don't you see – we're not subtracting the bad actions and leaving the good actions which are beneficial. We're subtracting the livingness of the last week and he comes up feeling better. I think this is fascinating.

You can do that. You do it well and don't ARC break him and clean cleans, and know how to read your meter and audit him really, you'll always bring about this same thing. Well, what have you done in essence? You have subtracted something from the being. You've taken something away.

All right. Now I have made this test then. Let's – let's go a little more esoteric here. I have taken an insane person, subtracted from this insane being his body. I mean this is just figuratively, literally and actually – this isn't any other type of description. I've subtracted from him his body and had him immediately sane. And sane, talking, responsive and so forth. Added back to him his body – instantly returned to insanity. That's quite interesting. You say how do you do that? Well, you've walked his body off of him. You do it the same way by moving somebody out of his head.

Now, there is something that you can't argue with. Here's something you can't argue with. You take any insane person, he's rather easily handled or persuaded, even though he's terribly dispersed. He's in a point where anything has an effect upon him and he's very easy to exteriorize. Of course, he's still capable of talking through his mouth using his vocal chords, and that sort of thing. How do you know he was out of his body? Well, that hasn't anything to do with it. He said so, you knew so, and that was the only auditing command that was given to him. So there he was, minus the influence, effects or pushes of the body – and the fellow was sane.

Well, I can always produce five, ten minutes of sanity. It actually is not beneficial, doesn't last, it's just an experimental technique. But that's fascinating, isn't it? That you delete from this fellow his body.

All right. Now let's take – let's take this fellow who has been living... You say how about the good things of life? Well, I don't know, how about the good things of life? Of course we could all be pessimists here together today, and say are there any and so on. Well,

yes, as a matter of fact there are. But they are usually cessations. If you look over the good things of life, they are very often positive. Child gets toy or something like this. Well that's fine. That all is taken care of in Scientology under the subject of havingness. But it's *havingness at own choice*. You understand? The individual has this thing he wants. Now, you try to give somebody something he doesn't want and you're going to overthrow his power of choice. So what has happened to this individual is power of choice is the only thing he had to begin with which gave him power, capability or anything else. And that power of choice has been consistently and continuously overthrown by giving him things he didn't want and taking away from him things he didn't want to get rid of and back and forth, and you get the individual pretty overwhelmed and he goes down in power.

But let's take this fellow – he's been getting along fine, he has a goal "to be a great fellow," see – it's a GPM. He's got the goal "to be a great fellow."

He's going around patting everybody on the back, and he's a great fellow. And you'd think, for God's sakes, this is the one thing that makes this man a man, you know. The goal "to be a great fellow."

And unfortunately at the same time he has a bad pain in the back of his skull and he rather has consistent twitches, twitches. And he twitches and so forth. And we audit him up and what do we get? We take away the goal "to be a great fellow," the twitch disappears and he hasn't got the pain in the back of his head. I think this is very fascinating. So – but this was apparently something he was doing, apparently something he wanted. Well, what happened to him? What happened to him actually? He solved something that didn't need solving. There was something he couldn't confront so he solved it. And he fixed the solution. And anytime you go on and fix these solutions forever and ever and ever and ever and ever, you put an individual down grade.

Now, the only reason under the sun that we have any right whatsoever to educate in the field of Scientology – the only right we have to educate at all, is we are teaching things that are as close to fact as possibly can be made. And the technology or the doingness or how you do it or how it is put together and so forth, is so close to actually how it *is* put together that it runs itself out. If you say to somebody who has a solution for lumbosis, "The reason you're having lumbosis is because you have this solution for lumbosis," and sometimes he will get well from just that fact. Now, actually you can make people well simply by teaching them Scientology. So Scientology doesn't come under this ban of educational aberration.

Why? Well, Scientology is the only thing that runs itself out. Scientology is the only solution in this universe which erases itself. Now, for instance, right now, anything that you are being taught – anything that you are being taught – is in actual fact simply being a truth which is being pulled up through the muck and shown to you. And it actually by being shown to you makes it possible for you to reach other truths.

Now when you consider the power of an RI, or you consider the power of one of these fantastic solutions of medicine or something like that – like a big operation or something like that – when you consider the power of an actual GPM, when you consider the power of a service facsimile, all of these things – all of these things – well, I don't quite know how to put this to you, because it's something that I have recently studied and had been rather over-

whelmed with. And it's this – it's this: The data of Scientology, now the data of Scientology is so minor and so sweet and so pure with regard to the tremendous heavy, crashing, banging solutions like service facsimiles, RIs, GPMs, medical operations, all kinds of those other types of solutions – I'm beginning to be very relaxed. You can do almost anything you want to with Scientology, because it sits on the top of this. And when it has solved something it solves what has solved it. And that's never happened before.

In other words, these other solutions are so crashingly big and Scientological solutions are so mild that these – these things disappearing of course make the little mild Scientology solutions just go *phhhh!* And there's practically nothing to it. So we don't come under the category of adding aberrative data to the individual as a solution of his difficulties, because even though it might stand there for a while and worry him, it will eventually reach home and uproot the thing it is sitting on, and it blows along with it.

For instance, every one of you right this minute is sitting in some RI of some kind or another. And if anything made you flinch in the data which you've been given in the last twenty-four hours or its administration and so forth, now or tomorrow or eventually, that data is going to go *phoooo!* It's going to blow. Because it's sitting on top of what it is uprooting. You got the idea? So when it blows, the data blows – but you know the data, because the data is truth. And all of this is very fascinating. In other words, the premise here is that an individual – not to wander far afield now – an individual becomes aberrated. He becomes aberrative by additives. His experiences in this universe are usually calculated to degrade and depower him.

Now, all you have to do is pick up all of these crisscrosses and you return him to power. Now, I've given you a few examples of these. Of course, there are innumerable examples of these things. What we're doing is easily demonstrated. You pick up – you pick up a bunch of data out of this fellow, or know-hows or how-do-its or something like that, he becomes quite bright. You can raise IQ simply by picking up his school education or something like this. And in Scientological data, the data itself is a restimulation of more basic and fundamental truths which restimulated, tend to blow later data. As a matter of fact, some people just study Scientology and they can leap out of bed well. It has happened many times.

Now, what's this all add up to? It adds up that man – man is an added-to being. And everything that has been added to him has decreased his ability to cope.

Now, we've gotten him dependent on tools and that sort of thing. I've studied some of this in anthropology, ethnology and so on. I've studied, I think, twenty-one primitive races including the British and American – and I'm always struck in their history with the fact that they have gone through periods of handicraft which are quite remarkable – quite remarkable. You see them in their museums and so forth. Well, of course, you see these things amongst actual primitive races – the other big joke – you see these amongst actual primitive races down in the Philippines and so forth, and you see these marvelous little pieces of handicraft one way or the other. Somebody has patiently put – he's patiently put little lions' heads on the arms of all the chairs that he was making and something like that. And you see it down there, in – you see it in some of the primitive races as a painstaking job of painting up every stone in the yard with paint. And they're rather clever designs.

You see it – you see it in ivory work amongst the Eskimo – some of the most fantastic things. This fellow's just making a spear, you see. And you see this spear – my goodness, it's all chased and it's got pictures of walruses and so forth. This thing is just a workaday spear! This thing is something that Manchester would turn out zoom-zoom-zoom, you know? And he's got this thing – he has a lot of them, you see – and they got a – they got a walrus there, and there's a couple of seal or there's a little hunting scene of – depicting one of his activities at one time or another, and that's that particular spear. Well, these things are just spears. Spearheads – he's going to throw these things and forget them, and they're going to get stuck and so forth. Well, why did he go to all this trouble? Why did he go to all this trouble?

Well, he had obviously the patience and the talent and the skill with very, very minor tools in order to do that thing. And you find this in a race prior to its automation or mechanization or being provided with adequate tools – (quote) "adequate tools." I think it's quite interesting. You can see it in museums very often, if you want to study this particular point. It is – in other words, all I'm trying to say is, is you give him... This fellow up working in Manchester right now, my God, he's got drill presses and he's got lathes and he's got – he's got all kinds of furnaces and forging materials. And he's got everything under the sun, moon and stars. He's got everything there is. It isn't that he's deleted art. The more you give him to work with – the more you give him to work with, why, in actual fact the less he works. And that's interesting. It isn't that he doesn't have to work less – it's that his ability to work has been reduced. I think it's quite interesting.

You have somebody around sometime in a maintenance department, you'll remember what I say. If you've got somebody coming in all the time, all the time, all the time and he's got to have – he's got to have this and he's got to have that and he's got to have the other thing and he's got to have something else and he's got to have something else and so forth. You walk around the place, you're not going to find anything being done. There's a direct coordination between "got to have" and "getting done." And that's a good datum that you can use in any organizational action. You find the fellow who has to have, more, more, more, more, more in order to get his job done and so forth, is actually doing, usually, very little.

Now, what calls this to account is, that is an aberrative side of simply some thetan's bent for collecting havingness. I immediately think of my cameras. I collect cameras. I'll collect lots of cameras. But it's interesting, it's interesting that in collecting cameras I pay less attention to any one camera. And just had all of my Christmas pictures wrecked by picking up a camera I hadn't paid any attention to for a very long time and one of its buttons had been shoved over to another point and the flash was no longer synchronized with electronic flash. I didn't get any pictures.

Well, what is this? This – that's just having too many cameras, that's all! You didn't pay any attention to the camera you had, don't you see? I've got five, six cameras of one kind or another, see. And there's a good example – I was getting less pictures by having more cameras. But, of course, I just collect cameras for the devil of it.

Now, this is very interesting. It even follows through then into hobby work, and so on. Now there is some point – there is some point if you're dealing in the field of electronics, for

instance – where you require a minimum amount of equipment or a maximum amount of equipment or a certain amount of equipment in order to get something done. Very, very true. Very, very true. And if you don't have that equipment, you're a mess. For instance, you'd have no tapes at all if we didn't have a nice Ampex 600 running, don't you see. And you wouldn't have any television broadcast if we didn't have some cameras and that sort of thing. But remember, we're using these things. These things are in use. And as far as my cameras are concerned, I do take pictures.

But, you know, the people I'm talking about – the people I'm talking about "have to have." And never "do." And it's a good point for you to notice that they "have to have," but they never "do." And you'll see this thing. And it's a totally overwhelmed being.

Now one day up in the cold and dust of a Peking winter and so on, I saw a Chinese carpenter. I saw a Chinese carpenter working. And it's the wildest thing I'd ever seen, because there's an old civilization. There's a very old civilization. You expect them to be very sophisticated in all of their tools and so on. This little Chinese carpenter was working out there in the cold and he was mending up the pillars of the British Legation. They were built out of wood and they'd been gnawed at by dust for a long time, and they had some carvings and some things like this associated with them. And he was fitting in – he was fitting in a new beam and so on for one that had been rotted out, and he was fitting it all in very nicely. And I talked to him for a little while. And I stood there just absolutely fascinated!

This man had a little bow, it was about six inches long and it had a piece of string from the two corners of the bow, and he had a drill – he had a drill that he had taken out of a fish that he had had for breakfast. And he had a little piece of stone that he'd picked up in the street which happened to have a little concavity in the back of it. And he took the fish bone and wrapped the string of the little bow around it and then held it with this palm fitting – this stone – and went up and down with the fish bow. And he had a nice auger, and he was drilling holes in the wood and then he was taking – he was taking then a little knife that was hardly a knife at all, it was just a sliver of metal that he had managed to sharpen up, and he was taking bits of wood off of the old beam, of course – he – you know, that he was discarding. He wouldn't have used new wood for that. And he was taking these things and he'd flick up a little piece like – off there, and then he'd go so-and-so and so-and-so and so on and next thing you know he had a dowel. And then he'd put the dowel where he had drilled the hole and then he'd tap it in with his – with this same stone. He was building more beam faster than a US carpenter. I looked at this and he was perfectly competent with these tools. And he was taking the greatest of care. And he was making the nicest possible things out of the thing. Interesting, isn't it?

This little fellow in other words, was perfectly capable of doing a job with – of course, you could say tools to which he was accustomed – but using the minimum tools. And you don't find people who are having a good time of it using a minimum of tools. Now, to him those tools were effective. Those were effective tools, man! I think to do the same job – nobody would have been putting something together with wooden dowels, anyway! They would have been nailing it together with nails at vast expense and so on.

You say, well, what about this fellow? Well, this fellow actually had never really been spoiled by being taught all of the things he had to have before he was a carpenter.

I think all you'd have had to do was added to his education of "You have to have nails and you have to have a hammer with a five-pound head and then you have to have actually three hammers, you have to have so on and so on, and then you have to have – and you have to have – and you have to have before you can drill a hole." And the "have to have" gets in the road of ever getting the hole drilled, see. It's interesting. In other words, you could have added to his understanding of carpentry to the degree of "you can't do without certain union tools" to a point where he can no longer carpenter. That's the only point I'm making here.

The earlier history of races or the more primitive cultures and so on are fascinating to me, to the amount of time and the amount of skill which is put into odd little bits. And now man is getting up to a point where he can mass produce these things and so forth, all of which is very, very interesting. I'm sitting here looking at a Georgian fireplace of the early eighteenth century, and the amount of work which has gone into chopping up that marble there, probably could not be found, modernly. We could say, "Oh yes, somebody could have made it." No, I don't think so. Because I've seen a lot of modern marble work. And they have better tools today but they don't turn out the same work. I'm also looking at a fire grate and so forth of the same period. Fancy, man – fancy! It's all scrolled and chased and that sort of thing. Why some of the best stamping machines and patterns they make these days don't turn those things out, and yet that was probably turned out with a blacksmith – by a blacksmith, all by his lonesome. He said, "Well, let's fix up a fireplace!" Bang, bang! "I think it ought to have some nice scrollwork and so forth and so on!"

What's happening here? What's happening here? It's just the more you add to the workman, why, the less individual work one accomplishes. You get the better workman, it isn't that he can make do, it's that he does anyway. And you say, well, if you kept taking his tools away from him he might not be as good a workman and so forth, because he couldn't do. Well, there is a point, of course, that we have to remember. He's working in a body; he's working at great limitations. But there is something in which I say – a fellow can have too much – he can have too much burden, he can have too much this and that.

What's this all amount to? This amounts to the fact that we're in the business of deleting wrongnesses from the individual. Now, because – now understand – understand this very carefully – because we are in the business of deleting wrongnesses from the individual, we darn seldom look at rightnesses. And that's what's wrong with most auditors. They are so anxious to find the wrongness – and quite properly – that they really never look at the rightness. And if they don't look at the rightnesses that are present, then they aren't appreciating the degrees of truth that are present which can be promoted up into more truth. In other words, they're starting at a level of no truth present all the time, so of course they never make any forward progress.

You must realize – you must realize that there must be truth present, and that that truth must be recognized. And that is hand and fist a part of auditing: the recognition of the fact that a truth is present. If you only look for wrongnesses and only recognize wrongnesses, then

you will never be able to pull anything up a – gradient because you won't think you have any rightnesses to work with. It just all looks wrong to you.

Now that's an interesting concept. That's an interesting concept. We have to be able to look at the wrongnesses in order to right them, but we also have to be able to look at the rightnesses in order to increase them. We're only trying to find wrongnesses in order to increase rightnesses. And that's very important. If you have no rightnesses present in a session, you will never be able to make any progress of any kind. Now that's what's interesting. Progress is built on a gradient scale of rightnesses by which you delete wrongnesses and they drop and fall away.

Therefore, processing is an action by which wrongnesses can be deleted from the case to the degree that rightnesses are present in the session. Do you see that? You cannot take a case that doesn't have any rightnesses present and delete a wrongness. That's not possible.

So you have to realize that there are rightnesses present and then you increase those rightnesses. And that makes it possible for you to pick up the wrongnesses. And that's what auditing – auditing really consists of. It's a contest of maintaining rightnesses so that we can delete wrongnesses.

Now if you keep on then deleting wrongnesses, all the while maintaining and increasing the rightnesses, you eventually wind up with a very right being. Now let me state this to you a little bit different so that you really get it. You're trying to get a right being. Therefore, if you don't continuously encourage right beingness, you never wind up with a right being. This actually is one of those things where I realize I'm stacking up little kid's blocks A, B and C and so forth, but I'm always astonished that they get missed.

You see, I've had actually ten or thirteen years of losses of trying to teach somebody to observe an auditing session and so forth, and I finally made a breakthrough here and I'm giving it all we have. You want your pc to wind up right. You know, I mean a right state. He's in a more native, more capable, less overwhelmed, higher power of choice sort of state. All right, you want him to wind up with more rightnesses. Well, therefore, if you audit so that you do not increase or encourage and increase rightnesses, then you won't wind up with a right pc. I mean, it – I'm – it's idiotic you know – I feel like I'm yelling in the wind here, to some degree, because I've tried to point this out before but I've really never had language to do so.

And if – for instance, if you want to pick up a God-awful, horrendous, crashing wrongness – let's put it in ratio form – we got to pick up this fantastic wrongness here. And we got this wrongness, you see. And it's something on the order of this big.

Now the degree of action which you have to have, or the degree of rightness you have to have present over here – the degree of rightness you have to have present must exceed the wrongness. In other words, you have to have at least this much rightness. I don't know if you can see those or not on the screen, doesn't matter, they're just two circles of similar size. In other words we're trying to pick up this wrongness and erase it. Well, to do so, we have to have this rightness present. In other words, you've got to have rightness in a session at least as great as the wrongness you're trying to pick up. It's a proportional action. Proportional. Now frankly, if you've got as much wrongness in a session as you've got rightness, you're not rid-

ing on any cushion. You've got – you've got yourself a comparative situation here that's going to eat somebody up.

Now the facts of the case are – the facts of the case are that if you – if you want to pick up this little rightness here – this little fellow, this little wrongness here – and you've got to have rightnesses – we've got to have rightnesses present, which are *that* big in order to engulf it. Now that's an easy job of auditing. Now these comparable – there's as much wrongness in the session as there is rightness, comparable magnitude, that makes a very difficult job of auditing – very difficult. But you get somebody who is – oh, he's singing and happy and cheerful and so forth and it's all springtime and so on, and you say to him and so forth – you say to him, "Did you know so-and-so and so-and-so?" And he looks at it and his ability to as-is is so great that he simply goes *pphhh!* and it's gone. Do you understand?

Now, you get this fellow and he is worried and he is nervous and he is upset and you give him a little, tiny, peanut-sized present time problem that is very, very little and so on, and the wrongnesses in the session – that is to say the rightnesses in the session are very minor, and the problem is a very tiny problem but there isn't enough rightness in the session to handle the problem and he actually cannot erase it. You get the idea?

Now, you – we could talk about banging somebody into a GPM and so on. But you realize that all you've got to do is delete good indicators from a session, one after the other, and your pc will not be able to as-is – he won't be able to as-is a speck of cigarette ash on the middle of the rug. In other words, he can't as-is anything.

So a pc's ability to as-is – and here is your rule and your datum and which you should remember well: *The pc's ability to as-is or erase in a session is directly proportional to the number of good indicators present in the session.* You see that? It's proportional to that – and his inability to cope in a session is also measured proportionally. His inability to cope in the session rises proportionately to the number of bad indicators present in a session. As we delete good indicators of course, we get bad indicators. Except they don't cross one to the other necessarily.

But if we had very few good indicators in a session we would have a very small ability on the part of the pc to as-is. And if we have a lot of good indicators in a session, then the pc's ability to as-is is much greater. And you can actually bog a pc down – you can bog a pc down. Every once in a while you'll find a pc sick. You know, I mean life and so forth, and he's done something or other. Pc's sick, you'll find – I don't say once in a while you find a pc sick, but every once in a while an auditor will have this experience that the pc is sick and the auditor can't continue to run the process he has been running, but has to drop back to a very minor process indeed. Auditors very often overlook this.

They were running this pc on service facsimiles and not for any reason of auditing, because of duress or weather or something of this sort, the pc got himself a stomachache or something and... ate something bad or something. And he gets back into the session again and the auditor tries to go on running the process and, by George, the process won't run. Well, the auditor's not on the ball. The good indicators, you see, are inadequate to the running of the process which was in progress. Got that?

So what's the score here? He has a sick pc. So he has to fall downstairs to running something like "Look around here and find something you could have," see. He's got to run the pc's Havingness Process, or give the pc a Touch Assist or something like this. He hasn't got enough sense to retrograde the process to cope with the state of the pc.

Now, what problem is he up against there? Actually, good indicators in the session are inadequate to handle the wrongnesses the auditor is trying to eradicate. Now, that's what's happening in the session. Now, you get yourself a sick pc every time you see the good indicators vanish – and the pc can be considered sick. You've just – you haven't got any good indicators in the session. Well, all right. Good indicators have dropped out of the session – your pc's ability to as-is is going to be very, very, very, very lowered. Going to be much lower than it was. The indicators are much low... the good indicators are much fewer, the pc's ability to handle wrongnesses is much less.

Now, you remember that the next time you see a pc start to bog, start to drag, start to flounder one way or the other. What's happening? These good indicators are not present, therefore the pc's ability to handle a wrongness is lessened. The pc – you've got to get the good indicators back in before you can get the pc to handle what you want him to handle. That's the only thing you can do about that. Now, how you go about that is a horse of another color, and is no part of this lecture. I'm just telling you the good indicator.

Now, I worked all this out, and every once in a while – I'm never – I'm never such a fool as to believe that I can't learn anything about auditing and so forth. In fact – in fact, amongst you there may be some of you who have no more to learn about auditing and so forth and I congratulate you because that is a very happy state to be in and I have never achieved it. That's a mean thing to say, but I've never – never achieved this happy state – I always have something new to learn about auditing. Always! I can always learn something from any given session. And I'm struck to the degree of my own ignorance sometimes as to what I have been neglecting. I'm sometimes overwhelmed by it a little bit and I say, "Hey, what do you know! All these years I've been watching *wah-wah*, and I never knew that a *wah-wah* – what do you know!" you know, and I get very interested in it. In other words, I can make progress along this line.

And after cursing and snarling about how it was almost impossible to impart to an auditor about how a session was put together – what a session should look like – and after having this problem on my plate for about thirteen years, I solved it – because auditors couldn't observe pcs. This has been nagging, nagging, nagging and this has been right up front as a research project. You think I've been researching only very esoteric things – no, that isn't so. I always have my eye on the fundamentals and the improvement thereof, see. I was snarling around, and "auditors never learned" – this will – this will give you – this is a good laugh, see – "auditors just never learned to observe pcs," you see.

And I finally figured out this system: good indicators and bad indicators. You see, when a good indicator disappears a bad indicator doesn't necessarily show up. They are not – they are not a justice scale, where you put so much on one side and take it off that side and put it on the other side, you know. That's why they're released here in two different sections.

Good indicators are good indicators and they don't become bad indicators. Bad indicators are something else entirely different. And good indicators are something else. Good indicator disappears – another breed of cat called a bad indicator shows up. And they're usually not at once translatable. You have to memorize them in their own categories.

But anyhow, I worked this over and I got it all worked out and I saw what it was and so on, and I thought, "Now," I says, "that will show them something – that will show them something," and so-and-so. I was very happy then because I realized that I could show you without a lot of trouble what an auditing session should look like and so that you could correct some of this and so you could get a raised workability out of auditing, see, so as you could make your auditing of a pc work better. I was very happy about it.

Here's the joke: I was sitting in a session I was giving, and all of a sudden I noticed that a good indicator was missing – pc cogniting. Pc had ceased to cognite. So slight a difference here, you see. I just said, "Hey, there's a good indicator missing. Hm-mm!" So I said, "I'm going to find out what's wrong here, right away." Pc hadn't even begun to dream that there was anything wrong. And – see, auditor finding out – you... auditor, by the way, you know – here's another rule: The auditor must always find out what's wrong in a session before the pc finds out. That's how you hold altitude as an auditor. That's how you hold control. You must always find out what's wrong in a session before the pc finds out.

When the pc finds out and has to tell you why, your – your altitude suffers and so forth, and you have less control over the pc.

Now, in this particular instance and so forth, I – very clever indeed – I said "A good indicator's missing. Ah!" And I looked at the list which I had in front of me and noticed that it was a very, very short list indeed, and that nothing had fallen on it, and the pc was just about ready to make a critical remark or say something or other and introduce some new bad indicators into the session, and didn't get a chance to introduce them. I said, "Complete the list!" That was obviously what I said. Pc says, "Oh! Oh! Oh, yes! Yes!" Completed the list and so forth, and we got the list complete and went on cogniting. Started cogniting again!

And we – pc and I laughed about this a great deal, because it was – it was so quick. It was so quick off the mark that the pc really didn't find out what was going on until it was all over. And yet was probably saved – probably saved a half an hour or something like that, of patch-up, ARC break, that kind of auditing. See? It undoubtedly saved a half an hour's worth of auditing, just that.

So right away I dreamed this up so as to make you a better auditor, and I've become a better auditor as a result. So thank you. But anyway, that was very good and it saved me just like that – bang! Just a half an hour's worth of auditing. Because that cognition drop out, that would have been followed by something else and that would have been followed by something else and the good indicators would have dropped out and dropped out and dropped out – and, of course, that's a very light indicator. The bad indicators would have shown up, then I'd have gone and had to figure out what was wrong – and I'd have had to backtrack where we were at the time when it went out and then I would have found that we'd had an incomplete list at that time.

Well, obviously it only – could have been only one thing wrong in the session at that moment because all I was doing was trying – was just doing a short list. So there was only one thing wrong and it must have been an incomplete list. You could just get off the mark like that because it wasn't overlisted; it wasn't long enough. So, bang! Good indicator disappeared, I say something's wrong with exactly what I'm doing because the good indicator disappeared right there, and it was right there while I was doing it and I hadn't cut the pc's itsa and my observation of my own auditing was high – so I said, therefore, we have an incomplete list. So, complete the list. The pc was just getting ready to say, "You *wah-wah-wah* and-and-and it – oh, all right. I'll complete the list!" That was the end of that.

In other words, there are three degrees of indicators: There's light indicators, there's medium indicators and heavy indicators. And the very unobservant auditor only uses heavy indicators. Screaming ARC break. There is a fourth grade: Pc won't come near an auditing session. And we never let it go that far. But the medium indicator – that's pretty darned obvious. And the light indicator is something you either do something about or merely get alert about. It's an alerting thing more than a using thing. A medium indicator is something you use and must do something about right now, and a heavy indicator means you've missed the light indicators.

Now, any process has its own series of bad indicators. And the bad indicator moves in when the good indicator moves out. So you have to have as a primary knowledge – this sounds odd – but you have to have as a primary knowledge, a knowledge of good indicators.

Now, you never look – don't look for a bad indicator. Don't look for a bad indicator on and on and on. Don't look for bad indicators all the time, all the time – you'd drive the pc round the bend and suppress your good indicators. What you want to do is to know your good indicators so well that when one of them disappears from the type of process for – that's for the level you're running – know the good indicators so well that when one of them disappears out of a session, your ears go up *spannngg!* and you instantly look for the bad indicator. And really, don't look for the bad indicator until you see the vanishment of the good indicator.

When you see good indicators vanishing, you look for the bad indicator. Otherwise, you are always continuously prowling around looking for wrongnesses in a session and you keep the pc very upset and you get no auditing done of any kind whatsoever. So this other system is far better, and quite usable and quite a good system.

Now rapidly, let's go over the Routine 6 and Level VI indicators. These are all good indicators. And I'm merely going to read them off. You've got them in your bulletin of December the 28th and can copy them from them so I'm not going to bother you with making notes of this particular set because you have no business being separated or away from that bulletin.

"Pc cheerful." Now, what do we mean, pc cheerful? Well, we mean the pc's cheerful. That's what we mean. The degree of misemotion that the pc is indulging in must be a diminishing degree. Interesting, isn't it? A diminishing degree. Pc hits a grief charge or something like that – now, these – remember, Routine 6. In Routine 6, pc cheerful. Your pc hits any misemotion of any kind whatsoever – that's all under the heading of bad indicator. So when we say pc cheerful, pc should be running like a grinning idiot. You understand? Cheerful!

You know? Teeth! Smiling! You know? Happy! "*Ha-da-da-da-da-da-da-da. Bow-wow-wow-wow!*" You know? "Oh, it's a dog and a bog and a bagitibog and a pokatawog. Oh, and that – ha! And what do you know about that! That's a wudiwum! Yeah, all right! Bang! *Kow-chow-pow! Cha-pow-pow-pow! Pow-pow!*" Cheerful! "Oh, a gugfrog! Oh, my – all my life, all my life I've been worried about gugfrogs!" You know? [snaps fingers] Bang! You know? *Pc cheerful!*

So – at other levels, however, you have different actions. R3R, if your pc is laughing all the time he is having a grief charge, we would say something is – weird's going on. We're trying to run secondaries on the pc, we don't expect the pc to be cheerful. But your misemotion should be diminishing in a session – diminishing. It isn't that you have to suppress the pc's misemotion, but you'll find a good grief charge off at certain levels of auditing is a very fine thing indeed. But it must be diminishing and working back up toward cheerful. So it's – other levels of auditing, "pc cheerful" would become "pc working in a direction to becoming more cheerful." So at other levels you would have "pc getting more cheerful" as your indicator. It would be the change of degree. That's for lower levels.

Now, we don't, of course, have at lower levels "pc cogniting on goals and items," but we certainly do have "pc cogniting." And if you've got a noncogniting pc... John Sanborn once said very wisely – he said, "You know," he said, "I'm suspicious of this guy. I'm suspicious of him. You know, he never looks around and says, 'Well, what do you know!' you know? He never looks at anything and says, 'Well, what do you know!'" And he said, "I'd feel an awful lot better if sometime or another he'd look at something and say, 'Well, what do you know!'" Well, what he's spotting there was a pc who was not cogniting which would be a sure symptom that the pc was running in a present time problem, an ARC break, was running at a level above his level or ability to handle. Pc not cogniting.

"Pc's items found are the ones pc thought they were on the list." Well, of course, that is relatively inapplicable at lower levels except for this: You very often find that what a pc thought was wrong early on in his life turned out to be what was wrong. And if he – if he's coming up with things like this: "You know, as a little boy I always suspected it was because my father was – was so on, so on, so on, so on, so on, on – and, by George, you know that's a fact!" The rightness of the pc – the basic or fundamental rightnesses of the pc – are asserting themselves, is the way that could run at lower levels.

Now, you have "pc listing items briefly and accurately." That would apply to listing – any listing activity. But in other levels – giving things to the auditor briefly and accurately.

"The early items on the list turning out to be the right ones." That – that's – doesn't even apply anymore to Routine 6. Just scrub it.

"The right" – well, if overlisted it takes the pc too long to find out anything and so forth. You'd say pc finding out things or finding things rapidly is your good indicator. Pc is finding things rapidly. Takes the pc a *looong* time to find something. You've seen a pc sit there and say... The obvious answer, of course, is the fact that he's been beaten, you see? "Why do you feel bad?" you know, and the pc says, "Ohhhhhh," and so forth and it just takes him – takes him a half an hour or forty-five minutes to come up with the fact, "Well, I guess I

feel bad because I just got beaten." In other words – in other words, the speed of turnup – the speed of the pc finding something or giving up something.

This next one could be translated as "a proper reading meter." The next one, "items found not rocket reading," well, that has no applicability to anything except you've got to have – what's being done is giving proper meter responses. And you've got your "goals found rocket reading" – well, what's found gives its proper meter response.

And this next one could be determined as – "short item lists" – could be determined as "it doesn't take long periods of time to get something done with this case." This, by the way, is an indicator that a lot of auditors should pay more attention to. They – they – they themselves think it just takes forever.

I used to scare – I had an auditor one time that I used to scare half to death. The auditor would run something and I'd change and it'd get over and it'd straighten up and so forth and that would be that and the auditor was just settling down. And the auditor actually didn't like to audit me very much – I changed too quickly and had cognitions too fast and this was very tiring because he had to think up a new process at once, of course.

And you'll see – some auditors sit down and they're going to run "I see the cat," you see, and they're sitting that down for a nice long intensive and then it's flattened off in twenty minutes. We just had it happen out here. I gave a process over to an auditor to run and it was reported to me from all sides that the process hadn't been run. And I found out the facts of the case were the process had been run on the pc but the pc had been able to cope with the process and handle it and come up to a final cognition on it in a half an hour.

Now, the expectancy on every hand, then – that was going to take a long time to run that process. Well, it takes as long to run a process as it takes to run it. And a pc running processes easily and rapidly, and flattening them on comm lag or cognition or meter thing, is a good indicator. An indicator that's very often missing in sessions and you never notice it. The pc is taking forever to flatten something. Well, that's not necessarily a good indicator at all.

"Items being found rapidly without a lot of hassle, even though the right item was hard to make read." Now, that only applies to Routine 6. In ordinary auditing, it translates over into – into this: Being able to get the datum for the pc without an awful lot of wrastle. You ask the pc, "What's your name?" you know, and the pc three hours later finally guarantees with a giggle that he'll let you in on the fact that the first name begins with J. I wouldn't say that that was a good indicator. Pc giving the auditor information easily is the good indicator. See? Easily.

All right. Now, "tone arm continuing in motion – not stuck." Now, that's a good indicator. But that's an indicator which can be overdone. If you've got some other good indicators present, like pc flattening processes rapidly – if you've got these present and he's coming up with new things easily and rapidly and so forth, our action here is cancelled out. In other words, the tone arm keeps going flat. Well, it would be very dumb auditing indeed that would try to get a flattened process to produce more tone arm action, you know? "Well, yesterday he got beautiful tone arm action on critical thoughts of his father. But today we just keep trying to run this process and trying to run it and, you know, I don't get any tone arm action." Well,

never occurs to him the – another good indicator was present, and that was that the pc was easily and rapidly flattening processes given. That – that's a good indicator. So if that indicator was present, then we don't expect the tone arm to keep moving forever on the same old hassle. We – we've got to – we've got to – we've got to change our sights here on this case.

Now, "the needle active." Now, that's something in meter reading that you seldom see – you seldom really watch for. You're so worried, usually, about dirty needles and that sort of thing that you don't – don't really watch for an active needle. What's meant by an active needle? Well, it's a not s... it's a needle that's not stuck, but it's a needle that is fluid or fluent. It's a needle that moves around. It's a needle that – that is pretty easy to handle.

Now, these new Mark VIs – new Mark Vs, meters and so on (and there is a Mark VI, too), but that meter is so easy to set up to a high, high, high sensitivity that you can very easily lie – get it to lie. You can get it to tell you a lie. That it all – it looks like it has a more fluid needle than it has. And in a great – if I'm – if I'm trying to pull withholds or something like that, well, I pull out my crank on one of these new modern meters and I crank it all the way up. Sensitivity 128 and the sensitivity knob set over to 32 and everything on the fire, you see, and my trained and educated thumb having an awful time trying to keep that needle at Set. Because I want that thing to read all it's going to read. But that's – that's trying to clean things, you understand? That's trying to clean withholds. That's doing a very picky, particular job of the kind where it doesn't matter if you clean a clean once in a while. If you leave the withhold on the case, you've had it, don't you understand?

So, that kind of auditing – yes, yes, crank it up, man! That's what it's made that way for. And all other kinds of auditing *deeeowww* – down. I run one of those meters ordinarily – at Routine 6 – never run one of those things higher than sensitivity 8. Never. Never run it higher than that – for listing and items and that sort of thing. Crank it way down and get – make sure – sometimes you can be fooled. You can get that 128 button down there and it's all over to 128 and you're trying to crank your meter down and yet you've doubled and tripled and quadrupled your sensitivity down below. So get that thing set over at minimum and your tone arm set at about 8 and you can do almost any reading you want to read. And then kick the sensitivity – I said tone arm, I meant sensitivity knob – kick your sensitivity knob to about 16 while you're doing a mid rud. And just move it up and down between 16 for doing your mid ruds or since mid ruds and move it back to 8. And frankly, that's about as high as you would ever expect one of those meters to have to perform. Performing them wide open causes a lot of trouble, causes the auditor a lot of trouble and causes a lot of comm lags in the session.

Now, there's about where your meter ought to read and where you ought to be handling your meter. And now, I'm talking now about the sensitivity 8 set meter when I say an active needle. And that – that needle shouldn't be stuck. That needle shouldn't be hanging up. That needle should be moving.

And it drifts easy. And when we mean a needle active, we mean that it drifts easily or moves easily. The pc has a big think, you see, and the needle goes *pprrrrr!* And the thing is rising and all of a sudden strikes back a couple of divisions. And it ticks and tocks and it sweeps up and it goes down and so forth. Your needle isn't sitting around – your needle isn't

sitting around – stuck. Your needle doesn't – you haven't set your needle at Set and then it just sits at Set and it just goes on sitting at Set. Well, of course, this would mean tone arm action was out, too.

But do you know you can have tone arm action present and the needle not active or fluid? You can have tone arm action with a gummy needle. And you want to get educated enough so that you can see this because it's an important good indicator. You're getting some tone arm action, the tone arm is going up and down a little bit and so forth. But that needle's kind of going throb-throb clockety-clock – dirty, see, that's one of the symptoms – but actually doesn't move much. It'll go on a reaching upsurge or it – or a climbing surge or it'll do a fall and so forth on the things it's supposed to fall on but it – it acts gummy. And when you see it there that is a good indicator gone. A good indicator is your needle ought to be cleanly swinging about. And if you've got a cleanly swinging about meter, then your pc – your needle – your pc is running very smoothly and there's probably very little wrong in the session. That's a – that's a good indicator. Good indicator – that clean, active needle.

Now, going on down the line here, taking up a few more of those things. Here it gives you "pc not troubled with new mass appearing when item is given." Well, that's a Routine 6 indicator. But I would say "the pc is not being troubled with new pains and somatics and pressures and upsets by reason of an auditing question or its repetition." I'd say it was a good indicator that your pc was running easily. And if he is hitting somatics, they're discharging. Your good indicator is that any somatic the pc runs into is fluid. It is in and out. It is momentary. It's a twitch. Any pressure is a *prrrrrp* – and then off and so forth. Those are all good indicators. The pressure or pain or somatic that moves in and gets heavier and then stays there and so forth, inevitably and invariable means something is real wrong. You're doing something wrong.

But what – what you want, the som... when you get rid of somatics on a pc it ought to be flick and spick and swish and pang and – it's in and out, don't you see. The shoulder – all of a sudden he's got some pressure on his shoulder and then all of a sudden he gets hot and it's gone. That's a good indicator. You've given him an auditing command and he gets pressure on his shoulder. You give him another auditing command and he's got a bit more pressure on his shoulder. Give him another auditing command, he's got the same pressure on his shoulder. Another auditing command and he's got the same pressure on his shoulder. Another auditing command and he's got the same pressure – *ohhh*, nuts, man! There's a good indicator has started missing. Somatics aren't – aren't fluid. They aren't going in and out and so forth, turning on and off. You want to get changing somatics in a session, in other words.

And this, of course, is an R6 indicator – "RI given the pc blowing tone arm down when pc asked if it is it." Well, that's normal. But you ought to have your tone arm go down when the pc hits a cognition, and that's a good indicator. Pc cognites – needle down, tone arm down. Good indicator.

Now, "a further blowdown of TA as the pc goes on talking about something." That doesn't matter – it's just right here in the good indicators, but actually there's a normal session indicator that's comparable to this, which is that you're getting more action once a pc's talking.

If you're not getting tone arm action when the pc's talking, there's something wrong. There's something wrong here, that's not – not too – going too good.

"Distinct needle slash two inches or so when the pc is asked if new item solves or is solved by RI found just before" and so forth. In a normal session it turns into the same indicator I gave you before, which is simply expected meter behavior. Nothing unexpected in this meter behavior. A full-dial slash comes under the same one, the next one, nothing unexpected in the meter behavior. Meter's behaving the way it ought to behave.

And "heat on an item list" – now, a good indicator is pc gets warm and stays warm in auditing. Or gets hot and unheats and so forth while auditing. Pc does not get chilled in auditing – that's a bad indicator. And these – all these heat items are the same.

Now, of course if you could audit somebody with no pain ever and so forth, this would be very unusual indeed and is not even desirable. So at lower levels you run – and if the pc never gets a somatic, never has a pain and so forth in auditing, you wonder what's going off. So in lower levels it's "occasional somatics" is a good indicator. Somatics are a good indicator. Any kind of somatic – pain or so forth. That's a good indicator. Routine 6, we change horses: you get pain, there's something wrong, which is a vast difference in these things.

Now, we get "tone arm riding between 2.5 and 3.75 acceptable or 2.25 and 3 which is excellent." And you will find that that is a good indicator at any level. That's fine for any level.

Now, "good tone arm action on finding items" or good tone arm action on spotting things for any level. Good tone arm action on spotting things. But you already got your divisions for various levels of auditing and so on, and they all hold good and that you're getting that expected TA action is a good indicator. Getting the expected TA action for any level of processing is a good indicator, of course – the best.

"Good tone arm action" is – I just gave you that.

"The right item reading with only some coaxing." Well, that's peculiarly Routine 6. I would say that, you're getting reads on what you and the pc think is wrong – I'd say that was a good indicator. Getting reads on what you and the pc think is wrong. You've agreed that something or other – that there's been hell to pay about little brothers or something of the sort, and you're busy discussing this, and you suggested it and the pc followed in with it and you've discussed it back and forth and lo and behold! that subject is giving needle and TA action. That subject is giving needle and TA action. Well, that's a real good indicator.

You – you're dealing with things that the pc thinks it is and that you think it is and you're getting tone arm action. Now, if you're dealing with things that you think it is and the pc thinks it is and you're not getting any tone arm action and so forth, then somebody is wrong. It may be you and it may be the pc, but certainly a good indicator is missing from the session. And the good indicator is: is that you and the pc in thinking over what the score is about his case and so forth, get tone arm action on what you think it is, not something else.

All right. And this is a very important – very important indicator for any level: pc with no PTP. Doesn't mean that it's a bad indicator that the pc has a PTP, but if the pc is running along between sessions and during sessions with no PTPs, it's a good indicator. Unless, of

course, the pc is in total propitiation and can't even compos mentis. Then, of course, that's another horse of another hue. But there's – there's what that is with – pc isn't developing horrendous PTPs. Pc that develops horrendous PTPs between sessions and so forth – that's a bad indicator.

Good indicator: The pc isn't developing a lot of balderdash between sessions and isn't developing PTPs in session and so forth. That's a good indicator. You can take a look at the pc and you find this pc isn't developing a lot of PTPs, but just cheerfully happily cogniting and going on and so forth and so on. It's a very good indicator.

Pc that develops PTPs in session about session – ha-ha! Bad indicator – which has its own story, because we're only taking up good indicators here.

And "pc with no question as to what was the right goal or item." Now, that works out in all levels this way: Is the pc afterwards doesn't come around to the auditor and say, "Do you think that was really the reason I had the lumbosis?" see? The pc stays certain of the auditing solution. PC remains certain of the auditing solution. That's a good indicator. It doesn't mean terribly much that they are uncertain of the auditing solution – that's not necessarily a bad indicator. But it certainly is a good indicator that the pc remains certain that that was the solution to the situation. And they said, "So-and-so and so-and-so and so on." They don't afterwards say, "Well, *wah-wah-wah-wah-wah-wah-wah*. I'm not sure, sure, sure. Whether the – because *wah-wah*." That – that's all the reverse of the good indicator. So the pc remains certain.

And of course this is a Grade III indicator of any level: "Pc not critical or ARC breaky." Any pc that is critical of the auditor is ARC broken. Now, I can guarantee that. And I don't know how many auditors I have been dismayed that I couldn't quickly teach this to. They learn it eventually, but it's – it's just pc says, "Well, I don't know, I so on and so on and so on. It was this – that sharp tone of voice that you're using" and so forth. And the auditor is always so willing to be reasonable. I don't know why you run yourselves down like this. They're so willing to be reasonable.

I'll take that much chit-chat in a session for exactly – measured actually, measured actually by astronomical instruments – one-thousandth of a millisecond. I'm right in there – *bang! boom! zoom!* Because it's not reasonable to me that a pc would be critical of the auditor in a session. I don't care if I've just dropped the silverware on the floor! You understand? That's not reasonable to me. Why isn't it reasonable? Because the pc is there to be helped and I'm there to help the pc and I am doing my best to help the pc and that the pc is then critical – well, I don't find that reasonable. I don't care what mistakes I made – it still is never reasonable to me. And it never will be reasonable to me, because every single criticalness on the part of a pc can be run back to an ARC break that the pc has just had, or to an overt the pc has on the auditor or a withhold the pc has not disclosed. And those are the reasons for the critical pc.

I'll tell you what's happened. I have actually committed horrible blunders in a session, see? I mean almost tipped the desk over type of thing, don't you see? Just *whoa!* You know? And a pc would just say, "Oh, well all right. This is – so what? And so on. So you tipped over the desk, you know?" You know, "Let's get back to what I was running here."

"Well, did it distract your attention...?"

"No, no it's all right. Didn't matter. Now, what I was talking about here is my father..."

Had this happen too often, see? The pc didn't pay any attention. But this time, you see, I just adjust my tie and the pc says, "I can't stand this terrific motion that is going on in this session."

Heh-heh-heh-heh-heh. Then I'm expected to believe that it's because I adjusted my tie that upset the pc. Hey, come off of it! This is why you need to know good indicators, see? That would never upset anybody! So there must then be one of the other things which I just mentioned present in the session.

So – "pc happy with, satisfied with auditor, regardless of what auditor is doing" is a good indicator. And you state that for all levels and you won't be wrong. And that's a very extreme one and you won't be able to understand it sometimes or anything of the sort. I've seen auditors committing the most horrible blunders and their pcs perfectly happy with them and so forth. Well, that's because auditor behavior and activity actually doesn't influence to any great degree the attitude of the pc. What influences the attitude of the pc is an ARC break that, of course, is influenced earlier by the auditor's behavior or the pc's got an overt on the auditor or the pc has a missed withhold of some kind or another. And they influence the pc's attitude toward the auditor, but the auditor's actual activity, as long as that auditor is even halfway trying, as long as he's in there sweating, as long as he's working, as long as he's trying to get his job done at all – doesn't influence the pc's attitude. How do you like that?

So you can broaden this to "pc happy and satisfied with auditor" is another good indicator. Of course, this is aside of the fact the pc is cheerful and so forth. You got it? Pc says, "Oh, and so-and-so and so-and-so" – well, there's something gone wrong in that session, man, that has to do with the pc's case, has to do with blunders of some kind or another – and any auditor that's reasonable about how he, of course deserves to be criticized for the horrible things he has done, of course, is just missing the best indicator of all. He's got a – that's a bad indicator. And something wrong. Doesn't matter what the pc's saying, there's something wrong in the session and it isn't actually the auditor's tone of voice. There's something else wrong. And if the auditor starts monitoring his tone of voice and so forth, he's a total chump. Then he never gets in and finds out what's wrong in the session, don't you see? So the reasonable auditor messes up pcs like mad.

All right. Now, "the pc not protesting the auditor's actions" comes under the same heading which I just gave you.

"The pc looking younger by reason of R6 auditing." Actually, that's true of almost any level of auditing. Pc looking younger, better, skin tone, eye color – these various things are good indicators, but not very common ones. But they are good indicators.

"The pc without weariness." In other words, the pc feels more energetic is the good indicator.

"Pc without pains or aches or illnesses developing during auditing." Now, always regard any pain, ache or illness that a pc develops during auditing as due to some error in audit-

ing. Some bypassed charge usually has occasioned this. And a pc should actually be without pains, aches or illnesses developing during auditing. Now, we don't mean that he shouldn't have somatics – we mean that he shouldn't get sick. He shouldn't have a terrible pain in his stomach which lasts for a day or two. And at midnight last night, why, he all of a sudden was taken with an awful pain in his chest and that sort of thing while he was being audited and so on. That means something was missed in the auditing; something is wrong and that something needs correcting.

Now, "pc wanting more auditing" is a good indicator, as you already know.

"Pc's confidence" – now we can just – "in finding goals and items" and so forth, we say pc's confidence. Well, pc's confidence – we've got a good indicator. Pc is getting more confident. Pc is confident is a good indicator. Pc getting more confident is another good indicator. There are two indicators there which are both good. Getting more confident about what? Well, actually I can get a pc so darned insouciant that he's practically insulting to me as an auditor – I'm perfectly happy. You know a pc saying, "Look at all the – look at all the stuff I found in the sess..." You know, you're sitting there and the pc wandering around in a rat maze, you know. And the pc saying, "Well, I'm getting pretty good, I don't mind saying, but I found fifteen – fifteen items that fast in the session and so forth and so forth and yesterday I only found ten, you know. And today I found... So, that's fine. Oh good, great, great!" And, of course, they just forget that you did anything at all. That's all right with me, man! It's all right with me. I don't have to be told I'm doing a good job. I know my good indicators now.

Okay. This, by the way, is the best thanks an auditor gets and the best guarantee that he's doing a good job of auditing, you see? If all these good indicators are present he knows he's doing a good job of auditing and doesn't have to be thanked.

Now, "the pc's itsa free" – that's good. That's a good indicator. But a pc's itsa so extensive you can't get any auditing in – that is not a good indicator. See? In other words, the pc's itsa is free but just covers the subject; doesn't beat it to death. You know, pc says it and that's it. Pc's itsa can be so extensive that it becomes a bad indicator because the pc is using his itsa to stop the auditor from auditing. And that is a bad indicator: too extensive, too involved and too disrelated an itsa. It betokens various things. And there's various grades of bad indicators there. So we'd say pc's itsa is free but not too extensive. That's for any level, and that's a good indicator. That's two good indicators actually.

And "the auditor seeing how" – goals, goals, goals – well, we can just reduce that to the auditor understanding how come that's that way in the case. The pc says, "Well, the reason I really have a bad foot is because there were all these moon rockets, see, and they kept going overhead all the time and so forth. And then my name – my name at that particular time was Israel and so forth. And we had a big library and it had ten tomes of tums in it and so forth, and that's how I have a bad foot."

And the auditor says, "What the hell? Where did – where did we get – how – why – what – which – which door? Where did he go? Where did he go? Where did he go?" Well, the auditor didn't understand what the pc's talking about. The auditor didn't understand the pc, that – that's – pc's not saying comprehensible things, which is a bad indicator. But the fact that the auditor can see how it was, is the good indicator. That applies to any level of auditing. The

auditor can see how it was. How it happened that way. Can see – can see that that is the way it was. The auditor can see that. That's a good indicator.

Pc says, "Well, I don't know, I got into this car and it went down over the hill and ran into a tree and it certainly pushed my chest in for a while and I was in the hospital for a while and I had a plaster cast on and we've just found out this whole incident and so forth." And the auditor sees, "Oh yeah, that's how he'd – that's how he'd have a restricted feeling chest." Plaster cast – restricted feeling chest; that's a good indicator. In other words, the pc is saying things that make sense. The pc's add-up makes sense. If the pc's add-up doesn't make sense, that's not a good indicator.

Now, "the auditor sees how" – and this is just some more of the same thing – "auditor sees how RIs solve RIs." That's just – comes under the heading of the one I just gave you.

And the life of this person making sense. The way this person tells his life and adds it up and that sort of thing, it makes sense. It makes sense. That's a good indicator. But you have somebody who tells you, "Well, you see, actually, actually, I was for a very long time a page boy at the Catfish Hotel and then I quit and that's how I became bank president," and you don't make any sense out of this, well that's – that's a bad indicator.

Now, that just – the rest of this is more or less the same but – and you've covered the last one there of pc not developing heavy PTPs or somatics between sessions or in sessions.

[This tape ends abruptly as did the original master recording.]

BAD INDICATORS

A lecture given on 9 January 1964

Okay, how are you today?

Thank you, I like you, too!

All right, this is what? The 9th of January, is that it? All right. Nine January AD 14, Saint Hill Special Briefing Course. And this is a lecture on good and bad indicators and such other bric-a-brac as you might be interested in. I probably should put that as an addendum on all my lectures, shouldn't I? The bric-a-brac department! Trouble is I come up with things, you see, that I'm not at all sure you have a good grip on and I have to tell you about them as I go along.

What I want to cover today particularly is good indicators. How'd they do yesterday on that test? Did anybody look at those papers?

Male voice: Well, I haven't heard the results, but there were plenty of good indicators in the sessions.

There were good indicators in the session. How do you think you did on that test yesterday? Well, speak up. I can hear you! All right, all right. Now are you getting the idea – you getting the idea of good indicators? All right. Are you getting so you can look at a session and tell if it's a session and not a session? All right. Good.

Now, this will make a great deal of difference to you in running a co-audit, much less make a great deal of difference to you as an auditor. Now, in trying to relay truth it is always necessary to develop some breakdown of auditing or something of the sort, and in trying to get something across to you, why, I ordinarily will develop some sort of a – of a system by which it can be communicated. And we're particularly interested in this system which divides basic auditing, technique and case analysis. And all levels break down to these and you have in each level, its basic auditing, its case analysis and its technique.

Now, what's quite interesting here about good and bad indicators and what I've been working on and I've been springing on you here is: is we've broken down case analysis. I've found out this was the weakest point – was the auditor's understanding of what was going on with a case. So we've broken this down. And case analysis breaks down into the general subject of case analysis and the system by which it can be employed at various levels. But case analysis now – and be alert to this because this is the way it is – case analysis actually breaks down to good indicators and bad indicators. And you recognize that I saw the frailty of case analysis here and actually almost unwittingly got to work on the subject and broke it down into good indicators, bad indicators and the bad indicator system.

Now, case analysis then is something that progresses all the time regardless of what your basic auditing is and regardless of what your technique is. And also regardless of what level is being run. What level of Scientology. These things are always present. Always present. And the running fire of case analysis – the running fire of case analysis is simply a noting that the good indicators are still with us and being alert when one drops out and then looking to see what bad indicator has appeared and remedying it. Which brings us back into the technique department. Do you see that now?

And case analysis actually considers the observation – the observation of a – of the good indicators as a continuous observation. And knowing what they are, and when one of them drops out, then this is a one-two-three proposition – then noticing what bad indicator has appeared and the case analysis at that point will then tell you what technical action to take.

Now, that you take a technical action isn't really a part of case analysis. So basically, the case analysis whereby you find where the pc probably is or where he's located – get some idea of where he thinks he is or something like that. Like he says he's in a present time problem or something like that, and you get his considerations about this and then you find out where he's really located. You actually now, technically a very – very – very – very precise, being very picky about the matter, that is really not case analysis. Because that goes from case analysis, analyzing what the pc's got there, back to technique, which is a process, "What considerations have you had about it?" and then back to case analysis. The technique having been employed to make the case analysis easier. You see that?

So that you have an interplay. An interplay here between case analysis and technique. And the technique you employ depends upon the case analysis that is done. So therefore, case analysis contains programing. It says, "Here is a preclear!" – I mean it's as – it's corny as this, you see? I mean just as plain, simple and stupid as this, you see. "Here is a preclear." All right, that's case analysis. And you thought I was going to say something else, didn't you? That's a case analysis! You got a case there, in front of you! See, that's case analysis.

All right. Now, let's do a most elementary case analysis you could think of, see. Here he is in front of you. All right. So case analysis consists then of the existence or presence of a pc. Elementary, huh? Now, let's go into the subject of bad indicators.

I've been teaching you about good indicators, now let's go into the subject of bad indicators. And let's go in this on a very, very broad subject, just so you get a better understanding of it. These are not to be... Well, of course, you can, if you want to list these things as bad indicators because they in essence are the very worst. But you don't think of them as bad indicators because they're all accepted on this planet.

But he's sitting in a body! See, drag! That's about the worst indicator you could have! Here's a thetan that's wearing a body! So he obviously isn't an OT! You get the idea? All right, bad indicator. Good indicator: Well, he's there. That's a good indicator. But, until we've done a little more education on the matter, or a little more thought on the case and so forth, we can't really tell if that's a good indicator or bad indicator because he might be not there hardly at all. He might have been carted in on a stretcher. But let's take a look at the fact that he is there and the good indicator – let's get very elementary here – the good indicator is he is there on his own volition. He volitioned himself into your presence. He's willing to be in your

presence. He is there. You got the idea, he is there. Now that's a very good indicator that he's there on his own volition.

Now, let's take a bad indicator. Now, here's a way you go about this, see. I'm going to break this down into the most elementary elements you ever heard of, see. He's there. He's there. And he doesn't – he doesn't look like he wants to be there, and he looks like he's going to depart and he looks like he's sad and sorry that he arrived at this point. And he's wondering how he got here and, you get the idea. What is absent here is "there on his own volition." See. That's a good indicator, see. Well, it's "there on his own volition" that's missing. He apparently is not there of his own free will or free choice. All right. So, we see that he's not comfortably there, see. We see he's not really there there, you get the idea. So we immediately say then, that good indicator's missing.

All right, what bad indicator is present? Well, he has to leave in a few minutes. He actually – he actually has an appointment with Aunt Gertrude at 3:32, and it's now 3:30 and so forth. And really, he'd like some auditing next month, but just now he's pretty tied up... These are all bad indicators. What's he telling you? What's he telling you? They all sum up to an unwillingness to be there. And the case analysis point, simply, good indicator gone. Bad indicator – not there on his own volition, apparently. And the rest of the case analysis then: he must be there on somebody else's volition. See, that's the bad indicator. That's the next obvious bad indicator. And you'll find out that's almost always to be true. He's unwilling to be there himself. Well, he's there because you told him to be there. He's there because you sales talked him into being there. He's there because his Aunt Agatha thinks he's crazy. He's there because of this. He's there because of that. You get the – you get the idea, so forth.

Well, our first hurdle in auditing has been met. And that's on the basis of no free choice. What's the remedy? Well, the remedy – well, your technique. But your case analysis is finished. You see that? That ends the case analysis. It's as elementary as that. You see, that ends the case analysis. Well, what technique do we employ? Well, now that depends on the level being answered up. That depends on the level.

That depends to a very, very marked degree on what level the auditor is at and what level the pc is at.

Now, let's look at this. Case analysis consisted of what? Good indicator that you would expect. Now, understand you would expect this good indicator. You expect it. And the expectation of this good indicator. Now, please, please understand this. A being in his native state, in a cleared condition and all that sort of thing would naturally act that way. So you're really studying in good indicators what is the natural behavior of a being. What is his – his ability to understand is pretty good. Now, he'd know you weren't going to chew him up. If he thought that he needed a few cogwheels adjusted, he'd be perfectly happy to sit there and adjust them. He can recognize somebody wants to help him out. He can receive help. He's in a normally cheerful disposition. He's normally fairly optimistic. He normally is not in an agitated state but is pretty calm and so forth. So you're looking at a subject called basic behavior. And looking at this subject called basic behavior we don't find basic behavior as it was represented in Freudian analysis. Or as it's represented in "psyrology," which is an animated brain pulsing about. We don't find basic behavior of this kind. Basic behavior, *whoa*, in psycho-

analysis, *whoaa!* All due respect to good old Papa Freud, we couldn't do without him. But dear old Papa Freud, *heh-heh*, he had the idea – and that was the current idea of his day, it wasn't necessarily his idea I don't think – unless you inhibited the living daylight out of an individual he couldn't be happy. Well, let's look at it. Well, he might have looked at it and thought about this, that you should uninhibit somebody and talked about this and so on. But if that was the case why did he talk about this thing called a "censor?" Why was this "censor" necessary?

Well, this censor was to take the basic, nasty, mean, nagging, critical, vicious, ornery, rotten, derogatory, slimy, sewer-brained thoughts of the individual and keep them from coming into social presence. So Freud salted everything down with the idea that you had to inhibit the living daylight out of somebody in order to get a social presence. You show me some inhibited goon, and I'll show you an inhibited presence that compares to, I don't know – I don't know – pretty – pretty grim. Pretty grim presence – 1.1 snarling and sniffing around, and *nyah!* and so on and making trouble for everybody, and car... This is the social behavior. In other words, what they accomplished there, was a fundamental error. And the fundamental error was not knowing or having any real idea or any decent concept of what native behavior would be. What is uninhibited behavior?

Well, the world has been crashing along on this crashing lie. And that is that inhibited behavior is social behavior. And that any uninhibited behavior is antisocial. So, the criminal is uninhibited. So, you have to take the criminal and punish him and put him in a cell and do this and that to him; you have to take the bad boy in school and you have to do this and that to him; you have to punish him liberally and if you inhibit him enough you will make a social being out of him. Well, I've seen some of the products made that way and they're not social beings, they're social catastrophes.

This is superinhibition. Now, if you can't do anything about a bad trait, you can, of course, inhibit it. But the net result of this is an inhibited being. A being who can't move, can't reach, can't communicate, to whom nothing is real and who has the affinity of stab everything in the back if nobody was looking and he had a chance. This is your inhibited being. But you can take somebody who has an obvious social quirk, you see. At parties he inevitably – he inevitably will pour his drink on the piano keys. It just seems to be something he does, see. Well, we can make so much disgrace out of doing this and so forth, that he ceases to do it, at parties.

However, a thetan's forward push, or forward force, in any good direction is actually never lost. I was very amused at something that Edgar told me. He had picked up an old pc of his while he was off on vacation and the fellow – he wanted to audit him and he wanted some auditing. So, the guy had an old, failed goal of some kind or another, way back somewhere. So Edgar could hear him about the failed goal, so he went back and picked up this failed goal and what do you know, he got the failures off the goal and the guy did an interesting *resurge!* I think that's interesting, isn't it.

In other words, the goal had failed. He had an old auditing goal, I don't know, not to be so colorblind or something of the sort, you see. And that thing had failed. He hadn't mentioned it or said it in sessions for just ages. It's a failed goal. Edgar goes back, and he takes the

suppressions off of this thing and sure enough, here the fellow has this urge not to be color-blind. Now, Edgar didn't put anything there, he took something off. In other words, a thetan's forward actions, desires and so forth do not fade away. They only submerge. So, we find our fellow... Remember that, man! You could learn no more about handling men and people if you knew that one thing, if you knew that one thing than any other single thing I could actually tell you in a breath of equal length is, their impulses do not vanish. They only submerge.

You get a mutinous army. You get a mutinous army. And you hang the mutineers. All right, that's great. That's great right up to the time they hang you! *Yeah!* They will, too! The army's all snapping and popping and everything's going along fine, and then they experience a little bit of a defeat, and this old goal will come right up to the surface and they mutiny. It's very interesting, you have to get at the basic causes of the mutiny, not suppress the idea of mutiny. You would have to eradicate the reasons and causes for the mutiny. You'd have to find out who'd been whipping it up. And if they had any real beef.

You know how the Catholic church lost England, don't you? That's one of the biggest losses of more recent times, more modern times, only a few hundred years ago. That was great! That was great, it's Old Henry the VIII. Old Henry the VIII. And he wanted himself a divorce from Catherine of Aragon. Suzie was telling me all about it this morning at breakfast. And I kept telling her, I said – she's reading a book on the subject and it reminded me of those times and I kept saying, "Well, my wife really shouldn't be associating with such people – that's for sure." I was shocked at the whole thing.

Anyhow, what happened? Mr. Pope Benedict Pius Innocent whatever he was at that particular time, I think he'd already had a mutiny from his German troops who were now looting Rome and shooting monks or something of the sort. In other words, he wasn't keeping a very good house – typical Earth leadership. And think he'd gone and gotten himself captured or something and he was all messed up. And Henry the VIII – here was – here was all of England which could have done something for him. So in a typical failure fashion, one of his GPMs went up – not Henry the VIII but the pope's – one of his GPMs went up into high level of restimulation and when Henry the VIII says, "Hey, pope, give me a divorce from this babe!" you know, or whatever language was used in courts at that time, probably that's more polite – that one.

Why, the pope says, "Well, fow – wha – we got to think a – our ecclesia – oh, uh – if we, hmm! Hmm-hmm-hmm-hmm! What can I get out of this? See, *woff-woff-woff-woff-woff*" So he sent a gouty old fool of a cardinal up to hold a court with orders that if they granted – if the court in England looked like it was going to grant them divorce to Henry the VIII, why then he was immediately to remove the court to Rome. And they were to continue the hearings in Rome and so forth. And he went on doodle-daddling and monkeying and horsing about and getting no place and so forth and he just had himself a time. The pope did, you know.

And of course, he was dealing with an inhibited humanoid called Henry the VIII. And Henry – Henry had very 1.1 characteristics. He might have done a great deal for England in some direction but he certainly did hold a grudge. And you know, here he was – pope says, "no divorce" – Henry the VIII, "divorce" – so he fooled around, and the court – so on – it goes

on for years, and he monkeys around, they won't give him what he wants, you see. Finally they more or less gave him what he wanted, or he figured it out and they put some penance on him, or something of the sort, I've forgotten what they did to him. It's not important. And Henry the VIII bided his time. And that old goal, "I'm gonna get even with that pope," that came right to the fore. And we now have a separate Church of England. He showed him! You get that? The pope really disciplined the living daylights out of him and lost England. You got the idea? That thetan didn't give up, you know.

Now old Anne Boleyn, who still walks around the Tower, they tell me up there, with her head tucked underneath her arm, she, played footsies with Henry for about nine years. I think that's fascinating. Played footsies for nine years and kept him waiting, and had the Duke of Northumberland or the Earl of Northumberland or somebody on tenterhooks and she wanted to marry him and she kept giving the king the business. And if you note amongst the Tower exhibits – you note amongst the Tower exhibits, I think you will find the ax that cut off her head. He married her all right. But there was only one reason why he ever beheaded her. He just wanted to get even. He just never lost that impulse of hostility that she had generated through not being reasonable.

Now, you look through history. You look through history and you'll understand situations; you'll understand men; you'll understand people; you'll understand teenagers an awful lot better; if you realize that those impulses never die. The person wants to do something. He wants to do something. To him it's perfectly reasonable. Probably is! And he gets crossed up. And somebody does something unusually or, arduously, complicated about it, you see. And inhibits him for some fantastic reason or another. You are not now talking about criminal impulse. We're just talking about a reasonable human impulse.

Little boy, he can't ever ride his bicycle because it hasn't got any new tires. Tires are all worn out, and he's patched them up to a point where they're mostly patches and he has to walk every place. And he keeps talking about it. And the family isn't poor but he just somehow or another for the good of his soul never does get any tires. And he'll go on like that. It wouldn't take anything that small. He'd have to be balked not on a havingness basis, which is man's adjudication, he'd have to be balked on an ambition basis. For instance, he wants to take some music lessons or something like that, the family won't let him have anything to do with it. Somehow or another he's going to get even. Somehow or another he's going to get a recompense.

Now, you want to know what teenage conduct is, and the standard feeling toward the parent which customarily, I'm informed takes place in the teens. And a rejection of the family on which tomes have been written. And which the most learned minds have shown how unlearned they were, and the great problem of juvenile delinquency – all those things. They arise out of this particular level of action. It isn't so much. The child actually never forgives the parents for certain things. You'll be amazed how tiny they are sometimes but they tend to mount up. And he really never forgives them. And you say forgiveness is the answer. No, forgiveness is dropping down another tone to propitiation. You've got to get to the source and cause of the matter. It's got to be brought to the fore. Auditing does this easily. All the time.

But he just never, never measures up to this and actually doesn't have it in the forefront of his mind. So in his teens he does a revolt against his parents. And in his teens he gives a kickback and so forth, which is a rejection. Now what is that? He's just on the verge of being able to fly loose and he's saying all of these things. Now there is the heart of man's ingratitude. There's the secret of leadership and so forth. It's the recognition of the fact that a thetan never really gives up.

But when you know that – when you know that, you know more about behavior than were written in all the volumes of the Greeks. And you know something as an auditor. Because what are you auditing. You're just auditing all the nutty aberrated inhibited times when he never gave up. When he postulated something silly. When he tried to do something stupid. When he wanted to go forward in some direction and couldn't go forward. And when he committed overts. As a matter of fact you can graph – I suddenly realized here, you could actually graph the – where the innocent social goal of the individual dies down, inhibited, to a warped – a more warped form which then is submerged to below that, overts. Which then is submerged below that to withholds. And you could graph that. And you could graph that about any tone or ambition.

Why does an individual have GPMs? Why, so forth. Well, let's take it in the largest order of magnitude. It's on that scale there. And out of withholds we get unconsciousness. And we get unawareness. So unawareness is the lowest level of that scale.

Now, actually unawareness itself has a scale which goes down into actual unconsciousness. You see some pc start to boil-off in a session or something like that. It's usually compounded by a withhold, whether the withhold is actually a part of what you're trying to get off the pc, in other words, he's already put his goal or something on the list, or the item's already on the list, or the assessed thing is already on the list. And you keep him listing. Well, actually that thing that he put on the list becomes a withhold and he starts boiling off, and he gets dopey and he gets drowsy. So there's the scale of how a goal – how a goal becomes warped, becomes an overt, and below that level becomes a withhold, and below that level becomes unawareness and below that level becomes unconsciousness, and below that level becomes humanoid. All right.

So let's look at this boy who has come into your auditing session. You thought I'd gone someplace and forgot what I was talking about, didn't you? I fooled you! Comes into your auditing session. Well, what's wrong with this boy? What's wrong with this boy? What's wrong with this girl? What's wrong with this person? This being?

What are the good indicators? Actually the most – the biggest good indicator is the fact that he is there on his own volition. And that's the biggest indicator there is. Because surrounding him, man, there is nothing but bad indicators. Well, you don't pay any attention to those bad indicators. Let me give you an idea how to handle these things. You don't pay any attention to all those bad indicators because you can do something about them. And what you are going to do is one by one eradicate them. And in any system in which you are using good indicators and bad indicators which is any auditing situation, you note the good indicators present, and think that's cheery-cheery, isn't that nice. You understand? And you can even go so far as congratulating the pc on them. That's dandy. We like all those. That's fine. Pc's more

confident. The pc has less PTP. You can even remark on them to a pc. That's fine. Fortify them. Validate them. Three cheers.

When an auditor doesn't, by the way, he's not really putting in a hope factor. What is a hope factor? A hope factor is validating those indicators which – those good indicators which are present. And that is a hope factor. You say, "Well, you were talking much better in the last few sessions to me." You know, hope factor. "Maybe we can even improve it a little bit more," you know. "Well, you've seen a little less pain, you say, in your head. All right, little less pain in your head. Well, that's very good. Now maybe in a few more sessions, why, we'll be able to handle it a little bit further." That's a hope factor, don't you see. That's validating the good indicator, which is a lessening of the somatic or the condition.

All right. The best one then is he's there. The next best one is he's getting better. Now, how do you mean getting better? Well, he's restoring the native state. He's getting more cheerful. He has less problems. He's less worried. He's less anxious. And a reverse of all those things which I just described is humanoid. You see? He's getting better. Well, I don't care what you're treating, it's getting better! Which we mean less present. And betterness to us is "less present." All right, his bad ankle is getting better. All right, great! That's three cheers. We're very happy about that. What do we mean exactly? We don't mean his ankle is less present but we mean he's – the badness of the ankle is less present. So that's a good indicator.

Now, how much less present? The degree of the goodness of the indicator. Well, it's getting better swiftly. Well, that's very good. But it's still just a good indicator. It is getting better slowly. All right, that's not so good but, so forth. It's still a good indicator, see. So we don't bother to grade it particularly. It's as long – now get this – as long as we can get a lessening of the bad points present we are making progress and that is all we ask for. And if you as an auditor never ask for any more than that, you're going to know what an auditing win is, and you're going to get auditing wins and so forth.

It's been my experience with auditors, they will sit and chew away on something endlessly as long as they are bettering the condition which they are attacking. They will go on endlessly. It's when they don't go on that I worry about and that all adds up to the fact it – the condition – isn't getting any better. They're – we're not getting a lessening of the condition. So we're – because we're not getting a lessening of the condition we therefore, have loses. So betterment to us is a lessening of a bad condition.

Now, look at this as a new look of auditing. Look at this as a brand-new look. If all – if all you did in an auditing session, and you didn't do any more than this, was eradicate – eradicate points which detracted from the idealness of the session, and if that was your total program with the pc, you would have some miraculous wins. Now, let me state that in another way. If you looked over the pc, validated the good indicators that were present and then one by one – and this is programing with regard to indicators, and you have to know this to handle the case at all – one by one attack the bad indicators and handle them. See, validate the good indicators and attack the bad indicators and handle them and restore more good indicators – and if you just audited that way – you didn't have anything to do with whether or not his lumbar was better or worse, or whether or not you flattened so many processes or added quantitatively up to you've gotten in eighteen dozen hours of auditing – none of those – none of

those – none of those things – don't judge auditing that way, that's quantitative judgment and it'll wind you up in the soup.

It's how many good indicators are you restoring. Now, if you looked at auditing that way, and you worked in that direction and only in that direction, as just a picky, put – well, I just say this – it's like – it's like making one of these cross-patch quilts. They used to knit a patch and then they would sew the patch onto another patch. And then they would knit another patch and they would sew the patch – just endless, quilting of one kind or another where they were making each one of the pieces and weaving each one of them. And you just took the case, and you just took all of the good indicators, and recognized those because you see if you don't recognize the good indicators you can't look for any bad indicators and that's for sure. Recognize those good indicators, and then, and then look for the bad indicators. And then instead of taking a broad jump at the case and just hoping the good indicators will get better and materialize, you carefully took each of the bad indicators that were present, and without reducing the good indicators that were already present, turn that bad indicator off and turn it into a good indicator. You understand?

Now, I'll give you an idea of this. If that was all you did, in auditing at – now I'm talking of course, in auditing at Level IV and below – if that was all you accomplished in auditing, at any level of auditing at Level IV or below, that was all you accomplished, you would be the most successful auditor that anybody ever had anything to do with. And that is the secret of it. You'd just be successful beyond all success.

This pc is *always having present time problems*, and so forth. And this you just go ahead. Your pc's perfectly cheerful, perfectly willing to talk to you, got all that handled and so on, and you can go on, but the pc always has had present time problems. Boy I'd just go to bat, and I'd make a project, just out of this one thing. Well, let's see if we can't reduce the incidence of present time problems in this case. Not by eradicating each problem as it comes up – let's get at the root of the problemism of the case if we possibly can. Without, of course, going into VI – Level VI. Of course, you would get at the problem because that's the whole basis of the case. So what you want to do is destimulate the situation. Let's look this thing over, and let's handle it on a basis – we don't care what this pc is talking about otherwise or doing otherwise and so on, let's just get down and let's take this one bad indicator. The pc has present time problems between every session.

Let's then not sit there. Because that's a bad indicator. Well, of course, these problems are serious enough. But what is wrong with this case? What is wrong with this case at this particular time? The most dominant bad indicator present is the pc's having lots of present time problems between sessions. All right. Let's take that up as a project. Let's roll up our sleeves and let's just work on this. How? Well, all right. At Level I, it'd be on the matter of discussions: the values of problems, and what problems do, and what they are, and how one goes about solving problems. Let's just have a high-level discussion on the subject of problems. And let's go on and on and on. And let's ask him about what might be generating the problems in his life and let's just discuss this. Let's just whip this thing to pieces, meanwhile keeping him talking happily and cheerily and so forth, to us. And all of a sudden you're going to get the darnedest resurge in this case. Now, it didn't matter, you see, whether you did this in a week or ten weeks, or five minutes. It didn't matter how fast this was done. That case going

to get a big gain. That case going to get gain that's real to the case. He's going to finally sit down and he's going to say, "You know, I don't have any problems in this session."

He might not make a big deal out of it because it's a negative gain always – the disappearance. You see, that's one of the things that's very interesting. You know once you get rid of a bad indicator or something wrong with a case, the test of having gotten rid of it is whether or not the case ever talks about it again. If a case goes on talking about it then we haven't gotten rid of it. So we've got a negative gain. Therefore, we can conclude our philosophy about the fact that what's wrong with man is his additives, his bad additives. That is correct. Because when we delete them he is better.

So, if we delete them and he is better our bad additives are gone and the fellow doesn't even think about the bad additives anymore. That's one of the things that sometimes puzzles a new auditor. He's just gotten rid of all these fellow's carbuncles, you know. And the guy was talking very interestedly about his carbuncles just one session ago. But all of a sudden they all went. And he didn't have any carbuncles now and what's all this about? "Well, how's your carbuncles?" And the pc says, "What carbuncles? Oh, the carbuncles! Oh, yeah, all right, well, what – why do you mention the carbuncles?" The auditor says, "Well, I..." You know, the pc has never – never mentioned carbuncles at all. Pc is now interested in the fact that he's having dreams about freight cars. And this is his problem. Negative gain. You're always up against this negative gain. Because the auditor isn't trying to discipline the pc, you see, he's up against negative gain.

So if we just took these bad indicators, one by one, and we sorted them out, maintaining the good indicators and taking the bad indicators away, we'd find more good indicators appearing. And boy you'd have a velocity session. Theoretically you could build a pc up this way to a point where he would actually just blow clear on inspection. Theoretically. He'd become quite a powerhouse. All by himself. And you know your gains at the lower levels of auditing are all based on that. It's all based on that. They're not based on plowing the pc in or eradicating something which the pc doesn't have anything to do with. They're based on, technically, destimulation from Level IV down. The more you try to run anything out at those levels, why, the more trouble you're going to be in. Level IV gets up, there are some things you can run out and so forth. But at lower levels, you're going to run out all of this fellow's something-or-others, and so on, and you're going to run these out. That is a project in auditing. No, that's a lousy auditing goal. We're going to get rid of his bad indicators and build up and enhance his good indicators. And that's what we're going to do. Now that – that's a good auditing goal. That's good. That's good for an auditor to do.

Now, look at the things you could tackle and look at the very orderly progress that you could go forward with here. Number one. Number one. The good indicators and so forth, we have spotted and we notice that there is the pc's body – is in an uncomfortable sort of a state. And so forth. And we see in a little examination of the thing that we have this indicator present: The pc's nervous about being audited. Well, that's a blunt enough indicator, isn't it? It's a bad indicator. Pc's nervous about being audited.

Now, let me show you just this – this chart here. I'd give a great deal to have myself three or four months to sit down and get a lot of material together and so forth. I'm having

quite a time of it here. I'm faced with fantastic quantities of research compilation and developments, and getting just recording material and getting stuff down, and it's gotten me just a little bit overwhumped. And I'd – I'm trying to get around to giving you all the bad indicators and I must apologize for not having these things in a complete scale form. But I'll give you the form in which they are in.

All right. Here's a bad indicator. Number one: Pc nervous about being audited. This is bad indicator number one, see. All right. Level 0. At Level 0, you can explain Scientology and what auditing is to the pc, and see if the pc is there of his own volition and try to get him to come there of his own volition. See, in other words, get him to decide, not come there under protest. Level I. Of course, all later levels have the earlier level in there, too. Level I, we reassure the pc that auditing is not an effort to make him guilty or accusation of insanity or something of that sort. To make the able more able. We get other people's ideas, opinions and so forth, of treatment and what it might do to him. On an intellectual basis, try to cope with his various protests, his auditings, his self-determinism with regard to being audited. In other words, a discussion of his being audited is really what this amounts to at Level I. But we assume as I just told you a moment ago, we assume, that well, he's not there on his own determinism. He's there on yours or he's leery of this thing and so forth. He's got to make up his mind individually to have a goal not – to be audited, not to be forced to have an audit, because he won't get anyplace.

We've had – we had somebody around here for a long time that just had a – had – was there because somebody else wanted him to be there, and so forth. It goes this helly, you see. If an organization suddenly says to some poor staff member who has just found the most beautiful girl he has ever seen, and so forth and he's making time here, and all of this looks beautiful in the future and all of a sudden the Association Secretary points a long and accusative finger at him and says, "You are going to go get trained at Saint Hill." And he suddenly sees he's there for a year and his girl is going to run off with another man – he knows what's going to happen. And so forth, and he doesn't want to go, and he gets here and you know he can't really study. And he can't really make case progress. And he can't do anything else. Why? Well, number one here is being violated. The pc is not there – under his own volition. You can also say the student isn't there under his own volition. The student or the pc isn't there under his own volition.

That's why – by the way – I was going to get out a policy letter on this and I will. And let's make a policy right now: if you don't have – if you can't get somebody to be audited or trained on his own volition, don't audit or train them. And boy, you're going to – you're going to get rid of all your loses, right there! You'll get rid of them before they begin. And I'd like – Course Administrator down here, if somebody shows up, to go over this rather – rather strenuously with them. If they're here because they want to be here or if they're here because somebody sent them or are they here for some other reason than to be trained or audited? And somebody ought to take this up with them rather strenuously. And if they are such a thing as an organization personnel and we find out that – well, they were sent by the Continental Director and they really didn't want to come very bad, but they were ordered here. Now, the point is do we do anything to alter the situation by furnishing auditing, or do we teach that organization particularly a lesson by simply just putting the person back on a plane and send-

ing them back. And I think the last answer is the right one. Because they had no right to ship this person here under his own duress. Because he won't make any case progress and he won't make any class level progress or anything.

We know this, see. We know this. We've got the records to prove it. Any time anybody was ordered to Saint Hill that didn't want to come or already thought this or already thought that, it didn't matter who, that person is now nattering around. And any little rumor you hear about Saint Hill from – Jack was telling me the other day he said, "You know I hear all these rumors about Saint Hill, all bad, and so forth. And everything is so tough and everything is so awful," and so forth. And he said, "It's all – it's all... Come here and find a well – ordered, well-scheduled, well-conducted course and so forth – and very helpful and so on, no part of this seems to be true at all."

Now, where'd he get – what was the source of those rumors? Well, they must have been people – the very few people, it's a very few handful, you see the bulk of the students here, that are here under their own volition believe me! They're climbing over hedges to get to Saint Hill. But because this is so general and because everybody supposes everybody would want to go to Saint Hill and anybody ordering to go to Saint Hill never thinks twice this person might not want to. This person might have some bad withholds or something. He'd be afraid I'd find out about or something like that. And just feel *awful* at the idea of going to Saint Hill. It's *terrible*, you know. And come here and practically get sick and collapse and everything else. You know, all kinds of reasons back of this sort of thing.

The stunt here would be to better this bad indicator. Well, audited under his own volition. And as a subhead of that, is pc nervous about being audited. See? That's your bad indicator. And your bad indicator leads you immediately to suppose that the pc is not there under his own volition. See, that's the conclusion, and the Level 0 – of course, all he can do is explain Scientology and what it is to the pc and get him to make up his mind. Sell him a little, but we can't do very much about it. But we could do something. And at least find out who wanted him to have auditing. And then at Level I, well, as I've already given you, reassure the pc and so forth.

And Level II. Level II, well, Level II. Oh, we can run such – well, let's get real corny. I'll show you how corny this could be. Just figure out some repetitive process at Level II of, "What have you had to do that you didn't want to do?" Or, "What orders have you had to follow about your health?" See, we could just dream one up that would fit the case. All of a sudden it turns out this fellow's been in the army and he was always being sent down for inspections of some kind or another. It was all very embarrassing, and it was this and that and he's got auditing tied in, you see, with nonvolitional responses. He didn't choose to be there.

So we straighten this up. And at that level of course, we can run general O/W. We could run general O/W also as an action. Just general O/W, and we could get in such a thing and well, Level III – Level III we'd pull some missed withholds. Of course, for a person being audited on Level III, he's been over the jumps. But we could pull missed withholds about this and we could choose a suitable subject, on auditing or treatment or on past auditing, or on auditing goals, or on past auditing goals or some such subject like that, and prepcheck it. In other words, this would tend to straighten out all of this. And we'd peel a lot of idea about

being audited under protest and being forced to be audited and so forth. Such as "On being forced to be audited has anything been suppressed?" there, you get the idea, you see. If you found this was really the case.

Also at Level III, why, you could run what was formerly R2H or run 3H. Just ARC breaks in general or something like this. Person's had ARC breaks. Or remedy it by the early levels. You might find out after a while that somebody's missed this, you know. Person came into Scientology in order to make their husband guilty. Well! They've forgotten it. That's what's the joke. They've forgotten it, they wonder why they don't make any case progress, and they *waff-waff-waff-waff-wa-waff-waff-waff*, see. You've got trouble – trouble – trouble. What is all this trouble coming from? It's coming from their basic ideas about being audited. And they never wanted to be audited, and they never wanted this, and they never wanted that and they sort of drifted along. "Well, Harry would have left me if I hadn't agreed to take the HPA Course." And here's a... one of our poor Instructors down here, beating their brains out, trying to get this person to sit up straight in an auditing chair. They can't do it. You sit them up, rag doll, they fall off the side of the chair, you know. I mean, they can't confront, can't run TR 0. Just this – somehow or another it's all kind of missing somehow or another.

All right, some smart auditor looks at this idea, the pc's always late for his session. *Hmm-hu-hu-hu-hu-hu-hu-hu*. Bad indicator. And during session the pc seems to be nervous. And so a bad indicator. What's missing here is calm pc on time for session, see, those are good indicators. So those are missing, look for this other one. Pc nervous, and he's only late, so forth – *wah-de-da, de-da, de-da, de-da*, all right. Somewhere along the line here we've got audited not on own volition. We've got in Scientology not on own volition and so forth. We're going to plow into that, man, were going to straighten that up.

We give you the idea up here, at Level III you'd be using this kind of a remedy, don't you see. I've just given them to you. And we get over here at Level IV, oh my God, Level IV – we just got the book open. Because we can find out how auditing – being audited would make somebody – or refusing to be audited would make somebody wrong. And would make themselves right. And we've got all the kinds of service fac stuff here, and we've got assess for ARC breaks with auditors, practitioners and ARC breaks with life, or ARC breaks with various processes that the person's been run on, don't you see. And we locate and indicate the bypassed charge on it, and we run routine ARC break assessments for the sessions, and – they've had. You know, that kind of thing. We just keep putting it together here. But of course we've got all these earlier remedies and we – that still goes back to the possibility of audited under no volition.

We – if we found at – by the time they got to Level IV, if we just found one session, which they were audited and they were – had a withhold during the whole session they sure as hell didn't want to be audited during that session. We'll get that and what do you know, we're going to get a little resurge in that particular case. Because this is a *very key point*. Very, very key point. All right, so we straighten it up.

Now, let's take another. Let's take another bad indicator, high-generality bad indicator. And we get pc unfriendly to auditor. Well, that has varying degrees. He's critical of the auditor, or just cool and unappreciative. Now, how many unappreciative pcs do you know? Well,

that's a bad indicator. All right, so obviously the good indicator must be that the pc is friendly to the auditor and appreciative of what the auditor's doing. All right, the bad in... well, that's not there, look for the bad indicator, and you all of a sudden find the pc's kind of critical of this auditor and he's very cool about things. And the pc is – the pc – the pc is perfectly cool, calm and collected, but never even says thank you for a session. Now, what do you think about that? Now, how many of your pcs, here and there have never done this? All right, that's a bad indicator. Bad indicator.

Now, what's this mean? What's this mean? Well, we're opening the door of course, on the whole phenomena – the whole vast phenomena of withholds. Overts. Communication cuts. Itsa cuts.

Now a cut itsa can be cut by the pc having a withhold which prevents him from it-saing. He's got the withhold, the auditor doesn't have anything to do with it, don't you see. But the pc will be unfriendly to the auditor. Now how does the auditor get this? How does he get this straightened out? And that's the whole subject of how to get by this fantastic, inhibited, swirling, howling mess of inhibitions and still string a communication line. How do you do it? Well, sometimes it's very tricky. But if you just did that – if you just worked on that. Get the pc to be friendly to the auditor. Well, how would we do this? We'd run various processes. We'd handle it in various ways.

We'd say, "Well, in general in life this pc..." Well, I mean, we can defeat ourselves. We say, "In general life this pc's pretty cool. This pc's pretty cool. This pc is not very friendly to people. This pc is detached," and so forth. Well, to me that'd just be a challenge. It'd be a challenge, auditing can overcome that. Auditing consists basically of picking up the postulates, incepts, considerations, ideas which the individual has had and the problems which the individual has faced or confronted. And lower levels of auditing you usually address to just the one lifetime. Don't you get too specialized on solutions and so you never – it's true that solution gives you the tone arm action. But if you totally ignore the pc's wish to talk about problems, why, you're not going to get more itsa. One of the reasons why you run out of itsa is because you specialize in solutions and ignore problems. And you've got to sometimes sacrifice some tone arm action, and get the *wham-wham-wham* in on the subject of what problems have you had, fellow, in order to get something to itsa. Remember this.

Actually, if you spent fifty percent of your time on itsaing solutions, and fifty percent of your time on itsaing about the problems the individual has had, your case would stay in balance and you'd be stacking up tone arm action for the future. Even though it was cutting a bit of tone arm action at present. This is something that I'm sure you're hearing with great happiness right now, because you're – been a little bit afraid to attack problems. Well, I'll sure never be afraid to attack problems.

I'm liable to go right on down the track and find some basic problem the pc has had, and I don't care if I was sitting there for fifteen minutes with the tone arm not moving. When I do hit the jackpot, I'm going to get motion! And I'm going to get motion in that tone arm, and then the pc's *yip-yip-yip* on the subject of the solutions and what he's done about that and so forth – that's going to more than make up for that lost time. One of your reasons why your pc runs out of fat and you haven't got tone arm action on him anymore, is you really don't en-

courage him to dig up problems that he has, in the past, had to solve. It's a fifty-fifty proposition. The reason for that is, of course, at Level VI you will find that fifty percent of the RIs are oppterm and fifty percent are terminals. And they give you an equal amount of TA action actually in running out, and oppterm consist nothing – of nothing in the world but stated problems and terminals consist of nothing in the world but solutions to those problems. The fixed solution to the fixed problem. So you've got the oppterm as the fixed problem; you've got the terminal as the fixed solution.

So you see that if you could get somebody to state the real problem, you would get as much tone arm action, you see, as you'd get if he gave you the fixed solution, see. It's all in the cards that it'd be that way, at an upper level. But if you start working this too hard you move him back into his GPMs. All right, well, you – so therefore, you handle problems a little less heavily than you would ordinarily, and you don't try to search arduously for problems in the pc. But you don't start specializing a hundred percent. You really want to spin some pc just audit nothing but problems. The pc talks about problems, and just audit nothing but problems and ask the pc about – "Now have you got any more problems? Uh – oh yeah, well, that's a pretty bad problem, that one is," and so forth – and problems, problems, problems, a hundred percent about a problem. You're going to bog the pc.

Similarly, however, you'll bog the pc if you only talk about solutions, without having any problems. Because of course, the pc is going to become an – unfriendly to the auditor if the auditor never gives him anything to talk about. And the pc's basic interest is in some problem he has had or has. Do you see? So you've got to give the pc something to talk about, otherwise the pc can't itsa at all. And you might find that the unfriendliness to the auditor is the fact just – basically just the fact that the auditor makes the pc's case a missed withhold. Makes the pc's problems a missed withhold. Because the auditor will work for too long a period of time stressing some particular point in a pc's life, and not let the pc branch off sideways into the ramification of other problems which have accumulated around that particular point. But that's a problem of just cut itsa.

We're talking, however, in this bad indicator, the pc's unfriendly to the auditor. All right. Heh! Your Zero trick would be to get the pc to explain the damage the auditor might do to him or her. That's about as far as you could go on the 0 level. What damage, and so forth – and the pc, of course, that's a lousy solution, by the way, because the pc of course, is going to add up a bunch of critical overts and so forth – in the thing, but it is better than nothing. And it will do something.

Now, if I could get somebody to explain why he shouldn't be audited, you see, that's the same question. Just tell me why you shouldn't be audited, I will get the fellow finally into a very, very friendly discourse. I'll finally get the guy into session. So this is actually not necessarily the lowest-level solution, this is merely the crudest solution, but it's a workable solution. You've got old Grandma, she's sitting over there with her ear trumpet, and she's saying "This stuff Scientology, ever since George and Charles got into Scientology and so forth – and *so-so-so* and *nyah-nyah-nyah-nyah-nyah-nyah-nyahnyah-nyah-nyah-nyah-nyah-nyah-nyah-nyah!*" And we know that this is going to be a mess, man! Because we've got an un-auditable person. Well, we choose this pc as an auditor, right away, the pc is being audited not at her power of choice, we've already broke the back of that one. So we've got an uphill climb

here, man. So we could kill the two birds with one pc on the basis of saying, "Well, just explain – explain to me why – why you shouldn't be audited."

"Oh, pooh-pooh! Nonsense! Uh-ho! Wa! And so forth! Yip-yip-yip-yip-yip!" And the next thing you know she would be sitting there telling us, "Well, actually I have a small pain in the back of my shoulder that I wish somebody would do something about – of course, you probably couldn't do anything about it, but I wish somebody would do something about..." so forth. This is one of the oldest tricks I ever saw. I heard over the intercoms – listen systems, used in Central Organization one time in Washington. A staff auditor back in those days, giving the business to a sea cook who had dropped in, who was pretty drunk most of the time, and he was clearing help. And boy, this guy just couldn't answer the question, couldn't do anything. He was actually upgrading this; he should have started at a lower level. But he actually walked it in on the subject of help. And I think at the end of one hour – I think at the end of about an hour, the fellow finally found a way he could help the auditor. He finally found it; he got very expansive on this particular thing, and really started to get very friendly and go into communication. *"I could go out and find a bottle, I could find a couple of boys out on the waterfront, see,"* and he *"could really help him by doing that, and so on, have – have a good time, he really could help him."* And yeah – he could help him and he started in, and the next thing you know they were – he just felt very friendly to the auditor and everything else – wildest demonstration of something or other I ever heard of! He was just remedying this one point. The guy didn't want to talk to the auditor. He didn't want to be audited either.

All right, so don't sneer at your lower-level remedy. Your next level there, of course, I. You could get the pc to explain any trouble he's gotten into by imparting confidences or talking too freely. That's pretty – pretty clever. Most anybody who is – who is unfriendly to the auditor and so forth – is afraid of talking, that's sure, because it's all based on missed withholds of one kind or another, but let's get him into this, and of course, that gets off a few missed withholds. Get the pc to explain any trouble he's gotten into by imparting confidences or talking too freely. Now, it gets the pc to give you long expositions at Level I, on the subject of the dangers of free communication. And you're going to get yourself some interesting stuff.

This I'm giving you is grass-roots stuff. This is cold, out of the – out of the basic dregs of human relationships. These things have worked – these are the last tools in the kit, ordinarily, and therefore they are put at those particular levels. There are a lot of other such tools. But those things have been very good.

And at Level II, you'd get A: "What would you be willing to talk to me about?" which is a standard remedy or similar processes. And don't get hung up on that as the only process; use your wits and imagination. You're trying to get the guy to as-is various reasons he won't talk to you and run them out, and so forth. So you've got a lot of processes there that you can use at that level. And B, Level II B, would be general O/W on auditing or auditors or general O/W on auditor or auditors. That would be the – not auditing, but auditors. You'll find – you'll find a lot of stuff there, man; you'll find a lot of stuff. You can really dig up a lot of stuff.

Now, number three, Level III, of course, you're getting into more high school actions, you could pull missed withholds about auditors or auditors. What withholds have auditors missed and that sort of thing. And you could prepcheck auditors or practitioners and help or

failed help, as indicated, see? You could prepcheck, in other words, help or failed help, see. And you're getting into this auditor-preclear relationship. That's all the thing you're trying to improve. And then of course at Level IV and so on, why, you start pulling the cork on the subject of help, failed help, on a sort of service facsimile basis and so forth.

"Now, if you were really helped by auditing, if you were really helped by auditing and so forth, if you were really helped by auditing, how would that make you wrong?" *He-he!* Interesting question! And "If you weren't helped by auditing at all, how would that make you right?" Now, the better question of course is "How would you be made right by not being helped by auditing." But that's quite – of course quite accusative. But you've got that and all the lower remedies.

Now, of course, Levels V, VI, VII, we naturally use these lower-level remedies, and they have their own bad indicator systems, and we consider the individual is far above being unauditible and having such problems. And as a result, why, you find nearly all these problems occur at Levels V, VI and VII, these problems occur, you know, unfriendly to the auditor and nervous about auditing, and that sort of thing. But they stem from the root stuff of the mind. And the thing you've got to do is straighten out the track. Where's the missed GPM? You know, where's the missed items? What's happened here? Where's the bypassed charge? What's – that's – that sort of thing.

Now, I'm just giving you some ideas here. You'll eventually get this stuff in the form of bulletins, and so forth, with scales and so forth providing I ever get myself squared around here to a point where I can get you out the scale. I don't know if you realize the level of precision that's required. I worked for some little time to give you just the assembly of stuff on just those two points and so on. It isn't that it took me long, actually, to do it, but it takes time to do. And I like to give them with some precision.

Now, let's take up another bad indicator; the pc nervous about being audited in a selected auditing room. In the selected auditing room, the pc's nervous about being audited in that. Well, that's the auditing environment. Now, we've got the subject of auditing – look how elementary we're getting, see, back to 1955. The subject of auditing, the subject of auditor, the subject of auditing room and the good indicators are present when these things are accepted and cheerful and all that stuff, and the bad indic... and you – when those aren't present then you look for the bad indicators and you'll find out that they run down to – and get this – these things always run down to a magnitudinous present time problem of some kind or another, which you could handle. These things always get into that or they get into some horrendous ARC break on the subject, and you clear those things up, you've done a lot for a pc! Don't think you haven't.

Now, I'm not going to give you all the levels – about the auditing room, they're quite obvious. When you get up to Level II you're starting to – your first levels are environment and havingness is Level III and discussions of the dangers of the environment at Level 0 and that's of course where Level 0 lives. The dangers of the environment. So if pc's nervous about the auditing room, why, the dangers of the environment. You find mostly it solves on that one spot. "Well, it's all right but the room we're in somebody might bust in any minute and I'm in the middle of a comm lag and startle me out of my wits." Well, all right, dangers of the envi-

ronment. And number one, why, dangerous environments. That as a subject is perfectly all right, the trouble he's – trouble he's had in auditing rooms and in practitioner's rooms and all of that sort of thing and let him get some of his solutions off on the subject of how he has gone about solving it.

As I said Level III – Level III, you're – Level II, III, you're in clover, you're getting up into your havingness levels. And at Level IV, well, you – the roof's the limit. You've got discussions of associative restimulators you will see in there eventually. Finding things that are not restimulative, things that are safe. Of course, that is quite runnable – quite runnable down at Level II, it's perfectly allowable process. So that one – dead-easy.

What I'm trying to give you an idea of here... I'm not trying to give you all the textual material because the textual material of this for heaven sakes is staggering. I mean, the amount of cross-reference and coding which you get into for all of these levels for all auditing bad indicators is quite interesting. And what's horrifying to me is just the amount of work I have to do on it and the amount of accuracy it has to have. And what should be horrifying to you is if I didn't do that very neatly because you're going to have to know them all. I should have it written up very neatly indeed. It ought to be put together very well.

The point I'm trying to make with you is the organization of this sort of thing – the handling of this kind of thing. Now, if you – if you want a mental exercise and you know – you know actually I'd far better that you sat down and extrapolated it for the good of your own – hey, what do you know – for the good of your own immortal soul! That's pretty good, heh? By the way, where are you keeping it these days? The... I'd much rather you sort of dreamed it up, and worked over these things. And if I had enough time, and you had enough time in the matter, I probably wouldn't train you any other way, on any other level.

I'm trying to give you the woof and the warp, the put-together of this kind of action and the handling of it. And I'd like to give you now an exercise. Like to give you an exercise. Now, I don't want your papers on this or anything of this sort. But I think it might be good for your immortal soul – I think that's probably an item that one of the earlier saints had or something. He probably had an item called "immortal soul that burned holes in the back of his neck" or something like this. I think you should write down a list of the bad indicators, which would be present at your own level auditing or any lower level. Don't bother too much about the level organization of it but just go ahead on a basis of dreaming up all the bad indicators that could be present if a *Homo sapiens* were shoved into – and now get that advisedly – a *Homo sapiens* were shoved into your auditing room. I said *shoved* in. And all the bad indicators that would be present and what you might be able to do about these things.

Because one of your troubles as an auditor is the trouble any auditor gets into. He hasn't, every time measured up to the bad indicator. He's seen the bad indicator, he didn't – he's too busy coping with something or other to do something effective about it and so he slipped his gears with regard to it. He hasn't paid much attention to it; he's lost his temper instead or he's done something or other that was totally ineffective. And you've seen situations like ARC breaks and that sort of thing that you couldn't handle. And eventually you get less brave in the subject of these. But do you know that it is well, well, within your control. I mean that! Well within your control to be able to take somebody who was dragged into your room at the other

end of a chain! And eventually have him decide with the greatest cheeriness in the world, that was just exactly where he wanted to be, not because you overwhelmed him but by picking up his various considerations. Oh, it might take you – might take you months, of momentary meetings with this character and so forth. But it's well within your power to turn him into a high-flying pc. I don't care how he was dragged in.

That's interesting. It's an interesting challenge. And it's all on the basis of seeing that a good indicator is missing and then looking for the bad indicator and – I don't care how many dozens of bad indicators were present – then selecting and here's the key of it, see, here's what's going to give you wins – then selecting the one which is most in the road of auditing, and – using that as a criteria selecting it – one by one, eradicating those bad indicators. Each time using as your criteria the bad indicator, that – you choose it because it is most in the road of your auditing. Always choose that, that way.

You can make out a list on this one pc, let us say, of sixty bad indicators. Oh! It's a horrendous and overpowering list. See, long! Now remember, the key is: handle those bad indicators – that's auditing the pc in front of you – handle those bad indicators one at a time. And how do you find which one to handle first? It's the one which is most in the road of your auditing. And now, how do you choose the second one you're going to handle? It is the one which is now most in the road of the auditing. And what happens if some other one suddenly moves in during a session and gets in the road of your auditing, so that you have to handle that, too? Well, that's your problem! I'll not give you any fixed formula for that. But it will only occur because you've done a lousy job of basic auditing. I don't think I ought to give you a solution to it.

You just go on plugging with a good job of basic auditing, using a technology adapted to the remedy of that bad indicator and converting it into a good indicator that you're working on. It's just – it's like this: "Well, Mr. Smith..." – I saw Mary Sue handle a mad woman one time. It was just fantastic! Woman was throttling her and howling, and so forth, and actually I don't think that there was very much auditing connected with it and so on. But just one bad indicator. The person couldn't keep in mind who the auditor was. Kept losing track of the auditor. And the auditor would give an auditing command about something about the environment and then, the pc would lose track of who the auditor was. And the auditor would say, "Who am I?" And the pc would say, "Oh – you're – you're, uh – Aunt Agatha!" or something. "Oh no, no, of course, I know who you are, of course, I know who you are, you're Mrs. Hubbard," and so forth. And it was all very fine. And you know that pc came through a psychosis which had prevented the pc from ever going near her husband or living in the country where he had to work. And she left for the country shortly afterwards and so forth. So don't think that clearing up one of these auditing points, you see, is a light result. It isn't.

I ought to get Mary Sue to tell – you get Mary Sue to tell you that story sometime or another because she tells stories very, very well, and it's really a howl. But that was just this one thing – just this one thing is: identification of the auditor. And it straightened out a psychosis. So don't think that you need wild numbers of techniques at lower levels. You don't. All you need is to be able to recognize good indicators and when they're not present, recognize the bad indicator that's present and then go ahead and handle the bad indicator. Convert the bad indicator into a good indicator, take your next bad indicator, handle that, convert it

into a good indicator maintaining at the same time all the good indicators that were already present. Of course, it's kind of tricky, it takes some experience and so forth. Boy, you'd have pcs flying if you did that. You'd just have them flying.

What I've given you here is a system by which this is worked and evolved. Much more than tremendous quantities of data concerning it. But the organizations of the system is simply that there are many bad indicators, many bad indicators. And bad indicators are bad indicators, until you get up to Levels V and VI they are merely handled differently. The indicator doesn't change much. The indicators are there. But when you get to Levels V and VI you of course, get other bad indicators of a lighter nature which can block off and prevent other indicators from happening, which are not present at these lower levels.

But you can have some wonderful – wonderful success with cases, working on what I have been telling you. And remembering as you work that no matter how light it is or how modern or how much in this lifetime it is, this person at sometime or another has had a social idea which became thwarted. And if you can trace those things back, no matter how you are working the case, if your auditing is directed mainly in that particular direction – is eradicating these wild offbeat ideas, thrusts and impulses of the individual. In other words, the motivations back of his overts – your original times when he decided this or that about something or other, by George you're gonna – you're gonna have pcs that really fly. And then, of course, you get up the upper levels you can run out the GPMs, of course and things that made him have those impulses in the first place.

All right. I've shorted you up a little bit here tonight – I overtalked it by five minutes, I was five minutes late, so you can be five minutes late for your sessions. Okay?

Thank you very much. Good night.

AUDITOR SELF-CRITICISM

A lecture given on 4 February 1964

All right. How are you today?

Audience: Good. Fine.

Well, I'm glad to see you, too. We have a date here. What's the date?

Audience: Fourth of February.

Fourth February, 1964. The – AD what?

Audience: Fourteen.

All right. All right, I'll get close to it here. Saint Hill Special Briefing Course.

All right. Well, enough of this goofing off. Enough of this goofing off. I wasn't speaking about the beginning of the lecture. I'm speaking about auditing. This is a lecture on the use of self-criticism in auditing.

Now, some of you – some of you have been the source of deep wailing, crying in the Kleenex, many puzzled looks on Jenny's face, incredible remarks in the Instructors' conference and incredulous gasps. Because the subject of self-criticism of one's own auditing is very, very, very misunderstood at this particular moment. And the reason it's misunderstood, of course, is because it's too simple.

Now, I've just been over the high spots in R6 in the month of January. And – my theory being it was better for me to knock me 'ead off than for everybody to knock their 'eads off. This being a theory I work on. But sometimes it deprives you of lectures and this body of some years of future life.

Now, we've – we got this one pretty well taped. And R6 is of a complexity – R6 is of such a complexity that – well, it's impossible to learn it; it's impossible to do it and yet you have to. Its complexities are sufficient to fill the most avaricious appetite of any complexicator. So, we might as well just lay aside complexity until we get to R6. There's where it lives. R5 seems complex, but R6 is incredible. And yet it's one little doable action: the running out of the actual GPM. All right, that's very complex – and, by the way, we'll be rolling that unit here any minute now and starting in with a dull thud. And what I'm about to give you – what I'm about to give you, by the way, is germane to it, because this point has to be reviewed. And completely aside from all other levels, if you haven't got basic auditing as required in smoothness at the level of R6, you don't lay eggs. You don't lay eggs – you lay ostrich eggs and emu eggs and other large varieties which have sharp corners. So in actual fact, you can call this a lecture for lower levels. And so it is. It's something that you should learn in lower levels, but it's peculiarly germane to R6 and you can call this the first R6 lecture.

Now, what's this thing – this thing called self-criticism of one's own auditing. Well, this is very simple. This is – this is too simple and it misses horribly and everybody gets very tangled up in it. And I have seen some of the most remarkable responses I think that anybody could ever add up. And these responses are in answer to the question "What happened in the session?" They're – they're really gorgeous. I should have a stack of papers here in front of me but I will spare you that embarrassment. What went on in the session? Week after week – week after week, papers were handed in to me and everybody was trying to find out what I meant and what I wanted. Oh, I'm actually fairly easy to please, but I just couldn't seem to be pleased by any of these reports. What R6 requires is one thing, but self-criticism of auditing applies to all levels, in actual fact, from III up. II – that's getting – well, you should know it in II, but it's quite a bit to teach at II. III – it becomes absolutely vital; you'll still get some results without it. At IV, it becomes pretty confoundingly pressing because you're going deeper into the case. At V, well, you'd better have it pretty well, and at VI you're not going to get anyplace without it.

In other words, the deeper you reach into a case the more expert your auditing has to be. And when I mean auditing I mean your basic auditing. The deeper you go into cases – the higher up the level, the deeper you go into the case, of course, and your auditing is – must comparably keep pace. In other words, the more – the more reach the processes have, the more vital it becomes that the basic auditing be perfect, or as near perfect as it can be made.

In other words, somebody could get away at Levels I – at Level 0, I, something like that – can get away with some pretty fantastic flubs. Before I finish that, let me just tell you, self-criticism is simply making a tape of your own session, listening it back, and say what went wrong. I mean that – that's the whole thing. How could you improve your own auditing? After listening to a tape of one of your sessions, how could you improve your auditing? And that's all there is to self-criticism. And we'll go into that at much greater length.

But you understand that at Level 0 or I in a co-audit in Poughkeepsie, somebody can sit down and say, "Well, what – what solutions have you had to your lumbosis?" and just sit there and run it off. It's not – it's not going to do too much because if the basic impingement of the auditor is not very great, you're not running very deep into the case anyway, and if the auditor makes any flubs, well, the flub isn't impinging either. You see? See? [laughter]

So therefore, it sometimes looks very mysterious to one of you, operating as an Auditing Supervisor in a co-audit, to have all these brand-new people fresh off the street sitting there, yippety-yapping at each other and everybody happy and no ARC breaks and nothing going on at all. Well, of course, they're not reaching any deeper than a molecule and the auditing flubs, of course, have no more impingement than the auditing question, see? So therefore, it looks good. It looks good and you say, "Well, why can't veteran auditors audit this smoothly?" Well, the veteran auditor, of course, is going in with a pickax. He's going much deeper in the case. He's doing open-pit mining. And he's got himself quite a battery of processes. And he starts using one of these processes on the pc and he's no longer dusting it off one molecule thick. He and the process are making an impingement, man! And what he says has an effect on the pc. So, of course, his auditing flub has an effect on the pc, proportionately. Right?

Well, so much – that would be at repetitive level. So it... the bum pieces of auditing which recur at Level II also have an impingement. See, they have an impingement as great as Level II has. And Level II, with a tremendous number of repetitive process... Mary Sue is doing a chart of these things and we're doing a "Guidebook to Scientology Processes." And she's been digging up some from yars and yars ago, and I never knew there was that wealth of repetitive processes. That's about the wealthiest level that anybody ever had anything to do with. Good heavens, there are processes that I'd forgotten and put to bed ages ago, and so forth. Did you – do you remember Viewpoint Processing? Well, you may have and may not have because I didn't, and Mary Sue promptly produced a big sheet that she had salvaged out of an ACC. She's really done a wonderful job keeping odd bits of records and that sort of thing. And she'd salvaged this sheet out of her papers. And I looked at this – what's this, you know? Well, those – just repetitive processes, but frankly, they were enough to tear anybody's head off, see. Viewpoint – rehabilitation of the pc's space, for God's sakes. *Krrrrr!*

So – well, that's quite a bit of impingement. And so we consequently, with that much impingement of process, we're going to get that much impingement of flub. And so we have to have TRs in pretty good condition in order to run that particular level. Person isn't going to get much results – we'll go into results in a minute – if he doesn't have his TRs in such a position.

Now, let's take our old friend here the E-Meter. And let's take Level III with this E-Meter. Now, this E-Meter will dig. It's all right for the pc to sit there and say, "Yes. Hm-hm. That was in 1952. That was when my dog bit Aunt Agnes." That's all right. That's fine. But now we're going to find out the sub-itsa. And as soon as we get the meter we start mining in sub-itsa. Now, we're just mining in itsa at Level II. It's what can the pc remember, and the only improvement we get of the depth of itsa is brought about by the repetitive nature of the process, you see? Ah, but now we go into Level III, and we are no longer doing mere open-pit mining with picks and shovels and Chinese wicker baskets, you see. We have moved in a large crane, called an E-Meter, and it's taking bites out of the earth at a tremendous rate. And the pc doesn't know what's going to be bit up.

Just take an innocent question like this: "In this session, has anything been suppressed?"

Pc says, "No, no, no."

"All right, I'll check that on the meter. In this session, has anything been suppressed? I'm sorry, that reads."

"It does? Oh. ...oh, oh, well, yes. I suppressed – when you said 'start of session,' I suppressed it. The session never started."

Well now, how did we arrive at that? We didn't arrive at that simply by asking the pc a question and getting the snap off-the-cuff answer which was sitting there ready to be delivered. No, we asked the pc and he couldn't see anything so we looked at the meter to see if it could see something and, of course, it mines below his itsa level. It will read below where he can see. Well, now we're getting into an area of more impingement, aren't we? We're going deeper. And the impingement being greater, the handling of the auditing must be better. Be-

cause now the impingement of the meter plus the process is sufficiently great that the pc, of course, is impinged upon by the flubs that much more heavily.

So he begins to mind these flubs much worse. Now, this really has nothing whatsoever to do with whether one pc is touchy or another pc is untouchy. It has to do with the fact that the pc is being mined more deeply, and therefore the impingement is greater. Now, one of the things which happens when you run somebody over his level – this is only true, by the way, up to Level IV – but when you mine somebody above his level, you're running him on some process type and so forth that he is not accustomed to. You... he's over his head. Every time you pick up an answer it leaps full-armed and slays him. See – *bong!* You see?

This person ought to be audited on ordinary itsa – Level I, you see? So they chatter-chatter, the protective defenses of the mind are not disarmed, he's perfectly careful, he really doesn't have to talk to the auditor, he can sort of say, "Well, it's all right if I say I did this because the auditor really isn't there anyway." He's got all kinds of things, you see, that he can dodge away from. But as we've moved it up the line – as we've moved it up the line, he no longer can do this, and when you go into with a crash and ask something that he finds it very difficult to confront, you'll get things like bypassed charge accumulating. And he says the – picks on these little bits of rough auditing, see. And the – he minds these things. He's very upset about them. And when somebody is audited well above his level you can count on consistent and continual ARC breaky sessions.

It doesn't mean that ARC breaky sessions totally stem from being audited above the level, don't you understand? Because if you want to see a real prize ARC breaky session do an R6 with a wrong goal. You're going to have a sufficiently ARC breaky pc to please the most masochistic auditor ever made. It doesn't matter who it is. You see, he's just being audited wrong. It's not above his level. But this is true up to Level IV, that if you run a pc above his level you have a greater tendency to have ARC breaky sessions. So up to Level IV, the best handling of a (quote) "ARC breaky pc" is reduce his level.

Somebody who's consistently ARC breaky – you simply reduce his level. That's all. That's the best handling because when we're assessing cases we aren't necessarily looking over the quality of the auditing. And we assume that the auditor was there doing his best, but certainly the level of impingement of the error was much greater than the pc could tolerate. That's only true up to Level IV, you understand, because at Level V and Level VI the only thing that cures ARC breaks – the only thing that cures ARC breaks – is picking up *the* bypassed charge that has been bypassed. You reduce his level, he's just going into a sad effect. You know, you got somebody with a wrong goal so you – he's ARC breaky, so you reduce his level. Ha! Cut your throat, man. That wrong goal is just going to sit there from there on out, and a week later and a month later and three months later and six months later he'll still be in the sad effect from this wrong goal.

So Levels V and VI are not included in that reduction of level. Because the person who has been booted up to Levels V and VI jolly well ought to be able to tolerate auditing, because he should have been audited up to a point where he is not frightened of having problems. And he's not frightened of the horrible censor who stands over with a lion skin on and a club in his hand that Freud put there. The censor was an item invented by Sigmund Freud. We

are very indebted to Mr. Freud, and I'm – never say anything that is really to be taken in a derogatory fashion about Freud. But I can never fail to remark some of these things which going further in the work have suddenly revealed some of these gaping holes.

Have you – have you ever audited a psychoanalyzed pc? That is a ball, man! The only thing you get off the psychoanalyzed pc is psychoanalytic computations. And the auditor that will sit there and take these – I don't know.

This is a bunch of bunk, you see. What it is, is invented items. You'll find that a person who is given a wrong goal will dramatize it more than his right goals. You tell somebody he has a goal "to lasso bulls on the pampas," see? "To lasso bulls on the pampas," you see? Well, of course, such a goal is a lot of bull. But we can go – we can get this fellow then, short time afterwards – he's sold on it, and he'll just keep talking about having to go to the pampas, you know, and riding his horse while he's telling you, you know? And he's got to lasso bulls on the pampas. This is a most remarkable thing. And eventually you'll pick it up that it's a wrong goal and he no longer dramatizes it. In other words, you have an installed goal. And because it is wrong, a wrongness has been invalidated [validated], and of course doesn't as-is, but beefs up. Now, you find the person's right goal, he will dramatize it less. This is one of the ways of telling what is a right goal – not a very effective way, but a little cute trick that lies alongside of the thing. You tell this fellow – you tell this fellow he has a goal "to sneeze" and all the next day he does nothing but sneeze. You can conclude at the end of that time that that is a wrong goal. Because if you'd found the goal "to sneeze," he would now sneeze less. If it was an actual goal, you see.

But if you found a wrong goal "to sneeze," you have validated an error. And he will now sneeze worse. You've given it wrong source. If you date a somatic with a wrong date, it won't go away. That's for sure. But an auditor can come along shortly afterwards and find the wrong date of the somatic, and get very nice meter reactions and a reduction of the somatic. You understand what I just said? An auditor comes along and he wrongly dates a somatic on a pc. This pc didn't get any better, see, in fact his somatic probably got a little worse. And then another auditor comes along shortly afterwards, can find the wrong date of the somatic, and even though he uses that as the date, he runs off the charge of it having been wrongly dated, you understand, and the somatic slightly reduces and he thinks he's got the right date. You understand? Very cute.

Now, of course, if he went ahead and found the *right* date, the somatic would go completely. You understand? Well, this is the validation of an error, and a person tends to dramatize a validated error more than an actual aberration which has been contacted. This is very mysterious, but is something for an auditor to watch for because he'll sometimes see some very amusing examples of this. They're very amusing. The – very often he will get a pc from some co-audit or from some other area who has been told something of this sort, and the pc will sit there with this big sell. Your best thing to do is do a case analysis on it. Find out where he got this idea, see? Where he's sitting – he's sitting over there where he got the idea, of course – get the considerations off of the thing and then find out where it really is or if it really is true, see. And you'll find out these things will go away.

Well, now you could do the same thing with a psychoanalytic patient. I've told this story many times but the most unkind thing I did, I think, to – ever did to a pc from his own point of view, was the associate editor of *Collier's* magazine, back in the early days. And he had been psychoanalyzed and psychoanalysis had kept him going for a number of years. When the psychoanalyst picked him up, he had ulcers. He had ulcers so you could see daylight through him, you see? And he had ceased to have ulcers, oddly enough, apparently. But he had to be very careful. This is always true of a person who has been – had errors validated by some psychotherapy, or medical treatment or something of the sort. They have to be careful. That's the common denominator. That is something you want to watch for in a pc. What is he being very careful of? That's why that careful button is so gorgeous. What's he being careful of? You know, well he has to – he has to have nineteen hours sleep a night. He has to be very careful to get nineteen hours sleep a night. You trace that back with some kind of a case analysis, you'll get into some of the most amusing ramifications you ever heard of. And finally you will find out that this was a piece of advice that he got to cure his insomnia or something, and it was a validated error. That wasn't what was wrong with him at all, see? Somebody has found the wrong combo of the case, and worked it around, and now the fellow will dramatize it.

Well, this associate editor at *Collier's* magazine had been psychoanalyzed since he was a small boy, and he was being very careful. He – if he – if he didn't ride on certain kinds of trains (maybe I exaggerate this a little bit, you see) and if he didn't – if he was very careful to drink only out of square tumblers, and if he only thought the right thoughts, and if he sat in a certain way in a chair, he could live, you see? He wanted to know what this Dianetics was all about and I gave him a session. And the first thing I did was take him back to the beginning of his psychoanalysis and scan him rapidly through to the 1a – from the first session to the last session he had ever had. At the end of the first scan, his ulcers were on full. Gave him back every symptom that psychoanalysis had cured him of. Every single symptom was there glaring him in the face. We used to audit in those days on a couch. He got up – he got up off the couch and he staggered into the bathroom and he was dreadfully ill in about eight different directions. [laughter] I scanned him through it another time or two and it eased the symptoms and that sort of thing. But the poor fellow now had nothing to hold on to. He had nothing to hold on to. So he didn't write a good article about Dianetics, you see. We'd taken away his id and his ego and his mother complex and his censors and how it was looking through cracks in the bedroom window that had aberrated him, don't you see. And we'd just taken all these things and torn the whole thing up and thrown it in the air and given him back his ulcers in full, but the man could breathe. He didn't recognize in himself that he was now freer than he'd been for seven years.

And, oh, he got subsequent auditing, I'm sure. But personally I myself was not terribly fascinated. Because he was only supposed to be a demonstration. And he kept comparing Dianetics to psychoanalysis, which I think was awfully fatal for him. [laughs] He knew at the end of that time that we were sufficiently powerful to be able to tear up another psychotherapy. Naturally, the course of action would have been to just erase the psychoanalysis just by chain scanning and return him into proper cycles of processing and put him back together

again and get him into some kind of condition so that he could function. Obviously his ulcers were not from his id having skidded into his ego, see? [laughter]

So, I remember then. That was fabulous. Some other auditor took him on. They did quite a bit for him afterwards. But the point startled me. I hadn't recognized myself the frailty of psychoanalysis – the tremendous frailty of it. In other words, this thing was by invented-ness. It was a cure by inventing new evils. And the cure by invention is an alter-is and sometimes you can do things with it. But remember, it would be a very, very grim sort of an approach, that if this fellow had serious headaches to give him an awful stomachache so he took his attention off of his headache. But don't you think that that hasn't been done? And many times, and several therapies can be attributable to it.

But there's a very shallow draft. That's a very shallow draft. And actually telling somebody about his ids and skiddings and the censor and how he had evil thoughts all the time and he just thought evil thoughts all the time but had to suppress them – and he was very close to suppress as a button, don't you see? All of these things had added up into a very shallow draft action which had simply submerged the actual symptoms. Well, now what do you think an auditor's flub – a failure to acknowledge or something like that – would have done at that level of case operation?

Nothing. The auditor could have failed to acknowledge or acknowledge or double-acknowledge or triple-acknowledge or walked out of the room or sat on the desk with – leaning back with his feet higher than his head, snoring, and it wouldn't have had much bearing on the case, don't you see? Case was just plunging himself in with overcommunication of some kind or another. That's the psychoanalytic approach, you see?

We don't do anything quite as light as that. In other words, that's a negative it'sa. [laughter] See, the person is examining things that never existed. Well, let's look at this. You get an E-Meter loose amongst a case and you can start pulling a case up by the roots. And this is getting pretty doggone fundamental. You just ask this fellow, "Since the last time I audited you a week ago, has anything been suppressed?" And he comes up with his problems and upsets and so forth, but he himself is buried. This is sufficiently true that you won't care to use many "Since" mid ruds at Level VI.

The reason for that is, of course, they are sitting – all the events of the last week are sitting on the last item you left him in. It's going to take you about – well, five or ten minutes to list and blow that item. Why spend a half an hour? You see what I mean now by depth? Let's take those two extremes. All the events of the past week are sitting on this item. Well, you're going to blow the item. See, it just happens to be the item he's sitting in. So you don't pay much attention to it. In other words, you're now mining so deep that the shallow mining hasn't got very much bearing on it.

Well, let's take the intermediate step – Level IV. Level IV, now, we're going for service facsimiles. We're going for long chains of stuff. We're going for assessment-type things. We're going to plow around in this case and find out what combo of this and that reads. And we're going to do something with this, with the E-Meter. And we're going to take up this guy by his roots and we're going to say, "How are you making people wrong?" Now, that is a very accusative level of auditing, I must assure you. But it's nevertheless a very factual level of

auditing. Now, if the fellow hasn't graduated up through the levels as a pc to a point where he can take enough responsibility to have been wrong occasionally or catch himself out doing something antisocial, he isn't going to buy this at all, you see. So the auditor's error is a crashing shock to him. See, you've got that much charge – that much more charge at Level IV than we had at Level III. Because we've got that much more charge, we can bypass it more easily. And bypassed charge is usually bypassed by a session flub. It's the session flub that will key in the bypassed charge. It doesn't create the bypass, that was done by a technical error, but it doesn't – some... very often doesn't key in until somebody's made a session flub.

So we have at Level IV a greater opportunity to mine deeper and miss more. Now, at Level V we find the pc in a very nasty, cantankerous mood, anyway. First place, he doesn't like to be run at the idea of total effect. He doesn't consider this healthy. It's not inducive to his fine independence of thought. And that he's going around on a little post being banged at from all different directions – it gets real enough to him after a while, but he doesn't appreciate it as an activity. So you leave one of these RIs a little bit charged or you haven't studied your E-Meter book at Level II and don't realize that a pc's sudden exhalations can cause rocket reads. You haven't studied body movement effects on the E-Meter. You don't realize that a pc shoving his feet about on the floor can give you some very gorgeous rocket reads, and some pcs simply by stretching can give you some of the nicest blowdowns you ever wished to see. Having missed this chapter on the E-Meter book, you let the pc shout the items. You see? So you get beautiful rocket reads for each one of the items, but they're all remaining there completely charged.

Now, the auditor gives a sort of a half-acknowledgment. He falls down on the TRs, just a pin-width, you see. He looks differently out of his left eye than his right eye, don't you see? Bang! ARC break, see? Why? The opportunity for an ARC break is the bypassed charge. It's tremendous! So any little auditor flub and so forth precipitates it. So therefore, the ability to handle the basics of auditing becomes very, very critical indeed by Level V.

Now let's move into Level VI. Well, a whole implant GPM sequence of twenty-six goals, twenty-six implanted goals, would undoubtedly produce less commotion if totally and suddenly keyed in on the pc than one actual RI. The amount of charge which you're handling looms like the Atlas Mountains to the pc. One of these items is standing up there in its pristine ferocity, ready to swoop. And all he does is regard the fact that he is going to list on it and he's got it right in the chops. You ask him one of the new auditing questions for Level VI – it delivers the item something like shooting it out of a Roman catapult. It almost can't – can't help but list the right item. All the auditor does is ask the question and the item is there. Because you're dealing with the basic, complete pattern of the actual GPM and it has ferocity. Now, I'm not just talking for advertising purposes.

You see, for three years, up to August of 1963, we were insufficiently close to an actual GPM to cause much trouble. You could find a goal, all right. You could run "oppose" on the goal. And on one goal I ran seventy items out of the goal – and ran it the other day with the actual pattern of the goal with the actual command necessary to run those cases, and there wasn't one single RI had been touched. It hadn't even been jostled.

In other words, you could run all over the top of the thing and so forth, and get a lot of charge off and feel fine, get rid of your lumbosis and everything was swell. Of course, we didn't have it set enough to put the pc into the middle of it. *Whu!* That's not the case. That actually hasn't been the case since August. And that's when you saw me close the gate on R6, hastily. We were hanging in August between being able to safely run them and to hell with it, with the old R3 processes, and we were right in the middle. We didn't have it sufficiently canned to run them absolutely accurately, and we had it sufficiently close to tear the pc's head off. Now, going all the way through and running the actual pattern with the actual commands – *kabang, bang, bang* – you actually can get away, perhaps, with a little more cycle flub than if you were running the not-quite-correct commands of this middle band which delivered in nothing but ARC breaky sessions one right after the other, you see. Because everything just stirred up and bypassed, you see.

But the auditor fails to clear the auditing command with the pc. Oh, my God, how stupid – years since you cleared the auditing command with the pc as a serious operation. Bang! ARC break. Why? Listing from the incorrect goal as an RI into the next top oppterm. And the auditor – never occurred to the auditor to say, "Is it all right if I ask you this auditing command?" see, but simply asked it. That was enough, see? Because, of course, it was a wrong auditing command because those goals weren't adjacent. Look at the niceties we are now dealing with.

The auditor doesn't understand what the pc has said – and wraps the pc around four telegraph poles. Because the pc has said "second terminal from the bottom" and the auditor thought the pc had said "fourth terminal from the bottom," and the auditor started to repair the fourth terminal from the bottom – which was all right – yanking the pc two terminals up the chain and producing a yo-yo effect of the RI the pc was sitting in. See, auditor failed to understand what the pc said. Elementary, isn't it? Oh man, you're getting down to basics now. You're really getting down to basics. Now you know what these things are all about. And as you come up handling each level in turn, handling each level and running through that level, you tend to get cocky toward the end of the level because your auditing has come up to a potential of being able to handle that level. So you get up to the next level and you say, "Well, my basic auditing is now perfect. I am – smell like lilies all the time and I... no improvement possible!" You know? "You can't improve a perfect work of art!" And you go up into the next level, and with a crash you all of a sudden find yourself unable to handle the pc. And I mean, what's all this happening? Well, it's simply a flaw – the undetected flaw – in the basic auditing. And that's what it is.

And you can... of course, to that is added unfamiliarity with the technique, unfamiliarity with how a pc should act and it all looks very clumsy, and you're liable to overlook this little interesting factor: is the reason it's happening is because a new strain has been put on your basic auditing. New things are being demanded of your basic auditing. So that's why some Scientologists think they have to be retrained all the time. Techniques are advancing – their auditing cycle has to advance with it.

Now, I invite any one of you, particularly when he thinks it – on a day – on a day when you feel your auditing is at its absolute lowest ebb, see? You've practically blown the session, you've chopped the pc to ribbons, so forth. You actually looked at the meter – you

looked at the meter and you said, "All right, why are you such a lousy pc?", [laughter] you see? I mean... You've done your assessment. [laughter, laughs] At your very worst – at your very worst here, at Saint Hill, I wish you could simply transport yourself (you will be able to do in not too distant future!) suddenly and instantly into the beginners' classes of an Academy somewhere. You'd start immediately thinking of yourself not as a work of art, but you'd see that they had a long way to go.

So the division of Scientology into levels is actually dictated by what is demanded of the pc – primarily what's demanded of the pc – and almost parallel with that, what's demanded of the auditor. Now, you think it's divided because it's primarily what's demanded of the auditor and secondarily what's demanded of the pc. No, it's not quite that way. It's really what's demanded of the pc and then what's demanded of the auditor. Actually, a very educated pc who is fully and thoroughly trained could guide a rather lousy auditor over an awful lot of rocks and shoals in R6. And a fairly well-educated auditor at Level IV can drag a pc who is auditing him through a lot of muddy water. He can suddenly say, "Hey, wait a minute, did you get a blowdown on that assessment?"

The auditor says, "I'm – I'm sorry, I – I – I don't think I did."

"Well, I don't think we ought to be running it. You getting any tone arm action now?"

"Well no, I haven't gotten any for a little while."

"Well, all right, let's – let's look over that assessment list. Let's look over that assessment list. Where did the tone arm dip while you were assessing?"

"Oh, that was back there at the beginning of the list."

"Well, read it over to me again and see if you get a read there."

"Oh, yeah, all right."

"You got – you got some tone arm there? Oh, oh all right, all right. Well, let's use that one."

And the auditor says, "Okay." [laughter] Well, what do you know.

See, that's your educated pc. And I don't know. I don't know. Self-auditing – self-auditing is absolutely out.

I just put in a series of tests and so forth on this – we had to know this point: Could an individual run out his own actual GPM with a one-hand electrode? Could you do this? Well, this is something like tackling lions and tigers barehanded while being painted with bait. And I was able to get through – I was able to get through one bank, before it fell in. And you can't do it. I don't care if I got through the bank, it can't be done. Why can't it be done? Because the mechanics of the situation is that an auditor giving himself the auditing command does not produce tone arm action. *Huh-huh-huh!* Horrible, isn't it? So you get down toward the bottom of the bank and you've left every item charged behind you. Because really none of them blew. It takes the impingement of an auditor calling the items to deliver the tone arm action out of the GPM.

Oddly enough, you can plot your own goals plots. You can plot your own goals plots. This is not a talk on self-auditing, and I'll have to give you a talk on self-auditing someday – it's something that everybody says, "No, you mustn't do it," is usually the upper limits of the thing. There is a certain amount of self-auditing possible and every auditor does it. You burn your finger; you stand there and run the incident out. Or you keep touching the thing you burned your finger on after it cooled down or you give yourself assists and that sort of thing. You wonder sometimes what it was that kind of made you creak in the last session, then you suddenly remember it was so-and-so and so-and-so. Well, what is that? That's a sort of a type of self-auditing, isn't it? And – but self-auditing becomes very interesting as you go up through the levels, because there's nobody there but you, handling your mind. Well, that's something to think of, isn't it? That's something to think of. That's – that's something to know.

You mean you're going to be out here, eighteen light-years beyond Arcturus, sitting on a satellite enjoying life, and a comet goes through you or something like this – you're going to get a session, are you? No, you're there holding – you're there in charge of your own mind. And when you come up to a certain level, you are less the effect of the mind and are very definitely cause over the mind. There is a point. I've been trying to discover where this point is. See, at what point does a person become total cause over his own mind? It occurs somewhere in Level VII, it doesn't occur early on in Level VI. But up to that point, an auditor is necessary. Which is the point I am making here.

You can straighten out an ARC breaky session. There are things you can do with self-auditing which are quite remarkable. You've had an ARC breaky session as a pc – well, you can go reeling off and get yourself under control one way or the other and say, "Let me see," you know, "maybe I ought to run a little O/W on the auditor." Finally you get sensible enough to do something like that. "What did I do to the auditor and what did I withhold from the – oh hell, I had a withhold. That's why I'm blown up." And all of a sudden you feel all right, see? You've spotted the charge or something like that. You've puttied yourself back together again to that degree. Well, that's all very well, but that is all assist-type approach. And you're in perfect order to use assist-type approach on your own mind. But what it doesn't do is produce tone arm action. It doesn't produce tone arm action. That's the only thing about it. Well, why doesn't it produce tone arm action? Well, you're up against a magical thing called the two-terminal system of this universe. And when a person is this enmeshed into this universe, he is part of the two-terminal system of this universe. This is a two-terminal universe. And because he's up against this two-terminal system, one terminal all by itself is inert in this universe. And a thetan has become sufficiently enmeshed in this universe and has taken sufficiently the universe's characteristics as his own that he actually follows to a large degree such things as Newton's laws: the laws of interaction and so forth. These things are only applicable to the mind when a person himself is pretty confounded MESTy. But then anybody who is smeared into the universe to this – a great degree is pretty MESTy. So he's following the laws of MEST to a large degree.

Well, it's utter magic then, that the communication cycle does produce tone arm action. But that is what produces tone arm action and that's what blows charge. And it is charge being released that is the primary source of a person's eventual freedom. There are two things which hold a person down: One is significance and the other is mass. These are the two things

that hold a person chained. That is why you are in a body; that is all there is to it, really. Now, to mass, you of course can add the ramifications of energy and space – but the – and time and so forth. But these things are not of primary consideration – you can just say mass. The things which give you the psychosomatics you get, are mass. It's the significance that makes you think you're nuts. All the think – this is from way back – there were two effects: a person either could go sort of screwy mentally or he could go crazy physically. This is from 1950 – two types of insanity. Some people seem to be able to throw it into a physiological basis and some people threw it into a crazy basis and so forth. There was a lot of discussion of that at that time. At Level VI this breaks down much more simply. There are two things contained in a GPM: thought and mass. There are other things contained in it, such as space and energy and that sort of thing. But mass disintegrates into energy, but it doesn't translate purely into energy. You get the right item in the right place in the right GPM, and you'll get a vanishment which is so startling as to leave you blinking.

For instance, here sits a mass. You get the right item in the right place, compared up to the right things in the GPM and it's just as magical as that. You say, "Where the hell did it go? Gone." Here is this towering – this huge, overwhelming piece of mass, which if it hit you in the teeth or got crisscrossed on the track or in juxtaposition with some other item would practically break your neck for you. Would! And you've gotten the right idea in the right mass and you get – bong! You see? There it is, there it isn't. It's just like that – bang, bang! It's astonishing. So it isn't a dissipation, even though you get a resultant heat from it. It isn't a dissipation because, of course, it's being created by the unit called a thetan. And the second he triggers that combination, he no longer creates it. So you don't have the idea of mass dissipating into energy and disappearing. You have – yes, when you contact it there's heat, but that's just a symptom of contact. When you get the idea and its location and arrangements, you see, with the rest of the GPM, you just get a no-create of it anymore. And it'll go *psssswww!* It's – it's – without any pyrotechnics or fireworks, don't you see, it's gone! See? It is – it isn't. Because you're dealing with the unit, of course, that is making it when you're dealing with the pc.

All right. Let's – let's look at this. Let's look at this. There's thought or significance and there's mass. And these are the two dominant phenomena in the mind. Now, you can change thought, change thought, change thought. But you might not make anybody well, because his illness is being occasioned by the mass. Now, each GPM is surrounded by so many ramifications and locks, so many things are hung up on these things, there's such an endless parade of things, that you actually come out through all of your levels. And the levels are really just touching them, going a little deeper into the locks, swinging a little deeper in with Prep-checks, going a little deeper with running service facsimiles, and then running off implants at Level V that surround it, and then at Level VI just crashing in on the middle of the thing and tearing it up and throwing it away.

A person, by the way, hasn't a dog's chance of getting to the actual GPM successfully and continuously through all of that overburden, unless he has to some degree progressed up through the levels. He just hasn't got a dog's chance. In the first place, he has insufficient mental stamina. He understands too little of his mind. He gets too worried, too upset, too concerned about the various things happening. Furthermore, he gets an – all of a sudden his chest caves in. Something goes a little bit wrong and his chest caves in. Oh, my God! If you were to

take some man up here on the street and he's walking along and all of a sudden his chest caves in – *augh*. Same velocity as though he'd just been hit with a cannonball, you see. *Blaugh!* Well, man, he'd be up here to the doctors insisting they operate and take x-rays, and he'd worry and he'd sit home and he'd gloom and he'd – "What is it?" And he'd be very upset about it all, and he would be unable to eat or sleep or anything else, because of this very peculiar thing that's happened to him.

For instance, I know of a girl – a Scientologist now, but I knew her a long time ago – and she sat in the house for several years, because she'd walked into an office one day and found a terrific mass of energy suddenly settle over her head and down around her body with a sudden thud. She just sat down in this office and there was all of a sudden this terrific mass of energy hit her from all sides. And it frightened her so that she went home and didn't go out of the house for seven years. You going to – you're going to run this character, huh? Oddly enough, somebody ran her, ran out an engram, straightened her up a little bit, she got outside and she got along on early days. But what was that? That was an RI, maybe only a lock on an RI, but that's what hit her. And it worried her to that extent that it immobilized her in life. She quit doing everything she was doing – everything else. All right, so a fellow has to become kind of accustomed to living with the tiger, don't you see? And you take a Scientologist who's been processed quite a bit, he's talking to another Scientologist. "I got an awful somatic," he'll say.

The other fellow will say, "Yeah, where?"

"Oh, I – side. Well, let's go have lunch."

I've seen – I've seen a medical doctor – I've seen a medical doctor go, "*Ohhh! Augh! Augh!* Put him in bed! Put him in bed! Look at him! Look at him!" You know – absolute hysterics. I'm not exaggerating it a bit. In fact, it was worse. Guy was running a session and he turned on some heat. I never saw such an hysterical response in my life. Fascinating.

In other words – in other words, one has to become to some degree familiar with what's going on in the mind or in life or... and so forth, before one can handle it to some degree. And the levels are a subject of familiarization with what can knock your 'ead off. You learn how to handle these things. You get a little bit of cause over these things. You learn to grapple with these things. Well, you've graduated upstairs and it doesn't scare you out of seven years' growth when all of a sudden you feel your whole body wrapped around with glowing, red-hot energy that is liable to melt you to the bone any second. And you go on listing. And then you say to the auditor, "I think we've overlisted here." [laughter] "That's my item." Nothing to it, you see. Compare this type of poise and response in the auditing chair to the girl who had to go home and stay in the house for seven years because she suddenly felt a little energy touch her from all sides. Get the idea? That's why the levels exist as levels.

Well, what's all this got to do with self-criticism? Well, it has this to do with self-criticism: is self-criticism is based on the same auditing cycle – all the way. It's the same cycle. I don't care whether the person doesn't know it at Level 0, knows it only slightly at Level I or is using it at Level VI. It is still the same auditing cycle. And it must exist as an auditing cycle, because this is a two-pole universe. And without an auditor you don't get tone arm action adequate to a case resolution. That is all there is to it.

You can look on it as the auditing cycle is totally magical, if you want to. And it sure looks magical. But it is the basic discovery of Dianetics and Scientology, is the auditing cycle. And all by itself it does things to people in Comm Courses. "Do birds fly? Do birds fly? Do birds fly?" And all of a sudden the guy's got one less somatic or something. Or he's got three new ones. But that's the auditing cycle at work. And you should recognize the auditing cycle as a fundamental – as an extremely fundamental part of your auditing tools. And recognize that it is all right to use a perfectly sloppy auditing cycle at Level I. Remember it's got to be less sloppy at Level II and it's got to be less sloppy and more neat at Level III and it's got to be far more neat and expert at Level IV and it's got to be a *great* deal more expert at Level V and it's got to be smooth as glass at VI. It's the degree of charge that can be bypassed. It's the depth that you're looking into the case. But it's the same auditing cycle.

And that auditing cycle is with you all the way from Level 0 to Level VII. And only ceases to be necessary somewhere in Level VII. Still necessary in Level VI. You've – you get so that you can juggle GPMs around a little bit and you can list up your goals plot and you can do this and you can do that and pretty soon you're sitting there looking at the meter and you realize that tone arm has had .25 BD in the last fifteen minutes that you've been sitting there with a one-hand electrode plotting goals, see? *Oh-oh-oh-oh-oh, oh, oh, oh, oh*, that is not enough tone arm action to care for the amount of charge you are restimulating. So what's that meter going to do very shortly? It is going to pack up. It's going to send that tone arm up to about 5.25 and it's going to lock up that needle very nicely and it's going to leave you with some 'orrible, crushing somatic some way or another. And yet you actually had progressed up through the levels to a point where you were actually able to lay out and get accurately which goal followed which goal with a one-hand electrode on a meter, see?

Even though you'd progressed to that extent, the auditing cycle was necessary because you're still in a two-pole circumstance to the rest of the universe. If you haven't got an auditor, you don't get tone arm action.

Every once in a while you hear of somebody plotting his goals out or something like that. Well, don't blow your brains out. Say, "Fine, fine. Good. Good. Better get an auditor. That's – that's the – the way." You find somebody trying to self-audit implant GPMs, you know. Well, I'd wait till I was well above Level V before I attempted that. I wouldn't attempt it from Level II or something. But you get at Level VI, you should be able by that time to be sufficiently competent with regard to this sort of thing to: "Let's see, I wonder if that – I wonder if that's an implant GPM that – I don't know, I don't know, Joe found this GPM. I don't know whether it was really an implant GPM or not. I'm not – I'm not satisfied 100 percent." You could pick up a meter and you could say, "'Nix absoluteably spit.' Rocket reads. It's an implant GPM. Skip it." You say, "What wild abandon." Actually, if you were to take some pc as he started in on Level V and say to him, "Nix absoluteably spit," you know – this actually is not even the top of the implant, don't you see, you've just slammed him one down – he'd go creak, creak. "*Ow! Ow!* What's this? *Brrrrr*. I'm cold as ice." He would be, too. You get the idea?

Familiarity – familiarity is operating here. You're not afraid of the tiger. You've had several tigers eat out of your hand. You walk up to the edge of the jungle and you say, "*Whsst!* Hey! Come here, puss." [laughter] In your first approach to the beginning of Level V,

you crept up with a whole safari full of howdahs, three elephant guns handy, you heard a monkey cough, knew it was a tiger and turned loose with howitzers. Difference of level of familiarity. Difference of charge handleable. But how did you get up to that point?

Actually it's discharged charge. Not only must you get the familiarization as an idea, but you must also discharge charge. If you haven't got a lot of charge off your case, you can't do anything with it. It's like trying to batter through bullet-proof armor-plated walls. You can't get any answers. You take somebody with no charge off, you might be lucky and find an actual GPM on him. But if you tried to move the GPMs around so that you could find an actual GPMs – *gluuuh*. They'd think they were being attacked by an army. It would be too frightening to them.

Now, what's the – what's the final – what's the final word, here, on self-criticism? Well, it – self-criticism must be that the auditor's auditing must be adequate to the level he is running. His handling of the auditing cycle is the only thing which is delivering tone arm action into the session. And I know we say it's a process, I know we say it's this, I know we say it's that, I know we say it's the other thing – but it isn't. Go back to what I told you. It's a two-pole system. Self-auditing would be perfectly feasible if it delivered tone arm action, and it doesn't. Run an actual GPM on yourself, get two tone arm divisions of charge off in twenty items. You know what's available on an actual GPM? A hundred and seventy-five TA divisions down. Therefore you've stirred up and left on the case a hundred and seventy-three TA divisions down. *Gluuuu!* You'll feel like it, too.

All right. An auditor sits there, and he audits an im... a regular, actual GPM and he gets the hundred and seventy-five divisions. Why? Because he's an auditor sitting there. That's the magic of the auditor, is the two-pole nature of the situation. The auditor's auditing, we get tone arm action by the simple fact of his being there and following the communication cycle in the – necessary in the session. And that gives us tone arm action.

So, if an auditor – well, regardless of technique or any of these other considerations – if an auditor's sitting there auditing, his handling of the communication cycle with the pc must be adequate to that level so that it doesn't interfere with the auditing, but produces tone arm action. Now, this doesn't say that the fellow at Level III has to be as expert as he'll have to be at Level VI. But it says he has to be expert enough to handle Level III. But it's all the same cycle. In back of all auditing, we have that very interesting discovery. And it is a basic discovery I made many, many years ago. And this brought about the development of TRs and other things.

But remember, it is a peculiarly native and original thing to Dianetics and Scientology. It's only in Scientology, see, that one thing. And that's peculiar to it. It is an understanding of this thing that permits cases to get better. It's a very important bit of stuff. But because it sounds so this or so that or some other thing, well, you have a tendency to overcomplicate it for the level you're running. How complicated do you think my auditing cycle would be to Mary Jo Ann who has just walked in from the Poughkeepsie co-audit and I'm going to give her an assist? How adequate do you think that auditing cycle's going to have to be?

First place, she isn't going to hear me any much in the first place. She's not going to be able to pay much attention to what I'm saying anyway. I'll tell you what has to be adequate is

your TR 2. You can produce more magic with TR 2 than you ever saw. That's very, very magical. Wouldn't matter how long you carried on or what you said or what form your response took. If you could bring home to her that somebody had heard her and that she had been acknowledged for it – if you could bring home this *one fact* – you would probably get a big send on her case, see? Why, your auditing cycle could be pretty crude and you could get away with it. But that would be no level to think – no reason to think that you were now the world's greatest gee-whizzer on the subject of the auditing cycle,

Now, let's move on up through the line, let's get a little bit later, let's move on up the scale, and let's take some self-satisfied, totally successful, never-had-anything-really-rough-happen-in-any-of-his-cases auditor. And we say, "Son, we is grooming you up. And we want you to run service facsimiles."

"Well, I don't know that I've ever run any service facsimiles, but I can handle this. Ha-ha-ha-ha!"

ARC breaky pc – what – what the hell? Obviously can't be his auditing cycle because that's always been perfect, that has never been left wanting. Ah, but it is. It is, because the auditing cycle which is being demanded of him at this particular level of penetration into the case is very senior to what has been demanded of him before. And he doesn't see it as a necessity to change or smooth out his auditing cycle. I myself have fallen into the trap, so we're all talking here together with our hair down. I found out when I started to audit Level VI, I was getting dirty needles on a pc and I said, "Well, this pc so and so and so *wha wha*" – just like you do, you know – [laughter] "and the pc – pc's this, the pc's that and so forth, the pc would just get enough rest," you know? "Pc would just get enough rest, why, be all right and we wouldn't have all these upsets in session. After 1:30 at – in the afternoon, the pc's tone arm gets sticky." Smell. What corn. "The – this pc is always sleepy after dinner and never gets good tone arm action after dinner in the evening. And that's why I'm not getting good tone arm action on the pc, because the pc is..." The pc is – , the pc is – , the pc is – . "The pc's house is not in sufficient juxtaposition to the current position of the sun, and Saturn is out of nodule phase to Mars. So therefore we're having ARC breaky sessions." You get the idea?

Well, the funny part of it is, completely aside from everything that I have given you as the reason why this gets overlooked and the reason why it's important, there's another fact: The auditor's error is always prior to the rough part of a session. And therefore the error, being at the time it is at, is not therefore easily discernible as having come from the auditor's action. In other words, it's after the fact. The pc's roughness is after the fact of the error sufficiently that the auditor can't spot it easily. And you get in this self-criticism some of the most remarkable things. But a self-criticism should be run in this particular fashion. We'll get down to cases now.

An auditor should sit up – set up a session and run a routine session with a microphone on the desk and the session being recorded. Preferably – preferably a very normal session, not a stunt session just to do this, but one of his regular sessions. And he ought to have a couple of hours of tape or at least an hour and a half of tape to run off. Three and three-quarters speed and so forth, and the pc's voice particularly discernible and the auditor's voice

particularly discernible on the tape. And you should always put a microphone a little bit closer to the pc than the auditor, ordinarily.

All right, the session goes forward. The auditor carefully notes, in running whatever he's running, any rough moment in the session. He notes it on his auditor report, he makes a note of it. Or he notices any dirty needle or any sticky TA. Any other significant, you might call, bad indicator, which occurs in the session. Any natteriness by the pc. Any point of criticism. Any point of hecticness or anxiety on the part of the pc. Any worry, any appearance of a PTP on the part of the pc. He should note all of those things on his auditor's report, as they happen, quite honestly, just going on auditing. Not because he's taping it, withdrawing everything that he can withdraw from the auditing session because it might get on the tape. Just go on and audit normally and make an honest record of everything that's happening in the session.

Now, that record – that record has a level of importance which is quite remarkable. See, the session is on the tape. But remember what isn't on that tape is visual observation of the pc, visual observation of the meter behavior, visual observation of the tone arm. Those things are not on that tape. So therefore you make a very good record of that on your report. And having brought the session to a successful or unsuccessful close, you let the pc pack it up and it is now between you and the tape and your auditor's report. And you don't give a history of the session. We do not care what was run in the session. And the reason we don't care is we've got lots of processes, but we have very few good auditors.

Now, listen. Let's take this tape. And just leave it there, as a unit, but with some idea of its time of run. You started the tape at 1:02. Therefore the first moment on that tape is 1:02, isn't it? Let's look down here, and we see we had a dirty needle at 1:16. Actually you can figure this out – it's so many feet of tape per minute. But you see what was happening in that session. You run off about sixteen minutes worth of that tape, don't you see? You get – let's pick up that point on the tape. We're not interested in the auditor listening for one minute to his session consecutively from beginning to end. Scrub it. Who cares. We want him to find these points. But we just want him to find some points on this tape. So we're going to run off sixteen minutes or fourteen minutes of that tape and we're going to get this point when the pc was talking about "yipsnoo" as of 1:16. And now we're going to go backwards in the session, a few inches at a time, until we find the breakdown of the basic auditing that caused it. Because the auditor is never aware of it until he hears it on the tape.

You're going back there a minute – thirty seconds, a minute, two minutes, three minutes, five minutes – and you will find it. You will find it. *It is what the auditor failed to carry out in his communication cycle.* And you listen back there and you will find the auditor gave an auditing command wrong way to and upside down. He's been saying, "Do fish swim?" He all of a sudden actually said – this would be pretty corny – he said, "Do fish float?" See, this is awful corny. We'll find the mistake. So let's take this report now and, on tape, what caused it, see? What – what caused it. Let's write that on the report. What point in the tape caused it, see? Now, let's take another one of these points, see. Let's take another one of these points. Pc toward the end of the session all of a sudden said, "But I didn't say so-and-so and so-and-so." Well, this is an interesting – you know, the pc's being disputive, there. Something about goals. Auditor says to himself, "Well, obviously he didn't make his goals." No, nope, no, no, no –

damn! See? Let's forget about the figure-figure, see – let's forget about all this figure-figure. The only reason that pc snapped or snarled in any way at all about his goals or had a present time problem, was the auditor did something a minute, two minutes, three minutes, before that point. You understand? This really makes a citizen out of you, man. Wow! This is rough on you. And you take hold of it and you say, "Aha, there was a snappy moment there, just at the beginning of the goals. Pc – pc anxious about goals," see, or whatever we put down on the report. Let's find that point, now let's roll it back. Let's roll it back on the tape and listen forward, and roll it back – boy, you're going to find a piece of corn. And you're going to say, "Did I do that?" [laughter] Because ordinarily when you did it, you thought you got away with it. But it took it a little while to show up. And it will always show up. And if you do it this way, you pick up the bad indicator and then roll your tape to the point of the bad indicator and then roll it back and listen to it – to the point – you will find the breakdown in the auditing cycle. And we're only studying the auditing cycle. We're studying the auditor's delivery of the command, the pc's receiving the command, the pc's answering it and the auditor acknowledging it, don't you see? We're only studying that.

Pc originates, the auditor understands it and acknowledges, don't you see? We – we're – that's all we're studying. We're just studying actually the basic TRs: 0, 1, 2, 3, 4. That's all we're studying. How – where – where did one of those break down that caused the pc reaction? And this becomes the wildest thing you ever wanted to see. You won't believe it until you yourself have done it with your own auditing or have done it on some other auditors. You won't believe it! A pc never has any independent reaction in a session, independent of the auditor. *Never!* That's the wildest thing you ever wanted to see. Listen, a pc can be sitting there on the bypassed charge of wrong goals and wrong items and everything upside down, and audit smooth as a baby carriage. No ARC break, going on reasonably talking to the auditor, everything pleasant – feeling sick, but everything's pleasant. *Aaahh*. No – nothing wrong with the needle. Tone arm running okay. Everything fine, all the good indicators, pc's cheerful – a little sick at his stomach, but he's cheerful. And you're going to find something. You're going to find that the pc never causes a confounded thing in the session. And the pc's environment never causes a confounded thing in the session. And this is a *shock*.

There's only one thing that causes anything in a session, and that's the auditor. And this is not an exaggerated viewpoint that I'm trying to give you to persuade you to be, all of you, perfect auditors. I don't care if you're not perfect auditors. Trying to make perfect auditors out of you – I'm trying to make effective auditors out of you. And you're in for a shock if you follow that self-criticism through. You will find out that there's only one source of a session and that is the auditor. And it has nothing – to do with the moon was in Saturn. It had nothing to do with the pc not eating supper right. It had nothing to do with the lateness of the hour. It had nothing to do with how the bank had been sloshed up by Joe Blow, another auditor. That pc behaves exactly in response to the auditing he is receiving now. So he comes into session, he's got a present time problem, body hasn't had any supper. Well, there isn't any reason why this should be handled in any other way than a perfectly cheerful way with all the good indicators in, and he handles the present time problem – that's great. That's what auditing's for. The personal problems. Pc – so he's just been jilted by his girl or something of the sort; so he's been jilted, so what? He might cry for a little while, but if he isn't consistently

getting a better emotional reaction straight on up through to a fairly high tone as he comes through that session – well, of course, you can say the right process isn't being audited on him, but let's leave the right process out of it. He's – the wrong process is really not going to make him misemotional. It would be insistence on running the wrong process without getting it cleared and okayed with the pc that would make him emotional, isn't it?

It's not accepting the pc's answer.

"I don't understand the process and I haven't got any answers to it."

And you say, "Well, I'm going to ask it again, here." [laughter, laughs] You're going to have a mess on your hands, man, because you haven't got an auditing cycle! Where you don't have an auditing cycle, you haven't got a session! And where you have a pc that isn't sitting there with all indicators in and the tone arm flying, then the auditor thinks it's because the sun is not properly arranged in the house of Leo that the session is going wrong.

This is no effort on my part to suddenly bring it home and put it in your lap. I'm telling you about a technical – a technical discovery. I know when I graduated up in levels, I found that my auditing cycle had to be improved. And therefore this gives me the courage to tell you that as you're graduating up in levels, I think your auditing cycle could be improved.

But I think it is one of the most astonishing experiences an auditor can have – to do self-criticism on a piece of tape against a timed session of an ordinary kind. It's one of the most startling experiences he can have. And after he's done it a bit, maybe two or three times, something like that – he may not have to do it two or three times – he knows now why. And he doesn't go looking for the lateness of the hour. He flubs an acknowledgment, he knows what is going to happen *nooowwww*! So he probably puts it right before it has a chance to happen.

And it is quite an experience. It's quite an experience. And I've had the experience and it was a great shock to me. I used to be able to believe that it had something to do with the lateness of the hour when somebody told me that their pc was restive every evening. I used to believe these things. I don't believe them anymore. Because I know my pcs aren't reacting that way. They're reacting very precisely and exactly against the communication cycle of the auditor and they're not exacting – acting against any other slightest thing under the sun, moon and the stars. That's what they're reacting to and that's all they're reacting to. And you're as good an auditor as you can handle the communication cycle; you're as skilled an auditor as you can choose processes to throw onto that communication cycle line. And when you've said those things, you've actually said it all.

So, thank you very much. Good night.

THE COMMUNICATION CYCLE IN AUDITING

A lecture given on 6 February 1964

Thank you.

Thank you very much.

Now, what is the date, here? What's the date?

Audience: Sixth of February.

February what?

Audience: Six.

Six – sixth of February. What year?

Audience: AD 14.

Thank you. Thank you. February 6, AD 14, Saint Hill Special Briefing Course. I'm going to talk to you about a very arduous subject. The subject is the communication cycle, and I think you might like to know something about the communication cycle as used in auditing. It's a new subject – [laughter] new to many. [laughs]

If you look over communication, you'll find out that the magic of communication is about the only thing that makes auditing work. And if you could sit down to a meter – a one-hand electrode – all by yourself and run some process on yourself, it'd make a citizen out of you. And the reason it'd make a citizen out of you, is you'd see a little bit of tone arm action at first, or if you tripped across something like an active, loud, large GPM, why, you might get yourself a quarter or a half a tone arm division, or a couple of needle flashes. Now, you can always get a needle flash. You can always get something of that sort.

Now, the amount of tone arm action you would get doing this would make you blink, because it's none. And you could run some hot process on you that had been run by some auditor and which gave him good TA, you see? This process that has been run, give you good TA, when the auditor was auditing it. Then you sit down there with a one-hand electrode while the process is still hot and run the commands on yourself, you're going to get for a moment the residual of the auditing. That is to say, the auditor will have stirred up enough so that you'll see a little bit of charge go off, and then your tone arm is going to go dead – and it's going to stay dead.

Now, the reason for this has to do with the thetan in this universe. Now, he has begun to consider himself MEST, and he's begun to consider himself mass. And the being who considers himself mass, of course, responds to the laws of electronics and the laws of Newton,

and is actually incapable of generating very much, you see, or – which was what we're interested in – as-ising very much. There's not very much going to disappear there in the way of mass. And this is a very discouraging sort of an activity.

Now, I have had to explore this particular field of auditing – self-auditing, because most anybody does it, and so forth. And what was this all about. And I have even gotten ambitious enough to run an actual GPM, *bangity-bangity-bangity-bang*, on a one-hand electrode. That makes your hair stand on end. Well, it made my hair stand on end. And my auditor fished me out. It didn't kill me, I was able to breathe afterwards – that is, if I didn't move much. [laughter] But the same GPM, run with the same items and so forth, would produce upwards to 175 TA divisions, down. And the GPM, self-audited, produced 2.

Now, what was this all about? What was this all about? It tells us (now, it isn't that experiment; other experiments were made in this particular line) – and it tells us that an individual considers himself MESTy, or massy, if you see? And therefore he has to have a second terminal. And a second terminal is required to discharge the energy.

Now, a lot of auditors go further than this, and they go downhill to a point where they think they're being the second terminal to the degree that they think they pick up the somatics and illnesses of the person they're auditing. Well, get that.

Actually, there is no backflow of any kind hits the auditor. There is no backflow hits the auditor of any kind. But if he is so convinced that he himself is MEST, why, of course, he will turn on somatics and everything else in echo to the pc, because he's simply doing a matched terminal with the pc, don't you see? Actually, nothing hits the auditor. It has to be mocked up or envisioned by him. I think you find that's quite amusing, because there are whole schools of healing, back in the early days of Greece particularly, where they picked up the pain out of somebody's 'ead, or off somebody's arm, and they got the somatic very nicely and took it away and dumped it in the trash bin. Spiritual healing has this in its textbooks, and so forth. Well, that is its genus, is just this two-pole proposition.

Now, you don't have to know anything about electricity or electronics in order to go into this very deeply, but it's obvious to you that for a motor to run or for something to occur, like a light go on, that two poles have to be involved. And energy passing between two terminals, or two poles, makes an interchange, and it gives you what you call electric light.

Now, of course, that is the burning of energy. In this particular case you don't have the burning of energy, you have the as-ising of energy where the auditor and the pc is concerned. Now, the ability to hold a position, or the ability to hold two terminals apart, is a definition of power. Not how much energy can be thrown by a unit, but the base, the strain that is put on the base, the ability to hold these two positions. That's a little bit outside of what we're talking about. But here we have two poles. We have an auditor and a pc, and as long as the auditor audits and the pc replies, we get an exchange – an apparent exchange of energy from the pc's point of view, which doesn't hit the auditor. But because they think of themselves, don't you see, at this low, subvolitional level, as terminals, why, you get these exchanges of energy going on, you see? And nothing hits the auditor, and it as-ises as far as the pc is concerned.

But you have set up, in essence, a two-pole system, and that will bring about an as-ising of mass. It isn't burning the mass, it is as-ising the mass. And that's why there is nothing

hitting the auditor. Now, that is the essence of the situation, and the magic involved in auditing is contained in the communication cycle of auditing. You see, now you are handling the smooth interchange between these two poles. Eventually, the individual will get up to a point where he does not consider himself to be matter, and this no longer occurs. When you've got a pc's – half of a pc's actual GPMs run out, you start running into trouble. I'm running into that trouble right now.

Unless the pc makes up her mind, or recognizes the truth of the situation, I can't knock any energy off. I can ask the question, and the meter is the deadest-looking meter you ever saw in your life. Yet there's a red-hot GPM sitting under this sort of thing. See, there'll be a red-hot item or a red-hot this or a red-hot that. But I have to ask the pc whether or not that is it. And when the pc looks at it and decides that that is it, or that isn't it, only then do I get an active meter.

And this is most amazing. This is most amazing. The GPM can be sitting right there ready to read, and unless the pc has looked at it and has thought it over, why, nothing happens on the meter. Yet this same pc, before those – half of the bank was run out, don't you see? All I had to do was sneeze at the meter and I got rocket reads on anything, and the pc didn't know anything about what was rocket-reading and what wasn't rocket-reading. You get the advance?

The advance is upwards toward knowing one is one, see? And you get out of these automatic physical-energy manifestations of the physical universe. And getting out of these things, you then get to a point where you've got intention.

Now, what is one of these GPMs, anyway, but a method of limiting the pc's ability to intend? And that is the whole idea behind implanting or anything of that nature. The whole idea is that if he intends positive, he gets negative. If he intends negative, he gets positive. So, therefore, he cannot decide.

Now, if you take somebody and every time he says yes you say no, he eventually will get into an indecisional state of mind. He can no longer intend yes, completely, see? So this is how you could wear somebody down, break his spirit, or make him a private in the army. Get the idea? Every time he has a thought, you deny it. You see? There's where you get your original power of choice. The ideas of power of choice – and all such other ideas. The ideas of self-determinism versus other-determinism. All these other various ideas stem out of this alone. It is the ability to intend something.

Now, somebody cannot write. He intends to write, and he'll go around talking about writing, but he doesn't write. Well, what is happening there, he is intending to write, but something is intending that he not write. And that is his mind kicking back at him, which is simply a positive-negative proposition there, of two poles. Do you see this?

All right. He intends to talk Arabic, but the mind says that he can't talk Arabic. See, there's your positive-negative. He intends not to talk Arabic and finds himself chattering strange phrases, and you get these speakings in foreign tongues that the hysterical religionist very often is found to have, and so forth. In other words, you get the positive and the negative proposition. Well, a person has to be very MESTY indeed before they are subject to these particular phenomena. And the more MESTY that they consider themselves, the more en-

meshed in matter that they consider themselves, and the more energied up they are, why, the more trouble they have with this particular action. And, of course, as you go upscale this phenomena drops away as progress is made in this particular direction.

Now, what value is the auditor? Well, the auditor, of course, is at his greatest value at the lowest level of the case – is necessary all the way up through to step six, end of actual GPMs, is necessary all the way. But the auditor at very low levels can produce some of the most interesting phenomena. And it was in the Dianetic days that they were able to absolutely break their hearts, because you could say to somebody so-so-so-and-so and so-and-so, and you could handle engrams, you could handle matters associated with the bank, and the pc would lose his or her arthritis, would lose psychosomatic ills of one kind or another, and never find out about it.

In other words, the auditor could sit there and as-is bits of the thing, just by the automatic mechanical process of a two-way communication with the pc. But the pc was so snarled up and so sunk in, and considered themselves so much a brick or a piece of rock or a wooden slab, that they would never find out about it. And after the auditor had cured up somebody's lumbosis completely, why, the person would say, "Well, yes, but you haven't done anything about my worries about my wife." Well, yes, he was incurable, he was bedridden, he had to go around – the most he could look forward to was a wheelchair. And the auditor would fix him all up and he's walking around now, and he complains because he hasn't had his wife straightened out.

In other words, he was actually influenced without his knowledge. Do you understand this, now, from a two-pole arrangement? Wherever an individual, wherever an individual, then, thinks of himself as an animal, as matter, as a bit of mud, as algae which has coagulated into the difficulties of manhood, when you get these various things, what do you eventually see? You see a whole scientific world indulging in the philosophy of "man is matter." So the spiritual values and natures of man are, of course, lost completely. Only auditing can restore these. Nothing else is going to restore them.

But when you look over the difficulties of auditing, realize that you are handling simply the difficulties of a communication cycle. And when you, yourself, as the auditor, do not permit a smooth flow between you as a terminal and the pc as a terminal, and the pc as a terminal back to you, you get a no as-ising of matter. So you don't get tone arm action.

Now, part of the trick of course is what has to be as-ised, and how do you go about it? But that we call technique. And if you remove technique, if you remove technique from the area – let's not worry about the particulars, what *button* has to be pressed or stepped on. We're not going to wonder about this – what button. We're going to wonder only about the communication cycle. We find, oddly enough, if the auditor is actually capable of making the pc willing to talk to him, he wouldn't have to hit a button to get tone arm action. Do you see this?

Now, the person who is insisting continuously upon a new technique, a new technique, or a very fancy technique, or that sort of thing, is neglecting the basic tool of his auditing, which is the communication cycle of auditing. He cannot make the pc get tone arm action. Well, he can't make the pc get tone arm action, basically, because the communication cycle doesn't exist. And when the communication cycle does not exist in an auditing session, we get

this horrible compounding of the felony of trying to get a technique, but the technique cannot be administered to the pc because there's no communication cycle to administer it.

So basic auditing is called basic auditing because it goes prior to the technique. The communication cycle must exist before the technique can exist. And, therefore, any Case Supervisor is very, very well advised to merely heal up the various points and portions that are missing as far as that communication cycle is, and hit it as buttons. And in view of the fact that the auditor is trying and the auditor is doing something, to actually neglect whether or not the auditing is good or bad – that's up to an auditing Instructor, isn't it? Just neglect that. But just look at the case from the basis of "What parts of this communication cycle are awry?" and "What isn't here in the form of a response to the auditing question?" And simply heal those points up.

Now, if you had a man lying unconscious in the street, you certainly wouldn't be thinking up what technique to run on him. If you wanted to bring him back to life and livingness, what you would want to do is get him to talk to you, or breathe, or flutter an eyelid. That would be something. Oddly enough, the communication cycle all by itself will cause him to flutter that eyelid.

You can take an unconscious person who has been in a coma for some time, and by picking up their hand and making them touch the pillow, and even touch your arm – you know, picking up the hand (they have no volition here) – picking up the hand, touching the shoulder, picking up the hand, touching the pillow (giving them the command at the same time, talking), and so forth, that person will come back to life. This is the greatest magic that anybody ever saw. It's very startling, but look, you're just trying to get this man into communication with the auditor and communication with his surroundings. And he'll come back to battery. And there's no technique.

So, that should demonstrate to you that the fundamental entrance to the case is not on a level of technique, but on a level of the communication cycle. Now, all you have to do is mark out how many branches of this communication cycle can there be. There can be a communication cycle between the pc and the auditor, and the pc and the auditing room. And that's about it.

Now you can get particular, and you can have parts of the auditing room, or you can have specific portions of the auditor or the auditor's beingness – you can mark down to that. And then you can maybe go afield from this particular zone or area – if the person is already in a communication cycle with the auditor – you can go afield and start to address his present time problems. Now you can address whether or not his wife fixes the tea properly or puts arsenic in the coffee, as he is worried about. Now you can address that sort of thing.

But this, of course, because it is distant from where you are sitting, requires a technique. First you have to know what he is worried about out there because it is not present and visible for you to see, or for him to see. So the technique selects out what he is worried about – a little form of assessment, don't you see? And now you're into techniques and processing, having left the field of the communication cycle. If the field of the communication cycle with the auditing room and with the auditor is all solid ground, and if all of that is squared away, you can now worry about technique.

Now, the auditor who comes tearing down to you sometime as – when you're D-of-Ping someplace – and the auditor who comes down and says to you, "*Ho-ha-hai*, I – I just can't get anyplace on Mrs. Hepsibah. Can't get anyplace on Mrs. Hepsibah," and you say, "Well, why don't you run so-and-so and so-and-so," will inevitably come back (you give him a technique, you see) will inevitably come back a half an hour or so later and say, "That doesn't work either." And you can keep up this silly cycle for a long, long time. Because of course there is no technique being delivered to the pc because there is no communication cycle present.

Now, what needs to be repaired is the communication cycle, and when you've got a communication cycle repaired, then you can audit a technique. It's as elementary as that. Now, there are many parts of this communication cycle that can be addressed, because you have the pc there and you have the auditor there. And, of course, the first part of it that has to be addressed is the fact that the person is having a session and is in a room and is being faced by an auditor.

Now, if you take all those and write down the categories – you write down all the categories, all the different little bits that can be written down that are part of this (it's best for you as an auditor to imagine them rather than for me to give you a long catalog on them, you see). And then figure out how you're going to get him into communication on each one of these points, realizing that communication is simply a familiarization process based on reach and withdraw. Even when you speak to a pc, even when you speak to a person, you are reaching; when you cease to speak you are withdrawing. When he hears you, he has something withdrawn – and at that moment he's a bit withdrawn, don't you see? But then he reaches toward you with the answer. And you'll see him go into a withdraw while he thinks it all over. See, he gets back and, well, he's – "Which – why did my grandfather have to marry the girl?" See? And he thinks over this, and you'll see him think this over, and he thinks that cycle through on a withdrawal, don't you see? And then he will reach back to the auditor.

Now, he's already reached this reason. Now he will reach the auditor with the reason, and he will say that was it. Now you have made an exchange from the pc to the auditor, and will see it reflect on a meter. Because that exchange, now, is giving an as-ising of energy.

In the absence of that communication, you do not get meter action. So the fundamental of auditing – the fundamental of auditing – is the communication cycle! *That's* the fundamental of auditing! And that is really the great discovery of Dianetics and Scientology. It is such a simple discovery that... and everybody does it. But you realize that nobody knew anything about communication when it came along. The number of – the number of chaps in communication companies and that sort of thing, who fall around our neck saying, "Really!" you know?

You say, "Well, communication, it consists of cause, distance, effect," you know?

"I – yeah! By golly, it does, you know!"

Well, it's just this sort of thing. It's a fundamental that everybody knew was there. They've been watching apples fall off trees for a very long time and Newton had to come along and see an apple fall off a tree, see? And he said, "Hey, apples fall off trees, and when they leave the tree they hit the ground!" [laughter] See? Everybody says, "Wow!" you know?

"Terrific!" you know? And his name has gone singing down through the ages, because he noticed that apples fell off trees.

It's always this sort of a – it's always this sort of a thing. It's always this sort of a thing which escapes the attention of people. Because MEST is basically very complex stuff. And being very complex (composed as it is out of electrons and molecules and minerals and gee-whizzes of all kinds or another, wavelengths and all this sort of thing), because of its tremendous complexity – so complex that nobody can understand it, they can only... you know? Therefore, people who are very plowed in, you might say, into matter, and who are themselves thinking as matter, think very complexly. And they cannot observe the simplest things with which they are confronted. And they observe none of these things.

Now, you look over this. I call this to your attention. The ease with which you can handle a communication cycle depends on your ability to observe what the pc is doing. Now, we have to add to the simplicity of the communication cycle, the obnosis – the observation of the obvious. If the pc hasn't been talking to you, and if the pc hasn't said anything to you for a very long time, it is no time for you to be thinking on the subject of "What do I say to the pc?" You say, "What do I say to the pc?"

Please! I invite your attention that your inspection of what you are doing should have ended with your training, and thereafter is taken up exclusively with the observation of what the pc is doing or is not doing. And your handling of a communication cycle ought to be so instinctive, and so good, that you are never worried over here about what you do now. "Let's see, am I doing it right or am I not doing it right? Let's see. I wonder how my acknowledgment was that time. Did I say 'Okay' in an artificial frame of voice or should I say it naturally, like 'Ooo-kaay.' No, that wasn't right." No. The time for you to get this all fixed up is in training. And in actual auditing, the communication cycle that you watch is the pc's. *That's* the communication cycle you watch. You know yours is good. So you don't worry about it anymore.

Now, if you know your communication cycle is good, you haven't any longer got to be upset about whether you're doing it right or not. And you ought to be well enough trained that when somebody says "Catfish" to you, you look at them and recognize they are no longer saying "Catfish" and have finished saying "Catfish." And having finished saying "Catfish," it is time for you to acknowledge. But you only acknowledge because they have finished the communication. And your observation is simply limited to the fact that they have completed their communication, and that is your observation. Your observation is the observation of the communication cycle of the pc. And you get good enough so that you just lay in mothballs your worry about your communication cycle when you're finished training. That's the time it goes into mothballs. You understand? You know how to do it now. Your business is the communication responses and cycles of the pc. Do you see that?

This pc: You ask me, "What technique shall we run on this pc?" Technique! What are you doing with a technique? Let's look at the pc for a few minutes. "Oh yes, but," we say, "well, the pc has got to have something to talk about." Oh, come, come, come! You've been in Scientology or Dianetics all this time, and you can't dream up something for him to talk about? It's as corny as this: "You had any problems lately?" See? Or it's corny as this: "How

are you doing?" Let's get this pc to talk so we can see what the score is. Now this is the true, *the true*, touch of genius on a case. This is what makes that auditor who can crack any case, and when it's absent, has an auditor who couldn't crack an egg if he stepped on it. [laughter] *This* is the difference. *This* is the difference. It's whether or not this auditor can *observe* the communication cycle of the pc and repair its various lacks.

Now, I'm now talking to you – when I talk to you about the auditor's communication cycle – I'm talking to you about something that's so simple. It simply consists of asking a question that the pc can answer, and then the pc – observing that the pc answers it. And when the pc has answered it, observing that the pc has completed the answer to it – that the pc has answered it and has completed his answer to it and is through answering it. And then saying "Cheerios" – giving him the acknowledgment – bang! Like that. Say, "All right, you finished that." And then giving him something else to do. That's all. You can ask the same question. Or you can ask another question. It doesn't matter. But the communication cycle is simply asking something that the pc can answer. There's a lot of little trickery involved in this, because that includes clearing the auditing command. See?

You don't say to somebody who's got a – you got a five-year-old kid. And you say to him – you say to him, "Have you had any marital troubles lately?" and I don't think you're going to get much of an answer. See, it requires that much good sense: Ask a question that can be answered, and then ask it of the pc so the pc can hear it and knows what he's being asked, and then the pc answers the question; and being bright enough to know that the pc *is* answering that question, not some other question, and then knowing – and this, by the way, is a very interestingly developed instinct – you can tell when the pc is finished. And if you don't develop that instinct, you're very often lost. You'll say, "Well, did he end, or didn't he end?" and so on. Well, some auditors try to make it up, making another technique inside a technique, like, "Have you finished answering that auditing question?" Of course this is so much balderdash. You should be able to know. It is a piece of knowingness. See, you just know he's finished. He looks like he's finished, he feels like he's finished, your telepathy tells you he's finished, you get the idea? It's that esoteric.

He said, "Well, I – I didn't have a grandfather." And you now know that he is not going to say any more. See? It's part sense. It's part his vocal intonation. You see? But it's an instinct that you develop. You know he's finished. So, knowing he's finished, then you tell him he's finished. It's like pointing out the bypassed charge, don't you see? "You've answered it," you say. "You answered it." Actually, if you said "Okay, good," you might as well say "you've answered it, you have now found and located the bypassed charge in answer to the question, and there it is, and you have said it." See? That's the magic of acknowledgment, don't you see? But, naturally, you say, "Good," "Very good," you know, "All right," "Okay."

But if you got a long continuing thing, you don't want to stop him too hard. So the degree of stop you put on your acknowledgment is also your good sense. Because you can acknowledge a pc so hard and if your impingement on pcs is way up in the stars – that you finish the session right there. You just end the session. You waste all that remaining two hours that you had to go.

A lot of you take over a case, and the guy is going, "*Yip-yip-yap-yap-yap.*" And he says, "*Waffle, waffle, waf* and so forth and so on, and so on and I really don't have any and so on and all these lollipops, they keep coming out of the *wah-blah-blah...*"

You say, "Thank you."

And he goes, "*Wa-wa-wana-nawa-wa*"

You say, "Thank you."

And "*Wa-wa.* And then the – all the lollipops and the wife ran away with the chauffeur, and so on. And it's all very terrible..."

And you say, "Thank you," and so forth.

"And it's all very terrible and the wife ran away with the lollipops and, oh, the chauffeur came out, and..."

Oh, don't be an idiot and sit there and let this go on forever. He isn't talking to anybody. Now, that's what you've got to recognize. Let's get down to some of these problems here. Let's get down. What is this guy doing with his communication cycle? You want to know how to bust cases, that's how you bust them.

What's he doing? I'll give – you an idea. Let me give you a very, very high school, way – upstairs analysis of this situation, show you how far this can go – way up in the clouds. Bang! Pc takes twenty minutes to answer the auditing question. Now, the auditor, see, in this particular case, he knows Scientology.

He knows it backwards, forwards and upside down, see? Guy takes twenty minutes to answer the auditing question, and in that answer of the auditing question, doesn't answer it. Now, the very smart auditor, the very, very, very smart auditor, in repairing this communication cycle from the pc, would look at that, and he'd have three processes just like that. Three processes he'd know he'd have to do on this pc. *Pang, pang, pang!* This, I told you is very high school, see? It's very up. Very upstairs.

(1) Pc cannot have an auditing question. It's pretty obvious, isn't it? Didn't answer the question, so he couldn't have gotten it. So your first process would be "What auditing question wouldn't you mind being asked?" or "What auditing question should you be asked?" or "What question could you answer?" This is getting very elementary, isn't it? "What question wouldn't you mind answering?" You say that's running him at effect. No, it isn't, because you're asking him to have the power of choice over what question. You'd be surprised. You could probably run that as a repetitive process for an hour or two, and everything would get much brighter to this person. Person would say, "Terrific process! Absolutely terrific process. Never heard of such a process before! When did you dream that process up?" I mean, dream a process up, be damned. You just start processing him on a part of the communication cycle.

Now let's get more esoteric. Let's get much more esoteric. If he says he hasn't had any auditing, we obviously would adjudicate that he can't have any auditing. But we'd have to repair something of the communication cycle of "What question wouldn't he mind answering?" before we could ask him a question that he would answer. Quite obvious, isn't it? So you'd have to take first things first. And then we would have to find out about this auditing

thing, and I think you'd find out, as your second process, it'd be necessary for you to get him to get the concept of wasting auditing, and others wasting auditing. Well, if he can't have it, he's wasting it, because it's sitting in front of him. Can't have auditing.

Well, if you got him to waste it in concept for a few minutes or a half an hour or a session or something like this, "Get the idea of you wasting auditing." "Get the idea of someone..." not have him pick up anything on recall, man, because if you're auditing a case like that, you're obviously auditing somebody who doesn't dare go back on the backtrack. So don't say, "What auditing have you had that you wouldn't mind?" you see, because you're asking him to go into the past. Well, obviously, that is like going out into the outer perimeter. The past is not in the session. That's going abroad, isn't it? Memory processes, and that sort of thing, are out of the session and out of the communication cycle. That's something you repair after you've got somebody in session.

So your next process would be, as I said, waste auditing. "Get the idea of wasting auditing." "What could you do here that would waste auditing?" That's very good, you see? "What could an auditor do here that would waste auditing?" Because a person can't have something, they must waste it. If he isn't getting auditing, he must not be able to have it. I mean, let's get elementary. Let's go way back to 1952, get Elementary Have. The ability to do. You could also get him to waste communication or anything else, but I'm just dreaming up three processes in a row here. Your first one is what question could he answer, see, wouldn't he mind answering; your next one is "Get the idea of wasting auditing"; and the third one, "Who would I have to be to audit you?"

Now you've done a subvert, here. You've gone below the session. See, you've brought him up to a point where he could hear the fact that you're going to ask him a very significant question. After I did that, I'd maybe work on his memory. Because those three points would really be healed. You'd see that whole case change. You'd see that *whole* case change. And yet you're worried because he keeps talking about his lollipops running out with – away with his wife, or something of the sort. And you just get fixated on the fact. You say, "This guy can't be audited because he talks all the time, all the time, all the time, about lollipops and the chauffeur, and it goes on and on and on and on and on. And, therefore, if we don't – if we don't remedy this button about the lollipops, the chau – " Why, hell's bells, he doesn't even know what he's talking about.

It's whether or not he can receive an acknowledgment, whether or not he can receive an auditing question, whether or not he can have an auditing session, whether or not he can sit in an auditing room, whether or not he can have an acknowledgment, whether or not, you see, he can say something to the auditor, whether or not – so forth. You get all the little processes that go with this, see? Now, the person took twenty minutes to answer an auditing question and didn't answer it for those twenty minutes. Three processes. Based on what? Just your knowledge of Scientology and what the pc is doing in front of you. Simple, huh?

All right, we got a pc who's sitting there, and he doesn't say anything. Let's take another case, let's just do all this off the cuff. Pc isn't saying anything.

"...Yeah."

"All right. Do birds fly?" (You're running some process, you know?) "Do birds fly? I'll repeat the question..."

"...oh, hmm. Oh, hmm. (sigh) Yeah."

Well, let's dream up a process. We obviously can't have "What question wouldn't you mind my asking you?" because he's sitting there silent, man. Probably not a question of being asked a question, it's a question of not being able to respond to a question. Let's take it apart, let's find out what the pc is doing, dream up something accordingly, see?

So we say, "What could you say to me?" Elementary. Long comm lag, and he finally says something he can say to you. You get this question over somehow to him. What could he say to you?

And he finally says, "I – I could say hello." Good, big win, see? All right, let's build this up on a gradient. Next thing you know, you've got him talking to you.

But you see, if you don't have the auditing cycle going from the pc to the auditor, if you have tremendous communication disabilities on the part of the pc, you actually don't have any auditing cycle going that will discharge energy, and so you don't have tone arm action. That simple? That's all there is to it, actually. So, as soon as he can talk to the auditor, don't get so overjoyed about this wonderful change in him that you cease, now, to inspect his communication cycle. Because if you've cured that, you will now find another piece of it that's missing. In other words, you can go the whole way. Do you see?

After he's gotten so that he can say something to you, well now, now you might have to figure out what would he answer, don't you see? And now you might have to figure out if he could have an auditor. Now you might even go so far as to find out what constituted getting better. I don't think you have to invent a process as complicated as "What would be worse than getting better?" But what the pc isn't doing is where – well, let me put it this way, there's a little formula involved: It's what the pc isn't doing that it might be possible for the auditor to get him to do. See? That's the – that's the formula. It isn't what isn't the pc doing that we're going to get him to do – what is the missing ability? Because obviously he's not OT, so you say, "All right, be OT." Now, you're going to have a lose here. I'm afraid that's going to be a lose. Do you see? So, it's what can you get the pc to do that the pc can regain the ability in doing? See, that's the formula on which you're operating.

And, operating on that formula, you can find all sorts of things. You can thresh around in the environment of the pc, one way or the other, and if you're an alert auditor, you'll see these little disabilities showing up here and there, and so forth. A stammerer is about the easiest diagnosis anybody ever had anything to do with. But how many stammerers have I seen being audited on processes and techniques? Well, it's absolutely foolish to audit a stammerer on a technique. He obviously is having difficulty communicating. What are you doing in an auditing session, doing anything but to improve his ability to communicate to the auditor?

Now, you might find something silly like this happen if you were auditing somebody who stammered: that he would talk to the auditor eventually with complete clarity – still stammered to other people. Well, this is quite obvious. This is extremely obvious what you would now do. We now – you don't now instantly extend it to other people, because there are

other pieces of the communication abilities right there in the session to be straightened up before you go out into the outer perimeter of the society. And usually where the auditor gets his lose is he repairs something, gets a *big* win, and then there's thirty other things to be repaired, sitting right in front of his face – right in front of him – and he doesn't. He does some kind of a jump into memory, or engram running, or something. My God, just because the pc is now perfectly willing to talk to you is no reason that the pc – who a few minutes ago could not remember anything – it's no reason he now can remember something. That's another ability.

Let's say somebody is trying to improve their memory. Well, you improve somebody's memory after you've got somebody who can receive an auditing question and answer it, and then receive the acknowledgment resulting therefrom, and who can sit there in an auditing session and be a pc and be audited. Now you can go about improving memory, but oddly enough, memory improvement starts with being able to remember something in the auditing room, not something that happened to him eight trillion years ago. It begins just a minute ago.

I've seen a pc absolutely ruined, become unauditably, by repetitively being asked questions having to do with memory that the pc couldn't answer. So another rule in observing the communication cycle, and so forth, is don't ask the pc to do things the pc can't do. And if you've inadvertently asked the pc to do something the pc now can't do, well, for heaven's sakes, be enough on the ball, be sharp enough, be really bright on this and recognize that you've asked the pc something the pc can't do, and therefore you've given a lose, and you better not compound the lose. Don't ask them to do the same thing again that they now can't do.

This goes very elementary. You talk about flattening processes. Very often you're asking a pc a process, you see? "From where could you view catfish?" See? "From where could you view catfish?" "From where could you view catfish?"

And the pc finally says, "That's all the answers there are."

And you know, the process had better be flattened. So you say, "Well, from where could you view catfish?"

And he says, "Well, that's all the answers there are."

And you say, "From where could you view catfish?" And now he has to invent an answer, and you're running a create process. Your pc, if he doesn't ARC break, snarls up right there.

I always respect a pc saying, "There aren't any more answers." I bail out of there in a hurry. And when I ask the pc – when I ask the pc "From where could you view catfish?" and – we just took off into the blue here – "From where could you view catfish? See? That's the question I want you to answer now. Answer the question." And the pc says, "I'm sorry, I – I never viewed any catfish," I know right away I have been guilty of giving the pc an auditing question which the pc couldn't answer, and I am guilty of not having cleared the auditing question. I've given the pc a lose.

Let's have a pc who is very deathly afraid of touching mantels – mantelpieces. Just an invented nuttiness, see? All right, we'll say, "All right, walk over there and touch that man-

telpiece." (We already knew he was this way, see? Or we don't know he's this way.) We say, "Walk over there and touch that mantelpiece."

And he says, "*Ughh*, I – I – I can't do that."

Soon as you've gotten into that situation, you got yourself a lose. Let's find out if the pc could do these things. Let's discuss this process a little bit with the pc. Like, "How's about..." I don't care how grammatical or esoteric or patterned you are about this, you see, because sometimes you have to be very, very communicative. And you say, "How's about if I ask you to walk around here and touch parts of this room? What would you think about that? What if I ask you to do something like that?"

And the pc says, "Oh, my God, I couldn't do that! Ho-ho-ho-ho, no, oh-oh! Particularly a mantelpi – oh-oh-oh, no! Don't ask me to do anything like that."

You say, "All right, I won't."

See? Swift recovery. Now, you haven't given the pc any lose. In fact, you might have given him a little win. This caused him a spooky feeling. "You know, I'm really – I don't really want to walk around here and touch the room."

Ah, he's interested now. "Well, is there anything around here you – you – you wouldn't be too upset about touching? How's that? How about – how about some question like that?"

"Oh, I could – I wouldn't be too scared of touching that – that spot on the floor."

"What else wouldn't you mind looking around here and...?" [laughter]

Smooth as glass, you see? See? You cleared it, he said he couldn't do it, this intrigued him, now you can hit a gradient that he can do and build it back up, and you've got it made.

Every once in a while you see something like this. But if you're not – if you're not observing what the communication cycle of the pc is, why, you're adrift all the time. Pc isn't answering the question. Well, that's obvious. Maybe there's a hundred thousand remedies could be dreamed up for this particular activity, all within the perimeter of the auditing room. Pc is this way, pc is that way, pc – every time they sit down in the chair they dust the chair off very carefully and take some Kleenex and wipe the arms of the chair, and then they sit down very gingerly into the chair. You've observed this a couple of times. Well, there's no point in bringing it sharply to their attention, but you must realize, it must be borne home to you – with that much exaggeration, certainly it'd bring it home – that this pc doesn't want to touch very much around an auditing session. I mean, that would be an elementary observation, don't you see?

It might have to do with chairs, it might be a GPM, but you can't run all of that. Let's just chalk this up. Let's chalk this up. Pc gingery on this subject. Obviously, somewhere up the line you're going to run some objective process on this pc – somewhere up the line. But ahead of that there might be some much more attainable, but much less obvious thing, such as the pc never looks at the auditor. That might be touchable. "If you looked over here, what would you see?" Doesn't really require him to look over there. He only need guess at it. "What might you see?" You could even soften it up to that, don't you see?

There's all kinds of things here that depend on auditor observation. Where the pc breaks down in his communication cycle with the auditor and where the pc breaks down in his communication cycle with the environment is your entrance point to the case. Those are the entrance points to the case. If you haven't got him squared around so that he can respond to the auditor, he of course can't answer any auditing question, so what's this technique worry?. Why are you worried about a technique? No technique you ever dreamed up is going to arrive.

Well, you have some fortuitous feeling that an automaticity will turn on in the pc and answer you. Well, that's how you're going to get the pc getting well and never finding out about it. They ran into that in Dianetics. They could actually run 'em through an engram. The engram was so easy to trigger, and the bank responds to the auditor so beautifully, that practically the whole session could be carried on without the presence or benefit of a pc. PC didn't have to enter into it – and case loses occurred resultingly.

But these are the ways you crack cases. And the best way to study it is just walk around it and take a look at all possible ramifications that could be done about it, get some acquaintance with processes from '52, '53, '55, wonder which one of these processes are applicable to what, don't you see? There's all kinds of these processes. First Saint Hill, "Who would I have to be to audit you?" see? That's a nice process, see? But there's tons of these processes you can... oh, Lord! Well, they're being cataloged now, lots of them. But they're honeys. They're honeys.

Sometimes you find a pc can't, absolutely cannot run some process because one leg of it is wrong. Let's say SCS, and yet the pc can't stand still. And it's required in the process to stand still, and yet you're running Start, Change and Stop on the pc.

Well, the pc's disability is the pc can't stand still. The pc can start, the pc can change and the pc can stop, as long as they don't have to stop much. So you say, well, we can flatten stop – this will be all right. Oh, no, there must be a leg underlying this. See, a pc disability – the pc cannot stand still.

Well, what would you do about something like this? Well, I'll tell you what not to do about it: neglect it. Don't keep on running *SCS*, *SCS*, *SCS*, and the pc is going on, and they go on. Because what are they doing? They're running with a prior consideration of the process. Therefore, they never really take on any of the auditing commands.

They are running each auditing command, ("When I say 'Start,' you start that body" and so forth), "All right, I just – that – that'll give me a chance not to stand still," see? The pc always amends it. Always amends the auditing question, always amends the auditing question. Don't you see? "I'll stop it, but I'll stop it quick enough and get off of it so at no point during the stop have I stood still." See? You get this idea? Well, a little discussion with the pc will show up these various things.

Now, you can take a process and you can walk parallel with SCS, and you can repair that point and run SCS afterwards. Well, how would you go about standing still? Well, the crudest way to go about it is just say "Stand still. All right." "Don't stand still. Thank you." "Stand still. Thank you." "Don't stand still. Thank you." That's the crudest thing I know of, see? This is obviously right out of the textbooks and technology of Scientology, you see?

"Stand still. Thank you." "Don't stand still. Thank you." "Stand still. Thank you." "Don't stand..." Automaticity is going to go away; this must be some kind of an automaticity that's all ready to trigger there. So if we get the person into any familiarity with it – because the person already realizes they can't do it. That recognition tells you that it's within the range of itsa.

But if you get somebody walking in on crutches that don't know they're walking on crutches, you wouldn't say "Throw away your crutches. Now walk." See, too high a gradient. And they don't even worry about it. You get somebody walking in and saying, "I got to get rid of these crutches, man" worry, worry, worry, present time problem, see?

Well, the thing to do is inspect their communication cycle and their communication cycle with the auditor, communication cycle with their mind, the communication cycle with the environment – see. There's many of these little communication cycles. Let's inspect these various things. Let's find out he's all right before we say "All right. Throw away your crutches. Thank you." You got the idea? See?

Normally, what the person is worried about is in actual fact not what the person is bugged with. You very often will get somebody running off on a total automaticity of what's wrong with them, and they're not even listening to themselves talk. Actually, they will run off a total automaticity of what's wrong with them, and they're not even listening to themselves talk. Sometimes they listen to themselves talk to find out what's wrong with them. [laughter] When you get into that situation, why, it's elementary to repair the existing livingness of the pc, but only after you've repaired their auditingness.

An auditing session is a highly artificial action. Highly artificial. It's dreamed up, invented from scratch. Nothing like it has really ever existed before. That's why a psychoanalyst would lay an egg a minute – in a minute – if he cracked a textbook on Scientology and took it back to the office to run it on one of his patients. *Aughhh!* And boy, do they lay eggs! Why? Well, they're running Scientology with a psychoanalytic auditing cycle. And, of course, that's a wild auditing cycle if you've ever inspected it.

One psychoanalyst said, "I don't see how you can stand to listen hour after hour after hour," and the other one says, "Who listens?" But that's their appreciation of the auditing cycle, and it's too bad to produce any great effect, which is probably fortunate – because the theory which goes back of it, and so forth, is highly artificial. They don't produce any impingement, the auditing cycle isn't there, and so on.

But this artificiality of an auditing session approximates – it's only artificial because it approximates in such harsh, staggering, visible reality, the exact precise points of contact with existence. And what it is, is a hopped-up, gunned-up contact with beings in existence, don't you see? Way up! It's something like putting a Model-T Ford and putting a Lycoming aircraft engine in it, see? And *bzzzzz-zzzzz!*

Well, all of communication always has consisted of cause, distance, effect. Well, you jam it up into an auditing communication cycle and it's full of bombs, man. See, bang! Things are going to happen, because it's highlighted the exact important points. For instance, you ask somebody on the street out here, "What's important about communication?"

They say, "Well, being polite."

"Good. What are the parts of communication?"

"Oh, there's past participles and there's present participles and there's grammar and..."

See, they couldn't tell you any of this, don't you see? All right, you gun in there, with cause, distance, effect, you see? Ask a question, get it answered, acknowledge it, see? *Porowww!* See? *Wrooof!* You're handling raw meat. And you rehabilitate any part of this, and so forth, and then something wakes up. Thetan can't help but wake up. The ability to communicate is always terribly visible to a reporter or somebody doing work in this particular field. They get around Scientologists, it knocks them flat. And this photographer that was here today from *The Saturday Evening Post*, and so forth – who has gone now, I imagine – this boy – this boy's first remark to me is "They're all so uninhibited!" after he got through taking pictures of you, you see? "You're all so uninhibited."

He sees communication happening. He's very impressed with you, you see? You're walking straighter, and you aren't all tightened up, and you're not a bundle of nerves, don't you see, and all this sort of thing. And he can't quite express this thing, but he's already in a state of shock because he's been hit, you see, with too much life, livingness, you know – just hit him in the face. And yet, none of you really probably said anything to him. It's that apparent.

Well now, you take this up and gun this up into an auditing cycle, and the auditor is saying, "Do birds fly?" and the pc is supposed to listen to this, and he is supposed to understand this and he is supposed to sort out the answer to this, and he is supposed to deliver it up now. And he's going to get for that, "Thank you" straight into his skull. And it isn't the parts of grammar, and it isn't this, and it isn't that and it isn't the other thing, and – if he can stand up to this, he'll start getting the idea that he can communicate. And he goes out of session, and he'll start communicating with the environment. And the only thing really wrong with people is, is they've withdrawn from contact.

If you wanted to capsulize the entirety of difficulty with the mind, take somebody who is no longer looking. The last time he looked, there were three saber-toothed tigers ready to bite him. Now he is no longer looking. Of course, he believes that there are three saber-toothed tigers there. He'll sometimes put up screens between himself and the tigers. And then, of course, he never dares take down the screens, so he never finds out if the tigers have gone. And he does this throughout enough trillenia, he's got an awful stack of tigers – all of which have left! But he doesn't know it. He can't be sure they've left.

And so he's in a condition of total withdrawal – from his environment, from himself. He's safeguarded himself with an automatic bank; he's safeguarded himself with an automatic beingness; he's got a valence standing where he ought to be, and he knows that he came straight from mud and that he is mud and that he'd better not be anything else, because mud is relatively unpalatable when eaten by saber-toothed tigers. [laughter]

And a capsulization of all aberration is just a total withdrawal. I don't care – that's a psychiatric term, of course. They have some condition they say "total withdrawal." The psychiatrist is standing there totally withdrawn, telling you about somebody who has gone into a

withdrawal, which I always considered very interesting. This is not an apt term. It's one point where we're crossing terms. But we're not talking about the psychiatric withdrawal, we're just talking about the fact the guy has retreated, that's all. He no longer dares put out a beam a mile away. First he could put one out a light-year, then he put one out a year, you see, and then he put one out a mile and then he got down to a hundred yards. And each time he got enough "being bitten," don't you see, that he no longer puts out to distance, his remedy is always shorten the reach. And the thetan has, as his standard remedy for safety, shorten the reach. And what does he do when he gets into zero reach?

He actually can figure out how to invert a withdrawal into an inverted withdrawal, and you get the cycle of the dynamics coming on down, which is – he comes away from actual reach, don't you see, and he comes down to zero actual reach. Well, he's got to reach somehow, so he figures some other way to reach, don't you see? He reads travel books or something, you know? And he goes into these various cycles. And there's always a zero of what he is doing, which then has a remedy which is lower than that, and he gets down into not just a total withdraw, he gets down to an inversion of the inversion of the inversion of the inversion withdrawal. Of course, the first point this shows up is in an auditing session, and his ability to talk to the auditor – about pertinencies.

The sensibility of his communication is also in point here. You've asked him, "Do you have a car?" And he has explained to you that General Motors stock has gone down for the last year or so, and drops it at this point. So pertinencies – he didn't answer the question, did he? So you get him into some condition where he can answer the question, he can speak up, where he can hear what you're saying, where he can therefore receive the auditor. Because you've got somebody on total withdrawal, one of your best remedies is to see that he gets reached, don't you see? And you reach him in order to get him to reach, don't you see? And these are the conditions which you're trying to remedy with an auditing cycle.

Now, if you want to be an absolute gee-whizzer to end all gee-whizzers on cracking cases, don't you ever go around drooling about this fellow sitting there, and he's saying, "And my wife lollipopped with the chauffeur, and – and it's just all too tough, so on and so forth, and so on and so on."

And you're trying to say to him, "This is – you know, the session has ended."

And he says, "and so and so on and came down the chute, and there were eight sides of it, and so forth; they were all hexagonal, you see, and so forth."

And you said, "The – the session – the session ended some time ago."

And he says, "... and so on and so on. So I've always said to chauffeurs since that particular time – I've said it lollipopped the chauffeurs!"

Don't now go to somebody, or try to crack a textbook to find out what to run – what technique to run on this case. It isn't a case of technique. He hasn't got anybody there to talk to. He isn't talking to anybody. If he is, it's somebody else. He isn't talking about a problem he could have, see? He isn't even talking about a problem he's got! He probably isn't even listening to himself anymore. He has no familiarity with the environment, he is disoriented as to where he is, and so forth. And you want a technique?

He's got a paw. Well, you could say, "Now pick up your hand and put it on the side of the chair and feel the side of the chair."

He might go right on talking for some time without noticing you're doing this. And then eventually say, "Hey, there's a chair here." Big win.

But if you're going to deal in pcs at all who have disabilities of any kind whatsoever, you've got to have a session before you can have Class IV, V, VI, VII, VIII, IX, X. You get the idea now? You've got to have a session before you can have a technique operating. This is the value of the auditing cycle, this is its use, and this is how to become one of the wildest case crackers anybody ever had anything to do with. You get to be a screaming genius on this subject, and something.

Oh, you make errors, you'll get too accusative, you'll all of a sudden find you over-cut – you've overestimated the pc's ability here and there, and so forth, and you have to cut it back. But remember that it always requires adjustment.

The only other thing I would teach you, and like to teach you about this, and I really wish I could, is that after you've remedied it, it's been remedied. And don't keep on; because this pc had a lot of tone arm action on what question he could receive from the auditor, and so forth, don't make that a lifetime profession. Because this is just another method of nonobservation. Now that he can do this and is doing it, note that he is doing it. See? He feels all right about it and he is doing it. Note that, and now notice – notice, in other words, that he's changed – and then notice what else you can put together.

So there's two more things to notice, don't you see? Is when has that condition been remedied? – when has that little ability been regained? – so that you can pull foot out of there. And the other thing is observe now, newly and freshly, for something else to do for the pc.

The reason I give you those other two is that sometimes it happens so rapidly that it – you're just rocked back on your heels. Pc has never talked to anybody before in their life, and you all of a sudden have them talking to you pertinently, in a blue streak. Well, let's not go on remedying their ability to talk to the auditor. See, ability regained. So you want to be able to notice that, and that's all part of the observation.

And the real hot – the real hot auditor, the real – guy that gets case wins all over the place, is sitting in there observing what is going on in the session, and if things are going all right, doesn't remedy them, and if things are going all wrong, picks up that point that can be remedied and remedies it, until they are all remedied, and then carries on. Those are the magic ways to go about this sort of thing.

Well, you take over the technical aspect of some Scientology organization. You're sitting in there doing nothing but coaching up cases, doing nothing but coaching up cases. Don't pay any attention to the auditing of the cases – consider that's sincere and it's being done as best it possibly can be. Ignore that aspect. Don't keep picking on the auditors; that's a training job. But just keep watching – watching those communication cycles. Note the communication abilities and so forth, the appearance and that sort of thing, of a pc. Don't depend on large tests having been made every fifteen minutes and fourteen pounds of auditor reports to tell you whether or not the pc's had a change. Let's look at this pc. Let's listen to this pc in session.

Is this pc talking better, answering more pertinently, and so forth? If so, fine! We're winning, and so forth. Let's not worry about that pc until we get a bog, and there's a no-change condition begins to take place with that pc. And the pc looking brighter and got more spark in the eye than they had: Well, their eye was – remember that this is a gradient – their eye was absolutely complete pebble, stone, flat, lightless. And now you can see a trace of color through the fog. That's an improvement. See? Note the improvements. Don't just be cynical about it the whole way, you see? Note the improvements, because they sometimes take place rather slowly.

And just keep them – keep them moving up, and only pay attention to – only pay attention to – the communication cycle and the ability of the person to handle the environment in his immediate vicinity, particularly an auditing session. And only pay attention to those things.

Never pay any attention to the person's problems, never pay any attention to their goals in session, never pay attention to any of these other things – because obviously, any auditor they got would take care of these things if the pc was in session.

See? Auditors are good at that. What they're not good at is having somebody there fully in session. Because, of course, that's the hardest trick. That's the roughest trick. But there lie the biggest gains. And it looks so easy, it looks so kindergartenish, that you very often neglect it.

So you see that somebody is all straightened out, he can talk to an auditor, an auditor can talk to him, that an auditing cycle can take place, the person can receive an acknowledgment, the person can have an auditing room, the person can have an auditing session, all of these things are possible, everything is fine, and so forth. Well, aside from occasionally catching somebody with a tremendous goof on the subject of – they're running the service facsimile on the person, and when it was – got a service facsimile, the auditor in this particular case couldn't find any service facsimile because the person had been raised in a poor family and didn't have any maids.

Then the thing to do is to get hold of the D of T and say, "That auditor needs some training on service facsimiles." Not to go into it. But the only trouble you're going to run into from there on, don't you see, is going to be the application of technique.

And that is *never* the trouble in Scientology, and it is *not* the trouble, it is *not* the trouble with your pc that you're having any trouble with at all. These techniques work like mad, but all of them have the dependency of the pc fully in session. The pc is fully in session, you can run almost anything on them and they'll sail, don't you see? Pc not in session, won't. The big bog is people don't get the pc into session before they start running something. And therefore they expect a technique will remedy something that's sitting right in front of their faces, which is the pc not at all in session. Do you see?

All right. That's actually – that's actually how to undercut cases left, right and center, make a wide swath in all directions. And I think you can do it.

Thank you.

WHAT AUDITING IS AND WHAT IT ISN'T

A lecture given on 25 February 1964

Thank you. I like you, too.

I'm the first survivor to return from the Battle of the Goals Plot. The casualties have been pretty heavy – pretty heavy, but fortunately it is mostly in terms of GPMs.

I was just telling Reg that there isn't anybody could have done it. And then he suddenly looked at me and he says – he says, "But you did it." And I said, "Yes," I said, "that's the – that's the joke." [laughter, laughs]

But the progress is going along. You're very lucky. That's all I've got to say. If any one of you had gone into this flying blind with your hands tied behind your back, why, you would have come up a mass of putty.

Trickery. The actual GPM contains trickery. Treachery. It's no wonder they never came apart. No wonder. And that's why we teach Class VI at Saint Hill and a few years from now, when there have been a lot of Saint Hill graduates and a lot of successes and we've made a lot of OTs and so forth, several years from now, why, we'll let Central Orgs teach this stuff. The franchised auditor who is sitting out there right now waiting for the next bulletin on Class VI, [laughter] you see, he's going to be very upset because I would just as soon place in his hands a hand grenade with the pin drawn, see? You know, "Here, here you are!" you know?

You see, as long as we were in old R3 we weren't deep enough to do anything to anybody. That was perfectly all right, you couldn't mess anybody up at R3. R4, we were still running at too shallow draft to upset anybody. Moved into R6, you see, and all of a sudden you stand there looking at the real tiger. These things had enough charge on them so then you could take off surface locks to a tremendous degree. And just as in processing level by level you can take off surface locks, well, so in these goals – actual GPM processes you see, you could also take them off at various levels. So at R3 you find a goal and run a terminal. Oh, there's nothing to that – fairly safe, you could do any of those variations because you really weren't handling anything, don't you see?

Then you finally get down to – you finally get down to, oppose – why, you can run a whole GPM on oppose. You can find seventy items, pc has tremendous numbers of cognitions, everything happy, and matter of fact I might even hand it out sometime as a process, you see? Let anybody run it, you see? Wouldn't do him any damage. Lots of charge comes off, lots of TA action, you see. Now the moment that it's moved into the bracket of "solve," the moment that you move it down toward a command like "solve" on an actual GPM, you're between the devil and the deep blue sea. You're close enough to the real tiger so that he can knock your

head off, but not close enough so that you can get back at him. So it becomes, at that point, a very dangerous process.

Now you take R6, where you're handling nothing but purebred Bengal type tigers, starved for a long time, and you take somebody that could have run the oppose line, you see, you take somebody that could have run the oppose line very easily, you know, find a goal, doesn't matter really if it's the wrong goal, right goal, that wouldn't have upset him too much. And he goes along, that type – that type auditor, see, and then you just nonchalantly say, "All right, well, just go through that door. All right. And, you find there on your right, you'll find a rather flimsy chair. Pick that up."

"Oh, is that what I'm supposed to do?"

"Yeah, that's all you're supposed to do, and then you lift the cage door at the far end, and in come the tigers," you see?

Honest, I'm not exaggerating, I'm not exaggerating. I have found enough aberration. [comm lag, laughter] You often want to know – if you want to know what it takes to make a thetan aberrated, you have to find enough aberration to account for the fact that a powerful being would now be unpowerful, see? How would he get in that state? Well, actually it's a direct proportion. It takes as much aberration as he was powerful. And there's that much aberration on the GPM – actual GPM lineup. I guarantee you, there is enough. And there's also quantitatively and qualitatively enough.

Actually then, the whole of auditing is simply peeling down toward these things from the first time you have a person sit in his chair, you see, and itsa. He's taken off some of the top crust. And it's perfectly safe on up to IV, service facsimiles, so forth – it's even safe into, as I told you, it's even safe into finding a goal and running oppose on the items. Perfectly safe. Nothing to that. Now, you really got to be an expert from there on.

Well, this is just a prelude to this lecture. This has nothing to do with it, I was just saying hello and telling you about where the score was about now. We got it – we got it licked, there's no doubt about that, but them tigers, the – them tigers have got some pieces of cloth in their teeth.

All right, what's the date?

Audience: Twenty-fifth.

Twenty-fifth? It's the 25th? No kidding. Twenty-fifth of February, AD 14, Saint Hill Special Briefing Course, student lecture.

All right, we've got – we've got some business today. We've got some business to transact. These are data vitally necessary to the auditing of Class VI and if you're very clever you cannot do without them at the lower levels. The main problem with the data I'm giving you is until you get to Class VI you can sometimes get away with it. At about level Class IV is the first time you could start teaching it. And it would be terribly useful at Class I, but you can't teach it at Class I. You can teach it and then the fellow will think he knows it, but by the time he's gotten up to III or IV, why, he would have to be taught it again because it would have brand-new values. By the time he gets to VI he can't audit without it.

And that's very peculiar, then, to go into this level and you're about to see some of the very fundamental fundamentals of auditing which will explain to you why auditing has or has not worked here, there and so on, and which will be very valuable to you at any level that you're operating at in Scientology.

So this lecture actually is useful for all levels and would be quite good at the lower levels but probably could only be taught at about Level IV with any real comprehension. And by the time you get up to Levels V and VI, becomes vital. Not slight, because omission of this data brings about catastrophe.

Now let us take this up then in a very *rat-a-tat-tat* fashion, and if you get this down, if you get this all squared away and get this all aligned in anything under fifteen or twenty hours of study, why, I'll be very proud of you. Because the first moment that you see this, you'll all say "Yes, yes, yes," and then you'll go tanglefoot with it. Because it's this type of data; it's too simple. I was tanglefooting Suzie Belle the other day with it, so don't expect to grab it at the first brass ring.

First thing I want to tell you though is there's something here to grasp. You have to grasp it with your total comprehension. And it's so confounded simple that – see I was using a very cruel example with her – I'll give you the same example.

Here we have a Ronson lighter in a little hide case. All right. Now, the task is to put the Ronson lighter there on that paper, you see, and then put it over here on these pencils, and then put the Ronson lighter in the center of the desk. Now that's the totality of the operation. See, heh! Got this object here and we want to put it on this piece of paper, then we're going to move it over on top of these pencils and I'm going to put it in the center of the desk, hm? Now let me show you what happens with this operation. We put it over here and we say, "Is that over there?" and somebody we're trying to train says, "Yes, but, that's got a hide case." And you say, "Yeah, well that's – that's true. However I want you to put it down over here on this piece of paper."

"Yes, but hide, you know, I imagine the Ronson company must have some kind of contract with the Indians up in Alaska," and you say "Yeah, I'm sure they do. Sure they do. Yes, but I want you to put it down over here on this paper."

"Yeah, but you know, there must be a terrific amount of trouble portaging skins, you know? They've got a skin there and they must have that, it must come from Alaska there, and they must have a terrific time trying to get these skins down the river and I wonder what design the Indians have on their paddles."

And you say, "All right, that – that's fine. But all we want you to do is put this object on this piece of paper."

"Yeah, but the Ronson company doesn't make paper." [laughter]

So when I tell you about the design on the Indians' paddles with regard to this while I'm giving you this lecture, you'll know what I'm talking about. Because you can make more complexity whenever you try to hand out an absolutely simple datum in its complete, naked purity. It, of course, blows more confusion in more directions than you can shake a stick at. And you just have to keep working with it. Now this actually is coached material, until a person can take

this and ask the question and get the answer and there's no design on the paddles that are coming down the Yukon, see?

They put you... you'll – you'll – you've got a future here, in just this. Now, let's just go at it hammer and pound. Let me give you first a very brief outline of what we're going to do.

I'm going to teach you the difference between auditing and assessing, destimulating and erasing, the difference between a present time problem and an ARC break – it's just terribly elementary propositions. And the targets of the auditor – what he – what he fronts. All right, that doesn't sound like very much, does it? But brother, I know.

All right, let's take up right away quick the last one I mentioned, which is targets of the auditor. The auditor has two targets. He has the pc and he has the bank. When that auditor speaks he is speaking to either the pc or the bank. That's just crystal clear data. That's two targets. He says, "How are you feeling?" or he says, "Catterwump." He says, "Catterwump" and the bank goes crunch, see? He says, "How are you feeling?" and the pc says, "Well, let's see, I'm feeling so-and-so and so on."

You understand? There are two things that an auditor talks to. Two things. One is the pc, the other is the bank. Auditing is addressed on the auditing cycle to the pc, and assessment is addressed to the bank. Once more – very, very simple. Nothing to this at all.

And you're saying, "Catterwump, cat whiskers, bat fur" and so forth, you're talking to the bank. And reading the result on the meter. Or reading the result on the pc's eyeballs. I don't care what you're reading the result on, but you're talking to the bank. Now, you understand then that when you are talking to the pc, when the auditor is addressing the pc, that he very often restimulates the bank and he very often has an effect or an influence on the bank. Very often. But, that as – does not debar it at all. Sometimes when assessing, the pc talks and the auditor has to acknowledge the origin and so forth. But these are separate actions. And I – if you could only see them as separate actions, you would save yourself a great deal of complexity in the matter.

All right. Now, two targets. The auditor has the target of the pc – a thetan, or the bank. Very good. There are therefore two types of processes. But they are not processes, one of them is not a process at all and – you're about to get your first headache – is not auditing.

Now what is auditing. Auditing is an operation which culminates in destimulation or erasure. It has only two end products: destimulation and erasure. You can get the pc to dust himself off or you can use the pc like you would an ink eraser to scrub off the piece of bank that you're heading for. In other words you can get the pc out of it or you can use the pc to wipe it out.

Many auditors have the custom of using the pc to wipe out pieces of the bank and then in view of the fact they can't wipe that bank out totally, then using the pc to wipe out another piece of bank which they can't wipe out totally, so they try to wipe out another piece of bank. The pc comes to session, he's got a present time problem, so they wipe out – try to wipe out the present time problem but they already haven't wiped out the service facsimile they were auditing yesterday, so now they've got this present time problem, so they're going to erase this present time problem and they can't really erase the present time problem because halfway

through the present time problem the pc comes up with the fact that he's worried about his mother. And when he was young he was very worried about his mother, so now, we try to erase mother and, having in the process of erasing mother, of course we run into the subject of father, so we try to erase father and so forth.

This is what is known as – this type of auditor is known as a "mudder." All he wants to do is erase. Throw the pc into the heavy energy and use him as an ink eraser. See, that's perfectly legitimate on erasure and so forth, as long as you complete your cycles of action. But practically all of the early levels of auditing are destimulation, which means you unrestimulate what has already been restimulated. I refer you to earlier lectures on the subject of restimulation and destimulation. What you're trying to do here is take the dogs that are barking at them and get them to lie down quietly. Erasure would be to go over and eat up all the dogs, you see? But all you want these dogs to do is lie down quietly and the pc to come away from there. That's destimulation, don't you see?

So we have this pc and he is – got a present time problem and therefore is not in the auditing room and therefore is not in session. So we say, "What kind of a problem – what – what's this problem all about?"

And he says, "Well it's about so and so, well, it's about my early life."

"All right, well, what about your early life?"

"Well, I used to have an awful lot of trouble with boys in my early life."

"Well, did you ever have any fight with boys in your early life? All right, that's good, pick up that early fight that you had. Have an overt against boys when you were very young? Oh, that – that's good. It's go – you got hurt, huh? Like where – where's the somatic?"

What are you doing? The pc wasn't in the auditing room to be audited; the pc was elsewhere. So you send him else-elsewhere. Now, what do you think this pc's going to do? Means that you could never complete your cycle of action, because the pc is elsewhere when he begins the session. You've got to get the pc here before you can complete your cycle of action. Now, therefore you never have a chance of completing yesterday's auditing if you can't get the pc into the session today. So if the pc has picked up new problems or new difficulties in life between sessions – this is quite common I am told – and if the auditor does nothing but plunge and Q-and-A with this new situation which is arisen, he, of course, never cleans up yesterday's cycle of action. You follow that?

Well, destimulation is the only tool or the only action you can undertake to get a pc oriented and located; and if an auditor cannot destimulate a pc, he of course can never follow his own cycle of action. Do you see that? The pc's restimulation takes charge. So therefore you can never bring it up to a point where you can finish that Problems Intensive you started last August. And ever since that time he kept coming to session and we had other things to handle. We've always got other things to handle if we can't destimulate the pc, so therefore the destimulation of a pc is a very, very important skill. Very, very important skill. There are various mechanisms by which one destimulates the pc.

Running engrams, no matter what process you use to run the engrams – running engrams, running RIs, implant GPMs, RIs, actual GPMs. I say implant GPM RIs and actual

GPMs – all are under the heading of erasure. Nothing but erasure. That's using the pc to eat up the dogs, you see? Now, there's always a certain amount of erasure takes place, even in destimulation. A tiny amount takes place, you see?

Let me give you an idea of destimulation and erasure and how one operates somewhat with the other one. Pc's fallen down, hurting – hurt his knee and we use an old-time assist, we say, "Where did you hurt it?" and "Where are you now?" and "Where did you hurt it?" and "Where are you now?" And what we're trying to do there is simply destimulate it. We're trying to get the pc out of that area of time and that location and get him where he is now sitting, you see? That's destimulation. We're not trying to do anything about the injury; we're just trying to get the pc to sit there in front of us. In the process of doing this, you will notice a pc quite commonly turns on somatics. A certain amount, then, of the incident or injury runs out in the process of destimulation.

Most wonderful example of this I ever saw – and I remember vividly – happened at 42 Aberdeen Road with no less a person than Burke Belknap.

Burke was having a lot of trouble casewise and he was having a lot of difficulty somehow or another and I straightwired him and – it happened in the little office, just inside the door, any of you there were there – and he was standing up against the wall and I gave him a – gave him a bit of straightwire and gave him a *clip-bing-bang*, hit the locks, the key-ins of this little incident, had to do with this – and man, he came straight up PT, practically Clear right there. See? You know, terrific result. You know, bang! You know, five minutes' worth of auditing and wow, you practically got a Clear on your hands. You see, that kind of action, see.

Then I turned him right around into the thing and erased the top engram on the chain. The second he hit it, it all keyed back in again and he collapsed, sliding down the wall and sat on the floor with his head in his hands. He had never felt better and never felt worse in two consecutive seconds in his life. The... oh, I got him out of it, of course. But the first action is destimulation. See, little straightwire, "Where was it," you know, and "When," and, "Who did you know – who did you know that was like that?" See, he's complained about a condition, you see, "Well, who did you know that was like that?"

"Oh, well, yeah, Joe."

"Well – well, did you ever see him – you ever see him acting like that?" You see?

"Oh, yes, I did, yes, yes, yes, yes."

"Well, all right, good. Does that have anything to do with the – what you're going through right now?"

"Hey, you know, it has a lot to do with it!"

And the guy's right up in present time – bang! See? All we hit was the key-in, see? We walked no closer to the tiger's cage than the outer perimeter of the bottom seats, see. We went nowhere close. And yet he came away from there, see? Now – now we go and find what keyed in and we throw the pc into it and start erasing this. Well, we can erase it, we've had erasure technique since the word go. You burn your finger, you very often erase it. Sometimes you destimulate it, sometimes you erase it. And you – sometimes you use a combination of both on

some light injury of this particular character. You tur... you go to the beginning of the incident and run yourself through to the end of the incident and so on and eventually all the pain turns off and you're fine.

You might, however, just do a Touch Assist on it, you know. Touch it for a while and you'll feel little pains come off of the thing. So it is very difficult to do a total destimulation, see, that's a difficult thing to do, because a tiny little bit of erasure will occur in any event. But you can do a total destimulation from the basis of totally destimulate something. I'm only saying the one thing you can't do is avoid erasure totally, because just the pc's attention on the subject for that moment necessary, you see, to detach him from the subject may bring about a slight amount of erasure. That's no reason then, when you wish to destimulate, to become a professional eraser. See, it seems to be an invitation. See, there seems to be an invitation.

You're saying, "Where were you? Where are you now? Where were you? Where are you now? Where were you? Where are you now? Where were you? Where are you now? All right, that's fine. Now how do you feel?"

"Well, I seem to be stuck with this knee here on the pavement and so forth..."

"Oh, yeah? Well, let's use some Effort Processing."

You see the temptation? See the temptation? Well, the funny part of it is, at that level you can get away with it. You can take the whole injured knee out. I did this just the other day. I first did a destimulation and got the pc feeling better and then ran the incident out, oddly enough, with nothing but Effort Processing. Way back when, you know? Because it was a serious concussion. I didn't want this hanging around and so forth and knew the pc was perfectly capable of doing so, so we actually then went into it and knocked the stuffings out of the incident, you see, and then did a destimulation and so forth and it all worked out just fine. One of the neatest assists I've done in many a day. But that's a combination of two things. And the auditor should be aware of the fact when he is combining two things.

See, you made the fe... we could make the pc feel better by destimulation, you know? "Where did it happen? Where are you now?" Any such process – destimulation. Now we got the pc feeling a little bit better, well, we got him a little bit better in control, right? A little bit better in present time. Now we could go back and start at the beginning of the incident, erase it right straight through as an engram. Or we can leave it alone and go on with the program which we started yesterday. But it puts choice back into the auditor's hands. The auditor now has his power of choice over the pc. It so happened with this pc I didn't have any cycle of action that was taking place yesterday, see, to engage upon. There was no reason not to do this. You understand?

So these two things can combine, but they are separate. There's destimulation and there's erasure. Very, very important to realize this. You're going to have a headache trying to work this out and then you'll finally get through – I don't mean to be a bad teacher and tell you how confused it all is and how difficult it all is. I tell you it's very easy if you're just simply willing to grasp it and use it. But along about this time we get into the paddles business, you see?

You see, it's birch bark canoes. And birch bark canoes are basically held together with gum, aren't they? Well, does Ronson have anything to do with Wrigley's? Because what happens here? What happens here? The door seems to be wide open here, that if you destimulate you can then erase and today we're busy auditing our pc on a Prepcheck on – see, it gets more complicated in its applications, but the same principles hold. Where we're prepchecking this pc on the subject of Mata Haris, see. And it's all very fine and we're prepchecking him just dandy and we're getting a lot of tone arm action and everything is going along. In actual fact we're carrying about a destimulative action. Prepcheck, destimulation, see. Synonymous. Well, we're doing all right here, see, and we're going along and all of a sudden the pc – tone arm, tone arm's beautiful – beautiful action on the tone arm you see, we're still getting nice action, you see, or maybe it's come to a momentary pause. If we ran for five more minutes we'd get five more divisions, you see?

And all of a sudden the pc unfortunately – pc, unfortunately for all concerned, happens to remember in the process of doing this that he had a goal, "to kitterwigit" that was found on him in 1961, that has a lot to do with this. So the auditor says to himself, "Well, look how much more we could do for this pc, you see, if we found actually the basic reason."

So he says, "Well, what – this goal to kitterwigit, is that – is that an actual GPM? Is that an implant GPM? All right, what number is it on the track? Is it upside-down? Is it backwards?" Well, oddly enough, the difficulty isn't – doesn't arise in trying to find this GPM. That's not the difficulty. The difficulty is missing. The difficulty is that you half-destimulated the subject you were working on previously, Mata Haris. You've half-destimulated – and in the process of destimulating it, you of course have somewhat restimulated it, right? You haven't got it totally destimulated, you've got it slightly restimulated in the process to destimulating it, you see?

You're right in this condition where the fellow has fallen down and bruised his knee and the auditor's trying to get him into the auditing room so that he can audit him, see, and then all of a sudden gives up and puts him back on the roadway and starts erasing the knee, you see? Well, if he'd just kept this up and brought him into the auditing room it would have been all right and he kept – could have kept along with another cycle of action, don't you see? The cycle of action which you already have in progress. But just in the process of doing this, the fellow's attention, of course, a little bit more goes onto his knee. So you take this pc whose attention is fairly heavily on Mata Hari – we're destimulating Mata Hari, we're not erasing her, you see, just bringing him out – the process of coming out the door however, he's still got his feet sort of tangled up with silk stockings and old German documents and then we've turned around and gone into this other activity which is never a destimulative activity – which is a cannonball erasure process.

You don't destimulate goals. You destimulate the whole track and the actual GPM, or even implant GPMs, somewhat like taking somebody up to the top of a springboard and telling him to dive in and halfway down you find that nobody put any water in the pool, so you say, "Go on back up top to the springboard," see? The destimulative activities which can take place now are minimal. Now, it isn't just that; if the auditor had simply made up his mind that it really wasn't Mata Hari – it really wasn't Mata Hari, it was goat's milk that was the pc's trouble, and has shifted his Prepcheck to goat's milk, he would have done the same thing. He would

eventually wind up all these areas of restimulation, which he was trying to destimulate. He would have half-restimulated them, you see, then not finished the job and so he would not have Mata Hari and goat's milk and if he went on with that a short time afterwards and got submarines mixed up into it he'd now have submarines and Mata Hari and goat's milk and this is why we would call that auditor a "mudder."

So there's three actions he can undertake there. One of them is just to give up the destimulative action and say "Oh, that's hopeless," because he notices some restimulation taking place and then begin erasure. See, shift his target from destimulation to erasure. Or the next action which he could undertake was shift his target from – that he was destimulating – from target A, while it was restimulated, to target B while it was restimulated or he could do a proper action. And the proper action is when you set out to destimulate, destimulate. When you set out to erase, erase. And in either event complete your cycle of action. In either event complete your cycle of action.

If you're going to go into the destimulation activity here and you decide that you had better get this individual destimulated on the subject of home and mother so that you can audit him on the subject of something else, or service facts, or get someplace on the case, because he's PTPs, PTPs and he's always got PTPs on the outer perimeter of the thing he's – he's so introverted into his own living room that we can never get him into the auditing room, and that sort of thing. All right, we're going to give him a Prepcheck and we're going to isolate what this is, then his PTPs – that is very, very rough, we're going to prepcheck this thing. All right, *finish it. Finish it.* Don't – don't say, "Well, that's – that's the – that's good enough, we've got the tone arm action down now – we've got the tone arm action down now to two divisions TA down in ten minutes of auditing. We got this cooled off now and he doesn't seem to be terribly frantic about it so now we're going to shift over and do something else, see. *Yeow!* Just practically murder, you see?

By the time you've done that three or four times you have your pc stuck in the restimulation of destimulation and he doesn't know whether he's coming or going. See what happens when you cross it?

All right, let's take the other cycle of action. We're going to erase – you never can erase a single engram; something we didn't know back in 1950, because we could occasionally erase a single engram. As a matter of fact, you apparently can erase a single engram. Now, let me put it this way. But you often can't. Our remedy in that day, you see, was to go find another engram that you could erase, see? Or go earlier. Now that was what we knew, we knew that you could go earlier, you see? So you couldn't erase this engram, then there must be an earlier engram and you better go earlier and erase that. That was the only remedy which we had. Therefore, some engrams won't erase. Well, why won't they erase? Because they're on chains. So engrams are always considered to be part of a chain. And new material on running of engrams which just came up last year is rather fantastic. And, my God, if we'd had engrams in 1950, the kind of running which you've got and this new technology on running engrams, nobody would ever have any quarrel. You can turn on anybody, as long as you get the proper duration, make no mistake in the duration, you always got visio in your pc, the one thing and so forth. And because you're working on a chain you can always get it back to the point of erasure, don't you see? These are not difficulties.

But sometimes – sometimes you run into an engram – and you run into an engram and you're trying to erase this thing. And it gums up on you or it gets stiff or solid or something weird happens with this thing and therefore you abandon the chain. You don't carry on and get the earlier engram that underlies it, you see, that will erase and finally pull the – pull the whole thing apart. In other words a half-completed engram erasing cycle. Absolutely deadly. And you can take a person and half-erase an engram and half-erase an engram and half-erase another engram and half... all di... on disrelated subjects, particularly – and half-erase another engram and half-erase another engram and the pc's stuck up like he's in molasses. He – what's happening? Well, the thing about it is, when you start to erase something, erase it.

Now, we see this in Class VI this way. When you get your hands on something – when you get your hands on something, why, you should finish it off. This is an ideal situation; the ideal is when you got your paws on a GPM, you erase it. You finish it. Right there. Well, this is debarred by the fact that it is held in relationship to the GPM above and below it by interlocking items so that you cannot complete its erasure without having the two adjacent engrams. This is further complicated by the fact that there's a vagary in the goals pattern that doesn't make it lie there neatly at all. So it's violated to that degree, but look, it doesn't have to be violated completely because you could actually take the guts out of the middle of the GPM this – these days. And you could leave four items in the GPM and take out the remaining – you could take out the remaining twelve. You actually could destimulate it to that – I mean, pardon me – erase it to that degree, you see?

Now, the ideal then is to finish it up. Well, really what you do is consider the whole of the first series of goals, the whole series, as the first action. Or some half of it or some portion of it and the more you have of it the better you consider that one action, and then you go ahead and you erase everything you've got, you see? That's – that's – you're still dealing with the form of a big cycle of action, see? You say, "Well, we're going to find half of the first series, we're going to find all of the half – first series that we can lay our paws on and we're going to get it lined up as best we possibly can and then we're going to erase that and then we're going to finish getting the remainder of the first series, then we're going to erase all of those." Well, that's a completed cycle of action, see?

Now, you're going – going down the row here, you see? But in the process of doing that you can also foul up like mad by half-completed little cycles. For instance, you've started to check out the goal "to sneeze," and all of a sudden the pc offers the goal "to row a boat." And so you drop that checkout and you – you get this other checkout, "to row a boat." And now having gotten a checkout "to row a boat" and so forth, that's inconclusive so you do a goals list on the "to row a boat" on a represent goals list. See if you can get the right wording of this thing. But you can't really find that because no goal fires after you've gotten the list done, so you figure you must have something spotted in an incorrect numerical sequence in the series, so you start correcting the series in its numerical sequence of one GPM to the next.

Well, that doesn't work out very good, because the pc seems to be terribly nattery, so the best thing to handle that is in the first place if you could just find number one GPM on the track you could always erase that, couldn't you, so let's start listing for it again. The heart of certainty is arrival. [laughter] And the anatomy of uncertainty is a failure to complete a cycle of action. Nonarrival.

So you want your pc to get less and less confident, doesn't matter whether it's Class VI or any other class, you want to get less and less confident, just never complete the cycles of action you set out to do and never complete your destimulative actions before engaging in a new destimulative action. Let the pc's new restimulations get in your road, you see, and just Q-and-A with his new restimulations and away we go and over the hills and far away, and *bingety-bang* and isn't life confusing and isn't the case confused, in fair rapidity.

This then – this then is the difference between restimulation and destimulation. And in either case, you complete a cycle of action. You get somebody into session by getting him into the auditing room. If he comes into session and he's got a lot of present time problems and then you decide to erase these present time problems, just run a – let's run a process, see, on problems. Every time he comes into the auditing room he seems to have an awful lot of problems, so we're just going to set aside the Problems Intensive which we are already doing and we're going to get started now and really clean this case up so he doesn't have all these present time problems when he comes into session.

Well, let's see – let's do, now, an assessment on his environment and let's find out what it is in his environment he's mainly having problems about and then we will run Problems of Comparable Magnitude on that or something of that sort and we'll get this thing all set up.

But, of course, in the process of doing this we run into his lumbosis. And this is side-tracked and there we go. We have now started the deadly – the deadly chase, where in a half-completed cycle of action we're going to get another half-completed cycle of action and so forth. All right, what is the auditor's answer to this? The auditor's answer to this is rapid destimulation, *rapide* destimulation. Techniques of rapid destimulation. What are these? Since mid ruds: "Since last time I audited you, has anything been suppressed?" See? "When was the last time I audited you?" Why, we don't give this guy a chance. We don't give him a chance to have present time problems in the session. And knowing pcs, I would say that an awful lot of pcs who can't be audited without very expert handling of since mid ruds or something of the sort – there are lots of them. I don't care what good shape they appear to be in, I don't care how they can live through this sort of thing and so on, the auditor is going to be invited to a Q-and-A party before that session is very far progressed if the auditor has not destimulated the case first.

Pc's been thinking about his service facsimile – let's take somebody at Level IV – he's been thinking about his service facsimile and what we've actually been doing is we've been running "How would chewing tobacco make the hall maid wrong?" you see, or something like this. Or "Who would it make wrong?" And the pc's been thinking between sessions – and we haven't got that flat, see – and has realized – has realized that when he was very young – when he was very young there was a hall maid and she used to hit him with brooms and so forth, and it was because of the neglect of his mother and what the process is really all about is mother's neglect. So really what he's trying to do is make everybody guilty because of mother's neglect and we – hadn't we better prepcheck this, see?

Now, actually he doesn't come out with all this if it's destimulated. What happens? He's got a present time problem of some kind or another – minor, small – he's been suppressing, he's been thinking, he's got a withhold or two from the auditor, you see? So when the auditor tries

to take control of the session, the pc is really elsewhere, there's a little, tiny bypassed charge situation because he hasn't informed the auditor of things, don't you see? And that alone is enough to cause a little bit of an ARC break. It's not really an ARC break, but you see a little alienness in the session and that, on the first slip of the auditor, can evolve into a – an order from the pc. See, this is just setting it up.

So you say, "But my God, at the beginning of every session I waste thirty-five minutes getting in my since mid ruds." Well, you waste thirty-five minutes but you get back – you get back an hour and fifty-five minutes of auditing. That's what you buy with your thirty-five minutes of since mid ruds. By not putting them in, you've wasted two and one-half hours of auditing. Flat. Not only that, but you have invited a mess because the pc isn't in session – that is to say the pc isn't even in the auditing room. The pc is not going to follow through; the pc is going to open wide-open invitations to the auditor at every turn to do something else, rather than what they're doing.

Now, these are the fine ramifications of the thing. But the point is, is life is restimulative. I don't know if you've noticed this or not, but between sessions you get that sort of thing. Now, this is not an advertisement just for the subject matter of "get in since mid ruds." I'm just giving you an example of destimulation.

Now, let me show you – let me show a case in point here. Pc – we're running, Class VI, we're running him – pc comes up with the fact "I – I – I don't know, I kept all night long – all night long I kept thinking about these – I kept thinking about these creative activities that I should be engaged on. And just all night long and I – I – I think – I think there must be a goal here, 'to create.' I don't care what you said, I – I think there must be. I don't care what you said last month while we were checking that goal, I think there must be one, I think we missed it. And that's what's worrying me." Well now, you're not doing that at all. You're trying to get – you're trying to get a whole sequence of goals having to do with understanding. And the pc all of a sudden throws this one at you.

Now, a good auditor knows what to do. He destimulates it and goes on doing what he's doing. He doesn't neglect it, he destimulates it. Anything that is not on his main line of action he destimulates, right now. Gone. You understand?

Now, the technique that does that is case analysis. Case analysis has really, for its sole purpose, handling the present time problems as they arise. You'll see "case analysis" has been misused as a term in the past. We're breaking it out into its pristine purity. There's been a missing word which is "track analysis," which is "Where do the GPMs fit?" That – call that "track analysis." This other is just a – just a case analysis. But it's destimulative. It's just got the exact steps that it's got in the bulletin. What – it doesn't apply only to GPMs, God help us! I've seen this used to a Class I pc, trying to put his GPMs into place. It's a very broad, any – level proposition. "What's the pc sitting in? All right, the pc's sitting in a present time problem. What's the pc sitting in? He's sitting in a bad foot." You understand? Your second action is get these considerations. What considerations he had. All right, let's now get the bad foot related to something, whether present time or other bad feet or he's come up to the time when he used to have a bad ear. You're just destimulating him, you see? And you relate it to something; you now

find the pc is sitting either elsewhere or in PT. And you can actually just go on along by a little concatenation getting his considerations of everything he is sitting in.

He's sitting in position one, position two, position three, position four, position five – get his considerations each time, get its relationship, find out where he's sitting now. Very, very elementary. Very elementary. It actually consists of, really, two auditing commands. It's no more complicated than that. Hey, you don't have to strain your brain on this one, see. "All right, anything you're concerned with, and so forth?"

"Well, I'm considered with the fact that I was up all night long, on – I was thinking about this – this GPM 'to create' and I'm a – sure I've got one. I'm sure last month when you said so-and-so and so-and-so."

"Oh, is that so? All right, what considerations have you had about that?"

"Well, so-and-so and so-and-so and the last month we checked it wrong and we didn't do it right and so forth, and it... "

"All right, good, all right. Okay. Now, you got any other considerations you'd like to talk about with regard to that?"

"No."

"All right. Well fine, now let's take up these goals that have to do with understanding."

The other course is completely fatal. Completely. You're already taking goals that have to do with understanding – the pc is – suddenly shoves a goal at you which is "to create variety," so you check it out *again* – *aw-aw-aw-aw-aw-aw-aw-aw-aw!* You pushed him into the mud. Well listen, if he was that worried there was nothing showing but a few sparse hairs on the top of his head anyhow, just about enough for you to pick up and grab out, see? Why push him in? An auditor not recognizing these things can get a pc in serious levels.

Now it isn't as apparent at Level 1. The dangers of this are not apparent at Level I at all. You can get somebody to chewing and yapping about this or that or the other thing – well, because he's running at about one-molecule depth, you see? And even when you get up to IV – even when you get up to IV, your processes are destimulative in the most part – you're really not trying to erase very much, there's no great difficulty with this. You could just get a pc so he felt kind of thick and jammy and kind of upset in general. And sort of nattery and so on, you wouldn't practically kill him. But you get to Class – Level VI, you might as well just take a pistol out of your pocket and shoot him between the eyes. It would be kinder. Well, you've got him in one great, big, overpowering actual GPM mass that you are busy checking out and you all of a sudden make him turn around while still stuck in that mass and get involved with another mass.

I had an example of this the other night. I had a goal – I was trying to place a goal, and when I hit the right number in the consecutive sequence, if I hit – I hit the right position for that GPM – I was trying to place another GPM in that sequence, see? This thing didn't bother me, this one that was hanging up, until I tried to place another GPM in the proper number it belonged in, don't you see? I'd gotten to the number the original GPM that I was stuck in belonged in and tried to place another GPM there and like knock – knocked the top of my head

off! The GPM that belonged there, of course, rose up, full-armed, you know – joke of course – but, "Get out of here, man! This place is occupied!"

It's a sleeper, in other words. You're in one GPM and you try to do something with another, see, or you tr... in one series you're trying to do something with another series. It's just too much – too much stress and strain, that's all. So you carry out and complete your cycle of action with regard to this sort of thing. Now, I don't want to leave you in any difficulties with regard to this. I'm talking a lot about VI. You can just forget what level I'm talking about because it applies to all levels.

You can destimulate or restimulate. And when the auditor is restimulating, why, of course, he's normally trying to erase something. But an auditor always restimulates slightly. Restimulation in these factors enters into this very little. Very, very little. It's whether you restimulate or not, that's almost beside the point. It's whether or not you erase or destimulate. What is your final target? Are you going to destimulate this thing or are you going to erase this thing, see. And you have to make up your mind what you're going to do with it and then stick by your guns. Complete the cycle of action. That's the way you handle it.

All right, very good. What is auditing? What is auditing? This probably could take up an enormous lecture all by itself. As a matter of fact I could imagine somebody talking for several minutes on this subject without drawing a breath. What is auditing? What is auditing? Well, you think you know what auditing is but I don't think you know what auditing is.

Auditing is the action of asking somebody else a question, getting an answer to that question and acknowledging it. You go a little more broadly: It's asking somebody a question about himself or life which he can understand and which he can answer, getting his answer to that and acknowledging the fact that it has been answered. And then, also, when the person originates some observation with regard to that, to understand and handle that origination. TR 0, 1, 2, 3, 4. No more, no less. That is auditing.

When that occurs, TA action occurs. When that occurs, sanity occurs. When that occurs, this occurs. When that occurs that occurs. In other words, anything you want from this other. That is – that is auditing.

Now you say, "Well, what is all this stress on this definition?" Well, you just never heard the definition, that's all.

"Well, I was auditing this fellow and we were assessing at the time." What is wrong with that sentence? You weren't auditing, you were assessing. "Yeah, but" somebody says, "but assessment is auditing. I felt a lot better many times when I've been assessed on something." Auditing doesn't have anything to do with somebody feeling better. The final ramifications of auditing have nothing to do with the definition of auditing. That's what auditing is *for*. It's to make people feel better and so on. But *what is* auditing – that is *all auditing is*. And any time you say anything *else* is auditing you're going to lay yourself an ostrich egg! I mean, this is one of these horrible things.

Now, I've told you a simple datum. And in actual fact the next immediate action, of course, is to discuss whether or not there ought to be British war vessels on the Yukon to protect the Indians as they bring their hides down.

That's all auditing is! The technique is Scientology. Scientology is the embracive word for all of these actions. But auditing is this one peculiar action. Therefore when we use the word "self-auditing," we're using a misnomer. You can't have self-auditing. See, it's impossible. Now, I tell you that there's solid gold at the end of this rainbow, if you care to walk that definition out to its final conclusions. If you care to understand your actions at any level as an auditor, only in the framework of that exact definition, there's gold at the end of the rainbow. But if you think you understand it and you don't understand it, you're going to get to the – not the end of the rainbow – you're going to get to the middle of it and fall off.

Now, this is one of those horrible definitions that admits of no exceptions, variations or anything else. And if you accept it at practically an engineering level of precision, you'll have it. And the next thing you know, you got tone arm action, you understand pcs, you can handle pcs, all this sort of thing, everything starts moving together – *click-click, whir-whir-whir*, nothing is very difficult.

You start trying to hang on to the fact that the reason this pc doesn't get tone arm action is because the technique – *ah-ah!* Well, yes, we can say the technique, we could say this, we could say that – but you're no longer talking about auditing. Oh, you can discuss technique, you can say, "Oh, it's this and that and so on," but don't get it so fuzzied up in your skull that you think you're talking about auditing. You're not talking about auditing.

Auditing is *one peculiar, particular action*. It's a cycle of action. And the odd part of it is that part of the cycle can be an origin on the restimulation of the auditor's presence – origin from the pc of something that then has to be acknowledged by the auditor. But that's just a comm cycle and that is the auditing cycle, and that two-terminal aspect which is what this physical universe consists of is what gives you tone arm action and is *what makes the pc better!* *It's not a technique that makes the pc better, and it never will be.* As long as you're counting on auditing, then auditing is that thing, and when it doesn't exist you don't get – it goes nowhere. Do you understand?

So you say, "Now, look, this..." Look – let – let me give you the nonsense, here, see? This is the – this is the South Sea Islanders, once used to boil sea water and it generated a gas and they put this gas up in this thing, because it got from volcanoes and then – then Ronson has – has bottled this, you see, and – and so forth and that's how you can – so therefore the relationships with the South Sea Islander are very important. See, that's one of these data when you're asking the fellow simply to put it there, see? But whenever you go into this statement or make a statement of this kind, you're cutting your throat as a pro auditor.

"The reason we aren't getting tone arm action is because he is being audited at too high a level for his case." This is not true. Because it isn't true that you shouldn't put people at one level or another of case, but the error is you have introduced the idea of tone arm action independent of the auditing cycle. See, that's the error. Can't be done. Now, you can do an awful lot of things with this auditing cycle, see? You can put an awful lot of television programs through Telstar. And they amaze and wonderfy the audiences that look at them. But without any Telstar they would never get there.

So auditing is the carrier wave – as far as the pc is concerned – that handles anything and everything in Scientology. That is it.

Now, it isn't that you can't teach a pc, it isn't that you can't inform a pc, it isn't that you shouldn't move your technology around, it isn't that he shouldn't go up through levels. It's just that that has nothing to do with the definition of auditing!

Auditing is simply auditing. It is that action of the auditor asking a question that the pc can answer, you see, or making a command, and the pc understanding it and responding to it, executing it, informing the auditor that he has done so and the auditor acknowledging that fact. And that's all auditing is.

Pc originates something of the sort. Well, of course, it's a result of an earlier cycle. So he goes ahead and the auditor acknowledges it. It's the same thing. So you could have somebody who was letter perfect on Class VI but who never audited. Wouldn't that be a wonder to behold?

It – it's one of these – it's one of these horrible things that – it – maybe someday you – some of you have got it already. That's – it's – some of these days – one of these days, years from now, somebody else will hear me and they suddenly say, "Well, *that's* what he's talking about, you know?" Because unfortunately it's one of these things that just shoots through everything. You want to know "How do I crack this case?" Well, define auditing. "Well," you say, "that isn't very informative!" [laughter, laughs]

All right, but that puts us into another type of activity in which an auditor can engage. There may even be an additional type of activity to this. But there is one other principal form of activity in which the auditor can engage and it's called assessment.

Now, auditing goes somewhat to the pc's bank or to the pc and it restimulates his bank and talks to the pc and so forth. It isn't that auditing goes purely and entirely to the pc. It goes mainly to the pc. But assessment nnnnever goes to a pc! And you cannot assess a pc who thinks he's being addressed. Now, you want to know what happens to all these wrong assessments, well, look at that definition. How do you ever get a wrong assessment? How do you get your E-Meter going so flickety-flock? How does it tell you so many lies? Well, you're auditing a pc who isn't up the level on this particular subject. He thinks somebody's talking to him. The auditor says, "Catburrs, batfur, caterwumps." And the pc says, "Oh, batfurs, yes, batfurs, yes, yes. I had a batfur once – so forth." He thinks he's being addressed. He thinks somebody's talking to him. And nobody's talking to him, man. His views of the situation are about as useful...

But this must be somebody who is pretty restimulatable and rather easily restimulated to be so egocentric that he is always being addressed. And he must have some fantastic protective mechanism into the middle of the auditing cycle to keep anything from going through anywhere. He must use his present time problems to defend himself at every turn, he must use this – his rebuttals and so forth to keep it going forward – a lot of things must be going on here the like of which nobody ever heard of wrong with the auditing cycle.

So when the auditing cycle is out, assessment can't occur. But that's the – about the only way that the – that the assessment can occur, by the way, with the auditing cycle out. Pc can be madder than blazes and you can still assess the pc. What I mean is, that the auditing cycle is out and the pc thinks he is being addressed, every time you say "catterwump" or "batfur" or any part of the list, and answers it as a question. You're never going to find out. You're never going to find any items or goals or anything else, see? Because he is insufficiently – insuffi-

ciently able on the subject of the comm cycle, auditing, you know – auditing. He's insufficiently able as far as auditing is concerned to be able to sit there relaxedly, because he feels, you know, alert. He feels nervous. He – he – something's wrong. Something's wrong with the comm cycle. His auditor, he doesn't like the auditor, something's wrong with his ability, he can't answer questions, he's afraid of this or that – some part of this thing is awry. So you try to assess this guy. You wonder why assessment was jacked up so high in these levels. Well, I'm giving you why right now.

Until the auditing cycle is very well remedied and the pc can sit there very, very relaxedly indeed, you haven't got a dog's chance of assessing anything on the pc because he crisscrosses in all directions, and his mind is like a darting sparrow or a hummingbird. It's all over the place – *zip, zip, zip, zip, zip, zip, zip!* You call "catterwump," you know, and my God, you don't know whether the rocket read had to do with the – with the pc thinking, "I don't like catterwumps." "He's now going to read 'catterwumps,' I know it!" you know? Never saying anything and so forth.

That auditing cycle is out so therefore assessment is difficult. And you very often have to do assessment with the auditing cycle out. And it will still stand independent to it because even so, if you ask the right question, even on a thoroughly ARC broke pc, if you ask the question exactly where the mind – not the pc – where the mind is living, that meter will read. And of course, the more the pc is calm and able to respond on the auditing cycle, the more reliable reads – the more, the deeper the meter reads, you see? An ARC broke pc himself doesn't read on the meter, but you can always bang his bank into reading.

ARC breaks. That, that I just told you, is a mouthful all in itself. That's about fifteen or twenty hours' lecture – the difference between an auditing cycle and assessment and what isn't assessment and so forth that – that – that's – that's all – that's all very interesting stuff.

Let me give you an example. R2H, ARC Break Straightwire, that's assessment, isn't it? No, that's not assessment, that's auditing. How is it auditing? You're assessing, aren't you? No, you never assess for R2H. What do you mean you don't assess for R2H? You got a list in front of you, you're reading off to the pc, aren't you? Yeah, but you're asking the pc the whole way. Now you could turn around and run it on an – on an overt assessment. Just do an assessment. But R2H is basically not an assessment but a two-way comm with the pc concerning what parts of the comm cycle were out here and seeing which one agrees was the one out in that particular incident. And you're asking the pc to remember the incident and you're asking the pc this and you're getting the data from the pc that and you're asking that. What the hell has this got to do with assessment, man? You start looking over R2H, it's nothing but solid auditing from one end to the other. What's the fooler is, is there's an assessment sheet in it. There's an assessment sheet in it. But you – actually, in its purest state and as best used, you do not assess with it.

"Well, Class VI – look, Class VI – full of goals lists and item lists and everything else – there's all kinds of assessments to do in there, yeah, it's nothing to do with auditing. Well, wait a minute, it gives you tone arm action so therefore it must have something to do..." No, I'm sorry, tone arm action doesn't have anything to do with auditing. These Indians, you see, when they come down often have grease paint. And the Ronson company... Doesn't have anything to do with it, you see? The point is here that assessment is assessment and auditing is auditing.

And you get somebody who is chittering away like a magpie while – while you're trying to assess, because you can't keep your auditing cycle in, you're in trouble. Also if he's in that state, why, you're probably going to get a wrong assessment anyway. Lots of things are wrong, but they're just – we're not talking about the wrongnesses of it, we're just talking about the purity of definition.

There's two targets: the pc and the bank. Assessment is addressed to the bank and is the one process that addresses straight to the bank. And it's just from the auditor to the bank. It has nothing to do with the pc and there's the meter.

Now, sometimes you run an assessment procedure on a pc while the pc is trying to put in the comm cycle and you get into trouble. But that's why you get into trouble, is you're trying to put in the – an assessment. You know, you're saying, "Is this a wog? Is it a bog? Is it dag? Wog? Is it eight years? Nine years? Eighteen years?" and so forth – and next thing you know your pc's ARC broke. Why is he ARC broke? Well, he actually originated and you didn't take up the comm cycle. That's why he's ARC broke. It's not the fact that you're talking to the meter. You di... he originated and you didn't take any attention to it and so forth, that's the source of the ARC break.

So you assess and audit and assess and audit and assess and audit and assess and audit and audit and assess – at the same time, sometimes. But that doesn't make them any – any the less two different actions. They are two distinctly different actions. You go, "*Bark-bark-bark, bark-bark-bark, bark-bark-bark*" on a list, you don't want an auditor – you don't want a pc doing this or that or the other thing – a pc... doesn't – it doesn't matter, he can be half asleep and you'll still get the same results on your meter. You shouldn't be assessing pcs in boil-off, because they're in boil-off because you've overlisted the list. But they could be in boil-off and you could still pull a goal off of them. See, it hasn't anything to do with the pc, it just has to do with the bank. It's between the auditor and the bank. So that action is peculiarly between the auditor and the bank.

That's another part of auditing. Isn't it? So if you've got auditing there, and you see, and in... Caught you! Hasn't anything to do with auditing. You say, "Yes, but I got a lot of benefit out of it." That hasn't anything to do with auditing. That's Scientology. "Yes, I know, but when you find an item you get this terrific tone arm action. How do you account for that?" I'll let you in on something: When you find an item when no auditing is present, you don't get any tone arm action. It is the auditing that gives you tone arm action, always. And the actual RI, big and juicy as it is, doesn't give you any tone arm action at all if there's no auditing present. Isn't that interesting?

Do you know that that happens to be an actual, provable datum? You can prove it yourself sometimes. You don't get tone arm action, you get a little needle slash. You find an actual RI – great, big, juicy beast of an actual RI. And you watch your meter behavior and if auditing were in progress, you see? You give it to the pc, there's auditing, he's in rapport with the auditor, you've got an auditing cycle going, so you get tone arm action because of the auditing cycle.

All right, same pc, let's put him on a one-hand electrode, don't go anywhere near the room, let him call out the next item that he's to find in the next bank that will give the auditor a

division-and-a-half blowdown. Let him call it out and he'll get little one-inch needle slash. And that tone arm goes exactly no place. There's enough residual auditing in the bank that he has had to give him that. This is – this is very interesting. Assessing doesn't give anybody tone arm action. It's only an apparency. He – he – the auditing is going on the same time, see – so you get the tone arm action because the auditor finds the thing and he says, "Catterwumps – is that it? Well, it's catterwumps, is that it?"

It's a very funny thing. You can – you can actually see an item start to go and you can't make it go all the way until you say to the pc, "Is that your item?" and you have immediately started the auditing cycle. It isn't that – any mystery about the pc put his attention on it – my God, how could he help but put his attention on it, he's sitting in the middle of it, see? And you say, "Is that your item?" And you'll see *pppsssswwwwww!* And you'll see the tone arm come down and so forth. And you very often don't get any blowdown whatsoever. You can find the item on the list, you'll see the needle slash. If there's residual auditing present, you'll get a little tone arm action.

But here's what I'm telling you: It's the auditing that delivers the tone arm action, not the assessment. The assessment is a pure, clean, clear activity all by itself.

So therefore, you should do case analysis during an ARC break assessment, shouldn't you? Well, you've asked the pc, you f... you found – you found that the bypassed charge of the thing was a wrong goal, so you – you – you ask him his considerations, in an ARC break assessment you ask him his considerations about this goal, don't you? Like hell you do! An ARC break assessment is given in times of ARC break. The list is also useful for other forms of assessment, but an ARC break assessment is simply an ARC break assessment. And it's a very elementary thing. All you do is assess the list, find out where the needle reads – it's between you and the bank – find out where the needle is and then you simply indicate what you have found to the pc.

That's all there is to an ARC break assessment. No matter how hard you try, you can't make anything more out of an ARC break assessment than that. And during an ARC break you *must not audit. Must not audit. Must not audit. Never audit.*

"Yeah," you say, "well, how the hell can you audit, possibly – now wait a minute, this is an awful brain-cracker, because if you can't audit, if you mustn't audit during an ARC break, why, how can you assess?" Well, an assessment doesn't happen to be auditing. You must *not audit* during an ARC break, period! All right, the pc sets very poor goals for the session and seems a little bit unhappy and says he has some problems. Does he have an ARC break? *No!* An ARC break is an ARC break. An ARC break is when the auditing comm cycle cannot take place. And that's what an ARC break is. The pc is very accusative and he's talking and so forth and he isn't answering any of the auditing que... well, that – that's – that's an ARC break. Pc's screaming, the pc won't talk, you understand – that's an ARC break. An ARC break isn't *anything else*, it's just an impossibility of comm cycle. If you force a comm cycle at that time, you will deepen the ARC break. You can practically kill somebody with this, man! An ARC break is an ARC break.

All right, at the beginning of the session, naturally you had to do an ARC break assessment because the pc didn't set correct goals. Aw! Can he talk to you? Well, what you doing an

ARC break assessment for? He's not ARC broke! He's perfectly auditable. Got a PTP. Do case analysis.

"Well, what's been going on? Where are you sitting? Where's your attention right now?"

"Well, I'm thinking about the wog-wogs."

"All right, what are your main considerations about the wog-wogs?" or any other little destimulative process. "On wog-wogs anything been suppressed? Since the last time I audited you, has anything been suppressed?" Anything like that. "What's your attention on? All right, let's do some case analysis and considerations, so forth and so on – ah, about that now. Oh, that's good, that's fine. Okay. Now, let's get on about our business." See? Get the idea?

Has nothing to do with an ARC break assessment. ARC break assessment is an ARC break assessment and what – why it is called an ARC break assessment is because it is given during ARC breaks. [laughter] And auditing – and auditing is never done during an ARC break. Never audit a pc during an ARC break. Never, but never, but never, but never! Elementary.

Now, this is some more of "You put the lighter on the paper and you put it over on the pencils and you put it over on the desk." Do you see how the confusions can arise in these very precise definitions I've been giving you? A lot of confusions.

"Yeah, but a lot of these Indians wear bear grease in their hair and – and the shopkeeper down at the corner has awfully dirty fingernails when he tries to sell you..." Hasn't anything to do with the price of fish!

What you've got to do is get these definitions *terrifically* clean – *terrifically* clear. *What exactly are they? Exactly what are the purposes of these tools and exactly what do they do? How broad can you apply them?* You can apply them awful broadly, man. Yes, you could use the ARC break assessment sheet to help locate bypassed charge in the pc and audit the whole time, you see? But that's not an ARC break assessment. It's mixed up your tools all right – so you mixed up your tools. The crime is not knowing you have mixed them up.

Now, there are other ramifications of this kind. I've told you some of these very precise actions and they are very important. If all you did was sit and remedy somebody's comm cycle and the auditing, even to this point: "What could you originate to me free and clear in a session?" You see? "What chair would it be all right to sit in, in an auditing session?" It doesn't matter what you ask them. As long as you're addressing their points of disability on the comm cycle, you're going to get yourself TA action. You're going to get this pc in session and you're going to get a pc who's whizzing and coming on upstairs.

But it's all built in on the basis of knowing with great precision the exact definitions with which you're dealing and knowing exactly what those things are. And if you know what they are, why, you're going to make it. If you haven't got them all split apart and figured out, you're not going to make it.

One day the pc is *wuba-buba*, and you pick up the *babba-galog* over here and you say, "Now we're gonna – we're gonna blah," and all of a sudden everything goes *bling!* You wonder

what in the name of God went on here. Well, you picked up this hammer, don't you see, in order to fix the watch. And it didn't work. But they're terribly elementary but you have to get them very straight so that at no moment do you have – no moment do you have any confusion in your mind.

The ARC break assessment, you mustn't have an ARC break assessment down so badly that you feel the thing to do in an ARC break assessment is argue with the pc, you see? Or if you read line two, then indicate the charge that you found after you've read line two, as line three. These things are apt to cause difficulties. When you have an ARC break assessment occurring by reason of Step Six and then ARC break it by reason of a session ARC break and you can't go on with your Step Six, be smart enough to realize that you now have an ARC break on top of the ARC break and reach for your session ARC break sheet. You understand? Know your tools. *Slippety-slip, slippety-slip*. Soon as you got the session ARC break straightened out you got that found, assessed, indicated to the pc – let's take the R6 one, read it down, finish it off properly. Bang – there it is, straighten it out. Destimulate the whole occurrence, maybe, with a spat – spat of mid ruds or something like this, after the ARC break is all occurred. Because mid ruds are auditing.

These are your various things. Now, I've given you an awful hammer and pound in this lecture of very fundamental fundamentals. And if you look them over very carefully, all of a sudden you will say, "That is why this, that is why that, that is why something else, that is why when I audited Josie-Belle I didn't, and that is why when I audited George I did. That is why I don't seem to make any progress on something or other," and so on.

In other words, all these things are figure-out-able at this basic level. Okay?

Thank you very much.

AUDITING AND ASSESSMENT

A lecture given on 3 March 1964

Thank you. What's the date?

Audience: The 3rd of March.

The 3rd of March, AD 14, Saint Hill Special Briefing Course. Well, I'm glad to see you looking so well. I'm glad to see you looking so well. And you do, too, you know? I've seen some creaks disappear here since the last time I looked at you.

Well, I got my complete line plot last night, thanks to my auditor. Complete goals plot from one to forty-two – the lot! [applause]

Yeah, that's much more to the point – the auditor on this case – what she's had to suffer! What she's had to suffer through. And it's very interesting, that until you get a goals plot done properly, the amount of faith and confidence that you can put in a goal, until it's been completely plotted, is so slight as to be negligible, on actual GPMs. And the wild abandon with which we've been running wrong goals is really marvelous! [laughter] Great, you know, great.

The materials – this lecture is not connected with or concerned with R6 – only slightly impinges on it; it's at lower levels. But it is interesting that the most complete body of knowledge today is at Class VI. That is complete, codified, completely buttoned up, squared around, all auditing skills, everything necessary to put it together exists there at that level. And this is not – was not an accidental or momentary achievement. The truth of the matter is it required thousands and thousands of hours of auditing, required fantastic amounts of put-together and look-up and square-around, and so on. And it is quite a happy thing to look at and see that that material is all squared around.

Oddly enough, it happens to be all codified. It happens to be all on tape, or in notes, or so forth; all for study, and so on. And from – well actually, Class II – Class II looks very thin and spotty with, you know, with a great deal of additional bits and pieces, and nothing lined up too straight and so forth. But the information is all there at Class II, don't you see? But it's not really in a concise, tight assembly, and so on. But Class VI is. Quite in addition to that, we have all of the Instructors and Saint Hill staff personnel are just finishing up their Class VI Course. So we even have trained Instructors along this line.

Of course, we don't dare say at this moment that we have trained Instructors, because they get their examination Thursday night.

But anyway, the information at Class VI is the most codified piece of stuff that anybody ever wanted to look at. And that is quite comforting in Scientology, because we're quite

used to having it all in fragments, don't you know. And it's released here, there, and this or that. And it's an HCOB that also contains methods of snapping your fingers, you know. And then there's another bit of vital information that comes out in 1958. At the same time, it's accompanied by "How to Assess for the Rock," and – you know? It has scattered and spattered about. So you have to root and dig for it. Well, that isn't true at Class VI. And it's a good thing it isn't, because this is precision skill to end all precision skills.

Now, the lecture I'm about to give you delivers into your hands some additional information concerning your more basic auditing. Now, this is, of course, also applicable to Class VI, but is the very stuff of which life is made at Classes III and IV. And frankly, I don't see how anybody could do anything at Class IV without this data.

Now, I want to – I want to give you – so that's... the tape – the classifiable level of the tape, of course, is Class IV that I'm – data I'm giving you right now. But it's also Classes V and VI.

Now, you are accustomed to regarding assessment as something that you use to find something to audit. That's the basic – been the basic purpose of assessment for many, many years. And then more latterly, to find the cause or source of an ARC break – assessment.

Assessment is an activity which is totally independent of auditing. And as you move up in the classes from IV on, you'll find that assessment commingles with auditing because Class VI is just practically nothing but solid assessment, don't you see, with auditing thrown in. We bring about the primary cause of bad auditing or bad ARC breaks from just one thing; is the inability of the auditor to differentiate between assessment and auditing, and failing to shift his gears or, schizophrenically, do both at the same time.

The way you do both at the same time is when the pc originates in the middle of an assessment. You're going down the sheet and the pc originates. Well now, you actually never do them both at the same time, but you must learn to lay aside the assessment for that instant, handle the auditing situation competently and then resume the assessment. And when you realize that all this may take place in a shorter space of time than twenty seconds, you realize that the auditor has to have a terribly good ability to differentiate between the two, and to shift between the two activities. The two activities don't really mix. They are entirely different things.

And let me give you some reason why. The assessment is addressed to the pc's bank. It is not addressed to the pc. Now, when auditing intervenes during an assessment, then something has been addressed to the pc. Inadvertently something has gone to the pc, but it's not that it's an accident or anything. You've hit something in assessing, so therefore the pc has been reminded of something and so originates. Well now, this is the pc talking. The assessment is addressed to the bank and the pc says something. This is perfectly all right; this happens constantly in auditing. Well, what does the auditor do?

Well actually, he lays aside his assessment at that moment, not with the physical actions of picking up the paper and putting it over alongside him, but with the mental realization that that is in effect what he is doing. Handles the origin competently. Understands the origin. Doesn't – doesn't... this is one performance which is utterly deadly: Auditor is so busy assessing that he hasn't got any time to understand what the pc is saying, see. So, he simply ac-

knowledges, hoping that it won't be noticed, you see? He just gets rid of this auditing action and then tries to go back to his assessment, and of course he can't. And the session will lock up, right there.

It locks up if only to the degree that the meter ceases to be as responsive. You might not notice it, you see. It might not be a glass-shattering ARC break. The pc might not even feel upset about his auditor. It's just that it ceases to be so responsive. Your assessment now doesn't run so well.

And all bad assessment, where the meter isn't operating properly, comes about because the auditor can't shift his gears between assessing and auditing rapidly enough and handle both of them competently each in its turn. Do you follow me?

I, by the way, am addressing this lecture to you with a great deal of hope and élan. I gave you a lecture on the comm cycle in auditing a few weeks ago, and I was also – learned something because I had the lecture – those two lectures replayed to you. And you – you immediately made tremendous use out of this. And a great deal of upgrade occurred, and so forth. And I was very pleased. It gave me a nice win. And I was very happy with you about that, so I'm not talking to you today as though the information will be 50 percent wasted. [laughs] I have confidence that you will use it intelligently. It was a nice win.

Now, I was amazed at the number of auditor reports which showed up exact accurate use of that information I gave you about that comm cycle. I've lectured about it before but it's never been picked up and used. So therefore, I was able to put it into a communication form which was understandable and usable.

Well, this is another one of these. And you also heard me talk a week ago about assessment and so forth. And I actually just gave you a bunch of hot bricks. I just took them right out of the furnace and put them into your bare hands. There's a lot of definitions in that last lecture I gave you – *rat-a-tat-tat-a-tat-tat-a-tat-tat*. It's practically a whole subject like chemistry, all in that short space of time. Well, I'm giving you some of the fruits of that information right now in talking to you about shifting gears between assessing and auditing.

Now, there's many an auditor thinks assessing is completely impossible. He gets of this opinion. He takes an old Prehav Scale, and he's going to find the Prehav level – which, by the way, are mostly items out of actual GPMs or locks they're on – [laughter] but he gets to going down this thing, you know, and all of a sudden, there's his meter. And his meter's – seems to be completely motionless. Nothing happening on the meter. The needle was sort of swinging about and all of a sudden it isn't doing so well. So he thinks he's hit something in the assessment. That's his first mistake. He thinks the pc must have hung up someplace. He thinks a lot of things. But that needle is no longer free.

So, he goes back over the list to hit what he had previously been going over and getting little ticks on. And he finds out that most of them are scrubbed and he can't get much of them back, except some other one that hadn't read before or something now gives a bigger tick. And he just sort of goes into despair about the whole thing and just hands up any level and of course, it's usually the one that's most protested by the pc. Then he audits this on the pc and wonders why he doesn't get any gain, you see.

Well now, that's a failure of assessment, what I've given you there. Obviously, isn't it? It's an assessment failure. But actually, actually, it's an auditing failure. It's an auditing failure. The auditing which got put aside shouldn't have been that thoroughly put aside. And the pc's origin, the auditor's inadvertent question of the pc, see: Like, "Well, is it all right with you if I now assess this list?" you see. That's an auditing question, man, that's not an assessment question. And the pc says, "Hm-mm-mm-mm..." and the auditor says – see and he – "All right," you see, "*pocketa-bock*, and *backity-back*, and *boobity-boop*, and *soopa-soop*."

What's he doing right now? He's got an incomplete auditing cycle. The pc didn't know if it was all right to assess the list or not. Really didn't know quite what the auditor's going to do. And maybe had his attention on some cycle of action that the pc thought was incomplete, see? So, he's given the pc – now you understand, there's two targets here: One is the bank. One is the pc. So he starts the assessment by addressing the pc. Look at how elementary non-sensical this can get, you see. And then doesn't permit the cycle of action to take place, you see?

In other words, he's going to assess, so he starts an auditing action. And then he doesn't complete the auditing action and keeps assessing. Well now, that in itself, all by itself, is enough to thoroughly defeat an assessment of such a delicate nature as old R2 Prehav Scales, or something like that. That's quite adequate, see? "Is it all right with you if..." (I'm just giving you the *reductio ad absurdum* of it, you see this), "Is it all right with you if I assess this list now?" See? *Buckety-bow*, *boppity-bow*, *bungity-bing*, *bockata-bok*.

Now wait a minute, he said something to the pc, didn't he? Well, the pc has heard this. As a living – we won't say breathing being, because there – the pc could be too – too far gone to breathe, or actually you could be assessing somebody who was up high enough so they didn't have to. But this pc is an analytically responsive character, see? When he's asked, "Do birds fly?" then he expects to answer "Do birds fly?" Furthermore, he is not, probably, very well indoctrinated as a pc, and so thinks all assessment questions are addressed to him personally, too. And has an anxiety... But you won't find that enters into it very much providing you keep your auditing cycle going. But having asked the pc this question, if you don't complete that cycle of action, then you tend to channel the remaining assessment to the pc. Do you see this?

So the pc now feels honor-bound to answer, whether or not communication, and so forth, is the level. So the pc sits there and says, "Well, it really shouldn't be communication. No, I don't think it's that. Well, I don't think it's this," and so on. Why is he going into this? Well, he could be going into this for many reasons – but... in anxiety about questions, and so forth, he's not well in-session or something. But remember, part of this and what keyed him into going into this was the fact that the auditor asked him a question and then didn't complete the auditing cycle and so threw the whole assessment on to an auditing line.

Pc is still trying to sit here, saying, "Well, is it all right for him to go with the..." The pc didn't get a chance to say, you know, "Well, I don't know, I feel sort of dopey and groggy. Will that have any effect on the assessment?" See? Only the pc doesn't say it. So, well, look at the mechanics involved here. The pc has an incomplete auditing cycle, may have had an answer, is therefore put on a withhold – and this is what you're going to assess through.

Now, this gives you some idea of how sharp an auditor's got to be to differentiate between auditing and assessment. You complete one – particularly the auditing cycle – and you complete the other. They're both action cycles and they both have to be completed.

Now let me give you the reverse look at this thing. It looks kind of idiotic when you start looking at it, but you'd be surprised how easy it is to slip into this one. I mean, what I'm talking to you about in general – it's how easy it is not to differentiate between these two things. Well after all, you've got a pc sitting in front of you and you're just there, aren't you? You're doing this for his case and naturally, he has his opinions. And we've got all kinds of rationale, you see, to go through with this that breaks down what should be a very, very sharp view of this. We're auditing or we're assessing, see? We're either/or, you see, that's all. We're not auditing and assessing.

So, the pc – the pc sits there in a state of batter-batter, yackle-yackle to himself; comments on everything because he's already on a withhold to the auditor. Now, there's many a pc, when he sees an auditor assess, goes on to an immediate detached withhold state of mind. Well, how did he get there? That's what you should ask yourself. Did he just get there automatically? No. He has to be put there by disobeying certain little tenets that are the ideal operation, see?

Perfectly all right to say to a pc – oh, yes, you should – "Is it all right now if we assess this list?" Perfectly all right. But for God's sakes, look. You got an auditing cycle going. You've asked the pc an auditing question. Now the pc has to say it is or isn't all right. And he jolly well must have answered that question to his satisfaction. See, it's all just the standard auditing cycle – answers the question to his satisfaction and says to the auditor yes, no, or whatever it is, you see, and the auditor must acknowledge that. And if a present time problem or something pops up with regard to this, the auditor certainly had jolly well better handle it.

See, this is just all auditing, see, going on here. The auditor had better... "Oh, you've got a little headache. Now, when did the headache turn on? ... Well, it did? ... All right, fine... Yes ... Uh-hm. All right. All right, how're you doing now? ... All right. Thank you. Thank you very much. Now, is it all right if I assess this list?"

And the pc says, "Yeah, it's all right if you assess the list."

And the auditor says, "Okay. Thank you," and without further ado, turns over to this assessing operation. *Backaty-back, bop, boop, ta-da-dap-pow, pow, pow, pow, pow, bang, bang, bang, bang*, and you'd just be utterly fascinated. The needle stays loose and when you hit the right item, why, it goes *klablang*. And all is well, and the pc – all of a sudden, you've got the right item, and you ask the pc something about, "Is that it?" you know?

Well now, now watch this one, see. He says, "Is that your item?" you know, or something like that, see. Well now, that's just tossed off as an idle patter or a piece of courtesy step or something, isn't it? It hasn't any, any real bearing. It's part of the assessment, isn't it?

Oh no, it's not! You started a brand-new auditing cycle. And when you say, "Is that your item?" you have asked an auditing question. And you jolly well better get it completely carried out into its auditing cycle, or the next thing you know, it won't be the pc's item, nothing will repeat on the meter, the pc's in a bunch of withhold, he doesn't cognite on anything –

and this is where you throw most of your cognitions. See. That's how they get thrown in the ashcan. That's how pcs feel they aren't cogniting well and that sort of thing.

Well, the auditing question is asked, "Is that your item?" you see, some such thing. And the pc of course is going to take a little while to answer that. Completely aside from the fact that you shouldn't be talking while the TA is moving. Completely aside from that mechanical bit that's thrown in sideways. Pc's item: "Sponduliks. Hmm. Sponduliks. Hmm. Sponduliks. Oh, yeah, yeah. When I was – when I was umpteen, uh – I uh – yeah. And – yeah, yeah, yeah. That's why I left Isabelle! See? Yes! That's right."

And now, now, now, beware auditor, is that an answer to your auditing question? It jolly well isn't. That's a halfway point. Now, the pc will either get around to eventually telling you this – you've just handed the pc a heavy bomb, right in his paws, you see. It takes him a while to get through the circuitry, see. Well look, you're looking for something that's got his mind all circuitried. Why, why be so surprised? Why be so surprised that it takes him a long time to answer this auditing question? You've just put him into the middle of the complete rat race. And he's supposed to see his way through this in a split second, so you can get on assessing, or something, see.

No, he's not going to. You dumped him into the middle of the whirlpool, see? You just said, "Sponduliks. Is that your item?" see?

"No! Sponduliks. *Oh, oh, rrr, rrr, rr, rrrr, rrrrrrr,*" grate, grate, grind, grind, the wheels crashing, you know, gears grinding, and so forth. "Oh, yes." Cognition, see? "Well, that's why I left Isabelle, see. Yeah. Yeah. Yeah."

Now, watch it, auditor. That pc hasn't answered that auditing question. Pc's saying, "Yeah. Yeah. Yeah. Yeah." He's just saying, "Yeah." That's how he left... "Yeah. Yeah. Yeah. Yeah. Yeah ... Has a lot to do with military training at uh ... Yeah! Yeah. Ha-ha! Yeah, yeah, yeah. That damn sergeant, he used to come out there on the parade ground all the time. He'd keep saying, 'Sponduliks,' you know? No wonder! Ha-ha-ha! Yeah. Yeah. Yeah. Yeah. Yeah. Yeah. Yeah. Yeah, that's my item."

But maybe he forgets to tell you! And after a while, he just sits back with – if you've done a proper assessment and everything is in and rolling like mad, and your good indicator in – he sits back with a grin on his face, and so forth. And that's the end of that, see? And he hasn't said that's his item, you know?

And the auditor now would have an uncomplete – an incomplete cycle of action, unless he got the question answered. The auditor shouldn't say, "I will now repeat the auditing question." I don't think that would quite be in order [laughter] since it would now invalidate all his cognitions. So he'd say, "Well, Sponduliks. Is that your item, then?"

"Oh, yeah! Oh, yeah! Hell! I thought you understood that. Yeah, of course it's my item! Yeah, yeah, that's my item. Yes sir!" You see the tone arm start going some more, see? You say, "All right. Sponduliks, that's your item."

Now, the pc hasn't been asked anything, has he? He's not given a command to do anything. So you can say, "Sponduliks, that's your item," without expecting anything else to hap-

pen, because nothing else will happen. He'll just sit there. You'll get a great big surge of the needle and that will be that.

But you see – now, I've just given you an example here – that failure to differentiate between the assessment and the auditing messes up the meter, messes up the session and makes the assessment all but impossible. They are two different distinct operations.

And there's a very funny thing about it: Assessment must never interrupt the auditing cycle. But the auditing cycle may at any time interrupt assessment. So therefore, the auditing cycle is the senior operation. Now, that sounds very funny. If we say it's a senior operation, obviously you spend more time on that than you do on anything else. No, listen, the whole of TA action obtained at Class VI is obtained quantitatively. It's the number of items you get in the unit of time that gives you the TA. It's quantitative. You find one item per session and you will get, oddly enough, very little more than the TA action resident in one item. If you want ten times that, why, you find ten times the number of items.

This is just arithmetically arrivable at. It's just – that's it. So therefore, the auditing cycle is senior to it because it can wreck the assessment. Not that it necessarily occupies more time.

Assessment can also wreck an auditing cycle. Pc is saying, "Say, you know, I've just had an inkling here that that goal you're listing for on the list..." or "I think my service facsimile is in actual fact..." and so on and so on.

"Oh, yeah. Oh yeah, okay. Sponduliks, *pa-da-da-da, pa-do-do-do, po-dodo-do, pa-di-di-di-du-du waf woo...* " What the hell's happened to the meter? What's the matter? I've got a dirty needle here. Pc must have missed withhold. "You have a missed withhold? You think something before the session that uh ... Yes, you been up to something between sessions I don't know about? Maybe it's a listing bypass, or maybe L4 ..."

Hell, no! You just mixed up assessing and auditing and put your meter out of operation.

Now, this will come closer home to you when I tell you that if there were two electrical lines leading out to two different objects, and you took those two lines and crossed them, you would get sparks. And that you have two lines going out to two different destinations, a pc and a bank, and when you cross them you get sparks. Very jammy type sparks.

Now, no auditor is so expert that he will *never* get these things mixed up, but let's look at some of the obvious faults that you can get into with this. Now, when you're assessing you customarily use, or might use, "Is it...?" See? Let's take a service facsimile list. "Is this list complete?"

Now, all of this actually should be threshed out, threshed out. It has not appeared too much on the research horizon. Because one can get away with saying, "Is it.....?"

But you know, there's no – there's nobody home in a bank. There can be appearances of people being there. You can get all kinds of wild things. If you want to mess up a pc good, go into conversation – through the meter – with one of the nine entities of the body. You'll get some of the weirdest responses.

You can give every sign of having animate intelligent beings. The first one of them that emerged, and that was used and so forth, is the file clerk. The old file clerk. You make an impingement on the bank-ask a question and make an impingement – and you'll get some interesting responses. I remember some publisher – lady in charge of publications of vast magnitude, and I was talking to her one day about Dianetics, something of the sort. And she said, "Well, what do you mean, people aren't in present time?" see?

And I said, "Well, they're very often stuck other places, and so forth."

"Oh yes?"

And I said, "All right, when I snap my fingers an age will flash," you see. "When I snap my fingers, an age will flash," see. And I said, "What age occurred to you at that moment?"

She says, "Four."

"All right, where were you when you were four years old?" Turns out, you know, the house burned down, and, "How did you know that?" and, "You must be very magical indeed." Well, of course, you just got the part of the time track that the person was most glued up in, and so on, and by making an impingement on the bank, why, you got a response. But remember, the response did not really come about from the – asking a question of a little man that sits in a box behind a wicket. [laughs]

Now, I myself at this particular stage of the game – and I may shift this for various reasons – do ask assessment questions as questions. I've noticed that this bothers the pc more than assertions. But it's easier to do, and I have never considered it a vital bit of stuff, but if you said, instead of, "Is it four?" "Is it five?" "Is it six?" – something of this character, you see, "Is the list complete?" You would say, "The list is complete; the list is incomplete." In other words, you would make your assessment statements and your questions otherwise. It all depends on how much control you've got as an auditor and what the pc understands. But I noticed that I occasionally do run into a cross – and you will, too – run into a cross between the pc thinks he's been addressed when actually you've addressed the bank.

Now, you won't get any reaction from the bank if the pc is intervening. So the more you can do to keep the pc from intervening, without putting the pc on a bunch of withholds – one of the cute ways to do it is the pc (well trained) then says, "I am not going to interfere with the auditor or stick my oar in during the assessment." And then, of course, you have a dead meter for the complete assessment. Pcs are very helpful, very often helpful. You say, "Has something been decided, or protested? Has something been decided? That read. What did you decide?"

"Well, that I was just going to sit here and let you address the bank all you wanted to, and I wasn't going to say a word or interfere."

"All right, fine."

Now you do the assessment and of course you get the reactions. So the pc can get between you and the bank. In other words, he can actually throw in an overwhelming postulate or decision of some kind or another that just holds the bank down flat, and you can't address

the bank. Therefore, the pc has to sit there with the rudiments in and without a bunch of cooperative – cooperative assistances before you can get any assessment done.

So let's just put it this way: If the pc is in good communication – oddly enough, it works this way; it'll sound the reverse, unless you inspect it carefully – if the pc is in good communication with the auditor, you can then address the bank very easily. That doesn't sound quite right when you look at it the first time. You say, "Well, yeah, be sitting there, jabbering away, talking away, yapping away, cogniting away, knocking the... having an awful time here keeping my tone arm on its proper position and my needle on Set, the pc keeps cogniting all the time, you know? And he keeps knocking it out."

So, if you're in good communication with the pc, you can be in good communication with the bank. So, the way to put yourself in good communication with the bank is to put yourself in good communication with the pc. So therefore, your auditing cycle must be in; your session rudiments must be in good condition before you do an assessment. And during the assessment, any communication with the pc that occurs must be completed as an auditing cycle.

This is pretty esoteric, actually; it is pretty esoteric. But it is this important, that you won't be able to assess at all unless you have some inkling of it. Now, the auditors who can assess and get away with it very easily – the auditors who get away with it very easily and assess well – simply are auditors who don't have too much trouble staying in communication with the pc.

So, if you had an auditor who was in relatively poor communication with the pc, then he wouldn't assess well, see. But you wouldn't have to understand this for that to work. But you've left a piece of stuff on accidental. So a day arrives when you're not in good communication with the pc on that day, and you can't assess. Now what happens?

Well, the assessment is up the spout, so you decide that there is something wrong with the case or something has gone wrong and you hastily repair a bunch of things that don't need repairing. Instead of repairing the communication cycle, you start repairing the work you have done with assessing.

Now, this can be serious enough at R4. It is utterly catastrophic at R6. You throw away the last four goals you found, and throw away a half a dozen other items, and get oh, everything in reverse, and so forth. Well, what's wrong? Why can't you assess? Well, it happens to be a *session* situation. It was your List 1 type situation in the first place.

It wasn't really an ARC break. It was just a gradual mounting up of the pc finding it was impossible to communicate to the auditor. And the impossibility of communicating to the auditor finally wound up to a locked-up meter.

Now, you'll find bypassed charge. There's always bypassed charge to find. You could search any case out and find bypassed charge. I could take anybody at random, just on the one evidence that he was in a body, and find bypassed charge.

So, you can go through this kind of idiocy: You can spend twelve hours or more on a meter locating bank – R6, you see, R4, List 2, 3, (bypassed charge, see) – you could just find

it, and find it. Keep plotting it. And then but – but try to clear this question. And this is one for the book. This – because this is a very interesting question on an E-Meter.

You've said, "Well, we've really found the service facsimile which belonged to Uncle Oscar. All right, that's fine. There's a nice fall on that." Oh, it's true, you did, you found the service facsimile that belonged to Uncle Oscar, that's right. And you say that's fine. The pc isn't feeling much better, but you got a good read, and so forth.

Now, after you've done this operation – I don't advise this. This would break your heart, by the way, if you did this as a routine auditing action. This is a research – this is a gimmick thing that just demonstrates something to you.

You ask on the meter, "Have I misassigned the charge?" "Have I misassigned the charge?" Meters are very good at picking up this kind of thing, see. And you'll get a nice, smooth fall. Yes, it says that you've misassigned the charge. Go back in and try to arrange some more of... "The service facsimile was on the left-hand side and really it was in the session of October *flumph*. And the earlier incident was – really concerned the fact that we had two jumwims in juxtaposition." And now, now you know you've got it, see. Now you know you've got it. You've straightened out the pc, now, you've got it all set, and you've gotten good reads on the meter, and the pc seems to be feeling better.

Now, ask the question, "Have I misassigned the bypassed charge?" And you'll get yourself as good a read as before. And you can frankly keep this up hour after hour after hour – always finding bypassed charge, not making the pc feel any better at all.

What's the meter mean? What actually is the source of that fall? It's that you've misassigned the charge on the basis that you're assigning it to the pc's bank, not to the session.

When you've got a session bypassed charge and you try to cure it by finding deep-seated bank bypassed charges, then this question, "Have I misassigned the bypassed charge?" will read perpetually, until you get... It's very funny. I mean, I've seen it read for twelve hours. Reads beautifully, doesn't wear out at all. You can even suppress it, and then you find some more bypassed charge that's become unsuppressed by that time. "Have I misassigned the bypassed charge?"

You talk about a heartbreaking proposition, man, you've sweated your head off, see? You've found that the ruddy-rods were on the wrong side of the wumpa-gumps, you know. And you found out that it's really because the person was eighteen months old, not three years old, when this happened. And you have found out it's because his past life wasn't really spent in Afghanistan.

Oh! Now we've cleared it up, see. The pc doesn't feel any better, but we've cleared it up, see. "Have I misassigned the bypassed charge?" – fall. Honest! It just goes on and on and on. And then get – at the end of this run, really clean it up. "Have we misassigned the bypassed charge by saying it was something in the pc's case when it was really something that happened in the session?" And your bypassed charge read will vanish at that moment. Interesting, isn't it?

Don't think I'm downgrading the bypassed charge. I've seen some mighty explosive bypassed charges practically blow the plugs out of the pc's ears, blow his eardrums out like

bullets. Yes, those bypassed charges are very important. But in the presence of a session ARC break, that bypassed charge can be assigned to the pc's bank. And you can always find something to assign it to. And it won't clear up. And the pc doesn't feel any better. And the auditor, out of professional pride or something, never thinks to ask, "Is it a session ARC break?" see? So that your ARC break assessments really should begin with "Is it a session ARC break? Is it an R6 ARC break? Or is it an R4 ARC break?" You see?

Do preassess. And actually it's as crude of "What list do I use to find the bypassed charge on?" see. It's as crude as that. Because you can just mess up the whole perimeter; tear up nearly all of your work. Let us say you've been looking for service facsimiles or something like this. And you've got it all set. You could tear up all that work, invalidate it all, suppress it all, throw it all away, wear yourself out because the pc's getting no better, and so forth. And then find out it's because you began a cycle of action in session, see, and you asked the pc some question. And you didn't accept the pc's answer. And the pc has been parked there ever since.

Present time always appears to be more important than the past. The finger that you smash with the hammer now is much more important to you – infinitely more important to you – than the whole civilization which you lost a hundred trillion years ago.

Well similarly, painful as it is to get two GPMs wrong side to, messed-up as it is to catch some service facsimile (for instance at R4) that the pc wots not of – you said, "Well, a dedicated elephant, you see, that's a dedicated elephant..." or "...ambrosious toenails," something, you see, "and that's your service facsimile."

And pc says, "I guess it is," and so on, so on, "Yeah." And you go on from this and you don't get anyplace and the pc hasn't ever accepted it as his item, see.

You didn't get – it wasn't that it was or wasn't his item, is the point I'm making. It was the fact that he never had a chance to say it was or wasn't. And you go back and you look this over and you find out that's a wrong item, see. And you just tear up the ground, see, trying to straighten that all out, you see, as having been the wrong item and so forth. Hasn't anything to do with whether it's the wrong item or the right item, you see? It's the fact that an auditing cycle began there and he never got a chance to say it was or wasn't his item. And actually, ARC broke at that point.

Do you see? Therefore, you got to be pretty slippy as an auditor to shift your gears from the auditing cycle over into an assessment, and shift your gears from assessment back to auditing again, and know which one you're doing. It's a very, very wise auditor that knows what he's doing. But there is no substitute for it.

Now, 99 percent of your assessment trouble is not assessment trouble at all. It's auditing cycle trouble. Anybody can sit there and read off a list and read a meter. But nobody can sit there and read off a list and find an item on an inoperative meter, sitting across the table from an inoperative preclear. That happens to be impossible. Therefore, you say, the obvious thing to do, "Well, you just better train auditors up to assess better. We will clear up their diction. We will put into the course 'diction' so that auditors can diction better, see. So that they throw their R's in the right place," you see.

And after you got all through, their assessment wouldn't be any better at all, you see? You can just beat your head against a wall trying to straighten up the ability of the auditor to assess. What's wrong with him? The reason he can't assess is he throws his comm cycle out. You see, similarly, just like you can wrap yourself around a telegraph pole trying to find the R6 bypassed charge when it's session bypassed charge. Similarly, you could do all sorts of things to improve your assessment when that isn't what's wrong with the session.

Now, there can be things that ... You see, now what fouls up all this, and the reason I have to differentiate from this point of view – what gets all this a different look – is the assessment errors can themselves be so catastrophic, so productive of gore on the auditing room floor – bent cans, dented meters ...

I'll put you one in, by the way, sideways: Never have a steel-heavy steel-auditing electrode. [laughter] Just never use them! Never use them. Refuse to use them at R6, and so forth. Refuse to use them as a pc. Refuse to use them as an auditor. You want something light. [laughter] Something light. I have seen an auditing can go thirty-five feet in a nontrajectory course. I'd never have anything that if it hit me in the face would do me any damage as an auditor.

That's the first method of studying the handling of ARC breaks. [laughter] That's the first step. The first step is not how to handle an auditing cycle.

I've really seen them go up in smoke, man. Pc can't help it.

So, assessment can produce some of the most flaming ARC breaks, that it totally obscures the fact that there might be another source of ARC breaks. You see, one is – one is viewing the spectacular. Who's going over here and look at this flower bed with these pink flowers in it, you see, when there's skyrockets going up in the air going bang! you see. But unfortunately that little pink flower bed over along the side there is very often the reason why you've got so many rockets going up in the air. You made a misassessment because the pc was out of communication in the first place.

But that isn't the sole reason for it. Now, with – now, let me make this plain to you: With the comm cycle in perfectly, with the auditor and pc in the very best of rapport, with all going along swimmingly, the good indicators can go out faster than a stopwatch could measure it. Everything can go out and go down the drain on a bad assessment.

I'll give you an idea. The pc sitting there, and the auditor's calling off skwumperjacks and piddleboofs and so forth. And he's going on down the list, and he gets down to the bottom of the list and nothing's read. So he says to the pc, "Please continue the list. What batterboof would cuppawup?" And the pc gives him a few more.

And maybe the auditor's got his head down looking at the piece of paper, and so doesn't watch the first – you can't have your eye on the pc all the time – doesn't see the first dawning crashes of what's happening here. And your first intimation is the rising strident tone of the pc talking about something you weren't talking about a moment or two ago, you see? You might even have, as your first warning, two cans flying through the air, see, or being thrown down, or something of the sort.

Because the pc can be took quick. It's particularly true on goals. Goals of course have many times the power of items. But items, man, I've seen an item drive a pc straight up, over the crest and into a sad effect in less time than I could possibly catch up the reins anyplace. You know, the reins are just dragging along the road, and you're just trying to pick them up, pick them up, pick them up, and you just can't get them picked up.

Well, there's two sources of the ARC break. The most violent of them, of course, is you bypassed the pc's item on the list. You've just gone down past skutterwups and marked it out. And this doesn't catch up until you ask the pc to continue the list. Well, that's purely bypassed charge in the bank. That wasn't anything else going wrong. You'll find now the auditing cycle goes wrong. You'll find everything goes wrong. Assessment becomes impossible. And usually the only thing the pc will sit still for is some kind of an assessment on the bypassed charge. The pc will usually sit still for that.

You're very foolish to argue with a pc or do anything with a pc but try to locate the bypassed charge in an ARC break. You must not audit during an ARC break. You must know that, too. I mean, it's absolutely deadly to audit during an ARC break. You mustn't address remarks to the pc. You mustn't ask the pc anything. You mustn't ask the pc for his considerations of anything. You just must not. That's all auditing.

"Well, what do you think this ARC break's..." Well, take a pistol and blow your brains out, man. "Well, what have been your considerations in this session with..." Oh, what the hell? Strychnine is quicker. Yeah, I see from your faces that you didn't realize in that last one I meant exactly what I said – that you never, never, never audit in the presence of an ARC break. And I meant just that. You never ask the pc a single question. Nor do you acknowledge anything the pc says. You don't do a... You see, it's one of these all-propositions, see. *You do not audit during an ARC break.* What is auditing? Auditing is the process of asking a question that the pc can answer. You see, just the standard definition – you just must not audit during an ARC break.

Now, somebody sooner or later is going to take that, that you mustn't assess either! [laughter, laughs] That's all you do. *You assess.* If you're so confused you don't know which end you're standing on – and that's very easy. Because I frankly have sat drop-jawed looking at the meter, trying to figure out *what happened* because there didn't seem to be any obvious source for an ARC break here. See what I mean? But nothing that we had been doing would have provoked this particular ARC break. Trying rapidly to go through my skull trying to find out if I have filed away any bits and pieces of missing good indicators or something in the session that something dropped someplace. Something has gone. Something has gone awry. Something has happened here, and so forth.

And I tell you, you look awful silly sitting at a meter with your jaw dropped. And it doesn't promote the pc's morale at all to have a silent auditor sitting in front of him. So if you find yourself confused, you use the one thing that will give you control of the situation. You take a break. That requires no answer. Doesn't even require the pc to take a break. He doesn't even have to follow your orders. He very often doesn't. He just sits in the chair and fumes! [laughter]

And if you find you're not immediately and smoothly and gracefully going into gear here, and shuffling the right assessment down – it's all assessment from here on, it's not to the pc, any part of it. "Is this a session ARC break? Is this a R6 ARC break? A bypassed charge from R6? Bypassed charge from the session?" That's all metered stuff. You don't care what the pc says. "Yes, it was! I told you a while ago, goddamn it! I told you that you didn't acknowledge that communic... !" That's all, had nothing to do – nothing to do with anything. Nothing to do with it at all. You're just going to get in trouble with that, so you leave it alone.

Long experience has taught me that you cannot communicate with somebody who is out of communication. [laughter]

No, you find yourself in any kind of a state of mind or any kind of guesswork is going on here whereby you immediately – don't directly and immediately reach for the sheet and start your ARC break assessment, in spite of any action taking place that flaming ARC break is going on and the only thing you can do is assess. And all you do is assess, and you do not audit. And if you find yourself in a condition of confusion as an auditor as to what you should do, or what it's all about, or burning under the collar because of all the mean, vicious things this pc is saying or anything else, your response of course is just take a break and go walk in the room or go out in the hall. And don't keep talking to the pc, don't stay near the pc, see? See, you're just going to aggravate that ARC break. And just go out and figure out what the hell went on.

And all of a sudden, in your state of shock – because the auditor very often gets into a state of shock about something like this. It happens quick. He's all in – he's interiorized into what he's doing. The next thing you know he's looking at an ARC break. What happened? "Oh! Well, let me see now. I was doing a list, and I asked the pc to extend the list. Yes. Yes. That's what was going on. Now, let's see, and then... There was no ARC break before this last list. No, there was no ARC break before the last list. Must be this list. All right. Now, there's only three things can be wrong with a list. It's from a wrong source, I have bypassed the item on the list or the list is incomplete. And any one of the three will produce an ARC break. All right, that's probable. That's probable, what it is."

All right. Sail back on into the session, you can tell the pc something, you can inform the pc. Say, "I'm going to do this assessment now" – not "May I do this assessment now?" That's an auditing question, see? "I'm going to do this assessment now. All right. Pick up the cans. All right. Are we listing from a wrong source? Have I bypassed your item on the list? Is the list incomplete?" None of the three of them read. [laughter] Take a break. [laughter]

Don't stay in there arguing with that pc, man. You're just put... It's about as safe an action as pouring kerosene on a fire to get it out, see. And you say, "Oh, I better do a full assessment. Session ARC break, R6 ARC... session ARC break. I don't remember anything happening," you know, to yourself. "All right. Here's the session, and so on. And so-and-so, and so-and-so, and so-and-so, and so-and-so, and so-and-so... An earlier reality has been – an earlier break in reality has been restimulated. The bypassed charge here is an earlier break in reality has been restimulated." That's easy to see. [laughter]

"Oh, yes. That session last Tuesday."

Recognize at that point that communication and auditing is now possible. Don't keep pushing at it; say "All right. Okay. Feel better now?"

"Yeah, I feel all right, now, I'm sorry I yelled at you so loud, and so forth."

"All right. Good. Now, I've got to ask one more question: Is there anything wrong with this list we're doing?"

"No, there's nothing wrong with the list at all."

Go on, null the list, find the pc's item on it and that's it. You're left stonied by these things sometimes. The most obvious thing staring you in the face. Eventually you'll find out there *was* a reason for it. At the end of the session, something like that, he may say – or a month later, you might possibly remember offhand – that the item that you were listing for was the same item that he had ARC broken on two weeks before, you see. Or there... that item was on the list. The wrong item, that he'd been given as a wrong item two weeks before – that had caused an ARC break two weeks before – had reappeared on the list you were nulling. And you had just re-called the item, which restimulated the earlier ARC break and break of reality, don't you see? And he momentarily thought of telling you "That is the same item," but then didn't want to interrupt you and instead just went into a complete ARC break – just went out of control, just that fast, see. See, they're very, very tortuous and complicated, these things. That's the way you handle them. That's the way you handle these things.

Handling of ARC breaks has to do with assessment. The meter won't read during an ARC break on anything except what is causing the ARC break. It is fortunate that a meter will read on that. Because the meter is shut off during an ARC break on all fronts, except the thing which is causing the ARC break. And the meter will read on that. Fortunately.

Otherwise you've got a dead meter during an ARC break, because the pc won't take any communication from you. He's protecting his bank from you, he's doing everything under God's green earth there. And you don't get through, you won't get anything through on your meter. But oddly enough, the reason for the ARC break is sitting right on top and it will read.

Then if the ARC break isn't totally cured, and you've found some bypassed charge for the ARC break, then you'd better suspect first that there is another source of ARC break – there's another bypassed charge here – and that it very well may be a session break is sitting on top of the other break. See, you've found a bank case break, you see, and then you've found a – everything didn't go all wonderful at once: Then you'd better suspect either you've found the wrong case charge or it's a session charge or something. You've not selected out the thing right, in the first place.

You will find, when you get very experienced on this, that there is *always* a reason and that you can always keep going till you'll find it. But a lot of times, early on, you will simply despair of this. You will say, "Ah, well, I couldn't figure out a reason on it. Can't get the meter to read on anything."

I just saw an auditor doing this the other night. And all of a sudden, "Is there an incomplete auditing cycle in this session?" The meter all – practically came apart at its pins, from being a totally dead still needle, see? *Bzzzz!* We're in action. Indicated it's the bypassed charge, that was the end of the ARC break.

The auditor doesn't ever, in doing an ARC break assessment, doesn't ever audit, even to this extent, "Is that the ARC break?" What are you doing? You're doing R2H. R2H is not ARC break assessment. R2H is a process which uses the auditing cycle to assist in the location of bypassed charge. And it's all done by auditing cycle.

There are two ways of doing R2H. One is with auditing cycle only. You use a list, but you ask the pc, is it this, is it that, is it the other thing. And the other one is, you just do a straight piece of assessment.

You'll find the most successful of these – if R2H were being done in the hands of the relatively unskilled, auditor – the most successful is to keep the communication cycle in all the time. And do no assessment of any kind whatsoever with R2H. Don't assess with it. Say, "All right. On that upset you had with Norma there, do you think that was a breakdown in affinity?" And the pc says, "Well yeah, it could have been, I don't think so."

"Well, all right. Was it a breakdown in reality?"

"No, I don't think so."

"Was it a breakdown in communication?"

"Well ... I don't know, I don't know."

"Well, well, all right. Was it caused by an earlier breakdown in affinity?"

See? You're asking the same questions, you see. You eventually get down, you find out it was an earlier breakdown of communication had been restimulated. Pc, oh, he remembers this, he tells you all about it, and the ARC break's gone. That's not assessment. That's a process.

Now, you could do R2H with an assessment. You could sit back and you could go, "*Putter-putter-pow, wa-da-da-da*, affinity, reality, communication, earlier affinity, or earlier communication. Well, that reads. All right. I've got here something that reads." And you start throwing in your auditing cycle again. But you're asking the auditor to shift his gears from assessment over, and you'll find out that they're not too successful at it early on, see? Best thing to do is just stay in communication with the pc and do just auditing cycle. Because that's the one that can go out the easiest, so stay with it.

So R2H has nothing to do with this. But you'd – in an ARC break, in a real, honest-to-God ARC break, where you're working one – not working past ARC breaks as you are in R2H, you *never* audit. Right, that's never, man! That's spelled *N-E-V-E-R*, and it's capital N, capital E, capital V, capital E, capital R. It is underscored. And then underscored, under the whole thing, you have the wavy line that means italics. You don't audit. Don't audit during an ARC break. You'll find that your trouble in handling ARC breaks, inevitably and invariable, is because you are trying to audit during the presence of an ARC break. And you just must not do it.

If you do it very much you'll drive the pc into a sad effect. Pretty grim. The pc is still trying to make this point. Something has gone wrong. The pc is still trying to get control of himself. He's still – h e can't answer up sensibly. He feels that life is going *bzing*, and he feels himself disintegrating, you know. And now you're giving the additional burden of having to

handle a communication, and so forth. And he will... It doesn't matter whether he's talking or not talking, he's not in communication, that's for sure. And you'll find out that he'll go right by the boards, just as slick and neat as you can be, if you talk to him on an auditing cycle or try to tell him anything or try to reason anything with him or try to get anything out of him or make any sense out of what he's saying, and so forth. It can only be done as an assessment.

After you've located and indicated the bypassed charge – you see, you've just made these two statements to the pc. You've located it on the meter. And you indicate it to the pc that that was the bypassed charge. All right, having done so, you'll see the ARC break evaporate. The ARC breaks evaporate. You can, of course, return to auditing. But you never audit as long as there's an ARC break in progress.

Now, if you get the precision then – that's just an example of this – if you get the precision with which you split assessment and auditing and get how they never encroach on each other's borderlines, you'll be able to assess like blazes. And you'll be able to audit like blazes.

Now, everything from IV on up in the classes depends on accurate assessment. Everything depends on that. And an auditor therefore must be able to assess accurately. If he is having any trouble assessing, it's because he isn't differentiating between auditing and assessing, and doing one and then the other. Even though he seems to be doing both of them at the same time.

I told you earlier, doing both of them at the same time is a joke. It's a similarity. You... it looks like you're doing it both at the same time, but by God, don't ever do it both at the same time. You assess when you assess; you audit when you audit.

And this can become completely catastrophic – I'll show you how important it is – when the pc gets into an ARC break, and you try to audit during an assessment. That's absolutely impossible. You'll practically destroy the pc trying to go on auditing in the teeth of an ARC break.

Therefore, you have to know what is auditing. And this is a very good subject for drilling. You take the materials within the last tape and this one, and you take the subject material – break it down into its definitions. And say, "What is this action? What is the definition of this action? What is auditing?" Lot of auditors, you just have to drive it home, drive it home, drive it home. They've still got a reservation, you see? They've still got a reservation. See, they still feel that.

Well, just asking the pc – this wouldn't be auditing, you see, or they've got a disagreement with it or something of the sort, when as a matter of fact, it's absolutes, practically – about as obtainable as absolutes can get. You just don't cross them. Auditing is auditing, and whenever you enter in on any part of the auditing cycle – you ask the pc a question, you have started an auditing cycle. Now, you must get an answer to the question and so forth. Of course it must be the kind of a question that the pc can answer. All of these other ramifications that had to do with the auditing cycle, all build up in there.

If you do any part of these things, then of course you're auditing. It's that exclamatory.

And assessing is straight from the auditor to the bank and the meter is simply reacting to the impingement on the bank. The auditor's impingement on the bank. And an auditor can

control the bank, as a matter of fact. Auditor can control the pc's bank much better than the pc can. And he gets the impingement on the bank and he's getting the reaction on his meter. Now of course, the think of the pc can also react on the meter, and other things can react on the meter. But hit... assessing is simply the auditor's impingement on the bank and its response on the meter so he can select out the most charged response. And that's all assessing consists of.

Now, an auditor has to know these operations completely, and has to really, really know it. Not just, you know, say well, of course auditing's so-and-so, and it's just defined as *brrrrr*, and assessing is so-and-so, and just define it – *brr*.

No, you have to – you have to know those so well that you're not in any disagreement with them of any kind whatsoever. This is this, and that is that, and you can do A or you can do B, or you can do B and A. And you sometimes have to stop A in order to do B. But you never let assessing chop up the comm cycle of auditing. But they are two precise, different operations. And being two precise, different operations an auditor, to be successful in the accomplishment of either one, actually, has to understand utterly.

Now, at Class VI level, you'll find occasionally, somebody starting in at this level will make the mistake of 100 percent assessment. It's so easy to do a 100 percent assessment. They just assess, assess, assess. It's all assessment, see. And they can get tone arm action with assessment, and all of a sudden, why the case packs up.

Well, they don't complete their auditing cycles, you see? They – see, there's no auditing present in the session. You can actually go to a point of practically deleting all auditing from a (quote) "auditing session," and expect it to be an auditing session, and expect to get along easily and everybody to be happy about it, whereas that's impossible.

So there's two different operations here, and they're each themselves, until an auditor can differentiate them – *plingo, plingo*, as precise, chop, bang – these are... Well, it's like a drill, like this, you see: The coach says, "*Bow-wo-wop*. All right, what action is that?"

"Well, that's a so-and-so, and so forth, see. That's auditing."

"*Bwr-wrw*. What action is that?"

"All right, well, that's an assessing action." And so forth.

Don't you get the idea? So he's – divide it up so he can get himself doing these things, one and then the other, and not get them all balled up. And you'll find out it all goes smooth as glass. It's quite amazing that unless you have this piece of data, a great many auditors would have so much trouble assessing that they never find a right level. They never find a right item. They never find a right goal. And they simply wind up believing that it all doesn't quite work, see?

Of course, they get the service facsimile, and they've had it. Because the service facsimile was actually a protest of the pc of an incomplete auditing cycle which was begun half-way through the assessment of the list, in which the auditor didn't pay any attention to the answer to. And he got that as a protest on the very next item he read, which read beautifully and big. And we're auditing this big tough guy, you see. We're auditing this big tough guy on

a service facsimile of "knitting needles." And it just doesn't quite hang together and his case doesn't make any progress and we wonder why, see.

The only reason why is a misassessment. And the reason for a misassessment was a failure to differentiate between these two different operations.

Okay?

Audience: Okay.

Thank you.

CASE ANALYSIS – HEALING

A lecture given on 5 March 1964

Thank you. What's the date?

Female voice: 5th of March.

Fifth of March? Five March AD 14, Saint Hill Special Briefing Course. A little news bulletin here, you know, you know the nervousness with which you go on for a TV demonstration. Well, just about the complete, total exclamatory height of that has just been reached. Melbourne – you know, they're having hearings on Scientology, you see. The legislature of the great State of Victoria – that's just south of the deserts there – you heard that's the government of Australia, actually it isn't the government of Australia, that's just the government of Victoria. That's formerly the government of Australia, so that its old comm lines are in and it's been raising the devil, and we finally found out who was doing it. It was the BMA's committee – a Doctor Daks – arms with "yak." I mean it rhymes with "yak." [laughter]

Anyway, we've gradually, consistently been winning here. And they were coming down on it, and they were raising the devil with *History of Man*, they were doing all kinds of things, and so forth. The moment the government began to attack Scientology, the newspapers started to swing in favor of it. [laughter] The wheel has turned. The wheel has turned.

And those hearings are going very successfully, and the people conducting them are getting more and more friendly, more and more friendly. What swung the day, Saint Hill graduate audited pcs of the selection of the legislature on TV for the hearing. [sounds of amazement from audience] Running such things as R2H, and so forth, and he was knocking off cases left and right, and the last one he ran, why, the board was trying to get a note to him in a hurry not to stop because they wanted to hear the rest of it. [laughter]

They were all sitting there, absorbed and anxious and – to get it all and very interested and laughing in the right places and... [laughter] But that's definitely duty, above and beyond the call of. [applause]

Well, they – we win. We're definitely on the way now. I was – already started running my goals plot, and you miss something here or there. Trouble is I've had holes run in my goals lineup, you see, so I can get to a certain point – all of the research on this was done on two banks, Mary Sue's and myself, and the biggest weight of it had to be carried by my bank, so we – I've had a lot of GPMs run out, out of sequence, don't you see, and so forth. And boy, you hit one of those and you don't know whether it's gone or not, you know, I mean from a standpoint of did you get all the items in it. And the difficulties of actual GPMs is the goals series are consecutive, and it just goes in over and over and over and over, same goals series,

same goals series, same goals series, same plots, with different GPMs, you see? Same line plot but different GPMs, and they just go on and on.

So you run out one, you're immediately convinced you couldn't possibly have run it out, because of course it's sitting on one of – the same one of the earlier series, so it looks like all the goals are alive there. So if you run one too deep you fall through. You go into an earlier goals series. Well, the only way you can turn on a somatic and tear a pc's head off, skip some goals. Well, try skipping forty-two at one fell swoop.

And this can be pretty gruesome. So it's dicey just to this degree. The more we get to one of these GPMs of mine that has been run previously, the question is have the items been run out of it all or haven't they been run out of it? Since if you simply bypass it and start the next one, you see, you turn on some very interesting somatics by reason of bypassed charge if there is any. Very, very, very gruesome. But in any event we're making very, very nice progress, and there's enough GPMs there to please almost anybody.

I just want to give you some kind of an idea of exactly what you face. I wouldn't want to upset you, anyway, but you've got fifteen thousand of them. Isn't that horrible? In consecutive serieses of forty-two. There's forty-two goals, forty-two LPs, they never change, but they're consecutive, and they just go forty-two, and another forty-two and another forty-two and another forty-two. They're all the same, and they get bigger and bigger and bigger and bigger as you go back – bigger and bigger and bigger. I suppose some of the early track RIs – some of the early track RIs are about the size of Mount Vesuvius. I don't think you'd ever get anywhere near one. But anyway the GPMs – this lecture doesn't concern this, I'm just giving you some notes on it. The lecture concerns case analysis.

The first series – the present time series – you will find it – we proved this conclusively last night, and if you don't get it right, your pc goes into a sad effect which is something on the order of bailing out of an airplane with no parachute at about fifteen thousand feet. Sad effect. You've seen a sad effect take place by somebody being audited up against some ARC breaks. You've seen a pc, I'm sure, get sadder and sadder over a period of a couple of weeks, till somebody kindly found the bypassed charge and so forth. Well, this sad effect takes place in about four or five seconds. You get the wrong GPM to start the series with, you see, to begin with, and you're running the pc where there is none, only he's trying to pick up the items from the second series, which are forty-two GPMs away, because there isn't any goal formed yet in the first series at that point, and you hit a sad effect that is just like that: fifteen thousand feet bailout of the airplane with no parachute. And you're just about to catch up with a sad effect just that fast. I never hit a toboggan so quick in my life!

And we actually were quite unwilling to believe, because we've had so many troubles with truncated, you know – not all the GPM formed, but the idea of not all the first series formed yet. See, the line plot incompletely formed, and then the first series of goals, the first forty-two goals on the track from present time back, you see, only some of those formed, you see, moving up from forty-two on toward present time, you see.

But I had become frankly very bored with the whole subject of truncated anything, you see. So we were saying, just to hell with it and we started in at GPM number one. I told the auditor, I said, "I think – I don't think the two items which we're calling for here, for GPM

number one, I – I don't think those are standard. There's something about the first two items on the track that are not standard." And I'd started to list some odd randoms, and the auditor said to me, "Oh, well, your proper item here is..." and gave me number one GPM top oppterm, see.

Well, it was just exactly like stepping out of an airplane with no parachute. Because that GPM wouldn't have been formed for four more GPMs. I was – I was perfectly – I was perfectly correct. The items I should get to begin this series were not the items on the line plot. But the third pair of the fifth GPM, or the fifth goal of the series, that was all the GPM existed at that point. There was no GPM – there was no upper fifth, the last five pairs of the fifth were missing, the fourth was missing, the third was missing, the second was missing and the first was missing, which is very interesting. Took us quite a while to untangle this situation. Be... mostly because we had just stopped believing in truncated anythings, because we'd been bitten too many times. Find number one GPM; oh, it's truncated; run a couple of items out of it and the pc wraps around a telegraph pole, see.

The rest of it was there, don't you see. So it was crying wolf one too many times and when we confronted the real article of real truncation and so forth, we were all set just to abandon the whole subject, and there we went. Bang! And the auditor did ARC break assessments and so forth, trying to knock out this sad effect, you see, and decided we'd gotten rid of it, and audited awhile and obviously hadn't gotten rid of it and so forth. And then with great brilliance after some hours finally – must be truncated. The series must be truncated, and the goal is truncated. Hadn't even formed the whole series, much less just one goal truncated, the series was truncated.

So you can expect – you can do your line plot as long as you talk about goals – the first goal of the series, the second goal, the first actual goal in the series, the second actual goal. As soon as you start saying the first actual GPM of the series, you'll probably get away with this, but of course it's not there. The first actual GPM of the first series undoubtedly is not there. But of course the pc does know, and you can get the response of, the first actual goal of the series, you see.

Quite a fascinating proposition. This quantitative approach, I can tell you, you have fifteen thous... we had the first evidence, first real evidence that a person does make these things himself, makes them exactly according to a preconceived line plot which everybody has in common, you've learned your lesson well, Lord knows when, before the track began, or something of the sort. You knew just exactly where to put what, and it doesn't vary from pc to pc. It's the most marvelous thing you ever saw in your life, and there's forty-two goals in the series, and they go in certain harmonics, and it's all taped, you see. Well, it isn't too peculiar. You look at a body. It – every body has a liver and it has a left ear and so forth.

Well, GPMs are exactly this way, and that's why it takes a trained auditor. Because this is tricky stuff, man, tricky stuff. An untrained auditor, running one of these things against its actual line plot, wrap a pc around a telegraph pole so fast the pc wouldn't know what hit him. Somebody in Keokuk offers up his goal, "to be a very good girl all the time." See? So the auditor takes this LP, that's no more her ac... an actual GPM or an actual goal than the man in the moon – takes this line plot. He will be able to get fragments of items, maybe out of

a goal "to be good," or something like this, you see. And to get those fragments of items, partially run out of sequence with all of the GPMs skipped before you get to it, pc all of a sudden feels the head being severed in half, stomach torn in two different directions, the four corners of the room go into a complete out-of-plumbness, and you see why we're not releasing this materials indiscriminately.

I've seen some of the things people have been willing to buy as goals. *Thaahh!* It's fascinating, you know, everybody's very interested in the second dynamic, and so on. And we, we... there are no actual second dynamic goals, far as I can tell. I have never found one, never seen one. Might be a goal, an actual GPM, "to feel," or to something or other, you see, or "to have sensation" or something like this, but there are no sexual goals, otherwise you'll see goals like that, "to suffer," and "to enjoy life" or something like this. You might see something like that. But that's about as close as it comes to it.

A lot of implant GPMs "to be sexual," you see, "to have sex," all that sort of thing. We owe to Papa Freud, you see, this tradition, that if you audit somebody you should get into the second dynamic. And here's a funny one for you: I've never seen a case cracked – never – by touching on the second dynamic. Isn't that interesting?

The only thing Freud got on a resurgence on patients – because he hit the second dynamic, it was a fruitful source of withholds. So he'd get one withhold, see. So he got one withhold. Auditor worthy of his salt who can't pull fifteen, twenty, thirty withholds in a session, a withhold session, ought to quit anyhow, see. So he'd work for seven years to get one withhold off, see.

But this gives us tradition, tradition, that the second dynamic is something we should operate on. Of course it's pleasant to operate, it's not without its recompense from the standpoint of titillation, and so forth. And it's interesting to listen to some girl or some young man get rid of all of their second dynamic peccadillos of one kind or another. It makes good stuff, but better stuff for *True Romances* than auditor reports. [laughter] So I'm afraid I haven't much faith in that.

I want to talk to you today about case analysis. And this succeeds in the various lectures that I've been giving you here lately, and you've been making very, very good use out of those lectures, and I thank you very much. This is the stuff of which case supervision is made. And if you really want to – want to be a good Case Supervisor, you'd have to know all this stuff cold. And if you want to be a good Auditing Supervisor, and so forth, well, you ought to be able to whipstall this stuff, back and forth, and upside down, and if you want to be a marvelous case cracker of some kind or another, to Homo sap, without going up to OT, if you want to stay in the lower levels, then you'd better hear this lecture. This is how to become a healing wizard, and upset the AMA. [laughter]

Healing is not in man's tradition. It's not in his tradition as such. It's usually in the tradition of graft or fraud or picking on the poor dear departed. They've had six hundred successful kidney implants and transfers in the medical profession in the United States in the last couple of years – taken a kidney from one person, put it in another person. They've had six hundred of them. Which is marvelous. I think they're to be – to be credited with this a great deal. Pavlov used to swap kidneys around, and hearts and things, amongst dogs. And they're

right in the tradition there. And obviously somebody can't live without a kidney or without his kidneys or something of this sort, so it's a good thing to transplant kidneys.

But to give you some kind of an idea of the validity of a medical report on the subject of healing – I'm not berating the medical doctor. You need plumbers, you need medical doctors. Somebody's got a leak in the pipes, why, you should have somebody there who knows how to operate a blowtorch and put some lead on them. But that's just about the end product.

They're talking – now they're going upstairs into healing. Now that isn't healing, that's plumbing. [laughter] And what do you get? What do you get? You get six hundred kidney transplants, and then they don't bother to tell anybody that the whole ruddy crop of them died within two years. Some of them died in days, and some of them died in weeks and some in months, and the longest lived ones were two years.

I think it's a very interesting commentary on the released data, you see? Now, these are the boys who are coming down on us and raising the devil with any group that is trying to handle any subject like healing. And their first accusation is fraud. Well, you're acquainted with the overt-motivator sequence, I am sure. Guy will always accuse somebody else of committing the overt which he is committing because, you see, he needs the motivators. He's got a scarcity of motivators and so there it is.

Well, these boys, these boys have given healing a rather bad name, and over the period of years healing has ebbed and flowed and gone up and down, and we've had barbers and phlebotomy and goofy activities. And the Aesculapians used to keep a high rate, down there.

I was down, a few years ago, alongside the Parthenon, taking a look at the old grounds where the Aesculapians used to heal people, and they have a great big bath, a swimming bath, there. And they used to dump them in this as holy springs, and that sort of thing. The remains of their old buildings are there, scattered down the slope. And it's quite interesting, but even as many years after their last activities and so forth, their tradition survives. And their tradition locally in Athens is that – well, they were – they were pretty slippery people, because if anybody looked like he was getting worse, why, they quickly and quietly removed him to his home so that he would die there, and then published abroad, you see, the fact that they had practically a hundred percent healing record. Well, their hundred percent record was based upon those they kept, who would get well, got well. And those they didn't keep, of course were no longer part of their records. But it was even dicey then back in the time of Socrates.

And coming up the line, man knowing nothing about the mind, knowing nothing about the preconceived efforts of individuals to aberrate themselves, knowing none of the more basic fundamentals of existence that – well, not even knowing about overt. The best way they could handle overt was repent, repent, the kingdom of heaven is at hand. That's the way you did your overt, and so forth, I – and it's not an adequate process. [laughter, laughs]

So anyway, here was – here was the mind of man, ready to upset the most cunning devices, which were about to heal somebody, so man more or less went into structure. And got healing very closely associated with structure. Because somebody had a broken leg you could at least set the broken leg and so forth, and his most – his most successful areas of healing of course, knowing nothing about the mind, had to do, then, with structure. And he could see

obviously that he could set a broken leg, you see, something like that. He knew nothing about disease, and to this day knows nothing about disease.

And I was on the heels of disease not too long ago. I found that a GPM, if you fragmented it and it slapped you in the face or something like that, that you could develop for instance a sty in the eye, or something like this. And apparently infection has something to do with actual GPMs. Now, we don't know whether it had anything to do with bacteria or not. In spite of the fact you can see the bugs wiggle under a microscope. I don't know what that proves, see. Nobody has ever proven that it proved anything. Because there are enough variables in it to make other theories possible.

In order for something to be true it has to be sweepingly true. It can't be partially true. There are no such things as partial truths. Something that is true on Monday, Tuesday and Wednesday may be only vaguely workable but it isn't true. If it is not true on Thursday, Friday and Saturday then there must be something wrong with that truth. So man tended to go into structure. And he really has no healing background. Because healing was done by the body, by the individual, it was not done by the doctor. The doctor would arrange the parts so that they would grow back together again and hope that the patient would do the rest, you see. So the healing was always resident upon the individual who was injured or ill.

And until you have cracked the problem of the individual wish to be well or sick, until you've cracked the problem of how the individual influences his own healing, of course healing is impossible – broad, broad healing is impossible.

So no wonder man has been up against it, and no wonder his healing associations or activities or practitioners very often fall within the frameworks of fraud or monopoly. And he goes in two directions. He either tries to make a healing practice legal by becoming a monopoly, and getting laws passed that enforce it as the – is the case with psychiatry. You know it's against the law in some states not to electric shock somebody, you know. You see, it's – they become a monopoly and get laws passed to enforce it, you see, or they stay as somebody who is still trying – still trying one way or the other in the field of healing, but actually for financial reasons and so forth passing off into the borderlines of fraud. Promising cures that cannot be delivered and so forth.

So he varied, man varied, between these two activities. In the center ground there were some fellows who hoped you could heal something, that would try to heal something, that would – who would make some effort of it. But the main bodies of healing professions have sharply divided into these two classes, up through the years. So you can say there's three classes, those who were still trying to heal something, those who knew they couldn't and were charging for it anyway, and those who were trying to enforce healing practices by monopoly.

The modern medico and psychiatric professions and so forth have chosen the monopoly road as their method of progress in this particular line. To this they have joined research. And their research is quite a racket these days. It – you... they can work it up so that they can devour billions of dollars in research. And you notice that it's *re*-search. Somebody has to have discovered something for the stuff to be *re*-searched.

So they fall back on such people as the witches, the witchcraft and so on, and they get various types of healing that they drag out of the hinterland, and they go over these things at

vast rate. This is not an exaggeration by the way, this is discovery of foxglove, digitalis, and so forth. Well used, consistently used, by the people in Scotland for various cures of various things and well known in its dosages and so forth. And one day a student at Edinburgh happened to be out in the country and happened to find out something about it, and actually devoted his life trying to get the doctors to use this stuff that the witches had already been using for a long time.

This is usually the background, the background of such material. And so research, research has amounted to fabulous sums of money, and there'll be a promoter, and he will get together a great deal of research money. And then he will turn loose teams of (quote) scientists one way or the other (unquote) on this, and recorders of some kind or another, and they plow into it and busily, busily, busily, busily, busily muck about, and write papers, and then read each others' papers, and then rewrite the papers of somebody else's, you see, and fill up file cases full of stuff, and they come to some very remarkable conclusions. [laughter]

One of the remarkable conclusions which they've come to recently is there is such a thing as standard science. I think that's a very remarkable conclusion. Because outside of the field of the exact sciences so-called, which are very inexact, physics, chemistry and all that, to call anything standard science, you see, or orthodox science, and so forth, well, that would be one thing, but to use it in courts of law to demonstrate that something is or is not true, demonstrate that it isn't true, because it isn't accepted by orthodox science, of course is to bang the door shut on search – not research, but on search. So the door is kept pretty well shut on the subject of search, by those who seek to dominate the field of healing by monopoly. They have to keep that door shut, because at any time somebody might discover something, they feel, and so on.

This is not a self... this is not an egocentric lecture of what is happening to us, it just happens to be a – because it isn't really happening to us. You would be amazed of how little of it is happening to us. We're getting a lashback from their efforts against other healing activities. And the reason they're laying an egg is, is we're not really not basically a healing activity, you see. And they really haven't anything they can put their paws on. So they have great difficulty in their understanding of what it's all about. We don't fit, you see, into their two-camped group. The monopolist and the f... and the honest frauds. So as we don't fit into these groups, we don't easily communicate what we are doing to these fellows, because they have certain stylized methods of thinking about these things.

Well, sooner or later, sooner or later, in spite of all this, in any society certain discoveries get made. Harvey Firestone dropped some raw rubber on a kitchen stove and finds out that it's now pliable and usable, which it never has been before, and all of a sudden we have a rubber industry, or something like this. Various accidental or on purpose discoveries get made, and the society pushes along and these things get developed and researched. And then researched and researched and researched, and then somebody comes up and finds out that ruddy rods really didn't exist in the first place, and that's a brand-new discovery, don't you see. And takes off on a new line of scien... (quote) "scientific approach," for research, research, research, you see. Vast sums of money expended.

There are a great many fraudulent activities go on in the United States and abroad concerning, concerning research money. For instance, the American medical profession gets itself – the Medical Association gets itself a big propaganda campaign going against cigarettes. Even gets town councils sufficiently upset down in Texas to make it, I think, three years in prison for anybody caught smoking a cigarette on the street. And that went into law just a few months ago. I mean, I'm not exaggerating it, it's a matter of record. And they're not going to investigate people in their homes and they're not going to bother tourists going through the town, but their local residents have had it if they're seen smoking in public. Well, they've got this big – big – big smoke going, if you'll pardon the pun. And they've got all of this hammer pound and blast of various kinds as – on the subject of tobacco. What was this all about?

I don't think you'll hear too much more about it in the near future. But for a while it was very hot and very heavy indeed. I – reading, I think in "Pogo," the joke of the general was going to be shot and they blindfold him, and offer him a last cigarette, and the general goes straight up and screams in their faces, "My God, haven't you read the report of the Surgeon General?" See, [laughs] marvelous gag.

What was that all about? Well, the tobacco companies have finally run up the white flag and they've given the ten million dollars in research to the American Medical Association that was required of them in the first place. I'm afraid you won't hear much more about that now, because the blackmail has been accomplished. I'm not giving you anything inside track, I've given you Associated Press reports. Straight on the wire. It's a – it's a method of getting funds, don't you see?

So you want to know what our meter case is all about. Is anybody interested in meters in the United States? No, they weren't interested in meters. During this entire time they weren't interested in meters. They were hammering and pounding around trying to get more appropriation for the Food and Drug Administration, so they were making a great deal of smoke. They were just hammer and sh... and shout, and bang and bang. And they've got more Legislation now, they've got Legislation which is very, very full of teeth, and they've gotten their appropriated funds, and unless – if of course they want some more funds, we may still hear about the E-Meter, see. But the probability is we may hear nothing about it at all, they simply drop it. It was a mechanism by which to obtain research funds from the United States government. They just collected a bunch of odd things that they never had to prove but could shout into the papers about, and make a big confusion about, don't you see. And shake Congress down for some money.

So research – research is very current and is the thing to do, all that sort of thing. So anything that we're traveling along on, is – looks very strange to these chaps. Looks very strange, because things are being found out and things are being done, don't you see, and so on. Well, that's because research isn't being used as a means of obtaining money, do you see. And the materials involved are not being dedicated to the creation of a monopoly and they're not being dedicated to fraud. That makes us very peculiar. So we become incomprehensible.

But then of course we would have been incomprehensible from a viewpoint of the monopolist or the fraud or any of these fellows, in any society, at any time in the past, be-

cause we travel forward on the assertion that there was such a thing as truth. And actually that it was dangerous to know a half-truth. And carrying forward in this particular direction, one could possibly succeed in bettering the lot of his fellows and himself, you see?

But we've come to that point in our development where our goals and dedications, which is a greater freedom and a greater state of beingness – which state of beingness, by the way, is beyond the imagination of the ordinary man – having parted company to that degree and ascended above his level of reality, it is necessary then to bridge in the fellow in the street on up. Well, the classifications plan is part of that. It brings him in at certain levels, and moves him on up along the line.

Now, with the advent of certain recent techniques based on early work, it becomes possible to make freedom from psychosomatic illness one of the gains of one of the lower levels. This is so easy to do that it puts us into the front rank of healing. It is not a direction that is a particularly desirable direction, it is not a direction which has very good bedfellows. But if you enter the field, where they all are – exist in that field are monopolists and frauds, what do you think you're going to do? What do you think's going to happen? What catastrophe is liable to occur here?

Well, in the first place you'll be fought by the monopolists and shunned by the frauds. So the first thing you should know about healing I have just got through telling you – the nature and state of the world of healing as man now knows it, divided up more or less in that fashion. And the second thing you should know about healing, that if you're moving up into the field of healing, heal. That is the one thing that would move you through and get you through. In other words, if you're going to heal, heal. Don't heal in order to... Just heal. And you'll find out that this becomes a relatively simple activity.

Now, almost any one of you going into a community would find yourself in a very, very desirable position if you started healing people. You would be up against the monopolist on the one hand and the fraud on the other hand. The ins and the outs, you know. You'll be up against the government of healing, but if you could lick that, in some particular fashion, then the fellow down at the garage with lumbosis and the fellow up the line with swellisis – these birds, these birds would carry the day.

Now, the only reason you don't get into that field much is you're talking about making the able more able and so on, but it doesn't mean that it isn't a fruitful field for the auditor. If the auditor had tools with which he could heal and if he could use those tools adequately and if he could go up against the closed circle of the monopolists and actually escape the wrath of the frauds, and so on, he'd probably make himself very wealthy and very famous indeed. This would be the – this would be the gamut, however, he would run. And one should look at that with some reality.

I don't for a moment say that you can't get away with it, that it's easy to get away with – I'm just showing you what you have to get away with. That's all. It's just a factual statement.

Now, if you made your business at the lower levels that when somebody came into Scientology with psychosomatic illnesses, and so on, this person was rid of these – if you rid the person of these – providing you had given him some earlier indoctrination, providing you had given him some earlier training, providing he had someplace to go, and providing you

didn't do it all in an afternoon but made him come to several meetings before anything was done – you get the idea?

He's only got one goal being there, he wants to be rid of his lumbosis. Well, you just better make sure that his horizon is a bit wider open, don't you see? Let's make sure that his horizon is just a bit wider before we take his lumbosis away from him. Otherwise he falls back into his indoctrinated classifications of "there is somebody who heals and there is somebody who fixes pipes, and there is..." – you know, this specialized society.

The road that he would be walking would be blocked just to the degree that he thinks his goal in life would be to get rid of his lumbosis. Well, this means then that to go at healing on the standard pattern of opening up an office somewhere and hanging out, a sign that you heal lumbosis, and so forth, is not the way to go about it at all. But oddly enough you do have in your hands, whether you have any reality on it or not, you have in your hands the means of healing.

Now, I relapse into some instructor sarcasm here on the basis – of course, if you go on auditing the way I've seen some of you audit lately you never got a prayer in hell of doing anything, but that's just a – an aside. I'm afraid I saw somebody yesterday running a double Q-and-A process on a pc there. Every time the pc answered the question I heard the auditor interjecting something to find out something else that had something else to do with something else, and we had an auditing cycle there which was a perpetuity. We had no complete auditing cycles of any kind whatsoever. You do things like that, of course, you're never going to heal anything. But we're just going to leave that aside. That wasn't too bad.

Now given, then, the ability to do an auditing cycle, given the ability to handle the session, given an ability to read a meter, see, given these fundamentals, there exists actually a technology that you know of – and it will surprise you a great deal when I reintroduce you to it – that is totally capable of healing any disease or illness to which man is subject, of a chronic nature. Any chronic – I'm talking now about the difference between acute and chronic. Acute is somebody who gets a cold and he has a cold for a week and then it's gone. Now that is an acute illness, and that is opposed to, that is opposed to another type of illness which would be chronic. And that you would then call sinusitis, or something. He had – sort of had a cold all the time. See, that's different. So the difference between acute and chronic is just time duration. Now, of course somebody can split hairs and say how long does an acute have to be acute in order to become a chronic, and so forth. Well, I'll leave that up to you, since it's your question. The division line is not that sharp.

Well, I think somebody who's been bothered with a cold for a year, you see, I'm afraid that's chronic. So the way you do separate the line I won't – I won't quip with you. There's a way you do separate this line – is when an illness exceeds its expected course we can call it chronic. And that's a fairly sloppy definition but it's quite workable within certain limits. When an illness exceeds its expected duration you can call it chronic. This fellow – this fellow – ordinarily, ordinarily people recover from a scraped knee in a matter of a week or two, see. Certainly they have nothing more to do – their knee would no longer be showing abrasions and contusions after a week or two, see. But for some reason or other this fellow's knee,

a month or two later, is still in a bad state of dishabille, what then is this? Well, this must be something chronic, then. See, we've moved over into that field.

Now, that is what we mean, although we can say all illnesses are basically psychosomatic, not seventy percent of them, all of them are basically psychosomatic, we'd have to pull some torturous mental logic in order to get some of them into this classification. You say a broken neck is psychosomatic. Well, yes, the fellow had to have rocks in his head in order to make a mistake that would cause him to break his neck. There's certainly even... you say, well, how about an accident? A fellow going along in an airline – well, you're dealing with a fellow who is – who is very happy to get into this type of argument. It gives so much latitude for imagination, you see. You say, well, how about this fellow that's gotten busted up in an airplane crash. You say there must have been something wrong with his intuition not to know that if he went he was going to crash. He must have had bad judgment or something like that, see.

You can even get silly on the subject of accidents this way, but we don't have to get that silly to demonstrate the psychosomatic nature of illness. In the first place psychosomatics begin with the acquisition of a body, so that makes them all psychosomatic, doesn't it? Guess that dealt with that subject. [laughter, laughs]

Now, well, how come this fellow's stuck in a body? Well, that would be a very large problem. And that doesn't get settled until you get up there into Class VI, or something like that, to anybody's satisfaction, see, so it'll stay that way. So obviously that's beyond the range of healing.

And one of the first lessons you should learn on the subject of healing is that because you can see the individual is sick from something is no reason why you should treat it. In other words diagnosis immediately flies out of your hands as an unnecessary and often retarding activity. There's really not much difference between diagnosis and evaluation. And evaluation is more or less – well, it is forbidden by the Auditor's Code, so that just knocks out, in actual fact, diagnosis. Now we're talking about healing diagnosis, you see.

To say what this fellow was suffering from is an adventurous statement. Because it may be so purely psychosomatic that it isn't a nose at all, don't you see?

Now, I've conducted some experiments in hypnotism, in... early on, no longer using anything like hypnotism, never did use it in this particular field, but it's terrific, terrific piece of research material. And I've caused somebody's nose to run for two or three hours. He had the worst cold you ever saw in your life. Person didn't have any cold at all, caused the person's nose to run simply by an hypnotic command – when you wake them up they're going to have a cold and their nose is going to run, up until the time you snap your fingers and say abracadabra, see? So person wakes up, and he has a cold for two or three hours, and I'm telling you, that nose will really run. It's quite startling. You say how on earth could they get into that condition? And then say "Abracadabra," see, and no – it just – it's gone, you know! No slightest residue, no runny nose, nothing, you see. Unpleasant subject, but it was unpleasant to the person going the experiment, too.

What's this all about? Once you've conducted a few of these experiments there's not much doubt in your mind that the autosuggestion, or the various mental mechanisms of the

individual himself can bring about or perpetuate any illness. There's not any doubt in your mind after you've conducted a few of these. But you have in actuality the genus of psychosomatic illness in the matter of suggestion.

Now, to a Scientologist suggestion becomes postulation and a much more clearly stated proposition. Because actually nothing can be suggested to the individual that he himself has not earlier postulated. There's nothing. Nothing can be suggested to the individual who has not himself earlier postulated it. Which is quite remarkable. And people can figure out, well, they're not guilty of any overt acts, because if everybody does it to themselves... oh yes, you're guilty of an overt act, of keying it in on them – because it's now gone beyond their power. [laughs] Pretty good, eh? You... people try to argue themselves out of the fact there are no overt acts. Well, the only overt act would be key in what the individual had once had intended to happen anyway. But nevertheless it is an overt act.

So if these things can be produced hypnotically, under laboratory conditions, and if these things can be produced by suggestion, and if key-ins can occur of a person's past experiences or postulates, and if rather violent reactions and malformations can be brought about in this way, then we see the genus of illness is psychosomatic.

The individual must have willed the destruction of a body before his own body could even be bent out of shape. This is the philosophic line-up, and it happens to be an actual one. He must have conceived the possibility of breaking legs before you could break his leg. In fact, he must have broken a few.

Most pathetic picture of a psychosomatic illness I ever heard of was a bird who made his living of grabbing people up dark alleys and hitting them in the jaw and taking the money out of their pockets. It's very, very interesting that his arm with which he did the hitting, even yet, was paralyzed from the shoulder to the wrist. He could sort of hitch his back around in some particular way and still strike a blow with that arm, he was still doing so. This ostensibly traced back to the point that he used to be beaten up by a newsboy who took all of his money away from him. When he was a small newsboy, this bigger newsboy, you know, took all his money away from him. And the hold on the track was one morning he almost hit his mother when she woke him up. And this practically broke his heart and more or less paralyzed his arm.

Well, that's all very interesting, but you know that a fighter nearly always postulates a paralysis of the other fellow's arm. Well now, it really isn't then what happens to the individual that brings about the psychosomatic illness. It's what the individual is willing to happen. And as crooked and as upside down and backwards as that often looks, we nevertheless can trace these things back to that if we go all the way. But the odd part of it is, it is not either possible – now hear this very carefully – it is neither possible nor necessary to trace the psychosomatic illness to its genus and erase it in order to cure it. It is neither possible nor necessary to trace a psychosomatic illness to its self-generated genus, you see, that is to say, the individual's own intention of having it, and erase that in order to cure a psychosomatic illness. The word "cure" is used advisedly.

And why is that?

Well, he doesn't have to have a key-in to make his postulates come true, but when one of his early postulates suddenly, mysteriously materializes, in the physical universe, and he doesn't know anything about it, it was necessary for something else around him to key it in. So the key-in is other-determinism.

Now, this is very, very slippery. You sh... you should get this very... this is one of those things I – your jaws almost dropped off your faces the other day when I told you that an ARC break assessment was – well, I'd already told you that in an earlier lecture, and you all said, "Oh, yes, yes, yes," put it all down in your notebooks and you were all very happy about it, so forth, and then when I told you in the last lecture I gave you that you never audit during an ARC break, I thought your faces were going to fall apart. I never saw such a silence occur in all directions in my life. And yet that's the obvious conclusion from the earlier datum I gave you. How did it surprise you so much? So don't be surprised at this one, see, when it all of a sudden comes up and hits you in the face, because it's the same kind of datum, you see.

The individual did it himself. But when he did it himself he knew he did it himself, don't you see? And if it's happening and he doesn't know that he's doing it himself, then it must be the result of a key-in. You see? It's this old intention has been activated which he has not wot of. He doesn't know he's doing this, but something has happened that causes it to go into action. Hypnotism, for instance, is merely a key-in of the person's own basic postulations. There's no such thing as an other-controlled human being. But there is such a thing as an other-keyed-in human being.

Let's put up a gag here that will drive this home a little more closely. Let's take this fellow, we want him to become a prisoner. We want him to become a prisoner of some kind or another. So we lock him up. Well, how are we able to do that? This is – this is marvelous. You mean you can lock up a thetan? You can puzzle this one over philosophically for some time. How does this come about that anybody can be put in jail? I've had to crack a lot of these conundrums along the line, and disentangle an awful lot of things, in order to get data on which life operates. And that was one of the stoppers. How in the name of common sense could you ever lock anybody up? If it is true that man is a spirit and so forth, how does it ever come about?

Well, it must have come about – it eventually materializes – and when you get up to Class VI you certainly know why and how! He had to lock himself up first. He had to lock himself up before you could ever lock him up. And the only thing you can do is key in his locking himself up. However he's doing it. It's about the only way you can ever make a prisoner.

Actually, in an environment if you're going to govern it well or keep it calm you must be careful of what's being keyed in – careful of what's being keyed in. You've seen civilized men, I'm sure, go into a heav... high level of bestiality when faced by war. The most fantastic things occur in war, and so on. Well, how come? Well, it's the key-in-ness of the environment. It isn't war does this. It gives enough key-ins to key in his bestialities. And they were absent – that is, like sleeping dogs lying quietly behind the chair until all of a sudden, why, you've got a bunch of key-ins going. Now you could key in all sorts of viciousness. So you

can key lots of things in on a being because he is basically a complex person. Very complex. A thetan is unbelievably, numerously, prepostulated.

Do you know that you can just find 2-12 locks on an individual practically as long as he will sit still, and years after you're liable to take the same case and find out, hey, what do you know, they've all been off one actual RI, you know. Here's fifteen thousand GPMs. You multiply – that's a rough number, but you multiply that by the sixteen RIs there are in a bank, that's sixteen times fifteen thousand, see. And then recognize that any one of those items from that result can have thousands of locks. We can add it up to man's extreme individual age, which is very extreme. He's had tremendous quantities of experience, you see. So there's an almost unlimited fund of things to key in. You can key in almost any combination. It's not even hard to do. [laughter]

He may not be master of his own destiny, but he is sure victim of his own postulation. [laughs] So anyway, anyway, to make a long story short here, what are you healing when you're healing with psychosomatics? What are you handling?

Out of your reach, if you're below – auditing below the level of Classes V and VI – completely out of your reach, are the basic postulations which brought about the conditions. You just say that, just cut it off right there at V. And below that, man, that's out of your reach. It's out of the reach of the individual, it's out of the reach of the lower auditing skills, and fortunately is not necessary to effect a cure. Because we're now dealing with a very low-level auditing result. Believe me, it makes – awfully spectacular to somebody who's going along and had headaches, headaches, headaches, headaches, all his life, to cease to have this headache. That's very spectacular. So this looks fabulous as a result, see. This looks huge, as a result.

Well, it's a result, compared to the retain... attainable results don't you see, like – so you can feed him some cereal, or you can – you can look at a tree. I mean, there – it isn't anything spectacular. And unless you cease to regard it as a miraculous thing, you see – it's – if you cease to – you have to take it out of the religious tradition entirely, although it – healing probably belongs more securely in religion. You have to take it out of the tradition that religion has assigned to it. Which is, this fellow was a saint – I don't care how much you let the public believe this, that's beside the point. This fellow was a saint, man, he was – he was terrific! Magnificent. Fellow just marvelous! Cured boils. [laughter] Pure, pure evidence of his godliness. He could cure boils. That's the religious tradition with regard to healing. And you just have to stop regarding it with that much awe. Because it's not that complicated. And it basically also is not done by feeding him some more illness, spoonful by spoonful. [laughter]

He will bust out in lots of side effects, because to cure him you're keying in something else. This fellow's had suffering from these two cycles of action. See, these – out... these are – these two steps on the cycle of action. First, he had to determine it. But that may be in such an unthinkably long past that we don't want that much to do with that. Next, he had to do it to somebody or something. And then for him to mysteriously get ill and not recognize what it is, he has to receive a key-in. Something has to be done to him which restimulates it.

Now, nothing violent has to be done to him, so it might be something quite mild has to be done to him. I wot an experience that was happening to me. I used to have – when I was a

very little boy in this lifetime, I used to have sore throats around my grandmother. And she used to sing – whose song is it, "The Little Toy Dog... is covered with rust..." you know, and "the tin soldier..." you know, that sort of thing, whatever the quote is on the thing, very sad song! She'd sing that song to me. Well, she wasn't giving me a sore throat, but she was sure as hell kicking in a picking up a baby in 1870, and having his heart stop beating and looking up and seeing a little toy dog sitting alongside of his crib, see. Gave me a good sore throat. Got the idea? In other words, there was an action, don't you see; there was a symbol, which represented the event. And here is the symbol mysteriously reappearing in a song from a beloved person.

So you see, you're not looking for violence. You're just looking for a key-in. And it may be anything. May be anything.

Well, the first two of these things – the first one, that is the business of Class V, VI, VII, those, particularly Class VI. And that is such a restimulative process that a sick person probably couldn't do it. Whole thing is a defeative action, trying to handle this. I notice some of you, every time your pc doesn't feel well, reaching for an L4, now it's called – it should be called an L6, ARC break assessment sheet, to get his GPMs in order. That's pretty heroic! That isn't what you should be reaching for at all. As unless you're going to run him out, the only thing you can do is pull him out. If you're going to run him out, all right. That's Class VI, man. And that's the whole operation, not devoted to illness, believe me. That's the whole operation from one end to the other. That is a full, complete overhaul. You jack up the car and put a new one under it. Nothing to do with healing. So you can just cancel out all of your handling of GPMs, implant engrams, all this sort of thing, all running this kind of thing, and what you've been calling case analysis on the thing, and getting that to cure somebody of – just knock it out, man. Has nothing to do with healing.

You can do some remarkable things with it, with a very advanced auditor, who is probably all ready to do so, and the other day I handled a PTP – here's a little two-bit PTP – by simply finding the GPM that was causing it. But this on a pc who has practically a complete line plot, you see. This person's already on the way. So you don't – you don't fool around with those things. Those are basic causation, see. You'll find all this basic causation lies in that particular line. But you don't want anything to do with that in healing.

Now the person, in doing this to somebody else, probably did it so long ago, and it is so far off course of any current activity at all, that to get the basic overt on the track is equally – well, actually it's something you would probably never do now – I mean, you probably never will pick up the basic overts on the track, you see. There's no point, once you've got the first postulates out, why pick up the overts that keyed them in? But you can pick up the key-in of the overt.

So we've got another factor going here, of a subdivision under the heading of key-in. So there's another kind of key-in. He does another little overt that keys in the big overt, see? So there's the big postulate followed by the big overt, so you get it up into PT, present life sort of thing, where he got this little tiny, little tiny thing done to him, where he got a little tiny overt. And you can make people well with just handling those little things. Yeah, it's all whisk broom stuff. You don't even have to know the basic postulates, you don't even have to know

its complexity. You don't even have to know the basic other-life way-back-when overts. These you don't have to have anything to do with at all! To make a person well it's only necessary to bail him out of his key-ins. And mark my words, for Homo sap, you better not try to do anything else than just bail him out of his key-ins.

What would spoil you as an auditor is to find this occasional and rare bird whose lum-bosis suddenly disappeared because you found the first Helatrobis on him or something. See, that would practically ruin you, because after that you'd be looking for the heroic. Now you see, you're perfectly right as an auditor, perfectly right as an auditor, to know that there is a great, big postulate, miles wide, broad and deep, which is attainable on this case. You're perfectly correct in assuming that there is such a thing on this case. You know that instinctively because you're always going for it. You're perfectly correct, you're perfectly correct in assuming that there's a great, big, huge, overt act, on the backtrack, you know, he burned a civilization down or something. You're perfectly correct in assuming this. And because you down deep yourself know this, you have a tendency to go for it to get out prime cause. You're not going to do that, by the nature of a case, and by the thousands and thousands of hours and years of research done on this very subject without doing a whole Class VI-ectomy. [laughter] That postulate's too big, it's too tricky. Its anatomy is too huge to be handled with the whisk broom that you're going to audit somebody with.

So the only thing you have to do is to pick up the key-in. Whether the key-in is an overt, or what, we don't care. But all you have to do is pick up the key-in. And you try to pick it up as close to present time as you can. You don't try to pick it up as early as you can – you try to pick it up effectively as close to PT as you can.

Now, someday you're going to be very unlucky and you're going to find somebody with chronic twistosis, who didn't get it keyed in in this lifetime. And now you're going to be in a little bit of trouble, and you're going to have a very protesting person, and you're going to find yourself suddenly slopping over into 1861.

I did this one time, a polio case, ill at two years with polio, and it dived instantly and straight back to about three lifetimes ago, in the middle of the nineteenth century. And that was one of the most unwilling, screaming pcs I ever had anything to do with, because it was of course by that time jammed up so that it was quite painful. Pc had no reality on any other lifetime, and yet any time the pc tried to give me anything about it, why, this other incident would come up, which was over a hundred years ago, you see. It'd practically been keyed in solidly continuously ever since. It was an unlucky break.

The way to take it apart was to pick up the key-in closest to PT that could be picked up. He'd even pick up the key-in of the key-in. You understand? Not to – the big key-in was too tough. Pc was going straight back to it, straight stuck in it, there they were, bang, and he couldn't do anything else, move him out of it, apparently moved him out of it and so forth, and the proper course of action there was to pick in a key-in – up a key-in of the key-in. Or pick up the latest overt on that subject. The latest overt on the subject might be – you see, this is all softly, softly, see. This is all quietly. This is all with the feather duster. You're perfectly correct in knowing that there's a target there, very suitable for eighteen-inch guns. See, you're

perfectly correct in this. But you're not correct in the field of lower-level healing in going for it.

So, if all I could teach you, if all I could teach you was just this: that yes, there's a great big postulate. Yes, yes, yes, yes, great big postulate. Oh, yeah, tremendous experiences that go back over God knows how many years, yes, yes, yes, they're all there. Yes, there's overts there that made that postulate backfire and gave him a switch of valences and all that sort of thing. Yes, yeah, oh definitely, yes, yes, yes. That's there. We agree with all this. And then teach you all we want is their key-ins, and the lightest key-in of that that we can approach. And that's all we want. Then I could teach you to heal.

Because healing is not in actual fact a very high-class activity, in spite of the fact that it has so much relief. Now, compare the fact that, "Well, I cured her bunions," as a statement to "I restored a being to his full intelligence, ethics and power," I'm afraid that's far more god-like. See, they are not comparable activities. But if you know that about healing, if you know that about healing, and know about what this field consists of, that it's the thetan versus the body, in his own worries anyhow, and you do it lightly, why, then I could open the door to that degree to show you how to – well, just heal anything you walked into. But if I – if I can't teach you that and make that one point first and have you understand that and think it over and look it over, understand it thoroughly, then you get trapped into going for prime postulate, see, on the subject. You get trapped into going for the dramatics of the prime overts, you see, and so forth, and your – you as a Scientologist could probably make it. But not the guy you're auditing. And you won't heal.

That's the first thing to learn. Now, you can see that that must be a very interesting lesson, in view of the fact that practically nobody in the field of healing has ever learned it in the history of man. See, so it's not much of a lesson, it looks that at first glance, but just let me call it to your attention that it really has never really come to anybody's attention. There's a little mention here or there, perhaps, amongst the various records. You could probably find something of – you shouldn't use such heroic methods, you know, that sort of thing – but it's the very, very lightest of the methods that succeed. And these heavy ones such as, well, fellow has a headache all the time, well let's cut out his brain. [laughter] Well, those fields are not successful. Because that is the physical effort to get to the ultimate postulate simply being dramatized by the healing practitioner.

Of course, you being smarter and better educated as to what there is there to reach for, have to practice in actual fact a little more restraint. Because you know what to head for. You say, well, "This guy, this guy looks like he's had his head bashed in. I wonder whose head he bashed in..." see, "...on the backtrack. All right. Whose head did he bash in? Oh well, let's see, let's go back, let's get it on the meter." All right. And so on. "Now let's find the first head he ever bashed in." You'd probably get it, too, see. And he'd have his head bashed in all right. He'd have it bashed in completely when – time you got through, because you could handle it as the auditor, but could he handle it as the pc? And you'll probably wake up at the end of the thing with finding the other side of his head is now bashed in. He wouldn't have made the grade. Your proper course of action is not withholding yourself from doing so, but just understanding the basic mechanics of how that thing is keyed in. And then taking out the little bits that keep it keyed in and the mystery of it all is why it all drops away and will key out.

That's the miracle. How come it can be keyed out as thoroughly as it can be? And yet it can be keyed out with great thoroughness. And the destimulation of the incident was easily the thing that will produce your great miracles.

Of course, the fellow's going to run on the backtrack, he's going to get into actual GPMs, he's going to get into the stuff of which life is made one way or the other, he may collide with his own overts and he may not, and when he finally gets back there, why, oh yeah, there was plenty of reason for him to do so, and he's actually likely to pick up the whole somatic, ten times as strong all over again, particularly if you make a little mistake as an auditor, or something like that.

But it'll be gone then because he's in the position and doing the process which is competent of erasure. But he's not in a position to do that when you first find him, so the field of healing will remain a closed door unless you find out that it can be done lightly, on tiptoe. Lightly.

Thank you.

SUMMARY OF LOWER LEVELS – CLEARING AT LEVEL IV

A lecture given on 10 March 1964

Well, I'm glad to see you looking so well. What's the date?

Audience: March the 10th.

March the 10th. Ah, well, 10 March AD 14, Saint Hill Special Briefing Course. And you today are going to hear a summary of lower levels and clearing at Level IV, in which you will be very interested indeed.

Now, I've been beating my brains out – not being inside them it's a fairly painless activity – trying to find out how, how – having shot the moon – we got our feet back on the ground.

Now, there has to be some bridge between 0 and V. Obviously V is becoming the catchall level by which the individual picks up and refines all of his knowledge of the mind and so forth, in order to kick off into the astronomic altitudes of VI. We have made the gun in VI, that's – that's there. In fact, I don't know of anything very much you have to do in VI.

Well-trained, this is very easy. Untrained it's impossible, see. And so having shot the moon, what's that leave you? Well, it's – I think Alexander, an old-time enemy of mine – every once in a while somebody comes along and says, "I'm Alexander the Great," don't you see, or something like that, or "I was Alexander the Great," something like that. They don't quite realize the hair going up on the back of my neck, don't you see. Because he got to a point where he had no more worlds to conquer. That's the traditional contribution of Alexander the Great to literature in history. And he had no more worlds to conquer, don't you see. Well, that's great. But he might have figured out how you got from Greece to India. When he got to India there were no more worlds to conquer, that's for sure. But had he conquered anything from Greece to India? That was the question. And he went and sat down in a royal palaces of a satrap and pined away, hadn't realized that he in actual fact had not conquered up to the point where he had no more worlds to conquer. Because that empire fell apart like a bunch of confetti at a wedding. And it was gone and in the dust in very short order.

Why? Well there was no way to get from India to Greece or from Greece to India. That's the fact. So he never made any bridge. He not only had no more worlds to conquer, he hadn't conquered the one he was living in. So we're in danger of getting up to the esoteric levels of VI and looking around and realizing we had no more worlds to conquer and that leaves thirty or forty of us as OTs and that's it. That's the end of the push, don't you see.

In the first place, you can't take somebody off the street up here and say, "All right, this is the way you go about it. You do this list, see, and you take the meter and when you get rocket reads and so on, why, you null that thing out and then you plot that on a goals plot as the actual GPM, and so forth, and then you do its opposite, and so forth, and then you add twenty-one and so on, and that's all there is to it." And I'm afraid about this time he'd be standing there with his jaw dropped.

Scientology progresses on reality. He's not in a position to recognize any part of an actual GPM and so he's really not about to get any reality on Scientology. So the lower levels is the contest of achievement of reality. It's not really the contest of making somebody better. It's the contest of achieving the stepping stones of reality. Of course, at Level 0 you're taking somebody who doesn't even know the world's here.

Reminds me of the position I was in when I was four, five in this lifetime and I used to look around this great bowl of the hills up in the Rockies and in a dim sort of caved-in way wonder, wonder if there was anything beyond those hills, don't you see? Very dim wonder. Not sure, not sure, just – just wondering. And that's all very well, but so is this guy. He looks at his kitchen and at the environment of the job where he works and the wrath of the boss and the inclement weather of his wife, and it's like looking at this bowl of hills, you see, "Is there anything beyond this?" See. And he isn't at all sure that there is.

Well, unless you can show him there's something beyond that he's never going to take any step further. You've left him in that little depression of hills and that is that.

How do you walk him out of there? How do you get him from that point to some other point so that he can take off? Because, believe me, he must be walked from a point of no recognition of reality, to a point of some recognition of reality, before he can take off to an ultimate reality. It's done by gradients. One of the oldest tricks that we have and it's quite peculiar to Dianetics and Scientology – the idea of a gradient. Doing it a little bit at a time.

You jump too big a step in a gradient and a person goes unreal. Now, I was studying unreality the other day and I found out that unreality was associated with charge. Charge and unreality are the same thing. They are the same. If you overburden somebody too heavily with a bunch of suppresses and that sort of thing, he is incapable of understanding an RI. Be a perfectly obvious RI – the auditor sitting there, "Does 'to be hungry' bring about 'to eat'?" See? And the auditor's looking at this, "*Hah, bvo, ba*, of course, 'to be hungry' brings about 'to eat'," yeah, so what. And the pc now has invalidations, suppress, overcharge, he's sitting in the middle of the rat race, and so forth, and he says, "Well, 'to be hungry,' well, 'to eat'. Hmmm. Well. Let me see, let me say that over again to myself. Would 'to be hungry' bring about – I don't know. Let's see, to be hungry, what's that... and so on..." Wildest thing you ever wanted to see.

Now you get the suppresses and the invalidates off of these things and all of a sudden, why, he says – you know, you get it straightened up, get the burden off of it – and he says, "Well, 'to be hungry' bring about 'to eat'. I mean that's – what's so hard to understand about that?" But just a couple of moments before by reason of overcharge, in other words, too much – too much charge, too heavily burdened – he's a fellow with a ton of coal sitting on his head, don't you see, and you're asking him to look around and see the environment. And of course

he can't see out through a ton of coal. You move the ton of coal and he says there's an environment, see.

It's very funny, I mean because you can take the pattern items at Level VI and just throw your mid... your session ruds out badly on them. And the pc won't understand them. It's an interesting clinical study of understanding. Understanding then is directly related to charge. And a person who has too much charge on his case can't understand. Therefore, he doesn't have any reality. So an overcharged individual is incapable of achieving a reality. And a reality is necessary to the understanding and gradient steps that he has to take in order to go totally free.

Now, do you see what binds him in? Overcharge. His wife's always yapping and yowling at him or her husband is always yapping and yowling at her, don't you see. Here we've got yap and yowl. And we've got this and we've got this and we've got worries and so forth and all of that sort of thing, and finally people under those circumstances will do the stupidest things, see? Because their environment's too heavily charged. It's the actual active environment in which they live, it's too heavily charged. And they can't understand beyond that point. Their understanding is swamped. And of course they don't understand it either. They don't even understand they have a wife or husband. It gets down to that point. What is a wife? They will go around mutter, mutter, mutter to themselves, you see, "What is a wife?" "What is a man?" you know, mutter, mutter, mutter, mutter. It's just too heavily charged. All caved in on the subject.

Every once in a while, you'll see a couple go get married who have been fighting consistently and continually, see. They didn't do nothing but fight and worry and worry and fight, and fight and worry and worry and fight, and one day they walk down and get married. You say that's a stupid thing to do. Well of course, they've created themselves a mutual environment of overcharge to such a point they have no comprehension of what they're doing. You see that? If you want to see somebody do something silly, why, start piling up the charge on him. Give him lots of conflict. Give him lots of duress. Give him lots of this, that and the other thing. He'll do something silly. I didn't really – wasn't really at that moment trying to explain to you the workings and functions of an army or a government, but if it applies, apply it.

Stupidity then comes about from charge. What do we mean by charge? We mean it's unreleased masses of energy. Unreleased, unresolved, stored masses of energy, that's charge. It's no more than that. The significances aren't – don't enter into it. You get somebody to sort out his problems by significance and he's likely to not solve them. Because in actual fact it's his overcharged environment that is making him too stupid to solve his problems.

And we've got an awful lot of stuff in getting this bridge together between 0 and V – we've got an awful lot of stuff that's quite miraculous. And we've done an awful lot with it. And it's quite surprising what we have managed to do over a period of years with this material. You yourself know you can do this or that or the other thing with a pc and very often it works quite marvelously, don't you see, and you can do all kinds of oddball things and so on.

What's straining you is an effort to attain a consistency of result. That's your main worry: consistency of result. Joe, Bill, Pete. Now how do we get Joe, Bill, Pete bailed out of

it. Well, obviously we've got to get a result on Bill and then when we've done that get a result on Joe and then a result on Pete, don't you see? We've got to get a consistent result. And what breaks an auditor's heart is to get a beautiful result on Bill, no result on Joe and make Pete sick as a dog. See, that's an inconsistent result. So therefore, to get a consistent result you would have to deal with the common denominator of difficulty with Joe, Bill and Pete. And attack that common denominator, not the individual difficulties of Joe, Bill and Pete. You see how you could achieve a consistency of result?

Now, you see unless we can achieve a consistency of result on the Levels from 0 up through to V, unless we can achieve some consistency of result, nobody will ever make the bridge. So we're posed – in putting in the processes and activities of an auditor, between 0 and V – with the problem of giving the auditor a consistent result and enough result to bring about not only a reality on his own part, but on the part of the people he's processing – a mutual reality on the situation – in order to persuade them on forward.

Now if the thing that is making them stupid is charge and if this is the common denominator of no bridge – overcharged environments, overcharged individuals, the guy hasn't got a reality on something because he's just too plowed in, don't you see, he's got too many tons of coal on the top of his head – then it's quite obvious that what we have to charge and attack at those levels is this matter of charge. We've got to make somebody brighter and we've got to get him to be able to see further and we've got to get rid of, of course, some of the things he's worrying about. And then we would achieve it.

So that the only thing we can do – the only thing we can do – at Levels 0 on up to V, is get rid of charge. But in view of the fact that the basic charge on the case is the actual GPM, and as the person at that level – those levels – is incapable of attacking those – and that is said very, very advisedly, they – I mean very factually – they're not capable of attacking these things – and if that's the basic charge on the case and if we can't get anywhere by putting the pc into it but trouble – and believe me, we are going to get no place but trouble if we try to put the person into it at those levels before he's ready to and before he has any education on it – why, then quite obviously what we want to do is bail him out of the charge rather than get rid of the charge. So we have Level 0 to V devoted – that's up to V, that's not including V – 0 to IV inclusive – devoted to destimulation. The skills of destimulation. Which is to pull the pc out of the charge, not try to erase the charge.

A certain amount of erasure is bound to take place – bound to take place. But if we're concentrating on destimulation we will be achieving the same ends. We're getting the individual out of these masses of charge. So what we're really attacking at those levels are key-ins. We're trying to destimulate. So obviously Level 0 to IV inclusive, which is up to V, are addressed to the whole subject of destimulation. We're studying destimulation. Now, what do we mean by destimulation? Well, we're trying to knock out the key-ins that keep the charge pinned to the individual. We're not trying to destroy the charge or get rid of the charge. What we're trying to do is bring the individual out of it. And that is an art of a very high order.

We're trying to pluck the individual out of the roaring whirlpools of energy by tripping those little items which keep him connected to it. Now we're not going to restimulate anything until we get up into actual GPMs and then we're just going to throw him to the lions. Then he

can get rid of all of the charge and as-is the whole ruddy lot of it. Because that's all contained in one process – R6, see. And that's a – that's a completely rounded up proposition.

But the funny part of it is, the individual with all of his restimulations pinned together, is in actual fact incapable of recognizing an actual goal. So, if you take the actual goal and pile on top of it all of the key-ins, trying to get the individual now to recognize the actual goal is going to be very difficult indeed. So the right way to go about it is to pull the individual out by disconnecting the key-ins, pull him out of the actual goal, let the whole thing subside and then at Level VI shovel it all off into the gutter. You see that as a different proposition?

Now, if an individual standing on a pile of coal looking at a lifesaver – let's take a lifesaver and put it on the concrete and then put a ton of coal on top of it and then put the individual on top of this pile and say, "Now, all you've got to do is pick up that lifesaver." And he says, "What lifesaver?"

"Lifesaver right down there, of course, you idiot!"

"Where?"

"Well, you see, really, it's underneath the coal."

"Well, I don't see any. Well, I'll take it on faith."

All right, let's do a list for the lifesaver. Let's do this for the lifesaver, let's do that for the lifesaver. You can't find the lifesaver. Why? Well, now, that's not too perfect a metaphor. But, here is the position you find the individual in. You could get him back to a point where that pile of coal wasn't all piled up. But if it's subsided and lay across a low level – was only a couple of inches thick around the lifesaver – he could see the lifesaver. Then by getting the lifesaver, if you could imagine that the lifesaver would hold the coal there, the moment he grabbed hold of the lifesaver all the coal would disappear, then you've done the trick, don't you see? But that's what you're up against. If that ton of coal represented all of his key-ins and his upsets, why, he isn't going to get anywhere close to that lifesaver. Now that's perhaps not as smart a graph as I could make you on the subject, but it tells you what you've got to do with an individual.

Now, if an individual can be in the midst of an actual RI at Level VI and not understand it, merely because of some session invalidation, so forth – the auditor overlistered and the guy didn't think it was it and they found it once and they abandoned it and then they came back and picked it up again and suddenly he can't understand it. And then we brush off a couple of suppresses and destimulate its connection with the session, you see. Now, he all of a sudden can understand this RI and it blows. One has to understand RIs or they don't blow, because of course they are not in printed English. They're a thought. And a thought requires understanding.

Now, in view of this, if an individual can do that in the middle of a session, on an actual RI, what do you think he's going to do in life? These GPMs and the whole track and that sort of thing are so jammed up and so locked up with everything under the sun, the individual with his attention, gruesomely and howlingly concentrated on some little – not even a pile of coal, but concentrated on just a lump of coal – well, you've got to show him he can do something about the coal. He can do something about it. And he gets a big reality and a hope factor

and his confidence resurge on this basis: that if he could get his attention off just one lump of coal for a few minutes it would make him feel so different and so interestingly alive compared to how he has felt that now he gets a big upsurge in reality and you can get him to tackle four, five lumps of coal, see. You got a gradient. You got a gradient by which this can be done, see. And it's a matter of confidence knocking out the charge, destimulating him so he is brighter and so forth. And that's the problem between 0 and IV inclusive.

How do you do this? Well, you take this individual and he's so mired down in the middle of his family or his job or his social security work or something that he hasn't got any time to do anything and he can't even lift his eyebrows long enough to do anything and he can't spend any time trying to get out of this, he's just barely able to hold it at bay. It's like – he's in the same frame of mind of – you're trying to sell a lion tamer a padded suit, you see. And he's fighting forty lions, forty, and they're all about ready to come off of their pedestals, you see, and the chair's broken by this time and he's running out of blank cartridges. So you say, "Hey, I'd like to sell you this suit," see, "It's – it proofs you against being chewed." And you know he wouldn't pay a bit of attention to you. He can't take his attention off these lions long enough. Well, the thing to do – the thing to do, of course, is to take the lions – the immediacy of the lions – away, lion by lion. And then he begins to get the idea that maybe he doesn't need the blank cartridge pistol, and so forth, and you sort of play it back and forth and you destimulate his environment.

Now, an environment can itself be a present time problem. That fellow who was being charged for murder and who was going to be sent to the electric chair is very, very hard to interest in much of anything. He's – it's like the fellow who is going down a toboggan slide or like one of these – one of these Swiss ski runs that goes ninety miles an hour – right about the middle of the run you can't unload, see.

So there is a point of an individual being in – so involved and his environment so charged, that there isn't anything you can do about it. So the first level of processing happens to be – and this of course would not include all cases, but it's the most extreme case, which delivers it into your hands – most extreme case is the unconscious person, they've just gone down for the third time, you see – but that one point is, is you have to remove the person from his present time environment to some degree. And you'll find out that if you're ever called upon to handle the insane, the removal of the individual from his environment which is restimulative and overcharged, and giving him a nonrestimulative environment where nobody is bothering him, and where he can get some rest, will be your best route. You do very low-level processing.

Well, you say, well, some of these blokes are going to sit there and starve to death and they won't eat and so forth. Well, I think they're probably not eating because they're under such duress that they may be treated or they have to answer questions or something like this. You look around and all you do is keep removing charge from the environment, to the best degree you can. So some of them starve to death. Well all right, they go through the between-lives area and pick up another body. There's your lowest level of action. In other words, this is giving somebody a nonrestimulative, relatively so, environment. Removing him from the restimulative environment. Well, that's a pretty low level. But it exists as a processing level.

Now let's go from there – let's go from there – and we will find the individual is now so engrossed in his present time problems that he is obsessively solving everything under the sun, moon and stars. And he's just obsessively solving his present time. And his solutions are so pyramided that you don't dare touch any corner of the pyramid or you'll get a collapse of the lot. And you find out that that quite commonly states the average person in the street. You find the housewife going to market – if you were to walk alongside of one and say, "Now what are you thinking about right now, what's the stream of consciousness going through your brow?"

"Well, if I do this – and so on – I could get Johnny's – so on – and then I could do the – so on and so on and so on – and if I could save us a little bit of money out of the grocery money why that'd give us – *waf, waf, waf, waf, waf, waf, waf* – and I might be able to get that new dress if I could get Mrs. Jones – *waf, waf, waf, waf* – and if that *waf, waf, waf, waf, waf, waf, waf, waf*."

It's just a wild string of solutions. They're going on and on and on, one right after the other, solve, solve. Well, now you can come up to your lowest level of actual processing on the basis of its on solutions. Tends to take over that automaticity.

I'm just showing you the scope of something – I'm not giving you the fixed form of these things, I'm just showing you what could be done, see.

And now – now, let's look at the first – what in actual fact would be the first processing level that would – you would really saddle as an auditor, as a pro, that you would call processing. And that's your repetitive question or your objective processes at Level II. Now right up to this point – up to this point – you are not confronting... we, of course, have bypassed assists and so forth, there are other processes that do things at those levels which, of course, assists is just acquaintance, familiarity with the thing that hurts, or something, or where it was hurt.

But when you get a repetitive process, HQS level, now, that certificate – what is the bug from there on up that might make processing dangerous and that would give you loses. And that is the question your old man here has had to – had to answer and it was answered in this fashion. What isn't in an actual GPM? See, what isn't in an actual GPM? Is there something that isn't in an actual GPM that could be processed with impunity? And there is. There is something that isn't in an actual GPM, and that is a noun or a pronoun.

Now there are some pronouns in actual GPMs – there's such a thing as "myself," there is sometimes "I," and – but they're part of the wording of a goal, so pros... pronouns are not absolutely safe. But at Level II you're so far from the actual GPM you could probably use them with impunity. You're at such a distance, there's so much coal between you and it, and these things only form a very tiny portion of some goals that there's no reason to debar them at Level II. But as the pc progressed from Level II on up, I would begin to get wary of using a pronoun. And I'd begin to get leery. Because you do have to – "to help myself, to forget myself," things like this, don't you see; those things do appear in actual goals.

But aside from that, one little observation: There are no nouns in actual GPMs. None! There is – nobody has a goal "to be an assassin." Nobody has a goal "to be a God." Nobody

has a goal "to be a wife." Nobody has a goal "to be a goddess." Nobody has a goal "to be a criminal." They are not actual goals, see. And nowhere in it do you have a terminal, "a sultan" or "alcohol" or "cats," "kings" or "coal heavers." See, nowhere. There are no such terminals. There are no such opptersms. There's "-nesses" and "-ities"; there's "nervousness," you see, "ability." There's things of this kind, you see. The adverbial and adjectival nouns are present, so you don't use those: "-nesses," "-ities," "-ions" – "communicat-ion." "Think of a communication" is liable to be sending you right straight down the route toward an actual GPM. "Think of a communicator" and it wouldn't. Got the idea? You could process with absolutely – impunity "an assassin." You could prepcheck it, you could run brackets on it, you could do almost anything you ever heard of in the way of processing on the subject of "an assassin."

And we suddenly come to why the 20th ACC made Clears and the missing secret, why it wasn't general: it's because nouns were processed on brackets. Accidental, see. So you'd actually key out actual GPMs. Because "an assassin" might very well be the hundred-and-fifty-first lock on an actual RI, "death." So the individual's alert to this idea of an assassin. All right. "On 'an assassin,' has anything been suppressed?" Here we go. Fine! What are you going to do? You're going to key out that actual GPM. Destimulation. All of a sudden it's over there and the pc's here and his needle's flopping. *Interessante*, huh?

Well, now listen. What is an actual GPM? What is an actual RI? Completely aside from the other considerations anybody at Level IV – and this is what I'm teaching you today is Level IV – should at least know that these things exist and they are a mass with significance. Now that's really what you have to know at Level IV what they are. They're a mass with significance. That mass is very big and massy, too. And the significance is very significant. But they are mass with significance. So therefore masses with significances key in actual GPMs. What is the key-in of an actual GPM? A mass with significance.

What is a mass with a significance, aside from being an actual GPM? Well, I don't know, a man is a mass with a significance. A fireplace is a mass with a significance. A house is a mass with significance. A tree is a mass with significance. A desk is a mass with significance. A room is a mass with significance. A piano is a mass with significance. E-Meter, that's a mass with significance. Easel, that's a mass with significance. Pencil is a mass with significance. And every one of them is a potential key-in of an actual GPM or an actual RI. You's walkin' around in present time that is just full of restimulators! You's haunted! And I think we know now why everybody is in present time. [laughter] It's the most haunted area.

Now, you think it's a significance that keys in the actual GPM. No. Of course, if you've got an actual RI that's – has "communicating" or something like that as an actual RI and somebody says that to you often enough, I can guarantee that it will key in. There is no slightest doubt about that! I don't think it'd be very safe to process, because the individual's going to go down, but he hasn't got the actual RI – he probably even hasn't got it quite correctly worded. So if that was processed directly you'd have trouble.

Supposing you had an actual RI "help" – and there is such an actual RI. "How could you help? How could I help? How could you help? How could I help?" Cut your throat, man! You're slamming him right down the chute and the next thing you know he's going to be in the middle of a goal which is not in sequence, not his present time GPM; you haven't got the

goal that goes with it; you've got the pc now into an RI; he's going to turn on some somatics and he's going to have a ball. He may have some fever and chills to go along with it.

Well, how's the process become at all safe? Well the lowest level of safety on such a process is, "How could I help you?" and "How could you help me?" And it's the "me" and the "you" that salvages it. Why? Because it's a mass with significance. But you normally don't look at the pronoun as a mass with significance. See, you tend to forget it. Now you think it's "help" that's doing all this. We don't know that it's the "help" doing it at all. We might get just as much bang out of the process by just running "you, me, spot you, spot me, spot you, spot me," don't you see. Because you've got mass with significance.

Now, I'm not advising this as a process. I'm simply giving it as a sample of process, is "Recall a terminal." Terminal, of course, is mass with significance that is capable of receiving, sending or relaying communication. Boy, aren't we back into the old days when we were giving forth with this kind of stuff, see. "Recall a terminal. Good. Recall a terminal. Good. Recall a terminal." Why does old ARC Straightwire work? Well the laws of life of course are senior to the GPMs. We have laws of life which are not dictated to us by actual GPMs. We've got the laws of life which come about and make actual GPMs. And we had already entered it at a higher strata than that level, fortunately for the lot of us, see?

Now, the law in which we're involved there is that ARC Straightwire worked as long as it had pronouns. "Felt some affinity for someone." "Communicated with *someone*." "*Something* was really real to you." Now what were the little hidden bugs in those process commands? Those things were chosen empirically. These, out of a great many commands, were found to be commands that were workable. And I'd never sorted out of them exactly what it was that made them work. And we turn – turns out to be the "*something*," the "*someone*." That was the workable aspect. Isn't this fascinating.

Therefore, you can prepcheck a mass that has a significance. You can run it in brackets. You can add up other commands and significances to the auditing command, as long as it's there and you're running it. Now Level II, we don't have any assessment. So how do we get the auditor across this band? Well, objective processes of course, having him touch a wall, is a mass with significance, isn't it? And the control and the communication and the havingness involved in the action contain principles of life that are senior to actual GPMs, so those things added up – control, communication, havingness – added up to the mass with the significance, which is a wall, gave us 8-C as one of the highest level workable processes we ever had at that level, see. Isn't that interesting, see? But it was the wall. That was basically what it was, it was the wall. The mass with the significance.

That wall was very likely to key in actual GPMs, see. So when you got him familiar with the wall, the wall would key out. The actual GPM would resi... would – would go away, see, destimulate. Die down.

So, because you can't do – there'll be other devices of this sort of thing – because you cannot expect anybody at Level II to assess, therefore, can't expect them to assess, so therefore you would tend to depend on pronouns and objective processes such as walls and so forth to give workability to processing. You'll find things will get very real to this fellow. Level I, the basic mass with a significance that he gets familiar with and begins to trust and so forth is

the auditor. Somebody to listen to him. And that's all you could really expect him to do at Level I, was just get – get the idea there was an auditor there or somebody he could talk to.

But Level II you could introduce other things like "them," you see, "someone," "something," and add some significance to the auditing command, and then you've got the regularity of the auditing command helping you along, too – the repetitive nature of the command you see. Because your auditing cycle is in there, working. And very probably the best process at Level II was the process which is never noticed at Level II, which is simply the comm cycle. You ask a question the pc can answer, the pc does answer the question, you let it – making sure that he answered the thing completely and you acknowledge it, see. It's that cyclic action which is the process which makes Level II.

Now, how come – how come "auditor"? Well, an auditor's a mass with significance, but an auditor's a lot more than that. An auditor is apparently senior to masses with significance, see. An auditor carries hope and aliveness, and so forth, along with it. This is something new. Something different.

So an awareness of just the existence of such a person, and so on, is terribly therapeutic. A friendly mass with a significance that will give him a hand, see? That's all. Well, that tends to take the curse off the horrible masses with significance that are around, see. Here is one mass with a significance that is not an enemy.

Now, the nature of this universe is a two-pole nature. This is a two-pole universe. Ol' Bucky Fuller was sweet enough to come over one time and give me a lecture over in Elizabeth, all by my lonesome. I was very appreciative of that. Taught me a lot. Two-pole universe. Singles can't exist in this universe. Doubles can. And we look how thoroughly that is, we get the principle of the motor. Motors. Motors don't operate unless current is circulating between two poles. And those two poles have got to be fairly close together, but if the current can circulate between two poles, pole A and pole B – and you girls don't have to know anything about electricity, you probably know more about electricity anyhow than I do, because I've laughed off most of man's science, in the field of electricity. It's too incredible!

I ruined a whole university education on the subject for Mary Sue. She was utterly betrayed. I happened to remark to her one day that man had never seen an electron. See, he's seen only the manifestations that one might exist. But he has never seen an electron. And he really doesn't know what the pattern of them is and he really doesn't know what molecules are – these are all assumptions. And it was such a terrible betrayal that she threw away all of Rice Institute and the University of Texas into the wastebasket. Was very upset about this, because she'd had to memorize exactly how they looked and how many sides they had, you see, and how much they weighed and all this sort of nonsense.

Well, man does know that these things exist by third- or fourth-rate evidence, you see. But he's just guessing what they are and that he hasn't guessed right is obvious, because he has no flying saucers. See? He really has none of the energy devices that he should have. For instance you – to really get somewhere in a civilization you've got to have power – little packages of power of some kind or another. You don't want long cord dragged out, you see, a hundred and seventy-five yards of cord, with a fellow with one drill on the end of it, you know, everybody falling over this cord. Impractical. And he really has no source of power, so

he can't know very much about electronic structure or molecules or anything of that character, otherwise he'd be able to convert it to power, see. Costs him I don't know how many million bucks to turn over the wheels of one atomic submarine once, you know. And, I think they feed them pills, at relative intervals, and somebody told me – I was very surprised to find out that they only cost three or four times as much as fuel oil.

Of course in space opera one gets used to a little button one slides into the side of a gun that runs the gun all year, you know. Blows mountains down. But – packaged power. So don't be too upset because you think I am asking you to suddenly understand man's scientific – ha – equations in the subject of electronics and electricity. I'm not. I'm just asking you to fall back on the fact of just one thing, that every time you see a motor or any interchange, and so forth, it's got two poles and these two poles are standing there side by side, and that there's a magnetic interchange between these two poles. And as long as these two poles are rigid and don't collapse, why the push-pull in between those two, you can do things with. But it takes two.

Now, to give you how simple this is: take a single electrode on the E-Meter and hold the single electrode, but let the other electrode go to blazes and see if your meter reads, see. And your meter isn't going to read, see. And then take ahold of both electrodes and you'll see that the meter reads, both electro – I'm not talking about a single-hand electrode. If you get a single-hand electrode, it has to be split in the middle. You've got two poles in a single-hand electrode. So you have to have hold of two cans in order to make the meter read. That's to complete the circuit. Well, that's an evidence of the two-pole nature of this universe. And that's all there is to it. And things don't operate one on one – well on one pole. Now I've put myself over the jumps considerably to find out a little bit more about this and solve this a bit better in the earlier – well, I guess it's only a month or two ago. And I sat there with a one-hand electrode – double pole, one-hand electrode – and ran me out a whole actual GPM. It wasn't too gruesome an experience, but I had to find out if these things could be self-audited. And so forth.

Well you can plot goals yourself. I had to find out, see. Because you might get parked on Exnoo, or something of the sort and how – what do you do about it, you know, if you haven't gotten it cleared up and so forth, what does somebody do if he hasn't got an auditor? Is there a road in that particular line? Very well may be one. You'd probably be better off running them out that way than not running them out, you understand? I mean it's that – but it's touchy.

But what was different about that session? No TA. I who get lots of TA when audited by an auditor, running exactly the same materials with no ARC breaks, any kind, nothing – no TA! A little thresh of the needle, RI falling about that far, returning almost at once, blowdown represented by the fact that it didn't return from a little slash that big, you see. Usually find a real RI, it's anything from a half a division to a division and a half tone arm blowdown, see. No TA. Well, this revealed – this revealed something. This is a research exercise. I wouldn't wish it off on you. But it revealed that fact: In the absence of an auditor a pc who gets TA doesn't get TA. I consider this very, very interesting indeed.

And I think it actually describes any pc you've got who isn't getting TA. [laughter] I made that point fast, didn't I! You got it?

So the amount of TA a pc gets is proportional to the two-terminals-ness present in the session. If you haven't got two terminals in a session, you've got no TA. If you've got one terminal in a session, you get no TA, see? And if you've got one and one one-thousandth of a terminal, you get a little TA and if you get one and one one-hundredth of a terminal sitting across from it, you get a bit more TA, and you get your highest-flying TA, of course, when you simply had two terminals. You understand? So that we've got the auditor, sitting there, has to be real to the pc for there to be two terminals in the session. Isn't that – isn't that elementary. In other words the pc doesn't have an auditor, he doesn't have any TA.

Now this is not the auditor's fault. This describes the state of case – the native state of case of the pc. It's only the auditor's fault when the auditor isn't remedying it. Well, I've noticed something very interesting in plotting actual GPMs and in engaging in any new action. I can generally start a gradient on my pc, it starts at about forty-nine or fifty TA divisions down for two and a half hours of auditing and then begins to get some TA and goes fairly rapidly – a session or two later you'll find there's about seventy and then two or three sessions later, about ninety and two or three sessions after that has progressed up to about a hundred and three, you got the idea? In other words, here's an increasing amount of TA.

Pc is not introverted now on the newness of this exercise and activity and so therefore is more easily able to have an auditor – you got... less introverted into what's being done and more capable of having an auditor. So a new process to which the pc is very strange is also a factor in addition to the auditor. The pc is sufficiently introverted – he doesn't see his auditor, so to the degree he doesn't see the auditor he doesn't have TA, you understand? He's so – so involved with this mental exercise he's trying to do that he doesn't notice anybody else is around. And then the next session he's not that involved with the same exercise, don't you see, he's a little more familiar with it, so he's got a little more auditor, and the next session why he's even less involved with it and he's got more auditor, don't you see. And so you get a gradual increase of TA independent of whether the process is doing him any good or not.

Now therefore we were... Boy, I'm really dragging them out of the old history icebox here – but therefore we've got our "only one." Remember, "only one." Mind you, today I'm handing you significances and terminals and here's the "only one." And the "only one" gets no TA. Ain't nobody else alive. See. There being nobody else around why, naturally – he very easily assesses on self, by the way. That would be a natural assessment for such a person. There isn't anybody else. So he doesn't get TA. Funny part of it is, he wouldn't have had any TA years ago, either. That's the point you miss. It's very easy for an auditor to miss that the pc has been going through life without auditing, in the condition he is found in, in the session. And very often – very often, the auditor adds it all up that it just happened, just this instant, in the session, the pc is like that now, you see, and he doesn't quite wrap his wits around the fact that the pc's inability to answer the auditing question, the pc's complete driftiness and dispersal and inspecificity on the subject of anything under the sun, has been characteristic of this pc for quite a while. And he is just confronting a life product. This is where this pc has gotten to.

In other words, charge has accumulated on this individual to a point where he no longer understands that anybody else exists. See, charged up to a point where there is no reality on a second terminal anyplace. So, therefore we never get an energy interchange with anybody else. We've got a standing wave – an animated standing wave – walking through the society that blocks all incoming and all outgoing flow. Well, that's how he's trapped. There is his own trap – tailor-made – right where he is at. No flow. Now, he could be stuck on a win or on a series of loses. He could always talk to Joe, but Joe is dead. So he solves this by being in continuous communication with Joe. This, of course, denies him any other terminal. Because if people aren't Joe, they're nobody. See, that's one way it can happen.

And the other way it can happen, of course, is – he wasn't in communication with Joe either. Or anybody else ever, so just the fact that something might tick him a little bit that it might exist, causes him to clam up. It's like the psychiatrically treated patient who had learned through long treatment in psychiatry to keep his mouth shut.

Well, that's what life has taught this boy, you see. You mustn't be there and you mustn't communicate. So nothing else is real. And he is very, very heavily charged. Now, keyed-in are a lot of actual GPMs and so forth, but he's not capable of reaching in any direction to achieve these. Tremendous key-ins involved here and we're still talking now about the Levels II on up.

To get TA we would have to rehabilitate other-terminalism. And at II, we would do it with pronouns, because we can't assess – you can't assess at Level II – it would have to be "object" or "them" or, you know, "something," – "recall a time you communicated with something," you know, ARC Straightwire, that sort of thing.

At III you would move into a nebulous zone of no assessment, but observation. Actually, it's observation by assessment. We have worked out a Level III assessment which is a whole intensive. Just keep going over everything with the pc that is on this consecutive list. And you just discuss each one of these points with the pc and at the end of the discussion, of course, you do have – you have come up with a lot of conclusions but the pc has probably blown them by cognition by this time. In other words a dig-out, so you – you could make Level III – as close as you could come to an assessment would be do the whole thing by assessment. You know, do nothing but discuss what really at Level IV becomes an assessment. See, you dig the whole thing out by discussion. But then you don't do anything much with what you dig out, because it wasn't to assess to a certain end or a product anyway.

You were doing this, we were talking about it, it was fitted into glum areas and that sort of thing. You get what I mean, in other words it's just by going back and forth by meter steering and that sort of thing – we would finally wind up there. Well, there's better ways to go about this.

Along with a terminal we get a period of time. Time is the single source of aberration. The wrong mass at the wrong time or the right mass at the wrong time and this thing will lock up at any time. Time is very important. Very, very, very important. So much so that if a person has a somatic, if we simply date the somatic, it'll ordinarily fall away. Quite interesting. That's putting it in its proper time proportion. This is an interesting method of destimulation. Because all restimulation depends on a mistake in time.

Pc thinks it is Tuesday, last week. And Tuesday last week he had – he barked his shins. So he's made a mistake in time. So he has a pain on a Tuesday a week later, in his shin, because he thinks it's Tuesday a week ago. It's not actually sufficiently difficult to be able to teach – the time aberration. And therefore it gets very easily overlooked by an auditor. It's not something that you can easily teach. Once you've said he's made a mistake in time or there's a lie about time connected with the thing, you've just about said it, see. He thinks it's Tuesday last week. Now – now you can go out and you teach all sorts of things about engrams and everybody gets all bogged down into the mental image picture of the whole thing and so forth – the basic lesson you are trying to teach and the reason you dragged in these other things is the pc thinks it's Tuesday last week.

He actually can't have a somatic. Well, he's got a headache, you see, in 1964. How can he have a headache in 1964 and why does he have a headache in 1964? Well obviously the headache came from someplace. This is one point where medicine and ourselves part company. Medicine considers all injury sourceless. Injuries do not have sources. Psychosomatics have no sources. There can be malfunctions without cause. That's sort of a grim, hopeless, apathetic look at it, isn't it? No, we claim the headache, don't you see, has a cause, see. And the basic cause of the headache is a mistake in time. Time errors.

He hit his head in 1960 and he has a headache in 1964. Why? Well, because he thinks it's 1960, of course. So, therefore, you date the somatic accurately to 1960, and the mis... the proof of the pudding is in the metering. You date this thing – you date this thing and he ceases to have a headache. Gor, this is cool! You can do this – a lot of people have experienced this weird phenomena, particularly when it's well done. The only thing that keeps you from doing it well is that if it's been wrongly dated you'll get the date of the wrong date. See. That's the – about the only thing. You date another mistake in time. And this is the most baffling of all baffling experiences to an auditor, if he doesn't know that he can get a beautiful date on a wrong date.

Let's say the pc last Tuesday said it was last Friday. So you'll get the date of last Friday. Unless you straighten it all out and remove that. It's very easy to detect, don't you see. And that's how you miss. And that's about the only way you miss in dating somatics and getting rid of them. You always get rid of the somatic if you accurately date it. But what gets in your road is the fact that the pc has been there ahead of you. Pc has already wrongly dated it and you're liable to find the pc's wrong date or you can find the date when the pc wrongly dated it. And then this is overburdened on the actual date. So you find these others and then you re-date it and then it – pretty soon you come up and say, "Well, the E-Meter doesn't accurately date because I've gotten three dates for this one incident." You didn't realize you got the time when the pc wrongly dated it – first you got the wrong date the pc gave it, then you got the date when the pc wrongly dated it and then you got its right date, see.

Now, in view of the fact the pc may have wrongly dated it four times, you see, it can look very involved. But you can straighten that out. You can say, "Well, is this when you dated it?" or "Is this the date you dated it to?" or – see, something like that. You can straighten it out, within those limits. Why, you get this weird fascinating phenomenon of the fellow has a horrendous psychosomatic and you find out that it was on October the third,

1957, and bang and it sort of goes zzzzzz, like a little punched balloon and it's gone. Where'd it go? What happened? Well, you just discovered its source.

Now, in view of the fact that you cannot run terminals – in view of the fact you can't easily run terminals that have not been accurately assessed – you mustn't really play around with terminals that haven't been well assessed, you get yourself into a lot of trouble. If somebody doesn't know anything about assessment at all, who is busy assessing something, then comes up with his product and runs it you can expect hash. You know, the pc is protesting like mad, "billycans." He never heard of them! He never heard of it and you keep getting this read. It's because an E-Meter's a charge-meter, not a lie detector or truth detector – all it detects is charge. That's all it detects – charge. It's a charge-meter. And so, of course, if your pc is all heavily charged up on the fact that he's insisting it is not "billycans" on the list, you of course will get the result "billycans" and then you are running what you should have been running protest on, in the session and you're saddling him with "billycans" because it read so well. You see it's just a lousy job of assessment, that's all, see.

Well, that's where that gets you in trouble. So therefore, at Level III, whatever other process we use, we prepcheck at Level III, and so forth, we prepcheck at Level III, and do other – many processes at Level III, but I don't think that very much assessment should be brought in at Level III. We are given this beautiful thing of time factor. And so at III we could do a lot of tricks with time. Time factor. So we get a Problems Intensive as a very nice process at III. Now, of course, that takes a sort of an assessment, doesn't it? It takes an assessment of sorts. But it's an assessment which is then run for a long time, so it can be done by a higher-level auditor on the basic assessment. They had to do this in HGCs all over the world. They've had to take a higher-class auditor and get them to check out and do the Problems Intensive assessment. And where they did that, assessments were very, very successful, and their Problems Intensives were successful, you see. But where they didn't do that, why, it wasn't successful.

But time factors are something that can be used at Class III. The present time problem done any way, shape or form, don't you see, where the individual keeps saying he has a present time problem, and then whatever the present time problem is with, in terms of a terminal, you prepcheck. That's elementary, see. He has a present time problem with his wife, all right, now he talked about that in itsa and it got better, but by this time it's worse again, so you prepcheck "a wife" don't you see, something like that. Very arduous. But it's what the pc says and what the pc seems to be worried about.

So you can get – you – continuing to use repetitive processes and doing Prepchecks on things selected on terms of time or using – like your Problems Intensive – or using, just the other side of the problem. "Who's the problem with?" you see. Any other old problems – any other old problems process we ever had, see. We've got a grab bag right there. Now, if you throw into that class any other grab bag process we ever had, why it makes a class. Anything that mounted up to that.

Then we move into IV and we make IV a clearing level. Now, I'd like more time to talk to you about Class IV and so forth, but let me say that the technology of the 20th ACC – perfectly accurate technology – and that Prepchecking was probably much more successful

do you know! We're going to find ourselves on that list something we can prepcheck. So we knock a Prepcheck into this thing, *bokity-bok*, and we prepcheck it up to a point of high-level cognition where it just simply blows – and we won't get TA action after that – or we simply process the TA action out of it, keeping our session rudiments in. Well, that's great. We've had it. We're not going to do a single other cotton-picking, doggone thing with that goal and we're not going to do anything more with that terminals list. We're now going to find another goals list and we're going to find another terminal. Got it?

We flatten these things reasonably, but try not to plow the pc in. We're going to wind up at the end of this run with a completely free needle and a Clear. But that's actually all the mechanics there are to it. Providing we never upset the pc about what goal he's to put on the list, don't you see. He can put any goal on the list, providing we keep those goals lists, too, for later on. And providing we don't overlist madly and providing we get a terminal there that gives us some nice needle action and then providing we just mildly prepcheck this terminal. We're going to have ourselves a free needle.

Why? The only thing that can key in the actual GPM is the mass with a significance. Because an actual GPM is a mass with a significance, see. So we get the mass with the significance that's a noun, we know we haven't got an RI for an actual GPM. So if we prepcheck it we've got the thing which is keying in an actual GPM. So the goal we found on the list is thousands of miles from being an actual goal. We couldn't care less. We're not doing anything with it. See, it's some kind of a goal. Even if it's just an item on the list.

And it is probably the lock that is keeping the actual in, see. So we could probably strip these things off left and right. Now, if you're careful as you go along over such a route of clearing – if you're very careful – only to choose things which have recognizably good reads that don't come from a big protest or argument with the pc, see, this thing has got a read, so forth, there it is, see. And as long as we don't get it up that we're hotting it up to get actual honest-to-God real goals and start arguing with the pc as to whether they're actual goals or re-goals or something because – huh! They're all just items on a list. He's had this kind of a goal at some time or another, don't you see? You'll probably find he's very interested in one of those goals on the list and another one he doesn't want to have anything to do with, well, respect his wishes. Don't get in an argument about it. You have to handle it softly. You have to handle it gently. Otherwise you're liable to get your hands on something there and invalidate it and turn yourself on some somatics you'll wish you didn't have anything to do with.

So lightly, lightly. And all you're trying to do is destimulate the pc and you make yourself a Clear. And that's an R4 process, revised, from what we know now, to deliver a destimulated Clear. I was talking about this earlier – I didn't give you an active formula many months ago, by which to produce this. But you notice I did revive the HCS certificate and have been talking about this level. Now if this terminal is what you sum up a service facsimile into – this was probably what they were trying to make guilty – see, make right, make wrong, O/W, any of these things would fit in, you see, make guilty is the service facsimile cousin of O/W. See, make self right and others wrong, well, that adds up to making somebody guilty. You're probably having all of that delivered into your paws, except you're finding now what they're trying to make guilty, don't you see. So there's another possible family of processes

that add up into that particular lineup. Just pointing out the service facsimile has something to do with this, not that you necessarily use it. But you aren't left high and dry with no result.

This thing won't prepcheck – well, obviously then somebody's trying to make it guilty. Gives you the other line of process which you could use at that time, see, you could use your old service facsimile processes, you know. How would you make yourself right about it and how would you make others wrong about it. But that would be a rather extreme look. I don't think you'll run into that very, very hot and heavy, but that's the only thing I can think of that you would run into.

If you've got a noun, it's neither going to be a terminal nor an oppterm because it doesn't exist in actual GPMs. So you haven't got to worry about, any of that old stuff that we were worried about at that time. So I've given you actually a very simple rundown. List a little reasonable goals list, find a goal pc is really interested in and then just list nouns of who or what would have it and then prepcheck the result, and if you don't drive the pc into a hole with a bunch of out mid ruds and choosing the wrong item and only getting goals by protest, why, you're going to wind up after you've done this a few times – why, you're going to wind up with a lot of keyed-out GPMs and you're going to wind up with a Clear. So there is the manufacture of a Clear by destimulation, the destimulated Clear. And this is – be very, very handy to use.

This doesn't particularly invalidate anything else you know in the way of processing. I'm just showing you there is a route based on materials which are more or less in your hands, with this one addition that I've finally gotten the common denominator that isn't present in actual GPMs and so won't key them in. Which is very, very handy to have. So, therefore, that's very safe to process. And with that – with that squared away – why, of course the road is open to ordinary, run-of-the-mill Book One type destimulated Clears .

You can key out actual GPMs. Actual GPMs are keyed in only by masses with significance and oddly enough there will only be one mass with a significance in any given environment that is really raising the devil with the pc. He's got thousands of them apparent, they're all associative. There's only one that's keeping it stirred in. So eventually you will move along the line till you will finally fall into that one. And you find out the reason he can never walk down a main street and that sort of thing is because of the glass in the shop windows. And he thought it was the traffic and he thought it was policemen and he thought it was city life and he thought it was most anything. He thought it was his shoes, and so on. No, it was the glass in shop windows. And you'll eventually fall into that category and find out what it is that makes it impossible for him to walk through the city streets. This is the kind of thing that you run into with this.

But now, there – there is a map and design of perfectly safe, useable processes which will take the individual from Level IV up toward Level V, so he's got enough reality and is unburdened enough so that he can understand and you can get him searching for and actually finding actual GPMs so as to run out the bank in its entirety. The thing is to fish him out of the bank so that he can then go back and finish up the bank. All right?

That's it, thank you!

Lower Levels Of Auditing

(originally: The Road to Perfection)

A lecture given on 17 March 1964

What's the date?

Audience: March the 17th.

Seventeenth. Seventeen Mar., 14. Is that it? All right.

Well, going to talk to you today about some more lower levels of auditing¹². First I'd like to tell you something about the existing world situation. Very amusingly.

I've had a gamble on time going that began in January of 1963. And it was just a time gamble, no more – no less: Could I complete the job before the roof fell in? See, that was the time gamble. I took the calc... I knew I could complete the job. But could I do it before the roof fell in, you see?

There were many factors involved in this and it begins much earlier, actually, wondering whether or not there's going to be another war – saber rattling and atom-bomb sizzling going on and so forth. But the time schedule was mainly dependent on Scientology organizations and Scientologists – how long they could hold out? You know?

I took a calculated risk and neglected organizations and Scientologists during the period from January of 63, on through till, actually, last month or something like this. I started doing something about it in November, really, but not with enthusiasm. I started really crowding it home along about January, a year later. And that was simply to conserve administrative time and put all the time on research, making about an eighteen-hour research day, you see? I cancelled out all social activities, all foot-on-the-mantel sort of activities, cut down my breathing [laughter] and devoted every tiny scrap of time I possibly could to the research line, trying to complete a job which, of course, could not ordinarily have been completed in years and years and years – the amount of work which still had to be done.

And Mary Sue caught the brunt of that. For long periods of time there, she didn't have enough sleep to bother about. But we – we got ourselves straightened out. And August – August marked the point of "could be done." "Could be done." Here – here are the materials – we have our hands on them and so forth. September, those materials were understood, but not labeled or communicated. And the period from then, September of 63, on through till January were pretty well devoted to codification. The relay and communication, that is the labeling of

¹² The blue marked texts have been cut off in the original tape.

the material, the defining and looking exactly at what you had, putting it together in a way that could be communicated, you see, and forwarding it through to a conclusion.

This was, of course, all on the level of OT. Now, when we say OT, why, your imagination can just run riot. I mean, wh... what do we mean, OT? Well, I don't know. Think of something terrific – that's OT, see? What exactly is the zenith? Well, of course, there is none. It's – it's an infinity of up. And you can't really put a label on it and say, "Well, it stops here." Because the truth of the matter, it doesn't stop.

But exactly what did one have to do, one, to make an OT? Exactly what did one have to do to get the materials in a communicable form, labelled and so forth? And then, what did one have to do to communicate the materials so they could be understood and used? These were the immediate problems which were faced. And I think you'll agree that was a hat full of problems.

Now, at the same time, it was necessary to form a bridge from the individual, you might say, on the street on through to reaching distance to these materials. And that had to be solved, too. And, oddly enough, that is the more difficult problem.

That problem is now proving more difficult than the upper-level problem. Because, of course, with one's attention very closely devoted to the idea of exactly what it is and exactly where you can go and exactly what you have to do to come along and tell somebody how to get rid of his sciatica or something, at a level of auditing he can comprehend, so that he can get a reality, so he will move forward toward it is quite a stretch of wits.

Because you know what his sciatica is, you see? He's got a GPM or item that's out of place like crazy, see? He's going along in life giving himself a wrong goal all the time, you know, something like this. He's doing something goofy with Class VI materials. That's for sure. But of course, he's out of communication on the subject and you can't talk to him on this subject. It doesn't make any sense to him.

Edgar, I think, came as close to packaging that up as anybody. Had some fellow saying, instead of, "Is it your own goal?" you see, "Well, is it something you did?" And instead of "an implant GPM," saying, "something was done to you," you know? He was dividing these things up. And I think he cured somebody's long-standing TB or something. He cured TB with this. Just – not – not using "implant" or "actual GPM" or anything like that, but just saying, "Well, was it something you did?" and "Is it something that was done to you?" Rather terrific job he did. I think about thirty-five minutes of auditing on this sort of thing.

But exactly how does one get somebody up to reaching distance? You see, it's a – it's – it's a steep mountain, when you get there. It's – it's a steep, very exacting Mont Blanc. But as you have often noticed, walking in foothills, every time you come up to a hill and you say, "I have now climbed the hill," at the moment you reach the crest, you see a bigger hill, you see? Well, in this particular case, when you get to the last hill, you see Mont Blanc, you see? Now, we've got to scale *that*, you know?

But these little foothills become progressively bigger as an individual walks along. And unless he's walked securely up the hill to the crest of the hill, he's so discouraged when he sees the next hill that he quits. So, it's a progress of wins, in other words. And you have to

have materials which cause the individual to walk forward with wins. Well, what is a win? Well, if you – he accomplishes something that he wants to accomplish. That in essence is a win. And a lose is, he fails to accomplish something that he wanted to accomplish.

And it all comes back to this basic thing, what does he want to accomplish? So we're actually back on Class VI materials, aren't we? Rather – rather fabulous. If you want to turn on a feeling of sadness and apathy on a pc – I won't give you the process because for once in my life I haven't got my notes, but it's in Mary Sue's notes – an exact process that does this. But it just takes up his little goals in life and straightwires those that have been blunted, see. The idea of what's he tried to do that he failed to do, don't you see, and that type of process. I'm just giving it to you as a process type, not as the exact process. But the exact process does exist. In fact there are two of them.

And this is quite remarkable, because this repairs his ability to win. A brand-new thought to you, isn't it? I mean, to repair a man's ability to win. You don't realize that that pc that you get in off the street, who just came along for the curiosity, you know – because Anabelle had some processing and it made her feel better – may be unable to win at anything. And you're trying to give him a win, and he can't win at anything! See, he might be able to inherit a million bucks and he still wouldn't have a win, because he can't win.

So you get fooled, because you estimate that if this man had a million bucks, you see, then he would have a win. Well, then you could cut it down further and say, "Well, it's because he can't have a million bucks." No. It's because he can't have a win. He can't win.

So no matter what you did for him, get rid of his sciatica, arthritis, or anything else – no matter what you did for him – you would find this individual in a state that he couldn't win. So therefore, although he's gotten rid of his arthritis... He can have "no-arthritis," you see? He can have the item "no-arthritis," you know, in life, but he can't have the win of "no-arthritis." See. So therefore, he cannot go on with you, as the auditor, in any very good frame of mind. Don't you see? That's how beaten to his knees you'd find the bulk of the population.

So therefore, when we talk about mounting these little foothills one by one and finding another foothill a little bit bigger until we get to the mountain, we are actually dealing with a progress or gradient of wins. And it actually is a much more difficult job to get somebody from Level 0 to Level V than it is to get him from Level V all the way through.

I think that you would have a horrible idea of trying to walk up the easiest slope with some girl, let us say, who has French spike heels and they're made out of abrasive-type material, you see. I mean the type of material that just rips to pieces, you know. If you get a spot of water on it, it goes, you know. And she can't walk very well anyway, you see, and she's wearing one of these French skirts that permits a stride of a sixteenth of an inch, you see. [laughter] And she's held together with glue and sticky plaster, you know, the makeup is on. And if the slightest drift of wind came by, it would mess up her hair. And trying to get this girl over a little bit of rough terrain – see, now that's about your first – look at your first step.

Now, when you're taking this person from V up through VI, you're dealing with an experienced mountaineer in spiked boots who's perfectly decent with a rope, you see, and an alpenstock and so forth. And you'll find, actually, that it's much safer to climb Mont Blanc with him than it was to walk up this gentle slope with this girl. [laughs]

So those are the problems – those are the problems of the progress of Scientology. But the political problem which we were faced with is, we're facing a world which is more and more intolerant, and which is more and more bent on giving people no wins.

Literature is getting more and more apathetic. And the – a hero is something nobody could even imagine in these times, you see? And it's all pretty horrible and it's all pretty grim and man is born to trouble and dies in more trouble. You know? That's the motto. Win has almost dropped out of popular literature. You find – you find in even some of the more adventurous tales today, that the treasure is in the cave but somehow or other at the end of the story, they don't ever get it out.

And that is merely the acceptance level of win. That is all that is. And the acceptance level of win dwindles away to practically nothing. It can get to this point: "Nothing horrible happened to me today." And that is a level of win, see.

You've sometimes seen a pc set a goal like that, you know? [laughter] Session goal: To get through it somehow. But that's actually a pretty high level of win, compared to how low it can get on a social level.

Well, to get back to what I was telling you earlier, the calculated risk was, could I do it in time? Could I do it in time? And I did it in time. And we arrived. And this is about the first time it's ever happened in Scientology. But sitting down in Scientology Library and Research files and available to the thirty students who are on that course right now, is practically every scrap of material that could be assembled on the subject of VI. That's a fabulous thing. You say, "Well, naturally, get a piece of stuff like this, we could research for a long time, get an awful lot of data together, and there's a lot more things to know, and all that sort of thing." That is not true at Level VI right now.

I can tell you – tell you little things like, well, this is an actual goals pattern from beginning to end. Find a little thing like this. I just found that the – a create-type goal is never an oddnumbered goal. It is always an evennumbered goal. That create, therefore, in life itself, is twisted into a junior status compared to destroy. Destroy is considered superior to create, believe it or not. That's in the levels of Class VI, see?

Well, that's an interesting philosophic observation; all it does is make it a little easier for the auditor to plot the goals on the pc. Gives him a better start, so that – it gives him a little tiny clue, if the – if the pc is trying to plot a create-type goal, you know – no matter what the wording of the goal is – why, he would be foolish to try to plot it in the odd-numbered slots. But if he's trying to plot a destructive-type goal and so forth, he would be foolish to try to plot it in the even-numbered slots.

You see, that's just making life just a little easier. But that's about the level of advance that we are at there, a little odd bit that doesn't amount to a great deal, but is interesting to an auditor who is trying to get a goals plot together.

The one thing we don't know is, is we don't know how many goals patterns there are. But at a guess, there is a very finite number of actual goals patterns. That is, they're – they aren't random forever, which I consider is quite interesting. I mean, there are probably very few – very few. And so we can look forward to some time in the future when we say, "He's

pattern A," you know? "He's pattern B." If he's pattern B, well, then his goals are *brr brr brr brr brr brrp*. We have to find them all and put them all in Place, but it's just *pow, pow, pow, pow, pow*, requiring very little of the pc.

All of which gives a great certainty, because the diff... most difficult point in any of this is finding and plotting goals. You get one of those goals out of line, you'll wrap a pc around a telegraph pole the like of which you've never heard of, man. But it's interesting news that there are probably just a few of those. But you get what the level of advance is. We have all the technology, find them all and put them together, there's an infinite number of patterns, you see? These are little bonuses.

Well, anyway, after – here we are thirteen months, fourteen months – about fourteen months after the kickoff on this and the job is all done and wrapped up. And I've been involved for the last month or so, particularly strenuously, trying to put together and – organizational difficulties in auditor organizations and relationships and classification materials and consulting people about how they wanted classification to go and doing various things of this particular kind. That's been the more recent activity.

And with governments leaning all over Scientology and looking down our throats – for instance, the probability – Mary Sue was always curious. She always said, "The government wants something out of Scientology." She's always saying this. "The government wants something. There's some reason for this." And we finally found it. They want the E-Meter for front-line combat troops. I thought that was very interesting. Yeah, it's pretty crazy, isn't it? Typical.

You see, they get so much infiltration – this is serious – they get so much infiltration in modern warfare of the type that is being fought, that they can't tell friend from foe. So they're going to equip front-line combat troops with portable lie detectors. And, of course, there's only one portable lie detector in the world – the E-Meter. I knowed something was getting those chilluns, you see?

But apparently they have some kind of an interest in it. And you would – a thief or a criminal never can ask you for something. They've got to steal it. And I wasn't saying all the governments are thieves or criminals. Don't get me wrong. I think there's one or two that aren't.

I know this is about the wildest curve you ever heard of and it's completely unbelievable. You can see a soldier walking around carrying an E-Meter. Before he shoots the guy, you see, he puts the electrodes in his hands, you know? Bunch of psychotics. I know, it doesn't sound right. But it sounds – it sounds just exactly what a government would do.

Now, in view of the fact that nobody's going to help them run these things and nobody's going to tell them how they operate and so forth, I don't imagine their program will be very successful. But I don't think they're trying to be successful because I think their acceptance of win is a total crash. They know they've won because they're lying there with bits of meat splattered around the landscape, see. That's a government level of win.

Now, the situation can become very acute in the next year or so in Scientology, because, of course, we've got to win back any lost ground and put things all together and so

forth. But we've made it at this end. But remember, only we here at Saint Hill have any reality on the fact that it's made, see. Only we have an – a reality on that.

Earlier, Saint Hill training did a great deal for organizations and auditing all over the world. Levels and standards of auditing have just come up enormously in the last couple of years. So that I read, now, criteria from organizations and auditors around and – as to what's gone wrong with a case or what's gone wrong with a situation. It's very smart. It's very intelligent. They know what they're doing on that sort of thing.

So we've put their basic auditing into good condition. Now I've got to move some of the old processes, like Prepchecking and R2H, ARC break stuff and that sort of thing back into their hands. And we've got to put together this little gradient of wins and match that up and we will have this thing made. Because there isn't much doubt of turning out OTs at Saint Hill. As a matter of fact, my estimate to OT now, is in terms of hundreds of hours.

And it's very interesting, had a new – new datum. Recounted the number of actual GPMs on the track. Got rid of a few and was able to buck up to the tiger and count him by the nose, and there are only about ten series of goals, not fifteen thousand. Ten series, making only about four hundred and twenty GPMs. Not many. That's not many at all. And in view of the fact that you have a pattern, you could knock those off – a slow auditor could knock them off at about one every hour and a half in the early stages of the case, which quickly cuts down to every hour, which quickly cuts down to about every half-hour, see? So there's your case estimate. It's the number of time – long – length of time it takes to get a goal plot together plus what? And length of time to run that; you can count it up and you can't get more than five hundred hours no matter how hard you try, see, for a total case.

And we cracked this thing down the middle and crosswise and upside down. And it's been a long, hard haul. And it's been very hard on people in the field and it's been very hard with shifting patterns of processes being carried along the research line, changing organizational staffs and upsets and trying to get people trained and trying to get through, and hanging on somehow and so forth. It's been rough – been rough.

But roughness makes very seasoned people. It is not all loss, see? When you recognize that an individual, moving forward with certainty, will go through a fantastic amount of ramifications and upsets and that sort of thing – if he's moving on a certainty – you don't have to worry too much about how smooth it is. It's just how certain it is.

The hardest part of the problem, though, and what I'm talking to you about in this lecture – the hardest part of the problem – is getting the individual over these little gradients of wins. Gradient scale of wins. Well, this is complicated by the fact that an individual can get into a certain number of ARC breaks and stop auditing. He can – he can stop. He might not stop forever, but he'll stop.

Now, you recognize... Let me – let me make a few technical points. Let me – suffice to say, we started in January of last year to pour the coal on, we're in March of this year and we have won. And as soon as people find it out, why, everything will start going smooth again. And everything is working forward at a mad rate of speed.

Saturday Evening Post articles or Victorian Parliaments or something of that sort. For instance, Victorian Parliament thought they could completely break the back of Scientology by just shaking it down for counsel's fees all the time, continuing their hearing on and on and on and on and on. Well, I just cracked the back of that, I just wired Peter and told him I'd underwrite his counsel's expenses from here on out, see? Of course, poor Victorian Parliament. Because they'll be sued for every penny of it when we get through.

But the point – the point here is, we've achieved Mont Blanc, and Mont Blanc is surrounded by foothills. And how do we get the people from the paved street, over the foothills at least to the base of Mont Blanc? We haven't got any worries at all once we get them in sight of Mont Blanc. As soon as they've got a reality on where they're going, what they're doing and so forth, they'll go through hell and high water in order to move the rest of the way.

But those early wins – those early wins – they're the problem. There's your mother, or your father, or your relative, or somebody and there they're sitting there and "they don't know." You know, they say it so well. Or they're completely open-minded about it. What occurs at this particular point? Well, you recognize that there's no win available and so you give up. Ninety percent of the time, you give up. And all I'm putting into your hands here is a little piece of technology. What you probably recognize is that a win isn't available, so you stop trying. Or doggedly, you keep on in a frame of mind of realizing no win is available, so therefore, don't create one. Do you see that?

Audience member: Mm-hm.

Now, dissemination totally hangs up on this one problem – the win available. And it hangs up from the auditor's viewpoint; it hangs up from the Scientologist's viewpoint. That's where it hangs up. Doesn't really hang up from the pc's viewpoint. It's our recognition of no win available.

Look how long I kept trying with the US – ha! – the government. I used to write them a letter every now and then. I used to try to do this and that and so forth. I was eventually writing them in a very, very hopeless frame of mind. I mean my – rather antagonistically defensive, hopeless, "To hell with you, if you did reach out your hand I'd probably step on it," you know. That's this – that kind of a frame of mind.

And you just write them off, see? Just write them off. That's your recognition of how much win is available. Which, by the way, is monitored, and not only by the way – but is monitored directly by your acceptance level of a win.

Now, the scale of win – old Chart of Attitudes – the scale of win is a gradient scale and is not expressed in the early Chart of Attitudes. So I'm giving you a brand-new scale here. This scale is vitally important to anybody working in a Central Organization or working as a private auditor or any Scientologist trying to get anywhere with Scientology. This is the one that knocks his head off or lets him go over.

Now, there's two sides to this scale – two sides to this scale: an outward win of assistance and an inward win of being assisted. Now, it's a win for anybody if he assists. And it's a lose for somebody if he doesn't assist. This is all on the basis of failed intention – and we'll reduce it down to that in a moment.

You intend to help Aunt Hattie with her lumbosis and you give her some auditing and maybe she gets over it, but she doesn't think she has. She doesn't think it did her any good. What happened? Now what does that demand of the auditor? It demands that he has more confidence in his own observation than in the pc's estimate of the situation. It requires a certainty of observation, without reassurance from the pc.

Now, that's an old datum, but it's terribly interesting to get involved with because it means that you are so certain that you have accomplished something with the pc that you do not need the pc's statement that it has happened in order to be sure of what you have done. Now, frankly, that's an almost impossible level. But if you fall short of that level, you then go into agreement with the pc's acceptance of wins.

What's his acceptability of a win? And if you're expecting that pc to tell you that you have won – and that pc, being down scale, has a very low acceptance index of wins – you then will be made to feel that you have loses.

I doubt that there's an auditor here that's done any auditing at all that hasn't at one time or another run into this one. We get rid of Aunt Hattie's lumbosis for her or we got this person so they no longer have screaming nightmares or something and they tell you, "Well, that didn't help much."

They have various ways of saying it. "It was probably the Bromo Seltzer," you know. "I'm no longer taking the Bromo Seltzer."

And you say, "What the hell are you talking about?" you know? "Here I sweat my skull to the bone and – over you as a case, and there you are," and so on.

Well now, comfort, a relaxed frame of mind, any such acceptable level of serenity, you might say, being at ease and relaxed about things, requires that you know the exact situation and know that it is the exact situation. The whole component part or all the component parts of this thing called peace of mind or serenity or poise or self-confidence or anything else depends on the individual's... I mean – I mean true self-confidence, not walled-in, maniacal idiocy, see. The house is burning and you say, "Well, I'm perfectly happy."

This is the type – this is what this finally got to in India, you know. You – your Indian guru came down scale pretty fast over a period of time. And his idea is that you should be able to look any disaster in the teeth, you see, and be completely serene. Well, that's insanity, man! That doesn't apply, you know. In other words, he had it redefined into the ability to endure or the ability to suffer. It was no longer – no longer what it started out to be. And that is, you must be able to conceive the truth of any situation.

That is the true and complete answer to self-confidence, serenity, any one of these other desirable things which all adds up to simply peace of mind. Peace of mind doesn't even mean an inactive frame of mind, you know. It just means, well, you're calm about it, you know?

Now, that – knowing the truth of the existing situation – is really the only thing which supports self-confidence.

Now, it may be virtuous to be truthful and it may not be. We're not speaking of virtue; we're simply speaking of the – of the aspects of truth. But most departures from the truth have to do with an attainment of a point of safety. An individual departs from the truth in order to obtain a self-security or something of that sort. Either for the other fellow or himself, you see. Those are departures from the truth. That's a fear of what might happen to him.

Man is terribly complicated in his civilization by having these points very out – very, very, very out. For instance, civilization, at every point, can force upon the individual, lies. In other words, they can make the individual lie.

The – it begins with the social lie and then there's the police lie and then there's this and that. All the uncomfortable things that can happen to you if you were to tell the truth.

If you were just to tell the truth consistently and continually in the existing civilization, according to the standards of the existing civilization, you probably couldn't live twenty-four hours. See, in the first place, overfrankness would get you in trouble and cost you probably lots of your friends. These are the various arguments which have been offered by past philosophers and so forth. If you said nothing but the truth for twenty-four hours, why, you would lose everybody you knew, and you would probably wind up a suicide or something.

But it's built – even that philosophy is built to discourage an individual from an announcement of truth. Well, when one fails to announce truth, one is then, to that degree, protecting a lie. And thus, one begins to surround himself with lies in his social atmosphere. This is very esoteric. This is rarefied air of philosophy I'm giving you here, but it's nevertheless very germane. It's something that – something that you should look at.

The society, then, by various tricks and mechanisms, brings an individual into a state of tolerating lies or aiding and abetting lies and so forth and adds some virtue to this. And then "recognition of the truth" gets converted into "enduring the truth." You see. See, the "I'll just stand here and recognize the house is on fire and then I will be all right," you see? Well, this is getting pretty wild. It's taking very upscale characteristics and moving them down very low scale.

If you stand in the middle of a burning house, the recognition of your self-confidence, the recognition of the truth of the situation and so forth, is not going to keep you from being burned. As long as you're in a body and wearing flammable clothes, that I can guarantee. You're going to be roast long pig in no time.

So, what's – what's this thing? What's this thing we're talking about? Recognition of the truth in any existing situation alone has the power to as-is that situation. And very often one is confronted, without a gradient scale, with so much truth that one cannot assimilate it or as-is it. And then one gets swamped with it.

Well, this – this fellow's always had an unhappy marriage – let's look at this one – he's always had – always had an unhappy marriage and he's often wondered why. And actually, only the finding of the truth about the marriage – only the finding of the truth about the marriage – could bring a calm marriage about. Right? Or bring a calm frame of mind.

Well, that's an easy thing to state and so forth. But now let's take this fellow and he's got all of his normal aberrations and upsets and frailties and weaknesses and so forth and we

suddenly unload on him the reason why the marriage has been such a failure. You know, he get – he gets it, he finds it out all in one and one-half seconds, see? He is immediately and instantly overwhelmed.

See, that's more truth than he can as-is. Maybe he finds out that his wife has been unfaithful to him for ten years, you see? Something like this. Only it all unloads on him like that. Well, he cracks up. So this, actually, discourages a person from the recognition of truth.

So what is it, really, that brings an individual away from recognizing truth and makes him less clear-sighted? What is it? It's a lack of gradient. That's all. It's just a lack of gradient. It isn't done on a gradient scale. It isn't done one little step at a time.

Time, then, enters into this thing. We take a person who is completely in the middle of the Dark Ages, living utterly under an intolerant church and a ferocious political system and we take this individual, there he is. See, he's in Stygian God-help-us, you see. And we face him up with the situation that man would be better off if he were permitted to be educated and if he had some degree of political freedom.

Well, those are certainly banal truths to us here in the twentieth century. They're certainly banal truths. But believe me, when they hit the French population in the late 1700s, they weren't taken banally. Everybody went nuts! They went mad! France moved out – tried to move out of the Dark Ages into a higher level of truth in two minutes, with no breathing stops, see?

And truth, in that particular instant, taken on such a fast no-gradient, see, too quick, too fast. Man, there were aristocrats hanging from every lamp post, and sans-culottes in every gutter starving to death and on this pile of upset and shock... What actually were they advertising? It was a greater degree of political freedom, you see? That people ought to be educated.

I mean, you get back down to what were they trying to put across in the French Revolution. Well, they actually weren't even trying to put across that they should get rid of the king. They weren't trying to put across many of the factors which have drifted down to us through what is laughingly called a history book. What they were trying to put across is a bunch of fellows had gotten the idea that the Dark Ages had been over for some time, but nobody had been given the benefit of this. And so people ought to be a little bit better informed of things, and the political freedom ought to be a little bit better established. And they, frankly, in the early stages of it would have settled for almost anything. But nobody would give them any degree of truth. The king was very stupid. He could have issued a decree a year or two before he did, you see, that would have given them a certain number of these things and all would have been calm. But no, they were all faced with these situations.

And what turned against them? They got caught right into the middle of "There must be no truth." And the forces of no-truth loomed up over the heads of the French people and they went mad, you see. They had recognized what the truth of an existing situation should be, you see. But it was too great, too fast, no gradients of any kind. Murder, rape, slaughter in all directions and then finally, Napoleon, see? I mean, almost anything happened to them.

So, the situation – the situation is they came back to a very debased state. They were more debased after the revolution than they were before it. Don't forget it.

France, actually, has never been a political entity of any great stability, on a wide plain which is very easy for horsemen or tanks to operate on. And is very susceptible to invasion, at no point really protected by anything. And has therefore been an unstable political entity for a very, very long period of time. But she frankly has never since really ever held up her head amongst the nations of the world – never really since. She isn't right now. I mean, this fellow, Joan of Arc – pardon me – General de Gaulle looks awfully tall for Joan of Arc I... Do you suppose somebody has given him a wrong pitch on a past life? You know, he thinks of himself as Joan of Arc. It's puzzled me for some time. I just wondered if somebody over there hadn't made a misestimate, you know. Got a broken meter. [laughter] Something.

But the point – the point is, that this country has actually never risen to – to any great status amongst nations. And that sounds a very peculiar state, very peculiar to say that, until you realize that the diplomatic language of the world before the French Revolution was French. And no educated man ever spoke in courts of the world or anything but French. Interesting datum, isn't it? French succeeded Latin as the diplomatic language of the world. Here was a great power. They had an empire of a very great size and so forth. And they started going downhill.

Well, they hi... hit too much truth, too little – too little ability to use that truth, to recognize it, no gradient scale of approach to it. No evolution, in other words, from the darkness in which they existed into the light. Somebody just suddenly turned the Klieg lights right straight in their eyes, you see? And they went mad and they actually have never lifted their heads since.

All right. How do you protect an individual, confronting truth and knowledge, from this exact occurrence? Let me call to your attention that we very often don't protect the individual from that. They get ahold of some early work because this work was designed as a – as a research into life and the reason it succeeded is because there were no holds barred. And there was nothing held back. It existed as a study into what was there. Somebody gets hold of a book about exteriorization or something like this, they recognize the truth of the situation, see, like that, and they go right off their hinges.

Then they go around and you can't ever get them to talk to anybody, you see, about communication or you should run a little 8-C on the pc or you should do this or do that. No, this guy, "All you can do is tell him not to be three feet back of their heads," you see. "You got to bang everybody out of their heads," you know and so forth and "I was Joan of Arc," and "Everybody's had a past life," you see and so on. They go rattling on at this mad rate. Well, it's all true, see? It's all true. But they reached there with no gradient and they have no interim reality and actually get no reality on the truth.

So there's another factor which is involved in truth. I know it sounds strange that something else should be involved in truth. There's another factor called reality, which we could define as this philosophical oddity: The ability to assimilate truth. See, reality is the ability to assimilate truth.

And therefore when we talk about assimilation, we must come around to another point: Assimilation is dependent upon cause-distance-effect, or communication.

And then there's such a thing as an even balance of mind, while one is assimilating. And we call that affinity. You have, actually, your factors of affinity, reality and communication bound up in this thing called truth. So, truth is truth. But truth which has no ARC hooked up to it, is denied the individual and can wrong him and harm him.

Truth must go hand in glove with understanding. All the truth in the world can sit in the middle of a park for everybody to gaze at and if there is no potential of understanding of any kind whatsoever, it will not be truth to anyone. It will simply be truth. It's just truth; but not truth to anyone.

So there are two different degrees of truth. And it sounds funny, splitting it up. We'll get into Kant's untenable bailiwick, first thing we know: how things are knowable and unknowable. No, we'll never go that mad. There are things which could never possibly be known by anybody, anyplace and so forth. This – you don't realize it, but you know, that's standard philosophic opinion circa 1964. Nobody's ever bettered it – for idiocy.

Transcendentalism. Do you realize there are things that transcend your ability to understand, that you will never understand, that nobody will ever understand, that they transcend you forever and will always be unknown and so forth? The ego that would write that would be too big to fit in the normal hat. Because how could he recognize it? He's in effect saying, "I am in this benign position, where I understand all this, but you..." [laughter] Wonderful way to make a slave, isn't it? Debar him forever.

Well, fortunately, there are no such things – no such things as unattainable truths. All truths are attainable. We can just reverse transcendentalism. All truths are attainable.

But the work of Lao-Tze, the work of many philosophers in many ages, the work of the adepts, the common activities of a guru in India at this present moment, is totally concerned with the route to truth. How does one approach truth? They say the truth exists. How does one approach it?

That's an interesting point, when you don't know what the truth is. It's saying, "How do you get to Memphis?" without knowing that there is any town called Memphis or even that there are any towns.

Studying only the route to truth, then, with nobody around who has a final concept of what the truth is, is an idiotic activity best relegated to dog kennels.

"Let's all sit down and study how to get to *Rupf*." And then nobody ever asks, "What's *Rupf*?" "What do you mean how to get there?" Not even ask this: "Is it a road across space, measured by time? Is it a space-time journey that we are making? What kind of a journey is this to *Rupf*?"

"Well no, let's just discuss how to get to *Rupf*."

And of course, we get a total bog-down of every philosophic activity, at once. Kant "solved" it. He says you could never know what *Rupf* is. That was a good solution. That kept

a lot of speculation from occurring. The slave master's speculation. I mean, a slave master's operation to prevent anybody from ever reaching anything.

But now we happen to be in an optimum position with regard to this thing. We happen to be in an optimum position. By certain clinical demonstrations which are not necessarily therapeutic in any degree, we can demonstrate such things as exteriorization. We can demonstrate such things, then, as a disconnection, with total reality, between the individual and his body. All right, we can demonstrate, then, that the individual is not a body. We can demonstrate many points of this particular character. So we know where we're going, we're going toward freedom and we're going toward a free individual.

Now, we know additionally that what is, is the creation of such an individual. I don't care if he's the Big Thetan or an average thetan, it's still a creation of such an individual.

We've gone further than this. There's no difference of order of magnitude of life between a man and a vegetable. You wondered why on earth I was playing around with plants. I was trying to see if there were different orders of life that responded on different wavelengths, and so forth. In my own crude way, that was about as close as I could come to testing it out.

Very recently, one of the *great* universities with one of the *great* budgets with one of the – well, we won't go on, on that particular course – have finally discovered that you can train one generation of monocells and have them respond – have the next generation respond to the stimuli that the first generation was trained with. In other words, they're getting something there which they say the memory in the monocell transfers complete into the next generation.

That's better stated than their experiment, because I did those experiments in 1938 and they have not even come up to really interpreting them. Theirs is something like "Life eternal is about to take place via the monocell." They've come to the conclusion that all life is cellular activities and so forth and that cells are made out of mud or something. I don't know what they're – what they think or are up against. But they're about where I was in 38, see.

And they will branch off of that because they will very rapidly run into things which are not digestible as truth, you see, and they won't get their next budget. That's how truth never gets discovered, you see. It's unreal to the people who are giving them the money.

So anyway, we know, then, that certain phenomena exist. And a great many of these phenomena are demonstrable on a research auditing level which we seldom employ today since all that work has been done. So we know what truth we are trying to attain. Now everybody has, to a greater or lesser degree, some sympathetic harmonic with that truth, see. They know these things are true at some level, even the level of feel, do you see?

Now, what's their reaction to that truth? It all depends on how much truth they can assimilate, or how much reality they have on the approach to this truth. So what is life? What is life? Well, we know that it's not a city in the sky nor a spot on a road map. We know that it lives right where the pc's sitting. We know we're continuously in contact with it, so it's not really a journey across time and space. But it's a journey of undoing the lies by which the individual has road-marked himself in.

The lies, the nonvolitional actions, the conditioned responses – if you want to use an archaic term belonging to the nineteenth century. Various things have marked this fellow's road. And he has traveled downward. He's traveled downward. There's a lot of experimental data which exist on the fact that he has traveled downward. The size of the GPM in the third series is unconfoundably larger than the size of the GPM in the current series. In other words, you just go three series back from the present series, you see, and my goodness! This fellow's – you're staring at stuff that must have been made by a much more powerful being, you see? He made it himself. And so you can recognize that he is going downhill; that he is on a downhill road.

Now, we have to find out what mile-marked the downhill road. What put him down to the next curve every time, see? And all we have to do to recover the individual, fortunately – all we have to do to recover him and his ability, by our rationale, is undo these mile-posted turns for the worse. See, what was he doing, repeatedly and continually, that was putting him on downhill?

So we are traveling a road that has been traveled, but traveling it backwards. So we know what this road is. The Way, the Dao, whatever you wanted to call this thing, you see? We know what that road is. It is the road that the individual has followed from a degree of perfection and beingness and selfness – not selfishness, but just being himself – on down to a disintegration, forgettingness, bluntingness, until he's in the state you find him in the pc's chair.

Now, he has traveled that road and all the auditor has to do is walk him back that road. It's already – it's already there. It's all mile-marked, you see? And just get him to the point where he started to make that road downward in order to recover the individual which we know existed to begin with. The potential the individual has sitting right in the chair.

So the road to truth then, adds up to us as the individual potential. The situations in which that individual potential can be lessened – that's all part of the truth. And what has happened actually to this individual – that's all part of the truth. How this individual is related to the remainder of the universe – which is all part of the truth. And what we can do to restore the potential of that individual – and that's all part of the truth.

So, what's truth?

Now, seen from the viewpoint of an auditor – seen from the viewpoint of an auditor – it's what actually happened or the situation which actually exists at any given moment in the state of beingness of an individual. That's truth. Don't say, "Truth is the ultimate that we are seeking to attain." Truth is that which exists!

I know I contradict myself. I once gave a lecture on "The Road to Truth". Well, I might – might better have said, "The Road to Perfection," or "The Road to an Ultimate Truth." You see?

But we're just taking apart this thing as an anatomy. And by doing so we see, although this is a very esoteric discussion indeed – probably been more philosophy, factual and backed up, on the subject of truth stated here in the last few minutes than has ever been stated before on this planet – easily, see? Because it's usually all hedged-up, you see, in so many pitches

and so many directions that people want you to go, so many curves on the line, that you can't separate the wheat from the chaff.

We find ourselves in this then interesting position of knowing where we're going and knowing how to get there and knowing what the road is and knowing the processes that we have to go through and the disciplines which we have to master and execute in order to arrive at that point. All these things we have.

But amongst these things, this is one that we have not mastered: an estimation of the individual's ability to conceive of truth.

Here sits this greengrocer and you tell him something about Scientology. Well now, you might say – be using the word Scientology, but you are talking to him about the road to perfection. You are talking to him about the road to ultimate truth. You are talking to him about the composition of himself. You are talking to him on the subject of Who are you? What do you consist of? What potentials could you have? What potentials have you been robbed of or have robbed yourself of? Where are you going? What is life? What is your relationship to your fellows? What is your relationship on any dynamic? You may be using the word Scientology, but these are the things which you have embarked upon to discuss.

And the unanswered question is, what can he recognize?

Yes, you could throw all the truth down his throat and he might suddenly in a stare-eyed startlement, you see, go about half off his hinges. "What do you know?" You know?

There are several things you can do that perform an overwhump of this particular kind, minor and greater. And there's no reason why you shouldn't do it. I'm not saying there are certain things which you mustn't do.

But if you were to say to him, "Try not to be three feet back of your head," and he banged three feet back of his head, my God, he's standing there looking at this "*Hooh!!* There's an awful lot of truth! I'm me, and it's it! *Pheew!*" A lot of you have had – the old timers around here have had that experience, you know. "I'm me and it's it. Now I know... You know? *Huhh-wuhh. Uhh-uuh!* Yes!" See?

And you've also had this experience, two hours later: "What exteriorization? I wasn't exteriorized. Well, possibly something happened, but I don't know."

Now, you've shot the individual momentarily into the rarefied air of: he could see it, but he couldn't have it. So you can show people things they can't have. And there's how you generate an unreality. You show people truth which they are then unable to achieve, attain or accept.

For instance, if we didn't have a gradient scale now of getting from the man in the street to Class V, we would very soon, within a year or so, find ourselves in a very involved situation of nothing we knew to be true would be true to them. It would only be true to a few of us. We would become very unreal to these people.

Now, if you'll notice there's a common denominator to everything I've been telling you: Hit with too much truth, the individual thereafter degrades. That's a common denomina-

tor to all of this. Common denominator to France, common denominator to you getting off the airplane, any of this sort of thing.

You hit this individual, he exteriorizes, bang! He said, "I'm me. I'm a spirit. I don't have mass. The body is a body. I'm different than it." Two hours later, he's harder to process. Now, what's going on here? Well, it means the individual's acceptance of win, the ability to win, has been excited and has lost in the process. He can't have it. He cannot attain it. This one he can't win. It's too much.

And when I think of saints of olden times, and I'm very sure some of those boys were capable of throwing around the partridges and making the birds all sing in C-minor simultaneously, or something around this, you know. And piling up loaves of bread or driving swine off the Empire State Building. I'm sure there's been this kind of action, you see, in the past because it's potential. Notice that it's the common denominator of the type of action which excites man and which drives him afterwards into a degrade.

Quite interesting: Christians killed more Christians, in one year in Alexandria, than the Roman Empire in its entire persecution of Christianity ever executed. This is the action of a degraded people. Why were these people degraded? Well, they were hit in the teeth with too much miracle. Nobody could ever repeat the miracle. And you show me one method, one method in Christianity – I'm not against Christianity – but you show me one – one method, by which an individual living in a certain way can in actual fact achieve any of the abilities of sainthood.

Why, this is very, very interesting if you look this over. You go around repenting ye, repenting ye, and you go around debasing ye, debasing ye, and all you're going to do is key in a few actual GPMs. You go around turning the other cheek all the time, you're going to introvert. [laughter]

I knew we had it made when a *Saturday Evening Post* article began to paint us as a "dangerous people." There's just a thread going through that of the Scientologist is a sort of a violent fellow. There's this – just this hint coming up. That's very healthy. That's very, very healthy. Because every time a group or movement has been recognized as totally peaceful, everybody has shot them right down like dogs.

I gave you an example of that in one lecture, one day. Jewish people. Poor people. No more peaceful people on Earth. And look what's happened to them. So it's not unhealthy to be thought of that way. But it was interesting that this fellow, without any evidence, could come to these conclusions and so forth. We're not dangerous people. Nobody's just trying to paint it this... but to paint the individual Scientologist as a dangerous or violent person in any way, shape or form is about as far as you can get from truth.

But for the public to tend to believe that or for an individual to start to believe that or a Scientologist start to be fought in some particular line is not an unhealthy sign. That's a very good sign. It means that you're not that introverted.

But our materials – our materials are very prone to lay a great deal of truth out in front of people. Well, it puts you on a withhold not to do so, so there is no slightest reason under the sun to do so. Lay out the truth, but provide the road.

And that road is provided by having levels of acceptable truths or realities that an individual can attain – attainable realities.

In view of the fact that you can't start running him in the next ten minutes up the side of Mont Blanc like a mountain goat, it requires that you establish and rehabilitate his ability to win in some fashion and then increase it in some fashion to eventually achieve the point where he can have truth. And that way you won't just throw everybody around you into a complete, frothing, ecstatic, worshipping apathy. I can't think of anything worse, myself. You may have – you may have different opinions about it. You – when you get them run out, you let me know.

But that is – that is where any philosophy errs. This has been solved in the past: When anybody got ahold of a piece of truth they then built up a hierarchy of secrecy. They then built up a class secrecy level. Well, that will operate in any event because you can't expect somebody who knows nothing about TR 0 and has never audited a pc – to be able to sit in an auditing chair and audit a pc, much less on anything very touchy. So, a certain amount of training and skill – a lot of it – has to exist before that level is attained. This is a self-denying mechanism. This is a mechanism of automatic denial, due to a mere fact that it intervenes some training, you see? And it intervenes some understanding. It takes a while to assimilate the materials involved and so forth.

But outright pitch for secrecy is intolerable. "Well, you can't know that because you are only a Class III." We can hear it now around the Central Organization. The Class IV Auditors have a secret meeting because they're covering materials which shouldn't be known at Level I, you see. I can just see some haggard-looking girl, standing sadly out in the hall and so forth, she's just been ejected because they have found out that she flunked her Class III examinations and she was present in a meeting that – that was now going to take up Technique Zed, you see. And she's not supposed to know that because... If any – if there's any similarity between what I'm talking about and certain orders which exist on the planet, it's purely intentional.

No, the route – the route only demands this. It only demands this of you. It does not matter what you tell people, it does not matter what you show people, it does not matter to what degree you momentarily or temporarily overwhelm a public. That is not the final point. The final point is whether or not you provide for them a gradient scale of acceptable wins and acceptable realities, by which they can progress to a higher state and a better understanding.

And if you can do that, you succeed. And if you can merely shock them out of their boots, you'll inevitably fail.

You see, actually, it doesn't matter what percentage of them does take that route. That doesn't happen to matter. You don't have to have a full, 100 percent sweep, you see.

But that route must exist. And it must exist wide open, not back of narrow, locked, closed doors. Otherwise, you never make any progress toward any ultimate freedom or betterment of affairs, anywhere.

Okay?

Audience: Mm-hm.

Thank you.

Flattening a Process

A lecture given on 19 March 1964

How are you today? Good! Thank you.

What's the date?

Audience: 19th of March.

19 March. 19 March, 14.

All right with you if I begin this lecture now? [laughter]

What would you like to know about today? Anything you want to know? [laughter]

Well, in view of the fact that you have no preference, I'll talk to you about auditing. And this is some of the basic know-hows of auditing.

Somewhere along the line, many an auditor lays aside some of his basic information on the subject of auditing. He hides it under his E-Meter, or something of the sort, and starts doing something silly and then wonders all of a sudden why he's having trouble. And it's very interesting how silly some of these things can be.

Now, there *was* a subject called "flattening a process." Now, this has been mostly forgotten. It's even part of the Auditor's Code, but it gets forgotten. It gets forgotten.

And what you need to know about this – what you need to know about this is that there are two aspects to ending a process. There are two aspects to this thing, and they are both concerned with, *What are you doing with the process?* That's the main question. What are you doing with the process?

Well, what you are doing with it tells you how to end it and how you can end it. And these two things are: you're trying to fix up the pc so he can be audited – that's number one; and number two, you are trying to audit the pc. And they give you two different endings.

Now, you can see at once that number one is basically concerned with rudiments.

"You got a present time problem?"

"Well, yeah. I have a present time problem. So on, so on and so on."

"All right. Very good. All right."

"And I – yeah, I did. I had an awful problem and so forth. And, well, I guess it was mostly my fault." Cognition, see? Serves as a cognition.

"All right. You have a present time problem?" No, you don't get any read on the meter, you don't have anything, and that's the end of that process. What was the process? Well,

the process was just doing enough to cure the elsewhere-ness of the pc. Trying to get him into the room.

Now, if you don't know that there are two different directions in processing, then you will seldom have a pc in front of you to be audited. And you will never finish a cycle of action.

Let me show you what happens to a cycle of action. You start in a Prepcheck on "gooper feathers," you see? You start in this Prepcheck on "gooper feathers" – that's the fuzz from peaches. [laughter] And you start this thing and you got it going in the session on the twelfth; and you got it going and you got one or two buttons in.

And the pc comes into the next session with a big present time problem about Los Angeles or something. So now you run a process about the present time problem in Los Angeles, and you get a couple of buttons in on that.

But he comes to the session the next time, you see, with an even worse problem, you see, about Seattle. So you audit the problem about Seattle, so forth. Well, that's just because you as an auditor wouldn't know the purpose of your tools.

You got a little hatful of tools that takes out of the road what is getting in your road in trying to complete a cycle of action on your pc. You have no business whatsoever – present time problem, storm, rain, night, income tax, any other catastrophe, see? – you have no business whatsoever permitting any present time catastrophe to get in the road of your auditing.

Well, you've been presented with a little kit and it says on it, "How to get the pc going in a session." And included in that is keying out, knocking out, destimulating, getting rid of the things which have him so distracted that you can't go on. Now, if you never use that kit, you will do nothing but Q-and-A, you will do nothing but leave unflat cycles of action.

Do you see what happens? You get something started in session A, and the pc comes into session B and he's got a present time problem about something or other, and he's just had a big cognition, what's really wrong with his lumbosis is something or other – so you audit this!

No! No, no, no, please! Please, please, please! What in essence have you done? You have mistaken your tools. Made a complete *bust* as far as what you're supposed to be doing is concerned.

You got this big set of tools over here, you understand? And they got hydraulic high-pressure drills and dump trucks, and all that sort of thing. That's all sitting over here, you see? And you got this little bunch of shiny instruments of some kind or other over here, and they're just supposed to get something out of the road fast, see?

And the pc comes in, "Oh, I had this big cognition about once upon a time in Los Angeles. *Wohwohwog!*" You're halfway through this Prepcheck on gooper feathers, you see? So look! Look! Look how idiotic it is! You reach for these dump trucks and hydraulic drills over here to handle this problem about Los Angeles!

Oh man, you know, just sad! It's sad. All you need is this little whisk broom. See? You're supposed to take this problem and this cognition and you're just supposed to take this

little whisk broom – the little kit over, that comes in on top, about half the size of the tool box on the hydraulic drill, see? You're supposed to take this little kit, and you take out the little brush out of it, and you go *fzt, ztt, fzt*. That's the end of that process, see? And you put that back in again and you say, "All right now. On the subject of gooper feathers – on gooper feathers, in this lifetime, has anything been..." And we're away. You understand?

So, it's just basically making a mistake in the purpose of the tools. And therefore, this leads an auditor into this kind of nonsense: Well, he's always had trouble – he's always had trouble with his back. So for some reason or other, we're doing a Prepcheck on his back. I don't say this is a good process or a bad process, you see, but we're doing a Prepcheck on his back. And we're going to end this after five minutes on a cognition? Hey! What's this? Now, *that* is, we have shoved the hydraulic drills and the dump trucks over here. And we've picked up this little tiny kit, and we've got this thing that's bothered him all of his whole lifetime, and we've taken this little brush out of the kit and we've gone "flick, flick," and nothing happens, see? So we kind of brushed the brush off, see? And we take this other little thing and brush at it and nothing happens. And we say, "Well, auditing doesn't work."

You're using the wrong pickaxe. You see what I mean? Naw. This is a... Really, you have to audit a thing proportionately to the amount of trouble it has given the pc.

So there are two ways to end a process, and they all depend on what you're trying to do. So we're processing this guy on gooper feathers. Big Prepcheck in progress. It's all compounded with all kinds of oddities, ramifications and cognitions, and it's going on and on and on and on and on. Well now, that is done only with one blunt instrument called a tone arm. And that tells you when it is flat. And you, frankly, have to unflatten the whole subject before you flatten it. He's got it beautifully suppressed. That's tone arm flattening. And today you only flatten with the tone arm while using dump trucks, hydraulic drills, and so forth.

You're handling the big case. You're handling the big stuff of the case. And you handle that by tone arm. And that is how you end the process, and that is the only way you end the process. And that is auditing, with an exclamation point! That's main-session auditing. All done with the TA.

Rudiment-type auditing is simply there to have an undistracted, comfortable pc who is happy about sitting in the chair and getting the main performance on. And that's rudiment-type processing. And what I've seen of your auditor's reports, what I've heard of your auditor's reports, in recent times... I may be very unjustly cruel. Maybe I am being cynical and sardonic, professorially "sneeresque," but the truth of the matter is, I think you are using rudiment approach to main-session processing. I think you've gotten it mixed up to the point where you take the main-session process, the big Prepcheck on, and you're ending it as though it were a rudiment process, as though you were merely trying to get the pc to sit still so he could be audited. How much auditing do you think you're really going to accomplish? You're not going to accomplish very much, because you're using the wrong ending.

So, you take this big thing over here: You're going to get rid of this bad back, you see? And "On a back, has anything been suppressed?" See?

"No, I don't think so," pc says.

I would sit there with my eyes rather wide open, as an auditor. "Does your back bother you or doesn't it?"

"Well, yes, it bothers me."

"Don't you think someplace in your lifetime, somewhere or another in your lifetime, in some place or another, there's a po... for instance, you ever have any accidents with it when you were a kid? Something like that? You ever have anything going on?" (You know, a re-stimulation.)

The guy gives it away, "I guess I have! Must have, because I have a bad back now."

"All right, now you let me repeat this question: On a bad back, or on a back – now, listen to me carefully now. Lis-lis-listen to this auditing question. Listen now: On a back, has anything been *suppressed*? Suppressed? You got that now? Got the question? All right, now go ahead and answer that question. Got it now?"

Huh, we're away for the long haul, man. Now, this is the reverse. That's the main session. That's the big show way of getting this thing on the line, see? That's the way of getting it all squared!

Now, get this approach. Just get this other brush-off approach: "Well, you say your back's been troubling you. All right. Is that a present time problem?"

"Yes, it is. *Y – heh!* Come to think about it, it is!"

"Well, good. You've had a cognition. That's the end of the session." [laughter]

Do I make my pernt? You got to get in there and sweat!

You know, you can take one of these old – you're going to see a lot of Auditing by Lists. This is moving up. The first Auditing by Lists we saw was O/W and so forth, but there are many types of lists that can be designed. And I've got this right on the assembly line for HGCs: Auditing by List. It's *Auditing* by List, not ARC break assessments by list. But you could use an ARC break assessment sheet to audit by list, you see? But you do it differently. It's handled like old R2H was. Take each point that you get a read on up with the pc, see?

So you take this old O/W, this list of overts, you know? The old Johannesburg – the Joburg See Check list.

Well, do you know that by very carefully modulating your voice and making no impingement on the pc – being very careful not to make any impingement on the pc; covering the questions in a sort of a throwaway tone of voice, you see? – "You ever stolen anything? Ah, I guess not. No. Well that's fine. That's flat. Nothing to that. All right. Did you ever work under an assumed name? Of course you wouldn't; I know that, and so on. I sort of got that. Well, that's flat."

"It's all flat. It's all flat. It's all flat. Oh, this fellow's passed his Prepcheck!"

I've seen Herbie here almost just growing *sparks* out of his head on the subject of checking out somebody who has been sec checked on that old Joburg list, you see? *Keow!*

As an auditor you should be able to make an impingement. So the Instructor checking the thing out, with that altitude, fixes the person who is being checked out for a clean sheet, you see, with a gimlet eye and says, "Have you ever worked under an assumed name?" Pow! The meter blows up, see?

The poor student says, "Why didn't that happen to me?" See?

You know, "That's a flunk! flunk! flunk! Your checksheet is not complete! You've got to do this whole case over again." You know?

"What's happened to me?" You know? "How come? How come?"

Well, he didn't bother to restimulate anything to pick up, that was how come!

Well, now, in main-session auditing, that which fits between the start of the body of the session and the end of the body of the session, that sort of stuff is laid in with a club! *You purposely restimulate what you're trying to pick up!* You don't want this to end in a hurry, you want this auditing to go on for a while.

Now, this auditing that occurs *outside* of the body of the session, you know, in the rudiments: that is just "Well, you don't have a present time problem, do you? Good. Ah, thank you!" See, that's the approach you use, then you restimulate nothing.

"Well, you look pretty good! How are you doing? Oh, you're doing all right. All right. Is it okay with you if we start the body of the session?"

I know you don't have that in your Model Session right now, but I'm putting it down here as emphasis, and maybe it ought to be put into Model Session to show you where the "club" fits! But first, before that starts, you see, that's just "Well. All right. Well, your tone arm is nice and loose here. Tone arm seems to be low, rather. And your needle's nice and loose and everything seems to be okay. Nothing worrying you, is it? All right, all right. Good. Good. Good. I'm glad of that. Yeah. All right. Oh, you say you do have a present time problem? What was it about?" [laughter] "Oh, yeah? Yeah? All right. Yeah? All right. All right. Good. Good. All right. Well, how's the present time problem now? That didn't read! All right.

"Now – now, is it all right with you if I – we get to work here on this subject of gooper feathers that we were prepchecking, now? You had any thoughts about this since the last time I audited you there, you know? You gone over this in your mind? Any improvement at all on the subject of anything? So forth? Oh, you have, huh?"

(Restimulation, see? Getting his mind, getting his main concentration.)

"Oh, you have, huh? Oh, is that so! Yeah, yeah, yeah, yeah. Tell me you used to... telling me you used to have nightmares about this. Did you have a nightmare about it or anything like that last night? Oh, yeah? Yeah? Is that so?"

"Well, let's see. We'd gotten along here pretty well down on the subject – we've gotten onto 'suggested' here pretty well. And I think your last answer to this had something to do with what – what was your last answer to that?"

"Oh, yeah, yeah, yeah. Well, that was on this subject. Yeah! All right. Well, here's the next question on that. Here's the next question on that: On gooper feathers, has anything been

suggested? You got that question? All right. Good. Now, on gooper feathers, has anything *been suggested?*"

All right. And here we go, watching that tone arm. It's just sitting there taking down the tone arm reads and keeping the pc going. And the pc finally said, "Well, that isn't any more. There – it just – that – there isn't any more. I haven't got any more answers to that. I'm protesting the question."

"All right. Is this question being protested? I'm sorry, there's no read there.

"Now what – what else might we have run into on this? You might run into something else there that you haven't told me or something like that? Did I miss an answer or something of this sort? Oh, I did miss a 'suggest' answer? Oh, all right. Well, good. Thank you. I'm glad we got that cleared up. And here's your next question: On gooper feathers, has anything been suggested?"

Get the idea? You're just keeping it in there, man! Keeping that in the groove. Keeping that grinding on and on and on, see? Tone arm action. When do you leave it? Needle isn't flashing around anymore and the tone arm isn't blowing down on this particular subject – well, let's unload!

Tone arms have tendencies to go very, very quiet. I give you something like a twenty-minute test. That's a little bit cruel on the pc sometime. An auditor can tell when a tone arm is flat: It isn't moving. Also, when you tend to flatten one of these things the meter starts to look gummy.

You can tell when they're flat. Shift to your next question. You're trying to cover a subject in the main body of the session, and you are trying to recover a pc for your session in the rudiment approach. So realize that there are two targets for auditing in a session. And that gives you two different endings. You don't want this pc to be dispersed out of what you are already doing, so you put in a rudiment-type approach. "Since the last time I audited you, has anything been suppressed?" Well, you spend fifteen, twenty minutes getting in those "since" BMRs – oh, marvelous! Marvelous! That's good! Now you can start in your main session.

But it is not with the same approach! You're not doing the same thing.

I could be very cruel at this point and say, "Well, I want to congratulate most auditors, because they've gotten up to a point now to where they are ready to learn how to run the body of a session, having handled rudi..." That'd be a shade too cruel, wouldn't it? Bitter! Bitter. But I watch this; I watch this consistently. And I notice that auditors vary in this approach. And they very often start treating body-of-session material as though they're just rudiments. And believe me, they don't do very much for pcs. In fact, they damage pcs. How? By leaving unflat cycles of action.

If you really want to lash a pc around the telegraph pole, man, just start cycle of action after cycle of action and don't flatten any of them. You just get enough cycles of action unflat on your pc and he'll be in a mess.

Now, let me give you some idea of how to *really sock* a pc. Let's take Class VI. Not because we *have* to reach into that zone. Because that is the most brutal area, where things

stand up in tremendously bold relief. You make some mistakes in that area and you know it. You get the evidence immediately. The little men in the ambulance backs up to the door, don't you see? And it's quite embarrassing. The neighbors talk.

You start to sort out goal A, but you don't sort it out; and then you get interested in goal B, but you never bring it to a conclusion. And then you wonder if something's happening with the E-Meter, because you don't seem to be able to get any reads. (In other words, you really can't think of anything to ask the pc that gets a read on it.) So you ask... You start asking some questions about the E-Meter. But you really don't clean up the subject of the E-Meter, don't you see? And then you wonder if there's any wrong goals that the person has had that are troubling him, but you really don't find all of those and clean those up.

Believe me, about that time the pc practically goes straight through the bottom of the chair. He will be dealing with a wog and he'll be turning on pain. He will be turning on dizziness. The corners of the room will start going out of plumb on him. He can't focus the auditor. The winds of space start blowing his eyeballs into the back of his skull. You know you've done it!

And what happened? It's just incomplete cycle of action followed by an incomplete cycle of action, followed by an incomplete cycle of action, followed by an incomplete cycle of action. You really didn't do anything *wrong*. You just didn't do anything complete. And that all by itself will wind a pc up in a ball.

Well, now, that's a very exaggerated level, but things stand out in such bas-relief at that level that it brought me around to inspecting the lower levels of auditing. And I found out that the lower levels of auditing are peculiarly subject to this, but it's not so dramatic. In other words, it takes a while for it to sneak up. And you don't see it all in twenty minutes of auditing, you see? You see it over a year's worth of auditing. You get lots less action. And the pc is just feeling sort of groggy these days. He just doesn't feel too good, and so forth.

Well, if you were to take almost any pc in the place and say, "Has any process ever been left unflat on you?" and you just ran that as a process... Don't Q-and-A with him and try to flatten any of the processes, just run a process, "Has any process ever been left unflat on you?" And you'll see your pc start brightening up. Somebody who's had quite a lot of auditing, he'll start brightening up. Even though it is not serious on his case, it is quite capable of producing a considerable improvement or result.

He'll give you the considerations concerning it just in the matter of fact of the question. But it's just a repetitive question process.

Now, what do you think happens when you start a Prepcheck on gooper feathers and shift over to a bad back before gooper feathers are flat? And get into a bad back and then get into this and get into that. All kinds of oddball things start occurring. The pc's ability to be prepchecked starts blowing up, amongst other things. Pc can't be prepchecked easily anymore. The auditing tool starts getting all blunted up and messed up. Oh, I think that's quite remarkable. The tool has been abused.

Now, you can put in bad comm cycle with an auditing tool also, like Prepchecking, and get the tool very badly blunted up.

So that you can actually prepcheck Prepchecking. See? Prepchecking. Just put in all the Prepcheck buttons on Prepcheck. "On Prepchecking..." and so forth. You can do this several ways: "On Suppress, has anything been suppressed? Has anything been invalidated?" You know? Put in all the buttons on Suppress. There are several ways you could go about this. Just as a general subject, put in all the buttons, you see? As each button.

It's quite remarkable. I've seen a case all hung up in a mess on the subject of a goals checkout and so forth, till somebody was suddenly bright enough to say, "On Suppress, has anything been suppressed?" All of a sudden it's an operating button again. Quite a remarkable revelation.

But the basic reason the button goes out is an incomplete cycle of action.

Now, you should, as an auditor, be very, very well aware of this thing called a cycle of action. It predicates this one basis: that things have a point where they start, that they have a period when they continue and that there is a point when they end. Now, that is a cycle of action. It's your create-survive-destroy cycle of action. It's start, change and stop.

Actually, you could put it down probably less effectively as a philosophic definition, but more workably, as "a start and an action and a stop." See? A start and an action and a stop. You could be more explicit by saying, a start, an action which then continues, and then a stop. And that is a cycle of action. That is just in that whole line.

Life is probably cruel because things seldom stop. There is a great deal of thought put into continuation. Continuance is one of the bugs that thetans are addicted to. They like to see things continue.

And you've got actions going right now which began with the beginning of the universe and nobody has stopped them since. See? They've never been stopped. And that alone gives the longevity and mass of the physical universe. Actions which were begun were never unbegun, you know, or stopped. Time itself is probably some basic agreed-upon postulate which nobody has ever thought the end of, so you've still got time, you see?

Now these things, of course, are done by postulate, but at a low level an individual is subject to them. And any case is subject to the cycle of action. Maybe he will get up to a point sooner or later where he is above the cycle of action. Oh, I say maybe: Yes, undoubtedly! Class VI, we've got all the stuff to put him there. And you get such oddities as a guy being able to move around in time. This is one of the more peculiar aspects of high-level action. You're not fixed in a time span. You can widen your time span almost at will. And there doesn't have to be anything there in the past time, but you can be in that past time period, and so on. It gives you all sorts of involvements. For instance, you can be at the event while it is occurring by having been in the future and come back to it, and undo it before it goes on. It's very confusing.

Well, because it's confusing and because it's upsetting – let's take two armies fighting each other. And army A attacks army B. So therefore army B knows that if it is in this position where it is being attacked at the time it is attacked, why then, it will be attacked. So the thing to do is to be in yesterday and not march to that place. And we very soon have generals out of a job. We have various things going awry. A game becomes very difficult to follow and

trace. So the thetan settles for the simpler life. And that is "What is, is. What will be, will be. Inshallah," see? "Fate..."

Well, what they're involved with there – kismet and everything else – they're just involved with the inevitability of a cycle of action. Fatalism is the total subjugation of the individual by the cycle of action. "What will be, will be." "If he starts going the car, he will then go down the road, and eventually the car will stop." Well, they even have it rigged that way. They've got oil prices up to a point where it'll run out of fuel. And they've got tires to a point where they wear out. And the time payments will catch up with him, and the skip men will come and get him. Something will stop this car.

In the main universe by friction and other conflicts, a particle traveling is acted upon until it stops. In other words, it's all... below the level of time, everything is sort of geared up to follow in along the time. If an action begins – I mean a single, individual action, not a postulate like time – if it begins, it is sort of geared up to stop.

Now, there are some of these things have not stopped, as I said a moment ago, which might be the composition of matter and such things as that. But even those things have a tendency to deteriorate as they go along.

Now, the point I'm trying to make here is that everybody is used to and in agreement with this thing called a cycle of action.

You aren't using it in your auditing because it is true. I spoke to you the other day about gradient realities. Well, it's one of the realities and it reaches pretty high at case level. It's a reality which fades out just before a person can put some universal laws under control. I mean, it's way up! So the reality of the pc that you process is tied in from the very lowest to a fairly advanced level with this thing called a cycle of action. And because the pc's reality is tied in with it, violations of it bring about an unreality.

So if you want to tell him "What can you find unreal?" just start busting his cycle of action as part of the auditing. Start a process, don't end it. Get a process going, drop it. And the next thing you know, he starts going all unreal on you.

You've got an agreement with him that he is going to get processed in a certain direction to a certain distance and then that's going to all come about. He's still sitting in the middle of his bank, not yet having as-is-ed all the material available on this, and suddenly there he is parked. There is nothing more done about it. And he's got this mass now, and these questions which he finished up – (quote) "finished up" with, since he didn't finish up – and he carries those on over into the next process. And then he never gets that finished, so he carries on *both* of these now into the next process. And he never gets that finished so he carries all three into the next process. And you'll find yourself all of a sudden dealing with a pc who is unflat on four processes.

Well, he won't smoothly as-is anything, for the only – only for this reason: because it looks very complicated to him. It's getting more and more complicated. He's not getting free, he's getting bogged down! His idea of freedom is finishing up some cycles of action. And let me assure you that that is a very, very good observation, well within his zones of agreement.

He knows that if he finishes his work he can quit. See? These are realities. Their truth is... Well, it's very funny to tell you this, but their truth is limited. But everybody *agrees* with it.

So therefore, when you start snarling somebody up, you have these two factors: The mass he is mixed up with in his mind is restimulated but not as-ised, so he's left with some mass hanging around. And he carries this incomplete cycle of action over into the next-begun cycle of action. And he will start accumulating mass and start accumulating upsets and he'll start getting loses.

Now, the idea of a win is very closely tied in with the cycle of action. Very intimately. This fellow wins, ordinarily, by having accomplished something. You could even win to the point of having gone to a point and then not having been destroyed when reaching that point, so therefore you would have accomplished something. You could even have a negative approach, you see? "Well, I've accomplished something: I came downtown today and didn't get killed." See? Even at that low level, that's a win.

Now, where does all that come from? Now, what is the upper echelon to what I've just been talking to you about? What is the *upper* echelon of this?

Let's really have an esoteric flight here. It comes under the heading of intention. Intention is part of the comm cycle. But intention is senior to the comm cycle. Intention. The ability to intend. An intention contains in it every power the thetan has. Every power the thetan has. The ability to throw a lightning bolt, the ability to hold something in position, the ability to make something continue, the ability to do away with something, strength, accomplishment, power, wit, ability – these things are all wrapped up on the one common denominator of intention. Intention.

When you're just half... Oh, no, no. Well, when you're just half-shot as a thetan, and you've almost had it and you think you're on your last legs... Not in the condition you're in, I mean, but pretty bad off, you know. You're not yet wearing a body. You're probably packing around an effigy. You have to be recognized and people have to say good morning to you or you're unhappy, this kind of thing. You're pretty gowed-in with mass. Your own actual GPMs are wrapped around your gullet. Your intention (this is a low-level skill, this is not a high-level skill) is quite good enough to, for instance, intend this crayon into the air in front of you, to intend this E-Meter over to the other side of the desk. This is low-level stuff I'm talking to you about. A guy is, oh, practically on his last legs when he can do this.

Answering a telephone, one simply intends the telephone up into his vicinity where he is listening and can talk. He intends it off the cradle up to his (quote) "ear" (unquote) and intends it back onto the cradle. Giving you straight stuff now. This is almost recent time. You've been able to do this in recent times. It baffles you sometimes when a piece of MEST does not instantly and immediately obey you. But that's simply intention. That's low-level intention.

I'm not talking to you now about something very esoteric. This would sound very startling and make a newspaper reporter turn gray overnight. But, intend him in a horizontal position outside the door, five feet off the pavement, and let him stay there for a while and cool off. I doubt he'd write it. Because he of all people knows he couldn't do it.

But there is intention. You get what I mean, now, by intention? You intend something to happen and it happens. The ability to intend. And that is all there is to a thetan's power. There is no more to his power than that. There's his ability to throw a lightning bolt, to set a house on fire, to make the roof fly off, to turn a planet upside down. That is everything – his intention.

So all you have to do to weaken a thetan is to get in the road of his intentions. Foul up his intentions. Now, if you can foul up a thetan's intentions, you can weaken him.

Now, what do I mean by weaken him? A person picks up, on Monday, a five-hundred-pound weight, but on Tuesday can only pick up a three-hundred-pound weight. Between Monday and Tuesday he has been weakened, right? Do you understand? It's this graphic. It's not the philosophic derivation of his morals become weak, don't you know?

Well, on Monday he can throw a raw energy beam a hundred yards. On Tuesday morning he can only throw one ten feet. Between Monday and Tuesday he has become weakened. That's what I mean by weakened, see? And the way that is done is to give him losses on his intentions. All you've got to do is foul up or counter or blunt his intentions and he becomes weaker.

Weakness and strength in a thetan, and of course, well, his weakness is the only thing that holds him entrapped. Weakness is the only thing that keeps masses pulled in on him. Weakness is the only thing that keeps him pinned down. You can only trap a thetan when he is weak.

And you need only really be afraid of things that are very weak, with, of course, the proviso of certain magazine editors; they – skip them. Leave them out of that category, because they've had it.

The main thing that we have to watch in this, then, in auditing, is that we do not weaken the actual intention of the pc by blunting his actual intentions. And in order to do this, we must differentiate between his reactive intention – his dramatization, in other words – and his own intention. So we have the subdivision of the pc and his bank.

A person who is dramatizing during an ARC break actually is not intending anything they say. This is simply bank dramatized, do you see? It's all bank dramatized. "*Rowr, rowr, rowr, rowr, rowr, rowr!*" He isn't intending anything. That falls out, then. That's a recording or something going off, you see? That is not his intention. So we don't say that everything somebody must do we must validate. You start validating the bank a hundred percent and you've had it as an auditor.

But we're talking about, now, the actual intentions of the person.

He intended to have a two-hour-and-a-half session. And you give him a three-hour-and-a-half session. You have blunted his intention. He intended to get off this stuff about Aunt Hattie, and you called the process flat long before it were flat. So therefore, you have blunted his intention.

You can't ruin a pc. I'm just talking about how *smoothly* you can audit. You understand this? Because you're not going to spoil anybody's intentions or cave them in by auditing,

let me assure you, see? But you can key in incidents on him, and so forth, where his intention is very badly blunted by simply taking an auditing cycle of action and not completing it. In other words, he intends, so forth. You intend, so on, you... so on. And there you go. And you finish it off, and you wind it up. You've completed a cycle of action. That intention has gone through a complete cycle of action then. If you interrupt it halfway, no intention.

Goals for the session. Goals for the session. Here's a good point. You get a pc to put in goals for the session; that's actually a participating intention. So I always work hard on giving a pc goals for the session. I almost work harder to give the pc his goals for the session than I do to give him a session. See?

I can give anybody a session to cure anything or straighten him up, see? That doesn't worry me. But this pc sitting down there has just got through saying, "To feel better about my lumbosis." I'll put that in. I won't take up the body of the session till I've got the oddball goal out of the road. But I can – any pc that is trying to break or stop or not go through with a flattening and so forth, putting in a bunch of sideways goals, could actually stop you from auditing or completing your cycle of action and roll himself up in a ball.

A reactive barrier can arise out of this situation. So he puts in a lot of oddball goals that don't have anything to do about the price of the thing. I'll still clean them up. I'll still clear them up.

But I take out the little kit, you know? The little kit with the little whisk broom. I get those out of the road. And notice the pc apparently has a present time problem. This is in R6 auditing. This is not our ordinary auditing. This is... therefore, any kind of auditing, if you'd pay attention to the pc's goals for the session at R6 when you're totally capable of getting a hundred TA divisions, you see, in two and a half hours, well, good heavens, how much would it apply down at the levels when he's getting fifteen in a two-and-a-half-hour session and lucky to get it, see? So this very definitely applies.

So here's – here's – the person's got goals for the session. I'd look those things over – *pickety, pow, pow!* "He's got a present time problem here. Ha-ha-ha-ha-ho, ho-ho-ho. Let's get the considerations for that present time problem." "Are you... I suppose you have a present time problem here. What – what considerations have you had about that? All right. That's fine. Okay. And you had a bad neck? Been bothering you, and so forth. All right, is that an R6 phenomenon? Is that from goals and... ? It doesn't seem to be from goals, GPMs.

"Something else seems to have gone on here with regard to this. What was the first you noticed this? All right. Good. All right. Well, let's date this." Pow! Pow! Pow!

We're doing about a four- and five-minute process, don't you see? I mean, we're driving it right straight along the line. We got the pc on it. We're just brushing this thing off, see, getting this out of the road. But we're doing this other thing: We're giving him the goal for the session, see?

Oh, we got that out of the road. We dated it, the somatic blew and so forth. You have to be quick on this kind of auditing. He's made that goal for the session right there. I haven't even started the body of the session.

The session, now, is – with "since" mid ruds and everything else that has happened – is only thirty-five minutes deep, and we're away into the body of the session on what I want to do. He's already made his goals for the session.

You want to see the good indicators come in? Ha-ha! Make sure the person gets any PT-problem-type of goal for the session and so forth, get him a win on it in the first five minutes of play. Then get down to something important.

"Oh, yeah," you say, "this takes very skilled, very fast, very tricky auditing. You really have to know what you're doing to be able to get rid of somebody's lumbosis that's been keeping them up all night in the first ten minutes of the session." No. No, no, no. Who's getting rid of it? We just keyed it out. We just gave it a swift kick, so it isn't bothering the pc. Made his goal for the session, too. Therefore his intention level is up. So therefore he's more powerful in the session. Therefore he can look at his bank better. See this?

That's why a person makes no progress while he has a PTP: His intentions are being blunted or overlooked. And so he cannot rise superior to his bank. So he makes no progress.

What is a PTP? It is postulate-counter-postulate. You could just as easy interpret this as intention-counter-intention.

You will not find a present time problem where a person's intentions have not been blunted. Something is fighting his intentions. And he – it seems to him that it's of equal magnitude. Intention versus intention. He has an intention, somebody else has another intention. These two intentions lock together and you get a present time problem. It tends to hang up in time. And that's how you get a time hang-up, basic time hang-up: intention-counter-intention.

Let's look at Class V for a moment – not because we're teaching you anything about Class V but because this is a marvelous field of demonstration.

Why do you think, in the Helatrobus and the trillions-two, and other implant areas, *oppose* was in vogue? It isn't even the actual GPM. The actual GPM is a subvolitional intention which is way downstairs. It goes in with an axe. "Everything inevitably brings about something else. It doesn't matter what happens if something else is going to be brought about." It's very apathetic. Very low.

But these brisker levels, more ambitious levels: how did they knock out the power of a thetan? How could they possibly do anything to a thetan? Well, the implant means, by using key goals like "to go," "to stay," "to move," "to go away," "to forget," "to remember" – this type of goal, all mucked up with innumerable variations of that goal, serve as key intentions. So what he *intends* to remember, he of course will get "nix to remember." He'd get an automatic and instant blunting of intention. That was the intention of the implant.

Very far from flawlessly works. Thetans transcend this stuff rather easily. But there, there is the woof and warp of implants and how they are done and why.

Anybody setting up implants that are going to be successful would simply blunt intentions. Blunt intentions, that's the whole thing. So he says "to move," he immediately gets "not to move." See? And then the implant GPMs interact one against the other, so if he gets the

idea to stay, then he feels he has to move. And if he gets the idea to move, then he feels he's got to stay. So they counter-oppose each other, too.

So opposition or oppose is the keynote to an implant. And this is the only way that they're aberrative. There is no other reason. Bah! The amount of mass and – mass – mass, the thetan only keeps the mass of these things around because he can't get rid of them and he's automatically creating it and he's doing other things, but an implant GPM has too little mass to be very upsetting to the individual, but it upsets his ideas. So he gets the idea to go and he gets the counter-intention – hits him in the face.

The way they "civilize" a child, for instance, is to... all they have to do is break all his intentions. Somebody talking about spoiling a child or upsetting a child: That's very silly to say that by giving a child everything, you spoil the child or by being nice to a child, you spoil the child. They're just drawing a longbow. They couldn't be further from the mark.

It's blunting every intention the child has. And remember that there are reactive intentions and that there are analytical intentions – two varieties.

So we let the reactive intention have its way. Child cries, screams and throws a tantrum, we instantly give him what he wanted. That validated the reactive intention. The child wants to sit quietly and look out the window – analytical intention – so we get him busy doing something else. By the time we've crossed these things – in other words, validated the reactive intentions by rewarding the child and obeying the reactions, and blunted every analytical intention the child has – we'll of course have weakened the thetan (becomes susceptible to illness and that sort of thing), simply because masses move in on him.

I mean, a very... a person who is weakened is unable to hold anything at a distance, so everything collapses on him.

You understand what I'm talking about? This is *terribly* simple. And there it evades understanding just by being in itself so idiotically simple.

So your pc has two types of intentions. And one is totally reactive. It's just a dramatization. So we won't call it an intention; we call it a dramatization. Every time your pc dramatizes, you let him have his way. And every time your pc pleasantly, nicely wants to do something analytically, you blunt his intention. After a while, you're going to have your pc practically spinny on the subject of auditing reaction. He won't be able to handle things in session. You'll find the pc isn't cogniting. You'll find this and that, and so forth. There's many an auditor pays nothing – no attention to the pc until the pc starts ARC breaking.

Now the auditor knows something is happening, so he decides to do something for the pc because the pc has ARC broken. But actually the pc has been sitting there auditing splendidly, beautifully and smoothly. His pc'ing is very nice. And he sort of timidly brings up the fact that he would really like to – you know, he'd really like to look at this engram he's seeing there just a moment longer. He brings this up; he says it's bothering him a little bit. He doesn't quite know what it's all about. It's a little bit of an origin, you see? It isn't going to take any time. You don't give him an additional restimulation. You say, "Yes? All right. All right. Well, what's it all about?" (Something like that.)

"So-and-so and so-and-so and so-and-so."

"All right, that's fine." You get that out of the road and you go on, don't you see?

But every time he says, "Well, I uh... I don't know... I don't really... I don't really have any more answers to that question. Uh... I uh...."

"Well, you're damn well going to answer the question!" See? This is getting on to the borderline of intention, don't you see? So he kind of gets upset one way or the other.

The auditor doesn't pay any attention to what's going on there. We've got an uncomfortable situation. Pc's intention, cycles of action, what he's doing and so forth – they're all kind of getting mixed up. And the auditor's paying no attention to this because the pc is still in a fairly sweet frame of mind, you see, when the pc finally loses... You understand, a pc doesn't turn nasty, a pc gets overwhelmed by his bank. That's always the case. And the pc, own intentions having been blunted badly, then loses control. And the bank, powered up, overwhelms him and takes over control, and on an automaticity, starts blowing its head off! Going into all sorts of dramatization of one kind or other, even though it's just the dramatization of apathy. Bank is in a dramatization.

Well, of course the auditor acts. That's what we know as acting too late. That's catching a slipping situation too late gives you these explosive ARC breaks. They generally telegraph themselves way ahead. But what's happened there is really the pc has become overwhelmed by his own bank. You're not watching the pc's intentions now, you're watching the pc's dramatization. But you don't do anything about the pc's intentions, you will eventually get the pc's dramatizations. It's quite an elementary situation. It's one which an auditor should understand.

Now, I spoke to you some time ago in a lecture about what is a win and what is a lose. Just going over that cursorily, a win is accomplishing what you intend to accomplish or accomplishing the not-accomplishment of something you didn't intend to accomplish. You get the idea? You intended not to have any ARC breaks, and in the session you not-had any ARC breaks. You understand? Well, that's a win, see?

And a lose is just exactly the reverse – just exactly the reverse. Things you intended not to happen happened, and things which you intended to happen didn't happen. And that's a lose. And that's all a win is and that's all a lose is. That's all.

So when we compare this situation to auditing, we find out, then, that the auditor's intention is valuable to the session. And because he's less susceptible to dramatization from the bank in the pc – since he's not really at all greatly susceptible to the bank in the pc; it's the pc's bank, it's not hitting the auditor – and because the auditor is capable of standing outside that perimeter of potential dramatization, the auditor's intention in a session is therefore senior to the pc's intention. But if the pc's intention is totally neglected with regard to a session, we again get a weakening of the pc and an encroachment of dramatization.

So the auditor intends to flatten off such and such a process. And the pc intends to take care of something else he has thought about overnight. Well, that pc has been subject to dramatization because of restimulation. You'd be very foolish not to flatten out the original process, because that was the original intention, wasn't it? That wasn't finished, and yet the pc wants to do another one. Well, this is going to hang him up with an intention loss whether he

likes it or not. And the auditor, standing outside this perimeter, of course, can complete the cycle of action on which he began. And that gives a win to the auditor and the pc. You follow this?

Pc's analytical intentions, then, are valuable to a session. And they are very often expressed in the goals of the session, and they are cared for accordingly. That's the way it is.

Now he intends to get a certain distance, and actually, down deep he really intends to become OT. He's never investigated this. It's running far too deep. But way down underneath all the layers of God-help-us he intends to get to be OT, that's for sure. In other words, he intends to recover. He doesn't even, though, have enough analytical awareness of where he is going to know what he intends. He intends freedom and a return of power – which is to say, he intends freedom and a return of intention. Well, he now can go all the way. He now can go all the way. That is well within grasp. If he walks along a certain path, and doesn't keep jumping off the cliff and so forth, why, he will arrive. Well therefore, the intention for him to arrive is very *sotto voce* in him. And an auditor with some experience and action on this, intending him to arrive. The auditor's intention is actually more reliable than the pc's, even though the pc is more deep and fundamental than the auditor's. Why? Because every time he starts coming up the line, this pc is going to short-circuit into some direction, fail to complete a cycle of action someplace, leave a rock in the road somewhere or another. And he'll get some wild idea and – well, I've seen it happen, man. You... This pc is supposed to be prepchecked on something or other in order to get something or other accomplished so that he won't always be coming to session with this gross PTP about his domestic affairs or something like this, don't you see. And somebody has decided to get this out of the road so they can proceed. And he's thrown that all sideways, and he's spent the night listing goals. See?

Well, in the first place is, the reason he listed goals had to do with the fact that his intention about his marital problem was being blunted. So case advance is now reinterpreted into some kind of an escape from his present time problem. So he doesn't know which way he's going; he doesn't know what cycle of action he's on. Is he on the cycle of action of completing his present time problem with his domestic affairs? Or is he on the cycle of action of becoming a free being? Well, he's on the cycle of action of becoming free from his wife. He's not on the cycle of action of becoming a free being.

Well, something weird goes on when you've got this kind of thing happening. He's on a small perimeter. He's on a little cycle of action, and he's using a huge cycle of action potential to accomplish this little cycle of action, you see? He's using a 20-millimeter machine gun to shoot a grasshopper, see? And of course he can't shoot this grasshopper, because actually you can't get the muzzle depressed enough. You get this kind of... He's got freedom mixed up with escape. He wants to fix it so he doesn't have to confront things any more. All this kind of thing goes on and all that can get in an auditor's road hugely.

I'm talking to you now about fine points. You know – you know, in spite of all this, you can blunder through. You know? I'm just giving you some fine points here.

You could get there somehow, prepchecking the rough edge off of a person's lumbos, and somehow or another this. And somebody puts him together with sticky plaster because too many unflat processes exist on the case. And then somehow or another you finally

find the GPM, and you get enough tone arm action out of the GPM to – you get the idea – to sort of cancel out some of the other sins and ills that have occurred in it. You'd get there somehow; you could muddle through.

But these are the fine points. These are the fine points of the business. He's as weak as his intentions are blunted. He will become as strong as his intentions are free. The greatest holder-backer of intentions is the person himself. Because he puts himself in danger every time he has a dangerous intention.

I think your international champions in boxing, let us say, or something like that, probably have an awful time. They probably educate themselves right out of a hard punch, merely because they're walking through the society all the time. It'd be very, very dangerous indeed for them to uncork a hard punch in the Bide-a-Wee Cocktail Bar, see? That's supposed to be reserved only for the stage, see? So here's an intention that is becoming narrowed and specialized. They eventually become quite weak.

I'm not talking about something that you could measure by the diameter of the biceps, the number of foot-pounds of punch deliverable. You see, they're having to withhold this intention. This intention has got to be very much pulled down. They've got to condition this intention.

If they have a trainer and a manager that tells them, "Now only hit with your right hand during moments of something or other." Some fellow across – as their opponent in the ring – could stand there with his guard dropped. The person's left hand, in perfectly good condition to deliver the final blow that would end the whole match, you see, and yet would never strike the blow. See, his intention – his intention, now, is far, far too specialized and channeled.

Now, you ask a fellow, "What restraints do you have to put on yourself in your everyday living?" You're going to get almost a roaring automaticity, see? He has been taught that his intentions are dangerous to him. He's been taught that he can get a dangerous intention. He's been taught as well that his intentions can get out of his control and he can accidentally intend something.

So every once in a while you have somebody walking around in circles – there's been a fire in Birmingham or something of the sort – and there will be somebody walking around in circles worrying because he might have let an intention out from underneath his hat and started the fire in Birmingham. See? And he'll actively worry about this. You see? Whereas the guy couldn't even warm up a cup of coffee if he had a stove, see?

But thetans become very worried about this sort of thing. And they become very protestive. And one of the big games is to make somebody protest his intentions, you see. "What are your intentions toward me, sir?" You see, that's the standard girl's question. "Clarify your intentions," and so forth.

Wasn't it Voltaire that won every argument before he even began it? He said somebody had to define his terms before he could argue with him. Well, that's very interesting. But if you carried that a little further, you'd find the guy would get so busy defining his terms that

his intention to have anything else happening would be nil. And you wouldn't find much of a debate in progress here, don't you see?

"You must define your intentions or what you're doing." Society does this to us in Scientology. Fortunately, they don't know what our intentions are. And frankly, we've never really sat down and mapped it all out as to what our intentions should be. Which is probably the way it should be, don't you see? Because therefore there's nothing to blunt. Nobody has ever expressed the matter. That's sort of a lazy way to go about it.

But they have all sorts of assignments to us in Scientology as to what our intentions are. They wouldn't believe our real intentions, so we'll probably make them. But we lose – for instance "a world without insanity or war," or something like that. It's a perfectly valid intention. Well, they consider this too high-flown. "What are their intentions?" So they assign a whole bunch of false intentions to the Scientologists, see? Well, let them. That's what makes their attacks look so silly, because of course they're fighting a set of intentions which don't exist. So it makes them look like they're walking around talking to shadows, or something like that. It leaves us completely free and rather unwound, into the battle.

The intention, actually, any broad intention we have is quite clear-cut, appears in many books, but it's way over their heads, you see? They can't figure they could blunt that intention because that's... Well, you take a war without – I mean a world without insanity; you take this as an intention. Well, that's good roads and good weather; of course, very unreal, unaccomplishable. Anybody'd look this over, they therefore couldn't have anything to do with that. One of these days they're going to be awful surprised! See?

We'll have that intention moving. See? I even spent a little time in on "How would you handle vast numbers of insane?" and so forth, see? Out of that original speculation, we got Scientology 0 processes, by the way. I mean, they're just an offshoot of that. I'd hate to have to confess that to you, but that was the body of research that came out of, which is just des-stimulate the environment. Give a stable datum for the environment.

So, intention – intention here is everything in case recovery. If a person is regaining his power or ability or something like that, he's merely removing out of his road what blunts his intentions and what has blunted his intentions, and that's really all he's doing. So if we look this over with a very critical eye, we find out that the auditor, going through almost any sincere job of auditing – even if clumsily done – will inevitably unblunt some of this pc's intentions. They will be unblunted one way or the other. And we're talking about the upper esoterics of auditing – how to keep auditing from blunting the pc's intentions, you see.

Well, an intention is a cycle of action. Any time you say "do," you add *time*. So a doingness intention or accomplishingness intention has time added to it.

The moment that you add time or doingness to the thing, you've got a cycle of action. So an intention is at its highest echelon, totally independent of time and the cycle of action. Intention is simply pure intention and is not necessarily tied into time at all! You could just as easily make a postulate in 1492 or in 2658 as you could in 1964. There isn't any intimate and immediate relationship.

But as the individual has gone down scale, he has of course more and more associated his intentions with a cycle of action. You make the intention and then a certain thing occurs, or the intention goes across a space – as in communication, you see – and then it arrives at the other end, and a certain result therefore takes place at the other end. So we have a cycle of action. We have the intention, now, worked into time and space.

So the intention originally is totally free of time and space and has nothing to do with it. And in actual fact, time and space have, as their only reality, the fact that they are made out of an intention. Doesn't matter whether this intention is an agreed-upon intention or otherwise. There's a basic intention which gives us time and space. So it is actually superior to all MEST. And you'll have your fingers on something, it doesn't have to be MEST; but as it comes down scale, this becomes expressed to the pc, particularly at the lower levels of a case.

Lower levels of cases, this fellow's having a *dreadful* time (exclamation point)! See, he's just *staggering* through life, man. He's hitting both walls and walking backwards and falling on his knees every time he turns around. Well, that individual's agreement with a cycle of action means that an intention... There are no intentions any more. There could however – might be a cycle of action. See? The intention has disappeared out of the cycle of action, and you simply have this cycle of action. When he goes down any further, he goes down into pure chaos.

So therefore, you can take a person who is having a terrible time and tell him to touch the wall, and you've shown him an intention and shown him a cycle of action. You can short-session him. You can start a session, run a session and end a session. Ten minutes' worth, see? Then start another session, run a session and end a session. All you're doing is showing him cycle of action, cycle of action, cycle of action. The auditing command: cycle of action. The auditor's command, the acknowledgment... the answer, the acknowledgment: It's a cycle of action. All you're showing him is you're demonstrating the existence of a cycle of action, cycle of action, cycle of action – any one of these things as they come through.

And eventually, his own in... the reason he cognites is his own intentions start to free up out of the obsessive MESTiness of it all. And he starts seeing things. And he starts coming back to battery. He starts adding up what's going on. Well now, the only way the auditor can get in his road in all this, of course, is to foul up his own cycle of action – the auditor's cycle of action. Now we could foul this up. One of the ways of fouling it up is to leave processes unflat. Or misinterpret what we're doing with a process. We're trying to get rid of this fellow's lumbosis or lifetime problem here, so we treat it like it's a rudiment. We give it a little dust-off and so forth. Well, misapplication of tools. Well, you're not going to get the intention clear because that back is not going to get better under that kind of treatment, so the auditor's intention is blunted, the pc's intention to have a better back is blunted, everybody loses under that situation.

So our intention on the thing laid out: If we're going to have wins then we must validate analytical intention, knock out dramatization and be very consistent with completing cycles of action, even though it's an auditing command or getting rid of his lumbosis. And those are the factors with which you are dealing. The auditor must flatten the process within the reality of what he is processing. In other words, within the reality of, *What's he got here?*

He's got a little problem that's been generated since last night. So he stops auditing the back, which has been going on for nine or ten years, and starts using heavy artillery on this little problem that came up last night. Well, he didn't complete the big cycle of action, he's trying to make too much out of this other cycle of action – he's misapplying his tools, in other words.

He's working on this bad back and the only reason he gets last night's problem out of the way with his little dust kit is, well, just so he can go on and complete this bigger cycle of action. You've got to keep the pc on the main chance. You've got to flatten the big stuff that you start. You're doing a Problems Intensive – I don't think you could prepcheck it in under ten or twelve hours. If you did a proper assessment on the thing, you'd – ten or twelve hours, I'd think that'd be a long – a short haul to cover everything, let us say, from 1949 July on up to present time.

Well, how do you make it run that long? Well, it isn't how long you make it run: how much is there there? Well, that depends on how much you impinge on the pc. That depends on how much you make the pc work at it. That depends on how hard you sweat over this particular action, and how clean you keep the pc from ARC breaks, and how clean you keep his interim session difficulties – the between-session difficulties – from interrupting you from doing a cycle of action. And for that kind of thing, we've got little brush-off things. We just destimulate this stuff. The rudiment approach, then the main-session approach. And therefore, we can *achieve* the intentions of the pc, we can *achieve* the intentions of the auditor.

We flatten a process within the reality of what is there to be flattened, and how much is there to be flattened? How much are we tackling here? Well, the fellow was always – had a little problem that had to do with – he's always had this problem, and so forth: he thinks he's inferior. Well, that's great. That's great. Now, you're going to handle this with a rudiments process. No, I don't think so.

The individual comes into session and he stubbed his toe outside the door and it hurts. You're going to give this a fourteen-hour Prepcheck.

So the magnitude of what you're trying to handle, the duration of time of what you are trying to handle, to a large degree establishes how much time it is going to take you and how much heavy action you will have to take on it and how thoroughly you'll have to flatten it. And those are the establishing factors. But when all out – when all else is worked out, you're trying to *complete* a cycle of action. And on the very *bad-off* case, that is all you can do. That is the most basic process there is, is simply get a cycle of action completed. And I imagine that an auditing question like this: "What did you have to eat for breakfast?" Guy is having an awful time. Practically blindstagers, type pc, you see? And two-and-a-half hours later, with a great deal of two-way comm and discussion and so forth, he has answered the auditing question. It sounds incredible, doesn't it? And yet, you know the pc would have a win? Pc would have a big win.

You went in too high. It should have been "Did you come to the session?" That wouldn't have taken so long to do. But if you can get an auditing cycle completed, you get a win, and if you don't get an auditing cycle completed, whatever else you look at or what you think you are looking at, you're going to get a lose. Elementary as that.

So when the whole – when the whole thing is squared away, what you're trying to do as an auditor depends on what you're trying to handle in the pc, the order of magnitude in terms of time and trouble and duration and so forth, and that determines on what kind of flattening you use.

And the flattening of the main chance, the big long-term one and so forth, is done very arduously indeed. It's all done by TA. It's never done by anything else but TA. And of course your little stuff that you're trying to get out of the road so you can keep on with your main action is just a rudiments-type kick-off and you just flatten it to cognition or till it isn't bothering the pc and it's out of the road and you're away. You see why this is now? You see how this is? All right. I hope you can have some wins on this.

Thank you.

International City

A lecture given on 24 March 1964

[Part missing]

What's the date?

Audience: 24 March.

Twenty-four March AD 14.

Well, today I'm going to talk to you about something entirely different than ordinarily I talk to you about here at Saint Hill. I want to talk to you about a project having to do with world peace.

Now, you realize that a communication is necessary to stop fights. A communication is also necessary to start fights. What kind of a communication is it? Well, it's generally a communication that's a little longer distance than can easily be understood.

And you take these massive terminals sitting around the world, the world's capitals, various countries, very distant from one another, extremely distant, very much protected about by their populations. They're quite a distance apart. And when they start talking to each other, they don't talk very understandably, and the distance between them has a tendency to set up a considerable amount of voltage. They're too far apart. And they have to talk too loud. And they have to shout too hard. And after a while they begin to figure that they're mad at each other.

But it is a technical fact that the distance they are apart brings about a difficulty of communication which brings about an imperfect communication. And they're apparently – in the leaders' minds – sufficiently far apart that they can destroy or strike at each other with impunity. In other words, one can shoot at Moscow without wiping out Washington. One can shoot at Washington without wiping out Paris, you see? And they have the illusion, then, of security. And that illusion of security actually no longer exists because in any atomic conflict you have things called fallout, and the drifting winds of space, and you have other interesting things. Most of the atomic weapons designed for use today have killing elements put in them such as cobalt-60, and these tend to wipe out tremendous areas of countryside, and the drifting fallout resulting from a war, even if it's not terribly dangerous in test, would be very, very destructive to the nation who was declaring war.

Well, all of this brings about an interesting fact that these countries, then, are actually situated in such a way that they have the illusion of being able to execute hostile actions against one another with impunity. Now, none of these national governments are themselves able to operate broadly for the benefit of everyone, but they are trying to go out beyond their

own borders and influence other areas, and these other areas are being influenced by yet another national government. So they develop all sorts of brushfire wars. And these little brushfire wars will probably keep on going, they'll be more serious and less serious, but a man is killed just as dead in a skirmish as he is in a major battle. And the activities going on now in Southeast Asia are an example of that.

Here you have Washington unable to strike directly at Moscow, Moscow unable to strike directly at Washington, so they strike at each other in terms of a smaller nationalism in Southeast Asia. So you have a small war going on there, enturbulances going on there, consistently and continually, men getting killed just as dead as in any major conflict.

They have all sorts of odds and ends of battle and upset, and diplomatic coups, and influences of populations and... You have a bunch of people who really haven't found out that you really can't be at war with one another with complete impunity. And what they're doing is bringing about a dangerous environment. That is actually the whole thing in a – in a sentence.

They're still bringing about a dangerous environment. The citizen of the United States is being taxed to support fantastic armaments, to a point that it is utterly staggering. He's worked – this – the Washington government has worked itself into an economic solution by the manufacture of armaments. I think some three-quarters of the scientists and engineers in the United States now, now work for the government and so forth. Pretty soon there's going to be nobody left to work for the people.

The stores are becoming more empty, inflation is going up, and the reason for inflation is a shortage of goods. Whether or not you want to window-dress it in some other way, inflation takes place in the presence of shortage of goods, and a deflation takes place in the presence of an overabundance of goods. And that's about all you ever need to know about money.

If money won't buy things, it inflates. And if money will buy too much, it deflates. And although they tell you, well, there's plenty of products in the United States, tremendous quantities of products in the United States, nevertheless that currency is inflating. So that currency has gone international in an effort to reach out and do things politically, on a political front, and handle these situations with other capitals.

In other words, there's too little goods in the world sitting under the United States dollar which is now the basic currency of the world, the most frequent, the most fluid currency of the world.

It isn't that there's too little goods in the United States. Get that there's too little goods everywhere. Now, how does that come about? Well, it comes about through lack of production. There's too little production elsewhere. People don't have the facilities to produce. So if the people have no facilities or – to produce, and if they're being disturbed politically continuously, you get an inflating state of affairs. Some fellow works very hard, in his twenties, and puts aside a great deal of money, and finds out that it will buy a pair of shoelaces in his forties, you see.

China is a marvelous example. The whole country was practically captured by inflation. A friend of mine in Peking sent me an airmail letter just before the iron curtain went down completely. There were two letters, about six months apart, and the first letter had a

stamp on it, an airmail stamp, and its value had been overstamp on the stamp with a rubber stamp, so that the airmail stamp which should have cost thirty-five cents or something of that sort cost about thirty-five dollars. And that was fine. And a few months later I received another airmail letter from him, and it was quite interesting, because that was the last one, and the value of the stamp had been raised by the post office by overstamp so that the thirty-five cent stamp was now worth something like seven million dollars.

Now, this brings about conditions of slavery, no more and no less. You eventually have to turn to communism and no money because nobody can keep up with the inflation.

Now, Russia today is busy starving its population. It's having a wonderful time being the leading nation of the world, in political freedom, and it has never managed the problem of feeding its own people which is such a bad advertisement that not long ago one of the (quote) "new African states" that's awful cliché – one of the new African states, in conference duly assembled, was sitting about giving their opinions on what political philosophy they should adopt. And one of their leading lights stood up, and said, "Well, whatever we adopt, we must not adopt communism, because it finds itself completely incapable of feeding its people." Well, it took them a few years, but they finally found it out.

Communism tries to tell us that this is political freedom, but it isn't very much political freedom when nobody can receive a reward for his labors, and the communist worker of course is just on a continuous strike. If nobody's paying him, and he can't have anything in return for his labors and so forth, he just goes on strike. I think most of their food comes from the one-acre peasant plots which they are permitted, which the peasant is permitted to sell the produce of. And I think that's all the food that Russia has.

It's quite interesting because they've gone into tremendous reforms. It isn't political – it isn't lack of political cunning, and it isn't lack of plans that has brought this about. It really isn't too much in the field of political philosophy. Russia is having to support and maintain a front line which is vastly extended into many other nations, and has to support a tremendous array of armaments, which in fact with that many men under arms, that many of her productive people held into the dedicated service of Mars finds her rather incapable of doing anything mundane like making sure that the kids get enough milk to drink, you see.

So we have the world at large in political turmoil of one kind or another, and these national dedications to self-protection, to this, to that, the other thing. There's tremendous emphasis today on politics, and politics has entered very deeply into economics, and it makes in effect a rather unstable view in all directions.

It's not very comfortable for the common citizen filling out forms, forms, forms. It isn't very comfortable for the young man who just about the time he should learn to be a mechanic or something useful and so forth, has a finger pointed at him, "We want you," and he finds himself wearing blue or khaki or something of the sort, and walking around a place he doesn't want to be. And for a couple of years or so he has to go through this treadmill, and he gets – I've talked to these kids, and they're just in complete apathy in their teens. They don't plan their future in any way. It's quite interesting, the – this thing.

But then again, that's being in a place you don't want to be. That is not their decision. And when you get a condition where an individual is being forced to do things he doesn't want to do and being forced to be in a place he doesn't want to be, he degrades.

If there's any national degradation in progress, in the United States, it probably – it stems directly and exactly from the draft laws – Conscription laws. Readiness for war, readiness for war. Any one of these people would sit down and have a chin-chin with one another and settle their affairs and compare things. It's quite interesting that Iowa farmers were quite capable of talking to Russian farmers on their various trips, and they were swapping notes as how you could best raise this and best raise that, and getting all excited with each other because some of their practices were so barbaric and any time they met and talked to one another, they found that they could be very friendly.

Therefore, it really isn't the individuals of the world that are having difficulty or are causing the dangerous environment which we find here on Earth. The individual would probably be able to work it out rather easily. But impersonalized or depersonalized with a gun in his hands or a push button under his thumb, he of course can go to war with other individuals he's never even been introduced to, and we have a nice system going here whereby the organizations of Earth, which cannot bleed, which cannot suffer in actual fact, which cannot feel, are at war with one another. All of which adds up to a dangerous environment.

Well, this planet is going to blow itself into political unworkability or hot fission within the next decade or so unless somebody comes up with some workable idea which makes war a difficult thing to wage and which sets aside these economic stresses which are such a drain on the populations of Earth.

It's very interesting that such an objective would be possible. This is a pretty big plan. This is a pretty big think. Because there have been some big wits at work on this for some time. In fact, I think the first peace movements and so forth are probably discoverable in ancient Egypt. And a lot of fellows have been thinking for a long time on how you brought about peace. But there has been longer think on this than man's think. The left and right side of the body – let me show you some of the elementary actions on this – the left and right side of the body might very easily be at war with one another. You see, there's two eyes, and there's two ears, and so on. But what has happened there is the left side of the body is governed by the right side of the brain, and the right side of the body is governed by the left side of the brain. Maybe you hadn't realized that.

But this would – this would make a plan something like this – just to show you there's feasibilities in these things. You put Washington in Moscow. [laughter] And you put Moscow in Washington, and let them govern their countries from that distance. And of course their tendency to bomb each other out would be reduced to practically nothing.

Now of course, that's not a practical solution. But I have just given you a little taste of the fact that even though it's a ludicrous solution, it nevertheless can be stated that if that happened, you see, there then could be no war. You see how nice the Muscovites would have to be to the people of the United States, the people of that capital. You can imagine the Russian diplomat busy governing from the middle of the United States, you know. He'd have to keep

very good peace and personal relationships and understanding and so forth, with the American people, and vice versa.

You can see how the United States government would go about it. That's very easy to see. There would be three press-relations men and public-relations men, you see, for every political diplomat on the embassy and government staff. See, they'd handle that very, very high pressure. They'd make peace.

Well, you see, right now there's no vested interest whatsoever. That's of course not the solution I'm forwarding, but I'm just giving it to you. You see, it pays nobody now to advance the cause of peace. Nobody gets paid for it. They only get paid for war. A general only gets promoted if he gets some more troops under him. Well, how does he get some more troops under him? Well, you'd better rattle a few more sabers, you see? And the congressman doesn't have influence unless he's appropriating fantastic sums of money and buying tanks and things like that. Then he's got lots of influence, don't you see?

And everything is built up so as to go along, that the more trouble there is, the more importance the political figure has. There was a rule, by a woman queen, down in Romania – I think the name was Marie – and for a long period of time she conducted a very, very peaceful government. The country had more prosperity than it'd had for hundreds of years. And she got headlines only when she went over to the United States on a visit. Actually, that was one of the most productive governments that anybody had around for a very long time. They had prosperity during that particular period. But she didn't have much publicity as a great or very smart ruler.

Apparently man deifies what causes trouble. And it's – American presidents who don't have a war during their regime are hardly remembered in the textbooks at all. You remember the war presidents. Those are the boys. The war presidents. But not the peace presidents. See, they're something else, you see. And similarly things of that character are quite common, so the amount of dissension is sort of an index of their win. But the common citizen, the boy who's got to keep things rolling and that sort of thing, does not make his personal fortune or his life out of such chaos. The popularity of such people as FDR, a great war president, and so forth, was borne out of the broken homes of practically everybody who fought World War II, see.

You get a slaughter of the individual and his concerns, the aggrandizement and a few more stars on the shoulder of the political boss, but you don't get – you don't get any forward progress for the individual.

Therefore, if man is to make any forward progress at all, these conclusions and many others say that he will make his greatest progress in an atmosphere of peace. The only thing that would make the government back up and knock off on income tax and so forth, if it wasn't having any great demands on its treasury to build more tanks, don't you see? It's quite interesting. I have been in several countries which haven't been at war for some time, where other countries during the same period had been at war. And it was just the length of time the country hadn't been at war that gave it an atmosphere of calm and things getting along all right. You can notice this by going around and taking a look at the world, and you'll find those countries which have most recently been at war or haven't had time to go along are the

most enturbulated and the citizen is the most upset and everybody's all nerved up about something or other.

Now, if you carried forward a program then of international sanity, the easiest program to carry forward on international sanity would be a cessation of threats of the environment. You would have to reduce the danger in the environment to make people saner. If you wanted things to be better around, then what you would do would be to reduce the amount of strife and dissonance in the communities and so on. If you wanted the individuals of the world to draw saner breaths, why, you would give them less threat. You would involve them less in the dangerous future. Because the individual who has no future has a tendency to act very oddly indeed.

Now, man is tied to the fact that he lives only once, which is an interesting idea, quite novel, I don't know who invented it. But it was invented by somebody. But it gives him a certain irresponsibility regarding any area he lives in. And it's very interesting to hear somebody in his fifties, sixties, saying, "Well, I'm after all out of my prime now, and that sort of thing no longer concerns me," and to see him again in his seventies, with some dim inkling of the fact that he's got to come back and pick up a body in this mess, you see – getting very nervous about international affairs. In his sixties, you see, he couldn't have cared less, but in his seventies, he's getting very nervous about all of this, you know. He's trying to solve the problem at a subconscious level, "Where do I go next? Where do I pick up a body?" and so forth.

But in general, man is practicing a high level of irresponsibility with regard to his affairs, because he thinks he only lives once and he thinks he will not inherit anything that he himself has started or abetted in chain fashion. So you can't expect, in actual fact, a broad public movement based on the idea that you're going to come back. Man won't buy this, it's asking him to take far too much responsibility broadly. So you have to go into other fields.

Now, the problems that have to be solved in bringing about a world peace – an effective world peace program are then the importance of the politician – you've got to salvage his importance or he won't buy it – you've got to furnish a great deal of manufacturing and personal building and activity so as not to bring about a – an immediate collapse of the economy which is all bolstered on a war economy, you see? In other words, there's got to be a lot of construction. There's got to be a lot of things going on that require lots of money, you see, and that sort of thing. And – the – amongst the other problems that have to be solved is the shortening of the communication line between the capitals of the world, and therefore bringing about a greater understanding. And then you have to curtail the individual initiative of various nations for the waging of war, so that they no longer have the right to knock the lid off just because they're mad at somebody. And you have to reduce the amount of danger in the environment while doing something dramatically constructive about it all.

These are just a few of the problems that have to be solved, and you have to offer them some attractive objective which is startling, but which they wouldn't argue with too much. You have to give them lots of things to build and lots of things to do and it has to be a lot of trouble to bring all this about, you see. It has to be very complicated. And with these various barriers you have to overcome, the political objection and that sort of thing, you have to have in such a plan a sufficient and adequate solution to the situation that war would cease and

everybody would understand that it would cease. In other words, the solution to it has to be big enough to make the problem seem solvable.

Well, I put all this together originally as a mental exercise, and nothing more than that, to see what would happen with OTs. This lecture is part of the Class VI materials, oddly enough, because you answer this problem all the time. Some thetan says, "Well, now what could I do?" Well, let me tell you what a bunch of thetans shouldn't do. They shouldn't go off in eighteen different directions, each one banging the gong of his own dislikes. That's a production of chaos, you see. Now, one of the things, one of the things that we have to remember is that we have a base. And that base is called Earth. And we don't want the base any more enturbulated than it has to be. Nor do we want the base to be so aware of what is happening to it or that it is being called a base, that it'll be resentful of being one. See, these are very practical considerations.

Also, there are certain exercises which one should be able to do, in order to improve his skill and so forth, and they should not be of an hostile nature. At least toward this planet.

Now, it takes a lot of time to assemble a body of technology. It is resident in the individuals to whom it has been taught and who have experienced the long run with it and during its developmental period, there is – its communication lines, its suitability to the area in which it is being generated, all of these things are hard-to-win assets. And we have those assets. So our interest, our interest, in a peaceful Earth, is not only altruistic, which it is, because at one time in *Science of Survival* this was issued as a target, a world without war, without any slightest thought of first dynamic reward, you see? But each one of you now has a first dynamic reward in view. That is to say, you have just the first dynamic reward in view not of money, this has nothing to do with money, it couldn't mean less. It's wonderful how we get picked on about money all the time. I mean that's one of the least important commodities. These fellows are missing the shot rather widely. We're not interested in money, we're only interested in the planet!

But we have a vested interest, completely aside from our altruistic motives which, remember, do exist. We have a vested interest in a peaceful planet and the continuance of this planet. Because who knows, this planet may go on being very peaceful for a considerable period of time when other planets around about aren't being so peaceful at all.

This is a sort of a forgotten backwash in the middle of nowhere, see or at the far edge of nowhere, not even in the middle of nowhere. It's a rather minor sun, minor planet, out on the rim of a galaxy, rather a lost horseshoe nail, if you want to know the truth of it. If you want to know what the exact situation of Earth is, you would not look at any such point as having great value. But it does have the value of existing. It does have the value of having had a technology cultivated on it. It does have the value of our understanding of it, and it does have the value, of course, of not being immediately and instantly discernible as the center of anything.

Now, I'm not necessarily telling you they have vast, wide-reaching plans that are going to *waf-waf*, and then we are going to... and so forth. These are merely the practical considerations. Practical considerations of what happens. Once you recognize which direction you are going, you're a fool not to recognize the ramifications of what you are doing, and real-

ize that you have to take some responsibility for the effect it's going to have around and about. Well, it's going to have an effect on this planet, it's going to have an effect on the surrounding areas here, without even going space opera about it. And all that's very vague, purposely so. And... but I think you understand me. We need, then, a peaceful planet.

So I worked this out originally as what project – was it possible for a bunch of thetans to consistently hammer and pound along the way at a certain objective or project that would bring about something constructive? And it's not – it doesn't have much to do with international peace, you see, it's just could they go ahead, and so forth, and was it possible to direct their own energies toward such a goal. And I worked it out, worked it out, that it was possible for this to happen without too much coordination and planning. And the name of the activity in the exercise, originally, was not what it is now, but became an international – International City, International City. That's what became the name of the project. International City Project.

Well, I studied this for quite a while. Was there anything one could do about destimulating the planet and consolidating the circumstances of war and so forth? And finally came to the conclusion that if all the capitals of the world were located inside one city that they were not likely to bomb each other out, that they, in effect, would be very careful of declaring war. They would be close cheek by jowl enough to discuss most of their problems. They would have no great difficulties of interchange, you wouldn't have a vast whiplash of going to Moscow and the ambassador there talking to somebody there. You wouldn't also have the illusion of security involved with the distance. It'd be a matter of driving a couple of blocks, you see, to see the head of the other state. You'd be meeting him at dinner parties all the time and everybody knows that it's nice to keep an atmosphere so that you have a socially acceptable personality and that sort of thing and that might as well be introduced to international affairs. You very seldom see blokes like this declaring war on each other across a banquet table, you see. But they sure get awful loud and very discourteous, you see, a few thousand miles apart.

So if these capitals ceased to be located on the native soil of the countries they governed and became located, all of them, within one perimeter, the bombing of that capital would become a rather remote possibility, particularly if you never let people who seemed to be angry at each other leave the capital at the same time.

Now this gives them a new problem. It gives them the problem of the long communication line to their country. And gives a communication line that might possibly wind up entirely and completely in a new capital in their country. Well of course, that mustn't happen. So the communication line may only go to centers of states within the nation so that you have a nation and then say that it is composed of states or counties. So the communication line does not go from International City to another city inside the country and then go out – you see, a communication relay center. That doesn't exist. No, I'm afraid the message from International City would have to go directly to Helena, Montana, not via Washington. And there might very well be an assembly or a legislature of that state. Another one would have to go to Sacramento. Another one would have to go to Houston or San Antonio. You see? So you'd get a – you get a communication line from International City to each county or state head without any relay point in it.

Now, they would be the first ones to insist there was no relay point once they got the – even though they aren't processed and they're pretty stupid – they would recognize they were setting themselves up for a marvelous fall on their head if they put a central communication center. Because it would simply become a second capital and therefore a control point by which the country could be wrested from their control in International City with the greatest of ease. So their best prevention of revolution, of course, would never have a second capital form inside their nation; that their messages went immediately and directly to the governors who are the heads of states who were under their control.

This would be – they would insist on this. Which gives you the most fantastic communication network anybody ever heard of. That's a lot of building with that. Now, look at the amount of building in International City. Just look at the amount of structure involved here. And we find out that a duplication of the mall in Washington, complete, alongside of a duplication of Red Square, complete, all of it fanned out – even drew this out in sketches exactly how this would work, you see. Their suburbs stream out behind them, you see, in each one of these things. You make these things stand in a fan. And you have a fanned-out city which is going out with tremendous transport and underground and so forth. There's enough undergrounds in there to go around in circles and out to the furthest reaches of the suburbs so that you get any place in it. But it'd make a rather large town.

Now, you take every capital of the world and treat it accordingly and then treat it in such a way that transport within the capital is very fast and so that each and every section and center of the capital has some of its own atmosphere rather easily planned up, by the way. It isn't just a sprawling mess where you – by have a bunch of capitals sitting side by side and they are very definitely worked in such a way that everybody'd be quite happy with it all. And they're all built around a central capital of its own which is very bombproof. Built under a mountain. Artificial mountain which you could never destroy. This would throw everybody into apathy. [laughter] And a bunker of huge proportions and that of course would be an international parliament of Earth, which then had certain powers and so forth, over various nations.

Not unlike the United Nations today but with a different composition, a more British-American type of a composition so that you don't get four or five favored nations who can overthrow everything else and you don't get unequal stuff so that there's some country that has twenty people in its population and it has a member in the United Nations who has as much say, you see, as somebody who has a billion population. I mean, that's the way they've got it rigged now.

But you get an equalization of population. Well, you have to figure out how can you get a very equalized population. You have to invent a new method in the United Nations that you would put together. You have to get a brand-new method of representation. You have to represent by the square mile and the person in a formula. In other words, how much square mileage is this person representing and how much population and these two are put together in a formula and that country has that many representatives in the United Nations, you see. Which is rather fair. And then, of course, you'd run some kind of a two-house system and so on.

Well, of course these fellows would love to be right up against every capital that they were dealing with. These fellows that were elected to the United Nations and that sort of thing, if they were up against every capital they were dealing with, they wouldn't have great difficulties and big misunderstandings and if all of these nations that had their capitals there work cheek by jowl with the assembly which was doing all this, I don't think they'd get into too much trouble either. There'd be enough politicking going on. It would be sufficiently involved to please almost anybody. Particularly if it was based on a good, sound system.

So Wendell Willkie came out with something he called *One World*, and practically everybody shot him down in his tracks. He was a pioneer in this particular field. But nevertheless this idea has become more and more popular and it's actually sweeping in that direction. And you'll find out that togetherness is the watchword of all movements on Earth. It's togetherness, more togetherness. So soundly, technically, speaking just Scientological technical aspects of it, a proposal like this is far more acceptable than you would readily believe. Because it says immediately "togetherness," you see. Let's put them all together, see. Well, anybody can understand that, see? And they think that's a good idea.

Now, what does this – what does this immediately entail in the way of propaganda or action or something of that sort? Well, that's hardly even important. As long as some of the elementary steps are taken, why, the rest might very well follow through rather easily.

And you'd have to take a program by these steps: The first step would have to be you'd have to persuade all governments to turn over all atomic weapons, stocks, control of atomic manufacturers to the United Nations at once, you see.

Second step is persuade the United Nations and all governments to select a site for and construct an International City, preferably in North Africa on the Mediterranean coast where land reclamation can expand its area and where its communication lines can be easily centered for Earth.

Third step: Persuade all governments to remove their capitals to International City complete with heads of government, congresses and parliaments. Prohibit a secondary capital or even a communication relay center within the country itself.

Fourth step is secure communication lines and command lines from each country's head of government in International City to the government of each internal county or state in that country. And regard each county or state within a country as an autonomous unit under the control of the head of a nation in International City.

The fifth step would be to bring about a recomposition of the United Nations basing its member – delegates, on a formula comprised of land value – land area and value, production and construction value and population figures, a more complicated formula I just gave you, the most important one is what I gave you, but you could even make a more complicated formula for representation which had to do with its potential construction and production values as a nation.

Remove all special privilege categories for favored nations and the exercise of veto by a few. And form the United Nations into a judiciary division, two houses, an executive branch, the key officials to be popularly elected or selected within the nations they represent

and by voting by both upper and lower United Nations houses for the head of the United Nations. And reform the United Nations charter into an instrument specifically engaged in governing the heads of nations and international affairs and forbid in the charter all interference with individuals or smaller communities.

Sixth step would be forbid treaties of mutual assistance – warlike assistance.

Seventh, bring about the creation of a small, effective armed force for the United Nations, dismantling or abolishment of all other war facilities. Well, naturally, if they were the only ones that got atomic bombs then their main police action would be devoted to whether or not anybody else was manufacturing atomic bombs. And they just make sure that that wouldn't happen and they wouldn't make – require a tremendous force involved in it.

Persuade stable and real international economic measures. In other words, do something to keep money in balance, like the World International Bank, that tries to keep the lid on.

Persuade the United Nations and national governments that the activities of the United Nations and national governments should be limited to ... And then we limit what a national government should be up to.

And we go ahead with this plan and it has all been written up here, in considerable detail, which will – we go ahead with this plan on the basis, on the basis, that such a general agreement amongst Scientologists would push what efforts an individual was engaged in into a coordinated activity so that it would count. And here is a big plan that is sufficiently sloppy with a central executive, you see, a sufficient – and when I say "sloppy" I mean – I mean that – it's a – it's a plan which is centralized and it could be done very sloppily. You'd still get someplace, you see. There's no great damage would result if it went far awry, don't you see? So if everybody was moving more or less in that direction, you'd have some possibility of the attainment of the final objective.

Furthermore, it's a sufficiently interesting plan, I think you will agree, that it would cause a lot of conversation and I frankly don't think anybody else is doing anything for world peace at all. So that gives it a peculiar, lonely individuality. But it's a good conversation piece. It's a good thing to talk about, it's a good thing to speculate about, good thing to figure on. And it gives a cohesive action to what might be a great many individual actions.

If you're going to persuade some head of state in some particular line to do something or other there's many things which you could think of, I'm sure. But if you were in a position to do that, and any one of you were in a position to do that, in different areas or parts and you were all insisting on one objective, it'd be very likely to take place, you see, without any creation of chaos at all.

You'd have a situation here of – well, everybody sort of is insisting that this happen and if there was any persuasion being used, why, you wanted to know how to line up one's efforts with anybody else's efforts. Well, if you've got a plan of this particular character, your own imagination can fill in an awful lot of blanks and details and you still wouldn't go awry and the plan still wouldn't be wrecked. That's the basic virtue of this plan. The possibility of

its effectiveness, the fact that something like this should be done are compared to another datum. Is this – would there be any feasibility in it ever happening at all?

You would be surprised how many ideas that a – of Scientology have materialized in the world in the last few years. It's interesting. They very often get warped and twisted around in numerous ways but it's very peculiar how often this can occur. How often these things have been actually adopted.

So here's a plan, An International Objective is the name of the plan at large and the plan itself is the International City, which merely says a government of Earth.

Now, what does a Scientologist get out of this? Well, on its original release, of course the plan doesn't pay too much attention to what a Scientologist would do or not do or how you would get out of it or what he would get out of it or something like that. But let me assure you, if the Scientologist was instrumental in bringing about what amounts to a complete political revolution of this planet, he – nobody would be sitting around wondering what he would get out of it. It's inevitable. It's inevitable. If anybody starts getting into agreement with this plan, all you have to do is just keep the word Scientology parked someplace around the fringes of the plan and you'll get all sorts of credit in this particular direction. So there's good dissemination in this line.

And then of course having brought it about you eventually would find that they wouldn't want psychiatrists in International City. They have political use. And we could slip that one in. You wouldn't want any psychiatrist there, you see, because you could see – you could kidnap the head of another nation and brainwash him. This has got to be calm. We've got to have trustworthy people in charge of that branch of things. And about all I would ask would simply be a monopoly on all mental healing done inside the boundaries of International City. I think that would be about the end product of it.

Now, now you've got these people together, where maybe you could put some shoes on them. See? If you – if you had the popularity of having pushed this plan across, people would listen. People would listen to *you* as a Scientologist. And if you kept saying, well, you shouldn't have bad – bad healing facilities and so forth in International City, you see, and it shouldn't be all messed up, that sort of thing, and we ought to be taking care at least of that branch of things, why, I'm not now talking about doing any coercion or influence of any kind whatsoever. Political figures are always falling on their heads and their wives are always having snits and fits. In very, very short order if you merely were pushing on this particular point, why, they'd all swear by you. They'd say, "Oh, well..." They'd start listening to you. And the next thing you know, why, they're all members of a PE Course and you got the planet.

But that point we won't go into in the original releases. [laughter] It's nothing hidden, it simply makes it somewhat incredible. The point is the main virtue that it has, the main virtue that it has – it is doing something and is proposing something where there is at the moment notably a complete void. I haven't heard a world peace plan for literally ages. Those that have existed have all folded up. This is something nobody's thinking about. This is long gone. And that one emerged on the stage of the world, which had any idea of workability or talkability, that in itself has some value. It gives a coordinated direction and one of the targets and objectives, I'm sure, of every one of you, is you wished to God that things would calm down

and wouldn't be blowing its head off every fifteen seconds and the environment's dangerousness would just subside, just a little bit, so you could get on with your business. Well, this is of course one method of bringing about on an international level.

Now, you notice I'm not particularly trying to sell you this plan, I'm merely informing you of the plan, informing you of what value it might have. Now, there are other – undoubtedly there are liabilities to such a plan. Undoubtedly there are liabilities to such a plan. But I don't think the liabilities are such that they outweigh the values of the plan. You say, well, some bloke could come along and make himself a dictator of Earth in this particular fashion. Here is everybody all sitting there together ready to be gunned down, and so forth. Well, I don't know. Pretty hard to do today. Pretty hard to do. Communication lines and so forth.

We had a bloke tried it, fellow named Hitler, not too long ago, and he didn't make it. And nobody's made this target recently. In fact nobody's ever really made it. Yes, it's true that it puts all the political control of Earth in one particular area. But it also puts into that area an awful lot of wily guys, see. These guys are of a different nature than what you might expect of just legislators coming to a capital, don't you see. They are – they have their own vested interest. They want to walk their own way through all this. They want – they see that they cannot attain their objectives by war, and man will always try to attain an objective. So if they can't attain their political objectives by war, they will try to attain them by diplomacy. And they would welcome the proximity of other capitals, and a large legislature to lobby in, and that sort of thing. And they're not about to give this up into a dictatorship. They would not even think in that particular direction. They'd never cooperate with one, that's what that amounts to.

Now, another liability is this might leave countries wide-open to – wide-open to revolt or revolution or something of this sort or they might revolt against their internationally located government, which is quite absent, and things might be very upset in that particular direction. Well, I think that – I think that that possibility would be equally apparent to the head of every state in International City. And I think it would tend to govern in such a way that it wouldn't happen. Absentee government has not recently been posing too much of a problem. Britain, for instance, has no real trouble, and has had no real trouble, governing absently, unless she was so distracted or no longer cared. And what people think about the British Empire and its particular breakup seldom take into effect [account], well, maybe they got tired of the wogs, you see? And that I think is the real explanation for it. I think they just got tired of it.

When you recognize that one small rock down in the – the Caribbean and so forth drains directly out of the British treasury every year about a million and a half pounds just to pay for its government, and it furnishes nothing back to anybody for anything, after a while a fellow, even a tax collector who's sweating to get the money in, says, "Well, why should we be spending a million and a half pounds so that island down there can have its own government, and what use is it?"

The truth of the matter is when you had sailing ships, out-flung and far-flung bases were of great use. But when you can get three hundred marines there in transport planes in a matter of a few hours, there is no need of that base. So it's an archaic method of control and it's been dropped.

No, I don't think that this – I don't think this would bring about any vast upset. You say, well, that government, of course, would maintain a standing army of some kind or another. Yes, yes, it'd maintain a standing army of some kind or another, they always do. Probably maintain a bodyguard within International City. Well, that puts quite a few troops in International City, of very dissonant lots and that sort of thing. Yeah, that also puts quite – that also puts quite a force of control under International City government.

Well, there's a solution to the overthrow of the capital by force by putting the political control of the capital out from underneath the United Nations. So that the political control of International City should consistently be independent of any government. It merely has to do with the safety and security of the individuals inside the boundaries of International City, and that would be their end product. That would be everything that they would be interested in. And they would have a sufficient force there to do that and that force would have to be sufficient to outnumber any even summed-up bodyguards inside the City. In other words, the political control of International City ought to be itself.

Well, how do you keep it itself? Well, you make it terribly profitable. See, you don't make it political, you make it profitable. So how do you finance International City? Well, you finance it originally in such a way that it itself becomes a property which becomes very profitable to some people. We don't care anything about who these people are, we only care that they consider it profitable, see, to have International City, and that they go on having International City, and that they consider it a governmental responsibility because it's profitable.

Now, the Russian would scream over that logic, but there's where he falls on his head all the time. The way to have a calm International City is to make sure that the ownership of the land and property of the International City brings in money to a small group who sit as a council in International City and make sure that things remain nice and peaceful and profitable. Just cut the whole thing sideways from political control whatsoever. You figure out then that there's a member of the International City government, a member of that government. Had nothing to do with a nation, has nothing to do with the United Nations. He has only to do with the physical construction and property of the International City.

Well, you hold out this sort of bait to some construction company that after it built its buildings it's going to draw rent on these buildings from here on out and that a member of that construction company is going to sit on the governing board of that city with no government over its head. And all it has to do is sit there and keep the peace in International City, you have then whipped the government of International City sideways from underneath the political ramifications of otherwise, and you put a very hard core, of very hardheaded guys who want to make awful sure that they keep dragging down the rent, you see, from the White House. And this is profitable. And you make it profitable and you make it rather terrific to have a seat, you see, on that council that governs International City. And it's not governed by the United Nations.

Now, that splits up political control so much it puts another interest into the area which upsets of course any effort to upset International City. Now, these boys would always be eager beaver. They've already got troops, haven't they? They've got lots of troops, they got police of one kind or another who are used to dealing with the citizens of this city, where they

always would have their ear to the ground making sure nobody got assassinated, making sure that no parades got interrupted, making sure that there were no demonstrations messing up their buildings, see? Making sure that there was no sudden coup going to take place and over-set their this and that, and they would sit there and keep the thing on an even keel.

In other words, it would only be to one person's interest. If you want to see a lousy capital, take a look at a capital which is owned by the government. Governments take very bad care of the capitals. Do you know that the Washington Monument sat I don't know for how many years, some disgraceful number of years, as blocks of stone out in the middle of a little meadow because of, by private subscription, was being put together one way or the other, and the government wouldn't help them out and it just sat there. It just sat there, blocks of stone scattered around. And somebody finally put it together after I don't know how many years, twenty or thirty.

If you want to look at a capital which is having a hard time, it's a capital that only depends totally on the – a government for its maintenance, and which is of no great profit to anybody. And the governments come and the governments go and nobody really takes care of the place.

So the way to get International City built, of course, is to hold out the persuasive fact that those who build International City, govern International City as part of the International City council. They do not govern Earth but they govern International City. And you all of a sudden throw the main capital of Earth in the Western World, which is construction capital, immediately and directly behind the project with a crash.

Now, somebody is going to have to operate and act as a clearinghouse. Somebody's going to have to operate as a clearinghouse as to who is a member of that council. And that is not particularly provided for and we'd probably get forced into it sooner or later. Somebody'd take the bit in his teeth, the way I figured, and so forth. We'd be perfectly happy to operate or act as a central which exchanged information concerning International City, the books and pamphlets and wrote letters about it and that sort of thing.

But that's about the extent of our direct interest in it, of our direct public interest in it. That's the extent of it. Something to be interested in, something to bring about world peace and that sort of thing.

Now, on the other side of the fence, you consider this a training ground for the budding OT. And it becomes very fruitful. It's a nice school exercise. And it's all very, very constructive and he doesn't – isn't left standing around with his hands in his ex-engrams wondering what he should do with himself.

The upshot of the thing is then that there is – this was my conclusion on the original – that it was possible to put together a piece of planning which had some possibility of bringing about world peace. That was the first thing that I was assembling on this, that it was possible to do this. My next conclusion was that it wasn't being done. My next conclusion was that togetherness was the main forward dynamic thrust of most of these societies. And that then – that this then formed also a way of exercising the talents of people in Scientology and it seemed to me that it became a feasibility. But more important, perhaps, even than this, it holds forth a bit of hope that there is something can be done about it.

I think people have gotten to a point where they have no recognition that anything could be done about it at all. And it holds a bit of hope forward in that particular direction. Now, it gives the Scientologist something else. It gives him a town. It gives him an area of interest and town that could be put together and straightened up. It gives a piece of planet into their hands, no matter how mythical it is at the moment.

There's a tremendous amount of desert down there. I haven't been down and taken a look around there recently, but somewhere between Carthage – I'll come up to present time, excuse me – Tunis, and – modern name Tripoli – along this line of coast and so forth, there's a tremendous amount of back country. Old communication lines have also gone into there. It's time immemorial this place has been operative. It was knocked around pretty badly in World War II, but there's possibilities open up of tremendous scope, so that you're not building on top of a – or around an already existing situation. That looks to me like a fairly good view, but of course it – I've merely picked the oldest natural communication lines of the planet, and they went into that particular zone and area.

And looking over – looking over a – possibilities, feasibilities and that sort of thing, I saw that there – a lot of Scientologists might be able to have some fun with it one way or the other. They might be able to do something. And I wasn't thinking now in terms of OTs. I was just thinking of somebody or other; he knows somebody in the construction business, you know and, why, he can get him all smoked up like mad, you see, so on, with – very legitimately so, you see.

Because in actual fact it creates a fantastic amount of new wealth. See, there's new wealth created when you start to take a large area of the world that's completely arid and throw it into a usable state, and you get a lot of fellows interested in putting construction together on the spot and harbor facilities and this, that and the other and airfields and buildings and *wa-wap* and more and wow, you know! It's a creation of wealth.

And then you start figuring out your communication lines and that sort of thing and where they all go and the remodernization of various county and state capitals. In England here, they practically had to build another half a dozen, you know, because it's gotten very centralized. Here's stuff going up in all directions, you see. Here's busyness. You can get awfully involved, you see, in a project like this. You can go beat the drum on something or other.

Now of course, you say, well, it doesn't have too much to do with Scientology. Yes, it has a great deal to do with Scientology since it's simply a broad, fourth dynamic method of dedangerizing the environment. That's as a process. You just – you're just pushing in that direction. Now if you're merely saying something could be done about it because a feasible plan does exist, you've actually made the environment less dangerous. So it is a method of making the environment less dangerous. It is a fourth dynamic process, technically. It is a method of achieving eventually dissemination to the heads of nations in one small area, all at once. And now, I'll give you another little secret with regard to this. We have had some trouble with governments recently. And I think they've been insolent. They've been disrespectful. And I've looked this over carefully and I've decided that we shouldn't stand for it.

Now, the way – the way you really upset a government is to move its capital. Now, if you are saying that you have in your power the ability to move all capitals of Earth, you have raised your comparable magnitude to the governments of Earth from a government of Earth, you see?

This is the little odd piece of magic back of it. The fact that you are talking about moving all the capitals of Earth at your discretion to a new situation depowers all of those capitals with regard to Scientology. And I think they ought to be taught a lesson. And that is the innocent threat that is posed back of all that. You see, a terminal has its force in power of being able to maintain and hold its position. You destroy this in a government by merely saying that it would be a good thing to do. This makes them very, very weak and tottery, as far as you're concerned. And I think everybody would agree that it'd be a very good thing to do. And I even think governments themselves would agree that it would be a very good thing to do. And therein lies a very interesting little piece of magic. Because it upgrades at once the power and magnitude of Scientology, simply that they would say, "Well, all the governments ought to move down to International City," see?

And that leaves those governments with a odd feeling, not knowing our technology they would not be able to explain it. But they have been threatened with inability to hold their position. They – now, of course, they don't even kind of want to hold their position because they don't even come up scale to a point of realizing that's very important. But it *is* very important. It is very important and I frankly don't think you'd have anywhere near as much trouble with them if you were espousing such a plan. I think you'd have far less trouble with them. They'd feel shaky talking to you. Because they'd feel they couldn't hold their position while confronting you. They'd feel they're kind of slipping off to North Africa already. [laughter]

This is not trickery, this is just technology put to a good use. Two-terminal situation. All right, they're holding their terminal lines stretched out, so as to hold the whole world in threat. Well, let's just spoil the power to do so by shifting those terminals or proposing to shift those terminals.

Now, I will write, a lot of, oh, not a lot of stuff, but I will write some more on this. We'll put this together into a pamphlet of some kind or another. It's been written, in actual fact, for some time and I was just waiting until I had Class VI pretty well settled. And we will put this into a bit of a pamphlet that can be distributed around and maybe I'll write up some more material on it, if I get around to it. This is quite interesting as itself, but I should imagine there should be better agreement on this.

It's a very funny thing is, although people will have a lot of different opinions, if we hold to a central agreement line, and so forth, they will eventually accept the central agreement line. This, if it takes care of most objections, would then come about as the materialized plan even though a lot of people were trying to change it, don't you see? And it looks to me, it looks to me, like it is an interesting answer. It is nothing where somebody would take off the week he was going to give an intensive in, don't you see, and spend that whole week pounding the desk about it or something like this, but it would certainly be something that would be interesting to do over the weekend, don't you see, or something like this, you know. And it's interesting to mention and hand out to PE Courses, and they might not be able to understand

how they're thinking, but they might be able to understand that you could have an international government of one kind or another.

Now, somebody's going to ask Scientologists, "Well, who is back of this? Who is back of this?" And the only thing you want to tell them, "Well, just we are," you see, or "Ron is." I don't care what you say, you see. But there – frankly, there is no moneyed group or no moneyed individual of any kind back of this. You see, there is nobody back of this. But there's a huge vacuum provided here that would pick up such people and put them into it. Only remember, they're not now in back of it. They're in it. [laughter] See?

So we in actual fact are in back of it. But we are not being paid in any way shape or form to beat the drum one way or the other. We merely figure it'd be very good for the population of Earth if they were just a little less restimulated. And it was – originally took place of, "Is it possible to do anything about Earth? Would it be possible for an OT to agree upon some project or another? Agree on some project that he might possibly care to push toward? And would there be some constructive project which put – made life a little easier for one and all," and so forth. These were the considerations which motivated this, all very mild considerations. I think something of this sort depends for its power upon interest.

I remember when I first wrote this up, it was lying there very quietly minding its own business, and I had really last seen it on my desk, over to the side in a huge pile of papers of one kind or another, and it – that's where I'd last seen it. And here was dear Joan, standing there in the middle of the carpet in my office, saying, "Can I run this please, in the next issue?" I thought, isn't that interesting! It has disappeared out of my desk, and it's mysteriously about to be printed as the British *Certainty*, because of course, she's the editor of British *Certainty*, you see. And it struck me as though it must be considered a somewhat interesting project. Because it's been quite a while since anybody stole an article out from underneath a pile of paper. [laughter]

But has no more – it has no more force or vastness to us than that. It's almost an incidental fourth dynamic project, if you can have any fun with it, why, by all means, do so, and I will see that it's distributed to you. The mimeograph of – the mimeograph write-up of the whole thing, giving all sorts of odd points and so forth, with regard to International City and its formation and what it should be about. And I'll see that those get handed out to you in the next day or so. It all depends on whether or not they have a stock of them in mimeo.

But anyway, I wanted to talk to you about it, because very often it occurs to you, well, we're powering up individuals pretty heavily, here. This is getting more and more so. And you'll find that people around might also become uneasy. What do these people mean to do? We already have one Scientologist up in the – up in the north of England up here who's so horrified at the idea of making some OTs, he said the atom bomb would be far more preferable. Atom bomb would be far preferable to making some OTs. That'd be absolute chaos and disaster.

Yeah, a very interesting point of view, you see. But they get these odd – they get these odd lines. So what do these people intend? All right, if they're bringing off anything of this sort or if something spectacular is happening, what do these people intend? What are their intentions toward this planet? I think it's a nice thing to have some sort of a plan sitting there

that explains that your intentions are basically good roads and good weather, and then if you have some time, even give it a little push. And it seems to me like that's a sensible way of going about it.

Well, what do you think of the project? [applause] All right.

Thank you. Thank you very much.

HOW TO MANAGE A COURSE

A lecture given on 10 April 1964

Instructors' Conference, 10 April, 1964. I'm going to – taping this because there is a little bit of data here that I want to give you which you probably will feel is very unpalatable, but which is the *ne plus ultra* of training. I want to give you this very rapidly. It is also in the form of a policy letter of 10 April. I want to discuss these various points, and – since it's difficult to put all these things out in a policy letter.

I'll first just merely read you the policy letter. Scientology Courses. This does not necessarily apply only to the Saint Hill Course; this applies to all Scientology courses. And they consist of, as follows:

"There are three zones of responsibility in course management. These are:

"1. Providing valuable subject materials."

Well, of course, that could apply in college as well as it could apply anywhere – is providing valuable subject materials. What determines their value? That might even be something else. But ordinarily, is it useful? Is it going to improve somebody? Is it going to forward something, or something like this, or going to make something effective? That's the subject material. That could be physics, and so forth, and oddly enough, could even go as far down scale as metaphysics.

Now, under this particular zone in Scientology right now, we have, oddly enough, culminated – and this is hard to believe, because it is such a wildly embracing figure – we have culminated in anything that was desirable in the fields of religion, mysticism, spiritualism or mental sciences; anything desirable in those particular fields have been discovered and culminated in the field of Scientology right now. That's why I say it's rather hard to believe, but you look at it, that's true. So we do have valuable subject materials.

Now, that job is complete. And so, number one of these, course management, as far as we're concerned, on a Scientology course, that is complete. We're even throwing away material now which would have been enough to have made a complete science and revolutionized middle Europe, you know, two hundred years ago. We're just throwing it away. It's – we've got stuff that's more effective than that and so we don't pay much attention to it and so forth. There's tons of such material that is just going out the window now. It goes into codification archives, research-level actions, contributive actions and so forth. And the truth of the matter

is – and this will shock you, on the subject of valuable subject materials – on this little sheet* which you see in front of you, right now, this little sheet here, is contained every process and auditor skill. This does not contain the philosophic side of Scientology, but this contains the auditor technical side of Scientology. And every process and every action on this one type-written sheet, one side, eight by ten, is contained on this sheet.

And this last – you see, most of it is right up here at the top, a very small, little area here at the top. Well, that contains all of the auditor skills. And this long one here is just everything a Class VI Auditor ought to be able to do. It's down to such tiny, little things as knowing about "no auditing." See, that "no auditing" can upset somebody, you see? And the valuable subject materials, then, that we are teaching on all Scientology courses, and we're teaching all of this at Saint Hill, are contained on this one little sheet. So there is not a vast amount of data when we get under valuable subject materials.

The whole philosophical side of this is, of course, left wide-open. These are sometimes what you call basics, ARC, and that sort of thing; we haven't gone into the nature of man on this sheet. But this is the technical auditor side of the picture.

Now, the next one, number two, is "Organizing and codifying those materials so that they are highly effective and comprehensible."

Now, that's a codification of the material. And one early dawn here the other day, Suzie and I whipped out the form of presentation of a proper bulletin or a piece of data. And we're actually throwing this stuff together – she is – from bulletins and so forth, with considerable speed. It's under twelve headings, is it, or is it thirteen?

Female voice: Twelve.

Twelve headings. And these twelve headings, oddly enough – each one of these pieces of material is under the twelve headings, and the twelve headings comprise the question the Examiner should ask. All he's got to do is convert it to a question, like what this process is for, you see, or something like that. All he has to say is "What is this process for?" Don't you see? So there's a simplification even to that little piece of stuff.

Now, therefore, there are very few processes, and these are being codified up on very, very exact basis of format. So all a student has to do is know those. And that sheet that has to do with a process also contains the technical drills and the auditing requirements. So they're all on the same sheet, but of course your technical drills and your auditing requirements – because one of them lasts for two or three processes – these are grouped as a separate group for your practical. And then the auditing requirement, of course, is whether or not the person can audit this. And that, of course, is the only auditing requirement there is, is "Can he audit it successfully?"

So the codification of these materials to comprehensibility is underway. I will not say at this moment they are instantly and immediately available to you but if you recognize what we are heading for and if you have in hand this little sheet, you can make do with the instruc-

* Editor's note: Refers to HCOB 10 April 64, "All Levels Auditing Skills" or a write-up of the same contents

tion materials which you have up to the moment when they're published in this very harshly pure format, and so on. For instance, you've got the materials for R1C, and so forth. Well, R1C is being converted to this other format. But you still have the materials that you can use and apply.

Now – now we get to the third – the third.

That's just the comprehensibility of the materials and packaging it, and so on. That, of course, gets together your checksheets for the various levels, and that sort of thing. That all depends on these things, and these checksheets are still on this one little typewritten sheet.

Now, the third one concerns you very directly and very intimately, and that's "Instructing the student in those materials to a point of high comprehension and competency." Instructing the student.

Now, if you've got the materials and you've got the know-how, and then that know-how is codified, we still have the problem of instructing the student in those materials. We still have this problem. And this is the part which you at first may not agree with, and you may find is too gruesome to confront for words, but I'll just go on and read the remainder of this very rapidly.

"In Scientology, (1) has been done, fully and completely. There are no gaps or unanswered questions.

"In (2) the very best of Scientology has been selected out for instruction and is being written in such a way as to minimize any confusion and maximize the communication and practice of the data."

Now, "In (3)," – which is teaching the student with it, "we have our largest potential randomness. And it is this which this policy letter is concerned – with which this policy letter is concerned. The instruction of the student is a personalized matter. Students require answers to their own questions and clarification of their own understandings."

The student comes up with a lot of preconceptions and so forth, and these get in his way most ghastly, and so that his clarification on the data which is being given to him becomes an important part of the communication of the data. But remember that the student is interjecting this barrier and it is up to the Instructor to keep that barrier wiped away.

And, "The burden of this falls on the Instructor.

"In auditing it has taken us a long time to learn that there are no bad preclears. There are only auditor errors."

And, "We have now learned a similar thing about instructing. There are only slow Instructors. There are no slow students."

Now, that's a terrible thing, and I imagine that would seem very unpalatable to you, but I myself had to confront up to this as a datum.

"The length of time a student is on course is a direct index of the quality of instruction on that course."

And, of course, we're held back with the fact that we've only just culminated the material with the codification of "it's in progress," so that, of course, is part of our difficulty at this present instant. But with those out of the way, you only have instruction.

Now, "A fast course is well instructed. And a slow course is poorly instructed."

And the subject of this, of course, is how are we going to make this a fast course? See? Well, we're taking care of these other zones, what our responsibility is, but this one is our zone of responsibility, too, and it'll be this one that we have to continue to live with. "A fast course is well instructed and a slow course is poorly instructed."

"A bad course gets bad enrollments." This has to do with the number of people you have on a course. "A good course gets good enrollments. If enrollment is down, the course is a poor course. That has been observed continually in Academies for years and has no variations. If you want a full course, provide a well cons – instructed course."

"If course enrollments are down, don't ponder beyond how to improve the course." Don't ponder beyond this how to improve the course. "And you'll win if you improve the course."

"This is a brick wall datum: a poor course will become an empty course."

"The speed with which a student can go through a course depends only on (1), (2) and particularly (3) above. It does not depend on the student."

And at this point, you poor Instructors who've had to live with these lines, of course, will probably throw up your hat and say, "Well, that's it. I've had it. Now he's said too much!"

But "Don't blame the students. Look at (1), (2) and (3) above.

"There are no slow students. There is only slow instruction.

"The future of Scientology courses depends on getting the student rapidly through the course and graduating him or her at a good level of competence.

"Scientology course futures do not depend on lowered rates.

"You're already selling pearls for pennies.

"Just make sure you are selling pearls.

"I have taken care of (1), (2) is very thoroughly in hand, and (3) is up to the Instructors.

"A fast course is a well-instructed course. A full course is a well-instructed, fast course."

And, "That's all the mystery there is in it." There really isn't anything else to a course and its management than just those factors.

Now, where does that bring us? Now, this meeting is timely and actually is not in condemnation of instruction, because you've had your – your worries have existed in (1) and (2) to a very marked degree. The valuable material was there, and actually it's just culminated to a complete completion. The codification of that material and so forth is just now in hand.

You have your worries with tremendous quantities of materials which may or may not apply at this particular time. You may have excess tapes and all that sort of thing tends to get in your road. Some of your drills may be completely inadequate to what you're trying to accomplish with them, that sort of thing. And you've had these things to worry with. But you also had, running along, this other thing.

Because those other things have existed, we have, to some degree, developed the idea of the slow student. And that one, as we repair (1) and (2), we've got to throw overboard. We could have such a thing as a troublesome student. He seems to be throwing more questions and misunderstandings into the situation than seems necessary at the particular moment, but under good instruction this is cared for. This is cared for. We had to develop methods of handling that, because he's interjecting worries and concerns into the course material and it's up to us to get those things smoothed out and put away.

Now, we have to have brief instruction materials and cover them extremely well, and this brings about our attitude of instruction. Our attitude of instruction should be very tough, but very helpful. We should be – learn to be very, very harsh on the subject of just pure obstructionism. Just pass on by it – don't fool around with it – and recognize whether or not this fellow really is in some kind of a weird spin, if he's just inventing one. And if he's in some kind of a weird confusion about something or other, learn to grab him by the nape of the neck and say, "It's yip and it's yip and it's yip-yip. Now, do you get that? Now, what don't you understand about that? All right, very good. Well, that's – well, what you're worrying about there is not an important part of this; actually it's yip-yip. Now, you tell me what this applies to," and so forth, and all of a sudden lights dawn.

An example out here. Fellow couldn't get what an opposite was until he was told that it was an antonym. And being a former English teacher, he of course could grasp an antonym, but up to that moment he was saying, "What I would do would be entirely different." And it merely had to be harshly brought home to him that nobody under God's green earth was interested in what he would do as an opposite action, that we were only interested in what was an opposite.

Now, you get there – we have, in one example, a clarification necessary. He couldn't get it through his skull. All right, so we transpose the material cleverly and we say, well, it's an antonym. "Oh, it's an antonym." See?

He's interposing this weird one: "What I would do..."

In that case we're just simply tough. "Who the hell cares what you would do? We only want to know what an antonym is." You get the idea?

Then, to be very, very – very, very demanding, extremely demanding, for speed, dash and accuracy on essentials and let the nonessentials slip. So he doesn't know the number of the bulletin. So he doesn't know where the paragraph fits on the left-hand side of the ruddy rod. So he couldn't find the tape if it had neon lights on it. So what?

"Is a pc audited during an ARC break?"

And he said, "Well, uh – le – uh – let me..."

"Flunk!" See?

So he didn't know where the tape was. So he didn't know what body of material it came out of. Well, all right, so what? So what? We'll skip it, see?

But if you say to him, "Well, is somebody audited during an ARC break?"

And he said, "Well, uh... well, that uh..."

"Flunk! Flunk! Flunk! Flunk!" You know? Say, "For God's sakes, why don't you understand this stuff?" you know? "Now, go on back and study it."

In other words, that's when to take it and what not to. That depends to a large degree on the auditor's judgment of the matter.

But what is essential material? Well, just be absolutely *vicious* on the subject. And nonessentials, *plfff*, who cares? Do you see? So you don't have a uniform level of examination. You have a – an examination level which is tough on essentials and just skips nonessentials. Guy can sit up against a wall and rattle off Model Session: *poppeta-poppeta-poppeta-poppeta*, *bang-bang-bangety-bang*. He can sit in a session, he can go Model Session all the way through, *bang-bang*, without a flaw or a droop, you see, anyplace along the line. Fine. Be absolutely death on his being able to do so, don't you see?

Now, he's rather worried about the evolution of a Model Session, and "Wouldn't it be something or other?" And "Wasn't it true that a Model Session once...?" and so forth.

Well? So he even argues about it on an examination paper. Well, we couldn't care less. Can he do Model Session *poppeta-poppeta-poppeta-poppeta*? That's all we're looking for. See? He doesn't even have to be letter-perfect on *why* he has to do Model Session. It's not for him to ask. We're making a technician.

So this – this level – this level of understanding of what's essential and what isn't essential is demanded of the Instructor. See? And that's where fast instruction comes in. Your instruction is fast to the degree that you appreciate that this guy is walking around in a squirrel cage, and you try to get the data through to him somehow or another, the essential datum, so that he says, "Oh, why...? Oh, well, yeah. What do you know!" You know?

Or we see he's walking around on a squirrel cage, "Wasn't this actually developed at one time or another by Gurdjieff?" See, or Goodgief or Harold Bell Wrightus, or something.

Somebody asked me if I'd studied the work of Frank Lloyd Wright the other day. I was quite interested. He concluded it with two philosophers, and so forth. I don't think he was trying to pull anybody's leg, I just think he didn't know.

But he's pulling something like this, you see? Well, the Instructor has to know. "Aw, lie down. Go off. Skip it! Get off that squirrel cage. It hasn't anything whatsoever to do with what you are studying. Now, so-and-so, this is what we're interested in. Now, can you do that or can't you?" It depends on the Instructor's ability to evaluate the important and the unimportant as far as the student training is concerned.

Now, that will make a fast course. That will make a fast course. Now, we're hitting for the moon, here. We want to get a Class IV through – and I mean through and competent as

the devil – in sixteen weeks. We just want to get him through and smooth in sixteen weeks. Just ride all over him until he is, see? Get a Class VI through in four weeks. These are ideal periods. Four weeks. And get a co-audit so that they can bust on through to OT in twenty weeks. Now, those are your optimum times. This gives us four weeks on Class IV, to smooth it out and be sure. This gives us two to four weeks more on Class VI, so that we can get any question out of our mind, don't you see? And we've hit the maximum period of time in thirty-two weeks to OT in the co-audit, see?

Now, we've hit the maximum periods. But we're inevitably going to hit these maximum periods, and all I'm asking you to do is try to make them the maximum periods. And the only way we can do that is try to go like the devil for the minimum period. Try to shoot that minimum period every time and just go along on a total expectancy that the minimum period will be met. And don't look for anything else to happen, but it *will* be met. Now, that gives you an expectancy of what you're striking for.

Now, if we can do that, and if we've got a tough course with a good spirit of help, we can actually accomplish that. And if we can accomplish that, we'll have a full course out here rolling very nicely and everything going along fine. And if we can't accomplish that, we *won't* have. That's about all there is to that.

Now, I'd want somebody like the Assoc Sec of – of Perth, let us say; he's got this policy letter that tells him to bring somebody else. All right, well, he can't be gone very long from there, don't you see? It's practically disaster he's staring in the face to move off of the point anyhow. Well, let's say he's a retread or something like this. Well, for sure we could get him through here in just a little handful of weeks, you see? Kick him through, kick the person he's brought along with him through, and kick them back onto an airplane again and be perfectly confident that something effective is going to happen in that co-audit team and that they will be able to carry on with the material, accomplish something when they get back there.

Now, if we can do this, we've got it made. We've got it made across the boards, because we'll find out, then, that people will very often take a two-course shot at it. They'll come on here at one period and get their basic and go home, and come on and get another – go on through to the end or something like this, or they'll try to take a one-shot at the whole situation, and so on. But they can adjust their minds accordingly as long as we won't put up with any other time budget than what we've got.

Now, I think you agree with me that it's feasible as long as our codified material is out and that all dross is thrown off the course. I'll read you here rapidly, just for your edification, and not for anything else particularly, because this will all be published under the classification bulletins, or policy letters.

"Level I: R1C for PTPs, R1CM." That's fishing with TA on the meter. Those are broken into two processes because you lost a process, which is a good process, in R1C, when you suddenly started converting it over to using meter fishing. Picking up the things that blew down the meter while the guy was itsainging, see? That was actually a specialized application of R1C, so we lost a process. Here's a process – the same process without a meter and the same process with a meter: Gives us two different processes.

We've got assists; and we've got "R2C," which is discussion by lists. For instance, Fred here prepared a list one time, lists of discussion. You know, just questions. And "Listen-style Auditing and itsa." And that's what that whole level consists of, see, and that's a pretty full level at that.

"Level II is repetitive processes, Model Session, Op Pro by Dup, 8-C, CCHs, Havingness, General O/W, ARC 63, auditing cycle." And other materials from the Class VI Basic Auditing checksheet. Can he answer an auditing question, see, and can he be asked a question? You know, that sort of materials are simply poured in on top of this.

Now, the reason 8-C is pulled independently from the CCHs is the CCHs are just taught as a theoretical action and 8-C is taught as a process. See, so we come down with a thud, you see, on – can he perform 8-C? Can he do that perfectly? Well, we can just skate over the rest of the CCHs here at Saint Hill, don't you see? In an Academy or in an HQS Course, something like that, why, they might hit them a little heavier.

Well, that's the totality of the second level. And the third level is "Auditing by List." This is a brand-new name for a very old action. You clean up lists. We've got tons of lists and all the auditor does is clean each question. And that can be addressed to the most wide and wonderful things, and it so happens that due to the composition of the basic bank – which is weird enough – that becomes a health approach, and will accomplish healing. And big future opened up for this particular goofball process. Big future opened up for it. Because health is totally the broken dramatization of the GPM. When a guy can't dramatize his GPM, he's had it. And, what about the "destroy" series? See?

So somebody's sciatica doesn't depend on what overts he's committing, but very possibly upon what overts he's been unable to commit. And you start running this by list, don't you see. And you bend the list over on the other side and you ask a couple of trick questions or let some Class IV Auditor assess it as to which side of the fence this person is on, then he takes a certain series of lists. Now you go ahead and clean up each one of these questions, and what you got? You've got assessing on a prewritten list. And you also got health very definitely in your hands.

So that is – that is not much to teach, since if he can do this he can also do ARC break assessments, you see, and he can do a lot of other things.

Well, that's of course Sec Checking by List and that's written down here at the same time, but mostly to get a referral to what we're talking about as Auditing by List.

"Prepchecking." Prepchecking not to destimulate, but prepchecking for blood, you know? Something that's almost dropped out of our perimeter. "Problems Intensive, mid ruds and Model Session." And that's the total of Level III, which mainly just puts it to Prepchecking, which is just cleaning a question on a meter, which is practically all Level III is. Can he take a question that he himself has asked or he's read off a list and can he clean it? And that's about all you're teaching him at that whole level all the way through, which simplifies training there enormously.

Then we've got Level IV, which is "R4SC," which is the service fac renumbered. That's just a service fac. "ARC break assessments, R4H and case analysis." And all of this is

assessment, assessment, assessment. So you're teaching him to assess at Level IV, whatever kind of an assessment it is. You're not trying to teach him, now, to clean a line; you're teaching him to find the line to clean. So that's the only – the only step up or improvement there, which makes it pretty easy to graduate up to in training.

And now we've got Level VI, of course, is "locating" – this is all Level VI now consists of – is "Locating the truncation, checking goals" – not finding goals – "running the line plot, and track analysis." Where is the pc, see? That becomes the totality of Level VI. You haven't got, actually, finding goals, putting together goals plots, or any of these other more difficult actions which made Level VI almost impossible.

Now, we get a Level VI Auditor here, and things an auditor should know at Level VI I will simply read off here very rapidly, as again, this will all be published for you.

"Case analysis, present time problem" – he has to know how to handle these various things. "Case analysis. Present time problem. Psychosomatic." Guy got a psychosomatic: What is it? "ARC break." Got to handle a session. "Class VI ARC breaks," is different than session ARC breaks. He's got to be able to do listing. He's got to be able to null a list, and of course that includes "Auditing by List." He's got to know the Auditor's Code. He's got to know about completing a cycle of action. He's got to know about havingness. He's got to know about "theory of restimulation and destimulation." He's got to know by "observation of a preclear" – what's the pc doing at the present moment? "Reading a meter. Executing an auditing cycle. Knowing not to Q-and-A. Knowing about 'no auditing.' Symptoms of an ARC break. Good indicators. Bad indicators. Not to mess up a good running pc. Not to continue the preclear who isn't running. Knowing when to stop auditing and ending up the session." And "how to handle a pc's PTPs at Level VI when they show up. Track analysis. Getting the preclear to follow a line plot. Guiding the preclear down a goals plot. Finding out where a series is truncated. Finding out which type of goals series a pc is in. And looking good, crisp and businesslike as an auditor." And that gives you the totality, and I mean absolute totality, of what a Level VI Auditor ought to be able to do.

Well now, he's got all the basics of that sort of thing. You understand that's – most of that is simply a repeated action on what you've already taught on the lower level. So it's just the refinement of this that has to be taught him in the Level VI Course. So it's not a brand-new subject.

So that is the totality of making the auditor. Now, I've just read you, on that list, what it all amounts to. Well, you say that looks difficult in some respects. But if you've noticed, we've thrown out fantastic numbers of processes. You can right now think "What process? What about that process? What about some other process?" Forget them. These are the senior processes of the bank. Under repetitive processes you have a very few processes. There's not even a great number of those things going to be in very active use. "What question would you permit to be asked of you?" or something like this, you see? That – they're that type of session cycle process – that one, see?

And then you've got your pc handling taped here just underneath "what processes will get the most effective results on the pc?" I mean, if the pc goes into this, then you use that

process, see, and it all weaves together so that none of an auditor's training is wasted as you come up the line and it all catalyzes into the end product.

Now, therefore, that leaves you very few practical drills. You've got your meter drills, your listing drills, you've got your track analysis type drills. And you got your basic TRs and auditing cycle drills. All right, that gives you the package, you see?

Theory – this becomes a pipe, because everything is well codified and well straightened out. It's padded up with lectures which, however, cover the same subject materials that are covered in the bulletins. So therefore lecture examination is not terribly important compared to bulletin examination because the same subject matter is covered.

Auditing is just a question, can the guy get a result with Process "XZ Ben?" See? All right. Well, there's only – there's only a dozen of these processes. Well, can he get a result with that one? Well, has he gotten a result with that one? Well, he's passed on his auditing checksheet if he cleared up somebody's PTP. Obviously he can handle a PTP; cleared up somebody's PTP. And if the student has to point this out to you, then he's now passed this requirement on the checksheet. So that becomes relatively simple in that zone. Is his case making progress is the other half of the Auditing Supervisor action.

Well, that becomes the totality and shape of a course.

Now, you already had a course that was running very well. Now, let's get off into something else. Course was running very well. We complicated the course a little bit. We're dropping back to the simplicity of that. There are no other administrative changes that are taking place. We're actually dropping back to the administrative action which we had of a month or two – three months ago or something like that. About the same administrative action, which was the simpler one with – we have had. So that requires no reformation.

Well, I've given you here a rundown on, really, not just the Saint Hill Course, I've given you a rundown on Scientology courses. These things ought to be crisp and fast and to that degree they'll be very successful. Okay?

Why don't you take a break.

THE CLASSIFICATION AND GRADATION PROGRAM

A lecture given on 14 April 1964

Thank you.

We've had preclears blow but I think I just saw a member of the audience blow. I...
[unclear voice from audience] Just a gag. Just a gag. I'm over your heads today.

How are you today?

Audience: Fine.

What's the date?

Audience: 14 April.

Fourteen April 1964, AD 14 and want to talk to you about something that is very, extremely important to auditors and preclears and so forth. Along about November the 26th released a policy letter that had to do with classification and it called for the classification of preclears and so forth, but at the same time this policy letter was not put into effect. It was merely proposed and it was expected that auditors around the world would answer up and give their opinions with regard to this classification program. They did so and it took a long time for everybody to get his answer in and lot of chitchat back and forth on straightening up these various answers. And finally we arrived at a new program – could no longer be called the classification program for the excellent reason that classification is confined to auditors. So, it becomes a Classification and Gradation Program. And perhaps a shorter, better name for it might be the Levels Program.

Now, the levels of Scientology became necessary when it was realized that no one was taking any pains to bring up the general public right. And they were picking them up and throwing them into the middle of a lion's pit and saying, "Well, that's it," and "All right, now, what's your service facsimile? Oh, you don't know what that is. I'm sorry. Well, I guess it's a failed case. Next!" [laughs] Oh, it wasn't quite as bad as this, but pretty near, pretty near.

Now, oddly enough that wasn't what was giving the auditors trouble. I foresaw that that would give the pc trouble, but I didn't really foresee what was giving the auditor trouble. And what was giving the auditor trouble was what I had just – well, I had proposed something that would relieve this trouble – what was giving the auditor trouble is the pc didn't know from nothing and that was what was giving the auditor trouble.

Now, I recognized that it would have some bearing on cases and I recognized a lot of other things, but I didn't realize the extent to which auditors were losing pcs not by throwing them in over their heads, but not throwing them in at all. And here pcs would sit yakking at each other in co-audits and talking to an auditor and the pc would get over his slight case of lumbosis and he'd say, "Well, I've been processed. Well, I guess – feel better now." And wander on off.

And oddly enough, accidentally put my fingers on why auditors were losing preclears. And it wasn't – it wasn't because the pc... this all – was all disclosed in correspondence and reviews of the situation and so on – and it wasn't because the pc was being thrown in over his head, but because the pc wot-notted what he was being thrown into. He hadn't a clue.

Now, well, let's take up why he hadn't a clue. Well, there's been the Aesculapians, and the best thing they did was slip somebody some hellebore or something like that and the fellow had a dream, see? And a god came to him in the dream, and the god said to him, "Well, you're all going to be copacetic now. Huh, pal?" And then the fellow got well or he didn't get well and mostly he didn't, and that was mental treatment.

And then there's – then there's the – the psychoneurotic analyst and he let the fellow sit there for five years and talk his havingness out, you see?

And then there's this other bunch of guys who have what's called the destruction method of putting a guy in an electric shock machine while packing him with ersatz or something, and that – that blew his brains out.

And then in the Western world there's not even a tradition of philosophy. There's no tradition of – there is – they – you say... what – what equivalent Western word is there for a guru? There isn't, and yet an Indian wouldn't know how to go through his day without knowing this word, guru, somehow or another. You get the idea, see?

We did a survey. I'll give you an idea of the state the public is in – we did a survey in Washington, DC about 1955 which was a very intriguing survey. Because I wanted to know – I thought these birds would realize that the psychiatrists were – let's put it in a more elegant sense – let's put it in a more elegant sense than it deserves – that the psychiatrists were cutting into their racket. So we got ahold of all the ministers in Washington, DC, on the idea that they might have some sensibility with regard to all this and asked them if they thought this was the case. No, No. Any time one of their congregation showed the least signs of becoming nervous, they instantly rushed him to the electric shock machine. Seventeen hundred and eight ministers out of seventeen hundred and ten were wildly in favor of the mental hospital and the electric shock machine as soon as possible. Why, the poor dopes! They didn't realize that that religious ecstasy was the only thing which kept them whizzing. If anybody had suddenly stood up in their congregation and said, "I embrace the Lord," or something like that, they would have said, "Dr. – Dr. Sparks, would you please send a wagon over right away, quick." See?

In other words, the whole field of religion had been eaten up in this particular direction which I thought was rather amazing.

And everywhere we looked, then, this member of the public – actually since time immemorial – has had failed help. Everywhere he looked he saw nothing but failed help. So he has no tradition of any kind whatsoever of what is treatment, what is healing, what is ability, what is getting better, what are any of these things at all, and you put yourself up in the field of the human mind and what does he compare you with, see? Neurotic analysis, see? Electric shock machines; stick the guy full of needles, you know, and give him the old biochemical whiz-bang.

I'm using very technical terms as they undoubtedly use them in their private conferences. "Well, what'll we feed the suckers this year?" You know, I mean it's not quite that crude, perhaps. They say, "What will we feed – what is – what is Latin for 'sucker'?" [laughs]

Now, your public has no tradition. The Western world has no tradition of self-betterment, and it isn't that they're suspicious of Scientology. They wouldn't even know what it was. Our biggest task has been to define Scientology to them and every one of us – every one of us has at one time or another racked his brains into a total stupefaction trying to figure out how to communicate this thing to these people. Why? Well, you're not communicating against any worn or traveled road. You're going right straight through the thorn bushes, see? There is no gradient there of any kind whatsoever. We're putting in the gradient. There we are. And so there is, to begin with, no common communication ground already established. Since you cannot, of course, compare Scientology with all of these other things that the public thinks has something to do with mental treatment. It's mental destruction, the whole lot of it. And – and it doesn't compare so that they can't get their wits wrapped around it.

That's why they – well, you take – take outfits like the – like the AMA, the BMA and that sort of thing, their attacks are so crazy because they don't even know what they're attacking. You see, they're in a total ignorance of what to attack so therefore their attacks are very stupid indeed. They're actually not very hard to whip, because they're too stupid. If you had a squad of soldiers out here that were fighting a giant who didn't exist and you were sitting on the parapet there – you were sitting on the parapet, you see, as an entirely different type of being and they kept on fighting this nonexistent giant, why, after a while all you'd have to do is reach out a stave, put it between their legs and let them fall on their faces. They don't even see you. They don't even know what they're attacking. They haven't any idea whatsoever because they are lost, too, in this communicationless area. There's no area of communication.

So we're having to create not only a science, but a communication road in the society. We're having to chop out the first path and the pc sits there in the midst of all of this confusion getting processed. Well, what's processing to him? And there is the biggest auditor failure. I've seen somebody after (quote) "two years in Scientology," still giving all the proper answers for psychoanalysis. I think some of you have seen them, too – giving all the proper answers for psychoanalysis, see. Try to run a repetitive process on this guy, you see? You say, "Well, now, recall a person you really felt some affinity for." Just one off the bat here, you see.

"Well, my id's been ticking today."

"Yes, what? Can you recall a person you felt some affinity..."

"Well, it's my id, see. And I – I – I – I recognized in myself yesterday some symptoms of fetishism."

You say, "Yes, but have you felt..."

Now, after a while the guy says, "Uh-huh," or something like this while still worrying about his fetishism that he has discovered in himself, you see. He's still being psychoanalyzed, because that's the only comparative understanding he has to Scientology. He has – he has never crossed the communication bridge to Scientology. It's actually a bridge before the Bridge.

What's expected of this fellow? Well, there is one of the largest data that fell out of the hamper in this survey and working this over, is that auditors were losing a large percentage of the people they were trying to process because they had never undertaken any real communication relationship on the subject of Scientology with this pc. In other words, the pc was completely untrained.

And if you think this percentage is slight, it's not. It's apparently 80 percent. There goes your forward progress. It's just going up in smoke. Out of ten people, you reach two. Even though those – eight of those people might have entered into auditing of some kind or another, they vanish because they never entered into auditing. They entered into psychoanalysis or they entered into something else or they entered into something else and they had no idea what they were going into, and nobody ever told them what they were in so they just kept redefining it and they finally decided they didn't like Christian Science, so they stopped being audited. Well, of course, that's an irrational statement but this is the irrational frame of mind those pcs are in.

Well, this is one of the first things that fell out of the hamper. Next thing that fell out of the hamper, just getting on with this, was the auditor in the field being upset about his pc having to take a formal course. And auditors all over the place were taking down flintlock pistols and loading them up ready to blow their brains out over this particular aspect of the thing. So that was going too far in the other direction. So what was reached here was a workable compromise.

There is a route known as the pc, known as the preclear, but it's a route by which the pc is educated. He does not have to be formally trained; he doesn't need any certificates, but before he can get out of his grade, he has to pass certain training requirements taught to him by his auditor and which will all be furnished along with this as the exact texts that have to do with this which he's supposed to be checked out on before he's permitted to launch himself into the next series of processes.

In other words, a compromise was reached here so the field auditor can go on processing his individual preclear and all he need do as far as this – this pc doesn't have to do any auditing – but as far – all he needs to do is make sure that the pc passes his training requirements and these are little booklets which are carried along for each level and they are very simply written and the pc studies them and the auditor has a question sheet which he checks the pc out on. Actually, in the logbook, which I'll speak about in a moment, there is a little checksheet at the beginning of each level, and this checksheet has to be completely passed by the pc, you see, before he's interrupted by this and that.

What kind of thing going into this checksheet, you see? Well, rather minor things, like, don't have withholds from your auditor or you will get upset with him. Don't you see? What is a withhold? A withhold is... Now, of course these things are filled with definitions of Scientology, metaphors, allegories, methods of communication to the individual as to what's going on and what he is trying to do and so forth. And it brings the pc up to a point of where he suddenly starts to recognize there is something here and that does align with his goals. But these goals are so failed as far as he's concerned that he would never even attempt to reach for them unless somebody revived them for him. That's actually what's happening. He's long since – has stopped trying to get out of the slough of despond. He's quit. He quit a long time ago, see? He'd like to get over his sporadic earache. See, that's as close as he can get to freedom, is freedom from. That's as close as he can get.

Well, you can bring him up through these various grades and you will achieve, of course, much faster auditing results as a reason for this. He can be taught, in other words, what is happening, what's going on, without in the least bit evaluating for him or trying to fix him up so he'll – case will run in an educated fashion. We're not interested in his case running in an educated fashion, but we are very interested in having a preclear who is being audited by Scientology who doesn't think he is in a psychoanalytic laboratory or a monkey cage or something else, don't you see?

This is the establishment of reality. Where is he going, what is happening, what is going on? There are some points of life and so forth. Now the philosophy of life is also put into this zone or area like your ARC triangle and little bits and pieces of this particular character. Things he's never thought about, you see?

Now, of course, this goes up to Level VI. This goes up to clay table work. This only becomes possible because of the late discoveries I have made at Level VI. It would not have been possible to have done this at all. A pc never would have gotten through if it had been necessary to actually get together his goals pattern. You won't have to do that on the pc so it made possible for classification and gradation which is one of the points of slowdown, by the way. I had to be absolutely sure this was the case before we could adventure out on this.

So at Level VI this preclear actually would have to be trained on a clay table in nomenclature and so forth by his auditor and rather arduously as to what was a GPM and what was a this and that and really be able to snap and point and pop and so forth, and he – if he weren't trained on a clay table as to exactly where was he going and so on, the auditor couldn't really ask him any questions about anything, but if he is trained on a clay table the communication is inevitable. He sees the GPM down deep in his mind – of course, it's not down deep in his mind – well, way out there he's got these things, you see, and he'll instinctively recognize the similarities between the things and he'll be able to put it together and so forth and so he'll be able to follow auditing commands and you'll be able to take him on up the line.

Also you aren't taking on up the line some ignorant being that's going to fall on his head because he's being taken up the line, because by the time he gets to Level VI we will have gotten to him on the basis of this is Scientology, this is what we're trying to do and this is where we're going to go. You get the idea. And even if a military organization was demanding that you train some OTs so they could spy on Russia – I'm sure this will come about, I can

see it now – I can see one of you now being approached by Colonel Swivelbottom with a – with offend, "Why don't you process some intelligence agents for us," don't you see, and so forth. Well, you possibly even could process these intelligence agents providing you process them all the way from scratch and they had to pass all their pc's requirements and he wouldn't have any intelligence agents by the time they got to OT.

This... self-preventive mechanisms. Now, let's get down to nomenclature here. Then what is a grade? A grade is something that a pc has. This, of course, fits in with his childhood schooling; it fits in with the colloquialism: make the grade; it fits in with a lot of things that will communicate, all of which have been rather carefully thought out.

So make the grade and there, of course is – there is no such thing, and actually, really, as a Grade 0. There is a Level 0 but there is no Grade 0 because who would grade somebody for being a man in the street? So actually the earliest grade is really Grade I and this is assigned to somebody after he has passed the Level 0 levels and he's been checked out and so forth, you have a Grade I pc. And then, of course, these grades compare exactly with the various levels of Scientology and as he's passed up through these grades he has a checksheet for each grade and his instruction material and his auditor has to put him over the jumps on these things, you see?

And – horrible thought just occurred to me, only I can see this happening. Some auditor is too busy, you see, so his pc just has a harder time passing through the checksheet than some other pc that he's got – wants to process now. You could almost adjust your schedule – a horrible thought occurred to me. I wouldn't advise doing that, but be very honest in trying to get the pc through.

Well, the pc is not well disciplined, to begin with, at all. And I have found it very difficult to audit an off-the-street pc or even get him to answer a sensible question because you say one thing and his language difficulties and barriers relay this to – as something else, and he's not quite sure which end of the stick he's on or what's happening to him and so forth. Well, by the time you get him up to Level II, this is pretty jolly well straightened out. By the time he's a Grade II pc, he's long since been a Release, see. That would probably – your level of Release.

Anyway, he goes on up through these various grades and each grade has an attainment of certain pc abilities and what we do is work it as an ability scale. He isn't having trouble in certain departments of his life that he was having trouble in before. In other words, we make his conquest of the environment the index of his grade. That's quite sensible. That's – because that gives him finite points of advance. He used to get into a shaking fit every time he thought about all of the problems he has and now he doesn't get into it. He can confront his own problems in life. That's – that would be a sampling of what a grade accomplishment would be, see? He can confront his own problems in life. Well, that's a very simple gain, but yet it is explicit and the individual says, "Well, what do you know. Yes, I can," and he's now made this grade to that degree.

Now, you've got another one there – you've got another one there. He is relatively free or at least not worrying about his aches and pains. It's another level. You see, there's a difference between hurting and worrying about hurting. You get some people who are going around

in circles afraid they will hurt, afraid they will get an ache or a pain. You perhaps have even run into somebody, although it's probably been a long time since you've associated with such a person, who has a funny, buzzing feeling over his left ear or something and this tells him he's going to be sick in a certain way in three days and that he had better promptly go take a hot pack for his skull and go to bed with a certain brand of hot toddy or something. It's – he's got it all worked out. His cure for this buzzing thing over his ear is practically a dramatization. And you've got him now to a point where – not where nothing buzzes over his ear; you've got him to a point where he doesn't worry about something buzzing over his ear, see. This type of thing. Not unduly concerned about personal, physical upsets, you see? He's just not unduly concerned about these things. That would be another type of level, don't you see?

Another one is not always dwelling on things that have happened to him in the past. Now you're getting up around III, you see – not always dwelling on things that have happened to him in the past. He's not worrying all the time about the fact he didn't get a chance to go to college or something or he isn't spending 90 percent of his time grinding his teeth about his elder brother who did him in. You know he isn't – he doesn't have all these horrible feelings about the past and so forth which you can say: relative freedom from the past. It's just relative – he just doesn't spend 90 percent of his time worrying about it. That's the gain, you see. You'd be surprised how many people are walking around doing just that, you see.

Another level is he's stopped trying to make everybody wrong and himself right all the time, see. Of course, that's recognizable as IV. Grade V – we'll just make that a catch – all because we actually have got the processes for Grade V, but we have skidded by them. It isn't necessary really to run them in order to attain Grade VI which is implants and whole track engrams and so forth. These things are all put together. The technology's all there. There's no particular reason to go through that. So what you probably do is put the guy through an auditing dust-off at about that period so that he can really – he can really preclear. See, we fix him up so he can really preclear. You get it on your auditing checksheet at Class VI. Now, he really can preclear at about this point.

He perfectly – he feels perfectly free to be asked any question or to say anything about himself or his past, you see. He feels – he's got a complete freedom in this department. He can receive an acknowledgment and so forth. He's also got enough sense to realize the auditor is addressing his bank, not him, in assessment. You know, those little points that you've got. In other words, he's a pretty accomplished pc. Now at this point it would be possible then, having come up through all these other levels to – for the individual to tackle, head-on, GPMs.

Now, if you'd taken this fellow right at the beginning and if you'd taken him and he's come in off the street and he's thinking all the time, "I – I – I wonder why she's mad at me all the time. I – I just wonder why she's mad at me all..." This is all that goes through his head for one whole morning, you see. "I wonder why she's mad at me all the time. I wonder why she's mad at me. I haven't really done anything. I've never done anything to her. I wonder why she's mad at me all the time."

This is what's called stream of consciousness, see. This is life to this individual, see? And we say to this person – we say to this person, "Now, we're going to count the number of GPMs in the series and find out where the series is truncated, you see." And what are you

going to get back? You're going to get back, "I wonder why she's mad at me all the time – wonder why she's mad at me all the time." See.

In other words, you have to have a certain amount of control and confront of the mind. So if you considered this – these grades a gradient scale of confront of the environment composed also of the individual's own mind, you recognize that this confrontingness can be improved by training and by processing. It's basically improved by processing, but it nevertheless can also be improved by training. He has to get some realization of what he's looking at and therefore he moves up on both of those tracks.

Well, that is the route of the pc. And any auditor can process a pc up to the class that auditor has. So it doesn't matter where he's gone. If he's gone to Class VI, why, he could take the pc all the way through. If the auditor's only a Class I, that's as far as he can take the pc. That's sensible, too.

Now, your routes are three in number and the pc is merely the first one of these. I frankly don't think the route of the pc – I don't think that pc's going to get there nearly as fast as the other two routes but – he's going to have more trouble and he's going to have more upsets and he's going to have more things he doesn't understand, but he'll get there. He'll get there as long as his auditor is patient and everything holds out along the line, you see? So it is a feasible route expressed in these lines.

Your second route is the route of the co-auditor. Now, this is something brand-new to you auditors and simply falls into your nomenclature as you and Bill co-auditing, but more recently falls into your nomenclature of getting a bunch of people together and have them audit each other. Well, this is something brand-new. It – make it a noun. An individual who isn't classified but has a certificate is a co-auditor. He may not charge for his processing. He cannot in any way call himself a professional. He is simply a co-auditor. What is he expected to do? Why, he'd probably run some processes on his friends, probably run some assists of one kind or another or even some high-level processes on one another. I'm not making nothing out of this. Probably audit a few of his business associates or something like this or use it – and he's even got a certificate. And he's been through the training courses and so forth, but at no time has he ever been classified and he can't be classified without being classified all the way. That would only be fair to auditors.

Now, what is this fellow: a co-auditor? Now, we saw him originally – actually we're going over our own evolutionary background. We saw the fellow who went to school for 30 days or 60 days or something like that and he got himself a certificate. And he didn't know from nothing. Yet he knew more than the man out on the street. Yet he was actually somebody and he was better than – wasn't he? And just because he's attended something for a few weeks, a certificate was put in his hot hand and that was the end of that. We saw this fellow. It happens inevitably. Even though you had careful examiners and so forth, you would still have a few of these people around. The co-auditor is somebody who has a certificate but no classification.

Now, every once in a while – this plays into your hands very well to this degree. You are in lower South Amboy, have gotten yourself together about twenty people and you've got a co-audit running there and because they're all running as pcs and very low-level co-audit,

you see, don't need any certificates or anything. You've gotten them trained. You haven't made that mistake. You've educated them up to knowing what they are doing and so forth and then you get very enthused and you put them through an HQS Course. Well great, that gives them a certificate, doesn't it?

Well, the number of these people that are going – that's perfectly legitimate up to these point – but the number of people who are going to go for a classification examination over to Melbourne or Los Angeles or something like that, are very few indeed. So that, in essence, has stopped your co-audit, hasn't it? They can never be processed beyond this point.

Well, supposing you had these twenty people and they were going along with vast enthusiasm and so forth, and supposing your classification had gotten up to Class IV. You pushed your classification up to IV. Now, the point comes about, can you teach these people a course for certificate? Well, now there would be several ways you actually could do this. One is to get them to go to Los Angeles – these are all possible routes – or get some Instructor to come over from Los Angeles and teach them a course, making them sweat it out for a certain period of time and reach certain requirements, don't you see, or get a special dispensation based on your own record to teach them a course yourself. Do you see? You wouldn't be able to charge them no money for this or cut corners in some other direction, you'd – it would have to be all very official and formal, but nevertheless this is rigged so that you get minimal stoppage of progress with minimal upset because of technical flubs.

Now, that's the way the thing is adjudicated. Are we going to have a lot of people in lower South Amboy who all have HCA certificates, who can audit nobody and do nothing, don't you see. And therefore this course that's going to be taught in lower South Amboy under these cla... these – these determinations just won't get taught, you see, because this might be very damaging. It might be very upsetting. Until some arrangement can be made where somebody has guaranteed the fact that – that their – their training was good enough to get them across at that level. That's what's being guaranteed here and that's really the sole criterion in this.

Well, now these people could go all the way on up. Sooner or later they're going to have to connect with or collide with some kind of a training course someplace, you see? But they can go on and they can get their certificates and so forth but if – they're conspicuously blank in their lower left-hand corner. There's nothing in that lower left-hand corner. This certificate is a certificate and all is fine but it is awful blank in that lower left-hand corner whereas a professional auditor certificate is very conspicuously classed in the lower left-hand corner. Got a great big class seal right there, bang, you see? And it says this is a professional auditor. And that is different.

Well, we've lived side by side with this – these types of auditors and these types of certificates all these years, and if all of my thirst for order has been unable to wipe out this particular line I don't expect it's going to get wiped out in the future. So you just might as well make up your mind that it exists. And what you should do to resolve this situation is just make sure that a competent auditor is harshly examined, harshly trained and is very recognizable. See what I mean by that, you see? So he's a pro.

Now, this takes the certificate at HCA/HPA that has always hung there – for some reason or other in the Commonwealth and in the United States there's different certificates – and puts them as both certificates in both countries. The one certificate the co-auditor does not have is HPA, Hubbard Professional Auditor. He does not have this certificate. He only has a Hubbard Certified Auditor. That's the only certificate he can get at that level which he is, of course, at once separated out in the sheep from the goats at that level.

Now, somebody then who goes through an Academy and works straight on through and – or returns to the Academy for his classification examinations – study and examinations, as he goes straight on through to his classification examinations from HCO – he is given a Hubbard Professional Auditor Certificate. And that separates the sheep from the goats. But they don't separate on up the line from that particular point except by designation.

And a classed auditor, then, is your third route. And your classed auditor is, of course, a professional auditor. And he has been trained formally and he has been examined thoroughly and he has been given his classification and he is permitted to charge for processing and he is responsible for pcs in his area and he is the one who occupies staff positions and he's the one who operates field offices and he's the one that does the business around the world. And that's the way it is working out and so we've paralleled to that degree.

But now let's take a look at the co-auditor as a route. This means that somebody can start co-auditing with Bessie Ann or Jane or somebody of the sort and can then, one way or another, at some degree of competence, the best that can be assured, move on up on a co-audit basis with another person or move on up on a co-audit basis with a group that is being conducted by a professional auditor. Numbers of plans are possible there, but this co-auditor is essentially paying for his auditing by giving auditing. He receives auditing and he pays for it by auditing. And he has a preclear logbook just like a preclear – and so does a professional auditor as far as that's concerned. But it's strictly a preclear-auditor swap-about, turnabout and that's about all except for the assists he gives his boss and his mother-in-law, you know? This type of usage.

And he's en route then, up through the line, on this understanding – that he is going all the way up through on a co-audit basis. Of course, in any person's life on this planet there can be many vicissitudes. There will be a period there when he belongs to somebody or other's co-audit and then another period when he and Joe have pulled off to the side someplace and they're doing a swap-about and then that kind of blew up, don't you see, and then he decided he's going to have some training on a little more formal basis and Joe's processing now looks pretty corny, so he now teams up with a fellow named Buster and you know, it's – it's – you know, it's the way it goes.

But he nevertheless has some guarantee that he's arriving. See, he's going over certain lines and he's got some guarantee that he's arriving and then sooner or later he's going to be able to get up within reach either of a professional Class VI Auditor, you see, that can do something with him and some others on an authorized basis or he's actually going to connect with a Central Organization Class VI Course for a brief period of time and get his lines straight and so forth and go on up all the way. That's the – that's his route, and he can go all the way on that particular route on a co-audit basis.

This, by the way, is far less expensive than the preclear route and it doesn't shut the door in anybody's face if he wants to keep on going and studying and making the best of it and so on.

Then, of course, there's the professional auditor route and we understand that route almost too well to say very much about. But let me add this – let me add this to that route. The professional auditor starts in and he gets his training one way or the other and he hangs on through this or that and he finally gets a classification and so on.

Well, the moment that this individual has actually got a classification seal, what happens to him? This means – this means that he has some kind of selectivity with regard to his co-auditing, doesn't it? So, who's going to audit him? Because he's got a classification seal, he of course is more in demand and because he's got a classification seal he probably audits with somebody with a classification seal. In other words, a professional auditor permitting himself to be audited by somebody who didn't know very much about what he was doing, doesn't happen too often because he recognizes it too clearly. It isn't really that Scientologists are harder to process, they are less propitiative and more outspoken.

In other words, their recognition of what's going on is so reaching... I wish I had had a tape many years ago of a couple of real old-time professional auditors coming in over an intercom listening system on their arguments with each other concerning exactly what the bulletin had said and they'd sit there and chew each other out on this basis and they were fumbling through a new series of techniques, you know. And brother, if you ever heard a pair of people that were lowering the boom on each other on the subject of *exact* adherence to the *exact* comma of *exactly* how it was supposed to be done, that pair certainly were. And neither one of them were going to go to pieces because it wasn't done right.

Well, you get some professional auditor, that would be a different type of auditing team entirely than somebody who was a little bit hazy about it or thought somebody knew best, and certainly a different type of auditing team than some preclear being audited; very different indeed! Pc sits there and well, what the auditor does or says goes, don't you see. Right or wrong, he doesn't know anything about what's going on, don't you see, and therefore the professional auditor is likely to get far more precise processing and errors which occur in his processing are far more likely to be remedied rapidly. And he has, as I've already mentioned, a much better choice of auditors and he probably would make it the fastest. Furthermore, he also has a source of income if he cares to push it to work which pushes him through training courses if he works it well with his pcs.

And, by the way, the literature – you'll be very happy with the literature at this particular field, because it points these things out to preclears: That the auditor should be of the class to audit them and if he isn't, why, then you should find that auditor some more preclears so he can afford to get that class and this is very fine because he then goes – he can then drop in on the local Academy or something of the sort and get his upper-class training, get expert consultation on his cases and discuss all these things with his fellow professionals, don't you see? And the pcs could help him out in this particular regard. In other words, it drops hints like you drop anvils, don't you see? It makes the way rather easier without having to explain all this and hint around, you see – put it right in the text, exactly what does go on.

Well, the professional, then, probably will make it the fastest and the quickest and the co-auditor will undoubtedly make it fairly rapidly, but with a few falls by the waysides and spins because somebody was trained but they somehow or another had slipped on their meter reading and they thought the needle should be rising on all assessments of service facsimiles and they took nothing but service facsimiles that drove the tone arm up and made the needle rise because a rise was a read and it said right there in the E-Meter manual... In other words, the very points which we have to clear up with pros coming in here will undoubtedly just become the order of the day with the co-auditor. You see, they make these mistakes.

Always – there's a certain set of – I don't know if you know it, but there's a certain set of mistakes that have to be corrected with every auditor who sets foot on Saint Hill. I don't care where he's been trained or anything else. We just expect these things will be in error and they will be. There will be various points which are awry because they are the frail points in training – the points that are easily overlooked, the points that are easily forgotten and nobody has ever stressed them hard enough to keep them from being messed up, you see? So you just expect that in – there's a certain list of things that one or another of one of these, certainly anybody coming in here is just going to have to have his head practically beaten off about before he gets the word, you see. We expect this.

Well, a lot of these people will have – those things will just be rife. So that will of course slow down their processing to that degree. It'll throw a few more cars in the ditch you might say, but they'll make it with a fair degree of certainty because they actually are operating on very precise information.

And the preclear – the preclear, of course, is the slowest and most expensive of the routes but the least demanding of the individual. And knowing man as he is at this particular time and with his tremendous tradition of being able to sit back on an easy – in an easy chair and somebody else does it all for him – knowing this frame of mind, that will be a very extensively used route, very extensively. It will probably outnumber the other routes by fifty, sixty times. And we do what we can to keep the pc educated so he isn't going it blind, at least on what he's supposed to be performing and what he's supposed to be gaining and steering him along the line and do what we can to straighten out any points that might come in his road; and beyond that we can't do too much for him.

Now, the three routes altogether make the Classification and Gradation Program. And the classifications of the professional auditor are just the classifications which have been published. They're already the same classifications, and they start in at Class I and wind up at Class VII. And the only other point I'd like to make here about this program is that that's rougher than rough – those classifications. We've suddenly stiffened that up. We've stiffened that up like mad.

It changes the original issue to this degree. That an individual, it's perfectly true, can go to an Academy for a certain number of weeks and get his certificate. Now – now he wants a seal on that certificate. Well, now he's asking to join the club and we have to open up the file drawer and all those infractions he didn't turn in that we were willing to forget about and all of this, that and that annoying habit he has of going into screaming peals of laughter when the pc says something which he thinks the pc means to be funny, these little points have got to

go, man. Do you see? It's same class. I mean it's the same level. It's the same level, but he's really got to be there. You get the difference?

And this guarantees – this guarantees us a very high grade of performance at that level. Well, in view of the fact that others are going by without that, of course, it throws more bearing on the person who is classified. So, classification really starts meaning something.

Now classification, of course, isn't promised anybody. A certificate, yeah, that's promised people, but not a classification. That isn't promised anybody. Now, what happens – this question will come up, speaking of general points now about these programs – what happens if Aloysius Q. Doakes of lower Cape Town all of a sudden – all of a sudden decides, having in his hands an HCS certificate, that he wants to become a professional auditor. Well, there he is, see? HCS. Well, he of course, is going to try to bull his way through on the basis that all he's got to do is take a little brush-up and an examination and he can have his classification and move over. Well, that route is not that simple.

In fairness to everybody else who is classified – in fairness to everybody else who is classified, you take an HAS Class I, you will see that has to be shifted. That becomes a co-audit certificate. So that becomes merely an HAS Grade I. It's HQS, Grade II and the "grade" just simply refers to his pcing. What about this fellow? What about this fellow with his classification now? He's up there at Level IV. No, he has to pass every classification examination right straight on up to Level IV. He has to pass them all to Level IV. In other words he's got to go through just as much mischief as anybody else had to get his Class IV, otherwise there – this would become very sloppy and upsetting indeed and that it would be very unfair to those people who had been perfectly good all the way up. Which means quite a bit of training all in one fell swoop for this character. He would have to get down and grind.

Now, we see this here at Saint Hill. We see people coming in here and they some... nobody has ever – has ever really gotten tough on the subject of exact performance and that sort of thing and they've let them go away with this and get away with that and it very often takes us quite a while to straighten something like this out.

So it's – classification, you might say is solely a matter of performance. And naturally, if somebody can't perform all the way up the line on these various classes, there would be no point in giving him a higher level classification, because a higher level classification must always take into account the earlier level classifications.

Now with all – with all fairness to one and all and the least interruption of the things which auditors are trying to do and trying to run centers and private auditors with reputations and pcs and all that sort of thing, out of this Classification and Gradation Program, I think will come a great deal of order. What do you think?

Audience: Yes!

All right.

Well, I've tried to meet in all of this all the objections that have been forwarded through and I was quite astonished – quite astonished in doing this to get some other, dis-related data that I had not expected. I hadn't expected any technical data to drop in my lap. There's a reason for this, because this is strictly an administrative program. But the basic one

was that pcs were failing because they weren't taught. That was the first one that dropped out, whereas, I had assumed already that pcs were failing because they were being thrown too far. That was my first assumption on the matter. That was not the case. It was they actually were not being taught anything and therefore were failing, so on.

That technical datum should give you pause when you suddenly get ahold of a pc and this pc doesn't know from nothing. Well, yes, you can always pull off your first trick. This is what fools the auditor, you see? You can always pull off your first trick. Raw meat, fat with charge, that sort of thing you're working with some altitude; you ask them to do this, this and this. See? And with great spectacularity they all of a sudden don't have lumbosis or something of this sort. Now, you say, "All right, he's an educated pc." Oh, hell no, man! He's an impressed pc! [laughter] You got this vast difference between these two beings.

He'll tell you, "Yeah, that Scientology really works." What is he saying when he says, "Scientology"? He doesn't know. He doesn't really know what you're doing; he doesn't know anything beyond the horizon of that psychosomatic he got away from and your next try – effort to pull off a trick may not be quite so successful. It might be indeed quite catastrophic. And you might lose this pc merely because the pc got going in this direction and then you didn't ever stop him and start him going in the right direction and he wound up in a horrible confusion. And so you lost him as a pc and then you go around scratching your head saying, "Why did I lose him as a pc?"

Well, you never had a pc. That's why you lost him as a pc. You had a – had him originally, probably, as the subject for a miracle. He actually would have done almost anything to have gotten rid of this lumbosis and you did almost anything and got rid of the lumbosis. [laughter] And you never made a pc. And I think that, all by itself, will be found of considerable benefit because it'll increase the extent and stability of the practice and activity of any professional auditor, just like that.

It's interesting, I also have some data on pcs being trained that comes from way back, but we used to push into the hands of a pc in one HGC a copy of *Scientology: Handbook for Preclears*, and we just made them do the exercises. This is quite fascinating. The studiousness and seriousness and enthusiasm with which these pcs went to work doing those exercises is a datum which I am using at this particular time saying the pc should be trained.

Well, I will say this: That the data must be concise and it has to be very easily understood and it has to be something that is pretty confoundedly personal to the pc for him really to get it straight. And it is better taught out of a textbook which he has certain lessons to do in before his next session. It's better taught that way than teaching him in a class. You don't have then, really, pc classes; you have pc assignments.

Well, he's finished it all up and you've handled this last PT problem he had with something or other and something or other and you end your session and then you take ahold of his textbook and you say, "Now you've got pages ten to eleven and a half there, now, we've got those two pages there, and I want you to cover those very, very thoroughly before the next session. Thank you very much," you see. After the guy – the guy's picking up his hat – "Remember to cover those," you know. "I've just noticed there that – that you haven't done your – your – your pamphlet on problems; I just noticed there you haven't done your pamphlet on

problems. And you realize that in another couple of intensives or something like that you're going to be coming up for another grade and we don't want that outstanding now. Get that done."

Now it gives the pc something to work forward toward instead of the negative gain of his own case, which is also quite necessary, you'll find, to keep a pc rolling.

But this pc keeps coming in and taking up half of your session – while you're trying to get it started, see – he keeps taking up half of your session with these horrible things that his wife is doing. This has been going on for some time. You've run several things. You can't seem to trace this to anything. What in the name of common sense is happening here, you see? Well, maybe it's some GPM at work or something like that or maybe it's a service facsimile at work but you're – you would make a horrible mistake trying to go into this because you've got a Grade II pc.

Well, what do you do? Well, at this level there are some good tips on handling his own life. You're just tired of these PT problems, you see, about something or other. You've been handling them, but actually he's not making any real progress because all you're able to do, session by session by session, is just to it'sa on these confounded problems, you see. And then this doesn't tell him anything about how to solve his problem, but it simply tells him what a problem is and that an individual himself must be contributing in some fashion – this lays it down with a thud, see – to the problem. See? He must be himself contributing to it. And any-time he has a severe repercussion from a problem, it's because he himself is unwilling to communicate to somebody about something that he has done with regard to this sort of thing. And we lay this down, you see? We just tell him the truth, see.

Now we expect the profe... a trained auditor – we expect this trained auditor – he'd know this. Hell, the pc, nobody ever bothers to tell him, see? He'd just go on and listen to his it'sa and that sort of thing and nobody is saying, "Now listen, bud..." You know. Because that would be auditor evaluation. Well, a book can evaluate without the auditor evaluating, can't it? [laughter] You say, "Why don't you review Chapter 3?" [laughter] And he'd be very appreciative about the whole thing. He'll come into the session next time and he'd say, "You know, I was thinking over about that thing, I was reading that, and you know there are some little things that I – I've – I've had some critical thoughts about that person. I think there are some things."

And you say, "Yes, yes. You had some critical thoughts?" "Well yes, there are some things that I don't think I have ever confided to that person, such as the trip to Kansas City."

Well, this gets to be a different situation all of a sudden. Why, you're half the session occupied with a PT problem, that problem evaporates as far as you're concerned without you having actually to do too much or jump up and down and scream, don't you see?

Now, all training – now enough of that – all training and all courses depend on having valuable material or data. That's number one requisite. You've got to have valuable material or data to impart. Well, you've got that in Scientology. And the next area of responsibility with regard to this, is that it be in a form or shape or condition to impart and inform – to be imparted and to inform others. There's a responsibility in any zone of knowledge of the communication of that knowledge. See, not only must you have valuable data, but also, if you're

going to train somebody or take that step, then that data must be in a state that can be communicated. Now, if that data is in the shape it can be communicated, you get to number three, which is it must be instructed. Because the variation and variability of questions which arise as a result of stirring up somebody's think-think on the subject will take a multiplicity of varied patterns and they will have certain questions which nobody could really guess at and which rise up and instruction, then, takes the zone of handling those things and showing the person where the correct answer to this is.

So there are actually three steps that have to do with training, whether it would be the training of a pc or the training of a professional auditor. One: you have to have valuable data to impart, two: it must be in a state or shape to impart and three: must be imparted on an instructional basis. Very possibly the modern university falls down mainly at level one – pardon me, not level one but part one there. See? Do they have valuable data to impart? See, that's the thing. The books of Thomas Hardy, you know – what's this? Which wall?

I told somebody who had taken a course like that that I'd read a lot of Thomas Hardy and he was very interested immediately and so forth and of course I gave him all of Thomas Hardy's potboilers. Nobody who's ever taken Thomas Hardy is really ever told that Thomas Hardy wrote mainly potboilers. They're worse than any penny-a-liner stuff that anybody ever tried to grind out, see. Now, if there's valuable data to impart there, I haven't seen it. But it wastes a lot of time, keeps a lot of people from doing something else and you can get education boiled down to a point where it's merely a restraint from being active. [laughter] And sure enough, modern kindergartens are conducted with that exact definition of why they are there – they are to keep the children from getting underfoot for a certain period of the day. And if you have all education starting out with a premise that we're merely starting to keep somebody occupied, ha – ha, it's liable to go rather adrift. And of course, sooner or later somebody will essay to teach a course on Thomas Hardy.

Now, the situation here is then that we in Scientology have now really two zones of responsibility. The valuable data is there to impart and one – about the only thing we share at that level now at the present time is just recognition that it's valuable data and know that it's there – know that it's there. That's about all that needs to be done at one. Because new codification of levels and so on gives certain basic auditing skills *pocketa-pocketa-pocketa*. And there are just – it's just a handful that carries the whole load all the way forward. You don't get this tremendous randomness that you had before, but you're still conveying the entirety of the valuable data so far as an auditing result is concerned so long as you back it up with philosophical understandings. Well, these philosophical understandings of course can come along at the preclear training level. But there's valuable data.

Now two – the two and three are where we sit, now. There's our main interest. Now it – Level II – it of course has been very difficult for me to package up a level from one end to the other without a totality of a finished product, you see, at the other end, because at any time some new data might spring out at the upper end which clarified the lower end. And that is what a student is mostly victimized by: is this was perfectly true and it is still true and everything is just fine on this data of 1956, but now we happen to know that you don't have to know all that. You see, we've got a simplification or a lower common denominator which of course alters the data of 1956. Well, this constant tumble makes the body of data studied by a

student rather confusing and all of Scientology at the present moment is being recodified with great severity and with a tremendous attention to pattern and ease of communication of the data.

For instance, there are twelve basic headings of a bulletin – give you an idea of this – twelve basic headings of the bulletin and they give you everything you have to know about a process. And to examine that bulletin, all the Examiner does is convert the heading of any section simply into a question. In other words, "What does (name of process) do?" That is one of its sections, see? It's this elementary, see? "What does (name of process) do?" is simply the Examiner's question, because on the bulletin it says what (name of process) does. So there would never be any worry in a student's mind about what he was going to be asked about this bulletin. It's just that question that's going to be asked, you see, and then you get the definitive words and so forth that follow on down inside one of these sections. He, of course, would be asked the definitions for those words, don't you see, and he'd be asked the right answers for each one of these sections. In other words, this is a very finite zone of learning. It's very sharp.

Now, I don't think there are but about thirty different operations that comprise all levels of auditing – wow, sounds fantastic that it's that small. But Mary Sue and I were burning the midnight-dawn and the midnight-dawn express and we got together an exact, compact listing of the totality of technical material necessary for processing at all levels and it – it came out to about thirty operations. A very small number. And evolved this style and type of bulletin and so forth to carry forward this data. And the style of type of the bulletin. And of course, there's the drill which we already have the style of – the TRs. And this is being sharpened up and brought right down the grades.

Now, what remains there? What remains there is number three. Now, of course, you contributed, knowingly or unknowingly, to the precision and conciseness with which this data is being put together because we can guess what questions will be asked about it and what's being thrown wrong and what troubles people have had with it. But let's get into number three, now – the instruction of this material – and that becomes the most random area. Naturally, because it is the degree that accuracy is demanded. In other words, the data is there and it's all accurate and if applied works, why then, what variable comes in on the heels of it? Well, the variability that comes on the heels of it is simply and totally the degree of knowledge of it – the facility and skill of the practice of it that is being demanded of the individual studying it. And this becomes quite a random factor.

So that you could toss somebody this bulletin; he could read it through – oh yeah, this is very interesting and so forth. You say, all right, you've passed the bulletin. And then you take somebody else and he reads through the bulletin. You say, "All right, now what is this bulletin for?" And he says, "Well, that's for psychosomatics," and you say, "All right, very good. How is the thing run?" "Well, you ask the fellow time and time again a certain command that's given in there. That's the way – that's the way it's run." You say, "All right." Not very much demanded of the person.

Now, we say, "All right, what is the basic – what is this process for? Yes, yes, yes, yes, anything else? You say nothing else. I'm sorry, that's flunked. There is one other use this process has out of the 15 listed in that paragraph."

Now, these are the materials of Scientology. Now, some of this falls into the preclear. These processes are being administered so certainly he gets wise to them to the degree that they're being administered to him. He couldn't do them in a thousand years, but he's familiar with them in that he's been run on them. But did you ever ask a pc what was run on him a month ago? That's the surest way to draw a blank I ever knew. They'll never tell you.

So we fill him in on the various basic philosophy of existence and the scope of the philosophy of life and so forth – it is Scientology and its definitions and that sort of thing. We can give him this philosophical background, but this doesn't train him up very far, does it? But actually he's being given, by being run on, and he's being exposed to, by having been given some little lessons on the subject, the basic data of Scientology. It's all there.

Now, let's take the co-auditor. Well, sometimes he's trained fast and sometimes he's trained slowly and sometimes he – all the time he was on the course and so forth he was having a worry about his automobile or something and he couldn't get his mind on his bulletins. He, of course, hasn't got this – he's got this data down so he can perform it. He might have to go and get hold of a bulletin and look at it occasionally to see exactly what it was. You see, that would be his level of command of the situation. Of course, he's been run on it so he's got a subjective reality on it. And he's run people on it, so he's got an objective reality on it. Now this is getting up to a higher level of precision, isn't it?

All right, now let's take the professional level of exactly this same data and this fellow, he's got this down and he could be sitting there dead drunk or with a hangover or something like this and he could still dish out the auditing command that – necessary to fit that process. And he would put down, in spite of anything that was happening in the randomness of the situation, the amount of TA which was occurring as a result and would suddenly notice that his pc was not running as well as he had been running, and that there was some bypassed charge and this randomness probably came from another process which had not been complete or something on the pc. There was a bypassed charge over there. In other words, we're entering judgment and practice into the situation. We're adding very precise drill; we're adding a snap and pop into the thing and a delivery of precision of – well, a precision of presentation and so forth.

Now, that – those are the things which mark the three different routes to OT – the amount of knowledge which goes along with them. It's always the same body of knowledge. It's the degree which it is understood, it's the degree that it's performed that makes the differences. And as long as we make sure that that is what makes the differences and as long as we carry forward our responsibility to that degree where it is supposed to be carried out – for instance, let's take somebody in lower Amboy and he doesn't give an exact, Saint Hill, Tone 40 "Start of Session." So let's keep him in course for a year until he learns how to give an exact Tone 40 "Start of Session" the way it is expected to be done. You get the idea? That becomes purely pedantic, doesn't it? It becomes nonsense because this is not that important a point, don't you see? So we look at this fellow and he gives a perfectly adequate – he does

know enough to say "Start of Session" – see, that's good. He can carry on through – he knows he's supposed to stay with it. He knows he's not supposed to give up along the line someplace. He's supposed to run a process until it's flat; you get this sort of an approach. All right. Well, you've got an adequate co-auditor, haven't you?

Now, because these differences exist then you're going to have differences of speed and you're going to have differences result of this but I think we have covered some of the basic problems which individuals have had moving through and improving in Scientology plus the one that preclears are very often yanked fast forward without having done anything at the beginning and gone over their heads. I think we've covered some of the basic problems that auditors and preclears have with this program and the only possible excuse that the program may have for existence is will it make better progress in Scientology, will it make better individuals and will it improve the results which are being obtained, will it continue a preclear further in his auditing, will it see more people moving on up the line – those are the only things that would say whether it was a good program or a bad program. And in my opinion the Classification and Gradation Program definitely will improve this and will bring a lot of order to areas that we have had here that have been pretty random in the past.

So, it's been – it's published, now, although it is being printed. The preclear's logbook is being printed and the various papers connected with this are now being assembled on a basis of printing. We're just making sure the logbook is at the state now of just making sure there isn't anything else that needs to be in it before we send it out for estimates on its printing.

Is there anything else that should be in the logbook? We've got practically everything including the kitchen sink in there right now, you see? We've got the Auditor's Code and we've got why he's being processed and we've got definitions, we've got the section, we've got his checksheets, we've got – practically everything you could think of is in there, but somebody may see something we haven't got in there yet.

So, that's the state the thing is in, but other than that the program actually at this time and at this moment is in effect. And should be grooved in and followed wherever possible and should be published rapidly and some very shortcut rapid summaries of this should be released and will be released and available so that people can publish them and get things straight. And that's the Classification and Gradation Program.

Thank you very much.

AUDITING BY LISTS

A lecture given on 16 April 1964

Thank you. What's the date?

Audience: 16th of April.

Sixteenth of April. Have to make you work for this lecture one way or the other. AD 14, Saint Hill Special Briefing Course. How are you today?

Audience: All right. Fine.

Good.

All right. Well, I haven't anything to talk to you today about. You're all doing marvelously. You just couldn't do better unless you began to audit. [laughter, laughs] And all the departments are going well. They even tell me there's going to be a checkout in a week or two in Practical. [laughter] Yes, things are looking up, looking up.

There is one good news item which is marvelous, is apparently, *The Auditor* is going across with a smash – the new magazine. And we almost never have reader mail on these national magazines, and so forth, or PABs. Nobody ever bothers to write. They write on other lines, you know, but they almost never mention these magazines. And it's very peculiar that *The Auditor* on its first issue immediately – crash, bang! You see, letters pouring in to the editor and everything going off with a bang and a crash and a thud. So we launched that one into an aura of great success. So let's hope the whole Auditor's division goes ahead along that line. Let's hope they all go along with great success. And a lot of us were on to that publication and we have the magic key there.

All right. Now, I hope the situations in Class VI are going to remedy anytime now. And some of you are going to get brave enough to really go out and confront the tiger. I've been swamping up any little odd bit or piece that you might collide with. It's down to a point now where a collision with an error or an oddity wouldn't do too much to your pc anyway. You'd catch it in due course.

But that's pretty well ready to go. That's pretty well ready to go and I want to see some of those Class VI students here really moving up because – don't look so pale – because it – just because a couple of them got moved back off for inadequate TA division, and so forth.

It just shows you something. I had a lot of people finding goals on this, and they never found out that one of the series is nonexistent. Very interesting to me. I mean, I do this all the time. I mean, I'm working in some particular field and there's some glaring error to be found there, and so forth, and nobody ever finds it. And it drives me ahead into zones and areas of greater responsibility. And you really bog me down with responsibility, and so forth, because

I figure if I made an error, you'd go along till heck was a pup before you'd ever turn it up. And yeah, it's – really saddles me with one, you know. It's a serious situation. As a result, when I audit, I audit the bank and the pc and all the future mistakes you're going to make, and it makes my auditing quite difficult. [laughs]

But this area is pretty well swamped out now, and pretty straight and I've gotten into a zone now of overcorrection. I'm now, having made one little slip – see, I didn't release it. I was going to recheck it before I released everything and then before I released it, I – on the recheck, why, I found out there was an error. And there was also a bit of a line plot error. There was a word or so missing out of the line plot. But I'm now into an area where I'm overcorrecting.

You see what I mean. I mean, you do this with a pc every once in a while. You can also do it with a piece of research. You find out that it was the break of reality which upset the pc, you see, and then you go on looking, See. And if you go on looking far enough, you'll have the pc upset all over again. See, you get your good indicators back in and then you go looking for something that is wrong. I've now done this with some of our upper-level materials, and so forth. I've gone so far looking for something wrong, don't you see, that now all I can find is invalidation of what's right.

But you're in very good shape this way and things are all fine. I want to see some auditing teams going on it. And why, I'd say now that we lie about 200 to 300 hours of auditing from OT for about at least 30 percent of the people I'm looking at right this minute – providing, providing, providing you audit. That's necessary.

I want to talk to you today – those were all just announcements and so forth – I want to talk to you today about Auditing by Lists. And I'm getting so tired of writing somebody in north Darwin (you know you don't dare go too north in Darwin, you get your feet wet, you know) and somebody here and somebody there, somebody on course writing down the explicit directions of how you audit by list, that I think I had better make it public property. I think that might be a very good idea. I'm not yet in a position where I can release the whole of Auditing by Lists, because we haven't, you know, cleared up and straightened up all the lists by which you audit.

Now, Sherlock Holmes used to turn to Dr. Watson every once in a while and say, "Watson, the needle," you know. He used to turn around once in a while and he'd say this, you see, and Watson was supposed to give him the needle.

But Level III is the needle level. That's the needle level. Level II and lower are tone-arm levels. And your first level that pays any attention to the needle – except to use it for centering the tone arm – is III. Now, that's very important because that's your HCA/HPA level.

Now, as you realize now, a co-auditor can be known by the fact that at this level he has an HCA certificate, and a classified auditor can be known because at this level he has an HPA certificate. We're separating them right there, so you better get your certificates turned in and straightened out.

Anyway, a very, very careful study, a very careful study – of auditors and auditing lies behind all of these level divisions. And with a great deal of skill – and it does require appar-

completely out of sympathy with this pc who is just giving him the 5,765th problem, when all he's trying to do is to find out if the pc has suppressed anything. And the pc is going on at a mad rate.

Nevertheless, it is the auditor's reaction that gives the dirty needle. You would not get the dirty needle just because the pc is going on endlessly not following the process. But when you bring up the pc with a dull thud by failing to acknowledge, by insisting the pc answer something, by chopping his communication in some particular fashion, by not accepting his answer – any way that you could possibly interrupt the comm cycle – you'll see magically appear before you a dirty needle.

In other words, the pc could have done the wildest and most incredible things on a process level without acquiring a dirty needle and gets a dirty needle the moment that the auditor gives them a bad time or chops them or squares it up or does an unsmooth action.

So, there is a little piece of evidence that you yourself will see from time to time if you care to observe it. It might be a good thing for you to observe it occasionally, because you will never do a Level IV assessment unless you stand – understand the Level III skills of the needle.

Level III is almost totally devoted to needle. If you follow the needle, you will get tone arm action. If you don't handle the needle, you won't get tone arm action.

Now, the pc – let us say we have a question here, "Do birds fly?" and the pc has no charge on this question. There isn't anything in this question at all – "Do birds fly?" There's nothing to this question. The pc doesn't care about birds. He hasn't any answer to it. He has no interest in it of any kind whatsoever.

So you say, "Do birds fly?" and the needle registers absolutely nothing. It's a completely smooth flow. And at that moment you went slightly cross-eyed and you didn't see that it had a very smooth flow, so you decided to ask the question again. And you say, "Do birds fly?" and that's it; you've had it.

It's a sort of not handling the pc's answer anyhow. It's actually not taking the needle reaction which was there to be had. You simply didn't see it. So you forced this question down the pc's neck. Even if you say, "That was equivocal. I will have to ask it again." Well, usually that gets you over the hump but not always.

So we asked this question again, "Do birds fly?" And at this moment the pc said, "Oh, blank!" – to himself. And you get that registering on the needle.

Now, the uninformed auditor believes at this point that he missed the read the first time and now has a read. He doesn't bother to clean up the pc's considerations, but he assumes that he now has a read on "Do birds fly?" so he is going to clean this question!

Now, remember what I told you. The first reaction of a needle is to the session and the second reaction of the needle is to the question. So the auditor has assumed now – bypassing the possibility that it was a session reaction – he has assumed that he has a hot question, because the needle ticked. So he says, "Well, it read."

The pc said, "No, I don't have a birds fly – *bluaaaaaah.*"

"Yeah, but it read!"

"Oh, it read. Oh. Oh, I guess, let's see, 'Do birds fly?' I haven't got any birds. Let's see, do they fly or not fly, and so on. *Oooooooh*, let's see, *hmmmmoooooh*, let's see, 'Do birds fly?' – *duh – da – duh – da – da – da...*"

And you get the standard re... session reaction that some people like to think of as auditing. See, you've turned it on right there. Pc's out of session; he's not interested in what you're doing.

Now, you could sit there and you ask, "Do birds fly?" and you're going to get a bigger and bigger and bigger reaction to this question. Every time you ask the question you're going to get more reaction to the question, because your needle reacts first to the session and second to the process.

Now, the auditor eventually gets into an ARC break situation, let us say. The pc explodes all over the place. He eventually gets List 1, and he starts down List 1 and he clears up the ARC break, and finally, and so forth, and then he gets a smooth needle again. But supposing this auditor never had learned anything about cleaning up a needle or that the needle reaction was primary to the session and secondary to the process. And let's supposing the auditor hadn't any clue about any of this: While he's doing the ARC break assessment he does the same thing. He gets the wrong level or something of that sort, and he does it once more.

Therefore, you don't let auditors at Level III assess anything. This takes a senior understanding. Now, *if* the pc has already been upset, it will be because the auditor could not handle the needle. To let that auditor now do an ARC break assessment on the pc is going to result in a multiplication of the ARC break because this auditor has already not handled the needle, and handling an ARC break is a process of handling a needle. That's a technique of handling a needle, you see.

Now, even an experienced auditor – I've seen them goof an ARC break something marvelous, just wrap it around a couple of telegraph poles and leave it there in a pile of junk. ARC break the pc on an ARC break assessment. Pc all of a sudden originates and he says, "Well, the charge was so-and-so." That was what it was. Brightens up, everything is fine, and the auditor goes back to the question he is trying to clean. The pc now protests this question because it wasn't that question, it was the other question, so it makes it seem to the pc that the auditor has not received his communication. So he gets a dirty, chopped-up needle. The auditor tries to ask this question, "Has a communication been ignored?" And of course this question is being protested by the pc, so you get a bigger read on it. And the auditor insists that the bypassed charge is an ignored communication. The pc is trying to insist that it was a broken reality. And between the two of them they stir up the most gorgeous ARC break you ever saw in your life. You see how this goes?

All you have to recognize about a needle is that the needle, first and foremost, reflects the condition of the session and secondarily reflects other things that you're flicking and ticking at.

Now, you're very, very lucky to have a Mark V meter. Early meters were about as sensitive as a Nazi. You got nothing out of them. In fact, I have seen meters that had been manu-

factured out from under, so lousy, so horrible and so on, that you practically could short the electrodes. Now, the meters which are being – you know, no reaction – the meters which are being used by infantry in Vietnam to hand to the communist fellow traveler who has just come from general headquarters – whatever it is – this meter, if it isn't a copy of the Mark V, would be a complete bust.

They don't know what this thing is supposed to be all about. They have no real clue. When you get your lie detector buzzards going around and your medics fooling around with a thing called the mind – they know what a mind is; it's something you attack with a scalpel and a saw – when you get these, these... it's very hard for me to use just pleasant language in dealing with it.

And we've got one down which Reg bought at vast expense – and I'm awfully glad we've got it, though; it's still around the place. It is a medical doctor's E-Meter. Marvelous thing, I don't know what it's supposed to tell, but it's marvelous. There is no way you can reduce the sensitivity on the confounded thing, and it's geared up to read horses or mules or something. I don't know what it is, but all that needle does is bounce from both sides and so on, on body motion. It won't give you anything but body motion. It has no faintest mental reaction traceable on it anyplace. If somebody moves his foot across the room from the person handling the electrodes, this thing falls three and four dials. You think I'm kidding, man, but you ought to see that thing. It is an absolute beast! The medical doctor's E-Meters.

Actually even the sensitivity has nothing to do with it. It doesn't – it isn't how sensitive the meter is that makes it a good meter. Somebody can throw together some old pots and tin cans and so forth and say, "This is an E-Meter," and you look at it and you squeeze the cans and, oh man, it flies all over the place.

That factor – the looseness of the needle – does not establish whether or not your E-Meter is an operative meter; nor the inactivity of the needle, as some of these old pots and so forth that were counterfeited up the line in the earlier days – that doesn't establish it either.

An E-Meter must measure mental reaction with a minimum of physical reaction, and that is the trick and that's the design of the Mark V.

Now, the Mark V will register an analytical and slightly sub reaction. It is geared up so that if the pc has a reality on what you've asked him you will get a read on that thing on the meter, see. That's a very beautifully balanced little situation. And we're very lucky. It took years to evolve this meter. But it's a careful balance out of these factors. Every time somebody says, "Let's get a new meter," I throw up my hands in horror.

I remember, there's – there is a civilization a few galaxies over here that – it's got spaceships and backpacks and infantry zerp guns, and it's got this, and it's got certain types of motorcycles, and it's got that, and so forth. (Probably a lot of you are from there because every time it loses a battle they ship the people over here – the enemy does. They know what – they know how to get even.)

So anyway, this old civilization – this old civilization is just about the meanest area to try to put an idea into it you ever had. You see, they worked it out for years and eons and eons

– been going for billions and trillions and trillions of years with an uninterrupted flow – which is pretty unusual in civilizations anyhow, see, and is on a complete, perfect no-change.

And you say, "We got an idea for spaceships." Their spaceships aren't all that good. They're as good as spaceships can be, but you could undoubtedly make a better spaceship, you see. But they blow up on occasion and they do this on occasion, they do that on occasion. They mess up one way or the other. And yet to try to get any idea across to them fills the hierarchy of that particular activity with absolute horror. Because they've lived with and through all of the areas of innovation, and innovation to them is dangerous on a departure from the highly workable.

Well, the – what got them into this frame of mind was, is the degree of workability which they demanded was a fairly flexible, wide-open degree of workability, you see. It'd take you a thousand years to go from A to B. Well, naturally that's unworkable. "Well, could you get there in a month or two, you know, from one galaxy to another galaxy or something like that?" "Oh, yeah. Yeah. Oh, easy." "All right. Well, that's workable."

Now, when you try to vary off of this level of workability you run into undesirable factors. In other words, you can get a greater (quote) "workability" which is much harder to work, you see. They've been through this so often that finally – I mean trying to give them any new weapon, tool or anything else would be absolutely – you just might as well bash your head against a concrete wall. I swear, you couldn't even change the design of a trigger guard. They've seen it all, and so on.

I'm afraid were getting that way about the E-Meter, because this has a greater degree of workability than you will ever need. This is already up in the stars. We fought this battle a few years ago and it was a rough battle to fight.

But frankly, this thing will read almost anything you want to know at sensitivity 16. Almost anything you want to know, sensitivity 16 will give you just about anything you've got.

Now, if you want to expand and magnify the read – you've got on the sensitivity knob, you've got 32 – and if you want to expand and magnify the read, you've got 64. And if you want to expand and magnify the read, you've got 128. You're going upstairs now from any desirability. If this thing simply worked at 16 only, with the other knob set at 32, if you could never get it higher than 16, it'd still be usable at Level III.

We're in danger of stultification. I suppose if there's some new method of containing charge inside a battery comes out, that might possibly be altered in an E-Meter. You know, it'd run for ten years without recharge or something like that. That'd be desirable. But I don't think there'd be anything get changed inside the meter because as far as that's concerned, I've had it. I've fooled with these things for, ah, a dozen years! You never saw anybody get as sick of anything as experimental models of an E-Meter. If you want to really see me go into a screaming fit, bring me a proposed change in the design and circuit of an E-Meter so that it is easier to manufacture or something like this, or something like that. *What! No, no!* Horrible. Because I'm afraid we'll lose the workability we've got. And I want to impress upon you that that is a poised knife-edge.

You go pushing around this thing very much and depart from it very far, and you'll find yourself in a horrible situation of having improved yourself out of a workability. It may have some new desirable factor. You may be able to get it inside your pocketbook, but it won't read a pc, you know. So this is what's known as holding the line on this.

Now frankly, the width and latitude of this E-Meter is so great that at Class VI you have to audit down around 4 and 6. And you're a fool if you audit above there and yet when you begin to audit, you will do it. You will learn this lesson all by yourself. All with your own little paws. [noise of an airplane flying above] (I'd love to shoot those things down.) [laughter]

Anyhow, you'll find out that you think you can get a better performance, or something like that, out of your pc or something by carrying it at a higher level of sensitivity. Or to make – to agree with the fact that Ron says you ought to get dial-wide falls on a goal or something, then you start jacking up the sensitivity in order to get the dial-wide drop, don't you see? You don't keep sweating it out to try to get the dial-wide drop at sensitivity 4, see. Various odd things. But you will eventually come back to the complete boredom of running the thing at 8, and start bringing it back within the levels of practical action which is around 4 or 5.

I can tell the difference between setting an E-Meter at 4 and 5. On Class VI material I'll accidentally let it drift up just to 5, and all of a sudden, I'm – "Something's awful live around here. What's going on?" you see, and retreat it back to 4. You know, kick it with your finger or something like that and it drifts up just one division.

Well look, at the highest levels we're running this confounded E-Meter at about what? What's sensitivity 4 in relationship to 128, see? We're something like driving a Cadillac, you see – we're driving a Cadillac along a level, smooth highway where you have no need of its springs, you have no need of its shock absorption, body weight, its horsepower – none of these things are necessary for what you're trying to do. All right. Well, let's keep it that way.

Because the truth of the matter is the E-Meter is designed around the needle. You could design a tone arm meter, which you wouldn't need the needle reaction of, that would just perform fine at II. We've already done it. And you could design a meter that would be minimal body reaction at Class VI and you probably could get away with it so long as you never had to resort to the needle.

It's the needle that gives you trouble on a meter. That is the one thing which you got to watch. A bad meter does not give you needle response. It'll give you body responses or it'll give you something else or it won't respond to thought. It's whether or not this thing is geared up to thought. That's what's important, and the needle is what ties it in to thought. It's its needle response – that is thought. And nowhere is as much demanded of an E-Meter as at Level III.

Level III is then the hot meter level! And if you can make somebody run a meter at Level III and he can really make a meter snap and pop at Level III, I assure you he's never going to have any trouble in any other level.

He gets to IV, it's a pipe. What's the trouble with assessment? IV is your assessment level. What do you do at IV? Why, you just go down and see what reads most and then you take it. So your assessment has got to be good.

But what gets in the road of that assessment? The phenomena the person should have learned at Level III. That is that the needle reacts to the session before it reacts to the subject matter.

So you got to be hotter than a pistol; you got to be able to sit there and keep that needle clean. And that is the first and foremost skill, because it requires that you keep your needle clean. That is to say, you keep your session good, so that at no time is the session getting in the road of the needle ticks which you're using to audit the person. And all of a sudden you've got a stray tick or a dirty needle or something like that, you got to be hot enough to pick up the considerations which gave you that oddball phenomena.

At III it is demanded – or nobody could really run III at all – that all of this data about the meter – how it reacts to the session, how it reacts to body motion, that sort of thing – this has all got to be known and it's got to be known terrifically well. The thing's got a *bzz-bzz-bzz* – what the devil is that *bzz-bzz-bzz*? Well, somebody who doesn't know what the devil *that* is, is not going to be able to straighten out the meter, because that is a session manifestation; the auditor has goofed. Something has gone wrong with the auditing cycle in this session and he'd better jolly well straighten it up right now!

He's trying to put in a rudiment, "Has anything been suppressed?" Well, he has a clean read. Now, he maybe doesn't know whether he had a clean read or not, so he thinks he had better ask the question again. So he asks the question again, but this time it runs into the negative. The pc has thought "nothing there," see. So now he has a read on "suppress" which is a session read. Up to that time – up to the moment he got the clean – it was reading the bank, you see. And then he cleaned a clean. He saw the needle; the needle didn't even quiver, "In this session has anything been suppressed?" and the needle didn't even quiver.

Well, if he said, "That read," and demanded to know, or if he simply, really, even asked the question again, that meter manifestation has passed from process and mind over to session. He's moved the meter over from something that is measuring the pc's mind over to something that is now measuring the pc's condition of in-sessionness.

The pc was *with* the session and you were registering his mind. You make a goof with the needle and you've got a pc who is *against* the session and you are no longer reading his mind, you're reading his analytical session reaction. And you've moved the needle right out of moving in amongst the reactive bank into moving right amongst the session.

Now, at III a person has got to be able to tell that's happened. He's got to first know that it can happen and second know when it has happened. And when that thing has happened, not to keep on being a complete nitwit about it.

I've seen some real knucklehead – you know, I've watched a lot of TV demonstrations. I'm speaking from the – from the proud plateau of having made every one of these mistakes myself much worse than you ever made them. Because I made them with nobody telling me it was a mistake. I didn't have any help, see. I used to be in condition with a meter, I suppose –

the Mark Vs are very standard now but meters of earlier days used to vary from meter to meter and you'd give an auditor a new meter, it'd take him – take him as long as two weeks to get used to this meter.

Well, it's the same transition you make from a IV – a Level IV – pardon me, a Mark IV meter, your Mark IV meter, shifting to a V. I saw Mary Sue do that, and frankly her hair was standing on end. She *uhck!* She felt like she'd been put in a jet plane, see. This thing would barge and bang around like it, and so forth, and she had to train her thumb into tricks that she'd never wotted of.

You've got to break with your thumb the sweep of a Mark V meter if you're running it on rudiments that you're really trying to pick up carefully, see. And you've got to ask the question with a certain timing so that the end of your question comes when the needle is still on the dial. That's all manual dexterity. That's vocal and manual dexterity.

You dream up certain tricks. This can get very tricky. You have to know exactly when to start asking the question and when to arrest the needle and get your thumb off in time that your thumb will now no longer influence the resulting read that comes at the end of your question. Complicated, huh? So it's complicated. I've had to learn how to do it, so can you. Because if you're running that high, man, you can pick a guy's brains. You really can pick his brains.

Now, needle manifestations do not just consist of ticks. There are things called slows and a speeded rise. Well, within the last few weeks I dirtied up a needle, completely unintentionally. I was asking "Suggested" as a button and I got what might have been a sort of a slowed speeded rise. Something funny happened with the needle. It was almost imperceptible. And I said, "Well, I'm not going to nag the pc about this," and went on to the next question. And that one was a mess, and the next question was a mess, and the next one was a mess. And I couldn't figure out what was going on. Now, there'd been a – there'd been an answer. I finally hauled it back, rehashing, and hauled it back. Suggest – there'd been an answer on Suggest which then operated thereafterwards as a missed withhold, see. But this fantastically slight manifestation of that needle – it was so slight that it was practically guesswork.

In other words, any change of pace of that needle is a read, much less reverse direction. So you're caught between the devil and the deep blue sea. Because this thing will read all the way south – if it reads on the needle it'll be real to the pc; if it doesn't read on the needle it won't be real to the pc. Now, they're cut in; they're absolutely side by jowl there, and so on – it'd give you some of the experimental design problems of the meter.

You know, early meters didn't read on some pcs because they were off the bottom and didn't read on other pcs because they were off the top and – ah, wild stuff, see. Well, we've covered that whole band now. And we have something that exactly compares to if the pc's going to know about it or can know about it, you're going to get some manifestation on the needle. But a very fast swinging needle gives a less perceptible reaction. See, if it were going very slowly, you would have gotten the more perceptible reaction. But that needle was traveling at the velocity of near light, don't you see, and it just vaguely changed its pace and the inertia of the needle was sufficient to carry it through the read. So it can get that rough.

But what kind of a pc am I talking about now? I'm talking about a pc who is passing off the meter anyway. What do you mean off the meter? Well, along about VI, at Level VI, when you get them in around auditing actual GPMs, your meter passes out of this world. You've got to start running it – if you're going to put in rudiments on a pc, you've got to run it at a much higher sensitivity, and the pc is already reading better than a Clear on a meter, don't you see? You somehow or other got to mesh this meter in against a pc who isn't really reading on a meter, who hasn't got that much reactive mind left, don't you see.

It gets pretty messy. And when the pc's postulate made in the session gives you a rocket read – so that your greatest manifestations are off the thoughts of the pc. If you want to see a big read at – when a person's had a lot of Level VI stuff run on him, why, just have the pc decide something – *psheew*. "What was that?"

"Oh, I just thought we'd had it, you know. We'd gotten it now." Pc's postulates are rocket reading, you see.

You're actually auditing somebody who is an electric eel to begin with, and what you're mainly reading is reactive material and all of this reactive potential is disappearing; because a reactive potential is, oh, a trillionth or some infinitesimal fraction of what the person is actually capable of doing by himself. It isn't just the plain statement of what you can do reactively you can do better analytically. That is an understatement.

Somebody has a compulsion to wiggle his ears, you see. All right, so he wiggles his ears. Well, frankly, if he didn't have an inhibition on the subject of his ears, his ability to wiggle his ears could set up a hundred mile an hour breeze, don't you see, if you do it analytically. It's not a proportionate remark.

If a fellow could paint somewhat – well, take Rembrandt, something or other (reactive chap) – he could paint somewhat, and so forth. Think of what the guy would have done if he hadn't had any reactivity at all on the subject. Wow! It'd just be strictly *wow!* It'd be that much better. It's magnitudinously better. It doesn't just pass from reactivity under your control so now you can do it just as well. It actually isn't even in the same order of magnitude.

For instance, I didn't get bright about photography until I started chipping around the edges of the GPMs about making pictures. I started to get real bright about photography. I started to get bright on the subject, you know. I'd been going along, and so forth. And I realized, just all of a sudden, I had a perfect working system of photography all grooved in, so I'd never noticed it before.

We had a beautiful system of photography on the subject of color transparencies. Take a Rollei camera around here and just shoot about anything in the place and do it beautifully and gorgeous and everybody ohs and ahs over the thing. What do you do with it? It costs you three pounds five shillings to have a color negative made so that you can have a single print. And then the print costs you two pounds five. Something on the order of about five pounds ten, you can get a small snapshot, see. The interruption is, the color transparency doesn't cost all this, just they can't be made into pictures.

So, last night I was just upsetting Reg about it. So last night I just all of a sudden said, "Hey, what do you know," and turned on Reg's big Rollei projector, and turned it on to a big

screen, and took the Land camera and took a picture of it. The most beautiful color snapshot you ever saw in your life.

Brand-new use for Land cameras. Takes a beautiful black and white. You can then turn around and get a negative made of the black and white, by the way, for fifteen cents. We had – we had complete system sitting around here, and so forth. All it needed to do was to be put together and that was that, and we had pictures.

You can almost count on the fact that if you've got re... a reactive ability, you've got fantastic problems along with it. You could just count on that, if ability is at all reactive. Now, if you want to know whose ability is reactive, well, who is having problems with his ability?

The circus performer has a lot of worry about having to... so on. But he is the wildest cannon – human cannonball in the world, don't you see. But he seems to have this and he seems to have that and something. Well, he's reactively being a cannonball, and so forth. Well, if you cleaned him up on this particular subject, he wouldn't have problems on the subject of being a cannonball, see. That's all very interesting from a viewpoint of that. The problems get added by the reactivity and the reactivity also de... takes all the power out of it.

Well, this is completely reverse to the way the psychoanalyst thinks that the world works. He said, "Be glad you're a neurotic, because you wouldn't have any skills unless you are neurotic," you know. Ding-ding-ding, here comes the wagon. Well, of course, he wants everybody to be neurotic; that's how he makes his dough. They wouldn't sit there that long if they weren't so neurotic.

The scope, then, of a person's ability depends on fishing it out into the analytical realm. And the magnitude of performance and so on is some fantastic, disproportionate figure. You've got a grain of sand to the mountain, don't you see? Brahms versus a musician, you know.

It's a good thing for you to know this – I'm just not riding a hobby horse. It's a good thing to know this, because every once in a while you're going to get a pc who is going to balk: He – he – he – what – what – what if he lost his, you know, what – uh – uh ...

There's writers around that just go around cultivating neuroses so they can write, you know, as though this has something to do with it, and so forth. And you sometimes actually need the data I'm giving you now. But the softest statement is whatever a person can do reactively, he can do far better analytically. That's the softest statement made, but I'm giving you the actual scope of the situation. Anything he can do only reactively, he's going to have problems with of great magnitude, and the difference of proportion of ability and so forth is some – one to some unimaginably large figure, you know – trillions to one, you know, something like that.

Now, what's this got to do with the needle? Well, there actually isn't too much of a problem at Level III because you've got mostly a reactive being. He's on the reverse order. You got one trillionth of a being and the remainder of it is reactivity. So at Level III your needle behaves fairly well on reactivity and doesn't get in your face too much on the session thing. There's a balance between these things, you see. Somebody can still be upset about the session and sometimes still even read a bit on the needle, do you see?

At VI this gets reversed. Now, you really see, you really see it the wrong way to. You ask if this thing is this way and you get a little tick and so forth, and all of a sudden you get a rocket read and you say, "What was that?"

"Oh, that. *I* thought something or other," don't you see.

So, your reactive read is getting much tinier and your analytical read getting much larger. But at Level III the reactive read is larger than the analytical read. Got that? Which is the only thing that saves anybody's bacon at Level III if he's having trouble cuffing around a meter.

But you got to know how to keep a needle clean. Well, therefore, you have to know to complete an auditing cycle, to complete your auditing comm cycle particularly. You've got to know when the needle – and it's just guesswork – when you've overreached a point and you're not getting a consistency and the pc seems to be unhappy about what you're doing with the needle, you've got to know then that you've got to go into the session part of it and straighten up the session part of it.

But don't keep straightening up the session part of it with mid ruds to a point where you drive the pc out of session. That's the beautiful point of balance there. You can harass a pc who is running all right until he is very aware of the session. See, you can turn it around the other way to.

So what's the trick here? It's maintain the needle in good condition simply by maintaining your session in good condition. That's all you have to do to maintain the needle in good condition, just keep your session in good condition. Don't get the pc against the session. Don't get the pc against you. Don't start harassing the pc one way or the other about things that are not this way or that way or something of the sort. And then above all things, for God's sakes, never blame the pc because he's not behaving properly on a meter. All auditors sooner or later do this and then much to their embarrassment they find out they haven't been asking the right question.

It's this crazy. They've started from the last session – they've started the new session and they're not getting the same reads on the needle that they were getting in the last session. And they start blaming the pc for having done something between sessions. And then much to their embarrassment they look up at last session's auditor's report and find out they were running another question. See. They never cleaned off their last question; they did something weird, see. They're not asking the right question. That's why the pc isn't reading on the meter. Or they've got their session completely awry; they haven't got the pc in session at all.

The needle, how to handle the needle, that is the basic foremost skill of Level III. And a person, to be a Class III Auditor, ought to be able to handle the needle backwards and forward without ever cleaning a clean or missing a read.

You clean a clean, you're going to throw the pc into a session awareness. He's already given you all he's got. Now you're asking him for more. Ach! You're going to dirty this thing up. He's got an answer, you don't ask for it – you're going to dirty this thing up. In other words, you're going to miss a read. That kind of thing shouldn't go. You've got to – got to get those things ironed out as far as the auditor is concerned at Level III.

And he should realize that when he's getting screwball reads of some kind or another – like the pc says he hasn't got any answers but he's getting reads – it should eventually dawn on the auditor that the pc is protesting or invalidating or suppressing or doing something weird in the session about the session. He's got to recognize that the metering has shifted from the reactive to the session.

And with just that data – and practically no other data than that – you really wrap up needle reading. That is needle reading. The peculiarities, inconsistencies and oddball non-senses about reads... Well, let's just take body motion. So you got a big, sweeping read all of a sudden. I had a pc, every time a foot was scraped across the floor, an electrostatic current was generated and you got a read. And yet it was always done completely silently and without any other body motion. Well, that's a session reaction, isn't it? So, it doesn't fall beyond that, and it's simply up to the auditor to find out *what's going on!* That's all.

"What you doing?"

"Oh, I just moved my foot."

Now, with that data and knowing just that, you can do Auditing by Lists. And if you don't know that data, you can't do Auditing by Lists!

Now, Auditing by Lists is going to confuse people left, right and center, because they're going to say this has something, then, to do with assessment. No, it doesn't have anything to do with assessment at all. Because on Auditing by List you are not interested in which level or item of the list reads. That you are not interested in at all. You are simply interested in going down the list and making sure that each one in turn is cleaned up if it reads. You're not trying to go down a list and find one of these levels. Remember, that's the operation of an ARC break.

All right, now, get this – get this difference. Assessment means reading down a list to find out which item on that list reads more than the other items on the list, which is *the* item. We are trying to find the item out of a list of items – whether it's listed by the pc or an arbitrary list, see. That's assessment. That's trying to find *the* item.

Now, Auditing by List is no effort to find any part of the list greater than any other part of the list. This is just sawing wood. There are this many cords of wood up there and it's going to take so much time and action to saw up these cords of wood, and that's all he does with the list. He just makes sure that each question on the list, in turn, is no longer reading when he leaves it. And that's the whole action of Auditing by List: making sure that each question taken up in turn is no longer reading, which requires the action, of course, of reading the question to find out if it reads and then continuing to get actions to the question – get answers to the question until the question no longer reads, noticing now that the question is no longer reading and passing on to the next question.

Along with that – what I've just given you – noticing that he is getting reads that are session reads which aren't associated with the question, see, that's part of that. Otherwise he's trying to clean up session reads by reading a question. You know, pc's been protesting for a while. Pc has a withhold. He's messed up something in this session, see. So now he continues

to get reads on the list which aren't from the list. This requires the auditor differentiate between these two things. And that's all there is to it.

So, we get, we get, "Do I see a cat?" – tick. "Very good. I have a read here."

"*Yeow-yeow-yeow, it's...*"

"Have you done that?"

"*Yeow-yeow-yeow, yeow-yeow.*"

"All right. Do I see a cat? All right, that is clean. Do I see a dog? That is clean. Do I see a horse? That reads."

"*Yeow-yeow-yeow, yeow-yeow-yeow.*"

"Do I see a horse? There is *another* read there."

Boy, shoot the auditor who never learns that trick. That is one of the slipperiest tricks in auditing. That causes more ARC breaks to say, "That still reads." You see what happens is, you just told the fellow he hasn't answered the question. You've given him instantaneous ARC break.

Any time something – a question reads twice in a row, it is always *another* read. It's not the same read, ever! Nothing ever "*still* reads." It always has *another* read. It reads again on something else, always. That is the understanding of the auditor's palaver. The auditor works that into his patter. It's always *another*: "I have another read here." It's a major auditing error, it's a really a gross auditing error to say, "That still reads." Because he – what's he done? He's just refused – refuted the fact the guy just cleaned it up, and the truth of the matter is he has *another* read. It's not the same read that he had before. Always another read.

So, we just go down this list and we read the question and if it gives a meter reaction, we get an answer to the question. If it doesn't get a meter reaction, we don't get an answer to the question. Then we just simply check the question again. If the question now has another read on it, we get another answer to the question. And we keep getting more answers to the degree that the question is more reads, you see? And eventually, unless we clean a clean or miss it completely, we get a null needle on that question. And now we go to the next question and we do the same thing with it.

This is Auditing by Lists. This is all there is to Auditing by List.

You have put in the auditor's paws the *totality* of the process. And if you're doing auditing supervision on this and you have a bunch of people worrying about this, let me tell you something. You stand back in the corner with a sawed-off shotgun in your hand. You just wait for the first one to ask some dopey, stupid, Q-and-A question, and just blow his head right off. Just splatter it all over the other students and they won't do it anymore. And let me tell you from long experience, that's practically what it takes.

I'll show you what I mean. "Have you ever kicked a horse?" – this is the question we are asking – "Have you ever kicked a horse? All right. That reads."

Pc: "Well, actually I kicked a cow once. Uh – I know. I remember it very vividly; very vividly. I kicked a cow once."

"Oh, yes. Well, what about kicking a cow?" That's the moment you pull the sawed-off shotgun up, cock it and fire it. It's an incomplete cycle of action. The next thing you know, this person's needle is going to look like so much jam. You're going to have the pc all loused up and ARC broke. It doesn't matter how happy they look just now, all this is going to catch up with him.

His question – blankety-blank-blank it! – was "Has he ever kicked a horse?" An h-o-r-s-e, horse. So he says he kicked a cow once. Okay, so he kicked a cow. All right. And you simply let him tell you all about kicking this cow. And you give him a sort of a half-acknowledgment and you say, "Yes. Yes. Yes. Yes..."

"Oh, you're asking about a horse. Oh, yeah, there were some horses there. Oh, yeah. Yeah, I did kick a horse." Get the idea?

Or if he's answered "a cow," and so forth, and you say, "Well, all right, all right, kicked a cow. Now, how about a horse? You kicked a horse? The question was a horse." You have to do that very delicately because you ARC break the pc again that way. You're making him wrong, see.

"Well," he says, "Hm-mm. Hm-mm. No, I just never have kicked a horse." Needle.

Oh well, now, you've got one of your interesting problems, haven't you? You've got a needle reading one thing and the pc saying something else. What do you do?

Well, the one, two, three of it is you simply make sure that your read isn't coming from a session miss, see. "Are you protesting the question? You invalidating the question? Are you upset about the question? Am I cleaning a clean? What – something – something gone... Oh, that – doesn't it. All right. Thank you." Get that all straight. "Now, have you ever kicked a horse? That reads."

"Oh, it still reads? Well. Oh, well. Ha-hah. Guess I'd better think it over then."

And you'll find out that's about the most serious reaction you'll get. "Oh yes, and I never told my father either. Oh, man! Oh, that was – yeah, yeah, and he licked my older brother for doing it. Had hoofprints all over the horse, you know. Oh yeah."

"All right. Good enough. Thank you. Now, let me test the question; just let me check this question now, just to make sure it's clean: Have you ever kicked a horse? All right, that's clean. Thank you very much." And go on to the next question.

Get the idea? There's nothing really fancy about this. It's just the one, two, three, and you've got to – your auditor at this point has got to understand the combinations that can go awry, see, which is to say, it can come from reactive to session. You've got to get an answer to the question. You mustn't Q-and-A with it.

I've known certain schools of thought on this subject that if he said a horse – you said a horse and he said he kicked a cow, then you ask him about the cow, but halfway through that he cognited he kicked a dog. And then halfway through the dog, why, he cognited he kicked a pig, and each time the auditor said, "Well, how about the pig; how about the dog; how about the pile. *Zah-zah-zah, zah-aaaaaaaaa.*" There they go over there, way over.

They're going up that rise over there someplace, you know. Here's the session here, see, and they're just traveling up over the rise of the hill.

They've just left it, man. That's nowhere. They never completed a cycle of action. A Q and A is simply a failure to complete a cycle of action. Whether an auditing cycle or an auditing comm cycle or a program cycle, he just didn't complete the cycle of action. So you've got to complete those cycles of action on Auditing by List. If you start List 62, don't get a sudden wild idea in the middle of the night and start tomorrow on List 65. No, finish List 62. See what I mean?

Now, what are these lists? Well, they're nothing more than the plus-minus misdeemeanors and upsets that an individual could have. They're based in various lines and levels. A lot of technical aspects can go into the manufacture of a list. Now, we used to make auditors around here do lists for certain pcs. Now, that was a big gag. They'd do a list for a pc and everything would come along fine. So an auditor, also, should be able to do a list for a pc as well as take a canned list.

But once the list is made, it is simply – whether the auditor did it or it was done for him or he something, now it is audited by list and is simply taken at question one and is cleaned through to the last question in just that fashion.

Now, there's really only a hatful of little lists that can be done over and over and over and over again. And these are lists like L1 and what we've got as L4 in your mimeograph work – L1 and L4. You can clean L1 and then you can clean L4. Now, actually those are used as Auditing by List. They're not used for taking up an ARC break, because they're not on an ARC break pc. They just have all these factors in them, so you go ahead and clean them up.

Now, whether you vary the question or not is beside the point, but is "Have I ____?" would probably not be used by you. It'd be, "Has anyone ever ____?" or something like that. You Hobson-Jobson the question over to be a broader scope, don't you see? You don't have to put a time period to it or anything like that. You just go on and clean this list.

Well, you, oddly enough, can clean List 1 and List 4 and List 1 and List 4 and List 1 and List 4 and it just goes on almost endlessly. That's because of the generality of the list. It's not a particularized or peculiar list to just this one pc. It embraces all the actions of life, so it's a repetitive list and you can go over it and over it and over it. You could keep on going, in other words, and using a pair of lists alternately, one against the other.

And each time you're doing the same action and it's simply Auditing by List, which is an auditing action, which simply consists of what I've just been telling you about reading the needle, making sure the needle is clean on that question, making sure your auditing cycle was good, making sure ifs clean, going to the next one, making sure that that one was clean and so forth before you left it and just going on down to the last question. It's as simple as that.

No arguments with the pc or upsets, you see, about this and that. Don't monkey around with it. Pc who is very recalcitrant and so forth, it looks like this thing is all going to pieces, why, you might have a missed withhold or something like that crop up and hit you in the face. So it becomes part of Auditing by List to be able to keep your rudiments in, of which missed withhold or Fail to reveal is one.

But look at rudiments, in actual fact, and look at Prepchecking. Isn't Prepchecking really Auditing by List? It's just cleaning the question and then going to the next question, and that's actually all you're doing with it. It's a simple action. So Prepchecking comes in also, then, and anything we ever knew... [noise from an airplane above]

(International Idlewild* here today. I got to get that new machine gun; they just advertised it.)

The Prepchecking, Sec Checking, all of these other types of – of "clean up the needle," then, all come at Level III. And if you want to know what is Level III: Level III is that level where you clean the needle.

Well, that brings us to Level IV, of course. Well, what's IV? Well, IV takes the list for an entirely different reason. And the individual is now totally accustomed to lists, so at Level IV he takes this for an entirely different reason: He's trying to find *it*.

So, Level IV – you're trying to find something on the list, you see. You're trying to find that one level which you are now going to use and audit – that's for service facsimiles and things like that. Which one of these things is it? Well, it never bothers anybody at Level III, you see. He doesn't care which one of these things is it or not it. He just uses anything that reads. You got the difference? All right.

Well now, this permits you as a pc, of course, very, very little width. Yeah, you got very little width of wander. So therefore you find out that you have to kind of stick to it. And you can get sick of the question, but remember that you go up from boredom to enthusiasm.

Now, there's a lot to know about a needle, but none of it exceeds anything that I've been telling you and most of it's on the basis of familiarity.

I've done a lot of theorizing about why people can't read needles when they can't and so forth. I found out that they couldn't see a still. They couldn't tell when something was still. That was what they couldn't tell. It wasn't that they couldn't recognize a motion, it was because they couldn't see a still. They couldn't see a reverse of direction or something like this. It had to do with visual acuity.

And you get somebody who's got a comm lag in ordinary living of five or ten seconds, and so forth, he's going to have an awful time reading a needle. So it goes over rather easily into case.

But you know, you're only trying to do a familiarization deal with training. It's just the degree with which you'll familiarize somebody and you can lick all these things just by getting somebody familiar with the needle itself, even if that's as odd as just Reach and Withdraw from the meter. And just meter drills in general is being a – coming accustomed to the meter and watching the needle and doing things like this.

Now, one of the interesting things that we've had going around here is we've had two or three people standing around watching one person put another person on a meter, and the two – and two observers. And you know, the auditor and the two observers are just in wild disagreement as to whether the meter had read or not read.

Your bulletin drills and so forth have all been gauged to overcome these bits and frailties and so forth. There's been a lot of work on this as you can see the number of drills that exist. But there is your toughest – your toughest application is your Auditing by List, as far as the needle is concerned.

Now, if a person can get through that then, of course, a person can assess. A person can assess ARC breaks and they can assess Prepcheck subjects and they can assess this and assess that. And they can take up, of course, lists of service facsimiles, and they can also learn to list. And now they're getting all ready to graduate course into Class VI materials, which is – takes this as a matter of course.

It's really easier to read a meter at Class VI than it is at Class III. I think that it probably wouldn't be true if a person couldn't read a meter at all at Class III. He'd probably become very alarmed at the degree that meters read at Class VI. It's something to be alarmed about. You keep cranking it down and it still reads, you know. And you... An inch read is probably questionable at Class VI. "Well, it wasn't a read. I don't know, equivocal," so forth. Two-inch read: "Ah, probably." Two-inch read with a blowdown: "Well, that's probably correct." "Did the meter explode? Well, it's probably the right item." You know, that's the sort of approach to it.

Now, this is an entirely different field of area at Level III. "You missed a read." "A read? Where was it? Where was it?" "It speeded on that rise. There was an acceleration there for a period of over a quarter of an inch. It went a little bit faster for that period of a quarter of an inch than it did just before and did just after. That was a speeded rise. What's the matter with you? Can't you read a meter?" "That's, oh my God, a speeded rise. What kind of thing... *Huuuh! Ooh, horrors!*"

Well, you get the difference of approach? So if a person can read a meter at Level III, he could do most anything, because I see even old-timers have trouble reading at III. But that is Auditing by List. When I tell you to straighten out a pc's ARC breaks, I really mean auditing – this is, you know, ARC breaky type pcs, not now in an ARC break, you understand. But he's had a lot of trouble and upset and he sort of feels poor. He will answer auditing questions. Everything's fine.

It's just L1 – L4, alternately, Auditing by List. No fanciness to the question if – you know. Just alter the question so it's broader, you see. But don't say, "In this lifetime, if you were..." or something. Just give it a broad answer. Clean that line by line, L1. And then line by line, List 4, and L – line by line – 1, L – line by line – 4. This person will come up shining. I don't care what he – kind of condition he's in. Sometimes they do even when they don't know the nomenclature, which is quite remarkable.

Anyway, there is Auditing by Lists, and there is, actually, a very full rundown on what is contained at Level III in Scientology. I hope it'll be of some assistance to you.

Thank you.

* Editor's note: Idlewild, site of New York's international airport

Problems And Solutions

A lecture given on 21 April 1964

[part missing]

How are you doing today?

Audience: Fine.

Good. This is the what?

Audience: Twenty-first of April.

Twenty-first of April. And we have a lot of wind blowing out here today. Twenty-first of April, AD 14.

[part missing]

All right. Well, you're going to get a very complex, offbeat lecture here today – very complex, very offbeat. Nothing simple today. Tired of talking about simplicities, you just never seem to latch on. [laughter, laughs] Talk to you about a complexity here, and see if we can't do so.

As you may know, not contained in the body of Scientology but standing aloof, there are a series of research maxims, or data, which I have really never bothered to collect. You'll find some trace of them in, of all things, *Dianetics: Evolution of a Science*. Its got quite a few of them in it. It's, you know, the rationale and the how of how you figure it out. There's a whole book that was devoted to this – was "Excalibur," is how you went about figuring it out. And every once in a while one of these things cracks through and you get a grip on the put-together of existence, and that sort of thing, which is extremely useful.

These things vary. I'm not giving you a big mystery. These things vary all over the place; they go from the sublime to the ridiculous. One of the maxims – I'll give you an idea – is, take a body of knowledge which has produced very bad effects and results, and if that's the case, then you move it out and don't pay any further attention to it. Take the one which is least productive of results and rule it out, and you can eventually corral truth on this type of an approach.

Let's take all those things that haven't worked and let's throw them out, see? That's this type of data, see? And this is of assistance on analyzing cases, you know, like mad. You do it all the time. You say, "Well, this fellow's been run on this and he's been run on that and he's been run on something else, and nothing happened in those instances, so it must be something else." See? Well, this can be done on a broad philosophic basis.

But let's take something of an unworkability and let's throw it away. Now, that's a research datum. Doesn't sound like much, does it? But it has a broad workability. The reverse doesn't happen to be true: Because something has worked on a case is no reason it will work on all cases. Isn't that an interesting thing? That is to say, because something is true in one instance is no reason it's true in all instances. You've got to have it applied in several instances and directions before you have any confidence in it.

That's one that an auditor misses all the time. He gets a tremendous win. He's got "Recall being drunk," see? And he ran this on this old lady, and she got a tremendous "send" out of this whole thing, and it gave him a big win. And now he fails to apply this little research datum, this truth of the matter. You see, he's only gotten a workability on one case here, series of one, and he has no real idea yet whether or not that is applicable more broadly. And yet out of the enthusiasm of his win, he goes ahead and runs "Recall being drunk" on this one and that one and the other one, the village parson, and all of these sort of things, and he doesn't get any more wins with it. You see? So he feels very defeated.

Well, what he's done is fail to apply the other side of the thing: just because it had a workability in this instance is no reason it's broadly workable, see? That's the maxim that goes back of that. There are a lot of these, a lot of these. They're sort of idiot's-delight sort of things, and rules of thumb by which you progress.

But once in a while one of them turns up that has tremendous value. And this may or may not have some value to you. (This lecture, by the way, is about levels.) This may or may not have some value to you as a technical datum, but it certainly has tremendous value as a research datum, to such a degree that I was able to crack through some of the wildest web-work that I think I have ever gotten mixed up in, with this.

You see, you can get certain things to read on a meter. You get in the vicinity of "create" GPMs – let us just mention that in passing – and you can get, on Monday, this combination to read; on Tuesday, this other combination to read; on Wednesday, this other combination to read; and on Thursday you get an entirely new combination to read. By that time, you're pretty caved in, so the only thing you can run on is whether or not you've got a creak. So you try then to rule out the creak, and you go back over these things. And it just gets to be one of the wildest swamps that you ever got mixed up in, trying to pilot through the basic morass of the individual, because you can get so many things that contradict so many things.

Now, in view of the fact that a pretty well-off auditor – I doubt very much could pilot his way through a goals plot and still have a pc sitting across from him. Pc would probably be dead by the time he got the goals plot half-finished and there wouldn't be any point in finishing it. This is grim. This is real grim. I mean, you see the tiger here; he's got teeth, see?

You get everything checked out, and then it doesn't check out tomorrow, see; it's something different. And, so I had to have a datum which would pilot through this, and I finally managed to tailor-make a datum which piloted through this. And we get a maxim that doesn't sound like very much to begin with, but it's – it's very, very pervasive. And that is: A problem is as complex as it presents potential solutions. A problem is as complex as it presents potential solutions. How many – how many wild ramifications has this problem got? Well, you want to know how many wild ramifications it's got; how many potential solutions

has it got? And that gives you an immediate index of how complex the problem is. That's interesting, isn't it?

All right. Well, let's say this perhaps has some workability – there's some more to this which I'll just go into in a moment. But let's dispose of this first one first. Let's say this pc – this possibly has use in the field of figuring out what's wrong with your pc. So the pc comes in to you, and he's been to the chiropractors and he's been to the doctors, and a last result, last, last, last result, why, he went and saw – something practically nobody who is decent would do – he went and saw a psychiatrist. And he went even further downscale and he saw a medico. And he's taken up good-luck charms and so forth. Well, all of this kind of thing, don't you see, is – those are all potential solutions, aren't they? Potential solutions. Now, medicine just gets rid of this fellow by saying he's a hypochondriac. And I've run into a lot of hypochondriacs, and they were sick. They were sick enough to be worried about. I remember one famous case of a very dear lady, and her husband was practically ruined through this. He was quite a famous writer – and she always used to be worrying about her health. And she'd worry about her health and worry about her health, and all of his writing friends and all of their wives simply wrote her off as a hypochondriac. And he was dearly devoted to her and doted on her, and probably only the reason he kept on writing was because she encouraged him, you know, and she – so on. But nevertheless she was always worried about her health. And everybody was very sure that she was a hypochondriac – labeled it as such, brushed it all off as such, right up to the moment when she up and died on them. It's quite interesting.

That was the end, by the way, of his career. He went down and went to work for the government. He started writing Herbert Hoover's "Reorganization of the Government" or something like that, and he quit writing. And the clique that this girl more or less held together all broke up, and so forth. But it left everybody absolutely stunned, you know? She was sick. You know? Well, she was.

Some people are sicker than others and some people talk about it more than others, you see?

And a handy way of getting rid of it, you see, if you can't solve it or do anything for it yourself, just say, "Well, he's a hypochondriac," you know, and dust the whole problem off, you see? And in this case, this was all very handy, but the patient died, do you see? Kind of a grim look at the situation.

You get awful tired of somebody who keeps nibbling around and worrying about this, that or the other thing. And you get awful tired of this person, they... and so forth. But the problem they're presenting can be measured by the complexity of the solutions.

So this hypochondriac who has tried everything under the sun – (quote) "hypochondriac" (unquote) – he's probably – he's actually got a problem that's that complex. Do you follow that? I mean, there's that complicated a thing wrong with him, see? You got the way this works. This is another way of looking at it.

All right, now this defeats forever the idea that you're going to slip somebody "Pill 62" and have an OT. Now, you see the error? This used to be introduced to me about once a week or once a month. And we even have a cliché that comes forward from that time. It's called the One-shot Clear, see? It means a one-process Clear or something like that, see? And for years,

why, I was interested in this particular line and everybody was always dreaming up with this. A beautiful dream: all you did was sock somebody in the gluteus maximus with a couple of cc's of "whizzo," or something, you see, and they immediately went *bing!*

Won't ever happen. Why? If this datum is true, it never can happen. In other words, the problem they've got is complex as the number of solutions that are pushed in its particular direction, or have gone around its edges, you see?

The problem of government, then, must be terribly complex, because you think of the number of solutions. Look at the number of political solutions there have been to the problem of government. Well, that gives you an immediate index of how complicated is this problem of government. How complex a problem is it? Well, it must be terribly complex, don't you see?

Now, this thing which has just one little old "whizzo" solution, don't you see, and it surrenders to that, that must have been a very simple problem. In other words, there's a comparable line between the complexity of the problem and the number of solutions. See, it isn't the complexity of the solution, it's the number of solutions. Solutions, quantitative, and complexity in the problem. I want you to differentiate that rather cleanly, see? It's not "big solution, big problem," see? It's complex in the problem, and numerous in the solution, see? Something you should look at.

So this tells you at once that when a pc comes in there and sits down in the chair, and you have to start running up the solutions to his case, you see – see, and it isn't surrendering easily – you always blame yourself on the basis you haven't used the right process or something of the sort, whereas you merely may be looking at this mechanism. This is a terribly complex case. It's a very complex case and therefore is going to require numerous solutions. Do you see?

So you're just defeating yourself if you say you're going to run one process that's going to resolve this particular guy's problem in life. See, you're defeating yourself, because you're going to run that one process, and that's not going to defeat his problem in life. Just make up your mind that if his problem in life has received many solutions, then it is itself a complex problem and will therefore require a complexity of processes to resolve it. See? Elementary.

All right. And let's go on from there. Now, a solution must be as complex as the potentials of the problem. There's the other "whizzo" here. Now, let's look at it in reverse here. How complex does a solution have to be? Well, it has to be as complex as the potentials of the problem. In other words, here is, again, not a one-for-one. Here you have the solution being complex, don't you see? This is another view we're looking at, another maxim. The solution has to be complex because of the potentials of the problem. You get the idea?

Now, what do you mean, potentials? Well, let's just take old "survive." This problem has this potential of knocking out of existence survival along various fronts or in various areas, you see? It's a threat. See, here's a problem that is a big problem. So, the thing to solve that: you look for a simplicity in the solution to solve this big threatening problem. And here's the way you get defeated like that: This bird comes in, he's got this dangerous problem. Now, we're talking about a dangerous problem, see – potential of a problem, dangerous potential. He comes in and he's got this very dangerous problem, you see? They're going to throw him

out on the street tomorrow – very dangerous; going to throw him out on the street tomorrow, and he's going to lose his job as a result, you see, and he'll probably be sued in court for something or other.

But he comes in and he tells you he's going to be thrown out on the street tomorrow. All right, now you give him a simple solution. You say, "Well, I'll loan you five pounds" or "five bucks," you see, "and you can pay your rent." Did you ever have it happen to you, that you found out that he all of a sudden told you then, "Well, yes, but then how does this take care of Maizie?"

"Well, what about Maizie?"

"Well, she's pregnant."

You get it? So you've set up a defeat for yourself. He's got a dangerous problem: You offer him a simple solution. That's an immediate way of setting up a defeat for yourself. You're going to be defeated in this. You can sit and talk to these fellows. Eventually you say they're completely ungrateful. You just sit there and you give them solution after solution after solution, and they can't seem to buy any of them because they always say, well, there's always this other thing, too, see, and then there's this other thing, too, and then there's also this other thing, too. And then they finally shyly look at you and say, well, actually, the reason they can't marry the girl is because they're already paying alimony to a wife elsewhere, you see? You never knew this either. This all has to do with their being thrown out on the street tomorrow. See, this thing just travels miles. In other words, nothing ever really becomes a dangerous problem which is very simple, or the guy would have solved it in the first place.

Problems only become dangerous that are quite complex. They require, then, a complex solution. "Well, what we have to do, I guess, is so forth, and we..." Your level of solution – this guy is going to be thrown out on the street tomorrow, and so forth. "Well, let's see, maybe I could get you a job with United Fruit, and we could change your name. Take a little doing; we'd have to get you a forged passport. And then, let's see, I happen to know Joe; that will require that. And you better – in order to get financed for this, you better rob a bank tomorrow," and so forth.

I mean, you get the idea, this thing is going to mount up into this. If you were going to be real in your solution, to match the thing, see, well, it's got to be – this is a dangerous problem – if you're going to be real in your solution, why, give them a real complex solution, see? It's got to take care of all these ramifications this way and that, and it's a put-together the like of which because... In order to become a dangerous problem, the thing had to coast practically into an unsolvable condition, and therefore it must contain many (quote) "unsolvable" (unquote), points.

It's quite amusing to look at advising human beings from the basis of these maxims, see? If you recognize those two maxims, you'd always be a whiz. This girl comes in and she says, "Well, I'm going to leave my husband. I'm going to have to leave my husband, because..." so forth – "things have gotten too tough." For you to say at once, like a marriage counselor, "Oh, well, no, I think we could just patch all this up" – you better watch it, man, because this is a complex solution required here, because that's a dangerous problem. Well,

she's got two kids. She has no means of support. She's going to leave the guy. She's going to have no home. Well, let's just look at this, look at what she's threatening to do, here, see?

It isn't just a matter of blow, don't you see? It's a matter of she's got this very, very dangerous problem: she can't stay with him and can't go, don't you see? But this thing is pretty grim, see? Not just grim in her own mind, it must be that grim. Then your solution to that must be very complex. So if you just say, "Well, I'll just run a little O/W on him and her and then straighten it all out," you're going to get yourself in for a lose, see? Because there's a tremendous number of things surrounding that problem.

She's not saying, "Well, I'm mad at Joe and I'm not going to serve him any supper," see? That's not very dangerous. See, it could be – a few pots and pans blow up – but this is going to be a bust-up of some kind or another. This is big stuff.

Well, a marriage counselor always gets it when it's right on the edge of the precipice, don't you see? So you offer any simple solution, you know, to this, you're being a fool, and you're going to have a big lose. It necessarily requires a very complex solution – nice, complicated solution. So the thing you had better sit down and do is not give her a little "bing," you know, and say "I'm going to do that." Sit down and find out all the items that have to be solved in this problem.

Now, that would be your real action. How many – how many angles to this are there? See, not just a glib "Oh, well, I'll just run a little O/W on it; you can go home," and so on. No, no. There's this Gertrude, his former wife, who is in Tallahassee, and then there's the matter of his mother and father, and so forth, and they're bringing pressure on her mother-in-law, because, you see, they own the mortgage on the house. And... you get the idea?

This thing builds up, and you'll just be stonied to find out how many dead ends, see, that there are in this thing. It's just big! See? It's not little. So if there's a big problem, dangerous problem and so forth, then you can just count on the fact that this thing has a tremendous number of little things begging to be solved out here in the woods that you're not aware of at all. And we get that just out of this maxim here: A solution must be as complex as the potentials of the problem.

You can get yourself a big win on this sort of thing, you know? This person comes in. Oh, God, they're going to blow their brains out, see? Well, man, that's a pretty wild solution. It's all right for you to say, "All right, he's in GPM 'destroy self'. All right, that's all. So we'll just fix that up, and so on." Maybe so, and maybe you would get to first base on it, except for this: The individual is not up to running at this level, and the individual has personal pressures in his immediate environment which would distract his attention to such a degree he probably couldn't sit still. And what are we dealing with here? We're dealing at Level 0, aren't we? So he's going to come in and he's going to blow his brains out. Good. He's going to blow his brains out. Boy, that's a dangerous solution, you know? People get hurt doing that! And... You didn't get that gag! [laughter] And you just better decide at that point, just better decide that this is begging for a very complex solution, very complex. This solution is going to be awful complex by the time you get through with this threatened suicide.

My God, this goes back to World War II and the orphan asylum and the girl who is writing letters that unless... And it goes to this and it goes to that, and it's something else, and it's over here someplace.

Well, why – why get all worn out by saying, "Well, there's just one more." See, you're getting in the same frame of mind he's getting into. Just take your original assumption, which is the correct assumption to begin with, and then work with it.

Well, it's a very dangerous problem this guy is involved with. Well, let's see how complex the solution is here. Let's just find out how many things have to be solved in this problem. Let's see, let's roll them off here. All right. "Well, all right, let's begin. You're going to blow your brains out. Good. All right. Now, now – ahem. What's the immediate and direct pressure that's causing you to do that?"

He won't give you the immediate and direct, but he'll give you something or other. Well, he's worried about his income tax. He keeps figuring it out and the government keeps unfiguring it on him, and so forth.

And you say, "All right, very good." Well, you say, "Well there's got to be some solution to income tax, is that it?" And you don't offer a solution. There's got to be a solution to income tax for him.

"Oh, yeah. Yeah, but definitely has to be one."

"All right, fine. Now, let's see, what's the next one here? Is there anything" – take it by dynamics, you see? – "any group you're connected with, or anything like that?" and so on.

"Oh, well, yes. I haven't paid my union dues, and they're going to beat me up next week if I don't. I've already been posted for being thrown out, and of course that makes me lose my job," and that sort of thing.

"Ah, well, there has to be some solution there too. How many – how many of these are problems? Being beaten up? Is that all one problem, or is several problems?"

"Well, being beaten up. Well, that's a problem, yeah, and uh... yeah, there's two or three problems involved there. And I'd have to go and get a job in some house that doesn't insist that it be union members, and so forth."

"And you been posted, and so forth, for your dues, and that requires money – that comes down to there. All right, now, how many solutions do you think we have to have here?"

And he adds it up, see? All right, that's fine. You got that out of the road. "All right. Now, let's see, is there any sex mixed up with this? Any sex mixed up with this threatened suicide?"

"Oh, well, yeah, that's what it's all about. That's what it's all about."

And, "All right. Well, how many things are there there?" and so forth.

And there has to be this and there has to be that, and there has to be something or other.

"Oh, all right. Fine. Now, is there any other condition?" You're about to go up to the sixth dynamic, you see, "Are you going to lose your possessions, or you're trying to hold on to possessions, or...?"

"Yeah. Well, I – three-quarters completed for the payments on all the furniture in the house and they're going to take it away."

"Ah, there has to be some solution to that, doesn't there? All right. Solution to the payments, time payments, on the house."

By the time you finish up, you've got a big sheet of paper here, see? It's just scribbled all over. But the funny part of it is, he won't be blowing his brains out. You didn't give him a single solution. You just said where they were needed. Takes him out of the confusion, of course, because it puts up the buffer "needed solution" in front of every one of these problems, don't you see? And he'll come down to it, then, and he'll be able to think his way through to that, and then you can pull it off.

"Well, let's see, we could start these things one by one, couldn't we? We could take these things one by... Which one of these things could be solved now?" And then run a gradient scale on the thing. Straighten out his whole life.

See, if you know this, you could handle Level 0 like a breeze. And Level 0 is the rough one to handle, man. What makes it rough? Well, these guys' problems are so great they don't even know they got them. That's how great that problem is. This fellow is walking around in a body! He thinks he's an animal! He doesn't even know he's a spirit! He doesn't even know his right name! He doesn't even know where he is or what he's doing, and he doesn't look at the fact of the importances in his vicinity at all. He's looking at a bunch of cotton-pickin' little pieces of nonsense here that wouldn't have anything to do with anything. See? Level 0. This guy's in trouble!

"But that's the way it is. That's life. Huh. Everybody else is like this, so I couldn't possibly be in trouble, because everybody else is like this, see? I'm not in trouble. *Blah-lah-ruh-ruh.*"

So, you see, his problem is so complex, he doesn't even know he's in trouble. No solutions possible in any particular direction, and the man's state is that way because no solutions have been possible in any state.

All right. Now, any time you dream up a simple solution to a complex problem you're going to go appetite over tin cup, square on your cranial capital. Simple solution to a complex problem. *Nyaaaaa*. This is how guys go politically bug-eared, see? You got to have something complex, as complex as the problem.

I want to point out to you that the International City – International City, and so forth: you start looking at this confounded thing, it's terribly complex. You start getting into complexities, you see, my heavens! You're into economics, and you're here and you're there, and banking, and boy – this thing is complicated, see? Well, actually, if you just blow up each one of its simple mentions into all the potential complexities, you've got the size of the problem it's trying to solve. And it might have a show.

Now, let me show you the simple solution: "Vote Republican. We have a Democrat in, vote Republican. Now, that solves everything, and that's all you got to do, see?" And we have another four years with things just going worse, see? "All right, now the solution is to vote Democrat. Get that Republican out and get the Democrat in. That is the solution to all our affairs!" See the idiocy of the simple solution? See? Complete idiocy.

First place, you'd have to go find a statesman someplace. I don't know where you'd find him; going to have to find him. Then you might set him up with a big team of guys that had some inkling of what they were doing, and they might figure out for a little while. And if they worked for a year or two like beavers, they just might be able to cut the fringe off of the problems that the country has. They just might be able to come into some thing.

Now, all right. This is levels. Do you recognize I'm talking to you about levels? Now, as you go on up through the levels, you're actually apparently confronting more and more complex problems and more and more complex auditing. But that is not the case at all. You're actually confronting less problems, and you have less demanded solutions.

Now, previously, people in motivation – I mean, psychoanalysis – people have been asking me for years, "Do you have any contacts with industry, or doing any work for industry?" I never really realized that they were asking me (psychologists and that sort of ilk, whenever I ran into them, and so forth; I go slumming every once in a while, I have to admit it) – but they're always asking me, they're always asking me, if we're doing work for industry. I didn't quite understand what they were talking about until I read a review of what psychology was doing for industry.

Psychology is big business now, because it's moved in hand-in-glove with industry. It is a little bit into government, but mostly into industry, and it's hiring and firing their employees for them, and it's selling all their goods for them. And it's telling them how to advertise and package their goods. And that's what it is doing. And that is all it is doing. It isn't doing anything else for anybody. Its testing services and so forth are all in this line. Now that's where its money is coming from, and of course we're cutting their throat on testing by simply giving it free in several large cities. This really upsets them.

The point here, however, is not any rant against the psychologist. He, after all, has his cross to bear. This bird is not even vaguely concerned with any of the problems of existence. He's completely out of touch, man. But he thinks, and the psychiatrist thinks, that you go *down* in man's psyche.

Now, let me introduce to you a brand-new principle, a brand-new principle: You don't go down through three levels of subvolitional unawarenesses and so forth to rock-bottom motivation, and that sort of thing, the way they've got it dreamed up, see? You're there, man. [laughter] That's the one point they've never grasped. They've not grasped that point. The guy is there. You have to go up through heightened awareness in order to progress through these "deeper states," as they call them. In other words, a guy has got to be more and more aware of these various levels of awareness. He's got to have a better insight into existence before he can see it at all, see? In other words, his perception has got to improve.

He's at the bottom rung of the ladder, and the only route he has available is up. He really doesn't have any down route left. There isn't any hidden, deep motivation. All you have

left is the individual and he is motivated. You have a motivated individual. You don't have somebody who is unaware of his "motivations." He really is at no point where he is motivating anything; he is being motivated. And that is it. What are these areas?

Now, the psychologist and the advertiser, and so forth, trying to stir up these things which motivate the individual: to that degree they are aware of this but they think that they are proceeding through lower levels of awareness, of less awareness, to reach these things. No. These things are reached through *heightened* awareness. In other words, as they try to research to find out... This is why they never get anyplace with processing, why they dead-ended in the whole field of therapy and actually jettisoned it. It had been jettisoned, if you want to know the truth of the matter.

Now, this fellow hasn't got an unconscious to be probed. He's unconscious. You see? He hasn't got one to be probed. He is simply the effect of all of this. There isn't any place you go below his level of awareness. They get this idea because a person can go to sleep, you see. And they get this all mixed up with the fact that he can not be aware and be aware, and they've got "sleep" and "awake," which has nothing to do with it.

Now, they want to know what motivates this guy, so they put him out further, or they search "deeper," or they plumb into the hidden recesses of his – "hidden?" Gone, man! He's the fellow that's hidden! [laughter] See, they're looking for the wrong thing. They're looking for the deeper areas of unconsciousness, when as a matter of fact, they already have arrived there, they've got it sitting in the chair in front of them. [laughter]

Now, in order to discover anything more about this individual at all, you can only go up. You can't discover more about this individual, you see, by putting him in deeper, or something like this, you see? It's hard for me to make this point because it's so ingrained in us that we go deeper all the time, see?

Now, let's look at it from another point of view. See? You've got to make him more aware in order to find out anything about him at all. So there is no shortcut, as we have eventually learned – we even jettisoned Dianetic reverie – but there is no shortcut by which you can get this guy half baked-up on peyote, or something like this, so that you get to a deeper level of awareness, which you can then examine to find out what's wrong with him. You see that as a complete detour? You're going exactly no place.

I'll give you the actual experiment on this thing. You could run this experiment on almost anybody. You say, "What have you been upset about lately?" or "Why are you nervous?" There's a good one. "Why are you nervous?"

And then the fellow says, "Uhh – I – I don't know. Am I nervous?"

"Well, you look so. You keep going like this all the time."

"Uh... well, I – I – I – I don't know. I – I didn't... didn't – do – don't know what's making me nervous. I – I – if – if I am nervous, I don't know what's making me nervous!"

Run this little test, like this: "Well, what considerations have you had about your state?" Run it for a few minutes and then ask him, "What's making me nervous," and he tells you at once.

Well, that's very interesting, because, in other words, you had to heighten his awareness by pulling charge off of this subject of his state of beingness. And now he knows. He can tell you. Well, this isn't him going into his subconscious, you see? This is opening up a little bit upper strata above him. You've made his awareness a little bit better so he can look better, and you've gotten him up to a point of where he can look at a little higher condition of beingness.

And that's the route that you take with a pc. And you can very easily get terribly confused and upset by current nomenclature, Freudian nomenclature and current understanding about having to go into the lower levels of consciousness of the mind in order to... No, there is no spook. There's no bogey sitting down below, you see?

It's like on a ship, you see? It's like you'd walk down through all the ladders of the engine room, and you finally run into this black, grimy character, covered with coal dust, and he is sitting there staring into a huge, roaring maw of a fire. And you say, "I'm looking for the fireman." And he starts accommodatingly looking all over the whole fireroom to find the fireman.

You see, this is the exact idiotic thing that they're doing with regard to the mind, see? And he will be very accommodating. He'll go into every corner of that fireroom, he'll go all through the engine room, he'll look under the gratings, he'll look in the bilges, and he'll cheer you up on the road and everything else. And he's looking for the fireman.

Now, if you were a Scientologist and you just ran a few considerations about his identity, see, made him a little bit more aware of things, and so on, he'd say, "Ha-ha. Oh! I'm the fireman!" [laughter] You see what's going on here, you see?

So we must be careful not to fall into this same parallel line of balderdash. You're looking for man's spirit, see? Great! Men will be very accommodatingly – they'll accommodatingly walk with you almost every place to find man's spirit, you see? And there he is, right there! See, he's it!

Yet how many times have you had to explain to somebody, "We're not interested in your soul. You *are* your own soul!" See?

Everybody says, "A what? I – *duh-uh!*" See? That's the same gag as the fireman. Duplicate gag.

No, the guy is there, see? There are no rungs – try to go further south than the bottom plating of the ship. There's no ladder going down there because there's nothing there!

So, the fellow is almost a total effect. He has lost his identity, he's lost his true beingness, he's associated himself with other things. Now, you've got to *increase* his awareness to find out anything.

There is no reason why... and by the way, I've made tremendous experiments in this particular direction, in all ways and directions. You can't shoot him full of scopolamine or truth serum or something like this, or hypnotize him and ask him something or other. All you'd restimulate is the GPM "to create the past," or something like this, you know. And he'll create a nice past for you, because he's less aware now than he was before.

So you reduce awareness, you find less person, and you're looking for the fireman and you already got him, see? And that's all there is there. And you're at the complete bottom rung of the ladder.

All right. Now, how do you get anyplace else? This is your problem as the auditor, see? Well, there are seven levels up. And these levels are determined only by this – only by this: an increased awareness of his beingness and his relationship to existence, and the problems and solutions of life. You just increase his awareness of this. What is a problem to this man? And if you simply ask that of each one of the seven levels as you go up, you could draw those levels very nicely. What is a problem to this man? And when you raise him up the line, in some horror you get up about four levels up – oh yes, he's calmer about everything now, but he can take a look at the problems he has got, man. He's better able to confront them so that he doesn't shudder with horror. But if you were to pull him out of 0 and put him at Level IV with one dull thud, and say, "Now look at, look at the problems you really do have, brother," he is not going to be able to look at those problems at all.

One, he has never climbed a single line of the stairs, because you've never increased his awareness of his relationship to existence. Only by increasing the individual's awareness of his relationship to existence can you bring about any heightened condition of ability, performance, livingness or anything else.

Now, this seems to be argued with by the fact that some guy can fill himself up full of Bromo Seltzer or heroin or something like that and perform very fantastic feats in some direction or other. And you know, I think they're all fairy tales? I did a tremendous amount of research with drugs back in '49, '50, and so forth. And the only thing that ever happened: people went to sleep.

I've never seen any of these marvelous experiments that I see written up with such glibity. I never see the results of these experiments. I read all about them, but a scientific experiment is something that can be duplicated in a laboratory, and apparently none of these experiments so advertised can be duplicated in a laboratory. That's an interesting one, isn't it?

Yes, you hear about this fellow, he drinks a half a gallon of rum and therefore he can lift up a horse, you know? I've seen guys drink half a gallon of rum. I've seen them *think* they could lift up a horse. [laughter] I haven't seen any horses rising off the ground, man. Their coordination gets worse.

There are some writers that think they can write better when they have some drinks. Old Dash Hammett used to have a ring, one of these fancy service things that has a shot glass in six or seven holes all in a little wheel, and all of the thing beautifully rigged up here, so all you had to do was turn it around and you could pick out the next shot glass, you know – these little salon presentation pieces of stuff. And he used to set that down at the side of his desk and when he would finish a chapter he'd pick up the next shot glass, you see, and down it, and go so... I heard all about this and how well he did it.

But I ran into some other writers that weren't so good this way. And one finally put the cap on the whole thing. He says, "You know," he says, "I can't write when I can't spell." [laughter, laughs] That actually wipes out the whole theory of "how much better I write when..." A guy *thinks* he writes better because he's less aware. If he were a little more aware,

he'd realize that what he was writing stunk! [laughter] I don't know if you've ever risen in the middle of the night and written some deathless prose or poetry. [laughter] Let's say your sense of appreciation was heightened by being half-out. [laughter]

See, we hear about all these things, but in actual performance, and so forth, we don't see these things get delivered. We don't see the half-drunk guy suddenly capable of magnificent feats of something or other, and we don't see this and we don't see that. But we see guys *saying* that they are this way.

So we can see here that there's a bit of a hole in some of the logic that is presented to us whereby "if we just became a little less conscious of everything, why, we would be a lot better off." Well, naturally, that rationale is a very current rationale, because it's been extant since the beginning of this universe, and is probably the basic rationale that lies back of solutions to all problems – is "become unaware of them." And that is the final solution: become totally unaware.

There's one just before you become totally unaware, and that is "Whatever you're doing makes you right." Regardless of how irrational what you're doing is, it's this last point of assumption that, well, you're doing right, you see? Completely irrational action.

Well, just below that, as the next solution down, is simply "become unaware." That's a gradient scale of solutions, if you want to know the truth of the matter.

Now, where you've got, then, an individual who is trying to improve himself, and so forth, he has two routes open. One is to become more aware of existence so as to cope with it, and the other is to become less aware of existence – become less aware and hope that you don't get run over. Or become more aware and be jolly sure that you don't. So, the dwindling solution, the solution which is going out the bottom, and so forth, is full of hope, full of a lot of things, but actually doesn't lead anyplace. And it is a very treacherous solution, because it is simply hoping it will be all right. "Well, I'll just forget about it and hope that it doesn't bother me."

We see this type of philosophy: "If you want to know why you are overworried, remember what you were worried about yesterday and realize that you aren't worried about it today. And I'm very glad that all the things I have been worried about never happened." This kind of philosophy. Well, it's very witty philosophy, but is it at all factual? How do we know that that fellow's worry and the actions he took as a regard – in relation to that worry did not prevent the total catastrophe? See, we're not sure of that at all. So this other solution is a complete slipshod one and is hardly any solution at all, which is just: become less aware. As one is standing there and the lion is charging down on one, of course it's always offered as a solution: faint. See? In the nineteenth century, it's practically the only solution womankind had. She was not in a position – she was still in a state of chattelism – she was not in a position where she could fight back in any particular way. Her word wasn't really very good in court and that sort of thing. But she could still faint. She fainted like mad and she fainted by degrees. She "Camille'd," also.

So, this is a solution of sorts, don't you see? If you can't confront it, and you can't move away from it, why, you can become unaware of it. The black panther mechanism, I

think we used to call this in Dianetics. Some such – "ignore it," you see? This is worse than the black panther mechanism; this is just "become unaware."

Now, therefore, it becomes somewhat terrifying to people when you reverse the flow on them. And this is one of the reasons why it's difficult for you to do this. Although you can do this as an auditor very, very easily, it's still sometimes quite terrifying. And you'll have some people wondering whether or not they should run out their GPMs, or something like this, see? Almost anybody will hit that one. You know you've got him running pretty good if about the third time you start to audit him he becomes not quite sure that this is a good idea.

You're asking him to reverse the flow of the universe, which is gradient unawareness. This universe has simply been a progress of less and less awareness. It's the route to the total sleep. And the trick of the whole thing is, it's so rigged that you never get to sleep. The lower you go, the more problems you've got, because now the littler problems seem bigger. And nobody ever looks at this parallel route as they go down the route of unawareness.

Actually, their becoming unaware of the big problem brought them less power or force – it reduced their confront – and so now they are less able to confront little problem at that level. So therefore it seems as big now as the big problem seemed, and just one stage back. And it seems far more dangerous and threatening and – because it is! What's the condition of some individual who, because there's a slight wind blowing, goes into terror? What is this condition, you know? There's a little bit of wind blowing, not much, just a little bit of wind, and this individual is in white, blanched terror.

Well, now let's map exactly what happened to this fellow. There was some bigger problem, on the same gradient, that he ceased to confront. He became unaware of it – almost purposely – and this put him into a confront of a slight wind. See, he came down to where he could only confront this little breeze. But the big problem was full of terror, so the breeze is full of terror.

And there's your trick when you uncover hidden memories, and this is the big invitation to go uncover hidden memories; because you often can uncover a hidden memory, and incidentally increase the individual's awareness slightly, you see – and uncover this memory by some kind of trickery – and the individual will lose this particular little fear. That he shifts over to another fear now and doesn't go any further than this, is something they never really bothered to investigate.

Well, I could take almost anybody who had a phobia, and most of you, too, put them on the meter – you old smoothie – put them on a meter and start figuring out, "Well, what are you afraid of?" You know? "Oh, you're afraid of this. Oh, all right." And let's just find the bigger fear that made them prone to the lesser fear. This that I'm telling you, then, has direct application – actually wraps up psychoanalysis. Freud can go back quietly to sleep in his grave. This was what he was looking for. This mechanism I am telling you right now is what he was looking for, the only mechanism he was really looking for.

All little fears are irrational and are based on a bigger fear. That's what he considered, see? He said the little fear is irrational, so therefore we've got to find the bigger fear that promotes the littler fear. And he went off into all kinds of symbolism and everything else. He got

lost in the rat race; he got lost in the maze before he got through. But he nevertheless was on this thing.

Now, why does that work? It works because the individual solved the bigger fear by becoming less aware. That's the solution to the bigger fear. And let me tell you – because I've practiced in the field of psychoanalysis – you can throw the individual back into the bigger fear and knock him galley-west!

You can sit here with your meter and you can smoke the whole thing out very carefully – not processing him, see, not getting any charge off, no TA action or anything like that; just sort it out on the meter.

"This fear you have of cheesecakes: now, does this associate with your mother? Your – father. Okay. Cheesecakes, and so forth. All right. Were you afraid of your father? Did your father ever eat cheesecakes?" And all of a sudden the pc has got two directions to go: One, cognition, he blows some charge, you see, and he feels better about it. That's almost totally an accident from your point of view, because – I'm talking to you out of experience – you can just as easily throw him over into a complete gibbering terror.

And the reason why, in psychoanalysis, 33 1/3 percent of their patients commit suicide is because they've put their foot into the wrong bin. They have accidentally pressured the individual's awareness up to a point of intolerance, and the individual explodes. Without increasing his ability at all to become aware, they suddenly confront him with the tiger. And he goes boom!

See, there's two things he can do. One is suddenly blow some charge at this point – becomes more aware and says, "Oh-ho! I'm afraid of cheesecakes merely because the old man hit my mother over the head with some when I was two. All right, fine. That's – that's – ha-ha! Pretty good. Yeah, oh, that's – that's very good. Yeah. Yeah. Feel much better now; I don't have to be afraid of cheesecake. I can be afraid of tiepins now."

See, that's one route. That's one thing that could happen to him. But remember this other thing can happen to him, too. You're steadying him down, you're saying "Father," and so forth, and "Mother." All of a sudden, a horrified look comes into his eye and he begins to shake.

"What's the matter?"

"I don't know! I'm really just terrified!"

See, you could play hell trying to push him any further down that track, now. He got some horrible idea, "Oh, my mother is dead!" and all of a sudden he starts screaming and howling and goes into a complete dramatization and crawls up in a ball, and you call the men in the white coats.

I'm not saying you could do this accidentally, because you don't *process* this way. I'm just giving you a little bit of warning about "processing" this way: "Reaching into the deeper states of consciousness in order to discover the fears that motivate this individual." Blooey! That's from nowhere. There's no route.

Because the dwindling spiral of consciousness has brought him to ignore his problems, see? And the bigger problems are less and less and less.

Ah! Let me give you a practical example – not boxing around with nothing here. Let me give you a very practical example.

First time I binged out of me bean in recent times here and started looking around about three-hundred miles up and that sort of thing, I thought, "Hey, what do you know," you know? "Ho-woo-woo! Wait a minute, you know? And aren't these clouds high. Everything's fine," you know? And all of a sudden a problem hit me about eight miles high, see? I'd forgotten about that. This was one of the prices of freedom.

Well, it was totally unintentional getting out of me 'ead anyhow, see? And it was just a flip in that particular direction, and we were taking off some charge in another area. And I got hit in the face with a problem that I had buried beautifully! It had sod all over it. I wasn't in any gradient up to being able to confront this problem, see? "Oh, look, I'm free! Hurray! Hurray! I'm free. Everything is fine – What the hell is that?" [laughter, laughs] Interesting, see?

Another instance of this: I'd forgotten that some time ago I'd had a fear of being drawn into the sun – a reverse light vector. See, I'd forgotten this. Completely unbraced, all of a sudden there's the sun – here I come, you know? Beams screech, you know, rubber burning. What's this, you know? No gradient. See, that was just me being unwontedly brave.

Now, of course, one ordinarily retreats... The reason a person exteriorized, see, and then went back into the head and you couldn't get them out again with a can opener [laughter] – I'm giving you what exactly this mechanism is, see – without taking off the charge of why they were in their head, you took them out of their head, and they suddenly confronted the problems that they had long since dwindled down on unawareness, so they're no longer aware of these problems. They had those nicely handled. You all of a sudden bang him out of his head, he all of a sudden looks these problems square in the teeth – like, you know, little things, like "How do you keep yourself centered in a room? I don't know. I can't keep myself centered in the room. I keep going one side of the room. What's all this black stuff around here? I didn't know I had all this black stuff around." Pang! Back into his head, see?

Or, "Gee, there's my body down there and my car is caught in a traffic jam. What am I going to do?" Bang. "I'm liable to suddenly lose my car and lose my body, too. To hell with this racket!" You see? He'd forgotten that he had to retain a certain skill to run a body remotely, see?

So back into his head he goes. Now you try to get him out of there again. *Bluoooh*, no. He knows better now. Ho-ho, he knows better. He's smart now!

"Come on, just one more time out of your..."

"No! No." [laughter]

He even sometimes gives you tremendous reality being outside – just vivid, see? Everything 3-D and all set up, man. He's all set. He's all roaring to go. Something like this happens to him, you see, he confronts some of the old problems that he'd become unconscious of. Carefully, he made himself less conscious so he wouldn't be aware of this problem. He never

solved that problem; he just became unaware of it. He took that line of (quote) "solution," see? So, back into his head he goes when he confronts that problem again, only this time he now has the awareness that there was some reason. This still sticks at him. There was some reason he went into his head. He can't quite spot what it is, but there is some reason.

So now you give him the business, you see? You say to him, "All right. But you had a good reality on it while you were outside. You know, then, that you are a spirit, that you are not a body. You know all this. You've got this all..."

"Ho-ho, no. I haven't got any reality on that. Outside? When was that? When was that? I didn't do it. Not – not me! Oh, I know we thought something happened, but probably just my imagination." You ever have anything like this happen?

Well now, this is why this happens. It's the dwindling spiral of unawareness.

Now you're all of a sudden going to take this individual that you've walked down into the bowels of the ship and asked him where's the fireman, and he accommodatingly searched for two hours when he was it – you're going to take this individual, and you say, "All right, it's very nice in the crow's nest. You can see every place. Now, we're going to put you in the crow's nest." Swump-glump, into the crow's nest.

Crow's nests have their disadvantages. They reel. They are not warm. They are lonely. They are dark. When one falls out of them, one splashes. [laughter] You haven't got him in that crow's nest two minutes: He's saying, "Why, hey, look how nice it is around here!" you know? He's saying, "Gee whiz, oo-oo, I'd forgotten there was such a thing as the sea. Gosh!" you know? "And all this fresh air. Golly, I – no – no coal dust in it. Hey, what do you know!" And he's enjoying all this, and all of a sudden he's starting to look sort of haunted and he says, "Take me out of here."

And you say, "What's the matter?"

"Oh, don't bother with what's the matter; take me out of here." [laughter]

You get him back down in the stokehold; you could come down and offer him a thousand pounds cash to sign on, not back in the crow's nest, but even on the deck force, and he wouldn't have anything to do with it. What happened?

Well, actually he didn't become aware enough of what happened for him to really be aware of what happened. He came to an area of something he didn't understand. And this was alarming to him, and he saw that his position was insecure and he was very unsafe, and that he compared it to how safe he had been – if uncomfortable, down there in the bowels of the ship. So he's now – his vote is in, with a great big X on the ballot box, for "in front of furnace door, coal dust everywhere; I at least knew, by experience, that I survived there, and I *know* that it's impossible to survive in a crow's nest."

This is his total rationale. In other words, you put him into a higher level of awareness. There is no deeper subconscious for the individual to go in.

You put him in this higher level of awareness, one of the things he becomes aware of is the problems he has not handled. So this alone makes it necessary for the forward progress

of the individual to be by gradients. And you can make it, as long as you gave him a chance to sit down occasionally and admire the new view.

In the first place, he's a victim of charge – self-created, tremendously restimulated, or quiescent, masses of charge. He is not aware of these things, really, at all; but the second he becomes more aware – he starts to get aware of them – he doesn't really want anything to do with them, so he ducks out on them again. You do nothing about these things, you do nothing about this charged-up atmosphere, you do nothing to take (quote) "just take charge off " What am I talking about? I'm talking about you process this guy without tone arm action. Take charge off – get tone arm action on this individual. As he is getting tone arm action, he gets about so much tone arm action, he's moved up to a new level of awareness. Having moved up to this new level of awareness, he's able to look around, and he is perfectly comfortable where he is.

Actually, the preclear who is progressing just looks a little better and a little better and a little better. It is not a spectacular activity. Now you've got him up to a point of where you can take more charge off per unit of time. And the charge is more fundamental. That's why you have levels.

Now, actually, the charge which you can take off at one fell swoop at Level IV would practically kill somebody if you tried to do anything about it at Level 0, see? Now, as they move up the line, their problems are apparently greater. No, their problems aren't greater, they can see better. Actually, their problems are less, and they are more capable of handling them. And so it stays in better balance. They're more satisfied. But they can handle more breadth of problem than they could before. As they go up they can handle more problem; the problem is less upsetting to them. As they go down they can handle less problem, and these problems are more upsetting to them. That's just the awareness of the problem, as you go up and down.

Now, the complex individual who requires the complex solution is the guy at Level 0. There is the boy who has to have the complex solutions. His problems are terribly complex, and his solutions have to be numerous. And the potentials of the problem are dangerous in the extreme to him. And therefore the solution that is handed to him must be relatively complex.

Now, how do we get around all this? Just let me give you this in a very, very rapid rundown here. How do we get around this? You know that solving somebody's problems doesn't do anything for him, because the new solution becomes a new malady. The old solution is all he is sick from now. Everything is a cure for a cure. Cures cure cures. It's a gradient scale of curing somebody's old cures. I can tell you what fellow has been a man-o'-war's man, or something like this, by his reaction to rum. This was about the only cure he had. It was a cure for fear, and it was a cure for this and cure for that, cure for being wet. Never had any dry clothes, they just gave him a drink of rum.

Rum now turns on chills, gives him a cold, and makes him terrified. Why? It restimulates rising to the zone of these old problems, which it cured. So now you have to put him through a course of treatment to cure him of rum.

Now, what gets us away from this? It's just this: We are not giving people solutions. What is the only thing that divorces us from this in processing? How is it that we can get around this at all? Well, it's elementary how we get around it. The basic error is the most fun-

damental part of the problem that can be as-is-ed. The basic error that you want to as-is is a fundamental part of the problem, because of this chain of solutions.

You, as an auditor, are attacking it at a problems level. You are not giving the pc new solutions for his livingness; you are taking out of existence old solutions which now exist in the form of problems. In other words, you're as-ising past solvents. You're as-ising what has been solved in the past. You're taking him in the same direction up, see? See, you're backtracking the same track he came down. You're not giving him a new solution to the condition he is in. But you're taking out of his think the old solution which made him drop down and become more unaware. You're taking this out of his perimeter of existence.

In other words, you're not attacking the problem by giving the pc new solutions. You're attacking the problem by as-ising old problems. That they, in their turn, were solutions is beside the point. From an auditor's point of view, just for simplicity, simply attack the problems the fellow's had. Well, you run this gorgeously in, what, 1C, 1CM – R1CM and so on – problems, solutions: What problems has he had? What consideration – what has he done about these problems? What considerations has he had about these problems? Any such action as this – and particularly, how has he solved these problems? What solutions has he had to these things? And you start backing the guy up, and you're actually backing him through yesterday's problems.

When you start running solutions on somebody, you're running yesterday's problems. See, if you run it as a problem, you are running it below its point of awareness and it won't as-is.

I'll let you in on a little trick, here. You have been told that you must not run problems at R1C. Well, that is simply a blunt technical statement, and it's perfectly true and valid and workable.

But let's ask, "What the devil is a problem?" You're told that you can only run solutions on this person. Ah, but what's a solution? A solution is a way you don't have to confront the problem. And a problem is something you don't want to confront. By definition, what is a problem? A problem is something you don't want to confront. That's why it's a problem.

So your effort to handle it is solve it in some way, and when you solve it in the direction of becoming less aware of it or turning your back on it – when that comes in as a solution, you have now moved into less levels of awareness. So the way you as an auditor are backtracking this thing, you're actually looking at yesterday's solutions. And you start to ask the pc, "What problems have you had?" "What problems have you had?" "What problems have you had?"

He's just saying, "This I couldn't confront, that I couldn't confront, this other I couldn't confront." And so you don't get any meter, see? You don't get this.

But you say, "What solutions have you had?"

He's saying, "This problem and this problem and this problem that I could confront." Do you see that? It's the difference between running no-confront and running confront.

See, today's problem was yesterday's solution. So you inevitably are running solutions regardless of whether you call them problems or not. But if you call them "problems," then you're saying the individual couldn't confront them; if you're saying "solutions," then you're saying he could confront them. You see this?

You got to backtrack this boy's solutions, because then you're getting rid of the problems which he set up so that he couldn't confront anything. And this is how this all degenerated. So you're actually cutting in at an entirely different area. You're cutting in at the solutions the fellow has had, which of course in their turn were problems.

And therefore, processing can solve the way back up the whole track, you see? And he becomes more and more aware, he's more and more capable of confronting, so therefore these terrifying things – you know, like going out and seeing the street – these terrifying things are less and less terrifying to him. And what's the final there? He just graduates up through these various levels of awareness, up to a point of where he can confront the problems that made him start getting unaware in the first place, and he finds those, in turn, were solutions, so there he's all set. And he moves on out to freedom.

And this is the route to freedom, through becoming more aware; it's expressed on your tone arm, it's expressed on the fact that you're attacking the various solutions of the past. And this holds through even to GPMs at Class VI.

What were these things but very complex solutions? Extremely complex solutions. Well, there must have been a hell of a problem back of it, man. That's obvious! There must have been quite a problem back of all that. Well, the problem back of all that and so forth was only a problem because the individual wasn't confronting it. So he took an extraordinary solution way out called a GPM. It was a pretty wild thing to do. But there's where the areas of confront go.

Now, he got himself so thoroughly bogged down in all the charge and mass that his chances of becoming aware enough to even know what this problem was became very remote indeed. If he were suddenly to walk back and face this old problem, he'd fold up like a tent with its tent peg pulled. Crash!

Just ask him "Go ahead and face this old problem."

"Hhahh!"

You say, "Get rid of these GPMs." You got rid of the charge now, which were the solutions, and all of a sudden he suddenly turns around and confronts the problem that he had. He'll confront that portion of it that he can confront. You start handling this and work him through that and he can confront more and more of it, and then he'll finally laugh at himself.

But that's what levels are, that's why they're there. And it just behaves on this basis on the operating principle that the individual, at any given time, is at his lowest level of awareness, no matter what level he's in. And you've got to walk him up into further awareness, further comprehension, understanding, for him to be able to hold his own in the environment that he has now entered.

That's the rationale of levels, and why you bring the individual back up. That's how to process an individual. That's how you keep from stampeding an individual in some particular direction. That also explains why you occasionally turn on a manic on a pc: "Oh, it's wonderful! Every... wonderful!" And three days later the pc collapses. He was put in there too fast, too quick, with too much.

You see, you don't need tougher processes now, see? You need more adroit use of the processes you've got. And you walk an individual up this track. He might tell you he wants to become OT tomorrow, but that's a solution. What's an OT? "It's a person who's totally unaware of anything and has buttoned the problem up." You see how that would work?

So when we – when we look into this, when we look into this, we see how an individual can be made better, how an individual can recover, and we see the direction we're trying to put him; and we see that trying to put him there in a disorderly fashion and not knowing what we're doing would arrive at very little gain for the individual and a lot of loss for the auditor. If you just realize that you're simply increasing the individual's level of awareness, you're getting off the charge which debars him from confronting the problems which he had deserted – and if you look at it from that point of view, with that degree of simplicity – then it doesn't matter how complex a problem is. It doesn't matter how complex the solution is. But always remember that a problem is as complex as it presents potential solutions. And the man down there in the firehold, you'd be surprised how many solutions it takes to keep him alive and keep him going. Man, they're just fantastic.

These start to drop off as you walk the individual back up. The most complex being that you confront is the pc at his lowest level. And therefore this requires the most complex solutions.

But you bypass that as an auditor by having the key to the gates. You start getting rid of the solutions he has had, and therefore the complexity of the solutions he is now adding on reduces, reduces because the problem all the time is less and less complex. See, reduce the complexity of the problem by reducing yesterday's solutions. And this is *how* processing works, and this is what handles it and this is the direction you steer it. If you steer it in any other direction, you will have a severe loss.

But this way, if you understand it this way, then – let me add one little point here, now: The thing it takes to drive this home real good is to ask that little proposition I gave you. Ask the individual – ask some individual for an answer to something (he won't give you the answer), then take some charge off, his considerations or solutions he's had to it, and then ask him again for that datum, and he'll give you the datum. Well, how come he could give you the datum now, when he couldn't give you the datum then? He was barred from the datum before, he had retreated from the datum before; you raised his level of awareness, you got the charge off, you got him – upped his confront, upped his awareness, and he all of a sudden could give you the datum.

Nothing is more positive than this than trying to get an individual to understand an item, or something like this, in a GPM. You start this one, and the guy will sit there, "How do dogs bring about masters?" you know?

"I couldn't imagine that. What do dogs have to do with masters? Dogs don't have anything to do with masters, and so forth. Doesn't... dogs doesn't... bring masters... Oh, it doesn't make any sense to me at all! Dogs. Masters. No connection. No connection whatsoever."

You say, "What considerations have you had about it?" (In other words, what solutions have you had to this and what have you been doing about it?) And you run this for a few minutes and say, "All right, would dogs bring about masters?"

He says, "Of course, you fool! Anybody would know that." [laughs]

Well, you say, "What was that all about?" Well, what that was all about, a very simple thing. Overcharged area, too mucked up with solutions: guy couldn't think, he couldn't see, couldn't be aware in that particular area. And for you to get him anywhere at all, you had to take him through the charge.

So the road out is not by a spectacular open sesame or a wave the wand, or something like that. You take them back out through the charge they came down to avoid. What's that charge consist of? It consists of the solutions they had to other charge they couldn't avoid, they didn't want and became unaware of, see?

So the road into this universe is successive unwarenesses. And the road out is successive awareneses. But not just bare-breasting your chest to the whole universe. No, you have to find out why the individual didn't want to be aware at those points, and he didn't want to be aware because he solved it. Well, what's this solution? Well, that was yesterday's problem. Yesterday's solution, problem, solution, problem, solution – they're all the same line of cat.

He got himself into trouble by solving himself into trouble. And when he has solved himself all the way into trouble totally, he's here, and he's the fireman down in the stokehold. And therefore there are no lower levels of subconscious for you to explore; there are only upper levels of awareness.

Thank you.

Thank you.

WISDOM AS AN AUDITOR

A lecture given on 28 April 1964

Thank you.

That umbrella is the Einstein touch. I don't have to have the Einstein touch, you see, to cope with Scientology research. It's with Melbourne.

How are you today?

Audience: Fine.

What's the date?

Audience: April 28th.

Twenty-eighth. What month?

Audience: April.

What year?

Audience: AD 14.

All right. Twenty-eight April AD 14. Planet?

Audience: Earth.

Earth. Earth. This lecture is being given on Earth. All right.

I want to say a couple of words about Australia. Australia is only in one difficulty: it has yet to take any instructions or orders concerning its status or activities. I've just gone through three days of the rock crusher just trying to get one simple instruction through to Australia. Just that, see?

And I finally landed and got it through and now I'm – was unstabilized the following day. I don't know whether it got through or not. If I feel a little bit abstracted or if I look a little bit that way, you'll know why. I don't know, I think it's been two or three thousand words on the telex have been typed, some of it sent, some of it not sent.

You see, everything sent to the Australian office is picked up by the Australian government, you see, and used at its – ha! – inquiry.

Now, I wanted to gen you in on this inquiry and by the time this information gets around anyplace it will already have happened, so it's perfectly all right to tell you.

But when the opposition decides to cut a theta line, they should be advised that when you try to cut a theta line it explodes. Sooner or later it will explode. That you can be absolutely confident of with regard to all such villainous and vicious activities.

I have seen this happen time and time and time again. You always get an explosion on cutting a theta line. Guy is trying to give some truth, something like that – or it even gets worse than that, don't you see? You're trying to wish somebody a happy birthday or something like that, don't you see, and somebody villainously stops the card, you see?

Now, they've done something there, see? And the doingness of that type of thing will all of a sudden catch up with them in some mysterious and fantastic fashion. It's very – it's not really metaphysical. You can see why; because the only power there is, is on a theta line.

All other power is derived from cutting theta lines. The secret of power is just that. Power is truth. You can extend untruth in a certain direction and derive power from it for a certain time, but you're only deriving power from the amount of truth in the situation. This is why, in a war, a government can engage in war and talk to its citizens about how they must engage in war against this other power and that sort of thing. But they are at that... and you notice every war is followed by, usually, an overthrow of the government and a disillusionment of the people. We want to know why. Well, actually, there weren't that many reasons to go to war and the line they are cutting there is simply the line of friendliness and decency from people to people, see?

So somebody jumps across this line, you see, and cuts it up and then when the war is all over everybody sits down and says, "I'm not mad at the Sloveronians. Why were we fighting the Sloveronians?" You hear this after every war, you see?

You also have an overthrow of the existing regime. No regime really ever lasts through a war and they never notice this. It always emerges on the different side of it some other government. It's the most remarkable phenomenon you ever cared to see. It's obscured by the fact that the state is still there or somebody may be still king, but there will be a different government sitting there – entirely different.

What have they done? They have cut the natural ARC of being to being for their own ends and it blew them up. Now, the violence of the war is a temporary action, but this other thing carries it on for a very, very long time. That's the long continuing action. Those are the wounds that have to heal.

It's very interesting. Now, there – there it is on just cut ARC from people A to people B and whatever violence occurred – and even though it is very bad and very difficult for a while, it recoils on the people who cut the line. It inevitably recoils.

I saw one time as simple an action as this: a manuscript telling how to give a 36-hour intensive was carefully put in a safe and not issued. Well, it was put in the safe because it was valuable material and everybody all over the place was trying to find out how to do a 36-hour intensive.

This person was going consistently and continually mad trying to cope with the amount of traffic and activity resulting from randomness from everybody trying to do a 36-hour intensive without realizing that the manuscript had been carefully parked in his safe because it was so valuable. Do you understand?

It was just one – two, see? Well, now, that's a very simple – a simple type of thing. But you go into this; this is the mechanism which makes people have an almost pathetic belief in

retribution. They say the villain will get it in the end. They don't really know *how* he gets it or why he gets it, but it's this mechanism I'm talking to you about that brings about and fosters that particular belief.

You cut ARC: the cutter of the ARC will explode, sooner or later. There is going to be an explosion at that point.

Mechanics, electronics and so forth continue on down this line to a quite marked degree. You've got to cut a flow or do something with a flow before you get much of an explosion as a result of a flow, see? You don't get any commotion with regard to a flow unless you interpose something into the flow.

And that's what you as an auditor have a lot of trouble about every once in a while. You're wondering why you're having trouble with the pc and you never look at the amount of theta line which you cut by a chopped acknowledgment – not letting him complete his communication. See, the whole auditing cycle is based on this. And then the auditor wonders why he's getting his head blown off and the pc is mad at him and everybody is chopping him up and everybody is down on him, and so forth.

He's the unwitting victim of having accidentally done this through his inexpert timing of his acks and that sort of thing. That's the exact mechanism we're talking about. He has cut the natural cycling ARC with the pc inopportunistly. He hadn't let the pc originate or something of this sort, you see? He's busted it up one way or the other and he – in other words, he cut the theta line of the session (let's put it that way) and sooner or later, boom!

Well, it oddly enough always explodes on the auditor. You want to know why does it always explode on the auditor? The pc recovers but you'll see the auditor staggering around for a while longer. One of the reasons is he isn't getting any processing. And the other reason is he has unwittingly, himself, in person, cut that line. When he has cut the line and then doesn't recognize that he has cut the line, now he's really in trouble because he has no explanation for what's happening to him.

Hence, we get this drill of – for heaven's sakes, listen to your taped session and keep turning that tape back till you find the point where you first cut the line. Got a dirty needle? All right, let's take the tape back to where the *auditor* cut the line.

We're not interested in the ramifications of what happened at the point of the explosion. It's foolish to look at the point of the explosion to find out what happened at the point of the explosion, because we know what happened at the point of the explosion. The explosion is the result of a cut theta line. See? That's – so why do you keep looking at the result?

And you'll find out when you first try to train an auditor to do this, you practically will go around the bend yourself in trying to drive it home to the auditor.

"Look, I want you – we're not interested in what caused the ARC break in terms of 'you did this or that,' or something of the sort, which then resulted in the ARC break." And then the auditor goes on at some great length explaining what the ARC break happened and the pc said this and the pc said that. We're not interested in that. We're interested in the first cut of the theta line which then began to mount up to a point where the pc became aware of the fact that it had been cut and it went from there to the explosion. And you know a real, fast,

hot ARC break – do you know that it takes up to an hour and a half to work one up? I mean, the comm lag is so *great* between these two things that the auditor seldom ever recognizes at first glance that he did it to begin with.

He'll turn it back – he'll turn it back five or six inches to where the pc's rather snarly origin was chopped by the auditor and he'll say, "Well, that's it. I (of course, perfectly justified in doing so) answered the pc rather sharply and abruptly and *there* we had an ARC break."

So you'll get in these reports, "I answered the pc sharply and abruptly and then a minute or so later had a dirty needle."

Well, that's fine. He's now joined kindergarten at this art. He is just in kindergarten at this art. He's gotten the point now where he can actually recognize that it was a snarl back at the pc after the pc snarled at him which caused the meter to snarl at both of them, see?

He's gotten up that high. You'll have a little difficulty getting him up that high, but there is an awful lot further to go.

How did this get into this situation? Now, you keep reeling that tape back a few inches at a time, a few inches at a time – or feet at a time – and you all of a sudden will find back there a mistake in an acknowledgment. The whole situation is riding on that first little flub. The mistake in acknowledgment made the auditor less secure, made the pc very much less secure and the line has been cut at that point, you see? So therefore, more little mistakes result in that particular cycle and the pc is more difficult to follow and the auditor makes more mistakes. And then it gets down to this point, finally, where we get the explosion of the cut line.

Well, that may not be very violent; it may just be a dirty needle. But as far as the tape is concerned of the session, it's actually – can be as far as one and one-half hours; actual measurement in an auditing session.

An auditor can see an ARC break coming – when he is very sensitive – he can see an ARC break coming over a long period of time. Now, the only thing we're trying to make him aware of with the drill – the only thing we're trying to make him aware of – is that it was his flub, not taken care of, which let this thing keep working up.

When he does get some awareness that all is not quite well, he then doesn't take it up. He just hopes it will all go away – the black panther mechanism, you see – he just ignores it and it may go away. And he is usually very good at this. He is expert at this. It's marvelous. He has greater capacity for ignoring than is easily measurable.

And it's his favorite hope that the black panther will yawn and walk out of the room undetected by anybody. And the black panther never does. He just – he just starts lashing his tail faster and faster and he starts flexing his claws and then he starts snarling and then he starts getting a little bit more hate in the eye and then the next thing you know you can get him rocking back on those haunches, so forth, and the auditor still says, "Now, if I just pay no attention to it at all, the black panther will still go away," you see?

The black panther is now – has left the ground and is halfway through the air in the spring and the auditor says, "Now, if I just ignore this completely and pretend it isn't happening, and so forth, all will be well."

And all of a sudden there he is with a snarling, roaring ARC break on his hands. Pc slams down the cans, gets up, walks out of the room, something or other happens on the thing.

Aw, he had – he had a warning from a friend, see? He had telegrams, you see? He had wigwag signals; he had everything you could think of. They were all coming his way and he paid no attention to any of them, see? Something is wrong in the session. Well, the only thing that goes wrong in the session is somewhere the theta line has been cut. Now, that's the only thing that's wrong. You try to trace this down and get its genus and you will run into all other varieties of bypassed charge.

Now, you frankly could take somebody that has been processed or has been treated or has merely lived and simply treat this as a front-rank auditing problem. Just treat this as a front-rank auditing problem. "When has your ARC been cut?" See?

Now, the oddity of it is, is you can't keep running this as the only problem. Now, let me call to your attention that there are some unworkable processes – real unworkable processes – and they'll catch up with the auditor sooner or later, too.

One of these processes is, "Look around here and find something you can go out of ARC with." This is what we call the psychiatric process – because it's only run on psychiatrists.

Sounds marvelous, doesn't it? Sounds absolutely marvelous. Doesn't sound like there is a thing wrong with that process. It's the wildest sneaker you ever had anything to do with in your life. You might even get some tone arm action with it. And your pc will start going down, down, down, down, down, down, because you are cutting his theta line right in the room. This is really the only sure, absolutely guaranteed, silver-plated, Madison-Avenue-advertised method of knocking a pc to smithereens. "Look around here and find something you could go out of ARC with."

I don't care how else you phrase it. You understand that could be phrased as "What one of your friends wouldn't you have to talk to?" Sounds like a process, doesn't it?

"What wouldn't you have to touch to know what it was?" You get quite inventive with this type of process. "What doesn't necessarily have to be real to you?" See how innocent it sounds? It sounds very cultured. It sounds as though you really have arrived there with some, some greater reality than real, see?

And it's completely guaranteed that the pc would be very interested in running it, would continue to answer the auditing question and would go right on out the bottom. And they get paler and paler and more strained and more strained and more upset and more upset and they will finally explode.

Because you are saying, "Sit in that auditing chair and cut your ARC. Thank you." "Sit in that auditing chair and cut your ARC. Thank you." And that is really what the process consists of.

Now, I'll give you another version of it off into havingness, and you can put this down in your book. These, by the way, are GAEs – gross auditing errors – they're high crimes. High crimes. Everybody should know this. We've known it for years. If it's received as news to

you, you were deaf someplace or another along the line, see, because I'm going over old material but I'm just showing it to you in a new frame of reference.

Now, here it fits into the havingness cycle. "What don't you have to have?" Isn't that a marvelous clearing process? Obviously it educates the person into not having things. And after a while it gets him conditioned to a point where he doesn't have to have a bank and he would simply go free from the bank. Isn't that a nice rationale? Perfect rationale.

That's a psychologist process. Medical doctors, we run "What part of the body could you get along without? Thank you." [laughter] That's just known as an ARC reverse process, but you understand it's expressed in a havingness phrase.

"Look around here and find something you don't have to have. Thank you. Thank you. Hey, hey. Thank you. Hey. " [whistles] "Hey. Answer the auditing question. Look around here and find something you don't have to – hey, hey, hey. Hey! Oh, he's conked out."

"Well, wake him up. Wake him up."

"All right. All right. Now here is the auditing question. Look around here and find something you don't have to have. Thank you. Look around here and find something you don't have to have. Hey, he's conked out again.

"Hey, wake him up. Give me a hand, Joe. Wake him up."

"Hell, he's dead."

What's absolutely fantastic in this particular frame of reference is that the pc will run any of those processes, industriously and marvelously. In fact, I knew of somebody – was diagnosed as being in compulsive ARC with everybody. And somebody, to cure him of this, ran that process on him of "What could you go out of ARC with?" And I don't know what happened to the poor bloke, but you know, I haven't seen him since! And I've actually put out some little lines at one time or another, trying to get in touch with him, trying to find out what happened in this.

Everybody is covering it up like the Rue Morgue murders, see? I don't know what happened. I mean, I know he's not in Scientology anymore but I don't know anything more than that. I just caught it too late, don't you see, to do something drastic about it, you know?

It – oh, nothing physically happened to him. He just sort of drifted off one way or the other, I suppose. I suppose he's still around, but who knows?

You see how peculiar this is? Now, he would never in God's green earth have attributed any difficulty he was having to having been run on that process – to which he consented with the greatest of glee. He was simply told that he was in compulsive ARC with people and this would have to be cured so that he could audit better.

The only difference between this process and Russian roulette is Russian roulette has five empty chambers and this doesn't have any.

Now, this is all on the basis of cutting ARC and this is quite, quite a – quite a big rationale. It's a big package, all by itself. Affinity, reality and communication: cut thereof. Every time you cut it, expect an explosion. Maybe you'll be able to handle the explosion,

maybe it won't be of long duration and so forth, but every time you cut it expect an explosion. See? Don't go walking like an innocent babe, you see, straight into the black panther's cage and saying, "There's no panther here," because I'm telling you, there is a panther there, see? And he is quite visible.

Now, the way the psychologist, particularly the child psychologist – who has a lot to recommend him since he has to get in there and pitch in numerous ways, and so forth. They have them in schools trying to advise people, and so forth – the way he gets into trouble left, right and center, is he doesn't know this datum. And not knowing this datum, therefore, he cannot predict child future behavior. There's another datum he doesn't know: A thetan never gives up. He doesn't know that datum. That's a very terrible datum to know.

It cures many impulses toward tyranny. If jokers like Caligula knew the data – knew that datum – before they started to Caligulize things, I think they wouldn't have the temerity to go on Caligulizing, see, because a thetan really never gives up.

This also – this also is – is some bloke like the Cardinal of Spewjaw, or something, see? He's all of a sudden decided to cure everybody of sex. See, he is going to cure everybody in his diocese of sex. Small project. [laughter] No.

He may go down in history, but I can guarantee you he will certainly – he will certainly get buried somewhere. The thetan never gives up – on an ARC line or in any other direction.

We got a bunch of wild-eyed revolutionaries – bunch of wild-eyed revolutionaries. Let me give you a – let me give you a right and a wrong on handling a wild-eyed revolutionary. Reform him by giving him a good talking to. *Hm-mm-mm, do-oo-oh*. Shoot several of his companions. *Ho-oh*. No, sooner or later you're going to have a revolution. Sooner or later, you know? He just never really gives up.

Now, that's the wrong way to handle a revolutionary, is to de-revolutionize him. That would also apply to a conquered people. A conquered people really never gives up. That impulse may go on and on, it may sail along for ages; they really never give up as long as there is any there at all. It gets more and more subconscious or more and more unconscious or whatever else you want to phrase it as, but it's still there.

Now here is the other way: Take a revolutionary – take a revolutionary and the very least, or the very most, you can do is to simply directionalize, to some slight veering, his revolution.

You maybe can slightly alter the direction of his revolutionary tendency. See, you could maybe persuade him not to revolt against the king but to revolt against the prime minister, see? Change his vector a little bit, see?

You could say, "Well, don't revolt against the – why revolt against the state because you can't win; they've all got machine guns. A very much better activity at the present moment is revolt against its educational system and eventually overthrow it thereby."

"Oh, yeah," he'd say. "Yeah, all right. All right." That's okay, see? He'd go on in that particular direction. But understand he really has never given up revolting against the state.

In other words, you could veer to some slight degree the direction of purpose of an individual, but he really never gives up. And what fools everybody is – he *says* he gives up! He goes through all kinds of mumbo jumbo and prestidigitation to prove conclusively he's given it all up, see?

You just never saw so much window dressing. Sometimes you see in a conquered nation, and so forth, flags lining the street in all directions, you know, and everybody's standing out there saying "Viva Castro" or something like that, see? And then they don't turn out any more Bacardi rum, see, and then somehow or another the fires in the cane fields – they just don't seem to abate; they seem to get more frequent. And production doesn't turn over and machinery keeps getting jammed somewhere, and there's no... and Castro's going absolutely stark staring batty.

"Why can't this economy work? Why are all the trucks in Cuba broken down suddenly and simultaneously? I'll solve this by buying hundreds of new trucks from England."

Why, they are going to run just long enough to let somebody turn out – to pull off the distributor cap. Because, you see, the Cuban didn't revolt to be a communist. See, he revolted against Batista. And Castro tried to change his vector of revolt too far, too fast, and that was the end of that.

They became a subjugated people suddenly after their revolution, don't you see? So now he's wondering why he's having trouble! We'll rename him "Rocks-in-the-head-Castro," see? He can't have anything else but trouble now. He'll go on having trouble to the end of his days. He would have to take every person in Cuba – every single person in Cuba – and ship them complete to Venezuela and repeople Cuba a hundred percent with something else to win his revolution, because he didn't have a revolution.

There was a revolution of the Cuban people and then Castro gave them another revolution. You remember, it wasn't for months that they found out they had been a communist revolution. And everything just quit and that was the end of that.

No production. Now, everybody comes along and he says, "What is the political significance of this? Let's see. What is the political significance of this?" I can see Toynbee now. The great masterpiece of shallow thought that he would turn out on this would be marvelous.

"Let's see what – what could possibly be the significance of this? Is it true that communism turns out less production than capitalism?" "Are – are the comparative factors between this and the Spartan regime, which didn't exist on the left-hand side of the bistro..." you see? Figure, figure, figure, figure, figure, figure, figure. And the Cuban people have no willingness to go in the direction they are now going, so they will go in that direction not. And the way they don't go in that direction is take everything down in front of them and don't produce.

You see a nation which can't produce, you know that it is unwilling to do what it is doing. That's the first thing you know about it. It's unwilling to support what it's having to support. The ARC will be very poor.

Now, it doesn't matter how much communication is put into them – and Castro, as an example, puts in plenty. I understand his television broadcast lasts several hours – per day.

This is all very, very fascinating, but the communication may be there. But of course, reality isn't there at all and affinity doesn't exist – this is from his particular side – because no man could have much affinity for people if he gives them another revolution after they've won a different one.

No, the ARC is all missing from the other side. And remember that ARC has two sides: There is the ARC from B to A and there's the ARC from A to B. So you could put in a tremendous amount of C without very much A and practically no R and if you did manage to generate anything on the other side, it would be some pale shadow of the same thing. The other side would also probably develop a lot of C or a lot of no-C or something like this. But they certainly wouldn't develop any R and they certainly wouldn't develop any A.

Now, if anybody stood up there in Castro's boots who really was putting A, R and C to those people, then he would have an opportunity of seeing these people express A, R and C to some degree or another. But he'd have to stand up there without any past connotations, don't you see? He wouldn't have to be dug in, in his own past and background in order to do this.

Actually, it doesn't mean that a fellow could have no past in order to do this. The fellow – anybody, I suppose – if he just suddenly went honest, you know, just that, just come down with an outbreak of honesty, you know, break out all over with it. If it were real honesty – would probably get a response from the other particular side because the target which is presenting A, R and C to that degree would have diminished, see? Although they'd never given up against this other target, they don't have anything against this target they now have, you see? So there is ARC possible with that target.

Honesty. Honesty. Frankly, you can make a tremendous number of mistakes, but never be dishonest about your mistakes. That is the big thing to know. Don't be dishonest about your mistakes. You become unreal to the degree that you're dishonest about them.

And don't go over into the field of self-immolation, either. There's ways to commit suicide with this sort of thing, you see? But that's also a distortion of A, R and C because you are cutting out your own life in order to glorify your own mistakes.

I don't know if you ever read any Russian literature. It's really not worth reading. But Dostoevski – *The Brothers Karamazov*, and so forth – each one of Dostoevski's works has some character who is busy selling himself down the river with great violence, you know? He's explaining to everybody what a dog he is, you see, and so on. He goes on and on. He really is a dog, too. Anybody trying to rule Russia would have my sympathy.

But – not knowing much about the country, I'm a great expert on it; almost as great an expert on Russia as Boston is on slavery. They've never had to cope with it, so therefore they know everything there is to know about it.

There is nothing like complete inexperience to bring about enormous bravery. Now the North, which was very authoritative on its various racial problems – not having had any experience with them – is getting them all in the teeth. And it's the people of the North have all of a sudden – have started voting madly for these mad dog anti-ra... you know, these racist-conscious candidates, and so forth. Everybody is scared stiff because some place, I think like Wisconsin, turned out a third of its vote the other day as representing preference for ra-

cially prejudiced candidates. This is just a recoil, see? No R, so their A, R and C was very lousy. They had no R on the situation, so they had a very distorted ARC. And it all blew up in flinders the second they started to get some experience. So they go to the other side of the thing, see? Now they cut any potential ARC they might have with the whole situation and from "Give them all cake," they immediately jump over – "Shoot them all down like dogs," you see? Neither one of these things were real; there was no reality in either one of them.

See, there wasn't any particular reason to give them all cake and there's certainly no reason now to shoot them all down like dogs. You see, here's the two sides of the coin. Neither one of them had anything to do with theta. What were they talking about? Well, they didn't know then; they don't know now.

Now, there is nothing like complete, complete and utter inexperience to bring about a great deal of bravery. Also brings about many wonderful opinions. Marvelous opinions.

There's many a professor who has spent his life in beautiful seclusion who is the most wonderful expert on things he knows nothing about and has never met. It's like the Scholastics. They believed in this. Their whole method of education was based upon the principles here: You never inspected anything. You just lectured about it, see? You never go out and look at a sturgeon to find out what sturgeons look like. You just go ahead and give lectures on sturgeons which are based on, I think in their particular case, Aristotle's opinion of a sturgeon, which I think was out of a different ocean and was inaccurate to begin with. And if anybody had tried to bring in a real sturgeon to show them what it was, the person would have been instantly and immediately flunked – hands down. That would have been the end of that.

That was the system called Scholasticism – an actual system on which we get "scholastic average" and other things. But the Scholastics lasted for about 1500 years and they were the total dominant philosophy of education. And they lasted all the way across the Dark Ages, and when they finally packed up and people began to look again, we ceased to have dark ages.

I don't care if somebody like Toynbee attributes the Dark Ages to the left-hand square root of the ruddy rod or why the virgins were no longer in church and that ended the Dark Ages – that has nothing to do with it. It's the fact their system of education absolutely debarred, and their religious beliefs absolutely debarred, the inspection of anything that they were supposed to know about. It was a system of education based entirely upon noninspection. It wasn't that they neglected noninspection. It was that they *insisted* upon it. And we had the Dark Ages.

Well, we had no educated people. I imagine if you had nobody educated you'd have a dark age. It's quite elementary. If you kept every child in school so that he couldn't learn anything about the universe around him for the period that he was curious, and then you turned him loose thereafter to run the affairs of man, I imagine it would be very dark indeed. And the Scholastic was a champion at this. He became expert at this.

In other words, he was cutting the ARC of knowledge. "You are all supposed to know about rocks. Don't go look at any rocks." This was how he cut the ARC line.

If I were educating you as auditors: "All right. Now, this is the way you behave as auditors! This is what you do as auditors! And don't let me ever, under any circumstances, ever let me hear you talking to a preclear." That would sound pretty wild, wouldn't it? That would sound pretty unreal. You immediately – up to your mind comes this question: "Well, if we're never supposed to talk to a pc, if we're never supposed to hear a pc, if we're never supposed to have any touch with a pc, we're never supposed to audit a pc, then how the hell would we ever learn to become auditors?" See, that immediately enters up.

But remember, you are already talking in a zone of informed wisdom. Supposing you didn't know enough to ask that question. You'd have a picture of a dark age, wouldn't you? See, a dark age would be composed of people who didn't know enough to ask the question of "Why is our ARC being cut?" They wouldn't know their ARC is being cut. So part of the very, very intellectual individual, part of the very wise person, is a recognition of this principle of when and where is his ARC cut?

And he is wise to the degree that he can perceive this in existing situations. And this would be not necessarily his wisdom, but his ability to exercise wisdom.

I'll give you an example. You're an auditor – Class V Auditor – you know your business. You go into a factory, they're having a lot of trouble, they want you to audit staff, something like this, you know? You want – patch up somebody. You say, "What's the matter? What brings you to the conclusion that your staff or your managers or anybody else needs auditing? What brings you to that conclusion?" See, if you were a very, very smart auditor.

You'd want to look over, "What's the condition of the pc? What's expected here?" Obviously you're not being asked to audit any pcs at their own volition. You're being asked to audit some pcs at management volition.

Well, you'd either have to talk the pcs into being audited of their own volition, which is quite possible, very easy to do, as long as you are good and factual about it and don't use any of the management arguments which are not factual. They inevitably would not be factual, you see, because they're not auditors. And you're talking to these people about auditing.

Your ability to estimate the existing situation wouldn't necessarily measure how successful you were, but would certainly measure how wise you were.

And how would you – how would you exercise this as a wisdom? How would you be wise in relationship to one of this? Well, you just look at the number of ARC busts there were on both sides of what fences existed. Now, you may have preconceived the idea of thinking there was management and labor and immediately believed that you had a problem in management and labor because you read it in some textbook. See? And you might not have a problem of management and labor at all. You might have a problem of management and management. I know of a hotel in the immediate vicinity which suffers from four problems of management versus management versus management versus management. See, that's their problem. They don't have any trouble with their help. They really don't. It's a marvel that anybody works for them at all. Their help goes on and works, but every once in a while its upper strata of management gets interfered with. The head of this department or that department gets shifted, moved or sacked, see? So it's only a problem of management within management.

Well, your recognition of the thing must be – just based on looking it over carefully – of what A, what R and what C is being cut between what terminals. That'd be the whole formula on which you could have to adjudicate that situation in that factory: what A, what R, what C? Not just what ARC is being cut – that's too careless, see? What A, what R and what C is being cut amongst what terminals?

You might find out the ARC was being cut between the shop stewards and the mechanics. Now, to locate that, all you'd have to locate is maximal confusion and minimal production. Just look over all the records and find where was the maximal number of dispatches, maximal confusion and the minimal production from expected production.

This department has two-thirds of the plant employees and turns out one-sixth of what they're expected to. I'd think about that time you would decide that there was something wrong with it.

Now all you have to find out is where is the cut A, R and the cut C in that vicinity. Now, there must be two terminals there, otherwise there is no flow of A, R and C to cut. So one must be trying to flow ARC and the other must be trying to cut it; or this one is trying to flow ARC and the other one is trying to cut it; or to some degree, they are both trying to flow A, R and C and they are both thoroughly cutting it.

So one of those conditions will exist. And if you are being very wise, you would simply look that over as the condition of affairs and you would say these people are unhappy with those people. And you don't even have to do it on a formula. I tell you, that's the only thing there. You don't have to look for something else there, but you just look for that thing and you find it and then you say, "All right, I'm going to group process the shop stewards in the presence of the foremen. And then we will process foremen against shop stewards and we will get this thing..." In other words, all you do is start unblocking the ARC. You wouldn't even have to handle a case. Just take the existing situation of the real universe. Just accept the fact they're all nuts anyway. Don't bother about it in any other particular direction. This is it.

Now, if you know this other thing: do you know that all PT problems are suspended in nondelivered communications? I suppose a guy is trapped where he is today because one day he started to talk to God and it didn't get there, you know, or something of this sort – something wild of this nature occurred.

Now, let me warn you that if you tried to run this as a process, look where you'd get. "What communication has been undelivered? Thank you." "What communication has been undelivered? Thank you." The thing is selfdiscrediting because it won't run as the process. In other words, the way he came down the line, it doesn't go back out the same way.

These are simply the problems the guy has had along the line. How he has solved those problems is the clue. See, even though the genus of the problem was an undelivered communication, he then made it real rough by solving it in some way. See, he didn't give up.

We're now talking about RIC, R1CM, see? We're talking about very elementary processes. This fellow comes in, "Oh, my God, I have this terrible problem! I – I don't know whether I'm coming or going. I'm – *lovv-lovv* – awful problem." And he's holding his head in his hands, you know, and rolling from side to side. He's so worried he's almost out of his

mind. Histrionic. Has fantastic numbers of ramifications. Obviously, his whole case is sitting behind the thing and charging it up. Obviously, you're dealing with a tremendous instability to begin with. Obviously. Obviously this, obviously that. You got factors, factors, factors, factors, factors, factors here. You could add them up on IBM comptometers. But you know one thing for sure about that condition – that it exists here and now. See? This guy is in this condition here and now. This you know.

Yeah, that's rather obvious, because there he is rolling around and screaming and yowling, so he's obviously in that condition now. Let's start with certainties. Let's get our own ARC in with it, see? So what's the reality of the situation? It exists. What's the C of the situation? Well, that you can talk at him but he doesn't hear you. And what's the A of the situation? Why, you'd like to give the guy a hand. Complicated, isn't it?

That's your ARC with relationship to him. If your ARC includes "I've got to solve this fellow's problems for him; I've got to give him solutions to all of his problems," of course you're not establishing ARC with him or getting his ARC disentangled. See, you're winding him up in the soup.

Therefore, this thing called marital counseling will always wind up in the scrap bucket. You could just about counsel two characters on the marital front into amity as you could tie two cats over a clothesline by their tails and expect to kiss each other. They just won't – wont do it. You could just stand there and keep saying, "Now, now Puss, you should kiss Tom there and make up and..." There's obviously something hurting them. Even a fool would stand back after a while and say, "There's apparently something here I have not quite embraced in my analysis of the situation." There's all of the factors that are right there.

Now, let's look at the fellow now. Now, what's *his* A, R and C with his environment, see? Well, C: he isn't talking to anybody. If you ever notice a fellow in that condition, he is not talking *to* anybody; he's talking at everything. He really doesn't expect that anybody is even listening to him. He's just going on, you know?

And his R: you'll find out he contradicts himself every three minutes. You don't quite know what he is talking about, because the target of his conversation is so consistently shifting – the subject of his conversation is so shifting, so consistently and his words are "I don't know" and "I can't find out" and "I haven't," you know, "been this." It's all full of doubt, you see? There isn't any solidity there anyplace. So his R, his R is obviously shot, see? He just hasn't any reality on anything. He hasn't any grip on anything.

And his A: well, he doesn't know whether he hates everybody or they hate him. It's kind of a tossup. He's worried because everybody might or somebody might hate him and he's worried that he might unjustly hate somebody else, you see? He's in a confusion. He wouldn't know what his affinity was. His A, R and C are right down there running on the bottom.

Is there any particular button out of a theta line that you could trip that would cause this odd jam to unravel? Is there anything you could trip? Remember, it'd be a terribly unlimited process – pardon me, a terribly limited process, no unlimited process in connection with this. This is real limited. But there is something you could say to him – just the one-shot situation – "What communication haven't you been able to deliver?" Let him tell you all about it and he, to that degree, is somewhat delivering it and you will see his whole condition alter.

Interesting, isn't it? If you could get the insane to answer as much of a question as that, they'd probably unravel, same way.

It's not – it's not, you understand, a repetitive process. And it has nothing that refers to the past. It's the right-now communication you haven't been able to deliver. Because maybe this was a past question and all that sort of thing, but it's still the communication he hasn't been able to deliver right now, and he's trying so hard right now to deliver this communication that he's got himself completely snarled up on the R and the A.

I imagine people used to get that way in prayers. As a matter of fact, that's why I think certain organizations – there's no point in going on discussing their depravities, but I'd think there would be some organization or another that was – I'd think they'd sit down calculatingly to spin people in by giving them something they couldn't pray to.

I'd say that in some villainous, past, uninformed period – some barbarous age – that people would even invent something like, "Well, there's a being that's everywhere, all the time, and you're supposed to say your prayers." They'd call – you know, invent some word like prayer and say, "You're supposed to talk to this being all the time and give him the hot dope." I'd say in some dark age – not on this planet – but someplace, they'd dream up some mechanism – just spin people in. Because sooner or later somebody out of that lineup is going to say, "I am not being listened to. My communication has not been delivered."

For instance, I'm always hauling sideways the same operation as applied to Santa Claus. Santa Claus is a mythical being invented by Madison Avenue of yesteryear in order to sell merchandise. And this bird gets written to and, oddly enough, mainly gets replied – you know, replies come from him one way or the other. That's why you have department stores: to reply, see? But I always make sure that the communication always goes through reliable channels like HCO, see, and acknowledgment comes back down the line, solid, see?

And I find out that this brings a great deal of cheerfulness about it all. But, I also find out, by inspection, that the ragamuffin doll that was scribbled "*ver-vuh-um-umdmn*" on the list and that nobody could read and that didn't get delivered is all that gets talked about Christmas Day. [laughter] So you see, this thing has many sides. But it's all on the subject of just A, R and C in its interchange and delivery and cutting the theta line and that's all there is to it. That is what it is.

And you now start to walk away on thin ice from this very secure little footbridge and you're liable to go through. Now let me give you an idea, see? Let me give you an idea. I know this will come as a shock to some of you, that you shouldn't do this – but your pc, your pc is talking to you about bananas, see? The pc is talking to you about bananas and we're getting along just fine with the pc talking about bananas. But the pc accidentally, in passing, mentions watermelons – and we instantly ask him to talk about watermelons. He mentioned them; we ask him to talk about them. And then, when he is busy talking about watermelons, he happens to mention greengrocers. And the moment he mentions greengrocers, we then ask him to talk about greengrocers. Now, I know nobody present would do anything like that. We call it Q and A. You may have heard of it. Well, what exactly are you doing in relationship to A, R and C?

There's a much easier explanation of what Q and A is. Q and A is just not completing a cycle of action. That's all. You can Q and A on a pc over 500 hours of processing. You just don't complete the cycle of action laid out to be completed in the 500 hours of processing. You have Q'ed and A'ed. You don't even have to be the pc's auditor to Q and A on a pc. You can be the auditing director and mark the folder some other way, "shift off of this process which you started on last month, and this program" (not even process, see), but "shift off of this program which you started the pc on last month, now, and go on some other program, even though he's still getting tone arm action on the program" – not process, but program – "which we laid out last month, because there's something more recent." Q and A. That's all.

That's just an interrupted auditing cycle. An interrupted process cycle or an interrupted program cycle – any one of those things is just an incomplete cycle of action. And if you don't complete a cycle of action in any category – you know, the little auditing comm cycle or on up the line to the session, on up the line to the process, on up the line to the program – you fail to complete any of those, you've just Qed-and-Aed.

But what's wrong with it? Why? Why is this so important? When this fellow was talking to you about bananas – you see, trouble is, once in a blue moon you get away with it. He just accidentally was finished talking about bananas when you asked him about watermelons, so you thought that was all right because it was all right that time. But, let me tell you, that it's only one – about one chance in a hundred of it being all right. You sometimes get away with it, you see, which rather tends to trip you up. So he was finished talking about bananas. But supposing he hadn't really told you what he wanted to tell you about bananas. You cut the theta line right there in the session. Now, supposing he was just getting good on the subject of watermelons – he was just getting good on this particular subject – and he really realized that he had something to communicate on that subject, and you Qed-and-Aed and transferred him off to greengrocers. Oh, you'd have by this time two, not – let's put it banally and technically – we'd have two unfinished communication cycles, which doesn't sound like very much. No, but back of that you've got something far worse. You had an undelivered, complete communication. You have an undelivered series of communications.

In other words, you've cut this fellow's theta line. From that point on it's inevitable that you, sooner or later, will blow up as his auditor. It's just – it's just fate. Fate has intervened at this point. Kismet. You just got out your knife and started working on the tightrope you were walking, right in the middle of the chasm.

Now, you wonder why you have trouble with pcs. You wonder why a pc's needle roughs up. You wonder why some auditors rough up pcs' needles. You wonder why you see some pcs ARC break. You wonder this and you wonder that. You wouldn't wonder very long if you got ahold of a tape of that session. You wouldn't wonder very long.

You'd – cut it into the first third of the session, something like that, and you'd say, "Well, we'll pick up something here." And you hear this little note of asperity, you see, in the pc's voice. He's – he sounds a little strained. He's still enthusiastic, but it's sort of an enthusiastic strain. There's a note there that you don't quite like.

Let's go back just a little bit further than this and we find the auditor is, "Okay! Yes!" you know, "I got that," you know, and letting the pc go on and on, and then making *very sure*

that the communication was acknowl... Well, what the hell is making this auditor act *that* way? We don't take it that he just doesn't know his drills, see?

I have two different frames of reference by which to look at an auditor's auditing. One is teaching him how to do it and whether he is doing it the way he should be doing it, see? That's one frame of reference. And the other frame of reference is: What did he do that is making him do it wrong? See, that's the other frame of reference. How is he behaving in this session? And under that heading I always assume that he knows perfectly how to do it, but that something is just disturbing him. Something has gone awry. I assume that he knows all his drills, see? There's something haywire here that we are looking at, that is making him go adrift. I don't immediately then go into the subject of dressing him up on the subject of drills. I start looking for something that is gone adrift in his auditing. I'd simply... see, so you'd have to have two frames of reference. One is the frame of reference of a critique of his ability to handle preclears and the other is a critique of his ability to handle drills. See, there would be two different points of view. And you can't mix up these two points of view and train an auditor or you're sunk. Otherwise, every time the auditor mishandles a pc, you put the auditor back on doing a drill. You should be teaching him about pcs, and you are teaching him about the drill.

Hell, he knows how to do the drill! Well, why isn't he doing it? See, that's this other frame of reference. Well, he isn't doing it; like he's mucked-up somewhere or another here. On what? Handling a pc. That's where he's fouled up. He isn't fouled up on being able to say, "Good," "Thank you" and "Okay." See? That isn't where he's monkeyed up. He's monkeyed up on handling that thing sitting in the chair across from him that he knows not what of, somehow. And you hear him: "Good! Than... thank you! Thank – thank you. I – I got, I – I got the communica... I – I heard you. I – I – I heard, heard you – what you said. Now, do you – do you know that I've acknowledged you?"

And you say, "What the hell is going on here?" Well, it isn't that this fellow's drills are out. It's his pc handling is out here, somehow or another. He doesn't understand something that is going on here.

All right. So you roll back the tape a few more feet, see? Let's find this thing, see? How come he's – how come he's doing such a lousy job of auditing, is what we are asking, see? How come it's all getting so difficult? How come it's an unaudited, -auditable pc in an unauditing situation, see? So we get this tape back here, and we all of a sudden we hear it. We hear it. "Well, yes, I know. We heard all about your mother in the last session, and so forth, and we are not going to take that up now. What we're going to go on into now is your family in general, and so forth."

My God, it lay right in the R-factor. What a corny R-factor. The auditor took off from this point of view with an incomplete cycle of action on the subject that he was addressing in the last session. The pc's been thinking about it all night. Instantly and immediately the pc starts the session with a present time problem because of the R-factor, see? – an incomplete cycle of action, an incomplete communication. Definition of present time problem: an undelivered communication. See? If you really want to handle present time problems, don't ever define them any other way.

I don't care how gross or how crude or how stupid all this sounds on the subject, or how it doesn't quite seem to apply. You just keep looking at it and you will find, stupid as it is – well, for instance, we find out this fellow feels very batty, and we trace back to where he feels very batty. And he didn't shoot a sniper in World War II, see? Undelivered communication. Well, what the hell do you – you'll say, "That's a funny communication: a bullet?" Ah, but it follows the communication formula. It goes from here as cause across a distance and arrives at an effect. Do you see?

Now, if we want to understand what an overt act is, we go around to the other side of the coin and we find out it was a communication he didn't want to deliver, he delivered. See? And that's what an overt act is. And what saves your bacon in auditing is the fact that the overt act is worse than the undelivered communication in terms of aberrative value because you have now perverted the ARC theta line, you see; you've perverted the theta line by causing it to carry harm.

Now, that really mucks up a theta line. Just not delivering at all is infinitely better than delivering harmfully. I don't care what GPMs say or anything else, see? You're too prone, perhaps, on occasion, to say, "Well, we are all aberrated because of certain basic deep-seated woof-woofs, and so forth."

It's quite interesting that the deeper and further research has gone – it isn't that I have found we are less and less governed by these predetermined impulses. I have gone through phases of blaming parts of Scientology on various parts of the mind. I inevitably will come up on the other side of the stream, dripping wet but with considerable relief, looking at it and recognizing that we were still above, in our basic understandings, the aberrative influences by which the mind has previously been understood. So we are really above, in our technology, what life has been up to in digging itself in, don't you see? Our understanding is superior to the aberrative impulses.

Let me give you the idea – a very short, faster idea. For instance, Freud continuously stressed sex, see? And later on, his apologists said that if he had just talked about social implications as well as sexual implications, his work would have been more successful. No, Freud's work ceased to work when he got – they got off the subject of sex. The big libido theory of 1894 was his top, top climb. That was his summit; and anything else went down from there. That was as close as he got to the moon. And when he started walking away from that, or his apologists started walking away from that, he got into trouble and he ceased to cure people.

Why? He was as close as he could get to the GPM create series. See? He just walked in close on that perimeter, had a big cognition, laid it down as what he called his libido theory and then any time he tried to minimize this or walk away from it he was denying and invalidating GPMs. And so, therefore, it wasn't true that Freud should have mentioned social implications. No, hell, Freud should have kept right on pounding down the line of *sex*, you see, with a capital Freud. See? He should have hit it all the way, see, because he was right in there, see? He really did have his paws on something.

All right. Now, he was below – he was below the point of mental dramatization, in other words, he was interpreting the mind through a dramatization of a mind. In other words, he was dramatizing a bit when he was doing this, see?

All right. To that degree we have not been guilty of this particular line, and our materials, the further we go on this, start to stand clear and pure as a total command of understanding of livingness, life, and so forth, than before. Do you see? I mean, they separate out rather easily.

I go through some bad periods once in a while on this. I think "Oo-oh," you know? "Oh, no," you know? Not too long ago I looked with sudden horror – oh, actually about a year ago – I looked with sudden horror at the idea that the whole Tone Scale was simply based on something out of a series of implants, see? *Uhgh!* And I thought, "Oh-oh, oh-oh, oh-oh." And then it turned out they weren't there. And – so more recently I said, "Well, obviously the Tone Scale all came out of GPMs, obviously. Obviously. Heh! It's not there."

And my pc read a great deal of significance into GPMs to a point where we developed a full process one time to run GPMs. It had nothing but in – Scientology injected into the GPMs. We had to turn around and un-inject it.

In other words, we knew more about the mind than was in the mind, don't you see? So we could... it was R1C. R1C. For a while I thought we couldn't run R1C because I thought it was my solution. No, we understood more about life, do you see, than was understood by the thetan himself. Because he was not down the line on solution or anything like that, see? We understood that solution was an aberrative factor. Solution is a real aberrative factor. The GPM only brings about; it doesn't solve. You get what I mean?

So once in a while you can get real hot. And one of the difficulties we have is we understand the situation we're looking at too well. We understand it with such great pervasive thoroughness that we inject an awful lot of data into it that isn't there. In other words, it's just total screwball – the situation. It's like this. Now, we could go on and on and say the present time problem is a present time problem because it's postulate versus postulate, and so forth. Oh, yes, that's basically true of problems. That's the anatomy of problem. Oh, yes, that's why GPMs hang up. Oh, yes, all these things are very, very true.

But let's draw back to the level of ARC. Now, that's not a mild understanding. For instance, I'm talking to you today at ARC at the level of IV. I'm not talking to you about ARC at the level of 1C.

Now, I tell you, all these things are true – completely true about postulate versus postulate and it's mass versus mass and it takes an impulse versus an impulse to make a problem and because it's this and it's because it's that and because there are disagreements involved and all of this and that and so forth. All these things are true, you understand? But let's go right on upstairs in a complete purity of understanding. Philosophically, what is this thing: a problem? This thing is a problem because it's an undelivered communication.

Now, you have to be a pretty smart cookie to take a case apart knowing that, and knowing at the same thing that it's an unrunnable process. It's an undelivered communication. That's made it a problem. An overt act is not a problem. An overt act is a withdrawal from

putting out an ARC line because you know you will abuse it. It's a self-discipline. It's an abuse of ARC, so one doesn't ARC because one possibly might abuse ARC, so then one doesn't ARC. You see?

Self-discipline, here, is involved. An individual is putting an awful check and brace on himself. And this is the basic withhold. "Don't shoot anybody, see? Don't cause harm. Don't harm." I don't care what kind of GPMs are developed by the thetan coming down the line. They probably louse him up no end. You could probably get an awful lot of mileage out of doing these things sideways. But when the chips are all down and you've got them all processed out, you'll find the answer is still there the same way. You understand, this is – this is the way the critter operates. See, he doesn't want to undertake this particular communication because it is harmful, so therefore he withholds that particular communication.

All right. There's that source, then, of not communicating – there's that reason for not communicating – which is – looks a little more involved than the other reason because it includes the overt-withhold sequence. But there is this other simple one, which, of course, you understand now, is the same statement as the other one. The other was a more complex statement – it's an undelivered communication. Even O/W is an undelivered communication.

He's delivered one far too well. Pow! Oh, well. He better not deliver any more communications along this line. And he better not have delivered that one. So he'll develop a whole section of his bank out of communications he had better not deliver, so he is not delivering the communications he did deliver. "What communication did you deliver that you hadn't ought to have?" would be guaranteed to set off an automaticity.

So you look at somebody who's having a hard time with life, and he's got a lot of present time problems. And he comes in and he says, "I got this present time problem *ta-wowowow-I-tawowow*. Oh, what am I going to do?" and so forth and so on. You know one thing: that he's having an awful time. And the other thing you know, is for whatever reason – because he's breaking himself, because he might communicate, don't you see, and therefore is withholding because it will – these are all just rationales. You know two things. One, he's in that state and you know he's in that state because he hasn't delivered a communication. So you know those two things about this individual at once. Bang, bang. Simple as that.

Take off from there – remembering at the same time that there is no repetitive process: "What haven't you communicated to?" There is no process: "What don't you have to have?" There is no process: "What could you get rid of?" These are all "What could you go out of ARC with?" you see? Brutal processes that go right straight downhill.

There is only a process along the line of "What have you communicated with?" see, and so forth. Now, you get your ARC break process – that mainly depends on regretted communication. See, you're running in some other factors.

And out of this understanding you could tailor-make a lot of processes that would go into a lot of various lines. Just look at it at – offhand. "What had you ought to have communicated that you didn't have?" See? All right. "Now what had you ought to communicated that you didn't have?" All right. That is, "What did you go out of communication with?"

All right. You are going to run that process. You say it's absolutely necessary to get rid of this. Well, how are you going to get away with running that process? That process is unrunnable. Oh-ho-ho. You will have to answer it up immediately with "What did you go into communication with?" Now you've got a half-cursed, half-blessed process. You can probably get away with it. You could say, "Look around here and find something you don't have to have." "Now look around here and find something you have." See? Now you've half-cursed it and half-blessed it, so you – you understand this isn't ideal. But this is – run a sufficiently workable process so that you can run an unworkable process, so that you can simply get rid of the points he is hung up on in order to run a better process. Do you understand that?

So, you could go as far as that down into the shades of hell for the pc, and you would – after a little while, by the way, you shouldn't be too puzzled why this process doesn't run marvelously, why it doesn't run endlessly, why the pc occasionally has headaches. These things should be quite understood by you. You're simply getting some problems out of the road that – so that you can run the case. So you wouldn't go on very long along this direction before you shifted over into, "Well, what communication did you deliver?" You could run that kind of a process: "What communication did you deliver?"

Well now, he doesn't understand that. Communication, to him, appears to be a rather high order of thing, and that he delivered it means that he was all right, and so forth.

So you say, "What overt act did you commit?" And you run the same one. "What communication did you communicate that you didn't think you what – ought to have communicated?" In other words, "What communication – what delivered communication is regretted? What are you trying now at this moment not to have delivered that you did?" Do you see these ramifications?

Work these things out and you've got it made. The only difficulties that are going to happen anyplace in this universe, the only difficulties that have happened in this universe and the only difficulties that would occur even if it weren't here are simply based on this same information I am giving you.

Whether or not there are GPMs, whether or not there are not GPMs, whether there is a universe, whether there is no universe; you still have this same potential of difficulty. You see somebody in difficulty – it would be this same reason, see?

"What communication aren't you delivering because you have delivered so many lousy communications?" Do you see? Unrunnable process, but a complete understanding of the situation.

Now, what have you got to do? Well, you've got to do what you've got to do in order to get him to communicate where he should be communicating. And that may be have to be approached through the R and that may be have to be approached through the A as well as – and you may have to work it around in some way, but you're trying to multiply his ability to communicate and get the barriers of noncommunication out of the way. And if you did that, why, you'd have it made and everything would be all right and okay.

What I have been talking to you about is wisdom as an auditor. And don't ever really think you could degenerate a hundred percent to a wound-up doll and get a result. You have

to know something of what you are doing; and the pc across from you, you have to be at least aware of the fact that he does live and that he follows the laws of life and he isn't different just because he's acting different. There must be some thing that you are doing to make him act different. Perhaps those are hard lines, but that's nevertheless an understanding an auditor should have.

Thank you very much.

EFFECTIVENESS OF PROCESSING

A lecture given on 30 April 1964

Thank you. Well, this is the what?

Audience: 30th of April.

Thirtieth of April, AD 14, Saint Hill Special Briefing Course.

All right. We've had a little slowdown here recently on research the last six, seven days – I managed to get the show back on the road again – mostly due to the nonsense going on in Australia. The general situation with regard to that is they're not in any danger or anything like that, they're just being cross-advised and being generally upset. The government of Australia in the form of little pipsq... I mean this is... Anyhow, they – they have this parliament and it has very, very great – well, it's all swollen up on itself because it used to be the state of Australia used to meet there, see? And they don't realize that it doesn't anymore – but it's just the parliament of Victoria, see?

Well, these little boys have an opposition there that are quite red and they all of a sudden decided under a fellow of the name of Galbatty to investigate – investigate Scientology on account of how bad it all was, you see? And – this is the message I want to get across to you, not the state of Australia. An organization starts slipping – they stop following through standard policies, they are not on the ball here and they individuate there and they goof up someplace else. And then you all of a sudden start having trouble in their vicinity and it finally swells up to something like this inquiry you see, and that sort of thing. Just everybody has to some degree or another taken his finger off of his number and goofed up. You get the idea?

In this particular case, why, they ran some jerk down there who they knew was a security risk. He couldn't pass an E-Meter test if you'd held a gun to his head. He is just a complete bum. So they go ahead and give him high-level processing. Name is Werne. And they give this fellow a bunch of high-level processing and restimulate two or three wrong goals on him one way or the other so he goes into a complete spin. And I think he'd been in psychiatric treatment and he went back under psychiatric treatment – and then he runs over and sees Galbatty to get Galbatty to pass legislation so as to cure his GPMs and it just all went to smoke. And it had never even occurred to anybody down in Melbourne simply to handle Werne, refund his money and straighten him up. When they did refund his money, they didn't even require him to sign a release. So they went and refunded his money; he went over to the court

the same afternoon and filed a suit for a hundred and sixty thousand pounds. I mean, it takes genius, see? It just takes goof up after goof up.

Now, they've been testifying on the stand down there, nothing but Class VI material – Class V, Class VI material – *yap, yap, yap, yap, yap* – not realizing that all it is, is a fishing expedition by the – by the opposition, don't you see, to get a lot of oddities they can quote and say, "You see, Scientology is just silly." Quote all these things out of context, you see, and then go stampede other state legislatures, you see, into passing legislation against Scientology. Well, finally the opposition took its finger off of its number down there and they – a document passed into our hands on testimony – suggested testimony for witnesses. And it turns out to be the minutes of their second meeting of witnesses wherein they were arranging testimony which they should give at this free, open, public inquiry. If you want to look up the records, the Profumo witnesses are still in prison for having done this exact thing, you see? Well, all this is very interesting. The Profumo witnesses to the contrary, as soon as I got hold of this document – it's a case of what we would do about it.

Meantime there – this inquiry is costing the organization five hundred pounds a week. So every time you turn around there is a cable through from down there: "Send us five hundred pounds," you see? "Send us five hundred pounds," "Send us..." Two – two to three days later, "Send us five hundred pounds." We finally gave them a guarantee from a Swiss bank that guaranteed their bank account and the bank down there – I guess it has mostly kangaroos for customers – this bank didn't understand what this Swiss bank blocked-fund guarantee was, which was that if they – if their overdraft wasn't met, the money would simply pass into the bank to meet the overdraft. They couldn't understand this – the only bank in the world that couldn't have understood it.

So they're still at this business. I've – just a little while ago one came through: "Send us two thousand dollars at once," you see? They – they won't at any – they don't realize that this is sort of silly. While they're busy sending through these demands to get them off the hook because they can't stand up to it, the instructions going their way, you see, are just being disregarded. And the instructions were, simply: Walk into the inquiry and say we couldn't testify anymore because of collusion and fraud and produce the document and that would be that. Of course that would definitely be that. It would probably result in the resignation of the premier who ordered the inquiry.

Well, all this is very interesting. We got this evidence, got it all rigged up. I planted the howitzer, tied the opposition across the muzzle of the howitzer, showed everybody where the lanyard was. All they had to do was jerk on it slightly and said, "All right. Pull the lanyard" and that's the end of the inquiry into the situation. Everybody promptly ran away and said their – everything under the sun, but they wouldn't go near the lanyard, see?

So the attorneys down there are busy telling the staff how this document is unimportant, that it doesn't mean anything because it was known to the fellow who was running the board of inquiry!

Audience: Oh. Ooooooh!

So they all bought this, you see, that the document is valueless. But the same attorney, the same attorney – directly, immediately, and at once – has telexed through a long letter to

me, on the basis of "For God's sakes, don't! No, no, no!" Because it will unseat the incumbent government of Victoria just before the election. Finish them! While he's telling the organization that it's unimportant and means nothing. Finally I start hammering on him hard enough and he comes through with the truth. He's protecting the government of Victoria first and Scientology second. He says, "Of course, if the opposition got in because of this terrible scandal and so forth, why, they would pass material against Scientology." And he's very reasonable about this sort of thing, but I just wonder why he would tell staff down there that it is so unimportant when he tells me, "Oh, no! Don't! Please!" You know? His fingernails are chewed off clear to the third joint! You see what the situation is, see?

We have it in our power to simply give a little tug on this lanyard and that is the end of any future inquiry practically on Scientology to the end of time. Everybody would say, "Leave those people alone." Horrible!

Now, that's the existing thing. Now, they won't do it. They won't present this evidence and – I wouldn't go along with this, but they practically – not even being practical enough to go around to the incumbent and say, "Hey, bud. Why don't you meet the organization's cost for this inquiry," which was normal in any case, "and just pass a little bill sort of and say, 'That's the end of the inquiry, we didn't have anything' and we won't release it." That's using it for blackmail. You at least got that, see? No suggestion of that has come across or anything of the sort. But these cables keep coming through: "Send us two thousand dollars so we can pay this week's bills at the inquiry," see?

All right. There's a GPM "to create problems." I just wish they'd move up the track to the next GPM, which is "to destroy problems!"

Now, that's what has interrupted research here for the last six days – trying to get through, trying to get things clarified, trying to get things squared around.

Every once in a while an organization will start to skid a little bit on execution of this, following of policy that, being on the ball here, see? And then the next thing you know, why, they're in deep, dark, stumbling trouble of some kind or another. Then at that point – just to give you the rest of the lesson – when you try to straighten it out, you've got all kinds of crosscurrents going on, where everybody's got them hypnotized into believing something else and you can't get an execution at the point of trouble. So it just goes up in a balloon.

Now, the organization will be all right, it'll – it'll survive, simply for the excellent reason that they'll be forced to take some kind of a solution along this particular line. Of course, I always believe – I always believe that when somebody comes and attacks Scientology on a frontal attack and starts doing things one way or the other, if he at any time laid himself out on the carving table and said, "Carve," I would simply pick up the biggest knife! I mean, I haven't got any circuitous thinking on this particular subject. Somebody says, "Down with Scientology, shoot all Scientologists" and so forth, and "Here's a piece of evidence by which you can shoot me," my finger instantly, one split second later, would twitch! [laughter] This just is – this is terribly, I'm afraid, unsubtle. See, it's just unsubtle. But it's that situation which exists in Victoria as of this minute. All anybody would have to do, is just twitch his finger and that would be the end of inquiry and the end of really all future inquiries. And it would probably be the end of the FDA trial in Washington because rumors abound that it was Washington

money which started the inquiry in Australia in the first place. This investigation would back all the way back up and probably be the end of the E-Meter trial in Washington. But there it is – there it is.

Now, we're not going to do anything more with them. They can go ahead and work their own destiny out in their own peculiar way. It will probably all come out all right somehow or another. I just hope that we don't for years and years and years fight this confounded basketful of testimony which is nonfactual and so forth, that it won't keep appearing in other state legislatures as reasons why it should pass laws to debar Scientology. I just hope that won't happen. But it's on Melbourne's head. That's it. I have spoke.

All right. Now let's talk about... I'm just bringing you up to date, giving you, the – giving you the gen, *zip-zap*, center, rapidly. If you ever find an organization or area in Scientology – I'll give you this as a little moral lesson – which is slipping, you know, slipping one way or the other. "Well, actually, we – we don't have any classified auditors auditing anybody around here. We didn't believe in that, you see? No, the preclear, the – no, nobody keeps any logbook, you know. So nobody ever keeps any auditor's reports on sessions, you see. And we – we don't believe in, you see, this, that, the other thing." Slipping. You know what you are looking at in the future. You're looking for a complete bust.

It isn't, you see, that centrally, Scientology in its control areas or international board is always right. That isn't the case. But it is at least always uniform. And these things are built out of errors which have developed in the past. And their efforts to guide a safe course through the rocks and shoals of processing and organizational activities. When those things are all abandoned, naturally, the errors which they prevent occur. And when those occur, you get a deterioration of the situation.

All right, I don't know what to talk to you about today. You don't look like you need a good talking to. You look like you are doing all right – except you, of course! [laughter] You look like you are doing all right and so on. I could give you a bit of a talk on the HGC allowed processes, but I don't happen to have a list of them sitting in front of me.

But the whole basis that I could talk to you about and will talk to you about is simply the effectiveness of processing and effective processing. That's all. Just you, the auditor, bringing about a desirable effect on the pc. It's just that, nothing more. Nothing fancier than that.

Now, *that* is quite a subject! And it's the subject that you are grappled with in studying. And sometimes you forget you are grappled with that subject and think that you are just grappled in with bulletins or tapes or something like this. But actually, all the way along the line, you are simply handling this one single pc subject and problem which is: How do I, the auditor, produce a desirable effect upon the pc? That is the entirety of your activity.

Now of course, you, the auditor, could go into Group Auditing – that is to say the old-style Group Auditing, where you have a lot of people in chairs and they execute the commands from somebody on a platform. You could have the same problem there: How do you, standing up before a group and group auditing it, produce an effect on the pc? And also, how do you, the Auditing Supervisor, when you are running a co-audit, get an effect produced on the pcs in the co-audit which you are conducting, you see? And also this could go into how do

you, the auditor, by training alone and teaching a PE Course or something of that sort, produce an effect on the *cases* – on the cases of the people who are listening to your talks and lectures. It goes out into that ramification.

Now, it can go a little bit further. How do *you* as a Scientologist, produce an effect on somebody that you're talking to? Let's drop out the idea of an auditing action. How do you, the Scientologist, produce an effect on somebody you are talking to? You are talking to George Q. Blitz and he wots not of what you are or anything of the sort and without your giving him an ACC on the subject of Scientology – or even discussing Scientology at all – how do you produce an effect upon this gent?

Now, all of these things come under the heading of the production of an effect, don't they? Now, just production of an effect, then a production of a desirable effect, then a production of a desirable effect upon pcs or other than pcs, as subdivisions of this – so it's just the production of an effect. And if I were to teach you, just cleanly and totally, how to produce an effect on another human being, it could go into very numerous subjects.

There's the subject of armaments. You cock a gun and you pull a trigger and a bullet arrives in somebody else's skull, you produce an effect on that individual. Now, governments, lacking adroitness and so forth, really in the final last resort only produce that effect. They are producing an effect on somebody through the channels of destruction. They are trying to get compliance through threat. Now, that is a whole field and area and is exactly 50 percent of the production of an effect general subject. That's 50 percent of existence. That's the production of an effect by threat, menace, force, duress, strength – you get the idea? And that's – I'm giving you this very, very technically. This is 50 percent, exactly of the ways of producing an effect – are in that category.

Now, if we study that 50 percent, we will find that nearly all mental healing activities, sooner or later, drift into it. Psychiatry – with its prefrontal lobotomy, electric shocks, wet packs, chemical shocks, biochemical administrations of one kind or another – has drifted over into the solid-form effect. There are two reasons for this: (1) They do not realize they are trying to influence thought. They have no definition of thought. They don't even think anything is there thinking. They are trying to influence matter. Man, to them, is matter. And they are using matter to influence man. So they're actually in the field of physics, not in the field of mental healing. And it's drifted over to that direction. Every once in a while a psychiatrist will err in the direction of producing a kindly effect. It's a stray. I am not now being sarcastic. I'm just talking right straight off the record. He strays over and he says something friendly to somebody. Any of his friendly ideas toward a patient, when he exhibits them, are in the zone and area of a pitch. He knows it's a pitch and so does the patient. The ARC, you see, isn't there at all. He tries to be friendly so as to get the patient to confess more. There's always a lot of falsity involved in this sort of thing.

So, you run a danger in operating 100 percent in that remaining 50 percent, see? You're operating *wholly* in the remaining of 50 percent. The production of a beneficial effect. And operating in *that* 50 percent of the sector, you have left the other 50 percent slightly on automatic. So therefore, you occasionally drift over into it. Once in a while you drift over into it. Once in a while as an auditor you've just had too much and you explode and you tell the pc,

"To hell with you." Happens to the best of auditors. That's because he's got a 50 percent area here that he is not operating in. So occasionally it goes on automatic. You follow that?

It's almost inevitable that an auditor, sooner or later, is going to blow up at a pc. Now, let me point out to you this other fact: That an auditor, in that blowup, never has, doesn't and never will produce an improvement of case in the pc. You have to be there in the driver's seat a few times like this and watch yourself blow up under tremendous stress. Ah, this person is just too much, man – you know? Every time you turn around, why, you're – you're trying to help them out and they ARC break, see? And you try to help them out some more and they ARC break. And they ream you out and so forth. And you finally let them have it, see?

Well, what cures you of that? The best cures are at Class VI materials. No, what cures you of doing that? At Class VI there are so many examples of this – abundant examples. A pc's been ARC breaky, pc's been ARC breaky, pc's been ARC breaky – you've blown up. And then, you're red face a few sessions later to find out that you *were* running it all upside down and backwards, that there *was* bypassed charge there. See?

You don't get as much of an opportunity to get clean-cut examples of this at the lower levels, because those bypassed charges are mainly session bypassed charges. But you still run into them. And after your face has been reddened with the blush of shame a few times at realizing that you actually had skipped a GPM on the pc. You know, nothing slight – you just skipped a whole GPM! You're going back over your auditor's reports, *ta-da, ta-da, ta-da* one day, you know, and you're looking it over, "Let's see, what have we run on this fellow, and so forth. Well, we ran number 3, and then we ran number 4, and then we ran number 6, and then we ran number 7, and then we – what? ... Oh, my God! No wonder he was ARC breaky!" See? Now you know, and it never comes – emerges clearer, that you made a mistake, the pc got ARC breaky and then you blew up in his face. The reason why the pc operated that way lays there, very wide open. It's visual to the eye. And you say, "Well, I blew up for nothing?"

I had this sort of an experience – had this sort of an experience one time. Found out almost a 150 hours later that the person had been in an actual RI at a particular moment, when they had just been too insufferable for words. And I had been gnashing my teeth privately to myself about what horrible pcing this person did. Almost 200 hours later I was running down the track and the pc – and my gosh, we collided head-on with the RI that that pc had been in at that moment of that ARC break because it had been bypassed at that moment. It had been walked right on by. It hadn't been accepted on the list. But I recalled it because there had been an argument about it. After that for several sessions the pc was very ARC breaky and easily upset.

There is this whole sector over here, 50 percent, and that's wide open for an auditor to blow up in. But what does he accomplish? All he accomplishes is a mess-up. He really doesn't actually bring about any destruction. He just messes it up. Now to go on and do something is a harder task than if he hadn't moved over into that sector.

Let me give you a broad example: It's much easier to process somebody before he has had his prefrontal lobotomy than afterwards, you see? Just classify the prefrontal lobotomy over here as *in extremis* of destructive action toward the pc, you see? Well, similarly, on a much, much lighter level, it is far easier to straighten out the ARC break before you have

blown up – you the auditor – in the pc's face, one way or the other. You know, "I am not going to process you anymore, you keep talking to me like that." Even if it's that mild. You'll find yourself falling across that one, falling across that one, falling across that one – wow! You finally, out of your own self-defense – not because you have done anything to the pc, because it is causing you so much trouble – you begin to say, "Why did I ever do it?" you see? It's a kickback mechanism that operates in the final analysis, to an auditor with experience, as a disciplinary factor. All he has to do is recognize this and he sees at once what the disciplinary factor is with regard to it.

So you're actually not keeping the Auditor's Code because I tell you to. You're keeping it because if you do anything else but keep the Auditor's Code, you have made far more trouble for yourself as the auditor, with that pc, than you can easily undo. And now you're in an awful mess. It's a self-disciplinary type of activity. Now, I warn you that this big sector does exist – 50 percent – a destructive sector. So that, if left at random, every other effect produced would be destructive if you just had this thing going at random. It's like you flip a coin fifty times, why, you're going to get twenty-five heads and twenty-five tails, usually, on the average. Fifty percent, the chances are.

So, if you had an unintentional, undirected, just-any-old-way type of thing – you weren't worried about interpersonal relations, you weren't worried about anything of this sort but were just delivering random communications or cause-distance-effect lines, you might say, to the pc, then 50 percent of them would be destructive and 50 percent of them would be constructive. That just – that's the random. Supposing you didn't know anything about Scientology, do you understand? This would be the random selector.

Well, you're a specialist. You're a specialist over here in the other 50 percent. Fortunately, by the laws of life, it's this remaining 50 percent sector – the good sector, you see – is the only one which has any lasting benefit or there is any direction up or anything else. The odd part of it is, it isn't – it isn't a proposition in black and white. It isn't a proposition of putting something there or wiping something out. It isn't that fifty-fifty. It's by the definitions of "create" and "construct" which you get out of *Fundamentals of Thought*. You don't ever really destroy anything, see? It's not "take something away." You're dealing in a sector over here, then, whereby you can do something constructive by actually deleting something. But the other sector is just messing up what is already wrong. Eradication has to be 100 percent before it is effective.

If you want to know the truth of it, if you wanted a purity of destruction, you would get a not-thereness. But destruction does not go in that direction. When you rehabilitate the individual, it isn't enough to knock down the prison walls and leave them in rubble with him buried under them, see? That would be a destructive way of going about freeing an individual. "Well, we want to get Joe out of the dungeon. Good. Blow up the castle. Boom! Where is Joe?" So the action of destruction, as it's normally, commonly understood, is not an action which produces a result on a case. All it produces is mess-up.

Now, an as-ising of a situation is not looked on by you or me or anybody else, really, as destruction. It's looked on as a constructive action. Now, Joe's in the prison and we say, "*Wheeoow* – no castle!" There stands Joe. No rubble. Simple, clean. We look upon that as

beneficial. Actually, that's an ultimate in this other 50 percent. If you had an ultimate destruction, you wouldn't even have the rubble. But you'd still have Joe.

Now, if the way to handle Joe, as an individual, is to set him free – and it is – then the destructive action that you're engaged on would not be messing up what he is caught in – but it would consist of the as-ising, rather smoothly, of what he is caught in. Take a good workman to take down his jail, see? Now, the only thing Joe objects to is having it all rubblified in his vicinity. Having it so messily knocked apart that he can't find his way through it. Now he hasn't got a castle and he is not free but he's got an awful lot of shambles. And that's what he objects to. He doesn't object to being free. He doesn't object to the disappearance of his dungeon. He objects to it being done in such a way that he is battered about and surrounded by rubble.

So the effect that you're trying to produce on the pc is an infinitely simple one. You are simply trying to set the individual free by as-ising what the individual is caught in. And without destroying the individual and without leaving a lot of rubble around. And that's really all you are trying to do in the effect you are producing on the pc.

You're... frankly, it can be done in the mind. It's a relatively easy magician's trick with the mind. You go... he's surrounded by this bird cage called mother-in-law, see? And he's worried all the time about the mother-in-law, worried all about the mother-in-law, worried about the time about the mother-in-law, he can't think about his job or anything else because of his mother-in-law, *aww, aww, worry, worry, worry, worry, worry, worry!*

All right, your magic trick, as an auditor, is as-ising this cage called mother-in-law so as not to leave a lot of rubble around. Now, the way you would leave rubble around is this sort of an approach – counseling, you see: "Put your mind on something else. Assert yourself in the home." These are various types of advice, don't you see? "Assert yourself in the home. Do not permit yourself to be dominated by women." How much rubble do you think is going to start gathering along about this point, huh? In the first place, you've launched a simply other-determined and not pan-determined action. So therefore you've set up conflict between two other terminals. You've made trouble in life for somebody else. So you are going to start adding to the debris and trouble of life with such advice as, "Assert yourself around home," you see, or something like that. "Turn your attention in the other direction. Don't think about it. Learn to sit still and look at your navel and not think." These are all advices of the past that I am giving you. They're not just cracks. "Assume the Ib position." That's one of the plays Shakespeare wrote: Ib. Ibid. [laughs] I'm kidding. In other words – do something that doesn't do anything about the problem at all. I was struck by it last night. I was looking up a thesaurus, that's why it came up at this particular point. And it seems like the only play he ever wrote! [laughs, laughter]

So anyway, life, then, could be handled in a way of setting it into more violent counter-motion against itself. You could handle life by setting it into more violent counter-motions. War, for instance, is one of the chronic errors that man falls into. Let us solve the problems of the Balkans by going to war. See, this is to set terminals at other terminals. And have you ever noticed the amount of debris which accumulates when this occurs? The amount of breakage is fabulous. You can still, even this late, go up around London and you can still

see bits of debris which came out of that last big "solution." See, it's still there and it's still knocked about. And that's solving things by setting terminals at terminals or making somebody's attention go off of the subject or so forth.

Now, those are the mechanisms by which life handles its problems. *Those* are the mechanisms. And you as an auditor actually are being asked to decry, throw aside, and so forth, the standard dramatizing solutions that life is prone to. See, you're asked – you're asked as an auditor to assume a better discipline, which is a more workable discipline. In other words, let's find out what the problem is, what considerations they have had about the problem and what they have done to solve it. Because these, we find, are the building blocks of the cage. Those are the building blocks of the prison. The problem itself, what they have said the problem was or what has caused it, and solutions they have had to what they thought it was. Those are the building blocks. And after they have got through building all these things up, they have got a pretty big dungeon. They have got a big dungeon called "mother-in-law" or a big dungeon called "government." Or they've – they've got something, you see? And this thing is built up. But that is what – all the cage is built out of – not built out of another blessed thing.

Somebody had to *conceive* that there was a problem there, then had to conceive the problem was something different – we had to get an alter-is of the original problem, by the way – had to conceive the problem was different and then conceive that there were other problems. And each time they had a concept of what the problem is, they would have to solve that in numerous ways before they really have a first-class dungeon. That's how one is built.

You have to say – you have to say, "Well, I have a problem at home. I'm – I'm not happy with my home." In other words, here he is versus the home, see? He has to say, "I have this problem." Oddly enough, there doesn't have to be any prior art – nothing has to have existed before that point. He had to have had – needed no reason, because a thetan is always capable of postulation. And then he had to find a justification of some kind or another for this problem to exist, so he altered the problem a little bit. He said, "It's because of my mother-in-law. She is the problem." Well now, of course, she can't be the problem because she is not two terminals up to this point, see, she is just one. So now he has to then say it was the mother-in-law and then he has to assume that he is against her and that she is causing the difficulty. And then he has to go ahead and solve this. Now, of course, he already solved home as a problem by saying it was caused by his mother-in-law and she was the problem. That's the first solution, is the announcement of the first problem.

All right, now he has got to solve this situation one way or the other. He's got to work at it one way or the other. He's – he buys her some croquet mallets so she will take up croquet, you see, and go off and so forth or he does something or another. He makes extraordinary actions in life. Well, after a while, you can count on the fact that although his home is not happy, the problem he has set up, mother-in-law, has been solved into submergence. It's disappeared from view. He no longer can announce what the problem is but he can announce the last solutions that he had to it. And he will now find what's wrong with his life is the last solution he had to his mother-in-law. That is now the problem, see? His last solution, that he would never go home. See, it's now a problem, because he can never seem to go home. He

is now forcing himself to go home but he can't go home, you see? This is now the problem – his inability to go home. He's even forgotten why he started not to go home.

So now he starts solving this problem. He tries to make home more attractive. He tries to get himself in trouble outside of home so that he will go home. And eventually – eventually, he gets himself messed up with a – what is commonly called an affair, see? The reason he got himself mixed up in this affair is the girl always said, "You ought to go home now." See? And this – so this is now – this is now the problem. It was a solution, you see. But now it's a problem again. So he is starting to solve this sort of thing. And he goes off in a long concatenation of solutions.

Now, this fellow is walking around in circles in life by this time. He doesn't know whether he is there or went. He knows that he is unhappy. It is not just an item, "unhappiness," that causes him to be unhappy. He can actually, off his own bat, be unhappy. Everything seems to sort of dim down. He seems to sort of have his mind on something all the time, all the time. He seems a little abstracted. He can't concentrate or he does something or another.

Now, that is the prison. And he has built it up himself out of some basic and fundamental problem. Now, your art as the auditor is as-ising, not destroying. You're as-ising these bits and pieces that made up this cage. And you will find that as you as-is them they disappear. You are not, then, adding to this enormous structure which he's already got by giving him new solutions.

All right, now let me give you an example here now. Supposing your pc was totally uneducated – a very untutored, unlearned pc. And you're really trying to fish him out of the soup; and to the best of your ability and so forth. And you were running "What problem have you had?" in order to get the pc to as-is the problems they have had. I know you don't run this particular process, but let's just say you were, see? You still can do it. You could still get away with it; you won't get much tone arm. And your pc was inventing new problems to have. And you were unaware of this as an auditor and thought the pc was giving you problems the pc had had. And in actual fact, the pc was giving you new problems that he had never had. He is running a process called "Invent a new problem" and you're run... trying to run a process called "As-is your old problem." Do you see that?

Now, supposing your understanding was deficient to that degree – that you were trying to get him to as-is – as-is bank – and you didn't realize that he could very easily be making new bank. And supposing you didn't add this up. Well, your pc wouldn't improve. That would be the exact penalty right at that point. The pc might even be happy with you. The pc might even be still talking to you, pc this, pc that.

But sooner or later you are going to decide that you are off on the wrong tack, somehow or another, because this pc doesn't seem to be able to get rid of these phobias and non-senses. What process am I talking about? I am just talking about RIC, and then we add an M to it, it gives you the meter. Follow the blowdown after you have finished the cycle of action.

You after a while would decide you had better go off on a new tack. So you go off on a new tack and you'd run something else, "Touch that wall" or something like this, see. Pc isn't going to improve now. Very minor improvement. Yeah, you decide, "Well, I had better

do something else." So you do something else and you do something else. And the pc doesn't improve. Sooner or later you are going to get mad at the pc and start moving over into the destruction cycle. There is nothing calculated to make an auditor more mad with the pc than the pc not improving. Some pcs understand this very clearly and tell you with great propitiation that they are greatly improved when they are not. Do you – do you recognize that as a little deficiency of understanding of what you are supposed to do? Supposing the auditor was deficient in that little piece of understanding. The auditor isn't trying to knock out anything. The auditor happily sits there and lets new things be added to the case. Well, the only reason he'd do something else other than watch these little bits get knocked out – the only reason that he would do something else, is because he didn't understand he was supposed to knock out these little bits.

Now, another deficiency in delivering processing to the pc comes under the heading of not realizing that it is went. This probably is the most mystifying thing to the new auditor and he is always hounding a pc about the problem that has just gone. He becomes completely baffled because he sees no debris. Well, his magic consists of as-ising without debris. He has as-ised this thing. The auditor who doesn't know his business doesn't recognize that he is *blowing* things, he's as-ising things by the simple process of inspection and communication on the part of the pc. Order from the auditor. The pc inspects it. Pc looks at it. Says something to the auditor about it and it goes!

So, this fellow is something like trying to make a steak dinner out of a sliver of bacon, see? This auditor, see, he gets this little tiny sliver of bacon on the plate. And that's all he can see he is ever going to have on his plate. He gets the pc to admit that he has trouble in the office with some of the other people in the office, see. So he's got that now on the plate. That's his sliver of bacon. He starts treating it like a steak dinner, see? He is going to process this. He has got his timetable all figured out and further, "Well, I'm all set now! Got the next 75, 125 hours of processing all fixed up. I'll straighten this fellow up with regard to the office." See, all set, see? So he says, "All right now."

The fellow says – the pc is sort of "All right, what?" "Now, about your difficulties at the office..."

And the pc looks a little bit blank for a minute. "Oh, yes." He gets it back again, you see? He kind of mocks it up once more.

"Now, about your difficulties at the office, who do you detest most at the office?"

"Detest most at the office? I don't detest anybody at the office. I just always had a sort of a withhold. I just didn't like to be there, you know?"

"Well, yes, very good." Let's make this bacon out of the – beginning to look a little bit shriveled here. There's something wrong going on. "Well now, how do we approach this problem," the auditor is saying, you see, "How – how do we attack this problem?" Well, he's in the same position of the fellow fencing air. The dimensions of the problem were one-thousandth of a – of a nothing by one-thousandth of a nothing to begin with, don't you see? And it went *phfffft!* And that was the end of that.

Now, you could train an auditor if a pc uniformly always cognited. But on these little things there isn't enough horsepower in them to generate a good cognition, see? So he – the pc would say, "Oh!! I just realized I didn't like the boss! Gee, I feel much better now!"

The auditor would say, "Oh well, we don't have to have that steak dinner here. We are all set." See, unfortunately, all auditing is made out of these little slivers of bacon, see? And the auditor that really has a tough time is trying to get a piece of steak on the plate every time he has just got this bit of grease. Because it's always blowing, see? It's always blowing. It's insubstantial. The pc is sitting there and he gives him all this long song and dance about something or other and the auditor takes it all down and figures it all out and then says, "We now have the design of the situation and we know now what we are going to attack on the case." And it's blown! [laughter]

The new auditor probably has a tremendous embarrassment of never really realizing what auditing is for. Why all these TRs and these drills and why this adherence to a comm cycle? Why all this sort of thing. He never adds that in to any of this other thing. Of course, they're there to bring about the as-is.

You ask a question, you're really saying, "Here's something, we'll see if you can as-is it."

The pc says, "*Ya, ooh, oh, yeap-whamf-whamf-whamf-whamf* All right."

And the auditor is saying, "All right, it's as-ised," see?

Now, that's actually what this auditing comm cycle is all about. But people don't easily add that up to the other situation. They don't recognize what auditing is all about because it looks very, very – must be very complicated – it has made this fellow terribly sick for years. It has made him sick, unhappy, miserable, made him a complete dope, a social pariah for all these years. And at the end of thirty-five minutes or something like that – obviously something like this should take a long time, you see? At the end of thirty-five minutes it might have be – it might just have blown up. But if the auditor had estimated that it was a long, serious problem, the auditor can keep chipping away at it for the next twenty hours. Of course, he is making no progress at all on the case because he is making the pc pull back things that have went. He doesn't recognize the ease with which this basic auditing comm cycle can actually blow something. So you're always having him ask about things that have blown. Quite common.

Now, an auditor gets so fixated (this is the other side of the coin) on having them all blow easily that once in a while he runs into a brick wall of: it didn't. And it's just like stepping for the step, you see? You know, you're at the bottom of the stairs and you try to go down one more step. And it is with a terrible shock that you hit the landing with your foot, you see? A misestimation, you know? "Oh, we figured this all out and we got it all out and we ran all this thing all out and *uhhheei!* Still worried about it."

What happened? Well, what happened there is that you happened – you see, all these little symptoms of existence can fall into two categories: Those that are floating loose and fancy free and those that have got roots. So the pc's upsets and phobias are not always rooted.

Unlike Freudian assumptions, you do not have to assume that the reason he is fond of eating with his spoon rather than his fork – you do not have to assume that this grows roots clear to the center of the earth. You don't have to assume that at all. Those roots might go no deeper, you see, than a slight personal preference based on an idiosyncrasy he made up his mind with in the army. See, that's just nothing, see. Doesn't have any depth. There's no depth there. It's like trying to jump into a one-inch-deep swimming pool, see? And you try to go any deeper than that and you are in for an awful thud, because there is nothing deeper, see? So, you might say that – it isn't any precise percentage, but a large percentage of these things that worry people have no roots. They aren't deeply rooted in the ub-conscious re-conscious, you understand? They're – just don't go down to the center of the earth.

And then there are a few subjects and items, the display of which in this lifetime is just a little flag. It's just a little flag. And boy, you pick up this little flag. You think, well, it is just – just like everything else and you all of a sudden pick up this little flag, you know. You thought you were catching minnows, you know? And boy, you got a whale on the other end of it and he's anchored right to the bottom of the ocean. You move that flag and it is you that moved, not the flag. [laughter] It is a little telltale. This thing goes clear to China, see? We don't know what happened here. Every once in a while an auditor will hit one of these things which is simply a symptom of some very, very fundamental, deep-lying mass and significance in the case. And of course, it just doesn't shake.

This is about the only thing that ever gets in the road of clearing. You go along the line *pocketa-pocketa-pocketa*. Everything's fine! *Tra-da, ta-da, ta-da, tra-da, tra-da, tra-da, tra-da, tra-da!* All of a sudden, why, you're going to get rid of his lumbosis, too, see? And I'll show you exactly where you make the mistake. You take something which has no needle reaction or TA blowdown, but which is obvious and visible – but which doesn't respond on the meter – and all these little flags bear that characteristic. "Now, your lumbosis, now..." And that is just one smooth, uninterrupted rise. "Your lumbosis now. Has that gotten worse or better in the last few weeks?" Just one long, uninterrupted rise. There is not the least quiver on that needle on the subject of lumbosis and there is not the least blowdown on the part of that tone arm. And all the pc tells you – he has lumbosis and he knows he has lumbosis and he could discuss lumbosis for quite some time. Your TA just sits there and does absolutely nothing and your needle does not respond in any way, shape or form. It's an obvious manifestation. The guy *does* have lumbosis, see? This is obvious. And it does not respond on the meter. Therefore, it goes all the way to China.

And the more you talk about it, the more trouble you are going to get into. Because if you force the pc into a recognition of the reality of that condition – you pin him, instantly and at once, to his most fundamental bank. Just like that. It's very, very interesting. You could take somebody who has no manifestation about it. He is not – his wife is going to leave him tomorrow. You can't get him interested in the subject.

You see, the auditor in each one of these cases where the auditor picks up this flag that goes all the way to China – it's going to be the *auditor* who recognizes it. It's going to be the *auditor* who puts in time on it. It's going to be the *auditor* who tries to force forward the reality of the situation on the pc. It's the *auditor* who is doing it, it's the auditor who is perceiving

it, the auditor who is doing it and it is not cooperated with by the pc except to the extent that the pc will answer the auditor's questions.

In other words, you've got an unreal subject. Fellow walks in – fellow walks in and he's got a papier-mâché head, you know? You don't say, "How are you Mr. Jones? How are you feeling today? What's on your mind? What you worried about today?" or something. You would have to make this kind of a goof. "Hey, we're going to audit this papier-mâché head," see? Now, if that papier-mâché head had no rise or fall, no speeded rise, no speeded fall, no RRs, no drops, no TA blowdowns – nothing with relationship to it. Yes, that's wrong with him but it goes all the way to China. You are dealing with something there which is below any ability this pc has to perceive. You can see it. He can't. He probably looks in the mi... in the mirror every morning and sees a regular head. You have to evaluate the importance of the thing for the pc. You have to force the thing into existence. And by the time you have done that, you can actually push a case all around and mess it all up and you can bog the case down so that it won't get tone arm action. You're not giving him anything he can as-is, so he isn't going to have any victories. You are giving him something that is totally unreal to him. Why is it totally unreal? Well, it's just too deep, too fundamental, too far gone. It's – he's not about to have any recognition of it.

The main danger there is the auditor deciding what is wrong with the pc and then auditing it. That is the main sin. Now, if you – if the auditor decides what is wrong with the pc and then audits it, it very well may be what is wrong with the pc. It may sometimes be that the auditor can change this with the pc. That can happen, too, see, once in a blue moon. But the pc will never find out about it and will be rather resentful and you won't have as-ised any cage. The only cage the pc can as-is is the one he's aware of. He can't as-is any other cage. And you're dependent upon the ability of the pc to as-is. Now, if you're dependent on the pc's ability to as-is, then you had better depend on auditing what the pc can as-is. Elementary.

Now, you can force the pc into all sorts of wild, oddball, physical manifestations this way. I can just see lines of people walking into the psychoanalytic laboratories without limps, and walking out on crutches. I can just see lines of them doing it. Because they specialize in this. They arrive at this through testing. This is why we don't put very much pressure on testing. It's why – we could learn a lot from testing, but we don't really bother to, you understand?

This is where testing dead-ends. You can read deeper into the psyche than the pc can as-is. That's something to remember when you come up against tests. So therefore, little, light, shallow tests are far better than deep, deep, fundamental tests.

There might even be something to a Rorschach. See, there might even be something to it, rather than the old... it actually started as a kid's game, you know, it's the kid's inkblot game. You spill some ink on a piece of paper and fold it together and display it out and ask the other kid what it is, you see? It's a kindergarten game. And everybody got very fundamental. And they found out that you could read various deep and connotations – and you found out – they found out that various psychologically disoriented psycho-drams would occur in these things, see? And they coordinated it up empirically against a tremendous number of neurotic and insane persons. And they found out there's some coordinations in this. Then they

could lay out one of these Rorschachs in front of people and get the person's reaction to it and then they could evaluate the test. And they could say, "This is what is wrong with you."

Now, look how that operates with the one I am just talking about. The guy very often sits there and says, "That's what is wrong with me." It is beyond his ability to as-is. What you have done is restimulate him without any hope of destimulating it. You – in other words, you could force him to assume the characteristics and dimensions of this neurosis or psychosis. That operation could be put under the heading, "This is how to be nuts, taught cheap," see?

A meter has only this value – that it is at the level of reality of the pc. If it reads on the meter, it has the potential of being real to the preclear. If it does not read on the meter, either it is totally suppressed or it's unreal to the pc. That's the end and short of it. Therefore, this meter is rather beautiful to that regard, in that it can sort out things that the pc can find are real to him.

We take – we take a meter. Let's take an assessment level operation at Level IV. We say on this meter, we say, "Grandma, mother, wife, aunt," and so forth. Flinck – a little tick there and so forth. Now, if we want to be real Swami Gambola, you see, with the complete turban and the Woolworth ruby, all we would have to do is say, "We find that the realest person in your family was your aunt."

He'd say, "Oh, true, true, true." [laughter] See? That coordinates instantly and at once, you see?

"You had – you had certain interpersonal relations with your aunt."

"Oh, yes, yes, she used to talk to me all the time and so forth."

You understand, that's assessment for reality. See, you just name off his family members. One of them falls, you just say, "That's the realest person to you." Doesn't matter whether they're the maddest at him, see, or *what* the interpersonal relationship is between him and this person. We know his mind is on that person and we know that he can have a reality on that person. Therefore we know what he can as-is about his family. He can as-is sections relating to that person. And by the time he has got unpinned off of that, we could say the whole family over to him again and this time it would be Grandmama. And suddenly and mysteriously we would have a lot of things of reality about Grandmama. And he all of a sudden can as-is those. And we say all over to him again all the family names. And now we have Papa. Ah, great, because he now can as-is something about Papa, who he dramatizes all the time.

But supposing we had gone about it this way, much more intricately: "Now, you fill out this paper of your characteristics of the ideal person, the ideal villain, the – what – what novels you read most, what type of tobacco you have. Now, here is another piece of paper. What are the types of tobacco and the reading habits of each family member," and so forth. And you say, "Well, you're – you're actually dramatizing your father." [comm lag, laughter]

He'd say, "This is a disaster – horrible!" And he would go off all beaten down, see, and develop all of Papa's ills. [laughter]

See, it's just on this little simple trick of what can you do with a pc? Well, you can do with a pc what is real to the pc. You can as-is in a pc what the pc has a reality on. And having as-ised it, you have a little more cage taken apart so he can see a little bit further so you can find something new for him to have a reality on. And you can as-is that. And it's just a progressive line of taking down the cage. But you try to take down the moat while he is still in the deepest dungeon, he could very easily drown without even coming near the moat, don't you see? "I am suffering asphyxiation and I don't know why." Well, you are taking down the moat!

"Well, go on. You know all about the moat. Yes, yes. The moat's green, scummy water and so forth. Now get the idea of being – drowning in green, scummy water." And don't blame me if you find your pc sitting there stone-dead in the chair and the diagnosis is that he drowned! [laughter, laughs]

This is what is known as running somebody – we have a lot of little, careless phrases that go by, describes this – running somebody above their level of reality. These are usually very glib. But they have a tremendous fundamental truth back of all these things.

Therefore, the auditor who sits there and audits a pc in some other frame of reference than the pc – being able to recognize where the pc is and audit him on things the pc can have a reality on – the auditor who audits that way wins. The auditor who doesn't audit that way loses. That's the magic of auditing. That's the magical trick. Now, you could do almost anything with a pc – almost anything – if you know these little things, you see? I don't care what process you are running. Processes are important, because they tell you how to get to these points of reality.

Now everybody, unless he is stone-dead and long gone, everybody has some reality on some level of A, some level of R, some level of C. So we find processes which are based on A, R, and C interpret with the wildest variability with the pc, but yet hit some level of recognizability in the pc.

You say, "Who do you like?"

"Oh, I – I like Joe." Now, what does he mean when he said he liked Joe? The semantics of the situation are, is he is fond of Joe. But he isn't answering that way at all. A little bit later he is telling you he is really apathetic about Joe. He keeps reinterpreting what his emotional reactions are on the A line. Quite interesting.

"What is real in this room?" is probably one of the most nebulous questions ever asked. The auditor doesn't recognize it as a nebulous question. The pc walks over – all the performances – the question seems direct, all the performances seem very direct – the pc walks over and he picks up that wire over there, that white wire, and he says, "That is very, very, very real." I don't know what he means. But it means that he can recognize a white wire. I don't know what he means. I don't even know what he means when he says he can recognize it. But it means that – to me, for the benefit of just the process itself – that he can see it, recognize it and direct his attention to it. Great. That is all I am asking. I don't care what else he means. It is nothing to me.

See, "Look around here and find something that is really real to you." Oh, it's an interesting question. What goes on in the pc's head when he answers that question? Wow.

Now, beware of the pc when you are running processes like that, who just glibly ticks off everything (and you know he is in a bad state) but he can just tick off everything: "What is really real to me? Well, the carpet is really real to me, the roof is really real to me and the beams are really real to me and the walls are really real to me and the windows are really real to me and everything is really real to me, *wha-rrrr-rrra-mm-mmm-mmm* everything's all really real to me and everything's all..."

I'd conclude about that time that I was several stratospheres above where I ought to be running. Because one of two things will happen: Either his havingness will increase and he'll be getting tone arm action – he'll be getting quite a bit of tone arm action, if he – if he's that good on reality. Why, just the fact that he is shifting his eyeballs and looking around and getting havingness and so forth is going to shift his tone arm around, you see? This guy must be a whiz-bang. See, he is going to get tone arm action, he is going to get needle reaction. Yes, it's real, see? Needle action, a bit of tone arm action, tells him, yes, that's true: The carpet is really real to him, the beams are really real to him, the walls are really... It's reacting here on the tone arm, see, on the needle, see? That's true.

But the case that always got the auditor in trouble was the person who had 8-C completely flat. Run it off a mile a minute and never from the time they started it on would they ever get a twitch or a flick on that unless it was caused by a body motion. They suddenly jump up in the chair and sit down again and you see the needle move. See? But the action of running these things off, you know, talking about this or that one, produced no reaction on the meter and produced no tone arm reaction. No wonder they could be so glib. They're going through some kind of a circuitry response. They're not there. They have been educated into naming of objects in areas or something and they don't have anything to do with it. And they can just, you know – has nothing to do with them – *too-doo, too-doo, too-too-doo!* Not even in the universe – *ta-da-ta-da-ta-da-ta-da!* "Nothing worries me! I'm perfectly free as a bird, sitting down in the middle of this rock." [laughter]

And they haven't any recognition of location or position or anything else. They're dis-oriented. And you'll find out a great many insane people – not describing – this case I just described to you is not even an insane person, not even neurotic. You'll find a lot of people are in that condition, though. They're pretty bad – pretty bad off. You find out they have a lot of psychosomatic ills which they don't know they have. They have a headache all the time. As you're auditing the case you suddenly (quote) "turn on a somatic." Hell, you never turned on the somatic. You turned on the awareness of the existing somatic. The person is now aware that their head aches. If they thought of it a little while, their headache really ached yesterday and the day before and it's been aching for a long time. But they are up to an awareness of the fact they had a headache.

All kinds of awareness shifts take place here and you get reactions, very often, which are not the same as they are advertised. You pull a mass in on a pc one way or the other and he gets a headache, see? All right, the auditing brought in a headache and the auditing will move the headache on out again, eventually, unless it's some upside-down process like, "What

problem could you solve? Thank you. What problem could you solve? Thank you." You know, that's one of the most remarkable processes. That led us into RIC. It's many years old. And if you ask a pc that – if you ask a pc that question, "What problem could you solve? What problem could you solve? What problem could you solve? What problem could you solve?" You can very often see a mass moving in on him. "What problem could you solve?" and this is closer. "What problem could you solve?" see, and he answers and again – and it's closer.

This is very amusing, because you can turn this thing around and head it out the other direction. You just say, "Think of a problem. Think of a problem. Think of a problem. Think of a problem. Think of a problem." And it has gone over the hill and far... Now you could turn around and say, "What problem could you solve?" and it turns right back. It's quite an amusing exercise in masses. If a pc can perceive masses, he can watch this happen.

So, when you are looking at a pc and processing a pc, see the pc in regard to what the pc can see, not what you can see. But learn to look at a pc from the point of view of what the pc can see. Don't, then, bother to limit your own vision, see? But recognize that there may be a difference here. PC can see something and you can see something else. Actually it would be perfectly factual, because you're in two different locations and space is a viewpoint of dimension – you would of course see different things.

But the point is, is the pc can as-is what is real to the pc or what he can see, what he can know, what he can perceive, what he can cotton on to. And actually, he can't do any more than that. Now, after he has perceived something, unless it is one of these deep-rooted things, the chances are it's gone. And the auditor is very stupid indeed if he thinks he has got to go on auditing it after it went. Because the pc will get very upset because you are now auditing nothing. And a pc will get very upset about this after a while. "What about dogs? What about dogs? What about dogs? What about dogs?"

And finally the pc said, "Yep, yep, dogs, yeah, dogs, dogs. Been terrified of dogs," see, something like that.

He told you, you know, he is afraid of dogs. "Well, what about dogs? What about dogs? What about dogs? What about dogs? What about dogs?" I don't care. It's just a process, see – off the bat, see? "What about dogs? What about dogs? What about dogs?" See?

All right, and he eventually looks at you and sort of – "Yeah," he said, "well, that's – that's the point. What about dogs?"

Now, unless the auditor can perceive that he has now changed the pc's point of view with relationship to dogs by the process of as-ising the pc's fears and solutions to dogs – as-ised the pc's reaction to dogs – unless the auditor can also perceive that the pc has changed, in other words – then the auditor will go on trying to audit out what he has audited out. And he can park a case.

The auditor's ability to estimate, then, what he has as-ised, is part and parcel to the creation of an effect on a pc. You have got to know what you have taken care of and therefore you have to know how it is taken care of. It is taken care of by being perceived and as-ised and that is the only way it is taken care of – perceived and as-ised.

You ask the pc to look at something you know he can look at, he looks at it and he as-ises it. And that's the end product of auditing. I don't care whether you're doing Class VI or Class I – the action is the same. And that is how auditing works and that is the effect which the auditor creates on the pc. And that's how he creates the effect on the pc. That's the only way he does.

An auditor that doesn't know how auditing works and doesn't know why auditing works will commit several other sins. Amongst them is to address subjects that are not real to the pc. Another one is to run what has been run out. Another one is to – not to flatten what he has begun to as-is. These are the various crimes that the auditor can omit – can commit with his comm cycle.

So in the final analysis, an auditor who knows how auditing works and why auditing works never really gets in much of a bind. He never gets into much of an upset. I myself have had some gorgeous crashes on this particular line, as one would have with magnitude in re-search work. You work it – because in this case you are always evaluating what is wrong with the case from the viewpoint of research so that you can add up the principles involved. Don't you see? So you're always looking for this sort of thing. So, you're always wishing off on cases something that is wrong with them, in order to find out if it is. And I learned this the hard way very, very early.

But I never – I never would – would – I am perfectly willing to give up a theory. A theory to me is not very valuable. I can invent lots of theories, see. In most fields of science a theory is so precious that it has to be set in jewels and gems. And all one's work is involved – is in setting up a theory. And having set up this theory, all the rest of the work is put in on asserting that it is right. See, there isn't any further action taken with the theory than those things. That is quite common in the field of science and research. Always gone on the basis there's always lots of theories. If this one doesn't work, there's always another one.

Nevertheless, every once in a while you still will get a favorite theory. You'll get something that is very favored. You see, and you go down the line and you say, "There are this number of potentials with regard to this case," and so forth and you say, "Isn't that a nice one?" you know? "Isn't that particular one – number 3 there – isn't that nice?" you say. "That would be real, real cute, you see, if that is the right one," you know. So you start processing the pc and you favor number 3. You see, you weight number 3 heavily. The pc just sits there looking blankly at you, you know, his eyes sort of cloudy and so forth.

You feel like saying to him, "Hey, isn't this a wonderful theory? I mean, you know – what – what's – what – what's added up there about – about what I've cognited for you on – on your difficulty with spinach." You see? And – and – and so forth, and then, "Hey, hey, you know. Isn't that we – wonderful."

Sits there, his eyes cloudier. And all of a sudden, he says, "You know, that second one that you mentioned there," he says, "that – that makes some sense – with a little change, that makes some sense."

The second one? Hell, you didn't care anything about the second one, see? He goes on and embroiders number 2 and then all of a sudden you arrive at number 4, which is the correct one, don't you see, that he can as-is and has got a good reality on. "Oh yeah, that's it." You

know, and it always leaves a bad taste in your mouth, see. [laughs] He got well on the wrong process! Awful upsetting. So I know what you're up against.

You always – you always will have these interesting theories. For heaven's sakes, don't stop having them. "I know what's wrong with that guy," and so on. Remember, it isn't your brightness that is held in question. It's the pc's perceptive abilities. And the pc – it isn't real to the pc; something else is real to the pc about this sort of a thing. Well, don't try, then, to get the pc to as-is your concept of it because that isn't there to be as-ised. What is there to be as-ised is his concept of it. And he also may have a much shallower concept and sometimes surprise you by having a much deeper concept of reality than is being granted by the auditor.

So it's within these variabilities that you can bring a case out of the soup and so forth. The odd part of it is, the world is artificially and the universe is artificially divided into the constructive and the destructive. When you get way up topside, there is only the free. And you've actually escaped these two things. You can see that it – with an individual, the most constructive action that you can take with the individual would be to bring the individual into an ability, himself, to create and handle his own problems and situations, see. That is an ultimate.

Now that, of course, takes care of the other factor, because what would be the ultimate in destruction? Would be the disappearance of the traps and pitfalls that lay in his path. So you're actually not, when you come right down to it, doing a one-sided job. It only appears you are.

You go off into this other destructive action toward a pc only when he appears not to as-is properly to suit you. See? And that swings you down from your Olympian height of being able to cover all sides of action, you see? The ultimate in destruction, of course, is the – *whew!* Gone! You see? And the ultimate in construction, when you are dealing with a human being and when you are dealing with a person or a spirit and so forth, is to bring it about so you say, "*Phew*" and the individual himself can create. Those are very Olympian actions, I assure you.

And when you lose on those things, through your lack of understanding or bad luck or any other reason, why, you tend to drop down into the artificial segmentation of life into a constructive sphere and the 50 percent destructive sphere. And you start slapping back at the pc and you start creating men out of clay and you start doing all kinds of wild things. And just recognize that when you are reacting reactively to the pc, that you have dropped down from an ideal auditing action and have stepped into a nice, fat dramatization on your own part. Just get yourself by the scruff of the neck and say, "Hey, I must have slipped, because I am dramatizing," and you will bring yourself right back up scale again.

Auditing, in its most fundamental approach, is basically simple, because it evades, by undermining, all the complexities of life. You are not now trying to dream up a solution comparable to the problems this bloke has got. That's true about life, but it's not true about auditing. You are pulling the rug out from underneath his problems because you've got the answer to why they become problems in the first place.

You know how he got into the cage. Like you take a – you take an old smoothie on Sec Checking. And he can go back down the line, *pocketa-pocketa-pocketa*, find the original overt, take that thing apart and the whole chain just goes *brrrrrzzzzzzz!* And the most complicated set of problems that you ever heard of just blow right off on that particular subject. He just fishes out and so forth. Sometimes the reverse will be found. He imagined he had a problem which he didn't have or imagined he had an overt which he didn't have or something. That can be uncovered, too.

But you're pulling the string which unties the sugar sack and that's rather interesting. Otherwise it would be so complex that nobody could ever have anything to do with it. You could never do anything with it.

Auditing would have to be as complicated as life if auditing were a solution to life. And fortunately, it isn't a solution to life. It's an as-isness of the less desirable parts of existence.

Now, all you have to do is know this one approach of what you are trying to deliver to the pc and you will be able to pull it off every time, rather simply.

Thank you.

The Preclear And Getting Auditing To Work

A lecture given on 19 May 1964

[part missing]

Thank you.

What's the date?

Audience: 19th May.

Nineteen May AD 14, Saint Hill Special Briefing Course.

[part missing]

The reason why – why everybody showed up here so fast actually has to do only with one fact – is, I haven't lectured here for a couple of weeks, you see? [laughs]

Now, you're – I don't know why we called this lecture today, actually. I should be up there working on the verification of your materials and so forth which are all pretty well in hand. I think if you were going into the materials which I'm working on at the present moment, why, it would probably be a different story. But the object is not to get you wrapped up, but to wrap up the materials, so I'm doing it.

The – I haven't really anything to talk to you about today at all. But I think – I think that you probably know all there is to know about auditing. You probably have no difficulties with auditing. You probably have no difficulties with the material at all and everything is smoothed out. And you got all that taped.

Now, I think we probably ought to take up the preclear and getting a win on the preclear, applying the information to a preclear. I think that might – might be germane to the situation.

The situation is pinpointed by the fact that – I've forgotten the exact number – I think I had twenty-five provisional Class VIs issued here – what was the – twenty-four? – last week and I think that you all ought to be applauded for getting through to where you did. [applause]

The only comment I'd like to make on that is, I never saw such vicious grading in my life! I just never saw such vicious grading in my life. You had some of your papers on your fellow students down to around sixty when the grade was eighty plus, and on one noteworthy example it was down around sixty when the actual grade was ninety. It's fantastic! Fantastic.

But on a classification examination I'm not about to stand there idly twiddling my thumbs and of course I graded all the papers afterwards personally. Took me about six hours, by the way, going through every question and so forth, because all I wanted to know was just – is this auditor competent and does he know his material, you see? And even so, I didn't have to stretch any points to amount to anything. But those grades were just cut to ribbons. I never saw the like of it and so forth. And I said to myself – I said to myself, "Well, I hope this isn't a symptom of what will happen to the preclear!" Pretty ghastly.

Anyhow, you all did quite amazingly well. Your grades were right up there with the Saint Hill Co-audit Course grades on the final exam and your examination was tougher, if anything, than that. So I'm quite happy with that now.

Now, how auditing can occur is probably the greatest mystery to the person who makes it work the least. You've got a mysterious mysteriousness on any auditor who is having an awful hard time making anybody recover from something. See? He's got a mystery. And he may not know he has this mystery. He may not know he has this mystery. But he really doesn't know why auditing works, or if it does work. And he has assigned some value to the subject of auditing which is different and extraneous to the actual value of auditing, so therefore he makes enough goofs in trying to handle auditing, that auditing doesn't work. It's as simple as this, you see?

And he always looks for something more mysterious than is. He looks for something more complicated than is. And you, whenever you have a student that just can't seem to get any kind of result whatsoever, one third of the time his trouble will resolve if you simply ask him why auditing doesn't work and why it does work and get him into a big discussion about this thing.

Now you will have relieved, then, the impediment which is preventing him from perceiving. He will have been impeded from perceiving why auditing works. So a person who can't understand why auditing works has got a barricade across the line of his understanding which is a presumption that it *doesn't* work. Do you see? He is not about to understand *why* it works, because he already understands that it *doesn't* work. On some reactive basis, you see, he knows it doesn't work. So now you're going to ask him to try to understand why it does work and of course he'll hit this other one and he never will grasp it.

Do you see? He's blocked himself out from a comprehension of it. So therefore, a discussion of this simple basic, to you as an Instructor of auditors, is like diamonds – like diamonds. It'll cut through most of your more difficult students and so on. The way to use this little gimmick is – you see somebody is having a terrible time with his comm cycle. Now anybody has a little bit of trouble with a comm cycle. You take a pc, he's all rattled and he's upset, and he's this and he's that and the other thing, and he's in the middle of the – of the bank, and so on, and his comm cycle response you see is so rough quite ordinarily, that it takes a good expert to even find out, you know, which way it's going or what it's doing. You have to be an expert just to get by, see, as an auditor.

All right. So the pc, you see, he's already all rattlepated out on the subject of his comm cycle, you see. You ask him one question, he gets an answer to something else, you see? And your effort to steer him through this without ARC breaking him and so forth, as I said, that is

an expert action – an expert action. Because that is rugged. It's never quite by pattern from the pc's viewpoint. And of course, that's as it should be. So the auditor who understands this aspect of it, he doesn't have very much trouble with anything but the pc.

Now, supposing he has trouble with understanding what the comm cycle is, understanding why auditing works, and this is added to the difficulty the pc is going to introduce into it. Of course, at this moment we get an unmanageable session. We get no improvement, we get no case gain, we get nothing, you see. Why? The auditor is already incapable because of his own barricade across the line of understanding why auditing works because something is telling him that it doesn't work or there is some reason why it shouldn't work, you see, something like this. So that's already got him stopped. So therefore, he doesn't understand that it should work. Now let's put that mess on the line. Then let's get the routine difficulty that a pc introduces into the line, you see: pc gets all *waddle-gabopped*, you see, he sounds like ions going around inside of his skull, you know; he's banging from hither to hence and you ask him, "Do fish swim?" and he gets "Do they fly?", and – you know, he's – that's why he's being audited, you see. Because he's got stuff to walk through, see.

Well, that introduces the problem into the thing and by the time you get the combination of all these factors, why, you get – you get no gain, see. So, I repeat, you have to be an expert to handle the pc's comm cycle anyway. And therefore, you have to take out of line as an auditing Instructor, an auditors' Instructor, you have to take out of line those things which make it too difficult to do. And chief amongst those is: does auditing work or why doesn't auditing work and a discussion of this particular character is very, very, very heavy in its payment. You'll be quite surprised. I'm not giving you a bum tip here. This is a hot one, see, as far as study is concerned.

All right, now you take this fellow – I'll show you how you spot him, see. He's sitting there and he says, "Do – now, have you ever been up?" or whatever repetitive process he's running, you know, and the pc says, "Mm-hmm, hmm..."

"Thank you! Good. Thank you. Have you ever been up?"

And the pc says "... "Thank you. Good." It's – it's – you go, "What the hell's going on here?" See? This, this – there's no comm cycle here. What's going on, see? Or you'll get... There's so many variations of this it would be almost impossible to mimic them all. You get the auditor who says, "How many is up," or something of the sort, and the pc says, "Well, actually – actually, it's a matter of downness. I've always thought it was really a matter of downness and so forth, but when you really come down to think about it and so forth, when you really take how many is up, you count them off, and – and so forth and so forth and... But I don't really understand that. It's how many is down that is really got – got the thing important to me, you see, that – that's what really I keep dwelling on."

And the auditor says, "Thank you," just as though something has happened, you see. And he asks the same question again and he gets another evasion, see. And he never really notices that the pc never has understood or agreed with the auditing question. Now the pc hasn't got a clue as to what's going to happen here. Well, pc isn't answering the auditing question.

In other words, you can just keep adding these various flubs. You see any of them and they all come under the category: the auditor isn't answer... asking the question, getting it answered and acknowledging when the pc has completed his answer, see? And you get any variation of that – get any variation of that, then you've got an auditor who has got one over here... Of course, you show him how to do it and he says, "Oh, that's the way to do it!" and he does it perfectly. You see, you don't need any – any more action than that.

This guy can't seem to learn it. You straighten him all up on cutting the pc's responses. Now he asks one question in a 2½ hour session and lets the pc chatter the rest of the time, see. You've got him broken of one thing; he goes into another thing, you see. Now, my recommendation is not – as the auditor's Instructor – not to go into despair, but to examine – to examine this one burning question. Why doesn't auditing work? Let's get it out into the clear, see? And you all of a sudden will find some very interesting answers. You've got to be auditing on your toes to get these things and catch them as they go by, you know. You've got to watch that tone arm. He says, well, something or other, something or other, and you get a wild blowdown on the tone arm. Well, make a note over here to take that one up, too, see. And he all of a sudden will come out with some very, very interesting data. And it will be very revelatory to him, too. And after that he says, "Well, of course auditing works." You know?

Now, you say, "Go back in there again with a comm cycle," and it's *rat-atat-tat-a-ta-bang* and you won't have any trouble teaching the comm cycle, see. Got this as a side panel to auditing. Says nothing to do with taking care of the pc; this is the auditor taking care of the pc. Why do you have trouble with this, see?

All right, that's under one heading, then – this one heading. And that's "Why doesn't auditing work?" That – just put that in one big, wide, broad heading. You see somebody who's having too much trouble, can't ever get tone arm action, this way and that way as an auditor, that's – that's one thing you do with this fellow. And there happen to be two more things and that's the subject of this lecture here.

Now, in this type of interrogation, this looks very much like an auditing session, but it's not quite an auditing session. It's not quite an auditing session because you are looking for something that answers your question that only the auditing will tell you, not really the pc. Do you see, that's a little bit different. You're accumulating information so that you're steering the pc toward a cognition. And he eventually will round up the cognition. You don't preconceive the cognition, you understand, but you take tone arm blowdowns on everything he has told you, see. Every time he says – he's saying – I'll just give you a ridiculous example – every time he says it's "adult," you see, and it's "immaturity." And he keeps – every time he says, "it's – it's adult," or something, you get a blowdown. You make a note of that, "adult," over here, you see. And then he mentions this word "immaturity," and he's still discussing why auditing doesn't work, you see, and you write down "immaturity." And you finally – what's this got to do with it? See. Well, he's finished telling you everything – he's finished.

Now, let's find out what does "adult" have to do with auditing not working, you see, and what does "immaturity," of it, so on. And he's got some kind of an idea that everybody is stuck at the age of four, that he got taught in a sociology class, or something of this sort, so

therefore they're not sufficiently mature to face up to the realities of existence, you see. He's got this all packed in sideways. All of a sudden he'll get the rest of the puzzle and drag it off. What these blowdowns are, are little flags that tells you there's dynamite buried here. And you take that up and you can completely change the auditing address and aspect of an auditor's auditing with such a discussion, as an auditing Instructor. So that's well worth knowing.

But there're two other categories, so I won't say that will work with every one of these cases. And there may be two or three more categories. But I will give you as many as I know and I'm certain of.

Now, let's give you the next one, not because it's the next most important, but because it is the – it's an old one and it comes under the heading of "help." Now, unfortunately, you must not use "failed help." You mustn't use "failed" anything. That's because of the line plot of actual goals. So let's just skip this idea of "failed," don't you see? We'll just have to take up the subject of help. This is another ramification of what I've just been telling you, but it hits sometimes very close to home, indeed. There is no GPM about help, so let's – you can hit it as heavy as you want to, see. That's something above.

I can give you data of this particular character now, because knowing what is the totality content of the reactive bank, you see, I know some things are slightly senior to the content or don't impinge on the content and therefore can be cared for independently, you see, without undue restimulation. And this too – this just barely comes under the heading – "Help," just barely comes under the heading. Therefore, it's rather successful. It's rather successful. You may find help in an implant someplace, or something, but it isn't going to wrap anybody around a telegraph pole. You can take up the subject of help, you see? You can take up the subject of who he's tried to help and who's tried to help him and who he's tried to help and any confounded thing you want to take up under this subject, and you're liable to get someplace with this auditor who really can't make auditing work.

"Well, there's no use trying..." You get cognitions like this: "There's no use trying to help them because man only succeeds when he helps himself." See, "So where the hell did I get that?" you know. He's standing back and he looks at this thing and he suddenly conceives of dragging somebody out of a stone quarry, you see. And he conceives of standing up on the bank of the stone quarry looking diffidently down into the stone quarry, with the guy drowning down there, you see, and sheer walls, and thinking to himself, "Well, there's no reason to give him a hand or throw him a rope, because he really doesn't deserve help unless he can help himself," you see. The poor sod down there hasn't got anything to hold onto, nothing to stand up in.

Of course, this becomes ridiculous, even to him, see. But you'll find – you'll find that these – these odd-bit presumptions of some kind or another get wedged sideways in somebody's skull and you couldn't begin to make a dictionary of the number of them you will find. They're just innumerable. So you don't know quite what you're digging for, except you're digging for an impediment on the subject of help. Something is impeding his ability to help or be helped and that's all you're digging for. So anything that you talk about help, that he hits on, that is a sidelight to help, that gives you a tone arm motion, you then make a note of to take up independently. And you will chase this whole thing all the way down to a proper cognition

and you will therefore take care of his attitude toward pcs and auditing, you see, and all of a sudden he will start using the comm cycle. You understand that?

The whole basis of it is, is the comm cycle is too easy to use as long as the person's intention toward the pc is good and he's trying to assist the pc and so forth. So the things which make a person unable to use such a comm cycle are those things, of course, which make a person believe that he cannot assist or cannot or should not, or that it's impossible to, see? You get the – you get where you enter this? See? There's where you enter it, see?

Of course, all this works with pcs, too, this really works with pcs. This also applies to the pcs who get no tone arm action. Pcs who get no tone arm action and so forth have got one of these buttons. Well, there's a dangling spring that goes out here about a yard, see, and the button is out here, you see, and all the machinery down underneath where the spring should contact on this button, and so on, is all miswired and filled full of concrete. And you're not about to get there without a special address to the situation, see.

In other words, this person is sitting there saying, "Well, I can't be helped, anyway. Actually nobody could help anybody. If anybody did help anybody, then he would become responsible for the other person's life. And I don't want this other person to be responsible for my life because that would be a bad thing to do to them. So, therefore, if I sit here just sort of blank, why, therefore I won't incur any liability."

This is some reactive *thlthlthlthl* that's going on, see. And that's why the person isn't getting tone arm action – given good auditing. But we're taking it up, of course, here at Saint Hill from the auditor's viewpoint. That's all good preclear material.

Now, the other one which I save until last is a bit more esoteric. Now, there may be some more of these things. I wouldn't say there aren't. But I notice from a long log of experience along the line, most of the pcs I've had much to do with have come under one or another of these three categories. Now this other one – this other one is a real dog. This other one is a sneaky sneak that probably could furnish the material for a half a dozen lectures. I'll give it to you very rapidly. This is of great social importance what I'm giving you. This is something to chitter-chatter about.

Now, because it's so interesting, don't forget the other two. This is very interesting. And if I were giving this – if I were giving this – [sound of rain pouring down becomes audible] (there's a nice spring rain) – if I were giving this in a broad sort of a way at a congress or something like this, I could really embroider this thing up. I would call the beginning lecture "Life amongst the lowly." People, especially Southerners, don't recognize that's the second title to *Uncle Toms Cabin*. It's very amusing. You can ask a Southerner, "Have you ever read a book called *Life Amongst the Lowly*? Have you ever heard of this book?" And they will swear no; you can bet them a couple of pounds and they'll lose every time.

Life amongst the lowly. Why is life amongst the lowly so lowly? I'll give it to you right where I caught it – on the entrance point. This was the entrance point to this examination. It's all right for some professor to sit in his ivory tower and "ivory-towerify," and fill books with – full of what other professors in their ivory towers have "ivory-towerified." But there's no substitute for getting down and getting your paws dirty with life to know what it's all about. There is just no substitute for that. And I've rubbed elbows with an awful lot of

people at various stratas and classes, sizes, shapes and descriptions. And in rubbing elbows, one fact used to strike me as a wild bit that I never could quite reconcile. There was this weird attitude which didn't fit with what they did to people.

I'm not now saying there is such a thing as a *lower classes*. I'm talking about people who under tremendous duress, people who are being hammered and pounded by the economic mills and ground very fine indeed. People who are being hunted. Criminals on the run, don't you see. This type of person. People that – they've more or less had it, you know, from life. And those people in a group do one thing that is a common denominator to the group. It's always "Poor Dillinger, they shot him." It's always "Poor Bill, poor Joe." There's always grief and supersaccharine sympathy of some kind or another. It really isn't sentimentality – it's too gruesome. And I've listened to this – oh, a group of guys sitting on a fo'c'sle head, you know, and they're talking about "Poor old Bill," you know, "the sharks got him," you know.

And I've listened to this and in life they just knock each others' heads off, see. They're unthinkably mean to one another. But they're so supersaccharine – weird aspect, this – and it always just kind of went *clink-creak!* It didn't make any sense, you see. They'd just as soon step on Dillinger's teeth and sell them at the local pawnshop, see. See, but it's "Poor Dillinger," you know? And it's "poor you."

And this "poor you" gave me a clue to something that is confoundedly well worth knowing and it very well could open up a whole field and make a real subject of sociology. Because it gives us the mechanism by which the lowly hold the lowly down. And which they do to one another constantly and continuously and instinctively. And it's just about as vicious as keeping a cobra in the cash drawer and then inviting somebody to rob it. It's a wild mechanism.

Why is it a wild mechanism? I dare say you will occasionally hear this or you have occasionally heard this. But really, you'd have to be on the seamier side of life than most of you are accustomed to, to run into it as a habit and a way of life. The slums – the places where people have zero opportunity, that sort of thing. There is where it is most prevalent. It's the poor you. "You poor fellow."

And now let's move it up into a little bit more workable technical platform. *How you have been wronged. How he was wronged. How they were wronged.* Now, let's just move it into that technical platform. And we all of a sudden see that life amongst the lowly depends exclusively on their continued operation of just this one little gimmick, not on any other gimmick. Were looking now at the common denominator of sociology. What makes a slum a slum? Why can a fellow never get out of the slum? How come? What is this trap?

Well, it's: *how you have been wronged, how they have been wronged,* and so forth. And not to any great degree except as an example, *how I have been wronged.* That is not its dominant cord. You will hear that in there as an example, but that, is – isn't – that's just a response to the mechanism. That isn't the important point of the mechanism.

In the early days of Dianetics, we ourselves had this, you see, "How you have been wronged," see? And it is the *most acceptable* thing that you ever had anything to do with. People just licked this up left, right and center. Well, what happened to it? Well, I worked it out along another line – an entirely different line. If you can't take responsibility for your own

actions, and if you can't recognize the cause of your difficulties, then you're in a trap and you'll continue in that trap forevermore; and I became completely unwilling to hold people forever in a trap, by any reason, even that of popularity, which, of course, everybody knows is the greatest god to worship there is.

I'm thinking of Johnson's poverty programs now and the fact that he had five families sitting down on one of his – one of his farms in the most abject poverty that anybody had ever lived in. The Republicans went down and dug it up. It may have – it probably would contribute to finishing him – Johnson off as a presidential candidate.

The point is here, this war against poverty would have to include an understanding of why people in groups remain poor. This is the missing link, this piece of data I'm giving you right now – quite valuable to the auditor and very valuable sociologically. As I said, I could lecture on it a very long time and it's very interesting, but let's get down to what the truth of the matter is.

An individual must accept his own responsibility and his own ability as cause before he can run off his overts. Simple. You can't have an overt if you can't recognize yourself as cause. You can't get out of a rat race unless you can recognize your overts. That's all there is to it, see. So how do you keep somebody in a rat race? Just never let him recognize his overts. And you say, "Poor you. Look at everything that has been done to you. And you, you have never done anything, you poor fellow. Look how you have been wronged. There you were, sitting there innocently, doing nothing, and up jumped the regiment and wiped you out. You poor fellow." And all you have to do is keep up a running fire of this stuff and you effectively suppress and mask the fact that the individual himself is capable of causation.

Let's just not worry about the overt act, you're telling this individual that he was incapable of cause, and you are pointing out moments, particularly, when he was not at cause. And you are pointing out the fact that he just – things just happen to him and that he doesn't cause any of them. Which brings him into a causeless thing, which throws him into the dwindling spiral and will hold him on the floor and on the bottom of the heap, forever. And all you have to do is keep convincing him that he has been wronged and that he himself never wrongs anybody. That's all you have to do, you just keep that mechanism going and they'll stay on the bottom of the pile forever.

So life amongst the lowly is a long song of how you have been wronged. "You never had a chance." And when you get this tune played out to its bitterest end, you get a person who is bitterly finished. Because he can never get off an overt act. Now, we have to go back into what is really – completely aside from the fact that this does occur in actual GPMs and so forth – what really is obsessedness. How does a person become obsessed with a problem? This is – this is gold, man, this is solid gold to an auditor. How does a person become obsessed with a problem? How is he always dwelling on it, dwelling on it, dwelling on it, thinking on it, thinking on it, thinking on it. Why, why, why, why, why is he stuck in – how does he get stuck in this, see? Why is this – this is – this describes ninety percent of your pcs, see.

They walk in and all he can think about is Madge left me, you see – he'll bring it up, and so forth, and they say so-and-so and so-and-so and so-and-so and you think you've gotten them out of it now and

you've processed them down the line very beautifully and all of a sudden, "Madge left me." See?

You never can seem to get them off of that – you never can get the needle out of that groove, much less off the platter. They just go on. Days and days they spend – worrying, worrying, thinking, thinking, going on and on about, about this thing, see. They can't get the needle changed, you see. They can't get the platter flipped. And you, the auditor, know instinctively that you've got to change that tune before you can have anybody in front of you who's paying any attention to auditing. He's obsessed with the subject of, "Well, that all went back – I guess that was in the days before Madge left me." He had it all taped. You never get tired of personnel like you get tired of one of these personnel in a pc's bank, you know? "That was before the bank failure. Before the bank failure. No, that was after the bank failure. You know, the bank failed." [laughter]

Now, what pins them into it and what can unpin them? And this becomes very vital information. What can unpin them off of this thing. There's several systems that can be used to unpin them. We won't go into all of the systems that can be used, but chief amongst them is the O/W sequence. That is a prime mechanism that pins a person into obsessiveness. They never recognize their own overt in that sphere of existence. And not recognizing their own overt in that sphere of existence they can never unpin themselves from it.

Now let me put it very crudely. Before you get your hand cut off in a buzz saw, you've got to get yourself somehow in the vicinity of a buzz saw and you in some fashion or another have got to reach for that buzz saw. It's actually impossible for you to get your hand cut off in a band saw unless somehow or another you have, by whatever concatenation, arranged that proximity.

Now somewhere, back along the line, before the buzz saw, the individual did something or committed something that walked him on that channel up to getting his hand cut off in a buzz saw. He did something to arrive him there. That is very important. Because he will never get out of there till you've tricked the something that actually did arrive him there. It's not good enough to have him inventing reasons. It's not... guilt, you see, is just – is a – is the inversion of this. You keep inventing ideas, inventing overts. There's guys around who've – who eventually have realized that they have to get off their overts, but they don't know what they are, they haven't got an auditor, so they'll invent overts to get off. You've got to beware of this bird, too, see. That's known as a "guilt complex."

"Ten thousand Japanese killed in landslide." This fellow was sitting in Birmingham at the time. He says, "How did I do it?" That's a guilt complex in operation. So it goes into an inversion and the individual will actually start dreaming up things he didn't do in order to get out of the obsession of thought, see. He'll eventually go that far. Well, he's spun by the time he goes there on that subject.

But look-a-here: What is this – what is this constant dwelling of the mind on this action that the auditor runs into continuously in processing pcs? It's very hard not to run into this. It's the overt act that he committed, that kept him pinned into that line. And if you want to really find the overt act and monkey around with this, nicely and gently by any overt act system that we have ever had, you all of a sudden will find what he really did do – and you've

got to beware of the guilt complex of inventing things that he did do that he didn't do because this is just another alter-is, you see. You see, he can alter-is this, as well as get off his actual overt.

So therefore, you always have to verify one of these things when you're handling one of these things, on making sure that he didn't give you any untruths. You've got to get your truth answer in there on the E-Meter. In other words, you've got to ask him, "Is there anything you've told me that doesn't apply to this?" you see – or you're trying in some diplomatic way "You told me any lies, bud?" You want to get that off. Because they will.

But any one of these dwellings upon it is preceded by a basic overt act which is followed by a withhold and followed by other overt acts. And the individual is keeping himself pinned into this thing by his series of overt acts. He cannot get out of that channel of thought. He'll tell you, "I could just give anything, anything, anything – I could just – I'd – I'd just give anything not to be thinking about the service station. If – if – if I could just for five minutes not think about the service station and worry about it, you see, anything!" You'll actually run into somebody like this sometime or another, you know. "If – if I could just stop thinking about it, you know? If – if – if I could just go down to the beach or something like that..." or so forth, and *vava-vaa!*

That's a more notable example where the pc is articulating it. Sometimes you merely observe it in the pc or something. Well, what's the action? Let's get off his actual overts against the service station. His overts and withholds from the service station and *bing!* Just like magic. He stops thinking about it.

In other words, all *dwellings on a subject is associated with overts against that subject*. You follow that? That's a rule that you can carry around in your hip pocket and feel like you've got it full of diamonds. You won't recognize that you've got diamonds there until you run into this pc who is *da-da-da-da-da* – he's got present time problem, present time problem, present time problem; he comes to every session he's got a present time problem, he's got present time problem. And it's a present time problem about his domestic affairs, a present time problem about his domestic affairs, present time problem about his domestic affairs.

So you spend two hours of the two and a half hours cleaning up the present time problem about domestic affairs. It should occur to you now to ask, "Do you spend a lot of time thinking about this, outside of auditing?"

"Oh, oh, ha-ha-ha, yes, I don't think about anything else." In other words, he's really not in session. He's just continued his life over into the auditing session, see. Anybody comes up there with present time problems all the time in an auditing session, he's not free of those things outside the auditing session. And the way for you to cure this is O/W. You run any version of O/W. And we've got lots of systems of running O/W. There's some very slippery ones. There's various types and kinds of running O/W. This is quite a subject. And it well merits being a subject since it is very, very upscale and is of a greater order of magnitude than the reactive bank itself. It is something that is part and parcel of life which is senior to other types of aberration. Told you something then, didn't I? It's pretty horrible to think of.

It is senior in its power even to GPMs. In other words you could be totally free of GPMs and still be colliding with the O/W sequence. You'd still get the consequences of your overts. Now, you can carry it perhaps upstairs in auditing to a point where you no longer have the consequences of your overts and that undoubtedly is true, but I'm just telling you that there it stands and that's a pretty magnitudinous statement, just between ourselves, that it's senior to GPMs. So it's always safe to audit O/W. And it's always indicated to audit O/W. And that's one of the things, unfortunately, which auditors do very industriously, but here or there do very badly. They can make a stinking job out of O/W. Just, not to be critical, but just to be factual. It can be the most stinking, driveling job I ever heard of.

They chop up comm cycles and they do this and misread meters – and somehow or another – and then you find out, "Oh, I finally did, I got the overt."

"What was the overt?"

"Well, the auditor [pc] was thinking hostile thoughts about me while I was auditing him."

Oh, no! Oh, no! This merely showed bypassed charge in the session. He didn't get an overt off. What auditors will sometimes buy as an overt is a matter of grief to me. It really is. I look over auditors' reports and they've gotten this overt off of this pc. And the pc had been going around all the time, all the time all the time, not sending his mother candy. This is an overt act? You know, it's unbelievable. It's unbelievable. But I don't mean to downgrade you or berate you, but very often some God-awful tacit consent will come into one of these sessions where "I don't get my overts off, therefore I won't get them off you and you don't get them off me and we'll all sit here and be happy." And you know why they do that? And why they've done that? Because there's some thread of this sociological datum I've just given you, running through that session.

Ah, yes! So we carried the typhoid fever with us into Scientology. So it's a good thing to know that there's a – there's an illness known as "you've been wronged." Because it has been the source of great despair to me amongst auditors, wondering why in the name of heaven they just couldn't sit down and say, "Whatcha done, sister? Whatcha done?"

And she says, "Well, I didn't do very much."

"All right. But how much was it?" [laughter, laughs]

You know and just carry it on through in a workmanlike fashion. And that's because "wrong-itis" has entered the session, see. How you've been wronged. This is so much a part of the social world around us that it very easily slips into a session, if the auditor is not aware of this fact. So he's inclined to sympathize with the pc and he thinks it's a very openhearted, beautiful sentiment on his own part. It's just about as beautiful as a striking rattlesnake.

We always knew there was something wrong with this. You'll find it mentioned in the first book. You can only give him sympathy as the lowest level of healing. Well, more – I revise that, man, that's no level of healing, that's a method of strangulation. You get my point, now? You get what I'm talking about, here? If the auditor sets there – sits there, see, and the – he says to the pc, "All right, what have you – what have you done now? You have – you're

thinking all the time about cat fur, now what have you ever done to cats?" you see. "Well," the pc says, "well, cats caterwaul outside my window all night long and keep me awake."

"Good. We've gotten that overt act off." [laughter]

What's going on here, see? See? The auditor very, very slippily will pick up a motivator for an overt and so forth. You ask somebody... Somebody is unhappy with their auditor or something of the sort. And somebody'll pick him up and you'll say, "Look, get his overts off against the auditor." And he sits there and listens to an hour's worth of motivators and says, "Well, I fixed him up," and now the guy does cave in, see? They think one is being tough or they can be interpreted wrongly in several different ways.

The only thing I'm trying to tell you is just this – this very, very close point, is if you carry this "you poor devil, you have been wronged," into a session, you no longer audit the pc at cause. You're auditing the pc at effect and so the pc will not get better.

You buy motivators and sympathize with these motivators of all the horrible things that have happened to the pc in his lifetime – perfectly all right, you understand, for a pc to tell you how horrible life has been to him. As long as, with not too tactless a change of pace, you get in and find out all the horrible things he's done to life.

You've got to recognize that the "you are wronged" is a disease. "You poor fellow, you have been wronged. You poor fellow, you have been wronged." And any time you give somebody this kind of a response, of any kind whatsoever, you're contributing to his upset, contributing to his illness, because the only way he'll ever get out of it is return his own causation. Not how he's been wronged, how has he done some wrong to somebody. And as soon as you get the other side of that picture cleaned up, all of a sudden, bing! It's just like magic.

You see, nothing can hold onto a thetan. There is no butterfly net, there is no electronic switchboard, there is nothing can hold onto a thetan. Nothing. That is – that's the truth of the situation. There is no hobbles. There is no ropes. Nothing can really hold on to a thetan. It sounds absolutely incredible, but it's true. Well how come he gets caught? He must have grabbed hold and then forgotten he'd grabbed hold, for him to be trapped thereafter. See, there he is, holding onto the stanchion in the bus, with a third hand he didn't know he had, and with the other two hands trying to push himself off the bus and wondered how he can't get off the bus. So now he has to conclude that he is trapped on the bus. Nothing can trap him on the bus, except his own holding onto the bus. He's got to – he's got to have hold of it.

Now, what is this third hand? The third hand is his overts against the bus. That's how he can't get out of it. That's how he cannot get out of a – of an engram. That's how he can't get – really can't get out of the bank. This is – so on. He himself has overts. It might add up to something that the one that we are – you'll find out to really get somebody out of, are the banks he makes himself and has made himself Oh, man! Getting him out of those is rough. Getting him out of an implant, oh, sneeze. See, it's nothing to get him out of an implant. But how about his own actual GPMs? Oh, wow, see. It's rough, rough. See?

It's easily done today, but it's his own actual GPMs that are holding him. Not the ones that were given to him gratuitously. That's something for you to recognize. So you sit down and you tell this pc, "You poor fellow, how have you been wronged in life? Good. How else

have you been wronged? All right. Now we both recognize you have been wronged." Where do you think he's going to drift? Up or down? He's going to go down in session, man. He can't do anything else, because you're auditing him – one, you're auditing him at effect. Two, you are pulling on him the gadget that it's all done to him and he's never done anything. You are confirming this third mysterious hand that is busy holding onto this thing he's so – he's so busy, worried about and so forth. You're just burying that hand a little bit further. Because that hand is an overt, see? That's the overt act.

And you're carrying with you the whole sociological impact of life amongst the lowly. How is it a man can never get out of a slum? Well, you'll see this dramatized right straight on up into life in its solid aspects of today. You go down to Chicago, you find out there – there are various types of slums. Nothing to do with color, you can find white slums that are twice as slummy as any other kind of slums, you see, there's nothing to do with color. See, we're talking about slums. Well, the dominant aspect which you will find in that slum is "How you have been wronged," and that nobody can be at cause.

The thing is, you can't do anything about it. You look in their windows and you'll find out that lucky charms and things like this, probably occupy the greatest commerce of the whole place, see? It's all based on some kind of a wild luck, like a numbers racket, or it's based on: "Buy your lucky pixie fish," see, "today" and so forth, you know? You can't do anything about it, but maybe some goddess called lady luck, or something like that, nobody has run into lately. Actually she retired. I forgot to tell them that down in Reno. When they opened up Las Vegas she retired because she didn't like everything fixed.

Anyway, the whole score in that place is "You can't do anything about it. Nothing can be done about it," played hand in glove, counterpoint with, how you have been wronged. And we notice that federal governments which are – national governments and so forth, which are notorious for their affinity for the indigent – they just love the indigent. They won't take care of any industrious bloke that's doing a job in the society, but boy, they just love the indigent, to a point where they'd love to make them more indigent. And that is the mechanism they use in their social work. "How you have been wronged."

This is the – this is the yap used by the labor agitator, and so forth, to the workmen. "How you have been wronged." Everybody always feels worse after he's talked to one of them but never can quite figure out why. In other words, it's a black operation. Just pure and simple, a black operation. "How you have been wronged."

So when you sit there, and this fellow has actually kicked his sister downstairs and busted her skull in and you let him get off a fact that his father whipped him, "Yes, father whipped me." You don't even say, "Why did your father whip you?" no, but, "Well, father whipped me and he was always a brute."

"Oh, you poor fellow, well thank you, I guess we've got that straightened out in your life. Now what else can we find?"

"A teacher was mean to me." He doesn't say anything about those frogs in the inkwell, see. "A teacher was mean to me and everybody's mean to me."

The auditor who sits there and says, "Yes, we agree, everybody was mean. Yes, we agree, everything is fine. Oh, yes." He's saying at the same time, "You weren't at cause, you didn't do anything, it was all purposeless, there is no way you can regulate your fate, life is this way." See? Pah! What a corny tune. And that's life amongst the lowly. That's how they keep themselves lowly. That's how they get themselves stuck in. It's a series, it's not hard to understand, it's just a series of overt acts. Naturally, an individual who's guilty of overt acts does not like to be cause in that particular direction because he's held back from reaching in that direction by the fear they will perform further overt acts.

A thetan is basically afraid of committing overt acts. He doesn't really want to commit overt acts. I don't care what else is arranged anyplace. And as a result, when he does so, he tends to pull them back. He eaves himself in and there he goes.

So let's get now – I told you this was a long – a long dissertation to give you this third point, and you can very easily see how this thing could occupy not just a couple, three hours of lecture, but four or five sciences all in one fell swoop, such as labor relations and sociology and war against my not getting any votes, poverty, all of these... You could open up this subject, see. This subject becomes a big subject. But let's look at it in just the framework that we're addressing it in – is why can't some students audit and why can some students audit and why, more germane – since this is not always at the root of auditing but more germane to the pc – why do some pc's just never, never, never, never, never, never, never get any tone arm action? See?

Well, I've given you two sources and this was the third one. Now you think I'm going to tell you that they believe they have been wronged and you've got to get their overts off. No, if it were just that simple, I would have found it out a long time ago. But it isn't that simple. Remember, I told you a problem – solutions are as complex as the problem and this is pretty complex. This person has been so wronged – how a thetan can be wronged is pretty hard to do – but this person's been so wronged, that they have no longer any concept of an overt. This person cannot really handle the idea of an overt act. And that's what's wrong with that person.

Now the Christian already ran into this in the year *yup-gup*. He already ran into this and he tried to do something about it. He didn't run into this, he had another pitch in mind. But he came down the line saying, "Repent ye, repent ye, for the kingdom of heaven is at hand and you'd better repent." He was pulling an inversion. He wanted people to invert. He wanted people to admit their guilt. And it's interesting that amongst Middle Western Christians particularly, when you listen to their confessions and so forth, at Holy Roller meetings and so forth, all you hear is a long potpourri of things that they never were courageous enough to do in their whole lives. You could ask any one of them this burning question, "Are you bragging or confessing?" [laughter]

Now, there is the crux of the situation because they're getting off false overts in an effort to get off some overts. They feel that they just could say they were guilty enough of something, then somehow or another things would be better. And you've got to safeguard yourself as an auditor against a pc walking into this particular instance because they will invert and they go kind of mad on this subject. Christianity was trying to put them down a little

bit. You're looking for the honest, actual overt. The actual one. And that's what unpins him, because only the truth sets you free, see? It's the actual overts you're looking for.

And recognizing that if you don't find it, why you've committed him to a further progress of being stuck into it, see? Now you – what you want to do with this character when you run into him – and he's very frequent, he is not very unnumerous at all – I don't know what he runs but he certainly must run something like ten, twelve percent – is, you get him to define an overt act. Here's one of the gags – I'll give you a gag. You define an overt act. And then after he's got it all defined, is ask him why it isn't an overt and he'll tell you right away with the greatest automaticity you have ever heard in your life. He'll go *brrrrrrr!* Call out an overt act and he'll give you some sort of an answer and so forth, "Well, if I walked out and pushed a little child in the road and pushed him underneath an automobile, and so forth, that would be an overt act. That's an overt act, it's a – it's an act of harmfulness against some other person."

And if you weren't alert you could be pretty, pretty knuckleheaded about this and let it go at that and say, "We've got that licked." Because you haven't asked the little gee-whizzer that comes around the back door. And you're just going to, going to have your eyeballs snapped out about an inch and back into your skull a few times when you work this on your pc sometime in the future. You're going to really be upset. Even though the pc knew the – knew the gimmick, I mean he can't get around it.

"All right, you pushed this child out in the street, and so on, all right, very good. Now, why isn't that an overt act?"

Brrrrr! He'll have immediate instant explanation of why it isn't an overt act. And they don't think they can commit an overt act. Well, how are you going to get an overt act off if the person can't commit an overt act? They've committed overt acts, but they haven't committed any overt acts, so the net – net result of all this is they stay pinned into it tight, because there's no reality on this as an overt act at all. Then you've got to find something, searchingly, that they do really consider an overt, that would really be an overt act. It may be something very mild. The old effect scale tells you that it'd be something very mild on such a person. They've done something or failed to do something, and that was an overt act. And now you've got a real honest to goodness overt act, and it might be so petty, and so nothing, that it – you'd hardly categorize it as an overt act.

But it's actually real to this person because they can't answer this question, "Why isn't that an overt act?" "But it *is* an overt act." And sit there and look rather grievously about the situation, see. Didn't praise their mother's cakes. Of course, we also know that they knocked their mother down the cellar steps and broke her leg. But that wasn't an overt act, see, but didn't praise mother's cakes and that was the overt act, see. But that's a real overt act to the person. Now you can go up on a gradient scale like that. And there are numerous ways of tackling this. I'm not even trying to give you the whole embrace of how you tackle this problem. It's wide. Numerous ways you can handle this situation if you know the situation exists.

How do you walk upstairs on this thing? The individual could get off some overt acts but he wouldn't get any tone arm action and they're not real to him. He didn't do anything. You ask him how he – well, how it isn't an overt act, on a discussion basis, but not a processing basis. That's not a process. And he'll give you some very good reasons why it isn't an

overt act. You know right away that you haven't got how this is an overt act. That's that – that's that discussion level. And that's a cross-check of one kind or another which is left to your cleverness to walk around and straighten up, see.

Well, how do you finally do something about this? Well, there are probably numerous ways that something could be done about this. Fred here the other day was running – a person had found a real overt act, a real overt act, they really considered a real overt act and then Fred was auditing him – audited his justifications for having committed it. And as-is-ed all the person's justifications for having committed it, like a – an R1 type of approach, don't you see? Use justifications. Got the justifications off. Well, the thing would be getting realer and realer and realer. Unburden it, in other words. See, that was a very clever method of approach.

Now here's – here's a wide avenue of what do you do in order to bring about the reality of this. Now, it's no good to stand there and try to convince the fellow how serious it is because that's why he isn't saying it is an overt, because he's so convinced that it's so serious that he can't confront it. You find, if you went to a prison for instance, to process some blokes in a prison, one of the wildest things you'd run into is the fact that nobody there has ever committed a crime. That would be the most astonishing thing to you. And also how sorry they are for each other, that would also be a little astonishing unless you remember what I've told you here.

And also, how they've all been wronged and how society has wronged them. Let's look at where they are. They're in prison. Well, how come they're staying there? You see, you can't put a thetan in prison. Unless he's committed an overt act. Only then, the overt act, actually, would have to be against the prison or the people who were holding him in prison or prisons in general or metal or – or bars or block buildings or something like that. Otherwise you couldn't keep him in the place for a minute, you see?

So, what is this? How would you sort this out? Therefore, the criminal must be a very serious problem to the society because they lock him up all the time. But maybe he's a more serious problem to the criminal because he gets himself locked up all the time. How does he get locked up all the time? Well he commits overt acts all the time. I'm afraid this isn't a planned idea at all. I'm afraid this is totally reactive as far as life is concerned. Person commits overt acts, why, he locks himself up.

The criminals that go around and ask to be caught, alone accounts for the record of the FBI. Nothing else could account for it.

So there's the overt act-motivator sequence, see? There it starts operating. This doesn't mean, now, that everybody is guilty and everybody is this and everybody is that and everybody should be shot down in flames because they are this way. They have forgotten how to let themselves out of the trap. They've forgotten how to let themselves out of the trap. They don't know where the door is anymore. They're walking around in circles here. And they would as happily get out of the trap as anybody else. But they've lost the key and they've lost the door and that's it and that's the state you find him in. No reason standing around and saying, "Well, it's your own fault. You lost the key and you lost the door, so I guess you're locked up and there you are." No particular point in – in adopting that particular attitude either. Because that in itself is an overt, too, isn't it?

Thank you.

THE CYCLE OF ACTION: ITS INTERPRETATION ON THE E-METER

A Lecture given on 9 June 1964

Thank you. How are you?

Audience: Fine!

What's the date?

Audience: 9 June.

Nine June, 9 June AD 14. The year of the juggernaut. You look pretty good. You look numerous. [laughter]

All right. Well, today is a very important lecture, very important lecture since it applies to the young and the old, new and the strained and various other categories, and applies very, very directly and instantly to the auditing procedure rather than to techniques; and that is "The cycle of action and its interpretations on the E-Meter." This sounds authoritative enough, doesn't it? 'Tis, too. I have never seen anybody get in as much trouble with as little an item as the auditor and the cycle of action. This easily is the most confused area, field, the most misunderstood, the most maligned, the most defined upside down and backwards type of thing anybody ever had anything to do with.

Well now, just why you're having trouble with this and just why organizations are having trouble with this and just why this is such a gruesome subject is because it's all over the GPMs. And that's why you have to pay attention to it. In the first place, it ain't natural, and you Scientologists, being a cut above the naturalness of normality, of course buck against and see something slightly wrong in the whole idea of time and its forward progress. You get some inkling very early on in the field of Scientology. You say, "Well, there's something wrong with time." A lot of you talk about it. A lot of you say, "Well, if I just had more time or less time." It takes that mild a form. And on the other side of it, you begin to look at time as some kind of a weird taskmaster that you wot not of and want to do less with.

And one of the most interesting recent cognitions I've had in processing, if you don't mind my mentioning something of that line, was to find myself looking at a zero or absence of time. And I was in a very interesting state there for a while. And I took a look at this and I stared it straight in the eye, and it was about – at first I didn't know if I liked it, because if you don't have time, of course, you don't have a lot of other things. And then I took a look at this

and I was trying to find out what was making a pressure on my face, and I found out there wasn't anything making a pressure on my face. There was just a nothingness making a pressure on my face, and the pressure on my face was being made because there wasn't anything there. Do you understand? A completely negative look.

Now, I, of course, immediately invalidated this and said I know some of the end words and some this sort of thing, and I know where these things live and therefore I've just gotten one of these into restimulation and so forth. And I promptly and instantly tried to run this down and get this thing pretty well squared around, and I was unable to spot it as any kind of GPM bric-a-brac.

What I had actually done was escape the time stream. And it was a very funny sensation. Very, very peculiar. But at the same time it was more natural than being in the time stream. You get so habituated to being in the time stream that a sudden cessation of it is uncomfortable. I can remember the old story of the little girl who hit herself over the head with a hammer continuously because it felt so good when she stopped, you know? Another case, a little girl also, that had a perpetual howling migraine headache and had had it for so long that she didn't know what it was. And an auditor turned it off and she felt awfully peculiar. This was life without a migraine headache, you see? And it was something brand-new that she was not used to at all.

Now time, of course, is something that one should be able to move into, out of, up into the forward of and back into, you know? You should be able to straighten out yesterday's goofs, in other words. And at one time or another you were quite capable of doing so. And then you slipped into the time stream and have been going down the line ever since. Now, therefore, I have somewhat of a natural antipathy to the idea that time is there or that something has a beginning, a middle and an end; the beginning, the middle and the end. Because that is a – that is an authoritative action laid on by time.

Well, let me show you something here. You are processing in the physical universe through and across the agreement of the physical universe. And you are making yourself a very good show of going along with the time stream, and if you do this, you are then processing a bank which lays the time stream in with an ax, and you are trying to resolve a subject which is, to a terrible degree, cycles of action. That is to say, the bank is just cycle of action with exclamation points. And you're trying to resolve this, and unless you pay attention to this, you jam the bank. Do you follow me? You jam the bank.

In other words – well, let me say it this way: the pc – the pc has got a sliver in his finger and you don't pull the sliver out. You say, "Well, there are no slivers," and you convince him that it's actually because he has a lot of reactivity on the subject of pain and discomfort. And you sell him this bill of goods, you see? And you tell him the truth, see? You say, "Well, it's – the only reason you're experiencing this pain in your finger because of the sliver and so forth is you have some GPMs and so on, and that's the whole thing and so forth. And there you are! Now, do you feel better?" And he'll say, "No!" Well, why? Well, you just processed him a little too high. Now, maybe you could explain this to an OT, but then, of course, he wouldn't have a sliver in his finger. Or if he did, it – he could as-is it. See?

If you – probably the only thing wrong with the gropings of Mary Baker Eddy and so forth, is she was on cloud nine to the ninth, see? Well, maybe she could make some of that gap, but her articulation of it brought about the nonsense of "if you just not-is it and say it isn't there, it ain't." Let me point it out to you that it hasn't worked. That is not a broadly workable action. It has enough workability so that it retains people's interest. It's the little red flag hanging out. They say, "There's something there. We don't know quite what it is." Then they get it all mixed up with right thinking and power of prayer and living a good life and get into the wrong end of the GPMs and spin, see? Nothing more dangerous than handling something you don't know what it is, particularly anything with as much voltage as this stuff.

So therefore, you enter the wrong end of the line, don't you see? Try to go up too up-scale and you say to the fellow, "Well, you obviously don't have a sliver in your finger because actually that's a manifestation which is created by compulsions forced off on you by the idea that *blah-blah-suh* and so on, and it's actually the hundred and ninety-fifth series and..." You know. Glib, you see? He's still got a sliver in his finger.

So you say to this fellow, "All right. You shouldn't have to pay any attention to time. You shouldn't pay any attention at all to the cycle of action because the cycle of action is just laid in by the bank, and it's your reactivity and has to do with the time stream and, of course, that's all above us people. Okay, evaporate!" [laughter]

And by golly, he doesn't, you know? Well, there's no sense in feeling upset about it because he doesn't evaporate, you see?

Now particularly at lower levels, you're processing straight across this thing called a cycle of action. And boy, it's in there with an ax! The proper sequence and order of things.

The mind is a fiendishly orderly thing. Most of you think of the mind as a great confusion. It isn't. You're the one that's confused.

And the most orderly thing in the world is one of these reactive banks. It is the most precise thing. Some old lady, you know, some old lady, crotchety and so forth, been living by herself for ninety years and so on, and somebody comes down and puts a tea caddy, you know, just one sixteenth of an inch crosswise on the table. Boy! He has it! Well, that's the reactive bank. It reacts just about like that, see? It reacts terribly. You leave out a comma in it, and it just gets very upset, you see? It's a fiendish precision of the thing. And it all follows the same patterns and so forth. And it's very interesting. Your pc, he's all very *bloooahh*.

Well, actually, the pc has to come up through an ability to confront that much order. He's below the ability to confront that much order. He's in an *awful* state of confusion so he's got to come up through this state of order up to the other side of it. And one of the most dominant factors of the bank is the cycle of action – that things have a beginning, they continue and they end. And that is one of the keynotes of order. It has – really, the summation of the bank couldn't add up to anything more strenuously than that. The whole bank is put together on this basis. Things have a beginning, they continue and they end. So it's no wonder you have trouble with it.

Now, the auditor who is having trouble with it because he is below being able to face up to that much order; that's one thing. And the auditor who is having trouble with it because

he can't get back down to that much order; that would be another thing. But equally, a failure to do so would produce no gain in the pc.

Now, where the cycle of action is violated in the pc, the order of his bank is violated and therefore it doesn't as-is. It's that succinct. It's that glib a statement can be made on the subject.

The situation then is that the road out is the road through, and the road through is paralleled by the cycle of action. So the road out follows the cycle of action. And you'll find this cycle of action manifested everywhere in processing. And where the auditor chronically and violently disobeys, turns sideways from and has nothing to do with the cycle of action, he's in trouble, because he's thrown the pc below the fiendish demands of the bank. In other words, the bank parallels this degree of order. And where the auditor does not follow through that much order, why, the auditor does not get the pc through the bank because it is not parallel with the requirements of the bank. It's like trying to process somebody on his father when the difficulty is with his mother. Do you see?

So what you have to do, what you have to do – and this we have proven over a long period of time – this is quite empirical, by the way, this was never derived. This was something that just grew like Topsy along with processing. What you have to do is parallel this thing called the cycle of action. And there is no harm in your doing so. There is no detriment – there is no detriment to you for doing so, and there's certainly no detriment to the pc for going into that agreement that time and a cycle of action exist. In other words, you don't get into trouble – you get out of trouble by agreeing that it exists.

So it's for the nonce and for now it exists. So therefore, you find the cycle of action raising its head everywhere in processing. And a person who cannot approximate this cycle of action as an auditor gets his pc into continuous trouble. And it's not slight trouble. It is enormous trouble. It is just catastrophic. Because, of course, he's gone right straight up against the bank and run the bank wrong way to. Every time you don't process a pc with attention to the cycle of action, you're processing the pc against the bank. So as a result the bank will jam. And you see that manifestation with a high tone arm, with a badly acting needle and other such manifestations. A pc that is not running well has first and foremost had the cycle of action violated. That you can be absolutely certain was the case. Pc isn't running well; the first thing you can say about the pc is the cycle of action has been violated.

Now, you see, "Well, I'm not getting tone arm action on this pc." All right. The first thing we can say is the cycle of action has been violated. Of course, this is a rather broad, general statement. Unless we know what else we're talking about, it could be rather meaningless. Because it's almost, "Well, the sun isn't shining because there – it is a cloudy day," see? It's just the reverse of the coin. So that's what you know.

Now, don't let me hear of any of you back in an organization or in a private practice or something of this sort sending me a query about some pc – you can send me all the queries about pcs you want to – but don't send me a query about a pc with a blank, flat, staring look of "What's wrong with this pc" and accompany it with a hundred and seventy-five started processes, not one of them completed, and say, "Why does this pc have a high tone arm?"

I've exaggerated the hundred and seventy-five because I was too bored to count them, but I did estimate that was something like the number of processes on a case query which I just had last night. I'm not lecturing you out of that particular case because it's one of many. They come in quite routinely and regularly. So the first thing you know about a case – that's the first thing you know about a case that isn't running right, is that the cycle of action has been violated.

Now, we could go back a little earlier than this. We can say, "Why isn't the case not running right," but "Why isn't the case living right?" Well, the cycle of action is being violated.

Now, there's two ways a cycle of action can be violated. One is by – and this is true of life, not processing; true of life, not processing – one way it can be violated is too slavish an obedience to it. There one is out of agreement with the cycle of action in the first place and he is being forced by everything under the sun, moon and stars to follow this particular cycle of action and he practically gets up to the brain ventilation point, see?

He doesn't like it. The fellow who gets up and goes to a bum job, you know, that sort of thing. All of the blessings of the machine age actually lie almost exactly in that zone that I've just been talking about, you see? Well, there is because power of choice is being overthrown. Now, you must not really confuse a power of choice and a cycle of action. Now, if a cycle of action is being followed then, against the power of choice – against the power of choice, see, the person's power of choice is being overwhelmed and overthrown and he is following a cycle of action – we set up quite a conflict. Oddly enough, there is the one zone where the person's power of choice can be overthrown and he can be somewhat improved. This gives you the idea of what value the cycle of action has. It is up there with power of choice!

Well that's a very high – that's a very high point, power of choice. The person's self-determinism, the pc at cause, don't you see? This is power of choice. And we're ranking right along with it, cycle of action, because for a while cycle of action will be fought by the individual and then – here's the trick – by following a cycle of action to a point where he or she is used to it, it will then begin to as-is enough bank to compensate for the power of choice which will then return. You see the trickiness of this, see?

Therefore, you sometimes could force a pc through 8-C against his power of choice but only so long as you repeated the cycle of action. If you were doing a sloppy job of repeating the cycle of action, processing the pc against... this is not a recommendation to process a pc against his power of choice. I'm just giving you order of magnitude. If you'd continued to use the cycle of action in orderly progress of commands, the pc's power of choice would have been more freed than it would have been impeded because you would have as-ised more bank than you were piling up. So it isn't the person's power of choice that gives him reactivity. Self-determinism is something that is imprisoned in reactivity. A cycle of action is the prison.

So therefore, following and using a cycle of action will bring about nothing but a freeing of power of choice, whether the pc consents to it or not. You follow how this goes? This is very intricate. Don't ever tell me now that I recommended to you that you overwhelm the pc's power of choice. I'm just telling you that the cycle of action is comparable.

So you have the determinism of the thetan practically versus – his power of choice and his self-determinism is versus the fiendish cycle of action precision of the bank and this universe. This is the way the thing turns. It's because having started here you inevitably get to there that makes this universe a trap. If you start in at five minutes of nine, you certainly will arrive at five minutes after nine. Wherever you land in space, you are certainly going to land at five minutes after nine in time. That's for certain, isn't it?

Well look, that is an overwhelm. Whichever way you want to look at it, that's an overwhelm. You don't have to do a thing about it, and as a matter of fact there isn't anything you can do about it. You take any human being and sit them down in a chair at five minutes of nine, and no matter what they say, no matter what they do, no matter how they protest, no matter how many books they read or anything else, they are inevitably going to arrive at five minutes after nine. Now, you want to look at the biggest overwhelm there is in the universe – that's it. You want to see what the total overthrow of power of choice must be – that's it. That's the one thing you can't do anything about.

Now, going from point A in space to point B in space is something you can do something about. You can kick like billy-o. You very often get dragged to point B willy-nilly. But nevertheless you've said a – you've made an uproar about it, see? You've at least done that or kicked hell out of A or done something. Do you see? You've done something about it. So that space transfer from A to B in space is not necessarily the degree of overwhelm that time is. In fact, it's such an overwhelm that possibly one or two of you until this minute had never recognized the inevitability of arriving at five minutes after nine. It was just so natural. Well, oddly enough, there really isn't anything natural about it at all. It's the most unnatural proceeding anybody ever had anything to do with.

Therefore, that progress through time is paralleled by cycle of action, and you can approximate time with a cycle of action. It's very close to making time. It's very close to a process you might call "Make some time." And that's a very funny process. That's a very funny process. Now therefore, you can start the pc at A and move the pc through to B, and by distance confusion, he has the illusion of moving through time. Time and space are very easily interchanged, don't you see?

So sometimes you can move him from A to B and just from A to B or get him to move something from A to B, A to B, A to B, A to B – this is very elementary processing – and he all of a sudden differentiates between distance and time. Well look, that's a step in the right direction. Do you see what's got – when I say differentiates, what am I talking about but freeing his ability to see? Well, that must have something to do with power of choice. In other words, he must be able to perceive something new here. He must have a new freedom of observation or he wouldn't have a cognition.

Cognitions only come about on freed perception or freed self or renewed self-determinism or whatever else you want to put on it as a label, you see? The individual is be – is coming loose from the trap. He's that much looser from the trap than he was a moment ago when he can say, "Ah yeah! The third bar is rusty!" Well, he's so much been in the trap before he's never noticed that the third bar was rusty. Well, being able to notice that the third bar on

the window is rusty is to that degree freeing yourself from the trap. See, you're just that much less the effect of the trap. Do you see that?

I found myself the other day being haunted by a GPM. I wondered if it was out of gear or had slid loose from its moorings or something of this sort. And this was all very important because if I missed on this one, as in any of them, why, I'll wrap you around the telegraph pole. And boy, did I resent that for a while, you know? Can't privately get myself snarled up anymore. If I snarl up, it becomes a big overt, see? And I freed that, and that was the end of that. But anyway, I was taking a look at the situation – I still feel that way but not so violently – anyhow, I was taking a look at this confounded GPM that was busy floating around and so forth. I couldn't place it anyplace, and I knew it belonged somewhere and so forth, but it didn't make any sense where it was going. And I suddenly realized that *I* was restimulating *it*. [laughter] This was something new. And I sat back and I said, "Well, what do you know. *Huh-huh-huh*. Bronx cheer. Get lost, you know?" Felt tough! Felt like Vixie out here chasing an imaginary burglar that she was sure wasn't one, you know?

Anyway, I was restimulating it. It was the effect of me – I wasn't the effect of it. Interesting, interesting view. Now, what am I saying in essence there? What am I stating in essence there? I was enough freed from its overwhelm that I could perceive what was happening to it instead of what was it doing to me. Now this is – you see this typically all the time in overt act-motivator sequence. If somebody walks in off the street, all he can talk to you about is overwhelm, overwhelm, overwhelm, overwhelm, you see? You know, "Oh, life has done me in, man. It's just kicked my *oh ayouho-o!* It's lying – oh it's terrible. It's – you know, I ... Look – look, broken neck, you know. Look – look at those hemp marks all around my neck and so. Well, did me in, you know. Ruined – I'm wrecked, you know." And as I was talking to you about obliquely, it – this is quite a mechanism for holding somebody down. You just tell him all the time he's overwhelmed, you see? And tell him he never can be free and he's really had it – wronged, you know. It's a trap!

Well, a lot of you when it first came out on O/W, flinched at invading the personal privacy of an individual to this degree. You thought, "Well, that's something." And some of you were too enthusiastic. But what in essence were you actually doing there? You were just turning the tide. You were saying to this fel... we didn't care what crime he was reporting. We were trying to find something he'd done on his own free will that he then had to restrain and couldn't own. Because this is the mechanism: One does things which he then can't own up to and therefore caved in on because of it, see? He can't take responsibility for his own acts, don't you see? And O/W in its purest essence has never really been well understood since all it is, is – it's not a lesson in morality. It's not a lesson in being good. It is simply a lesson in "What power of choice have you exerted in life?" And you probably could approach the fellow's worst crime just on that gradient and that understanding. You could say, "What have you caused?" But unfortunately, with a great many pcs you get a lot of gobbledygook.

How hard it is to get the individual to admit his first overt. The first time he ever admitted an overt. Not the first overt he ever did; that's lost in antiquity. But just to get him to admit for the first time that he did something that wasn't quite nice. Well, of course, you're striking into the middle of society's effort to get him to restrain admission of this, which is a big overwhelm. And you're getting him to own up to the fact that he's been cause. Now, you

can do some interesting things with this because he owns up and says he was cause and then he immediately says he wasn't cause because it was justified. And then he comes around to a point eventually where he says it was cause because "I did it," but then it was justified. Of course, every time he says it's justified, he's saying that it's not power of choice. "Who have you shot for no reason at all?" See? Now, that auditing question would be a little bit too high but is actually the essence of the question.

The reason why you use an overt, of course, is you're going up against the social mores as the point of overwhelm. You just choose this as the point of overwhelm. So therefore at lower-level processing, you are choosing the society as the point of overwhelm when you're running O/W, and you want the individual's revolts against this overwhelm as an expression of his power of choice. Now, some point of agreement with society can be found somewhere in that, that will undo attention from society.

I'll scale it all down to lower IV processing. You could ask some question like this, "What social activity or what third dynamic activity have you gone along with?" You, oddly enough, would find that this is an auditing question which, weirdly enough, would eventually bring up overt acts. It would be quite magical. You say, "What – what social activities, what customs, what beliefs, have you gone along with?" He starts naming them off, and the next thing you know gives you an overt act! Well, that overt act is nothing more than freeing himself from the straitjacket that he's been following along the social plane.

Well, that's a fairly innocent one, but it does people a lot of good and is very good lower-level processing. O/W, agreements – not disagreements – agreements, communication, things that are real, subjective realities, these sort of things, they're all pretty terrific. You could put those into the same rationale.

But how is the individual getting free? Well, the individual is getting free to the degree that he can step back and look at it. The individual can look at the situation he is in and to that degree is free of it. When he can really look at it, he's really free of it.

Well, now let's apply all this to the sixth dynamic and we'll get a much more subtle level, much less easily perceived by the ordinary human being. And that is what I've been talking to you about: Time. Freedom from the time span and freedom from cycle of action. Now, this is so woven into the pc regardless at what level he is, that even your social addresses, you know "What social agreement have you had, what have you done to society, how have you exerted your self-determinism against society" – you know, getting him to admit himself as cause someplace or another; now all of that, by the way, is all very, very, very junior to the sixth dynamic. No matter who he's shooting, he's standing on MEST, firing across space, don't you see, and his action is measured against time. I don't care what act he's doing. I don't care what he's agreeing with. I don't care what's happening to him. If he's in this universe, that's what's going on. In other words, he's in total slavish agreement with the sixth dynamic. So when you're processing this person, if you violate that to an enormous degree, he won't know what it is that is being violated. It's being violated to such a degree that he can't tolerate it. His tolerance of that violation is terrible. Do you understand what I mean?

You're processing this individual maybe – let's take the social unit or something like that, that we're processing him about, is his family. Well, let's not even take society. Let's take his immediate family, see?

Well, "What family custom have you gone along with?" or something like this. We don't care what we're taking up. And if you violate the cycle of action on the sixth dynamic – it's clear up here at Level VI auditing, see – but if you violate it down there at Level I, it responds on the E-Meter. You violate the cycle of action.

Now, how could you violate the cycle of action? Well, you have to understand how many cycles of action there are. And there are quite a few of them. They categorize on an expanding perimeter. Let's take this as the first cycle of action is the auditing comm cycle. Why do you call it a comm cycle? Because it is a cycle of action. And that is the first one which you see badly expressed on the low-level pc on the meter. This is the first one that shows up on the meter.

You see, I don't care what you're processing this pc on. He's nowhere near Level VI, you see. He's not doing anything about time or something of this sort. You're trying to find out if the desk is real or something, you know, or if he's got an auditor. And yet this cycle of action is so insidious that it weaves itself straight into that question you're asking, and you won't be able to get away with it. It isn't something you can get away with. And that is what is so fiendish about it. It's a point in auditing that can't be violated. If it's violated, you get lack of success. That's your dirty needle.

You say to the fellow, "Well, what have you... what did you do to your father?" And he says, "Well, I uh..." And you say, "Well, we've been into all that. Tell me something about your mother." You have an instant needle manifestation, instant! It'll be right there staring you in the face.

The young and beginning auditor is always mystified why E-Meters have such nervous needles. He blames them for all sorts of things and so forth. And yet it is just this violation, continuous violation of the auditing comm cycle. And it gives him a dirty needle. And that dirty needle is expressing the jam-up of energy in the pc's bank by reason of the violation of the momentary cycle of action. That auditing comm cycle – when you violate the auditing comm cycle, it will jam up energy in the pc's mind and that registers on the needle as a little *bzzzt*. In other words, you don't have to go out and be very esoteric about this. You can grab anybody off the street, put him on a meter, say, "Well, what's your name?"

And he said, "Oh, my name, well, it's..."

"Well, I don't want that."

Dirty needle. See, you asked him a question and you didn't let him answer it, and you didn't acknowledge when he did. And right away you got a dirty needle.

This is pure tyranny and is something that many auditors shudder against, and when they are first presented with the facts of the case that *they* are making the dirty needle, you never saw so many flinches and winces in your life. They cut and run. "Oh, me? No! I couldn't be. It's just the quality of this pc." Oh, no, it's not the quality of the pc. It's that the auditor violated the auditing comm cycle and that produced a disagreement with that very powerful

being called the reactive bank. And when it produced this, to this – just to this degree, a disagreement with its mandates concerning cycles of action, Section 1, paragraph, "And whoever shalt violate this will get one awful pain in his gut. Period!" You know? Real proclamation. All right, the auditor says, "Well, all right. Now, what is your name? ... Oh, that's all right. I'm sorry. I uh – I don't need it on this form." Dirty needle, see?

The meter measures energy manifestations taking place in the pc's bank. Of course, we know the bank is something the pc is making all by himself, unassisted, but this is not a popular theory with somebody who is being subjected to very heavy psychosomatic illnesses.

You say, "Well, you're doing it all yourself," and you're liable then to have violated many more things than a cycle of action. [laughter]

His awareness, then, is not up to the point of recognition of the reality of things. In other words, you've given him eight thousand gallons of reality, and you've given him one erg of attention with which to perceive it. And I'm afraid they would have to be comparable. You'd have to have eight thousand units of reality, and you'd have to have eight thousand units of freed attention to perceive it with. Do you see? It's got to be comparable.

So you can't come along – it's a – the reverse, by the way, is true, just speaking in that line. You give somebody a hundred thousand units of attention, and you give him a thousandth of a unit of reality and he's liable to consider it unimportant. You process somebody up high enough and you say, "Now let's take this conflict between Russia and the United States, you know," and he'd say, "Yeah, well, what about it?"

"Well, it's a terrible problem."

"Well, who-huh?"

You have sort of taken him by storm, you see? You have said something is an enormous reality, but he has an enormous attention factor to put on it, don't you see? And he can't see it as an enormous reality. He can very easily be persuaded to discount its importance and think it is very unimportant. You got the idea? So you could actually get the reverse.

But when you get the amount of attention available and the amount of thing to be perceived comparable, why, then it is perceivable. But when you tip this thing wrongly, either way – well, this fellow can understand everything there is in the whole world of science and some little kid comes up to him and asks him why he can't tie a string to the end of the kite or something like this. This fellow's brains go really creak trying to get down to this point, you see, where he can explain to the kid something about this kite, you know? And he's liable to become very esoteric about it before he gets through, and he's liable to miss it completely. In other words, he's got too much freed attention on the subject in order to regard or concentrate it. You see, so this thing can be in reverse.

But when you take the pc who has one-thousandth of an erg of attention and he's being overwhelmed by a hundred billion cubits to the hundred billionth power of reality, he's got no attention to confront it with, and you violate this one little thing that you can violate. See, there aren't a lot of things you can violate. There's this one little thing you can violate: violate this cycle of action. Bang! There it is, right straight on your meter.

Now, there are fantastic numbers of things, then, that you could violate that wouldn't express itself on the meter. It would just be beyond his level of reality. You wouldn't get those expressed. But cycle of action – if you ask a question, he's supposed to answer the question and you're supposed to acknowledge the question – is a built-in mechanism that is so solid it's like putting the engine in a Rolls-Royce, you know? It's just built-in. Instant response.

You say, "What is your name? Oh, I don't need your name," – dirty needle. Do you follow this? Well, there it is in its most elementary and stupid form, see? I could make an appeal to some auditors who get dirty needles rather regularly to take it in its most elementary and stupid form and perceive it: that it is simply that they're causing a dirty needle by not following out a cycle of action. They don't even have to worry about why there's a cycle of action. If they just followed that out, they wouldn't have a dirty needle.

Let's take the next cycle of action. Next cycle of action: a process. I'm just giving you broad categories here. Let's take a process. By the way, we've been very successful – I've been very successful in teaching people this. I shouldn't be snarling about it at all because it isn't a point of loss as far as I'm concerned. As soon as I properly defined a cycle of action as something that began and continued and ended, that elementarily and so forth, people – people have been doing much, much better with it. And they're not now assigning all kinds of wild reasons to why their pc is misbehaving on a meter. But maybe this lecture will give you a little broader insight into it.

Now, the process cycle of action is not expressed on the needle. It is expressed on the tone arm. The tone arm is what is being expressed – expressing here. Your tone arm starts to move on a given subject: pigs. "Pigs?" Tone arm moves. "All right, what about pigs? Pigs?" "Pigs, they grunt." Tone arm moves. "Pigs?" "They are in sties." Tone arm moves. "Pigs?" "Farmers raise them." "Pigs?" "I don't like pork." "Pigs?" "Hey, what do you know, I was once Jewish. Hey, yeah, pigs. Yeah, what do you know!" No more tone arm action.

Well now, please plot exactly what happened here, because there is a nice example. The guy gets back and he sorts out, you'd think at first glance, cause. No, he just puts himself at cause over pigs. He eventually moves up so he's got a cause on the subject of pigs, and he's not involved with pigs, and pigs are not overwhelming him and his tone arm action ceases. No more tone arm action. Well, you've started, continued and ended a cycle of action on the subject of pigs. That's the lot.

And when you get down to looking this thing over, you find out that any subject addressed has to be continued in its address to a point where the pc's on top of it. And at that moment, the tone arm will cease to move.

Now, if the pc can get on top of it at all, the tone will move. If slightly, it will move. Well, we've got the parity here. We've got the subject which has overwhelmed the pc and we've got the pc with enough attention to regard this subject – enough attention to regard the subject potentially. That's how – that's what you mean when you say, "I audited him over his head." In other words, he never under God's green earth could have gotten on top of this subject, and it wouldn't have given tone arm action either, see?

But it just so happens that if he's potentially got, at any given instant, enough attention or power of choice or self-determinism – whatever you want to call it – to get up on top of

this subject with some processing, he will climb as long as the TA is in motion and will cease to climb the moment he has become free of it. And that is expressed on the tone arm. That's your tone arm talking.

I'll go over that again. If it's real to him at all, it will register on the tone arm. Even if slightly, it will still register on the tone arm. We're not really interested in processing things that only register on the needle. A pc has a tendency to become overwhelmed, because you very often have too slight a needle action. A Mark V is too powerful... well, actually, a needle – a needle action on the old-time Mathison was a tone arm action on the Mark V, don't you see? You'd already – the pc had to be hit with a truck to get this – the needle to move, don't you see?

It's not true, so it's – what's changed here is not your viewpoint or understanding of the subject. What's changed here is the quality of the meter you're using. And the Mark V and its equivalents, such as the Azimuth meter and so forth, give you a very, very fine point here. And if you start just following its needle, you find – will find yourself misgauging what the pc can get on top of because it will read things that he couldn't quite get on top of, don't you see? So you follow the tone arm. You don't follow the needle. The only precaution you want to take is follow the tone arm. You assess by tone arm.

You go down a long list of things to audit on this pc. You're checking off parts of his life or something like this, you want to look for one that moves that tone arm. Even if it's – only moves it 0.1, you want something that moved that tone arm while you were busy keeping your needle at Set, see? You wanted a motion there. Now, if you got that motion, the rule follows that the pc has potentially got enough attention to get on top of that overwhelm.

You have found something that is overwhelming the pc, and you have found that he potentially can get on top of it. He isn't on top of it, but he potentially can. In other words, you've found a wall that he can walk up. See, you're not – you're not sending him up the side of the Empire State Building with slippery leather shoes, see? You're giving him something he can climb. Therefore, he will process to wins, providing you don't leave him in a state of half-overwhelm with regard to this thing! Because if you leave him in a state of half-overwhelm in regard to this thing, it's got him half-overwhelmed.

You've only dug him half out, and then you go find a new subject and you dig him half out of this new subject! And then you go find a new subject and dig him half out of this subject, you've got three half-overwhelms multiplied, and they make a total overwhelmed pc. You see this?

Now, your cycle of action there is simply, basically expressed by – when you start to get the pc on top of something get him on top of it. And he will object seriously to not being brought on top of it. We're not interested in whether he objects or not at this particular moment, we're merely interested in the meter responses, and what is the meter response. Eventually, it will be a frozen meter. That meter will be frozen.

In other words, you found some subject he could have gotten on top of and you just raised him up to a point where he was still overwhelmed – you didn't flatten your tone arm action, in other words – and then you found another subject that he got half on top of. He's still overwhelmed by that one. Now you go find another subject that he could get – and get

him half on top of that one where he's still overwhelmed. You've got three overwhelms, and three overwhelms don't make a right pc, man. You never bring him out to where he can say, "Hey, there's rust on the third bar," see? That's all you're trying to do. And at the moment when he says, "There's rust on the third bar," the high probability is you've lost your tone arm action at that point.

There is a limit to which you can carry a tone arm cycle beyond its point of flatness. Here's this very vivid – that if it took you ten minutes to flatten the tone arm action out of something and you then went for two hours to see if it were flat, something is liable to become impatient around here or upset. You see? Because you've misestimated the length of time of this tone arm action.

Now, that isn't the direction that people err, however, but I'm just putting it in as a fact in passing. The direction where the error takes place is it takes them an hour to get some good tone arm action on this subject and then they drop it. *Yaaaow!*

They got it in plain view where it was in good and properly and horribly and meanly and viciously overwhelming the pc, see. Where he had it in full view, you know. You sort of got him as if you had a stroboscopic picture of the thing, you know: The tiger is halfway through the air, you see, and he's standing there wondering whether he's going to be able to grapple with the tiger or not, you see. We're just at this point of parity – who's going to win...?

Let's run another process. Let's leave another tiger jumped half through the air, see? You can only do a few of these and you'll run out of chips because you're going up against the cycle of action of the bank as well as the self-determinism of the pc. Pc's trying to win on this one and so forth – you're going up against that. But you're basically – what's causing – what makes the arm lock up, which is what we're interested in, is because you're going up against the cycle of action of the bank. In other words, you've violated the cycle of action of the bank.

An action was begun and it was not complete and he is hung in the middle of the action and that locks up the TA. And you can go down a line of auditors and just spot where this has happened, where it's happened, where it's happened, where it's happened. And some of those auditors will tell you that nothing is happening in the session. They will also tell you that nothing has happened with the pc. Ha! Ha! Ha! Well, if you're unlucky, it happened with his last auditor, and the auditor's reports were fragmentary and illegible; if you're unlucky. Could get pretty grim, in other words.

Now, the trick here is to find out when the tone arm action ceases. The trick is not even really to find out something that will move the tone arm. People bang their brains out over this: "How do we find something that moves the tone arm?" You had better find what has moved the tone arm. If you're having to ask yourself this question of, "What has moved the tone arm?" and the tone arm isn't moving and the person has been processed for a while, then you had jolly well better ask yourself the reverse question: "What has moved the tone arm?" And process out of nothing but the person's folder and auditor's reports. Don't ever start a new action on this pc.

I don't care if the tone arm action that you're flattening was noted in 1958, man, flatten it! Whatever it is that you can find that ever moved the tone arm, flatten it. And just keep this

up and you'll move him out of all these unfinished cycles of action and the bank will unjam. It's as elementary as that. Every new action that you start without completing these old actions in auditing is liable to produce a greater jam. Your job – your job is very simple to this degree, but you ask yourself very often the wrong question when you face a pc on whom you're trying to get tone arm action.

You ask yourself, "What will get tone arm action on this pc?" and you respond accordingly. And you'd love some tests of some kind or another, you'd like some of this, you'd love assessments, you'd like a new process or so on. You're at the wrong end of the business. That's the simple one, that's the simple one. You can take anybody off the street and have them sit down and pick up the meter electrodes and talk, just let them talk for a few minutes, and you're going to get tone arm action of some kind or another. This would be a very peculiar human being that you didn't note some tone arm action. "*Rattledy-rov, goff-goff, woof-woof, val-vlaow blaow-blaow-blaow,*" somewhere along the line they're going to get tone arm action. You make a note of it: That's a subject you process. The trouble with it is it doesn't look – make you look very professional and it doesn't seem to be very adroit. It's not adroit. Is a car in motion, is it stopped? I mean it's just about as much judgment involved in it as that. The guy goes, "*Rattledy-bang rattledy-bang.*" Somebody says, "Well, I really don't like to have to go down to processing a person on itsa. I really wouldn't know how to... how to untangle some – some pc without just plain itsa. I wouldn't ask them any auditing questions. I don't know how to ask them any auditing questions. I haven't got anything to ask them."

Well, I'm not going to make the mistake of saying I know all about this pc. Even when I have a sixth sense along this line, I'm not still going to make that mistake. I'm going to make the pc hand me the first thing that is real to the pc. Because I can see a lot more wrong with the pc than the pc can see wrong with himself, man. Don't ever downgrade your observation. Pick it up. Say this is very interesting, that fellow's got a gobbledygookitis. He's got his rhombolis on backwards. Don't – don't – don't downgrade your ability to look. But you don't know which of those things is real to the pc. And what will tell you, what will tell you – all these things are perfectly true – but what will tell you is that tone arm, very nicely.

And how does it tell you? Well, it tells you with just plain itsa, and that's all the test you need. That's all the test you need. This – I'm talking about just casual practice of running pcs. And he says, "*Rattle-rattle bong-bong yowp-yowp-yowp-yowp-yowp,*" or something like that, and – or he says, "Well, I never do like to talk to people. I'm very sorry, and I've always been this way. I've just never liked to talk to anybody and so forth." Well, he's running a – he's running an out of communication process, and we mustn't let him go along very long that way because that's out of agreement and that's going to run him wrong way to after a while. And we can let it go along long enough to find something to dive in on. But then we dive, see? "Well, what part of your grandmother were you in favor of?" you know, you'll find very often will produce far more tone arm action than he has been getting on parts of his grandmother that he wasn't in favor of, you see?

There are all kinds of stunts along this line. You process in the direction of ARC, of course. You don't preconceive that you know all about the case before it's opened its yeeep. And you let the – you take the easy course. See, you don't work at it so hard. What you get tone arm action on, flatten!

Well, how about unwillingness to flatten it? Ah well, I already – you've already have seen pcs recover on 8-C when they were being dragged across rooms and their fists planted against walls. In other words, this cycle of action is the only zone or area where you can overwhelm, to any degree, the preclear's power of choice. You mustn't overwhelm his power of choice in any other zone or area. See, don't evaluate for him. Don't do these other things to overwhelm his power of choice, but finish that cycle of action, brother, over your dead body does it end, you know.

When he comes into session the next day, "Well, that's – that – process we were running yesterday..." – we were getting tone arm action. It was traveling all over the dial, see – "process we were running yesterday, I don't know, I mean I had a headache and I had a headache all night and I didn't feel so good last night and I don't really think we ought to finish that process."

"All right. Good. Well, I'm sorry you felt that way and so forth. Say you felt bad and so forth. Now, exactly what agreement you had about your grandmother did we take up yesterday that made you feel that way?"

See, you don't have to finish the cycle of action with an ax. You can be pretty smooth about the whole thing. And you go right on and you run that [begins to speak very silent and slow] until we've got the tone arm down here and it is 2.75 still and the needle starts to tighten a little bit and we say, "Good. Well, that cognition you had a little while ago made you feel a lot better, didn't it?"

"Yes, as a matter of fact it did."

We end the tone arm cycle of action, you see, five minutes before we finish the test. See, we spotted where it ended. Not where we stopped processing. See, there's a lot of little tricks involved in this sort of thing. Makes you – but they're just the tricks of a sloppy auditor, see. It's how do you fit things into this cycle of action.

You goofed. You've been going all morning long and that tone arm hasn't moved a bit and that process is so flat, and you say, "You know this thing is not going to pick up any further. It hasn't got any more kick left in it. It's dead. And I've processed him all this time and so forth." I would not be beyond, "that process which we finished yesterday afternoon," I would not be beyond saying that, see? I'd say, "Well, I'm sorry we've been plugging away at this this morning here because apparently we finished that yesterday afternoon."

"Oh, we did? Oh, as a matter of fact, I had a feeling that we did! Oh, yeah! Yeah! And *rah-ruh, mmmm, mmmm, yeah.*" [laughter] He finished the cycle of action when it finished, with perfect truth. And your tone arm suddenly loosens up, and the pc's willing to talk about something else, see?

All right. Now there's the meter manifestation of a flat TA, and that's what the thing is registering and that's what the thing is supposed to do and that's where it's supposed to go and that's how you can handle it. Don't run things that don't give you TA. But if they're not giving you TA, then something must have been run that gave TA. What was it? "Oh, well, we don't have his auditor's reports because this is our first or second session in life." Well, something gave TA. Life does not keep good auditor's reports. I'd say he was in – had been in some other

practice that gave him TA. Not some esoteric zone of livingness, see, I'd say it was some other practice. I'd say it was right in here along the line of Scientology, see? See, we're culminating a long line of practices. There are plenty around, man.

Right away I'd be asking – I couldn't – couldn't get any TA motion off of this character, he could it's like crazy and I didn't get any TA motion, there was no action. There was no action on this pc. I'd say, "What the hell, what the – excuse my French, but where we go from here? What's this, what's what?" I wouldn't be asking for a brand-new wonderful process. I'd be asking this other question.

If I don't get TA action on the pc, I don't ask what *will* get TA action on the pc, I ask what has gotten TA action on the pc. And I assume immediately that it is some analogous practice; some similar practice. Right away I start watching that needle, now – and this is where you use a meter manifestation – I start watching that needle like a hawk. Maybe I'm not going to get TA, but that needle's going to give me a clue, man. I'll crank that sensitivity right on up here, 128 and so forth, and sit right on top of this thing keeping it very nicely centered and watch it like a hawk. All right. "Now what other zones of mental practice have you been near, so on and so on. Have you ever been psychoanalyzed? You ever been to a psychiatrist? Have you ever been to a psychologist? Did you ever study graphology? You ever been in the field of phrenology? Have you ever had your horoscope read, so forth?" Clunk! Horoscope. All right, all right, all right. Now we found out what gave TA action. It's a process unflat in horoscopy.

You see the rationale with which you can go, and by golly, you know, you can untangle more cases in less time if you're slippy this way than you can shake a stick at. You don't have to go upstairs and fly ten thousand feet up flat on your back in some wild pose. All you have to do is – if you don't get TA action on the pc, then all you have to do is find out what gave him TA action that wasn't completed.

You can trace that back ordinarily in his auditor reports because there's been some sort of a low-level goof, and that's your, usually, your standard action. Just go back through those auditor's reports. Choose objective-type processes as the first choice. When you've got – when you've got thirty processes that produced TA action, none of which were flat, all of which were left with lots of TA action on them, then you have to make some sort of a choice amongst all this mess as to where you pick up the threads of this case. Because it isn't necessarily the first one that will respond again, although that is the best possibility, but it isn't necessarily true.

So if you've got to make a power of choice and be right on the button every time such as in case advising – different than auditing. You're auditing, you're advising – there's a slightly different way to do it. If you were auditing, you'd simply pick up the first one and search it out and see if you could still get TA action on the first one that produced TA action, see? But if you're advising some auditor to do this, you don't have then the continuing assessment of what you're doing.

See, there's a lot – there's a big difference between sitting there in the driver's seat as the auditor, see, and banging away and – well, you could shift gears very rapidly. You find out that is a blind alley, man, you know? So therefore you can cut a little bit closer to the edge

of the road, you see? In other words, you can say, "Well now, look at there. That first process, that seems very unlikely, you see, that that would produce TA action because that process is six or seven years ago. Very unlikely. Well, let's take a – let's take a three-minute flier at it, see?" Which, because you've got the pc on the other end of the meter, you can say, "Well, how about this 'boiling eggs producing a headache?'" This meter doesn't do a thing, you see? Then you can say, "Well, I'm sorry I brought it up." See? You can go on to your next process, see?

But when you're advising auditors or advising cases and so forth, you can't do that. You have the disadvantage of the pc – you got no pc in front of you, you see? You've just got a folder or something like that, and you got the auditor's advice. So what you have to do then is play it surer. See? You play it more positively. You play it on a sure bet. You don't take a chance, in other words. You play it certain.

And you can be absolutely certain that any unfinished Objective Process which gave tone arm action will reproduce tone arm action if flattened. In other words, the Objective Process is the one that's most likely to have stuck the guy in tone arm action because it's right here in the physical universe, isn't it? And it's closest to the sixth dynamic. So therefore, tone arm actions not flattened on Objective Processes are the most likely to have been hung up, and therefore the most likely to complete their cycle of tone arm action if resumed.

Subjective processes are the least likely. In other words, you had a subjective process: "How about your father's screaming at you?" Or "From where could you scream at your father?" or something. You're playing a bet there that is just a little bit wider bet, see? You can't at all be sure that some other process didn't move in sideways on this one and knock it appetite over tin cup, see? Maybe it got covered in some other terminal run that was run the following year, see? And just in passing the pc cognited on it, and there it went as an earlier process and maybe that cycle of action finished in some other fashion or way, don't you see? Could've. So you're not quite so sure.

When you're – so when you're advising cases and so forth, you take the surer bets. You never play a doubtful one. You always give it the business, you know? You don't – you don't hand them a rifle and say, "Well, I hope this works." You don't play it that way. You handle them a mortar that any fool could handle, see? And you say, "You drop the cartridge in the barrel here, you know, and it fires." And you're – you know that mortar will fire, see?

In other words, you've got some guy who's having an awful time. You've got some auditor who's having an awful time with him, you say, "Well, run 8-C and make sure that you continue to finish every cycle of action which you begin on the pc as a command." Well, you know that's going to produce something. In other words, you just run your heavy, sure bets all the time, you know. You never – you never do any fringe effects over here. See? It's always brute certainty that you have to go on, and an auditor that will do that, and so forth, gets very soon an enviable reputation as an adviser of auditors. Of course, all he's really doing is advising the certainties and if those auditors are left to their own devices they might get themselves into trouble or out of trouble by handling a lot of fringe stuff. But they – somebody might delicately wander his way through something, you see, that he could never have been advised

through, don't you see? So when you're advising auditors to do something, always tell them exactly what's right down the middle of the highway.

Never dream up some little process which goes *wiffawackle* and you *woffawockle*, see? Your best bet in doing that is just to take the pc's folder and find somewhere in it an unfinished cycle of action and tell the auditor to complete it.

And if you're dealing with very new auditors and so forth, always remember when they come back and tell you – as they almost inevitably will that it didn't work, that they didn't do it. That's a little maxim that goes along with this which is quite interesting to know and it saves any auditor advising auditors from a broken heart more times than you could count. And the way you pull that trick is you say, "Well, exactly what did you do?"

"Well, I did just like you said."

"All right. Good. What did I say and what did you do?"

"Oh, uh – I don't know. What did you say?"

Very embarrassing moment for the guy. You see – he just [laughs] – he doesn't remember what you said, yet it didn't work. That's hard, bitter experience talking, you see? Never let yourself be boxed around into thinking that your advice is no good. Find out if it was taken. Make sure in the first place that the advice you give is very sound advice. And your best gag on any old cases around is to haul out any old fragment of a folder they've got anyplace from anywhere and find some unflat tone arm action and have that exact tone arm action flattened. That's your best advice.

Now that's, therefore, meter manifestations. Now, those are meter manifestations for Level IV. Now I'm going to give you meter manifestations additional for Level VI and how they compare at Level VI, because they are different.

You are accustomed to tone arm action requiring quite a little time to flatten. They require some time to flatten. Let's say the tone arm action on some process required two sessions to flatten, three sessions to flatten, something like this, you see. You get accustomed to that at Level IV auditing and below. You don't realize at first with Level VI that you're looking at the exact same manifestation happening in the space of ten to fifteen seconds. You're flattening the tone arm action on an item. More broadly, you flatten all the tone arm action on a GPM.

Now, when you've finished an item, there isn't anything else there because that was the basic woof and warp of what was giving all the commotion anyhow, and you can flatten an item in ten or fifteen seconds. And that's all the tone arm action there is. And there isn't any more tone arm action to be had. That's it!

Now, you actually don't even really see all the tone arm action that happens on that. In the first place, it couldn't register on the tone arm or the needle. It's blowing out there in space. It isn't necessarily blowing up against the pc. I mean, you can thank your stars that it isn't blowing up against the pc. I see these Level VI co-auditors getting – have seen the elephant, from that laugh. But it flattens quick. And that's all the tone arm action there is there. And you spend any more time monkeying with that, and do you know, you're getting tone arm

from elsewhere. Now possibly you hadn't recognized it, all of you, that you're getting tone arm action from the next bank or the next item, or you're getting tone arm action from someplace else.

And you sit there and let that pc cognite on endlessly, and *yap-yap-yap*, and finish, *ah-wah-wah-wah-wah-wah-wah*. All of a sudden you're going to get a higher and higher TA and it's going to get stickier and stickier and you're going to wonder what you're doing. Well, you finished the cycle of action, but then you started to drag in charge from something else. That's carrying that cycle of action beyond the point where it can be carried. And I warn you that it is very, very brief – ten to fifteen seconds. It can go up to a minute, but that's unlikely. That's very unlikely. For instance, I see all the tone arm action I could possibly see go out of an item – I mean, it just goes. I don't know, I say fifteen seconds – I'm being very generous. Very generous. I'm allowing for slow freight. It's gone!

Well, now, it's just as though as you came in the front door with a dirty needle and, you see, you go out the back door with a dirty needle. In other words, it's the first manifestation observed in below Level IV auditing, but it happens to be the last manifestation observed at Level VI auditing. Because you overflatten TA action and it is not present, you get an exaggeration of the dirty needle called a tocky needle – a new one on you – and this crazy, tocky needle. A pc in the bank is so sensitive to invalidation that it will turn on a crazy, sharp-edged tickety-tock that it looks – looks like a small rock slam. Not a real dirty needle, but it looks like a small rock slam. And that's sort of the Level VI dirty needle, see? Call it a tocky needle.

And you try to take more tone arm action out of an item or out of a bank than is there, or you try to find something wrong in the bank that isn't wrong, and you'll see this great big, dirty needle. Now, it's expressing *tone arm action completed*. The dirty needle expresses *tone arm action prevented from completion*. You got the difference? But this is not saying that. This is saying, "Hey, you idiot. The tone arm action is *all* finished in this area. How come you're still hanging around, bud?"

And it's just marvelous that the needle will tell you that on a meter. It's just marvelous that it will tell you that, but it will. It's just like a neon sign. It's a nice, great big reaction. It's not a little dinky reaction like a dirty needle because, of course, you're dealing with somebody whose bank is freeing up and who is much freer and in better case condition. And it's a great big exaggerated action.

Now, you can drive that needle and the longer you go the more it will tockety-bock. And you can finally drive it to a stuck needle, stuck TA. Takes quite a little while to do so – you have to be quite a genius at it, you know. But it will tickety-tock and bop and bap and tock-tock, and it's just having a ball. And you say, "I wonder what all this commotion is about?" You'd better ask this pertinent question, "Am I invalidating the correct lineup?" *Hoooooh!* Smooth, see? Just like that. Going *tock-tock bock-bock bagh-bich-bach, bich, bich, bah, bah, bah, gug, bah, baow, baow*. "Well, all right. Are there any items – any items I've left charged behind me? Did that bank – did that bank – was that really flat? Did it really join in at this point?" *Tick-tock tock, tock, bahg-bahg-bahg bigh-bagh-bagh bigh-bahg-bahg-buh*

bagh-bahg-bahg – what the hell is going on here, you know? *Whoa-whoa, whoa-whoa-whoa*. Betsy! You see? What's going on?

You say, "Am I – am I knocking about a correct lineup?" Smooth. Yeah, well then, "Give me the next item." So that's – that's where you begin the next cycle of action. So if you – when you're dealing with the thing that enforces a cycle of action upon the pc and upon life, it then objects to one being overrun. The only objection you get then is insisting there is more cycle of action than is there. If you've got the cycle of action out of something, it raises hell that you're putting one in, and what it resists is a created cycle of action. You try to create any new cycles of action on this pc that aren't there to be created and, man, it just raises the living billy-o with the bank.

Now remember, you came in the front door, and that's when you failed to complete a cycle of action that was there. Remember this is a totally overwhelmed pc. And that immediately went *bzzzt bzz bzzz bzzz bzzz bzzz* dirty needle *drzzzzzzzzzzzz*. See? Every time you said – this pc, his bank is now insisting, "There are cycles of action to be completed. At every turn, you must complete your cycle of action." See, we've got everything overwhelmed here with a cycle of action, you know. Okay.

All right. You get up to the other end of the thing. When you're undoing the thing that creates the cycle of action, the only thing that raises the devil is making a new cycle of action or extending the existing cycle of action. And then that just raises the devil with the meter.

And you can see a meter like this – now, I can tell if an item has been left charged without ever asking a question about it. Because the new item called doesn't behave right. It doesn't behave well. The thing doesn't fall right and it just doesn't go. And you say, "Well, we left some 'bring about' wrong. Is it in the first pair? The second pair? The third pair? The third pair reads. That's good." Call the third pair, "Does the one that's there – oppterm bring about the terminal?" *Bzzzt-bvoop*, falls and so forth. "All right. Let's take up this new item." And now you find it reads right.

You can get very alert to this without doing very much examination. Your items aren't reading, so you must have left something charged. Well, let's rapidly find out what we left charged, get the charge off and get back to what we're doing. All right. Now supposing – that's the best laid plans and that's what you would do, see?

Supposing now, you hadn't left anything charged. I'll give you the other thing, see? Give you the other manifestation, see? You just get a lousy read on something of this sort, and it itself has been suppressed or invalidated or you hung around too long before you said it, and you say – you say, "Oh, have I left an item charged? A little bit of a read on that. Was it the first..." *Tickety-tock, tickety-tock, boodibop-bzzzt-blurrrp-blurrrp-bloop*. "All right. Would you please give me the next item." [laughter] You understand? Handy little jimdandy meter mechanism then. God bless a meter.

Pc will get all kinds – he's always getting the idea that the bank he is running went in between two other banks earlier. He inevitably will get this kind of an idea. Why? Because the bank he is running is always the last bank in existence. So it, of course, appears to be where the present time bank was once. So therefore appears to be where – you see, where another bank was. Do you follow this? Now, he'll – always liable to get, "Well, I wonder what

this is, you know. Huhhh. We're supposed to be down here at this one, and yet actually – and you know I feel like this one should have come between a couple of other banks. Hmmm."

And he comes into session, "You know, I feel..." *tickety-tock bock, bock!* And you say, "No, it – bank – bank was in the correct position. All right. Now give me the next item on the line."

"Oh, was it? So what do you know?"

That's the end of that. You just never saw a meter cool off so fast. Turns into a gorgeous flow.

You've got your BA steps in. You've got everything in. There isn't any charge left on it, you see. You couldn't get it with an electric shock machine, see? So you say, "All right now. Let's check this, and let's make sure this is flat. Now, this thing *wah wah twah twah twah.*" *Tickety-tock bop-bop thud, bing.* That tells you right now that you have overridden the pin. It's no disgrace to have overridden the pin. It's only a disgrace if you see that manifestation, not to unload right where you are because it's invariable: it means that you're invalidating a correct lineup. It means you're taking more charge than is there. It means that you're trying to extend the cycle of action beyond its logical conclusion. And that's all the bank now objects to, at Level VI, is the cycle of action being extended beyond its end.

Now, I don't want to do the same thing with this lecture, so thank you very much.
[laughter, applause]

Communication, Overts And Responsibility

A lecture given on
16 June 1964

How are you today?

Audience: Fine, thank you, etc.

Good. This is the what?

Audience: The 16th.

The 16th of June in these stirring times. June 16, AD 14, Saint Hill Special Briefing Course.

[part missing]

Well, looks like we've got lots of people here; we'll be getting rid of them very shortly. Going out in all directions. I probably ought to start giving you some lectures of "Son, as you go forth into the world..." "Men are not evil, they're just nutty. All is not good that glitters." You know, that sort of thing.

But in these high and stirring times, it is very easy to forget the fellow who is out there slugging in at Level III, trying to get a result in an HGC or private practice on somebody who is mainly concerned with the fact that every now and then he has goose bumps, you know. And this type of approach we're liable to forget, because it is still with us and frankly there is nothing you can do for that fellow in terms of GPMs or anything like this. You just got to get down and do a ground-level job of auditing. And it's a funny thing, but people don't realize how far that ground-level type auditing carries somebody. It's quite remarkable.

I've – ran into somebody's pc who was round the grounds here some little time ago and this was the height and level of his worries. It seemed like they only had auditing on the weekends and it really wasn't quite enough auditing to take care of all the problems he was having with his wife. And if he – he thought maybe if they could just have auditing a little faster or a little bit more, then he would have a chance maybe to catch up with his problems with his wife. This was his zone and horizon. This was as far as life extended. And during a session, toward the end of a session, he could suddenly begin to get an insight into the fact that there was something could happen to him that was better than had been happening in life,

you see. And he'd just about grasped this insight and then he would go home and have some more trouble with his wife, don't you see. And this was the sort of a treadmill he was on.

It's a hard thing for a person who has been in processing and has been processed for quite a while, to look directly and straight into the teeth of this factor, that individuals are so wrapped up and involved with their immediate environment that they have no time to think of themselves or case gain or anything like that. It's just an effort to control their immediate environment.

And they're in some fabulous contest with the immediate environment. And if you could remember this as an auditor, and if you can process at this level when you are handling such people, you will have remarkable – remarkable success.

Only thing I'm trying to tell you here is that the individual – that the individual that you process that isn't going to OT – he's just going to a sigh of relief see, I mean, that's about the highest level of gain which he could attain to – this fellow is in contest with his environment. It doesn't sound like much, don't you see? It doesn't sound like any more than their problems and cases sound like, don't you see? But nevertheless it is the key, the direct and immediate key, to the case.

Now, what's his environment? Well, this is your job as an auditor to find out. That's your first job. What is this bloke's environment?

Now, we will just take off from this point: The individual is in contest with his environment. We'll just take off from that point. Now, that's a very true observation. Particularly, if we qualify that observation just a little bit further and we say that a contest is not necessarily a battle of fisticuffs.

There are various ways to react to the environment. You can react to the environment by going into catatonic schizophrenia, complete immobility. And yet, do you know that that is a method of handling the environment? If you get down to rock bottom on this thing, anything your pc is doing at these lower levels is an effort to handle the environment. It is an effort to do that.

Once umpty-skillion years ago I got swatted, and sat there very, very immobile, being right. I went on being right for quite a little while. See, by permitting myself to be immobilized, it made the other fellow wrong. It didn't – wasn't really doing anything to him, taking no action, absolutely no forward thrust of any kind whatsoever, no outward motion, no outward flow of any kind, not even a thought of an outward flow and yet that was the method of handling the environment. So the way we qualify this is... The method is not necessarily smart.

And right down to the lowest rung of the ladder – to the lowest rung of the ladder, this individual is still in contest with his environment, is still reacting toward his environment and is still seeking to handle his environment. Those things are quite true. That's true of any case, see. A thetan never gives up.

Now, these methods are not clever. They are very often downright stupid. And the frailty of these methods is so great they're – you see, they're just solutions of one kind or another – and the frailty is so great that you can very easily unsettle the solution. You see, it isn't

a good method to begin with. And just by circulating a little mental energy around it, the slightest peek underneath the edge of the rug pulls the rug out. See, it's not hard to unsettle one of these things because they're not smart. See, it isn't a clever method to begin with.

All right, so I got swatted, see? Give you an idea. All right, I got swatted, you know, good – good blast, see. So I sit there immobilized, you see, being right, see. And this made the other fellow wrong but he'd left, see. Now, if anybody – now if anybody – if anybody had come along and had said to me at that particular time, "Well, just how does this straighten this situation up?" I possibly would have said, "Well uh – mmmm – heh, it doesn't." And that would have been the end of that, see? Do you see? Very easy to unsettle these things.

Now, oddly enough the more irrational – the more irrational the solution or the handling of the situation, the more easily it is unsettled. You can unstabilize it as a solution in direct ratio to its uselessness as a solution.

Now, how in the name of common sense alienists and the witch doctor and the other blokes up and down the track have never run into this as a rule, I don't know – I don't know, it makes me ask some very searching questions. Did they want anybody to get better? It makes me ask mean questions like this, don't you see?

Because this rule here is perfectly visible. It's a very visible rule. You start fooling around with this very long and you will find out that the more irrational the solution, the easier it is to unsettle, the harder it is to maintain.

Well now, let's give you an example out of life. Let's say that this fellow has a solution of keeping the hind wheels of his car off the road as a method of safe driving. That's a good irrational solution, see – good and irrational, see. He wants to drive safely so he's going to keep the hind wheels of his car off the road. Well man, look at what he's got to do to put this solution into action, see. He's either got to run along behind it – if it's a Mini Morris or something – and hold it off the road, you see; or he's got to get a wrecking truck to follow him with the hind wheels pulled up, don't you see; or he's got to hire a helicopter, see; or he's got to put on some kid's roller skates on a platform with a building jack on top of them, you know. This thing is – this thing is crazy, see?

Well, look at the number of frailties in any solution that he gets there, see. You get an irrational solution, it is very difficult to maintain.

So the helicopter pilot has a cold, you see, and can't come that day, don't you see? Any one of these points – because we've added more points to the solution, so therefore, we have added more points of frailty to the solution and it is harder and harder to maintain.

So the rule is: The more irrational a solution is, the harder it is to maintain. And this would not be – this would not be legitimate as a comment unless it were borne out in actual practice and application. And it is borne out in actual practice and application.

The way a madman works at staying mad is absolutely fabulous. He sweats over it, man. He's in there twenty-four hours a day keeping himself good and mad, see. It's marvelous. He works at it. He'll once in a while catch himself out being slightly sane about something and you'll just see him grab for it and put it all back in the madness range, see, clank! You can

observe this in action. Now, that's – let's take a psychosis – using a dirty word, the slight – slighter manifestation of it, a neurosis, they're very hard to maintain, it's irrational.

And the only requisite to unsettle it is of course communication. If you're trying to pull a pole out from underneath a skylight to close the skylight, you had better have an adequate means of grasping the pole to give it a pull. In other words, there has got to be contact here of some kind or another.

Probably one of the reasons why they were incapable of observing this – they're mad themselves, of course – one of the reasons why the observation was never made may have been that they got all involved in trying to make the first contact – trying to get a communication through or in, in order to begin an unsettling process. And you would very easily have so much trouble with this one point, you'd just have so much trouble with this one point of trying to communicate on this subject or about this thing, that you might then entirely forget the fact that, if you could, unsettling the neurosis or psychosis or loopiness or worries of the individual was dead simple.

See, you could have so much trouble trying to talk to Joe that you'd totally lose grasp of the simplicity of what was wrong with Joe, see. So you'd skip – you'd skip that, and you'd put all of your – all of your time and energy here on this basis of trying to contact Joe, see?

Now, you could become so frantic, you see, given the fact that, "Well, he thinks there's alligators in the corners of the room," don't you see. And you know that if you could just ask him what this was – what this solved or something like this, it'd all fall down like a house of cards and the alligators would fall out of the corners of the room and that would be the end of that, see. Given that, see.

The reason you don't observe this is because you seldom get to such a person with a communication in order to disabuse him of this idea, see, and pull the props out from underneath this idea. So you could get so frantic over here trying to communicate to Joe, you could get so driven through your own skull, that you become frantic on the subject of communication.

And psychotherapy would then park on this basis of communication. And the franticness of trying to communicate would bring about more and more brutal means of communication. Until you get modern psychiatry. See?

They take an operation developed by Adolf Hitler, no less, and his very expert medicos of the Third Reich – the prefrontal lobotomy which was developed to make slaves – make farm slaves. Take undesirable nationalities who were not the super race, you know – he did eight hundred thousand of them, interesting round figure, had himself a lot of farm slave labor.

Now, how this ever got to be a psychotherapy I myself am absolutely gasping about and I pursued this one day and I asked very searching questions on how it did. And it turns out that there was a blacksmith's assistant in Bavaria. This always happens in Bavaria, if you know there are ghosts or werewolves, they always put it somewhere over there. And old American weekly, if you want to go back a half a century and look at its files everything always happened in that corner of the world. Well, this one happened there too. And it seems

like this blacksmith's assistant was standing by the forge when the forge blew up. Now, the fellow was a kind of an idiot, and the forge blew up and a crowbar about an inch in diameter and very long was driven through his skull from one temple to the other temple and completely severed his prefrontal lobes.

Now, you can go on and wait for the rest of the story just like I did. The – only rest of the story is he didn't die. He didn't suddenly become sane. This is not part of the clinical record, see? He didn't become sane, he didn't regain speech, he didn't become president, nothing happened here that was astonishing and marvelous. And that's the end of the clinical history.

And you can actually delve deep and endlessly trying to find the rest of this and how this brought about a reasoning whereby if you give somebody a prefrontal lobotomy he turns sane. And you know, that's your assumption as to why they're giving a prefrontal lobotomy. That's not the psychiatric assumption. That's an interesting view, isn't it?

A legislature will assume this in passing laws. And everybody assumes this, we usually say, "Well" immediately, "Oh, so." "So," you say to yourself, writing scripts, see, like mad, "Oh, I understand. He was a – he was an idiot and the crowbar went through his skull and immediately he was totally sane and an acceptable member of the society and that's why the..." You're writing script, boy, that's no part of the – that's no part of the clinical record at all. It isn't even *inferred* in the clinical record. So, as far as they've gotten is just this rationale: That if you cut somebody's prefrontal lobes up, he doesn't die right then. You think I'm joking, but it's true. That's where the rationale goes. I'm just giving you – I'm not berating psychiatry. Heh, who has to?

The point here is just this: that that is an anxiety of communication the like of which nobody ever thought of. See, these boys have been totally educated into believing to reach the brain. They don't know what they're talking to, that's how far back they've gotten, see. So they got to reach this fellow, so that means his brain or his thinkingness, you see? And their irrationality is simply and totally evolved around the one point of "We weren't able to contact him," so we get into this total frenzy of contact. "We finally reached him, *huh!* We finally made a result on this blankety-blank-blank-blank, see? It's against the law to shoot him, see, but we finally recorded from A to his brain B, and we produced a result. He hasn't said anything for days, *huh-huh-huh!*" You see, it's as insane a solution as insanity.

But now, this is just not for the pleasure of berating psychiatry. This is solely and totally to this point. I want to bring about to you and give – give you this clarity of understanding of this one point: That regardless of the frailty of the neurosis or psychosis, the quicksand on which it is built will very fast go away – regardless of that. The effort to communicate to the person can assume such baffling forms and shapes, can give you so many barriers, so many insurmountable barriers that you never do get around to studying what's wrong with the pc. You never do get around to there, see. You're so involved with the outworks of the castle that you never even find out what the shape of the donjon keep is. You don't get within arrow-shot of the walls actually. You're out there with the chevaux-de-frise, and you never get near it. Your communication effort is where you wind up.

So just remember that to do anything for an individual requires, as its first and primary action, communication to that individual and communication from that individual. Don't then,

because that is true, immediately assume that communication to the individual solves all. This is merely a step. It is the necessary step.

And you will find, where Scientology breaks down in the lower levels, that it breaks down in the vicinity of effort to communicate to the being. That's where it breaks down. And that's why you'll get some weird and fantastic notions of what you should do for or with somebody. That's the zone and area where those appear. An inability to communicate to the individual, an inability to get the individual to communicate, results in a frenzy of effort. Then we get the Auditor's Code being broken, we get the pc being overwhelmed, we get various actions that are not really capable of bringing about any result at all. Now, we get these things in almost a standard practice, you see.

You – in other words, the whole subject could break down right at that point. Because that's where every psychotherapy breaks down. So there's no reason why a study such as Scientology – even though it is not a psychotherapy – there is no reason why it shouldn't break down there, too.

And in the individual practitioner, there's where it breaks down. And that's what you're not able to quite get across to the HAS, the HQS, the early HCA. That's what's hard to get across. That's why you have to keep telling them, "Acknowledge, acknowledge, acknowledge. He said something, acknowledge." That's why you sweat it out keeping those parts of the comm cycle in. That's why you work on it. Because when that disappears then your ability to do anything about the case vanishes. See, so that one, that one is the point of concentration.

Now, we know the formulas of communication. We know how communication can be built up. We know about gradient scales, and we know other things in this particular line. You should know those things for what they are. They're something you're working with in order to do something with or about the individual. And you must continuously and repeatedly follow that particular channel and work along that particular channel, see. And you mustn't spoil that channel. Because the moment the channel is spoiled – such as, well, you don't give another auditing command. You've gotten one accepted and answered, maybe you even acknowledged it but then you didn't give the next auditing command, see? See.

Yet these are really goofy errors, see. But yet they happen, yet they happen. Because the individual himself in an effort to do something for other people has long since thrown in the sponge a few times on the subject of communication. "Well, you can't talk to him anyway. Well, there's no reasoning with him. Well, there's a..." Round, round, round, round, round, see?

So that actually doing something for an individual at the lower levels is dependent upon what degree of communication can be entered upon with the individual. And if you want to know what makes a level, that's what makes a level, see. It's just the gradient scale of what communication can be entered upon with the individual. And the individual who can't have much communication entered in upon, of course would be in a lower level of activity; he'd be down there in Grade 0. He hadn't been talked to yet, see? That's in actual fact what makes grades, what makes pcs, what's the difference of cases and that sort of thing.

Now, once you get this first series of shafts through very nicely, and you're reaching the individual now, the individual is responding to you, ah, well these other things are a house

of cards. First thing you've got to take up is the goofiest solutions he has for his environment. That's about the first thing you've got to find. And then we get to what you're trying to do for the individual.

What you're trying to do for the individual is alleviate his contest with his environment. Now that he is in contest with his environment, of course, barriers communication from his environment. And you'll find he will eventually solve the fact that he is being communicated to by his environment by moving you out of the environment as his auditor. That is to say you are no longer part of his normal environment. And he solves this very, very well. He says, "Well, there are human beings and there are auditors. And I won't let a human being talk to me, but I will let an auditor talk to me." See? He starts solving it at a rather early stage in his processing.

This is why any group that has ever been able to help anybody or do anything for them at all eventually assumes an ethereal, a spiritual height of some kind or another and takes on a special status in the society, see. Because the individual is in contest with his environment and if the group communicating to him were part of the environment he'd feel like he was being driven around the bend. So he just solves the whole problem by moving the group up into a very esoteric level. See, very simple.

So that you take on – to some of your pcs you take on almost holy proportions. They'll credit you with all kinds of various facilities and abilities and all of this sort of thing. What they're doing is solving this one point. They can't bear to communicate with the environment and you're communicating with them, so therefore you can't possibly be part of the environment and then they prove it to themselves by saying these other things, you see.

It's interesting that the Melbourne inquiry tracks along this way rather consistently, and so forth. And the people who are attacking the organization the hardest are actually hanging around the neck of the organization a rather supernatural atmosphere... I told Mary Sue here some months ago, the one thing that's going to come out of the Melbourne activity, we will be unnatural beings, we will be supernatural beings of some kind. And yes, it's gone further and further. Of course, as they run up overts against us – knowing very well they shouldn't be running up overts of this particular character, see – why, they're having to remove us further and further out of the real environment, you see. So the other day a very serious discussion took place in the hah! court down there on the subject of... You see, it isn't even a trial, it's just a bunch of guys shooting their face off and – at vast expense. They – they took it up, as they were – now you'd say, "Well, would a Clear be – could you see through a Clear?" you know.

You'd say, "Well, people could understand a discussion along that line." But no, no. The discussion had gone much further than that, much further than that. It's, "Why did I appear sometimes tall and sometimes short and sometimes broad and sometimes thin?" And, "Why did Clears in general appear this way?" It was no longer a question that they appeared this way, you see. That was not the case in point. It was wondering why they did. Marvelous!

Therefore, if you can reach or talk to people when other people can't, you immediately will assume some status with the person which is quite different than from any other status he has any knowledge of. He will put you into some status or another which is quite pedestaled

and quite out of this world, you might say. Because it proves itself. He's in contest with his environment. He's having trouble with his environment all over the place, and he's not having trouble with you, so therefore, you can't be part of the environment. I mean that's all there is to that, see?

He solves the problem very nicely. This is the common solution to that. Well, it isn't even worth doing anything about. That's the way the thing rides, you see? I would never pander to it or aid and abet it particularly. But at the same time if your communication line depends upon his ideas of you, I would not sit around now and use the fact that I could talk to him to clarify his opinion of me. See, I would use the time and ability to talk to him to pull the props out from underneath a few of these flimsy structures that are called neuroses or oddball ideas or something, see. That's the time I would use. I wouldn't get into an endless discussion with him about whether I were sometimes large or sometimes small, or had come to him in the middle of the night and given him an auditing command. I wouldn't – wouldn't bother. I just would not discuss it. I'd say, "Well, all right. That's fine."

I wouldn't even jump in and say, "Do you think other people come to you in the middle of the night." I'd understand what he was trying to communicate to me. He's trying to communicate to me that he was in communication with me, was not in communication with other people, so therefore I wasn't other people. That was all he was trying to communicate to me, see. I wouldn't use this as a symptom at all, or wouldn't even rack it up as part of his symptoms, see? I'd get very much more interested in those things he was in contest with. And that's what you've got to handle. That's what you've got to handle. What is he in contest with that's real to him?

Now, get your communication line in and then handle that. Now, just getting your communication line in is more of a trick than any field of mental healing, psychotherapy, spiritualism or religion has ever been able to uniformly accomplish. You see that? They can't uniformly accomplish that. Some priest walking around in circles talking about these heretics, and so forth, is simply saying, "There are some Joes around that I can't get next to. I can't communicate to them," see. His failures of communication are what weigh him down.

Now, we've pretty well solved this business of the communication to the individual. Given half a chance at all we can communicate to the individual, see. There are various... Well, we've developed many methods which we no longer talk about anymore. There's communication by mimicry. By knowing the communication formula in full, you can, of course, introduce the various factors of the communication formula into your communication with the individual. So your communication with the individual is not dependent on merely saying something to the individual, see.

You ever want to put a kid in a good humor, and so forth – he accidentally wiggles his nose, wiggle your nose and he bobs his head and you bob your head. And the next thing you know, why he's in a high old time, man. He's in a marvelous state. You haven't said a word. It's mimicry, just nothing but mimicry all the way through. Well, you can even talk to a raving madman along this particular subject line.

So you're using various parts of the communication formula as they exist in *The Creation of Human Ability* and in other places in the early works. Taking those parts apart and

understanding what those parts consist of. And then realizing that you can use any of those parts or any variation of those parts to bring about a communication with the individual. And then by using any – gradient scales – by using any communication which you've established with the individual to increase your ability to communicate with the individual, see – more and more communication, better and better, see – you can then get around to doing something for the individual.

Now, what fools you is that by your communicating with the individual, he gets better. There's some part of the environment that he's in communication with and this will of course make him better. And so this other thing has this other liability. That by doing a communication with the individual, and by building a communication, getting the individual into better communication only with you, you see, you could of course increase his ability to handle his environment and you can bring about a better state of mind in the individual. And the reason that's a fooler is you're still back there in the first step. And it's almost as much a mistake to stop there, don't you see, or to use that, as it would be to go into a frantic state trying to communicate with the individual.

In other words, say – be frantic about trying to communicate with the individual, "So, I finally communicated with him, I hit him with a club," see? "See, I finally... I communicated with him, I hit him, see." Well, it's just as – just almost as much a mistake as just saying, "Well, I've done something for him because I now communicated with him." Don't you see, you're now using communication as the end-all. It's just a channel. And what the fooler there is, he really is better, see. He's really a bit better off, don't you see?

And he is so much better off when he is with you or around you that you eventually won't believe he's still daffy around other people. And therefore, you become very hard to convince along this particular line. And you lay in a big problem for yourself here. You can no longer see that this fellow is showing any nuttiness and you say, "Well, we've cured his oddball battinesses, and so forth." Yes. He doesn't exhibit any of them around you, just around other people as before, see. You can get into an odd ridge here. Well, just recognize where you sit with relationship to the case and it solves the thing, see.

Now, here you are, communicating to this individual, see, you've got past the frantic point and you built it up and that sort of thing, and you're not going to make the mistake of saying, "I've cured him because I can now talk to him." You've got yourself merely set up to do something for the case. That's as far as you've gone. You haven't gone any further than that. And don't kid yourself that you have or you will have some singular losses in processing.

You will have some very singular losses in processing. Sooner or later you will get into some kind of a state of beautiful comfort with regard to some bird and he goes home and slaughters the whole family, see? You say, "But what happened? You – he seemed so calm!" Yeah, around you. In the first place because you could communicate it to him, you weren't part of the environment, therefore, you were some special type of being. You were in an esoteric relationship to him. You probably didn't use this on a command basis or an overwhelm. And he wasn't any saner elsewhere than he ever had been. But in your vicinity he manifested sanity.

See, a sort of a Christ manifestation occurs, you know? You appear; all is calm, see. Well, don't forget, after you disappear all goes to pieces, too, see. That can also happen. So that will happen to you and you will say, "What in the name of common sense occurred?" You end the fellow's intensive and he was just fine at the end of the intensive and a week later, you see, he shoots a cop or something. Something wild occurred here. Well, just recognize your relationship to the individual is special, and communication with the individual is not an end-all of processing. That is simply the beginning. That is all. There is nothing more to that.

So, all right.

Given communication with the individual, now what? Now what? We say, "Oh well, that was – that's been such a big psychotherapy problem, 'How do you communicate to the individual?' and that sort of thing. 'You mean you do something with it? I mean – you mean, you go some – from here?'" Yeah, there's where you start, see. Now, you start to do something for the individual, see.

Now, this requires this next piece of understanding, which I've already given you, that the individual is in contest with his environment and he is using very, very nutty solutions indeed with regard to his environment, and he is using these – he is using these nutty solutions for just one particular and continuous reason: because he's in contest with his environment and therefore his environment looks very, very dangerous to him. And that's the whole lot.

Well, how do you enter on upon all this? How do you start this? How does this occur? How do you undermine all of these nutty solutions and let them fall down? How do you go about it?

Well, of course you can't go about it at all if you don't have a communication channel. You must have a communication channel. Now go to work. You've got to find out now the dangerous things that are in his environment, the menacing things that are in his environment, and the solutions he's using to combat and contest these various things.

And in actual fact, you shouldn't really use to too great a degree problems and solutions. This is something that's very okay for the very, very beginning of the case. But you go too long along this direction, you're going to get in trouble because these are GPMs – problems-solutions. Solutions are GPMs. That's a part of the reactive bank. And that's restimulable. All of that is restimulable. And as a sober fact, that isn't the basis of his activities with his environment at all. It's not problems and his solutions to them. It's what *he does* to solve them that keeps him obsessed and pinned in against them.

You must immediately and directly assume, of course, that if an individual has a problem, he's going to do something about it. How do you know that you haven't gotten a present time problem of a pc? Now, that's the oldest one you know of. That's the oldest one you know of. How do you know that you haven't done anything for the pc? Present time problem, you're processing a present time problem, how do you know right away that you haven't handled a present time problem? There's one there – just like that. He's going to do something about it.

The pc who leans back suddenly in the session and says, "All right. Well, I understand that now, I really haven't got a problem with the dentist. I'm going to so-and-so, and so-and-so and see Dr. Jones. All right. I have that all settled now and we can go on with..." Oh, bull! You haven't settled the present time problem. You haven't handled the present time problem. And that's something auditors have known for years and years and years and years and years. That's an old, old, old one, see. If you haven't handled the PTP at the beginning of session, the pc is going to do, something about it. And that's the biggest index that you have. That is the biggest index that you have: He's going to do something about it, so there it is.

Now, the whole contest then that you are up against is to find out what is the individual continuously and perpetually doing as in his environment. And it falls under the heading of O/W. It doesn't fall under the heading of problems and solutions at all. It'd fall under the heading of O/W. Because the more he does about this thing he's obsessed about, the more he's going to get stuck in it, and the more he's going to get obsessed with it.

What brings about – what brings about undue concentration upon a subject? What brings about his absolute conviction that he has this tremendous contest with this environment? What brings about this absolute conviction? It's because he's doing something about it all the time.

How do you unpin somebody from worrying about the United Nations? Guy goes around all the time, he's worrying about the United Nations. You finally find out that the reason he wears a green hat is because the United Nations' flag is blue or something, see, something wild here. And this is the genus of all this. Well, how come he's so pinned in to the United Nations?

Well, he must be doing something, odd as it may seem, he must be doing something to the United Nations or about the United Nations every few time intervals. And it must be something real or actual. It might dwindle down to the level of a critical thought, don't you see. But he's been active in this particular direction. And you don't have to go into other lifetimes – it's this one. The real problems exist in this lifetime. You don't have to go very far adrift to unpin these things. Actually, they're so simple to unpin that it's a wonder to me that anybody had any trouble unpinning them. They're quite laughable. But the secret of it is O/W.

You see, he himself is mucking up his communication with the environment because his communication is a series of overts. So therefore, he better not communicate with his environment because it's an overt against the environment. So therefore he better have some kind of a wild solution so that he won't have to communicate with his environment. And it isn't that it all comes down to communication, it just happens to be riding on the communication channel which is what broke down his communication with his environment. See?

He can no longer recognize what part of his environment he's in communication with. He can't tell. He doesn't know what's there. He put up a screen, long time ago, against tigers, and he's never been brave enough to take the screen down since, and he's now forgotten what's behind it. But he's fighting something in that direction. He knows he has to keep fighting in that direction. He's not sure why he has to keep fighting in that direction but he just knows he has to.

And his method of fighting in that direction may take innumerable forms, such as: never looking in that direction, never looking in that direction. Oh, let's find a fellow whose head is swiveled over to the side and he has chronic arthritis of the neck, and he can't look to the left. How come his neck is swiveled over this way, see? That seems to be an odd way to carry a body. And particularly and peculiarly odd, you see, because he's even used calcium deposits to cement in the vertebrae so that he can't turn it over. How come he's doing this?

Now, if you're in communication with the individual you have the possibility of finding out. You can hunt and punch around, you eventually will find out on various channels, and so forth, that he's liable to commit some other solution, some other action. He's liable to do some other overt if he looked to the left.

I would eventually recognize that somebody who was never paying any attention to the left side of anything had something there that he was doing something to *or* about. You may even find out it's his wife. He's stuck in the marriage ceremony or something, see? That's right! You may find some weird things. May find he's got a ghost relative in the room, or may find all kinds of odd things about this fellow. But he's doing something.

Now, the reason he does low-level overts on various dynamics is because he's afraid he'll do high-level overts on the various dynamics. And his reactive bank is so manufactured that the one thing a thetan gets in trouble doing is committing overts. And the whole – well, I'd say, better than fifty percent of the reactive bank is tailor-made to force him to commit overts. See?

So here is a being whose sanity depends actually on not committing overts, who has a reactive bank which forces him to commit overts. And I think this is probably the basic mechanism of enslavement of the thetan. Pinning him down, trapping him and so on, is probably the – I would say, not positively but probably – the grander plan of the trap. See. You're just continuously a – these people, just people must – every piece of their reactivity is driving them to commit overts. And they mustn't – they just mustn't. And the broader angle is, is even if he didn't have a bank, he'd get into trouble committing overts because it violates the communication formula, and communication formula is above the reactive bank.

So this gives us two mechanisms which are above the reactive bank. One is the communication formula and the other is O/W.

Now, that puts somebody who is early on in processing in the driver's seat, because he's got two things that are superior to all the aberration the pc packs. In one fell swoop he's got all of it.

O/W is one of the frail spots of auditors. I must say that with some regret, but it is true. It's a frailty in a lot of auditors.

Well, you'd naturally get the perpetrators of any given trap spreading around a lot of propaganda about the invasion of privacy and about the this and about how it wasn't nice, and how people were entitled to hold their withholds and you get all kinds of wild propaganda going on, on this particular line, see? If people are crazy along this line in general, then you can be sure there's a lot of crazy propaganda on the same subject. So, you get men that ought to know better leaping about talking about lie detectors and all of this kind of thing.

You get a whole government rising up and seizing an organization's E-Meters, see. It's a nuttiness, see.

If you don't think they're nutty, why look at the facts of the case, you see? Well, they turn them right over to the War Department and they investigate them up at Walter Reed and they're very grateful for the thing, but they're not even sane enough to pat us on the back, you see, and give us a couple of quick bucks for the patent rights, you see? But if they've seized them, you see, this makes it somehow all right. This is craziness, see. It's craziness at work.

Where would you expect to find the most craziness? At the door to sanity. You'd find out that the greatest amount of barricade would be along that chain, that channel, see. And if you – if you look over any group of auditors, a great many of them unfortunately will fringe by, not very positively, but they'll sort of fringe by this invasion of privacy, and so forth. They won't really sit there and clean that needle. You know, they just won't sweat at it, you know?

Well, their reticence along this line comes from their fear quite naturally of breaking their communication channel with the pc. And they're afraid they'll break this communication channel so therefore, they don't press home the therapy. In other words, they preserve the communication channel but arrive at nowhere because of its preservation. So anxious to preserve it that they never do anything with it. So they, well, very often – I'm not running down all auditors – I've just noticed in training auditors that this is a point we have to get them over. And there are many right here that we've gotten over this point. But it's a point that people hit and that they have to be gotten over.

That's where it breaks down. They say, "All right. This individual is worry, worry, worry, worry, figure, figure, figure, think, think, think, think, think, obsess, obsess, obsess."

"Is he?"

I don't know. He's just *ruh-ruh-thuh-thuh-thuh* on this one subject, you know. Green horses or something, I don't know. Instructors, something else unreal, see? And the individual just goes on, on, on, on, on, on, on, over the rest of this thing, see.

And the auditor says, "All right, have you done anything." Well, obviously the guy must have done something or he wouldn't be pinned in, see. That's the part of the equation you may not – some people have not totally looked at: That in order to be pinned in on something, he must have done something to it, see. Because there isn't any way anything could get in communication with a thetan in the first place. You want to solve a problem, man, there's a nice problem for you. How does anybody ever get in communication with a thetan? Of course, it's impossible. The origination must have been original with the thetan. Why, he's invisible, you couldn't even find him, he doesn't even really natively have any location in space – nothing.

So he must have originated, and that must be the basis of the do. And that's how he gets pinned into anything. And he can get it all disguised so that it's impossible for him to understand how he's pinned in, which is – which is quite remarkable. And he tries to unpin himself with obsessive do. He's got to do, do, do, do, do, do to unpin himself. And boy, anybody will fall for this.

I catch myself by the scruff of the neck every once in a while. "Well, if I just wrote up a couple of letters, it would straighten it all out." Then, of course, I know, I'll go ahead, write a couple letters, straighten this out. This point's worrying me one way or the other, I'll write the couple letters. Then I find out I have to write another letter, see. You know, I have to write another letter to straighten that out. And then I think, well, maybe it'll be a good idea if I just wrote four or five more, you see, and straighten that out, and that particular... Then I suddenly realize what I am doing. This is why I'm worrying about it. It's because I'm writing letters about it, see? Simple, see? Realize that and all of a sudden cease to worry about it. Bang! It's gone, see.

So anybody, even when he knows the mechanism, can be caught in the same mechanism because it's the basic mechanism of entrapment. There is no more subtle mechanism of entrapment than that. That's the lot. So this is what you must realize about this thetan. That it isn't – we sit down with the thetan and we're processing him and we say, "Oh well, what have you – what have you done to an Instructor?"

And, "Well, nothing really."

Audience: God!

"I-I-I listened impertinently when he said, 'Good morning.'" See?

"All right. Good. Now, what have you done to an Instructor?" you see.

"Nothing really, nothing really, but I thought they were awfully wrong when they chopped me all up and they did this and they did that and they did the *rurur, motivator, motivator, motivator, motivator.*"

And the auditor says, "Fine," and asks the next question, not having gotten his question answered. Now, right there, in the mechanism of the session, you see, he's pinned him in tighter. He bought a motivator, he pinned him in tighter. Do you see that?

It isn't whether or not it's social or not social, it isn't anything else, it's just good sense technically, see. And they don't want to break their communication channel or their feeling of rapport, being *simpatico* with the pc, you see, by being challenging. Where as a matter of fact they'd be a far better friend of the pc, it'd be a much more honest thing: "All right. That's all very well, but now what the hell have you done to an Instructor that's got you this worried?"

"Oh, well, you put it that way, I well, well, backing out of the parking lot and hit his car the other night. Didn't tell him about it. He hasn't found out the fender's dented yet." See? Right away, bang! The guy's unpinned, see?

Because he goes through – he goes through the action of. He does something, not necessarily intentional, he does something and then he does something to justify having done this thing. And then he does something to justify what he has done. By this time he's getting pretty pinned in and he keeps on trying to do this thing. And then he eventually will be physically batting away from this thing as though he's trying to push himself off a wall, see, and the next thing he does, he does the only thing left to him – he blows. He has to leave physically, or he has to do something else physically.

Well, if he can't leave physically, he has a dwindling gradient of the things he can leave physically by not leaving physically. You know? You can leave physically, all right. But how do you leave without leaving physically?

Well, one of the ways – you could become groggy, see? You could become less alert. You could show people that it was wrong of them to have you there, see. You could show that you were pinned from leaving, you see, by developing a bad spine so that you couldn't walk. See, all kinds of wild solutions.

Now, these are the solutions that I'm talking about. The individual can't leave the universe physically so he tends to pile up all these solutions. You get married and you can't part company easily, and stay in the marriage but then leave the marriage, but not physically, see. Can't leave the marriage physically because that'd be too irresponsible, see, so you leave the marriage!

Now, if you want to see something complicated, it's the number of ways a thetan can leave without shoving off physically. And practically, psychotherapy is just a study of that. You can go down into making people sorry that they didn't let you leave, don't you see. You can make them guilty of having put you in a situation where you couldn't leave, by in your turn, appearing so nasty – that's a wild pitch, isn't it; well, they all have a wild curve on them like this, you see – by appearing so nasty to everybody when you were so happy before.

See, it's not necessarily an unimaginative set of factors, see. But the basis on which they're based is very, very simple. There's very – very little to this basis. Basis is: the individual commits an overt, intentionally or unintentionally, he commits some other overts and he goes a whole gamut of commission of actions. He never really stops committing actions but now he commits them with a negative reason. He commits them in order to get out of there. If he can't leave at all, now he has a whole bunch of solutions that go downhill from that point. I mean, you just get the wildest things. And it's really a study of assertive thereness right on down to not-thereness, and a sort of a gradient scale of these two factors involved.

And all of this – all of this being on communication channels and being like a communication channel requires communication of some kind or another to resolve. But we've got this factor of the regretted action or the regretted reach or something like this; we got this factor, and we've got the factor of the communication formula, both of them superior to the reactive bank.

Now, the reactive bank booby – traps this to some degree. Communication is mirrored in the reactive bank. There isn't any word "overt" in the reactive bank that I know of at this time. But the whole thing is just a study of overts, from beginning to end. The word "withhold" is definitely in there and it's in there so often that we must really cease to use it. Too restimulable. Too restimulated, the pc would get if you continued to use it. Substitute for it and you'll find out it actually works better, "What he didn't say." See. "What have you done?" "What haven't you said?" "What have you done?" "What haven't you thought?" "What have you done?" see. "What action have you taken?" and "What action haven't you done?" Don't you see? Just play both sides of the coin. Understand the principle rather than get the parrot rating, see.

And the word "withhold," although we have it around and although we wouldn't be able to root it out of our technology, actually couldn't – can remain in the technology but not in an auditing command. Because it restimulates the pc and you get false TA. You're moving banks around and you're getting false TA on the thing. It's just bank discharge is all you're getting. You're actually not doing anything. And it's really not bank discharge, it's tone arm action being occasioned by a GPM coming in and it eventually will freeze up.

I know that makes it sound grim but you're perfectly safe as long as you just don't use that word "withhold." It won't happen.

You can say, "What haven't you said?" You'll find out that you'll have a ball with that. That's gorgeous. You could even sort out the thing: said, thought, acted, not acted. "What action haven't you taken?" You could sort the thing out, see, and get the fellow right where he lived and by building up from that point, free him on innumerable points and knock out a whole bunch of these weird nonsenses. But of course, you realize that you can't do that easily unless you're in good communication with the individual.

Now, one of the principal factors that you bat your head against, then, in a case, is the inability of a case to admit any action or take any responsibility for action. If a case can take no responsibility of any kind for any action ever committed, that case is committed forever to the deep. There isn't anything you could ever do for that case. He's just buried in the five-mile Philippine Deep and that is the end of that.

But you understand, I've said take no responsibility for any action he has ever done. I'm not now talking about an overt act. See, don't interpret it from that line and you've got it pretty well won. But that's the lost soul. The lost soul who is being shredded between the worlds with a soundless wail is the person who can take no responsibility for any action he has ever done. And that is a statement of exactly where a case ceases to be within range of assistance.

This makes those things you can't talk to pretty irresponsible, doesn't it. Well, they are.

I can imagine a conversation, if you could achieve one, with a spider. The tremendous importance of the spider, the fantastic put-uponness of the spider, and the utter irresponsibility of every action the spider takes and undertakes, would be something that would drop your jaw. The inability to communicate goes along with the irresponsibility for actions. See, that's an index. Those two things go straight together.

As the ability to communicate drops out, responsibility for actions, as a factor, falls. As responsibility for actions, as a factor, falls, ability to communicate falls. Now, don't come around and write me a despatch sometime and ask me how to cure a stutterer.

That's a deteriorated zone of communications. It doesn't mean that there's anything fabulously in error about this individual. It does mean that there is some zone or area of an irresponsibility. Because those two factors rise and fall alongside of each other. They don't go on a scale, like the scale of justice; they go up in a pair of elevators. Responsibility for one's own actions rise, ability to communicate rises. Responsibility for one's own actions fall, communication falls. There they are. They ride side by side.

And Joe Spider out here in the garden, an examination of his responsibility for why he's in the garden and for what he's doing, and if you could get a heart-to-heart talk with him, which of course you can't because of this other factor – I won't say that you can't, maybe some of you someday will – this bird's not talking. Doesn't even make noise. But yet his concept of responsibility would be utterly fantastic.

Everything is all done. Actually, the reason he spins webs – he can actually see himself spinning webs and has very detached viewpoint, if he can see himself at all. And it's a mechanism that was laid into him by God. And he does this because of a compulsion that was handed him, you see, at this time. And the flies that get into the web are driven in there by some guardian spirit of spiders, you see, that had a battle in Valhalla with the *wahf-wahf*. And that's why they are destroyed. And the reason they are consumed is to keep the garden clean for *Jub-bub*. "Who's that?" Well, I don't know.

You find out that spider is not doing a confounded blasted thing. He doesn't spin, he doesn't eat, he doesn't do anything. He's a model of nothing. And he can't talk, see? He can't deliver any lectures on the subject of spiders. You see this? You see this as a factor?

Now, think of this – think of this when you see madman X leaping about in a padded cell, covered with his own filth and that sort of thing, and gibbering and yapping. And somebody says to you, "Well, if you really knew anything about the mind..." I don't know why they put this up, see. Well, that's the same mechanism at work in another line, see? "If you really knew anything about the mind, why, you could do something for that madman in there." Take a look at it.

Of course, they want you, if possible, to commit an overt against that madman. Then they've got you, see. But there you are looking at – here you're looking at the factor, "How mad is this man?" This is the first question you would ask, "How mad is this man?" Well, this man happens to be as mad as you can get into communication with him – as you can't get into communication with him. It's an inverse ratio, of course, in that particular instance. He can't – he can't make any sense, he doesn't pay any attention to you, and so forth. Well, he's pretty mad.

First thing you'd have to do would be to build up a communication factor across the fact of no responsibility at all. That's quite a trick. But you could build it up with mimicry, you could build it up in various ways. You could build it up by a timed hello: every day you come by and say, "Hello." That's all, just one. He'd eventually be over at the bars saying, "Hello." Might be six months, you see, but he'd eventually get at this. And providing of course that somebody else didn't do something gruesome to him in the meantime, why he would – he would eventually be able to recognize that you were different from the rest of the environment. You see, he'd work it out here somehow or another and he'd eventually start responding to you and that sort of thing.

And then, you'd have to find something that he did, something that he had done, something he really knew he'd done, something he could take responsibility for. And just expand that perimeter and you would return his sanity. There is no more complication in the basic theory than that. There aren't exceptions to this basic theory. Where the exceptions come in is how in the name of God you eventually bring this fellow about to talk to you. The gradient

you have to run in order to get this individual into communication with you. How you put it to him – how you put it to him, that you want to find out what he has taken responsibility for in his environment.

These are the factors that require genius. See, there's a bit of genius mixed up in this, man. You've got to think on your feet. This individual starts to go that way, you got to round him up and head him off and bring him back again, you see.

You say, "All right, now what part of your life did you like best? Oh, your early teens. All right, all right. Now, what did you most enjoy doing in your early teens?" See, you got it right there, see. He can answer that question. If you can find that question to ask, answer that question, up she starts going, see?

And then some nuttinesses start chipping off because his ability to observe what his environment is, and so forth, will again pick up. He's less in contest with that environment, you see? You've made an inroad on it even though he considers you a plaster angel that has descended just to assist him. Regardless of that, he has nevertheless made a crack in the environment.

So responsibility for own actions doesn't then merely mean overt actions. It just means actions of any kind. What can he do that he'd take responsibility for? The worse off an individual is the less responsibility he can take for anything. But the genius required is: Where do we hit this case to pick up its zone of responsibility? And those cases that are having a rough time... Of course, we hit them around here at a very high level with, such as, something like this, "Well, now what have you done that you know confounded cottonpicking well you shouldn't ought of been doing that you can take responsibility for?" See, that's more or less in that line. "What have you done around here that you really know you've done, Bud?"

"Ah well, *awa-wawa-wawa*." And then all of a sudden the guy will hit something and it breaks, you see. He starts to straighten out in this direction. But recognize that is a fairly high level of action. It pays you the compliment of considering you're sane – can take responsibility, but that your wheels were slipping for a while, see. That's the – but that's a high level of action.

"Have you done anything today that you know you yourself did?" Let's get this level of action now. Oh, that's another level of action, isn't it? All right. Now, there's an undercut, "Where have you been today that you know you have been?" That's done by reason of placement. Let's work up a gradient scale to where the guy decided to be someplace and was there. See, let's work it up on the basis of responsibility for placement of self, not even contest with the environment.

You see, there are various ramifications here that you can work on. There's various gradients. But this is not really the principle of this lecture. It's just this, you've got these two factors: Communication – and even though that's in the bank, the formulas of communication are superior to the reactive bank – and you've got the idea of responsibility for own action. And responsibility may or may not be part of the reactive bank; and it just wouldn't matter, if it was or wasn't. The truth of the matter is it exists as superior to the bank.

Responsibility for own actions, which is the very woof and warp of being a thetan. Can you decide to do something and do it? Can you be somewhere? Can you be out of somewhere at will? These are the abilities of a thetan. And if you can't do those things then you're slipping.

So where do you start somebody in to get those things done? And that's a very important question. So you've got two factors here which are superior to the reactive bank, which are superior to this universe and which are native to a thetan.

Now, I've always said that the overt act-motivator sequence was not necessarily true. No, it isn't necessarily true. It isn't true, but it fades out in terms of consideration higher than any other consideration. It goes higher and is still a truth after other things have become lies, before it becomes a lie. Do you understand? It's pretty high. These two factors ride right together. And it gives you all levels of processing from IV on down. And it gives you all levels of cases.

Now, how many ways you can go about doing this, how many processes you can adapt into this, how many systems as they exist in Scientology right this minute to achieve communication with the individual, how many systems exist after you get through to pull the rocks out from underneath some daffy consideration... Daffy consideration – that's obviously married up to the fact that it's the individual's doing something that is daffy, see. Those things will fall apart very easily to the degree that the individual can accept doing something.

And if you've got those two factors, however many ways there are of getting at those things, you have all these lower levels of processing, you have all these lower levels of case. And there in actual fact is no real excuse – no real excuse at all, for you to be in the dark about why you're not making progress with a case. Because whatever other factors are present, see, what other factors are present, these factors are more present.

See, it may be true that this fellow is so harassed in his marriage that he can't put his mind on anything of the... "What's he stuck in like that for?" is your first question. Not how terrible his environment is. Well, look at how he's stuck into his environment. All right, where is he stuck into his environment? Let's get a pc just talking one way or the other. We're asking him in effect, "Hey, Bud, where are you stuck in?" See, "What tank trap have you run into that you're still treading your wheels in," see, "you're skidding your treads in?" See, "Where are you?" is what we're asking.

Now, this individual is at his job, or he's at home, or he's here, or he's there, but he's being there all the time while he's elsewhere, see. He's really stuck in, you see. He's Rommel stuck in at Tobruk. He's so frightened on this front that he never has a chance to fight the war, see.

He's stuck in someplace. And just with general itsa and that sort of thing, you, very soon, very shortly, find out where this individual's stuck in. Now, the burning question is: Is what responsibility can he take in that zone or area – for his own actions in that zone or area?

Now, you frankly don't care at a lower level of case whether this individual is answering overts or unsaids or withholds or anything else. You just don't care about any of those factors. All you're interested in, really, is responsibility for own actions or responsibility for

lack of actions. What is he certain he hasn't said? That would be a very gentle entrance point. But of course you couldn't play that out question after question because it's an out of ARC process. You'd have to quickly shift on over to the other side of the picture.

You just get his responsibility for action in that zone or area and all of a sudden that house of cards will fall down. Sometimes it takes quite a little while to steer it around, steer it around, get it more real, you know, and get a better view of the situation. All of a sudden one will fall out of the hamper and you'll find out this individual is not now as obsessively worried about something as he was before.

Now, there's one thing that gets in your road as you go over this ground. And I will admit to this, that there's one thing that gets in your road. An individual can have a piece of the GPM keyed in to such a degree that it's driving him half around the bend, see. At the lower levels you'd just better leave it alone, at this particular time.

But I have done something by reading off a short list of words that possibly were authoring the condition and seeing if one read, and then telling him that was an integral part of the reactive bank that was influencing him, and it discharged at that particular moment and he ceased to become obsessively worried. That's another root on the same basis, see. But is not one that you would commonly care to practice. And probably is a little more dangerous than it is safe.

If you follow the other one around, you'll find out it'll apply very generally to all cases.

That's how you crack one of these cases, that's how you go about this sort of thing. And that's what in essence auditing is about.

One of the ways you can badger somebody into finally getting off of a certain merry-go-round is a very interesting one too. Of – I'd say there's lots of methodology about this, very interesting one too. You say to him, "All right. What have you done that you really know you have done ..." in that particular zone or area that he's worried about, see – "What have you done that you really know you've done?" in that particular zone and so forth.

And he tells you. "Wow, I know I've done this," you see. And he comes up, and you know, the glibness with which he comes up with this thing, he really has taken no responsibility for it. This is – the responsibility factor is lying there like a sleeping dog. The fellow might tell you glibly, but there's no responsibility.

The rebuttal on such a thing is to get him to explain to you for some time how he has not really done that. Can't play it too long because it's a cut comm line type of approach, don't you see. But you can actually get him to explain this. "Oh, I-I-I busted up the old man's car and ran it off a cliff, ha-ha."

"All right, very good. Well, how didn't you really do that?"

Oh, well, he'll let you in on it now. And boy, there's the most tortuous logic you ever heard of in your life as how he never really did that. He took the car, he didn't have permission. He was at the wheel of the car. He ran it down over the concrete abutment and into the arroyo. But somehow or another... No responsibility, see. It's a some kind of a solution to this

situation, you see. The responsibility factor – you'll just see it. You can sit there with your jaw dropped sometimes. He didn't really do it. He wasn't really in the car. The car just sort of whistled him over and made him sit down in the seat and... And then it's the old man's fault because the old man never had a restraining-from-the-curb thing put on the car that made the wheels turn away from the curb, don't you see. And it's actually the fault of Newton for pointing out gravity that made the car go down the arroyo, and...

It's pretty wild, pretty wild. But you get him to explain all this and all of a sudden it begins to dawn on him gently that he had something to do with this action. And you play around the perimeter of this thing, and all of a sudden it breaks and the case does a tremendous send.

The reason why you can't run straight O/W and get this tremendous send, because they're not really overts. The individual has no responsibility with them, you see? You get him to explain how he never did them, and we enter a lower level of responsibility factor. We all used to have it, "What part of that action could you have been responsible for?" or "could you be responsible for?" Don't you see, as a direct approach process. There's another indirect approach process, "How didn't you really do it?"

Little higher level, "What reasons did you have for doing that?" Get him to as – is all of these things.

And then don't let him get into a state where he's running up more, because you are the auditor and he's trying to look good to you.

A certain amount of genius is involved here on the part of the auditor. But knowing these factors and playing them one against the other and back and forth, and so forth, you could bust almost anybody out of these immediate environmental situations which have him doing such weird and wonderful things, and so forth and you had to have auditing actually below Level IV. Because you're using two principles which are senior to the mind – to all other considerations – for those lower levels, and you'll make it.

And I wish you some success when you're using it.

Thank you.

Audience: Thank you.

STUDYING: INTRODUCTION

A lecture given on 18 June 1964

Thank you.

Well, I'm glad to see you, too. What's the time? [laughter]

Female voice: June the 18th.

I'm getting so I think in terms of broader periods of time. It's quite amusing to me, but I notice the 16th took two or three days to go by and the 17th has taken two or three days to go by, and now we're on the 18th, so this is 18 June AD 14, Saint Hill Special Briefing Course.

The things are swinging along beautifully and it's quite a tribute – this is not germane to the lecture, the lecture is on something quite important, but – the lecture is about studying – but it's quite interesting that a very – a rather indirect tribute can be paid to the auditing of Saint Hill students who've been through their lower materials and come on up to the co-audit, and so forth. They have actually kept their pcs going, over a considerable quantity of by-passed charge.

That isn't said as a gag, you see? It's the truth, see. Because the top of the reactive mind, you see, the top of a GPM, is the hardest thing to find out what's in it. You haven't been over this – these humps, and you probably won't have to be, but just let me give you this in passing.

The hardest thing in the world to find are the top items of a GPM. I don't know how many potential oppterms and terminals were discarded before the actual ones were found, see. It's up – oh, I don't know, the arrangements of that bank are almost uncountable. You have, at the moment, a perfect line plot. That's why you're getting away with it. But the top of a bank, you see, the whole reactive mind would be equally hard to get to because the thetan is sitting on all that charge, you see?

Similarly, the top of a series, you see, would be the hardest thing to find the root words of, don't you see? And that is the scramble which has been going on before the thing was finally taped. It's very funny. I've got the rest of the root words of the series, you see? They just run out like hot butter, there's nothing to those. But getting those exact top ones, that was the tough one. And in putting that material in exact lineup, of course, we had momentary stumbles on the line of exactly what was this thing. Of course, you know, you could have laid off and knocked off and not done any auditing on this, you see, for a couple of years and let me have run the whole bank out, don't you see? But you were running this danger, is by the time I've run the whole bank out, I might not be interested. [laughter, laughs] Gag.

But it was a considerable tribute to the fact that there was – there was some missing elements there, perfect line plot they started with – didn't start with a perfect one, but had one within 24 hours – and the materials pretty well lined up, exactly how they went, what the patterns were, and that sort of thing. This was pretty well ironed out, but nevertheless, nevertheless, there were quantities of bypassed charge, huge quantities such as no co-audit will ever face again, you see? And the auditors in the co-audit actually were sufficiently smooth as auditors, and so forth, that their pcs just kept going along and they didn't have any big casualties or anything else.

Now, in the clumsiest look, they would have killed somebody with that much charge, see – the clumsiest look. And if their auditing had been the least bit crude, and so on, why, those people would have just been flying apart at every joint, you know. There would have been ARC breaks and rabble rouses and so forth, and max – mass exoduses and people checking out and... [laughter] You know, I mean, it'd been – it'd been horrible. Because if you can see the amount of catastrophe caused by just missing one item, and so forth, well, here they had a whole series missing. And yet they were auditing over the top of this and actually were making very nice gains and gave me yesterday afternoon a very beautiful series of reports. Everything was going along fine. [laughter]

Now, by George, that's pretty good auditing, that's pretty doggone good auditing. So I wish to give them a compliment right now, on the subject of their auditing. They must be awful good. [applause] All that's straightened out now, and I imagine in today's sessions the cases just took off like rockets. They must have gotten into the top of that other series and so forth, and it just must have run *swish!* In fact, I never saw anything connect up with such reads as the – as connecting up the missing element with what had been bypassed. That really shot the lot, rerunning it and connecting it up.

So the upshot of the situation was that I was very, very pleased with that. They're making terrific progress and everybody is very, very happy about this and very enthused about this. And I get a side note occasionally on letters going out of here and I'm not having to say, "This is it," now. "This is it" is a very, very calm statement compared to some of the statements I've heard going out of here on various lines. And there isn't, I don't think, any doubt in anybody's mind who is in the co-audit, they'll eventually make it. They may make it with only one leg or something like that, they're figuring at the present moment, [laughter] but they'll make it, they're on their way and the door is open, wide open.

All right, the situation with regard to auditing depends on another subject and that is a subject called study. If you can't learn anything, why, then you can't find out how to do anything. So just as I talked to you in the last lecture and told you that communication was not an end-all of processing but was absolutely vital if an auditor was ever going to get to a pc to do something for him, so it is true that study operates as the door, open or closed, to learning how to audit.

If an auditor can't learn anything, then of course he won't be able to audit, regardless of the attitude he has towards the human race or his wish to do something for people or his desires in any way, shape or form. These all would be barriered by just this one point – he couldn't learn anything.

So in order to teach somebody how to audit, it's necessary that they be able to learn. Now, this is terribly fundamental, awful. This is down there scraping the bottom of the barrel with regard to fundamentals, and yet all great successes are built on attention to fundamentals. Everything is built on a fundamental. Unless you can isolate these fundamentals, you of course leave your building with a – with an incomplete foundation. It's sort of sitting in the air ever afterwards unless you find the fundamental with which to proceed. You wouldn't build any skyscrapers if you didn't put down a foundation.

Well, what is the foundation? That foundation in auditing is, of course, study – the ability to learn. And failing that, why, an auditor has an awful hard time.

This next datum I am going to give you is something – is something I really don't want you to park behind the left lobe and skip, because this is going to make all the difference in the world to the future of Scientology. And that is a knowledge of this one point, this one point: That better than 50 percent of Scientology consists in the discipline of application, consists in the technology of application, consists in the know-how of application. And that's better than 50 percent of the subject – better than 50 percent.

Now, perhaps that datum is not very impressive, but let me – let me amplify this and I think you will see how that datum is impressive. You could give the entirety of the processes which have produced results in Scientology – and there are a great, big, many of them – you could give these in their entirety to a field of mental practice, carte blanche – that's just the processes, you understand, just the commands – and they wouldn't be able to do a thing with them. They wouldn't be able to get any result with them of any kind whatsoever.

They would turn out an asinine statement like the University of Chicago. It's a college. That's what we used to say about it at GW. We used to be tolerant about Chicago. Most of us wanted to go there because you only had to go a couple of years before they handed you a sheepskin and we were bored. But this outfit uttered this asinine statement: "We have tested all the techniques of Dianetics and found out it didn't work." Well, in the first place it's asinine because all the techniques of Dianetics didn't exist in published form and were not available to them to test, see? So right away, that was nonsense. For instance, I know of techniques that were released at the first Foundation in Elizabeth which have never seen the light of day; I have never seen them published or anything else.

Matter of fact, I saw three or four splinter groups suddenly start up on stuff that was merely designed to take care of one pc or something like that, and then they decided that this would apply to all pcs and so forth. There are several brands of therapy which are adrift today which simply consist of one technique developed for one pc at Elizabeth. So for any outfit – for any outfit to grandly look down its nose and say, "We have tested all the techniques of Dianetics," you know? Well, what a statement, see? They haven't got them to test. How would they even know if they had tested "all the techniques"? Right away they are irresponsible. And then to say they didn't work would also be asinine because if they had tested even sloppily, they would have gotten some result someplace, unless they were simply uttering a publicity statement to protect the vested interest.

But that is aside from the point. The point is simply this: Yes, they could have had all the techniques. They could have had them all. They didn't, but they could have. And they

could have, in their haphazard, bunged-up way, have tested these techniques and they wouldn't have worked, because they didn't have a Dianeticist in the lot of them. There was nobody there trained in the basic disciplines of Dianetics. And that was 50 percent or better of the technology which they might have gathered. Quite important, don't you see?

Now, give you another one: Reg and I, sailing around on the deep blue sea, invented a – dreamed up a course that was – had nothing to do with Scientology but had to do with business and commerce and nevertheless was a very broad application of Scientology to business and commerce. But the course was for another reason entirely and Reg thought this was a good idea, and he went ahead and he executed this course. And this course has been marvelously successful. It's running, I think, at the present time and it's doing fine, you see?

Only trouble is, everybody else is now trying to get into the act. It's a goodwill gesture. All this course is, is a nice goodwill gesture; it's trying to increase the salesmanship, and so forth, of retail merchants and their clerks, you see, so as to move more equipment and that sort of thing, see? That's what the course is designed to do. And everybody tried to get on the bandwagon, you see? There were other people started teaching this course, teaching their own courses to accomplish the same end, you see? And recently some company or another requested that Reg's course be taught to all of their staff and so forth. They get requests of this particular character.

But Reg made the broad statement there that is particularly applicable to this lecture, and so on. He says, "Well," he says, "you don't have to worry about any competition or other people giving this course. They'll start and they'll fail, and so forth, but they won't be able to duplicate the course."

Well, that's been the facts of the thing. This course could go on, they could (quote) "teach similar courses," do this, do that, do the other thing, but of course, they are always aware, if only this, that they are teaching a substitute, that they are not teaching the real one. And people are always faintly aware of the fact that they are not taking the real course in salesmanship.

Well, this in itself, you see, enters enough – even on the copyist – in the way of an overt or something like this, so that he then goes into an obsessive alter-is and the statement that Reg made was, "They can't duplicate it," becomes completely true. They can't and they won't duplicate it and that is the end of that. And that – these other courses have probably risen – I don't know what the history of this – I haven't kept up with it too well, but I think there are other courses have risen up and faded away by this time and a lot of enthusiasm has been generated in this quarter or that on duplicating this course and I think this course is still going on. Very successful. Probably one of the more delicate goodwill gestures that's been entered into by a company for a long time.

Well, of course, one of the reasons it's successful, it's somewhat oriented Scientologically. But that course wouldn't be duplicated and therefore wouldn't be tremendously successful.

Now, supposing they taught the exact same methods; that is, they used the technique or something on these other courses that are being taught which are copy courses of this course, you see? Supposing they did that, and so on. There would still be some element miss-

ing of some kind or another. That element would be the missing thing that would make the course that was being taught fail.

I don't wish to belabor that particular simile, but it is merely interesting, it is merely interesting that even there, even there on such a thing as simply teaching some salesmen how to be nice to their customers and that sort of thing, that this thing, too, fails when you move it out of its own perimeter of discipline. So even on a thing as slight as that, you see, that one fails, too; and so it goes along the line.

I don't know how much technology a university loses because every professor makes 90 percent of his salary by making the students buy his personal books. I think by the time you've rewritten James Watt, I think you've lost steam engines. And it's highly probable that there probably isn't a steam engineer in the world today that has really got the technology of steam. It has been perverted and twisted aside and misduplicated, and so on.

And I go back to some of these old boys that knew their business, and so on. One time I was covering an air meet and there was a fellow standing there – it was a bright sunshiny day and he was standing there with rubbers on and an umbrella. The umbrella wasn't unfurled, but he had that umbrella handy. It was a beautiful midsummer day, you see, and I wondered what this character was doing at an air meet – all these daredevil racing pilots and that sort of thing around; and I was covering this thing for *The Sportsman Pilot*. But I thought this was good side color, so I surreptitiously took a shot at him with my press camera and got his name.

His name was Young, and he was the second man in the world beyond the Wrights to fly. Ha-ha! He was probably one of the most famous early birds there was. My face was a little bit red, you see? He had become cautious in his old age, but in his day – I imagine his caution still didn't extend to flight – but in his day they used to fly a plane off the ground with an ambulance running along below it. [laughter] That's right! They saved more pilots that way. This was a man who was a wild man along this particular line. Well, I was very interested in talking to him; I did an article on him eventually, and he showed me his scrapbooks, and so on.

And I was particularly fascinated that there were 13 methods of flight, heavier-than-air methods of flight – 13 of them – of which the motionless wing was only one, and by the way, one of the less favored ones. And one of the reasons it was favored was because – at all or done at all is because it didn't take much mechanical ingenuity to build it. But there were twelve other methods of heavier-than-air flight-heavier-than-air; that's not ballooning or zeppelins. There's all kinds of methods of keeping aircraft aloft.

There's the principle of the rotating stick, that if you throw a stick in a certain way it'll hum – spinning, you know – it'll hum and you will see it curve straight up into the air. It'll do the darnedest ascendancy and that's just a rotating stick. There is method after method of flight of this particular character.

Because they concentrated on the one wing, it won, see? And you now have aircraft all over the world which are going along with this stiff wing out there from the fuselage, mostly because the early birds didn't have any of the wherewithal or anything else to build something

a little more esoteric or different, so it got the concentration of research and that is what we now call an airplane.

But it was interesting listening to old Mr. Young – who was designing these things back when – it was very interesting to listen to him on a tone of disappointment that they had chosen that particular one to push forward in research because it was one of the less workable and one of the less efficient.

Here was this vast body of technology, see, which had never been developed and which is lost back there in the first ten years of this century. All kinds of methods of flight; none of them ever went forward. Well, this one that was easy to do did get developed.

Well, it's very interesting that one of them emerged and went forward; that's probably the one thing one should look at. But it is customary almost in civilizations for a body of knowledge to come into being, then get grooved into a certain specialization – some piece of it, don't you see – then that piece of it poorly duplicated and the rest of the technology to be lost.

Boy, would I like to talk to James Watt on the subject of steam engines. He probably could tell you all about high-pressure boilers. See, he just didn't have the time, money, materials, to build one. But maybe there were dozens of methods of utilization of steam which have just been lost, you see?

What you're studying now is lost technology, lost technology. "Now," you say, "the civilization goes forward and wins anyway." Well, may I invite you to go almost in any direction from where you are at this moment at Saint Hill, for a distance of ten or twelve miles and try not to find the remains of civilizations which did not win. They are all over the place here – civilizations that are dead, civilizations that are missing, civilizations that no longer are with us. They are all on the basis of lost technology. They start specializing in one gimmick, there's nothing to amplify that gimmick, they finally lose the pieces of it and it vanishes. The civilization may be very well dependent upon that one gimmick; they have nothing to back it up. They lose it, in other words. Fascinating, the changes and turns and twists that these things take.

Now, you could say a lot of other things about these civilizations, but the only thing I am pointing out at the moment is they're not here. See, they're not present. We don't have them with us. And they were good civilizations as they went: the Roman-Briton civilization, the Danish civilization that was here, the Saxon civilization here – all these things terribly different – the Norman civilization that was here. They're all over the shop.

How about the Celtic civilization that existed before? Must have been quite a civilization. You read casually about wicker chariots charging through the Ashdown Forest. What's this – wicker chariots charging through the Ashdown Forest? Well, our good friend Caesar reports as such.

Well, this civilization has went. We know nothing about this civilization. It must have been pretty well advanced. And yet the scene of this battle, and so forth, is within about ten miles of Saint Hill. Well, where did that civilization go? What was it all about? That's a pretty

esoteric civilization – wicker chariots, see? Maybe some somebody forgot how to weave wicker. Who knows what happened to that civilization, see?

Now, the situation here is that technology gets lost and we have to study how it gets lost. And it's – gets lost because people can't study. That's really the only reason it gets lost. That's quite a – quite an interesting fundamental, to reduce everything down to that particular fundamental. We don't, then, go into the esoterics of "They couldn't duplicate" and "They couldn't this," but that's only why they couldn't study.

Civilizations tend to rise forward to a certain peak. And then under the stress of combat and the various elements and so forth, they start losing their technology. Well, they lose their technology simply because nobody studies the technology.

How about this fellow, the silversmith of England? England's no longer today turning out the silver it once turned out. Its silver craftsmen used to be very, very famous. And then they got a Labour government, and it put the tax up on silver to a point where British silver no longer could be sold. They might as well have stood the British silversmith up against the wall and shot him because he drifted off then into other trades and the technology became lost; and it's practically a lost technology at this moment. Now, this has only been lost in the last decade or so. You'd have to talk hard to a – to jewelry store managers and that sort of thing before you understand why it is that you can't buy silver. You can buy antique silver, you can buy yesteryear's silver; there are two or three of them still in business, and so forth.

Well, what about these fellows? There are fellows around who learned this and there are plenty of textbooks on this subject and that technology still exists but it's going to be lost. That's for sure, it's going to be lost. How about the one old craftsman who is left in the plant? You see, he knows all about that. He's surrounded by people, and all of a sudden there might be a resurgence in that. Well, everybody merely depends on him; they don't learn the craft. You see, they simply depend on him to know it. It all comes up against the dead end of not being able to learn, not being able to study.

Well, I always prided myself in being a very quick study, so I, myself, can speak from fair expertness in this particular line. But I know my own history on this and I know my own blind spots on this. When you become less worried about your mental status or something like this in the world, you can actually look at it and find out if there is anything wrong with it and dare admit that it could stand a few improvements here and there.

One of the things about study itself is that there are a great many things around that are false and you could study a lot of false things and therefore become disabused of studying because you had studied something false. This would be one of the reasons why you might cease to study. I really don't see that that has anything to do with it, except that it enters the idea of judgment of what you're studying. So if one studied without any judgment whatsoever of what he was studying or ability to evaluate what he was studying or know what he was studying, why, his ability to study would be very poor indeed. He'd just be Chinese in aspect.

Nothing wrong with the Chinese, but I remember going to school, the eighth grade, I think. I spent some months going through grammar school, all on different stations and places. And the situation that arose in the eighth grade was that nobody could get an A mark

except two Chinese who were in the school. And they had – they had learned how to study but so have parrots learned how to study if that is their study.

And they would get up and they would reel off the page number and the paragraph and everything else of the history book assignments, you see, and they'd give it to you verbatim. Most marvelous job of total duplication you ever heard of, but they would not be able to tell you what universe. And if you had – if you had varied one comma or asked for an opinion on that material studied in that way, they would have come a cropper at once, and very frequently did. They would have to remember whether it was in the middle of the book or the back of the book, as to what period that it applied to or something like this.

Most marvelous job of carbon-copy duplication that I ever saw, and it used to irk the rest of us, you see, because they would always get A-plus, and it held up such a horrible example to the teacher that the teacher would, of course, then give nothing like an A-plus to any mere knowledge of the subject, you see? So our renditions of it were quite rapidly thrown away and we usually got D. I'll never forgive them. [laughter]

But anyway, joking aside, these – this is – this is a case of perfect, perfect, complete perfect duplication without a grain of sense connected with it; and that's absolutely deadly, so that isn't how you study. Deadly! But perhaps you should be able to do that, but I would consider that a mental feat, and I don't think study has anything to do with mental feats. Study has to do with understanding.

Study has to do, basic and most formally, with just really one thing: willingness to know. That's the first little gate that has to be opened to embark upon study: willingness to know. If that gate remains closed, then you're liable to get into such things as the total verbatim, rote system; you are liable to get into all kinds of other systems, none of which will add up to any knowledge.

Now, when you recognize that in Scientology we have one thing – one thing – which is not very easy to put into texts and which may never be put into texts: the discipline of how you do it. But when you recognize that that one thing actually is difficult to transmit in – by the written word – and is very easy to transmit by example. And when I call your attention to an earlier part of this lecture, when I said that it amounted to at least 50 percent of what we were doing, and I'll point out to you that there's a frailty involved in the relay of this information that's the future success of Scientology, and that frailty is right there. It could very easily, very easily become an unworkable subject.

You could take all the GPMs in the world – what do you think would happen if you took all the GPMs and the total map of the bank and everything exactly right and gave it at this moment to psychiatry? I know what they'd do. They would immediately analyze Poe to see how many times one of these words had occurred in one of his books, and then get the fractional recurrence of and then try to explain why Poe was mad, or something like this, don't you see? This is probably what they'd do with this material. It'd be monkey tricks, you know?

I even thought vengefully one day of sending all of the whole plot to the American *Journal of Psychology* – which, by the way, would absolutely fall on its face and bound its forehead to flinders if I were to give them an article. That's one of the reasons why they're a

little bit mad at us. I have been soundly berated by them for not publishing it with them at least one of our case histories, because it would revolutionize all... You see, it can't revolutionize anything unless published in their magazine. [laughter] I've been scolded by them for this but I thought vengefully of just giving them the whole plot and let them publish it, see? And that would eliminate that. [laughter]

But the point, the point I'm making here, is that all of this technology that can be written down, and so forth, could be relayed with the same result of the University of Chicago: no result, see? Because it has this element missing from it: the discipline of how you do it.

Now, when I tell you that an auditor can get so good that a gross bypassed charge exists in a session and his auditing is sufficiently smooth that nowhere and on no student in that co-audit did it get keyed in – wow! See, this is an almost impossible auditing feat. That's walking around the edges of the lion's cage, you see, so neatly and adroitly that there didn't even have to be bars there. This is pretty terrific, see?

Well, what did that? That's auditing discipline. That's the communication formula, that's this, this is handling the meter, this is what you do with a pc and what you don't do with a pc, and so forth. This is omitting from the auditing sessions the things that Mary Sue comes down as GAEs on, on Wednesdays, on TV demos; weeding these things out, keeping that line straight – over 50 percent of it.

We must, at this particular time, then, do this rather superlatively well here at Saint Hill. Because if any serious goof existed on the part of any of those auditors in the co-audit, any such consistent GAE as we see when a person first arrives here, he would have just wound his pc up in a pile of junk because there was enough there to have jammed the pc into a pancake against the brick wall, see? There wasn't any slight bypassed charge to be triggered, see? They weren't even aware of the fact that it was there and they were auditing around it sufficiently smoothly that it didn't cave anybody in.

Well now, on the reverse side of the coin, on the reverse side of the coin, if they had had all of their materials absolutely perfect right at the outset and if their auditing discipline – their ability to audit – had been as poor as it might have been, with all the materials and technology perfect and the process being done, they would have turned their pc into a pale pink pancake up against the brick wall. Do you understand? That's the other side of the coin!

Now, if you appreciate that, you can appreciate the remark I make when I tell you that the technique is one thing but the way it is applied is what makes the car go down the road. And that thing is the most likely thing to get lost. So therefore, we're in business as long as an auditor can learn how to audit.

You see, you don't have to learn anything actually to run GPMs. You can be handed it on cards. Did you – you realize this? You could probably be handed it on cards and you could reel it off one way or the other in some kind of patter. You wouldn't even have to learn it, you know? You could just let it sort of go off water like the – goes off the ducks back, you see? You could parrot it, you see, from a – from a list or a card or something like this. You wouldn't have to be learned. You're not up against learning in that burrow. In fact, if I ever hear of an Instructor making some new student memorize a line plot so that he can run it better, I'll give him a GAE with exclamation points – the Instructor, see? That would be the most grue-

some thing. So actually, in that particular case the technology is not something you would learn. You wouldn't even learn the – what's called the technique – you wouldn't dare! It'd just kill the student; that'd be it.

If you ever have a – have a – find yourself, bird-dogged by a spy from the Federal – I don't want to be – pardon me, I'd – there are ladies present – why, just decide that he had better learn by heart – don't even pick out anything very rough, just give him one of the Helatrob line plots and tell him, well, he has to start in by learning that by heart. [laughter]

So therefore, when I am talking to you about learning, we're practically not on the subject of technology at all. We know what grade certain technology belongs in and so forth, but – I do it myself very often, write the process out rapidly below the meter, so that I can put my pencil – let's say it's a multiple question. I don't want to involve my wits, which should be involved with auditing, with remembering what question the pc is stumbling along on. I don't want to involve my wits with that, so I'll just write down the four or five commands, or whatever the thing is in rotation, and just stab the one with my pencil that is currently in action, you know; and when I come to the next one, why, I see that all is well and I look down at the paper and refresh my memory of the thing and give it to him again, don't you see?

Well, that leaves me free to audit; has nothing to do with that. In fact, there's tricks like you're running a multiple alternate question, and so forth; your positive is your index finger and the negative is the middle finger, and so forth, and just touch them with your thumb. Touch the positive question – you're on the positive question. Well, your thumb is on your index finger; negative question, your thumb is on your middle finger, and so on. You don't get mixed up that way, and you don't mix up the pc either nor do you have to sit there saying, "Now, let me see, what am I now..." you know? That's for the birds.

So frankly, aside from classifying and know where the technology goes, I wouldn't say there is anything to learn in that zone at all. You're not going to learn auditing commands. You know what type of command should be there, you're going to learn that but not the command. You're not going to learn line plots or GPMs or something like that. Well, this changes the complete complexion of, "What – what – what are we supposed to learn? Then what – what learning is he talking about?" I'm talking now about learning how to do it, how to apply it. See? That's what I'm talking about.

Well, it's quite fascinating that there's many a guy shows up, he just wants a couple of processes so that he can learn these processes, and so on, and then he thinks he's educated and he can go on his way because he knows he can apply those; and then somehow or another they never seem to work for him, and he's always missing as to why they're not working for him.

Well, what he should be learning is the subject of *auditing*. Bulletins connected with good indicators, bulletins connected with comm cycles, and this type of thing. What are the tools of the trade here? Where – what's the categories of these tools, and so on, and how are they applied and what judgment do you use in connection with them? Learn those well enough so you're relaxed about them. Now, that's something to learn. And yet, I guarantee you, that that consistently will get brushed off lightly in comparison to some gimmick or trick

or process, see? The person, in other words, will be very happy to learn what are the auditing commands for something or other but have nothing whatsoever to do with a comm cycle.

Now, a comm cycle takes some learning, man, as you know! You can't even glibly say, "Well, it *blah blah blah blah blah*, and it starts and continues and it finishes, and – and that's all there is to a comm cycle and now we know all that. All right, now what's the auditing command, you see? That's what's important."

No, that's not what's important. The auditing command won't work unless you arrive, unless it arrives with the pc. And it's got to arrive with the pc along with certain "How do you do it? How do you act like an auditor? How do you sound like an auditor?" That's the stuff, that's the stuff that gets it there.

Now, I had a recent experience which is quite amusing. I have my lighter moments and I decided that I had better make an independent study. There's no sense in getting too concentrated on any one particular point, and I was going along like a shot rocket in the direction of Class VI materials and working on them very hard and very concentrated and that sort of thing, but I didn't figure that was going to keep my mind that involved. I find – I felt I might as well take up another subject which was entirely independent, you know? Give me a nice shift of attention.

So some years ago I had incautiously and in a moment of weakness bought a course of photography. Of course, I've been at photography since I was a kid; a nice hobby, and I have a lot of fun with it, and so forth. And at one time or another, why, I've sold pictures and so on. It's just one of these hobbyist things that you fool with. I'd probably classify as an advanced amateur; one time I classified as a pro, when I was in college. Used to make a lot of money, *National Geographic* and so forth. I think there's some geography books around that still carry pictures of mine in them.

But the upshot of it is, that I decided that in view of the fact that my mind was very heavily in this direction, I might as well put it in another direction. So I took up this correspondence course in photography – the New York Institute of Photography, one of the best – and rolled up my sleeves, and found out I'd never gotten deeper than about the third lesson. So I decided I would learn a little bit about study and I would start and study this thing up and I would get myself pushed along the line and get all my lessons done like a good boy, and send it all in, lesson by lesson, you know?

Well, what do you know? What do you know? First time in my life I learned something about studying. I learned something very subjectively and very real about studying. The only reason I'm telling you this is not to amuse you particularly, but you might be able to use this. And it's just this: I began to wonder why I had stopped at the third lesson. I was tolerantly going on forward studying the remaining lessons, and so forth, but why had I stopped at the third lesson and why was I bogging here and there along the line? Because this was not going easy.

Now, of course, this is a very, very wild, occasionally very dry, very often very stupid subject, the subject of photography, because it gets into optics. Well, you want to take a picture, not study optics, you see? But optics are apparently something that people who want you

to know about photography hold very dear to their hearts and they nag you about, you see? [laughter]

And then there's the subject of chemistry, and chemistry is very interesting. There are numbers of chemicals and they have something to do with the picture appearing on the thing, but that's something you really don't know too much about. If you can walk into a darkroom and turn yourself out a good negative and a good print, who the devil wants to know anything about chemistry, don't you see? This was more or less my attitude.

But I went on studying like a good boy and passing my examinations at the end. Every booklet has an examination. And all of a sudden it dawned on me that although I'd been interested in this since I was 12 years old, I didn't know anything about it! Horrible, dark thought. I've taken pictures, I've published pictures, people have paid me good cash money on the line, my pictures have been on covers of magazines, a very slick fellow. And I don't know anything about this subject! It struck me like a thunderbolt! This is a subject I had been at, if you please, since I was 12, in this lifetime. And I suddenly realized I didn't know anything about it. And it wasn't a case of sudden amnesia or something. It was just... [laughter] "You what?" you know, and "It's – it's which?"

And I suddenly rapidly reviewed what my reactions had been and made a very careful analysis of the whole thing and exactly what had happened. I'd had a particularly great subjective reality on this. I was studying an allied subject; I was forcing all of you to study; I should know something about the subject of study. And so I had, more or less, to some degree, started out to learn something about study and I learned something right then.

The tolerance that I had toward them had brought me up to a point where I was perfectly willing to learn a few gimmicks from them, and that was the state of mind I had entered that course upon. I was perfectly willing to learn a few gimmicks from them. I realized that my arrogance on the subject has absolutely – unprintably unspeakable. My arrogance was absolutely fantastic!

But look, I've been at it since I was 12. I studied photography under some of the – some of the old boys that were kicking around at that time. Some of the government photographers and scientists up in the National Museum were patient enough to teach me about photography, I read books on the subject, read this and that, even worked in professional dark-rooms.

And the evidence was right in front of my face. Good heavens! People pay you money for pictures. I used to take pictures for Underwood and Underwood.

And I had always said that the trouble with my photography as I came on up the line – I had it all beautifully explained – the trouble with my photography as I came on up the line was they kept changing their methods. [comm lag, laughter] I had it beautifully explained. So therefore – well, actually, since I started photography, miniature cameras have come out, panchromatic film, different types of developers, flashbulbs have come out; they've changed all these things. As a matter of fact, they're changing one on me right now. I had one film made by Ilford so tame that I could turn out a fine grain negative on this stuff, and they went and changed the speed rating of the film. Now you can't get the old film, so I don't know how to do it now. I was – this was blame on my part, you see? They kept shifting materials on me.

And what had dawned on me is, what I was being struck with in these texts – because this is a good professional course, see; this is nothing for any amateur – what I was being struck with in the text was known by Mathew Brady in the American Civil War. The basics and fundamentals that I didn't know had been present in that subject since 1860! Had nothing to do with changing materials. I didn't know the first fundamental of why the picture got took in the first place!

And all of a sudden, at that moment, it dawned on me with a tremendous crash that I had been very arrogant and that I really didn't know all there was to know under the sun, moon and stars on the subject of photography; I really wasn't the world's past master on the subject of photography because I had gotten a few results in my day, but that there was something there to learn. That's what I was struck with. And boy, I buckled down and started to study.

Now, the speed of advance is very interesting: three books in three and a half years; eight books in two weeks. And one is prior to that realization and the other is post that realization. I suddenly looked at it last night and realized I was halfway through the course. Three and a half years it took me to get the first three of the fifty-some books that comprise the course.

Why was I unable to move through that? Well, I was studying something I knew all about. I could not bring myself into a relaxed frame of mind of "Here is something to study. Let's study it." No, I was studying it through this screen: "I know all about this. I know everything there is to know about it." Well, will you please tell me why the devil I was sitting there studying it, then? If I knew all about it, why was I sitting there studying it? And yet I was putting up this pretense of studying it. I was even pretending to myself I was studying it. I didn't realize that I was pretending. I thought I was really studying it, you see? I'd read it, you know, and so on. [laughter] But it was all from the viewpoint that I knew all about it. And my arrogance was such that I was perfectly willing to learn a few tricks from them, and I think that was very tolerant of me.

Now, the funny part of that is, in subsequent study and so forth, my whole viewpoint has shifted on the subject, the whole viewpoint of what I'm willing to take a picture of; and my critical standards of what's a good picture have shifted utterly. I'm even criticizing their examples of perfect pictures, see? Very critical, but very well-founded criticism.

I couldn't learn because I knew all – that I knew all about it, you see? Now, that passed from a realization that I didn't really know a thing about it; I had to get right back to fundamentals and study those fundamentals. Once I got those fundamentals in and had those fundamentals well studied, and so on, and moving along the line up there, then I got to a point where I was not only perfectly willing to learn, I was also perfectly willing to talk back. I wasn't in any slavish state about learning. I knew my fundamentals now. I could see where they applied, and so forth, and within the scope and limits of that educational course was able to talk up. In other words, I could have an opinion. I could now have an opinion, I could exert judgment.

I had no judgment on the subject before. I merely had some fixed ideas, just fixed ideas, and these fixed ideas told me that I really knew all was to know about the subject.

When I finally found out – the big breakthrough was I found out there was something there to learn – that I didn't know. It wasn't a matter of a few gimmicks. Then this reversed around the other way, and with hard study, all of a sudden made another breakthrough:

I freed my own judgment.

I'd talk to any of these birds now. [There are] texts there by some very famous photographers. Good, hard, tough slugging this thing is, but one of those guys, I'd say, "Ah, come off of it," you know? "You're talking like this, but this picture here, man, I – how come? Look, you've burned out all of the..." This would have been legitimate. He would have talked to me about it, too. I'd say, "Look-a-there. You've burned out all of the highlights. You just burned them right straight through. Why? You might even have at least remedied it in the darkroom, for heaven's sakes."

And he would have said, "Well, I didn't think anybody would notice."

I'd say, "Well, I noticed."

Critical. Not that criticism is bad, don't you see; but I developed a critical eye, did not have to slavishly say, "This is a picture by Sam Falk, *New York Times* magazine, one of the greatest exhibition photographers of all time. Therefore it is holy." See? Gone completely through that and up to a point of where, "That's an awful good picture. That guy really has a good sense of composition, terrific sense of composition. What the hell was he doing that day in the darkroom? Drunk?" See what I mean? And I could have put my point – finger on a point which I'm sure that Sam Falk himself would have agreed with.

He'd say, "That's right. I didn't even hold back the enlarger light on that burned off highlight over at the side, and it completely washes out that bird's features over there. That's right, you're right. Attracts the eye over to the side of the picture, not to the principle subject. You're right, could have been improved, could have been improved in the darkroom." He wouldn't have argued about it. Or he could have said to me, "You don't know how bad the negative is!" [laughter, laughs]

You see what I mean? Then this would have been a sensible discussion because in the meantime, by burning the midnight... dawn actually; I've been using this to go to sleep on.

But the point had come up here, where one's fixed slavishness to something was there because one really didn't understand it in the first place, so he had to have fixed opinions to safeguard himself.

"Perspective: Perspective is handled by making something dwindle into the distance. Well, there is – if I don't have something go 'dwindle into the distance,' the picture won't have perspective." You know, this kind of a slavish fixed idea on the subject of perspective. Not "There are a lot of ways to give pictures a three-dimensional effect." See, that'd do you a different point of view, see. And "Perspective is accomplished in several ways." A different viewpoint, see? Then, once you understand that, then you can look at a picture and say, "Well, that photographer had a good command of perspective," or "He didn't." See? You say, "This guy had stepped over here another couple of feet to take his picture, he probably would have had a different depth, and it would have looked a lot better," see? Because, look, here's a couple of advantages he could have taken that he didn't take.

In other words, you have a flexibility, you have a flexibility of route, so therefore you can have an opinion, not a fixed idea or a prejudice. There's a big difference between a prejudiced or a fixed idea and the ability to have an opinion.

An opinion could be based on many things. But when an opinion is based on an inability to find out what it was all about in the first place, a man looks like a fool, and he suddenly looks like a fool even to himself when he makes a breakthrough.

So that my ideas on the subject of photography were not resulting in a finished picture. That's one of the first things I suddenly recognized, you know? The lightning struck. That was not necessarily what broke me down on the line. I'd broke it down before that, but I recognized that afterwards. Well, a guy's as good as he can finish a picture. It doesn't have anything to do with anything else. It obviously can be done, so therefore, why, there it is.

And this also included overshooting the mark, which you might find interesting. Previous to this breakthrough I made and the realization that I didn't know what the devil I was doing when I took a camera. I know how to clean lenses and do all sorts of things, but I didn't know what I was doing when I picked up a camera. I mean it was just ridiculous to even think that I did. A few lucky breaks, you know, and you seem to be so hot, but what about this?

It's a bum day and you want to get a picture and if you're real shaky and you don't know your business and so forth, you say, "Well, it's a bum day. That's one day I don't get a picture." See?

Well, if you really knew your camera, you wouldn't pay any attention to the fact that it was a bum day. You'd say, "Oh, yeah. Well, all right." Bang-bang. "What do we want the effect here? Bright sunlight. Good." Bang, boom! You'd say, "That's kind of interesting; awful foggy out there. Well, let's make the fog a little bit worse, and let's get it – real spooky-looking picture," see?

If you knew your business, then you could turn the tool to your advantage, any which direction you could, see? You weren't the victim of everything that occurred. You weren't the victim of every little splinter on the road, see?

"Well, it's too bad a day. The sun's not out and – oh, we'll take that picture tomorrow or some other day when the weather is nicer," you know? Well, what's – what's this? You mean – this can – this can exist to such a big goof that you don't get a picture at all then? How do you like this?

And yet a guy would not be able, who couldn't say, "All right, let's see," pick up a camera and take a picture, see? He's supposed to get a picture. Well, he should know his subject well enough that he can get a picture. That's fairly easy. All he's got to do is put himself in the vicinity of what he's trying to take a picture of; if he knew his tools real well, if he knew his darkroom technique real well, he'd p... he'd get a picture. See, he'd get a very acceptable picture. Now, the degree of picture that you would get depends a lot on practice and that sort of thing.

So, I learned that lesson, too, in a big way, that the conditions of the activity around me did not necessarily monitor whether or not I got a result or not. "Pc nattery today, therefore we couldn't get much auditing done."

What the hell! Are you an auditor or aren't you, see? I mean that's it. Nattery pc, snattery pc – who cares? You're going in to do a session? Well, do a session. So it takes you a little bit longer to get the session wheeling. Well, get it wheeling. That's the difference, don't you see?

But these are the things I learned through this little side study, and it was – I found it, myself, very interesting to pick up a completely alien subject to what we are doing – it had been lying around for quite a while; it merely exists in the field of hobby – and find all kinds of applicable materials on the subject of study, and to find out that the first thing that barriers learning is the consideration that you know all about it. And if you want to build up a ridge on the subject of learning, man, that's it! Just consider you know all there is to know about it.

And the next thing – the next thing is, don't let your idea of what you know – this is most amusing – don't let your idea of what you know get contaminated in any way by the fact that you're not producing. You're not getting any result, see? You're not getting any result and this is quite – rather obvious to you that you're not getting a result, but this doesn't challenge for a moment the idea that you know, see? Yeah, this never causes you to question it for an instant. See, you're not getting a result; you know that you know; and the fact that you're not getting a result doesn't challenge your conviction that you know.

The other thing is the fixed – the idea of the fixed opinion. One has to have certain fixed opinions to protect the fact that he's stupid on the subject and that he can exercise no judgment of any kind whatsoever as long as he's mired down in a bunch of fixed opinions. And that afterwards, that judgment, then, depends on a freedom from fixed opinions and an actuality of a – of a good assessment. You know what you know, you know what you don't know, see? You know what you know, you know what you don't know. In other words, you're not fighting this chimerical thing. You're not protecting your nebulous reputation to yourself about how wise and how marvelous you are. You're relaxed on this subject, you see? You can say, "Well, there's one section of this I don't know anything about. Have to look into it some day." But at the same time this doesn't bring you into a feeling that you don't know what you do know.

Utilization of judgment, then, depends on a very thorough knowledge of a subject, and if you haven't got judgment on a subject, why, it's because you don't know the subject. That's just that. If you find your judgment is very often false or bad in some line, well, you must realize that this signals to you in some way or another that this – maybe you don't know all there is to know about this certain situation, see? If your judgment on it was bad, why, it must have been bad because of an absence of knowledge of the subject.

So, what it boils down to, what it boils down to is an auditor's ability to learn depends not necessarily on his saying how stupid he is, but depends certainly on a willingness to learn – just a willingness to learn. He's willing to learn, and so forth. And the biggest single barrier is a preconception that he knows that is not attended by any singular result.

For instance, let's hear a remark something like this: "Well, I – I know Scientology. I've studied Scientology a long time and I know it very well. In fact, I audit very well. Of course, I don't get very good results." Well, this is that thing – same thing in a nutshell: this – the fact that he isn't getting results – results can be gotten; he's heard of these things, he's seen

them around, and so on; results can be gotten. But this fact does not at all challenge his implicit confidence that he knows all there is to know on the subject, you see? Doesn't challenge him for an instant.

Well, of course, that's just a lack of perceptiveness. A fellow can't see. He's not capable of judgment with regard to his own skill. His judgment, then, with regard to what he's doing is at fault to that gross error. He is uttering the fact that black is white. He can't do it, yet he knows all about it. He knows all there is to know about doing it, yet he can't do it. Well, that's a silly statement, and that is the lowest ebb of judgment on any one particular subject.

You get into a – you can get into an area of examination of this sort of thing, you find out that nearly everyone is put up in some particular sectors to status. Status has an awful lot to do with this, you know? And he gets pushed up into a feeling like he has to protect his own status by a certain arrogance or pretense, even to himself He has to think well of himself, don't you see, by pretending that he knows something or appearing very clever to himself or so forth. He's really – really, you can head it under the heading of "self-esteem," one of the methods of bolstering self-esteem. Nothing particular wrong with this. I'm pointing this out in a very mild way. It's necessary that an individual feel somewhat confident in some direction. But it's also very interesting that this need for status and self-esteem evaporates in the presence of real knowledge and a real esteem takes its place. And it's that real esteem which is most impressive to self and to others because it's producing results. The – competence – there is no argument with competence, no argument with it at all.

It doesn't then really come down to a test of "What does a person know?" but it comes down to a test of "What can a person do?" And if you just adjudicate this on the basis of it's not – well, psychiatry should serve as a wonderful example to you in this, man. I hate to run these boys down because they are being kicked to pieces anyhow, but let me tell you, I have never been as surprised over things as I have been by that particular crew. It's not that I'm even terribly fascinated with what they're doing. But do you know, I read one time what an examination for a diplomate in psychiatry consisted of, and do you know, it only consisted of the date and the context and title and the place of publication of Freud's lectures! Not what was in them! Not "What could you *do* in the field of psychiatry?" But it was just that: "When was the lecture given? What was its title?" don't you see, and "What publication did it appear in?" And that's an examination for a diplomate, the highest degree in psychiatry!

Oh, some psychiatrist will come along because they're always trying to make a liar out of everybody, they come along and tell, "Oh, that's not true, that's not true, that's not true."

And you say – they're doing this down in Melbourne right now.

"Oh, that's not true, that's not true, that's not true. And well, he doesn't really know anything about psychoanalysis," and so forth.

"Well, does psychoanalysis assert that sex is the basic mainspring of life?"

"Well, yes."

"Well, does the article say this?"

"Yes."

"Well, is that true about psychoanalysis?"

"Well, yes; but, you see, Hubbard doesn't know anything about psychoanalysis."

"Well, what doesn't he know about psychoanalysis?" See?

"Oh, well, he wouldn't know anything about it, because he just wouldn't know anything about it," and so forth.

"Well, what psychoanalysis are you talking...?"

"Well, we don't know. There's various brands of psychoanalysis." [laughter]

You always would get into this kind of an argument. It's something like walking into a swamp when you – when you try to talk on this particular subject, you see? So it's not very sensible.

Well, I'm just pointing out to you that that is really pure idiocy – that's really pure idiocy.

One, could you learn anything from that lecture? And two, how have you been able to apply it? And three, if the fellow really knew about it, he'd be able to answer the next question. If he really knew up to this point, he'd be able to answer the next question: Well, what opinion do you have of it? What opinion do you have of that subject matter? See? If he really – if he really knew the subject and he'd studied that, and he really knew that and he could apply that, and so forth, then he'd have a free opinion on it. He wouldn't have to be protecting himself with his free opinions. See, it'd have nothing to do with esteem or anything else. He'd just have a free opinion on the subject, you see? In other words, he'd have judgment.

But if you fix it on "Give us the lecture and the date and where was it published and that's all you have to know about it," you know, you of course have taught the man nothing more than you could learn from a card-catalog system. Well, it doesn't have anything to do with doingness.

Well, in photography – which I've just used as a somewhat amusing sidelight to this to you – the test, of course, is whether or not you can get a picture. That seems rather obvious, doesn't it? That would be – it's different than in – well, you conclude photography now is an art, which is interesting, because it's only graduated into that field very recently. Metropolitan Museum, and so forth, has exhibits on it now as a fine art, but – didn't used to be.

Now, a critic could exist in the field of painting, merely through his knowledge of painters and paintings, and that sort of thing, and he could have opinions on the subject. These things would probably be very basic, and that's all very fine because here's a very wide, very complex field. And maybe you could have a critic in the field of photography who didn't really have to be able to produce a picture. Maybe he could just criticize pictures and maybe to a very good extent.

But the odd part of it is as you enter into a technical subject out of a purely artistic subject, this burning question comes up: How the devil would he know whether or not that was a good darkroom piece of work? He would have to be able to know what can be done in a darkroom, so he'd have to answer the question, "What is done in a darkroom? Is this better

than what is done in a darkroom or worse than what is done in a darkroom?" because you're up against this technical fact.

A technical fact intrudes here, unlike art. You can take a handful of mud and throw it at a rock and say, "That's a great painting." See? Well, maybe it does have form and design. Who would know? Because there is no real technical backup with regard to art at large. It's great, great, wide, huge subject, you see? Depending on, mostly, on whether a person is pleased or displeased with some form, color, object or significance. It basically forms an opinion anyhow.

But the second that you get into a technical fact, when you get into the technical line, well, you have to know what can be done, you have to know if it is done well, what is being done and what isn't being done, see? This, then, you would have to know pretty well before you could have much of an opinion on the subject.

In other words, there could be an art critic quite legitimately, but I don't think there could actually be a photographic critic who didn't really know his photography. See, he'd have to know his photography to be a – be a critic of it, because he'd have to know what the devil to compare it to.

And actually, there wouldn't be any auditing critic who couldn't audit. You couldn't criticize auditing if you couldn't audit. You'd have to know what could be done and what couldn't be done.

I think anybody that's been over the jumps of the co-audit here recently, and so forth, he'd be quite a critic of auditing – not on a basis of my giving an examination and finding out what he knows about auditing but just on the basis of the trial and error of just the last two or three weeks. I give you that as a very broad test, man. I don't think there ever again will be such a test, never again. Probably won't be that much bypassed charge, you see? But that's a terrific test; wasn't given to them willingly or anything of that sort, it just occurred that way. What a fantastic test! Those people must really know how to audit, see? That's the test, because under similar circumstances, you ARC break a pc on itsa – oh, you get the comparison; very simple. Ha-ha-ha, you see?

Well, God, all you have to do is drop a toothpick in R6 and you ARC break one. That must be pretty smooth. Now, I don't think there's anybody – doubts in anybody's mind in R6 that they aren't going places and that the technology in running GPMs isn't doing some fantastic things, one way or the other, for pcs, and so forth. The result is being produced; the result is being produced smoothly. It'll of course be produced much more smoothly and much more rapidly, as a matter of fact, with the top of the bank being cut into, exactly correctly. But even with that, it's producing results, see?

All right. Then that tells you that there must be an awful difference between a Level VI co-audit auditor and somebody who would ARC break a pc on itsa.

But I'm willing to make you a bet that the auditor now in Level VI co-audit, asked for an opinion of auditing, would probably give you a very honest, offhand, very certain, very firm opinion – *boppety, boppety, boppety, bop*.

You ask him something about, "Well, is that person's auditing good or bad?" or so forth. Or "Was that a proper way to do it?" and so forth. He'll give you quite an opinion, see? *Boppety, boppety, bop*. Wouldn't be any status connected with it, see? He'd just give you an honest opinion on the subject, you see? And you ask this person that can ARC break a pc on itsa for an opinion, he'd give you a couple of fixed data but he wouldn't be able to give you much of an honest opinion.

Something else that would be different, something else that would be different: I'll just bet you that a person in the Level VI Co-audit at the present moment, you gave him something to study and so forth, he could find out what was there and know what knowledge was there, without questioning whether or not it was good, bad or indifferent that he learn it or whether or not it was damaging for him to learn it or whether or not it was this or that or whether or not he knew all about it. You wouldn't run into much of that argument.

But the person who would ARC break a person on itsa: Don't challenge that arrogance, man. He knows all there is to know about it; he has known all there is to know about it from the beginning; he will notice all – knows all there is that will ever be known about it; he knows all this perfectly, and he would be deeply insulted if you even inferred there was something on the subject that he didn't know. Do you see? There would be this significant difference. If you asked him at the same time if he was willing to learn about it, well, he'd hedge. Of course, he isn't. He isn't willing to learn about it. He's on the false premise that he knows all about it. Well, you want to ask him, "Well, what are you there for? Why are you studying it then, if you know all about it?" This might shake him up.

But you only really have to shake up this point in that auditor. He isn't being bad, he's merely being arrogant. He lacks the humility of vast wisdom, and in its place he has the arrogance of "know it all," when he knows nothing. He doesn't even know what he doesn't know.

And there's the gates of study; they're right there. That's the gate of study. That's the gate you got to crack, that's the one you got to kick down before you walk any road in toward any subject. And I don't care whether that subject is auditing or photography. I think you would hold – it would hold good uniformly and straight through, and so forth.

So I've been over the jumps on a completely alien and different subject and I have found certain things held true and I compared them to the experiences I've had in trying to relay, interpret or teach Scientology, and so forth. And I've found that they held good. I've found out that they held good straight through. I can give you dozens of case histories and I can't really give you a lot of exceptions outside of this field, and I can even tell you – you say: "Well, there's the case of the fellow who can't see, and doesn't know the language," and that sort of thing. I don't know, what's the matter with him that he can't see and doesn't know the language? He must be arrogant indeed! Very, very funny, but you'll find that that would hold good, too.

If you don't believe it, talk to a field mouse some day. Talk to a field mouse about the ways of man. It might be a very entertaining conversation, if you could talk to him. And there, man, you would find arrogance. Electronics, nuclear physics – he's never heard of them but he knows all about them. [laughs]

Cause Level, OT And The Public

A lecture given on
30 June 1964

Thank you.

Well, this is the what?

Audience: 30th of June.

Thirtieth of June. What year?

Audience: AD 14.

AD 14. All right. Saint Hill Special Briefing Course. And I haven't got anything to talk to you about and you know it all anyway and the last lecture I gave, you got nineteen on the grade. Gave me a lose, man! And everything's going to pieces all over the world, Melbourne particularly. Nothing's happening in Melbourne. What could happen in Melbourne except a kangaroo stampede? [laughter, laughs] You can see them now, loping through the streets! [laughter]

My respect for Melbourne went downhill when one of their main banks didn't know what a Swiss draft was. And I thought to myself, well, I'm going to stop worrying about... Actually somebody the other day from Melbourne university went onto the inquiry stand, and testified at a vast rate and said, yes, the E-Meter did what we said it would do, and it was a good grade of galvanometer. I think he said something like, "One of the best of that type he'd tested." Must have been a horrible lose for the medicos. They couldn't get him to say anything about it except it just was a galvanometer and it worked, and it was fine and it was well-constructed, and – and there are lots of other galvanometers, not as good as that one. Shock. Shock wave must have gone through the entire profession.

Well, I did have something to talk to you about, now that I think it over very carefully. And what's wrong with you – there's something wrong with you, of course – is just this: You're so bird-dogged onto the dazzling glories of OT that you're going to leave the rest of the human race hanging in midair between the bottom rung of the ladder to OT and the ground. Because the bottom rung of OT does not sit on the ground. There's a large gap between the ground and the bottom rung. And there's another ladder there. And you try to climb the upper ladder without letting anybody climb the lower ladder, or try to get people to climb the upper ladder without letting them climb the lower ladder or showing it's there, there's go-

ing to be an awful lot of people walking around in circles thinking you're nuts or we're nuts or it doesn't work or it's too horrible or something is all wrong, and it'd be something like there's a big amusement park but they can't find the gate to get in, don't you see? There's all kinds of weird randomness and dev-t is about to develop on this one point.

Because most everybody is thinking and gets bird-dogged onto and fixated with the idea that OT starts from the ground. And OT doesn't start from the ground, it starts from the top of another ladder. So that the public at large is going to have its attention centered on the second ladder and everybody's going to be sweating and working to get them to climb this second ladder and selling this second ladder and talking to them about the second ladder and getting them all whipped up about the second ladder, don't you see? And hell, they can't find any second ladder. There isn't – can't find any ladder at all. Because their attention is not being directed to the first ladder.

And the first ladder could be called "cause level." Now you-uns has been working for many a year to get people to be causative. We've had the definition for a long time. Now, an OT is cause over matter, energy, space, time, and God help us, the whole universe, see.

Well, that's very, very intriguing to take a look at this. I don't know how anybody's mind can short-circuit to this degree, that with great ease he could vanquish the sun and the stars but is having a hell of a lot of trouble with his wife. [laughs] And there in actual fact you have it in a nutshell. You're asking him to take care of Pluto when he has an awful time pushing a cigarette lighter across his desk.

Now, if you can envision an expansion of reach from an inverse self – a not-imagined, unbelieved self, which he can't reach because it ain't, because he doesn't know – you know, this kind of thing. You know, a – he's – he actually sort of has to reach in in order to try to reach out, you get the idea? If you can imagine a reach that this is this confused that a person doesn't even know which direction to go to get it, why, you've got Level 0. And you got about ninety-nine percent of the human beings that you will have anything to do with on this planet. And you've got him right there.

For instance, they're following a pied piper right now called science. And science plays a lively tune and they play it with very glossy photographs. They play it with very good advertisements. They play it with great big, imposing universities, huge facades built out of gorgeous marble, imported from South Debuque. They've got themselves a pretty good face, see? Big stuff. People's cars go whiz-whiz down the streets and the petrol that goes into the engine will make it run at vast expense. They've got it up to a point where an engine can actually utilize – well, it utilizes over a thousandth of the potential power in a gallon of gasoline.

They've got it fixed up so they can color your health bread by certain breeds of mold, and so they can get appropriation from other breeds of mold called "Congress." You've got yourself quite a – quite a game going here. It's called science, and you yourself are not totally aware of the fact how that cuts your personal throat. Now, we're indebted to science but only in its branches of mathematics and some of its physics for the materials of Scientology. But we didn't go down the blind alley. And the blind alley is this: is man is a machine. Man is an inanimate piece of matter that somehow or other became ammoniated.

This whole facade leaves out of it the essential ingredient – the being himself. Man is an animal. Man is a thinking brain. An image comes in the eye and is reflected on a projection screen on the back of the skull which is looked at by another computing projection screen which is looked at by another computing rejection screen which is looked at by another screen which is looked at by another screen which somehow or other results in people liking Wheaties.

And if you look over scientific thought on the subject of life, you'll absolutely be flabbergasted. The fields of biology are nothing but classification sciences. There are two types of sciences, extrapolative and classification. One type of science, which is physics, mathematics, and so forth, is one which derives answers. There is another type of science as described by Roger Bacon. And when he set it up – and he set up this type of science – and he describes it by laying out botany as an example. He said you could dream up this type of science, and then he said if you wanted to put one around the subject of flowers you would go at it this way – he just used it as a passing example and that today is botany.

Classification. Classification sciences. If you know the names of eight hundred thousand gimmicks, it is a science. See, it's not a science actually at all, it's some kind of a dictionary. And when they don't know anything they name everything. See, classification sciences. And then there's classifications, and sub-classifications, and sub-sub-classifications, and sub-sub-sub-sub-sub-classifications. And they call that a science. But it's not extrapolative, it doesn't let you learn anything.

And man, to modern science, is simply a classification science. And if you don't know the right name for the nonexistent parts of the brain then you know nothing about the mind. And that's where they've got you, a Scientologist. And that's why you're downgraded and that's why you really don't know your business, because you don't know the parts of the brain and you also don't know that they add up to a subject called "the mind." You can't go around spitting out, "This is the medulla oblongata and oblagata," and so forth. Medically, you can't go around spitting out, "This is the tibia, this is the gluteus maximus," don't you see? These are classification sciences. But that word "science" of course is added there as a total falsity. It isn't a science, it's hodgepodge.

Now, I'm not degrading these people particularly, I'm just showing you where they sit, with all their glossy facade. With all their hard sell on the subject of their great knowingness, and their great authority. They are yet, in the field of the mind, merely a classification science, and they've gone off on the wrong foot, they have got the – man mixed up with the – with a steam engine or something, and they try to analyze everything that he does on the basis of a steam engine, and they try to understand the mind on the basis – and this is their big mistake – on the basis of the conservation of energy.

Somehow or another nothing is ever developed and nothing is ever destroyed. So we have – we have then this thing called conservation of energy and the field of physics being applied to man. And when you try to understand man through the viewpoint of conservation of energy, he doesn't make any sense. See? Because you have to understand him on the basis of something would have to be done to him before he could do anything to anybody else. In other words, you'd have to fill up his gas tank before he could do anything, you see? And

then, of course, because this isn't true, then the stimulus responses, which they figure out, aren't true. Do you see how it follows, then? They're going on this untrue basis that man never creates anything, you see?

You couldn't understand the mind if you didn't realize the individual himself was just an individual who was capable of creation, see? And if you try to say he can never create and this is all just conservation of energy, that energy is never created and never destroyed but just exists, you immediately have misunderstood the whole subject. You say, one, man is a machine, not an individual or living thing, he's just some kind of a machine that gets pulled together out of the ammonia and proteins, you see.

Now, if we go that one more step and say that he never manufactures anything but it's all a stimulus-response sort of a thingamagoo and you have to put energy in to get energy out, you feed a guy a pound of steak you get so many foot-pounds of work out of him, don't you see? If you figure it out that way, why, you're bound, then, if you study the subject at all, to find out that the stimulus responses which are occurring aren't occurring. Don't you see?

So then they say, well, he's totally incomprehensible and nobody can understand the subject. Well, after you've laid down two conditions – man is just a sort of a brain machine and he's no other being; we've la... we lay down that condition – and then we say he never creates anything, you see, so therefore the mind is something that is put on him – he never put it there. Then of course we come to the third conclusion – after observation we find out that now we can't understand anything about it, we come to the conclusion that it's an incomprehensible subject. So therefore we just sort of sweep aside the humanities and we say it's an unworkable, stupid field, and we will simply keep classifying it and appoint lots of authorities in it and somehow or another squeeze by.

Now, along you come as a Scientologist and you say, one – heresy – man's not a machine, he's a thetan. See, he's a – he's a being. And we will just carry it back to this point. He is a being, he is a livingness and he records and thinks. And the individual is that thing, is this living unit. And then you say – well, that sort of shoots it, don't you see? They say, "Well, what about this thing? Yeah, what made it? Ha-ha-ha-ha." Well, we say, "I'm sorry, we've taken that as our basic point of assumption because we can demonstrate it. See, we're not interested in what made it, we're just interested in what it is. And there it is." Well, he says, "You're crazy then, because it doesn't agree with this other conservation of energy principle," don't you see? Nothing is ever created, nothing is ever destroyed, some – everything just exists, you see? And everything is sort of matter existing in space and a time stream, you see – he's all messed up.

Well, he's therefore in rather violent disagreement with what you're trying to tell him. An individual is an individual. You take the body and brain off of him, he's still standing there as an individual. You put the body and brain back on, you've still got the same individual, slightly more confused, see. You could probably exteriorize him, have him three feet in back of his head looking at his body and so – and he'd say, "Wow!" you see, be totally convinced, and then yo-yo back inside again a couple of times and get very confused and then decide to have nothing to do with it because it's so far beyond his understanding of the way things should be. So – because he's devoted to this thing called science. That's his basic training.

Science has certain criteria. One of them is this thing called a conservation of energy. Energy is never created.

Well of course, now you say, this mind, where's it come from? Well, the guy's mocking it up, see? Because this being is capable of native, pure, from-nothing creation. You know? Out of whole cloth he can mock it up, see. And that's his mind. Well, now a lot of us have an awful hard reality grabbing onto that. I mean, that's a rough one. You get a GPM gnawing half of your skull off and it's – doesn't console you a bit to say – sit back and say, "Well, I'm just creating this," because it's on so many vias that you really can't believe it, you know? So you say, "It must have been done to me." You go around, "When was I implanted with this and how does it still exist?" You know, all kinds of wild little oddball things keep entering your skull. Well, if you can get into that shaky state and so forth, well, don't blame somebody else for not accepting the truth of the matter which is the fact that man mocks up his own mind.

It isn't being fed to him in big chunks. He's doing it right here, right now, this instant. All right, you'd run into immediately conservation of energy. This immediately disagrees with any way he runs his automobile. You got to put so many gallons of gas and so many gallons of – quarts of oil in the thing and it consumes it. And it'll only run while it's consuming. Well, he proves this, this is easily proven. Because you take a body and you don't feed it and it'll collapse. So that "proves" then that man is incapable of creation.

Do you see how wild that logic goes? It just shifts. Because right away you say, "Well, you see, he isn't his body." Well, they've forgotten that condition. So you have to feed a body, so a body then does act like a machine, because the person collapses if you don't feed him. Do you see how this wobbles?

So therefore it becomes incomprehensible where this thing called the mind came from, so therefore it probably doesn't exist so the best thing to do is to cut his brain out. See, it can't be a mind, which is different than his brain. Do you see why it can't be? Is because there isn't anything there but the brain that could be given or shoved at this fellow. If he eats food it turns into a brain, doesn't it? Do you see how the short-circuited logic goes through here?

So, obviously then, there must only be the brain. So when you, a Scientologist, say "mind," it is received by the classification authority – who is pretending to be a scientist – it's received by this authority as you've said "brain." See? You say "mind," he receives "brain." Now, you say, "Well, we're going to run out a section of his mind that is troubling him." He says, "It is easier to cut it out with a knife. Why run it out?" Do you see how you're at cross-purposes in any discussion here?

See, he's arrived at these conclusions because if he feel – if he follows the total dictates of what we call modern science, then he will arrive in exactly the same trash heap with regard to the humanities. See, he cannot follow their rationale – conservation of energy, nothing is ever created, you know – he can't follow that rationale and arrive with any answers with regard to man. Because he's already put himself into two untrue conditions. He said the individual sort of leaps spontaneously from the maternity ward, that's how he comes into the world, and then he never produces anything or he never creates anything. So obviously, then,

the only thing that's there is something that has to be fed that operates like a machine, don't you see?

So he makes these various errors and then gets very upset with you because you say we have some answers to the situation.

Now of course, you can go ahead and prove him wrong by getting a result on a pre-clear. And of course you're using the basis that this pre-clear is himself a thetan who is capable of creating and who is putting his mind up there all the time and who's making mental image pictures of every accident and pulling them in to his bosom. And you straighten this out, now he'll be even – perhaps even more upset. Because he's way adrift now, he cannot understand how you do it. You could go over it very carefully with him. You could say, "Well, you see, this guy has an accident, you see, and he bangs his head on the door. Well, to some degree he's still stuck on that door banging his head, you see, and he has a picture which is in – held in suspension in his mind." He says, "Well, where can this picture be in his brain? He only has brai..."

You get the idea? His mind will short – his training level short-circuits off each one of these points and caroms off it.

You're not talking about the fellow's brain, you're not talking about his forehead. You're saying this individual hit his forehead into a door and he's got a stuck picture. At the moment he did that, why, he made a picture of hitting his head into the door and he's still got this picture, so therefore he has a sensation of still being in the door. All you've got to do is get him to feel the walls where he is and he'll find out he's no longer stuck at the door and there goes that headache.

Ah, but you see how the fellow you're trying to explain it to has now gone adrift? He's gone wildly adrift, painfully so. It'll give him a headache. So he falls back onto standard healing because it fits the idea that the body is a machine and that a being is nothing but an animate brain or computer, some kind of a biological computer, and that it's incapable of creation. See, there's nobody around who took a picture of him and handed him this picture. He – so he couldn't have a picture of the door.

You'll find them berating – I mean, yeah, the fellow, "We know all about mental image pictures." I've had – I've had guys do this. This is – there's some bird that copies our stuff in international news services. Doctor Chary or Cheeky or something, I don't know what his name is – I really at that time didn't know what his name was. And some Scientologist a while ago challenged this bird because he'd just taken a good slab out of a PAB and he was barking away with this thing and writing up his column – Mr. MD writing up his column – and he was having a good time with this column, and the Scientologist said, "Well, you just took that out of a PAB." And he wrote him back a letter and said, "Of course. Yes. Naturally. Yes." I got the letter, see. Yes, he'd taken it out of our PAB. But also there was something else we didn't realize about the thing, that doctors didn't use this. And they knew this was all true, but they didn't use this. And they didn't pay any more attention to it and then he gave a whole bunch of spurious reasons why they couldn't use this and so forth, and it all added up to the fact they couldn't understand how it could happen that way, so even though they knew that it was valu-

able and did happen that way they couldn't use it because, you see, it doesn't follow their rationale of thought.

In other words, their rationale of thought is more important to them than an end result. So we get the next difference between ourselves and the humanities. The end result is more important to us than how we arrived at it. You see? We're only thinking of how to arrive at the end result in order to produce the result. In other words, we're not doodle-daddling just to be doodle-daddling. And that's very easy for them to misunderstand. The gracefulness with which you do a transorbital leukotomy might be everything with them and it'd be very, very hard for you to figure out how that could be everything with anybody.

But if you think of sports it'd become less hard to understand. There are some sports – this guy never wins a tennis game but he has marvelous serving form. His idea – his idea has nothing to do with winning tennis games, you see. His idea is to have terrific form while playing tennis. You get the idea? So their whole – their whole attention might very well be on form. It might very well be on how gracefully you follow the authorities, see? It might be this and it might be that. And the reason it would get this way is an end result has been totally denied them. And they have no end results. So they've begun to believe that there are no end results in the field of the mind. So you come along and you say an end result can occur in the field of the mind. Well, that immediately makes you an heretic.

Then you say, well, actually you have to follow along a very exact discipline to get this end result but the end result is what is important. This person's – no longer has a migraine headache at the end of this thing. All right, they say. They don't believe that. It's like leukemia. We have several cases where we've cured people of leukemia. And they inevitably prove that this isn't so by saying, "Well, he must have been misdiagnosed by the medical doctors in the first place." They say he couldn't have had leukemia. And you say, "Well, why couldn't he have had leukemia? What's the matter with you?" And they say, "Well, he couldn't have had leukemia, you see, because it's incurable." You see, that's by definition. See, that doesn't even make sense.

Well, what are they trying to do? They're trying to protect authority in an unworkable rationale that they themselves down deep know have failed. They know this thing has failed. They know it's gone. Their question is, "How long can we put up the big bluff? How long can we go on kidding ourselves? How long can we go on getting fancy appropriations for not doing our job?"

Don't tell me – don't tell me that an analyst who's been pounding his brains out for ten years and has seen patients committing suicide and going out windows, and busting up and going into insane asylums and that sort of thing, don't tell me that this guy – that any human being could be so stupid as to not be able to observe after a while that he wasn't getting results. See, he – after a while, even he would have to notice this. And you talk to these boys and they are very – they're very loathe to notice this. But even after a while they must notice it.

Then you come along. And then you come along. And you say, "Well, well, you so-and-so and so what we got to get is an end result here. What we got to get is a migraineless being. This person has chronic headaches. All right, well, let's get him over the headaches,

you see. Let's see what these headaches consist of and let's get him over that." And you go ahead and do it.

Ah, but they haven't been invited to the party. That's the next thing that's horrible, that stands as a terrible black mark against our faces. They haven't been invited to the party. Well, actually they were invited to the party but they couldn't accept the first two principles. You had to wear a tie and jacket to come to this party and they wouldn't wear a tie and a jacket so we threw them out. Do you see that? It's just as elementary as that.

When they were invited to the party they stood around and argued madly about something we already had to assume. For instance, that man was not a being dependent on a body. They couldn't assume this, so they never really came to the party, don't you see? They never got off that first launching pad. So they never started in on this line. And they never will start in on the line. And they regard you as an ogre who's going to eat them up. And if you were to listen to a small group of them sitting around in some large capital in the world right now and the subject were to come up, Scientology, it would be a note of fear. Disgust, viciousness, cross comments and a note of fear. They would be upset. Because they know their position has not been workable. And that they are not giving the service and that they are sitting in there, and here is a group that if anybody ever got wise to the whole parade would simply take over and eat them all up.

And it doesn't do any good to try to invite them to the party and say, "We'll try to keep you in business and..." or anything like this or "We'll be happy to train you," or "We're not trying to shoot you down in your tracks." It really doesn't do much good because they themselves are not aware of the genus of their own antipathies, they are not as analytical of their own situation and so forth as I have just been, you see. They merely know they're upset and they do know that this will – this will take it sooner or later.

The breakthrough will occur. And when it occurs, they're lost dogs. They'll be as dead as yesterday's newspaper, professionally. They complain bitterly about the fact that their income is being cut into very badly. And frankly, a note of pity came through the other day. "Well, the poor psychologist, after all, all they had was testing and we took that away from them."

Many of us do and will start to feel sorry for the poor sods, don't you see? And go ahead and feel sorry for them, but don't go into any snit of not comprehending what it is all about. They were invited to the party but they wouldn't wear a jacket or a tie, see. And that's just about all there was to it.

You had to accept these two things to get a workable result. One, that a being was an independent thing that could exist independently of a body, and the other was that an individual was capable of, you might say, autocreation, all by his little cotton-picking lonesome. And by doing this he develops himself a thing called a mind which has mental masses and spaces and so forth in it, and he builds himself a little private universe all of his own which he carries around not inside of his skull but plastered all over this other universe, and that is the thing which we are going for.

And the other point that we go along on, because we do have these two bases on which we work, we can then go along for a result. And we have become less and less tolerant

of resu... of lack of result, you see? Less and less tolerant of lack of results. You'll find it getting more and more recurrent. "Well, it couldn't have been too good a session, the guy still had a headache," you know? That's the thing. But you'll have somebody say, "Oh, well, you see, we got a hundred and ninety-five divisions of tone arm action. I can't understand why..." Somebody's looking and standing back there, he'll say, "Somebody's lying in their teeth," you see. The guy still had a headache. So he did audit the whole session with his little finger at an angle of a hundred and thirty-five degrees to the horizontal tabletop, you see. At the end of the session the guy still had a headache, you see. That's an incontrovertible fact to us.

Well, we find it hard to understand that a profession or an activity could exist where that would not even be any part of the situation. Because a situation which has gotten as many failures in the field of the mind and thinkingness and so forth as the present occupants of the throne of course lose to view the completed cycle of action. They've not completed the cycle of action ever so they're sort of habitually never complete it so they never look at the result. And they will tell you the elegance with which they did the operation, you see.

Now, I've had these boys brag to me about the elegance with which they did the electric shock. You see, it was, "Well, the records were all kept." I've had a mad-eyed psychiatrist telling me this, you know, and remembering that I myself being an auditor could handle him if he got more violent, you see? [laughter] "Yes, but the records were all kept. Look at the records! Looook at the records!"

"Well, what – what about the records? What do they prove?"

"Well, you should keep records!"

"Well, we keep records. Well, what – what – what about these records? What – you ever examine these records? See if they ever told you anything?"

"Well, they're nice records. Look it. There are columns and they're kept here and..."

You think I'm gagging you, but I'm not. I'm giving you almost an exact duplicate of this confounded interview. One of the foremost psychiatrists in the United States. Big name. And he finally said to me – I kept asking him this nasty, stinking, niggling auditing question, see? "Have you ever learned anything from these records?" And he finally tossed one off sideways to me, if I've told you about this before, but I haven't ever thought you would believe the degree. Finally, he answered the question, "Yes, we found out that if we hadn't treated them they'd have been gone from here six weeks earlier than if we had treated them. Yes, we found that out. But aren't they beautiful records?" And the guy – it had just gone right over his head, and so forth. He'd just said if you'd kept your cotton-picking hands off of all of these patients, if you hadn't done a doggone thing for any of them, the average, they'd have gotten out six weeks before they had gotten out. In other words, that all the treatment had ever done was cost the state per patient an average of six weeks more food, clothing and shelter. In other words, he'd extended the madness. And it didn't seem to have any bearing on the situation.

The end – that – it's pretty loopy. So you get into that much loopiness, you don't want to have too much to do with it and so you never really take time to try to understand it. And I'm actually asking you now to understand it. How could it exist otherwise than the individual

says a man is a machine, he's a sort of a biological monstrosity, that has a bunch of cells clicking against a bunch of cells and you remove a cell and you have a cell missing, and therefore there's a part of this man is now missing, you see. And he's a sort of an ambulant biological computing machine, that's what he is. And he's just an animal and a product of something that sprang spontaneously.

Of course, he asks us to accept something more wild than we're asking him to accept, see? This is a real wild one, you know, that a cell suddenly sprang by spontaneous combustion from a sea of ammonia. Well man, look at the conditions he's laid down. He's made it necessary to have a sea of ammonia. This is the same thing like the Virgin Mary, you know. [laughter] We at least are – we at least are innocent of these second dynamic implications and other things. [laughter] We just say the guy's there, see? And we are also saying we're not going to worry where he came from, he's just there. This is the way this thing is, you know? And then he says he's incapable of making up anything so he must have gotten his mind somewhere, which gives you immediate inflow and the real reason why he can't solve problems of the mind.

See, he falls immediately into this fact that it must have been presented to him by w... by the Hot Boy Mind Biscuit Company or something, you see. Another guy, the guy starts out with a – with a motivator, not an overt, see. He says natively, then, man is an inflow mechanism, and he gives you the exact reason why he can't make him well. Because he's got man's malady misdefined. The mechanism he says works on an inflow basis and he says this with a straight face. He's never made it work, see, nobody's ever gotten better working on this inflow basis for any real length of time. He never really solved the problems of the mind. See, he's also got these problems of the mind confused with problems of the body. And he's pretty confused in all various directions.

But you see, he says then that a man is an inflow mechanism. Well actually, man is an outflow mechanism, if you're going to have any inflows or outflows at all. And you'd solve the guy's problems on the basis of outflow. You wouldn't solve them on the basis of inflow.

Now, if you want to prove this – this is all susceptible to considerable proof – if you want to prove this very nicely all you've got to do is run somebody on, "Think of a motivator. Thank you. Think of a motivator. Thank you. Think of a motivator. Thank you," and watch your TA. Your TA will at first rise – it'll first stay fairly stable without doing anything and then it'll eventually start to rise and then it will go up and then it will stick. And there it will stick. And you could run him for a long time now with no TA action, with the individual paralleling... the experience of the individual during this processing would be that of becoming fuzzier and fuzzier and worse and worse and natterier and natterier and feeling worse and worse and then sicker and sicker. And he'd wind up – after a while he'd feel like he was stuffed full of cotton wool and it had been impregnated with some very, very odorous substance of some kind or another. He'd really feel funny.

Well, that's following it out. That's following out the (quote) "scientific explanation of man." We carry out the ne plus ultra, he's a machine, he has gotten everything from exterior to himself, so therefore you would then process what has been done to the individual, and you

would wind yourself up then with a failed case. You see, if you follow their rationale you could not help but wind up with a failed case.

We have an entirely different rationale. The individual is independent of a body and he is capable of mocking things up. He's capable of mocking things up. And his basic error was an outflow not an inflow. And his basic action is an outflow action and what got him in trouble was outflowing, and then he has learned not to outflow so he has eventually begun to inflow only. And that's how he worked himself up into this state of thinking he can only inflow. Because what got him in trouble was outflowing.

That seems fairly obvious to me, I hope it appears obvious to you. By their rationale, then, they could have wound up with nothing but the conclusion that an individual would have to inflow in order to be cured. And your own personal experience, which you could conduct, would demonstrate to you that an individual would only recover if you recovered his ability to outflow. And you know that. But that's how we arrive at it and that's the two sides of the coin. But we win with an end result and they don't win with an end result, so therefore their premises would eventually be discarded by the society.

But at the state society is in, they're very, very willing to believe an inflow basis, they're all trained into this scientific rationale to a marked degree. Their religious training makes – causes them to believe that they *have* a soul and they keep it in their vest pocket or something and it has nothing to do with the individual. They're supposed to protect it or be good to it or purify it or do something like this. But it's something over there.

Religion really does not recognize as the individual is, a soul. This is not made plain. But it's easy for Scientologists to think they do mean that because they haven't made it plain. We have, they haven't. They used to say, "You will go to heaven, you will go to hell." That's more or less been dropped out of it, but even then they were saying, "Your soul will go to heaven." And you read the later writings, it's all "Your soul should go to heaven," and so forth, and "Your soul will be condemned forever," and all that sort of thing.

So even those birds, you see, were not much on the groove. But frankly, frankly, we belong in inheriting anything in the direct channel of religion. We really do not belong – and this is not propaganda purposes – we don't belong in the direct line of science, we don't even think scientifically, see – if scientific thinking is based on these other premises of conservation of energy and that sort of thing. We're not in that line.

And frankly, it is only recently that science tried to take a bite on the subject of the mind. It's very, very recent. They only had custody of this thing called a mind for a very short period of time, less than a century, really. Isn't that interesting? In other words, they're very Johnny-come-lately and they interrupted the fact that religion took care of the field of the mind very nicely, all down through the eons. It was all a religious activity, you see, and then there it is.

But in space opera, why, science very often takes over the field of the mind. There they very often do. And then you get all kinds of oddball things being done to beings and so forth in the name of science. They don't – haven't ever really taken it over with much comprehension. They can do far more damaging actions, they can do lots more damaging actions than this current scientific civilization has been able to do.

But the point I'm getting around to here is just that your inheritance goes back very, very far in the field of religion. And what we do to achieve our end result is directly and violently contrary to the scientific concepts of the way things are.

And now, with the public being taught consistently and continuously, along (quote) "scientific principles" of man is a machine and all you've got to do is stuff him and he operates. If you don't believe this, that they're under a heavy hammer and pound, just watch a TV program sometime when you have nothing to do. Watch those ads. If you just stuff something in, a good result occurs. See, that's the whole – the whole song is played on that violin with great virtuosity. If you just stuff something in, something beneficial will occur.

Well, that's the first ladder that you've got to jump with the individual. And you're not going to get him even in praying distance of the bottom rung of the ladder to OT unless you've got him out of "if you just stuff something in, something beneficial would occur." And if you can't break that one, then you will never get him to OT. You'll never get him to the bottom rung of the ladder.

Now, what I'm talking about here is not something I'd like to have true or anything like that. It happens to have confronted us here in the last few weeks with violence.

Now, there practically nobody who comes to Saint Hill who is, oddly enough, very low on cause. They're not terribly low on causativeness. I'll tell you why. They came to Saint Hill, see. Do you see that? Well, there was that much outflow involved, don't you see? Well, now the guy in the Central Organization that couldn't get up enough energy to come to Saint Hill, then you'd say, well, that fellow must be a bit below the cause level of the person who did come to Saint Hill, see? Because the person did outflow, see.

All right. Now, maybe someday you'll have the experience that Julia just had and that I have had many times and that you possibly have had many times, too. You get out in the jungle, the human jungle, after having been around a Scientology group or organization, and you can stand it really just about so long. And you'll cut and run, and go back to the group. It's just too much.

It's their level of causation that's what gets your nerves. It isn't that they don't talk your language. It's their noncommunication. It's the fact that they don't seem to connect with anything.

I always kick myself, it's the – it's the things you miss and don't get. It's the fish that got away, you see? Photographers have it. It's the picture you didn't get. I just – I've just gotten a picture I didn't get. You know? I don't know what happened to this other picture, but it isn't on the films I just took. And the very fact that there is one picture there which is right next to it, which is absolutely bug-eyed, it's impossible that anybody ever took that picture, see? The other one that I didn't get, you see, that is the perfect picture and that's missing. So a very nice set of pictures is rather muddled up in my mind by that there was one that should have been there, don't you see what I mean there?

One's always mourning about these nonextant things, the fish that got away, the picture you didn't get, the this, the that, the other thing. And similarly, in the field of human endeavor one can always look back at moments when something happened and he didn't make a

record of it or he didn't get it, and so forth, and he mourns. And I mourn this because I was at a cocktail party on the *Queen Elizabeth*. And I would just love at this moment – I had a tape recorder down in my room. It was all set for 7½, and I didn't take it! All I had to have was a thing over my shoulder and just have thrown the clip on the thing and we would have had the whole thing. I could turn it on right now and it'd be a perfect example. You would howl, you'd practically roll on the floor. There was not one statement made in that cocktail party that was ever received by another member of the cocktail party. There was not one remark ever received and no remark made, concerned or was intended for anybody but the person making it. It's the wildest series of pinpointed introversions you ever saw, passing as a social communication point. Craziest thing I... All non sequitur, nothing has anything to do with anything. The emanated remarks, if they appeared to emanate, really weren't emanating remarks. They concerned the individual, on a nonemanation basis, don't you see? He's speaking of... Crazy.

Well, those people were rich, they were able to go on a vacation trip. They weren't – they weren't as bad off as the people who stayed home. Now, we have our faults as individuals. But we're so much better than what's walking out in the street, man, there's frankly no comparison, see? We may be bad off, but wow! I don't mean to be snide about it but there it is. It's a fact.

You're going to get those people out there up to the bottom rung of OT? No. No, there's another ladder and they got to climb this other ladder. And it is the ladder of raising one's cause level. You could also call it an outflow level, you could also call it a reach level. But you've got to – you've got to get them up to the recognition of the world around them. I mean, the world immediately around them. The capability of recognizing the immediate vicinity. I mean, immediate vicinity, too, man.

In other words, the first barrier you've got to crack is the total introversion to a slight extroversion. In other words, from a total introversion. You know, nothing exists, "Here I am walking in this unreal zone and of course it's all all right because nothing is here anyway and I'm not here either and I don't exist either." And your expanding perimeter, the first few grades, is entirely breaking through those various barriers just to the environment. And this is laid on us as a restriction for OT, not because I say so and not because you can't audit or any other derogatory reason, it's just that the poor guy who is sitting there cannot as-is an item.

He – it – see, it's laid on us for a very good reason, not a social reason. It's simply that he has to have the ability to cause slightly before he can cause an item to as-is. In other words, his reach has got to be good enough so that he can at least reach causatively in the direction of the item he's trying to as-is. And if the individual cannot do that, he can't as-is the item. And it wouldn't matter if you had him dead-on and square in the center of exactly what he was supposed to be running and it was in perfect sequence – you would say, "*spatter-guff cuff-cuff*," and not a blessed, blasted thing would happen on that E-Meter. You understand?

Now, to give you the degree that this is true, some of the Level VI co-audit, a small percentage of them, but some of these were what we call, what you'll hear more of, is Type B when they first started in. Now, you understand that these people were not really low on cause. I'm trying to give you an idea of how high you have to be on cause. See, these people had to have a lot of processing. These people had to have this. I'm not downgrading them. If

they were put in the right item, exactly dead-on, with all rudiments in, you would get an as-isness. You understand? But the rest of the people, the other percentage, in the co-audit could be put just a little bit crosswise to this item and it'd as-is. See, it could be a little bit out of sequence. It could be two down from where you were supposed to go and yet you'd see the meter go. You understand?

Well now, look, we're talking about pretty good people. Now, what do you think about – not the guy out in some group someplace – but what do you think about this bird on the street? What do you think about the bird in the house that can't go out on the street? You could put him in the right place at the right time and say, "*blog-a-blog wog-wog*," and not a blessed, blasted thing would happen, because his level of causation is too poor.

And if you did throw him into a GPM and tell him to as-is it, he wouldn't do anything to the GPM but it'd sure chew hell out of him. Nothing would happen to the bank, but it's plenty that would happen to the pc. Do you see the reverse curve?

Well now, that's a condition, then, necessary to running Level VI. And that hasn't been forced on us by anything but the observation of the facts. The facts are just that. Level of causation.

Now, you can take somebody who is tired, and I'll be talking more about this, but you can take a Type A who can usually as-is most anything and sometimes you'll get a meter pack up. Meter just packs up. Suddenly nothing is as-ising. He's sitting dead-on what he should be sitting on and it's packed up. You won't get any meter action at all.

If you go into this you usually find out, well, he didn't have any breakfast or something like that, is he hasn't eaten and he's running himself down and he's – so the body is doing a sort of a sp... dry-sponge effect on him as a thetan, you see. And he may be too tired. And that's usually the common denominator. That's the more important. He's just tired.

You could take anybody who ran well on GPMs and run him at 3 o'clock in the morning, and the probabilities of his being able to as-is a GPM would be very slight indeed. You could take a Type A pc and run him from midnight, let us say, till six, and I absolutely guarantee that some hour of that run the meter is going to pack up. And it will lock up the prettiest you ever saw in your life, on the right goal, in the right sequence, on the right item, and no back charge, and absolutely nothing wrong with the case at all. And that meter will pack up. It's simply exhaustion. The only thing you can get the meter to read on, "Well, what's the matter, are you tired?" and you'll get a read. And that's the only read you're going to get.

Now, what's this first ladder? It's raising the cause level of the individual to a point where he can as-is something. Well, that must be a very tiny gradient because if the individual cannot as-is his personal problems, he cannot as-is his constant worry about something or other, he can't do this, he can't do that, well, you better jolly well not expect this individual to be as-ising an item in a GPM. Ha-ha-ha, and he won't be able to do it, that I guarantee. Now, if you look at it the other way to and say, "Well, that's simple, then. Really all you'd have to do is find the GPM that he is worried about and run it."

Ah look, I'm showing you already that the GPM that is there, is ready to run, wouldn't fire. What do you think will happen to one that is out of sequence? So this barriered a very

beautiful idea I had, which was a very lovely idea. It was a lovely idea and it stayed in the idea stage because it only works on me. If I find myself thinking too hard about something, I can always skip down through the end words and pick out the one that's gotten into restim and let it blow down. This is a little bit heroic. And I thought, how marvelous! All you'd have to do at Level IV is just assess the end words, you see. You remember me telling you? Well, it doesn't work. All that happens is the pc packs up. You get about one end word back and that is the end of that meter, man. It's finished. Gone.

Well, so that was a beautiful dream that didn't come ac... off. But what's wrong with it is what you'll be facing from here on. You'll go right on facing this point. So there's no use talking about, "Well, there's those lower-grade levels, and so anybody can run those, you see. What we want to run is these big upper-grade levels, you see, and really get it done in a hurry. And therefore we don't have to know anything about this earlier auditing."

Well, I'll tell you, in an awful lot – the majority of the cases that you tackle, your later abilities, your – on the higher levels of auditing will stand you in no good stead at all except make you a smoother auditor, perhaps, on the lower levels. You wait.

You'll get Joe Blow in there and you'll be all set and rolling up your sleeves and all ready to go and all you got to do is go on down the bank and you'll find yourself trying to climb the second ladder when you should have been on the first one. So after you've had some signal failures on trying to do this and the pc is getting more and more headachy and more and more upset – and more and more this and more and more that, so on, you will eventually go back and start climbing the first ladder. And it will be with great satisfaction you find out that you have not lost your ability to get pcs to climb that ladder providing you know what ladder they're climbing. And it's simply the ladder of cause, that's all, the ability to cause.

And where a person's cause level is too low a person cannot as-is his bank. And where a person can't as-is his bank by looking at it or examining it or cogniting on it he of course gets no disappearance of what's worrying him because he's the effect of his bank and he's the effect of it very strenuously. And so your whole task, no matter what processes you use, is to put the pc at cause. And get him more and more at cause. And now you put your wits to it and try to figure out various ways of doing this, you can undoubtedly come up with lots of applications of old materials you might never have dreamed of before – certain ways to run this or that or the other thing, you see.

And certain ramifications of old O/W suddenly start showing up and kicking you in the head that you never really suspected before. Because if you're running O/W today, you're simply running it to raise somebody's cause level. That's all.

Of course, it's the biggest barrier there is to his cause level because he's done something he regrets. And furthermore he's not telling anybody about it. Well, so that's very destructive to his cause level but that today is not why you're running O/W. Here you're just running O/W just to get certainty on having done and get as-iness of doneness. That's about all there is to that. You're not even looking for crimes, don't you see?

And you'll find out, by the way, that – and I'll go into this in a later lecture – but you'll find out that it's highly probable that very few of your pcs have ever answered the auditing question, because you want to find out what the guy did and he's looking for an explanation.

You want to find out what he did and he's looking for an explanation for what happened to him. See?

And then some pc will go plunging madly trying to hit some happy chance that he will hit the explanation for what has happened to him by telling you a bunch of things he's not sure happened at all. Don't you see? And he'll start yo-yoing around. Whereas all you want is the answer to your auditing question. Just what have you done. Not what have you done bad or what have you done that is antisocial or what have you done that explains the fact that you've got sciatica, see, none of – none of these things, none of these things. You're just asking him what he's done.

Well of course, a pretty legitimate answer to that is "I've eaten breakfast." But somebody gives you an explanation on it, you know, like, "Well, I ate breakfast and that is probably why..." He's not running it, see. He's trying to find an answer to. And there are various ways that people can avoid running O/W and they're startling in the numbers of variations which they have. And you as the auditor, all you have to do is police and make sure the person is certain that he did do that. That's all you have to police on the subject and make sure that that is policed. Because they very often get pretty dazed. And they'll give you alter-ises and they can actually make themselves worse.

Where you've ever had any trouble with running O/W the individual was giving you alter-ises. He was giving you – he was trying to find the answer that explained what had happened to him and in doing so he was dreaming up fictitious events he was not sure of. And then of course O/W doesn't work because like any other process if it isn't run it doesn't work.

But there's an enormous amount of ceiling, an almost unlimited ceiling, to just, "What have you done?" You can say, "What have you done? What have you not done?" and you know, "What have you said? What have you not said?" or "What have you done and what have you not said?" or "What haven't you said?" You could get all kinds of various combinations. You could run it as itsa and you could run it as this and that and the other thing, you see. Terrific ramifications. You get into the objective side of it, you can convert 8-C with a little bit of an expert touch, you see, so that the individual is reaching and is touching and is sure of that, don't you see?

You can get numerous objective and subjective approaches here, all of which raise cause level. And the – you could say then the object of all lower level processing up to Level VI is to raise the cause level of the individual. And you can even draw a series of concentric circles around the individual in the center which represent the degree he can cause or reach. So the individual has just a spot in the middle of it, originally can reach nothing. Everything reaches him.

Well, you've got to convert this and the way to convert it is not to run out what has reached him but to go on trying to reach, trying to get this individual's reach extended. And eventually you get out to this first very small circle around the individual, and that is, well, his body, himself, you see? His body. Now, he might be able to reach something that is a few feet away. You'll find out that distance has a great deal to do with this. Then you get into very unreal estimations of distance. The individual could – reached from London to Cape Town but not to the settee on the other side of the room, you see? You get – they get very weird

concepts of reach and distance. These things are inverting and upsetting. And he'll eventually get out to wider and wider perimeters.

This is cause level. When you've raised the individual's cause level up, the individual will be able to as-is things.

Of course, then you get what – a whole index of what can – not only the distance and the character of things that can be reached but you also get what the individual is capable of as-ising in his mind. He can as-is a light lock that happened a minute ago, see? Or he can as-is a PT problem that was worrying him yesterday. Or he could as-is a PT problem that worried him twenty years ago. See, not any longer important and doesn't apply, so he can as-is it, see? You get the idea? And you eventually build that up and you'll have an individual who can reach the second ladder. He can reach the bottom rung of the second ladder.

But unless you walk up that first ladder you don't ever get to the second ladder. That the society is so gauged and organized and constructed that it would bow down to this nonsense that they're currently calling human sciences tells you it must – the common denominator of introversion on the first must be pretty fantastic, must be pretty confoundedly fantastic; if what sells them is the type of TV ad that you see, must be pretty fantastic, see? The individual's ability to reach must be pretty confoundedly low, staggeringly so.

Now, if then they bow down as I said before to a scientific rationale which justifies their inability to cause anything, then what sort of society are you looking at here? Well, don't then go around and beat your head against the wall and cry crocodile tears because the society doesn't understand you and doesn't appreciate you. Why, look, for heaven's sakes, it doesn't even know it exists! You're trying to get – you're trying to get appreciation from a hidden rock that even if you found it and got it in plain sight wouldn't ever say "Thank you," don't you see? Your basic error, if you have any in your relationship to the society around you, is to do a comparable basis and say, "It's as alive as I am." And of course, it isn't.

You could say, "I underst... its understanding of life is comparable to mine," and of course it isn't. And therefore you can feel very bad when somebody stands up and says all Scientologists are bums. It's interesting, the other day, that the American Medical Association took its finger off its button, if it has one, and it said that all questionable activities – not – this is not a direct quote, but something on the order of – all questionable activities in the United States are now hiding under the name of Scientologist. I think it's a fantastic admission for an organization like that to make. They're calling themselves Scientologists so they can get away with it.

Now, you look at the rationale back of that, it betrays immediately and at once what they are really sort of spooked about and think about, and what they're – what they're worried about. They've stopped saying Scientologists are bad, don't you see. They're just saying that other people use it as a mask. And that some pretty bad things can go on. They'll be explaining to everybody, "There's nothing wrong with Scientology, it's just that other people can use it, you see, as a cover and that's why it has to be wiped out," don't you see? But they don't even know what they're trying to wipe out, you see, and they don't even know where it's located, really. They don't know what it's all about. And people who are in that state wipe themselves out faster than they shoot the enemy.

A bunch of very introverted troops are more of a menace to themselves than they are to the enemy. I remember a bunch of – a bunch of scared Johnny-come-lately got up on Guadalcanal, and I was bunking with their captain. And he was in a fine state. He was in a fine state. He came back, he was several shades of green. Because they'd gotten up into this jungle and a coconut or something had dropped and they'd just gotten off the boat, you see, a bunch of boot recruits, when they were pushing them in at the last minute, you know. And a coconut had dropped or something like that and everybody let go with everything he had. His whole company started firing. Not at anything. There wasn't anything to and of course the – only they were there. And he fortunately didn't get any casualties out of it but he wondered how in the name of common sense he escaped having the whole company wiped out by itself. And that was their first foray behind Japanese lines. He talked to them quite a while and for several days before he let them go again, you see?

Anyway, the – they're far more of a menace to themselves, and they will eventually start passing rules and restrictions. You can watch it. And running each other down. For instance, they've just written a book, *Law, Liberty, and Psychiatry*, I think it is, something like that, which is written by a psychiatrist and a psychoanalyst. And it's well authenticated. And it just tears up psychiatry and throws it away. It says much more vicious things about psychiatry than I have ever said. And it proves conclusively that the nation had better get rid of psychiatry, right now, before it loses all the freedom and liberty which it has left. And this is published by the Macmillan Company, one of the biggest and most reputable publishers, and it is going around madly. In other words, their own high levels of authority.

When you see people losing, they introvert, and if they're already introverted, why, they will – they will lose fast. So they aren't any real great menace. The only thing that is a great menace in this regard is not the fact that we've got opponents. If we don't have opponents, not real ones – the only thing we've got that can mess us up, really, is ourselves, in not realizing that an individual has got a ladder to climb before he gets onto the upper ladder. And you go around selling everybody on the beautiful idea that he's got to go to OT and all he's got to do is run some goals and GPMs, and that's all he's got to do and everything will be all fine and copacetic, then we're going to lay an awful lot of eggs, we're going to have a lot of failures, we're going to have a lot of mess on our hands and so forth.

What you've got to do is tell him, fast, furious, hot and heavy, is "What you've got to do is raise your cause level." That's a sufficient target all in itself, let alone OT, see? "Be able to cause things in your environment. Simple. These people are bothering you. Well, do things that bother them. We don't care what you do." [laughter] You see? We don't care how you explain this. Don't you see? And you'll find the public at large would be able to understand that, oddly enough, and to that degree their cause level is raised. See?

Well, you keep pushing them up the line this way, you got it made. But the idea is that we can't go on selling an upper strata that cannot be attained, without ourselves then losing heavily. What we've got to do is sell the first ladder that can be obtained and hit that real heavy and do it very, very well and be able to handle it very, very well. And all that consists of is just making the individual more causative. Bringing him up a bit higher along the line so that we start in just as we did in days of yore. We said, well, we'd bring the individual up to a point where he can handle his own problems. We're not interested in handling the problem for

the individual, we're interested – how many times have you said this, you see – we're interested in bringing the individual up to a point where he can handle his own problems. Well, you just better hit that chord with both paws and both feet, see? Because that is a road out. That is the only road out for such people. So there's where – there's where your future comprehension and understanding of these things lies and where your future success lies.

Now of course, you can say at the same time this individual's a Keyed-Out Clear because this wonderful technical fact does stay in our favor is actually the only thing that will key out a GPM without paying any attention to it whatsoever is some version of O/W. It's senior to GPMs. So you can make a Keyed-Out Clear. And you can key the fellow all the way out, and by that time his cause level is raised so high that he can of course enter the bank at the proper place and as-is it. Then he's ready for OT. Of course, you can cut in and go OT before that – well before that. But that's still a theoretical target even if it's one that you're not going to attain particularly for the individual before he switches to the other route.

But here's the point: The point is that you do have a technology which wildly enough is senior to the bank itself, which is doable all the way south and without which the individual can never come up the point of as-ising what is really troubling him, which is the bank. And this is a very fortuitous set of circumstances. But it brings before our eye that the individual, to get on the first ladder, has got to have done something. And you can't have people around who haven't done anything at all, ever, who can as-is. These people will not be able to as-is. So your immediate and direct test of whether or not an individual can as-is is: has he ever done anything?

You'll get an introversion where an individual isn't withholding anything. He never done anything or with the things he has done, he'll give you vicious horrible crimes that he has done of one kind or another. Trouble is, we don't know they're true or not and he doesn't know whether he did them or not. What you've got to do is find something he knows he's done and raise him from there. It isn't the quality of the deed, it's just whether or not he has done it.

You've got this technology? There's a lot of this technology, it fits objectively, it fits subjectively, it works on anything that can be processed all the way down the line, and if you stress Keyed-Out Clear, raise your cause level, get yourself up to a point where you can handle your immediate perimeter before you take on Pluto, you'll find that this is very easy to make this bridge. And the public at large will be able to make the bridge and follow through. In spite of the fact that they're already crippled by a philosophy which says they aren't even there, you can still get over that bridge and come forward and win in the long run. And that's the first ladder that's got to be climbed before you throw somebody into the bank and say, "Go on and swim."

You, once in a while, are going to run into a pc that when you say, "Give me the first two items, the first item of the bank," you're going to get it and it's going to blow down, and everything's going fine, and the pc, because you're a good auditor, is going to run like a well-oiled dream and that is going to spoil your whole concept of it because you've just accidentally gotten ahold of a Type A. It was sitting there ready to be plucked. See? And you're going to forget that this person had ninety-nine others that you could have chosen, none of whom

would have been able to do it. That little win will tend to throw you off of that program. Just remember I cautioned you when you get the next person and you throw him into the top of the bank and he instantly goes to the hospital. He didn't do anything to it but it sure did plenty to him. The bank could cause, but he couldn't.

Now, there's the road out. And there is the easy road out for you as an auditor. There's the easy road out for an organization. There's the easy public approach road out. This is the drum you should beat on the public.

Yes, you can say we can make OTs, we can do this, we can do that, or you can say anything you please along these lines, but the one you pound, pound, pound, is you say, "Raise your cause level. Raise your cause level. And when I see what you can do in your immediate perimeter, then we will start talking about taking on the moon and quartering it." See? "Keyed-Out Clear. Why don't you become a Keyed-Out Clear? That's a very, very desirable goal. Let's work in that particular direction," don't you see? In other words, that's the one you pound, that's the one you pound, that's the one you sell. And then people will make it. Otherwise you're going to hand them a big lose.

And after this tremendously, fantastic, fortunate breakthrough which we've made in Scientology at this time and so on – as far as I'm concerned, it's the only breakthrough that's been made in the field of the mind – why, let's not lose just because we neglect this little slight point that we try to put people on ladder two before they start even vaguely to locate ladder one, much less climb it.

Thank you.

O/W MODERNIZED AND REVIEWED

A lecture given on
2 July 1964

Thank you.

All right. What have we got here? Have we got a date?

Audience: Second of July.

Second of July. There is a date. All right.

[part missing]

And this is the subject of O/W Modernized and Reviewed.

Now this lecture is given into the teeth of the fact that it is notorious that very few Scientologists would ever inquire very deeply as to just exactly "*what* was did." This is given into the teeth of that knowledge. And there's a good reason for that: In order to do something for somebody, you have to have a communication line to that person.

Communication lines depend upon reality and communication and affinity. And where an individual is too demanding, the affinity tends to break down slightly. And the Scientologist is very afraid of breaking that affinity line with his pc and so he doesn't want to break that affinity line with his pc so he never, then, gets to the second stage of processing.

Processing goes in two stages: One is to get into communication with that or which you are trying to process. That's number one. And number two is do something for them. And there's many – many a pc will go around raving about his auditor, whose auditor has not done anything for the pc. All that has happened is a tremendous communication line has been established with the pc. And this is so new and so novel and so strange to the pc that he then considers that something miraculous has occurred. Well, yes, something miraculous has occurred, but in this particular instance the auditor has totally neglected *why* he formed that communication line in the first place.

He formed the communication line in the first place to do something for the pc. And he very often mistakes the fact that he has formed a communication line and the reaction on the pc for having formed one with having done something for the pc.

There are two stages here – is

- 1) form a communication line and
- 2) do something for the pc.

Those are two distinct stages. That is something like walking up to the bus and driving off. Do you see? There's two stages: You walk up to the bus and then you drive off. If you don't drive off, you never go anyplace.

So many an auditor bogs down at this one point of walking up to the bus which is putting in a communication line with the pc, and then they never go anyplace. Do you see that? And where auditing broadly breaks down, and you say, "Well, Mamie Glutz had lumbosis and" – we're going to have to make a list of Scientology diseases; that's one of them – "Mamie Glutz has lumbosis and she loves her auditor but she's still got lumbosis."

Now, exactly, what has happened is the auditor has formed his communication line to the pc – has actually done this heroic thing of getting in communication with the pc – and that is very tricky and that is no small shakes. That's something: to be able to communicate to a human being who has never been communicated to before. This is quite remarkable. And that is such a remarkable feat that it appears to be the end-all of Scientology to some. But you see, that's just walking up to the bus. Now we've got to go someplace.

Now, how do we go someplace? Well, actually, any upset that the individual has is so poised; it is so delicately balanced; it is so difficult to maintain. You know, you look at this fellow. He's in a wheelchair, you know? And you say to yourself, "How is he keeping himself in a wheelchair?" And you think, "Well, it'd be very difficult to get him out of that wheelchair." Oh, no, no! It's very difficult to stay in that wheelchair. That is what's difficult. Unless you learn this reverse look, you'll have trouble with psychosomatics and things like this, particularly battinesses more than psychosomatics. Psychosomatics are not a good example. A battiness of some kind or another is a much better example because they surrender so easily.

This individual is very sure that "horses sleep in beds." Now, you don't look at what it takes to maintain that. That is based on such slippery logic that the least little cogwheel goes adrift in it, it'll collapse. In other words, it's very hard to remain batty. It's not difficult to get well but it's hard to remain batty. A fellow has to work at it. You'll see an odd look coming into somebody's eyes, sometime or another, when you're getting right close to, and you'll see a pc suddenly start veering sideways from you when you start approaching too closely to a piece of battiness.

Let's supposing that having formed a communication line, we merely and only did this – we just did this and we didn't worry about these vast complications and this terrific sea of aberration. We didn't do anything like that. We just said, "Now, what are you doing that's sensible?" and "Why is it sensible?" And you know, a guy's case will just fall to pieces right in front of your eyes. This is a zone to which I invite your attention because it's untrodden. It's virgin. It's native. It's the bush in a completely unspoiled condition.

You see, this communication line is only valuable to the degree that you can walk around in your big muddy feet in the midst of all this morass. And if your communication line is very good and very smooth, and if your auditing discipline is perfect so that – you see, your auditing discipline is perfect so you don't upset this communication line – then you can walk around in this wild jungle that he calls his ideas.

And if you just made a foray of no more importance and no more breadth than "What are you doing that's sensible?" and "Why is it sensible?" and kept your communication line up the while and kept your affinity up with the pc the while – did it with perfect discipline – you would see more aberration fall to pieces per square inch than you ever thought could exist. See? Now, that's what I mean when I'm saying to you *do something for the pc*.

See, I tell you, "Audit well. Get perfect discipline. Get your comm cycle in. Don't ARC break the pc. Let the cycles of action complete." Don't you see? All of that. Well, that is simply an entrance to the... You see, the discipline of Scientology makes it possible to do this. And one of the reasons why other fields of the mind never got anyplace and never could get near anybody because they couldn't communicate to anybody, see?

So that discipline is important. That is the ladder which goes up to the door. And if you can't get to the door, you can't do anything. You see? So there's two stages here, two stages. And you're busy completing communication cycles and so forth. And I will admit sometimes I get impatient with you, you see, because I'm merely trying to teach you how to communicate to somebody so that you can do something for him, you see? And I sometimes believe that your whole attention gets tremendously absorbed in merely communicating with somebody – see, that – and use that as an end-all. See, and I get a little upset.

Because it's something on the order of – well, let's say you're trying to make an actor, you see? It's something like this, and you get him all set on the subject of makeup, you know, but he keeps standing in the wings made-up and thinks he's acting and he isn't. He's standing in the wings, see?

So this perfect discipline of which we speak: The perfect communication cycle; the perfect auditor presence; perfect meter reading; all of these various things are just to get you in a state where you can do something for somebody. And because this is so new, strange and novel, and is so unheard of in this universe, it looks so startling that you can say, "Well, that's auditing, that's processing, that's it. That's the end product."

Man, that's no more the end product than a can of dog food, see? I mean, it's still there in the can. It's supposed to be eaten, you know? It's the difference between reading a recipe book and dining.

So when you're real slow picking up the discipline, when you're – when you're real slow picking up keeping in a communication cycle, when you're poky on this subject and so forth, you see, you just – still nine miles from the ball, you know? You're not even attending yet. See?

So what you want to be able to do is audit perfectly. By that we mean keep in a communication cycle: be able to approach the pc; be able to talk to the pc; be able to maintain the ARC; get the pc to give you answers to your questions; be able to read a meter; get the reactions; be able to do this; be able to do that; all of those little things, you see? They've all got to be awfully good because it's very difficult to get a communication line in to somebody anyway. And they all have to be present and they all have to be perfect. But if they're all present and they're all perfect, *then we can start to process somebody*. Then we can start to process somebody. And all of that looks so beneficial that you could mistake it for processing.

Now, I'm giving you some kind of an entrance point here of – if all of your cycles were perfect, if you were able to sit there and confront that pc and meter that pc and keep your auditing reports and do all these other multiple various things and keep a pleasant smile on your face and not chop his communication and – if you can do those various things, now let's find out what do you do. Because there is something you do with those things.

Well, at Level VI this is very easy. You run GPMs. But that's doing something for somebody. And try to run GPMs sometimes without all these other factors near perfect. It's not possible. But let's take it down to a lower level. What could you do for somebody if you were a perfect auditor from the basis of your auditing technique and presence and handling somebody? Now, what could you do? That's the burning question: What could you do?

Now, we used to have this all on backwards. We used to try to teach people what they could do for somebody but they could never get in communication with him to do it. See, so therefore you had failures in processing.

Well, the most elementary procedure – the most elementary procedure, "What are you doing that you think is sensible?" and "Why is it sensible?" That's a perfectly elementary procedure and the guy would all of a sudden gawp at you.

And he'd say, "Oh, no!" you know? Because these things are very difficult to maintain as an insensibility. You have to work hard to have something in crosswise. "Horses sleep in beds."

All right, you say, "Well, what are you doing – what do you think is sensible?" or "What are you doing that's sensible?" or anything of this sort.

And the fellow says, "Well, I think horses sleep in beds. That's sensible."

"All right, now why is that sensible?"

"Well... that's nuts!" See?

You actually wouldn't have to do anything more than that, see? See? Now, one of the things that's horrible about all this is it's so easy to do but you keep looking for some magic. Well, your magic was getting into communication with the person. The rest of it is very easy to do. All you had to do is remain in communication with the person while you're doing this and realize that these huge boulders that he's got in his skull are poised with the most fantastically delicate balance on little pinheads, see, little pinpoint balance. And all you have to do is go *phoooh*, like that, and this thing goes *Brrooomm*, crash! Now, if you're not in communication with this person, he takes it as an accusative action; he tries to justify thinking that way; he tries to make himself look good to you; he tries to put on a public front of some kind or another sitting in the pc's chair; he tries to hold up his status. And any time I see a bunch of pcs around jumping happily to something else because it's "Only sane people can run on that," you see, "and crazy ones run on something else."

Well, everybody immediately will have the same computation, so they never have to be run on the crazy one. I right away know their auditors are not in communication with them and that auditing discipline itself has broken down because the pc is trying to justify himself

and trying to hold – uphold his own status. So he must be defending himself against the auditor. So the auditor couldn't possibly be in communication with him, could he?

So right back – we're right back to the fundamental of, "Why didn't the auditor get into communication with the pc in the first place?" Well, you get into communication with the pc in the first place by doing the proper Scientology discipline. That is not any trick. It is – goes off one, two, three, four. You sit down and you start the session and you start talking to somebody and you start handling the pc and you start handling his problems, and that sort of thing; and you do it by completing your communication cycles and not cutting his communication and by this and by that – the very things you're taught in the TRs. And you'll find you're in communication with the person. And where you fail and why he maintains his status is you've gotten into communication with the person and then you've never done anything for the person.

Unless having gotten into communication you now do something for the person, you lose, of course, your communication line, because the R-factor breaks down. He doesn't think you're so good and you go out of communication with the person. Do you understand? You can get into communication with the person, then not do anything for the person; the R-factor of why you are in communication with the person can break down and break down with you. You say, "Well, here I am in communication with the person. What am I supposed to do now?" You'll go out of communication with the person and you've somehow taken a little circular trip which was in toward the person and then away from the person, see?

All right, that having happened, now the person will be in sort of defensive and status and wonder why he's being processed and – you see, he could wonder all these questions.

It takes a process now. Now you've got to do something for the person and it takes a process. But it takes an understanding of what a process is. And a process is simply a combination of mental mechanisms which by – which when inspected will pass away. All auditing is negative gain, you never add anything to the case. All auditing is subtractive, you're as-ising things on the case and that's all you're doing. So you say, "All right, what do you think is sensible?"

The guy says, "Horses sleep in beds. Ah – ! Hey, that isn't sensible." Cognition. Total duration of process, see, was that.

You actually will get a – probably get a big blowdown or something like that on your E-meter – be a huge blowdown on your E-meter. Now, you try to get more tone arm action out of the fact that "horses sleep in beds." You don't get there. You flattened the process.

So it requires a sensitivity to know when the process is flat. You can over-audit and under-audit. You can try to run that tone arm action out of things which have no tone arm action left in them and you can walk off and leave things which have a ton of tone arm action left in them. You can do one or the other of these things. But this requires observation of the pc, and it only answers this question: Have you done anything for the pc? Once more, you only have to answer that question: Have you done something for the pc?

Well, if you've done something for the pc, you are not likely to get any more tone arm action out of it. Now, this is – becomes elementary, you see? We're breaking this down into 1)

and 2). So, 1) there's the auditing discipline, and 2) there's doing something for the pc. If you've done something for the pc, you've gotten the tone arm action out of it. It isn't that you really even do anything for the pc by having the tone... getting the tone arm action out of it, you see? That's simply an indicator of whether you're doing anything or not. This becomes – I'm beating a dead horse to death, now, don't you see, because this is not – it's not that complicated. That's – it's less complicated than anybody imagines.

You say to the pc, "What's sensible?"

"Well," he says, "Oh, well, so – well, yes psychiatry and psychoanalysis and congressmen and elections and governments. They're all sensible and something is sensible, and something else is sensible, and so on and so on, and they're all sensible." Well, let's observe the pc. Have you done anything for the pc yet? Well, the funny part of it is that your tone arm is going to be moving during this period. See, we haven't done anything, really, for the pc yet. And he goes on and he says, "Well, my old teacher was sensible. My old teacher used to tell me, well, I'd never succeed in the world, and he was right. And he was sensible."

And you're still getting tone arm action, see? "And he was – I don't know."

"Was he sensible or wasn't he sensible?"

"I don't know. You know, I have done some things in life. You don't suppose I could be failing all the time because he was so sure I would? *Uhghh*, this doesn't make any sense. You know, I think that man was a blithering ass! I think he was a complete fool. How would he know that I would never succeed in life? He's silly. I don't think he was sensible. No, we'll forget about that being sensible. Well, that – that wasn't sensible. That – you know, that's why I failed in life! Because he was so sure I would. And I always thought he was so sensi... Well, I'll be a son of a gun!"

Right about that moment your TA action goes *bzzp, bzzp, zzp, thup-bup* there's no more TA action, see?

Now you, knucklehead, not having noticed... I should be polite, I laid down a maxim "Always be polite to somebody who is trying to learn something," you see? You don't notice this one answer has come your way. You have done something for him. So now you start beating up the brush to do something for him. This is very bad timing, don't you see?

Now, you could go on with the process in some other way and some other field or some other channel, but you've handled something and you've done something. And if you keep him working on that one thing that he has now – you've now done something for him on, your TA action will disappear and your pc will get resentful. And not only will your TA action disappear, but you'll lose your comm line.

Now, let's try to press him. "What about this old teacher?" see? He's already had the cognition, see? Wow! See, "What about this old teacher? When did you know him? Did you have any overts against him?" and so forth. Notice your TA. TA is not moving. You're now restimulating the pc. You've gotten your key-out – destimulation factor has occurred right before your eyes. You've done something for the pc.

Now, hear me now, it's just a matter of. "Have you done anything for the pc or not?" And on any given subject, when you have done something for the pc, your TA action in that zone and area will cease. If there's any TA action to be gained in that area while you are doing something for the pc, you will get tone arm action. But sooner or later it is going to run up to having done something for the pc, see? Your TA action is about to do something for the pc, you see? That tells you that something there that can be done for the pc, and your TA action will go on toward the point where you have done something for the pc, and now this is past tense. Now, you're going to get more TA action on his dear, old teacher. In a pig's eye you are! That is a went proposition, now. So! It requires of the auditor discipline to keep in his communication line. He's got to stay in communication with his pc. Those cycles have got to be perfect. He can't be distracting the pc's attention onto the TA. "I'm not getting any tone arm action now." That's not staying in communication with the pc, see? Has nothing much to do with it. You're distracting the pc from his own zones and areas. So don't keep his attention out of session, you know? Keep him going on this; keep that communication line in. And the next requirement is do something for the pc: do something productive; use the communication line. Now that you've got the telephone in your hands, for God sakes, talk! See? There's nothing quite as silly as receiving a transatlantic telephone call where the other person then doesn't talk.

They phoned you – I got one not – not a month or two ago, and the person actually at the other end of the line stood there with the live phone in their hand with nothing to say. Undoubtedly, they had something to say but they just couldn't think of it at the time it finally got through.

And many an auditor who isn't getting a result with a pc is sitting there with the telephone in his hand not saying anything, see? He's got all the lines in, "Hello, hello. Are you there?"

"Oh, yes, I'm here," bright and cheerful.

"Oh – oh." See? Now, too much astonishment to say anything to the pc, see? So we go back to putting a communication line in, see? Best thing to do is to call back central and find out if we really do have a call to the pc, see? Find out if it was the correct number after all. Call up the rate operator and find out how much it's costing.

Do you see? You see, you can walk right up – you can walk right up to this crucial point and then die on the vine. You can start getting tone arm action on the pc and then never press it home. This thing all of a sudden there's – big drop. He says something about – you said – well, just – let's take this weird little process: "What's sensible?" see?

And he says, "Well, the most sensible person I ever knew was my old instructor."

Wiff. You know, you've got some tone arm. You make a note over here. "Instructor," it gave a tone arm action, and so on and so on. And "What's the question again? Sensible. Sensible. What does sensible mean? Is *sensible* a sensible word?" And so forth. No tone arm action there, you see?

And you say, "(Well, look, there was a bit of a tone arm motion there when he said 'the old instructor.')

You said something about this old instructor being sensible."

"Oh, yeah! Oh, terrifically sensible man." More TA, see?

"Well, have you adopted any of his views or anything like that?"

"Oh, yes, my whole life has been monitoring by the views," you see? See, big TA going on. And we'll go on this way and all of a sudden he's – he knew the pc was going to fail. Pc suddenly gets that in crosswise, you see? You'll see a big reaction and then the more reaction, more reaction and then all of a sudden the pc suddenly cognites, "Maybe that's why I'm failing all the time. I am *blaug-ow-ow-oh*," see? "Yeah! That guy is a fool. I didn't – he wasn't sensible at all. Ha! What do you know about that!" See? Big TA action occurs right before that moment. And if you're riding right up on your toes, you won't expect another whisper to come out of that old man. You won't ask for another whisper to come out of it, nothing. That's gone. That is dead. That's as dead as yesterday's newspaper.

You see, that's where the tone arm leads you into this. And if I was trying to teach you, totally mechanically, I'd say you go ahead and make sure there is nothing flat in there, but actually your communication line is at risk all the time you're trying to find out if anything else is in that. Your communication line is at risk. You're liable to get – unplug the whole switchboard.

"Well, hell, I told you! I had the cognition, you know? I told you already! I have – how many times do I have to...?"

See, there goes your communication line, you see? And after awhile, you'll get the point. You'll say, "Look, we're pulling switches out of the switchboard here. We're messing things up." And come off of it.

Actually, if you're very, very clever, you'll run a process that cyclically produces this sort of thing by a general question so that you don't make that particular goof. You don't have to make the piece of judgment, which I just gave you, all the time, see?

It took me a long time – and really, it took me as an auditor a long time – to learn when to give up on somebody. You know, learn when to give up on a subject. And I finally got clever and tuned my antenna up on a Martian wavelength and got it up to a point where that thing was flat. I could see that was flat, see? And where, if I pursued it any further, I would now get into trouble: Where I had done something for the pc and, in trying to do anything further along that particular line, would put my communication line at risk. And I got to a point where I could judge that just like that, you know? Pc happy, tone arm increasing every session, everything going along swingingly.

But let me tell you that it is a very interesting point. It'd be something I would be very happy to be able to teach you. But I'm afraid it's something that you learn on the basis of observation. Now, in Level VI you're learning that; there is nothing deader than a dead item. When it has give up its ghost, there is no more tone arm action there. If there is any more cognition in it, any more read in it, yes, yes, you could get it out. But you develop a sensitivity after a while as an auditor. You know when it has given up its ghost. And you know that just mentioning it or referring to it one more time is practically fatal. Your pc just feels like he's being ground into the dirt. See, just one more mention of that item and you've had it, see?

And you'll start to get a tick-tocky needle, and other undesirable phenomena sets in, and if you keep it up – "Yeah, well, I'm not sure whether the item has read or not. I didn't have my eye on the meter at the time." (Calling pc's attention to the meter, always, if you want ARC breaks.) "I didn't have my eye on the meter and I don't really know whether it read or not. And, of course, I must – I must have seen it read before I can go on, but maybe I missed it." That's the – one of the most marvelous ARC breaky situations that I could possibly set up, and yet it's one of the commonest ones.

Now let's take this same situation. There was only so much charge, see, on this old instructor or something like that. See, there is only that much charge on it. You've got it! He wasn't an item. He was a lock of some kind or another. But boy, you blew it. You've seen it blow; you've seen the pc change before your very eyes. Now that's the time to unload; that's the time to swing off that freight train and hit the gravel and grab another one. Not necessarily change the process but certainly don't press that guy any further in the direction of what has just given TA.

You could now ask him – but there's ways of asking auditing questions that are part of a communication line. There is a way of dismissing everything you have been talking about while asking the same question as you did before. You know? Sort of like, "Well all right, we've taken care of that. You've gotten all of that. Good. Good, I'm glad we've got – we've finished off with that. All right, now let's get back to the original process now. What's sensible?"

You get an idea? There is a thing an auditor can do. He doesn't have to say all those things I just said, but that is the way he is building the atmosphere. You know, he acknowledges on the idea, "Oh, that old tutor you had. Yeah. All right, well, we got that, good. We got that. Let's..." so on. You even do a little business here about crossing it all off, you know? And, "All right, now we're getting back in the original process. Okay."

Here, you see? Now, we say same auditing question, we say, "What's sensible?" But he obviously knows that it's now being addressed to some entirely different zone of the mind and as such you shift that. You're still doing something for the pc. You follow this?

So there's getting up to the bus and then there's getting in it and going someplace. And you could become a past master at auditing discipline and motions and so forth – and actually have to be a past master at it anyhow before you can carry on the rest of it – never carry it another sixteenth of an inch, have a lot of pcs that absolutely loved you and swore by you who went right on having lumbosis. And you would say, "What in the name of heaven has happened to me? What terrible catastrophe am I looking at here?"

Well, everything is fine, except you're not doing anything for the pc. You got right up to there and got on the bus but you never drove off anyplace and you never did anything. That's the whole secret of auditing. It's in two sections.

Of course, Level VI, you do it so fast that you hardly get a chance to you call this, and boom it goes, and that's the end of it. And of course, there it's predicted where the charge is going to be, and you know what's going to fire and all that sort of thing. So you say, "Well, this is something different." No, it isn't any different at all. Cleverer auditing is below – is below IV. See, you've got to be clever. There's ways of asking auditing questions, which is

the same question, which could make the pc believe implicitly that his answer had not been accepted.

I'm sure we've all had at one time or another this trouble. We've repeated the auditing question and the pc thinks his cognition has been invalidated. So then, to prove to him that his cognition has not been invalidated, we preserve our communication line by wildly changing a process that is not flat as a general process. And that is one of the most flagrant examples and that is the most general reason why auditors run lots of processes. They haven't mastered the trick of convincing the pc that his cognition has been accepted and that they're all done with that particular zone or area of the process and that the process that is being run is now expected to go into some other zone or area. Direction of attention this comes under.

You can do some pretty wild things with direction of attention. You can exaggerate this up like mad. Pc says, "Oh, oh, yes! Yes. Yes, yes, yes. See, you're asking me sensible. Oh, yeah. Textbooks. Yeah. Ho-ho-ho-ho-ho!" Big blowdown, see?

And you say, "What's with textbooks?"

"Oh, well, good God, you know, they pretend they're sensible and nobody can make any sense out of them at all. Ha-ha!"

Gone, that TA now is gone. You understand it, that's as far as you're permitted to pursue it. You've now done something for the pc. It isn't manifested in any degree that you will notice right there at that moment. But how do you now convince the pc that your next same auditing question is not actually going to be addressed to textbooks? Well, there are crude mechanisms for doing it.

"All right. We've taken care of textbooks. Now, in some other zone or area, what's sensible?" That's doing it with an axe. "We got your communication. We consider that that particular zone or area is complete and we're not asking you to do anything more in that zone or area because you've already gotten the tone arm action out of *that*. Now, asking exactly the same auditing question, but addressing it to some *other* zone or area of the mind, what's sensible?" See, this is the message which you're putting across in the middle of your communication line.

Now, you can make – you could do some weird, weird, weird things with cases. You – it's quite, quite unbelievable what you can do with a case, steering him around in this particular zone on some general process. Now, this is not running an alternate process; this is really not running itsa. This is merely a finished method of handing a process to a pc: Is run him to cognition; run him to cognition. And that's actually not new. It's running the pc to cognition, but it's on the same thing.

And nearly everybody has understood "running to cognition" – change the process when the pc has cognited. Well, that is very far from true. You change the sub-subject of the process on the cognition. You don't change the process.

Your process can be far too specific. It can be a sub-process. "Right around the vicinity of this rug, you see, have you ever made a footprint?" See? Well, it's so circumscribed as an auditing question that it's really a subquestion anyhow. So what you really want to run on a pc is a broad question which you've already established, and running to cognition is knocking

off these sub-cognitions on it. Now, you take something as broad as "What's sensible?" Ooooh, that's broad.

Now, of course, "Putting footprints on this rug, see, that's sensible. I don't know why it's sensible," he suddenly says, "but it doesn't seem to be any reason at all why I should put footprints... Do you know, I see a rug of this particular type and I always have to put a footprint on it. That's real crazy. That's real crazy. I think that's Wadsworth, or somebody, 'Footprints on the sands of time,' yeah. It already – yeah. Yes, I learned the poem when I had scarlet fever. Yeah. Yeah, there was a rug in the room the same as the rug in this room. Oh, that's what that's all about."

"All right, good." You've had your blowdown. "All right, that – that's fine. Now, aside from that and footprints and that sort of thing, which we've got, and so forth. What's sensible?"

See, that's just parking it. That's how to really, smartly run by cognition. You can be smarter than a tack if you pursue this particular course. But I'm warning you that that particular approach requires some sensitivity on the part of the auditor. He has to ask himself this question continually: "What have I done for the pc?"

I used to run an auditing session until I had done something for the pc. You take a short-attention pc, particularly. The session was exactly as long as it took me to do something for the pc. And horribly enough, some of those sessions would go four or five hours, and I had thought they would run as long as fifteen minutes. But that's because we never got into the communication cycle necessary to do something for the pc. And it'd take maybe that long to establish a communication line before we could start to ask the pc what's cooking. See?

You'll sometimes start asking an alternate question of a pc, back and forth, and notice that the answers are dodgy. These are dodgy answers. Well, merely and completely recognize out of that dodginess just one thing: that your communication line to the pc has failed in some particular way.

I'll give you an example. You start to process a child – you start to process a child on the idea of "What problems do you have?" You're going to you're going to process this child, you see? And the child is sitting there very dodgily answering this question. And they appear to be very reluctant to answer the question. You realize that this reluctance isn't really any withhold or anything, it's just that the child cannot talk to you. Then you suddenly realize that the process you should have started in on was "What could you say to me?"

You maybe process the child on something very fundamental, like "What problems do you have?" and get no place because you aren't doing anything for the pc; so therefore, you get minimum tone arm action and so forth. Well, you haven't established a communication line to the pc. You shift your gears and ask something that has nothing to do – well, the child has been sick, let us say, and the child feels badly and there's a lot of things wrong with this child. And you shift off onto a process such as "What could you say to me?" and "What would you rather not say to me?" And the – you say, "Well, there's lots of mechanisms in this such as withholds coming off and all that sort of thing." But the surprising thing about it is you now have tone arm action, you now have a session running because you're getting in your

communication line. At the same time, you're incidentally getting off a few withholds, which is doing something for the pc, too, at the same time you're getting in a communication line.

A process like that tends to confuse you. You see why it'd be confusing? Because it's putting in the communication line and it's doing something for the pc at the same time.

Well, there are a great many of these processes in Scientology which get in the communication line and do something for the pc at the same time. So, therefore, this breakdown of getting into communication with the pc and then doing something for the pc becomes obscured because you're doing them both at once. And then you begin to become confirmed in the idea that getting in the communication line is what's doing something for the pc. See, so the whole subject now gets lost all over again. Even though you do, then, use a combination that accomplishes both at once, don't lose sight of the fact that there are two actions and you won't make very many mistakes along this line.

Now, all of this is really a prelude to O/W because O/W is just about the greatest, handy-jim-dandy little communication wrecker that an auditor ever had very much to do with. And an auditor loses the ARC he has with the pc a time or two and he becomes very timid. And he starts asking, "Do you have any overts? Have you committed any overts?"

And the pc says, "Yes. Well, I thought people were mean to me, and it was really an overt to think that against myself."

And the auditor says, "Well, he got off a big overt," and so forth. And they will go on this way and on this way and on this way and on this way, a sort of a motivatorish, critical think, you know? And the auditor never tags it and never nails it and never does anything about it and never corrects it; and nothing happens with the pc and the communication line doesn't improve because the pc is actually running a falsity. And it just winds up in a pile of garbage. You see, we really never get anyplace. So we're really adventuring on something that is very, very intricate when we're adventuring on O/W.

It's not a simple mechanism, because although handled rightly, it would put in the communication line at the same time it was doing something for the pc. The auditor protects his communication line to the pc – he protects his communication line to the pc by not asking anything embarrassing. And he permits his pc to sit there with withholds in the session half-ARC broke with the communication line flying out the window. And he never presses home to find one of these things out. He can even get a read on the meter that exists and never really ask for it because he doesn't want to risk his communication line. So this makes O/W dicey.

Now, another thing that made it dicey in the old days is the fact that *withhold* occurs in the bank. And you should not use the word *withhold*.

Of course, withhold is an out of ARC condition and it's an out of ARC process and, actually, cannot be run solo. You can take an out of ARC process and run it in combinations with an ARC process. You can say, "What have you done? What have you not done?" You could say, "What have you said? What have you not said?" You could say, "What have you thought? What have you not thought?" or something like that. But again, *thought* is a risky one because that also occurs in the bank. But done, fortunately, really doesn't occur in the bank.

Now, I've told you that O/W is senior to the bank. Now, this might lead you to believe that once you'd got the bank gone you'd still have O/W. No, this is not the case. It is senior in that it will key out the bank.

Now, let's look at this a little more intimately and find why it keys out the bank: Because the whole common denominator of the bank would be "done." That's the common denominator of the whole reactive bank. In other words, a high order of lock. And anybody who knows the constituency of the bank could look those things over and he'd certainly say, "Heh-heh! Yeah, that's true." It's just a high order of lock, don't you see?

So it's a lock on all parts of reactivity. Now, when we specify what things have been done to, we err, because we might run into another piece of the bank, you see? So the generalized statement, or a common or the proper name of somebody, is quite allowable.

We find our pc has a present time problem with Oswald. Perfectly proper to say "What have you done to Oswald?" We're not running into any bank because he hasn't got Oswald as part of the basic reactive mind. "Men," that might be different. That might be too close in. But this guy, Oswald; what have we done to Oswald?

Now, we'd find, weirdly enough, that the communication line to Oswald will have been interrupted because of an overt to Oswald, so therefore, one couldn't communicate to Oswald.

A present time problem is also produced by failing to complete a communication. There is really one for the book. That's something I don't think I've told you. I've known it for a long time but I just think I've omitted mentioning it. I might have, I might have mentioned it, but I doubt it. A present time problem can be created by a failure to complete a communication cycle. This is so much the case that if your pc, coming into session, were asked – you were to ask your pc coming into session, "Is there any communication you haven't completed?" the pc would rattle off several and the pc would not register on present time problem. This is another method of handling PTPs. They tend to vanish under this.

Now, you're not trying to erase the PTPs anyway. All you're trying to do with these PTPs is get them out of the road so that you can audit somebody. You never erase, in rudiments, anyway. Actually, you never erase in anything below Level VI, now. So your action here is a destimulative action and that question all by itself will adequately destimulate the pc so the pc can be audited. You'll find it very seldom that you will fail to get around a present time problem with that question. Of course, the problem can still be there but the pressure is gone on it.

Now, "I got PTPs," the pc says.

You say, "Well, what communication have you failed to complete or haven't you completed with regard to these?"

And the pc says, "*Brrow, brrow, brrrow, brrow, brrrow, brrow,*" and that's the end, and you don't get none that will register on PTP. That would be a common experience.

Now, the reason he has PTPs with these people and hasn't completed the communication is because he's got overts. So we get the secondary consideration on PTPs. You never

have a PTP with anything you don't have an overt on. Of course that's primary, really. Your PTPs stem from overts. If you have an overt against a telephone pole, you will have a PTP with a telephone pole, see, something like this. Psychosomatics go back to PTPs which go back to overts. So you can actually run out psychosomatics on this but it's a rather adventurous undertaking. You're liable to get the pc into more than you can easily get him out of. But you can, in *extremis*, handle a psychosomatic illness on the basis that it must be a present time problem. See? The guy has got lumbosis. All right. There, then, you immediately – you have two approaches.

The least adventurous of these approaches, and the swiftest one to handle, is the guy has got lumbosis of the – of the blumjum. And you say, "Well, what communication haven't you completed to or about the blumjum?"

"Oh, well, that's simple. I had an appointment at the hospital, and *waf-waf-saf-saf-naf*, and I had an appointment there. And I was supposed to go to the drugstore and then get some stuff, and so forth. And I actually, I was telling my Aunt Maisy the other day about the blumjum was a very obstructive mechanism as far as I was concerned. And I didn't finish the letter and – what? The somatic is gone. What happened?" The pc is liable to be very startled at this point because they are apparently not talking about anything that had anything to do with doing something for the blumjum. That's what I mean by it's very, very difficult to keep lumbosis around. It is. It takes a lot of doing.

So we have these two approaches, not just one. The unfinished cycle of communication to or about the "it"; the unfinished cycle of communication to or about the object that you're trying to handle, which is a PTP. Guy has a present time problem with Internal Revenue. Well, we don't much care about wondering and settling this problem but we certainly want him less obsessively concerned with it. So let's do something to get rid of this problem.

All right, the easiest pitch is an unfinished cycle of communication, and the second one is a done.

And let me call to your attention, you have now followed out the exact one-two that I gave you for the auditor to a pc. See, this is the way the mind stacks up.

Now, it's quite sensational just getting a communication line straightened out to something. This is quite sensational. It doesn't really finish off everything there is to finish off. It is merely sensational. So the best thing to ask a pc who has a PTP – the best thing to ask this pc to get rid of his PTP is "What cycle of communication have you failed to complete with regard to this?" "To it" or "about it?"

See, he's given you a present time problem. "Present time problem with my wife."

"All right. What cycle of communication have you failed to complete or have you not completed (better wording) to your wife or about your wife? Hm?" And it all sort of goes *bzz-bzz-bzz*, and an awful lot of the time this problem evaporates as a problem. But you haven't taken very much care of this problem yet because you've approximated the one-two of the auditor, you see? You've really not done anything about the problem. You've just eased it off. See? You've gotten in there so that you could do something about it.

But you will very often find out quite magically that for the purposes of destimulation and getting on with the session on what you were doing yesterday, and so forth, that it's quite adequate. And you'll very often find that in the field of psychosomatic auditing that it's quite adequate.

The severity of the illness has *nothing whatsoever* to do with the ease or difficulty of its release. These two things are not comparable. You'll find some guy with some sniffing, little sinus condition that merely nags him, that takes a thousand hours of itsa before it finally surrenders. And this other bird has got a busted back and can't even move his feet, and you might cure the whole thing up in five minutes. Don't ever measure – don't ever measure the length of auditing by the violence of the condition because they are not necessarily in keeping one after the other; they're not.

So anyway, there's your first chance just with an auditor. An auditor can sometimes sit down and audit a pc for a few minutes. He just gets in his communication line, you see? The other fellow finds out there's somebody he can talk to, the auditor, with his good discipline and everything. And all of a sudden, the guy feels wonderful, see? And he says, "Well, it's all settled now."

And the auditor says, "Wait a minute that can't be. I didn't do anything, you know?" Well, that's true, but as far as this guy is concerned it's all settled. He's found one human being out of the whole sun, moon or stars he could talk to and this was enough to momentarily key him out and make him feel better. Perfectly adequate action. And then you go around waiting for this miracle to happen again, don't you see? Well the miracle, maybe, won't happen for many a pc because, of course, what the missing thing was is you didn't do anything for this first pc and you knew it. So you get lazy and you expect to go on through auditing not doing anything for people and have them feel marvelous.

I think that's the one-shot Clear and so on. You see, if that existed, we'd all be out of work. So you can bless your stars it doesn't.

But you occasionally get this type of a reaction. You'll get somebody reading, just reading a book on Scientology and all of a sudden going well all over the place, you see? Well, that's because somebody understands them or somebody knows what it's all about or somebody has put his finger on what the score is with life. And just the fact that this data could exist all of a sudden gives a guy a resurgence and he gets out of his sick bed. This has happened many, many times. But that's just the first step, see? That's the communication step.

Now, this other step, when it doesn't occur automatically, you want to be able to do something about it. You don't go around expecting the accident to happen all the time, you see? So you ask this – let me take it up in the most elementary session form possible, terribly elementary session form and that is, "Do you have a present time problem?"

"Oh, well, yeah. Oh, yo – boy, do I have a – oh, oh, man! Ha-ha. You should ask."

"All right, well, is there any communication you have not completed with regard to those problems?"

"Oh, *brr, brrzz, brzzzz, brzzzz, brzzz, brzzz, brzzz, brzzz, brrzzz, brzzz.*" Problem is all gone.

You say, "What magic! How marvelous!" All right. That's fine. That's fine, but remember what you have just done is the lick and the promise. See, you have not gone any more fundamentally into it than that.

Now supposing you were in the horrible condition of having said, "What communication have you failed to complete about those present time problems?"

And the pc says, "Oh, well, none of that would do any good. Nothing. One couldn't, you know? That's it." Now what do you do? Your favorite card trick has laid an egg. Now where do we go?

Well, there's number two. You see, you should realize that up to this point you haven't done number two. You haven't done anything for the pc so this second one is "done." You see, "doing something" is mostly "done." See, they rhyme; they go together very nicely.

Now, why? Because it's the highest common lock of the whole reactive mind. If he has a present time problem with something, he has overts against it. And if you really want to do something about these things now, you had better get off those overts. And if this has been getting in your way consistently and continuously, you'd jolly well better get off of those overts. You better get them off of that case, man, because they are big and they are flagrant and they are mad.

If your card trick won't work of "What communication have you failed to complete?" (I keep saying "failed to complete." You should never use "fail" as an auditing command, it's an old habit. "What communication have you not completed?" or "haven't you completed?") You got the other one – the other one. Now that's doing something for a pc. And there's such a vast difference between the amount of skill required between saying to somebody "What communication hasn't been completed?" See, *brrrr-dada, da, da*. It doesn't upset him; it's not embarrassing, there's no social status challenged here. You're improving his communication so your communication with him improves. It requires nothing of your auditing discipline. See, that's the lazy, long sleep. Why? Because it's really just step one again.

Now you're going to have to "done." And man, that takes auditing – that takes some auditing. I know of seventeen different ways that you might have to approach a case in order to get off its series of overts to actually throw out of the existence all of the pc's upset about it. And you might have to use every single one of them.

There are lots of them. There's overts in chains; there is the subject of recurring withholds; there's the subject of the recurring overt; there's the subject of the – getting the basic-basic of something; the formulation of the proper question to ask so that – this can get pretty complicated. We've had all that technology here over a period of time. A lot of you are here who have been here before, and so forth, have sweat it out. But it's very valuable technology.

Some individual keeps telling you that he threw mud at a car when he was sixteen, and this is an overt. And he gives you this overt and he gives you this overt and he gives you this overt, nothing happens. But he keeps telling you this overt. Well, now, you have to know what is happening here and know what to do about it. Otherwise, he'll just keep on giving you the overt. This is part of a chain of overts. This is what's known as a recurring overt.

And the trouble with it is, is you're nowhere near its basic. And now you have to be able to codify the question necessary to get the basic of the chain and you have to be able to audit this sort of thing by chains. And this can become very interesting indeed. And then you have to be prepared to find no overt as the bottom of the chain. And that is one of the more mysterious things. The guy has *always* believed that he had an overt there and none was there. There's that phenomenon which can hold a chain in. Another is – there's plenty to know about this.

But man is basically good despite his reactive bank. The reactive bank is only composed to make a man commit overt, which is against his better nature. If he commits these overt, therefore, he'll trap himself because he won't go on communicating, having committed them. So it's the perfect trap. You do not want to talk to people you have wronged. I very – I'm very shy of letting anybody wrong me, not because they will do me any damage, because they can sure cut themselves up. They commit an overt act, don't you see, and then they will try to withhold and sever the communication line for fear that they will commit another overt act. That actually is the fundamental think of man.

After awhile he goes out of control and he just starts dramatizing. And then you have the murderer and the thief and the rest of the fellow who has no responsibility or anything. He's actually left the human race at this – by this time. But along some line, that individual will still have a sensibility: He will still be sensible in his responsibility in some zone or quarter. And, in handling such a person, an auditor has to be terrifically good. He has to find some zone in that person's existence that that person could commit an overt on.

Oh, the person has slain cities full of people, don't you see, and he's done this and he's done that. Put any – put any crime on the book; this person has done this crime without the least qualms. Ah, well, the auditor contest there is to find *what!* You see, he's totally out of communication with everything, that's why he can commit the crimes. He's gone. He's just dramatizing. He's not even there, he's *woof!* All right. You've got to find, as an auditor, some zone he can still commit an overt against. What overt would be real to this individual? And you'll find *some* little corner of his existence is still an overt.

Now, there's other ways to build up overt in an individual. You say, "All right. What have you done? What have you done?" And the individual will give you perhaps something which is a rather banal statement. You can ask him, "Well, why was it all right to do that?" And he will give you a lot of justifications and so forth. There's that approach.

Now "What terrible, vicious, mean thing..." This is another thing, you see? Just "done" is just "done." You know, "What have you done?"

"Well, I've eaten breakfast." That's a perfectly adequate answer to the question, see?

But "What mean vicious thing have you done?" Now, this would be another branch that we call overt. See, just "What have you done?" that can be used – that can be used all by itself as an auditing question. "What have you done?" But you wouldn't, really, except if you were – educated your pc into answering the question under some special connotation, you really wouldn't get nothing but overt, you see? But it's perfectly valid to do that – to get such answers and so forth. The only modification which you require are "What are you absolutely sure you have done?"

Now, let me tell you why that is vitally necessary that you understand these two branches of "done." One of – "What have you done that is socially reprehensible that will prevent you from communicating and doing something else?" That's what we call an overt. And the other one is just having taken an action in the direction of. That's just "done" see? It means just that. It means having taken an action in the direction of, see, nothing, no significance with regard to it at all.

Now if we run just plain "done" on the individual, we could be totally knuckleheaded as an auditor and not guide the individual in any way, and he would immediately start doing something else. Now, what would he start doing? He would start looking for the explanation. He's running a process – you're running – you're saying, "What have you done? What have you done? What have you done?" And the pc is no longer running that process. Now, hear me now. This is the big liability of this "done." The pc now starts looking for an explanation for what has happened to him. And he's now running the process "Explain what has happened – maybe this will explain what has happened to me."

You might as well be asking, "Explain what has happened to you. Explain what has happened to you. Explain what has happened to you." That's the process he's running. He's running "Explain what has happened to you," but you're running "What have you done?" Now, unless you're aware of the fact that almost any pc under the sun will convert the process "done" to "Explain what has happened to you," you will never be able to run a pure "done" on a pc. If you don't know this, then you can't run "done" on a pc. He'll convert it. He starts looking for the explanation, and he will start inventing things he has not done in order to get rid of the consequences which he is experiencing. He's trying to find a good enough overt to explain what is occurring in his life.

Now there, there is your considerable difference in these processes. And what an auditor has trouble with there, then – we'll recapitulate very rapidly – an auditor then has trouble differentiating between communicating with the pc and doing something for a pc. And then when he gets into running "done," he doesn't want to sacrifice his communication line in order to press home any nasty personal little facts, you see? So he never really presses home his question. And the next action is he runs into the square brick wall of the pc doesn't run the process. The pc runs "Explain what has happened."

Well, a fellow is subject to continuous headaches. So he will actually, in a desperate condition, start giving you fictitious deeds – fictitious deeds. He'll very often go on to the far backtrack to give you a fictitious deed. You always want to beware of that because you know at once that this happens, that the individual has done this to you. "I shot fifteen Praetorian guards in Rome." *Ah-ugh-hoo-oh*, no, no, no, no, that is not an answer to the auditing question because the auditing question is, understand, "What do you jolly-well, damn-well know you've done?" But what auditor is going to sacrifice his communication line by cutting up a pc down in – shooting him down in flames to that degree? No, you'll listen to a couple of these, but all right, steer it back to where it belongs because he's looking for an explanation.

He isn't trying to find what he'd done. All you want is "What are you certain you've done, bud?" That's all the answer you want. "What are you – what are you real certain – what do you know, absolutely, that you have done?"

You could work a gradient scale up from "I know I've eaten breakfast. In fact, I know that sometime during the last year I've eaten. Yes, what have I done? What am I absolutely certain I know? I know I've spent some money. I know I must have spent some money in the last few days. I don't really have any exact recollection of any money, but I have less money now than then, so therefore I must have spent some money in the last few days."

"All right. Well, do you know you've spent some money in the last few days?"

"Well that – ." This is an actual auditing sequence, you see? "Do you know you've spent some money in the last few?"

"Well, I must have because I have less money now."

"Well, that is, you're just computing that you spent some money in the last few days. Do you know that you spent any money in the last few days? Come on. What – where did you spend some money in the last few days?"

"Oh, my God, you ask me a question like that, I *o-o-o-oh-ooo. Hum-m-mm-m-m. Hmmmm. Done. Hum-m-m. Ha-ha-ha. Sixpence. I spent a sixpence for a lolly.*"

"All right. Good enough. Here's the next question. What have you done?"

"Well, well, well, let's see. What have I done? What have I done? Let's see. Let's see." Starts squeezing his head a little bit. "What have I done – so on. Well, I was a headsman once that worked up in the Tower and I missed Ann Boleyn's head and hit her with the flat of the head with an axe." You know what he's – what he's figured out? He tried to answer the question, he got a headache, so he tried to explain why he had the headache, so he reaches back into the past and he gets some uncertain piece of something. So he tries to offer you something that is enough overt to give him that much headache. And that's why it's very difficult.

Now, you'll find that people who answer the question that way – the test is do they ever get well? No, they have an awful time. They have a pretty bad time.

Now, it isn't, actually, whether they did do it or didn't do it. It's their degree of certainty on having done it. See? And I can very easily go 500 years ago back into France and give you the name, rank and serial number of a lot of things, see? And I can give these things to you, but after I've run a few of them, I start running into "Let's see, was her name Mary? or was it Marie? or was it...? And did that happen at Agincourt? or was that at Poitiers?" And next thing you know I'm in a fog. And if I go on this way very long, I'll start wondering whether I even was alive yesterday because I haven't entered it from a zone of certainty. See? I've entered it from a zone of dim recollection or something like this, you know?

So "done" is built up on a gradient of certainty, not built up on a gradient of explanations of what is happening to the pc or has happened to the pc. You might even convert the question so that it's "What are you quite positive that you have done?" You want to be careful about saying "absolutely certain."

See, it's no criticism of the pc or even the pc's memory, but that pc is actually trying to explain something or they wouldn't be shooting back on the backtrack trying to give you an explanation. See, that's the thing you've got to watch. That's the thing you've got to be awful careful of because they're going to dig themselves in in an awful hurry.

So, again, you wouldn't be doing anything for the pc by running "done." So, again, it comes under the heading of doing something for the pc. Well, there's a lot of things you could do with a pc without doing anything for the pc. There's a lot of phenomena that you can achieve without achieving anything for the pc. You can turn on some very, very handsome somatics at one time or another on a pc without turning them off, too.

So, anyway, you've got a problem here in doing something for the pc because you're liable to be doing A and the pc is doing B. And then you go on doing A while the pc is doing B, and then somewhere down the line you wind up in a hell of a mess. And you say, "Well, what happened?" Well, the pc never did what you said, so you didn't do anything for the pc. There was in actual fact no barrier to your willingness to do something for the pc but there must have been a tremendous barrier to your understanding of what was going on. That you could ask A and the pc answered B, in itself showed the auditor observation was very poor. So, therefore, the auditor wasn't in communication with the pc so again the communication factor was out so once more we weren't doing anything for the pc.

Now this is where the thing adds up. Now, if you're going to communicate with the pc – if you're going to communicate with the pc – it's to the end of doing something for the pc. Now, if your communication with the pc is good, you'll wind up then in a position to do something. But having gotten in a position to do something, for heaven's sake, now do something. See? Don't halfway do something or partially do something. This isn't difficult, what I'm talking to you about. It's just putting things in their right boxes in their right compartments.

Don't ever think, because the pc likes you and everything is going along fine and you get along together so well, that you're doing something for the pc. No, you're communicating well to the pc. So, in communicating very well to the pc, you now have an opportunity to do something for the pc. But then your own communication channel to the pc could go out, and you could be asking the pc A and be getting answers for B. And then, again, you wouldn't do anything for the pc if there was a second place where it can break down.

Now, you're just – the gist of the situation then is that O/W is liable to be the most productive zone or area for big recovery on the part of the pc, providing the auditor knows how to steer it, and *will* steer it, and isn't being too tender about it. There's dozens of ways to run this sort of thing. You can get in there and you can say, "All right. What big overt have you committed in this lifetime?" That was to take O/W from the version of *overt*, you know, so on.

All right. "What overt have you committed? What big overt have you committed in this lifetime?" Think, think, think, think, think, think, think, think, think. "Well, I upset Joe. Yes, yes, that was about the biggest overt in this lifetime. I really upset Joe."

"All right. Fine." You think you've gotten someplace now. Of course, you haven't gotten anyplace: Your tone arm hasn't moved; there's been no cognition; there's been nothing like this. This thing is in a situation where there can be set up in a dozen different ways. You haven't gotten anyplace yet but you've gotten a big overt.

Now, you think perhaps that his having told you, now, should somehow or another magically discharge this thing. No, why should it magically discharge it? He hasn't answered

the auditing question for one thing. He doesn't think it *was* an overt. "What *big overt* have you committed in this lifetime?"

"Well, this horrible thing I did to Joe." And he tells you what it is, rather proudly. And you say, "Well, O/W doesn't work because nothing happened." Man, you didn't even get your big toenail wet on the side of the Pacific. The sixty-four dollar question now is, "Well, why wasn't it an overt?"

"Oh, well, it wasn't an overt, because Joe is a heel and because of this and because of that, and so forth. And he deserved it, and it's the common thing to do in those circumstances; everybody expected me to do it. And, of course, it was natural that I would because I have a reactive bank and it forced me to do it." [laughter] And a guy can go on for some time on the justification of this overt. And you'll start to get tone arm action, tone arm action, tone arm action. Now, you're watching the increase of responsibility along certain zones or lines. And this person has not flattened the process because he has not come up to a cognition or a recognition of anything yet, but he's sure working on it. And that tone arm is a-moving and it's a-moving and it's a-moving and so forth, and we're going along on this. "And after all, Joe really was a heel. And he wrote me a nasty letter once which was a *greh-tajub-a rub* and it was absolutely inevitable and impossible that I would have done anything else but this because everybody expected me to do this, don't you see? And if I hadn't done this, it would have committed an overt against a great many other people." "Now, on this overt against Joe, is it really an overt after all?" and so on.

All of a sudden a – the guy is liable to get this little sensation of the glee of insanity, or something like that, as far as it goes. I'm not kidding you. It's a sort of glee of insanity that starts coming off the surface, and so forth. And some little corner of him is taking a look at this thing, "You know," he says, "that there was some part of that that was an overt, mostly against myself, of course, because..." [laughter]

And a guy will actually worry that and worry that and worry that. Now I'm not – I'm not prepared to tell you how many hours he could go on worrying this, producing tone arm action all the way. I don't know. It might be a twenty-five hour intensive on one overt, don't you see? Until you get the thing worn down and eventually, all of a sudden, he says, "Well, even though it could have been explained, you know, that was a hell of a thing to do to Joe. I shouldn't have done that to Joe. I'd completely forgotten. I'd completely forgotten. I had it completely in my choice whether I did it or didn't do it. And I did it. *Whoo!* Yes. Yeah, I committed an overt against Joe. Yeah." Boom! *Pswwww*. You see it blow. And you won't get another scrap of TA out of that whole thing.

You got one "done," see, one "done" off the pc. See, there are numerous ways to handle these things. Now, while you have him going through all of this, and so forth particularly as his being a Scientologist, he may know all the ropes, keep him guided into this channel and keep him going right on down the line and keep your communication channel, and so forth, open to the pc during this period of time. That's all a trick; that's all takes some doing. But in the final analysis you will have done something for the pc, *for* the pc, not to him.

Now, there is – there is the auditing of O/W. Now, a lot of this lecture, I apparently have not been talking to you much about the process of O/W, I've been talking to you about

the version and guises of auditing. But unless these things are understood in their proper relationship, one to another, you will never run any O/W and never get any overts off anybody and really never get any withholds off anybody. You know? You have to know the technology, you have to know how to audit and you have to, yourself, be in communication with the pc to know how to handle this situation.

Now, all the way along the line of what I've been talking to you about, you are raising the cause level of the pc. All the way along the line you are raising the cause level of the pc. You do these things, fairly slippily, fairly expertly; you're raising the cause level of the pc. And he's walking right up and he'll be able to as-is more and more. Your pc will be changing under your eyes; your pc doesn't come into session with so many PTPs; your pc is much more able to get the show on the road. The pc is this and the pc is that. And you're seeing this – this thing progress, don't you see? Now, you could go into "done" in numerous other categories. I'd swear, I don't know, if you piled up all the bulletins on the subject of O/W and running withholds and chains and all of this kind of thing; man, if you stacked those all up together, you wouldn't be able to hardly look over the desk. There's lots of technology. You don't need all that technology perhaps, but it's very nice to have it. If you're going to be very expert along these lines, why, there it is. Because the mind is quite funny in the various ways that it works.

Very often you get a tremendous failure in this particular field in trying to direct somebody to do something in this field. They don't understand some of these ramifications I've been pointing out to you. I've asked somebody – a girl is lying dying in a hospital for no apparent reason or something of this sort. And somebody asks me frantically, frantically! They'll say, you know, over a long distance line or something of this sort, "What can we *do* to bring this girl back to *life*?" and so forth. And frankly, it's not with any hope at all that I tell them what they can do, because I know that ordinarily they won't consider it heroic enough. I'd tell them the exact fact of what to do. In such a case as that, the exact thing to do was find out what her family doesn't know about. That actually was enough – they were in sufficient communication with the girl in this particular case – that was enough to have gotten her out of that bed and back on her feet again.

It wasn't that I knew anything she had done, but I just knew from the sudden discussion of it that having retreated from home to this and then gone to that point and then suddenly gone to a hospital with a exclamation point and fireworks and lying there dying from no apparent reasons or causes and so forth, that obviously there was a withhold there. And that would have taken enough off the edge of it, don't you see? Because I knew that any situation like that, no matter how heroic it appears, must have been terribly hard to maintain. That – situation like that is so unnatural, you see? Well, look at how hard somebody'd have to work at it to put it all together this way. And it's just like any other complex situation, you touch one corner of the house of cards and down it'll come. Well, that's the good point to touch.

Some stranger saying to the person, you know, "What doesn't your family know about?"

The girl might have opened up, "Well, they don't know I had this affair with Bill," and so forth, "and that I'm enceinte." And then all of a sudden it felt much better, don't you see? And says, "What am I lying here dying for?" you know, and got out of bed. [laughter]

Because people – people look at the heroicness of the condition, they always add it up that it must be an heroic comparable action, and it's not. It might be very complex, the reasons they're there, but the very complexity makes it untenably hard to hold on to. No! It – a mad-man down here in an asylum, he has a hell of a time. Poor fellow must work day and night, staying in there. He just must work overtime! You can see him, "Now I will be ferocious," you know? The point of entrance on the thing. It's just, actually, the same points I've been talking to you about. You get into communication with him and you ask him what's sensible, see, or you ask him what he's done or ask him what he's withholding. And you'll just see it crack up in front of your eyes.

And that's actually the magic of the world of auditing. That's the magic that can be done with auditing. And you get the long grind situation. It looks like a long grind to you, because you say, "What have you done?"

"I've murdered the local vicar." [laughter]

And you're stopped right there; where do you go from there? You have no responsibility, you have no nothing, and so forth. So, recently, we have developed ways of handling these "no-responsibility." It's actually a new development, and compartmented them out so they're much more easily handled.

Well, I wish you lots of luck with it, but when I ask you to get some withholds off somebody or get some overts off somebody or raise somebody's cause level, now, at least, you know what I am talking about.

Thank you.

Male voice: Thank you.

DISSEMINATION

A lecture given on 7 July 1964

Thank you.

Have to look you over, see what's happening to you. Got to keep check on you. Isn't everybody that can read off seventy or eighty cases in the breath of an eye.

What's the date?

Audience: Seventh of July.

Seven July AD 14, Saint Hill Special Briefing Course and a lecture on something I haven't found out what yet.

Little piece of news here first. It's quite interesting Scientology in its impact and its effectiveness – fantastic effectiveness at lower levels. Only trouble is as we who are accustomed to it are so seldom – well, you might say, driven to a total simplicity that we don't always see its effectiveness at a lower level, you know? We say, well, absolutely this thing has to be far more complex in order to do something for somebody. And well, let's do something a little more skilled, let's get some auditing in at a good professional level, you see, and so forth.

And as you might have heard and which you saw the evidence of, I went to a circus on the invitation of its management and photographed the various acts in the circus itself, and so forth. And these photographs, by the way, I'm not quite sure what their disposition is, but they've already been swept into the torrent of publications and publicity, and I had to part with about thirty of them, with shaking hands for fear of what might happen to them for reproduction in a paper on the south coast. A one-time reproduction, and of course, those are transparencies so they have to come back to me, but of course, they're the only copy there is, you know, and all that somebody would have to do is, taking them out of the cover glasses, is slightly scratch one and that would be the end of that as a picture, you see?

But already, why, they've started into the torrents of publicity and last night, by the way, we gave a smashing show, absolutely smashing. The circus, you know, is noted for showmanship. And so we out-showmanned the circus. Always count on Ron, you know. [laughter] And we didn't take that little screen you saw them on, you see? I took – and there are also nearly a hundred additional pictures that we had. And we hung up a twelve by twelve white sheet that we had to sew up with our own little fist, for a screen, making a twelve by twelve screen.

Now, twelve by twelve doesn't sound very large to you at first glance but that is an awfully big screen. That's actually the vertical, I think, is slightly greater than the Technirama

or something screens. I don't know what those are but it certainly looks so. And this hung on uprights in the ring last night, over at the side of the ring, of course made an elephant as big as an elephant. And it made a performer anything up to five or ten times his normal size. And Reg's beautiful Rollei projector there, and boy, it threw that picture out in that dark tent like mad. We gave them a party actually, having shot all their pictures and everything, why, we ordered a bunch of beer to be delivered up there by Tyler's and so forth. And after their show was all over, you see, why, we gave them a show, see?

And it was terrifically acceptable to them but actually, show or no show, drinks or no drinks, these people had been becoming more and more and more friendly. We practically own the circus. [laughter] And even the animals smiling, you know? The elephant man there, he's got quite a sense of humor. He keeps putting an elephant over on top of me every time I start shooting his act. Elephant will sweep in right dead close to where I'm sitting, you know. The other night, why, he popped a whip in front of my face. I don't know, not more than an inch or two away from my cheek. You know? Of course, they're experts at this sort of thing. See if I'd blink. And I just grinned at him, you know?

But this has been, actually, a very amusing experience in numerous lines. And these people of course are quite accustomed to high-class black and white photography and – because that's professional theater photography it's some – one of the glossiest of photographic fields. So anyway, this beautiful bunch of transparencies and so forth – thrown up there on the other edge of the ring, you see, elephants as big as elephants and so forth, and boy, these people really enjoyed themselves, you know, naturally, as a picture of their own acts and that sort of thing. And we really gave them a good time.

But the point is – little numerous – numerous little things happened. One of them you'd be very interested in – couple of weeks ago, when we first started this – it isn't I haven't been working on this for two weeks, but – totally, don't you see, but we've managed to get a couple of evenings off and go and – about three, by the way – and go tearing up there, you know, and wherever the circus is playing. It's playing in this radius and it's within about a forty-five minute drive of us or something like that at any given night. You see, even though it's changing locations. And they had just been through an awful jump because the grounds they had, had suddenly been denied them and the council had found that the man who was loaning the grounds – renting the grounds to the circus had a clause in his rental of the grounds from the council that he must not sublet it. So the council forbade the circus appearing on its own grounds. And at two o'clock on a Sunday dawning, why they were out there with flashlights and the chief of police and the mayor and everybody else looking over ground – for new ground to put the circus on.

Well, this made a bit of a ripple – so they attracted a fantastic quantity of press. And here was a council turning down a circus in an area but actually they did them a tremendous favor. They put this circus up on top of a knoll, and you come down on one of these MI type highways from about three, four different directions and over there, miles, visible for miles, is this big top sitting up there on top of this knoll, see? And boy, they had that thing stuffed to the rafters yesterday. You couldn't actually hear yourself think much less even hear a camera click or anything like that, with the kids and the cheers and hurrahs. And you talk about enthusiasm, man, it was there!

But anyhow, you'd have thought this crowd would be pretty dogged-out with all this experience and they weren't a bit, were they? They just, right on their toes and so forth. And they gave us a big send-off. But the elephant man, couple or three weeks ago, when we first started this, right away got ahold of me just before his act – and he was in the elephant tent there, a bull tent – and he said, "You know," he said, "I have a terrific swelling on my knee." And rolled up his trouser leg to show us. And it was. It was huge! Thing was as big as a softball. And he used to be a tumbler and it's Ivor Rosair, he's one of the last remaining members of a Rosair family. The circuses go by families and it's very traditional, and so forth.

And this Sir Robert Bailey's – well, that's Sir Robert Fossett's Circus, is the name of it and it's run by Captain Bailey Fossett. And the place is absolutely drowned in Fossetts. Everywhere you look there's Fossetts. A couple of girls last night – I was busy shooting some shots of one kind or another and I'd pass by. Of course, they double in brass, you see, a little circus and you'll see this girl up in all of the aura of a performer doing a death-defying stunt – and no kidding, it is! It's good. Their acts are terrific, you see? Nothing corny about them. The next thing you know, why, she's down there selling ice cream, you know? And everybody turns to, to knock the big top down, including the manager and the owner, you know – just everybody. And they put it all up again and take it all down and everybody has got his part, you know? Terrific circus organization.

But anyway, this fellow says that he had this terrific swelling on his knee and it was worrying him a great deal, and I don't know quite where he got the idea, since we hadn't introduced ourselves in any way, where we quite got – where he quite got the idea that I could do anything about this, you know? But he was leaning on me pretty heavy to do something about this – the demand was definitely there. [laughter] So I showed him – I showed him how to do a Touch Assist on it, told him to remember to touch both knees and I didn't give him a "look at it," I just gave him "feel that," you see? And now, "just feel your finger on one knee and then feel your finger on the other knee and you do that."

He says, "Well, at night," he says, "I can't even go to sleep, uh – it – it hurts so bad." And he's been to hospital, he's had specialists and medicos on it, and so forth. And I think they were going to remove all the ligaments in his brain at one time or something of the sort. [laughter]

And anyway, he's pretty – pretty pressury on the thing. So I told him how to do it and I said, "Make sure you do that and you don't have to do it very long and just do it every night before you go to sleep. Sit down on the edge of the bed and do this," you see. Well, I didn't expect he would, because the cue had already sounded. And the elephants had heard the cue but he was so interested talking to me about his knee that he had missed his own cue and the elephants more or less picked him up, you know, and took him along. So there he was, going along there, restoring the bandage and getting his pants leg down and so forth and the elephants shoving him on, you know, toward the big top.

So we thought, well, that's the last of that. You very often give somebody how to do a Touch Assist and they forget about it, you know and they think something or other. We pulled up there yesterday – of course, we've gotten very friendly with Ivor since – and we pulled up there yesterday and who's there but Ivor, see, he's all dressed up, he's ready to go on. And this

guy, by the way, is one of the biggest elephant trainers and that sort of thing in England. And he was out there, and he was talking very cheerfully and so forth and he said, "Say!" he said, "I want to show you something," you know? And he pressed his pants together against his knee, right knee, left knee, same size. Swelling gone. "Yeah," he said, "I've been doing it." He said, "Yeah, of course, why not?" He said, "Either you're crazy or I'm crazy!" he says, "but it works!" [laughter]

So last night – last night, after the show, why, I was developing a practice on business consultation and on personal problems. And I've got a practice moving around the country, two or three different locations a week and so forth, at this very minute. And somebody who says he can't find anybody to process or get any results with Scientology and so forth, sometimes puzzles me. Puzzles me. Because actually, I've never been able to lift me head anyplace in the world without developing a practice. I don't even ask for a practice and I've got one, you know? I've got an old sign, I have to show you some day. I think it says, "Esha mak hlopi isangoma," which means something on the order of "the white witch doctor." And it gives my name, in script, and then says that I'm a white witch doctor in, I'm not sure, it's one of the Bantu tongues; I think it's probably Zulu.

And so anyway, I had a nice practice there. But I'm careful not to work at it, you know? I actually have to be very careful not to work at it. You turn around and the next thing you know, you got four or five guys standing outside the door and they've got something going on. And then they actually don't ask for anything very heroic. They don't expect any results and they're absolutely flabbergasted. You do something for them, just do something for them. That's the primary note. Somebody asks you for help, why, do something for them you know, tell them something.

Fellow was saying to me last night that he got fainting fits. And he says, "You just show up at the door and they're all disappeared now," he says, "but I was having fainting fits just before you came." I was talking to him in the arena after the show. And I say, "Well, all right, I..." What can you do for somebody with a fainting fit, you know? Well, I'd just got through giving the show and so forth, and my wits were not in a very grooved-in condition, you know, I'd just given an extemporaneous performance on the circus, to circus performers, you know? And you don't think that isn't tough, try it sometime! And of course, the lantern slide went out as a medium of entertainment some years ago, you know? And to suddenly whip up all this old technology, you see and dream it up and talk to circus people about the circus, you know, you don't know whether you're talking to a pedestal or a drum, you know? You have to call all their names, you know, as pictures of them appear, maybe you got them wrong or backwards, you know; you got no list. And it's a bit of a – bit of pressure. All of a sudden somebody says to you, "I have fainting fits," you know? [laughter]

So, Ronnie just into the other harness, you know, zip-zip – presto chango. "Well, now, I think if you'll look back on it, you'll find some – that you've done something that you thought you shouldn't have done every time just before you'll have one of these fits." And he wanders around about this, thinking about this. And of course, what did I give him, you see? Obviously there must be some O/W mixed up in it. That's just one off the cuff, you know? And he thought that over for a while, and he wasn't quite sure about this and so forth and he hadn't digested it yet. Now, he'll go off and he'll figure that one out, see? And he'll at least

have something to do. Don't you see, when he has a fainting fit, he'll say, "I wonder what I've done that I feel guilty about." And he'll think, "Oh, yes. Oh, yes. You know, I stepped on this," and he'll get rid of a couple of overts. And that's just – it doesn't matter whether that was the fainting fit or not, the fainting fit will tend to change at that moment, see? After he's done this two or three times he might also cease to have fainting fits, don't you see?

But the point is, this is a – this is a hunt-and-punch type of practice. You know, it's just off the cuff. And you better develop a facility of how to do that. Somebody finds out you're a Scientologist and that you're in this field and that sort of thing. And I don't go... The funny part of it is I don't know how you handle it, but I personally never – I never tell anybody anything. I just never tell anybody anything.

Of course, I have the slight advantage occasionally, I have a press agent circulating around unbeknownst to me, you know, driving in a practice on me, and so forth, like Reg probably was. And I don't know that Reg was doing this. But he might have been doing it. Naw, he's – has nothing to do with it. Because it happens to me anyplace I go. And as far as these fellows were concerned, why, I was just a photographer that was taking pictures and I proved it to them with the show, see? Must be a pro, look at the show, you know?

Very funny part about it, the only person that was really rattled at the circus was a young photographer up there from one of the local papers. He blew in there with his flash gun and Jap camera. And they all carry a little Yashimat or something like this, camera, flash gun. He blew in there and he says, "Uh – you from the press?"

And I said, "No." I said, "American *Magazine* features," you know? [laughter] And it's true enough you know.

"Oh!" he says. "The English small circus. Hm." You know, bored you know, like that and he say – I introduced myself. And he said, "What are you shooting there?" And he looks and he sees it's a Rollei, and he's shooting a Japanese version of it, see? Well, that's a little point – and he says something about, "What are you shooting there?"

And I said, "Well, I don't have any black and white, I'm shooting only color."

"Oh." Eyes go round – absolutely black tent, you see, impossible to shoot color. And he says, "There are a couple of other photographers around there – been around – a lot of photographers around this act." Of course, that was Reg and Bonwick standing over there, [laughter] my cameras ready, so forth. And I said, "Yes." I said, "We're a team working on it," you know? So he starts to ask me for what are the pictures in the place, you know, and I pointed out this picture and that picture to him and he went and took them.

My respect for him went up, however – the comedy horse got loose amongst a whole mass of children. The comedy horse, that – two men occupy it you know, and it's up there in the stands, and these kids are absolutely mobbing this comedy horse, you know? And I slid around and jumped up on a bench to get a shot of this, and just before I fired with a telephoto – which stacked it all up, you see – just before I fired with a telephoto there was a flash on it. I don't know how this boy got a picture. I don't know how he dematerialized on one side of the ring and rematerialized on the other side of the ring, but he rematerialized right in the midst of these kids and right in the midst of the comedy horse. I don't know how he ever got a

picture of it – he must have been far too close up, or he was running a hundred-degree-wide wide-angle camera, but there he was and he came tearing out of there and he waved his hand to me. He says, "I got it, I got it!" and off – he's gone, he had another appointment, somebody was having a fire someplace he had to shoot, you know? [laughter]

But my respect for him went up. I hadn't ever seen anybody dematerialize and rematerialize. Press boys are very good at that, you know, they have to be very quick, they have to be very quick on the draw. It's an odd skill. And if you don't believe it, sometime just pack a camera down the street and spot some pictures. And you'll find out you're usually spotting the pictures twenty minutes after you've seen them at first and then you cut the comm lag down. Actually, this type of thing needs drills, like we have in Scientology.

But putting a practice together has always been a mystery to me, how anybody could miss. It isn't because I'm me or because of my name, because very often I will appear in some entirely different guise, you know? Like I'm a motorcycle enthusiast or something like that – I got a practice, you know? I'm a photographer – I've got a practice, you know? It doesn't matter how I pull the mask over me face, it's – I wind up with a practice. And one that could be, just with a small amount of pressure, built right straight on up, don't you see? Maybe it's because everybody is trying to build a practice the hard way. Somebody says, "I've got a headache," and you say, "My auditing rates are so-and-so," and they say, "What's auditing?" you know? I'd say that would be the wrong way to go about it. I'd say that what you do is just on a hunt-and-punch basis get a half-a-dozen cases here or there and so forth – do something here or there and so forth, and you probably build it up to a practice that you could charge money for.

You see, having a practice, and a practice that you can charge some money for and a practice that you could charge a lot of money for are just a gradient scale. That's all it is. And if you don't start the one practice, you'll never get into the other two.

I've been almost ashamed of myself, someday – sometimes, after I've been in an area for a while, the amounts of money – the amounts of money that get pushed in my direction – rather fantastic sums of money. They start going up to the degree that I won't, you know, go into professional practice. You know, they start putting the pressure on it, you know. And every now and then I had to raise my rates from two hundred and fifty dollars an hour – that's too little. Two hundred and fifty dollars an hour is too little. And those rates were put on my auditing for only – for one reason and that was to stop – not have to audit, see? At five hundred dollars an hour, that's fairly safe. You only get an occasional once-in-a-blue-moon bid on something like that. But two hundred and fifty dollars an hour, that's too cheap.

But of course, now, we're talking about me and my – in conjunction with my name. Well, what would I, operating as nobody at all, just an anonymity or obviously somebody involved with some other profession, well, how fast would it build up to that? Actually, it'd build up to the same figure. There's no difference. Because I'd get the same practice, start in the same way, move up in the same gradients. The only thing an auditor would really have to solve is what does he do for an income while he's building a practice? And if he hasn't got a bunch of cash in the bank to relax on or something during this period of time well, what does he do for income during that period of time, that's all. Because there's going to be a lag period

of time there, depending on how clever he is and how fast he's off the mark, and so forth. There's going to be a short period there when he isn't making any money. And a period could probably go, with me, from a week, to somebody else – three, four, five months, you see? And some auditors play it backwards. They set out and use what capital they've got, until they get a practice, see? But they never really start their practice, don't you see. They just live on what money they've got, until the practice suddenly mysteriously materializes someplace or other.

Well, that isn't the way you do it, you actually shouldn't lean on any capital, you get yourself a bit of sort of income, if you're starting in in an area or something like that, that puts you in communication and contact with people. Jobs and having something to do and that sort of thing – very useful in getting you in contact with people. Not in any little small office. If I had to work in a small office and I was trying to build a practice, I certainly would not depend on the small office in which to build a practice. I would go out and join some social clubs. I would join some very numerous social clubs, you know, something that's got *lots* of people in it, you know? Motorcycle racing clubs or debating societies or cooking school – I'd do something desperate. I'd just get in touch with people. And I'd give a few people a little advice.

But usually you don't have to give them any advice, they come and ask you for advice. They just listen to you talk, that's all. And you seem to know your business. You'd be surprised how Scientology communicates across a space that has nothing to do with processing. It's the most amazing thing you ever had anything to do with. There was a Navy captain, who was – had been flying back and forth on NATO business and I happened to get into – this was some years ago, into the bottom of a... They used to have these Stratocruisers that had a huge bar, that – in the lower part of the body, and so forth. And they used to fly back and forth across the Atlantic – old fan jobs. The days of the Atlantic barons and so forth. These were what they called the pilots of those old fan jobs. Took them seventeen hours to cross the Atlantic or something like that.

Anyway, I was sitting down there with this Navy captain, and he was pumping me about something or other or hammering or pounding about something or other, and I was trying to talk to him on the subject of business reorganization or something like this. It was very banal. All of a sudden a guy sitting on the circular seat that was several feet away from me, he all of a sudden says to me, "Um. Say," he says, leaning over, "do you have some kind of a philosophy of life or something of the sort?" He said, "You seem to know what you're talking about." He said – you know, he was very puzzled. He was very puzzled. He wasn't hearing words that were different, you see, but he was hearing thoughts that made sense. Of course, he had no business overhearing this conversation anyhow, you see? But we weren't even talking about Scientology and here was this bird over there. And I said, "Yes, as a matter fact, that's Scientology." "Oh?" He says, "Scientology?" Of course, I just handed him a Central Organization card and told him to write in for a book or something like that. He was very interested, he put it in his pocket and so on.

I never fail to get on an aircraft without changing the life of at least one person on it. It's almost impossible. I'd have to be sound asleep or under sedatives, you know? I find – and my point of view is why I don't pay any attention to dissemination or that – the amount of attention I should pay to dissemination, perhaps, because it's not a point I have any trouble

with, you see? Of course, I'd be terribly interested in this point, if I had a lot of trouble with it – and I don't. And I imagine a lot of Scientologists find this a lack, and are upset a little bit about it. That's why I'm talking to you about it now, see?

But it's not a problem with me and it's not a problem with me because I don't make it a problem. I'm actually not particularly worried about it.

Name and reputation have nothing much to do with it, and so on, nothing. They can even know you as famous in some other line, and you're still there, you see? You don't have to build a name for yourself, you know, it's balderdash. Because a lot of people in the world know my name – just in conjunction with writing, and that sort of thing. But I've found very routinely, I could call myself Joe Blitz, and it just wouldn't make a bit of difference. It's what you can do that counts, don't you see? It's somebody trying to break into the field of writing – let's get an analogy going on it – somebody can break into the field of writing and he always says, "Well, if I had a good name, you see, of course, I could immediately get past the editor, you know? And the editor would buy my stuff. And it's because I don't have a name," and that sort of thing. Well, I don't know, all of my life I've been signing things Joe Blitz, you know? Rene Lafayette. Ken Martin. Kurt von Raachen, you see? Names. All kinds of names. Winchester Remington Colt. [laughter]

And those things don't go to an editor as, "L. Ron Hubbard is now sending you a manuscript which is written by a pseudonym Winchester Remington Colt," see? It isn't even identifiable as manuscript form. It goes in, they buy it. The only time I have any trouble is give it to an agent or something like that, and he buries it underneath a bunch of other manuscripts, and nobody reads it. About the only trouble I ever had in the old days. I stopped using agents. They have usefulness and they have uselessness. They're liable to do you in. They're liable to send a bunch of stories that you've given the agent to sell around to the editor that's already had them, you see? And then he wonders what on earth is coming off. Then he wonders if the stories you're sending him haven't been rejected by somebody else, don't you see? And he gets all confused. So I found it was far better just to write "Winchester Remington Colt." Sometimes you have trouble cashing the checks. Once in a while you have to send the check back to the accounting department and say, "Please make this out to L. Ron Hubbard, so I can get it in my bank account."

But name – practically nothing whatsoever to do with it. Name is mostly valuable to the editor. Well, a science fiction story signed "L. Ron Hubbard" can usually kick a science fiction circulation up something on the order of twenty to eighty thousands, additional copies, you see, on the stands. Can be counted on to do so. So he's interested in that, you see? And sounds as if I wrote nothing but science fiction. But one of the reasons they pay you high rates in some publication fields and so forth is just because you kick their circulation up, see? And then you can bargain. Now, there's a name, there's a name, but that's what? That's not whether or not you got a story sold, that's just whether or not you got – whether or not you got more money for it.

And you can stand around and argue with those guys and they finally cry and moan. You'd think you were taking their last knucklebone out of them in a painful way, you know? And "Yeah, my God, man, I can't pay you ten cents a word, I can't do it, it shoots my budget.

That – that ruins my budget for the next three months!" And I usually look at them and yawn cavernously and then say, "Well, why don't you get another budget?" The guy breaks down and says, "Well, all right." And the only reason he would be in that position is he wants to kick his circulation. He isn't telling me what happened. I know very well what happened. He's under the gun from the managing editor. The managing editor says, "Son, I hate to call it to your attention, because body odor and other things of this character and halitosis are not things that are discussed very personally or out in the open, but your circulation has dropped lately. You have circulation falling."

Well, the guy says, "How do I get my circulation up?" Obviously the only way he can get his circulation up is reach for a fast name that'll sell some more issues, that's familiar to the public or something like this. He can do something spectacular with the subject matter, don't you see? "Pope's sex life revealed," you know? [laughter]

But frankly, frankly, that is not – that's not really – that's part of it, but it's not as reliable – that's not as reliable as maybe putting a photograph by Steichen or something on the front page, don't you see and the public sees this thing, and this thing is going to be full of these things or you know, something like this. Or, here is a new novel by Pearl Buck, you know, something like this. Bang, you know, and his circulation goes *brrrrmmm!* See? And then he is now permitted to drink cocktails at the cocktail party three steps closer to the managing editor, you see, in their order of rank. And his circulation is back up.

So that's his problem, how well known you are is his problem. And it regulates to some degree, but only to some degree, how much money you'll get. But that's all it regulates. It doesn't regulate how much volume you do. Quite the contrary, you very often find that a famous name bars volume, in the field of the arts, but wouldn't necessarily in processing. I was just giving you an example, "You've shot my budget to pieces for the next three months."

I had some fellow come around to me one time and said, "You mean you would have sold us – you would have sold us some – some articles?"

And I said, "Yes, I would have sold you some articles."

He said, "My God." He said, "I – I never thought – I – I just – just never dreamed that – that – that you would. So we never ask you." You run into that situation once in a blue moon, see. "I – I just never dreamed that you would process me, you know?" So a name can stand as a liability – can stand as a big liability. Everybody knows you wouldn't process them because they're so unimportant and you're so important, you see?

They can see you some time, getting the janitor to put down his mop pail and you stand him back against the corner of the thing and you're standing there running a reach and withdraw process on him, they would get over the idea that you would – were very selective and erudite about who you processed or when you processed. But the idea here is simply that you can go at it; I'm sure you could invent ways to go at it wrong and that you don't have to try very hard to go at it right. That's the whole idea, you see? You probably have to work at it accumulating a practice or getting your name up in Scientology. Now, some of you, many of you, don't have the problems of gaining a practice, but always sooner or later a Scientologist – whether he's working in an organization or no matter where he's working – runs into this problem of, accumulation of a practice. He very often doesn't know what to do with it.

Central Organization, the wrong thing to do with it is to pick it up and do it. You know, carry on an outside practice. That is actually the wrong way to go about it. For about eight reasons, it's the wrong way to go about it. You become suspect from your fellow staff members and everybody thinks you must be scanting your job, if you're processing outside, and so forth. Well, you can always make some handy, jim-dandy arrangement with the Director of Processing or somebody in the organization, don't you see, yeah, you bring people in and process them and so forth, and you know that practice area so you know who can stand traffic and who can't stand traffic. Pour your practice on into the Central Organization. Just make sure, however, that your neck isn't way out so that some kid that just came out of the Academy and had a near-failing grade isn't suddenly given the pc who is looking to you for help, don't you see?

But you could make all kinds of wild arrangements in an organization and it'd be a very knuckleheaded Assoc Sec who wouldn't listen to them. He'd have to be awful knuckle-headed. You say, "I've got kind of – there's five or six people around that I process at occasionally, is it all right if I keep this up?"

"Well, do you do it for nothing?"

"No, they give me some money." And you say, "Well, why don't you – you know – I don't want to be making this money outside the organization," and that sort of thing, "because this is nonsense, this is probably cutting the organization's throat."

Well, work something out, see. Work something out. And these people got to be processed, why, process them on organization time. He probably even could work it out so that they wouldn't even be charged full organizational rates. You get the idea? These things are very flexible. Far more flexible than you could imagine. The idea is of course, after you've accumulated the trust of somebody, you don't want to see that trust betrayed. And you want to follow this thing through, well, bring some hammer and pound and pressure to bear to make sure that it gets followed through.

Now, if you go on the idea that life is just a dream, and that we pass through life on a little light cloud and really nothing is ever any work and so forth, I don't think you're talking about a human being, I think you're talking about a rock – a boulder or something like this. You're not talking about a human being. Anything is trouble, man, just it's – anything is trouble. You start doing something, you're in trouble. You know? There is no easy way to do anything, see? You keep looking for the easy way to do it, you're a fool. There is no easy way to do things.

There are some ways that are not as hard as others. And you look over what it takes to maintain yourself in the realm and rank of professional competence in any particular field and you'll just be amazed. Somehow or another, not in... I – it took me about fifty hours to shoot these circus pictures. Fifty working hours. And that includes all visits, all transport, all assembly of this and that, and so forth. And I had to somehow or other take this out of my Scientology working day. I won't say that my Scientology working day hasn't suffered somewhat in the last couple of weeks, because you can't take fifty hours of work out of somebody's work week without something else not getting done, you see? But nevertheless, in view of the fact

that my working day is seven days a week and so forth, I figure out I have stacked myself up a bit of backlog, don't you see, so forth. But there's – I'm just giving you an idea here.

I haven't been working on this exclusively, far from it. A matter of fact, during the same period of time I've probably saved the bacon of Central Organizations, doubled their income, handled this line, handled that line, done an awful lot of other things, too, don't you see?

But let's just look at this other thing, just from a standpoint of professional competence. I don't know if you think it's any work, as far as physical labor is concerned, to pack a somewhat heavy camera and throw yourself into all kinds of wild corkscrew attitudes, and wrapping yourself around – around – around tent poles and that sort of thing, and leaping out of the way of – two or three times I've been saved from hospitalization and so forth, basically trying to keep from getting in the road of the performers and so forth.

But even then, be so intent on a picture or something like that that a ring boy would grab me by the shoulder just in the nick of time to get me out of the road. I almost got run over by the pony carts. I'd never get – live that down, don't you see? It wasn't that it'd hurt, it was inappropriate. See, it was *déclassé*. Bitten by a lion, well yes, you could live up to that type of injury, but not being run over by a Shetland pony cart. [laughter] And yet I'm sure that it would have hurt just as much.

But up, down, back and forth and an empty camera and pegging back over, and so forth, and this, that and the other thing and talking to this one and that one and corkscrewing into this position and that position and here, there and up and down and back and forth and around and so forth. Why, if – there really aren't very many people who work that hard. That's why they don't get pictures. You see? I mean, the difference is somebody else wouldn't work that hard.

So well, he's then not a – he can't come up to pro standards. Why? He won't work that hard. Simple. It's hard work. See? You don't have to look on it as hard work, but it's certainly active, don't you see? And you'll find this obtains in any field.

One of the reasons I went about studying photography is a parallel line for you. I don't need any excuse or apology for having done so, but restudying photography after all these years, I'm about to rewrite all your courses from the word go, so the best thing to do is to take a full course in another extra field, don't you see – that has nothing whatsoever to do with what we're doing – and how does that put together, and what trouble does a student run into and all the rest of this sort of thing.

I'm coming on down the line, finishing this up, having lagged it for three years, having had no reason to do it. Now, finishing it up in about an eighth the time anybody is supposed to, practically every mail is coming back here with one of its examination papers in it, don't you see? And of course, will be finished up in record time. Then I'll know how a course like that should be run, know what a student objects to in a course, know how to study it, what the shortcomings of it are, know all this sort of thing. And nevertheless this is again, hard work. You can't just limply sit there and say, "Well, isn't it interesting that cameras have lens covers, you know, isn't it interesting." No, brother, you have to say, "If you use a camera, and there's several different ways you can use shutters on a camera, and one of them is to remove the lens

cap, isn't that interesting? That's the oldest shutter there is. What do you know about that?" you see? You have to invest some of yourself in it. Even if only to that degree.

Then you say – then you say, "Well, you know, if I ever found myself..." a little imagination, see, "if I ever found myself out there and my shutter went busted wide open or I couldn't get the camera to speed and I didn't know what the speed was, I could probably stop the aperture way down and put some kind of lens cap over the front of the thing and lift the lens cap and get the exposure. As long as I could have a second or a half a second in which to accomplish this operation, I could probably get the picture, you see? Makes a good basic photographer out of you. You know, a lens cap goes over the front of the thing; it was used by old-time photographers in order to get the exposure when they didn't have any shutters. That's the datum in the course, see?

All right, what are you going to do with that datum? Well, it's – if it's just a running river of data that doesn't have anything to do with anybody and doesn't apply to anything, you haven't invested any of yourself in it, see? You've got to say, "Well, what is this datum? What can I do with this datum? What's it about this?"

For instance, I was reading about composition of portrait lighting. Portrait lighting – wow, you say, what's a – kind of a subject is this? Well, it's a staggering subject, it's a sufficiently staggering subject in the first place that hardly anybody ever shoots a portrait, and that of all the samples gotten from all of the portrait photographers in England not one of them passed muster here a few weeks ago – a few months ago.

I looked over all of their samples. They hadn't made the grade. They weren't up to Sunset Boulevard or Park Avenue photography standards and this was the whole field, you understand? They've lagged a little bit behind. Now, it's very odd to find an English professional lagging behind in any particular field, but that's because the public makes no demand on him, you see? But this is a field that is one of these fantastic fields. I mean, the portrait photographer that can take a real portrait, you know? He almost can name his price, you see. The best paid fields are portrait and fashion.

So you sure know something about lighting. Well, one of the reasons why nobody ever gets any portraits, they don't know anything about the lighting. This is one of the wildest subjects I think I ever tangled with. I didn't know there was that much to it, see? So, well, naturally, if you're going to take somebody's picture, a picture of somebody's face, you've got to have some light on it, you know? That's the simple statement.

Well, it's just about as a simple a statement as describing the entirety of atomic physics as something that is used to make atomic bombs. Now, we've described the whole field of atomic physics, don't you see, in that brief statement. Well, it doesn't describe it. Because this is a wild subject. I was involved with it last night for a short time. I'm studying this course just before I go to sleep. And all of a sudden realized everything they were talking about in this particular section had no application to any portrait I would ever take. I wouldn't take a black-and-white portrait if I could possibly avoid it. I wouldn't shoot a black-and-white picture if I could avoid it.

This is the day of color. And the thing to do is be in the vanguard, not in the rear guard. And black and white is a terrifically complex technique, but who'd ever buy a black-

and-white portrait of themselves if they could get a color portrait of themselves just as easy? That – the prices that you get for portraits, you might as well give him one. See, it isn't the finishing or the materials that make the portrait sitting expensive or inexpensive, it's what the traffic will bear. That's how the – that's how the thing is calculated on its pricing. What will the traffic bear? Well, what the traffic bears is greatly superior to anything that color materials would cost you.

This is a fantastic – a fantastic area, and I suddenly realized everything they're describing here in the way of studio equipment and that sort of thing would have to be converted. Because there is no field of color portrait photography. Left me in the middle of the lesson going "Uh?" you know? Then I realized I've got to go ahead and learn black-and-white color portrait lighting in order to know how to convert it. Well, it didn't say to do any of that in the text, did it? They didn't tell you to invest anything of yourself in this subject. It says you're just supposed to put the fill here, supposed to put the main light here, you're going to put the hair light there, and you're going to put the – a small spot over here in order to bring up the hands and you're going to put a headscreens over here in order to take out the ungainly large ear of the person. That's all you have to know. And "Well, all right, *aar-riigg-hhtt, ara-ara-ara-eah*, and we get down and we'll pass the examination *nyah-nyah*."

One day you would have been setting up and you suddenly would have realized, "Wait a minute, I'm shooting color. I don't shoot black and white. What am I doing with thirty-five hundred Kelvin? What am I doing with a photoflood 2?" Well, you're not doing anything with a photoflood 2 because the day they make what is laughingly called indoor color film into a color film, I want to hear about it. Because I don't think the day has arrived. There are two brands of color film. They're what's called "outdoor" color film or "sunlight" color film and there's "indoor" color film or "tungsten" color film. And tungsten color film has a certain adequacy, I'm sure, and some photographers try to shoot inside color film by putting a blue lens cap on their – or a little blue lens on their filter and make it do somehow.

But I notice oddly enough they don't get color pictures and I always thought the point in taking pictures was to get a picture. I know that's naive. But all I'm making here, not to drag you off into those ramifications, is it here required the tremendous investment of self in the study of the thing. What was I going to do with this material I was studying? I wake up in the middle of this thing... Of course, I'm happy as a clam to know all about these areas and angles and I'm very happy to know all about black-and-white lighting and so forth. But none of this can be done with the equipment which is advised, because the equipment which is advised is all – would turn your color film into nothing but red fire. And you would have nothing on that color film. The kind of color film I shoot and the day I study a course and change my color film just because they haven't given me the answer, of course, hasn't arrived. See, because color film is something you can't make work anyway. You've got a color film that's working for you, man, don't move off of it.

Well, what happens to portrait lighting? What happens? Well, you can't use any of those types of lights. You have to use the basic setup, but how do you figure out a basic setup? The thirty-five-hundred-Kelvin red light would just make a ruddy mass of red mush on your color film, you see? We can't do anything with it. There are no strobe lights burning fifty-six-hundred-Kelvin daylight color. There are no strobe lights that you could compose

with, see? But I dimly remember sometime somebody or other in a photographic magazine, *Modern Photography*, something like that, that somebody had put out something that had a bulb in it and also had a strobe in it, so that you could compose with the bulb and then when you fired with the strobe you would get the daylight. That sounds awfully roundabout, don't you see, and it might look different, but this was the line I was suddenly shoved off into, a technical problem miles wide. How do you solve that technical problem? Well, you better know all there is to know on the subject which you're studying – not go galloping off into the wild blue yonder just because you have a technical problem not specifically covered. Let's find out the subject we are studying, before we go galloping off. This was no reason then why I should put down portrait lighting as a text, you see, and start maundering and spinning practically on the subject. Well, all right, this is the way you light a portrait, but I'll be taking color portraits. Even if I take a black and white, don't you see, I will first take it in color. I wouldn't shoot a black-and-white negative. Not now. I'm learning better. You take a color negative and convert it to a black-and-white negative, by a secondary step.

Well, what do you do? Well, your best operating procedure is jolly well study what you're studying. You know, not leap out of the airplane with no parachute. Now, when you've got some command of that, why, maybe the dawn will rise and the bells will tinkle-tonk, you see, and you will suddenly have a brilliant clue, because you may not be up against that problem after all. It may be a simple problem. When you finally get through, you may finally discover that there are such things as masking disks of some kind or another that fit, and that you could even convert a photoflood. Or you may find some various other things.

But even though knowing full well you were studying something that is inapplicable to what you will be doing, the best thing to do is to – as far as a formal subject is concerned or the formal study of the subject – is to go on and find out all you can about it from it.

So I'd say the system that you would be operating with is first invest a little bit of yourself in the study. And having done that, study what you're studying even when you find it doesn't apply. If it's there to study, study it, see. And even though you say, well, it doesn't apply to my peculiar, particular problem, well, finish studying it if you're in training, you see. Finish studying it. Even though it doesn't apply to your particular problem. Don't go getting impatient with it and so forth, because you're liable to find out that its principles as you go around the corner, suddenly in some way do apply. But you actually at that stage don't know enough about it to really know whether they apply or not. You may only think they don't apply.

You may be under a misapprehension. Well, the way to get around all that is to go ahead and study what you're studying. Even though it is apparently not applicable to what you are going to apply it to. And then, after you have completed all that, make your adaptations.

So you've got three steps here. Put a little bit of yourself in it. You know, "How am I going to use this stuff?" you see? "How does this apply to me? It says here that a woggaroo is nine feet taller than a whizzabung." Well, that's an interesting datum. What's it got to do with you? What's it got to do with a pc? What's it got to do with anything?

Study actually does you no good whatsoever unless you ask questions like that. All of a sudden you say, "Oh, he means a – he means a hoolagaroo. Oh, uh – oh well, of course,

that's nine feet. Why does he remark on it?" Well, that's just being curious about it, you see? All right, well let's back it up just a little bit and you'll say, "Well, how would I use this datum in handling a case?" See, how would *I* – you that's reading that – how would *I* use this datum in handling a case? How would I apply it? What does it have to do with anything I would be doing? See? That's what I mean, put a little bit of yourself in it, see? What does this have to do with anything I am or will be doing? And you'll be quite electrified sometime that a statement that doesn't have anything to do with the price of fish all of a sudden becomes very intimate and very germane. From just a meaningless string of words, it turns into a very meaningful statement indeed.

One of the reasons why – one of the reasons why people have an awful hard time studying things like engineering, and so forth, is they're not involved with engineering. Students in universities are not involved with engineering; students in medical schools are not involved with healing; people in mental-treatment skills of yesteryear are not involved with mental treatment at the time that they are studying it. So, of course, they come out at the other end with a total unreality on the whole cockeyed thing.

This lays an interesting foundation, don't you see? Because and – why this is bad – the only thing that's bad about this, see, you're not in that position, you are using it. But your – what's bad about this – what's very poor – is that your nonapplication then never brings up what would I do with it, see?

I'll give you the lousiest course, the most horrible course I ever took. I stayed in Washington one hot summer to finish off an awful lot of engineering courses, and so forth, that I needed for credit, you know? People stand around and they say I haven't got any degrees, I haven't got any of this and so forth – they ought to been there that summer, man. I'd much rather been out flying airplanes, because I was having a ball flying airplanes. Instead of that I had to sit in this horrible – they didn't have any air conditioning in Washington and Washington is cool at 95, in most summers, you know? Sitting down there at GW, sweating over this stuff. And one of the courses was materials of construction. I could have cheerfully have choked the guy who ever wrote that textbook. He had the organization facility of an army officer. And my God, brick and concrete, brick and concrete and pebbles and aggregate and the streak characteristic of marble and the tension of steel – were all in the same paragraph. You just couldn't sort it out. Nothing – nothing was ever over here grouped. You didn't start in something, "We are now going to talk about bricks. There are big bricks and little bricks. Bricks are made out of clay," see. "And you take clay and you put them on a paddle and shove them in an oven and you bake them at umphthy-umph degrees for umphthy-umph hours, and when you bring them out, you can sell them for money and they're called bricks," see?

Nothing like this. This book – this textbook, I think, cost about twenty dollars or something like that, of those precious dollars of those days that really bought something, you know? With twenty dollars of today I think you can get a lolly for it. Anyhow, this cockeyed book was about two-and-a-half or three inches thick. And he hadn't classified anything like that. No, bricks and steel and pebbles and marble. And – and every sentence was another dis-related datum. You talk about a walking zone of GPM confusion – this was the worst I ever heard of.

Every sentence, in every paragraph, related to different subjects – and contained many subjects – but every sentence in the paragraph was something which was isolated and different from the paragraph. And with the thermometer bouncing around a hundred, you know, sitting in a roaring hot classroom, you see, trying to walk my way through this – that's why I almost kill reporters who say, "What degrees do you have?" It's just that one. Anyhow, I wasn't using any bricks, see? It wasn't actually how confused the text was – and it was a horrible textbook – the usual gag of the textbook written by the professor, you know, when there are better texts.

I wasn't using any bricks. I wasn't about to do anything with marble. I wasn't about to do anything with Aggregate and I didn't care what the tensile strength of steel was. I wasn't going to steal any. This stuff was blah – who cared? Well, I'd be interested in it right now. I'd be interested in quite a bit of that material now. Well, we're building quite a few buildings around here, and they're built out of various thises and they're built out of thatas, you know, and it'd be very interesting to know what this stuff was and what its genus was and that sort of thing. But I'd now be reading it from a different viewpoint, wouldn't I? I'd be reading it from the viewpoint of "Well, I don't know does this have any application to anything we're doing around here? All right, here's a datum that says, 'Bricks when they're put on a paddle are flipped and pancaked and after that you have *groozergruffs* in them.' That have anything to do with what we're doing? Oh! *Groozergruffs*. I don't know, that must be that – that must be that weird scoop that has the maker's name in it. Hey, what do you know! I think I'll go out and pull that on Mr. Jenner, you know?" You know, look very wise and say, "Be sure you get the *groozergruffs* right side up, you know?"

But I'd probably know what that was for, you know, it's so they won't slip sideways after they're laid or something, you know? I'd probably have some interest in them. But only if I'd invested something of myself in it. Of course, there was nothing to invest in it at that particular time, because I (1) had no slightest intentions of ever doing anything in the field of engineering and (2) wasn't doing any engineering and (3) it had been removed academically as far as possible from the realm of practicality. It couldn't have gotten any further without a spaceship and left the planet, you see?

Well, that makes then a very unreal, a very poor professional. You'd have a very poor professional. Well, it comes from the basis – he must invest some of himself in it. He's got to do it, in other words. I don't know, I could probably sit up there and read that photography course from cover to cover all the way through. True, there's a lot of these things I'm not doing. I'm not suddenly taking a lesson, and so forth, but I am using it. I was clever enough last night – a couple of them, the proprietors of the circus, asked me why I hadn't taken their picture. There was some inference that I should have taken their picture. Well, true enough. And I told them that portraiture was entirely different than candid shooting an act. I could speak with some authority. I'd been studying the living daylights out of it, you see. I said it'd take considerable more equipment, I said it'd take a lot more time and I'd have to catch you some day and I'll come up some day with some equipment and we'll shoot your pictures. And I said, but this is a different field. And they were very impressed with it, but I was on solid ground.

Yeah. I could have laid me a gorgeous egg, you see, because those people would tend to be seen full face and full in close. They're not performers, don't you see? The only thing

you could shoot of them would be a portrait. The only thing that would be worth shooting would be a portrait, don't you see. They aren't doing anything, there is no action they're involved in, except owning and being themselves. So what can you shoot of them but a portrait?

Well, then it'd have to be a sort of a study, wouldn't it? It would depend on its characteristics for their character, or their – their attitude. This portrait would sort of have to reflect this fact, it'd have to tell a little bit of the story. What could you do with it? Well, that's what you could do with it. But right away, when I came back, I was reading there last night before I got me forty winks and I was reading this ... How the hell would you walk into a circus, eighteen pounds of snoots and sixteen – a snoot is something you use in photography, not in their zoo – and big spots with barn doors and headscreens and backscreens and benches – and this is minimal studio photography equipment. I looked this over; how would you go about getting a portrait of these people?

You haven't even got two hundred and twenty volts to work with, see – you haven't even got the voltage. They run on four-forty. I suppose you could take an ordinary bulb and screw it into a reflector, but you wouldn't know how hot that was or what the light was after you've done that. And portraiture requires a fixed setup of fixed and known areas. How would you go about this? And I suddenly got the peculiar notion of how would you go about putting together a portable portrait studio? What would you have to have in order to do this? Wow! It left me completely adrift. I haven't got it licked at all, see? But there's no lack of interest in the subject. I had two people, two very good looking people, standing in front of me, you know? "Well, why haven't you taken our pictures?" you know?

I had to think fast. I had to say, "Well, portraiture. Ha! That's very specialized field of photography. You realize that we've been shooting in the field of action, candid, here, color. But portraiture, that's another field. Takes a long time." Ha! I could speak with authority. Yeah, it does take a long time. I get back and I got a very, very renewed interest. I've been going over portrait lessons and so forth and that sort of thing and I got a very renewed interest in this whole field. What is this, see? All of a sudden some reality dawns on me. I'm not opening up a shop, you see, with a thirty-foot back studio.

It's very funny, you know, you get sold in this course. Every one of these boys is a specialist. They're terrific authorities in the field, they're good boys, you know, good practical men – writing these texts and so forth. And every one of them assumes that you're going to be their kind of photographer, you know? So he gives you all the pressure. This is what you've got to do and this is what you should have and this is the kind of a camera you *will* be using, you see, and it's all intent. And you're from this field of photography to that field of photography, the other field of photography – and you never knew there were so many fields of photography. And when you wind up, you wonder *what* you are, you know? You're not quite sure! You're going to – are you a fashion photographer, are you a this? Actually kind of wind up a mixed bag. We're not going to open up any studio down there on the street and hang out a little sign saying, "Your lifelike portrait finished in five minutes," or something like this, you're not going to do anything stupid like that.

Well, how are you ever going to take any portraits? What are you going to do, have your wife falling all over these light stands in the middle of your... I got enough things to fall

over! You ever notice, in my office, and so forth? People keep bringing me things and giving me things. I have things to test and every once in a while every two or three months, we get very heroic and we move out the tigers and we move out these various things and we find places to put them and all this sort of thing. All we need is to add large spots, small spots, fills, mains, backscreens. This is all we need, you know, just to make life unbearable.

I can hear Suzie now. She's very good at it, but I think she'd blow up. She wouldn't be able to get to a dining room table or bring me a Coke or anything, see? What do you do? Apparently nobody has really solved this one. But probably they have, see? And somewhere down along the line somebody is all of a sudden going to talk... Because I notice there's a future lesson someplace says "Home portraiture." Odd thing for a lesson to be about for professional photographers. He must be talking about some kind of photography you do going around driving around in a car and setting up a – portrait stuff or portable portraiture. Maybe there's a whole book on the subject, see? There's no particular reason to just give up and throw in the sponge, because it can't be done, don't you see? And there is no portable equipment and you know, bog down at this point. You've invested some of yourself in it, you see, and now you've run into this fantastic problem that is undoable. No, well, let's go on and study the thing out to its bitter end, see? And somewhere along that line you're going to find a doability. You'll know more about it from which to evolve your solution.

Solutions are not actually evolved from inspiration. Solutions are evolved from observation and inspection and data. That's what you get solutions from. Observation, inspection, data. Familiarity.

You've got an object, it's object A. I don't care what this object is and you got a problem with relationship to this object. I don't care what it is. This could be a handy, jim-dandy clock that is made in Switzerland and tells how many freckles you'll have in August, you know? It doesn't matter what this thing is. Familiarity is a tremendous factor in this, as you know. So you just touch it and not touch it and touch it and not touch it, for a while. Scientolology has a lot of simple facets, you know?

All of a sudden you say, "Oh, that's what you do with it," you know? You get the idea. "That's what you do with it." Familiarity. Observation. It runs off the barriers which prevent you from observing it – run off on this Reach and Withdraw stuff. But more importantly, you've got – you've got all kinds of data and other things, you can look the thing over. Of course, you can go to another crime of "We will study it for the next five or ten years before we do anything about it." That is equally a crime, don't you see? That's nonsense. That's overstudying. That is not solving it by studying it. Huh-huh. Which I think that some of the boys in some of the fields which preceded us were quite guilty of.

"Well, we will study your case for two years and at the end of that time, we'll find out whether or not we can do anything for you. During that period of time we will charge you sixty dollars a week for your sittings. What's your paycheck, sixty-five? Well, actually, sixty-two-fifty is our charge." Bunch of fakes.

You know that criticism or critique of psychoanalysis, you're probably familiar with the old paper from way back when. That really landed harpoons into those poor psychiatrists down there. "He doesn't know anything about psychoanalysis. He's crazy. He doesn't know

anything. He's *wah-wah-wah...*" They were presented with this thing, this paper, see, on the stand. They just went mad! Boy, that thing must have sunk into them like harpoons fired into whales, you know? Because every line of it is dead-on and dead-true. But it's the very things they don't want anybody to know, you see? And so out of the whole field of Scientology, all psychiatry could pick on was a critique of psychoanalysis.

In other words, they didn't pick on Scientology. They just picked on Scientology's opinion of them. And that was all they found fault with, and it short-circuited their whole... You understand what happened? We wrote a criticism of psychoanalysis, so we wouldn't make similar errors. So when they were dragged up as witnesses by the Laborites down there, and so forth and when they were all squared around, why, they were really going to throw harpoons into us, see. They were going to really fix our clocks and so forth, when as a matter of fact although they did give some other extraneous testimony to this, their attention and all the excitement and heat went on, on our criticism of them, see? They were just trapped, right there, with that. And actually never got off to first base about saying how bad it is. Only thing they could say is, "They don't know anything about psychoanalysis. It's not true, see?" Of course, every line of it is true. And so all they harpooned was our harpooning of them. And I tell you, driving harpoons into harpoons after they have sunk into your midriff is not a good defensive mechanism.

So, the upshot of this is that familiarity, knowledge, and so forth, can be overdone. Some – I've heard of somebody going to school till he's – for eighteen or twenty years to learn how to thread needles or something like that – an overstudy situation. But that would again be because the study must not be developing any familiarity. I should think the thing would short-circuit itself out, if there was a subject there to be studied and if any familiarity could be gained with it. So the shortness of study depends on familiarity acquired. That's why university education takes so long. They don't acquire familiarity with what they're studying.

In many zones they don't, a few of them they do, they take flashlights and go around at night, around in parks, to shine them in cars to study sociology and that gives them familiarity. As a matter of fact, I've often thought it was too familiar. But there are some fields where they do do some looking.

Now, in then a course of approach to the world of gaining understanding, of gaining knowledge, of gaining things, you actually have a necessity to be in contact, to be in touch with, to not fall out of touch with. And as long as you can maintain your familiarity line or channels or approaches or something like this, you will find that your competence will increase. It is only when you crawl off into an ivory tower and so forth – one of the reasons why you find me tearing off into the wild blue horizon whenever I get an opportunity every few years and suddenly hitting some other subject matter, and so forth, is just that. You can become too concentrated on one line of subject matter, you fall out of contact with a line of subject matter which is the basic line of subject matter which we have, which is people. And you can fall out of that, you can get so withdrawn into that, that you never meet any people.

You can overdo this by getting so involved and so in contact with them that it stops being a familiarity, it seems to be a horrible bore. You can overdo this very easily. That is to say, you can throw yourself out into the sticks somewhere and you're not in contact with any-

body who knows anything or does anything and you don't actually operate to improve the situation, don't you see? You don't get anybody in that area studying anything and so forth. And you just keep contacting raw meat and associating with nothing but raw meat, after a while you get kind of overwhelmed. Because it's awful raw.

But if you withdraw to a point where you're in contact with no raw meat whatsoever, you tend to go out of contact with your basic material: how do people operate? Who are people? What do they do? How do they look? How do they feel? How do they act? And then you're liable to get a specialized idea of what raw material is or how it operates or how it should operate or something like this. You're liable to get an odd opinion of it.

So you ought to go look at it once in a while. And you ought to go look and see how people operate and so forth. See if you're getting unreal in any particular line and so forth. Well, I obviously find I'm not getting very unreal. I go out and I apply Scientology I at the very highest. I apply it just as I've told you to apply it; I go out and be pleasant and smile, don't even hang up a shingle or a sign and so forth, and I get a practice. I got one growing and believe me that if I went on contacting that area and those people – and I very probably will – over a period of time without my doing another blasted thing about it, except being nice to them, and when they have a problem give them a piece of advice or tell them something to do or do something for them – the next confounded thing you know, these people are built right on up along the line. They want to know more about this. They want to know more about what's going on.

And so what do you do? You route them into some texts. You give them some books, you tell them to read this or read that or read something of the sort. You don't even have to strain at it, don't you see? You give them a card. Say, "If you order a book from this area for five bob, why, it'll tell you all about it, see?" Something like that. It isn't even difficult, see. It requires no strain. Well, you go on this way and if you are not running it backwards and interfering with yourself, you wind up at the other end with a practice. You just can't help yourself. It's whether or not you can keep yourself busy during this interim period, that is – would be the problem. Wouldn't be the problem – the problem isn't to develop a practice, the problem is to have a little bit of time in which to let a practice develop, don't you see? Buying a little bit of time, the economic world, you buy time with dollars and pounds and rands and things of that sort.

But anyway, there's the – the problem involved in the world is familiarity with the world and the people of the world and so forth, and these people are very far from mean, vicious and ornery bums. There are some that are blinder than others. And you can normally find out that your – what you know and what you're doing works and it's wise and it brings with it a great deal of comfort and straightens a lot of things out and so forth. And then you sort of know that you're doing right and going right and all is well and all of this sort of thing works out. I'd say, as far as developing a practice is concerned, the problem is simply to get over the period of the coffee and cakes while one is forcing itself on you. See? So, if you try to force a practice on yourself or try to speed this up or razzle-dazzle it in some particular line or – you're liable to goof it up, don't you see. You're liable to violate its time factor. See?

You're going to work at it, you know, you're going – you got to keep working at it all the time, but you can't force its development. You can't say this has got to be developed seven times as fast as it is developing or something like this. "Because I need more money next Tuesday" or something like that. That's how you get in the road. But you normally develop a practice anyway.

I'm quite intrigued with this little adventure – a very small adventure, only I've had them many times. I'm not really a creature of ivory towers. This is why we have Scientology. Familiarity with existence. And it – I get into a rebellious frame of mind every once in a while. I don't want to sit at the desk any longer, you know, and be snowed under with the despatches and all this sort of thing, it appears to me to be profitless, something like that. I lose touch with whether or not it's worthwhile, you see? And I go out and in the space of a couple of weeks, of a few visits to a particular area, doing an entirely different thing and without any reason for anybody to be nice to me at all, why, I get – what we're doing works, it's desperately needed, the little light touch that you can hand out, just off the cuff and so forth, makes a better, happier world in the environment you enter. Very magical.

Matter of fact, I feel myself just a little bit overwhelmed because I don't know anything I work less hard on than Scientology in that particular area, see? I worked on Scientology hard at home, but in that area I carefully didn't work on Scientology. And all of a sudden, why, there it comes. Next thing you know, I probably wouldn't be able to do anything about it at all. Why, there is probably the practice – I won't exaggerate – of the whole circus world walking in my direction. There it is. I can do something else for them, and so forth, but gradually, if I keep associating with that zone or area, that's going to walk in more and more.

It happened to me once before in England. I had movie actresses and things like that walking in on my direction. I cut it off. I channeled it off very hard in another direction because it was getting in my research road and so forth. Well, I hope I won't have to cut this one off, because it's too pleasant. It's too pleasant. After all, if you – you can suddenly appear for just a few brief hours in an area and have people asking you all about it and the next thing you know face the problem of "What am I going to do with this practice while not trying to acquire one?" Well then, there's hope for any Scientologist that walks out into the world and doesn't try to push it too fast or too soon or too quick and does his job somewhat competently.

Thank you.

STUDYING: DATA ASSIMILATION

A lecture given on 9 July 1964

How are you today?

Audience: Fine.

What's the date?

Audience: Nine July.

Nine July. Nine July AD 14.

All right. Now, what are you weakest in?

Female voice: Auditing.

Auditing. Yeah. Frankly, I haven't anything to talk to you about because you're all doing so well. It's I who am lagging, you see? But I've given you quite a few lectures about study and how to get through it and how to do this and how to do that and there's very little that can be added to what I have told you, but I better add that very little.

In trying to – in trying to assimilate a piece of information, these are the points to watch and these are the points that trip you. Nomenclature.

Nomenclature: what does a word mean? And that's what trips you basically, because then you cannot read a sentence with that word in it and know what the sentence says. So nomenclature is a major stumbling block in any study.

Now, there are no vast, well worked-up glossaries in Scientology, but there is a glossary on Class VI material, and part of nomenclature is the recognition of what the definition is. It's one thing just to have the definition and it's another thing to have an idea of what the definition means.

Now, you get yourself a thing like a GPM. All right, let's take that as nomenclature. "GPM" means Goals Problem Mass. Unless you combine such a thing with an observation and work on the clay table, and so forth, even the nomenclature is relatively meaningless. It is a thing, in other words. There is something called a GPM. It's not an idea. It is a GPM. Now, there are – there's one or two pcs around (not necessarily in the course) who are stumbling all over the place on a GPM, because they are in disagreement with that piece of nomenclature. And they are saying, "Well, it doesn't have mass, it's just Ron's idea that it has mass, see, and it doesn't have mass. So therefore, of course, there is no such thing as a GPM."

Well now, trying to audit somebody on something of which there is no such thing as, is just a little bit difficult. Now, if you're running GPMs correctly, the mass simply expresses itself as heat and pressure. It does not express itself as a visio. You never see it unless you've made a mistake. When you've made a mistake you'll see it. You get an end word in the wrong situation and you can see this long parade of mass going out there. Well, there must be something wrong with it to see the mass.

So here is the oddity about this – the GPM. It's true it's a goal's matched items, one against the other, and very matched and held in midair, from which it gets problem, although that isn't too good a word because "problem" is an end word also and "mass" is also an end word. So, that nomenclature is adapted to the subject at a time when not all is known about it, so it can be described and worked with, don't you see?

Now, we move on a little bit further and we find out there probably could have been better nomenclature, but by this time everybody knows this as a "this" and you would get a total catastrophe if you went and shifted the thing, and we can't go on referring to it as "the thing." [laughter] So we go on calling it a GPM. Well now, of course, GPM means "Goals Problem Mass," but that's not important. It's not important what the "G" means or the "P" means or the "M" means. This is a symbol that stands for something. Well, what is this thing. So, if you're simply content to say, "Well, a GPM is a thing and it has this form and construction," and work with it on a clay table, all of a sudden you begin to understand what it is.

Now, you're in a never-never land that has never been explored. There is no language to adequately represent any of these parts of the mind. If you used any terminology that is used by the psychiatrist, you don't know what you're getting into. You, frankly, have no clue what you're getting into because he's way out, man. And when he uses a word to describe something, there may be innuendoes in relationship to that word that would, if we then used it, would impart a totally incorrect zone or area and would make somebody think he knew what you were talking about, when you hadn't a – he hadn't a clue what you were talking about. So, you've crossed up your terminology with some other field that meant something else.

Well, the reason you can't cross it up: it has a different purpose – that other field – it has a different target and it has an entirely different basis of operation. Their – well, their purpose is to make people quiet, to give you how wildly different this is. You want to get upset when you see a very quiet pc, man. His idea of treatment is based on the common denominator, as far as he's concerned, that men are animals that rose spontaneously from a sea of amonia and he wots not of and all thinking is done by the brain, and so forth.

So, this is a different – completely different – zone or area. And it has not produced results, so we needn't pay any attention to it. We don't care how loudly somebody beats the drum and says, "This is authority." Those people are the authorities who can get the results and those are the authorities. A painter is somebody who can paint a picture. An "authority on painting" has been Hobson-Jobsoned over into somebody who can criticize a picture. Well, anybody can criticize a picture, so I guess any child, then, is an authority on painting. So that the thing doesn't hold up when you take it from a critical viewpoint, you see?

No, an authority is the fellow who can do it. And the world in apathy and failure, driving out in various lines and directions where they have been unable to do anything, have elected authorities on subjects that can't do them. So, therefore you would become all crossed up with fields that have failed. And that would enter, all by itself, an ingredient of failure into Scientology.

So, we have to leave their technology alone. We have to leave their nomenclature strictly alone. We cannot talk about "ids" and "egos." We can't really talk about the unconscious – which, by the way, is another end word in GPMs. [laughter]

We can't discuss, in other words, what we are doing in terms of what they were doing, because they didn't do anything. And we would immediately come a cropper and we would be in very bad shape indeed. So we have to have technology named in a certain way as to convey a meaning. And we are the people who can get results in the field of the mind, so therefore we are the authorities.

So therefore, we don't have to pay any attention to anybody else who sets himself up an authority, because any raving madman could go down here at the crossroads and say, "I know all about grapes," see? "I am the world's greatest authority on grapes." And any raving madman could do this, you see? He could just go on screaming, "I am the world's greatest authority on grapes!"

Well, he could get a few other madmen who would come around and say, "You're the world's greatest authority on grapes."

Nobody ever would think of asking this madman, perhaps, the question, "Have you ever eaten a grape, seen a grape, raised a grape, or done anything with a grape?" and of course, if the answers were all "No" to those questions, then of course, it would be quite obvious that he was a raving madman.

And that's the psychiatrist, you see? He has never seen a mind, he never created one, he never changed one and he never brought about any results in this particular field. And the only thing he can brag about is being a bit destructive on the subject. And he's screaming that he's an authority, so therefore, somehow or another, you should borrow his nomenclature.

Now, any one of you, sooner or later, is going to run into this down at some crossroads, "Why don't you use standard terminology?"

Well, the answer to it is, "*Whose* standard terminology?" It would have to be the terminology of a person who could produce a result, before it could be said to be even terminology.

So man has had not much understanding of this particular field and has even gone into an inversion, where he has elected to have the nomenclature of the field standardized by people who know nothing about it. Now, that's a wildest inversion that anybody could ever dream of. Not only is there no terminology, but there is a great deal of false terminology. That terminology is false. And you start to lead down that line, you're going to be in trouble. Somebody's going to say to you sooner or later, "Why don't you use standard nomenclature, why don't you do this and why don't you do that?"

Well, my rebuttal on it, of course, is always very savage. When somebody starts in on me like this, I have no idea that they're trying to be helpful. I never make that mistake, so I just cut them up and serve them for dinner. And it's something on this particular – particular line, I would answer, "Well, why haven't you developed anything that could be used?"

So Doctor Spinbin is standing there, "Well, why don't you use standard terminology so that somebody can understand you?"

"Why the hell haven't you invented any?"

"What do you mean?"

"Well, why don't you know something about the mind? What do you stand around being such a fake for?"

"Well, really! I have a degree!" "I know that. That degree doesn't mean anything. Take one of these patients out of one of these rooms that you've got down here. Bring him out here and heal him. I want to see it!"

"Well, you can't do anything like that."

"Therefore you're a fake. To hell with you!"

This is my idea of a polite conversation with one of those guys. [laughter] I hate fakes. And it's interesting that the only mud they can throw at us is that we're somehow fakes. See, "The overt doth speak loudly in accusation." Shakespeare rewritten. [laughter]

Now, therefore you can't help but have trouble with terminology – nomenclature. I've had trouble with it, don't think I haven't. How do I dream up some word that will describe something, that can be found, can be examined and does exist, that will not conflict with some other school of nomenclature, which has failed? How do I move into that perimeter? Oh, we could probably do a much better job, but part of the trouble is you.

You accept certain lines and start using them in your common communication and then the last thing in the world that I could do is pull them away from you and say, "Well, actually a better word is so-and-so, what little Scientology terminology you know, is now dead and nonexistent. We're going to substitute a brand-new terminology," and you would be upset. Right?

So, terminology has to deal with this factor of evolution in use. We not only have evolved it and they've wobbled a little bit on their meanings occasionally, but then they get into use and they get fixed on the printed page. They get into bulletins and they get into your certificates, and so forth. Certify an HCA, well, he's supposed to know what a reactive mind is. Great.

So the next day we're going to call it something else; we've immediately wiped out part of his education, haven't we? And we've made it hard for him to communicate with anybody who is trained later. If we want dissonance, why, we're going to get it in a very large cacophony if we go knocking apart the terminology we have developed. So we have to safeguard the terminology we've developed. So therefore, when we learn more about the subject, you see, the word may become unreal, but we're still using it.

So, the only thing we can do is actually elect those things which are the most important in the mind and keep that terminology as standard as possible. First try to evolve it as cleverly as possible, so that it won't conflict – first try to evolve it cleverly, so it won't conflict and bring about a misunderstanding in some older activity. And then we've got to carry it forward as a standardized item and then not go changing it all over the place just about the time everybody learns what it is. So, there's a certain necessity here to maintain a constant on nomenclature and terminology. And the word "GPM" will never, never be changed. It's in too much, too long, too often, don't you see? And even though "Goals" – end word; "Problem" – end word; "Mass" – end word. But it becomes just "GPM." Well, it could become "XYZ" – it wouldn't matter much.

Now, another responsibility is not develop too many of them, not to – not to go whole hog on the subject, not to try to name everything in sight some new peculiar name that nobody would ever get around the end of. The vocabulary of Scientology is probably about 472 major words, which is a small enough technical vocabulary. The medical vocabulary is something on the order of 20 to 40 thousand, somewhere in that range – of very peculiar words that don't mean a thing.

So, your task in learning "Scientologese" is relatively short, relatively brief compared to other technical fields.

Now, you could complain about any technical field on the subject of its nomenclature and its nomenclature is just, very often, five times as silly, if you look at it that way, as Scientology is inapplicable. Some of these specialized fields are really marvelous. But if you have a bent for it, if you have a knack for it and are amused by these nomenclatures and terminologies and special languages, you might say, you can have a lot of fun with some of these.

I know I recently have been hobnobbing in the world of the circus. Well, fortunately I know a little of the circus terminology, but from an American circus viewpoint. And I don't know that this holds good in the English circus, you see? Well, you daren't use – I'll show you now the upper class of terminologies.

They're all "snob": These languages are all snob languages, including Scientology, see? The boy that comes out of his HCA class, you see, and he throws off a couple of words; there's two or three who understand what he's talking about, and so forth, and they chin-chin together, see? They – it's like the lodge has just passed the password, see? Other people stand around with their jaws dropped and say they are listening to the upper elite. Well, to that degree they are, you see? Somebody has a superior understanding. But this is a signal system and actually, I couldn't take that away from the subject if I had to. If I didn't invent it, you would.

Give you – in the circus world if you use carnival – the carnival, you see, is pretty downscale. To the circus, a carnival is almost beneath contempt. These things are quite definitely fixed on the social strata. So you daren't use carnival terminology, of which I know of about four or five hundred words in carnivalesque. You daren't use that in referring to the same identical objects and actions in the circus world and the circus world has maybe seven-eight hundred, a thousand words, you see, for these same things. It's – you've seen the same thing, there, you run into it in Low Dutch and High Dutch, in languages and so on.

So you have to be very careful about some of these. But quite the reverse, you can tell a real organist – this is in the world of music. You can tell a great concert pianist by the awe with which he speaks the word "Steinway" and with which he speaks of his instrument and with which he speaks of his scores and so on. You can tell him. He acts the part of a snob in his longtailed coat and his flowing gestures and his poseurs with his hands over the keyboard and all that sort of thing. You know this boy for what he is, you see? He is a classical pianist, a classical concert pianist.

Now, his terminology is quite staggering. If he and a symphony orchestra conductor were to start a conversation in your immediate vicinity you would be snowballed. You'd never know that many musical terms taken into or out of Italian and other – and German and that sort of thing, could exist. And it would, frankly, be over the head of most of the very men in the symphony orchestra. They would say, "God, listen to that," you know?

But the field of the organ does a complete reverse. Now an organ is an instrument which a piano is not. An organ is a percussion instrument, only to the degree that you turn on a percussion key and beyond that, you can get music out of it. But a piano, of course, is solely and only a percussion instrument. This is according to modern classification, see? They classify it as a percussion instrument.

Well, it's a pretty trick percussion instrument and you have to be very virtuosity on it, but an organ will also – you can throw a key on an organ and make it sound like a piano. You can also make it sound like a clavichord. You can make it sound like almost anything. And I've been hobnobbing recently with pro organists. Real pros, you know? Theater organists, circus organists, guys like this, you know? And I actually – my hair's been standing on end. These boys rank in their field just as high as the concert pianist ranks in his field – in fact a bit higher. Because you've got to grow – you've got to be like Vishnu, before you can play an organ, you know? Eight arms. And their terminology would absolutely bowl you over.

There's two fields of terminology and when you get to be a *real* pro in the field of the organ, where you're an organ designer as well as performer, you know, real upscale, you actually shift gears on terminology and the organ terminology with which you're familiar is the organ terminology which is referred to by the musician, the normal musician. But when you go up scale, you go into a new field of terminology. So there's two fields of terminology in the field of the organ.

And the real pro and the real snob in that particular field does a volte-vis – complete volte-vis when he leaves the field of mere music into the field of playing an organ and designing them. Second we get into that field, we're in another pasture. It doesn't even look or smell the same thing. And that is so rarefied that when I first heard those boys talking, and so forth, I wotnotted anything they were saying, you know? It was just like listening to the Hottentots jabbering about the next feast of roebuck – I didn't have a clue.

Well, I finally got hep to it, and did a bit of organ work and designing and that sort of thing and hobnobbing with these birds and I still don't have but a small edge on their terminology and they're always startling me. But I've gotten to a point now where I know what they're talking about, you know?

Well, for instance, the organist at Saint Paul's Cathedral who probably would be – probably the top-top-top amongst mere organists, you see, in England, refers to the "pedal-board," see, those are that board that you walk on, you know? Well, he calls that a "pedal-board." When you get into the real snobs that is no longer a pedal-board – that's "firewood." [laughter]

Now, the top organist at Saint Paul's undoubtedly refers to "notes" and "pipes" and "footages" and the real snob calls them "noises." They're "noises," and he says this with a complete – complete straight face. So, the first time I heard this I thought they were gagging, you see? And every time I've heard one of these things I've made the repeated mistake – which I am now beginning to recover from doing – of laughing like mad, you see, [laughter] thus displaying my great ignorance of the whole subject. I've gotten so I can chatter back and forth on it now.

What the hell was it that I heard the other evening? I think it was a "Blackpool snarl." "This organ was capable of a – was capable of a good, solid 'Blackpool snarl.'" I think I've probably got the word "snarl" wrong, but it was – it was capable of making a "terrible, clashing dissonance which would reverberate," see, and that was the way it was described, see? You catch up with it after a while.

I'm getting there though. I'm getting there, I'm getting there. I'm getting up to a point where I've now developed something that I don't think they've thought of yet with regard to firewood. And I can play a piece on firewood that they haven't thought could be played on firewood, so I'm practicing this very hard and the next time I'm going to get even – I'm going to throw them. [laughs]

But the point is, as you enter into the inner sanctum of any profession, you quite normally leave the purely snob language and get into a "slanguage." Lord knows what a medical doctor calls tonsils while he is dining with other medical doctors, see? But he probably calls them something else. His terminology shifts, then, from the very formal with enormous, forced formality that almost has worship mixed up with it, you see, and shifts, then, as his familiarity increases with his subject into something that sounds more like slang.

And we have not bothered, then, to go through the country of pomposity to reach the world of slang; we've just short-circuited the whole thing. This is true what I tell you about nomenclature; as nomenclature really gets up amongst the knowing, it is never serious. It is a very unserious subject. The things which great electronic engineers that can whip you out a rocket for the moon – wiring circuit or connection – probably what they call it is not what is taught in college, you see? They've got this stuff and it's a *rattledybang*, it's almost jive talking moved upstairs into the profession, you know? It's pretty wild.

Well, we've taken a straight road. Since none existed, we haven't really developed a secondary language. We're in our secondary language. So that is another way that the thing has been narrowed down. We could develop a highly pompous, formal nomenclature; a vocabulary, perhaps, of two or three thousand words, and expect you all to learn it verbatim and be able to discuss it with great solemnity – only to have you eventually evolve a much less lengthy vocabulary which is in the field of slang. We've taken the step at one jump. So, our

language does not sound dignified, see? Our nomenclature is not pompous since there was no reason to enter this other extraneous step into it.

Now, anybody then who is talking to you about not using proper psychoanalytic nomenclature probably himself is the veriest tyro in the field of psychoanalysis, see? He – he's just a – well, if he graduated well and kept his nose clean he'd become a neophyte, you know, or he wouldn't be expressing this reverence for nomenclature, because it's symptomatic of the stage where you are simply memorizing without knowing. After a boy gets to know something, and so forth, he normally shortens his nomenclature quite markedly and rapidly.

And of course, what an organist has to know who is up in the field of engineering and design, and so forth – this circus organist, Kit Francis, for instance, hasn't any "stop." Well, actually the stops on his organ do not agree, I'm sure, with what it says on the stops and he's pulled out most of the stops – he's thrown them away. When he had the organ rebuilt, he threw them away. What he did was just get the noise combinations from the generators and he put a stop on each variable noise combination of the generators, knowing how they hooked up and he knows that if he throws bing-bing – and why, he's got then these two noises come out of the generator. They will combine and they'll sound in a certain way. He's setting it up by electronic sound; electronic combinations of sound. So he's even done away with all of the izzards and piccolos and diapasons and nothing says anything, you know? There it is. It's just...

As a matter of fact, the other day I saw him throw a 64-foot pipe together out of an upper scale. There weren't any even 32-foot pipes in the thing, but he just got a couple of things that would then sound like they built down and he threw those in. And the next thing you know, why, he had Saint Paul's Cathedral going at a very mad rate, but that organ doesn't happen to have any such stops. So, he doesn't even refer to noises by their traditional names anymore, see?

In other words, when a guy gets to know his business he generally throws away – when he really knows his business – he throws away the nomenclature he doesn't need. He gives it the yo heave and he quite commonly, amongst his brethren who are in the know and part of a lodge, develops a short-circuited slang-type nomenclature to describe what he is.

Well, knowing some of these things, and so forth, I've tried very hard to reduce the nomenclature of Scientology as far as possible and keep it only in the realm of slang where it would have evolved to anyhow. And that would save you a lot of trouble.

But if you went back over the years and found the name of everything that had been named, you would probably arrive with a much larger vocabulary than 472. But a lot of those things have been given the yo heave. But a lot of old-time auditors would still know what they were. You talk about a DEDEX – most any Johnny-come-lately would look at you with his eyes "What's that?" you know? Well, actually it was a DEDEX, that's what it was.

Now, the dependence of knowledge upon nomenclature is extraordinary, and as a matter of fact, almost never appreciated by teachers or students. They are trying to talk and use a language they don't know. And this can get so bad that they think the subject is incomprehensible or that they are incapable of understanding it, when as a matter of fact this is not what is wrong at all. It's just that they haven't grasped the meaning of some of these symbols that are

being used to designate. And they haven't got an instantaneous grasp of these meanings. They've got a "fumble grasp" of them. That is, if they thought for a while they might possibly be able to remember what an engram is, see? Now that's the grasp of it.

So they read a sentence and it says, "Of course, there may be an engram in the middle of the GPM." That's not necessarily true, but it's certainly true of implant GPM. And they have to think, "There might be an engram – an engram – an engram... I don't quite – know quite what that means, so I'll just learn this much of it. There might be something in the middle of a GPM." And they go on into the next paragraph and this has made an impression on them, that there's something they don't know about a GPM and that's what carries on into the next paragraph.

And as they go on studying past these points of uncomprehended nomenclature, they begin to stack up an opinion that they "Don't know about it." And it isn't "it" that they don't know about. To get a persistent thing, you see, you'd have to have a lie, and the lie is that it isn't the subject they are having trouble with, it is simply the nomenclature they are having trouble with. They don't know about the nomenclature so they, however, wind up with an opinion that they don't know the subject or that there is something very incomprehensible about this subject. No, it isn't the subject at all, they just don't know their nomenclature.

Now, it may start back someplace in HCA, see, or HPA class and one day, why, somebody jumped up and he said, "Well, that's a lock," and the individual... you know, he said, "Well, you see, that's not important, because it's just a lock, you see?"

And the person says, "Just a lock – a – lock-lock-lock – what's a lock?" And then he was interrupted before he could think the thought through and remember what a lock was. So this, in actual fact, stays there as a little basic incomprehension of nomenclature and that'll hang up on the track and he will develop an automatic comm lag around this word "lock."

He'll get up to a point where he's reading a sentence here at Saint Hill and it says, "You want to check this out, because it might be just a lock." And again that hunted feeling comes over him, you see, and now he thinks he doesn't know much about checkouts because he will misassign, the other being out of sight. So, his opinion now is that he doesn't know much about checkouts. No, he didn't know a word in a sentence discussing checkouts.

You see how important nomenclature is? But a comprehension of the nomenclature which is used is primary to the study of anything.

Now, for instance, I'm studying a parallel course to get insights into study of Scientology. And a very, very smart thing – an extremely smart thing to do – is to take a page of material and look over it for words you don't know – words that don't instantly react to you.

Circle each one of those words or make a list of each one of those words and look up and study their definitions or ask people and get definitions for them. Find out exactly what those words mean. Don't tackle the subject of the page. Just tackle the nomenclature of the page. Get that nomenclature slick as a whistle, tackle the subject, you'll find out the subject was very easy. All the thing was trying to tell you is that if you went ahead and ran a service facsimile which didn't give TA action on exploration, why, the pc would get loused up because you were running without TA action. And this is all this whole thing is devoted to.

But one runs across this thing: "Service facsimile – *ohhh!* What's that?" Another word: "*Ohhh!* What's that?" you see, and "What's that?" and "What's that?" Well, if you want to put yourself in a total mystery, go ahead and study pages you don't know the words on. Then you can put yourself into a gorgeous mystery.

Now, this language is so common to your instructors, it's so common to people around here and their "snob action" – which we have – don't doubt about that, see, and will continue to have, because it is an index of status and competence, will cause them to explain these things to a student with a bit of a sneer.

And they're liable to cure you of asking, "What is a service facsimile?" because you will hear in the answer that comes back to you at least the tone for, "Well, you idiot! Why don't you look it up in your bulletin, you know? Fancy anybody not knowing that!" see? This is sort of reflected in the atmosphere you get back when you ask these things. And that, again, makes you feel stupid for not knowing. Well, actually nothing can be done to minimize this latter.

Why, I could say, "Always answer a student's questions politely," and you'd probably only build up a covert hostility. [laughter] They'd answer the questions politely and flunk all tests for 24 hours, you see. Something wild is liable to go awry when you start to put the brakes on some natural action.

So, the only point I'm making here is: Don't let yourself be put off because somebody thinks you're stupid because you don't know it. You're not stupid because you don't know it, you're simply uninformed. Well, if you're uninformed, don't get so status happy of thinking that you must appear bright in order to be thought well of, when it has nothing to do with it. You're here to learn and anybody is studying anything, is studying it, I suppose, to learn it, not to acquire – he may acquire status through having learned it, but he doesn't acquire status by pretending he knows it when he doesn't. As a matter of fact he acquires himself quite a headache.

So, the point is, in spite of any rebuff that you get, or of difficulty digging into some book to find out what it means, you actually put yourself in a soup at once, the moment that you leave one word in a sentence behind you, you do not know the meaning of. One unknown piece of nomenclature left behind you can absolutely ruin your comprehension of the whole thing you're studying. Now, if you want to speed up your grasp of the situation, apparently do it the slow way. This obviously is a slow way to do it, isn't it? But it's not the slow way to do it because it snowballs.

You'll get faster and faster and faster, whereas if you don't do it this way you will get slower and slower and slower. So, never leave a word behind you in a study that you don't know the meaning of. And when you hear me use a word in a lecture – and I try to minimize nomenclature, actually, in lectures – when you hear me use a word in a lecture that you don't know the meaning of, for God's sakes, write it down in your notes and right after the lecture find out what it is. "What is that word?" see? It's something that has passed you by.

Well, it's that which you don't understand, not the mind, not Scientology, not the theories and practice of Scientology. The stumbling block, first and foremost, is simply nomenclature.

Now, nomenclature will be there regardless of any reform undertaken, because, in the first place, we are examining things which are not hitherto known. So they have to have a name. Now somebody uninformed may try to tell you that some of these things were known but that's merely his misinformation talking. He doesn't know what you were talking about so he thinks it was previously known. He will try, for instance, to compare an "id" and a "thetan," see? And he says, "Well, Freud described all that. He said, 'id,' and an id was – something, and..." Well, probably a person saying this to you really doesn't know what Freud said was an "id," see? His nomenclature failure is prior to his misunderstanding where you are, see?

So, if you want to wind yourself up in a ball and become very confused and get a lot of slow passes and go slower and slower and slower and slower, just start leaving words behind you you don't know what they are. You get halfway down the page, all of a sudden there's a word you've never seen before. Just say, "Well, I'll catch that later," and go on. Why don't you just say, "Well, I'll cut my throat right now and add several weeks onto my course progress?" Because that's just what that'll do. You cannot help but wind up at the end of that page.

Now, the next thing is the subject matter itself, arrangement and understanding of Now, this is your second one. Now, it's all right to name something and get a definition for something, but *what* is being named? And if you were very, very clever, you would worry it and worry it and snarl at it and walk around the circles of any piece of subject matter; now we're talking about the – a thing, see? We're talking about – we're not talking about the name of the thing, we're talking about the thing. You'd walk around any one of those pieces of subject matter until you had a good comprehension of what that was all about. "What the devil are we talking about?" see?

I'll give you an idea: You say, "Well, a person has a bad opinion of another person because they have an overt against that person." All right, there is a thing, you see? That is the – a mechanism that surrounds the overt-motivator sequence. That's one of the phenomena. Joe is mad at Bill and if you search a little bit, you'll find out he's mad at Bill because he's done something to Bill. Joe has done something to Bill. Now this is contrary to the explanation everybody makes in life, so it is very easily read this way, see? Because life is that way you can get this thing – *scoong!* – wrong way to, in your skull, see?

So "'Joe is mad at Bill, because Bill has done something to Joe.' Yes, I understand that." Well, you missed the whole point. Thereafter, if you've done that, you will really never then understand how to pull an overt or why you must do so. See, that has just gone up in smoke, see? Very important mechanism! "Joe is mad at Bill because Joe has done something to Bill." All right, that is the thing.

Now, several things can get in the road of the acceptance of this thing and first and foremost is, it isn't usual or ordinarily thought of this way and that gets in your road by misinterpretation. You think you've read something you haven't read, see? Because it's so usual for it to be the other way you think you've read it the other way. Or it is so widely accepted the other way that it is simply unbelievable.

So there's the next thing that gets in your road, is the unbelievability of it. You say, "Well, that couldn't possibly be true." Now, for heaven's sakes, make sure when you come to

the unbelievability of something that you know what you're unbelieving. Now, that's important – that's important. Let's know what we're unbelieving.

Now, to know what we're unbelieving we have to take the first step again – the nomenclature, you see? Did I get the word right? Now, the thing, the mechanism – phenomenon here, have I got that right? And you'll find in about ninety percent of the cases that a reexamination at this "unbelieve" step – you are unbelieving the wrong thing. You weren't unbelieving what was there. You were unbelieving something else, see?

So, when you run into a total "*gawp*," see – you know, you say, "That couldn't be, you know? Wha-wha? I – that – that couldn't be. I – no, that couldn't be!" see? And instead of going out and jumping in the lake or something like this or taking cyanide, the thing to do is to check over nomenclature and the description of the thing itself. Now, if you check those two over, you'll find out you probably had something in crosswise and that this "unbelievable" was not unbelievable at all but is quite – quite easily seen. That's about ninety percent of the time.

The other ten percent of the time you just can't see how that works that way. Go back and check your nomenclature, check what the thing was that you're not believing, and so forth. Get down to this other thing, you still can't see how it's that way – set yourself up some examples of how it's not that way and how it is that way.

Now, this is the – really the first place where you really have to apply it to you and life, where it becomes an abs... a complete must. You must apply it to you, you must apply it to life. "Does this thing exist in life or doesn't it? Has it existed in my life or has it existed in anybody else's life that I know of? Is there any incident here that demonstrates this phenomena?"

And you'll start looking at it and you'll find out that the reason it wouldn't go that way is normally a button got in its road or something like that. You know, you didn't dare believe that it was this way; something like that – just an examination of it, trying to, "How does it apply to me? How does it apply to life? Has it ever applied to life? Did anybody ever see this thing?", you see, and "Do I know of any incident or anything of the sort which would exemplify this thing?" Why, the other ten percent that I've been talking about here, that will tend to evaporate, too and you'll say, "Ah, yes, now we got it."

Now, this procedure followed actually gives you a terribly firm grip on what you know. And careful study is not necessarily either thorough or brilliant or wise or anything else. It's merely careful. And if you work right along at it on the subject of being careful with it and what you're careful about is – as you're going down the page *pocketa-pocketa-pocketa*, you all of a sudden see this word "boojum" see? "What the hell is that?"

Now, I'll show you how you can be stupid: that's to go on. Read the next word to it in the hopes that somehow or other the explanation will all drop out into your lap. Gloss over that word, you've done yourself in. "What's this word 'boojum'?" Boy, you better find out right now. You might glance at the rest of the sentence: "Does there – a parenthetical description what 'boojum' is in it as you sometimes – occur? Or a – there's nothing there. It's evidently a word I'm supposed to know. It's not a new word, because it's not explained in this paragraph, so it's a word I know..."

Boy, you go any further than that, you've just hung yourself up in a nice little brass mystery and there you'll be: going around with a lamp looking into the dark corners and wondering what you're being mystified about. And then you'll think you're mystified about the subject, you're mystified about anything – it's tracing back to this time you read this paragraph and you didn't understand a word in it so, of course, then it didn't communicate.

By not understanding the word you inhibit any communication. You've inhibited communication between what you're studying and yourself. You've also inhibited your communication between yourself and other auditors and you also, oddly enough, have inhibited your communication with yourself and a pc, because this is something in a pc that you will not thereafter recognize because you don't know what it is.

Now, following down some sort of a – of a routine like this in study, you'll find out that you can study. It's all right for somebody to come around and say, "Well, you can't study and you just don't apply yourself," and that sort of thing and they're – they've done this to people in school – they've done it to me; they used to do it to me in school; they used to say, "You don't know how to study."

And I used to say, "Gee, that's very interesting, you – I don't know how to study," and I accepted this – that I didn't know how to study. And I don't know that I made much of a ruckus about it, but I did manage to finally find out that this was not accompanied by any method of study.

In other words, you were saying – somebody was saying to you, "You don't know how to hang up a skyhook, and therefore you're very stupid indeed, because you don't know how to hang up a skyhook." And it's sort of like catching snipes, same kind of a gag, see? You're supposed to stand out in the woods for hours holding a sack while they drive them in on you. Actually they're home having some coffee, and you're standing in the damp woods for hours, you see? It's just that crude a gag.

They say, "You don't know how to study." Well, what pretentious people! They don't know how to study either, see? There is no – there's no subject called "study." If there was a subject called "study," they'd start teaching it to you in kindergarten. They would certainly start teaching it to you before you were into the – your high schools and that sort of thing. They'd say, "This is how to study."

I've run across various systems, but they're not in the formal textbooks. I've seen them in – remember the Pete Smith specialties from way back when that used to show on the screen, and so forth, gag, one-reel comedies and so forth? Well, I've seen methods of remembering things, and methods of knowing things, and so forth, come up in that form. But I've never seen it on a textbook basis.

I myself developed a method – a (quote) "a method of study" in defense and I remember vividly applying this in the field of history; it's just not going onto the next paragraph unless I could shut my eyes and rattle off the last paragraph, see? It didn't increase my knowledge of history. I actually get along better just by reading a history textbook. At the end of the line when I finish off the history textbook and somebody asks me for dates, I look in the book. I find that is the best method by which to do this.

The only other method of study that I ever developed for myself in school might be of some interest and that was just to get every book on the subject I could get hold of and read all of them and not try to concentrate on any of them, you see?

I think one of the most stellar grades I ever got and bragged about all over the place, and so forth, and called upon to give lectures on every hand, made me feel a little guilty. I was taking American history and I simply got hold of every textbook I could find on the subject of American history and read them all, including Woodrow Wilson's five-volume history of the United States, you see? That's one of those things that you put on a bookshelf to hold it down in case of an earthquake. [laughter]

And I read all these textbooks, but I don't think I ever told the professor that because I was allergic to its very, very bad prose, that I had never read that class's textbook. I'd never read the class's textbook. I'd read all the other textbooks I could lay my hands on, but I couldn't stand its prose. Its prose was horrible, and I – it was sort of socialistically weirdly put together and it was pedantic in the extreme.

It wasn't that it was full of difficult words. As a matter of fact the fellow was sort of underplaying – the places where he should have used a good, big, pompous word, you know, why, he'd put some offbeat word, and so forth. He didn't know how to write, see, and so I didn't read the school's textbook, but I read all the other textbooks and I got – oh, I don't know – A pluses and gave lectures on history for them and got gold stars and silver cups and all this sort of thing as being a terrific student. Well, actually it was just to the degree that I just covered everything in sight. And I find out that's fairly reliable as a method – fairly reliable when there isn't any training available, you know, like an American school.

When there's absolutely no training available, why, what you want to do is just get ahold of every book on the subject in sight and then just read them all from cover to cover, see, making very sure – I would now and do and always did – that you didn't cross over words you didn't know. Get yourself a great big dictionary and get yourself some kind of an anthology or something that went along with it and look up a word you didn't know and find out what that was related to and then get that word real good and then go sailing on your way.

It wouldn't matter if you read a book in five hours, you see. It wouldn't matter how fast you read the book or didn't read the book. That's in absence of formal knowable training on any subject. That's a very good method – excellent method as a matter of fact because you wind up at the end of the thing – you've seen this word so often, you've looked it up so often, you eventually know what it is, you know?

You say, "There again is the 'Rembrandt Profile.' Now, what the hell does it mean, a 'Rembrandt Profile'? Well, a 'Rembrandt Profile' is actually – well, I guess it must have been something painted by Rembrandt, but they must mean something here. I'll turn back over here – I saw a mention of it over here. Here's a description of the thing: Yeah, well, so on and so on and so on and so... Ohh, oh I get it! It's the main light is not showing on the front of the face. Oh, good. Yeah, it's just the fill shows on the thing. Ahh, that's good, yeah. I got that now. All right."

Sail along the line, and so forth, and finally, why, forgot all about that, you see, but chapters later we run into a "Rembrandt Profile," see? "A what? Oh, something about a fill.

Yes. Well, I know where I can find it. I'll go back – ah, yes, yes. Main light back of the person, fill in the front of the person. Yeah. Main – face mainly in shadow. Yeah, I got it. Nothing to it." All right, running down the line chapters later, in another textbook on the subject. "When shooting a Rembrandt Profile so on, so on, so on, so on... 'Oh, that's how you do! You add a spotlight to it also. Okay." You see, the word no longer operated as an impasse to your study.

Looking up words and meanings and so forth, is sort of the erosive course of the river and it eventually grinds away on the banks until it has a good, strong flowing stream, you see?

Actually, I don't think there are bright students and dull students. I don't think this at all. I don't think so, because I've never seen any real coordination between knowledge of the subject and the brightness and dullness of a student. But there is a careful student and a careless student.

Now, a student can be very fast and still be very careful. It hasn't even too much to do with speed. But he knows when he's whipped. That's about the only thing he knows. He's reading down this paragraph and all of a sudden he wakes up to the fact he hasn't the foggiest clue what the devil he's talking about – what he's reading about so he goes back and finds out where he got tangled up. Ah, well, here was a word and here was a phenomenon he didn't know anything about.

Now, if he's a careful student he puts it all away until he finds out what that word and what that phenomena is and exactly what that is and he gets that straight. He may cruise around in the thing just a little bit further to find out if it's defined in that particular publication, see? But he's looking for the definition – he's not any longer doing it.

Now, there's a careful student. And his brightness on the subject is dependent upon the degree he does this. It isn't dependent on any native talent or anything else. It isn't even dependent on his buttons.

And in Scientology, because of the tremendous amount of breadth of study we are doing and because we are studying what we study with, why then, it's necessary to have some command of the subject of study. It becomes absolutely imperative in our field to know something about how to study and it's no longer walking up to some poor luckless student and saying, "Well, the trouble with you is, you don't know how to study," then walking off, you see? Or saying about some other student, "Well, he's just stupid. That's all, you see? That explains it all, see?" Frankly, it doesn't explain a doggone thing.

We've talked – we hear about the lightning-quick student. We hear about the very, very fast, fast, fast student and we hear about the very, very, very, very slow student. And we hear about the grind and we hear about the brilliant student and honest, those classifications have no more validity than the field of psychiatry. Why? Because they have never produced uniform fast study. They're apparently merely excuses and justifications of something. They're an effort to classify on something nobody's cracked. So, why should we talk about dull students and slow students and brilliant students, and so forth?

There are certain phenomena in study which are worth commenting upon and one of those is the oddball who can memorize almost at a glance and who can go back and spit out

the memorized words. I've known Chinese students that got anybody whipped I ever – in the Anglo-Saxon world or in the Western world – anything whipped on this line. I know Chinese students who could go ahead and give you pages of mathematical formulas and things of this character and descriptions of it, and so forth. About the wildest thing you ever listened to and they'd come to school the next morning with their lessons and *ka-wow!* You ask them, "All right, now let's go into the slope formula."

"Well, the slope formula is so-and-so and so-and-so and so-and-so *kow-kow, pow-pow, kow-wow.*" It's all there, see?

You say, "Wow!" Don't say instantly, "Well, then this is the very man we need to build the dam," because building dams has very little to do with study of that particular kind or character. We don't even know if he could solve the problems on the page, but he sure could remember them. Now, that's a test mainly of memory.

Now, if you want to be sure of this person, in examining this person you'll find immediately what's going wrong here. Immediately you'll find what's going wrong. There's a way of examining this person that would only be fair to the instructor and to the student alike.

Take any oddball word that occurred in the first paragraph you have just got back so glibbishly and ask for a definition of that word (the definition is not given on the subject matter which the person is doing). And if you want to see a hunted, horrified look come into anybody's face – it's the perfect memory repeat, see? And you've thrown an ax into it because you've asked for something which isn't memory.

You've asked for the definition of a certain word. And if this person – now look at this – if this person could give you this whole paragraph and tell you all about it but couldn't define a word in it, that person must be in total mystery about that.

So the missing ingredient is understanding. And then naturally the missing ingredient, application, will show up soon afterwards. Do you see how that would work?

In other words, this very, very fast study falls down exactly as the slow study would fall down. In other words, everybody caves in on this same point uniformly. Now, if somebody comes up and he takes this same thing and he stumbles all over the place and he tries to get it out and he spits it out, and so forth, the examiner could ask him, too, the same word. "What's the definition of that word?"

And he'd say, "...Well, I don't know." Puts him in the same boat as the fast study, doesn't it?

So, the direction and end purpose of study is understanding and, of course, you – with an unknown word in the middle of it, and an unknown phenomenon in the middle of it – you're not going to get understanding at all. You're going to get disbelief, noncomprehension. You're going to get mystery. You're going to get, of course, also nonapplication.

Now, if we examine study a little bit further, the main complaint about study is that it does not immediately and at once result in good, clean, clear application. This is one of the primary scolds about modern education – primary criticisms – is if you educate an engineer – or it was – you educate an engineer and you don't dare send him out to build a bridge, see?

Well, that's in the field of application or practice of application. But if this man can't go out and build a bridge after he's been taught to build a bridge, the familiarity ingredient, of course, is missing.

But even so, if somebody had borne down on him like mad for the definition of every word that he was stumbling across in the direction of bridge building, he should be able to go out and unroll his sextant and transit and get to work. He should; he should. He's now got the horrible task of acquiring his familiarity, but he wouldn't be doing it across the barrier of a misunderstanding of his terminology and a misunderstanding of his tools and he theoretically could do it.

I found myself doing it the other day. I just had a textbook command of a certain problem on this line – parallel line – I'm studying. I just had a textbook command of the thing; nothing but and I saw it, saw it happened and applied the textbook and it resolved, bang! And I had about something on the order of maybe two or three seconds to do the whole thing. Because something was happening and I had to straighten it out fast, see? Just textbook. It worked – it worked perfectly.

So therefore, you could and should be able to take a purely textbook thing – if it was a valid textbook and a valid subject – and apply it directly without familiarity. Now, think of what a whiz you would be, however, if you also had the familiarity at the same time. And that's why we study auditing while auditing, see?

But if this other ingredient of careful study is missing, the nomenclature is missing, you can't make the boat. It just won't make the boat.

I studied – been studying this parallel subject very hard because it is a bearcat on the subject of terminology, too. It's terminology that you'd think anybody that had been around photography very long would be very familiar with. He couldn't help but be familiar with it – oh, no, no, no, no. Not when you're studying text after text after text after text after text!

Well, if you were taking some little course that didn't have much to do with the price of fish, that didn't intend to make a pro out of you along any line and "This is, see, this is how you develop pictures" – the Eastman book for the home beginner, you know? I've read those by the ton. No, that hasn't got anything to do with it. It says, "Hammer, pound, hit 'em with the grape, you know – no holds barred. Now we charge with the bayonets. You take the metabisulphite and pour it into the yattapin," and you say, "You take the *what?*" you know.

And then you're busy in the very next lesson studying a completely disrelated field of the same subject, "Make sure that you adjust the headsreen."

"The what? Where the hell did this come from? I've never met it before around here anyplace. A headsreen, a headsreen. Now, what is a headsreen?" Scatter, scatter, flutter, flutter, look in the dictionary, and so forth. "What do you know? It isn't in the dictionary. It's so common they don't have to define it. But I don't know it. No worry now about how stupid this makes me, you see? Flutter, flutter, bing-bang. Finally figure it out by context and by illustration. There was a picture of all of the photographic material needed. A headsreen? Obviously a headsreen was what you hold back a corner of the main light force so as to get a

prominent ear to be less prominent. Obvious, isn't it? Headscreen! Who would have dreamed it, man?" A nonsensical but very usual piece of equipment.

The guy writing the textbook, being so familiar with his subject, would make the same statement that you would make, you see? You say, "Well, you set your E-Meter down on the table first, of course." You have said it almost sarcastically, you see? "Well, you set your E-Meter down on the table, of course, before you start auditing." If you want to be really sarcastic, you'd make such a remark, you see?

This guy, this bloke, this expert on portraits to end all experts on portraits says, "Well, of course, you adjust the headscreens to hold back that. That's the way you subdue the light." He just says this parenthetically, you see? "This is how you make less prominent, undesirable features on a subject in portraiture. You hold back the light on them."

"What do you hold back the light with?"

Get the same answer out of the textbook. "Oh, don't be an ass."

"Yeah, but what do you hold back the light with, you know?"

"You hold it back with a headscreens, of course, you idiot!"

"What's a headscreens? What is a headscreens? What is this thing?"

"Put it over the piece... Put it over the lens of the camera so it doesn't show the fellow's head?"

So, this has been – it's been very amusing, because I can look at a subject, you see, from an oblique – look at the same study problems that you run into. And I've been analyzing these problems and putting them together. What I've been talking to you about and what I've talked to you about in recent things has been the views I've had on this as worked out and as I know they apply in our own field. And I think you've been making some progress as a result.

But there are just these points about study and you expected there would be probably a lot more complex points about study, but there are no more complex points about study than I have just given you.

Now, of course, if you didn't read or write English there would be a further study on nomenclature. But remember it would just be a further study on nomenclature. So, it even falls into that particular field. Now, the person who can't talk at all, or let us say, an animal trying to arrive at this particular line – he's totally out of communication, he hasn't got the vocal chords, he can't be educated in the first place. You say, "Well, that's a totally lost field." Well, I'm – I'm not completely willing to lose that field utterly because I've already raised animals in tone to a remarkable degree and I've already met dogs that could talk, see?

Yeah, I met a dog one time – he used to say "Hungry" every time he wanted chow. He managed it somehow. He used some Hollywood scheme of how you breathe from the diaphragm, you know? But he could say it clear as could be – that he was hungry. Startled people almost to death because they'd say, "Well, that's funny. The dog probably makes a grunt, you know? And this mistress that's taught him and so forth is just being too too for words." And then they'd hear this dog and this dog would say "Hungry" and they'd go "Ahhhh!" And I was talking to an elephant the other day that wanted his picture taken, as I told you and I've

run into animals that know their cues much better than their trainers and have to pull the trainer through the act somehow and make him look good. [laughter]

So I don't know what the barriers to communication are. I have a greater insight into the fifth dynamic lately than I have had before and I have found that they're – you can go a lot deeper into the fifth dynamic. In fact, I've pretty well got an idea of what GPMs, and so forth, certain animals and insects and so forth get stuck in. And just about how they go into that particular zone or area and how they go out the bottom. I've had a little – quite a little bit more insight into this.

But anyway, that being as it may, the point is that the communication of the nomenclature of the language – of the ability to talk or communicate – would be the first barrier, don't you see? And so it remains into – the fellow who does know English, who can read, who sits there and so forth – it's still his first barrier. But, of course, he is so high on this level of communication he is contemptuous of these little inability to communicate and so neglects them. And neglecting them, then of course, he comes an awful cropper when he gets into the field of study. And that is about the first place where he really falls down.

There are many ways you could make a person fail in studying, but mostly it would be in denying them an insight into the necessity of understanding the communication symbols used. That would be a big failure in delivering the field of study.

We never published a dictionary as such. There are several manuscripts of dictionaries around but they unfortunately all depend on my re-editing from beginning to end and they just go fantastic quantities of words and it is just those extra twelve hours on top of the forty-eight in the twenty-four – to get such a job completed. It's a very rough rough beef. And I particularly would not want to attempt the job until I felt it was pretty wrapped up, so it's just about now it would be wrapped up. But I did have definitions of the various words at Level VI, and so forth, codified which I'm sure has been issued and – so that you could look those things up and know what the score was on that.

But despite the lack of a glossy dictionary, you nevertheless can look up these words and they are known and people all over the place know what they are here, and there really isn't much excuse going to one. So it takes you a half an hour to learn what this word is. Boy, that's a half an hour that won't get multiplied and added on to the end of your course, when you're busy floundering around wondering why you just can't seem to get to first base on that particular quarter.

Well, I hope what I've told you today will be of some use to you.

Thank you very much.

BANK ANATOMY

A Lecture given on 14 July 1964

Thank you! Very sorry to keep you waiting. It's not my fault. It's Reg's clock (laugh). That's correct. It said... it's wrong, so... I'll have to turn on the clock in me head. What's the date?

Audience: 14 July.

14 July, the 14th – We have a new student, stand up and take a bow – Tom Morgan. And somebody we have seen before, retreading – Jean Jacques Scalance.

Alright! I'll have to make up for it by being very interesting having bored you to death sitting there ten or fifteen minutes with nothing to do. Well, I think I'm just going to give you right off the cuff, all of you right now, a rundown on exactly what the track and bank looks like and here at the lower levels particularly restimulated and particularly the newcomer on the thing, why the best thing to do is to turn it off is to just run on through Class VI. That's the best way to turn all that restimulation off. And... [laughter] and, when you're Class VI, go right on through to OT. That turns all the restimulation off [laughs].

Now, let's just give you a very rapid fire lecture, and Reg will be cursing in his beard because he'd want a camera on this particularly, but I will do it all again with Fillips and Furbelows. Very interesting doing things with Furbelows [laughs], and here's the way it sits.

There's a thing called the reactive mind. The total composition of the reactive mind consists of the following factors: Are we away? [laughs] Alright, it has locks, it has secondaries, it has engrams. Got that? Alright, in addition to those locks, secondaries, and engrams, one of the most notable facts that it has, which comes to view once you start, is implants, implant GPMs and then various forms and varieties and that sort of thing, and they make little black masses that are quite interesting to collide with, and they can be run on almost anybody, and actually comprise, the implant GPM comprises Class V. Old Dianetics dealt with the locks, secondaries, and engrams and Class V deals with these implants and their various ramifications.

Implants are interesting in that they very often have engrams in the midst of them. You run half an implant and somebody slips off the post and something like that, he's got an engram and somebody getting him back on the post. You know, that kind of thing. In other words, there's all of that still exists in the mind and that... those, those implants go along with dating, you can date implants very easily, go along with other whole track phenomena. And, there's two branches then to the whole track phenomena which belongs at Class V, and one of those is implants and the other one is engrams. And, various types of engrams go back all the way along the track and there's some rather unbelievable time spans involved in all this.

It goes very, very long. It... You can get dates of trillions to the one thousand three hundredth power. That is a date which you would spend the rest of your life writing. That – it's just, ciphers that go on and on and on. I'm exaggerating when I say the rest of your life, but it would just go on and on and on and on.

Now, because people have been implanted, and because implants exist, and so forth, then it is very easy for someone to get confused about what is called an actual GPM and the actual reactive bank because he immediately conceives that it has been done to him, and is all mixed up on the situation, and he is very likely to believe that a – an implant and a GPM are the same thing.

Now, if you want to become very ill, several methods of becoming ill will be covered in today's lecture, if you want to become very ill, indeed, why just start going around and saying that actual GPMs are – are implants. If that's – if you want to get sick, that is the best way I know of to go about it, and if you want your pc to get good and sick, why have your pc start arguing around about this without you suddenly chipping in and saying, "now, when was the first time you considered this?" You know, and just run it out as a series of considerations right now, and he'll come off of this wild kick because he's going to make himself terribly ill if he says that actual GPMs are simply implants. Now, we are not interested in whether they were implanted or not implanted, I'm just telling you one marvelous method of getting sick. You understand? I'm not saying even what they are. I'm just saying that's a nice way of getting sick.

Now, therefore, we get down to Class VI, and we've covered everything else now except, of course, the fact that what you're auditing up to Class IV is the destimulation of the things you erase at Class V and VI. You want to know what these Classes are all about. What Classes I to IV are devoted to: auditing which destimulates those things which are erased at Classes V and VI. You understand? Therefore, there are only two erasure Classes and those are V and VI, and there are four destimulation Classes. So, that you never try to erase anything, actually it's quite incidental but you really do get erasures accidentally of little odd bits on Classes I to IV. There is a small amount of erasure that does take place, but the moment that the auditor tries to erase something, while auditing in those Classes with their processes, he is in immediate trouble. I'll give you an of idea how this is. I'll show you the difference of Classes.

You say to somebody, you say, "You say you don't feel well, alright, what's the matter?" "Oh, you got a headache, alright, well now, recall the first time you ever tried to get this headache cared for." "Recall an earlier time you tried to get the headache cared for," is a more exact command, because he won't give you the first time, the first time. And, he gives you something, and gives you something, and gives you something, and all of a sudden his headache disappears. Well now, you've, you've destimulated. You've destimulated.

Where's the headache? Well it actually isn't out there lurking, waiting to pounce again, but if it comes back slightly nobody should be very surprised, because having done this exercise, of asking him for his considerations about headaches, or what he's done for headaches, or how headaches have been handled by him, and so forth, or what he's done to a headache. We don't care what we ask him or how we asked him for these considerations.

Don't get this mixed up with O/W. I just heard crosswise in your head that you had. No, it's any recall process, see, which would lead to a banishment of a headache no matter what you did, and then you found out that he had banged his head on the corner of a kitchen sink at the age of five. He got rid of his headache slightly, see, so then you decided to really find out where this headache came from and you found out that he was banging his head on the corner of the kitchen sink and then you said, "Well now alright, about banging your head on the corner of the kitchen sink when you were five, how did the room look at that time?" "What was said at that time?", and boy, he's got that headache back with exclamation points. You understand?

Now, you've destimulated that same incident when you simply asked him for some considerations. You destimulated in general, the whole subject of headaches, but then you have come back and try to erase this. You see? Now you're gonna go through and scrub out what you have assigned the cause of the headache to be. You're going to erase that thing and he's going to get a nice headache back. Now the funny part of it is, you could go on through and erase it only to find out that it really wasn't when he banged head on the kitchen sink at the age of five. It was when he fell out of the perambulator at the age of three. So, you have now erased that and this would all be better, and then you could find out that it wasn't that at all, but in his last life time he was really shot in the head when he kicked the bucket. So, that puts you back into the last immediate past death. Now we're gonna run all this out from one end to the other. I see some of you have been over this road... and there would be an astonishing return of, of perception and he would feel pretty good about this, and so forth.

But, either you did a terribly even nice smooth job of auditing the whole way, and you could keep running this back... Now, let me point out to you, that the second you went into that past death you moved into Class V. It was at that precise instant. It was perfectly alright to handle banging his head on the corner of the sink in this life time, you're, you're a perfectly good auditor, but you moved out of Classes I to IV even on what little you can erase in those Classes. See, you've moved out of that. You've gone on to whole track. One more life time than this one and you're on whole track and you're in Class V. That's the way we classify it these days. Don't you see?

You got no business being there these days because of this interesting fact. It is absolutely factual that an auditor, smoothly auditing, can go back and erase enough of those engrams, we did it in Dianetics, enough of those engrams to make that headache go away and be good and the fellow not bothered with it at all further more. This is perfectly true but the number of incidents, I'm putting you all into focus with regard to the reactive mind, the number of those incidents which added up to a headache, may well be in the billions, which is why we departed from Dianetic into Scientology technology. And that's the exact reason why there is a bridge between Dianetics into Scientology.

Whatever else anybody wants to assign to it, whether historical reasons, or anything else, that is the great big milestone on the road. The discovery that there could have been billions of engrams on the track, each one of them capable of causing a headache. And to get rid of all of those engrams in times and terms of auditing, in view of the fact that man is only here for seventy years at a crack, to get rid of all those in a pc was not feasible. It wasn't that the technology was not do-able, as a matter of fact, we recently improved the technology. You

could run an engram now by plotting it's time, and spotting it's duration, and boy, if you got those two right, pictures turn up all in 3-D. This poor guy he's never had a picture before in his life, see. You do that engram technique that we developed here a year or so ago, I got, I finally got whipped out, and so on, and boy, he's got visio and he's got the lot, see. All you have to do is do an accurate spotting of the time of the engram, find it's exact duration, and move him up some place toward the beginning of the thing and on go the lights, see, and you're away.

So, the big problem of erasing engrams, the pc had no visio or sonic, that was dealt with and there is such a technology, but it still doesn't solve this other auditing factor. The auditing factor is, is billions of incidents exist on the person's track which could cause a headache, see. Let's say you've got a chronic headache, well also in running this you find out he also has a chronic foot ache and it has more billions, you see, so all of this becomes infeasible. It is not doable simply because the auditor hasn't got enough time to handle that many incidents. It is not, now, that they could not be handled, you understand. But he hasn't got enough time to do it. You could take this technology of erasing engrams and take ninety-eight percent of your pcs and go ahead and run engrams on those pcs with this technology and they would very soon begin to fly.

But that is an erasure technique, and to achieve any finite end within the lifetime of the pc and yourself, due to the quantity involved, becomes impractical. That's why! And, that's why the shift in Dianetics and Scientology and that's why these other approaches. That's erasure! So, erasure from I to IV, it is not that it couldn't be done, it's that you haven't got time to do it, and you can do more for the pc by destimulation that you're simply keying these things out. In other words, park them over in their proper area without paying too much attention to them. In other words, the indirect approach to these billions of engrams was simply to destimulate the pc on the subject of keying them in, in this lifetime, and you find, quite remarkably, that this is highly workable. Destimulation as opposed to erasure.

Now, there is then the dividing line, between I to IV and V to VI... V and VI, is those early ones are, simply because you can turn off somebody's headache and then if you don't try to erase anything, that's what I've been trying to teach you here, if you don't try to erase anything, if you don't push him back into the bank and you don't crowd him back into it with some nonsense or gobbledegook of some kind or another. "Well, I didn't get that, would you go over it again. That was a what? Well, I didn't quite understand this, oh, it's a... well, it's alright." But the auditor is just being too something or other.

He's concentrating the pc's attention on the backtrack, see, and he says, "Oh well, that happened when you were five, alright. What did you say you put your head up against? Oh, your head hit – hit – hit a sink, alright. What sink? Where were you living at that time?". Well, you've done the exact approach that has long since been designed on how to get somebody into an engram. And if... of course, he'd go into the engram at that time, and your job is actually to destimulate, not erase. You see that? Now, oddly enough, you can still destimulate after you've done all this.

You just pick this session. Now, you've obviously made locks on the incident and this session. Don't you see? So, you just ask him, "When was the first time we started to talk about

it in this session?", "What considerations have you had about it in this session?" You go all over it again, and magically, if you audited that very smoothly and destimulated this session, why all of that would fly back into the background again, and once more, he would be rid of it.

So, we have two distinct classes of auditing and we have two distinct things which are handled, and therefore all auditing between I and IV is the handling of locks, especially the lock known as a key-in. I won't bother to go into nomenclature in this lecture. If you don't know those words, look them up.

So, it's handling locks. So, I to IV isn't handling the raw meat of life, and we have omitted number V because it now isn't necessary, and this brings us vis-a-vis staring into the lion's feted breath. That's VI. So, what you're doing now is a transition from sweetness and light of one I to IV.

The spring sunlight pattering on the freshly born leaves, pan pipes trilling in the distance. The full volume Ride of the Valkyries, with no transition, done in a dark cave with red bloods and spots.

And if this is something of a shock to your steady factors, well, fine. I would be very happy if it were possible to put you through the two or three years of training necessary to come up the whole gradient.

So, it's not necessary to come up to those whole years, so the thing to do is just brace yourself for a shock, take it on the chin, and plow on. You understand? So, actually all of your auditing up to IV is destimulation, handling the little key-ins and locks, "My momma spanked me and I considered at that time, that I hated women", you know. "Ah gee, somehow I feel suddenly better about, about...". That's not what it's about, see. Do a military drum doing muffled drums, and he's going off to the executioner's block.

The somatics with confront required – pretty tall, pretty tall. Big jump, big jump for a pc. Big jump for an auditor. I just want to show you there's a section missing in the training and tech, but it is possible for you to make that jump and it is possible for the pc to make that jump, without an awful lot of stuff, providing you do I to IV well, and that's the area that you got to do well. Now, what have you got to do in I to IV? In I to IV you just got to raise his cause level so when he eventually begins to confront the real raw meat of the reactive mind, he can as-is it. If he can't confront it, he can't as-is it. If his willingness factor is too low, his cause factor is too low. If his cause factor is too low, he can't look out enough from where he is to as-is anything in front of him. We've had other lectures on this particular subject. That is not new ground.

So, your thing to do there is just raise up his cause level – then throw him to the lions. Alright! It's something like the Russians trained their troops for World War II. They took this fellow and they showed him how to handle a sub-machine gun, heel strip it, put it back together again, fire it, and then sent him to the front lines. That was his total military training, see. And then his survive became soldiers. [laughter] So, this is heroic, see. No effort being made at all to do anything very gradient about this, and this brings us right down, with no more gradient than that, to the reactive bank basic.

The basic raw meat of a reactive bank is the GPM. And the GPM is caused of masses and significances, as you will find in other materials, and has certain forms and sizes, and my lecture mainly concerns it's patterns, here today.

Now, there are people around that tell you, "Naw, Ron must be wrong, I've never seen any mass in GPMs – oops, well...mass...GPM...[mutters]... so I wonder why I'm so hot". Well if you're running straight down instead of the center of a GPM and you're running dead on, which you can do now, of course you never see anything. The second you begin to see anything, you must realize something has been skipped. The only time anybody ever sees anything, there's something wrong. You jumped a GPM. Well all of a sudden you're gonna have visio. You jumped an item. Well, you're gonna have nice visio on the item you jumped because it's not going to be behind you, or ahead of you, or to the left, or the right, or someplace. Do you see this?

Now, in the final analysis, a GPM is composed of mass and significance, and it's located, and so forth, but you don't have to worry about it being too thoroughly – about it being timed because it really doesn't matter what time it's timed because it is timed. And one of the reasons why it's very difficult to find the top of the bank or the bottom of the bank and so forth, and that sort of thing, is because it is time itself. So you try to find the top of the bank and well, that would be the part which was made last. Yes, how can there be a last when this is the thing which has made it first and the last.

In other words, the characteristics which you normally assign to objects in their position, location, and age, these characteristics are gone when you get into GPMs. Now, you can say, yes it runs in this order. Oh yes, it does and you'd better run it in that order and you can say, well it starts here and it goes there, and so forth. Well that's simply, sort of on the basis, it's easiest to start here and go there. Don't you see? Because there was no start and there was no stop. But, there is a significance of starting and stopping in it, and if it weren't for any GPMs, there wouldn't be any significance of starting and stopping. How do you like that? See?

The thing exists in space, but the GPM is what makes the space for itself to exist in, see. It has age, but it, itself, makes it's own age [chuckles]. So, therefore we say, this is the first end word. Well, we have said that this is the first thing about the thing that makes a first, you see. It wouldn't necessarily be a first engram. See, there couldn't be a first end word, really. This is why the wits are... is very difficult to grasp at first glance because you see everybody trying to grasp it is tremendously influenced by it, and the considerations people have of things are caused by these considerations and significances which are in the GPMs. You see? It's a snake eating up his own tail. It's that kind of a problem. The snake ate himself up and disappeared. Well, that's really what happens when you run a GPM.

Now if... the consideration then, the consideration of time, the consideration of space, energy, all the various things of which a GPM is composed are contained as significances in a GPM. Very, very puzzling. So, somebody trying to understand life sitting down on a mountain top some place in lower Jesus or some place – Jerusalem, excuse me, and he's contemplating his navel or something, and trying to get the hot dope, he gives you all sorts of things. If he starts to get close to the truth, then the things he utters appear to be idiocies, see. If he

gets close to the truth. Like, there really is no universe – Mary Baker Eddy. There is no universe. All is infinite mind. Isn't it true? It's very, very, very true but that doesn't prevent Christian Science from being the leading religious faith you find on the rosters of insane asylums. See, it's a truth which isn't quite true enough to save the bacon of the person's faith.

Truth must be truth. It must be all the way truth. Now, anybody who is studying slowly, and so forth, gets caught up in this factor: That you can't go part way to truth. The most suicidal activity that you can engage upon, is to go part way to the truth. You've got to go all the way to the truth. There are no half truths. About the most dangerous thing you can have anything to do with is a half truth. There are... people have understood this, that a little knowledge is dangerous. Well, that's actually not very well applied, that's not even very well stated, and it certainly isn't the same sense of what I'm saying here. No truth can be half way approached. If you got that far and didn't go any further, you would fall flat on your face and be in quite a mess. If you set out to shoot the moon, there is nothing sillier than going into perihelion around it for the rest of your life [chuckles]. You've got to land on the moon. There is no substitute for totality with regard to truth. In other words, you've got to know all of it.

And this is – this I'm trying to field a philosophy. The Bugdeammerbum... the famous witch doctor from lower Scrambula, he puts his foot on this line and he says, "There really is no time" and he doesn't go any further than that. He teaches everybody, there really is no time. He's put himself and everybody around him with one foot on the banana peel and the other in the grave, see. He hasn't told them why there is no time, see. He hasn't told them anything, and all he'll do is – everybody goes around saying, well there is no time, so it doesn't matter, but yet, echoing in around in their skull is the fact that it's true, there is no time. That is a truth, but it is so little of the truth. Without somebody going the whole way, it actually becomes quite dangerous. The whole race would then simply go in apathy and that would be the end of it.

And that is what has happened in almost all philosophies that I have ever heard of. See, they get some corner of some truth and then they don't walk down that road and they go no further than this. You see? And they sit around on mountain tops regarding their navels and they do weird odd ball things, and they wonder why they're not getting any better if they know so much. Well, the reason they're not getting any better, even though they know so much, is because they started on the road to truth and they never made the passage and they're something like a ship-wrecked ship. They're high and dry on that reef and they're never gonna go any further. But having gone that distance, it wrecked them. Now this in itself is soul chilling.

This pronounces something quite interesting to you. You can say, well we started into Scientology. Yeah, you started on a road toward truth, didn't you? The only fatal thing you can do, if you know this about your pcs, and you know it about those around you, and you know it about some of them fallen by the wayside, you instinctively feel it.

Having started, ceasing to go is one of the most fatal things they could do. Now you look at this with some sadness because it's actually a very fatal action. But let me call to your attention something else. It isn't that Scientology got you started on the road to truth. You started on the road long time before. You've been on that road – when you sat down in the

amphitheater, when you sat down in the amphitheater in Greece and listened to somebody saying philosophically, yippity-yappishly, that something is the end of the road and Kronos actually devours his own children and therefore the whole universe is circular and whatever else is being said. You started on the road to truth and you can speculate along this particular direction: what is the truth in this matter? What is the true composition of this universe? What is my true identity? Who am I? What do I consist of? Where do I come from? Of course, nearly everybody has asked that question of himself since he's a little child. You started on the road to truth. That's dangerous, unless you walk the whole road.

That road's got to be walked because the character of the GPMs themselves admit of no halfway measures. You key in of one of these GPMs, and you key in a series of GPMs, you get them all roiled up and then you don't do anything about them, you're in the soup. They contain the end all of all explanations. Contained in the GPMs are the explanation of the universe in which we live. Their identity, everything everything is composed of. The impetus. All of these very things.

In other words, the philosopher busy philosophizing and having himself a ball on the subject and coming up to some conclusion. Let's take Einstein. Einstein was walking on this road. He had finally gotten up to a point where he was trying to integrate life into his other equations and he was groping, groping, groping and he left one of the most remarkable, he left one of the most thoroughly remarkable messes for ages forward to figure out that you ever cared to have anything to do with. When he died he had a bunch of consultations. In other words, he was going towards the everything of everything. In other words, he was going towards something that explains everything, and he hadn't arrived any closer than a bunch of symbols. Having figured out his various equivalents of constants, and speeds of light, matter, energy, space, and time, having figured these out, he was trying to squeeze life into this somehow or other, and he left an awful hodgepodge of figures which everybody worships back where he was, Princeton I think it was... And they're busy trying to do something with this now and it's all very complex and it's all very something or other. In fact, everybody around there is half way spinning, what the devil were these last equations that Einstein wrote. He was just trying to integrate life with the universe. That's, everybody would say, an over-simplification. No, it isn't, that's a more truthful statement. That's closer to the truth than they are. He was just trying to integrate life and the universe and that and that. That's all.

The old Encyclopedia Britannica says in order to understand space and time, you had better understand the mind because it's very often, very possible, that space and time are simply generated by the mind, how do we know. Interesting. That's in the 1890 edition of Encyclopedia Britannica. Marvelous insight. Very well put. I noticed it hasn't been followed by anybody else. You notice that science today says the mind is so in error, it is so inaccurate, is so this, that it is just nothing in mechanics at all, but mass is all and the mind is nothing, see. The universe is everything, and the material things in existence are this and then he is just a spontaneous combustion from mud, and this is all he is, and he's just a lousy bum, and you talk to one of these boys and their whole orientation is in this direction. He will say, "Oh a computer, oh well a computer never makes a mistake. This is the run, it puts out all these marvelous things, look at these marvelous things. Human mind, *agh*, human being *agh*..." [mutters]. Yeah, listen to these boys. I've tried once in a while, timidly for me, to say, "Who

feeds the data to this computer?", "What feeds the data to this computer, and get an answer out of it and who inspects that answer after it has been printed but the mind, the being, the person, the individual." *Yak-yak-yak*, they can't get this point at all, see. In other words they've got now, the cake is more important than the baker, see. You've got an end-all cake that's self-generated and sprang spontaneously from the cook pot, but no baker. The cake is greater than the baker. Don't you see?

So, in studying R6, the first thing we have to recognize with vividness, is that we're dealing with the baker, not the cake. We're dealing with the thing that makes it, not the thing that is made. We've got to recognize that, and that'll explain a great many failures auditors have when they begin to approach R6 and it's auditing techniques. They pay all their attention to the mass, the GPM, the significance, and to hell with the pc. Well in actual fact, if you don't pay attention to the pc and his reaction by keeping in a good auditing comm cycle, by doing good ARC break assessments when you got by-passed charge, by first and foremost taking care of the pc, by making absolutely certain the pc doesn't have any PTPs at the time he's being audited, making sure of all these little points, keeping that pc in good communication, handling that very nicely, making sure that all the items read, the pc is satisfied that they have read, that the pc is cheerful and happy about this, then you've just got an end-all cake, and you got no baker. And it's the baker you're trying to handle and it's the baker you'll be left with after the cake has been et. So, you take good care of the baker. So a few pieces of cake get chipped up. Well that's not very important as long as you take care of the baker.

An individual is an individual and now you find this inherent in early Scientology teachings where it was taught more instinctively than factually, you see. It was taught more on a basis of general knowingness. I knew how these things were. You'll find that the being, the individual, had generated the universe and part of that universe is the GPM, and the GPM in it's generation then restrained him and compelled him to covertly go on making the rest of the universe unbeknownst to himself, and compelled him by his own generation to go on making it, the GPM, see. So you're not quite sure when you first look at this thing which way is which. Is the cart drawing the horse or the horse drawing the cart, you know. When you first look at it you will say, "Wow – science, modern science has said, well, it's all cake, and there's no baker", see.

Well let's take it up a little bit further. The first trouble you're going to have and that is, is the course – is, is, is the cart being drawn by the horse or is the horse being drawn by the cart, or who is running what, and as the pc begins to look at this he actually can accept intellectually, he's making this thing that is smacking his face in but he can't put any part of it into actual subjective reality. So it's a point you don't force down his throat. It will eventually begin to dawn on him. He gets to be further and further on a gradient of cause over the GPM in spite of the fact that cause itself is an end word.

The point is here, he gets to be, actually, more and more cause over this GPM. See, everytime you're falling across a real significant significance or something that is absolutely necessary to do anything about anything with you're also colliding, madly, with GPMs. You understand? You're colliding with the meaningfulness of a GPM in some way, shape, or form, in any human action, and in any part of or action about this universe. It really doesn't matter

much what corner you approach of livingness or life in view of the fact that livingness and life is created by the individual through the GPM.

He creates the GPM and it creates it, but he's long since forgotten he created the GPM. "It looks to me like," you see, he would say, "it looks to me like the cake, you know, is creatin' the rest of the kitchen." [chuckle] Why, he will then not be able to very intelligently grasp the fact that every time he tries to address any corner of existence, he starts to feel strange or peculiar. Well naturally, any corner of existence is already capped with a GPM because if it wasn't, it wouldn't be there.

So, all of a sudden a guy is just thinking a thought, see, thinking a thought at random. Alright, that is either a lock on a root word or a lock on an end word, see. One or the other. It's a lock on a root word or a lock on an end word. That's it. I don't care what thought you just thought, if you thought any at all, so you mustn't get into some weird – you mustn't get into some weird odd-ball contest of trying not to think in some way, in such a way as not to res-timulate a GPM. That doesn't happen to be possible.

There's no particular reason for you... I already went over this rolley-coaster here a few weeks ago, it was a relatively short time ago, I had to decide what this was all about and I had to get down and work it all out very carefully, and I did, you see, and that's the conclusion I came to: That he built a universe through the formation of a GPM and he couldn't think any thought to amount to anything. But didn't amount to anything, he couldn't think any thought that could impinge on one, one way or the other. I made an actual test. It wasn't intentional. It's with causation. I was telling you about cause level and I had this struggle about trying to form a communication about cause level, and I said, "Well I don't..." I knew that cause and so on, was an end word in a GPM. We'll get on to what end words are, and so forth, in just a moment.

Well, I knew that it was an end word and therefore I tried to get around it by saying causation. Erase the causation of a pc. And I tried to get around it also by using causativeness, to increase the causativeness of a being. And by the time I'd carefully written the bulletin, which you have, carefully scouting this on causation and causativeness, I was sick as a pup. It wasn't that I was restraining anything, or anything, I was simply mis-wording an end word. So I went back, I went back and scrubbed all that and simply put cause down there well knowing that it was an end word.

You don't want to keep repeating an end word at somebody when you're giving them auditing commands. You can get out to an outer perimeter lock. And that's what you want to keep repeating, like "done". Well, that's very nice – done, done, that's good. "What have you done?". That's good. Withhold – no, that's a root word because every time you say withhold you're going to key-in directly and immediately some other portion. You're gonna key-in somebody faster than you're easing him up. Don't you see? So, it's best in an auditing command to use an indirect action. But in the discussion of communication of anything, if you try to escape the significance of an end word or the significance of a root word, if you try to escape these things and not mention them, all you do is suppress them and the final result is, is you're practically around the bend. So, the best answer is, the hell with it. Say them. Do them.

Not with a repetitive auditing command. Not in a constant hammer pound of an auditing command.

But a careful review shows that you can't escape this particular thing and it shows, that when you're trying to be technical, that a departure from the exact statement is liable to make you sicker than an approach to the exact statement. Then that says where you sit and where you think. Now the number of root words and end words which you hear battered about every day, laid end to end, would be longer than the Queen Elizabeth's passage from New York to London. Every cocktail party on there, all they do is bat about large numbers of root words and end words.

Now, the worse off a person is, in actual fact, the more he will talk in root words and end words. Sanity, if it is anything at all, would be the gradient scale of destimulated root words and end words, and insanity, would be the command value of the root words and end words over the individual. Not their restimulation, but their command value – that would be insanity. If root words and end words have a disproportionate command value over the individual, you can say he's insane. Now that's... That's interesting, too, because insane, of course, is an end word. But you have to step outside the basic considerations.

But quite in addition to adding both the universe and personalities and reactions and so forth, the individual is still quite capable of independent thought. And the reason you have Dianetics and Scientology is totally attributable to the fact that I've been walking, to a very marked degree, outside the perimeter of reactive thought while considering these various things. Now that's very interesting. We got some place, you see, and didn't get detoured into it even though we were dealing with and very often using it.

Now take the very step with which you work – ARC. Affinity is an end word – Reality is an end word – Communication is an end word. There are three end words in a row, all the way down early on the track and, theoretically, it should make everybody sick as pups because it's so early. You know, you destimulate the charge of them. Now, you're living right in the middle of the fourth lightning if you live in this universe and you're actually further from it in Scientology than you are if you were out digging a ditch somewhere because, believe me, that foreman when he comes down the line is going to speak nothing but root words and end words. He's going to be pretty batty on the subject.

This little jazz musician, "Is that something!" "Boy, that's nowhere!" All in expletives. But they're... you get the idea? There's a vast difference here. They're dead on dramatizing. They're completely unwitting. It would be quite another thing for you, a Scientologist, to be dead on wittingly. I know when I'm using root words and when I'm using end words to a very, very marked degree. If I hadn't been aware of one before, if I ponder one too hard, I'll get warm. When I notice that I'm getting rather warm, I say, "Well what do you know, I wonder if that's a root word, I wonder if that's an end word?" "Alright, it's a root word. What do you know, must be a root word because it wouldn't add up any other way."

I found out that the resistance to and the flinch from these things is what does the damage, not the use. That's a very subtle point for you to know in Class VI. Very subtle, so get that point down very well. It's the flinch from, you see. It's the suppression of; it causes you to feel dizzy and woggy and sick at your stomach. And invalidation of, is what causes

pain. Invalidation, of course, too, is an end word, but that causes pain. If you want to make somebody hurt like crazy just get him to get down, and say that it isn't true that there is a goal of something or other, something or other, which is a real goal, you see; or say it isn't true there is such an end word, and he's getting real excited about it, and the next confounded thing you know, he'll feel like he's being sawed up by a butcher's powered beef saw. What happened? Well, the liabilities then are the liabilities of contest with and dramatization of.

Contest with, is your greatest liability as a student. Even though you're afraid of something you're still in contest with it. It is that, and you are you. Afraid to do these things. Walking the chalk line about them. Being careful in consideration of them and those sort of things. Well that's, that's where the damage comes. Then you say, "Oh brother that's nowhere, that's really nowhere", you know. "That's no.... I wonder what the hell I'm thinking nowhere for, you know, what's all this nowhere. Tah, must be an end word. Ah, it's nowhere". You know, get the, get the delicate shift here, see.

Alright, so you're gonna keep saying nowhere and make yourself sick at the stomach and so forth and restimulate the end word "nowhere". Alright, that isn't going to worry you until you suddenly realize you are saying "nowhere" and to that degree dramatizing the thing, and then say you mustn't because it is an end word. Now, you get that subtle one? Because that's where you go over Niagara Falls in a barrel. It's right at that point, see. You say, "Well, I shouldn't be saying that because...". Don't you see?

Now, I've taken a new look at all this. So, you find out after a conversation with somebody or other that you're absolutely reeling. You've been talking about these things and the room goes out of plumb, and so forth. So it does. So what? Now, you really want to make it go out of plumb? "Well I mustn't really discuss this anymore". Well, you've knocked it all out of plumb with your locks. You see that?

Now, you find yourself dramatizing these things every once in a while but it's only a sin not to eventually catch yourself. I don't expect you not to dramatize them. They're only still here, so you're dramatizing something about space and matter, that's for sure, and time is passing, so you must be dramatizing collectively, something about time.

Alright! Well, let's figure this little other tiny nuance. You all of a sudden find that you're sitting there saying, "Tsk, problems, problems, problems, problems, now wait a minute, I must have an end word or something in restimulation", see. Even though it's next week before you find that out, see, and then not make the mistake of saying, "Well, I mustn't say problems any more to myself", see. Because the recognition of it is enough. You don't have to prevent the future, because that's an end word, too. [laughs] So the gist of the situation is that you're surrounded with these things and all you've done to date, until you collide with them in study, is simply dramatize them.

Now what's happening to you is you're finding out what you've been dramatizing. Your face, every once in a while, will be rather red on this subject. I, myself, pushed myself away from an auditing session. Just very mildly pushed myself from an auditing session and walked around the room for a little while once, and I came back and I sat down and I went over... there wasn't anything wrong. I was getting reads, everything was just fine. And I went over everything under the sun, moon, and stars that I could go over, and tried to compare eve-

rything that I had done and everything I hadn't done and I was looking for this and that and all of a sudden it occurred to me, I wonder what I'm trying to do here. Why am I reviewing everything that has happened here, you see. And then it suddenly struck me that the next goal up that I was about to run was "To create problems". I had simply been sitting there fearing problems. I laughed at myself and ran the next pair. That was the next one coming up. And I was – I was creating problems *like mad*. [laughter] You know what I mean? You can't actually expect not to do it. If you didn't do it, you wouldn't be part of the universe. Don't you see?

Your advance, is to some degree measured by your recognition of what you, yourself, are doing. And a real recognition comes about when you realize that you're making these things up and of course about that time they will cease to. Now there's a trap in all this of the tremendous quantitiveness of them. There appear to be so many that you become exhausted. The figures on this are variable. There's a slight variation in these figures but the best figures I have is 268 Roots and 268 end words. That makes it square. There are 18 RIs in a GPM – proper line plot – 268 root words in one series and 268 end words, or 268 serieses. Now if you multiply this one times the other, you'll find then, there are in excess of 23,000 GPMs.

Now that, of course, is so staggering, there's such an astonishing number that it makes you feel rather quivery on a subject of, "I've got to audit all these out and it's taking us a session, or in some cases it's taking us two sessions to run out a GPM, and we're doing turn about type auditing and I actually am only getting three sessions a week and I'm running one and one half GPMs a week and there are 23,000 of them to run out. So I can expect to be OT, of course, at the end of, something on the order of 33,000 weeks, or something like this. And 33,000 weeks divided by 52 gives you the nu... Oh my God!"

Well, of course, it's not the way it goes. This would be good pedantic mathematics but it doesn't happen to be an accurate situation. Once you've got your plot well oiled in, you're spending less and less time in trying to find your way down the bank. Don't you see? Once you've got... ninety percent of this work, by the way... well I'm not quite... yes, I'd say ninety percent of the work has been done on the organization of this. The consecutive adjacent goals and the consecutive adjacent end words are, are still in a state of polish. They're mostly known, don't you see, but they could be wiggled or wobbled to be here or be there, or be something of the sort, don't you see, but the trick was to get the pattern. Of course, the biggest trick was to find out it was there at all. But to get the pattern of this thing took me over a year and a half of some of the wildest most troublesome stuff I have ever been through. Very gruesome.

I look now on an auditor who can't find a few synonyms. He's got one, he's got one, "to spit," you know. He can't find the next goal which is "to expectorate." I rather look at this as being rather poor because the next goal "to spit" is to, of course – this is not a proper root word – the next goal "to spit" would of course be "to expectorate," see. It's to spit cats, the next goal is to expectorate cats, you see, and the next goal to it would be to spitee cats. Very imaginative. You've got "to run" is next to "to gallop", you see. To travel fast, to speed. They're just all tied together, the same word. Same word, and it's got to be checked out and the best thing to do this with is one of these New Rodell Word Finders. They're only available in the United States and they're very, very fancy. They've had a lot of college professors working on the thing and they were nicely keyed-in and they practically laid the bank out in

this thing unwittingly and unknowingly and you look up a list of synonyms, brother it will find the next door cousin in most of the cases.

What gives you trouble is you sometimes have prepositions and conjunctions in the goal. Usually just prepositions and you have to bend your wits around a little bit. You get a goal like – this is not a proper one but I'll just give you a form – "to run away from cats", see.

So what is the basic, the basic rundown here is the pattern. The pattern has been found and that is the most important part of any of this, is the pattern, because, you see, there could have been trillions of patterns possible. The bank is so charged. It is so full of locks that almost anything runs, almost anything reads. It's the woof and warp of life. You can walk your way through to what is the central pattern of all this, – forms auditing research papers which if stacked up here on this platform, would reach from the very far end of that platform to a height of about two feet, or three feet, all the way over to the other end of the platform. Just single sheets of paper, notes and records of running possible combinations. And it is actually quite agonizing to run these things backwards and upside down and wreck yourself like a fire drill. So, it's very difficult to find this pattern. You're being punished all the time for trying to find the right pattern. Don't you see?

There is no half way road to truth. Don't you see? A GPM, of which you have all of the items, which is properly worded, and so forth, runs like hot butter, providing you haven't skipped too many, or something. That's, that's that easy. But the GPM of which you have one word missing, or one preposition missing, runs with pure agony, see. This is no good. You have to be dead on. We're getting us to a point where we could be dead on, but it's very difficult, and that bridge has been very well crossed and we're very glad to be back. The listing the auditors are being asked to do at the present moment is just sign the adjacent consecutive GPM wording, see, that he's got there.

Now, they don't vary. Everybody has the same pattern. They all start in the same place and they all end in the same place and they all have the same wording. Some people have some holes in the track, however, where ages past they have tried to chew up a GPM and get free. And there'll be little holes, where just half of a GPM here and there is badly chewed up, and your most greatest liability there is running into an ARC break that occurred maybe thirteen trillion years ago. The greatest liability is the ARC break with the bank thirteen thousand years ago.

You all of a sudden are running down the track – this is rather rare but I'm just telling you what the score is – you get half way through this thing, the GPM, everything's running fine and all of a sudden it's all running bad and you wonder what's going on and you trace it up and the guy is looking at this or that and he can see things and he's upset about something or other and you find out that thirteen trillion years ago in an enthusiastic ambitious moment he decided to – he found this one – to bite this one in half, and tried to do something about it and chew it up and of course, he had the wrong goal and the wrong items.

Sometimes you get a read on an ARC break assessment – wrong goal, wrong item and you find out it was in yesteryear they were a wrong goal, wrong item. It had nothing to do with your auditing. It was some little self auditing this boy had done thirteen trillion years ago or more. You got the idea? You occasionally run into this. So, you've been trying to buck

these things for a long time. Of course, in several thousand of them there's maybe one half of one GPM chewed up, so this doesn't compose much of a problem but you can run into them.

So people have been at it and trying to do things about these things for a long time. They haven't gotten any place, they've gotten themselves stuck in trying to list something without a meter and without auditing discipline and without knowing the pattern, and so forth. They just pull in a lot of end words on themselves and they've been unhappy ever since. The most recent incident I know of was about 139 years ago, sitting on the side of Mount Per-nasus, cussin' these dam things. Messed them all up, pulled them all out of sequence, just cus-sin' them. Finally saw that there were these masses so I couldn't see the escape from the masses, so I couldn't properly exteriorize. I started cussin' them.

You'll find out this sort of thing has occurred. A person, of course, gets into this state. He doesn't know what these are, he doesn't know what they're all about. He doesn't know what they're composed of and he's already been bit two or three times when he's collided with these things so he doesn't want to know too much about them. Well, he has to know them dead right before they are completely painless and safe to live with. You have to go the whole road to truth.

Now, they are very, very simple in essence, the whole pattern is extremely simple. I can tell you in a very brief space of time. I'll write it down here. A Root word... let's, let's, let's be happy about the thing, the end word, although it sometimes doesn't sound very normal, is always a noun and a root word is always a verb of some kind or another. So, we've got something like this. We've got a complete GPM and this is what you know as own goal and that sort of thing. Let's go over this. And, it's "to eat cats." Let's, let's get this now. To Eat Cats. We notice here that we are on the end of this thing – cats – and that is an end word, and because that is an end word, there are going to be 268, or thereabouts, GPMs all ending in Cats in a row. You may not be at the beginning of it, you may not be at the end of it but you know that they're all in a row. There's 268 root words which end in cats and they're all consecutive and in sequence, see. We got, to eat cats – to dine on cats, you see – to consume cats – to digest cats, it'll probably be your next type of thing. Just a tiny bit of shift, you see, goes from eat to digest, and there's gonna be three like to digest cats, you see.

But they're all gonna be cats, cats, cats, cats and it's gonna be out there for 268 GPMs. Now a GPM consists of 18 RIs. Those RIs in 2 rows of 9 in each row and they begin with the goal as an RI at the bottom and they run on to the top. And I'm not gonna bother to tell you the line plot right now, but the line plot is posted in the theory room. 18 RIs in this line plot and one of the main difficulties you get into, is the line plot is itself and the end words are themselves and the root words are themselves and they don't much cross. So, if you had in the line plot "edible cats," which we don't have, you see, but if you had in the basic line plot "edible (blanks)," see, you would then get, "to eat cats" would read as a goal, because it reads off the line plot as a lock.

But it would check out as a lock if you're smart and clever and work hard and ask several times. Most of the reasons you fail to check is you – you fail on checking, you don't ask the second time, you don't ask what it is and you don't ask where it is. Ask if you've missed anything – you don't add that to your checkouts and that's when you miss on a checkout and

then you find out there's four hundred and sixty-five dozen reasons why you shouldn't have run that GPM that you were busy running, but you, you just didn't ask the question. So, of course, now the pc's in trouble and so forth. It wasn't consecutive, it was improperly worded.

"Is this an actual goal?", you ask; you get a read. Well if you get a read once, the pc might have just breathed, you see, hard or he might have had a heat wave hitting at that particular moment, or something like that. So, one read, oh puff. One read, phooey. You don't buy anything on one read. The question is, can you make it read again. Then you say, "Is this a correctly worded actual GPM?" Sometimes you got some knuckle-headed pc that insists, well you found out once, why should you be asking again. You find out that all of your repeat questions, and so forth, are being suppressed. So, you just have to handle that as an auditing problem. He's got duplication, or something like that, stuck as an end word. Don't you see? He doesn't want any duplication in his vicinity.

So, what's this, what's this cats? That's a... an end word, that's an end word. There are approximately, apparently, 268 of these things and they go plus-minus. And it would be something like – cats and catlessnesses – or something like that, see, or it would be something opposite to cats. We don't much care what's opposite to cats. It's what is opposite to cats that would appear on the end plot. But it's something that's definitely opposed – not, not dogs, you understand. Dogs as a beingness is opposed to cats. No, this is, this is the end word. But it would be an absence of cats. Don't you see? The end word isn't "an absence of cats," but that's what the end word would mean and you would express something like – catlessness – or something, you see. It's the opposite and... but what makes it difficult, is that it's only the end words which go positive-negative and that gets very confusing and that's very upsetting, but they go plus-minus in groups.

Now if you have something to do with positions or locations, and so forth, this just runs on endlessly. You've got all kinds of pluses and minuses with regard to, to positions and locations. And since the most assessable, accessible end words that you will collide with on a pc, the most... the best end words you collide with on a pc, are according to what I've seen anyway, is HERE. H-E-R-E – not plural, but H-E-R-E – and that, of course, has just above it – THERE – which is the opposite to HERE. Don't you see? And those are your pair of actuals, and go this way.

Now, there's these 268 of these end words and they go to the middle of track and then the sequence of plus and minus reverses on the word – NOW – which is in the middle of track. Here's the beginning of track, up this end, if you wanna have this end. It's at this end, and NOW is in the middle of the track and the PRESENT is at the furthest end of the track. Now the present just beyond it has the ABSENT. That makes life more interesting. You'd never find anything. HERE has several more toward PT but they all have to do with this kind of thing, you see. Most of them do... have to do with this kind of thing, they're plus and minus. But, what I'm trying to show you is, that the middle of track of NOW has got an earlier on one side and a later on the other side of it, so it's actually used twice as a positive, which switches the order, which switches the order of positive-negative. So that BEFORE pair to this NOW, the earlier half of the end word series. Just don't consider anything but this end word, see.

The earlier half of this end word series has the negative further away from the top of the bank. The negative is further away from the top of the bank, and the positive is nearer the top of the bank, by one, you see. But the NOW, up here to here, the negative... this causes tremendous grief, that's why I didn't find it at first... the negative is closer to the top of the bank than the positive. The positive is further away from the top of the bank. You understand? In other words, they do a switch because the center end word uses a double. It's double used positive. NOW, you see, has two negatives. So, if you work that out, you'll see that's very simple, that's very simple if you just write down plus as the middle of the track and then minus closer to PT and then a minus further from PT and then alternate pluses and minuses both directions. Then you'll find out that, of course, the first half of the track is opposite the other half of the track as far as the plus-minuses are concerned. You got that? Alright!

That is the way the end words lie and what's difficult about it, particularly difficult about it, is the fact that the track is really basically circular. But, you'll find out that there is a thing which answers up to being the top of the bank and you can get the pc into a lot of trouble if you run the "quote" beginning of the bank before you run this end of the bank. You understand me now? But there really isn't any. You got it? For some particular reason when time was finally plowed into it, and so forth, why HERE operates as top, or first thing to run. NOW, of course, operates as the middle of the bank. Something you won't get to until you're half done, and the PRESENT is the last thing you will run out. And, of course, those three things tend to lock up on each other which keep the bank with you all the time. Adroit, isn't it? And, of course, you don't find these negatives because of the obvious. See, you found HERE so, of course, you don't have THERE, see. Then you get things like EVERYWHERE and ELSEWHERE, see. That's another pair. So, it's pretty hard to navigate through these end words if you don't know the pattern.

But that is the pattern of these end words and it's – it's pretty easy to do. It's a positive-negative proposition. There is no numerical repeats. It doesn't go twenty-one earlier as the negative, or so forth, that trick isn't there. It's just... it's common just as I've given it to you. It's rather ordinary. You could sketch it out on a piece of paper. There's just middle of the track and the negative on each side of that plus word, comes on out to the ends and, of course, there's half of 268 end words this way from NOW and half of them the other way from NOW. So, it's elementary. Then they they tend to curve around and lock up and it makes the track look truncated at Goals because Goals, that's the big obsessive one, see. And it makes the track look truncated at that point, and the track will answer up as truncated and is runnable at that point but it isn't necessary to run it that way, see.

It doesn't really matter a cotton pickin', confounded, doggone where you run any of this as long as you don't run it blind. In other words you say, "We're running the fifteenth end word in sequence from the top of the bank" and telling the pc that it *is* the top of the bank will turn on a somatic because you've misplaced it. Don't you see? Because that restimulates placement and you get the somatic from placement. Don't you see? But if you just sawed into it and then you found out how many end words there were above it, and you said, "Well, we're running the fifteenth end word", the pc would say, "Alright" and you go on and run it and you do run it. You got the idea? It's nice to run it all in order but if you can't run it all in

order, don't run it blind. Know what you're missing, see. Know what you're missing in order to run it.

So anyway, the net gain of that is, that is the pattern of the end words and then these are the root words – TO EAT – EAT here we call the second word, just for lack of something because it's needed in the line plot as the second word, and the TO is just gratuitous, but TO EAT, you see, TO EAT is the root, what we call the root. And we did say root word. Who cares whether we use "word" or not, see. That's the root and there's 268 of these roots and you get one end word, it's got 268 roots. *Pocketa-pocketa-pocketa-pocketa*, 268 roots. And they all go in the same order and they have the same sequence of roots and they're in the same consecutive order for every end word. So if you've got CATS, you got these same 268 words for CATS. If you've got DOGS it's the same 268 words in that same exact order for dogs, don't you see.

This makes all kinds of interesting mathematical computations and so forth. You can take any random end word almost and add these root words to it and it sounds very, very significant indeed. You see that? So, there's always this same sequence of roots. Always the same, and that is the same 268, see. The only thing that changes then in essence – a series is this 268 roots with one end word, and the only thing that really changes in GPMs then, since the line plot is the same for every GPM, all 23,000 plus, or whatever the figure is, well, the only thing that ever changes in the GPM is the end word, and that only changes every 268 roots. So, it's a sort of slow freight, see, slow shift.

Now, the line plot is the independent items which fit TO EAT CATS. Now we've gotten it down to TO EAT CATS and that itself is a little bunch of mass and significance which is composed of 18 separate items, two columns of 9 each which are in opposition to each other and bring each other about. And those 18 items, each one ALWAYS has the same form and it changes just with the goal you are using. So if you had – just as a – an incorrect example, but nevertheless an example of it, you have EDIBLE BLANKS, see, why in the line plot, why this simply transposes into EDIBLE CATS. If you had an end word, ELSEWHERE, it would be EDIBLE ELSEWHERE'S. It would become plural if it's not already plural as an end word. The plurals are all taken care of in this. It's not difficult. So you have EDIBLE ELSEWHERE'S, see. And this line plot simply repeats in every one of the 23,000 GPMs.

It's just a substitution, you know, of what goal it does have itself and it's always the same, and it's always in the same sequence, and it always comes together that way, and it brings each other about, and locks each other in. And that line plot is so composed as to lock together GPM A and GPM B. In other words, GPM B is expressed in GPM A's bottom pair and in GPM B the bottom items of GPM A are expressed in it's top pair. In other words, these are nicely intermingling.

So we have an item at the top and an item at the bottom which directly refer to the adjacent GPM, see. So that's what keeps it, keeps it gripped together, see. And then those end words in sequence, they don't really grip together beyond shutting off from one and getting the idea, the next one and approaching it, and that's where they grip together. It's a sort of travel thing, see. A guy decides for GPM after GPM, "well we're gonna leave here now, we're gonna shove off, we're gonna skip it, we're gonna get out of here, we're gonna depart; yeah, I

better, I better, I better scam", and so forth and then eventually, magnitudinously thinks of the next one and it's first GPMs are just getting the idea there might be another one and considering this for a while and pondering and looking at it for a while, and deciding he would do something toward it and then approaching it and then getting near it and then eventually walking around, and arriving at it. You get the idea? And eventually he's there and there might be some trick interlocked between them, but... I wouldn't rule it out totally, but I haven't found one. I've just found these two adjacent GPMs go smoothly together. That is entirely, the total pattern of the bank. There is nothing more in the reactive bank than that.

These things run by the discipline of Scientology and you have to take very good care of the baker because the baker's making all this, and you never have to run out 23,000 GPMs for the excellent reason, sooner or later he's going to cognite he's doing it, and that's the end of it.

He can give you a false cognition that he's doing it and still have his head knocked off by the masses. He can sit back and decide to decide he's doing it, you see, so therefore, it'll all go away. Won't do him any good. It happens when it happens, not before. And actually it's a pretty long, gruesome, arduous run and it's run today by platen. It can be run easily by platen. Nothing to it. Just cut pieces of cardboard with the pattern of the GPM written on the tops of the cardboard and just fill in one word. Cut them out with a razor blade. And a platen is an L-shaped hole. Nine L-shaped holes in series, with the... your bottom part of the hole is what you write your data in. You just put them on an 8 x 13 sheet of paper and you don't even have to write all items. You go *pocketa-pocketa-pocketa*. When you first start in, you better write out the items.

But there's the, there's the whole composition of the track, there's the GPM, the auditing technology which runs it. It's very, very smooth auditing and draws it to an exact drain of charge of each one of these things in turn and the charge goes away very fast. Usually in one or two big reads and you position it one way or the other and eventually, why, you get in your X step. It's very rapid and frankly, running with a platen and so forth, you can dispense with one of these things about one a minute. If you got up to one a minute, and so forth, that's 23,000 minutes to OT, at the absolute outside because you never get to the 23,000 minutes. Sooner or later the guy's gonna say, well the hell with that, I'm making it all up. At that point he's gotta fly out of his body and straighten up the auditing room chairs by taking him out of his state.

But don't let anybody get away with the idea, "Well I realize I'm causing all these... caught, caught... things and..." you'll see that, by the way, that'll be very frequent. I know, I know people. So anyhow. Know them and love them, live with them, and straighten them out for the various reasons, but they do have their foibles, and they will crowd it [garbled]. They will push it, they will get anxious.

Alright! And that is the total composition of the bank. And there isn't anything else in the bank that you need to worry about because there isn't anything else in the bank because all engrams, locks, secondaries, and this is why we don't run them, implants and all other such bric-a-bracs, theta traps, all the rest of these things. Of course, they're all sitting as locks on

the GPMs. Now you say, well we can expect to go on and find the GPMs, they're sitting on locks someplace. Yes, they're sitting... they're all locks, on a thing called a thetan.

Thank you very much.

ORGANIZATIONAL OPERATION

A lecture given on 15 July 1964

Thank you.

See, I didn't even propitiate you by starting it early today. That's what's known as being strong willed.

What's the date?

Audience: 15th of July.

Fifteenth of July AD 14, Saint Hill Special Briefing Course and a lecture on Wednesday. And that's partially because I have an appointment tomorrow afternoon and partially because I want you to hear yesterday's tape again before you're examined on it. And before you hear that tape tomorrow afternoon, particularly people who have just started on this, you understand, you go get that glossary bulletin and tomorrow afternoon, why, you burn some time on that glossary of Class VI terms so that there's no slightest quibble in your head about what these various words mean. Got it? And burn that, and then you'll find mysteriously that the lecture emerges clean and clear and isn't confusing at all. You already got enough in lecturing on that material in terms of restimulation not to add, you see, the other liabilities that could be connected with it, do you see? So, get your – get your nomenclature down before you rehear that tape.

All right. That's besides the point. I haven't anything to talk to you about today. I don't know why I had a Wednesday lecture. There isn't anything to talk about anyhow.

There were some things one could talk about offhand that I've been dealing with lately which are somewhat amusing; and amongst them is organizational operation and has to do with personnel operation and it has to do with a lot of things of that particular lineup. And it also has to do with the fact that you as a Scientologist very often find yourself in the sphere and realm of business activities and promotions. Whether you like it or not, your practice very often carries you into this perimeter.

Now, along at the Level of I, advice – and particularly the Level 0 – advice is part and parcel of your stock in trade. Now you say don't evaluate for the preclear. Who's a preclear? You understand? Who's a preclear? Now, your perimeter of action goes out wider than simply sitting down and processing somebody. And if you go on and think of a Scientologist as somebody who only audits, then you have a very limited view of Scientology. Scientology is the science of life, and life is composed of lots of factors. And amongst these factors are the economic woof and warp which makes the trap and cage that keeps civilizations interiorized into themselves. Amongst these various factors of life are the other dynamic relationships besides the first. There are, after all, eight dynamics.

Now, we take one individual and he is being processed and we tell him what to think about a process – of course, we've had it. That's evaluation. But advice is not evaluation – I mean, it's not auditing evaluation. Now, because that is part of your auditing discipline, you very probably eschew it when you get into the other perimeters. But it's very difficult to audit a group and it's very difficult to audit mankind.

Now, the best way to approach the problem, of course, is the auditing of individuals, because a group is simply a collection of individuals and the basic building block of a group, as the communist and socialist has totally overlooked, is the individual. There is no such thing as "the masses." The reason they go in for the masses – it's a GPM end word. It doesn't mean people at all. It means MEST, so they make that exact mistake and they say then people are MEST because they go in for the masses, don't you see? Very simple how they make this particular mistake.

But there are eight dynamics. There are definitely eight dynamics and when you move off the first dynamic with regard to the pc – his eight dynamics now, you see – when you move off that first dynamic with regard to the pc, you're into the remaining dynamics. And, of course, second dynamic isn't just sex. That's the creation of forms, bodies, that sort of thing and that includes the family. And you will find the roughest, roughest, roughest points in interpersonal relationships between this fellow's first dynamic and other, and so forth, that occurs in the second dynamic.

A person can be ripped to pieces very easily because it's so intimate to the first dynamic, you see. The second dynamic is very close there and it's not close simply because it is – been named number two. It is – it is very close.

Now, of course, the next thing adjacent to the individual beyond that is the group. The individual joins a group and you have a group as something which is a collection of individuals. Now, this collection of individuals is again a more stressful thing than the remaining dynamics, once more, closer – and the loyalty to a group, the conflict of this group with other groups... In this you have, of course, business, you have social activities which are of much less importance to the individual in this particular type of society, or even in a socialist society, than business.

In fact, the toughest dynamic to have anything to do with in Russia today is the business third dynamic and that's because their basic premise is – is: "There ain't no business know-how because you can't make a profit, you bum." That's their, I think, their more educated view of the subject. They're a bunch of people that haven't even got their shoes on with regard to this sort of thing. See, they're all running around barefoot on the tacks.

So, they found out that some of their tractor factory boys were trying to expedite à la Henry J. Kaiser. Well, of course these birds had to expedite for the excellent reason that they would be shot up against a wall or something of the sort if they didn't meet their quota of tractors. So, they knew which side their vodka was going to be pouring in on and they promptly – and which way their lifeblood was going to be pouring out of – so they probably got ahold of some Horatio Alger, Jr., textbook or something on the subject, and they heard of expediting. And they said, "Gee, that's a good idea – expediting." The way you expedite is to pay a bonus or give a favor for getting the stuff you want in order to run the place.

They thought this was a marvelous idea – in other words, the introduction of the reward system which is unheard of. You're not supposed to get any rewards in the communist system. That's why it doesn't work, you see? They've – they've taken 50 percent of Pavlov. If you ring the bell and beat the dog, why, that's as far as they got in the textbook. If they'd gone down the rest of the paragraph they'd found out that you also had to feed the dog to train him to the other half of the reaction. And that's not missing in Pavlov but it's missing in their handling of people, see? The reward factor.

For instance, they can't get anybody to produce in Cuba. Well, everybody's trying to produce in Cuba just for one reason – they're going to get shot if they don't produce. You know, viva the state, you see? And therefore they're supposed to produce. These thoughts just don't even go together, see? The state is commonly thought of by somebody as a nonproduction type unit to such an extent that a government, trying to produce something – it can spend more money trying to produce something it could have bought at Woolworth's... It's marvelous.

If General Motors or somebody exclusively was producing the space program, for instance, you'd find out it would fit well within their automotive manufacturing budget and nobody would ever hear about it. But the government get ahold of it, see, wow, see. One rocket – one rocket, oh, man, that's – huh – oh, that'll be a 100 million dollars, that's per rocket, you know? It's typical, see?

So, people don't think easily in terms of government and production, see? But in these socialist, communist states they've got these two factors jammed together. And then they've neglected the other half of Pavlov: the reward system.

Now, the dog – the dog trained and reacted the way he was because when you showed him a circle and gave him food, he's being rewarded for seeing a circle, see? And he could only be driven crazy because he was being rewarded when he saw the circle. They think he was being driven crazy because he was punished when he saw the square. The way they were driving him psychotic – you know, they drive a dog psychotic. This was the high peak of Pavlovian act. They could actually create psychosis in a dog and have been doing it in Russia ever since.

And what they would do is show a dog a – this experiment's run both ways – but they'd show a dog a circle on a screen, a projected circle, you see, and give him some pork chops or something, you see, and he'd get all educated to the idea that when he saw a circle, he was going to be fed. And then they'd throw a square on the screen and beat him.

And the point I'm trying to make here is that the square finally equated to the dog, "I am now going to be beaten," see? And then they would continue to use these symbols in association and reduce the circle till it was more squarish, and make the square so that it was more circlish, and when these two things moved into a merger, then the dog couldn't tell whether he was going to be fed or going to be beaten and so he would go crazy. And he'd develop a real, first class psychosis. And of course, this destroyed his stable data – it gave him a stable data and then it destroyed it, see? And then it substituted the wrong stable data for each other, see, so that he couldn't then tell the difference and he got into a total identification of eating and being beaten and so he couldn't tell the difference, so he'd go screaming mad. And the dogs

would howl and scream and so forth and go nuts and have to have prefrontal lobotomies. That's the only effective treatment for psychosis, you know. That's the only effective one. It's just to cut out the brain because that's, of course, what people think with. Everybody knows that. Joke.

All right, now, look at – look at this. There's a reward factor there, see? Everybody adjudicated it on the basis – and the adjudication was that it was the – mostly beatings, you see? But there was a reward factor there.

And that reward factor, destruction of, was more contributive to the psychosis than the punishment. That's something that you – that because it's a softer, quieter thing, it is something that people overlook. It's the carrot. See. It's not a study in punishment – not a study in crime and punishment. It's a study of rewards. So that in Cuba, it's all very well to try Pavlovian... By the way, Pavlov was whistled up at the Kremlin by Stalin – this is not rumor I'm telling you; this is the truth – he was whistled up to the Kremlin by Stalin about 19 – , I don't know when it was, think about 28, and he was put in a room and (I hope it didn't have a bell in it and a square screen, but...) and he was told – I should say invited, I should be sarcastic about it and say invited – and to write everything he knew about dogs that could be applied to human beings. And he turned out about a 400 page manuscript which is – anybody knows – nobody has ever seen outside the Kremlin. And it is the textbook on which communism goes forward. Quite interesting, isn't it?

And so their love-hate cycles and a lot of things become immediately explained. You'll find out they'll go on a big pitch of love, love, love, you know, and how wonderful the United States is and how wonderful this outfit – "Oh, I love you all. We are going to write big treaties and let's all be buddies and have another drink of vodka," and then the next thing you know it, the calendar loses a few sheets and it's "Hate, hate, hate, kill them. You mustn't do this; you must take your U-2 planes out of our soup and..." you know? "And we hate you and you ought to all go die and you're capitalists and warmongers," and so forth and then a few more pages of the calendar falls off and so forth and it's "Love, love, love – we love you," and so on.

And of course, the type of fairy that they employ in the State Department, of course, is completely unable to cope with either love or hate and he, of course, has never figured it out. It's in any textbook of anybody who knows anything about communism. But he never figured it out. So he always falls for the love cycles and resists the hate cycles, you see? Proper thing to do is just to start a love cycle, you see, when they start a hate cycle and drive them nuts. See, they'd go mad. They wouldn't know what to do. A handleable situation on the third dynamic – all you'd have to know is their textbook.

You had to know what they're trying to do and then reverse the effect and of course then you could create an effect on it and the West wouldn't be backing up and losing wars. And for a long time, you know, I expected the North Korean flag to be flying over the White House. After all, there were half a dozen soldiers there and they could all shoot guns and seemed like at any moment they were going to effect a landing on the western coast and march on the White House. At least that's the thing it looked. Here was the most powerfully

armed nation on Earth, you see, being backed up by a few rifles, you know? That was the silliest thing anybody ever saw.

Well, how was such a thing as that engineered? Well, it's engineered by psychological warfare. It's engineered by mental tricks of one kind or another. They had everybody hypnotized into believing that they could fly bombers out of Chinese and Manchurian bases and bomb South Korea but nobody must touch that, and Truman was so hypnotized into believing this... It was just propaganda, you see? Wasn't any reason why anybody couldn't do it. Nobody would have gone to war. China was in no state to go to war with anybody. MacArthur said, "I've got to be able to attack those bases," so Truman sacked him instantly. You want to know the power of the mind and power of propaganda – here was the president of the United States busily fighting the war for Russia, see? That's the way wars are fought. They are fought mentally these days. Of course, a war isn't a war at all anymore. It'd be a twenty minute *sfugh*, see? So, nobody can fight a war so this only leaves the significance.

Now, you see there are two things – there are two things in a GPM that give you trouble, and naturally you can say, well, one of these things is a product of the other thing, it's just an idea of it and all this sort of thing. You can rationalize it out of existence if you want to. But the truth of the matter is that they do exist and you do experience them, and that's significance and mass. And when a person is driven out of mass he has to go into significance. This is your figure-figure type, see? He can never do anything or handle anything, touch anything or reach anything, but boy can he think. He thinks himself in lots of triangles and squares and battle royals, you see? This is – who was the character that was always so very, very timid but yet was going around dreaming up – some comic strip character...

Audience: Walter Mitty.

Hm?

Audience: Walter Mitty.

Aw yeah, Mitty. That's the boy. And this is a Mitty, you know. He can figure-figure and dream-dream, you know, but – and so on. He has a ball. But if you ever had put a – well, actually – a lit firecracker in his hand, even a small one, you see, why, he would have turned gray overnight, you know? Well, he's fallen away from mass and force and he only has one refuge – idea. Now, they actually go – he has the refuge of ideas, don't you see. That's called an unbalanced character. He's all ideas and no do. He can think, yes. See. But do, no. See, he can't handle mass.

Now, there's the other side of the thing which is equally unbalanced and people think that this is the only side there is, and that is that a person is very beefy and very brawny, but can't think, you know? And we hear of this character all the time. The football hero who can't pass any of his subjects, you know? And I know of one. I saw him come in here one time. He was bringing to me – in a new organ, a new Wurlitzer. And he carried it in the front door, and Bonwick was – Bonwick was sort of tagging along behind not carrying very much weight and this boy just packed this Wurlitzer organ in through the front door. He never even cracked or damaged – he set it down very easily and gently, don't you see? Very, very interesting. And he's a little bit on the dull side.

So, you very often see this but it is not necessarily the case, you see. That is not necessarily – because somebody can handle mass well does not mean he can't think. But you do see it overbalanced occasionally that the individual handles mass very well, and so forth, and yet can't think at all. So you see, these two factors of mass and significance do go together in the field of the mind and can become overbalanced so that a person can only think but can't handle mass or a person can only handle mass and can't think. And there is no reason why a person can't handle mass and can think, see? That's the ideal combination. You very often find this one to be the case.

Similarly, an occupational activity where an individual is only handling mass and doesn't have to think will bring him to a point where he has a little difficulty thinking. You see, you could occupationally move yourself into this perimeter, too. And the sedentary worker who does nothing but think eventually gets to believe that he can't have much to do with mass and mustn't handle mass, don't you see?

So, he can sort of professionally move himself into these things, not only by aberration but by practice and activity, see? He can sort of live that way. He's saying all the time, "Well, I have to sit up here in the office and do all these contracts so the workmen will have something to move. And there they are down there running those Caterpillars and big earth movers, and so forth, and I've got to keep those things moving and I sit up here in the office..." And eventually he'll get the idea that he mustn't. Well, actually, he really – if he was going to keep the business running – he really couldn't go down there and also run those earth movers and so forth from the seats, you see? That would be too much of a split of attention; and that is the limitations of the society in which we live.

It's a doozy of a society for making you concentrate and specialize in something. Which means that it gives you an awful lot of things that it tells you you mustn't confront. And basically it is only telling yourself that there are certain things you mustn't handle and confront that moves you into any groove and lets you find yourself up some blind alley someplace.

Now, getting back to what we were talking about, in Cuba there, all they'd have to do is tell all the Cubans – all the Cuban guys, you see – that if they met their quotas, they'd all get a brand-new pair of high-heeled shoes or a wild-colored sport shirt and tell the girls they'd have a good-looking dress if they met their quota, see? All of a sudden they'd have production; because there's the reward side of the system, you see. See, the reward side of the system is actually more workable and functional than the punishment side of the system. Now, punishment, if it's strenuous enough and tough enough and certain enough, can occasionally seem to accomplish something.

I think a classic example that always sticks in my mind, when I looked at the Citadel de Christophe of Cap Haitien in Haiti and that thing was built over a period of years by Christophe, the great emperor of Haiti – and he was a tough boy. And they couldn't move a stone up the hill. There'd be a hundred man standing there – this is a fantastic structure; it's in the very best French siege-craft tradition, and so forth. He surrendered. It's still full of powder and shot, by the way, and he surrendered it. He merely became dispirited. And he went up there; he was feeling kind of bad and he was retreating before the oncoming forces, don't you

see, and he just sort of said, "Well, I can't hold out; the hell with it." The whole place full of powder and shot and he just threw in his chips.

It didn't matter how many stones had been put up there. It was, after all, the attitude of the man which surrendered the place, not the assault, and he didn't think it was worthwhile to go on living. He felt there was no reward in living anymore so he surrendered the whole citadel. He just gave it up, that's it. Blew his brains out and that was the end of it.

That was a very impressive structure and his method of building that is a classic. He'd have a hundred men trying to move one of these heavy stones up the hill and they couldn't move it, so he'd turn around to his guards and he'd say, "Shoot every tenth man." And they would. And he'd tell the remaining ninety, "Move that stone up the hill." And they would. See? Enough punishment, enough threat and so forth.

But then this has what? This is denying the person the reward of having a body and going on living and breathing. So, it's again not punishment but the denial of a reward. See, when you get it right down to that fundamental, it's the denial of life. You're not going to take life away from him; you're just going to deny him the rewards that life give him, whatever rewards they are.

And it's very funny that a slave or something like this will still hang on to life. He'll still go on living up to a point – under duress and so forth. But he's being rewarded to some degree all the time.

When the individual is no longer rewarded and when the individual is not in any way handled from a standpoint of reward and there's no reward figured into the setup of his existence, because if he's not getting anything out of it – an Americanization of this approach and that's a very crude materialistic, because rewards are many things, see – but if he wasn't getting anything out of it, why, he wouldn't play that game, see?

Now, that's a crude materialistic rendition of this which more or less gets this idea into trouble. The truth of the matter is there are many rewards and so on. There's the – just the satisfaction of having done your job okay, you see? That's a reward. It doesn't have to have somebody come up... Now unions and that sort of thing go on the basis that reward is totally and only a paycheck, so they're raising hob with the societies at this particular time, you see, on reward of a paycheck.

I could get seven strikes started for every one they've got started right now using the same principles I'm talking about now in reverse. I would show them how there were certain things, rewards, which they probably could obtain from the work of being postman and postal workers which they were not obtaining. I could think of a brand-new series of rewards, you see, because I'm dealing with a basic equation, not how many bucks they got and what's the cost of living and how many pounds, shillings and pence this all amounts to. No, let's go on it on a fundamental. Let's say the reward is the thing which they're – the line which they would most easily travel. All right, very good.

Let's figure out some reasons for postmen to strike using it reverse. We'd wind up with some very interesting answers. We'd get such things as, well, large business houses and so forth aren't sufficiently respectful to the postman and they never thank him for the mail. See?

So, you could – you could actually – let's put it – let's put this on this little, tiny basis. Now, you'd be surprised what a stir that would make amongst postmen.

I mean let's just take it to an almost ridiculous tininess, you see, and insist that part of their conditions of work and so forth, that they only delivered mail to people who thanked them for bringing it. You'd be surprised how many guys would sort of go overboard sideways for you on that one, see? Had nothing to do with pay; had nothing to do with anything, you see? All right, now let's just start adding to that and add some sensible ones, you see; add some sensible ones and so forth. And let's have the post office authorities, and so forth, providing better looking uniforms, easily carried packs, don't you see, have them providing more status for the postmen, better working quarters – did you ever see the back end of one of these post offices? You could start adding this up, don't you see, on the basis of status – this is the way you'd figure it out, you see – status, and respect, you see, and acknowledgment. You start figuring it out in these particular directions and so forth, you got a ball now.

Postmen will walk around, drive around and so forth – shouldn't be working six days a week. They should go on different types of shifts. And you would find, however, that it isn't necessarily true that all strikes must occur on the basis of more pay and less work.

Now, I could as easily get a strike started on these bases for not being permitted to work enough, see? It's actually a dirty trick to play on a bunch of workmen – the idea that they are being overworked – because that's the sympathy line and that would be a very, very bad thing to pull on a group of workmen because it's a no-confront. Now, let's see where this no-confront leads.

You say this is a very wandering sort of lecture I'm giving you. No, I'm not. I've taken you up as far as the third dynamic. Well, people don't get much further.

You, someday, will get further up into the fourth – the fourth versus another fourth. Well, you say, "Yeah, this planet is the fourth dynamic – all men on this planet, that's the fourth dynamic." Yes, that's what I said, too, see. So, fourth versus a fourth. You, as operating as a Scientologist, you're going to see this. What's going to happen? What's going to happen when one race of beings comes in collision with another race of beings? I'm not trying to go space opera on you; I'm just being sensible about this, I mean... Well, you say, "Well there must be some kind of an idea here where we're dropping back into groups." No, because culture would be so different – even body form, communication factors, technology, beliefs, ideas of what they should be doing and what was right and what was wrong and what was moral and immoral – would be so wildly different that you wouldn't even have a man, you see? He might even have a man's shape but he wouldn't be a man.

If you were to listen to a rocket jockey's morals and what's right and what's wrong for a rocket jockey from some other civilization, and listen to this for a while, your hair would stand on end. Now, we compare this to an airline pilot's ideas of what's right and what's wrong on this planet, and we've got two widely, screamingly different approaches. We've got two cultures here. See, they're entirely different. What are the rights of one; what's the rights of the other? In other words, we've got too great a disparity.

And we get up into the fifth dynamic, we've got the plant world and I don't notice the plant world talking to man very much. Man sometimes talks to it, but it doesn't say much. And animals have very little to say and so forth. They aren't allowed to vote.

Now we get up into the sixth dynamic and we have MEST and it doesn't talk at all. It never has anything to say. Some people hear voices coming out of it occasionally, but it really, in actual fact, hasn't got anything to say for itself. If you melt it up and put it in a crucible, why, it sizzles but it doesn't say "no," you see. Its resistances are plotted in terms of retaining its form or refusing to attain a form or refusing to condense or expand. It's just the resistances, don't you see?

Now, we get up into the seventh, as far as man is concerned today, he is so out of communication even with himself on the seventh dynamic that we frankly don't have to worry about that one at all in our present coverage.

And when we go into the idea of supreme beings or gods or big thetans or something like that, well, we've just taken the whole curve all the way around and the only thing we've got on this planet today is just pure nuttiness on this subject, see – the theory of the big thetan, see. Actually, the big thetan theory is simply one of the GPMs and it – there's end words that have to do with gods and things like this, you see. And there's one of the root words – several of the root words – have to do with worship and so forth and it's just goofiness, see? There isn't anybody – there isn't anybody, any big thetan around who's permeating everything, that just because you say, "Now, please give me cake and ice cream for my supper tonight," is going to suddenly go into a brown study and wonder how to get you cake and ice cream tonight, see. There just is no such being.

And if you're in trouble, you'd better not go out and think that some big thetan someplace is going to be interested, even if he existed, in some ant who couldn't bother – if he couldn't get his antennae out of a crack of a rock. Believe me, he isn't going to give a second's thought to this. It would scare you within – to gray hairs if he did; all of a sudden huge hand scoops out of somewhere and... Probably you'd die from shock if it occurred. [laughter] Plot it yourself on your own attitude toward insects. You sometimes help an insect but mostly it's sort of amusing and – usually the devil with it.

And you get into this idea of the big thetan and all that sort of thing. You're not into the field of religion; you're just into the field of the GPMs again. That doesn't mean that there couldn't be big thetans. That doesn't mean that there couldn't be godlike beings. But let me assure you, that man's idea of them is so laughable as to cause you to roll on the floor for a half an hour and hold in your sides.

I think one of the best commentaries on this – Mark Twain did some very interesting commentaries on it – and I think Ingersoll was the great atheist. He had a lot to say about it. The only thing I find very amusing about Mark Twain – the second that you begin to read about god and holiness, you're just reading one of the longest parades of end words and root words I think I have ever laid my eyes on. His essays on this subject are just absolutely planted. If they're just – they just run consecutively, you see – end word, end word, end word, root words, root words, root words, end words, you see? And gets quite interesting because he must have been keyed in like crazy on that particular subject. He was mostly mad at it and

making fun of it. He wasn't taking really a very rational view of it. Some of the things he had to say were quite amusing.

But it... the people say, "Well, Ron is against God." No, Ron is against people making a fool out of God, if God exists. I think if there's any god around who single-handedly built this universe, he's probably so plowed into it by this time that it's probably it's him that needs help, not us. [laughter] And you could find – you could probably found a whole church on the basis of "help God, he needs your help," you know?

But you see how interiorized people are on this particular dynamic or scope of action which is the superior life being, you see, is all that it's the dynamic of. And there are always going to be superior life beings around so that it is a dynamic and a definite dynamic, and it's been muddied up by GPMs, but it's definitely there, don't you see? There is something there, but it's simply in a psychotic state. Look how interiorized it is if everybody thinks *it* is going to help *them*. They say God, well therefore they worship it – it's somehow or other going to do something for them, and so forth.

Well, I want to show you the common denominator all the way up the line on all of this is simply understanding and communication. And where you run into difficulty – where you run into difficulty on any dynamic including the first difficulty of the first dynamic, which is the inability to know self, you see, from that period right on up dynamic after dynamic, the only reason you have trouble inside a dynamic, or one dynamic with another dynamic, is communication factor, and the less communication is feasible the more trouble you actually would have in doing something with it, not necessarily the more trouble you would have with it, because it might be so out of communication, you're unaware of it. But the breakdown is in the field of communication and then once communication has been established – understanding.

Now, the rocket jockey from some other technology appearing here, if he could speak our language, compared with what an airline pilot here would think was right and wrong and what he should do about his job, even though he spoke English, this rocket jockey would not be understood by most. Do you see? He'd not be understood by most. He would say, "Well, the pilot of a plane is expendable." That's his first duty: to be expendable. And you'd say, "Well what's the matter, I thought he was supposed to protect the equipment." Oh, he wouldn't protect equipment. That's very cheap, see. And right away you'd sort of hang up. "Well, where does he get the idea that he's – that his first duty is to be expendable? Must be a very dangerous business and they've hypnotized him into believing something or other about it so there'd be any rocket jockeys at all." But you just... you understand, I'm not trying to give you an answer to that, I'm just trying to say you'd be figuring, you see. You would be in a non-comprehension even if you had the understand. See, you'd have the affinity and reality would therefore breakdown.

So, you have the English culture and the German culture. The language is different so they had basic difficulties in talking to each other, but even the slight difference of the cultures was such that even when they spoke the same language they still didn't understand each other well enough to do anything but go to war. And they periodically been going to war for a very long time. See. And they'll go to war again. Germans sitting over there saying, "We've

got to get them damned Englishers," and so forth, and... Sunday Times pictorial up here, it's stuck in 1914, man. Every few issues, why, here's this 1914-18 war cropping back up again, and so forth.

You go out and try to sell Germans to Englishmen and you're not going to make much progress. The only reason they're standing there politely is because the English believe that every man should have his say. This fools a lot of people. They believe this implicitly. It isn't necessarily true because he says it, but certainly every man should be permitted to say it and so forth. You can often get into trouble by interrupting an Englishman before he's finished talking. He thinks you're ungentlemanly. That is really more important than what's being discussed. That's right.

German doesn't operate that way. I'm just giving you the idea. The German's approach even to communication is entirely different. If a corporal in the army is three days superior in rank – you know, he got his corporalship three days before the next corporal – and he is speaking and the other corporal even looks like he's going to change his expression, see they just chop him to pieces. And if the junior corporal is talking, it doesn't matter where he has progressed to, the fact that he is the junior corporal makes him fair game to be cut off at once – loudly, harshly and instantly.

Whereas in England, you'd see the Lord of the Manor sitting there patiently, patiently, man, while the fifth gardener is telling him all about his marital affairs and how he is in trouble down in the cottage. So he'd just sit there and listen to it all the way through till the man is finished talking. He's liable now to say something rather rude and curt to him, but he has heard him. You understand?

The German superiority is the right not to hear. "I'm your superior so I don't have to listen to you." See?

All right. Let's take those two little things and look at the number of wars. The reason I don't throw America into that particular thing is because America is so muddled up with Germans and so muddled up with English, and so forth, that it is about as easy to trace the antecedents of – as one of these dogs you see running down the street of East Grinstead. [laughter] Can't do it, see. But you have two races here which are – have a definite similarity. They carry back to some degree. They're mixed, of course, in many ways. But they have developed different cultures and there have been a number of wars and they've been very savage wars. And they were all about nothing.

The British no more would have let – knocked off that war with Hitler than anything, see? They just wouldn't have knocked it out. The only thing Hitler wanted, as far as I can tell from the historical records, is try to knock the war off, see? He was holding up, holding up, holding up trying not to fight that war on this front. He was thinking, "Boy if I could just not fight this war I could lick the Russians," see. And he couldn't get anybody to listen to him. See. And the English on their side says, "Well, we have no idea whatsoever what the devil Hitler's trying to do, but we know one thing – Germans." See?

Now, the British didn't even feel bad about any of the various atrocities that Hitler was involved in. You try to trace why and there is no good reason. It's kept historians busy for a long time trying to figure out exactly what is the causes of this war. Well, that's why so many

words have been written on it. They're not isolatable, see, as little pinpoint causes of this, that, or the other thing. No, there's these basic causes of no communication and the basic causes of no understanding.

Of course, our sympathies in this, of course, go with the British. I fought by their side throughout that war and so forth, but I just – using these as two rather pure examples. And here they sit within a stone's throw of each other.

You don't drive a Jaguar very, very fast, see – you don't drive a Jaguar fast into the southeast. You find yourself almost instantly on a boat and you're almost instantly off the boat. There's not enough water there to get your feet very wet, and then, if you kept on driving that Jaguar for just a few minutes, see, you would find yourself in Germany. I mean, there is no distance involved. You could hitchhike it, you see? It's not the distance between Rhode Island and Delaware, see. There's no distance involved from here over to Germany and yet hardly anybody goes over to Germany. You think it's a long way away. It is not a long way away.

In a racing car, and so forth, Suzie and I had an awful hard time trying to get the brakes on. We did! We got the brakes on in time to stop in Germany, and so forth. We might have gone right on through into the Balkans, too, because these are all rather postage stamp. And we did insult the whole duchy of Luxembourg. It was touch and go for a few minutes one time down in Luxembourg whether or not we would be let out of the country or arrested on sight or something of the sort, because we'd insulted the whole Grand Duchy of Luxembourg at one fell swoop with – so much so that I even feel guilty sometimes listening to their Radio Luxembourg down there enjoying its program. I should write through and ask for a royal pardon or something. But I'd just gotten – I'd just gotten myself oriented in Luxembourg and I was stopped, see, and the guard – the guard asked me all about it and I started answering the questions about entering Luxembourg and he told me I was leaving Luxembourg and I wouldn't believe it because I hadn't gotten into Luxembourg yet, see? So, of course, he had a wonderful case staring him in the face of illegal entry. It must be illegal entry. The man doesn't even know he's leaving Luxembourg! [laughter] Very confusing.

Anyway, you look over this situation: what then causes, on each one of these dynamics, trouble? We're not wondering what causes them to be different dynamics, you see, but what causes – what causes the trouble. You've got dynamic one. What causes the dynamic one? Fellow's out of communication with himself and his own bank and can't understand himself. All right, that's trouble on unit one.

On unit two he's gotten all out of communic... I mean on dynamic two – on dynamic two he's gotten all out of communication with the second dynamic and he doesn't understand the second dynamic.

Third dynamic; He's gotten all out of communication on the – subject of the third dynamic and he doesn't understand the third dynamic.

On the fourth dynamic he's gotten all out of communication, very out of communication, with all other fourth dynamics. And he doesn't understand the point of where most people hearing me say something about it say, "Well, of course, he used to write science fiction, naturally." You know, they wouldn't even – here's this universe expanding to infinity as far as

everybody's concerned and man pronounces this idiocy that we are the only race and technology alive in it anywhere. You even read in the field of science fiction, how all life spread out from Earth. Oh, come off of it. I was so amused about this I once wrote – read a story about this marvelous civilization that these fellows were exploring and that they were mining, and so forth, and they were simply mining the liver of a worm in a larger apple, but the – just to sort of sneer at them, see, the vast importance of this civilization, you see. The highest peak of its space travel eventually was able to mine the liver of a worm in an apple in a larger civilization, see?

Now, no other fourth exists! Well, how out of communication can you get? You'll find the similar situation if you go out and look very hard today into some back desert some place or another. You're going to find some tribe some place or some bushman some place or some Pygmy some place or something like that who won't believe that any other races exist. They won't believe that such a thing exists as white men, and that you're telling them fancy stories because you say there are white men. They're liable to get very nasty to you when you insist you're just another race and not a god. They'll instantly put you on another dynamic like they put Columbus – much to their dismay eventually. Motors often act like gods but seldom are.

Now, you get into this and there's just a total breakdown on the subject of communication so, of course, there's no understanding even attempted on the subject. But we do have this little thread of science fiction literature that runs through the society that attempts it but it's mostly full of menace. And science fiction editors are to a point if an author sends them a story which has to do with invasion from the men from Mars, they will reject it instantly just because it is a story of an invasion. They're so tired of these stories, in other words, a cliché. It's no longer an original story.

We must assume that if there is another culture we would be at war with it. Hey, there's a wild assumption. If another culture existed we would be at war with it and they would be attacking us. Well, that's a wild stable datum to have. You haven't met the other culture. You don't know anything about their intentions at all. But the instant assumption is that it would be they're angry at you and ready to attack you and eat you all up. I think that's a fascinating point of no communication, see – they can't communicate with them at all – and no understanding and then also that no understanding would be necessary because, of course, we'd just fight them. These are interesting assumptions.

Now we get out into the fifth and you're talking to dogs and that's fairly easy. And dogs are often trying to talk to you and cats try to talk to you and you talk to cats, and people run off at the mouth most remarkably talking to animals. And animals do fine though as long as you talk to them. They expect you to communicate and they're very happy about it and they actually lack vocal chords more than they lack ideas to say back, see?

And Vixie out here, she's gotten up to a point of where she's trying hard to... I don't know where – she must have some... these Welsh dogs must have been unthinkably careless. She must have some cat in her ancestry, you know, because she purrs, little corgi dwarf, you know, and she purrs. She's gotten so she purrs. That's her effort to communicate with me, see. She doesn't purr to anybody else that I've ever listened to. Maybe she's doing it now, but she tries to purr. Sounds very funny to hear a dog purring. But she's picked up to the fact I talk to

her so she tries to talk back, don't you see, trying to make a communication. Well, there's a lot of understanding there, don't you see? So here is an understanding that really is not dependent on communication because the communication exists only in the crudest form of contact and awareness. It doesn't exist in the form of significance and meaning to amount to anything, you see? So understanding in that particular case can exist, you see?

Understanding can exist independent of the significant communication. That's an interesting thing. So you don't always have to have perfect communication, see, as long as you've got understanding. Your reality and affinity will go on right on up without the significance of the communication expressing itself at all and that continues on out through the fifth dynamic. And we automatically assume that certain things in the fifth dynamic and so forth – but we can look around and we can see them functioning between certain parts and kinds of men and the fifth dynamic, but if we look into the fifth dynamic we find out it internally is consistently and continually at war with itself. There's creepers up choking trees and there's wasps having a ball with caterpillars and there's warfare so there's not much mutual understanding inside the fifth dynamic.

And just because man can speak to the fifth dynamic often puts him into some odd state of high affinity – perfectly all right – of high affinity, don't you see – this isn't what makes it odd – high understanding, you see, high reality and so forth with regard to other parts of the fifth dynamic. Because you see, man has also made himself part of the fifth dynamic, and he has a feeling in this direction.

Every once in a while you'll notice some being or another who has gone completely overboard on this thing and they'll only talk about the gorgeousness of the birds and bees and how nice and sweet it is and how sweet everything is and how nice nature is and how beastly man is. This person must have rocks in his head. I don't have to hate nature because it's vicious but believe me it's not very theetie-weetie. All you have to do sometime is wound a shark in a pack of sharks and you're not watching very much. Just because this shark is bleeding even slightly causes him to be attacked by his own brother sharks, you see?

And nature can go completely daffy inside of one of its own little subdivisions on the fifth dynamic and can be intensely noncommunicative and nonunderstanding inside of one of those little subdivisions of the fifth dynamic. That's a pretty wild one. That's a wild one. You don't have to hate it for it. You don't have to be in awe because of it but you should have at least the sense to recognize what you're looking at.

You go out here and you see these beautiful vines. Well, here at Saint Hill, if I let these beautiful vines – when I first came here somebody had been talking about these beautiful vines just about long enough and they practically – well, if it had been left gone another three or four years this... I don't know what the totality of trees and so forth here are at Saint Hill, there are quite a few of them, and I'd say about 75 percent of them would have been dead if they'd been let go another three-four years. Somebody had been careless enough to let ivy grow around the trees and two or three of the big firs up here at the top of the hill, and so forth, are gone. But boy, that ivy. It isn't just parasitic and that sort of thing, it has murder in its eye, man. It grows big ropes of stuff and it goes right around in the exact method necessary to shut off all the circulation of a tree, you see? And the next thing you know it just chokes all

the circulation of the tree and the tree dies. Pretty! So, I guess somebody thought it was so pretty that they'd better not do anything about it or something of that sort. But it would have been the end of all the trees here.

You go around and you look at things like this in nature and you recognize that it is at war. Now, the scientist who then makes a whole total crash out of one philosophy – "The law of the tooth and claw, the law of the jungle is the only law which governs," so forth – ought to come around sometime or another and get off of his ivory tower and look out in the real world and find out that it isn't uniformly anything. See, it isn't uniformly bad, see? See, he could find – he could learn a lot if he'd just look. You'll find all sorts of wild things. You'll find that there are many assistive factors and there are many points of high communication between two different branches and high points of understanding.

You point to obvious ones – the scientists' remarks such as, I think, the hippos get their ticks picked off by tick birds or something like this and there's various things like this. And they say that's symbiosis and so forth. No, it isn't. I don't think hippos need ticks picked off particularly by tick birds – probably doesn't do them any harm at all. And they probably – I don't think probably tick birds are very efficient at it. I've seen various types of fish and so forth that clean the teeth of other fish and all kinds of things like this and I've noticed they very often don't do a good job, you know? You see, you got to look a little closer and you find out that it isn't all that practical. It must be something about a hippopotamus sort of finds life more interesting with tick birds crawling around on him, you know?

There isn't just that one crude reward. There's probably some other rewards involved. You find a lot of these things. You start looking for them; you find the rewards of livingness are many and they are picked up on various lines. But you get too concentrated on how bad it all is and, of course, there doesn't appear to be any reward of living and that's why people commit suicide when they commit suicide: there's no more reward to living. Not life is too dreadful to live; there's no reward in it anymore. And now they go on down to a point of where they add up all the punishment factors, too, and that's enough to tip it over and they could blow their brains out or something of this sort, don't you see? This is almost a secondary consideration – I assure you, almost a secondary consideration.

What men will go through to hang on to a body is so astonishing that I am very often gawping at the subject, see. Well, they'd go through modern medicine. Can I say more? Wildest stuff you ever had anything to do with. In the old days, it's much simpler; they said, well there's nothing we can do for it. And he kicked the bucket and goes and picks up another body, see? But what they'll go through today to go on living. Well, there's a reward in life; there's a reward in all of this.

Now, when we add this up as a Scientologist, we aren't just and solely and only in the field of processing. We're in the field of advice. We're in the field of looking over the situation on these various dynamics. We're looking over these various things. And what you're looking for – what you're looking for then is the reward and punishment balances. But that doesn't really lead you to an immediate conclusion for this reason: that you'll find it's as far out as the communication is out or – or the understanding is out. And you can treat these things as slightly separate. Some communication of one form or another has to be there. But

understanding is not totally dependent on the communication. Understanding can exist for other reasons rather than communication. You might have divined what is going on with that person and understood it therefore, see? So you didn't have to have much communication about it, see? You didn't have to have much information on the subject.

Now, if you're trying to settle up or square around somebody in life or set him right, the easiest way to do it is by processing him. I assure you that that is the easiest way to do it because you're going to get a failure on most of your advices when they're directed at one individual. Nevertheless, I don't say don't do it. You very often find out it's necessary to give somebody some advice so he can get some processing. Quite often you have to approach this with advice first, and you mustn't leave that out of your bunch of tricks here because it's very vital even on the first dynamic. Well, how about it – before you start processing somebody, you really are saying, "I advise you to get some processing." So actually advice comes first, if even in that ridiculous form, you see.

You say, "Well, the best thing for you to do, Mr. Jones, you keep talking about this lumbosis you got – if I were you Mr. Jones, if I'm going to do anything for you at all, in fact, not only if I were you but you better – I'd sort of square it up and I'd check into a hotel for the next week or so while you're being processed. And don't have anything more to do with those problems for that period of time and then approach it with a fresh look afterwards."

Well, that's a very limited piece of advice but it's certainly advice, isn't it? Well you should never feel yourself constrained about issuing such advice. Realize however, that their problems – to them – are very, very complex and therefore require a very complex solution. Sometimes you have to issue a little more complicated advice than you would ordinarily issue to get it understood. Sometimes it has to be very complicated.

"Yes, I know your business is going to suffer. What you do is write your brother a letter who is out in Des Moines, Iowa, and you have him come in and you train him on the job here for ten days in order to get this, so that you can have this week off and then you so-and-so."

You get the idea, see? You sometimes give them this terrifically involved piece of advice and they will take it. Then it seems that you're acknowledging how complicated their lives are.

Well, the first dynamic, we understand that pretty well, but advice definitely fits in it. And then, why, as soon as you move up into the other dynamics and you are unable by various reasons to carry out a program of processing on each individual, let us say on the second dynamic – you face that very often – or the third dynamic. You can't, at this moment – wouldn't at this moment be able to do anything but advise the Republican convention. You couldn't process them all, don't you see. You could advise them to have some processing, maybe run some Group Processing on them. That might work and is a very – a very workable activity in actual fact. But you'll find yourself seldom with both sides of the third dynamic under your control or understood or in communication. You could talk to the British, you see, but not to the Germans, don't you see? See, that'd be that – you'd be that monosided about it.

So therefore, in settling any third dynamic activity you do have Group Processing, you should use such tools and so forth but you'll find yourself more and more operating in the

field of advice and I assure you in two or three years if there was any communication with other life in space, the first one that they would think of talking to probably would be a Scientist. So that, again, we were on the advice side of the picture and it's advice, advice, advice. And advice is, after all, instruction isn't it? And there's no real difference in what I'm saying between advice and instruction.

So when you depart from the first dynamic you then have instruction as your dominant activity. You have advice, in other words. But advice easily slides over into the "this is it" of instruction, see?

So training, instilling cultural patterns, figuring out how it ought to be and squaring it up that way becomes very much a part of a Scientist's livingness. Couldn't be otherwise. So he has these two things: he has advice and he has processing. When you move off the individual or when you move away from being able to collect the group together and process it collectively – when you move away from that building block, the individual – you're sure dealing with much better ground if you're dealing in the field of advice, see. And if that advice is just casual advice, it's still advice, you see? Now, when it becomes less casual and more directed, that becomes instruction. And on seven of the dynamics, those that are not the first dynamic, you'll find out that's the one which you basically use. Well, in view of the fact they aren't all seven highly operative, why, it doesn't give you a ratio of seven to one, see. But it does give you an overbalanced ratio, that you're apt to use advice and instruction more often, really, than processing. New look, see? Because there's more of it, if you were being totally active in the handling of the society, that you certainly would be using advice and instruction far more frequently than processing; far, far more frequently.

So the conduct and practice of Scientology is slightly more advice and instruction than it is processing. But before you have any, any right whatsoever to advise anybody, you certainly better be able to do something in the field of processing, right? So, actually it starts with being a good auditor and not evaluating for your pc and telling him what to think about what he's just dreamed up.

Now, evaluation is really – pc says he doesn't know what kind of an answer you'd expect on this so you tell him the right answer and you say, "All right, you answered the question." It's answering his auditing questions for him that you're shying off for there, telling him what to think about the auditing question or something like this. But evaluation has nothing to do with instruction.

We use the word evaluation roughly and not technically – I would say to – well – I just evaluate day after day, hour after hour as long as I'm in communication with people. They expect to give me – they expect to give me – well, they expect me to give them some kind of an answer to their situation, so I do. I don't mess around with it.

Fellow says, "What will I do about my wife?" See, "What will I do about my wife?"

"Well, how's she been acting lately?" So-and-so and so-and-so and so-and-so. You instantly realize that it's not a processing problem. In the first place you can't do anything in this particular team. There couldn't be any co-audit possible on this team. We wouldn't get all unreal about the situation then and say, "Well, she better be audited and you better go into a co-audit on it." Well, my God, the girl is climbing a wall and nobody can keep her down for

three minutes and she's gone totally loopy over some other guy somewhere or another and she's racing off and gone till 2:00 a.m. every morning, you know. That's this sort of thing and it's completely out of control, see?

Well, maybe they could have been processed years ago, see, but nothing you can do about it far as processing is concerned. Well, see, you better just get into the advice business right away.

"What I do about it?"

"Well, let her go away with the other man, of course."

And take a bunch of responsibility for – worry about taking responsibility for her actions! Actually you're being irresponsible if you – supposed to be the person who knows and are informed about life and livingness and that sort of thing – sit there with a dumb look on your face. Now you're being irresponsible. Guy wants to know what to do. All right, tell him what to do, see? First thing you think of, well, let's see if we could get you some processing, get her some processing, that's obviously the best answer, see. And you figure out is this possible in any way even by any stretch of the imagination or even by an heroic action, is this possible? Well, you find out, this isn't possible and so forth and isn't feasible.

Don't also be a fool and say, "Well, of course, if all I've – I've got all this, I've got all my auditing time all taken care of here for the next ten and a half weeks. Somehow or another I'll fit this fellow into my schedule," and so forth. You're just being a fool; you're being irresponsible. You know you won't get around to processing this guy. You got more pcs than you can shake a stick at. Something like that. You *won't* get around to processing this guy. Let's be real.

All right, the thing to do is say, well, that's advice: "Oh, the thing I'd do if I were you I'd just let her go. You say she's running off every night and that sort of thing. Well, I'll tell you – I'll tell you what. Here's a – here's a piece of paper here that you have typed and get her signature on, it'll keep you from getting into any trouble. It says, 'I, having been unfaithful to my husband, so forth, hereby grant him divorce and full custody of the children without further upset.' And get it – here it is. All right, get it typed and see if she can sign."

So you know this will catalyze something, man, because you've put the end product of what this girl is heading for right in front of her face. Now, she's either going to jump one way or the other way, isn't she? See. You catalyze the situation and maybe the guy who's asking you for the advice is hell to live with, remember that. And maybe the other guy is a real dream, see. You don't know about this, see.

So you just give, you just give as close as you can give to a solution which is practical on all dynamics that you can think of in the next two or three seconds. [laughter] You understand? Don't go taking these things under advisement. So, all right, within the reality of that – of the data you've got – then give the best solution that you can give which fits all the way around without pretending that you're not on his side but also not exclusively being on his side. Do you understand? You actually – there's a big trick in this. I'll give you the trick in giving advice: is the advice you give should not be partisan.

Now, this is the other thing I'm trying to arrive in talking about the dynamics so long that maybe overstressed it. You only get in trouble when you get partisan, when you cease to be pan-determined, because that brings you down into self-determinism and brings you down into one-sided specialization and moves you right on downstairs into all the specializations and economic traps there are. You cease to be pan-determined in the advice you give.

You say, "Well, I'm not going to process this or that or the other thing or this type of individual because I don't like him." You've already become specialized. You should never make a limit on what kind of a person you'll process in actual fact, see? If you don't enjoy processing this kind of person, well, also don't be masochistic. But don't say, well, "I'm never going to process any blondes, see, because I'm liable to get in trouble with blondes," and figure it all out, see. That's for the birds, see. That's silly – to get an end-all category, see. And similarly, it's very silly to give partisan advice.

But remember this, it is also unacceptable to give advice which isn't partisan. And that's where the most of the argument comes against the savants. They put the pose of detachment and disinterest in with it, and you mustn't do that either. Don't go around – this is really the way to exteriorize out of everything and become zero-determined in all directions – is just pretend you're never part of anything and never interested in anything, you see?

But somebody comes up to you and they want you to get real mad at their mother-in-law. They're asking you for a bunch of advice. Well, you don't have to get mad at their mother-in-law. This is what I'm saying, see? You don't have to get mad at the men from Mars to advise Earthmen how to handle the men from Mars, you understand. You don't have to get mad or partisan or upset about some other side in order to issue advice about it. But neither do you have to sit around and say, "Well, I'm really no part of this conflict. I'm just an agitated, I mean a detached individual. I'm being calm, yeah, and I'm being *da-da-da-bluuuh*." Delete that from your histrionics.

Just look at the guy interestedly and say, "Oh, there are men from Mars in Washington, yeah, they need advice over there. Oh, yeah. And you're wondering what to do and so forth. Well, instantly see if you can't set up a communications network. See if there isn't some common exchange of communication and make that your sole concentration. See, see if we can't set up some kind of a communication thing."

"Well," he says, "it's impossible. They're just flying around in the air and we haven't got any radio."

"All right... Abandon the city."

Well, the guy says, "That's more like it; we'll abandon the city." He's off, see? [laughter] That's the other piece of advice he'd take.

All right. Now, look at this. You say, "Well, see if we can't arrange a co-audit between you and your wife," you see. You look this over. That's communication. And then estimate the degree of no understanding that will occur and advise accordingly. If he can't do that, then estimate the degree of no understanding that will occur or the understanding – estimate the understanding that can occur and advise it. Advise something on that basis. You say, well if they're flying around overhead, and this guy says he can't get into communication with it

anyway, and they probably tried something in this direction, they're all scared stiff. Realize there are some other factors you haven't been told always in giving advice. You've never been told all. You don't really know very much about the situation. Don't make a – be a fool to think you have.

Where you make mistakes in giving advice is to think you know about it and have the perfect solution. One: you don't know all about it ever and two: you can't give them the perfect solution and they probably aren't going to take it. They'll take as much of it as they can apply. So, the best thing to do is give them something they can apply right now and do. See, what will they take off of you?

"Oh, well, I've been talking to – I've been talking to the Scientologist up in Fairfax and he says we ought to abandon the city."

"Oh, is that what he says! Well, let's get the city abandoned."

And at least they're doing something, see? And the Martians say, "Well, they aren't going to fight us because they're running. Look at them run. They're scared of us. Hey, you see, we've been scared of them; they're scared of us. Maybe we ought to try to get into communication with them." Maybe a communication factor would get established after all, see.

See, what's the best advice you can give them that will be taken. That's the equation you're operating by. What's the best advice you can give them that will be taken – that *will be taken!* Now you can give them the perfect solution that won't be taken. But what's the solution that will be taken? Well, let's find out. And you sometimes have to plow around for a while to find out what advice will be taken.

The fellow says, "Oh, I just can't stand it anymore, Ron. Yeah, I just have asthma. I wheeze and so on. I can't take off any time for processing and that sort of thing and you say you've got too much of a schedule to process me anyway, and there isn't any way I can do this anyway because I, after all, have an awful hard time in processing and so forth and so on. But I really got to do something about this *eooh* – this asthma, and so forth, and I don't know, and so forth."

"Well, you ever been down to lower altitudes?", you're at high altitudes, see. If you're in a high altitude, figure out it must be high altitude. Just give him change. Change his environment. That's one of your first old-time rules and so forth. But give him a piece of advice he takes. So you say, "Well, how about, how about getting some blankets and sleeping warmly and getting some..."

"Well, I can't do that because you see I'm too agitated." And so on.

He's refusing all this. All of a sudden you finally work your way down some channel and you say, "Why don't you go down to a lower altitude."

He says, "Yes, I'll go to a lower altitude," and so on.

"Yeah," you say, "all right." Put the pressure in right at that point, see. "All right, you go right down to a lower altitude and you'll feel better at once," and so forth. Put the hope factor in, see? "Go down to the lower altitude. You'll undoubtedly feel better at once. Very good. Fine, fine."

He writes you back couple of weeks later and he appears, "Yeah, I went down to vacation and I'm feeling fine now and no asthma." See.

The point I'm trying to make with you here, what I'm trying to teach you is handle it! See, handle it!

And you don't have to say, "Well, I can't process him for 8,645 hours so therefore I can't help him out." Oh, hell no. You got a lot of more strings to your bow. You've got advice.

What's advice? Anything you can deal off the cuff that he'll accept and do that is more beneficial to him than what he's doing – more beneficial to him than he's doing right now, that's for sure. If he doesn't change the way he's going, he's going to crash. That's usually the moment they're asking for advice; it's just before they go over the cliff, you know? So it's all usually over-the-cliff type of advice you have to give him. Don't sit down and give him a five hour lecture on his problems or something like this. Find out what he'll accept. Hunt and punch around. Generally in giving advice you can develop a sensitivity – you can get that sensitivity pretty good. And you notice this guy has got a reservation about what you're saying, well, you gave him the wrong piece of advice, see. Why, shift your gears.

"Now, a lot of you – you have some reservation about doing this with regard to your boss. What's the matter?"

"Well, you see, I – I really don't go to work anymore. That's why I can't do it." "All right, fine, fine. Well, what's – what is your trouble then? Maybe I didn't understand you completely and so forth."

"Well, I – I want to handle him so I can get back to work."

Oh – he didn't tell you in the first place, see. He didn't give you all the data. There, you are – you're being foolish if you ever assume you're ever given all of the data or that all the data that's given you is true. You're actually being a fool if you work on this premise that every word that you're told is the gospel truth and you've become partisan and so forth. That is what gets wrong with giving advice. You become instantly partisan; you believe everything you're told is true; you take sides against the mythical person. You always will, to some slight degree, emotionally. You'll say, "Well, she did, my God!" You know. Of course, we're not listening to what he did.

And the situation is that you don't want to give a wild piece of advice that will wind up as a total destruction on all fronts. But don't mind giving slightly destructive advice either, see. Don't mind – don't give the type of advice of, well, the best thing to do is shoot her. Don't give the type of device of something or other. Just from as far as you can tell at this particular instant this seems to be a workable, feasible thing and so forth. She wants to go off with the other man. Well, let her go.

"Oh, I never thought of that."

"Well, you know, if she did go, you know, you could sue him for a loss of her services."

"Well, you know, I give her eleven – eleven pounds a week right now and I think a maid only costs me about six pounds a week, I think I'd make money on the deal." [laughter]

You say, "All right, then, the best advice is get her to sign this paper and so forth." Gives him something to do; takes his mind off his trouble.

You're answering out of your experiential line. Don't mind doing that either. Don't be self-conscious about it is what I'm trying to say. So, you all of a sudden feel like a pontifical ass saying these things, pontificating to this degree and so forth. Well, laugh at yourself if you want to but don't cease to give advice because of that, see. Give them something. Handle it! That's the thing. And the way you handle it is try to bring about auditing. If you can't bring about auditing, try to bring about communication; if you can't bring about communication and so forth, why, bring about understanding. But, of course, the communication and understanding are all under the heading of advice. If you can't audit them, advise them.

And it just doesn't matter what you advise them. Because you're people of good heart and you'll listen to this and you'll say, "And you say your mother-in-law has been living with you for the last thirteen years and now won't let you sleep anymore in your wife's bedroom. Your mother-in-law won't let you sleep anymore in your wife's bedroom. You want to know what to do about this. Huh?" Well, you're just stonied, see. What you're stonied by is that a situation like this can exist. [laughter] You're not stonied about what advice to give him, you see. [laughter] You're just slightly stunned, see.

Well, the upshot of the thing is that you can deal one off the cuff and you say, "The old lady's been living with you for thirteen years, and now she says so-and-so and so-and-so. What's your house like?" You know, you've got a clue now what to do.

"Oh, there's only two bedrooms."

"Hers and you and your wife... Where are you going to sleep then? You have to sleep in the living room. You got a big back yard or something like that? Or you got anything like that? Oh, why don't you – what – what do you – let's see – what's your – what's your business – what's your business? You're a commercial artist. Why don't you tell them you got to have a studio out in the back yard. Immediately start building yourself a studio out in the back yard. They'll try anything they can to get you back in the house again."

The guy say, "That's a good idea – a studio out in the back yard with a door opening on the alley. Yeah, that's a good idea!" [laughter]

In short, it doesn't much matter what you advise him, see. But the system of your advice – the system of your advice would be in the direction of handling something. So, you don't let a lot of human problems walk into your perimeter and sort of drop, see. Guy's coming to you for help. All right. Give him help. And help isn't just what processing you can give him or actually what formal training you can give him. You can also give him advice and as a very informal type of information, don't you see. And that's yours.

You'll find you'll do it very often; you'll find out you do very well if you pursue that. And you'll find out that the world has very badly fallen apart one from another; and you'll find out the dynamics are very badly separated from one from another; and you'll find out there's enough warfare going around to please most anybody. You'll find out that life amongst the wogs is pretty confounded grim as a matter of fact. I was looking at it recently and I couldn't believe the number of catastrophes which I found per square cubit of thetan – see, of enturbu-

lated thetan. I just couldn't believe it. It's fantastic. You can't audit all of it that comes your way, but you can advise it and you can handle it. And you're only really doing your job as addition to other things as an auditor if people who come to you with trouble and people who are having trouble in life and so forth, if you don't try to help them handle their situation. And just go ahead and try to handle it. Help them handle it and give them some advice as to what to do and so forth. It's all part of it.

And you'll find out that they very normally don't do what you told them to do, but you find out that you got them to thinking in some forward line and they will do something else along the line, but you will have catalyzed the situation in the direction of a better smoothness or solution. Life will become smoother in that particular quarter. If you would simply and only acted as a catalyst in your immediate environment, you would be doing your job in that particular field and area. That's all, that's all you expect out of it. See.

The guy comes back two weeks later, "I got a better idea after I left you," and so forth. "I built a house in the back yard for her and she's going to live in it now and so I got the idea." But he knows that you helped him. It doesn't matter whether he says your idea worked. You're not listening for that.

So, there is an entirely different field that an auditor works in all the time he is auditing and if you feel forbidden to do it because of the Auditor's Code, remember that's evaluation with relationship to a session and has nothing to do with giving people advice. And you give people advice all the time. And you'll find out that anytime somebody comes to you and tells you their troubles, if you give them something to do about it, it's practical, you tell them about a Touch Assist ... I don't care what you tell them in advice, you see, give them something practical, give them something they can do and that sort of thing and you'll find out that you're just aces up and your life will start running very, very smoothly indeed. And you'll listen to lots less problems because he actually will tell you only up to the time you give him some advice or something of that sort, don't you see. You've shortened the amount of upset, in other words, of people telling you endlessly their troubles and only their troubles and so forth.

One of two things will happen: they either solve their troubles or they don't want them solved and so won't keep handing them to you. See. But you have again done something about it. And the fact that you are helping people handle their environment in your immediate vicinity does put you kingpin and aces up and you're actually occupying a role that whether I said you would or whether anybody tailor-made you to do so or not, that you very certainly will – are occupying and will increasingly occupy as you go forward in life and Scientology rolls along.

Thank you very much.

CAMPAIGN TO HANDLE PSYCHOSOMATIC ILLS

A lecture given on 28 July 1964

Thank you. All right, this is the what of the what?

Audience: Twenty-eighth of July.

Twenty-eight July. What year?

Audience: AD 14.

AD 14. Hello.

Audience: Hello.

Now that you're here, welcome.

[part missing]

All right, you're about to hear today, not necessarily the opening gun, but certainly the first official opening gun, on a shot that's going to rocket around the world, that's for sure. And that is the campaign to take over and handle all psychosomatic medical healing in the world. The American Medical Association for some time has been asking for this and so we're going to give it to them.

There will be a textbook on this subject. A popular type, small textbook, which I have just now begun to design, and have it into its writing factors. I've got these various points which are extremely germane to the problem at large and exactly how it goes across and exactly how it fits in and how it can't be challenged in the field of physical healing.

Now, healing is nobody's monopoly. But if it becomes anybody's monopoly, it will be he who can heal who will be the authority. The person who is able to do this should be the boss of it. In other words, if you, an auditor, can heal and Juglug the big, bad man from Witchdoctorville, with all of his sterling knives and his sterilized nurses – excuse me, that's a mental slip – and he can't do anything about it, why then it's yours, isn't it? It's not his, you see? Now, that isn't some rule that somebody lays down. That happens to be the way the world works.

All right, there's a fellow diddling around and monkey-businessing with a piece of carpentry. You know, hitting his fingers with the hammer and bending the nails and splintering the boards and dulling the chisels and dropping everything and so forth. And a carpenter comes along and he picks up the hammer and he straightens the nails out and he knocks the

boards back together again the way they should be and he fixes up the job and makes it look very, very neat. And anybody who wants any carpentry done, do they call the bum or the carpenter?

That's obvious that that's the way the world works, see? He who can do the job, does the job. And he who can do the job should be the authority for that job. Right? All right, I want to make one point very, very clear instantly and at once: that you know nothing, absolutely nothing, about osteopathy, mending up femoral arteries, pushing eyeballs back into the skull, chipping bones, plastic surgery. You don't know anything about these things. I want to make that point very clear to you. You just couldn't do this if somebody held a gun on you.

It's very interesting. Somebody's lying there with a compound fracture of the tibia – you don't know anything about putting a compound fracture together. You could put a splint on it from your first-aid book or something like that, but from that point on you'd be pretty powerless. Isn't that correct? I'm not being sarcastic.

Audience: Yes.

All right, let's keep that point firmly in mind because it means this: It means when there is an acute injury or illness, acute illness – this word "acute," don't hang up on it, it means immediate, right now, you know? It doesn't mean exaggerated or something like that. Medically, it sim... it means simply, you know, right now and rather temporary. "Acute" means temporary, really, it's – it comes up to a point and so forth.

Now, an acute illness then is one where you get a cold and you get well from the cold and while you have the cold that is an acute illness, correct? When you got a broken leg, something like that, why, you're acutely injured, don't you see? That's not using it in quite the right context, but you – I'm trying to show you where the medical thing is. Because the leg isn't going to be broken forever – the leg's going to be mended, see? You're going to heal; going to get well from it. When you've got – when you've run into a lamppost and so forth and you've got three busted ribs, why, you are acutely injured, don't you see?

All right. Now, if you have illness of an acute, temporary nature or injury of an acute, temporary (using the same word – "acute") nature, that's the job for a medico. You see, he may do it well, he may do it poorly. That's not the point. But he's the authority in that particular field. Nobody can do it better than he can, see? See, he might – he might be stumbling about it but he's still – nobody can do it better than he can. You've got a femoral artery that is pumping lifeblood, and if anybody's going to stop it at all it's going to be a medico, right? That's where he's trained. So in that field there, the medico is the authority and we should actually grant him that beingness.

Somebody comes down with cholera. All right, he's got cholera. Who is the authority in this field? All right, this person is physically sick. Whistle up the medicos. Maybe they've developed something over in the Pasteur Institute or something of the sort that you – that will check cholera. Maybe something has happened. He certainly will know the nature of the disease and know that it's cholera and not a bellyache. Do you see? All right, grant him that authority.

Now, where he errs is trying to take in terrain broader than his sphere of authority. And there he makes a serious error. Because he's a completely lost dog when you get on to the last two brands of illness. There are two other things which happen in illness. Now, I'm not even trying to give you the medical terms of these things, I'm just trying to give you English words that are very understandable. But there's the precipitation of the illness or the cause of the illness. What – precipitation – what brings it about. What precipitates it. What causes it or what occurs before the person gets ill that makes them then be ill. Do you follow that?

Now, he's only faintly into that. He says, "If you have too much weight you may sooner or later have heart trouble." Don't you see? So he's just faintly into that, but he doesn't even really know that. See? He's faintly into that field. That's the precipitation of an illness.

Actually, the medical term for this is *predisposition*. A person is predisposed to an illness. Something predisposes this illness. The little kid goes out and gets his feet wet and gets a cold. Well, what got his feet wet? See? The rain. See? So this predisposes the child to a cold. But not all children get colds just because they got wet feet. But nevertheless it's predisposition. It doesn't even say that it's going to happen. It isn't bound to happen after this predisposition. But it may occur.

Now, the medico is only slightly into that field – only slightly. He speaks of "preventive medicine." Actually, this is really not in the field of medicine at all, but is in the field of public health and there are very few public health men that are medical doctors. Once in a while medical doctors get into the field of public health, but they're usually engineers and they've been to engineering school and they're public health engineers. And they're the people that see after the water supply and knock off the overpopulation of rats down at the dock and all that kind of thing, don't you see? They're trying to handle bits in the society which bring about illness.

See, if you – if you don't safeguard the water supply, it'll get contaminated. If you don't safeguard the water supply, why, it's liable to go wrong and nobody's going to know about it until half the city is dead, you see? If you don't keep the rats down, down on the docks and that sort of thing, why some ship with a bubonic plague infected rat (some Russian ship, in other words) ties up alongside the dock, why – that, by the way, is more than just a crack at Russia or something of the sort. It's absolutely true that the public health authorities go stark, staring mad on the subject of trying to get the Russians to de-raticize their ships. Oh, man! And Russian ships are just as determined, "They're our rats. They're comrade rats!" [laughter]

And they tie them up outside the breakwater very often and they won't even land their cargoes or come near and they try to give the whole harbor – they won't permit anybody aboard to de-raticize them and so on. They act like somebody's doing something horrible to them. They probably think the public health men are FBI agents in disguise or something like this, you know? They're completely mad.

The breeding area, the first waves by the way of – I always think this is amusing – the first waves of rodents in the world came from Russia. It's the steppes – was the genus area of all the rats you notice around. I think that's terribly funny and nobody's ever made any capital out of it. But the Russian today is still trying to hold on to his rats. And the public health men

are out there and frankly there isn't a doctor amongst them. They're just engineers and so forth, and they go out and shoot the ship full of cyanide and every once in a while try to also de-raticize some poor stowaway or refugee that has been trying to escape from the iron curtain, just to escape into the hands of some public health service, you know? Crash. Of course, they're deader than mackerels. They bring them out stiff as boards, you know? Stowed away underneath the lifeboats and by the time the cyanide gas hits them, that's the end of it. Pretty grim.

All right, that's predisposition. That's handling the predisposing causes of disease. There are many of these, many of these. The reason garbage is collected in the cities, and so forth, is all under this heading.

Nobody cares that it doesn't look good and nobody cares that it doesn't smell nice. What it got down to is they found out if you had garbage in the streets and an epidemic started, the population had had it. It was, of course, this very thing I'm talking about which wiped out 50 percent of the population of England at one fell swoop here a few hundred years ago. They've still got pits around where they just buried bodies. And when that was over, England was no longer an agricultural nation. And she never has been since. She took to herding and she took to wool and it changed her whole economy. One bunch of rats walking down the side of a ship, down a mooring line, changed the history of England.

So this, of course then, is quite important and a great deal of attention is paid to this particular thing, but it's usually in along physical lines. It's physical, you see? They have to do with germs and water and climatic conditions and not permitting workers, for instance, to work on certain projects (like radium – radium, luminous-dial watch painting, don't you see) and making everybody come in through the society for tuberculosis x-rays and various campaigns of this sort. You've seen these things, they run all the time, all the time. Well, that's about as far as the society has gone. And that is not the medical doctor, actually, in operation. That is the civic authority trying to prevent epidemics of tuberculosis, trying to prevent epidemics of various kinds and illnesses of various kinds, you see?

Now, let's take after. Now, you see you've got a fore – before; now there's an after. And now, what have we got now? We've got predisposition and then we've got an acute illness of some kind or another. That's two – two things. Now we've got a third thing. And this third thing is *prolongation*. Marvelous long word: prolongation. Perpetuation. They speak of perpetuating factors. They speak of the perpetuation of an illness. But that's the area that we will refer to as prolongation. The illness is prolonged.

Now, what makes a prolonged illness prolonged? Merely that it goes beyond the expected term. So any illness that goes beyond the expected term – and that's a very precise definition – any illness that goes beyond an expected term would fall into this category of a prolonged illness and into the general class of prolongation. You understand that now?

All right. Now therefore, what have we summated here? What have we summated here, before we go on talking about the prolongation? Let's take a look here. And here we have, over here, the situation of – let's say, this is time plotted forward, this way. And these are three periods of time. Indeterminate and we couldn't care less about what period of time

this is as long as – for the benefit of man, we'll speak about it as a lifetime or something like this, you see. But in this particular instance, it would be the period of illness.

Now – but that still is not descriptive enough. You'll see why in a minute, because the period of illness can vary, you see? So we've got this period of time here and then we've got this period of time. The first one here is predisposition. This is the period of predisposition. That's predisposition. That's the period of it. All right, now this is the period of illness; acute stage. And this is the illness, you see, and this is acute. Simple as that. Illness, acute. Acute stage. See? And by the way, that is pretty standard. The guy's got a broken leg, they say six weeks, see, before he can – something or other. You see, that's fairly standardized.

They say, "If you have a cold it'll take three or four days to get over it," don't you see? "If you've got the measles it'll take a certain period of time," you see? You got the idea? So that is well established in the field of medicine, because it is their sphere. I bring to your attention they couldn't tell you when illness began to generate – beyond them, don't you see? They couldn't; they had no means of any kind of establishing the point at which the person began to predispose toward an illness. Do you see? So this period is completely – this period of predisposition is completely indeterminate in the field of medicine. They have no means of any kind of determining it if they cannot establish it as a disease contact. "He went down to Soho," you'll find them doing this all the time, "He went down to Soho and had some bad fish and that gave him ptomaine poisoning."

All right, that's great. But actually, their statement, "He went down to Soho," does not concern them at all. And they don't know if it's true and they don't know if it's false and they don't know what. He might have got this at home. And you'll hear them going around this point of time of when the illness began to be predisposed, you see? When was he predisposed to the illness? What was the point of disposition?

Well, actually they could maunder around about this for some time. It actually was predisposed when he got the idea two or three years ago that he ought to go down to Soho occasionally and eat fish. But this takes it immediately out of the field of medicine. It's no longer in the field of medicine. Field of medicine begins with imbibing the germ. One germ, down the hatch, see? Now, if they could establish that point they've got it, you see? Then that becomes predictable. They can establish this. They can say that if you get yourself a lot of staphylococcus, why, you're going to have an infection. Do you see this? They then predispose their illness from the point of contact and therefore they could be fairly safe in the field of material healing.

So predisposition in the medical world begins with an indeterminate point where the fellow might have contacted a germ or something of that sort. For instance an injury: the fellow got drunk at a pub and drove too fast and had an accident. So they'll go back as far as saying, "Well, he got drunk at a pub." And they'll say that's – that's predisposition, don't you see, that's predisposition of injury, see? They don't go any further than that, because that's – I mean, point out what's the common denominator here. Even a germ is physical, see? The alcohol that he imbibed at the pub is a physical thing. So they're only occupied with the physical predispositions of illness. And that is the field of medicine in the field of predisposition – is physical. Physical predisposition. You understand, even a germ is physical. See, it has mass

and so forth. It's a physical thing. You get enough of them together and they will dance on the head of a pin very nicely. See?

The alcohol at the pub – see, that's physical. It goes *glug-glug*, see? It has fumes. It's recognizable. You can put your hand on it. You can get shortchanged over it. See? You see that?

Male voice: Yeah.

So they're physical here, real physical.

Now, in the field of illness of an acute variety, this again is a physical illness in which the medical doctor is interested. Physical. You're running a high temperature, see? The leg bends in the wrong direction, see? The skull when fractured left a detectable depression. The measles bug bit and now in two weeks this person should be out of the woods or something like this, see? That should be all over, but the bug is – they've even gotten it down to where it's a virus. See, it's a different kind of smaller bug. But it's still physical and all of these things in illness must be reduced in the field of medicine – and quite rightly, because that's the observable fact – are reduced down to physical illness from physical causes. It's not only that it's a physical illness, it also has physical causes. That's very important. It's a physical illness with physical causes. Remember, on your predisposition I've just told you that you've had – you've had this – predisposition was physical.

In other words, that what began it. The *glug-glug* in the pub, see, that began it. The bug bit, that's what began it. The mosquito went *bzzzzzzn, nnoww-boomp!* Malaria, see? He's got it all figured out, see? So therefore it's a physical illness. Now, let's take up this next long line. I'm beating this to death with you because what I'm actually giving you is not something of interest; I'm giving you something that you going to be using for a long time. And if you don't understand this right on the ball, you're going to be a complete patsy in trying to discuss it with a medical doctor. And that's who you'll be discussing it with. And you may even occasionally be discussing it with a legislative body or a judge. You understand?

So get this down, see. Write it down there in small balls of fire just back of the inside of the skull. Because this is how we make the breakthrough. This is our dissemination breakthrough I'm describing to you. And I'm describing you the elements that make this possible. The frame of mind and the belief of the people associated with this – I'm describing those to you. These things are observable. These things are believed. These things are carried forward very, very hard in the society, and the laws of the society relating to healing are based on what I am showing you at this minute.

Now, prolongation is this next period. Now, this is all very neat. The fellow got well and it all stopped here. And this is why I am – didn't keep talking about prolongation; because you have now run most of the gamut of the medical profession. If he had one operation too many, if they shouldn't have operated, they might have prolonged the illness. The improper treatment, improper care, might have prolonged the illness. And their whole idea on the subject of a prolonged illness would be whether it was treated soon enough, whether it was treated properly and whether or not it developed complications during the period of acute illness. That's what they assign any prolongation to, see?

But they've had it as soon as they get into that field. They've had it. If an illness enters this stage, it's only within very finite limits that they can control it. He had measles and developed complications and went blind or something. And you'll see medical doctors, they all sort of stand with their hands in a reverent attitude: "It's all in the hands of God now. Who could have told that that would have happened," see? That's – that's their attitude toward it. This is the area of total apathy.

What happens after this little boy has had measles for a couple of weeks and all the other little boys that have measles are up there bouncing about and they're all full of snap and ginger, and it's even got to a point where their mother isn't even being nice to them now, saying, "Oh, Willie, go out and play," you know? What happens? So this little boy – and he's had the measles and he didn't get well. He's lethargic. He's sleepy. He's kind of stupid.

They put this under the head of "aftereffects." But in this particular lineup that is unusual. And at that moment it steps on the banana peel and goes out from underneath. In other words, improper treatment or the absence of treatment and so forth would prolong the illness. Yes, yes, the doctor has that in the field of prolongation. And that's as far as he goes into prolongation. He gives no further thought to this, really. He'll tell you, "Well, you should take a rest."

He gives it that much attention and he knows these three factors which I've been talking to you about exist. He knows these factors exist. These factors. And he knows best that a person becomes predisposed to an illness by, let us say, contact with infected persons, by irrational imbibing of alcohol and running his car into a lamppost. You understand? That's how he gets there. Injury, illness is predisposed by physical contact by physical means. That's his educational line. And the illness during a certain period is called an acute illness. He refers to it as acute, not meaning that it is desperate, but simply meaning that it is at – it's going over its temporary peak.

Now let's move this over into the field of Scientology. You'd say the cycle of action of an illness, according to a medical doctor, would be from the period of its first physical contact to the expected recovery. And any illness that follows that cycle of action is well within the medical doctor's control – that is, if he knows what the treatment of it is – it's well within the medical doctor's control. He can do something about it. This he understands. It's that – just that one cycle of action, from the moment of physical contact sliding right on over into the point of expected recovery. Johnny has measles, he expects Johnny in a couple of weeks to be up, popping about merry as a cricket, see? Now, that is his cycle of action.

Now, his cycle of action complicates into just one little additional stage. Sometimes complications occur by reason of absence or poor – absence of or poor healing. In other words, he assigns prolongation to healing. The fact that an illness is prolonged, extended, moved out into the future – he said, "Well, it was absence of treatment or it was improperly treated or something occurred or some complication occurred." Once more, physically. But at this stage he rather tends to wash his hands of it. He's not quite sure what to do about this. He'll carry on with it. You'll see every once in a while these boys go into a desperate fit in a hospital. I think they did it with MacArthur – General MacArthur. The expected recovery was not there, see? MacArthur reached this period and complications set in. So you'll see them

every once in a while do this. They'll go into a hectic fury of new operations. And you'll see operation following operation following operation and they've got him back in the operating room carving out the tibia, see? You understand?

You've seen instances of this. They – at this point, when the individual was first ill of whatever it is, if it was surgical treatment that they were going to engage upon, they said, "Well, that's very easy, you remove the *splena* or something, and then they normally, why, it's expected the person recovers quite nicely. That's expected."

Yeah, but they removed the *splena* and the guy didn't recover. In other words, they've arrived at this point, they've mispredicted in some fashion or other and they've arrived at this point up here without the expected result. And they say, "What I do now?" Well, the poor bloke is in a desperate state because once you've prescribed the treatment and that has run its course, or you've done the operation that's supposed to produce the desired result and that has run its course, you've just run out of textbooks.

Now, you'll see a little addenda occasionally, in the text, and it'll say, "In case – in case the patient turns green, it's because the gallbladder was also infected," see? You'll see once in a while a little notation in the text, but that's about as far as it goes. It doesn't tell you how the operation is going to fail. So this leaves him up riding on his own and here is his point of experience and his point of hope and that sort of thing: it – these things just have to be thrown on the operating table again. So he does another operation, you see? And then that didn't work either; his expected point of recovery didn't come about so he now has to do another operation, do you see? And then he does another operation and unfortunately by this time the patient, under that much operative shock, kicks the bucket. And he's never really noticed that he was fighting shock and mental reaction all the time anyway.

To him, he doesn't even have a word for shock, except a physical thing. Shock to him is a physical thing. It's something happens to the nerves, that's what shock is. A person is startled, or medically... if you – if they try to explain to you what operative shock is, what operational or what they call "postoperative shock" or something of this sort, well, they try to explain it in terms of "Well, the anesthetic must have been too much or it's some physical thing occurred here," see? But he's out of his element. He's gone out of his element. He not only can't prevent operative shock, he can't do anything much about it. The blood lakes in the center of the body, all sorts of weird things occur. The arteries no longer pump blood properly, and they leak and everything starts going to pieces like a punctured carnival balloon, see? What is this? Well, he tries to describe it physically.

Now, his route then is a physical address to the situation from the beginning to the end. So when you speak of illness, how does this register on the medical doctor to whom you are speaking? You say illness and you say healing – you say these two words and the medical doctor at once, instantly and at once, translates this into physical address. That's his basis of understanding.

Well, let's give the bloke some credit for this: Most of them, those certainly that have had experience and are not trying to hold a public front and trying to shake down a government for a whole bunch of shekels that they are going to waste, know they are up against it when they hit this word *psychosomatic*.

Now, *psychosomatic* is the most abused, misunderstood, turned-upside-down term that anybody ever cared to have anything to do with. Psychosomatic: It means, actually, purely, but not in general usage "the psyche experiencing or in pain," or "the psyche suffering." Do you see that – what they're trying to say? But of course psychology has gotten rid of the psyche very nicely by saying, "Well, we don't use the word anymore and as a matter of fact we don't even know what it means." That's in their own texts. Calling themselves at the same time psychologists, which is quite remarkable because that's based on psyche. *Psyche* is – means "a thetan." It's the Greek word for a thetan. Stop and think about that. It's the spirit. It's the being himself. Not badly misunderstood in the days of Greece, but misapplied since.

So when you say psychosomatic healing, this translates in some wild way to the doctor that you're going way out. He knows that this sort of thing exists. Now, how he comes to believe that it exists, how he comes to believe that there is psychosomatic illness, and how he comes to believe that there's psychosomatic healing, is more than I know, since it has never been proven or demonstrated in the entire history of medicine. Field of hypnosis; yes, yes, quite weird. Fellow has a headache, you hypnotize him, say, "You haven't got a headache," it disappears. Nobody did anything physical to this man. Let's look at where we depart. See, we depart at that exact point where there is no physical contact. Where there is no physical contact, we depart into a realm the medical doctor really knows exists.

Now, what fault does he find with this field? Well, he finds the fault with this field only this: That it encroaches upon his field. He finds the fault that he doesn't understand it and it encroaches upon his field. He doesn't know what it is and yet it's in his road. But I will tell you that the arguments which they use are quite real.

I'll give you an almost verbatim quote from a medical doctor explaining that a psychosomatic practitioner was very dangerous. "The chiropractor," he says, "adjusts the spine. Of course, what these things are," he explains glibly, "are slipped disks." This is an oversimplification if I ever heard one because there's not just disks in that spine, there's about twelve neurons that go down that spine and any one of those can get crowded and perhaps maybe it's all slipped disks which are crowding the neuron, but in actual fact there's a lot of wild things going on. You talk about a spine – of all the complicated pieces of engineering, a spine has got them all beat, see? And a stress analysis study on the spine makes it impossible for one to exist, see? It's got communication cables running through it and everything else, while supporting the body and the head in an erect state. It's quite interesting.

But he says, "The chiropractor fixes up these slipped disks and in six patients this was all right, but the seventh patient has tuberculosis of one of the vertebrae, and the chiropractor adjusts the spine and the patient becomes a paralytic for the remainder of his life. Therefore a chiropractor's dangerous." This is a direct quote, now. The man who said this was just out of medical school so he had the fresh dope.

Their objection to psychosomatic healing only stems from the fact that the psychosomatic healer very often overreaches himself and enters the field of physical healing in which he is not trained and prohibits treatment of physical illness when it exists. And that is the entire argument of the medical doctor against the psychosomatic healer. He has no real other

argument. He's got an argument of an economic nature, of course. The fellows might take some money away from him and so forth. But this is his – this is his professional objection.

In other words, the psychosomatic fellow carries too far. He carries over too far into this sort of thing and gets out of his own field and gets into the field of medicine and then throws that aside because he's not trained and doesn't recognize anything in that field. Do you see that? That's his sole objection, so put that down with an underscore, because it's the sole objection. He has no real other objection, except the psychosomatic practitioner attempts to handle things and thus inhibit the proper handling of things which would surrender to physical healing. And that's his sole argument. He hasn't got any other arguments.

But he recognizes, he recognizes something else: That when he gets into the field of healing by the psyche he is in a never-never land he knows nothing of. And part of his argument in this direction – well, a British trained doctor, for instance, has been given six careless hours of instruction in psychiatry. That's as close as he ever came to it. In some hospital, some drafty hospital, standing around, amongst the insane, gibbering and screaming, why he's given six long hours of precise instruction on the subject of this and thus Parliament gives him the right to treat the insane – on six hours of instruction. Now, that's pretty grim.

What do you think of some bloke that has been trained in Scientology for six hours? [laughter] It would be with contempt, wouldn't it? But give the medical doctor his due – he recognizes his limitations. He knows he doesn't know anything about it.

But he thinks when you speak of healing that you're speaking of physical things. But if you point out to him very carefully that you are speaking of healing by mental means or mental aspects of healing, he instantly gets a very strange look in his eye because he's somewhere else now. You've taken him out of the safe area of "He took a drink at the pub, the drink made him drunk, it upset his perceptions, he drove his car into a lamppost, and that's why he's lying here with three cracked vertebrae in his neck," see? "Now, we have bound him up in plaster and we've given him some sedatives and we've shot him full of B1, and in the course of four or five weeks he will be all right – we hope." That's healing.

Now, you have these same things. But they are not physical. They are not the same physical actions. Now unfortunately, an auditor, or fortunately, an auditor really can't do anything with somebody who's running a temperature of 104. I don't know if you've ever tried to process somebody with a temperature of 104 and try to get anyplace with this bloke. His present time problem is so howling, his ability to as-is things is so poor, he's so far down the Tone Scale that you practically can't have a process sufficiently simple to undercut his illness. It's almost impossible to get that far down the Tone Scale. You can make maybe Reach and Withdraw from the pillow. But quite ordinarily, because the processing of this person is at a much higher grade, auditors quite commonly don't ever bother to take it down to these lower grades but try to finish off something or get at the source of the thing or something. And they lay a terrific egg. It's something I won't do. Somebody's running a high temperature, I will try to put them into communication at some very, very low level. And if I don't get an immediate and direct response, I simply leave it alone.

In other words, if I can't make my E-Meter howl and sing and needle bang both sides at once and the pc suddenly go, "Oh, that's why!" you know, big cognition and so on, well, if

I can't cut in on that at some low level of auditing I just leave it alone. A good way to fail is to try to process an acutely ill person. The reason why is the PTP will inhibit a case advance. And the other reason why is the person has gone far below his common, ordinary or average grade. You see that? He's way down below his ordinary tone level. He's not living now at the same level he was living at. He's very hard to reach, he's hard to get in communication with, you'd have to treat him as though he was a kid or something to get anything at all and he has a hard time as-is-ing things and so forth. But he's got this howling present time problem.

If you've ever processed a pc for twenty-five hours with a present time problem without happily helping out the PTP or straightening out the PTP on the pc, then you had a stuck graph. That graph didn't move. It didn't go up one iota. And he's more prone to an ARC break while being distracted by a present time problem, so if you also ARC broke him, the graph went down. And that is prognosis of treating people who are acutely ill: very bad. The word *prognosis* is just expecting what will happen – predicting what will happen, see?

Some guy says, "I have a – I – I – I just – I just got this – this – this awful cold, and I'm coughing and wheezing." Well, I've done something for colds, I'll try to do something for it – at a very, very light, light, light level. The cold at once doesn't start to clear up, why I tell him to go take a rest. See, because I know what I'm up against.

Now, you would be very wise in your pcs to whistle yourself up a type of doctor who gives insurance examinations and if somebody wants some auditing from you, so forth, tell them, "Go – good, go on and get a physical examination." The doctor sends him back and he says, "This guy's got acute lumbosis; a howling case of acute lumbosis." What's your course of action? All right, he's got a howling case of acute lumbosis. You going to get anyplace processing him? No.

Yes, you could probably fool along with it. Yes, you could do something to it and so forth. But you're – you're taking the long road. This person's actually physically ill, you understand? It isn't the person has migraine headaches, everybody knows this is a psychosomatic illness. The doctor isn't going to even label that. He says he's come back here with acute lumbosis which, as you know, is a peculiarly medical illness.

What you going to do? See, this person ought to be in a hospital, man. You say, "All right, Doc, put him in a hospital. Could – " I'd say, "could you do anything for him?"

"Well, yes, we'd have to feed him up on *sum-whum* and we have to do a *bum-sum*."

"All right, good. How long will he be in the hospital?"

"Oh, we'll have to have him in the hospital a couple, three weeks."

You say, "All right, put him in the hospital. Good." Very relaxed, cooperative attitude. Not from any fear of you, but this bird, if anybody can get him over this phase of illness by change of environment by sending him to the hospital or by some other means – fine. That's three weeks we're not going to have to process a pc going uphill the whole way while he's sitting in the chair coughing and sneezing and shivering and shaking and taking his pills every fifteen minutes. You follow my re... line of reasoning

So that's three weeks of auditing you haven't wasted. And whether you can do something for it or not do something for it. The medico says he's got acute lumbosis.

"Is there any cure for acute lumbosis?"

"Oh, yes, we give him – we give him whizzle sticks to *wuff-wuff* on, you know?"

And you say, "Well great, great, great, go ahead by all means, give him whizzle sticks to *wuff-wuff* on." Expected prognosis, three weeks. Good. Fine. "Thank you, doctor."

I'm not telling you this because it's insidious, which it is. This is simply very good sense. Very good sense. You'll have a lot of – lot more wins in auditing if somebody's around that'll take over acutely ill patients or something like this, why fine. Fine. By all means. By all means.

Now, that doesn't say – the guy broke his leg, it doesn't say that you shouldn't drop up at the hospital and give him the Touch Assists necessary to have him recover in two weeks instead of six, by removing the trauma by giving him the Touch Assist, don't you see. That doesn't say you shouldn't do that. This medico says he's got acute lumbosis. "All right," you say, "good." You don't have to know what acute lumbosis is, beyond this fact: Has it got any prognosis? – and that's the question you have to ask – is there any prediction by which we can get this point, this point – the end point of the illness. Does this end point?

"No," he says, "Well," he says, "tuberculosis of the spine," he says, "the fellow's had it."

"Well, what should happen?"

"Well, he should go to a sanitarium."

"Well, what's – what's the – what's the prediction?" That's what you're looking for, see. "What's – what's this point of recovery?" See?

"Well, there isn't any."

You say, "Well, there isn't any particular reason to treat him either, is there?"

He'll agree with it, "Yeah, that's right. Relatives feel better if you do."

"Well, I wish you'd make it plain to this fellow's mother what the score is, doctor. Let them make up their mind what they're going to do about it. But there's no point of – no – no point of end for this illness."

Don't try to shove it down his throat and give him big sales talk on how you're going to get point of end on that illness because in the first place you're not talking the same language and you're not talking in the same field. So it's utterly pointless for you to say, "Well, I can process this person and get this person over this," and we'll get to talking about this in a minute. It's pointless. It's stupid of you to do so. I don't know why you stand around and yammer at him. You're not talking about the same kind of healing he's talking about, and you can't help but get into a disagreement with the bloke.

He says, "You're going to stand over this guy with hot packs and you're going to give him the shot in the gluteus maximus that's going to get him well?" That's – this is the way it's

translating in his head, see? "I just told you that I can't do this and produce a result, and you're going to stand around there with these hot packs and the mustard baths, and you're going to get him well and that? Well, I know it's impossible. So therefore you're a fake. You're a – you're a dunce."

You see, that's his whole attitude. It's just the attitude of outrage. And your attitude will be outrage: "What do you mean – what do you mean I can't process this guy and get a – and get a few things straightened out in his skull plate and get him up on his feet? What the hell's wrong with you, you silly boob? Of course I can..."

Well, you're not talking the same language, so of course you're going to get in an awful argument. You're talking in the field of psychosomatic healing. And he's talking in the field of physical healing. That's like a Martian talking to an Earthman about a pretty girl. I don't know what's a pretty girl to a Martian, see, and he sure wouldn't know what a pretty girl would be to an Earthman. We just wouldn't be talking the same language.

He'd say, "What I really like, what I really like – those lovely claws." And you say, "Claws?" And you say, "The – the – wh..."

And he says, "These beautiful sweeping antenna." You say, "Well, I like nice hair, too." And he says, "Hair! *Oooohh!*" [laughter]

So you don't yammer around like that with one of these boys. He says, "Well, the guy's got tuberculosis and no expected physical recovery." I would go as far as to correct one if he was being too mean to me, I'd say, "Well, you're absolutely right, there is no expected *physical* means of recovery – there's no means of *physical* recovery," you see. I might go that far. But I wouldn't just play dead dog with my paws waving in the air, don't you see. But I'd say, "No, well, I agree that there's no physical – no physical treatment possible for that, is there? Well, then it doesn't matter then whether we really hospitalize him or not, does it?"

"That's right."

"All right. I wish you'd write the family and write me a report to that effect, would you?"

He will. Hell give you a nice factual report. And if you're very clever and you're rather polite, and if you get down these points I'll be teaching you on the subject of these various aspects of this very broad field of healing and the difference between the physical address to healing and – the difference between that and the mental address to healing – if you get these points all down, you'll be pretty slippery. And he'd probably write you in medical terms that will break your skull. Well, go write him back, when you give him a report, well write him back a report with Scientological terms that would break his skull. Don't give him any idea that these are understandable to him. Of course, his Latin wasn't understandable to you, either. I know, I've received some lately. "The *dippajalus* went *glubla booglegum*." You talk about terminology, man.

Of course, these are the names of things with them, and they're the names of significances and so forth with us. So that even the field of terminology has this vast difference between them. Do you get what I'm talking about?

The guy says to you then, "He's going to kick the bucket, and we can't do anything for him." That's not the time for you to stand and look at him and balefully, and say, "Well, with processing, why, I can do something for him." He knows very well that you're saying "With physical healing I can do something for him" – this is the way it translates, so you're just calling him a no-good practitioner. He knows it's impossible, you say it's going to be – you're going to do it, so he knows then you're a bum. See? Just like you'd know he was a bum if he was pretending he could do something in the field of psychosomatics. I'd laugh at his face. As a matter of fact, that's why I laugh in his face. Because he pretends in this field today. And he shouldn't pretend. But addressed as an individual in straight vis-à-vis, and even addressed on an association basis, these guys say, "Psychosomatic medicine, that's right, we don't know very much about it. New field." [laughter] But that's what you're into when you're into the field of prolongation.

Now much more subtly, you're into the field of psychosomatics. Why didn't the guy recover? And this is where your argument with the medical doctor will take on a very interesting note with him. "Why didn't he recover? What is this factor of prolongation of the illness? What is this factor of prolongation? What made this occur?"

And you say, "Well, in actual fact, that belongs in the field of psychosomatic healing. That's where that belongs – an unexpected prolongation."

The old girl had some illness about two years ago and she's never recovered. She got a cold about two years ago and she's still got a cold. The doctor's just given this up, see? He's reached this point. You got it? He's reached that point. The expected point of recovery up here where illness acute is ending, and the person didn't end cycle. Bah! "Now what do I do?" Well, he's got nothing he can do. And there's your wide-open door.

You say, "All right. The reason you can't do anything, of course, is this goes off into the field of psychosomatic healing. And that, doctor, is a very specialized field. You have to be an expert in that field, and you have to be terrifically well trained," which is all very true. "You have to know your business. There's probably some mental condition which is holding the illness in place."

And the doctor will say with a beautiful oversimplification, "Oh, there is some more reason the person doesn't want to get well."

And I wouldn't put up with that or even be a good fellow about it, I'd say, "Well, you could put it that way, I suppose. Actually, it's more complicated than that, doctor."

Oh, he'd agree with that, yes. "Oh, I see, it's more complicated."

He'll be giving you all the patients whose illness has gone back and beyond the expected term of recovery; the people who have moved through this illness acute part of this band, have reached the end of this and have gone right on being sick. Prolongation – right on being sick from there on that he cannot do anything about. And that's got him buffaloed, because it is something that is running forward that he can't stop. It has exceeded his cycle of action so therefore he has become the effect of it. His cycle of action didn't end.

Little Willie had measles. Two weeks, he should be up and merry as a cricket. Two weeks go by, three weeks go by, four weeks go by and little Willie is not merry as a cricket.

Now he has entered this field of prolongation. He's up against this problem of prolonged illness. Not that it's merely a long illness – don't get that in crosswise. It's going on too long. It's going on beyond the time it should have stopped. Why? And of course, the answer is in our hands. See, the answer is directly and immediately in our hands. There are psychosomatic elements – psychosomatic elements that's entered into this case. He can't do anything about it. The immediate response, if you could do something about it, or even say you could do something about it, he'd give you about a third of his patients. They're the ones that worry him and don't pay him. He's not doing anything for them, man. They make him feel like a complete fraud. It's those that make him feel like a fraud. Those he can't do anything for. And that drives him right on down Tone Scale. And if he had any help in that direction he would take it that fast. And if you're the expert in psychosomatic healing, in the severest definition of the word – healing by the psyche – medical doctor will say, "Well, why do you suppose this is?"

"Well, I'll tell you, the reason the broken leg there is going on – going on, doctor, is the person for some reason or other has fallen out of communication with the area. The circulation is very bad in that area. He doesn't want anything to do with the area. He actually can inhibit the responses to the area, mentally. He can inhibit blood flow to the area. And if you shift his attention around a little bit on that he might cease to do it, and he'd get – this broken leg would get well, doctor."

Don't try to explain it all the way to him, of course. "I am simply – I'm oversimplifying it. It's more complicated than that," which it is. "I'm just trying to give you a sort of an idea of what, you know, you might see wrong. Just like I can't understand what you did in there with the – with the mallet and so forth, well, I don't expect you understand what I would be doing with the psyche. You see, us specialists have our own compartments. But it's just that he won't have anything to do with the bust, where it's broken there. And we could probably get him to have something to do with that. We'd go into the matter, do an analysis of the thing, straighten it out, figure out what's wrong. And we would get the thing squared around."

Well of course, you yourself have come to realize the complications of the Touch Assist. Well, how many factors are involved in one of these little Touch Assists that we toss off at Level I, you see? What is this Touch Assist all involved with, man? Well, it's involved with GPMs in the first place. There's root words "to reach," and root words "to withdraw." [laughter] All kinds of things, you see, involved with this thing. We call it very simply a Touch Assist. Actually, one leg will become sympathetic with the other leg. And if you put his attention on the opposite member – you must never give a Touch Assist on just one side of the body; you must give it on both sides of the body – and you find that the opposite side of the body has gotten a block up on the right side of the body. You find these various things where you're working. Just in the process of working Touch Assists on people you'll discover something very interesting.

A swelling will reduce, reduce, reduce, and then cease to reduce. And then very brightly you say, "Oh well, I remember Ron says you had to do it to the other hand," you know? "Well, we'll do it to the other hand is what we'll do." "What the hell! It went on reducing," see? It was somehow or other locked up against the opposing member of the body the – on the opposite side. And you can't help but observe these things, and you say, "What's going

– what's going on here?" And you give a few of these things and pretty soon you'll find out that the bird really didn't have a backache, he had a headache, you know? And then if you were stupid you shifted off to the headache. Of course, if you'd gone on treating the backache he would have gotten the backache back, too.

You have to study things called shock patterns. You have to study – a person is hit in the leg and the shock of being hit in the leg in the engram actually traveled up to the top of his head. And he's still got a picture of the shock, you see, and he's still holding the shock from going up his leg. So as you process him, naturally, you run this engram. And he actually isn't actively doing this, he's merely got the picture of doing this and the picture starts to discharge. And the shock wave that should have gone all the way through and did go all the way through – but he wouldn't have anything to do with it because he'd already decided to stop it, you see – that he didn't, of course, put him into apathy about it. He's still got a picture of all of this, and all his emotional expression. You've got the whole pattern of the actual shock wave that went through his body when he was hit in the foot.

Naturally, you do a Touch Assist on the foot, the guy will sooner or later, if this was a very bad blow in the foot, he'll have a headache somewhere during that period of the Touch Assist. The pattern of the shock waves and so forth run out because, of course, they all occurred. Time didn't stop, he's too deep into his GPMs. Just because he said, "I'm going to stop that pain right at the ball of my foot," well, let's look it over. Did he? No, he didn't. But he put a stop in the engram that's stopping the pain at the ball of his foot, and there's where he's held in the incident. So, you start doing a Touch Assist, you take his attention off of that, you discharge that part of the incident, naturally the shock wave, which actually did occur sometime in the past, then traces on through the remainder of its pattern. And it goes on and runs out. If you run the Touch Assist too long, you put him back at the beginning of the engram again. And it'll run all the way through again.

Touch Assist is a very laborious proposition if you were to run everything out all the way with a Touch Assist, see? And yet it's very safe to do. But if you knew everything there was to know about a Touch Assist and tried to communicate it to a medical doctor – is the only point I'm trying to make to you – while you're standing on either side of this bird's bed, I think he'd be there for some hours. So the best way to do it is just say, "Well, of course, this is in the field of psychosomatic healing and so forth, and just like I don't know what you did on the operating table with that to begin with, not that you didn't do it all right, of course you wouldn't know what I would be doing to adjust his psyche. And these are both specialized areas and they're very complicated. Just let me simplify it to a point of saying, well, the fellow's fallen out of communication with that member of his body. We maybe have to restore it, maybe there's some ancient trauma there, there may be – may be something there that doesn't quite meet the eye. But we're not trying to get you to understand all this, doctor, because we're not treating you, we're interested in the patient. And we'll see if we can't end this cycle of action on this illness so that it really does reach its end period."

Aw, hell, if you could do that he'd think you were a magician, see? He'd look on you with some awe. You understand what you're doing. Now, you're going to learn this well, because all Scientologists are very interested in this particular line and this is a line that back in Dianetics had more pcs per square inch than you could shake a stick at. And this is what peo-

ple at Level I are always complaining about. And if you're a very slippery auditor in this particular direction, man, you've got it made all the way through. So you might as well enter the field of psychosomatic healing and work with it.

It isn't a matter of "it's a good way to get patients or make money" and so forth – it's a way that we ourselves have been avoiding. I'd never worked out exactly where we belonged in this particular field. Well, let me point out to you that we do not belong here in the field of physical precipitation of the illness. See, the predisposition, physical predisposition of the illness – that we don't belong in. Physical, see. We don't belong in this period of the acute illness; definitely not in that period. Definitely, definitely not in that period. Guy's got a roaring temperature, we're going to process him – got rocks in your head, man!

If he didn't respond to a little communication and touching the pillow and so forth, leave it alone. You're just going to make him worse. Don't try to process a very ill pc. That goes way back when. It's very reasonable. Why? It isn't that you could eventually do something for him, that isn't the point. If you went on on the subject of what has he done for this illness, perhaps you would break through. But actually every question he's answering, he is so distracted. If there's any possibility that in two or three days this person will feel better, well, let's leave it for two or three days till he feels better and then let's straighten it all out. See what I mean? You don't belong in this period of illness, acute.

And as far as prolongation of the illness is concerned, when an illness is prolonged by medical treatment, such as insanity commonly is with electric shock – that insanity is being prolonged because there is the medical doctor trying to enter the field of mental treatment, which he described more or less as treating the insane. We don't care whether we're in that field or not. But he's again got a physical idea that the brain is deranged in some way and he's got to do something physical to meet this physical condition, don't you see? And he just misreads this across the boards. He has no right to be in that field at all. And the psychiatrist, of course, is somebody that the medical doctor really doesn't want anything to do with.

The psychiatrist is in the terrible minority. He could even be neglected as a factor in the community. All the psychiatrists in South Africa could be – have been gathered in my small office in Johannesburg. You see, what are these mobs of psychiatrists that we're all talking about now? You'd have had to stack them in there kind of tight, and they'd have all been standing up, but they could have been packed into my office.

The medical doctor's the boy. He knows the psychiatrist is a failure. The psychiatrist is a failure because he never solved the problem of prolongation for the medical doctor. It isn't that psychiatrists can't cure illness – insanity or not cure ill – insanity – an illness he calls insanity. It's not that the psychiatrist can't handle his own field of insanity. No, that – the medical doctors: "Ah, well, that guy's raving, picking bugs off himself, go lock him up in a cell someplace, just get rid of the problem. Get it out of sight of the community and so forth." The psychiatrist more or less follows this tradition.

But it's that the psychiatrist couldn't come in and take Mamie Glutz who was sick for five weeks when she should have been sick for two weeks and say, "Now Mamie, what cooks? How come you're sick for these additional three weeks? What's worrying you, kid?"

The illness is actually now not an acute period. It's died down. It simply didn't end. See, she's still sort of bedridden. She's still lethargic. She isn't up and about and at it. How come?

All right, the psychiatrist did not solve that point for the medical doctor, so therefore the medical doctor has no great love for the psychiatrist and would feed him to the lions at the least excuse. And actually, if you made your position completely clear, and if the Scientologist and Scientology at large made its position completely clear to the medical doctor, and if it agreed to this degree: that somebody's bleeding from a femoral artery is no time for psychosomatic healing; that's for the – the time for somebody with the tourniquet (if it's even possible to apply it) and that you needn't go around trying to treat an obvious physical damage such as a bashed skull with a bone sticking out of it, with a Touch Assist – all you have to do is to agree with that point and then your viewpoint becomes totally real both to you and the medical doctor, see? Do you follow?

And all you've got to do for the medical doctor, as a service, because this over here has another whole chapter with regard to it – predisposition: How do people come – become predisposed to illnesses? You actually know quite a bit about that. You could even go back here and find the point where the fellow made the postulate to have the illness. See, you can do all kinds of wild things on this side of it. But it's no help to the medical doctor.

As a matter of fact, if you knocked out all the predisposition, he'd starve to death. [laughter] That's no real help, and he – that wouldn't be real to him at all. But this is real to him, he has his hands on this every day: There isn't a day when he's industriously in the office, on taking calls and so forth, that he doesn't run into this prolongation in some fashion or another.

There's this old lady who is still nagging him. She came to him to get cured of these lumps and she's still got these lumps. And well, he operated on the lumps and he did this and he did that and he finally just got sick and tired of her because she's still got lumps, see? And she's complaining about it and she's yammering and she does show up on his roll books, and so forth. She even pays him money. He'd rather not have the money. He'd rather not have anything to do with this old babe. He's starting to get cross with her, as a matter of fact, and he's getting upset with her and so forth because he can't help her. And yet he's a medical doctor so somehow or another he's got himself into a position where he has to listen to all this, you see? He's supposed to do something about it; makes him feel like a failure and a fake. There's a certain percentage of the practice of every medical doctor is in that condition.

I'm not saying that you should take over that section of the practice. No, no. I should say you should take over the field and take authority in the field of "psyche-somatic" healing. Psychosomatic healing. Psyche – healing with the spirit and the mind.

It, by the way – just as a slight historical note on the end of this here before I end this lecture – happens to be the oldest kind of healing there is, oddly enough. Magic and so forth all traces along this line. Putting the – painting a stone with the symptoms of a headache or something like this, and then busting the stone or something like this, and very often the fellow's headache would disappear. Treatment by symbological means and all of this sort of thing. It's an old, old, old tradition. You actually are the old-timer, in actual fact, and the medical doctor is the newcomer.

When Ug was down there alongside the river with a busted leg, the first thought his companions had around him was that an evil spirit must have struck him down and they all cut and run for the hills and they left him sitting there with his broken leg, see? And pretty soon some specialist amongst them, some specialist amongst them would go down – would develop, and he would say, "Well, evil spirits. All right. He must have been struck by an evil spirit. All right." And he would go down and cast the various spells necessary to knock out the evil spirit or something like that, and what do you know, sometimes Ug didn't die. After all, somebody had come back to see what happened to him.

No matter how faint, in other words, their means were and no matter how unreal they were, no matter how effective or ineffective; and remember, they've very often been effective. Actually there are records that show that the healing done by the Amur tribes' medicine men and the shamans and so forth – they got a higher rate of healing in certain illnesses and so forth than has – is commonly achieved in the Western world, you see? So they're not really bum. But they've gone up and down along the line and so on, and you are in the oldest tradition. You're in the oldest tradition. Of course, naturally it's the oldest tradition, because it's the tradition of the spirit. And therefore there is a great basic truth sweeping behind your tradition that – that's all there is there. And you're saying that can heal, see? That's what you're saying.

And the medical doctor's saying, well, he can't do anything, there really isn't one there and there's nobody around, there's nobody doing anything about it. And you've got to shift the parts around. If you shift the parts around and you're lucky, why, they'll go back together again and it will all be all right.

But you are in the older tradition. And there's no reason why you should not take over. This is just one small section of it. And of course you have areas also whereby the individual is predisposed to feeling crazy and feeling pretty batty and downhearted and depressed, and then this didn't go away for quite a while so you did something about it. Well, don't get your own cycle of this mixed up with the medico's physical cycle of this, you see? And prolongation is where you belong, because that's what worries the world today. That – if you want to do any psychosomatic treatment, why then, the proper course would be to get the individual examined by the medical doctor to find out if he's acutely ill and if anything can be done for that acute illness which is rather easy to do and which comes to a positive end. Do you see?

And then, if you've ruled that out and so forth, why, you pick it up from there – whether you've ruled it out or ruled it in, see? At that point you pick up the case and fix him up so that he doesn't keep on getting these spells or something of the sort. That's psychosomatic healing, you see?

It's a very, very broad field, and we are so broad that we very often fail to realize that there is a field we don't have. We are too cocky in our total ownership of everything and there's a field which we really don't own and that is the field of keeping the artery from pumping when it is severed, and that isn't part of our field, you see? Ah, yes, we can go up along the line and say, "Well, all right, Operating Thetan came along, he could fix that up." Well yes, he could mock up a new body for the guy. Do you see, it could – it can go that extreme.

But in the field of the workaday world of the little guy going to work and coming back again and that sort of thing, when he breaks his leg, he wants his leg put back together again

fairly straight, he hopes. And there are some people in the society who do that. And we want to know why this guy broke his leg, well, all right, we could inquire why. But we are really not vitally interested and the medical doctor's not vitally interested until that leg, which was broken, failed to heal at the expected period of time. And when that occurred, then that door is wide open to us with a crash, because we are actually the only hope anybody has from that point on. Ninety percent of the broken legs heal, *whir-pop*. And the rest of them, the guy just goes on limping and limping and he has pains and he has ghost pains in it and he doesn't know what it's all about.

So now I'm not talking about the field of general Scientology practice in this lecture, let me make that clean to you, too. I'm not talking about the *whole* field of Scientology. I'm talking about just a little particularized field of Scientology that we could call psychosomatic healing. And that's where we belong in the field of psychosomatic healing, that's where we could be of service in the field of psychosomatic healing and that's where we would be accepted – in the field of prolongation of the illness.

Thank you very much.

PSYCHOSOMATIC: ITS MEANING IN SCIENTOLOGY

A lecture given on 30 July 1964

Thank you. Thank you. All right, this is the what?

Audience: 30th of July.

Thirtieth of July.

Male voice: AD 14.

AD 14. Thank you. All right, Saint Hill Special Briefing Course.

Well, we're going to have – I'm of a – of divided opinion here with regard to what I should talk about today. I was talking about psychosomatic healing and so forth, and we were all set to do something that was energetic and proper and line ourselves up with healing and try to and so forth. And I saw the snide looks on most of your faces when I was talking about that. [laughter]

It is possible to win over a medico. It is possible to win one over. I just got through winning a couple over, see, showing them where this started and end, and the argument was very convincing to them and psychosomatic healing could be very interesting – very small but interesting section of this and we have some new breakthroughs on the subject and so forth.

But I don't think really that the idea of undertaking it in very close cooperation with the medical profession would be very successful. That's my candid opinion because I looked over my case histories on the subject of their treatment, and their treatment lays in too many what they call "psychic traumas."

Psychic trauma to them is something they don't know what it is, but it's a word they use. Don't go looking for a meaning because they really have no meaning for it.

So you're going up against a problem here, if you deal with the medico, of a person who monkeys. He doesn't have any very precise answers, when he immediately gets out of the field of the broken leg, when he gets out of the field of putting on a tourniquet or some other type of action and he gets into a field where he himself does not have very good answers and so he monkeys. And they will do some very interesting and wild things. They will get some kind of a suspicion that there might be a growth in somebody's chest and start removing tissue. And they'll do exploratories and they will do all kinds of wild things. They will go into a tumor and take a small slice of it and so forth, thus activating it and aggravating it so that now the person practically is dying whereas before they weren't bad off. In other words there's a

lot of monkey business. And I say that very advisedly, I'm not merely – I could think of much more high school words than monkey business, but I think it rather fits, so forth.

Man descended from monkeys and those that didn't descend much became doctors. Bitter, huh? I – this caused me – this caused me to take a very sharp look, caused me to take a very sharp look at a possible cooperation. And it left it very much in question because time after time after time after time, I have treated iatrogenic difficulties.

Now, that's a nice upstairs word, and you should learn that word. Iatrogenic – it means "doctor-caused." It's an illness caused by the doctor. In the whole field of psychiatry you have practically nothing but iatrogenic psychosis today. If a person has been unlucky enough to get into an institution, the person is so traumatized, in other words, so bunged about, so shocked and so batted around that, one, any establishment of communication between a person in the realm of a helper, you see, or the person in the role of somebody who's going to help him or treat him is of course immediately broken down. It's almost shattered. That the person just mentions he's going to help a psychotic who has been institutionalized is usually enough to produce a complete break of affinity. And it's just out the window, right now. Gone.

Because their idea of help, I don't think that the common ordinary garden-variety legislator, senator or representative or some other chap – chap is there because the other one is deleted – is censored. He passes these vast laws. "Vast laws. You know, you've got to pass laws." And so he doesn't know anything about what he's passing laws about. So he sets up some kind of machinery where anybody that stumbles across a pebble in the street is at once put on some kind of an underground railway that disappears from public view and you go *swoooo*, and you wind up in an institution. I mean, it's the wildest piece of legislative balderdash that has ever existed.

There is nothing in the Constitution that says you have to be sane to be a citizen. Call that to your attention, that's the Constitution of the United States. You don't have to be sane to be a citizen. And yet these boys have moved it over to a point where if you are pronounced insane you're no longer a citizen and have no civil rights of any kind whatsoever.

So anybody can pronounce anybody insane by the legislative action; it doesn't even take a doctor. And then the next thing you know, why, the fellow is inside, and the moment he's inside he has no civil rights. So this then opens itself wide open to political balderdash, hanky-panky. Political hanky-panky, you don't like somebody...

They did it down to somebody down in the southern part of the United States. The governor of a state, not too long ago. I think he sacked the whole staff of the hospital and walked out. They had forgotten that he still had authority to sack the staff of the hospital. But they tried to railroad him, you see, and this becomes a political mechanism.

Anyone whose ideas are antipathetic to us fascists or us communists or us something-or-others must-rule-all. Anybody who says – up and says, "You know, I don't think that's right. I – I think we ought to keep the Constitution so..." "Oh, he's insane!" and so forth, and they got this machinery all set up and in he goes, and he has no more political rights, you see.

Now you think I'm exaggerating, but I'm not exaggerating. I think you've had a few lessons in this before. I've told you – it – I get letters every once in a while, "Dear Ron, For

years I thought you were just fooling when you talked about something or other, but the other day I went down to the local clinic, and you've been understating the case." You see?

All right, this legislative machinery sweeps over and places in the hands of the anointed practitioner the right and power to operate in the field of the mind as well as in the field of physical illness, and the right to railroad this bloke in and so on. And here in England about the total training a GP has in the field of the mind is a six-hour lecture in a drafty hall in some insane asylum which he doesn't even have to attend to get his examinations. That's his basic training in the field of the mind.

So they have the idea, because the legislators have passed Legislation giving them total power in this field in most Commonwealth countries, in England and United States, and they have the idea they know something about the mind. And to them of course, even by their definition, the mind is the brain. And yet because of the mix-up that words can be subjected to, why, they therefore say if you're operating in the mind you're trying to do something with the brain. And they're very confused people because in the first place they have not been trained. I underscore that, they have not been trained. They have no training in this field at all.

They have no training because, one, there has never been any textbooks in this field which produced effective release of neurosis or psychosis or psychosomatic illness. That's one of the reasons they've never been trained. Which is an understandable reason and forgivable. But to pretend then they've been trained when they're usually quite aware of the fact there's no data in this field, that to me is – borders in the realm of – well, let's use a mild phrase – fraud. And the second reason they've never been trained in this field is that they themselves don't have to be trained in this field. Any GP – General Practitioner – has the full power to treat any and all mental illnesses of any kind granted to him by the various legislatures and parliaments of the Western world.

So one, he hasn't got anything to know, and two, he doesn't have to know anything about it. So this makes a beautiful monopoly, which is manipulable politically, is very remunerative in various ways and he can go to town. The fellow called a psychiatrist is not licensed to practice psychiatry. There is no license to practice psychiatry. You have a perfect right to call yourself a psychiatrist, it has no legal definition of any kind *whatsoever*. It practically does not have even the legal definition that Scientology does. Scientology has a better right to it because Scientology's at least copyrighted and trademarked.

The word "psychiatry" has no actual legal definition. And there is no bill on any legislative books anywhere which says a psychiatrist can practice in the field of the mind. That leaves them completely out on the limb. They have to be a medical doctor, they have to be a medical doctor, in order to practice in the field of the mind. And any medical doctor can practice in the field of the mind. They do not have to be trained to practice in this field, and therefore a fellow who calls himself a psychiatrist only operates in the field of the mind legally so long as he is an MD in good standing. This is something you should realize. There's this whole field, then, called psychiatry, which has no existence in legal fact. Isn't that very interesting. There are no laws licensing psychiatry. There are no psychiatrists who are licensed.

Your certificate as HCA has far, far, far more validity than any psychiatric certificate ever issued. They do not have any certificate signed by Freud, Jung, Adler or any of them.

See? Pavlov, so on. There'd be two ways of training or certifying somebody, is the person who develops the information always has a right to validate whether or not a student who has studied that information can use it in some effective way.

You see, now that is the oldest, by the way, the oldest method of validating anyone's training. That is the oldest. University substitutes for that. This person has been here and read the textbooks of the guy. And actually university certificate or diploma and so forth does not have the same validity that the – a certificate or diploma issued by a person who was an expert in his field directly teaching the student. That has validity. The other is just a detour. You understand that? All the university can say is this fellow's been here and has read the textbooks of Joe Blitz. So therefore he's a doctor of something or other.

No, I'm afraid that doesn't hold very well. So that even holds many types of training in severe question. But I'm not trying to beat a drum in that particular direction, I'm just giving it to you the psychiatrist does not have a certificate which has anything like the validity of your lowest certificate of most of you sitting here, is HCA, HPA. He's got nothing like that.

For instance, as close as he comes to anything of the sort, is he becomes a diplomate or something like that through having thoroughly studied and passed examinations on the writings of Freud. In other words, he's been through everything that they have of Freud's and he can give you chapter and verse and date of everything Freud has written and said. And having passed that examination then some unauthorized body says he's a diplomate and therefore is valid in the practice of Freud's work.

Well, that's all very well. If this were a group of students of Sigmund Freud who were doing this, that would be different, you see. If that were a group which was perpetuating his work. But it is not. It is simply some body of blokes that set themselves up independent of Freud. And none of these people were ever trained by Freud. And he set up no such activity and none of the Freudian analysts originally set up such an activity, so actually today Freudian analysis is not practiced.

There practically is no practice of Freudian analysis. They practice things like Horney and other squirrel offbeat things and so forth. And perhaps Freud could produce a finite result in the field of the mind. And I know, having been trained to some degree by Commander Thompson, who was trained by Freud, I know very well that Commander Thompson could do some very wild things. He'd do such things as train cats and things like this. It was pretty, pretty wild.

I know that doesn't sound like much, but you really have to have a command of the mind to train a cat. And he had a cat he called Psycho. And this cat would do most anything, on command. And it was quite wild, quite fantastic. And the way he trained the cat was directly from knowledge of the mind. He'd wait until the cat did something and then reward it. Now, of course here was a basic student also of Pavlov at work, you see. They'd forgotten the other half of Pavlov's work: What you must do is punish only, they think. But he would – he'd just use straight reward. He'd wait for the cat to do something, like jump up on a chair. And then he would say the command word and reward the cat. And he eventually had the cat so the cat would – you – he'd say, "Jump up on the chair," and the cat would jump up on a chair. And this really made everybody blink. And the cat could do a lot of these silly little tricks.

But there was just an applied piece of the field of the mind, do you see? Directly. He for instance told me things which I have never since found in any of the written works. It's quite interesting, these little bits of missing information which go to make up the body of data which becomes a practice are mostly, I think to a large extent, missing. Because they're the word-of-mouth things you pick up around the joint, you know?

He taught me things about association that I don't find – I find association is something else in the Freudian texts. But association, the concatenation of association whereby a person is actually able to arrive at some conclusion. I say concatenation, I really mean a string of things. And the association by libido theory of course is short-circuited onto the second dynamic, so that the person has certain things he associates with certain things which then these certain things being the woof and warp of his neurosis and psychosis – then his neurosis or psychosis is recognizable by what he has associated with what, you understand? Word association tests, in other words, and so forth.

Now, some of this has survived through Freudian lines and they do talk about it, but not to the extent that Thompson talked about it. He talked about other things. He talked about a diagnosis of the actual incident through not just listening for five hundred hours to the patient, you see, but actually finding out what he associated with what. And this required a very active and imaginative practitioner. But you could see that a practice of this character whereby you sort of have to get an idea of what's wrong with the bloke, and then you have to look around and find things for him to pick up and ask him what comes to his mind instantly, you see, and you would arrive with this trauma.

Now, Freud didn't have in mind four or five years of an hour per week, you see, he didn't have this in mind, this wasn't his idea of a treatment. But this other is so imaginative, you see. We look at this fellow and we say, "That is a sort of type who has a fetish on – he's a fetishist" – keeps things or attaches wild significances to things – "been terribly dominated, probably his mother." You know, this is the practitioner, he's figuring it all out, see? "And he looks like that. Let's see, he looks arrested maybe at the age of three or four. All right, now, when I say – now when I say 'mother', what comes to your mind, now? Yeah." And the guy says something, you see, and he says "biscuits" or something you know. And the guy says, "Mm-mm, mm-mm," and then he – you know. Then he says some other word. And the next thing you know he's got a moment of punishment or mental conflict at the age of three, maybe, or something like that, when the fellow had an ARC break with his family, you see. And has been in protest ever since against the situation, was pretending to be ill or something of the sort.

In other words, it was all on the back of the practitioner. Well, this moved off from the practitioner being very, very bright and very smart and very alert, moved over into an entirely different aspect of if he goes on long enough maybe we will find out something. And you find out that a person who is very, very dull depends utterly upon simply amassing data to arrive at an answer. If he amasses enough data, he may find out. Actually, it never happens exactly that way. When you amass enough data, I assure you, you get lost in the data.

There's a danger in amassing too much data. I'm going through a phase like that in my study of study right now. I've just got through amassing too much data on a highly inde... of a

highly antipathetic bit of the subject I'm studying and so forth, and I say good heavens, what wouldn't I give for some practical right now. Too much data. I'm getting confused, you know? Just jammed in with a sledgehammer. Too much data. No way to practice the data. No way to apply it. If you could just apply some of the data, you know, why, you'd feel better about it, you see.

Well anyway, Freud's operational basis may or may not be practiced. I wouldn't even know what it was, you see, very clearly. But probably I would have a much better idea than Doctor Sparkbreaker of the Bide-a-Wee Insane Asylum. In fact, I would have a much better idea than he would. Because my communication line only came through one via. And his communication line – oh, brother! See?

The only point I'm making here is technology, technology is very dicey stuff. The more vias it goes through, why, the more errors it becomes subject to. You... that's why you like to have me around when you're studying Scientology. You think, "Well, if it gets too rough and you get too confused, why, maybe he will pick up my despatch and so forth and give me the gen." As a matter of fact, I feed you a lot of gen back along other ways, too. Your Instructors are always at me and Mary Sue is always at me and Reg is always at me and so forth, about this, that and the other thing and so forth, and I lay it down. Tell them which is straight and which is not straight. You get it straight in these lectures, of course.

Now, the number of vias which go on to a line are proportional to the number of errors which are introduced into it. Interpretations. Some bloke didn't quite understand what the phrase was so he relayed that along as something else and then this caroms against something else and the next thing you know you have a whole new body of study called Freudian Analysis. And it today is a brand-new body of study.

For instance, I've collided with a bitter argument with a Freudian analyst, Johnny-come-lately, circa 50s, you know, a *bitter, bitter* argument on the subject of what transference was. And the critique of psychoanalysis and so on, one of our little booklets there, they're violent on that subject. All I've given them in there was what I was given to be true by Commander Thompson, see? But now they've got a different psychoanalysis, you see, so even a person who is announcing the original psychoanalysis is wrong and doesn't know what transference is, you see. We owe quite a bit to that particular field, but nothing to the body of knowledge or practitioners called psychoanalysts or psychoanalysis today. You should make that very, very clear. We owe something to Freud and nothing whatsoever to the existing bodies that call themselves psychoanalysis, see.

Now, that's as close as these boys have gotten to any wisdom on this particular subject and it has become perverted. So their right to practice in this field is very questionable. Now, the right to practice is based upon the ability to do. And if you ever permit that to be dropped out of Scientology, you will have a great deal of trouble from thereon. The ability to do regulates the right to practice. That's open and shut.

The right to practice does not depend upon a legislator, see. In the first place he's some hayseed that has been hauled off of his seeder by a couple of the local political bosses because he's such a sterling gent. And they shove him in the direction of the local legislature. And I'm saying "local" legislatures because most of these laws are made in the little state legislatures

and the little state parliaments. They're not made at – in Congress. One must say that with great awe: "Coonngress." Much less "the Preeeesident." These boys are not the fellows who make these laws. They're made – little pipsqueak state legislators where they make them clean their boots before they walk into the anteroom, you know? These are real corny, these little legislatures, you know.

My God, I had a state representative in Arizona one time trying to get plaudits from me on the fact that they had just read into law the Ten Commandments and that was now to be the law of Arizona. Oh, after all, my God.

Imagine it! They were actually trying to scrap all the laws of Arizona and in its place put in the Ten Commandments, you see. It was thereafter going to be Paradise. Well, of course, their owners or their keepers, the moneyed fellows in the society who headed them toward the legislature and controlled them more or less got some wind of this and pulled them off of it, so they all agreed that it should be this way and made that into a law.

But these birds can be stampeded. They can be stampeded by almost anybody. They're not a high-caliber intellect in the first place, they're probably all right growing their seed corn or they probably were all right in the hardware business, you know, or iron mongery. But when it comes to this sort of thing, government is never granted the dignity here in the West that it deserves; government is a specialized skill. It is a science and an art. And these fellows are not very hot on that line.

So the way they govern is just people rush into them and tell them how bad it all is over there, see. It's government by "how bad it all is." Now this has gotten so prevalent that it's even in practice this way in Congress so that if enough people rush in and say how bad it all is – specialized interests, you see – they can stampede these legislators into doing something catastrophic in the way of a new bill. And this has gone further and has become highly commercialized. So you have promoters. Promoters for a new government department. He wants a few, a few more million to play around with and a few thousand employees to boss around and give him importance. He will then find how-bad-it-all-ises in the society, rush these into the legislature and get then a big appropriation by which he can found his new department.

After he's founded his new department he couldn't care less. That's why you see the ebb and flow of attacks on Scientology. These – Scientology is simply used as a how-bad-it-all-is. They rush in with unfounded and completely false representations into these legislatures, some promoter does, you see, some bird who wants his new department to help to get himself a new three or four billion quick bucks, you see. His wife is just fresh out of Cadillacs. That crude, see?

So he finds out, well, we'll paint it up one way or the other, and this is never tried, you see. This is all done in the office of the majority leader or sminority leader or something like that. And they go in and they make some kind of a dicker and they get this fellow all stampeded about how we actually are driving stakes through people's chest in the dark of the moon or something like this. It's never subjected to any contest, don't you see. And this fellow, next thing you know, he's out there saying, "Kill all the Scientologists! And *de-de-daaaa!*"

And so next thing you know, why, some bill slides through, "Mental Health bill with a five billion dollar appropriation was granted today to Joe Schmutz – no, we mean the FDA," see. And then this guy Joe Schmutz, or whatever his name is, he couldn't care less about what Scientology is doing because he had no sincerity to begin with, you see? So all of a sudden it's all dropped like a hot potato and nothing more happens about it. And probably the whole Melbourne mess is just the medical department down there actually trying to get themselves a few quick pounds. That's right. This is – this is actually not even a cynical view of it. I mean, that's the way it's done.

So they've gone stampeding in there and they told this Galbatty it – no wonder the fellow's crazy, with a name like that. [laughter] They told this boy, "It's terrible, it's awful. How bad it all is. The Scientologists are ruining everybody, while us psychiatrists are only killing people in windrows. But we won't mention that. But anyway, if we just had a big appropriation we could prevent these things, you see." And that's the little rider that the public never hears about, see. Oh, they get a big hoopla, they get it all going, and so forth, and everybody having found out how bad it all is, why, somebody appropriates a few hundred thousand quid. In a case like that, a thousand quid would absolutely buy the mayor, you know? It's not big money like it is in Congress. When they play this in the Congress of the United States, you see, it's worth billions. When they play it in the state legislature you'd be absolutely fascinated how small change it is there – a few thousand.

And – so all of a sudden, why, having started this tremendous campaign about how bad Scientologists are, and so they could make their quick bucks, you see, why, they – all of a sudden nothing else happens. Of course, they get the money and they buy the wife the Cadillac, and that's it. See, they're not interested in doing their job, they're just interested in getting some cash. Now, if you hit somebody with enough bad news – this is your important technical datum – if you hit somebody with enough bad news, force or duress, you can make him give you something. That happens to be a mental mechanism. Nobody ever really looks at this as a mental mechanism, but it is a mental mechanism. That's all it is. If you hit somebody hard enough – and that would mean a blow or bad news, or you know, a blow in the field of mass and bad news in the field of significance – if you hit somebody hard enough, you can make him give you something. Blackmail is based on this. Government is based on this. Taxation is based on this.

You think those soldiers standing around with bayonets are just to fight the enemy, you're goofy. Because they're not there to fight the enemy, they're to keep the citizenry impressed so they'll keep coughing up those tax bucks, you know. Actually the dollar bill that isn't backed up with a bayonet is worthless. Hasn't anything else to back it up. It's got to be backed up with a bayonet. And that's all on the basis of – you can make somebody give you something, see?

Now, there's – there could be more to this mental law, and there probably is more to this mental law, but we're not interested in the whole mental law here. We're just interested in what law they are using. That is the law which is being used and it happens to be quite factual. So you rush up to somebody with enough bad news and you can shake him down for something.

I'll give you an idea of this. "Is seepage troubling your loved ones?" This is an ad of a mortuary. [laughter] "Is seepage troubling your loved ones?" Wild, isn't it? Now, do you know how much they get for any of – for some of those sealed boxes that they put out there, those metal caskets, and then their – what they call a vault, and so forth? Wow! You talk about going bankrupt. The way to go bankrupt is to get the old man to kick the bucket. You'll go bankrupt fast. Not because of the depreciation of his income but the cost of the funeral.

So they can sell everybody then sealed – water-sealed, watertight caskets and water-sealed, watertight vaults which cost a great deal of money, don't you see? See, well, that's a piece of bad news, and they hit somebody with this piece of bad news and they can shake them down for several thousand dollars, you see, then, for some pieces of concrete and tin work. And that is an operating law. It operates in the field of commerce to this way, to some degree, but more aptly in the field of government and certainly in the field of healing.

Now the doctor, the medical doctor, knows practically nothing else as "method of how to get along commercially in life." And he's always coming up with a new disease campaign of some kind or another. Now, the funny part of it is his money does not come in the public appropriation front from curing anything, his money comes entirely from scaring people with how bad it is.

Now, I'm well datafied on this because a pal of mine had had quite a case history book on the front of this. He used to sit around and talk to me by the hour. And the old – the old boy used to tell me about a surgeon – a surgeon who would rush up to someone – the guy had a specialty in appendectomies, you see – and he'd rush up to the relatives or he'd rush up to the person, you know, see, in a terrific rush, and say, "He won't last the day!" You know? "Appendicitis." Fellow's got some kind of a bellyache, he ate too much turkey or something, you know. "He isn't going to last the day. Dying. Gone. Emergency operation, must operate," see, bang, bang. "Oh, yes, go ahead."

"Well, these operations are very expensive."

"Oh, that's – spare no expense."

So he'd double and treble his price for the appendectomy, see, in this particular line. He'd go down and whip out an old kitchen knife or something and go to work. And then, this guy, having brought out the appendix – quite normally they're healthy appendix, you see – would take them and hold them together and squirt them full of air so as to make them four and five times the size, you see. And there they are, all covered with blood and terrifically swollen, and if any relatives were waiting in the anteroom, he'd keep his gory gown on, you see, with blood splashed all over the place, and he'd take these things with the air blown up in them and *rush* into the anteroom, *shake these things* in front of their faces, you see, and say, "We got to it just in time! They were about to burst!" And of course these people are terribly grateful and pay his outrageous bill at once. Method of collection, see. "Thank God you were there, doctor, thank God, yes. How much did you say the op... twelve hundred dollars?"

"Oh, well, we got there at once!"

"Oh well, twelve hundred dollars, yes sir, there you are."

They use this as operation. So Scientology, Scientology is used to shake down appropriations for new psychiatric services. Those – new psychiatric policing, new psychiatric this, new medical this, new medical that. It's just one of the things that is used. You wonder why is this good press or bad press and so on, it has nothing whatsoever to do with press. It has to do with who wants a current appropriation.

Now, you notice that the FDA has no further interest now and wish to God they'd never started this suit against E-Meters in the United States. They sit around with their head in their hands because it's causing them trouble. It's causing the election campaign trouble, it's causing a lot of other trouble. Barry Goldwater's getting very interested in this one. We've – this is one of the shots that's going to be fired in the campaign.

Now, this was very embarrassing that some dumb promoter over at the FDA, and so forth, suddenly starts to beat the drum on how awful E-Meters are, don't you see? Because they don't want to bring the thing to trial. They'll get it to trial, they'll lose it like that. Now, if they lose it they'll set a precedent. They'll also get a counter-suit against the United States government for about a quarter of a million, half a million bucks, you see. Then this brings about another suit against the American Medical Association for having driven the FDA into such a state of frenzy, see? So they don't want to bring it to trial.

They've already used it, it's a dead dog and it's one they shouldn't have used. They recognize this now. It'll work this way similarly down in Victoria.

There'll be repercussions both ways to, but there's too much vested interest in doing this in Victoria. I could not make a breakthrough or convince anybody down there they ought to wind this thing up. Everybody just calmly resisted the idea of it. Well, it was too valuable to one and all.

Well, we see the opposition didn't get in and folded up by the wayside, which we very possibly strongly influenced. But the conservatives got in again. But the conservatives are in for a new shock when they get things arranged down there. I'm going to throw a new brickbat into their vicinity and just work the game backwards on these fellows. "You see what happened to the Laborites when they attacked Scientology, now you be good to us. Now, we want *you* to introduce some legislation or we'll defeat you at the coming election, as we defeated the Laborite."

In other words, we'll take full credit for the Laborite defeat. We'll tell everybody, "Well, you see, they – look, they lost." I'd have a little notice up – got to play these things a little tougher than a lot of people have guts to do so. I'd put a little notice up in the window, and it'll be an open letter to Mr. Galbatty, "I told you you shouldn't have done it," you know, that kind of a letter. "You shouldn't have done it. We very seldom enter the realm of politics, but when we do we're very effective, as you noticed in losing your last election." Very funny.

For instance, our biggest contender up here on the council that was raising the devil with our Town and County Planning Commission now happens to be in a beautiful state of having lost the election. He was the bird who started the "death lessons" thing, and so forth. And we finally moved him out of office.

Now, so these things can be manipulated from the other side, too. But this is a mental law – this is a mental law that you should pay some attention to because it's the basic law which is used usually in government, extortion, blackmail, medicine, any one of these things. If you understand that, how that law operates and so forth, then you'll understand why and what and usually think up a very nice defense and handle things much better. Because you'll understand who is doing what and why, you see? Why are they raising this much fuss?

Now, this works also this way: You're in a situation where so-and-so and so-and-so, you're in practice. Now, this law is just not worked by governments, this law is also worked by patients. "I had a this and I had a that and last night I could hardly pant and so forth and I'm dying today and so forth and therefore you have got to give me something," see.

Now, you could just discombobulate somebody terribly knowing that law, you could discombobulate somebody horribly, if when they came in and started telling you how bad it all is, ask them what they wanted from you. Be more bald than this. "What am I expected to give you?"

Now, the person quite – of course quite innocently may simply be dramatizing at some vast extent, don't you see. But you won't get perhaps a sensible answer. But you will sure change the course of what they're doing. Now, when you can shift somebody who is in a near state of hysteria about something or other, when you can shift their attention you can manipulate and handle the mind. It's obvious that you can manipulate and handle the mind because you can shift and change their attention.

I had an old pal of mine tell me one time that if you – if you get a – if you can make people laugh when they're crying and cry when they're laughing, then you would know something about the human mind. Interesting statement, a rather – a wider statement than one would believe, but a rather challenging statement. If somebody's crying, can you make them laugh?

If somebody's laughing, can you make them cry? Yes, this shows then you would – you would know the buttons, right? If you would know the push buttons of the mind – but knowing the mind isn't necessarily manipulating the mind. That's where that definition falls down.

But here is a point of mental manipulation. "What are you after?" "What am I expected to give you?" And you'll see them shift gears. They will shift gears with exclamation points. Because you've hit on the other end of the mechanism which they may unconsciously be applying. They may not be consciously applying this mechanism at all. They really may not want anything from you, you see. But by misidentification have you identified with something else from which they do want something.

But this really shifts gears. If you used this, for instance, as a Director of Training or Director of Processing and so on in a Central Organization, you'd have a ball. Registrar, and so forth, it's a wonderful post on which to use this particular mechanism. "All right, what are we expected to give you?" see. How bad every – you all are and how bad everything is and how bad it is, "All right, well, what am I expect..." no matter what's all bad, do you see. If it's getting in your hair, if you just give this as the response. It's not the expected response, but it is the actual response that fits on the other end of it.

See, they don't expect this response, but it is the actual response. And you'll get a discombobulation which is zzzz! It's fabulous, the amount of effect that is produced by that shift of – sudden shift of attention, and so forth.

"And my father beat me and my mother beat me and everybody beat me, and so forth, and everybody hit me..." and you're not auditing this guy, you see. "And so forth, and they forbade me to come down here and they're going to have – so forth, and they tell me the police are going to come down and mop you all up, and they tell me that so on and so on and they – so on, and it's all bad, and so forth."

"What am I expected to give you?"

It generally will be something. And it just turns it all off, bing, you see? And it's quite interesting. That's not for use in processing session, of course. [laughter, laughs]

Now, let's see what all this has to do with psychosomatic healing. All right, it has something to do with psychosomatic healing, it means the medical profession means something else by their term psychosomatic healing than you mean by psychosomatic healing. Because they think it's the mind influence on the body that is psychosomatic condition. Mind influence on the body. But this is different, because what do they mean by "mind"? Now, what does the word psychosomatic mean? Let's go down to – let's go down to cases here and I'll give you what I started to tell you today.

Psycho, named after *psyche*, or the soul – you know, that's little Psyche that was shot with the – by arrows, you know? This is Raphael's little doll, see? All right, it's the Greek symbol for soul. And you might as well put thetan, see, in the place of it. I mean, it translates that clearly, see? It's the same word, no difference as – in our field, see. Soma, body. Don't look for any more complication than that. Soma, body. Body, soma. I mean, that's all. I mean, that's all that soma means. It doesn't mean anything complicated; it's a very straightforward word. And then -atic of course is just your suffix, which means the action or condition of.

All right, now look, look at this: *psycho*, *soma*. A proper definition – now, understand me here – a proper definition of "psychosomatic" would be a thetan's influence on the body. You got that? That would be a proper definition and is our definition. That's our definition. Therefore it should probably be called "psychesomatic." Get the "o" out of there, which has very poor connotations, see. It's more comprehensible if you said "psychesomatic," see? *Psyche*, thetan, *soma*, body, see? And because it comes ahead of it on the cause-distance-effect formula, why you'd have psyche influencing the body. Simple.

All right, now, somebody somewhere along the line translated *Psyche* into mind. Now, that's the first downgrade. A thetan becomes identified as the mind. In other words, he doesn't know who he is anymore but he becomes these masses and that sort of thing, and he is this massy automatic piece of machinery called a mind, you see. So we've already lost the thetan and we have a mind. So then that would deteriorate into this definition: *mind influence on body*. If *psycho* – *psyche* – *psycho*, as it's used, has deteriorated to become mind, why, then it's mind influence on soma, body, see? So that would be "mental influences on the body" is what the word would mean.

All right, now, if we further deteriorated the word *psyche*, to mean "brain, and nervous system," which is where medicine lives, we would have the influence of the nervous system upon the body – influence of the brain and nervous system (brain merely being part of the nervous system), influence of the nervous system on the body. This is something like saying "the influence of telephone switchboards on the government." See, there's nobody on these lines making any calls, the switchboard now is somehow or another conducting all of its business all by itself.

If you can imagine a society in which the switchboard is looked upon and the telephone lines are looked upon as the causative action in the society, you can see – can you get that concept? We're having a depression because all the switchboards are reluctant. That sounds pretty *ding-ding-ding*, here comes the wagon, to me. Doesn't it to you? We are down then in the realm of the medical definition, which is the *psyche*, by which they mean brain and nervous system, influence upon soma, body.

They've gone the complete identification because of course the brain and the nervous system are part of the body, part and parcel, so they now are down to "body's influence on body." Body's influence on body. So now this is a total identification, they haven't anything influencing anything, so there's therefore no cure for it. So they've solved it. That's what they'll tell you, there's no cure for it!

Of course, they haven't got anything causing anything either. So they should call it "somasomatics." Because *psyche* has left. And they have absolutely no right to use the word *psycho* in their term "medical healing." Now, when they treat psychosomatics, they think in terms of cutting up a few nerves or filling somebody full of a few shots that feed up the neurons or make the synapses snap better. They do something wild in this to handle the nerve or channel or brain fiber or something like this, which is then supposed to handle the body, but it is the body, so where are we? We've busily arrived nowhere. So the field then has become lost. Now the field's a lost field.

Basically then a better term would be spiritual healing or spiritual influence on the body or spiritual illness, if you want to put it on the downgrade. Do you see that? See? This is the subject which you are then addressing when you address the fact that Mamie Glutz has got a stomachache, and that's because she had a fight with her boyfriend last night. Mamie Glutz had a fight with her boyfriend last night, Mamie Glutz has got a stomachache today. You come along and you say, "Mamie, what's wrong." And she says, "Oooh, I've got a terrible present time problem, got an awful stomachache. Got a terrible present time problem."

You say, "What happened?"

"Oh, I had a little de... terrible things. I had an awful fight with my boyfriend last night."

"All right, what didn't you communicate to your boyfriend last night? What incomplete communication existed last night?"

"Well, so-and-so and I didn't tell him so-and-so on and I didn't so-and-so and I didn't tell him so-and-so and didn't tell him so-and-so and didn't tell him so-and-so and I didn't tell him so-and-so."

"All right, Mamie, how do you feel now?"

"I feel fine, thank you very much."

There're actual case histories. You express it as an auditor: We handled the pc's present time problem, he felt better. And you actually are accustomed to somebody's having his wits scrambled and therefore having a bellyache or having his foot hurt or having the end of his nose hurt, you see? You operate very easily in that operating climate, see? And that is so familiar to you as an auditor that you don't realize that it's a totally unknown concept to the society at large. Isn't that interesting

They no more connect last night's fight with the boyfriend, with the stomachache they had today than the man in the moon. And this is such a brand-new idea to them that in the field of preclear education did you say, "Did you know – did you know that your various mental difficulties or conflicts or your collisions with life in the field of getting your job done or so forth is affecting your body?"

"Well, I know I'm not getting enough exercise. I have to sit at a desk too much."

All right, don't interrupt him, because you made a sort of progress.

"Is there any other way it could have ... ?"

"Well, I don't know. They tell me a fellow gets ulcers if he goes on worrying. I sure worry a lot."

"All right, do you have ulcers?"

"No, but I might have them." [laughter]

See, he knows it's basically true. But you could actually bring him up to a realization of this by a process. You could process a person to a realization of the source of his ills. But this is a slow way to do it, because he'll recognize it fastest by education. But I'm just giving it to you. It's there to be found. It isn't there because I say it's there; it's there to be found. In other words, you could say to somebody, "Tell me a time when you had a nervous upset and felt worse afterwards." You say that's a leading question. No, that wouldn't be a leading question normally, it wouldn't upset anything, if there wasn't something there to be found, see?

So the fellow says, "Oh, *Ooooooh*. Never thought of it that way before, but I – there probably is one. *Uhhh-uhhh-uh* – oh, yes. Hey, what do you know, I was sick for over a year and a half after my wife divorced me. You know, I think I was sick because I was so upset. How about that? Huh! Well, what do you know! Felt very degraded. Hm! You're trying to tell me that if I wanted to be healthy I shouldn't be mentally upset."

You say, "No, no, I'm not trying to tell you anything, trying to let you find out something. Is there any other time in your life when you were ill following a mental upset?"

And he'll locate three or four and he'll make a lot of big case gain and he'll go up in smoke. It'll be long comm lag stuff, you know. It might be almost the session comm lag. Might be next day he answers the question, see.

But that's because he's gone so far down from being a spirit. See, he now is thinking of himself as an animal or a neuron or a brain.

So it's no wonder that the society at large has fallen into these traps and has gone this low on the Tone Scale with regard to thetan-caused illnesses, thetan-caused healings. See, so the... everybody's in that condition out there in the street, see. They don't ... But they'll snap to this. Then they'll all of a sudden brush that away and they come up the Tone Scale quite a ways and they suddenly say, "Oh, yeah, yeah, yeah, yeah, yeah." At first they go around being very careful not to have any mental disturbances, you see, because it might make them physically ill. They get over that in an awful hurry. They get to a point, "All right! So I have a mental disturbance. I can process it out." Then they finally get up to a point, way up to the point of OT, "So I have a mental disturbance." See? Don't have to do something as a result of it.

But normally in the middle band you have to do something about it. You get – you get yourself in a big wingding one way or the other and you find yourself thinking and cursing obsessively about something or other and you're going around and around and around and around and around and around. And you suddenly say, "Whoa, whoa, whoa! Hold it, hold it, boy, here, hold it, hold it, hold it!" This is the mark, actually, of a Scientologist who's crossed over from – well over from being raw meat. "There's something I'm thinking that has something to do with why I'm thinking. And there's some incident that caused this. And it's possibly an overt." [laughter] "Now, what overt have I done lately? *Uhh!* Oh, my God! That's what it is. Okay." Faces up to the responsibility of his own acts, in other words. Instantly, there goes this.

Well, the body operates this way so thoroughly, how somebody could not notice it is the puzzle. See? See, these guys – this guy goes down the street spinning, you see, he's going round and round, "My God, *uhhh-uhh-uhhhuhhh-uhhhh-uhhhh,*" you know. And – he hasn't traced it to the fact that he just was told by the bank manager that he was a thousand pounds overdrawn because of the wife's draw-outs, you know? He hasn't connected with that. He's told this, he gets it as a terrific shock, he goes down the street, "I feel bad." A total mystery. "I wonder why I feel bad?" [laughter] And he'll suddenly tell his friends, he tells his friends the truth but he never looks at it himself. "I had an awful shock this morning, I feel pretty bad. I had an awful shock this morning. Told – the bank manager told me a thousand pounds overdraft." So he'll tell all his friends this, but it doesn't do anything for him. Because he doesn't know what he's said. That's correct.

You'll hear a great many truths spoken by people that do nothing for them. Because they don't mean anything to them. They never listen to themselves talk. [laughter] They're always cursing people who don't listen. They should curse themselves, they never hear themselves speak.

But there is the upshot of where the society exists right now. Then there's the upshot of a deterioration – a deterioration of recognition of a condition known as "thetan" – spirit. And as that has declined in word (meaning) so it has declined and become degraded in the physical universe.

I'll trace it again for you very rapidly. *Psyche*, thetan. Soma, body. See? Psychosomatic. Bang. Thetan causing a sensation on the body is what the inference is there. Not only a thetan can do something bad to a body or a thetan can do something good to a body, but a thetan can cause the body to feel some way. And there is actually the way we use it. We use

"somatic" with the greatest of abandon. You know, just – well "somatic" to us is a highly identified thing. A fellow feels hot, he could even say "hot," he has a somatic, you see. It's just somatic, he had a somatic.

You don't ordinarily go so far as to say you feel good, so you've got a somatic of feeling good. Wouldn't be very true, because it'd be you who felt good. All right, now that's from "psychesomatic," *psyche*, *thetan*, somatic, body, condition or influence, down to *psycho*, by which was meant "mind" – influence on the body, and Freud went quite upscale from the normal run and woof and warp of the society when he actually talked about the mind influencing the body. But he had the wildest idea of what a mind was. It looked like some awful old cave with wild men running around inside of it. This is a wild thing. I was going to build it up one time as a stage set and everybody sort of discouraged me, I guess they couldn't confront how awful it was. You know, he has the censor and he has this and he's got – that's the most populated – he's got the id and the ego. Well, this is a talking mass. The mind influence on the body.

And by which they mean mostly sickness caused by the mind. Body – bodily sickness caused by the mind. And there's where the Freudian lives, you see, and his aspects of treatment. And that's why you can't quite talk to him, because he really means something else. When you talk to him about a thetan, he's liable to think of the censor. And just on the other side of the censor is this fellow going around in a wild costume, you see, he's got a lion skin on and he's got a big arrow in his hand, you know, he looks like a big ape. And then the censor's job is to say, "No, no, no, no, no, no." He's got four or five thetans in this – in this darn thing, you know.

So actually, a psychoanalyst didn't quite know what you're talking about when you talk about thetan, see. That'd be a bad thing to him, see? Because it's something that prowls and that you've got to repress. And he wouldn't think your aims and goals were good either. "You're going to free one of these things? Hm, over my dead body, brother, ooohh!" [laughter]

You see, at that stage the middle ground of mind influencing the body, they've lost touch with the fact that they themselves are a thetan. See? And this mind is already an extraneous otherness. They don't have any responsibility for this thing, it's a lost thing, it's just random. And you might not be able to do anything about the mind. But it sure influences the body and perhaps if you could remove a psychic trauma from this mind, by which they mean a memory of a pain or experience or a shock or a mental conflict, and they're not as clear-cut as it – we were in Dianetics, by what they mean by trauma. We said an engram, we meant a moment of pain and unconsciousness imprinted and remembered in the mind, see. They had no such *rrrrp!* definition, see. Trauma, "Well, that means, oh, *wah-da-wah-wah-wah*, maybe." See? I wouldn't even try to define it because they'd never really have given it a definition.

So you see where the middle ground of this definition is: *psycho*, mind, *somatic*, body influence, you see, but mainly illness. Somatic has now become to mean "bodily illness, influence on." So it's a mind causing a bodily influence.

All right. Now, let's take it – take the elevator and go downstairs into the sub-sub-basement, and we get the final meaning of the word where it exists today, which is *psycho*,

meaning "brain" or "nerve channels." Same relationship to a living being as a telephone switchboard would have to its living operator. But this is a *psyche*, or a *psycho*, and that – that influences itself a somatic, soma. So it is the part of the body influences part of the body, and you're right into the field of medicine now whereby if you've got a broken leg it'll give you a headache. Now they can understand it. Broken leg gives you a headache, yes, for sure. Because it's the body influencing the body and we have no more actual psychosomatic word, no more condition, no more explanation. We have to get in there with axes, we have to get in there with paring knives, we have to get in there with drills, we have to get in there with drugs, we have to get in there with shock, we have to get in there with something or other that'll influence the brain, we will have to influence those nerve channels and we'll have to string them up like taffy or we'll have to do something with them in order to manipulate that.

So please, after I – broken this down for you, don't go around in a confusion as to why medicine practices psychiatry. There's nothing else there to practice. See? There's nothing else present. There's just that brain and there's just those neurons.

And they think you're batty, because they're like the fellow who's in the bottom of a coal mine and he's told about the sun. And he's been in this coal mine all of his life, he was born in this coal mine. And it doesn't have any shaft up to the top. It's not only one mile deep, but he's in the channels which are one mile away from the – from the stope which is one mile deep. He knows you're crazy. You talk about the sun. You say, "Hey, boy, there's a sun up there someplace, you know, there's something causing this, you know, there's something going on. There's something going on up there, and if you walk down this channel here, you walk down this – this tunnel here, this shaft, and look up, why, you'll see *light*."

"Haa!" the fellow says, "Ha-ha-ha! Ahh!" He'll turn around to some fellow working and he'll say, "There was some nut in here the other day that said he walked ... Ha-ha-ha-ha-ha! Christ! He's crazy, should be locked up." And that's his attitude, see. It's a dead similarity, because the guy is, of course, under his ton of coal. He's got GPMs pushed down on his head till he thinks that all is mass, you see. And never the twain shall matter.

This boy is a total, depressed degrade. In other words, the thetan has run its course. See, it's down now to a totality of no presence. It no longer exists. Follow that?

Well, that gives you in essence the whole cycle of healing and so forth. Now, we step back in in the area of Dianetics and step back into "mind" – and this was not all we were interested in – mind influencing body. We were more interested in healing in that field than we are now. But it was mind influencing body. And we were up pretty high scale in that, because we knew that there was an eradication of this thing called mind. See, it wasn't then the causative agent. See, we had it not as a total causation. It wasn't the thing which was causing everything, see? It was something – something to do something about. There was that dim feeling there might be something there.

Well, we made a breakthrough upstairs on this thing, it was simply Scientology became Scientology out of Dianetics, because we no longer had this particular concept and we had to recognize now that there was something there doing something which was not the mind. And that was Scientology. That was the entrance point of Scientology. We had to call it something so we called it a "thetan" and further investigation and examination demonstrated

what this was that we're dealing with the human spirit, and after about a year's worry and work and practice and research, one way or another, why, I found out this thing was totally separable from the body. And actually separable from the mind. And would turn somebody who was spinning into total sanity for matters of minutes, just by these actions and exteriorization drills or research drills. Exteriorization is something that occurs in the normal course of processing. And – but it can be forced for experimental purposes. I can tell you half a dozen ways to exteriorize people and demonstrate it for yourself and for their subjective reality.

But they get enmeshed again and embroiled in this thing called the *body*, they get embroiled in this thing called the mind again, and so forth, and they lose the subjective reality very often and even doubt that they have ever been outside. The guy down – goes back into the coal mine and he sits down, "I wonder if I ever did see the sun?" you know? After you've persuaded somebody to look at the thing.

Now, there's then the entire cycle of deterioration of *psyche* to what's medically called psychosomatic. And you'll find that the various schools cut in at various levels on this scale I have just given you, the scale being from thetan to mind to brain versus the body. But in all of these things there is some idea that something is influencing the body and making it ill. That is the common idea to all of us, that something is influencing the body and making it ill. And that is the common denominator to all of these.

Now, nobody has been able to expertly knock out one of these illnesses, so man's belief in psychosomatic healing is touching and pathetic. Because nobody could do it. Freud himself probably was able to do it. Some other few in his immediate vicinity were possibly able to do it. But they had more command of things than they are communicating or than they ever communicated if they were effective in it.

However, in using these things, and in sometimes working in this field, I have relieved some psychosomatic conditions. But it was too accidental for my engineering-educated and oriented mind for me to say that I had done certainly anything very certain about it. I've probably had a better percentage of recovery than is quite normal, maybe a 30 or 40 percent or something like this. Fairly high. But not predictable. Predictable in no way at all. Because I didn't – couldn't isolate the elements with which I was working. So this made it very difficult for me even to get the idea that there was a thing called psychosomatic healing. You follow that?

So, that man has carried through the tradition is quite interesting. And that it has run the gamut to the extent that it has run is horrifying. Now, we have lost it to the degree that if you cut up somebody's neurons and somebody's brain, why, then somehow or another he will get healed. But the only thing they really cure him of is living.

But there is this field and there is its scope and extent, and where we practice is in the area, just the upper area, of *psyche*, meaning mind, versus soma, body. And we're practicing in the upper area of that – that's in ordinary practice – in the – in the – in the realization that there is something there beside the mind but that it is the mind that is influencing it and that there is a something there that can influence the mind, so we are practicing in a third stage.

We're practicing the *psyche*, influencing the mind, influencing the soma. So you are therefore very advanced beyond the basic tradition of psychosomatic medicine.

You've got a *psyche*, thetan, influencing the *psycho*, mind, influencing the soma, body. And the Scientologist is actually treating this in three stages. And it has never been treated in three stages before by anyone. The early spiritual healers always addressed thetan to soma direct – direct instantly. Well, that's too big a gap for the normal being who is in trouble, and therefore he had no success to amount to anything. He'd have enough success to keep him hopeful and keep him going but not enough predictable success. Spiritual healing, which is spirit healing the body. Well, you're not really in the field of spiritual healing, because you're getting the thetan to do something about the mind, which is doing something to the body. Your recognition is, you realize the mind is doing something to the body, see, some remained – retained memory has held a somatic in place or has done something here, has held a pain or an experience in place. Well, however this has happened that the mind is doing something to the body, which is causing its illness.

That we realize that it predisposes this body to illness. Something is going on in the mind that predisposes the body to illness. We are the masters of predisposition. That field is totally ours. Nobody ever dreamed of it before, you see. This is how the accident gets predisposed, see. You don't have to – this is how the guy gets to the pub. See, we examine the predisposition of why he went to the pub, not the predisposition of the accident by pouring the alcohol down the hatch that then gave him an accident, see? We go ahead of this. And we're the only people who do.

Now, here's your next stage: We recognize that the thetan can influence the mind and make it stop influencing the body and knock out that cornerstone to get over to what we would call a real psychesomatic healing. And what had been omitted was the center point which is the thetan knocks out the bridge of pain or upset to the body. And we have found the thing that the thetan can influence. He can influence the mind. He may not be able to influence the body directly, but he can influence the mind, which is influencing the body, and then he can get up to a point where even he recognizes that he is himself creating the mind. But that's too much to ask of him. But we can have the thetan influence the mind, influence the body. And therefore this is a brand-new concept, this is something which is entirely different and very startling in this particular field. This is undreamed of. It's never even been articulated before, you see? So there is where we fit in this particular line.

And although you've been doing it and I've been doing it and so forth, we haven't said in that many stages how that was and how that fitted into the tradition of psychosomatic healing, and what our relationship was in that field. And therefore we are something brand-new and we are something quite startling and so forth. Because we have found a route by where we can make an effect on the body from the psyche down and we can knock out and detach the body, detach the mind, free the thetan.

So our vector is in reverse. Overall vector in Scientology is in reverse to all these healing vectors, which is mind to body. Our vector is let's do something with the body so it isn't troubling the thetan. Let's do something to the body so it isn't running up psychic traumas which then troubles the thetan. And reversewise, let's fix up the thetan so he can fix up the

mind so he can do something to the body. So that knocks out the illness in the body or the upset in the body, which then takes it again out of the mind, which makes the thetan feel better. And we're always on a three, one, two, three; one, two, three up; or one, two, three down. This makes us brand-new, very novel and very effective.

Thank you.

A SUMMARY OF STUDY

A lecture given on 4 August 1964

Thank you.

This is the what of what?

Audience: August 4th, AD 14.

August the 4th, AD 14. A memorable day, because it's the day after bank holiday parade and nobody has pneumonia from the usual rain that they have on bank holiday. Very memorable day.

Saint Hill Special Briefing Course, August the 4th, AD 14.

All right. You seem to have hit a few records here lately, in your examination grades. Your examination grades on lectures and so forth, are coming up, up, up, up and I'm very proud of you with this. Thank you very much.

Aside from your own brightness on the subject, some of this is attributable to the fact that I've been talking about and teaching you something about study, and I think you have learned quite a bit about study in the last many weeks; and that is the subject of this lecture.

I want to give you, in this lecture before it gets cold, a brief summary – no matter how rough and ragged and no matter how well worked out later – of the things I have learned about study. And I break my record by lecturing from a note. But I don't want this to go too far before I make it a matter of lecture and record because I found out it was already getting dim in me skull. And I keep very little information in my skull lately, and that I do put in sometimes tends to get dim because it gets lost. So I didn't want that to happen and I want to give you this information about study.

Now, there's not been a technology of study or a technology of education. Now, that sounds like a very far-fetched, fantastic statement, but it's true – it's true. There was a school technology, and – sort of – but it didn't have too much to do with education. You see, there was the technology of how you go to school and how you get taught in school and how you teach children to go to school and how you go through grades and how you get examined and how you go through the college and so forth. There was an awful lot of this school technology. And you should differentiate between a school technology and an educational technology – it's the first thing I'd ask you to do – because education very seldom, in its final touches, has anything to do with a school.

The engineer who goes out reports to the job and he's been beautifully taught along various ways on how to do the calculus curve of mensuration on how much gravel there is in an irregular pile. And by getting the calculus curve of several sections of this pile measured

and formulized very carefully, he is then able, in looking at this barge and measuring it up, to finally tell how much gravel there is in this barge.

This actually happened – happened in Cavite before the war, many years before the war. This young engineer had just gotten out of school and he did just that. He went down and he calculated the amount of gravel in the barge by calculus. And it was very arduous.

And he'd been sent down by the chief engineer of the yard to find out if they had enough gravel. And he didn't come back for most of the afternoon. So finally, the chief engineer got very, very curious about this and he went down there to find out where this young new engineer was and what he was doing and whether or not the sharks had gotten him or something. And he found him down there just putting the finishing touches on it, and he gave him – the young engineer gave the chief engineer – with great triumph, the fact that he had 150.7-9 cubic yards of gravel on hand. He had pages of calculations. And the yard foreman, a Filipino, standing near at hand, looked very sourly at the young engineer and he said: "Is that what you were doing?" And before the chief engineer could even get in there and find out what it was all about he said: "You see those white paint marks on the front and the back of the barge? Well, they tell you how much gravel is in the barge!"

I've had a wonderful example of how pedantic schooling can be as opposed to education. I read a dissertation last night on the subject of slides. The preparation of lantern slides. And boy, this was the most intricate calculations of how close you had to be to a screen and how – the density of the lantern slide had to be in order for you to get a proper lecture hall projection. And these went on and on, and if I hadn't myself had experience in this particular line, I would have taken all this quite seriously. But it was somebody – I guess his pen just got to going and he couldn't stop it. Because what you do if you have dim lantern slides is get a brighter lamp. You don't move a projector backward and forward in the hall and calculate the superreflectiveness of the screen and all that sort of thing. Now, with great experience then – and it is considerable experience, you see, I know slides and densities and that sort of thing, by experience – I knew that this data I was being fed so laboriously had very, very little importance. See, it was interesting. You know, it was interesting that anybody would write that much on the subject.

But Reg and I and Bonwick at a circus not too long ago, with a mismatched voltage line and common bed sheeting hung up between two circus poles, enlarged a picture four to five diameters above anything ever intended for either the picture or the projector. Everybody was delighted; they looked beautiful. We had a twelve-by-twelve screen of bed sheeting which even had puckers in it. There was only one slide that it made look odd – one slide out of about two hundred – and it just happened to fall, this pucker did, in a young man's face and it just fell wrong. Not a critical proposition at all.

You take any old density of slide and show it in – throw it into a projector, then, with enough lamp – and you put up a sheet that will reflect and you've got yourself just about the finest lantern slide show you ever wanted to see and there isn't anybody going to say a word about it. Two pages of text out of how you calculate the density of a lantern slide – not a critical problem.

So, education would take into effect, as opposed to schooling, the relative importance of the data being taught. That's very, very important. The relative importance of the data be-

ing taught, by which, one would say, the relative applicability of the data being taught – the applicability. Now, schooling, as opposed to education, has in actual fact no thought, no real thought of applicability, no such thought.

It is just as important to the pedantic or scholastic school of education, this technology, that "Pliny, in the year umpty-ump-dash-ump, did hereinto aforesaid with semicolons, discover that there were sturgeons." Now, what you going to do with that datum? Yet a man's whole career could have been wiped out, you see, by an inability to have vociferated this fact. This is under "fishing," heading of "ichthyology," see; fishing, fishes. Guy goes down to the bureau of fisheries, see? On his final examination paper he was asked, "Who and what and when discovered sturgeons?" You can just see him now – young fellow in the bureau of fisheries out there off the north coast of Norway, blowing about forty degrees below zero trying to count the number of herring boats out there he's going to have to rescue in the next twenty-four hours, using this datum about Pliny. You can just see this now. Inapplicable!

So, there's a sort of a pomposity that goes along in the field of schooling that has no real basis in education. You'll find this in the arts. You will find people who really think they are artistic and really know something about art, who are simply capable of rattling off a number of pictures. "There's this picture and that picture, and there's the other picture and so forth and it was painted – it was painted by Jules Drool, you know, and in 1710." See?

You say, "What did Jules Drool paint it with, bud? What did he use?"

"Oh, uh – ha-ha. I think it's an oil." But he knows it's 1710, see? And he knows it was Jules Drool, and he knows the name of the painting is *Shameful Morning* or something.

But you ask this bird – you ask this bird, you say, "What did he paint it with?"

"Oh, I think it was – uh, I think it's an oil. I-I think it's an oil. I-I-I think it's an oil. It's an oil."

He ain't got the point. It's very valuable to know what they were painting with when. See? That's quite valuable. You can use that. Well, you'd – just a crudest possible use – you see something that is painted with ICI Best House Paint, as represented of having been painted in 1510, you know that's wrong, because they didn't make peanut-oil-emulsion paint in... I mean, that's crude, see? But you can see that it does have some applicability in the detection of authenticity. What did he paint it with? That's very – that's a good applicable datum, you see?

I'll give you a parallel datum like this. I was tearing apart encyclopedias yesterday to find out if anybody else had ever mentioned a certain art form. I could find it no place but I did find in the dictionary that "doré" meant "gold colored." I thought that was very interesting because the name I was looking for as an art form was a doré-type and so I didn't know which way I was going on this thing. I thought it was probably a man's name, probably interfered with – with Gustave Doré, you know, and his etchings. No, it wasn't after a man's name and so the thing has never survived as a name, because it wasn't a man, you see? It was simply a goldish form of art reproduction. So they called it a doré-type and the name is so esoteric that it has only survived in the super-super-professional lines. If a guy was really on the ball and he delved into everything, he'd know there had been such a thing as a doré-type, see? But oth-

erwise, he wouldn't know anything about it. Everybody knows what, for instance, a daguerreotype is, see? Nothing like that. But what was a doré-type?

Well, that becomes important in examining the development of picture display, the display of pictures and so forth. So there was a type which did a strange piece of picture display. Well, you should be able to run such things back. Beyond that, in actual fact, whether it was Mr. Wall or Mr. Pall who invented it when – has nothing much to do with it. But how it was done, you see, at such and such a time – oh, that would have quite a bit to do with it, see?

So, when you're dealing with education you have to be very careful not to lean over into the significance. Don't lean over into the significance exclusive of the mass. That is a very interesting datum. Now, when you get into significance versus mass, you get into action; and action could be defined as significance versus mass, of some kind or another. That's rather drawing a longbow, you understand, but the reason one engages in action or doingness and so forth, is he has some kind of an idea of accomplishing something or making something or avoiding something or... He has – there's a significance there, you know? There's an idea about it. Even though – even when we look at a lot of particles flying around in the air and we say: "That's a confusion," we've added significance to the mass, don't you see? Do you see that?

But in education when the significance is never added to the mass but stands in pristine purity all by itself, you tend to get a jammed curriculum – no doingness. Let's get down to earth about it, you see? I've just given you an example of it – I've just given you an example of it, of who – who invented what, see? And now we say, "And there was a great deal of conflict between these two men at that particular time. One of them – one of them had a greater idea of the destiny of his development than the other one did." Oh, what's this got to do with anything? It's a disrelated datum, don't you see? It's just a significance. It hadn't anything to do with the doingness or the action, had nothing to do with the mass that you are now confronting. All it does is throw you a curve, you get the idea?

So, school is expert at throwing curves until one begins to wonder whether or not school ever has education in mind. So, you could have a school technology which would teach, which would never really educate, never really train anyone. You see that? But it could be marvelous. You could fill your whole university through courses of *The work of Thomas Hardy*. You could have *The Plight of Miners in Roman Times on the Cornwall Coast*. You could have *The Number of Synonyms and Antonyms used by Hunters and Huntresses in the 16th Century*. You could have courses which flunk people because they referred to the wrong word, they used the wrong word in connection with the wrong group of animals, you see? You know, like you have "a covey of quail," you see, and "a covey of foxes," you know, that kind of thing, see? Very pedantic!

But what is the basic error here? The basic error – I'll come back to it now – the basic error is simply failing to add the mass or doingness to the significance, see, failing to add the mass or the doingness to the significance. You say, "This fellow was a good painter. He painted and he painted and he painted and he painted and he painted. Well, he painted a lot." You could say this in 90,000 different ways. "He drove seven – his first seven wives batty by the fact he never paid any attention to anything but his painting." Well, it's good curiosa but it is not an educational datum. It's just curiosa. What did he paint, see?

Your student then must be taken into consideration. Your student is trying to get to be a painter. And I'm afraid they've spent so much time teaching them on how many wives the painters have had, or haven't had, that their idea of painting is to get married and divorced or to become a walking catalog.

Well, of course, if you're a judge, if you're going to be a professional judge or a professional critic, not a painter but one of these birds, naturally you want to be practically a walking catalog, see? You want to overwhelm everybody. It's good one-upmanship, you know? You walk through looking at things this way – this way. "Yes, this man over here, he's copied – he's copied Hans Verboten." [laughter] "Yes, that's a very obscure painter of the 1416." See, you want to know things like that, you know, if you're going to be that.

But to be a painter – and that's why you'd almost never turn a member of the arts out of a university. That is almost impossible. It's unheard of, and... to teach short story. They ruin more writers! Well, it's of interest how they do this, and they detach the significance and the action. They separate these two things so it becomes a pure significance without any action or mass connected with it. And when you have done this you have then sort of wound a guy up in a no-confront of the subject and you've introverted him. And the way a student becomes introverted is to give him too much significance and too little doingness and too little mass.

That's still knocking you for a loop. You keep looking at me with your heads tipped over here and I want to know what's so incomprehensible about it? No, it's slipping somewhere.

I don't know how to state it, really, any more plainly than I'm stating it. If you're going to teach a fellow about roller balls, give him a roller ball! Is this – is this difficult, see?

Don't teach him the history of roller balls! Am I making more sense?

Audience: Yes.

All right. Does it – does that make sense? It doesn't?

Audience: Yes, yes.

So, when you have detached the significance from the action and separated these two things apart, you can have schooling but you can't have education. And that's basically how it's done.

If you want to wind up with a whole bunch of do-less graduates, if you want to wind up with a whole bunch of painters who can't paint, a whole bunch of doctors who can't doc, [laughter] engineers who can't eng, then by George, you're going to just – all you have to do is take the doingness and the mass connected with the subject and park that over here as something you really don't want to have much to do with and go into the total significance of it all. And then you make a highly impractical person. And this is the only way it's done. There aren't a number of other ways to do this. You wind it up hard enough and he never does go out of school, he never does leave school; he becomes a professor.

Now, I've learned that for a person to teach who cannot do, is a terrible mistake. Let's get right down to earth here, in Scientology. If our Instructors couldn't audit – *guahhhh!* What goes on? If our Instructors couldn't audit, what catastrophe would we face in all educational lines? Supposing they all knew the history of auditing and then supposing they could give you

chapter and verse of everything ever written on the subject and tell you exactly where to find this and tell you how many pages it had; supposing they could do that – but they couldn't audit. This would be somewhat catastrophic. And any trouble that an Instructor has in teaching has a little bit of something to do with something he doesn't confront about the doingness or the mass of the subject. You got the idea?

So, this Instructor finds that he really doesn't like to teach geometry or something like that. Well, he can't do anything with geometry. Do you see? He's got a blind spot in this particular direction.

Now, this became so notable from my inspection and study of study that I was practically struck dumb on the subject. It goes to this degree: that a person who is simply writing the reports of people who can do is too far removed for the execution of a good textbook. A person writing reports of people who can do, no matter what people this person consulted, is too far removed from the doingness and mass to make a studiable, good textbook.

That is remarkable.

Now, you understand all this background I am giving you here on this particular subject – came about when I realized that if we were going on upstairs and we knew something about the mind, that we had to wrap up another subject which is entirely separate to the subject we were trying to wrap up. This is our inheriting the dropped balls of yesterday. They didn't wrap up the subject of education, so we have to wrap up the subject of education, you see, in order to educate; just for our own practical application, see? Well, they didn't do it. They got a lot of money for it, they were paid to do it and they didn't do it, see? So you feel the same crossness that you would feel at the switchman that you had down there on the railroad tracks and he drew his pay to throw the switch and he didn't, you know? And the *Twentieth Century Limited* went off the rails, see? And you say, "That *blas, of blah, blah, blah, blah* – that was his job and he didn't do it," see? Same way, same way. Here we are. We've got a difficult subject to confront because one is studying what one is, and we should have had the whole subject of education beautifully wrapped up. But instead of that, it's just muddied up. There are many preconceptions in this line.

So, I recognized that it was necessary – even though we had made great inroads on this – I recognized that it was necessary that I get a new viewpoint on this subject. Therefore I picked up an analogous, or a similar line of study, in that it's a practical subject – if you know certain things and you do certain things, you get a certain result, see? That type of a practical subject – and yet one that sort of borders over into the field of the arts, don't you see, so that you have to have some judgment and taste and so forth. And I picked up this subject – one, because it was available, two, because I had some interest in it – but basically because it did show a fairly decent pattern of what an auditor would do.

In other words, he has certain theories and actions which he's supposed to perform which, when applied, will produce a certain result if he uses judgment and good taste. Now, you'd – it isn't the same thing: auditing and photography are very long from the same thing. But auditing does have this in common with photography, that when you do certain things, and you do them right, you then wind up with a result, with a certain result. But if you do these things a bit wrong, you don't wind up with a result, you see? But also, if you do these

things and you do them without using good sense, see, you also don't wind up with a result, see? It's a comparable action.

So I picked up this particular field and took a full, blasting, exclamation point, professional course on this from the word "izzard" straight on through. Now this was all sandwiched in during the last few months of everything else I've had to do. And I learned, however, a great deal about it just by experiencing subjectively something that was off the subject of what we are doing, something that I had a dilettante knowledge of and so forth. And as I showed you the other day, I think it was starting to come up with a professional result. So then therefore, the course was well studied and did lead to a finite result at the other end of things.

I've gone past the point now of just studying it and I can actually develop those points and portions of it necessary to produce the better result, don't you see? It's gone over that borderline. For instance, it's all right to do this and that and the other thing and you do that exactly by the textbook. But if you're terribly good by the textbook, why, you can then give it that extra frill over here that makes it come out on top, don't you see? In other words, you can use the textbook so well that you can think while you're doing it. Do you see that? Now, that is what I have been going through.

And I noticed a great many points very early that would never have struck me if I were not working in a completely new field of study. This is not a field, by the way, that I was absolutely new to. I've actually been trained in darkrooms and that sort of thing from a practical viewpoint. So, from another viewpoint here – that I got an idea of – that actually just practical training isn't enough. You can't just give the guy the tools and say, "All right. Well, dabble around with it and go to work on the *Daily Express* and watch the birds rushing in and out of the darkroom at the *Daily Express* and if you do that long enough, why, you will become a good photographer." That's not true! I have fabulous evidence that this is not true. The evidence lies before you every morning when you glance at the paper. What they commonly call a news photograph is so bad and oddly enough most of those boys are untrained. The top-notchers that you see around, the real headliners and that sort of thing, oddly enough, are trained.

It isn't, then, a gift that they suddenly pick up, see? It isn't this vast talent – fellow sees a camera – "Oh!" you see, and this huge streak of light goes through his skull of that brilliant inspiration and he clicks the shutter and then he has pictures all over the front of everything. It doesn't work that way. And he can go through all of the menial jobs he wants to in the field of photography, cleaning plates and all the rest of those things, through to the last bitter end of the thing and he will never become a top-notch photographer. They're doing it all the time because this is the way the newspapers get the young men to come in and work in their dark-rooms. They tell them this and that's not true.

Top-notch photographers of England are most severely trained photographers you ever had anything to do with. They are just a little bit too severely trained, if anything. But they're hot. You get Tony Armstrong-Jones, my God! If you ever saw a man use standard photography, this guy uses it with a capital "S" with an exclamation point. He can't even take a picture of his own new baby without setting up the exact textbook lighting for a baby picture, see? He doesn't even get thrown by the event of being a father, you see? He goes and gets the exact

lamps and he sets them up at the exact angle and he fixes them up this way. He got a fluke picture by doing this – it's just one of those flukes. You run into them all the time – you take advantage of them. Nevertheless, his lighting was absolutely textbook. This guy is a headliner, see? He's taken design photography now, and in the – in the big *Sunday Times Magazine* Section – he had an article in there a couple of Sundays ago and I know he just laughed like mad when he published that lead picture in there. He's standing outside of a building, he gets the perfect architectural texture – he's been elected to the Design Council and so forth – he takes – stands outside the building, he gets the perfect texture of the brick, perfect texture of glass, perfect texture of everything, and shoots the inside of the building like daylight. And I know what he did. He said, "Nobody will notice it but a pro, but let them figure out how I did it," see?

He knew the public would just be interested in it sort of as a picture and so forth. But I'm sure that it was in the back of his mind, "Let somebody figure out how I did this," see? I don't know how he did it. I know how I would have done it but you don't shoot from the outside of a building in glaring sunlight and get the total detail of the inside of the building without doing cutouts or something and this is no cutout. How did he do it, see? And I know he sort of laughed to himself because he's put together, of course, two brands of very standard lighting. Knows his subject cold, you see? So he – but he uses it in this peculiar way with color film to get this fantastic result. You never stand outside of a building, see it in perfect detail and look into the room inside and see it in perfect detail at the same level of light. And then you don't shoot this in color. No latitude to the film.

But a pro can be counted on to do things like that. But when you break him right on down, why can he do things like that? He knows all the right ways to do it and therefore he knows how to fail at doing what he's doing and then he can think that extra step, see? He knows his equipment and so when he can think that one more step, that makes him a champion.

The leading glamour photographer of England is a fellow named Tom Hustler. They're always calling in Tom Hustler to shoot some star or something of the sort. They rave about his pictures. Well, it's quite amazing, because Tom Hustler never took anything in his life except a standard professional photograph. He never took anything. He doesn't even add that extra. He is so standard that he's painful to look at if you're a pro, see? The hair light is always exactly where the hair light is supposed to be – that light that you see in portraits that gives the little gleam to the person's hair, see? His main light, the big one, and the fill, they're always in exactly the right position. His background is always exact. It's just a technically perfect photograph, do you see? There isn't anybody else in England taking them.

Lancere, the great theater photographer, I am told – I am told – their great theater photographer. I saw some pictures by this character the other day, he's about as standard as a pig lost in the swamp, see? And the pictures look it – they're faulty. And his lighting is not standard and he doesn't know what to do with the lighting. I think he's got baby picture lighting he's lighting stars with or something of the sort. He's just not a pro. You see? Shows up – bang! People look at the picture; and you show them one that is perfectly lighted, you say, "How about this one," you see?

They say, "Oh! That's a beautiful picture," you see? And you show the next one and it's got a technical imperfection in it and they, well, they don't like that so well. They can't tell you why, this is a common guy off the street, see? Now, photography has got the common denominator of the public taste. What does the public want to see and what does the public like to see?

So now, we have a new subject in photography – this is another reason I chose it – brand new subject. Just a little over a century old. About 1810 – 1810 somebody said, "You know, I get a poiple shadow on a piece of paper when I paint it with some funny chemicals" and there it all began. Color photography is so far from new that they were actually projecting color photographs on the screen for the edification of audiences – not hand-colored or anything – as the same time as Mr. Brady. But, that's all new. That's a Johnny-come-lately subject, isn't it? It's not really had time to pick up too much snob. It's not had time to get lost.

So, to make my point, when you give it all mass and doingness and no significance, you also fail. In other words, you can send this fellow up as a darkroom assistant to the *Daily Mail*, have him packing cameras for somebody or other, and have him standing in there at Lancere's adjusting lights for half a lifetime without his ever really becoming a pro.

So, professionalism has to do with the significance and the doingness and the mass. It has to do with all of those things. You can't have all doingness and no significance, and you can't have total significance and no doingness and wind up with a final result in the way of a student. Education, then, would consist of a balanced activity which would treat with equal importance the significance and the doingness of a subject. You would treat these things equally. Now, this is not a new thought – it's not a new thought. It's been with us for some time.

But it was terribly confirmed to me on an inspection of what is standard photography today and having been over the jumps and being almost finished with this course and ready for my finals, I thought I had better just make all these notes of it and so forth. But one of the things that stuck me in the eye all the way through the line is the pro, the real pro, was the fellow who knew the significance and had experience in the doingness and the handling of the mass. And that was a real pro; a real professional.

Now, you say, "Well, what about this fellow who comes busting out of the middle of nowhere and he all of a sudden develops this whole fantastic panorama of new material?" No, you were looking at a pro. You didn't look at anybody who suddenly busted out of nowhere uninformed and so forth. But his education might easily – because it wasn't being taught anyplace – the significance was backed up by a great deal of additional hard study, see? You still had the study there, see? He studied like mad.

Let's take somebody like the fellow who projected the first color pictures. I bet you he could have given you the number and book of practically every photograph that had been taken in the history of photography, which went back of him only about 20-30 years. He must have known them, see? He must have known them all. Then you go back into it a little bit further, you'll probably find out he was a chemist by training, see?

Professionalism, then, doesn't leap full-armed from the breath of somebody's hope. Professionalism is sweated for. And also, professionals are distinguished by the fact that they work hard.

Dilettantism is supposed to mean "good at many things," but actually I would rather extend its meaning a little bit to saying that "unprofessional at everything," because part of professionalism is hard work. You, really – to pick up all the significance of a subject and to put that into a doingness action and so forth, rough, rough, rough.

Now, that all sounds very interesting but there is another factor involved in it: Is, you don't have to have done everything that was done in order to be a pro and that is a very hopeful thing. And I learned that the hard way. You don't have to have made a piece of photographic film in order to become grounded in making photographic film, see? That's lucky for you, you don't have to make a human mind in order to fix one up. That's carrying the point a little broad but you actually don't have to have run Standard Operating Procedure of July of 1950, in order to call yourself a professional auditor. If you did that, why great – great, see? Fine. But you take someone who's being trained in 1964, to ask him to do that would be silly.

Right now, to – this stage of study, for me to go and get some chemicals of some kind or another and some old horses' hooves and boil them up, and – so as to have some gelatin and put these things all together so as to make one of the original forms of wet plate, and expose it wet in one of my cameras – which was the way they did it, you see and so forth, well, it'd just come out at the other end. I – what would I say out of this? "Well, I've done it." So what? I'm not going to do it. Not again. That would wreck the camera, of course. Do you see what I mean? That can be overstressed. Now, we get to the overstresses.

The doingness can be terribly overstressed. I've already showed you significance can be terribly overstressed. "Pliny did write on the – ye old wax tablet, which he wrote on with a stylus, which that day had a dull point, because his slave had a headache, that sturgeons..." See, you can go crazy on this subject, see, of significance. You can go nuts. You can wildly overestimate what a student has to know. You can also underestimate it.

But the wildest shot, when they get to formal schooling, is to shoot the moon with this thing. Just go overboard with it, just go crazy with it – make – drive everybody around the bend with it, see? It's sort of a method of forbidding somebody the subject, see? See? "If you can't tell us all the papers of Sigmund Freud, you can never be a diplomate in psychiatry." It's a fact, the total examination for the highest rank of psychiatry is simply the title, the date written and the place of publication of each one of Freud's papers. I know I exaggerate and a psychiatrist, if he were here right now, would say, "Oh, how you – *rowr-rowr-rowr-rowr-rowr-rowr*," you know? He'd sound like Vixie out here when you kick her. [laughter] But he'd be lying in his teeth, because that's his diplomate examination. I know – I knew a psychiatrist, nursed him through a psychotic break, because he was taking it. [laughter]

And I don't think you can get much closer to the examination without, in actual fact, taking it yourself. And that was what was driving him around the bend. He was preparing for that exam that way and he took the exam that way and that was it. It was very funny watching him prepare for the exam, he'd keep rolling up on a ball, sucking his thumb; rolling up in a ball, you know, in the fetal position on the couch so he could study this. It was very funny. I

never did tell him, "You know, brother, I think you're keyed in." [laughter] But overweighted significance is a way of defeating a student, way overweighted.

Now, you can err to the degree that you're giving him a subject which he's never going to do. Now, let's take it over into Scientology. You're giving him all the data, necessary to run Standard Operating Procedure of July, Elizabeth, New Jersey and so forth. And the mistake is to give him all of it. He's never going to use it.

All you want to know, you – all you want to give him is enough so he can identify it. If he collides with this thing again, he said, "Hey, that's Standard Operating Procedure of July," you know, "back there, Elizabeth." "Early days, Elizabeth," is about all you want to get through there. "Yeah, that sort of thing. Finger snap, yeah." Something like that. "Oh, yes. They did that, early days." Have some dim idea where this thing fits, you see? That's about all you want to get across to him. He's not going to do it, see? So therefore, if he's not going to do it, you've got to strip the significance off of it. You got the idea? That's the way these are kept in balance. If the guy isn't going to do it, take the significance off of it. See, you've got to keep these things in balance. If he's going to do it, pour it to him, man!

Let's take an esoteric process like bromoil. Well, they didn't use to have panchromatic film, so it drove them mad. They didn't use to have a film that responded to color, so it drove them absolutely stark, staring mad trying to get a tree light enough so that it looked like a tree, you know? When they made a picture of a tree, they had an awful time with this sort of thing. So they did this fantastic process, like photolithography. I won't burden you with any of the details, because – ohh – horrible! It makes me shudder to remember it. Nobody's ever going to do a bromoil, unless he's a doodle-daddle type of darkroom bug, you know? See, he's got to be a real darkroom bug, because there's much simpler methods of producing the same result, do you see?

Well, some old-time photographer that is a real purist and so forth, in New York, would listen to that statement and he'd say, "I don't know that you'll never do a bromoil. You can't be sure, you know. I myself have done bromoils and so forth. Only took me thirty days one time to do one bromoil print." That's about the length of time, see? Oh! Cruel! And right when I was coming down the home stretch with my course I had a half a textbook on how you did bromoil prints. A half a textbook! It is there in its most painful excruciating detail, but not, incidentally, in such a way that you could really do one by referring to the text. It goes like this, the order of action, which is another point down here which I'll get to – the order of action is all wrong in it. That is to say, "Now make sure that you lay this wet picture," you see, "this wet print out on the back of the tray that will fit it, or glass, and make sure that you lay it out and pin it all down carefully. Now, before you do that, make sure that you have the other print ready, because you're going to need it in a second." Oh, no, see? You're on what I know as order of. You've got down to this line, and you're slavishly going down the line mentally doing the action, you see, and then you find out you've made a mistake, see? He tells you now that there was another action you should have done before the action he tells you to do, see? *Zzzzzzzzz!* And you have a feeling like you've made a terrible mistake.

But bromoil is there in its most excruciating detail and has not been done seriously for a number of years. You could probably win a salon exhibit with a bromoil print. You probably could today. Judges would stand there and they'd look at it and they'd say, "What's this?"

They're quite beautiful. "Uhh, what's this? My God! A bromoil, you know? Gee, you know? Give him first technical prize." That's about all you'd get for it, see? "Somebody has actually done a bromoil print – wow!" See? And they'd say, "Gee," you know? They themselves would know what this involved – being trained people, see? Public would go by, look on down at the rest of the pictures; wouldn't stop any eyes.

But it would have meant about thirty days, or something like that, of pure, dripping sweat. But to be taught how to do it, down to the last comma, down to the last bit of temperature, down to every mistake that you could make in doing this thing which you're never going to do, absolutely takes the cake right off the top of the oven. Wow! See? There is all this doingness which is never going to be matched with a doingness, you see? So all this significance is then built up with an undone never-will-be-done doingness, so it all becomes significance.

So, the doingness all but moves over here into the significance department, don't you see? And it doesn't just unbalance it; it winds you up with some ghastly headaches, I know. I say, "Well, I've got to get through this to get to the end of this course or I don't get any diploma. Got to make it. 'So you take a stipple brush.' Now, let me read that again. 'You...'" Ghastly, you know? You're never going to take a stipple brush. You couldn't care less.

So they couldn't make prints in 1890! All right. Great! We don't happen to be having that trouble today. Like asking you to study the aspects – you are studying to some slight degree, but they are very useful – but studying some of the aspect of a "pc lists that were made in 1950" – they weren't published – but what could – you know, no meters, see – so what could the auditor detect without any meter? What would the pc do that would indicate this, see? And then giving it to you in total, painful detail. All you're going to do is read your tone arm, see? But giving you this other in total painful detail, "You sit there and you audit with your fingers on their pulse," you see, and now give you the *whole* rundown of the Japanese or Chinese system of pulse counting by pressure because that's the more complex system.

That was actually what I used, the Chinese system of pulse counting, trying to get up on it – how... oh, you'd be surprised, man – you sit there today – you were absolutely at the beginning of road nowhere in the – just about 14-15 years ago, there was no way to tell what the reaction of the pc was; there was no way to tell what a hot subject was; there was no way to look into anybody's mind; there was no way to record it, if you did. Just a nowhere view, see? Grim.

But now, for you to be taught, who are never going to do it, how you detect a tone arm response without any meter because of the various physiological manifestations of the pc, the motion of the chest – very important, see, the change of breath, coloration; eye coloration. There is a whole subject of how do you know if a process is flat by the eye coloration. Very interesting subject! How would you like to learn the several thousand words that were written on this subject?

All you have to know, if you were taught this, is that there was such a subject. You see? You could very easily learn there was such a subject and there is the subject, which is what makes the E-Meter important, see? This other subject is so complex that the E-Meter solves this other subject, which is "How do you tell what's going on in the pc?" And that subject had many ramifications, see? And if a process is really getting to a pc, his eye color will

change, you see? Or his pulse will smooth out, you know? That's about all you have to know. The rest of this is bric-a-brac.

All right, somebody can spend his whole life, whole life working in the field and realm of bric-a-brac and have a good time. There are fellows who study the history of bromoil – not do it – study the history of it – as almost a full-time hobby or profession or something, see? So, you can get these incredible significances built up in a subject which actually don't amplify the doingness or the expected action of the student. Then this is giving him doingness which becomes a significance.

So we get to the next point of the line which is the conversion of doingnesses to only significances. And if a subject does very much of this, you've just about had it. If you convert all the doingnesses of a subject over into significance – that's how you do it, is you take some subject which is not going to be performed and you describe it far beyond any necessity. Then you've got a conversion, see? Now, if you can go the reverse, you can say the significance is convertible over to the doingness. And you have just had an example of that – the fellow is never going to make a bromoil, so you make him make a bromoil. See, it's properly merely a significance today; it's just properly a significance. There was a thing called a bromoil print. Fine, it existed, see? What it was, was it depended on the same principle now used in photolithography. Gelatin holds water and water repels oil, see? Uses these various principles. Interesting to know, see? You can cover it in a paragraph or two, see?

Now, if we go too far on this particular line, by making some person do some ancient, old act, which he is never again going to do, we've taken something that should have just remained there as a significance and we have pushed it over into a doingness action. And it again upsets the student most ghastly. I'm sure he would have – I'm sure it'd be cute to grind some wheat with a millstone, you see? It could be a hobby, don't you see? It could be very nice, but there would have to be some good reason why you were doing it. Do you see? A good reason why you were doing it, see? And if it's just that you want to see how they did it primitively, well, maybe that's a good enough reason, see? But that's if you want to do it. Did you notice the choice of words? To make a student do it is a fantastic error. Silly! And his reaction to your effort to teach him is an ARC break. He can't figure out why the devil he's doing this in the first place.

So we come to the conclusion that the doingness and the mass of a subject are the current, applicable and useful doingnesses and masses of the subject and those are what should be taught – hard. They're applicable – the applicable doingnesses and masses. In other words, the student should be taught what the student is going to be doing. And the significances that should be taught to the student are – don't compare to what I just told you. The significances are enough background so as not to get – and this is something they've all missed, and this is how an engineer gets to be forty years old and goes old hat – is enough significance so that he doesn't get stuck in the mechanical doingness he's been taught – and you've got to give him enough significance. In other words, that's a little bit more significance than you would expect to give him. And that's why you give him the history of it, to show that it was developed and give him some sketch of its development. And that's why you show him how the thing evolved and what the doingnesses of it were.

So you see, it becomes asinine to make him do these old things. You're just trying to show him that there were some other doingsnesses, don't you see? And you're making him conversant with the principles with which he's operating and if he's sufficiently conversant with those, then the doingsness and the other action which he is being taught don't become obsolete because he can think, see? And that's the difference between a pro – that's the difference between a "pro" and a "practical man." It shows up quite additionally, is a pro always does it by the textbook, with a difference; always does it by the textbook, a bit better. And when the thing shifts, it doesn't look like a shift to him, it looks like simply the same thing with its face slightly shifted. Do you see? It doesn't look all that brassy new.

Now, you'll hear people around – you've just shifted how you do a repetitive command – and you will have people around that tell you, "We've changed all of Scientology." Well, they had learned the practical action – they'd learned the doingsness of giving a practi... a repetitive command, but they had no theory over here of why they were doing this, or what was – what one was trying to accomplish with this, such as flatten the mental comm lag, do you see, that the guy's going through, or anything like that, flatten the process. They just knew this thing of a steady grind, so the second you changed one comma in it, they thought you'd changed all of Scientology, don't you see? But the guy who has grounding on the subject and who knows what processes are and what they're supposed to do, he would say, "Yeah, well, that – that..." He'd give it the proper significance, you see? He'd say, "Well, ah – that's an out... slightly out of ARC, so it should be shifted slightly, see? That knocks the pc a little bit out of ARC. But this other wording, that's very clever. That doesn't knock the pc. See, that doesn't give him a 'no ARC,' you see?" Yeah, nothing changed, see, to him. Everything looked calm, normal, so forth.

Now, a professional then is able to advance and a practical man quite commonly cannot advance. A theoretician, then, would be well taught, but seldom educated. Somebody who is just dealing in theory and nothing but theory, and so forth, could be absolutely beautifully taught, he could be wonderfully schooled, but he would not be educated in that subject because he would have had the doingsness missing in that subject. His doingsness would have been gone. He's just an expert on the painters of the nineteenth century, that's all. He knows the theory of all of their paintings – just the theory. It's not being done anymore, nobody ever expects to do it again.

But you'll find odd bits of the society and culture get parked like this and he can become important, just because millionaires these days are trying madly to save their cash with art. Art and land increase in value. So, there's guys walking into salons today who know nothing about art, but have just got that 100,000 bucks that they want to get deposited fast before inflation eats it up and they feel if they bought a big, nice, good, solid piece of art, that would be known into the future, then of course, it's worth a 100,000 now, but when money inflates, it'll be worth 200,000. Like land, it would have increased its value with the inflation, so therefore it's like gold, you see?

So he walks into the gallery and he looks at this painting, "Huh! It's a girl holding a what?" That's the total knowledge he has of any of this, so he's got experts and the expert can't paint, but he can tell him the real from the false, something like that. But if that guy himself had no doingsness of detection or doingsness of anything else, his opinion wouldn't be worth

anything either. He wouldn't be able to see and he'd be able to palm off everything. But you've got quite a culture – winds up in some very odd spots and you occasionally look into some of these spots and you'll think you have a total theoretician or something like that, that you've got a totality and you may very well have.

But there's nothing sadder than an expert on steam-driven road equipment. I imagine there is one in England today. He's an expert, the last practical expert on the subject of steam-driven road repair equipment. Did you ever see any of these things in textbooks? They're steam engines that have rollers, and they go up and down the roads and – in the days before the internal combustion engine. He's the last – he was the world's – he was a good practical man. He never had any theory of any kind on the subject of steam, or propulsion or anything else, but he's awful practical on the subject of these things, you see? He was all doingness and no thought. Well, he antiquated. He became antique. He became unemployable, actually.

So, when you break up this balance in an education, then you haven't educated the bloke and you haven't safeguarded his future. A fellow is betrayed, then, to the degree that he is not educated and only schooled; and that is most of the protest of the young: that they are being schooled, not educated. They're not being fitted for life.

I'll give you an idea how far adrift it can go. I asked my kids the other day to write something, write their names, sign their names. And boy! Of all the tongue-between-the-teeth actions, you know! Oh, that was grim! They had no signatures. I came down on their teacher like a ton of bricks, you see? They've done – do lots of – lots of exercises in the field of writing, they couldn't sign their own name. Marvelous example, don't you see? Yet I'm sure that they've been very busy making circles and very busy making slant exercises and very busy doing other things and very busy doing everything but write. And somewhere or another, if you wanted to know what was wrong with that and why that occurred, somewhere or other the doingness moved into the field of theory or significance, see? The doingness moved, became just a significance. But it isn't a doingness, don't you see? I mean, writing words has very little to do with traveling ovals, as they call them and so forth, see? So, you can just go just so far with traveling ovals and you get no – there's no doingness there.

So the guy is actually in motion, but it isn't an educational doingness. And that's where an Instructor could make his mistake, you see? Because people are busy or active or acting, then he thinks they are *doing*. It all depends on what they are doing. If they're not doing something that is immediately going to add up to an action applicable by them in life to the accomplishment of a result, they're in the field of significance. And they react like they are in the field of significance. They become very stultified and bored and protesting and annoyed. See, they themselves have recognized that they've exceeded the doingness, that this doingness has nothing whatsoever to do with what they'll be doing. So they fall back then, and they just treat it as a significance because it's purposeless. It doesn't go anyplace, you see? Nothing's happening so it might as well just be a significance and therefore all the motion is no motion at all. So, all the motion being no motion, really, they get this funny, bored, you know, feeling, like, you know, they're not moving. Here they see all the motion, but they're not moving. And actually it's a significance, which has some motion in it and it doesn't have anything to do with going anywhere. And they get this funny sensation – it actually develops a physiological

sensation. It's being up against something, but not being able to move through it. Funny, funny sensation. It's identifiable.

Well, those fundamentally are the basic balances of proper education. Whatever else you want to say about it, those are the basic balances. There are a lot of very specific things, there are a lot of odd and very sharp and very true and very positive and very practical aspects of all this. But education is the – should be the activity of relaying an idea or an action from one being to another, in such a way as not to stultify or inhibit the use thereof. And that's about all it is. You could add to it that it permits, then, the other fellow to think on this subject and develop. He should be able to think on the subject and develop on the subject.

In other words, he takes this idea that you've given him, and it applies only to murals. You've given him enough background and so forth, and you've told him this applied to murals. And one day he's looking at a miniature and he says, "For heaven's sakes, that also applies – for this particular job that I'm doing – that other principle applies to the miniature."

I'll give you one, I can think of one right offhand. A photomural should never be painted until it is actually assembled on a wall, if you're going to paint a photomural, see? Well, I can think of an association that a guy would get in his skull, if he was having any trouble doing miniatures. Supposing for some wild reason or another somebody came up and wanted him to do a miniature on ivory. Well, this is feasible, you can do it. So, if he knew photomurals, and he knew a lot of other work, and he knew lantern slides and so forth and then also he knows how to go back and find how to make an emulsion (you know, one of the basic emulsions that – make it out of egg white or something) he knows what textbook to find it in. He'd probably whop all this together and then he would also know that you certainly better not paint it until you'd totally finished it, see, and in other words, the information is loose in the guy's head. It's flexible, he can use it, see? It isn't jammed into his head crosswise so that it just associates just with one thing, see?

Don't give it – don't – education shouldn't give people the technology in such a way that the technology is not useful to them. They've got to be able to think with it. You've got to remember that when you teach this engineer in a university all there is to know about nuclear physics, that in just about a dozen years, through the investment of national governments and other things – and particularly since it's very destructive, we know that national governments will invest, very heavily. And we know that this field is going to change. And we're going to teach him all there is to know on the subject. Well, we could make just a technician out of him for common, ordinary, garden-variety actions of reading meters; or we could teach him current technology or current theory as a biblical fact; or we could teach him in such a way that he could think in the subject. And of them, the only fair thing to do is teach him in such a way as he could think in the subject because it's an advancing subject, and he won't become an antique in a dozen years, see? If we did anything else, he would become antique because this thing – after all, governments are in there shoveling the money into atomic development and so forth, left, right and center. They've got guys on pure mathematics and they've got guys on this and guys on that.

And they're – I don't care how they say they're – but I always get suspicious. They say they're "abandoning the production units of Uranium 235," and then the following sentence is added onto this. We take it – yes, they're abandoning the manufacture of 235, we'll buy that.

Now, the "because" is what you – what you wince on. "Because there's already sufficient quantities of it to answer all possible needs for the next 500 years," see? There's that "because." The first sentence, all right. All right. So they're going to abandon this development. But their "because"? Maybe so, but we don't really think so. They've discovered something else, brother. They've discovered something that makes U-235, you know, look like last season's high-button shoes. And of course they're not about to let it out.

Every time somebody discovers one of these secrets, or the secretary of state, or somebody like that, of the United States gets on a plane hurriedly in order to tell the last atomic secrets to Khrushchev. I don't think that's his job, but that's what he's been doing lately – this bird, he goes ramming across and around and about and screaming about this and screaming about that. No. There isn't any of these secrets that have been stolen such as the Fuchs and that sort of thing, as damaging as they were, that didn't excite the government into a fantastic internal convulsion on the subject of "Develop something new, something better, something that hasn't been stolen yet." And their best prevention of espionage is not political because that they're sour at. Their best prevention of espionage is just being newer.

So, I imagine the poor kid being educated right up now in Birmingham on the subject of atomic physics is probably already 10, 15 years behind the mark. He'll probably get out and he will look very bright and he will say, "All right, now we take the *riga-bongs*," and so forth.

And the fellows on the place say, "The what? Oh yes, yes. We remember that. We – it's – we... that's historical."

That was his last course, see, was in *riga-bongs*, you know? Oooh! "Well, what are you fellows doing?"

"Oh well, we haven't time now, but there's a pile of textbooks over in the corner. Those are our more recent notes."

Well, education, then, to fit this fellow for life would have to fit him for this operating atmosphere. It would have to fit him to think. At the same time they'd have to teach him that disciplines are disciplines and actions are actions but at the same time they'd have to teach him to think with these actions and advance these actions and carry them out to a finite and final conclusion. They'd have to do these things. Well, that's quite a trick, to teach somebody, on the one hand, that this is an exacting discipline, and on the other hand that you should have a loose and flexible attitude toward it. Quite a trick, isn't it?

Well, you recognize what the strain is. You're trying to make a practical person who applies it to a result, who can give it that extra fillip, you know, that extra little zing that pushes it on through. He can think on his feet, in other words, and – so that he won't antique. Give him all this so he won't antique. Well, that's quite a trick.

Actually, that is being demanded of Scientology as in nowhere else. And anybody studying in Scientology is under considerable stress and strain because of these various factors. You have a madly advancing subject, which is advancing beyond the expectancy that it was – its expectancy keeps rising, don't you see? And which is already taking off from the – from the basis of having exceeded all former expectancies. See, and now it is still advancing and its expectancy level is rising, see, consistently. I mean, more and more is developed that broadens the view more and more, see?

And so therefore education in Scientology becomes a much touchier proposition than in any other analogous subject and it's very rough. It's very rough. That is why I undertook to find out what are these various balances and what do you do and so forth. And how do you bring somebody up to a point where he can study this thing without too much casualty and upset.

And what are the touchy points, then, of education? And of course, education is a subject that has not been worked out. By definition – there isn't even a definition, you see, such as I just gave you a moment ago. They don't operate in a school with a definition. Well, that's wonderful because what trouble do you get into if you read a paragraph beyond something that you haven't got the definition of? You get into trouble, promptly, instantly and immediately, catastrophic trouble. Well, education's been in trouble ever since it started to do something which it never defined. That's the basic thing wrong with education, see?

Let's call somebody who is being educated different than somebody who is being taught. Let's make that shading of difference here. And then let's get the technology of schooling and understand that the technology of schooling somebody does exist and that man has had that for quite a while, but it doesn't necessarily have too much to do with the technology of educating him, which has been relatively undeveloped. So just because one is going to school is no reason one is getting educated, see?

But there's terrific technology wrapped up around school. And that the success of any taught subject is to the degree that it keeps its significance sensibly balanced with its action and the masses associated with it. And that's a sensibly balanced subject. And the odd whip-around can occur here that actually a person can think he's engaged in a doingness when actually he's engaged in a significance because the doingness is never going to be applied, see? And he can actually be engaged in a significance which is really a doingness, on the other side of the fence, naturally. If it balances one way, it'll for sure balance the other way. He can be engaged in a – in a significance of the action of contemplation. And it's as silly as that, don't you see? It's too silly to require very much stress.

What is the significance of an action? Well, if an individual was terribly significant about everything under the sun, moon and stars, you could, of course, work up significance into some kind of an educational subject. Don't you see? So the significance itself would lean over and become a doingness. Sounds silly, but it's true.

I'm now talking about the "expert on art of the nineteenth century," see? And there are fellows who make a terribly good living, which is the achievement of a final result of education. After all, I don't care how much communism we've got amongst us, you know? The guy is making a living by simply being a walking dictionary, see. Memory expert on something or other – he's somebody or other. He knows all the formulas there are to be known on the subject of paint. He never mixed any paint, he wouldn't know what to do if you showed him a paint can, he actually abhors the smell of it – it makes him quite sick. But he can sit there in a little cubicle and be an expert on the subject of paint. So his, of course, has become – his significance has become his doingness. Perfectly allowable. The society has that.

So, somebody writes him a letter and they say, "Dear Expert Jones: We are working with the formula of rosin and – uh – su... and – uh – amber, and we are trying very hard to develop the – so on. Could you please give us the background music to this here paint?"

And he says, "Well, that paint was originally used on the Tyrrhenian Sea and uh – so forth and their amber was different than anybody else's amber," and he goes on and on and on.

At the other end of – the guy, the practical bird, takes a look. "Hey, no wonder it won't paint! Their amber was different. There's a different type of amber – that's Russian amber and Russian amber, it has an awful lot of beeswax in it," or something, you know, whatever it is. "Ha! This paint requires wax." So we dump some wax in. All right, now it paints things. See?

But this bird didn't have any idea of applying this to anything. If he said enough on the subject then somebody who was doing the subject, you know, could make some sense out of it. So there are experts.

There's guys like Einstein. He sat around and did a wonderful... he had a total doingness that was of significance. He figured and figured and figured and figured and figured and he figured everybody into a hole. But he sure stimulated guys. More mathematicians were made trying to understand Einstein than any other single man that ever worked. The joke of it is, there might be nothing in his work at all. It's sort of idiotic to say that – somebody comes along and tells you that the speed of light is c , and it's never any different. What's he talking about? What light? Well, now, I don't even think he says it's the light between 3,600 angstroms and 5,600 angstroms. I don't think he got that definite. He just said, "The speed of light." Well, that's great. Does he mean light as we normally see light? Well, light, in actual fact is simply the light vibration that you see, don't you see? By definition, that's light. Well, then he must have meant that light, visible light. Well, great. I'm glad he did because when it goes through a prism, it no longer travels at c .

Well, what do you say? It could no longer travel at c for this excellent reason: It emerges from the prism at different speeds. Otherwise you would never have a spectrum.

Oh yes. But now, you're only talking about wavelength and you're only talking about the amplitude of the wavelength and that sort of thing and that's why it turns the corner. No, I'm afraid that that can't be true either. It must be at a different speed because if you've ever watched soldiers in an evolution, the fellow on the outside is going faster than the fellow on the inside. Have you ever noticed that? Well, light, to bend and fan into a dispersal when it goes through a prism, must be handling something that has to do with speed.

But because everybody has gone stone-blind on this because Einstein has said quite the contrary, don't you see, now they've got to have some weird idea, and actually it might interest you to know that they have finally abolished light. I thought that was mighty nice of them. They've now got it worked out that color is only something that is manufactured by the eye to relay to the brain and doesn't exist in actual fact anywhere. That's actually told to you – that's being taught me right now. I think it's a wonderful idea. But if the guy hadn't read a psychology textbook before he wrote that textbook, I would be happier about it. There's something wrong with all of this, for this excellent reason, is, a vibration is a vibration. I don't know why you have to get psychology into it. That's the influence of Locke and Hume, you see? These old birds.

"If there was a sound..." Descartes, yeah? "If there – is there sound in the forest if there is nobody there to hear it?" [laughter] Well, what do they want to chase themselves up those blind alleys for, man? Because they're very easily answered. They are confusing the role of a thetan because they haven't got him. And of course, he's the wild, missing variable in all of their equations.

So, all right. So the thetan builds the universe. Now of course, he can experience it. You can experience what you can build, so therefore there would be such a thing as light. It all depends on how you're looking at it, and from what mental science you are looking at it, as to whether or not you make pronouncements concerning it one way or the other. But you might get an idiocy that would go something like this: "Now, light doesn't exist because you aren't. Now, if you were, then light couldn't. Because, you see, if light really does come through the pupil of the eye and excite the brain into various sensations known as color and so forth – but if these things do not exist in actual fact, then of course nothing is behaving outside of your skull at all. Nothing is happening outside of your skull." You are saying such things as, "A cook can never eat the cake he bakes." See, this is the plea for total introversion. You follow me, don't you?

Therefore, if we've got to have an argument about "If the tree falls, is there a sound if nobody's there?" If we're going to have an argument of that character, then let's have some real arguments like "Can a cook bake a cake and eat it?" See?

But you'd have to go upstairs into the role of a being in this universe, or a thetan. You'd have to come off the kick of the "Big Thetan" idea, see? You follow me? "The Big Thetan built light, and you can only experience light and you don't have anything else to do with light except experiencing light, therefore you're a total effect, brother. Lie down." See? You get how these tricks are worked?

Well, in education and so forth, you'll find out that it's very safe to advance from a basic premise or a basic assumption, and to make it very clear what basic assumption you are advancing from, and then not try to spread this assumption over into a thousand different things.

They have assumed, in physics, the conservation of energy. Well, let them talk about that loud and clear and then let them not talk about the organization of mass. Because they've merely started from the conservation of energy. They haven't said anything about mass. But now they try to drag in mass by saying mass is merely a bunch of energy. Why did they do that? Because their basic assumption is the conservation of energy. "Energy can neither be made nor destroyed, by anybody, particularly you." See, that's the basic assumption of physics. So this naturally is energy, see?

Now, it's not the conservation of space, it's not the conservation of time and it's not the conservation of mass. So now everything, then, has to become energy because they've started out with their basic assumption. Therefore they themselves become blind to where their subject took off, and therefore where it'll err. It's going to depart, see? The second something comes up which is not energy, it's going to exceed the basics of finite physics and that's all that's wrong with that because they didn't start with anything but energy, don't you see? So, they're not going to go anyplace but energy.

We're in a very safe relationship to this. We start with the being: you, a thetan. We can prove that you, a being as a thetan, exists. We can prove that, and we can back you out of your skull and you can stand without a body. So you're not a body. That's very simple. We don't do this very often and don't require you to do it as one of your class exercises because it makes people sick and unhappy. But it does happen and it does work. All right, so we start out with the basic building block of the universe: a thetan. Now, we're on fairly solid ground there, but of course having done that we are now exceeding all former basic assumptions which start subjects.

Now, in trying to communicate this idea, then, we collide with all preconceptions. We collide with everything in the background of people, we collide with all of their upsets in the past, with practically everything under the sun. We can only go, then, in the direction of processing. We can't go in the direction much of the theory and philosophy of the universe because the only way we will really win is in the direction of processing, handling and doing something with the unit because the unit is not educatable at a degraded state. See, that's elementary. So, unfortunately then, we have to know about all there is to know and know it better than anybody has ever had to know anything before, particularly about education because we can't teach anybody to do it.

You're tackling a very tough subject. It's a very easy subject. You're tackling essentially a very tough subject, in Scientology, which has been made as easy as possible. And my efforts have been devoted to, in the last few months, in studying study, to make it even easier.

Now, I haven't told you very much in this lecture that you can use, but I've told you something that you might have some inspective relationships with, you know?

Well let's say, a whole school system of a country miseducated all the youth of this country with malice aforethought. They would get to a point where they couldn't receive a datum. So, they're in a war, and, the enemy – the enemy sends them a despatch and says, "We are going to attack tomorrow morning," but they can't receive a datum. They've got it that plain and clear, see, and they are all in bed, and they all get shot down in flames and that's the end of the country, see? It gets down to the *reductio ad absurdum* of not being able to observe anything, not be able to perceive anything, not be able to understand anything and have no ARC with anything, which looks to me like a sort of a "thetan death" situation.

So, it looks to me like there is a great deal of comparison between miseducation and aberration. And it also looks to me that a great deal of work could be put in on this field from a standpoint of deaberrating people at the lower levels. I'll give you an example, just offhand: "Tell me –" this would not be a repetitive process – but, "Tell me a word that you have not understood in this life." And then you make the guy go ahead and clarify it. I think you'd get some of the most interesting resurgences. I think some of the many of the personal problems of the individual would blow up in smoke.

But here, just on this other subject of study – of studying the subject of study – one walks forth with a brand-new avenue of lower-level disentanglement and lower-level therapy lines which look quite promising; they look quite promising. But what I'm mainly interested in is you, a Scientology pro training people, have to know something about this subject. I'm

interested in your education right now as you exist. And I'm trying to make it as easy as possible on you and teach you something about it.

Thank you very much.

STUDY: GRADIENTS AND NOMENCLATURE

A lecture given on 6 August 1964

Well, what's the date?

Audience: Sixth of August AD 14.

What?

Audience: Sixth of August.

It is the 6th of March.

Audience: Sixth of August.

Somebody back there says it's the 6th of March. It's the 6th of August AD 14, Saint Hill Special Briefing Course. And we have another lecture today on study.

Now probably, just to get off in high gear here, so the taxi cabs won't run up too big a bill out there this evening – just to get off into high gear, let me tell you at first that, of course, no field of study including Scientology texts of earlier times includes these principles.

So this is a very adventurous thing I'm doing because it can rebound on a critical, you see, at Scientology texts because they are not written this way. They are written in an effort to make people understand what you're talking about but they do not go according to these principles and future Scientology texts, on the other hand, will go according to these principles. And you will see this suddenly entering and coming over the horizon. However, you have at this time only a bulletin or two which represent this. You probably have noticed of recent times that the more recent bulletins are much easier to study and that is a direct result of this study of study. Leave it to me to study study.

But it's very interesting that your grades on examination, since I have been talking to you about studying, have increased from five percent in the nineties – five percent of the class in the nineties – to sixty percent of the class in the nineties. That's one of these astonishing leaps, you see? It is too astonishing to – well, it would be totally unlooked for. Now, you are already being trained above the level of modern education, that is to say modern education as she is taught. One shouldn't be grammatical about low-grade things, you see? I've been amusing myself lately by making grammar agree with the disrespectfulness with which something should be regarded. That's very interesting – the mood with which you use grammar, you see? And you do that, too, you say, "She ain't a-gonna come." Meaning, of course, that you had a highly disrespectful attitude towards what she said about it, don't you see? A lot of unex-

plored nuances in language and that sort of thing which are quite amusing. But of course, that's just amusing.

In the field of study to improve the ability of a student to learn by altering the character and methodology of teaching is the exact aim here. Now, this is quite an interesting aim: that is, just to alter the ability of the student to study and to learn and improve it by simply altering the teaching methodology. Now, you see now, that in itself is rather adventurous, because you say, "Well, I could make the subject easier to read," or something like that, but how about changing the subjective reaction of the student to the subject by the method of teaching which is employed? So, you see how far we have reached here. We are now handling in this subject the subjective reaction of the student to the subject by the method we use in teaching it. So, if you want to see some pan-determinism at work, that's it, don't you see?

Now, study normally would simply be, you told somebody something and he was supposed to study it, you see; and if he didn't like it, why, you reported him to the headmaster, you see? That was how we achieved subjective reality on the student. In universities it's done by mechanisms of expulsion, a grade system whereby if somebody doesn't make a grade he is expelled.

This lightly goes on – he's not permitted to go into the next grade. You see that very commonly, but this goes up to a point where somebody is expelled. Now, that was how they tried to give the student subjective reality on the subject he was studying by, of course, punishment. How else would you expect, don't you see, the thing to conduct itself in the physical universe?

So actually, beyond an effort to present the facts and say a subject was there and then provide a school technology which made the individual guilty if he didn't know it, the whole subject of study and training had not really much advanced beyond that point. That was about the high tide of study.

Now, quite accidentally someone with intuition or insight – some professor, some teacher someplace, in some school – would depart from this rationale. He would depart from this method of teaching and he would try to invite the understanding and the interest and the participation of the student; and such people were very rare and people really tried, students really fought to get into their classes. And that was about as far as it had advanced.

Now, when we recognize that education is not very successful we have made an enormous stride forward. Now, the educational authorities who are responsible for the education of children and adults refuse to recognize this fact and so they really don't really try to improve it.

But when you are down against a practical subject such as Scientology where you have trained this auditor as best you could and then you see him sit down – you have an element there which is missing in most educational technologies. They teach the engineer to build a bridge but then nobody in that university is forced to sit down and watch him build a bridge, much less go across the bridge he has built. So you see, they do not in actual fact get a very good look at whether their educational methods are successful or not. We teach somebody ancient Greek. There is nothing wrong with learning ancient Greek but the teacher then

never really is a witness of the student speaking to the ancient Greeks, see? He doesn't pay too much attention to this.

So therefore, in studying study, I avoided all those fields where observation of the student was not easily attained, the actual doingness of the student was not easily viewed. That ruled out a field for the study of study, you see? So immediately engineering technology, we could learn nothing from that because, of course, nobody ever sits around and watches whether or not the engineer builds the bridge, you see? So it had to be something as intimate as Scientology, which is, the Instructor teaches the student how to audit a case and then, oddly enough, is able at that very minute to have him turn around and audit the case, see? So this, of course, has a tendency to force progress and advance upon us and we are able then to make a further advance because we have an instantaneous inspection of the results of our study.

So, perhaps one of the reasons why the civilization has not made considerable progress in this line is because very few subjects are in this category, whereby the subject instructed is not instantly practiced before the professor. Do you see that? So that therefore gives us – gives us you might say the driver's seat in this subject where – of study – because we can see instantly with no comm lag at all. We don't find out whether or not this fellow turned out to be a great and famous barrister, don't you see, twenty years hence. We don't find that out, but we find out whether this person became an auditor before the day is out. Can the person use this principle? Well, we walk right over into the auditing section and there is the same auditor that we've just had in practical and we've just taught him something in practical and there he sits, you see? There he sits with his bare face showing. Right there! And when the Practical Supervisor also does auditing supervision, he continues to work very, very hard to put his practical across to a point where he sees it all of a sudden in a session. You see? So, we probably have a closer look than anyone else.

Now, there's a great zone of tolerance in most studies. They expect the student to be very amateurish. Let's say we're teaching a craft like silversmithing; now, we don't expect he is going to heat up any silver without burning his fingers, see? So we get a big gradient win: He heated up some silver without burning his fingers, see? Well, that's all very well and that's fine but we don't expect him to make a tea service that is going to please the general manager of the British Silver Trust in his first few weeks of silversmithing. We sort of would expect that fellow to go out and hang around silversmithing and improve his design and work with a master and gradually get there and when he is about fifty, why, turn out some cracking marvel of a piece, you see, that the general manager of British Tea Services, Limited, or something of the sort, would approve of and buy and use as a standard design, you see? There's always this comm lag.

But there was a field, not to stretch it too far, there was a field where instant inspection was feasible and so that field lent itself peculiarly to study on the subject of study which would be analogous to Scientology and that was the field of photography. Now, when you tell a student to take a picture of a tree and he goes out and takes a picture of a tree, you in very short order are going to see a picture of a tree. And if it is upside down and if he has cut it in half and if he didn't hold his camera level and if he had camera shake, all of these things are immediately and distinctly visible. Furthermore, we have a direct and exact result of a combi-

nation of actions which, of course, is important. Can he put a sandwich on a tray? Well, all right, he can put a sandwich on a tray, but that's not a very complex action. Can he make a sandwich and put it on a tray? See? All right, well can he make the bread, you see, and make the filler and make the sandwich and make the tray and put it on the tray? You see how this field – you could suddenly start broadening, see, out a subject.

Well, I'm afraid that we're in – very close in – to that kind of a subject in Scientology. It's a subject of complex actions. It's not a subject of simple actions. No matter how hopefully a person in a co-audit when he first comes in – I'm talking about a HAS co-audit – believes, no matter how touchingly he believes that all it is, is he has to sit there and nod, he very, very soon becomes aware that he is engaged in a complex action. He is expected to say something and this probably strikes him with the greatest of shock when he finally realizes he is expected to say something and that it is up to him to get the person he's auditing to say something.

Now, we've got a double complexity: he not only himself has to say something but the person he is auditing has to have something said to him which will cause the person he is auditing to say something. Do you follow this through? Then he's got to hear this and then he has got to acknowledge it. Well, he probably finally masters this, off a canned piece of paper or something of the sort, and he finally masters this and he feels very triumphant, only to discover that the person who sits opposite him in the co-audit, as it changes around, is not the same case. He gets different pcs and these pcs have different cases and this is pretty grim, because we knew all we had to say to somebody was, "Well, how is your mother-in-law getting along." and we had a good session going. But this next fellow hasn't got a mother-in-law, [laughter] so that is a total stumbling block and you would be amazed how big a stumbling block that might look. Now he has to enter the technology, if he's told that he has to do something with problems, he has to enter the technology of problems. What the devil is a problem? In order to talk to somebody about problems, or dream up things about problems for the fellow to talk about, we have to know something about problems. Now, he's away into the significance of the mind, added to the actions which he is performing.

Now, the normal way we go about this is to get him to perform the simple actions and then add the complexities to them one after the other, on the basis that the person would become confused if given too much too fast.

So, we have a new discovery which we have made, long since, called gradient scales which applies in the field of study and that you teach somebody on a gradient. Well, what is meant by "teaching somebody on a gradient"? Well, a gradient of course refers to a grade which is sort of an uphill looking sort of picture, don't you see? It's a little bit more so each successive step. What we mean by a gradient: It gets steeper or it gets more complex or it takes in more the further you go.

Well, that's a gradient and as long as we attack a gradient – as long as we attack the subject on a gradient of complexity, we give him this cycle. We move along into more and more numerous actions, but we try to teach him each action that we're going to add to – we're going to add to this action – so we're going to teach him that action so well that it doesn't worry him. And then our next action that we teach him – this has its own complexity, but it's

done in combination with this first action. But if the first action is still worrying him and he hasn't got that down, then our next action is going to throw him.

When you see somebody getting confused, then he hasn't gotten down the more fundamental action he should have gotten down before he advanced into more complex action. It isn't that he doesn't understand the more complex action – he's not even confronting that action; he's still confronting this more basic action. See, he hasn't learned that basic action.

Well now, the only place you can err in this area is trying to start in too high on the gradient and you can make that mistake and you can make that mistake with the greatest of ease. It's the easiest mistake to make because nothing else is done in the modern university except make this mistake. They don't educate – they make that mistake.

Modern education is really the art and science of making the mistake of too steep, too quick, before anybody has learned anything about it.

For instance, I've seen German taught with ferocity and velocity and the next thing you know, we were learning all about Schiller, whoever the hell he was. "What's Schiller, where are we? How come?"

"Well, that's just in the lesson text. See, that's the fourth week's lesson text."

"Yeah, wait a minute. What happened to the alphabet?" Nobody can read a German alphabet in the – that's used only to English Alphabets. You can't read one of those Gothic Alphabets. It's just gobbledygook! Looks like bird tracks! [laughter] Well, all right, you're going to teach somebody about the nuances of Schiller, are you? When it doesn't even look like words on a page! He's not yet convinced there are words on the page, you see? He thinks the printer spilled some ink. He thinks his book has been damaged. Nobody bothers to teach him the German alphabet. Where was he supposed to learn it? We look in vain for where he was supposed to learn the German alphabet, because it's not any part of the syllabus of that course. Ah, but it's German 1; where the hell is German 0? Well, they must assume that that must have been in your last life.

So, you can make with the greatest of ease the mistake of entering a gradient too high.

A multimillion pound activity was carried on in Africa teaching a number of tribes down there "Soil Erosion: The Techniques of Preserving Soil and Preventing Erosion." Parliament up here was just appropriating money, along with peanuts, and so forth. It was back in the days when we were all comrades. And they were appropriating money for these groundnuts – peanuts to you Americans – which never grew and nobody could do anything with them after they'd grown them because there was other things they did it with, see? Same time they were pouring this *flood* of money, as a support program to groundnuts – they got into soil preservation and preventing soil erosion. And they poured the money into this and they poured people down there and they had people in an airlift going down to Central Africa to solve these staggering and fantastic problems they were having in trying to teach these natives how to not erode soil. And the native was taking this in just about the way oil takes in water. I'm sure he was being polite and gentlemanly about listening but brother, he was really paying no attention.

And it took a Scientologist in the middle of the program to straighten it out. He did it with gradients which we already knew about. He just decided that the government had cut in too late. The native didn't have any reason to not erode soil. Well, there was all of Africa full of soil – how come we were preserving it? It seemed to be the most bountiful substance he ever had anything to do with. And this dropped back to the fact that he had no idea of future. So this Scientologist sat down patiently and ran around and wrote them up something that they used in the program and one has never heard about it since, so it must have been very successful. No more billions are being promoted in that direction anyway.

Just this: That you had to teach the native that there was such a thing as the future and that his future welfare of his children and tribe depended to a large degree on his still having pastures to graze and areas to grow things in. And they taught them this very carefully and considerable enthusiasm greeted soil erosion.

Now, you very often make a mistake in a Comm Course when you find a new student comes into that Comm Course and you are teaching him this and you're teaching him that and you're teaching him this drill and you're teaching him that drill and he doesn't know how to sit in a chair, man. Now, you could go more fundamentally than this – you could go more fundamental – maybe he didn't know why he was there. Maybe he came in by mistake. Maybe he still has some weird idea about how come he's there. Now you're teaching him a Comm Course.

Well, you're not teaching a Comm Course to anybody that's there, so our basic gradient on education is to get somebody there. That sounds too simple but almost every elementary teacher in the world is making that mistake today. They are teaching children who aren't there. And you'll find the most marvelous increases in IQ and learning rate take place under that very, very funny simplicity and most of their big educational strides made with Scientology are simply based on that one little tiny factor of getting the student there.

Well now, they don't know what they're doing, some of these teachers. They think they're doing something esoteric or wonderful when they tell the student class – when they tell the class each morning to "Look at the front wall, look at the back wall and look at the ceiling and look at the floor." Maybe they're doing it "because Ron said so," but it seems to work and this seems to have a great deal of workability and the children all appear to have an enormous increase in intelligence even though this is only used for five or ten minutes each morning.

Well, that's quite marvelous if it's only used for five or ten minutes each morning because the process obviously isn't run long enough to even get into the zone of having to be flattened. Nothing is going to happen here to a case to amount to anything. What they haven't noticed before is that the children weren't there to be taught and of course they look more intelligent if they are there. Try and run an IQ test on somebody who is not sitting at the desk taking one.

So, actually this is completely aside from the ramifications of havingness and other factors that would be involved in this – that first step is just to get somebody there. That's the first step. Now, maybe in a Central Organization somebody up in the Academy may be saying to himself, "Well, the Letter Registrar already got the person here. Getting the person here is

the duty of the Letter Registrar. The person came in to take the course, didn't he? Well, the Letter Registrar was supposed to have written him letters, so obviously, then, the person is there." I've already had this explained to me. Do you see the rationale? No, they've got a body in class. They've got a body in class. Now, why the person is actually there? They don't know that.

Well, the fads hit this course. Yeah, once in a blue moon we'll have a new fad – not once in a blue moon either – everybody will get on a fad thing. For a while, a year or two ago, I've forgotten exactly when it was, "the problem they solved by coming to Saint Hill" was in vogue and for a while, why, everybody was just making marvelous TA and gorgeous case gains and so forth – "the problem they solved by coming to Saint Hill." "What did coming to Saint Hill solve as a problem for you?" See? And then they would run this out and they'd square it up and it's marvelous, and so forth. And I don't believe I ever thought about it very much, but my laughter on this situation would be based on this very elementary fact: That they weren't really running a Problems Process at all, see? They were simply making the person aware of the fact that they had arrived at Saint Hill.

So, we don't do that anymore because we've got a little checksheet which goes in and out and is sometimes skipped and sometimes put back in again, which has to do with getting the person to go around and spot the locations of everything around here, see? We take care of it with a little checksheet. They're supposed to get this and supposed to get that and they're supposed to look over this and supposed to that, don't you see? So, there is a Touch Assist familiarity, so that – that wipes out two things: the vast mystery of where they have arrived at and the fact that they have arrived.

So, your first gradient in education is to get somebody there. It doesn't much matter how you solve it. I have shown you here – get the little kids in school to spot the ceiling and spot the teacher and spot the floor and so forth. You've got them there now and they respond by appearing to be far more intelligent than they were before, so you say, "Well, look at the tremendous IQ gain this gives." No, nobody is smart where he is not.

All right, so there – there is the idea of education by gradient and the – repeat – the mistake you can make in education by gradient is a big mistake and that is: failure to undercut the gradient, failure to get simple enough, failure to get the primary action. You must get the starting action that the person can be made sure of so that he can then go on to another action and become sure of that and go on to another action that he becomes sure of, you see?

Well, now if you haven't ever gotten a low enough or simple enough first action for the person to become sure of, then the person advancing into the next zone finds that very, very complex and starts to feel sort of spiny and then the instructor starts going mad trying to explain to this student what this is all about – this step two, see? Well, he has never gotten to step one and from there on his education is a complete mish-mash. And if you want to unscramble anybody's difficulties with training, and so forth, then you will just have to find the gradient that they overlooked or skipped or missed, after which they entered into a confusion.

And this would be very easy to find on an E-Meter, extremely easy on an E-Meter and that is simply: the E-Meter would register an early moment of confusion about study or training and it would register it repeatedly, that is two or three times if it's never been resolved. It

would only go *flick*, or something like that if it had existed and then been resolved, you see? There would just be the residual charge left on the time track. But if it's repetitively reading, if it reads several times and seems to read very strongly as he discusses it – gives you in other words tone arm action – why, then you know that it has never been resolved to this day.

Now, the difficulties that men have with their minds are those which have ridden forward with them into the present. Those are the difficulties that have to be treated and handled – the difficulties which they have had in the past which have ridden forward to them into the present. You can always get a registry on a difficulty somebody has had in the past simply because it is pictured on the time track as having had a difficulty. But if it is not riding forward with him into the present, you are simply using auditing to contact it again and it will blow. It won't restimulate particularly, it usually just blows.

For instance, if you have had somebody get a deep, a very heavy surge, let me put it this way – if you get somebody got a – get a heavy surge on a meter in a session, you can actually put them back into that moment of the session when they got the surge and you will get some ghost of that surge. That's not riding forward with them in the present time. You actually took them back into the past to find the surge. But you can get that surge back again because what you did was get the impression it made on the session. You didn't get the original reading – that blew. But then the fact that it did do this in the session is still a matter of record which can be picked up.

So therefore, accordingly, you could go back into the time track of an individual and you could get an emotional reaction for everything a person had ever been emotional about. Or you could get heavy reactions – it isn't that the reactions are necessarily heavy or soft – but you could get reactions about what a person has been emotional about that he is still emotional about.

Now, get the slight difference here. One is simply the impression on the time track of having been emotional. Well, you'll get a – you'll get a needle read on that. And the other one is a moment on the time track when he has been emotional that he is still emotional about. The thing has never been cleared up, in other words. And the difference between those two reactions is one will fade instantly, the first one – he has simply been emotional about something; he is not still emotional about that thing, that's long since gone, you will simply get the *whooh* on the needle – that needle's going to move, just contacting the earliest point or the point when it occurred, see, you are going to get a needle reaction.

But the other thing that you're going to run into, if it is still current, it will repeat. It doesn't blow through just being contacted – it now repeats and you can get more repeat. Well, that means it has ridden forward in time and has never been resolved.

I just make this point to you. As an auditor you are only interested in those things which the individual has never resolved. You're not interested in just those things which he didn't resolve. You get the shadow of a difference between? He didn't resolve it, so what? He never did find out how to get along with his commanding officer, but – he never did – but it's not riding forward in time with him. It isn't even capable of being restimulated, therefore it will read once and go *bvop* and it flattens; see, it's right now, it's out. Now, you could revivify him or regress him to that moment in time and start running him through incidents which are

not in restimulation and oddly enough you could get some built up that would go into restimulation.

As an auditor you have considerable power over the mind, you see, you can do some interesting things with it. So, there's two reactions here that you are interested in: There's the reaction that simply was there and isn't bothering the fellow – it hasn't ridden forward in time with him, but you can get him back to it and it reacts on the meter; and the other action is one that has not only been active at the time but is active now without any difficulty whatsoever. You don't have to go back in time to find this thing. It's going to react right away and the only meter difference that you will see between those two reactions is that one, the one which is still with him and is riding forward in time with him, and so forth, that one is repetitively reading. It will read and it will read again and it will read and it will read again, you see?

When you are checking out things you have to make sure that you've got something that will repeat. One of the main faults that you make in R6 is that you do not ever ask for the repeat read. Well, I wouldn't give you two nickels and a collar button, anytime, ever, for a one-read checkout – *achto!* Now, do you see why? Is maybe you checked it earlier and it read. Well, when you check it again, you might get the earlier read, you might get the moment in the session when it read before. Do you understand?

So you are only interested in a read that will repeat itself. Reads that don't repeat themselves have either blown, or they haven't ridden forward in time, anyhow, so the devil with them.

If you can't get something to read twice, skip it. If you can make it read twice, realize that it's riding forward with the pc and is therefore worrying him. Still worrying him to this day.

Now, all of this is necessary technology, as elementary as that may be, that's necessary technology to an understanding of how you would locate somebody's early confusions with regard to an educational subject. Because of course he was confused; he was confused every time he attacked a new point on the gradient, but he unconfused afterwards. The meter will still register those moments of first confusion, but they will register as only onces, so they're not important.

This, then, I have to tell you so that you can see and evaluate the observation. And then you get used to this and then you get some subjective reality on it, you realize what I am telling you is true. "Yes! Oh, he was very confused the first time he looked at the letter 'A.' He didn't know what that was – that was – yeah." Well, you get a read – one shot, see? You get a small read there on the needle, the needle moved.

"What about the confusion about the alphabet?"

"Yeah, the letter 'A'."

Whoom! – the needle moves and you say, "All right, now about the letter 'A'," and there is no motion. He isn't still confused about "A."

But let's take this bird now and we say, "What about the letter 'A'?" and it goes *whoompf!* Now it's done it once. "What about 'A!'?" *Whoompf!* "Well, how about – how about – can you tell me something more about being disturbed about this formation of the

letter 'A?' *Whoompf!* Now, you suddenly realize this bird can't write, see? You just – from your various observations of the pc, you've suddenly remembered having observed this, see? You didn't need the observation until that moment, but this guy can't write. Well, you want to clean up his writing. Well, let's find out what underlay that confusion.

Now, ARC must have preceded all misemotion and bad reactions. You don't have a bad reaction unless there has been ARC in the first place. There's got to have been ARC with something in order to make a bad action occur. You've heard me say that often enough. Well, all right, how about this – how about this confusion? Do you address the confusion in itself? No, it's just sort of an out-of-ARC subject. It's never the confusion that the person is supposed to be in, by himself and the Instructor and that's why education breaks down.

Now, let's go over that again. It's not the confusion that the student is trying to learn and the Instructor is trying to teach him. If they are having any difficulty with that at all, then that's a guarantee that it isn't the right confusion. You can just chalk that up with a great big red mark. Student can't learn it – you follow me? We're talking now about a heavy reaction here, not just a little old light brush-over – the student can't learn it, and the Instructor can't get it through the student's head.

Now, what are we looking at? We are looking at a lower point on the gradient which was skipped, getting back to what we were talking about in the first place. Here's this point on the gradient that he didn't master and then went on to the next point. With that next point he had enough confusion to cause him to be overwhelmed and he never did get that point. And when you look it over on the meter, that's the point you're going to get. You're not going to get the original point – you're going to get the next point on the gradient.

So, one of the sneakers that made this very difficult to solve was the fact that the thing the student is apparently having trouble with is never the thing the student is having trouble with. And you can save yourself a great many Instructor hours if you recognize that and get a good grasp on that, in actual fact. Now this, of course, follows the pattern of the mind, doesn't it? If the pc knows what is worrying him and if he is worrying then – if he's worrying – then that isn't what he's worried about. See, we know that. If you know all about what's wrong with you, that isn't what's wrong with you, brother, because of course, that would as-is and cease to be wrong with you. That's elementary, see?

So, this applied to education gives us this other weird look – that this same set of data applies in the field of training. And what the student is *very* confused about and *unable* to move forward into and what the Instructor *can't seem to teach* this student is not then the right point of address for instruction. That must then immediately, just by that adjudication, that must be the wrong point of address. And the Instructor just pulls off of that and takes a better, longer look at this situation. See, that's elementary, see?

Let me give you an example – this becomes – this is terribly elementary, very, very simple stuff. You can very easily overlook it: one, very easily not credit that this has got this much jolt in it. I know an Instructor in a slight state of shock at some of the results that he's suddenly getting applying some of this material, you see, on a student. "And did you know...?" You know, that sort of thing – didn't realize it was that strong. A Theory Instructor is checking out a student on a bulletin and gets to paragraph three and decides the student

can't pass it. But the student has been having such a dreadful time that the Theory Instructor decides that this student had better have a little bit of instruction. He's not going to give him a pass on this but he just – quite ordinary – he's just tired of having him foul up on this particular point. The student there can't ever seem to get beyond this point, see? So he says, "Now-now-look, look-look-look-now. Can you get the idea that *bla-bla-bla-bla*," and he takes up, you see, the third paragraph. And the student gets all foggy, and the Instructor says, "Now, just a minute. Let's see, how can I put this a little simpler? How can I put it a little easier?" See, the Instructor actually is reaching in the right direction, but he's still staying on what the student is supposed to be confused about, that's the mistake he's making. "But how can I get this a little simpler? Now, how can I get it a little lower on the gradient?" Now this student can't get it and the Instructor can't teach him.

Now, the first thing you should know at once is that we're one or more steps beyond what the student was really confused about. Now, it goes this elementary; you then go back and find what word in the second paragraph – which obviously has been handsomely passed – the student didn't understand. And it may not be a Scientology word at all. It may be some common English word, just like that. And all of a sudden, why, the student says, "Oh."

You see, this is not prior in time just because it's the earlier paragraph in the bulletin, it just happens that bulletins happen to be written more or less on a gradient. That's why you get the apparenacy of the earlier moment then.

But they've actually gotten to this point then and they didn't grasp the lower point of the gradient, so the upper point of the gradient is just *bvuuurrrr!* And the moment they get into this upper point of the gradient it's, "God!" You know? And the walls are getting closer and there's little bright spots appearing in front of their eyes and they feel sort of headachy. It's physiological.

It's no wonder the French over there – of course in a harder time, during Napoleonic times we could have said, "Who cares how many Frenchmen get killed?" do you see – but today we shouldn't have that calloused attitude and we ought to do something about the French educational system because they drive more students to suicide than you could easily count. They're *specialists*, specialists at making students commit suicide. The American university leads in as a close second. They just disgrace the fellow and send him down to skid row, if he errs. If they've made the mistake of too fast a gradient, then they condemn the fellow. Crazy! You get how severe this is.

This gets into – here is another salient point, I should not just interject in here, but I should give you full blast, is: Study can produce a physiological reaction and it can produce some pleasant ones and it can produce some confoundedly unpleasant ones. You can have some of the wildest physical reactions just from the fact of study that you care to have anything to do with. And this isn't just studying Scientology, man, this is studying how to paint barns – and it's not for nothing some student will be sitting there at his drawing board or something like that and he'll be getting more and more – he'll be getting more and more and more and more spinny, and he feels sort of weird and he's making himself spots in front of the eyes. And he's making himself sick trying to study any further. And of course, if he's being pressured forward against time, for a final examination, he cannot sit back and go for a walk

in the park, he can't do anything like that. He's got to sit there and wrap the towel around his head, don't you see, and swill up the coffee and of course he's just keying himself in like mad, he's tearing himself to pieces, and so forth. It's no wonder.

Well, what is the trouble with him at that moment when all this happens? Well, the trouble with him is not what he is studying, it's what he has failed to study, just before. This is always his hang-up. When you get a physiological reaction you've got a skip on the gradient, that you can be absolutely certain of. You've skipped the gradient. You are all of a sudden going into something or other, and you are studying how to lay sticks of wood across a path in order to subdivide the thing and measure it up to be concreted or the number of grains of potassium bichromate that you're supposed to pour in if it is a British manufacturer as opposed to American manufacturer and you say, "*What's this?*"

Now, it isn't just a missing datum. Don't get that idea, see? It isn't a missing datum. It's something on the subject of the mixture of chemicals or – see, it can be an analogous – it can be an allied subject where a more fundamental datum is or exists on... See, the gradient was skipped on an allied subject, see – or it was just the paragraph ahead of this in the text. See, it's not always the paragraph ahead of this in the text.

Sometimes the fellow all these years has wondered, "How do you really measure something when it's of irregular shape?" you see? And, "*How-h-ow-ha-h-o-w?*" And then all of a sudden he's got this thrown in his teeth, you see? "Well you measure out this concrete walk and you so forth and so forth and now the calculus which is superannuated on this subject, is so on..." and he's trying to understand the calculus – he's trying to understand the calculus – and trying to understand the cal – .

There's nothing wrong with the calculus. He doesn't know how to measure a walk – and he's been keyed in by some sentence that went right along with what he thinks he's worried about. It's right there next door – only it's a blank.

And you know, the whole subject goes blank? The whole surrounding area goes blank. It's like you shoot the top off one skyscraper and the whole town disappears. I mean it's that peculiar a phenomenon, see? You say, "Well, how could that whole page disappear?" You know, or "How could that whole textbook disappear?" If a student is having very heavy going he will have words vanish off the page.

I just had an experience a very, very short time ago; I was trying to look up a word in the dictionary that was included on a page which I was having a hard time coming to grips with, and you know, the word had disappeared out of the column and I said, "Come off it now, it couldn't possibly be missing out of this column. It must be in this dictionary!" And – specialized dictionary, and so forth, and I just sort of gritted my teeth and concentrated me eyeballs on it and, by George, it was right there. And, you know, it hadn't been in the column a moment before? [laughter]

In this particular instance, I however, know what I don't quite understand, I know what I have skipped doing and I've got to go ahead and do something about it, because it's just getting more and more and more into my road. I do not know so that I can bark them off, the complementary absorbing colors by rote. I can't tell you every color combination which ab-

sorbs every component of white light, except one, you see? That sounds very complex, doesn't it? It is! But it's this kind of an action.

But going on and studying beyond this point, which I went ahead and did, because I just didn't sit down and figure out a color wheel and get it all down within an inch of its life – it's lost back there. See? I crowded on past it. Now, somewhere in the vicinity of that is a non-comprehend. I have got that bit of noncomprehend pretty well spotted but that isn't what I'm studying now and that isn't what I'm having trouble with. I'm actually running into a point where things are disappearing off a page, much less headaches. But just going beyond this, beyond this – well, there's something back in that area. It is very easy and so on, but nobody has made one of these wheels; there isn't an illustration of one which gives it by complementary colors in this textbook. And there are no wheels that give you primary colors in terms of what absorbs "not them" from white light, see? What absorbs "not them." No list of what doesn't absorb them, so that would sort of have to be compiled and I'd have to sit down and draw this whole thing, I'd have to memorize all of these points of the thing and then I know I would have it straight.

And about that time when I started to do this, something would fly up and hit me in the teeth like, "What the hell is cyan?" see? "What's this cyan? What shade is cyan? I always thought cyan was blue, obviously it is not blue. I have all my life been told by medical examiners that when you fed somebody cyanide they turn blue and..." See, here is a big bunch of confusion going on here and there is probably some foolish word like that kicking around in that area someplace, so I'll just have to go back and look over this area, because I know when it began, you see? That is I know the point that occurred before it began.

See, you can get clever enough to spot where are you at. And all you have to ask yourself or all you have to ask a student, "Where weren't you having trouble? Now where are you having trouble? Good. It's at the end of where you weren't having trouble." See, that's very simple, isn't it? So the formula is that you find out where the student wasn't having trouble with the subject and that meant that he had gone that far on the gradient successfully. And then find out where he began having trouble and you pick it up right at the tag end of where he wasn't having trouble and it lies in that immediate area. You can actually circumscribe it within a few words. I mean, you can do it that precisely. You can pinpoint. You'll have the half a paragraph that it's in or you'll have – sometimes you can get it down to the half a sentence that it is in and then you start plowing it out. But don't expect the student to be able to tell you exactly what it is that he is having trouble with, because that's why he is having trouble with it.

So, instruction would consist of guiding a student along a gradient of known data. It wouldn't be inventing new solutions to the student's confusions. You start inventing new solutions to a student's confusion, you're just going to get in more and more trouble. Why? Because you are already giving him – he has already got something he doesn't comprehend, now you're going to give him an incomprehensible that solves it.

Good instruction is a system of backtracking. A student will go forward – you can almost leave that on automaticity. He will go forward like a shot bear. *Zarroom!* He'll go into a subject. And all of a sudden you'll hear these – you'll hear this loud scream and the paws are

smoking, you see? Then you hear a thud you know? And then you feel the atmosphere around you shake. There's something happened.

Well, exactly what did happen? Well, he went right over the top of one point on the gradient, thought he understood it, didn't understand it, went into the next point of the gradient and ran into a brick wall. So the trouble with him is, it wasn't the next point on the gradient, the trouble with him was that last point on the gradient that he thought he understood, but didn't. So therefore, it becomes very difficult with a student sometimes to spot this, because he's so positive that he understood that last point. Yet the evidence that he didn't is sitting in front of your eyes: He's having trouble with the next point.

See, this fellow says, "Oh, I learned how to sit in a chair, I learned how to sit in a chair." You're teaching a Comm Course, see? "I learned how to sit in a chair. I know all about that. It's sitting in a chair and looking at somebody in front of me that is absolutely impossible! That's terrible! I can't do it anymore!"

You say, "Well, let's see." Here – here's... In the absence of this technology, one's reaction might have been, "Well, let's see, how can I fix up a drill here to get him to look at that student?" Now, you see how that would lay an egg and extend his training? See? "Now, how can I figure out something whereby he can confront this bird?" *Nah-nah-nah-nah-nah* – this is not – you are at the wrong point of the gradient, see?

Here's just a practical application. You say, "Well now, it's about sitting in a chair, see, that was – wasn't that the drill you had immediately before you had the drill of confronting the pc? Wasn't that the drill, huh, wasn't that the drill?"

"Well, there was a little thing that came in between there," he suddenly remembers.

"What was that?"

"Well, that was sit in the chair comfortably and of course that's impossible."

"Oh, oh, there was something else in this thing."

"Yeah, well, anybody can sit in a chair, actually you can force yourself to sit in a chair for hours."

"Well, how do you go about sitting in a chair?"

"Well, you sit in the chair and you bring your heels together, you understand? And if you bring your heels together hard enough and press them in, you can press the calves of your legs out against the outer sides of the chair and you can keep yourself awake and erect."

What the hell is all this?

See, knowing the principle of undercut on the gradient, you see, you would find that out. But if you didn't know the principle you would just keep knocking your brains out, trying to train this person how to confront another human being. And they haven't – they actually wouldn't have any trouble confronting somebody else except they are trying to confront two things at once. They are confronting keeping their heels together and they're... See, they haven't learned how to do that and now they're trying to confront something else at the same time. Their attention is split and they are starting to get very headachy. And then you find out

there's something wild about it they haven't understood, like: "Well, why do you audit in a chair?"

"Why? How should you audit?"

"Well, couldn't you audit lying in a bed? I get very tired auditing." You see?

All kinds of wild little things come up. You don't pay very much attention to what they've got to do. You don't try to solve those things. But these considerations have got to get into the fresh air. Now, all of a sudden we've got this fellow – he suddenly looks this over: "Oh, you mean you just sit in a chair? Oh, you – oh, wait a minute, that takes some doing! Oh! What do you mean, just sit in a chair? *Just* sit in a chair! No, you can't just sit in a chair! Impossible!"

"All right. Now, just tell me what's impossible about it." You don't even have to be an auditor to instruct, see? I mean you don't have to do a lot of clever auditing: "What's so impossible about it? What's impossible about it?"

"Keeping your back two-and-a-half inches from the back of the chair, and so forth, is impossible because you have to keep – well, actually, you have to keep measuring if it's two-and-a-half inches, don't you?" [laughter]

It's pretty hard to believe until it has happened to you, but the whole next paragraph after the sentence which contained the word one didn't understand, can just disappear right out of this world. It can do the wildest piece of disappearing anybody ever saw. It just vanishes. Almost a white piece of blank page and try to check the student out on this and you can check him out on the whole bulletin, but, by George, there's no paragraph there; no subject matter there of any kind whatsoever. You run that back, you'll find out there's something just prior to that collision they didn't understand. And if they didn't understand that with great violence then you must realize that it's just before that; and you start running some student back, I don't know quite where you're going to wind up. Well, I wouldn't try to wind up outside this lifetime, but I don't know quite where you would wind up. Become interesting what would go on.

Now, there's the primary mechanism of study. A study is a con... a study – I almost used a five-dollar word – I will use a five-dollar word – is a concatenation of certainties. It's a string of certainties. And these are a string of confidences and competences. There are many, many ways to promote these feelings of competence and confidence, and so forth, but the best way to do it is just a head-on thing of just making sure – not that the student walks slowly, but to make sure that the student walks certainly. Don't hold somebody back because you're not sure he's walking certainly.

The other point is, is *always* let a student get into trouble before you help him out. Don't ever help out a student before he's in trouble. This guy is doing his Comm Course drills right straight through to the bitter end, he does them like a little wound up doll, everything is beautiful and smooth and so forth, well, what are you trying to do – find something to train? I mean, what are you going to do, rack this guy over until you can find something – till you create something that can be wrong? Or why would you – why would you do anything with

it? See, I'm just making the point: Why would you do anything with this? Your participation is not invited there by any difficulty. You see, why worry?

And that is one of the reasons why study uniformly spread across a group is a mistake. See? Students run into trouble that the Instructor doesn't detect and other students aren't running into trouble and they just try to make a medium average of trouble for the whole course, the whole class, you see? Well, the way to do is to let a student run into all the brick walls he wants to run into and the only thing you've got to be alert for is *a student who has run into a brick wall*. Now, when he has run into the brick wall, recognize that he has hit a gradient, hit a stage or a point beyond where he didn't understand something; that elementary.

And the next must is: Don't ever take up with him what he doesn't understand. It's a waste of trouble – waste of time. He doesn't know what he doesn't understand. Always cut it back. "What were you studying immediately ahead of this?" Same formula I gave you before, "What moment there weren't you in trouble?"

"Oh, I wasn't in trouble over this and that, and so forth, that was all easy."

"All right, what moment did you get into trouble on it?"

"Oh well, it's – *oh-oh-oh* – terrible and terrible and terrible, *oh-oh-oh-oh-oh...*"

"All right."

Now, you've made a bracket there, haven't you, you've got parentheses; you've got the point of no trouble and you've got the point of trouble and now you must recognize that in the dead center, between, you will find the real trouble. Now, the clever Instructor, knowing this, could spot it right on out. Actually he doesn't have to be terribly clever, but it's a matter of "All right, you say you were doing fine with this bulletin right up to this," and we finally spot it.

I would even go so far, if I were having a lot of trouble, to slam the guy on the meter. Meters are made to be used. And I'd say, "Now, you're doing all right on this first paragraph, you're doing all right on the next paragraph and you say you ran into trouble here about paragraph five. Well, let me look at paragraph five; yeah, there is a typographical error there in paragraph five. That's perfectly correct, there is one. Now, let's see, you had number four – number four, you didn't have any trouble with number four, paragraph four here, which starts so-and-so and so-and-so; you say you didn't have any trouble with that?"

"No, no, I didn't have a bit of trouble with that."

"All right, now let's see, let's get down toward the end of paragraph four – paragraph four here; now, will you please listen to this sentence: 'So-and-so, so-and-so, so-and-so...' *clang!* What is the meaning of the word 'disability'?"

"Oh, well, Christ! Nobody could define 'disability'!" [laughter]

You got the idea? It isn't even that any big mental quirk sits behind it. No vast amount of case has to be taken into it. He just doesn't dig this word, man! Why he doesn't dig it, we don't even care, but he doesn't.

Now, what's very interesting is this is one of the first points of research, 1947, is the influence of a mislearned word on a life and that was the point of research. I'd picked up some of this from Commander Thompson on association of words and there are numerous other things about this, but I had jumped to an unreasonable assumption about this. As far as I was concerned it was relatively provable or unprovable, but it was relatively nowhere. They talked about association, they talked about this, they talked about that. Then I assumed, "Then it must be that a word will make somebody sick." Well, what could be wrong with a word?

So I started tracing backwards and getting people to redefine words and that sort of thing. I won't say I had any remarkable luck because there was no auditing technology that went along with it, but believe me people were sure interested. I wasn't using any method of testing at that particular moment that would have given me what the result was if it was.

I lost a lot of people I was working with. I know that's a direct result. That is to say, they walked out and went back to work, and so forth, and didn't turn up in my office anymore. But that still didn't demonstrate very much for that period, because it wasn't well followed up. I didn't have somebody on a telephone to call them all up and say, "Well, why didn't you come back the next week?" You know? But those that I did contact on the thing, "Oh, I feel fine now," or "You know, it's really something else that's worrying me these days, it's the fact that I haven't got a job in Mexico," or something, you know? Certainly what was worrying them ceased to worry them, that was about the only thing I established out of it.

Now, we find GPMs and the tremendous mass and significance mixed up with those and we must assume then, that all significances expressed as symbols – words, that is all significances expressed as words, which of course are a symbol of a significance – are locks on the GPMs. We know what's at the middle of this hurricane now. Now, we walk back and we take a look at this thing and we are going to find out that any word that you handle which is not in the GPMs is in actual fact to some degree a lock on the GPMs.

And if not on actual GPMs, certainly on implants. They got the best of all worlds covered. Very heavy locks, capable of producing a considerable amount of commotion in somebody's skull piece. Your skull bone could throb for quite a time. See? So when you get a – when you get yourself a – when you get yourself a good look at this, you recognize then that this is a symbological effort and one of the first reactions is simply become afraid of all words; then the next immediate action after that is to – well, to say, "To hell with it," and become very stupidly adventurous about it; then eventually fall back into something sensible, like don't stand around and chant a known end word at somebody's face for half an hour. Not that you will do much to them, they might be stuck elsewhere on the track, but you certainly louse yourself up. [laughs]

So, when we – when we examine this broad subject of teaching somebody something, we are examining the subject of relaying data to a person, which he can receive and understand in such a way that he will be able to use the data – the definition I gave you the other day just stated to fit in with this exact rationale that we are discussing now – and of course all of those are being done with words – words, motions, actions or examples. But there's some words mixed up in this.

So, when you get words on a bulletin, when you get words on an Instructor's comm line, when your words are going over to one of your students, well, don't be so sensitive about the Scientology vocabulary because, listen, you can make as much catastrophe in not naming a distinctly different part as you can in naming one too complexly.

I ran into an example of this in this parallel course of study: "Basic lighting" and "basic profile lighting" and I got toward the end of the book on portrait lighting with which I'd had terrible trouble. All the way through I was just running into trouble on this thing, trouble – trouble and somehow or another getting through and getting it crosswise and getting it straightened out, and so forth. And I found out the sin there was that they had called two distinctly different things with the same word, "basic." And I was called upon, I said, "Now wait a minute" I said to myself, "before I take this exam, I better review what I've got here. The – let's see, there's three types of lighting, and one of them is Rembrandt and one of them is butterfly and one of them is... I can't think of it! Now let's see, let's go over this again," and then I remembered that all the way through I had sort of dimly been... this is just different patterns, positions in which you put lights, not to hang you up on those things. Fancy names, aren't they? Rembrandt and butterfly: makes a butterfly because when the nose comes down it leaves a little shadow underneath the nose and you could imagine it to be a butterfly, see? [laughter] And when the photographic lighting makes a little shadow underneath the nose, why the pro calls it butterfly lighting. And Rembrandt is the face plane nearest the camera is less lighted than the face planes further from the camera but not line lighting – but this one is less lighted. It's very pretty – very pretty lighting, but those are – there are not very many – there are not very many ways you can put lights together. Here's these two; and what's the other one? What's the other one? I can't think of it, what's the other one, you know? Oh, well, I'll go back and study it over again, so I study it very, very carefully, study it all the way through, study it, study it, look it over, now I've got it all, I've gone back, good. "Now, there's three kinds of lighting there. Wait – Rembrandt and butterfly and... where did it go?" I look down into me head, have I got a 'ole in me skull these days? And finally I said, "There's something very funny going on here," because I didn't quite know anything like at that moment, because I was studying study, I didn't know the power that a messed-up definition could have, you know? And I went back and I looked and I finally found what it was.

It's – there's a whole school of lighting, a whole system of lighting, known as basic lighting. It's just elementary lighting. You've got two lights and you shine one on the front of the being and you shine the other one on the side. *That's all!* And the ways you do that and the way his head is turned or shoulders are turned, while you're doing that, gives you this whole school of lighting. There's nothing fancy about it. The other two are the fancy lightings, but this one, which you simply – almost says, "Turn light on the subject," I couldn't get and that was because under butterfly lighting there is a type of lighting, called "basic profile lighting," which everybody realizes is a butterfly lighting, but all professional photographers call "basic profile." So, under butterfly lighting we have a kind of lighting called basic profile, but over here, under this other, this whole class of lighting is called basic lighting. And because they hadn't sufficiently had a differentiation in their nomenclature, they didn't have enough terms in other words – louse up, total confusion, see?

Well, that was the Instructors' confusion that was the people who were teaching you's confusion, because you obviously were going to fall into that trap. They just dug a pit, put a stake at the bottom of it and covered it up with leaves, man.

And you've got one right now. Now, prepare for a little line charge. You've got an insufficiency of nomenclature. I know you'd never dream you had, but if you figure how many things there are in the mind that you – that you already have, you realize there's not much nomenclature for it. When you realize the few little things in the mind that the medicos had and the *vast* array of nomenclature; we've got a tremendous number of parts and things in the mind and not much nomenclature. And actually we don't have enough nomenclature and that would be the last sin in the world you'd think you would accuse Dianetics and Scientology of, but it's true. And you will agree with me in just about a split instant.

There is a thing called an ARC break assessment and there's a bypassed charge assessment and hardly one of you monkeys have ever been able to tell the two apart or do either one of them. And I've lately watched you falling and falling in more pits and walk into more bear traps on this one subject than you can shake a stick at. Because a bypassed charge assessment is not an assessment. It's an auditing by list and the name of it should be "Auditing by Bypassed Charge Lists" or "Auditing by List for Bypassed Charge." It's not an assessment.

Now, you've begun to believe, you see, that an assessment is something that doesn't have anything to do with auditing and that's true. An ARC break assessment has nothing to do with auditing. You simply sit there and you reel it off, with your pc usually gritting his teeth to powder. And you finally see your meter react and you indicate the bypassed charge and you don't answer and you don't acknowledge and you jolly well had better not. If you value his sanity or yours on R6 material, you just sit there, man, and you reel this thing off and you find the bypassed charge and you indicate it right now. It's usually done in the middle of an ARC break.

If you audit a person in an ARC break you will put him into a sad effect. So of course it can't be auditing! But unfortunately we have instantly, immediately afterwards, called a thing a bypassed charge assessment by which you take the same list but treat it differently and the person is not ARC broke when you have done it, so that is auditing.

And this has been a source of enormous confusion to one and all, apparently. Why? Because both terms have the word "assessment" in them. So it's an inadequacy of nomenclature. There's a missing word, you follow?

All right, so that's all the trouble you are having with regard to it. There isn't – the trouble isn't any worse than that, see? You can see that you could audit – auditing by list has to do with cleaning up each question, after all that's the Joburg and that's these things and you just read the question until it's clean. Read it and get it answered till it's clean and you go to the next one and you read it and answer until it's clean. Auditing by list. You can take the R6 list and you can do this with it.

So, we had the same list, which gave a confusion and we had the same word attached to a process which gave a confusion, and so forth. So it's very, very hard, oddly enough now, to get auditors to *do this*. Well, that's funny, that it gets hard to get auditors to do this. Therefore, it must have a subtractive or a detractive action in excess of merely being misdefined.

They couldn't do it; Auditing Supervisors were walking around in circles, "Now, look! Please do an ARC break assessment on this pc, because he is blowing," and so forth. Come back, here is the fellow busy auditing by list, you know, doing a bypassed charge assessment, you know, cleaning up everything, listening to the pc, you know and so forth, all this sort of thing, you know? "No, no, no!" You know? "Read the thing down the list and when you find the charge, and so forth, why, indicate it to the pc and that's all there is to this."

"Oh-oh, I see."

So, in other words, a term can be confused by being used for two different distinct purposes. You could enter confusion then with not enough nomenclature. As a matter of fact it's probably, in the field of the mind, has been a more serious sin than too much nomenclature.

Because the things were named in identification with one another. Do you follow me now? You've got this type of response? So of course, that will very shortly, as soon as I get around to pushing out a bulletin, that will very shortly become, of course: ARC break assessment is done so-and-so and so-and-so and not auditing; and then there's Auditing by List for Bypassed Charge and that becomes a completely different action. Now, you'll find out that's teachable.

So, we've covered now two things here and these two things are: If you take a person up the gradient too steeply he will get lost at some step always because he is confused about the prior step and he will blame the step he is lost in, while being stuck, in actual fact, in the step he really didn't get out of – , and that's what makes it a masked area and which makes it upset; and that the responsibility for the subjective reaction of the student in a very large measure lies with the Instructor. Boy, that is a new departure, see? The student's attitude, and so forth, is really today with Scientology and what I am teaching you here, right in the hands of the Instructor.

If you want to, you can almost produce the mental reaction you want to at will. You could blow a student off a course. It would work both ways – I'm not saying you'd do this, but this fellow is on course and you blow him off the course. You just with malice aforethought say, "Well, all right, we're going to blow him off the course."

One of the ways to do it is say, "All right, now this is two people sitting in the chair there; they are actually both preclears and they are actually both at the same time auditors and there is no particular difference between the word 'auditor' and the word 'pc,' and so forth, and they really don't mean anything different at all. All right, very good. You got that straight now? Good." You won't have him there in about 24 hours, if he's green grass off the street. See what I mean? You could overtly produce that reaction.

All right, now some guy is blowing and just as he leaves and you say, "What word was it that I didn't get there?" You will find out he'll stop moving, because you've already got part of the charge, see, just by indicating it's wrong with the words. All right, he'll stop exiting, in other words. "Now let's trace it back. At what moment did you get confused?"

"Well, it was in the last half-hour."

"Good, what happened in the first half-hour?" see?

"Oh, well, it was that word."

"Very good. All right, thank you very much."

"Oh, is that what that means?"

"Yes."

In other words, there's handling of the guy stays or the guy goes. There's the Instructor creating that effect or result with just the method of teaching he is using. Pretty sneaky, huh? You can get further along this line – there's more to learn on this particular subject but that is – but those things stand out like a beacon. The earlier gradient – the earlier part of the gradient – is the one he's fallen down on.

Now, we get to the other section of it is – it is really always a word or phrase. Now, of course a word or phrase can be inadequate. I've got one going right now. I – nobody has bothered to tell me why they use a yellow filter in a certain combination and in all the illustrations here sits this yellow filter. What is it doing there? What does it have to do with something? I don't know. I haven't been told. I've not been demanded – it's not been demanded of me: Why is a yellow filter there? But yet, that is serving as just a little bit break there. I know there is something about this I don't know.

So, you see the sentence could be inexplicit or it could omit the data or accidentally deprive somebody of the information. A typographical error will do this. The word "cat" is missing in the sentence: "The dog chased a." All right, now we say to the student, "Now, all right, let's tell us what that action is." Well, he's confused. Well, you certainly don't have to go very far afield to find out what he's confused about.

So, the fault actually could be with the text, as well as with the student, if the text is not explicit by reason of typographical error or by some other reason, and so forth, the information is not relayed to him in an explicit form, so then he gets confused. So, it isn't always his fault that he is confused, don't you see?

You can sometimes take a hold of the text he's been studying and just take one glance at it and all of a sudden see that two paragraphs have been omitted out of it. They are the paragraphs that define somebody. You see, somebody made a mimeograph copy and didn't copy two paragraphs, you know? This corny. You see that all words in an auditing session are defined, except "auditor" and "pc." This is liable to bring about a certain amount of confusion.

So, the upshot of the thing is that your confusion is not necessarily the fault of the text, it's not necessarily the fault of the student. We're not trying to fix blame in this particular line. We're just showing you that there was something not understood. It might also have been the fault of his first grade teacher, see? She never told him what some little word like "reciprocity" meant, or something like this. And we've got – we've got ourselves, then, a good look at this. It's treated on the basis of "these are the factors which you must observe as an Instructor." Now, you can put those things together. You can see why he didn't attain the gradient or you can ask him why he didn't. You can locate the point where he didn't move from one point of the gradient to the next point, you can isolate why he did this.

We can see that nomenclature and other things could be responsible for this. Lack of definition could be responsible for this. We can see lack can be responsible for it as well as an

existing thing can be responsible for it. And we see also that the individual would not have really a clue about what he was confused about or he wouldn't be confused and we see that the Instructor who is doing the best job of instruction is actually never trying to solve the problem of what the student is confused about. We see the good Instructor would never do that. Why? He's already one gradient late, so he just gets more confused than the student, because he can't understand why the student can't understand, see?

It says, "Cats are sometimes white."

"Yes, but I don't know why they are white, and so forth. Actually didn't – didn't Ben Franklin say something like that? I'm not sure whether Ben – I – uh – where – what is this – where-where-su-sa-su-dah..."

"Well you see, cats – well, did you ever see a cat? Did you ever have a cat? Uh-uh-uh-do-do-do you – do you know anything about cats?"

"Uh – let's-uh – let's go get a dictionary and look up a picture of cats." It's all a waste of time because it happens to be in the earlier paragraph where it said "feline." See, he doesn't know what that is, see? He didn't know that applied to cats, but he hung up on this earlier one.

So the apparenacy of his confusion is almost never the confusion he is actually in. An Instructor knowing this won't have any real difficulty answering the foolish questions he is asked, and so forth, because he just never bothers with them.

He wants to know what's going over the top. But somebody asks the Instructor the definition of something: "Yes, yes," he says, "a *caterwump* is a – *ba* – and that's all."

Okay?

Audience: Okay.

Good enough, thank you.

STUDY: EVALUATION OF INFORMATION

A lecture given on 11 August 1964

I'm sorry to keep you waiting today. We were testing out the walkie-talkies we will not use on London Airport. Imagine, using walkie-talkies on London Airport, you know, with the radio control tower. We have a rig up so that we can handle photographic flash lamps at a distance with a little walkie-talkie – very tricky. And we're getting very cunning. And the – I can just hear it now though: "Impact pictures coming in for a landing on the north runway. What is our aperture, please?" [laughter, laughs] Very funny.

The difference between professional and amateur photography is a chasm wide and you have to go at it in particular wild ways on the professional front. It requires permission of nobody less than the Ministry of Aviation and that sort of thing, in order to move, practically, in the vicinity of aircraft in England, and so on. Have to produce credentials, you know, like a deck of cards and all that sort of thing, so forth. The ministry has granted us permission to go up and shoot the incoming landing of a hypothetical student, you see, so that all of your views of the airport and what you saw of England, and so forth, that's what I'm going up and shoot, in two or three weeks, just for fun. So those snapshots you took that didn't come out, I can give you some copies. [laughter] That's snide, you know? I'm showing you the proper Scientology attitude toward a learning or beginning Scientologist, you see?

All right, what's the date?

Audience: August 11th.

August the 11th, AD 14, Saint Hill Special Briefing Course.

Okay. And we're going to resume our lectures on the subject of study and the more I talk about study the better your grades get, and so this is very fine. This is one of the most successful lines of lectures I think I've ever engaged upon – most productive of cata... cataclysmic and colossal results – really fabulous. So that I have not sweat through – "You take the sodium bichloride and you put it into the bichromate and you get bisulfite, because it precipitates negatives," you know, and so on...

I remind you that about late spring I decided to study study and find out what study was all about and so on and go on along this particular line – and – now, talking about study, your grades keep going up the more I talk about study. Well, that's very interesting, because I'm not restimulating you; study doesn't happen to be an end word. There is an end word, however, called *knowledge* and this will bang your head off occasionally. But it is not directly

connected with words and so forth, and isn't the basic reason why people have any difficulty at all with study.

All right. There is no particular reason then that knowledge should get in your road because the *casus belli* (as the hootch dancer said) is a very, very deep-seated thing called "words." Now, you may even think there is an end word called "words," or something of the sort. But of course, all GPMs are composed of words. They're actually not composed of English words; they're composed of significances which are connected to masses. These masses are very capable of pushing somebody's head off. And where you have precise significances – and it's quite interesting how precise these significances are – where you have very precise significances, you don't get too much upset. In other words, don't look at it the other way to; don't look at it on the basis that if you avoid end words a hundred percent you will make it, see? That's actually the incorrect look; it's the locks which do you in. The offbeats, do you see?

Now, you really shouldn't be terribly concerned of – about this as a Scientologist. The electrician gets used to handling 10,000 volts, the circus performer thinks that it's quite nothing to pat lions on the nose – I call to your attention that the public at large look at an electrician handling some voltage lines, or something like that, and they're horrified, see? And you look at a lion trainer in a cage – they hate to be called lion tamers because those lions are never tame; a tame lion is the last thing you want around, you see? So they want good, savage lions. Patting those on the nose and so forth, the public looks and they say 'Aaghhh!' But as a matter of fact, they would feel rather uncomfortable if they didn't have some big cats around to snap whips at, you know? I mean the lion trainer would. This is the life he lives. And the public at large, not being initiated into this, of course, is horrified and properly stunned by the lion trainer's association with the big cats in the cage.

Clyde Beatty, for instance, used to fight forty lions and tigers simultaneously, mixed. And I should imagine that he lay off of that for a few days, why he would have felt very, very poor, you know, he would have felt bored and life would have seemed uninteresting to him.

Now, there are many other professions and many other activities, and so forth. You wonder how in the name of God a dentist can stand there pulling teeth day after day after day. Fantastic, but he can. You wonder how a surgeon can stand there cutting out guts and throwing the offal in the garbage can hour after hour, you see? Year after year. How come? What are all these things? Well, these things are what is known as professional familiarities. And if you get familiar enough with a particular subject, it may look terribly dangerous and upsetting to somebody else, but is not really dangerous or upsetting to you. This is quite remarkable. In any particular field or activity one is apt to become quite superhuman.

That is what's being demanded of you in Scientology. I'm not talking about whether you get better or whether you become Clear or OT or anything else; I'm just talking on a very down-to-earth, rock-bottom sort of an approach. GPM words are the lions, the high voltage, the various other professional danger points with which you live in Scientology: the words, the words of the GPMs and that sort of thing.

Now, you take these words and you go out and throw them in the teeth of the public out here, see? You can actually watch somebody turn green if you stood and chanted at him a

root connection of some kind or another, just wove it into your conversation four or five places, and so forth, kept telling him that he is – he just wants to be wrong, you see? He wants to wrong things, and so forth. Just keep going at it, you know, you – "Wrong this and wrong that" and keep pounding it into him and all of a sudden he'll start "*Yeah-ah-ah.*" Well, he goes – walks out someplace and falls on his head – true! And he's liable to get quite ill and that sort of thing.

All right, well, he's just not used to lions, do you see? He couldn't even trace it back to why he feels so ill; he knows nothing about this. Well, this is a rather happy area to be a professional in; because life is – consists of livingness, and livingness has a lot to do with the mind. In fact there wouldn't even be anything here to live in, or any living to do, unless a mind was around, you see?

So the business – the business of being in the business of the mind, and so forth, has liabilities. But it has, of course, a great many things that are very good. And when you start fooling around with GPMs, you know very well you can knock your head off – you know very well that this is not something to lightly fool with. You know very well what they can do to somebody. You see somebody around on crutches gimping around, he's got arthritis – arthritis exclamation point, you see, and so on. What's the matter with him? Well, he's just all wound up in a GPM someplace; that's really all that is wrong with him. If even – even if it's an engram, why, it's held in place with a GPM. That's the way he lives, that's what's going on with...

All right, why is this couple having an awful hard time maritally? Well, they've just got a couple of end words crossed up one way or the other; one is riding one hobby horse and one is riding the other one, you know, and that sort of thing. Well, if you tried to explain it to them that it was an end word that was doing this sort of thing – you could probably slip it off of them on a meter, if you didn't try to explain it to them. This – well, just let's take a couple of hypothetical end words: let's say that he was "conservative," you see, and she had an end word "wild." Now, these two end words won't mix and they are both in high-blown howl, you see, on this subject. So he's being conservative and she's being wild.

All right, never the twain shall meet. So the upshot is that they're going to lead a very unhappy life. Now, you could probably, without their ever finding anything out about it really, pick up that it was "conservative" on the meter; probably get his considerations about being conservative, have this end word blow. You could take ahold of her, you could probably pick up "wild" on the meter, particularly if you had the total prearranged list of end words, you could probably key it out, get her considerations on this, and so forth. They'd walk out of there perfectly happy with each other and a miracle would have been performed. They would never be able to trace it even back to a word. Their ability to recognize what has happened to them – even that is far below their familiarity level. They have no familiarity with this thing, you see?

You've heard people go around and say: "Well, it doesn't matter, sticks and stones may break my bones, but words can never..." Oh yeah? [laughter]

Now, the liability – the professional liability of the Scientologist – is the fact that he's dealing with significances and he's dealing with masses; and you connect the right or slightly

wrong mass with the right or slightly wrong significance and you get this mismatched one way or the other and you get catastrophe, and that's the way life – she is lived.

And you want to know about "What is human behavior? What are the basics – elements of existence? What makes matter stay here?" The con... physicist out there, he is busy studying conservation of matter – or conservation of energy rather – he's busy studying conservation of energy – conservation of energy. He is just going on with this, on with this, on with this. Oh, he's just riding an end word, man. And he's riding himself into the ground. Sooner or later – why he's going to strike "to kill all energy" or something of this sort and – as his interpretation of a GPM and build an atom bomb – something like this. He's got to do something, you see, in this particular line. He gets – he becomes obsessed along the line.

There are GPMs that have to do with pictures. I am very well aware of the fact that there's a whole series of GPMs that I haven't run, that have to do with pictures. And since I became aware of this, they don't have anything to do with me skull. You know, they don't knock my head off at all. Once in a while I find myself studying something and they have said "pictures" about five or six times too many in the paragraph and I find I have a tiny headache begin to grow on me, and I say "Oh." Look at the paragraph: "Oh!" you know, gone. The – this – this situation, then, that could have wrecked empires – one end word crosswise, you see, could have wrecked an empire – to you becomes a minor discomfort. You find you have a bellyache and you – something like this – and you've been processing somebody or doing something – you find that you have a bit of a stomachache and you wonder what – "What's the stomachache?" you know? Afterwards you notice you got a stomachache. You suddenly realize you've been invalidating an end word. That's the quickest way in the world to get yourself a stomachache.

You think, "Maybe there is an end word 'women'?" Well now, if you invalidate that you're probably all right because there isn't one; GPMs predate the idea of men and women, but there is one "bodies." And supposing you've got one "bodies," don't you see? And you invalidate the idea of bodies, well, you're going to have yourself a nice stomachache. You say there is no end word "bodies," when there is an end word "bodies," and of course, about that time – it sometimes takes minutes or even a half an hour or two, for this to begin to sneak up on you. "What was going on, what was going on?" you say to yourself. "Well, let's see, about a half an hour ago I was studying about bodies, I said they didn't exist. *Tuh-huh!* Well, I now know there is one end word anyway called 'bodies!'" Total reaction.

Somebody else's reaction: "Oh my God! Call Doctor Cutwin! Ohhh! I've got to have an operation on me esophagus or me stomach, or something of the sort. I've got to have something drastic done to me, because look how drastic – in what drastic condition I am in!" Don't you see? And an incomprehensibility way down below any level of knowingness on this thing, they become the total effect of these things.

For instance, we just upset numerous Scientologists down in Australia because we had to fight back against the Laborite Party. The Laborite Party was the one who proposed the bill to outlaw Scientology in the state of Victoria. So I decided that they had lived too long and they don't come to the inquiry very much anymore. They as a matter of fact found out that Scientologists could cause them to come within an ace of losing all the seats they had. I wrote

out a little pamphlet and I've carefully put in it the exact proper end words. [laughter] This was circulated – this was circulated – they came within an ace of losing their lives in this election and that was it. But of course, some Scientologists down there who were afraid to shoot at somebody and who weren't in the know, and so forth, continued to write me on my Standing Order Number 1 line: "That was a terrible thing to do." They didn't know anything about the end word, that was – see, they are not trained up to this – not oriented in this area yet, "That was a terrible thing to do, because you really shouldn't put entheta, you see, on a theta line, like a nice Scientology magazine." And it's all – and they're sort of protesting, you know, that this pamphlet that came out and was generally issued in Australia against the Laborite Party – was issued at all.

They don't realize what they're protesting against. Some of those end words hit *them*; they aren't trained, they aren't in the know, and so, of course, it made them feel kind of queasy and they want to know who wrote it. Well, I haven't told them yet, I wrote it. But it produced the exact effect that it was supposed to produce, which, "to drive those dogs back in their kennels," and it did exactly that. They are much less enthusiastic these days. As a matter of fact, they are becoming sorrier and sorrier that they ever started this inquiry and that is the proper effect to produce on somebody who is attacking you is just make them very, very sorry that they attack you. That's the proper way to handle it in this universe, see?

United States government is getting into that frame of mind now on the E-Meter case, see? They are beginning to sit around and wonder why in the name of God they ever lost their wits to such a degree as to start this thing in the first place, because they can't prepare a case, because none of their facts are correct and their charges are all wrong and they're silly, but if they let this case go to court, they let themselves in for a recovery of damages that may run into the millions. They're now in trouble. Well, how do you make people in trouble? Well, you just make them sorry they done it, that's all.

Now, the psychiatrist and psychologist and so forth, are very busy in the world today on the field of motivational research, what they call motivational research; very interesting subject. I recommend to every Scientologist and particularly people who are engaged in promotion activities, something – in organizations, to read a book called *Hidden Persuaders*. Now, that is a very interesting book. Although it tries to make mock of the idea of "hidden persuaders," and so forth, down in between the lines it gives you a very thorough dissertation on the techniques now being used by modern advertising agencies and other people engaged in reaching the public. And they hire these days psychiatrists and so forth, to do motivational research and find out a bunch of goofy facts. Well, most of their facts are goofy because they don't know why people are. They don't know what make people tick and that sort of thing.

But if a Scientologist reads that, particularly a Saint Hiller and particularly somebody who is moving around in the vicinity of Class VI, see, he reads that – now just reinterpret that whole thing. They've laid a foundation, they've got a beautiful piece of music, they've got no words to the music, don't you see? They've got a marvelous idea that maybe they can influence and affect people one way or the other but they don't know what words to put to the tune. They're still groping around in their Freudian analysis and trying to motivate soap by getting a libido complex going on the age of three, see? They're trying to restimulate something one way or the other in order to sell their soap. And they haven't got the buttons, let me

put it this way, you see. They're playing a piano without any keys. They're still making noise on it. I don't know how they're managing it but one way or the other they're making noise on it.

Now actually, that is one of the highest paid activities in the world today – is the world of advertising and merchandising. That is the high – one of the highest paid activities in the world today. They are pouring out a terrific avalanche of money into the pockets of psychiatrists and so forth these days in order to find out what makes people tick. Of course, they're not on basic – really basic research. They're still flying around in kindergarten stuff, don't you see? But here these fellows are, trying to reach the public, trying to sell products and so forth and they have turned to the psychiatrist and psychologist in order to give them the answers. Well, they turned the wrong way and like any other boot soldier in an awkward squad, why, they'll probably get booted for it. They lose money on this every once in a while and they make mistakes.

But you start adding that up – if you really know the mind – and you wonder then that anybody would ever have any difficulty with dissemination.

Now, this material, of course, is a debased – I mean, this type of use is a debased use of this information. It would debase your knowledge of the field of the mind just to use it to sell somebody some preserved piglets or something, see? This is silly, see? This is something like using a Mercedes car to crack walnuts. This situation, then, is not – not recommended to you as an activity.

I'm simply pointing out some minor activity that's going on in the world today that is absorbing a great deal of money from the manufacturers – that has a bang – tremendous bang from each magazine. You turn on the TV set, you are looking at motivational research. You turn – open a magazine, you're looking at motivational research. You open up a newspaper and read its ads, you're looking at motivational research. You can look at an election, you realize those candidates in that election are running by motivational research. As a matter of fact, Eisenhower won the campaign in the United States when he was elected president because of the work of an advertising agency in the field of motivational research and they found that the country was starved for a father image, so they set him up for a father image and of course he got elected. Actually he was a pretty good father image, if fathers do nothing but read Western stories. But they set this boy up in that fashion.

Now, that's the way the world is moving. Now, if you want to know – if you want to know how to live calmly in the midst of a tremendous confusion all you really have to know is the answers – the basic answers; and if you know the basic answers, these things ninety percent of the time don't worry you and the other ten percent of the time you can do something about them. Do you follow me?

Knowledge is something that is achieved – end word or no end word – it is something achieved through study.

Now, the whole subject of words booby-traps a person's effort to find out what's going on, to find out what the world consists of. Words – it's a boobytrapped line: significance. What is this? How do you find out about anything? Well, you're going to find out something about something these days with words. Information is going to be relayed with words; you're

going to find out about things with words and those words are booby-trapped. They match up the GPMs – the woof and warp of the mind. They've got the mind pushbuttoned.

Now, the mind is terrifically push-buttoned so that if you are reading: "The cat was black," and feel queer or feel repelled by this statement, "The cat is black," if you don't know what you're doing, you simply are repelled by the subject of studying "cats," or of studying or acquiring knowledge about "cats," or anything of that sort of thing, see? In other words, you've got a barriered line, because you read the statement, "The cat is black," you feel odd, therefore you say, "I mustn't study about cats," see? Actually, it has nothing to do with cats; it's the word "black" happens to be an end word.

You nearly always find yourself assigning to the wrong part of a sentence or the wrong part of the study material the reason why you can't study it, because the other is something one isn't confronting and one doesn't feel he can confront, so therefore he disperses and confronts something else.

Now, that is the basic principle you should know about knowledge and study: One, that even if you are simply looking at a tree to find out something about the tree, you are studying a tree. I don't care how briefly this is done, study isn't something being used here in connection with being very, very thoughtful and thorough, and so forth. You look over this tree to see what kind of a tree it is. Well, in that brief instance you've studied the tree, don't you see? In other words, you observed it to find something else out about it.

Now, you can pick up observation from the printed page; that's a secondhand observation but it nevertheless is the route on which almost all knowledge travels, since if you, individually, were called upon to re-evolve all the knowledge there was from the beginning of the world until now, all by your little ol' lonesome, you'd wind up stupid in this lifetime. I don't mean to be harsh, that's true. If you were called upon personally and individually to evolve all knowledge there was about anything, in one lifetime, you would get so little way upon that route – you understand, that's without having any other person relay anything to you, without having at your fingertips any works, texts, any reference books of any kind. That you were just going to have to do it all on your little ol' lonesome by thinking it up and evolving it, and so forth, and you were going to evolve all the knowledge and you weren't going to have any receipt of information from any other secondhand observation. In other words, you want to learn about volcanoes, well, you have to go and find a volcano. You would get so little done on this project that you would die stupid, I can assure you of that. Or you would be a ruddy fool and believe that you knew everything there was to know about the one room that you had been in that whole lifetime. Do you follow me?

So there is a value to secondhand knowledge. Now, firsthand knowledge, of course, is acquired by direct observation and experience. But even to achieve direct observation and experience, it is really much better to have the fruits of other observations and experience with which to profit and only in that way can you maintain and carry forward a culture of any magnitude.

Illiterate cultures do not survive and they are not very high. The natives of the tribe of the *Bugga-Bugga Booga-Boogas* down in *Lower Bugga-Wugga Booga-Woog* are mostly no longer with us or they are around waving red flags today and revolting against their central

government. They're having a bad time. Well, the British Tommy that went down there with his Snider or his Lee-Enfield and brought them higher education in the first place – was only occasionally followed by anybody who taught them anything. And they didn't learn fast. Their literacy was not up to absorbing culture rapidly. So, of course, they can be victimized by anybody who comes along.

Once the line is open, if literacy doesn't follow and if secondhand observation is not available to a people, they stultify, they die, they go to pieces, they degrade. They are struck by this tremendous volume of exterior culture. They've been very happily down amongst the *bong-bong* trees, you know, dancing up and down amongst the *bong-bong* trees and the highest level of their interest, and so forth, was their own back yard. They could tell you all about *bong-bong* trees and they could tell you all about you mustn't step in *bug-bug* bushes, because you step on a thump-thump snake and this was their direct observation.

The second they're hit with things – particularly the abstract ideas of organization – the abstract ideas of political philosophy – the abstract ideas of, really, engineering – things of this material nature where knowledge is moving in close to the MEST, you see, where the significance is immediately, directly applicable to the manipulation of matter – when they move in on that, of course, their culture fails. They are not able to turn out Lee-Enfield rifles. They are not able to organize themselves into a proper democratic civilization, no matter how many lend-lease payments are thrust into the paws of their greedy politicians. They can be victimized, they can be turned into slaves and they can be degraded.

What's happened? Well, they've been overwhelmed and presented with this tremendous cultural image. Here's this great, shiny civilization, you see? It's full of Cadillac cars and jet planes and electric razors and all kinds of wild things; and they look at this material animated world; they see people have conquered their environment to the point where they can live at leisure and where they can do various things and where some girl can – with a few push buttons can control 125 horses as the most usual thing that she ever did in her life. You understand? In other words, she can drive a car.

All right, all of these miracles all of a sudden hit these illiterate fellows, see, all these things! They don't know the words, see? They see the tune, but they can't sing it. And they go into just overwhelm – boom! They just cave right in, see? They just back right up.

Somebody who is fully trained in Moscow has also been trained: "Your brethren at home are pretty uneducated and if you push this button and that button and that button, they will respond and all of a sudden bring down the house and then we will be able to seize the whole place and get all the jute we need."

I mean, the ethical and spiritual nature of communism is very interesting, you know? They're out of jute, so they put their political mechanisms into – run to get them some jute. Their interest in South Africa is simply and entirely the fact that they need diamonds and they want gold. I mean it's very spiritual. They love mankind for what they can get out of him and the way they play their violin is just about as cold-blooded as anybody ever did, see? But it's mainly based on the fact that people don't know the words.

And you look at a communist array of vocabulary, you look at a communist vocabulary, it's very interesting vocabulary, it's very tricky. Their technology – their political tech-

nology – is worked out to one of the finest hair splits you ever heard of. Boy, they know how to talk to this one, they know how to talk to that one and they know how to argue with somebody else and they know how to put together this and they know the parliamentary control of a small meeting. And they're taught to do this and they're taught to do that and they know how to shuffle the motion down to the bottom of the pile so it never gets heard and only the motion which they want heard is heard. They're just taught this very carefully, you see? Technology – technology – they're all taught this with words. They weren't in on the 1917 Revolution. They got the whole technology right straight on up the line by being taught it, by it being relayed to them with words, much as I'm relaying to you information and ideas with words. But it's all secondhand, it's all hearsay and for those boys it really works. They are taking the world.

I see people standing around with their hands in their pockets in these Western governments, and so forth, not knowing what is going on, and it's something like a big, strong bull being chewed to pieces by a pack of small dogs. And this bull – he knows that a small dog can't do anything to him and so he's tried to ignore him – he tries to go on – he tries to do this. The next thing you know, he's going to be down with his throat cut. Well, he doesn't understand what they're up to and he's above knowing. Something like this, you see? All kinds of attitudes mix into this. He's deficient in knowledge of communist technology, so therefore he is being defeated by communist technology. It's very, very interesting that this technology is relayed by word of mouth. It's taught. It's not by direct observation, but it's material that can be put into direct observation by the communist – trained communist here and there.

The world today is being overwhelmed on the basis of illiteracy; the illiterate people of the world are being overwhelmed. It's always this, see? It's the fellow who doesn't know, it's those who do not understand, it's those who haven't got it taped who get knocked into the wastebasket. The death of a civilization is based upon its accumulated not-understandings – not-knowings – its ignorings – its failure to grasp the situation. It can also drift back into too many yesterday's clichés like: "Well, the barbarians always come down on the northern frontier and go home at harvest time," you know? And one time they didn't go home at harvest time and that was the end of Rome, see?

Rome at that time was illiterate on the subject of illiteracy: the barbarian. They didn't realize that their people had become very effete. Part of their information was missing: that a people who wishes to be free must not just know about the latest wine. They've got to know pretty well across the boards about most everything in sight. They've got to keep on the ball, they've got to keep on the qui vive, they've got to be right up there and alert.

The day that marks your death is the day that you sit back and decide you know everything there is to know about everything there is around you, so there is no reason for you to observe anything anymore.

Now, between the two points then of "no observation necessary because I know everything," you see, and "no observation possible because I don't know any of the words," there is a mean which makes life livable. You get what these two extremes are now? One is: "I know there is everything to know. I know everything there is to know – I needn't observe anything. I needn't really experience or do or look at anything because I know all there is to know." Now, that would be the end product of a dying civilization or a dying individual. And on the

other extreme we have the: "Don't know any of the words, don't know anything, don't understand anything that's happening in my vicinity," and so forth, and that's a very fast route to death, demise and decay, see?

So the thing to do is to know the words and to stay alert. That's the motto one reads out of this thing. And you'll find out there's always some new technology being boiled up someplace. Well, be curious enough to find out about it, see? Stay alert. Never become complacent about what you know and you'll go right on surviving very nicely.

Now, this is particularly true of somebody who gets up to a point of eminence or prominence, somebody who moves up to a point where he is superior to the ordinary or more average individual in his vicinity – he tends to become very complacent. A fellow is living in the vicinity of the natives of Uggabugga and he can read and they can't. Well, he feels very superior, so he really doesn't even bother to read. Do you see? Now, if Scientology faces any danger, it is that danger of stultifying because they no longer believe they have to observe, no longer have to apply, no longer have to get on the ball.

Now, you want to know what's the difference between the successful individual and the unsuccessful individual: It is just that one can understand and do and the other one doesn't understand or doesn't... There are two ways of not understanding, as I've just told you. One is to suppose you know all about it so you don't have to observe; that's one method of not understanding. And the other is just not know the words, you see? Those two extremes are there. So, the individual doesn't understand and he goes off into a – in other words, he doesn't understand, so he quits trying – or he understands all there is, he thinks, and so doesn't bother to observe. Now, those two actions there amalgamate into a fellow who – either one of them – who is going to fail. This individual is going to go by the boards.

Now, who won't go by the boards, then? Well, it's somebody who can observe and understand and do – a person who can observe and understand and do.

Now, in view of the fact that the greatest body of observation is actually secondhand observation, realize that that is perfectly valid observation, when coupled with understanding – but that is particularly and peculiarly liable to having to be understood. Now, the less direct the observation then, the greater the understanding has to be. In other words, your understanding has to increase to the degree that you're not directly observing. Understanding has to increase in the degree that the observation is indirect. If your observation of a tree is indirect, you'd better jolly well understand about that tree, pretty confounded well. As a matter of fact, much better, oddly enough, than if you were standing there looking at it.

Now, understanding then is a substitute for mass and you have the answer to understanding in ARC. Understanding adds up to ARC. In study, understanding is a substitute for mass. Now, let's go over that again: If you haven't got a tree to observe and you are being told about a tree, then you'd better jolly well understand what you're being told, otherwise you're going to misobserve the tree. Now, if you don't understand what you are being told about the tree or you don't understand how the information is being relayed to you about the tree, you will wind up not understanding a tree and have been denied that mass, because the information received on a via. Do you follow this?

This is very complex material I'm giving you here, but is quite useful. If you can't – if you haven't got a tree to look at, then you jolly well – if you are trying to study about trees on a second relay, then you damn well better understand that second relay.

Now, there are two things to understand about what you're being told or what you are reading or what your secondhand observation is. See, secondhand observation can be after the fact because of time, too, you understand that? You say: "There must have been a tree here, because here is a stump," you know? "And there's going to be a tree here, because here is a sprout." Do you see that? That your understanding also can go forward and backward in time and it can be direct or indirect in terms of view. So understanding can be direct or indirect in terms of view. You can be there looking at the tree or somebody can be telling you about the tree. So there's two – there's actually several different understandings all in a packet.

Now, that's not to our purpose, right now, to examine how many types and brands of understanding there are, but I'm just warning you on this fact with regard to study and this is the only point I'm really trying to make to you. The other is just window dressing and cake frosting. It's interesting, the whole subject is very interesting, but it's this: If you are not observing something directly, if you are *reading* about trees – you got that? – you're not observing it directly, then your understanding has to be superior to the understanding which would be required in a direct observation. You've got to be more – you've got to understand it better, otherwise you're going to lose yourself a tree.

Now, this is quite interesting, because the difficulties of secondhand information are innumerable. You've got four men trying to describe an elephant, four blindfolded men that have felt all over an elephant and they're trying to describe this elephant or whatever that old saw was, don't you see? And the wise men that give you all the dope of what an elephant is all about, you know? And they didn't observe the elephant because they were blindfolded and they gave the most wild dissertations on what this elephant was. So now, let's realize that part of our understanding when we are engaged in secondhand observation – which is to say study on a via or something – we are engaged upon this – then our understanding must include an evaluation of the reliability of the information we are being given. You follow that? Our understanding must include the understanding of whether this is good dope or bad dope, whether this is the straight data or this is – got a – data with a curve. In other words, we have to be capable of evaluating the truth of the relayed observation. Understanding then, must include that.

And there is where the bulk of sentient beings – I won't just say man, because there are other sentient beings – fall down, and there is where they get crosswise, there is where they really have a time.

Well, I'll give you a marvelous example: There are people walking all over the place today and so on and so on and they think that everything in the field of the mind is all cared for. "See, when a little child is three years old, why he got – he got excited about something or other, he's been sick and that's why he's in the insane asylum and doctors understand all about this and everybody understands it and so forth and *yah, yah, yah*, the problem's all cared for." Well, we're in that state of the civilization where they say they're not only saying, "we know," they're also saying, "somebody else knows, and we don't have to know." Hey-

hey, what's this? What's – what kind of apathy is this? "We don't even have to know anymore. It's all right that somebody else someplace knows, that there are some authorities someplace on this subject."

I quote Eisenhower. He always depended on having an authority. The best source of information was always an authority on the subject and he never did anything without – he consulted an authority and it went along with this that he didn't have to know a blessed thing about anything.

There was never even a communication signal corps unit to keep him advised on moments of national crisis or anything else, when he was out playing golf or anything. There was no information lines ever run through this man. He got his national policies out of *Newsweek*. He did! He'd gotten to a point of where the expert was a newspaper reporter. Well, I admit newspaper reporters are pretty good and they all think that if left up to them, they can straighten everything out in a minute, but it seems rather interesting to have newspaper reporter policy being the dominant policy of a nation. They might really be trying to sell soap, you see? It might be motivational research entering in here, you know. You couldn't really trust that piece of information.

So, part of your understanding is what you're understanding – the falsity or correctness of your data sources – or what you're trying to understand.

So, study has as part of it, comprehension of the accuracy of your source of information and you've got to have some idea of that. And that's an experiential line itself. You say, "Well, this fellow tells me what he believes to be true and if he no longer believes it to be true or if he finds something else is true, why, he will tell me." Something like that.

You say, "All right. Well, that's that source of information and that's a good source of information. There's this other source of information, if he tells me something, why, he's just confoundedly certain that he's got to shove it down my throat in some particular line. It might be right and it might be wrong, but he will continue to tell me just because he has to be right." Something like this, you see?

Since I've just gotten through three textbooks – three textbooks written by a professor at Columbia University who never had color film in his hands in his life, I'm sure, who was writing on color photography... I had to study these and I had to know my business. I was going to be examined on this. I shot more color film than this man ever heard of. But here was a case where I had to study something to get a grade. I understood that. See, I understood the fact that I had to study this in order to get a grade. You get the subtlety then of the study that went on.

Also began to be understood this guy loved to show off. He loved to show off; he would introduce some ninety-dollar word of a technical nature, which wasn't included in any dictionary, into the middle of a sentence where it didn't have to be. Oh, boy, if that doesn't throw you. Now, right in the middle of that sentence you've got a word like "colored couplers." He says, I quote, "We are now going to introduce a new term, 'colored couplers,' which I will explain later." He never explained it. You look up in the photographic dictionary. "What is this thing: a 'colored coupler'?" And you can't find it. It's not in there. You look everywhere and you can't find it. What are you supposed to do? Just lie down and die at this

point? No, your understanding has to embrace the fact that the silly ass didn't know what he was talking about, if nobody can define it. Well, maybe someplace somebody's going to define it but it includes *you don't have to know what it is in order to continue*.

Now, that is also a very interesting thing to do, because you go past one of these points of understanding and you know you're going to have trouble; but part of study is to know the technology of study and to know if you start developing a headache in the next half page it's because you didn't understand that word. Do you understand?

In other words, your understanding of understanding can get very subtle indeed. You can get very, very tricky. You are reading about the engineering works of the early Egyptians, which have been written by a modern engineer who is also a lecturer at Massachusetts Institute of Technology and should have been flunked for English. He can't write – maybe he can build bridges, but he can't write. (If he's teaching at MIT, he probably can't build bridges either.) But anyhow, there he is and you want to learn something about the bridge building of the early Egyptians, see, and this thing is strewn with words that have to do with stresses and strains of various kind and torsional – *gahhh!* And then when he really wishes to be clear, he all of a sudden gives you four paragraphs of solid integral calculus, without giving you what any of the letters he's using in the integral calculus refer to.

I've got a book on color reproduction upstairs, written by some Englishman that did this. It's marvelous. You get simultaneous equations, of all things in calculus, and this is supposed to explain something. Of course, what I did was not worry about the fact that I didn't understand it. I just laughed in his face via his textbook. In other words, I wasn't so *obsessed* on the line that I couldn't skip it and I was sufficiently informed on the subject of study that I knew if I ran into a liability of having skipped it, I knew what the liability would be, see, so I could go back and run it out if it got in my road. In other words, I could walk through this bunch of bayonets. Do you understand?

Audience: Yeah.

Well, you could get that clever about study, see?

All right, well, that's actually going to high school before you get to kindergarten, really, on the subject of study, but I'm showing you about where it extends to. You can get clever enough to read an MIT lecturer's dissertation in full panoply of engineering terms on the bridges of the ancient Egyptians without actually looking up a single blasted one of his confounded technical terms and survive right on to the end of the dissertation and, what do you know? Know something about the bridges! Now you're clever.

The latest editions of the *Encyclopaedia Britannica* require this as a fine art, because all they're doing is showing off to the people of the profession. They've been so criticized by landscape architects for their articles on landscape architecture, that they now have written a professional piece on landscape architecture. Nobody can understand it but a landscape architect. Well, a landscape architect isn't ever going to look it up in the *Encyclopaedia Britannica*. [laughter] And that applies to nearly all of their very professional dissertations. That's why I... They've changed their style.

The modern style is to become incomprehensible and to say, "Somebody else knows about it," and then try to impress it and leave it all skipped and then, you know, say, "Well, if you're not an expert you're nothing – and there are experts around, so we're all perfectly..." It's all kind of a mishmash – decadence is what you're really looking at.

Now, I use an old 1890 edition. You read about landscape architecture in the old 1890 edition and it knew it was written for some fool that didn't know their nomenclature, see? You can find out what you want to know; but later editions, you can't. Soon that 1890 edition will become so antique, why, it won't be of any use anymore and then I won't have any encyclopedia left, see?

I'll have to do something desperate by that time, by – I don't know, substitute for it with some vast library of stuff. Oh – oh, yes. I know. Quentin's getting a whole bunch of textbooks and I'll keep collecting those. I've just solved it. He's getting all kinds of textbooks: *The Boy's Book of Electronics*, you know? The Boy's Book of something or other. You open these things up, it's actually "Integral Calculus Made Easy for 6-Year-Olds," you know. [laughter] Actually, they're way over his head. I don't know how anybody did that, but he does all right with these things. Crazy business! Yes, they're – they've got a penchant going that it's all right to make it easy for children to understand it, so I can collect a child's library and I'll be all set. That's what I'll do. Maybe the children can't understand it, but I will be able to.

Anyway, sources of information all add up, then, to comprehensibility and words form the woof and warp of any professional or technical area. Specialized words are used for specialized observations. Now, we move off into the field of specialized observations, as a specialist, which is perfectly fine. But where you are lightly tapping some field for just a moment's understanding and you collide with specialist vocabulary, you are lost at once.

Now, it gives you an idea at once of the very unserious student of Scientology. One of the first things he does is complain about the nomenclature. Well frankly, we have less nomenclature than we're entitled to as a specialized field. Because nobody understood anything about the mind, how could they have any vocabulary about it? And they didn't have any vocabulary about it and if we'd used their lousy vocabulary, we would have misunderstood everything, because those words meant other things.

So actually, this bird stands around and starts complaining about our vocabulary. Now we know at once that he's not a serious student of Scientology. That's the first thing we know about this person: he's not a serious student of it. He's a dilettante; he wants to hang around the edges and pick up a few scraps. You recognize the brute now? He wants a few scraps. He really doesn't want it, because you've got to sweat for nomenclature, because the nomenclature is carrying with it a specialized understanding and unless you've got that specialized understanding, you will never get the technology.

Now, there's the difference between knowing about something and being a pro. There's a vast difference. And there's many a chap today walking around who is pretending to know a great deal about something who oddly enough isn't even vaguely educated in that particular field, and so forth. But it's sort of a "thing" to be a sort of a dilettante – that's a modern trend.

For instance, what's a medical doctor but a dilettante in the field of the mind? Really very much so! He's just – he's superficial – nobody. The effrontery of them! Six hours of lecture, they get up here on some hospital alongside of the Thames, as I have mentioned before; and this is their entire education on the field of the mind. But because they have a general practitioner's license it gives them *carte blanche* in the field of the mind. It sounds crazy, but it is true. That's what it is. So, the society at large is not – has gotten so dispersed that it doesn't mind calling somebody an authority who doesn't know anything about it at all. Because that is the authority on the field of the mind – he was taught for six hours.

This is their skeleton in their closet, by the way. This is why they raised the devil with us for so many years about how well we were trained, and so forth, and we actually – in any given week an Academy student anywhere in the world was learning more about the mind, in that week per hours of invested time, than a medical doctor got in his entire career. In one week!

Now, the effrontery of these boobs in trying to tell us that we were untrained in the field of the mind and so forth. No, no, we are not untrained in the field of the mind, we are practically the only people who are trained in the field of the mind. Now, there are other fields that are trained in the field of meat or neurones or something like this, as in psychology or brain surgery or something. But they are trained in the field of meat, they are not trained in the field of the mind. I'll give them that they are specialists on meat, all right! Somebody gets a bullet in his skull and so forth, they can probably do something about it. Well, all right, don't – let's not though pretend, because we can take a bullet out of somebody's skull, that we now know about the mind, because in the first place it didn't go into his mind – it went into his skull. Now, this was a slight difference, you see, in nomenclature.

Now, what I'm trying to bring home to you here, is there are various grades at which a subject can be approached. You can approach it as a dilettante: "Oh well, I know all about painting. Yes, yes, I had a course in art appreciation in junior high school, one whole semester. And the teacher stood up and showed us pieces of lithography on a piece of cardboard and – I got so I could call Rembrandt nearly every time. I got very clever at art appreciation, so I know a great deal about art." Well, that must have consisted of what? One or two or three hours a week, for maybe – I don't know – what's a semester? Sixteen weeks, something like that. Which made a total – he looked at pictures for fifty or sixty hours and now he's an art specialist. Well, of course, that's better than somebody out in the street that never heard of them; not much, but it's better. But it gives somebody the interesting idea that he now knows something about it, when he doesn't know a ruddy thing about it. It gives him a curious and very dangerous attitude to his own future knowledge. It gives him a false understanding. He now thinks he knows something about it. No, he knows the nomenclature of pictures. He doesn't know anything about art, he's never been taught anything about art. Nomenclature of pictures was what he would know.

It isn't really the amount of time invested that gives you this, although I've been mentioning time. It is more the seriousness with which it is approached. How much do you want to know about this? Do you want to know enough about this so you can talk about it? As would be very common on a Park Avenue debutante, don't you see? She could discuss art – how cute! At her coming-out party, if somebody happened to say, "You look like a

Madonna," why she would know they weren't necessarily talking religion, you see? [laughter] See, art, see?

All right, now let's move a little bit further into the field of art. Now, how seriously do they wish to approach this subject? Do they wish to understand something about this subject so that they just won't appear to be a dummy or do they want to understand enough about it so as to do something with it? Do they want to know how to use art to decorate a home? That is to say, how do you choose and match and hang pictures, and – you know, what do you do with these pictures, you know?

We could go, not necessarily further in that direction, but along another path: A guy wants to know about art because of the threatened inflation of the world, see? Threatened inflation. You can buy land and you can – which isn't very movable – and you can buy gold, if you can get your hands on it and you're not an American citizen, and it will grow in price as the money of the community inflates. Or you can buy art. And art today is big business amongst people who know nothing about it as an artistic activity but as a financial investment. And you would be amazed how big this business is. Well, does he want to know enough about art so that he knows whether or not the experts are cheating him? That's how far that fellow would want to go, see? He'd have to know enough about art to know who knew about art, so that he couldn't be tripped up in the field of art. Otherwise he'd lose his shirt, you see?

Or do you want to know enough about art to move over into the field and maybe teach people art appreciation. Let's go a little bit further; we'd have to know a little bit more about art, wouldn't we? Now we're getting the lower grade instructional levels. Or do we want to know enough about art so that maybe, if we were very good, we could sit down with a piece of charcoal and a piece of paper and draw a vase with a narcissus in it? Now, we say, "We've started back at the beginning again," because any kid in kindergarten is trying to draw a vase with a narcissus in it. We're back to the area of doingness.

I'll call to your attention that that little kid in kindergarten almost never connects. It's wildly wonderful what comes up that is supposed to be a vase and so forth, but they have what is called an "artistic talent" or they have this or they have that and nothing is more easily destroyed because it isn't based on knowledge or understanding. This knack will leave him. It will fly out from underneath his fingers if he does happen to draw something. Very easy to trip him up. A thetan is very naturally creative, but he's actually handling certain media that he doesn't know much about.

Now, you go into this again; you take yourself up a piece of black charcoal; you take yourself a white piece of paper and you set yourself down to draw a vase. Now your education begins. You know that if you change the position of your paper and the position of your head while you are doing that, you have changed the proportion of the vase. Well, now that takes some knowing, doesn't it? In other words, if you look at a vase close and then draw it for a while, you'll be drawing a big top, let us say, and then you sit back to relax and do the bottom and you've now got a small bottom; big top and a small bottom and it doesn't look right. But it looked all right to you. Well, your education on the subject of art began at that point: "You 'old your 'ead still. That something has to do with the point I view from and the

distance I view to, has something to do with what I'm doing over here on this sheet of paper." Yeah, all right. Now you are heading for the long run, and you actually at that moment have begun the path of becoming a pro. Now, even if you did it for fun, you would still be on the path of becoming a pro.

What's the next thing you're liable to learn on the thing? Well, you're liable to learn that if you draw one for one, it's dead easy, but if you try a reduction or an increase in size, that is if you draw size for size, if you draw the vase on your piece of paper the same size as the vase you see on the table, this is pretty lousy easy. But how do you make a one for one? Well, you mustn't change the relationship of the paper or tablet to the table. It's easy as that, you see?

Now, most people can't draw still lifes for very interesting technical reasons: they are trying to do a reduction. They are trying to draw a big vase while looking at a little one, or draw a little vase while looking at a big one; and as they shift, they swivel their eyeball from the big vase to the drawn vase, they don't get a one for one size. See, they look at a big vase and try to do a little vase and of course they can't get the proportion because the size is already wrong and this throws them. They don't know the easy route out, they don't know that, "My God! That requires all kinds of wild mechanical and mathematical actions to take a big vase and to do a little miniature vase of this big – oh man!" Now, you are getting "creak, creak," see? Ah, dead easy. You set a vase over there and you get your paper here, and you get – so the paper looks now the same size as the vase – and you take out your charcoal and you draw the vase lines which you see there, the same size as you see here, you keep your head where it belongs and you keep your tablet where it belongs and you keep your vase where it belongs and you go *scroomp-scroomp*, put in a couple of highlights, *scroomp*. And if you're not shaking with palsy, you will wind up with a nice sketch of a vase.

I'm just showing you, there's these little pieces of technology, don't you see? Well, you're now on the route to being a pro. So, you might say that study which winds up only in understanding is not without value and is a large part of the cultural pattern which a society has. Study with no activity, let me put it that way. You don't intend to do anything about it, you're not going to do anything about it, that's just cute, that's interesting, isn't that nice? A tremendous quantity of the culture in which you live is understood to that degree and it's nice to know those things – if you've got to know a lot of those things. For instance, you don't know how to – have to know *how* to prepare or do the action of preparing an automobile, in order to know about automobiles, see? But you jolly well better know something about the action of repairing automobiles before you start paying somebody to repair the automobiles. In other words, you're at a point of regulated doingness, don't you see? Your understanding of it is sufficient so that you won't get gypped buying a "Mona Lisa," because Joe just bought it yesterday, see?

Now, therefore – therefore, your understanding – widely in life can embrace a *great* many things which you never intend to do. There's nothing wrong with that. But don't make a habit of that, see? Don't make a habit of that. If you're going down some line, go down some line, see? Don't stand around, for instance... Don't let some student – let me talk about Scientology for a minute – don't let somebody who walks into your PE, and so forth, keep standing around the edges of it. You'll find out they'll go hold meetings and they will talk endlessly

about Scientology, see? They couldn't define an engram if you held a pistol on them, but they'll talk endlessly about Scientology, see? In fact, there are groups all over the place that do pract... that do nothing else. They never audit, they never go into action of any kind whatsoever. Their command of the subject is merely an interest. Now, this is perfectly all right, perfectly all right, but don't leave them in a state of believing that they now know the subject.

That would be the cruel thing to do to them. They don't. They don't and they get confused to the degree that they think, now, if they do so-and-so and such-and-such, why, then this somehow or another fixes them all up, so they know all about it.

Now, it's at that point that a person's education starts to break down, because these people have dropped into what trap? It's just that one trap: "They know all about it, see, so life can go on." Well, they don't know all about it, they don't know your level of understanding of it. My God! You've been grinding away at it and slamming away at it and delving in it and getting comprehensions of it, and so forth, and you know how much there is there to know, man!

This character is saying, "Well, I..." so on. Well, if you followed through some of his logic, you would be fascinated. See, if you followed through some of his think and some of his statements and some of his doings on this subject, if he did do anything on this subject, you would practically cave in with laughter at times, because it's so far away from anything you could imagine anybody interpreting anything like that as. It's just a gone proposition.

Somebody will say, "Well, I settled the dog, and I was using Scientology processing, and so forth. You know, I beat him." How the hell did we get over there, see? It's that goofy. But to let that person go on believing now, that he knows all about it, so therefore does not have to address it directly and seriously in order to achieve any doingness level in it, would be a very, very cruel thing to do to this person because he'd just have nothing but a failure. Here's this broad subject which is there, which if he did it at all properly, would give him results and he could go someplace and he could do something with this, do you see? But to have him sit there and think he knows all about it when he doesn't know anything about it, of course, is letting him fall into this other category.

Also, to put him in the position where he thinks he can't know anything about it because it's so vast and so difficult and – also is equally cruel, because you've artificially created the two reasons for the demise of an individual or a civilization. You've put him into a state of "He is not only illiterate, but he is going to go right on being illiterate." "Well, of course only a specialist could know that and so forth. And I don't see why you're asking for the definition of a word like that, because it really doesn't apply to what you are doing anyway. This is all pretty difficult, you know."

I never follow such an approach. Some guy – if some guy comes up and asks me hostilely about something or other, I can't guarantee what he'll get back. I'm – it all depends on how I felt right at that moment. If I felt puckish about it, he's liable to go off packing a headache. But if he – if somebody asked me and they really want to know something – of course, you know me – I tell them, bang! like that, the best I could. Even though I didn't have any hope of their really understanding what I was talking about, I would still give them anything I

could tell them that I hope might assist their information or understanding of it. I always do something for them this way and usually, if somebody's just asking for information, why I let it go at that. But if they're asking for help and so forth, I always give them something to do, not only give them a piece of information, or an insight into it, if I possibly can, but I always give them something to do, too. You know? And you'd be surprised how workable this type of an approach is. Of course, if they ask you something hostilely or be nasty, or something like that, why just pull the trap, you know? I don't care what you do to them. Nobody demands of you that you be polite. Don't compromise your own communication lines.

The only time I ever get embarrassed or anybody get embarrassed, is this person was asking me a silly question which sounded like a hostile question, but they really meant it and they were quite serious about it and then you find yourself immediately in the position of having been very nasty and very mean back, don't you see, when they didn't intend to be. You sometimes can get that one crossed up. That's rather easy to do.

But doingness requires, of course, much, much, much more understanding than just lookingness. Doingness requires an awful lot of added understanding and when you go into doing a subject, it is sometimes very, very disappointing. Your first results – very disappointing. Your understanding wasn't up to match the doingness that you were doing, you see, and so forth. And what you learn out of this is – what you should learn out of this is that you should understand more about it, in order to do it, you see? That's the lesson you should learn; and the lesson you shouldn't learn out of it is: "It's just too difficult."

But on some subject lines there is another lesson you could learn, is that "It never worked anyway." Oddly enough, I don't think that is applicable except in the upper levels of supereducation and in the upper levels of supereducation, they've got a lot of stuff that doesn't work but is just hoped for, you know, which they're putting straight across the line. It was never intended to work – it leads to no final result at all. I mean, that sounds rather peculiar, but it is true. It's like doing the equations of aircraft propellers – or buggy whips, about the same category today, propeller aircraft and the buggy whip – with integral calculus and painfully sketching out all of the various contours and curvatures of aircraft propeller blades or buggy whip curvatures, with integral calculus. Why would you do such a stupid thing? Why, for instance, learn the tremendous complications of some very esoteric activity on a doingness basis which hasn't been used for three centuries, just to do it?

Well, it sometimes doesn't work at all. Sometimes nobody ever did it. That must enter into your calculations, too, when you're going up at that level of thing. Maybe nobody ever did it, see? Maybe it's too tough. Maybe it isn't too tough – maybe it just isn't, see? Maybe there is no integral calculus curve to a buggy whip, you know? I mean, you can go that far, that silly about it, you see?

This sort of thing is all part of your understanding of the subject of study. Where are you going with this study? But if you're going up the line with any study on a basis of doingness you should go up the line on a basis of gradients. And my first lecture to you on this subject had to do with gradients. And you will find the first time the individual's doingness caved in was right after, *right after* he had hit too steep a gradient. He didn't cave in on the steep

gradient, he caved in instantly before he hit the steep gradient. I'll talk to you more in a later lecture about processing people using this exact principle of too steep a gradient.

It's quite interesting, but it'll be the gradient that he failed on, was the gradient which came after the gradient he hadn't understood. He's one step late in recognizing this thing, see?

Now, what you want to do is give somebody a series of doingnesses on a gradient that they can do and that they can achieve. And in Scientology you have a rather marvelous thing called a "Touch Assist," and it is so workable that some people sort of park right there with the Touch Assist and that's only one little level of doingness which if they do, why, it gives them some confidence and they can go on to higher levels of doingness, you see? But it's something like having invented too good a kiddie-car. You know, this is too good a kiddie-car; and you'll find it sometimes hard to move people off on to the next step. But a confidence and understanding goes along with the doingness, so a doingness is just another method of achieving understanding. In addition to accomplishing something with it, and so forth, it's also a method of getting understanding. Doingness is a method of achieving understanding. And if you find yourself too bogged and so forth, well, you want to go do some of it and that sounds rather interesting.

Now, I know myself, I have just gotten through three books of archaic yesteryear's color films. I'm studying color photography on textbooks, that even though they are written by this institution, and so forth, have long since antiquated. They are dead and there is very little left of the actual materials they are talking about. And it's writ... was written by a professor at Columbia University who probably had never done any. And the directions, and so forth, were mostly taken out of the literature released by the companies that manufactured the stuff at the time. And they intended just a happy result which they didn't ever think anybody would have any trouble with. The net result of this amounted to a tremendously interesting, basic theoretical approach which was absolutely vital to an understanding of the subject which departed wildly on to a series of doingnesses which were no longer of use and were completely disrelated. So if this wasn't the world's worst mish-mash I ever had anything to do with, I'd like to know about it. They... a real mishmash. Here's vital basic technology, basic historical technology, basic put-together, basic chemical technology, all of this stuff is not only true now, it's going to hold true from here on out in this particular field, don't you see? Basics, fundamentals, and so forth.

Well, I got those down with spikes in spite of learning them from a professor. And the next thing, all of a sudden you collide with films you will never shoot and which you have to know all of the literature concerning. Oh, that's pretty grim, because in the first place, I have already learned that a manufacturer's table of use on the subject of any piece of film, much less color film, is something that you carefully don't litter the street with. You put it in the garbage can. See? Useless! Forget it! He isn't the user of the film in the first place. He's the seller of the film, not just its manufacturer, but he's selling this stuff, so he wants to put a very happy face on it. So he says its speed rating is up in the stars – when it isn't. And he says it won't do this, when it does. And all of this stuff, and how this stuff is handled and all of this – not even germane.

Why would anybody have even included it in the text in the first place? He already knew that color was an advancing field. It was advancing so rapidly that to expect of the individual, without modernizing the text, that he would have to know all about autochrome – haven't had any autochrome since 1920 – it didn't even take a picture then. Whoever heard of this stuff? Well, it's nice to know that they had some film like this and what its basic theory is, but now go and get the lens stops and settings for autochrome – oh come now! Well, what lens stops and settings for autochrome? In a camera system, perhaps, that isn't even used anymore. That's just *gobbledygook* then, isn't it? Well, your understanding has to embrace this fact and you somehow or another have to survive through the subject and still retain intact the basic technology and the vital fundamentals of the subject which you have learned without being so upset about the later enturbulences which you got into because that's now been over-ridden and developed.

Now, you are all faced with that merely because of the advancing line of Scientology. I've just experienced it in the wildest way possible. The third book was totally devoted to printing methods and I wouldn't be seen dead in a color darkroom anyway. See, I – *bluh!* Who wants to doodle-daddle like that? See? Well, there are lots of guys around that like to doodle-daddle like that and I'm happy there are, because they're going to do all of my doodle-daddling! [laughter] All I have to know in that is also an understanding of what I have to know. I haven't got the time or the inclination to spend forty or fifty hours on a salon exhibition print to get it registered properly. I haven't got the time or the inclination. Who would – who'd do such a thing? One of these doodle-daddlers. They work *happily*. Marvelous! Couldn't live without it! Don't you see? Well, I have to know enough to know whether or not they know what they are doing.

That's, once more, an understanding of what I need the information for, an understanding of what I'm going to use this information and, an understanding of its value and precision; understanding of what I have to have out of it. It's an understanding of what do I want; it's an understanding of the proper practical use or application of this information; and if it's for drawing room conversation, you would study it entirely differently. If you were studying art for drawing room conversation but not commercially, I assure you, the thing to do is to get ahold of a catalog that was published at some outrageous long date ago that lists all sorts of painters of the period of van Eyck or something like this and get all the contemporaries, see, get all of those and what they were noted for, you see, and memorize – just grind, grind, grind like you're memorizing this – an amateur play script, all of this stuff, you see, and so forth – drawing room conversation: kill everybody dead! They can't open their heads about – they say something about seventeenth century painters, you know, and you say, "Like Van der Dobin."

And they say, "What?"

You say, "Yes, Van der Dobin."

In other words, you can play "one-upmanship" with this thing, see? Mow 'em down, you know? "Well, Hobbema, after all – too blue."

And everybody says, "Gee, boy! He's in the know." [laughs]

STUDY AND EDUCATION

A lecture given on 13 August 1964

What's the date?

Audience: 13th of August AD 14.

Thirteen Aug. AD 14, Saint Hill Special Briefing Course. We've got another lecture here on study and education.

You probably have realized, going down the line, that we've got this pretty well wrapped up. But we didn't expect some of the bonuses that we got. This was actually quite an astonishing and adventurous thing to do as I've already mentioned and so forth, is all of a sudden pick up an analogous field of practice and study, in order to study that, in order to find something about study, so that you're not interiorized on your own subject, don't you see? So get an exterior view and study this as a lowly neophyte that is tyroing his way up the line. Both of those mean "beginners." And then carry this subject of study out through, not on a dilettante, but on a professional, hammer and tongs basis, you see? There's a great deal of difference between these two types of study.

And what remains undone of that now, of course, is the professional practice of what one has learned. And that will have to be added into it to help you out in that particular field and sphere. That doesn't seem to be too much but here is – the whole subject of education has as its end product the accomplishment of certain doings, the accomplishment of certain ends or aims, and education which doesn't lead toward this, of course, is just sort of doodle-daddle, monkey business, you know, sort of stuff. It's pure dilettantism, by which could be best defined as "one doesn't intend to do anything about it except annoy his friends."

The difference in these two fields of the doodle-daddle type of monkey business sort of and so on – I really wouldn't call it education. I wouldn't dignify it with that particular field. I would say it's acquaintance – it's acquaintancy. It's getting a nodding acquaintance with some data or a field to find out what is in it. In other words, it's just becoming acquainted with it slightly and doing a light skim around its edges and that would not, in my estimation, be education.

Education would be in the direction of accomplishing certain actions professionally. Now, that is my own word introduced into there, "professionally," but if one is educated in a subject, one expects him to be able to accomplish certain things with that subject. I don't care if this is merely a theoretical line of education, one is still expected to come out the other end being a good theoretician.

So education – education I would define as something that is for blood and I would say that many things pass under the heading of education which aren't. I'm not talking if – this is a good English dictionary definition, you see? Education means learning or knowing or accomplishing the knowingness of a certain subject, you see? Well, let's take that as a flat-out definition. If one is educated in a subject, then he knows that subject, you see? See, you know, exclamation point, he knows the subject. He's able to accomplish the actions which are taught in that subject, he's able to accomplish the results which are taught in that subject, don't you see? That's education.

Now, to call the modern school system "education," then, is quite laughable, because this poor little kid gets in there and they – they keep the kid's time occupied. Let's go down to that. Well now, that doesn't seem to me to have to have anything to do with education whatsoever, to keep the child's time occupied. And yet a survey of this field demonstrates that the best reason for formal education of youth and so on is to give their mothers a break. That's the fact. That's the way they look in that direction.

Well, what is this kid being taught to do? And right away, then, you see what your quarrel with young schooling is. He's not being taught to do anything, see? Voilà! So it isn't education. You see, if you just took the word in its pure definition, with an exclamation point, you know, "educated!" well, this has come to mean a sort of an esoteric fly-around that he – well, what? So you say, "This fellow was educated." You say, "He was educated at Oxford." Well, what is this? All right, good, he was educated at Oxford, fine, he's an Oxford man. Good. We expect certain stamps and social reactions and so forth. All right. If he was educated to be a gentleman – good! So he's a pro gentleman. See? Fine. Fine.

But you can't really disassociate education from an active doingness and a role and a professionalism, you see? It's not possible to disassociate this, to take this over, so we say, "Well, we wanted to give him a good education, not so that he could do anything, but..." Well, that is immediately a contradiction. That's saying, "We must pick up all the white peas by leaving all the white peas on the ground." You can't do that, you see? You can't just "educate" somebody without any end in view. It – because then he wouldn't be educated, don't you see?

And that is the modern quarrel. We have the largest budget, next to armaments, in the world, is child education. That's a big budget. And I don't care if the teachers all say they're underpaid and everything – which they are. It is, nevertheless, a fabulous piece of money which is spent in this particular direction. When you look at it all the way up the line and when you include under that heading of expense all the training, all the educational actions that are done in this world, you see that there's a terrific investment.

Now, practically everyone in the Western world has had a considerable sum invested in them to become educated. That's a considerable sum. It runs into the thousands of pounds; whichever way you want to look at it. It runs into the many, many thousands of dollars. By the time a young man has gotten through college, for instance, he stands, educationally, at something on the order of the ten-thousand dollar mark, or did ten years ago; that's an old figure. And he probably stands at a higher figure today. That's a lot of money to invest in a man – for maybe no result.

All right, so a lot has been spent upon his education but has he become educated?

Male voice: No.

Yeah, and that's the quarrel. See, there was – a lot is spent on his education but he didn't get educated.

I was rather shocked to find, the other day, that my young'uns couldn't write their name. They're being "educated" (quote) (unquote) at a remarkable rate of speed, but they couldn't sign their name. I wouldn't say that then they were being taught to write. They were not ed... being educated in how to write. No matter what they were doing, no matter how many "traveling ovals" they were making, if it didn't wind up with the end product of being able to sign their names – well, I should think that would be one of the first things that some teacher would think about. They'd say, "Well, you know, a kid should be able to sign his name." Because, frankly, that is almost the basic test of literacy.

The fellow that stumps aboard ship and has to make an 'X' on the articles is instantly and immediately considered to be illiterate. Well, maybe he could write in a flowing, copperplate hand everything else, but if he couldn't sign his name he'd have a hard time convincing people he wasn't illiterate.

So it would seem to me to be first things first, and when I found this out I caused quite a storm by insisting that they learn how to sign their names. They – even the children got quite upset. It hadn't occurred to them that if they knew how to write they should be able to sign their names. They couldn't do it. So there's a lot of holes left along the line.

Now, you take arithmetic. Well, this is sort of taught as a handy, handy thing that is – you need so that you won't get shortchanged. I think that's just about the wildest short look at any subject I ever had anything to do with. And yet I'm sure that that is the basic reason why it is taught, because I've had children explain to me, patiently, this one point. So this has been taught to them as the reason they were learning arithmetic is so they wouldn't be shortchanged. Nobody ever tells them that there's another way not to have to worry about that, is also make enough money. Well, look at it. If you – if you made enough money, you wouldn't have to know arithmetic, because it wouldn't worry you if you were shortchanged. See, there are other ways to get around this. I mean – so therefore, there is some other route on this business of being shortchanged, although I offer that one as simply a ridiculous one, it's nevertheless quite a factual one. Midas never worried about being shortchanged.

So, what have we got here in terms of arithmetical education? Well, I defy the bulk of the teachers who are teaching arithmetic to give you much of an end product for knowing arithmetic. They'd say, "Well, uh-uh-uh-um – well, of course, he has to have it because it's a fundamental in so many other subjects."

Well, all right. Now we're talking about teaching other subjects. Well, we're not interested in other subjects, we are talking about arithmetic. How about this thing called arithmetic? Well, we wonder why people don't know arithmetic. Well, he can't be educated in it because it has no end product. The fellow says, "I don't want to be an accountant. I don't want to be a bookkeeper. I can learn to count on my fingers so I don't get shortchanged." Elementary. Why learn arithmetic?

"Well," you say, "well, you *have* to have it to learn other su..."

"No, no, no, no. Let's talk about education and arithmetic. Let's not go worrying about other subjects."

"Yeah, well, if you put a restriction like that on the argument," they would say, "of course nobody can argue with you."

And you say, "That's the point. Who wants to be argued with?"

The point I'm making here is that arithmetic, having no finite end in itself – of course, it has – it has finite ends, and it could be described – but having no described, finite end in itself is therefore almost impossible to teach. And you have nearly everybody doing very badly in their grammar schools on arithmetic because it itself is not a subject, so therefore no one can become educated.

It's become more and more – this is very manifest in the university – I'm not talking over your heads here, this is something that's very, very bang! It's very obvious. You get into a university, you're all the time having problems being shoved under your nose in engineering schools that you're supposed to do by algebra; you're always having problems shoved under your nose that you're supposed to do with calculus, any one of which is solvable by sight arithmetic. That's something to think about.

Now, what has happened here? Well, arithmetic, not being a subject in itself, and being a somewhat degraded and degraded subject, has gradually shrunk and is ceasing to be a subject, but is simply an auxiliary subject which moves up into higher mathematics. And if you don't know arithmetic, you can't do higher mathematics. That's the way it's represented, more or less, to the engineer.

Well, I was quite interested in old *McGuffey's Readers* at one time to find out how adept at arithmetic somebody was expected to be in 1888. The problems which they were expected to solve in arithmetic were the problems of algebra. And they were expected to solve these with arithmetic. And what do you know? It was a great revelation to me that it was very possible to solve these algebraic problems with their "Xs" and "Ys" and all that sort of thing by common, ordinary, garden-variety arithmetic. And it made a lot better sense – made a lot better sense. I looked at this and I've run into some old-timers who could take a column of figures about five figures wide and about ten figures tall and add them up in a peculiar way, which was very peculiar to me, of some kind of a crisscross addition that I would be quite at a loss to explain to you how it was done, but arrive with almost an immediate answer. And you say, "How did they do that?"

"Well," they say, "it's very simple. You see, nine added to something gives you itself, so all you do is go down the column and find all the combinations which make nine and forget those, and you add the remainder and you get the total."

What do you know, you know? Well, of course, that's just tricky stuff, but all this at one time was part and parcel to arithmetic and it's not here anymore in arithmetic. Where did it go? Well, you must have a dying subject. Why is it dying? Nobody is delineating its purpose to the student of it. No matter if some – no matter if some purpose does exist in it, that's

beside the point. Yes, you could figure out lots of purposes of it, but all you have to know is, is nobody is delineating, marking out, showing the purpose of that subject to the student so one doesn't consider that he becomes educated in arithmetic. Arithmetic is just some auxiliary subject that keeps you from being shortchanged.

So that as the purpose of a subject deteriorates in its advertisement or rendition – as the purpose of a subject deteriorates – the subject itself also falls away. Sounds like a very – a very strange sort of a thing to give you, but as the purpose of a subject falls away, why, so does the subject disappear from the ken of man. Manufacture of buggy whips? Go around and try to find somebody today who knows all about the manufacture of buggy whips. There's probably a couple of boys sitting around in England who know the subject backwards and forwards and who make all the circus whips. See, there are practically no more whips made. Dying, because it has no purpose. Nobody's got any horses to flip buggy whips over, see? So becoming educated in how to manufacture whips today would sort of be an end – a dead end. It would not be a very productive career.

Now, that doesn't sound very amplified, but let's take it in reverse and at once it will make a great deal of sense. Then, a subject for which the purpose is not delineated will die away, not only in the society but in the individual. Both of those two – those statements are true. The first one is so true that it's almost nonsense. But the other one is not nonsense and it's not been detected. If the individual to whom you are teaching this subject has not got the purpose of this subject, then that subject will die away in that individual. It might have a tremendous purpose, but if the purpose of the subject is not being taught to the individual, he's had it. Do you see?

So you can get the difference between a live study and a dead study. A live study is one which has purpose, has a use; and a dead study is one that hasn't any use. And the way you make a live study into a dead study is dual: Its use dies away as in buggy whips or one simply omits it as part of the educational process. And it will make the subject die away, not only in the individual but the society; not only in the society but the individual. Do you see that?

And we have to assume that a person cannot become educated, just by the definition of the word "education" as I have been stressing it here, in a dead subject because it has no end product.

So you find these things become obsessive. Somebody starts to study "miniatures painted in Holland by blind painters." Well now, miniatures painted in Holland, we've got some use for that. But "miniatures painted in Holland by blind painters," well, we would sort of look around for quite a while before we found any use for this particular subject. Oh, you could find uses for it, but don't get yourself all cluttered up on – on introducing your ingenuity to supply the lack in an educational system that – because by being reasonable, you cripple yourself. It's a question of "What is there?" not a question of "What could we dream up to put there?"

Oh, we could dream up some subjects, but let's just say this boy is studying this esoteric study – strange, weird, useless, nowhere. Do you know that he can easily become obsessed with it? He has no purpose for it, no use for it and so, of course, it's impossible for him

to become educated in it because he can never display his virtuosity. He can never display its use. Who would listen? He can't even tell his friends. They'd say, "This, *guy is* a ruddy crank! He goes around talking all the time..." Somewhat like your families and so forth have occasionally regarded you on the subject of Scientology. You're over their heads, you see? But much worse than that – much worse than that, we would get it on this sort of a basis, see. Nobody knows what he is talking about and nobody knows why he is studying it and it isn't of any use and it's not of much interest anyway. Well, this poor bloke can never communicate it. He can never communicate it for the best reason that communication becomes difficult: Nobody will listen.

Did you ever think about communication being difficult because nobody listens? Well, just run this into the field of education. If the subject doesn't exist and has no use and has no application and has no this and has no that, well, to that degree their listening ceases because it isn't of any use to them, either. He's studying miniatures painted by blind painters in Holland. People sort of say, "Well, I could understand his studying miniatures painted in Holland... I think he's nuts!" That would be the immediate conclusion, don't you see?

Well, your families look at you sometimes, where you have run into this and collided with this head-on, and people wouldn't listen to you on the subject of Scientology or were impatient with you for studying it, and that was because you weren't talking to them about the purpose of Scientology. And you didn't talk to them about the purpose of Scientology within the framework of what it could do for them personally.

Now you are coming right on close to home. Your mother might have been interested if she heard what it had done for you personally because she's interested in you. But even your mother would conceive it to be a subject only when a purpose was delineated. Now we'll go a bit – a little bit further: when the purpose that was delineated could be executed to any degree. You know, the purpose you've given it could be executed to any degree. Now, your next stage is, is they don't believe it. See, you could give them the purpose but they don't believe it. In other words, the purpose isn't real to them. So you not only have delineated the purpose but you have delineated it to them in such a way that it is – seems to be an attainable purpose. An attainable or doable purpose.

So we walk up to this bird and we say – we say to this bird, "Your – your interest in this subject should be very great because this subject will make you a Clear."

He immediately says, "What wall?" because it's not an understandable purpose, see? The purpose ceases to be understandable when the goal does not seem to him to be attainable or valuable. And it can cease to be attainable or valuable merely because it isn't understood.

So for an educational subject to exist and continue to be a subject in which one can become educated, or if you ever expect anybody to ever be educated in the subject – let me put it that way – for it to continue to exist, for it to survive, it has to have a purpose which can be seen to be an attainable action. It has to be attainable. The purpose must be attainable.

Now, the value of a subject – the value of a subject depends, simply and utterly, upon the value of attaining that stated purpose. How valuable is it to attain that particular stated

purpose? Is it valuable to be able to accomplish this or is it not valuable to be able to accomplish this? And to that degree a subject appears to be a fringe subject or a vital subject.

So the woof and warp of the culture is made up of educations which are subdivisible – that's the woof and warp of a culture... (Woof and warp: rug term. Try not to put too many words on the line, here. The woof goes that way and the warp goes that way, see?) It's – the make-up of a culture is subdivisible into two general types of education. A culture is held together solely and only by education. Whether that education is accomplished by experience or by teaching, a culture, as a whole, is the summation of its education. And those are two divisions to the educations of a culture, and one of those are the vital ones and the other one is the "nice" ones.

Now, an education achieved is remunerated to the degree that its service is understood to be valuable. An education is remunerated to the degree that its service is understood to be valuable. And it frankly is not remunerated one penny more. Sometimes they falsely remunerate, but not often. And that tells you that there must be some mighty funny, funny things, because there are some things in the society – because this rule I've just given you is true and the society at large then must be misunderstood to some degree because there's several educations in the subject at large which are remunerated to an enormous extent which are not held by certain educational authorities to be valuable.

Public must like to be fooled. They're always paying con men of some kind or another. There must be some real value in having hope shot up to the moon in the stock market because those birds are very often paid off heavily. You could reevaluate the society on the basis of what I've given you. Yes, you could say, "Well, the society makes mistakes in this direction. Yes, the society is lied to." Well, I don't think the society makes mistakes in this direction. That's a new thought, isn't it? Do you know that the most valuable prof... single technical profession in the United States is burying people? Hm, very highly paid! They've managed to convince everybody that the loved one should be in sealed bronze caskets and in concrete and steel vaults outside the caskets so that seepage won't trouble your loved ones. And they had the whole country absolutely convinced that this was Congressional law, that it was local law. And a recent Congressional investigation disclosed this fact and they found out that there isn't any statutes in the United States that compels anybody in the United States to be buried even in a board coffin. There are statutes that require them to be buried, but there is not even a statute that requires them to be embalmed. So you roll Aunt Agnes up in a blanket and dump her in a hole. [laughter] As long as you've got a death certificate, man, that's all you need.

So, this particular profession – this particular profession was selling what? They were sort of selling some weird life after death, weren't they? They were akin to some religious cult or something like that. And it was obvious that people did buy life after death. And we find out that one of the most expensive things you could do in Egypt was to die. That was a very expensive thing and that's gotten that way in the United States today. It's very costly to die. By the time they get through with you, man, well, you've got no estate left.

But this is very peculiar. The society remunerates this and rewards it. Well, it's just about the most educated art you ever had anything to do with in your life. Undertaking is a

supereducated art and the society of undertakers themselves – "morticians," they like to refer to themselves – these birds run their own schools and their own technology and that sort of thing and they really hammer-pound it in. And the final end product is very visible. But these guys are quite sharpies. I know, because back in the days when I was having a ball around New York as a writer, why, the medical examiner – that's what they've begun to call the coroner around New York now – they changed their names, too – the medical examiner of New York was a particular pal of mine. He was the coroner of the city of New York and one of the nicest blokes you ever had anything to do with. He'd embalmed personally, with his own paws, 15,000 corpses.

I got interested in this particular field by being sent in his direction to do a series of stories about undetectable crime and of course I wound up in the lap of the medical examiner of the city of New York and he started my crime education on the subject. And of course, this was in the field of what they call forensic or legal medicine. And this boy, he had it all at his finger tips and so forth. But the casualness with which he could roll off all of these various things showed a great familiarity with the subject.

This was not an esoteric subject. This had to do with lots of dead bodies which had been strewn all over the place in various states of dishabille, various states of knocked-about. They were untidy at times. This was quite a boy. And oddly enough, he conceived that he was not acceptable socially. And I was very acceptable socially, so he and I formed a very good partnership, because he always liked to – if I was going anyplace and asked him if he'd like to come along and so forth, he was there on a rocket plane, you see? Right away, quick! But there wasn't anything – there wasn't anything that was wrong with this bird. He had perfect manners, he was a perfect gentleman and so forth. But part of his education was that his subject was looked down on and therefore he felt he was socially unacceptable and so forth.

Well, I don't know. A lot of people – lot of people look down on – street sweepers think they're looked down on and so forth, but street sweepers keep the streets swept clean, don't they? Hm? Well, this guy obviously was keeping the streets of New York from being littered with decomposing corpses. And oh, I used to see him every once in a while. When I was president of one of the writing societies there and so forth, why, he used to come over there quite regularly and he'd give detective writers talks if I'd ask him to and so forth. And they would go away from the luncheon or something like that the weirdest shades of green. [laughter, laughs]

But man, here was – here was data. Here was data. And it had a very definite end product, if only in the field of detection. A guy like that could take one look at a corpse and he'd say "Carbon monoxide, been dead about three hours." "Cyanide." "Arsenic." This, that, the other thing. *Brrrrrr*, boom! "Oh, I'd say that was botulinus poisoning, Joe. Yeah, yeah. Well, put him on the slab and we'll run a – we'll run a test on it, do an autopsy. Well, I'm pretty sure that's just botulinus, you know some – eating green beans in the wrong time of the year that had been in the icebox too long. That's – looks like that's what that is to me." Almost always just dead on the button, you see?

This was art, the art of observation, the world of death. But even in the days of Egypt this art was not accorded any social status. The boys who embalmed the bodies down in the

deadhouse and so forth were actually never even permitted to leave the deadhouse. They were held in. But here's this terrific, terrific amount of art, terrific amount of detail, terrific amount of technicality, terrific amount of stuff and it's come right straight down through these cultures from the days of ancient Egypt, and it is totally uninterrupted. It's interesting that such a bird as this could sit down and discuss the relative preservation qualities of modern embalming and Egyptian embalming. And he was certain he was doing better these days than the Egyptians were. It's the first time I'd ever heard that, because we've seen these Egyptian mummies in univer... in university museums and that sort of thing, and we've seen these things around and they're still there, all wrapped up and so forth. But his attitude toward it was the attitude of a true professional: "Well, their features hadn't been preserved and their coloring was bad." That's what he said to me one day, so forth. "Yeah, the next time you're down in the museum, Ron," he said, "if you don't believe it, if you don't believe that we're way ahead of them these days, you just take a look at one of those mummies. Features haven't been preserved and coloring is bad." And I said, "But man! Those guys – those guys have been dead for thousands of years!"

And he said, "Well, in a few thousand years one of mine will have been, too." And he said, "His features won't be bad, and his coloring will be good."

He said, "We can do a better job than" – almost – "we used to do."

Well now, here's a steady – I'm talking to you about a relatively debased profession, but a highly remunerated one. And keeping the bodies off the streets and prettying up the loved ones and so forth is very highly paid. Preservation of memory and so forth is a very highly paid profession. And it has been continuous – it has been continuous for a very long time without its know-how dying away. Wherever there's been a civilization, they seem to have known the data of the last civilization on this, no matter how many wars have swept across the top of it and they deal it off the cuff and so forth. Why, even the ancient tribal rites, they would go find a dry cave that would automatically embalm the corpses of their loved ones.

So here's this – here's this very interesting technical line. That's a technical line, man. What you have to do in order to keep a corpse from going bad and what you have to do to and know about what killed this person and what he died of, so that you won't get all mixed up in your embalming activities and what you have to do in order to straighten all this out, or so forth. And how you're supposed to bury them and exactly how you're supposed to handle the grieving family and exactly how you were supposed to sell them the most for the – for the most, you know? These are technologies, no matter which way you look at it. They are very broad and they are very prec... exact and boy, do they wind up with a finite result! You know? You've got the body, you embalm it, you bury it, you collect your money. Thud! Very easily understood.

So that we would say that the subject is – a subject is not only remunerated to the degree of its need but also to the degree that it is understood by the public at large. It's remunerated to the degree that it is understood.

All right now. How about this longevity? How about this longevity? The continuing need of a purpose can then preserve a subject. The continuing need of the subject can preserve

the subject. If the subject continues to be needed, it will be preserved; that's a corollary of what I just gave you a few minutes ago. But the length of time that it gets preserved is entirely dependent upon the need of and the relay of its technology. You see, you must have the technology continue to be needed and the technology must also be relayed. If it continues to be needed it will be also relayed, which is all very – very fascinating; rather obvious.

But where you get a subject coming on down the line – where you get a subject coming on down the line across the millennia and so forth, it is only because its purpose is carried with it. Its purpose has gone along with it and its purpose is understood. Now, one could destroy that subject by destroying its purpose – no longer needed, you see – or by destroying the relay of its technology in some fashion or another; or in being too insistent or too – too forceful in relaying its technology and tacking lots of other things to its technology which didn't belong on it. In other words, "Before you can study engineering, you must have had a grammar school education, a high school education, gone to finishing school and learned how to knit." I can expect that will be about the next one, see?

You're not going to have any engineers after a while; all the bridges will start to fall down. Well, one of the reasons why you won't have any engineers after a while is very elementary, and it's contained in our own technology, but only in our own technology, the reason for this. And that is, you've given him too much takeoff. He's had too much of a run on takeoff and – and the longer in an – in education – let's get back on education now – the longer it takes to approach the education, the more opportunity there is for tacks on the runway. We could probably state that in a much more easily expressed way, but that's about the way it is. If this character is taking off, taking off, taking off, taking off, he's running on the runway, he's trying to get up speed, everybody is saying, "Well, you mustn't pull back on the stick yet. You must stay there on the runway and keep running on the runway, ready to take off, ready to take off, ready to take off, ready to take off." Well, by the time he's done this for about forty-five years and finds out he isn't off the ground, he doesn't take off.

The reason for that is, is the number of opportunities to fail are directly proportional to the length of the approach. That's a law: *Number of opportunities to fail are directly proportional to the length of approach*, or length of time that it is going to take to get up to where you're going to study this thing.

Now, that law is balanced by the fact that if you don't study something by gradients, a person can get into a mess by going into too high a gradient as I was talking about the other day. He went too steep, too quick. So there's – somewhere there is a proper length runway for any subject. It's a runway of the right length for the subject.

A runway of the right length for the subject, then, would not be so long that it needlessly multiplies the opportunities for failure and it had better not be so short that a person jumps a gradient and gets himself into a confusion. And what is the right length of a runway for any given subject? How much preparatory action should there be or how long should a course of study be and all of those things, those questions, are answered in this: Well, it should not be so long that it needlessly oppor... multiplies opportunities for failure and it should not be so short that it takes a person up too steep.

He'll fall off on his nose, like we used to do when I was in flying clubs in college. There's many a sad young man would pull back on the stick too quick. The evolution there was a "whipstall." Called a "whipstall" – technical term, aviation – you come up the line and you – there isn't enough forward speed to sustain the vacuum on the top of the wings, and you have just never seen an aircraft do anything quite as sickeningly funny as it does in a whipstall. It's flying along very, very nicely, and all of a sudden it's flying too slow, there's no longer any vacuum above the wing and it goes "*Whoof!*" It is fast! It's not for nothing it was called a whipstall. And of course, when you're only about 100 feet above the runway or something like that, and the edge of the field and so on, why, it – you don't develop enough speed in the process of falling to then be able to pull back on the stick and pull out of it. What they do is send a notice to your folks and get in touch with my old friend the medical examiner of New York.

Anyway, that's what happens to a student, see? He gets himself into a state of overconfidence or something like this and he pulls back on the stick and he hasn't had a long enough runway, he hasn't developed his speed, don't you see? In other words, he goes into too steep a gradient.

Now, Mary Sue did it the other night. She's studying typewriting, of all things. She typewrites pretty well, but she's decided – started to do touch-typing. And she's going to make the grade on the subject of touch-typing, hammer-pound – bang! And it's quite interesting. I ran an educational process on her for a very, very short period of time on this subject and busted the dam on this. I don't know that she's noticed it and – she isn't here just now; she wound up with lawyers, so – but she probably hadn't noticed that there is a coordination between her sudden interest in learning to touch-type and breaking the barrier on one of the old "too long a runway" propositions and "too short a gradient," too. I broke that with a process and now she's very interested in learning touch-typing and she's spending about an hour a night, with everything else she's got to do, sitting there hammer-pounding on a machine on a touch-typing basis. This is very difficult, because at the same time she uses the typewriter during the remaining hours to hunt and punch out notes, you see? So on the one hand she's busy touch-typing, you see, and the next, why, she's hunting and punching it out, you see, doing her work. And then she'll get back and she'll be touch-typing away.

I threw her. I gave her a metronome the other night and she suddenly conceived that her rhythm was off, which it was, and so forth. And she couldn't do anything with that metronome running. She said she had to shut that off right now. It was too high a gradient.

But she went onto the gradient of two rows of keys before she had licked one row of keys. Now, you see what I mean by too tight a gradient? This was too tough, see? And boy, did she whipstall! She whipstalled right now. And she just went into a total confusion. But knowing, now – yesteryear she simply would have quit; that would have been that – but knowing, now, the technology that we – that I've managed to get together here on the subject of education, she sits back and says, "Now, let's see, what did I do? Oh, yeah. Well, this is just too tough a gradient. I just went up on too high a gradient." She went back to one row, *patter, ta-patter, ta-patter, ta-patter* and then went over onto two rows and she had it, see? See, she – in other words, she moved up over that gradient smoothly.

So a person knowing this can actually guide his own traffic through very nicely. Nobody had to tell her that, don't you see?

All right. Then an educational subject is simply that something that winds up in a doingness and is approached by the process of getting educated in it. Now, that's a hell of a thing to have to say! But you know, hardly anybody really knows this. They don't really know it. They give it lip service all the time, but they're always engaging in activities which they do very badly and fail at like crazy and it never occurs to them they've never been educated in the subject.

I'll tell you something used to drive me stark, staring mad, down in Hollywood. Every director, every supervisor and as far as that's concerned, every actor on the set, they all knew how to be a writer. They knew – knew how to – they knew writing. They could all write stories. The place was just lousy with writers. You want to know why Hollywood never got out of kindergarten on stories; that's just because of it. They never recognized that it's a technology; it's a professional technology which is studied like crazy. It has more ins and outs and ramifications; actually it has quite a terminology. But all these birds knew they knew how to write. It wasn't anything you ever had to study, so of course if they did get a pro in their midst – and Hollywood developed very few professional writers, in fact it developed no professional writers. They come in from elsewhere and go to pieces. Well, the process is done by everybody there knowing the profession of the fellow who just arrived. See, he's a writer, he's a professional, he arrives, everybody else knows his profession.

Well, now, he won't give the movies the beingness necessary to realize that maybe movie writing has a few tricks of the trade, too, so of course he looks a little bit stupid to these people, whereas he's not stupid at all. He just hasn't learned that particular specialty of his own subject, which he could learn rather rapidly. And Hollywood, not realizing this, never bothers to teach him how to write for Hollywood. And they have never found out that it's necessary to be educated to know how to write.

So here's this wild profession which is sometimes remunerated to a fantastic degree and in which you can very easily starve to death and in which people grant you fantastic quantities of beingness and in which people ignore you utterly. So it is through all kinds of contradictions. What is a professional writer? Well, by test he's somebody who is successful and is getting his stuff published or at least read or viewed. But of all the subjects of the arts, this is the wildest one to have anything to do with because nobody grants it the beingness of having any technology.

And yet the boy who succeeds – you would be very interested – the boy who succeeds is not just somebody who wandered in with an idea. You go up to the Screen Writers Guild and you for – you find out that the reason education in writing has gotten a bad name is because it's taught in American universities. They have gone out and hired a bunch of failed writers. And failed writers either become editors or professors. And they dramatize their failure, by the way, and they try to make a writer fail. And I've never seen one do anything else. I beg your pardon, there have been a few that worked like mad, they were tremendously successful, whatever they had to do with succeeded and that sort of thing. But they weren't under the idea that they were writers. All these other birds still had this wild idea that they were

kind of writers, but here they were, editing, see? They weren't trained in it or if they had been trained in it, they'd failed at it.

Here's a chance subject. The whole society seems to run, to some degree, on the romances and imaginations and so forth of the writer. But you talk about a hidden piece of technical training. Well, the technical training of this field doesn't exist. If a professional writer wants a good laugh, if he wants just to lie right down in the aisle and laugh and laugh and laugh until his sides are sore, all he needs to do is read the curriculum of the professional writing classes of Princeton, for instance. You just double up in a ball. I mean, you – you can't help it. And I took the – a professional writing class at Harvard one time, and put them into paralysis. And I was told by the professor later, they never did recover.

I made the mistake – I was very young and very brash and of course when you're invited to lecture on your own subject, you see, at some very esoteric institution of this particular character, it rather goes to your head, and you chuck your weight around, you know? Particularly if you're very young and brash and me. [laughter] And so I stood up in front of this writing class, and I said to them, "I noticed your current subject here is style. Now, no writer really knows whether he has a style or not until he has sat down," and I was being very reasonable, "until he's sat down and written a couple of hundred thousand words. And by the time he's done that, he can probably detect in his work whether or not he has a style." From the professional writer's viewpoint this is the most reasonable statement ever made by anybody, because a pro, even – even Dickens would just think nothing of getting out a hundred thousand words in a month, see? Nothing!

I don't know where all this idea came from that they all write painfully with their blood while twisted in agony, see? They don't. They don't at all. If it took somebody seven years to write a great work, it's because he was drunk six and a half. [laughter] They write well, they write easily, and they write facilely. For instance, most of Dickens' stuff was written at the rate of 5,000 words a day. At one time I worked it out and handed it over to the press and it got national press. You saw that story kicking around and so forth. They thought less of his work then, of course, I suppose. But a writer can write. What better definition do you have for it, see? He can write easily, facilely and rapidly.

Well, all right, I said this to those poor blokes sitting there in their classroom and I noticed there was a sort of a shock went through the classroom. And it was very shortly after that, that I concluded my lecture and I didn't get hardly any applause. They were all sitting there sort of like statues, stunned. They didn't even bother to get up at the end of the bell. And finally one or two of them turned around to one or two of them, they muttered something or other. And the professor, who was a pretty good bloke, he came back and got me off the rostrum and walking out with me and so forth, and he said, "Well, you sure raised hell with that."

And I said, "Why? For pity's sakes, why? What is this all about?"

"Oh," he said, "they – they write 1500 words a semester."

And those people were upset, man! I was back there again, and that whole class, nobody even would speak to me. They were upset! They had thrown me overboard. I couldn't

possibly be a pro, you see? But yet my stuff was on the newsstands. But this must be a fluke. Something was wrong, because the data I'd given them must be wrong.

These birds had never been told that they should have to write! They were all being taught to be writers, but nobody had ever said to them: "Brother, write!" You understand? And I was the first one to announce to that class that were going into their fourth year that a writer should write. I don't know what a writer was supposed to do. He was supposed to discuss or he was supposed to do this or supposed to do that, but they – commercialism has a dirty word connected with it to such people and so forth. Why? It means hard work!

They don't disdain money. Never get those people wrong. They don't disdain anything that goes with it. They don't disdain being commercial or being anything else. It isn't their art they're holding on to. It's hard work to produce, to them. This is just too tough. So they had studied for four years and had not covered their first gradient, which is that you *do it!*

"We are now teaching you about ceramics. In the field of ceramics you make pottery and glass and other such objects. By the end of this course it will be expected that you will facilely and easily be able to make bits and pieces of pottery and tell things that are wrong with pieces of pottery that are not well made and so forth and you will know the technology of making pottery."

Somebody comes along and says, "Well, you're – you're really teaching a polytechnic subject," or something. No, no, man. Writing is simply cutting down trees, running Bulldozers, there's many a man out there digging a ditch that hasn't got the physical energy it takes to write. That's right. It's just another job. And when approached in that fashion, becomes reasonable and comprehensible and understandable, and you – then you sit down.

A writer isn't somebody who wears a red fez hat and blue slippers and smokes a pipe and gazes out the window. A writer is somebody who sits down to a desk with a pencil and a piece of paper or with a typewriter with some paper in it and he writes. What does he write? He writes what will be published and what will sell and what people will look at, because by definition a subject has to be accepted by the society in which it exists for it to be a professional subject.

Now, this is awful cold-blooded, hard-eyed looking. That's right down to earth. Now, I don't exaggerate when I say in a university they don't say this. The best professors will stand around and say, "Well now, when you're out in the field some day, and you're looking down that transit, don't blame me if you haven't got it level." No, they don't teach that way. They hand them a transit after class and tell them to go survey something and don't even give them a lecture on what the transit is, because it's some nasty object.

No, the tools of the trade are transits. Engineering: the tools of the trade are levels; the tools of the trade are big pieces of drawing paper and blueprints and bricks and pieces of steel and machines and bulldozers and tough foremen and shady contractors. These are the tools of the trade. They don't teach any course in "How to Keep Your Own Ethics While Working for the Bide-a-Wee Construction Company." They're not real, in other words. They've gone into some other never-never land.

So that was how I shocked the short story course at Harvard. And I never could figure out exactly why and how I had shocked them. It wasn't that I had told them too many words. That I assumed for a long time, but I know now, in studying education, what I had done. What I had done is simply told them that, "If you're studying writing, you write. You're expected to write. You're expected to turn out wordage." And it probably wasn't even in the phrase, "You won't know a style," because my whole talk was devoted to this single idea.

But it was when I finally gave them a quantity, right after what I meant by "words on a piece of paper." I remember standing up there on the rostrum calculating it rather rapidly. I said, "Well, I'll get some low figure that anybody in his right mind would be able to do in a few weeks, you know, and it won't buffalo anybody." So I said: "A couple of hundred thousand words," you know? "*Gaaargh!*" see? Well, that was what they went: "*Gaargh!*" But that isn't what the shock was contained in. The shock was contained in the fact that my whole address to the subject of writing is that you wrote and that a writer writes. And that was what the shock was in.

If you're going to be educated in a subject, you should be able to do it. Now, it's not a dirty word to do things. Now, you don't have to go on obsessively doing this the rest of your life. It is very confusing in this course that I've just taught. I've just been taught. The very best of these teachers have been thoroughly grounded in theory, and have worked like madmen with lots of doingness and lots of ramifications of it in their own field. Now, when you've got that combination, you've got a fellow, when he said something is so, there was something very believable about it because it was very right. It was very recognizable – he might not even know how to write well, but he could express this because it was his own subject and he knew what he was talking about.

Now you've got somebody who couldn't do it and that would show up – *gahhh!* Huge lights going up in all directions; the impracticalities of it, don't you see this? This bird – it's not the right emphasis. He doesn't tell you about the right things in the subject. He tells you about something that he thinks might be interesting, but he himself, through experience, doesn't know whether it would ever be useful or not, see? Makes a big thing out of some little thing, don't you see?

I had one the other day – it slips my mind right now, on – in this course. It had something to do with the fact the guy was just tearing – oh, yes! Yes! It was projection. It was the projection of transparencies. And if you had a screen six feet away, why – and a screen twelve feet away, then your light and density of the transparency – your light was, of course, much less on the screen twelve feet away for – not only because the footage was increased, but because it was more distant and therefore the density of the transparency was very important for projection. And transparencies had to be very, very carefully developed and printed and so forth, in their positive form, in order to overcome these differences of – I was – it was one of these boys. He was a little more esoteric than the others. Well boy, he was talking right up a... and Reg, did we have any trouble projecting any old kind of a transparency over there at the circus in the dead black of an open room at an unthinkable distance, up to a size of twelve by twelve?

Well, if you'd listened to this guy very carefully you would have gotten the impression through... he, of course, didn't have the experience; he never had probably given a lantern slide in his life. You know, it's an old technology, lantern slide shows. It is the immediate grandpappy of the cinema, see? But this boy had probably never given one, so he gives this terrific stress of how careful you've got to be to get this point at which – it doesn't matter. It doesn't matter how thick a transparency is, as long as it's a viewable transparency. It doesn't matter how dense it is or how thick it is or how hard it is to look through, if it's too far away, get a brighter light. And the thing has a solution. That's all. Put another lamp in it.

You don't do it in the darkroom, in other words. You do it while you're projecting it, but he didn't know this fact so he makes this big, labored halfpage that you have to sweat through about printing transparencies and making sure that you know beforehand at what distance they're going to be projected, because it makes so much difference between the – oh, no! You get the idea? Now, if this bird had been – had ever done this or had had much to do with this, he wouldn't make a mistake like that. So you – what you do is get wrong emphasis.

So true knowledge will give a correct emphasis and only a theoretical knowledge will give wrong emphasis. And I imagine the universities by this time are absolutely strewn with wrong emphasis. And you can keep moving something farther and further afield with wrong emphasis, up to a point of where the technology practically gets lost. Wrong emphasis, wrong emphasis, wrong emphasis! Maddening!

In other words, "Be very careful, now, about the varnish on your E-Meter. Now, E-Meters are varnished and we're going to go through, now, the next three weeks of study on the manufacture of varnishes for E-Meters."

Well, it's a matter of how unreal can you get? It doesn't have anything to do with the subject matter at all. Just because there is some varnish in a session – it probably never occurred to you till this moment there was any varnish in a session. [laughter] Somebody makes a big deal out of this, you see? He says – he figures out, because varnish is shiny, he figures out that light falling on this might possibly influence the preclear into being distracted by the meter. He's read someplace that something or other, you see? He's figured out that this must be true, but actually an experienced auditor would tell you that he has never had this complaint from any pc every place, so it's not a problem, so why solve it?

So these unrealities simply consist of this, and this is a very precise definition. Unrealities enter when an educational activity teaches solutions to problems which don't exist or fails to solve problems that do exist. And the mean between those is what should be taken up. And the one thing that gives this is experience.

Some bird has the – he has the activity of carving stone heads out of the mountain: Gutzon Borglum. He... this is it. I imagine you could go up and you could learn more con-founded things from a bird like that. I imagine he's got it down. But he'd expect you to have a whole grounding in the field of the world of arts and sculpting before you even got there. But nevertheless, there's probably a lot of specialized doodle-daddle that he would tell you all about, like, "You can tell whether that particular piece of rock that you're going to go into has a crack in it by the fact that there's discoloration of the pattern of it," and so forth, and this would all be very good, you see? Well, he's solving something real. You start to carve a

cracked rock and it goes "crack." And this is very disastrous, particularly when you've only got one mountain to cut up. You can't order another mountain.

So this is probably a very important problem. And you go out there again and you look it over and he's got a new assistant who has been taught all about how to fix up faces and heads in mountains by somebody who never did. And now, Gutzon Borglum is faced with the fact that he's got to train this – first he's got to untrain this assistant and he's got to train him again, so he's just got about twice the job on his hands, you see?

This bird's been taught that it's very, very bad to smoke at heights because it destroys your aesthetic sense. Has nothing to do with carving faces out of a mountain, see? Carving faces out of a mountain doesn't require very much aesthetic sense. It requires a lot of leaning on these great big "widow maker" pneumatic drills and blasting powder and it's a very violent activity. There's lots of motion and mass and doingness connected with it, you see?

But somebody that would never do it, he'd teach, "Well, you have to be very careful of your aesthetic sense," and so forth, and *blyehhh!* see? He'd try to extrapolate a subject with which he had no acquaintance and that would be a very difficult thing to try to do, to teach a subject with which you had no acquaintance. And yet, apparently it is not – it is very difficult to do, but it is always being done. And it's given higher education a bad name today in many areas – it's given it a very bad name, because they're always being taught by people who haven't done it.

And I have really learned my lesson in this photography course. Boy, I can see one of these birds coming up in the textbook a mile away now, and I – *ahhhh!* I say, "Ronnie, here we gooooo! *Wharoom!* We are now going to solve all sorts of problems that don't exist, and we're going to not have any solutions for the problems that do exist, but all of this will be stated in such a way that it's impossible to extract any meaning out of it anyway. But you will have to extract the meaning out of it unless you want to get barriered or blocked on this particular subject." Now, isn't that an interesting problem?

So it makes about seven times the amount of study, just easily seven times the amount of study that should be there. He doesn't know what he's talking about, but you have to know what he's talking about, so you have to read his subject and then sort of dream up one and figure it out for yourself against your practical applications. It's a bum show.

So all subjects, regardless of whether people call them "pure mathematics" or "pure art" or something like that, all subjects wind up in a finite doingness, a very specific doingness; all subjects wind up in a specific doingness if they are educational subjects in which a person can get educated. And if they do not wind up with a specific doingness, a person, no matter how long he studied them, couldn't become educated in them.

Now, this isn't just for the definition of the word *education*. I haven't given it that meaning. I mean, you could go on and on and on, and feel more and more baffled and more and more baffled by this particular subject and so forth. Well, it is not a subject in which somebody could become educated. Do you follow that? Well, that's your bafflement. You're trying to become educated and it's impossible, because it doesn't wind up in a finite doingness.

So, anything that winds up in a finite, specific doingness – that's a measurable, you know? It has limits and actions. Anything that winds up in a finite doingness is susceptible to being educated. In other words, you can educate it. But if it doesn't wind up that way, a person cannot become educated in it, no matter how hard he studies it because there isn't any way he can ever check out if he ever learned anything. So it becomes a total significance for which the mass is absent; and education in the absence of the mass in which the technology will be involved is hard on people. Education attempted in the absence of the mass is hard on the student. It's very tough on the student.

It makes him feel – physiologically, it makes him feel squashed; actually, actually makes him feel squashed, makes him feel bent, makes him sort of spinny. It – these are all physiological and mental reactions; makes him feel sort of dead, makes him feel bored, exasperated, makes him feel a lot of different ways. This isn't the only way a person can become those, by a long ways, but that is the result of studying the doingness of something in which the mass is absent. The mass of it is absent. Do you understand? You could understand that you were studying nothing, and therefore you would not expect any mass, so that probably wouldn't upset you; but you're studying tractors and you ain't got no tractors; no tractors and you're studying tractors.

Photographs help. Motion pictures would help. They would do pretty good, because they're something of the mass. They're a sort of a promise or a hope of the mass. But the printed page and the spoken word are not a substitute for a tractor! Remember that.

And this isn't the old argument, "Of course, we know that a person has to have something of the stuff they're studying around them." No, no it isn't – it isn't even into the area of your – your practical, and so forth. Don't look for a further explanation for this datum, because you have to understand this datum in its purity. And that is simply that educating a person in a mass which they don't have and which isn't available produces physiological reactions. That is what I'm trying to teach you. I'm not even saying it should be done or shouldn't be done. I'm just saying it produces physiological reactions. That's just a fact. You understand?

You're trying to teach this fellow all about tractors and you're not giving him any tractors. Well, he's going to wind up with a face that feels squashed, he's going to wind up with headaches, he's going to wind up with his stomach feeling funny, he's going to feel dizzy from time to time, his eyes are very often going to hurt and so forth.

Now, have I got this datum across? It's a physiological datum. It has to do with processing and the field of the mind.

So therefore you could expect that you would get the greatest incidence of suicide or illness in that field of education most devoted to studying absent masses. Clever, huh? And therefore I can tell you, knowing that datum, exactly what the French educational system consists of. I don't even believe they would be permitted to have a desk in the room if they were studying desks. I think the teacher's first action would be to have all desks removed from the room and then he would teach them the theory of desks.

Now, one of the ways you get away with it, I talk to you, for instance, in these lectures. You are looking at somebody who does have a mind and you're looking at a body and it's very live, so you've got more mass actually, in a lecture, than you have in a bulletin. You'd probably much rather be lectured to, live, don't you see, than you would be to a bulletin. All right, your second best is you've got the mass of the tape and the sound and that probably isn't so bad, but it starts reducing on down to a silence and a nowhere-ness, and a – so forth, and about that time you'd start to feel bad. And then if you were studying somebody without ever having them there – have you ever read a bulletin, for instance, and suddenly recognized something about the pc you were auditing? You actually have an impulse to go find him or her. Well, to the degree that you don't do that, you get upset. You've got an applied mass now, but you haven't got the thing there that it directly and immediately applies to, so your tendency is to go find it.

All right, one must understand that this phenomenon exists, because there is another series of phenomena that exists which are physiological, which are based on the fact of too steep a gradient. That's another source of physical or physiological study reaction, because too steep a gradient. And this is a sort of a confusion or a reelingness, goes on this and it's probably – a distinct physiological reaction, distinct from the other. Now, I confess to you, I haven't bothered to make a table of which gives which, but I'm just telling you that there is a distinction which could be drawn between these two things.

And then there is the third one of the physiological reaction brought about through – an entirely different one now; an entirely different set of physiological reactions are predicted to exist in this field – a bypassed definition. And the bypassed definition gives you distinctly a blank feeling, a washed-out feeling, a not-there feeling and a sort of a nervous sort of an hysteria will follow in, in back of that. Those are some of the physiological-mental reactions that follow this definition.

In other words, I'm talking now about the fact that you'd know whether somebody was jamming you in the arm with a pin, or hitting you on the toe with a hammer. Well, these are two different physical reactions, two different physiological reactions, see? Well, I've just given you three sources of physiological reaction to aspects of study and they are three different areas of study and they are three different sets of symptoms. And I haven't bothered to bring it out in a table form, but – I haven't read it or studied it enough to bring it out in a table form, but I recognize the differences which exist.

There might be a fourth and fifth, you understand? I'm not giving you this as the total grouping. These are the three I know, and know exist, and know that are important.

You've got the one, where – this is the least upset ones of the thing but it produces the most distinctly recognizable actions, and you'll wonder in vain at what is producing this if you didn't know it, and that is, it's just studying something without its mass ever being around or its space ever being around or something. Let's say you're studying a sky and nobody ever lets you look at a sky. You've never got a sky to look at, don't you see? Something like that. You can study a mind because you know that the mind has an invisibility and contains certain amount of masses and that sort of thing but you understand that and you do have minds around and it's quite obvious that you have a mind in front of you when you're auditing the pc,

don't you see? But if you were studying this all off in some ivory tower in Austria or in Bellevue Hospital or someplace else where they don't have any minds, you would very soon find yourself experiencing these reactions, see? They'd be "zuuuu!" and so forth.

The manifestation of "blow" stems from the third one of the misunderstood definition, or the not comprehended definition, the undefined word and so forth. That's what produces "blow." A person doesn't necessarily blow on these other two. They're not pronouncedly blow phenomena. They're simply physiological phenomena.

Well, you could therefore make a child feel sick or well in the field of study. Now, that gives you a whole table of what you could do. Little Johnny is having an awful time in school with his arithmetic. Well, obviously, let's get him some apples and give each one of them a number and he's got a number of apples in front of him and there are no longer a theoretical number of apples. Let's give him the mass of what he is studying, see? See? We find out, suddenly, that he had a problem that involved apples and by golly, he never had any apples on his desk to count. You understand? You know, we'll trace it back to an absence of mass, see? Or we could supply the mass, which is – I'm trying to give you the positive remedy – we could supply mass, we could supply an object or a reasonable substitute and we'd find out that first one I gave you there would cure up.

The remedy for the second one is cutting back. Find out when he was not confused on the gradient: what new action he undertook to do. Now, that's a – that's a doingness level, that gradient. Or what action he understood well and let's find the missing point right in what he understood well. Just before he was all confused, what did he understand well? And then we find out that he didn't understand it well. See, it's really – it's really at the tail end of what he understood well, and after that he went over the gradient, see?

All right, but that is most recognizable and most applicable in the field of doingness. The individual is suddenly asked to learn handling his sensitivity control and he has been getting along just dandy watching the needle of the E-Meter swing to the left and right and now he's all confused about the sensitivity control. Well, there is something wrong with the E-Meter's needle swinging back and forth. Don't go over and try to explain the sensitivity control. Because he doesn't misunderstand the sensitivity control. You have hit too steep a gradient. It was too much of a jump, because he didn't understand what he was doing and he jumped to something next and that was too steep and it went too fast and he will assign all of his difficulty to this new thing. So that's true in this gradient, see? That's true of gradients.

Now differentiate, because gradients, here, sounds terribly like definitions. But remember that they are quite distinctly different. Gradients are more pronounced in the field of doingness, but they still hang off in the field of understandingness. But it is the action that we are interested in, in gradients, where we have a plotted course of forward motion. See, we've got a plotted course, he should go through this, he should go through that and then he's supposed to go through that. And we find out that he was terribly confused on the second one he went through. Well, we must assume that he never got out of the first one. That's the gradient approach. And that is one whole set of phenomena accompanies that and it looks awfully like this other one.

But this other one is so much more important than the gradient approach – which you only run into the intimacies of actually training somebody – this other one is so much more important, the last one, than gradients, that it's the woof and warp and the make-up of human relations, the mind, subjects. It establishes talent, it establishes aptitude, lack of aptitude, it's what the psychologists have been testing for years and it's all of this balderdash. And that's just the definitions of words: the misunderstood word. That's about all it goes back to: the misunderstood word. And that produces such a vast panorama of mental effects, that it itself is the prime factor involved with stupidity, the prime factor involved with many other things. If a person weren't this way, his talent might or might not be present, but his doingness would be present. See, he might not paint a great picture, but he'd be painting pictures.

So, his aptitude in being able to do it would have something to do with his sensitivity, have something to do with a little bit more, you see? You know? We're – we can't say that Joe would paint as well as Bill if both of them were unaberrated on the field of art, see? That's an unreasonable assumption. But we can say that the inability of Joe to paint compared to the ability of Joe to make the motions of painting, is dependent *exclusively and only* upon definitions. I'll go over that again; *exclusively, only upon definitions. There is some word in the world of art that the person who is inept didn't define or understand. And that was followed by an inability to act in the field of arts.*

That's *very* important, because it tells you what happens to doingness. And the restoration of doingness depends only upon the restoration of the misunderstood word; the misunderstood definition.

This is very fast processing, it's a very swift, wide, big result is obtainable in this. It has a technology which is a very simple technology. It enters in at the lower levels, because it has to. It'll probably be discussed at Level I, and it will be memorized and done at Level II. And it will be followed on up the line, but because it is low grade does not mean it is unimportant. It means it has to be at the entrance gates of Scientology, that's all it means. But it is a sweepingly fantastic discovery in the field of education. And don't neglect it.

You can trace back the subject he is dumb in or any allied subject he's got mixed up with it and you'll find out why the psychologist cannot understand Scientology. There is nothing wrong with Scientology, there was everything wrong with psychology. He never understood a word in psychology, so he doesn't ever move over into Scientology.

Got the idea?

Audience: Yes.

Well, that opens the gate to education, so although I've given it last along that line, that is the most important one.

Okay?

Audience: Yes.

Thank you.

THE PE COURSE

A lecture given on 1 September 1964

Glad to see you, too!

All right, then this is the what?

Audience: First of September.

One Sept. AD 14, Saint Hill Special Briefing Course, 1 September.

Well, the Research Department slipped, I don't see any lecture lying here on the desk in front of me to be read calmly. I don't know what to talk to you about today. You know everything there is to know and some of it true, some of it not so true. [laughter] I've been recently sorting out PE. And I'd better give you a bit of a talk about it and I won't say this whole lecture's about it, but I'll just give you a few thoughts in passing here.

And I found out some interesting data out of the field of study that particularly relates to PE. It naturally follows that if all of the students who come to a PE course are given incomprehensible words, they will then go away and that will be that. And I think that is really the sole and total loss of new people into PEs. That's just all there is to it. I mean, it's a simple little package that you can put a red frame around and hang it up on the wall in the PE Instructor's office or across from your own desk and you'd have it made.

You're going to think there are lots of reasons. But that is the reason why you start in on Monday with fifteen people and wind up on Friday with two people. You see? Or no people. It's just to the degree that you have not found or used or given them words they didn't understand. It's as simple as that. That we should learn this with all of our technology and numerous nomenclature in Scientology is quite fabulous but it just shows that I'm laying a foundation for being an honest man. Self-criticism is a virtue. And we have done this rather consistently and I now find out that it is a glaring and terrible error. Only it is not an error necessarily in our framework. It is an error in general in the whole field of study.

Now, what does this – what does this bring about here? Now, this brings about a datum that you would not expect to find in a lecture on a PE course because I'm not lecturing to PE students. It says what has been discovered here is the prior act to the overt. This gives you a brand-new piece of that very, very important thing called an overt-motivator sequence. The overt-withhold sequence. All of that data is suddenly illuminated.

Before there is an overt there is a noncomprehend. Anytime you find an overt you'll find a noncomprehend preceded it. It's preceded. So it's as elementary as that. So an overt sequence goes, in exactly this fashion: A noncomprehend and its commonest, most usual form is simply a misunderstood word – a noncomprehend that can usually be traced to a misunder-

stood word. So you're going to get into some sequence, that's something like this: a misunderstood word, a noncomprehend, a belief that it's okay to commit an overt, a commission of the overt, the withhold of the overt, an attack or a withdrawal. Now, this can be in magnitude or this can be slight. In other words, you – an overt sequence can go with exclamation points or it can go in light print, you understand? It can mount up to a big overt, it can mount to a little overt. But the final analysis of the thing is it amounts to a blow or an attack. It's as simple as that. It's very elementary.

So, we have a new illumination of the overt sequence. Now we know this: that when the auditor sits down and asks somebody for an overt act, and the pc gives him a critical thought, the auditor thinks he's got an overt act and so buys it and so never gets the overt. Do you follow that? That is a common auditor error.

All right, so let's trace it back from that error in a session and let's see where we wind up. The pc is asked for an overt act and gives a critical thought. He thought something critical. All right, the auditor that lets it sit there has not pulled the overt. Because that critical thought is a symptom of an overt having been committed. All right, now, let's back it up one and the auditor then says, "All right, fine. I heard you. You've thought so-and-so. Very good. Now, what overt have you committed?" The pc, you see, has not answered the auditing question. He's been asked for a committed overt. And he has given a critical thought. And believe me, that's not an overt.

So, we trace it back to that point of the overt and he dropped a flatiron on the person's foot. All right, we pull that. Now, that produces a sufficiently salient result that we as practical practitioners, in this particular field, would be rather satisfied. But interestingly enough, that just prior to dropping the flatiron on somebody's foot there's a noncomprehend, and just prior to the noncomprehend there's a misunderstood word. So you'll find that those four steps are present in any overt you find in any pc. Fascinating, isn't it?

Now, let's examine something else. Let's examine something else here. We've got a situation where a psychologist sits down in a Scientology course. He can't learn. Actually, I'm now giving you a datum, not a criticism. This is just data. This has happened over and over and over. They have the hardest time of anybody you ever had anything to do with. They come in and one poor girl who was a major in psychology – actually had her doctor's degree, sat in an Academy course, in the Comm Course, for eight weeks and managed to get up to TR 1 – eight weeks – TR 1. So it is not a criticism that I'm giving you here, but actually just the plain, bald data. This has happened too often.

Well, let's look this over. You say, well, Scientology is so far afield and adrift from the things that she studied – look how we can rationalize, see. Just like an auditor sitting there saying – saying this, that and the other thing, the auditor has given them the business on criticism. You see, "I've had a critical thought," and so on. Well, you get a big rationalization and the auditor says, of course, that's very reasonable, and then we do a figure-figure-figure on how it is so reasonable, and so forth. Well, we're – it's a disease known as reasonability.

We can pull it in this one, too: There was a real reason why that person sitting in that Academy course couldn't learn and you couldn't have gotten it on a – being reasonable, "Well, of course, of course," because no matter how reasonable you get you don't solve anything.

That's very important about – to know about being reasonable about it all. It really doesn't solve a thing. When you've got somebody who is totally civilized and totally this and total effete and totally gone and he's long wound up and so forth, why, his final stage is being reasonable about everything. He can't do anything about anything, but he can be reasonable.

And you fall into that trap, see. Guy's run over by a truck, see, because the careless driver and the bad licensing in the – in the traffic office and so forth, so he's run over by a truck and he lies under the truck wheels and is reasonable about why he's been run over by a truck, don't you see? That's – it's fascinating, but this is a sort of a disease that a civilized person gets into. They're reasonable about everything.

Now, because we can be so darn reasonable and say this psychology student of course is having trouble in Scientology because it's so different than the terminology and so forth they used in psychology, that we wouldn't look for the real answer. And the real answer is in the field of the associated subject. This is all, incidentally, germane to PE but a lot of other things it's germane to, too. Ah, there have been subjects which have been associated, which are associatable with Scientology. Oh, yes. Healing, education, religion, psychology, these things always – all have an associative point, you see. It's – they're related. You're dealing with cousins. And it didn't do any good being reasonable about this psychologist because it wouldn't have trained him. We forget the end view – person who can't make his goals anymore, he can be reasonable.

All right, well, if you really find out what the score is with regard to this thing, why, he no longer has to be reasonable, he can do something about it. Psychology is an associated subject to Scientology and you must assume that when that person sat down in the class and couldn't understand Scientology that they never understood psychology. And when you're trying to cure this person up and teach him Scientology you're wasting your time, because the misunderstood word is in psychology.

We don't care if they went through to the end product of a degree and so forth in psychology. This didn't guarantee anything because modern education does not require that one does anything or accomplish anything. One simply is reasonable about the subject matter and can regurgitate it properly on an examination paper and one immediately gets his degree. In other words, no practice or action is ever demanded. The engineer does not have to build a bridge before he's labeled "bridge builder," see? That's that hole in education. So they would never notice this.

The person could say the right words and give the right answers somehow or another and so he got labeled and so forth. But this didn't mean that he understood the subject.

All right, let's examine this field of psychology. What is there to misunderstand in the field of psychology? Now, we're tracing this fellow down so he can understand himself some Scientology, see, and we'd have to go about it in a processing session in this fashion. And it'd have to be processing, I make that point. You could never do this in training, because this is auditing.

You can tell the fellow to do some certain things, but realize you're – tell him to go back and look up the words in psychology which he didn't understand and look them up and find out what those are, it'll brighten him up. Oh, yes, but that would be assigning him self –

auditing, which is perfectly okay but remember, you're assigning him auditing. The second you depart from the immediate field on the clay table in training of the exact nomenclature the student is being taught, you are into processing. Because you have departed from this.

When you get somebody to define the word memory in the Academy, you is doin' wrong! Because that is not a Scientology technical word. You understand? The way you do clay table training is you take this word "as-is" because it's in an Axiom. You take this word "Scientology" and you take this word "engram," you take this word "facsimile," you understand? And you don't take such words as mind because that's a general term, not a Scientology particular term. So in training somebody on a clay table in Scientology you would only take up the particular terms of Scientology. It's just Scientology. And clay table training is entirely different than Clay Table Processing. Clay Table Processing is done, "Yes, yes, yes, of course, all right. Represent the object." Session, see? Clay table training is, "Make up the word 'Scientology' in clay." Maa, maa, maa, maa, so on and so on, makes a little blob and throws it down in the middle of the table and writes "Scientology" on the top of it. This is not an auditing session, this is a training session. He hasn't got an auditor, he's got a coach. And what does the coach say? The coach says, "Flunk. Flunk."

"Well, I don't see why you're flunking me and so forth. I understand a glob of clay is Scientology and *rrrrrr*."

"Well, nevertheless I'm flunking you." [laughter]

"All right. Why are you flunking me?"

"Look, I don't understand how that represents Scientology. Now, let's go at it again."

The guy – so on, so on, so on, so on, so on, so on, he finally makes something – that's just a test of whether or not the coach understands it. Coach finally understands it, why, he figures out the guy probably understands it, so he says, "All right, that's fine. Good." That's not an auditing session – training is mainly evaluation. In training you tell the guy what's wrong with him, in training you tell him what the definition is – not in auditing. Auditing is a different approach. We unfortunately are in two fields simultaneously, see, and we're asking the same guy that trains to also audit occasionally. Well, he's got to learn to shift his gears. An auditor never sits there and when the pc has got his representation of so-and-so and so-and-so the auditor never says "Flunk." The auditor says, "Fine, fine. I don't quite understand that. Could you show me a little more, tell me a little more about it?" And of course, the thing shifts around, the guy realizes he hasn't done it. It's a different guiding principle entirely.

All right, so teaching this psychologist what he missed in psychology, by definition of clay table work, is auditing, because you've immediately departed the field of Scientology, you got that? You're gone. So you're into an auditing session, you're on his backtrack, see, you're way over the hills and far away. So if you haven't got an auditing session going to handle this you're just going to lose him.

All right, let's see what there is one is not capable of defining easily in psychology. And we'd audit this on the person. We could assign it to him as a self-auditing session but – and you would in PE. You just say, well, this guy's natter-natter-natter all during the first day, you know *nyah, nyah, nyah, nyah*. And you're teaching him and you're teaching him some

fabulous thing like the definition of Scientology, and he just doesn't understand it and so on, *nyah, nyah*. You've seen them in PE.

The right gear for the Instructor is, "Sir, what – what – what similar field have you studied to Scientology?"

"Oh, uh – well, uh – I had three years in psychology."

"Very good. Well, look, could – could we realize something here? That actually, it's – you're not having any difficulty with Scientology, you're having difficulty with psychology. Would you realize that please?" It's a PE *course*. Now, a course can assign auditing. But it doesn't audit. "All right, you've been in psychology. Very good. All right, now, could we request, could we please request that you look up some of the words in psychology which you did not understand and write them down on a sheet of paper and go down to the local library and look the things up and see if you can't get that untangled."

And you'll find out that handles it just like bang. You can be very polite about it. "Now, for the minute can we lay that aside," you've already told him it was psychology he was upset about. "Can we lay that aside now and get on with Scientology, which is really a different subject?" And you're not going to hear another word out of that boy. You've assigned him self-auditing, see, which is, "Make a list of words you didn't understand and go and look them up." See, that's a self-audit. But you can assign him that. And you'll find out that forcefully shuts him up. And you no longer have to contend in a PE with the natterer. That ends him. This you do.

Now, when I say a natterer I mean a person who's just consistently uncomfortable, who seems to be trying to – you can tell him, they say, "Well, what does this have to do with theosophy?" Well, man, ask yourself what – what good is it to know this point? This point has no validity, it tells you that he's stuck in theosophy, he hasn't understood telekinesis or something, see. He's flying around on cloud ten. And I'd just take this boy who is busy nattering and "*wloo-wlff-wlaa* I can't..." and I that's... I'd just assign him that self-audit, see, like that, and the steps are very precise; they're not cloudy – is "What similar field to Scientology have you been studying in the past?"

And he says, "Well, I was in theosophy."

"All right, would you please realize that you're not really having any trouble understanding Scientology, obviously, because I haven't taught you any. You must be having a great deal of trouble with theosophy and would you make a list of the words in theosophy which you did not understand and between now and the next time you come to class go down to the local library and look them up and get their definitions straight. Would you do that for me please? Thank you very much. Are there any more questions?"

That's a precise action, see. That runs off, *brrrrrr* – phonograph recordwise. And you'll find out that just handles that right now.

All right now, let's differentiate between that bird, and the fellow who says, "Scien... Scien... Scientology?" Different time period, recognize it as such, this guy is dealing with a term right here in the course which you are teaching. He's dealing with that term right now and he's grappling with it, and he's trying to understand it and the answer to that again is a

one – two – three – four – just like this. You say, "Now, what word have I used, sir, on this course, that you haven't understood?" And he sits there and he thinks.

"Huh. Oh yeah – yeah, permissive. Yeah, what's *permissive*?"

You say, "All right, it's an English word, it means without force, without duress, let him do as he pleases."

"Oh, is that what it means?"

"All right, very good. All right, now let's get back to *Scientology* here." And he'll find out, "*Scientology*, yeah, well, that's *scio*, yeah, I got that." You got it? See, that's a different drill. All you have to be able to differentiate is the difference between the bird who is saying *nyah, nyah, nyah, nyah, nyah* because he hasn't had time to gather this against Scientology so it must be against some other target. See, and the bird who is – who is trying to – trying to dig it. The bird who's trying to – trying to – trying to dig it up one way or the other.

Got it? So there's two different reactions. Now, actually there's a third reaction, there's a third reaction that's very important – is the "nodder." [laughter] Hasn't got a clue! And is just going on, you know, "Yes, yes, yes." And the Instructor in a PE *always* overlooks this person. Because this person causes no trouble, this person is the perfect student. Could probably put it all down on a piece of paper again too or something but really hasn't a clue.

Now, we get over this in PE by asking for written illustrations of the points made. And this is the backflow which we should get. So they keep a sheet of paper, and during the term of the instruction there, periodically, every time you've made a big point, something like this, then they have to sit there for a very few minutes – don't make it too long – and scribble down an illustration of that point taken from existence, from real life. And this lets them participate and backflow. And at the end of that period of training, that is to say the evening instruction, at the end of the lecture and so forth, you get that back. You collect those papers and you'll be able to spot the nodder. Because they could tell you almost verbatim sometimes what you said, but to apply it or associate it to the real universe is quite beyond them, and you don't have to look at those papers very thoroughly. You just look them over for the reality of an example. Look at about the third example you have asked for. If it bears any resemblance whatsoever they're doing fine. The nodder will give you one that bears no resemblance; particularly that deep into the hours of lecture. It will bear no resemblance.

You've given them a big point here, you see. You've said that "A thetan is taken from the Greek word *theta* which means thought. And the Greek word *theta* – out of the Greek letter *theta* stood for the Greeks for this thing *thought*. Now, give me an example from your experience of the word *thought*."

Well, "worrying" is good enough, see, so he writes down "worrying" or something like that. Well, they've got the idea, you see. The nodder will say "being kind," or will say something else that's... How, how...? All the Instructor would have to do is, "How the devil does that exemplify it?" And then having gotten that clue out of it you examine two or three others, and you've got this person cold. You'll find out that it's just a total unreality and they have not connected with something there somewhere; they're lost.

So you write on the paper, "Give me a list of the words you have not understood since the course began." And you take these, when you get these words back and so forth, you use that as your instructional or seminar type thing. It's the words they haven't understood. You simply redefine them, you simply define them again – you take it up. In other words, you just go in very heavy on the subject of words. You get the cycle here now?

The person – all the students are asked to write down examples, and at the end of each period of training – such as an evening – you collect all those papers with the student's name and so forth on it, you see. And then the Instructor, all the Instructor has to do with these things is glance them over rather rapidly to see whether or not those examples are applicable and have anything to do with it, and if he finds anybody whose examples are just for the birds, then when he hands the papers back, why, he gives a special assignment to this person to write down all the words in the course which this person has not understood. That's just – that's your drill, see, that's the drill – *zzzzzzt*.

Now, when you get that list back, you use such lists as that. You say, when do you do this? Well, you can actually skip a night or two with it, it doesn't matter, because this person's going to come back because they're waiting to hear about the rest of the assignment, see. And you take these words up. You'll find out that probably somebody else had a hazy idea of them, too. And this means that a PE course has one of these cracking, great, big, unabridged, two-ton dictionaries. Don't teach a PE course out of the Bible, teach it out of the dictionary. [laughter]

And you'll find out that that'll be very successful; and you won't lose people. All you have to be is alert to this one point. It goes back to the first definition I gave you, and these are just the ramifications of what you do when you run into it, see. Be sure that every student understands every word he's given. And your very, very backward student has failed to understand a similar subject. The natterer, the guy who's going to give you trouble, and the person who's just having immediate trouble right here, right now, he's hung up on not the word he thinks he's hung up on. He's hung up on a word that happened just ahead of that word. And you've got to point this up to him. And he's got to give you what this is. You understand?

It – he's not necessarily – you don't exp... you can get into just endless upset by continuing to explain the word the student is asking about. Go ahead and explain it, but don't get to running on a treadmill on it because that isn't the word the student misunderstands. So you and the student have gotten into a gay minuet that had nothing to do with the ball. Because that student is hung up on this word because the student had an earlier word he didn't understand and that's why he can't get this word. And he isn't mentioning the earlier word because he hasn't noticed he didn't understand it. So you've got to point this point up. Do you see how this is taught, then? I notice some of you look a little blank. It's actually pretty easy. You've just got to be sure that you don't then ever get involved in one of these floor discussions with the PE course.

The natterer is going to cut the whole class to ribbons and distract all this attention. The person who didn't understand this particular term that you're using, or principle, he probably goes over to an understanding, he didn't understand this concept. No, it is not a concept he didn't understand, it was a word. And he's going to talk and the Instructor is going to

ruin his vocal chords trying to explain this one concept or something to the student and the student doesn't understand it more and more and it gets more and more...

Well, it *will* get more and more involved because that isn't what the student misunderstood. It's something that happened just before that, that the student misunderstood. There's how you handle these various aspects and don't forget the nodder.

All right. Now, you get a PE course rolling along, you just keep up this cycle, and as long as you're just teaching them very straight, highly defined Scientology, you're all right, you're all set. And you can just keep it rolling.

Now, I will make this comment about a PE course. What would you think of somebody who told you to come to a course so that you could understand all about the automobile and of course you didn't know anything about an automobile, you'd really never seen one but you'd heard dimly about automobiles and you thought this was kind of an interesting subject. Something that ran along the ground at tremendous speeds. And you'd like to know more about this thing, and see if – this fellow said he was going to teach you a course and you were going to come in there and he was going to tell you all about this automobile. And so you happily went over to this course.

And then he spent the next five nights telling you why you should know about this automobile. How do you like that? How good it was to know about automobiles or any other ramification. The direct forte is, of course, to know about an automobile. So in a PE you teach them about Scientology, not how good Scientology is or how bad Scientology is or *arrrghorso* whether Scientology's big or small or anything else. You teach him just about Scientology, see. And you're all set. Don't get into these other involved arguments.

Look at this fellow who's going to teach you about the automobile and he gave you everything else. No, no. But look at how happy you would be with a course that was going to teach you all about the automobile, you didn't know anything about an automobile, you thought that was a good thing. So you go in, the Instructor says, "Those are the front wheels, *front wheels*, they go around – wheels, see. And they go around and they got tires on them. And that travels over the ground and that cushions the shock and these are shock absorbers under here to keep the *wheels* from bouncing up the passenger too much and those are the back *wheels* and that is the bonnet. And that is the *hood*, see, and we're all set, see. And there's the engine, and this is the *steering wheel*."

You'd be perfectly happy about it. You wouldn't even demand that he show you where the starter button was. You – he could keep you all involved with this. It's just with this – this is the automobile, this is how it runs. The engine goes around this way and it turns the wheels around that way and there's gears in there and here are the way the gears go and so forth. And you'd be very happy with that course, man. And he'd say, "That guy sure teaches you about automobiles."

"Now," he says, "Now, if you come back next week, I'll show you how to drive one." Brother, you'd be there! And when you arrive for the course about how to drive one he says, "This is the starter button. This is the ignition key. There's the brakes. Here's the way you work the brakes. Now, get in there and work the brakes. Good. Turn on the ignition key on and off. Good. Work the brakes. Good. Turn the steering wheel. Good. Work the brakes."

You'd leave after some kind of – the first night or two of that kind of training, boy, you'd be pleased as punch. You'd say, "Boy, right down there – know their business down there on the subject of automobiles. Next week, next week, I'm going to get a ride in one!" Don't you see, right direct on the subject, right on the groove, see.

Now, that has a tremendous liability to teach a course like that because, look, you're handing them nomenclature all the time, all the time, all the time. And it's terrible not to have nomenclature. Instead of cursing your Scientology nomenclature because of its numerousness, just thank God that you don't have to stand there tongue-tied. Now, how – how – how are you going to teach a fellow about automobiles if there is no word *front wheel*? Well, if you had no nomenclature for an automobile and you're going to teach somebody about automobiles, you couldn't teach them any nomenclature and they could never communicate on the subject of automobiles. There's got to be nomenclature. But they've got to start out learning the language of an automobile. And although they were being taught all about an automobile they're actually in that first jump-off being taught the language of the automobile.

Now, you – if you were teaching automobiles that way to a bunch of people that had never seen them or had much to do with them and so forth, if you could figure yourself down in the middle of the Congo or something like that and you were going to run this course on automobiles and so on, actually, you've just about got it taped because there you sit with an advanced technology that this civilization knows not what of or any part of it. And it's falling into problems consistently.

And you're just all the same – in the middle of the Congo. And you're going to tell people, "It's very nice to know about the mind." Hell, they know that. They know all about that. What about the mind? Well, it has parts; it runs on various rules. First place, you're not specializing in the mind, you're teaching them about the universe and you're teaching them about a being in the universe. And there's a body and there's walls and there's the planet and there's the sky and here's a being who lives in the midst of all this and we call him a thetan. See?

And we just tape it, see, and never let him miss a definition, and you've got a PE course there that, well... I taught a PE course like this one time and I taught it sufficiently well that eighteen psychiatrists attended the first lecture, which was repetitive. In other words, I always gave the first lecture again every night and then gave an advanced lecture in another room. There weren't nobody being charged in the other room, but there were new people coming along all the time so I'd keep giving the first lecture. I always gave the first lecture. I'm not advising you to do this, it was just a freak of the situation.

And then I'd give the people who had heard the first lecture the remaining lectures. And we had quite a few people there. But amongst them there were eighteen psychiatrists – nineteen. And they came to nothing but the first lecture. And they were some of the leading names in psychiatry, and they turned up just as regular as a clock every night, man, to hear that first lecture all over again. And they sat there, nodding, nodding; trying to figure it out.

And one of them finally got into action on the subject, he took a dangerous schizophrenic and put him back into childhood using Dianetic techniques, and then instantly realized that we really had something in Dianetics, so with the person returned on the track, psy-

choanalyzed him. Told him, "Now you know why you hate your father – he didn't change your diaper." Of course, I wouldn't say they had absorbed very much, but – but the funny part of it was, is it's simplicity that holds people. It's terrible simplicity.

People do not like a totally new subject. They like the familiarity of the old and that isn't just because we're in England talking about English jokes. English jokes are partially nostalgia. It's a good – was a – been a good joke for a long time, he's glad to hear it again, see? But you get the idea.

Yeah, I was looking at an old pal of ours, Frankie Howerd, on the TV the other night – he told the same jokes. I actually was very happy to sit there watching him tell the same jokes, you know. He's the bird that has the aged pianist who is hard of hearing and he makes cracks to the audience about his aged pianist. And she once in a while will comment to him that it's chilly in there and he will turn around and say, "Yes, chilly. Poor old so-and-so." All a very 1.1 type of act, see. Well, he's been doing that just for years and years and years and years and he's a headliner. And I don't think he's had a new joke or a new line in all those times. Trouble with an American comedian, he knocks himself out all the time. That's why he passes into oblivion, too – he never develops a nostalgia.

Now, here's an interesting point then. As long as you're teaching somebody absolu... something absolutely new, they're going to feel like they're in totally strange territory all the time, all the time and therefore, it's very, very strange to them. My apologies for the crack about English humor. I can always make the English laugh, I have no trouble with English humor. I've learned to wait. [laughter, laughs]

Now, the public goes for and likes the old and what they like to see occasionally is just a little bit of improvement. They like to see a little bit of improvement on this old subject. They don't like new subjects. So you'd better represent Scientology as what it is, which is the only conservative study in the field of the mind. Truth of the matter is, when you look it over very carefully, a lot of things happened.

Before I get too far ahead of my story, let me – let me give you what happens to these students who *don't* – let me – let me get that in because I might forget to tell you – the student that you don't handle as I've just described to you in PE will get the misunderstood – look at the cycle they run – see, the misunderstood word, the misunderstood concept, then they go into either the critical thought or the overt. And they will commit an overt against Scientology. And it gets all right to commit an overt against Scientology because that's the cycle. They have to justify not having understood. And that is what this is all about. It must be strange and they have to justify not having understood it and so they commit an overt against it. Shows that it's no good, do you see?

So it's – they'll rig it that way, in spite of anything you can do, and then they go out and give you bad public presence. The second they don't understand that first word – the first word they don't understand is liable to start this cycle, so that is what you prevent. If you just prevent that all up on the line and they all go away feeling fine and everything's happy and so forth, and furthermore you're doing a more honest job and you're showing them exactly what they came in to find out – that you know the answer so you can do it.

And let's see why psychology got off to a bad start. And this hooks in with what I was just giving you now. Scientology is the conservative study. It is the traditional study. It follows the traditional patterns of philosophy, religion and the mind. It may be one of the reasons why your own interest in it is deep-seated, because you recognize in it the familiarities of ancient Greece. You recognize in it the philosophy of Rome, the philosophies of the Middle Ages. The work of Saint Thomas Aquinas – all of this material as you roll on forward – faculty psychology. You'd feel very comfortable in amongst the big religious universities of 1500, 1550, with the faculty psychologist – that's the psychology of the faculties, of the senses and perceptions. Faculty used in the line of sense and perception.

You'd feel very comfortable with these boys. You'd be talking about the same things, only you'd have answers to what they didn't have answers for and boy, they would fall around your neck like mad, because you'd be talking the familiar to them. They're talking about such things as attention. They're talking about such things as seeing. They're talking about such things as hearing. The faculties, you see. And they're talking about these things and how they relate to things – and sort of foggily. And of course, you could say to them, "Why gentlemen, you're talking about communication. You're talking about communication between the individual and the physical universe around him or to other individuals through the medium of the physical universe. And therefore sight and sound and so forth are means of communication with the physical universe or with other people through the physical universe."

And they would say, "Holy smothering Godfrey, Gadzooks! By Jove, the chap's right! You know, that's true. Never realized that one person was *ooowa* and that's what perception is and that's what sound is and so forth; it's a method of communication." And you would have been right there, brother!

But you can't talk to a psychologist about this. Do you know why you can't? Oh, the answer is absolutely fascinating. There isn't anybody there. There isn't anybody there. The whole universe and the people in it are sort of a delusion of machinery. In the absence of sensation and association there is no perception. That's a stable datum in the field of psychology, of circa 1960, 64. I know I've given you that and you've glanced over the top of it and you've said, "Well," and so on, "they're psychologists, so I don't have to understand it." No, I invite you to understand this. Perception depends completely upon sensation and association. And after you've looked that over for a little while you begin to feel sort of creepy as though somebody had walked over your grave. Because that tells you a volume.

It says a machine in the absence of somebody tickling its gears, and in absence of certain gears meshing with certain gears is incapable of noticing anything is happening. You see, perception depends upon sensation and association and that is the psychologist's definition of perception.

Now, of course, you look at that as a Scientologist and you say, "What the devil is going on here? You mean I've got to have an association between a *wfff* and *zfff* before I can see a *blap*?" No, that is not true. That is not true. But a machine – it would be true. A machine would have to have little cogwheels that *wizzergoo'd* with the cogwheels in order to tell you that the *wizzergoo* was on the other side of the *wazzergoo* and therefore it should take some notice.

Knowledge is totally evolved out of the results of perception, but is individually evolved by a sort of a funny computer, that then tells a person what to perceive. By the time you've drawn this up on a drawing board you've got a machine and there's nobody there. You get what I'm talking about, don't you? I know – I – if you don't grasp it, don't blame yourself [laughter] because I frankly, the other night, spent over an hour looking at the words out of a text written by one of the leading God-help-us psychologist who – of the United States – on his definition of perception. And it was that sensation with association brings about perception. And that was what perception was. And I looked at this and I looked at it and I looked at it. And I finally understood the frame of reference on which he was viewing this thing.

And he's viewing it on the basis, you have to understand that a psychologist considers that everybody is a brain, a piece of meat, see, which vanishes with death and so forth. You have to understand all of these peculiar things. And then you understand what the devil this means. It means that once you've tickled the gears of the machine in some fashion or other and showed them which gears was being tickled, why, then it perceives what's tickling, see. It looks in that direction, but wouldn't otherwise.

Of course, this absolutely violates your own concept of yourself. You say, "Before I can look at a field of hay I'd have to receive – have received a sensation from the field of hay and associated it with my childhood." Well, the reason you don't understand it easily is because you wouldn't think of yourself as a machine. And naturally a machine – think of rolling a robot out there now. Now, you roll a robot out there and of course... field of hay, it'd have to have some kind of an associative memory situation, see. It's got a sensation of heat waves and some kind of a sensation of pattern, and that brings it up and so forth – and then the memory sorts out as the eons race around, and it finally associates this with fields and then with hay and then it says, "Ah, a field of hay."

And this to the psychologist is a man. Well, why does he think this way? Because he's a wild-eyed radical. He is the revolutionary; he's the Johnny-come-lately. Fifteen hundred and fifty, you would have been perfectly understood by the faculty psychologist in any great university of the world. He would have made much out of you, man. He would have had you out for tea and invited you to the – to the local hop and made much out of the situation.

You walk into a modern classroom of today and you say "perception is engaged upon by the being himself as a means of communication with the universe around him and other beings," they'd throw you out on your head. What do you mean? You have introduced volition. You've introduced volitional and nonvolitional acts, to use a couple of fancy words. Acts that are willed, acts that are not willed. You have set up an individual as seeing what he wants to see and not seeing what he doesn't want to see. You have set up the whole mechanism of power of choice. And you have set up the dignity of the individual. And that they want nothing to do with, because they, of course, in not understanding man have gone the road of the overt. And that's why psychiatry cuts out brains. They've got to make nothing out of man because they haven't understood him. And that is the whole genus of it, those poor luckless boobs.

And what word does it go back to? It goes back to the word *psychology*. I'm now quoting man, I'm quoting the leading psychologist textbook writers, and they define psychology

as: "*Psyche* once meant the soul; – *ology* means study. We do not know what the *psych* or *psyche* is, we have no idea, we don't even know if it exists." And that is the definition of psychology.

You mean, we're going to take off from anyplace then and go anywhere? No, brother, we're going to go straight into an overt against the mind and that is where those birds went. So they've got to sell man short. And there isn't a one of those birds who isn't in the frame of mind of a con man. They are the frauds. They know it's a swindle. They're ARC broke with their own subject. They know their subject doesn't work.

"Us con men together, if we band together right and hold ourselves up high enough and sneer enough at anything else, we'll eventually be able to triumph over these poor boobs." Those are hard words, but I'm afraid that is the dominating idea. If you've talked to these birds as much as I have – I had an awful hard time understanding where comes this idea of this contempt? Where's this terrible contempt I see? What's the genus of this thing. What are these odd and peculiar ideas about man, the degrading aspect of them and so forth? This worried me frankly because they're dominating thought in the universities and schools of the world today. They're teaching everybody man's no good. He's just a machine.

Well, naturally, your leaders of the world have got to have some kind of a philosophy of this character, they think. Look how dangerous this philosophy is, however. If you just ordered thirty million men killed, you want a philosophy that teaches you men are no good. Hm-mmm! You've got to justify that overt, man. If you're busy firing people and ruining people all over the place, why, naturally you've got to have some kind of a demon that stands alongside of you and says, "It's perfectly all right, they're no good. Perfectly all right, they're no good." And they found their perfect demon in psychology and psychiatry. Man is no good. He's ninety-seven percent – cents' worth of chemicals. There is no dignity of the individual. The man has no power of choice. He has none of these things. He's not capable of personal volition; he's just a machine.

You push a button with your modern advertising, he whirrs-clicks, reaches into his pocket and pulls out the sixpence. And it's perfectly all right to pull out the sixpence completely illegally and fraudulently because actually, he's no good. And that's where you have to have a philosophy, you have to have a philosophy that man is no good in order to go on committing overts.

So it isn't that man has degraded. It's that man's mental subjects first didn't bother to understand anything about man and so then began to commit overts. And then employment was found for these blokes, by fellows who had to have their overts justified. And naturally, the guys who had to have their overts justified – the Hitlers, the other guys, the Stalins, the birds that have really backed up this particular field of psychology – naturally, these birds are going to put those fellows in the driver's seat. And so there's where the degradation of man comes from. Actually man is not more degraded than he was before. He's only degraded the mental sciences because he has departed from the traditional which had to do with the dignity of man. And you're in the tradition.

It sounds wild. I've studied this very carefully. It's not some new con pitch I'm giving you. Our teachings and facts would have been revelatory, straight through from the ancient

medicine man through the wise man of Persia, through the philosophers of Greece, in the days of the first universities and so forth – that you called such around 1200 A.D., through all the great periods of the Renaissance and so forth. The ideas which we are moving along with and have – make no mistake about it – enormously improved and clarified are nevertheless those ideas. They had to do with attention, they had to do with perception, they had to do with power of choice. They had to do with the dignity of man, they had to do with the motivation of behavior. All of these things. And not on a vicious basis of how rotten and wicked everybody is and how they all ought to be shot down in their tracks. But just what's this all about.

And we are to a marked degree preserving the dignity of man. And we're carrying forward on a basic tradition which has come up through the ages. But in 1879 in Bavaria, Leipzig University, a fellow by the name of Wundt must have fallen asleep in too damn many classes. And he missed the boat. And there are too many words he didn't dig. So he had to figure out that men were animals and that's *exactly* what he figured out. Men were animals. And he advanced this as a philosophy as recently as 1879. Completely departing, madly departing, from every traditional level of study there was in this field.

And this was carried forward with great enthusiasm by the early Russian student in this field, and which culminated in Pavlov. Criticism of the Russian, circa 400 A.D., is that they made very good fighters because they became quite merciless and were – associated man with animals. And to them everything was animalistic. And therefore they could drive forward in an animalistic fashion. They thought of man as being animals. They thought of animals as being animals. They lived amongst animals and so, therefore, their cavalry was pretty good and pretty vicious and so forth. These are commentaries on Russians, moving on forward. Same commentaries we hear occurring along about 1000. Same commentaries around Timur Lenk, around 1300. Same commentaries around Pavlov. The dog hasn't changed, his ears still flop. Yeah, that pattern hadn't changed at all.

So Pavlov and psychiatry rushed on the scene. Man is an animal. Man is no lousy good. We should kill everybody. What you do with a city is level it until a pony will not even stumble being ridden at a full gallop across its ruins. What's the difference? There's no difference. It's out of the steppes, straight on forward until now. They've always had the same idea that you could condition an animal. That if you beat a horse enough he would then do what he was supposed to do. Animal training. Pavlov. No difference. He just carried forward the Russian tradition for animal training.

Only this, my God, somebody accepts as a study of the human mind! Ha! Somebody must be in an awful need of justification for their overts. You see, it was always there to be bought. You always had the idea there that men were beasts and so forth. The idea was always there to be purchased by anybody who wanted to purchase it, but it's interesting that it didn't get purchased until after 1879. Those are all Johnny-come-lately. You see the point I'm trying to make here?

Well now, I don't think – I don't think the – Germans are okay, I use their Rolleis continuously with great success and I wish they'd stay just building cameras and things like that. But the German has no enviable reputation for humanitarianism. I will say he has contributed music to the world, and that's dandy. But if he'd just stayed with music and cameras we'd all

be a lot better off. Every once in a while he gets careless with guns, and for some reason or other he's got to go out and kill everybody; for reasons best known to him. And he authored modern psychology. Modern psychiatry was authored by the Russian and modern psychology was authored by the "Sherman." And by nobody else, don't let anybody kid you. That's exactly where they came from.

You should read a Russian textbook on the subject of psychiatry. And every technique they know of in psychiatry is in a Russian textbook. Today, I will tell you, that when the czar went on the skids and lost his head, it was very interesting that the revolution began to frown on psychiatry. It was only Stalin and his fascist impulses and so forth which kept it going any length of time at all. And we have the completely weird subject of the Russian now having lived through all of these cycles of what we call modern psychiatry and now having nothing to do with it.

So here's all the Western psychiatrists that come in, you know, with their hands dripping with blood, to this conference up in London the other day and the Russians standing around and saying, "But we don't operate on people's prefrontal lobes anymore. But we don't give them electric shocks anymore. But we don't use these treatments anymore, because we found out they were ineffective. We don't do this anymore. We're good boys now," and so forth. And the Western psychiatrist saying, "What's the matter with you jerks?" you know, "What's the matter with you guys?"

Well, what's the matter with these birds? These birds are now in a reform cycle. Too many overts. But that's where it came from. Pavlovian psychiatric responses. There's more to psychiatry than just Pavlov, of course, but not much. And that's a radical school. Those are both radical schools. You heard me say these things before, but I've never put it to you from the point of view that these are radical schools. Relatively uncivilized, rather degraded and very new. And they have not been productive of results. And my point of view is I think we should return to more traditional methods. I think these fellows have had their chance – they've had their revolution. And they didn't get anyplace with it. And I don't think that they should be permitted to stand in the road of traditional study in the field of philosophy or religion or psychology of the field of the mind. And I don't even think they ought to be left with the word "psychology" because they can't define it.

I think in actual fact that psychology is a portion of Scientology. And I see no reason to give psychology a modernistic, razzle-dazzle, mod-rocker spelling, like p-s-y-c-o-l-o-g-y, I should think it should be spelled properly, which is p-s-y-c-h-e-o-l-o-g-y. Psycheology. Put the "e" back in it. Of course, *psyche* means spirit. And is the Greek symbol for spirit. I don't know why we have a sudden *psych*, I don't know what this thing called *psych* that suddenly arose, that occurs in both psychiatry and psychology, because it doesn't mean anything and it never has meant anything. And they don't think it means anything, so forget it, skip it. Of course, we should return it to a more proper state. In other words, the familiar. And the old is really what we're studying.

Somebody comes in to learn about the mind, you say, "Very good. We're glad that you came in to learn about the mind. The whole field of the mind embraces, of course, the other fields of knowledge and the field of philosophy and that sort of thing. The field of philosophy,

religion and so forth, and a study of the mind is actually not too disassociated from a study of a human spirit. And we're glad you've come over here to study this because we're happy that people take interest in more traditional and conservative ways and we're happy to have people studying the more standard psychology. And you came here to learn about psychology, well, you came to the right place. Now, this is a body and this is the physical universe and you are an individual..." You got the idea? "And the eyes see, the ears hear..." See, you teach them about the automobile.

"Now, why do the eyes see? Well, they don't see because somebody is a machine, they see because there's something there to be perceived. Now, the eyes can actually see by somebody putting something there to be perceived as well as something being there to be perceived.

"For instance, you simply – we don't now see this black crayon and we put it there to be perceived. Now, you think of a cat. Very good. Now, some of you got a picture of a cat. Well, you saw the cat, didn't you? Well, we won't worry about whether or not you saw that with the eyes or not because it really – it isn't absolutely necessary to have eyes to see."

In other words, you see what kind of a PE you could conduct that would look a little bit different, wouldn't it? It wouldn't be "Here's this great brand-new subject and it's all different and so forth and these conservative fellows who are there in the university and so forth, those are the fellows who are actually the authorities in the field and so on. And we're new, we're brand-new and we're doing something very, very strange and we're doing something very, very peculiar and ... These fellows object to us and they're just a bunch of bums really," see? That's – this is a different course. This is a different course.

It says, "Well, we're very glad you have come to the people who know about these things. And we're very glad that you have resumed a traditional study of this particular thing and are having done with radical approaches which have not resulted in any good effects. And you want to study the field of Scientology, of course, that's composed of philosophy, and religion, psychology, what makes men do what they do, why men act the way they act, what life is all about. And you've come to the right place. Well, of course, you shouldn't mind being taught old answers along with new answers, and there's a great deal in Scientology that is new but the breakthrough is all in the traditional field, it's not a radical breakthrough."

Where does that leave psychology? Where does that leave "Old Man Wissergoo" with the eighteen letters after his name as the head of the department of "psyrology" of Chicago University or Illinois University. What's that – where's that leave him? It leaves him in a gibbering fit, that's where it leaves him. "Well, Hubbard's done it again! *This does about enough!* Now, we're a part of Scientology! You know what that Hubbard's done? He said we're a part of Scientology. Isn't that terrible?" And the public at large says, "Well, really, are they?" Because they're all reasonable.

And this is the way the wheel is going to turn. And the wheel has already begun its slow inexorable spin. They are about to become a more radical element of Scientology. And we're about to become the conservatives and they're about to become the revolutionaries. They're the Johnny-come-latelys, the cowboys in the black hat. And we're the old homesteaders, been there a long time. And they'll give us all the propaganda we want to drive this point

home, because it will outrage them to such a degree that every time they pick it up or hear it they will go into a complete scream. They will help us. In every university they will help us. They'll explain to all of their classes, "Hubbard is crazy because he says actually Scientology is a very broad subject that psychology is just a part of, ha-ha-ha!" None of the students are laughing. [laughter]

Student can understand a radical offshoot, or a Johnny-come-lately type of an approach that says all men are animals. "Oh, yeah, that's – yeah, we understand that. That's German protocol, see." And the professor starts gibbering because he doesn't really dig how he would feather the wing straight in our direction. He couldn't serve us better than the way they will serve us. "Yes, Hubbard has gone to the last straw now. Hubbard has gone to the absolute last straw. That's the – that's the end. That's it. Now, we are all part of Scientology and a very small part of it at that." [laughter] I can hear them now at a conference, you know, out in the anterooms. They gibber, you know, about some of the things we do. They have fits and so forth.

They are – they're mad at us right now, you know, just for one reason, actually just one real reason that they're mad at us is everybody who is operating in an – charlatanism in the fie... as a charlatan in the field of the mind, is calling himself a Scientologist these days. They have not reached the – they have gone past the point of saying, you see, now, that we are bums. They're saying the reason we're bad is because other people can call themselves Scientologists. Other people who are bad can call themselves Scientologists. You get this? Well, that's – the *American Medical Association Journal* has made that rather astonishing remark very recently.

Well, they know that man is no good because they can't do anything for him. An auditor who would have a hard time with people might wind up in this direction. You could ask why more auditors don't wind up embittered and mean and vicious and so forth. But they don't. So we must not have done too bad a job amongst ourselves in defining the parts of the mind and existence and the various words which are associated with it. We couldn't have done too bad a job amongst ourselves, because there's so many of us still here. And there's so many of us that have a kindly attitude toward man and so many of us that's – still capable of understanding.

So we couldn't have done a very bad job, don't you see; proves itself. But because we are capable of understanding, and capable of making sense out of the problem, and capable basically of doing something about these various things, we of course, are in the favored position. And we don't really need to do anything very strange to make capital out of that favored position. We're in the favored position of the people who know how to do something about it, you see? We're in the favored position knowing our business.

Well, knowing our business we of course would win over somebody that was just a fake and didn't know his business and didn't even know what his subject name meant. See, this is very easy. Well, the wheel is going to turn anyhow. The fun I get out of life is just making it turn now and then a little faster.

I remember learning how to drive a Jaguar. You always take the Jaguar down the road, you never let the Jaguar take you down the road. And then you can drive a Jaguar. If you want

to ruin your driving sometime, why just try that. Just go out and practice taking the car down the road. Take – *you take it* around corners. You take it up the highway. You take it here, there and everywhere and it's very fascinating. Your driving goes all to pieces because the machinery starts breaking up, don't you see? It's a, "Now I'm going to turn this corner, yes, and I turn the corner, you know, and all right, now we're holding it on the straight, now just go straight, you know, *hrrmmm*, just straight. All right, now we're going to stop. Yes, and so on... and all of a sudden your machinery goes *whoooo!*

I wouldn't try it in an exciting driving situation. [laughter] But after you've done it for a few days your driving improves enormously, and all of a sudden you realize that for years the car has been taking you everywhere, and all of a sudden you have a completely happy attitude toward cars and things; your whole driving aspect will change. So I don't like to just sit and watch the wheel take us someplace, don't you see, I like to also coax the wheel along.

Well, there – although that's a very technical dissertation which I've given you along the line of PE, you wonder why I injected psychology and psychiatry into it to the degree I should – I probably should make my point with great clarity there, for people who are coming in to your PE and so forth have to some degree been reached or indoctrinated by this other field but are already dissatisfied by it and you don't have to curse very hard. But you have to know the relationship of psychiatry and psychology to the field of the mind and to the history of the mind. And their relationship is not different than I have told you, their relationship is very exactly what I have told you. This isn't just my idea of it.

But they have given another facade. They have given the facade of "*We* are the authorities and *we* are the conservatives and *we* are the big boys in this particular field." They're a lot of fakes. They're not. They're Johnny-come-latelys that are following a very, very radical line of thought, calculated to degrade man.

So when your people come in for PE they are actually looking for something which is more relaxed, less degrading, which is better calculated to bring about a happy frame of mind toward existence and your best way of handling it, of course, is just tell them, "Oh, you want to know about philosophy and religion and the mind and that sort of thing? Psychology? Well, we teach it here. You've come to the right place. And here is your first lesson." And the best you would do about psychology or psychiatry or something like that is explain occasionally to the student, patiently, perhaps even a little sadly, that there is a long tradition in the field of the mind which culminated with Scientology and that it is the longer, more conservative tradition and there have been new discoveries in this tradition which revived it.

And these discoveries were rather terrific, and they're very interesting. But they are discoveries in an old tradition. They are not discoveries in a new tradition. And that the old has enormously improved, improved enough to revive all over the place. And so we've got something that amounts now to a very good breakthrough, and therefore we needn't go off into radical lines. That's just cutting up people's heads and that sort of thing. Sounds rather barbaric to us. And discuss the relationship with the class, just to that degree, and from that particular viewpoint. And you would find out they'd be with you all the way. You see, man is basically good, you can do something about the situation. People become better people when

you handle their problems and aberrations. All the various things which you know about Scientology, they all fit into this frame of reference. Scientology is not an effort to degrade man.

The student would very shortly recognize this and he wouldn't even have to have it pushed to him very hard by the very definitions and Axioms and things like that which were being given to him. He would recognize very clearly what he was looking at. And then, if you never let one of those PE people get away with a misunderstood word, then you have not started a germ of revolution against man. Not against Scientology, but a revolution against man himself. Disgust with man. But more intimately to you, dis... upset about Scientology. They'd just stay with you because, you see, their best reasons they would stay with you is there is something there to know.

We can do things, you see, there's all the good reasons why they should, you see. So the fact that they don't is really unreasonable. And that unreasonability comes from the early word which is not defined.

And where a fellow is incapable of studying Scientology as a subject or confronting it – he just comes around to mock it or something like that – you must realize that that person has already been in trouble with another associated subject earlier and you've got to handle him, then you've got to handle the fellow who – not get involved all the time with the fellow who doesn't understand what you're saying. Don't get involved with him to the degree that you're trying to explain what he's asking about all the time. No, do it once, explain to him once what you're – what you're talking about. Explain to him carefully. That doesn't handle it, all right. Right away you know that there was an earlier word which he didn't understand and you ask him for that earlier word.

"What word have I used – what word has been used here that you didn't understand?"

And he says, "Uh – clay."

"Well, what about clay?"

"Well, in Kindergarten they called it Plasticine and clay's different. This is messed up, see, because uh – clay – why do you say 'clay'?"

Well, there's a pat explanation for that, too. "Plasticine is a trademarked word which you would be forbidden to use if you did use it, but clay will always be with us, and many substitutes for clay will come and go, so we just use the basic word." All right, this clarifies it for him and he says, "Cheers, oh – uh – that's the way it is. All right. Cheers!" See, let's go on with it, see?

But you'll always find the fellow who persistently can't understand what you're talking about, you see. You try to explain it to him and he can't grasp it and so forth. Well, you could keep this up, you see, for the next half-hour of class time with no production. What you've got to find is the word he didn't understand just before that and handle that situation. You will find that word, explain that word and go on. And then don't forget your nodder and catch that nodder with the – the write-back. "Give us an example. Give us an example of what I've just told you." Then look over those papers and you'll find the nodder, sitting there, but not a clue. And that person you'll also lose eventually or overwhelm completely.

And the subject matter of a PE is under development at this particular time, and I can't give you the entire rundown of a PE, but I am giving you as much of the PE as I consider very solid ground and very solid form for PE at the present moment. I'm not talking to you about what words to teach, I'm just talking to you if they came there to learn about the field of the mind and the spirit and philosophy you jolly well better teach them about the mind and the field and philosophy, and not tell them why they should know about the mind and the field and philosophy cause they already decided that.

So, you just go rat-a-tat-tat, rat-a-tat-tat, and if you treated the PE as an area where they learned the language and they learned the parts of things, and they learned the nomenclature of things, and they learned what was there, these are all the same things, don't you see? You can't show a fellow a front wheel and say the word of this is "front wheel" with also showing him the fact that there was a front wheel there, see? You know, he's got to have appreciated the existence of the front wheel as well as the definition of the words "front wheel." So you get these two things in good balance and all of a sudden these people will come up smiling. And believe me, this is a very successful line of teaching, because there are many people – read some of the earlier texts on Dianetics and Scientology, understood them with great clarity and recovered in some cases from very serious illnesses, just by clarification of existence.

So if your end product there in the PE was a clarification of existence by the demonstration and teaching them nomenclature in a new language so they could talk along this line, if that was all you succeeded in doing, providing you left not one student with a word improperly defined, then you would have succeeded all the way. And your batting average would be not 10 percent or 5 percent in PE in organizations and in private practices, but it would be much closer to 98 percent. There'd be the lady who fell off the bridge and broke her leg and couldn't come back to the PE course. She would happen every once in a while. But – so it couldn't be a 100 percent, but it could be awfully close – be awfully close to a 100 percent, it would wind up at the end of that week with you.

Now, any PE that you have ever run or any course you have ever run or any series of talks you have ever given that found less people attending than attended the first night is assignable, not to your diction, not to whether you wore a blue dress or a green one, not to whether or not the surroundings were easy to reach and attractive: all of these things are beside the point. The people that didn't wind up with you the second night missed a word. They didn't get the word. They missed a word, that's all. They missed something. They heard this – they heard this word, "overt acts," and they couldn't get it and they didn't hear it, and they did hear it but they didn't hear it, and they don't know what this thing is and they just don't wrap their wits around it and they don't come back the next night. But now, because they haven't misunderstand... they haven't understood – they haven't gotten this word you see, now they don't understand the subject. And not understanding the subject it's perfectly all right for them to perform overt acts against Scientology. And if there's any hostility against Scientology in the world it's derived from that point. See?

So we therefore are actually, building our own opposition to this degree. I've just given your orders for America on the subject of, "Don't leave anybody over there who has any

words misdefined on the subject of Scientology and that's your campaign. And you'll find out that's going to make a big difference."

But those are the concentrations and the points of PE, and that's what kind of a course they're attending. They're attending it – rather a traditional course that has a great many new developments in an old and conservative line. You know, they're taking a course at Rolls Royce. Now, they could go and get one of these two-bit, cut-rate courses, you know, down there at Alabama University but well, it's much better that they came to you. More traditional. Longer, harder, but more traditional.

You have to be able to confront better to take a course like this, you see. You can't dodge around the back of the thing and say, "Well, we don't know what the word 'Scientology' means. Uh – we don't know what that is. And uh – however we're going to teach you about the left foot. And we're going to teach you pedagogy, mixed up slightly with pediatrics. And then if we have any time left at the end of the week and so forth why we'll get into pedantics."

Well, of course, the poor student who has enrolled and has got to have a degree and a career at the end of the line and so forth has no choice. He can't walk out of a university. But that's what makes it different from your PE course, you see, they can walk out of your PE course if they don't like it. They can't walk out of a university. So actually what they do is force people to go ahead and study these subjects through to the bitter end till they're in such a state of committing overts that nobody is safe with them. I would just as soon open up a lion's cage and throw a patient into it as I would to let them go near an institution anywhere in the world today. You think it over. At least it would be over with rather quickly in the lion's cage.

But if you look at this as a point of view or a representation where the public is concerned and their first entrance course the PE, I think you would find it extremely successful. Now, you've looked on yourself as a ruddy revolutionary. Yes, you're a revolutionary against the revolution. You have been revolting against the revolution. But we hadn't clearly recognized that we were revolting against a revolution and it was a revolution had occurred. And it occurred in 1879. And that there was a traditional course of study which was going on and in which discoveries could be made.

I entered back into that field. My own training is very severely in the more traditional lines of philosophy. It's interesting that there isn't even a degree, did you know this, there isn't even a degree for psychology. At least they've been that cautious, haven't they? There's only a degree in philosophy. And we are definitely in the field of philosophy.

This is more germane, then, to what the public wants to know. They want to know how to live better lives, they want to know what existence is all about, so forth. So teach a straightforward course, teach them all the definitions of these things, teach them what existence is all about, wind it up at the end, they'll be very happy with you and *very keen* to get back next week, because then they get to start the motor. And you'd have a very, very successful PE. Okay?

Audience: Yes.

Thank you very much.

Audience: Thank you.